

THE PROTECTOR CHAPTER 1

In Erudia, a private jet landed at North Hampton Airport, where all international flights experienced an eight-hour delay because of it.

At the private passageway were five men in suits and leather shoes, standing as straight as a javelin.

Every now and then, they would raise their wrist to look at the time, for a big shot was coming to town. The upper-class society of North Hampton had learned about his arrival, but no one had the capability to get an inch closer to the private passageway.

Even the richest man in North Hampton who came to pay homage was chased away.

Finally, there were movements coming from the passageway.

“God of War!!!” the mass cried out, their eyes filled with awe and veneration at the sight of the undefeatable legend of Erudia.

He, who was dubbed the God of War, was the one and only five-star war God in the history of Erudia.

Once, he’d inflicted a crushing defeat on the strongest battalions in eighteen countries. He was an overbearing and formidable man.

He who overwhelmed the world with his unparalleled power had even created the Five Great Wars Regiment, Cavalry Regiment, and many more.

...

Setting foot on his homeland, Levi Garrison was overcome with emotions.

Once upon a time, he used to be an orphan who was abandoned on the streets of North Hampton and then adopted by the Garrison family.

However, the Garrison family had never been fond of him.

His adoptive parents, who had a tendency to beat and scold him, treated him like an outsider.

As for the outsiders, they treated him as a nobody.

But he didn’t care a stiver. He had always been proud of his surname since he was a child, and he strived to bring glory to this family when he grew older.

At last, Levi had established Levi Group, the largest dark horse in North Hampton’s business community.

With billions of assets, it ranked among the forefront of North Hampton, pushing the declining Garrison family to the top.

However, not only did the Garrison family show no signs of appreciation, they even harbored

dissatisfaction towards him. Jealous of his success, they regarded him as a thorn in their flesh and coveted Levi Group.

No matter his wealth and power, unless they were in control, he was just an outsider in the Garrison family's eyes.

Eventually, on Levi's wedding night, the Garrison family plotted a frame-up against him by getting him drunk before tossing him onto his sister-in-law's bed. They wanted to create the illusion that he was doing something untoward to her and was caught in bed by his brother and adoptive parents.

That night, the Garrison family had brutally broken his limbs and left him on the road like a wild dog.

Not only was he handicapped, but he also had to take the flak for something he didn't commit.

From an upstart in the business world, he had become the target of disdain overnight.

And the next day, he had been punished for several crimes and sentenced to six years in prison.

He could never forget the ruthless and sinister faces of everyone in the Garrison family and the ridicule of his friends, classmates, and business partners.

More so, he could never forget the disappointment on his newly wedded wife, Zoey's face.

He had regarded the Garrison family as his home and devoted himself to the family.

Yet, they treated him like trash.

It felt as if a knife was being twisted in his heart every time he thought about this.

How he hated the Garrison family!

But who would have thought that Levi had been secretly transferred away from prison to join the military?

In a few years, he dominated the military world and became the one and only five-star God of War.

Now that he came back, the Garrison family ought to stay on their toes.

"How's it going, Azure Dragon?" Levi asked.

Azure Dragon, the commander of the Five Great Wars Regiment, took a step forward and said respectfully, "Sir, I'm afraid your wife, Ms. Zoey Lopez will remarry at ten o'clock tonight!"

Ever since Zoey's husband was sent to prison on their wedding night, she had been living like a widow.

Only God knew how much pressure she was put under.

And right now, the person Levi couldn't wait to see the most was Zoey.

After a moment of hesitation, Azure Dragon continued, “To add on, Sir, the Garrison family is holding a successful listing celebration banquet at the Crystal Palace Hotel tonight! Many people had invited the God of War just now, including the Garrison family, but I didn’t accept nor refuse directly.”

“What time?” Levi asked tersely.

“Eight o’clock, Sir.”

“Okay. Tell the Garrison family I will attend the banquet!”

Since the time for the two events didn’t clash, Levi gladly accepted the invitation.

The celebration banquet for the public listing of Garrison Group was held at North Hampton’s Crystal Palace Hotel.

With the help of Levi Group, they had become a rich and powerful family in one fell swoop.

The hall was bustling with noise and excitement, and sounds of glasses clinking could be heard ringing in the air every now and then.

“God bless the Garrison family,” said Joseph, the head of the Garrison family. “The younger generations are the stars among men. Garrison Group is now listed and has become an upstart in North Hampton!”

Joseph’s three sons and daughter welcomed their guests with bright smiles on their faces.

The younger generation of the Garrison family was all the smugger and prouder because, after today, the Garrison family would become a powerful family, and they would become one of the top rich kids.

Most of the guests who attended today’s banquet were from the top circle in North Hampton.

“Garrison, do you know what happened today?! Your celebration party is nothing compared to that.” They were gossiping about the major event that had happened today.

“Yeah! I heard that a big shot has arrived in North Hampton!”

“The richest man in North Hampton wanted to meet him but was shooed away. Apparently, he’s not qualified enough!”

“So? Jesse Nielsen had been waiting for five hours in advance at the airport!”

Joseph nodded. “Yes, I know about that too. I even sent someone to invite this big shot to the celebration party!”

“No way! Why would this big shot attend such a party?”

No one believed it.

In fact, as an upstart, Joseph was just trying his luck.

“Dad!” shouted Jaycob, the second eldest son of the Garrison family could be seen running over. “The big shot has accepted our invitation to attend our celebration banquet! He’s on the way!”

“Jesus! God has indeed blessed the Garrison family!”

Everyone in the Garrison family could barely conceal their delight as this was their chance to reach the sky in a single bound.

The grandchildren of the Garrison family gathered together, sunshine flooding their souls.

Levi’s brother, Bryan, and sister-in-law, Victoria, smiled. “Well, it all starts with Levi’s imprisonment that the Garrison family is at where we are today...”

“Right, speaking about Levi, do you guys know today’s the day that kid gets out of prison?!” somebody asked abruptly.

“Really? Isn’t that bad luck? Why did he have to be released on such a big day?!”

“Please, please, please don’t come back! He’s the Garrison family’s biggest disgrace!”

Victoria’s lips tugged into a sneer. “Speaking of which, Levi is the crowning glory of the Garrison family’s status today.”

“That’s what he’s supposed to do!” Bryan said. “He should contribute to the Garrison family for raising him, an orphan! His multi-billion Levi Group means nothing. To put it bluntly, he’s just a dog raised by the Garrison family!”

Someone gave a chortle. “As a matter of fact, I’ve been interested in Levi’s wife for a long time now. She’s still widowed, and I’m so going to marry her!”

The man’s remark caused gales of laughter.

“Everyone, stop what you’re doing. I have an important announcement to make,” Joseph said and went on to announce that the big shot was coming.

A thunderous applause was heard.

But when the applause had died down, there was still someone clapping.

The sound was loud and clear, approaching from afar.

On the red carpet, a man came clapping, looking bold and energetic.

His stride gave off a majestic and imposing aura, which made the mass hold their breaths.

“It’s Levi!” Bryan and Victoria exclaimed.

Suddenly, all eyes were riveted on him.

“I forgot this little brat got out of jail today!” Levi’s adoptive parents spoke in unison.

Ignoring the astonished gazes darted at his way, Levi walked step by step towards Joseph.

“A little bird told me that the company is now listed. How are you feeling, Joseph? Are you happy?”

Levi flashed him a meaningful smile.

“How dare you show up here, you insolent brat! And what did you just call me?” Joseph’s fury sprang to life.

“Who let him in? Didn’t you know he just got out of prison? How inauspicious!”

Bryan rose to his feet. “What the hell are you doing here, Levi?”

Levi sized him up. “Why can’t I be here?”

“Well, for starters, you’re an orphan! The Garrison family has raised you, but you were ambitious and ungrateful. You had inordinate ambitions for your sister-in-law, and you wanted to take possession of the Garrison family! You’d even tried to kill your parents when things go south! Have you no conscience? Do you have any sense of morality left in your heart?”

“You’ve lost your reputation in North Hampton, and everyone knows that. Have you no shame to have the brass neck to come round here?”

THE PROTECTOR CHAPTER 2:

“Everyone knows why you’re back. You want to leech off the Garrison family; you want our money, isn’t it?!”

“You’ve long been expelled from the Garrison family, you ungrateful wretch! The Garrison family has nothing to do with you! Now, get lost!”

Levi’s adoptive parents rose to their feet and pointed at his nose, hurling abusive remarks at him. The Garrison family’s brazenness of distorting the truth was mind-bending.

How disappointing!

He had thought they would feel somewhat apologetic after six years, but they were unexpectedly more aggravated.

They took everything from him, crippled him, and ruined his reputation, turning everything upside down and making everything his fault instead.

The Garrison family didn’t have the slightest bit of compassion to speak of.

Bryan zipped towards Levi, assessing him condescendingly. “Hmph! Don’t you just want money now that you’re back?”

Flap!

Bryan threw a credit card to the ground and lifted his foot, shaking his leather shoe. “My vamp is dirty. Lick it clean, and the one million in this card is yours!”

His words elicited a fresh burst of laughter as the crowd looked at Levi as if they were looking at a dog.

“Oh my! One million? That’s more than enough to cover his living expenses. I bet he’ll lick it!”

Victoria gave a wry look.

“On your knees!” Bryan roared, seeing that Levi was glaring at him. “Now, lick my shoe!”

Levi stared at him coldly and held his peace.

“Kneel!!!”

Bryan rushed to Levi and pressed his shoulders, forcing him to kneel, but the latter didn’t budge.

“I said kneel!!!”

Bryan struggled to rivet him to the spot.

“Drop dead!”

Levi suddenly slapped Bryan in the face, sending him flying almost eight meters away.

Silence engulfed the room; one could even hear a pin drop!

Unbelievable!

Everyone in the Garrison family was stupefied.

What did Levi just do?

Did he just knock Bryan to the ground with a single slap?

Plod!

Bryan was about to get up when Levi stepped on him, crushed him, and crossed over him.

Looking at the approaching Levi, Joseph instinctively stepped back.

Levi went up the stage and adjusted the microphone stand.

Everyone looked at him, wondering what he was going to do next.

“Listen up, everyone...”

“I’m sure you remember what happened six years ago, yes? For the love and care I had received from the Garrison family during childhood, I’m giving you one month to kneel before me for three days and three nights to repent your sins!”

“Remember, that’s everyone from the Garrison family!”

“If I don’t see any shadow within a month, the outcome is simple—I swear I’ll wipe off every single one of you here today!”

Levi’s voice was low and deep.

But as soon as he finished, the crowd was laughing like a drain.

“Did prison life eat his brain or what? What conceited nonsense is he spouting?”

“The Garrison family right now is a juggernaut in North Hampton. He’s just a criminal. Isn’t it a pipe dream to destroy the Garrison family?”

“Did he knock his brain loose or something?”

...

“Bear in mind that I have limited patience. You only have one month! Of course, you may gather your strengths and connections to fight against me! I’ll be waiting.”

Levi then took his leave straightaway, disregarding the mockeries of the crowd.

“Stop right there, you bastard! Did I tell you to leave?”

Ben, Levi’s adoptive father, wanted to stop him.

“Ben, let him go!” Joseph said. “It’s a big day today. I don’t want to see bloodshed!”

He was afraid about the impact that would bring about if the big shot saw this.

“Yeah! There are so much more opportunities to take care of him!”

“He’s in luck that the big shot is on his way!”

With that, Levi left the place under the watchful eyes of hundreds of people.

After Levi had left, Joseph asked anxiously, “Jaycob, where’s the big shot? Isn’t he here yet?”

Jaycob looked dazed. “According to the time, he should have arrived long ago. Let me ask...”

After making a phone call, Jaycob blanched. “Dad, the big shot was here, but he left already.”

“What? The big shot was here?”

“The big shot said that the Garrison family are a bunch of unworthy stupid pigs!”

“I get it. He must have left in a fit of rage after witnessing the ruckus that brat had created!”

“He must have thought that the Garrison family disrespected him!”

Joseph trembled with rage. “That brat will pay for this!”

The multitude reacted accordingly.

Levi has ruined the Garrison family’s glorious event!

He just pissed off the big shot!

That’s equivalent to cutting off the Garrison family’s chance to reach the sky!

Levi Garrison is indeed the sinner of the Garrison family!

At that moment, the Garrison family wished to skin Levi alive.

His adoptive parents, brother, and sister-in-law especially hated him to the bone. “Just you wait, Levi!”

After leaving Crystal Palace Hotel, the next person that Levi was going to look for was his wife, Zoey Lopez.

In this life, he owed no debt to the Garrison family, nor his friends and classmates, but Zoey.

He had been imprisoned on the second day after the wedding, making Zoey lose her reputation. That even put her through six years of widowhood.

This woman has carried too much on her shoulders for six years.

But now that I’m back, I’ll hold your hand, and we’ll conquer the world together!

After hesitating for a long time, Levi pressed the doorbell.

Thud!

The young woman dropped her mobile phone to the ground as the door opened.

Upon taking a closer look at Levi’s face, Zoey broke down in tears.

“Zoey, quick, just get the parcel and come in. It’s almost time for the family banquet! Your grandfather is going to settle your marriage at the family banquet tonight. You can’t get away from this!”

“Yeah! Quickly get dressed! Your grandfather is going to set you up with someone else!”

Zoey’s parents’ voices sounded from the inside.

“Zoey, I’m back!” Levi said excitedly, wanting to fling his arm around her, but Zoey slapped his hands away.

“Why did you come back? I’ve already forgotten about you...”

Zoey’s voice was choked with sobs.

Very soon after, Zoey’s parents, Aaron and Caitlyn, came out, looking horrified.

“How dare you have the nerve to come back? Do you know how much criticism my family has suffered because of you? Especially Zoey. Do you know how much she has suffered for the past six years?” Zoey’s father, Aaron, reproached.

Meanwhile, her mother, Caitlyn, pushed and shoved Levi. “You should know that this relationship between you and Zoey is impossible in this life the moment you went to jail! You’re a criminal! You’re just a street rat in North Hampton! You’re only putting Zoey in harm’s way by coming to see her!”

Naturally, Levi had known of Zoey’s sufferings for the past six years, including her refusal to remarry because of him.

Levi put on a serious face. “This time, I’m back for good. I won’t leave Zoey ever again. I will grant her a bright future and let her own the world!”

Levi’s declaration had Aaron and Caitlyn hooting with laughter.

“You’ve spent six years in jail. How are you going to give Zoey a future?” Aaron asked with a sneer.

“Yeah! With your mouth?” Caitlyn chimed in. “There’s a limit to talking big!”

Nonetheless, Levi smiled. “Don’t worry. I’ll reclaim what I lost in those years! I’ll destroy the Garrison family in a month!”

“Levi!” This time, even Zoey couldn’t bear to listen to his nonsense any longer. “Can we be more realistic? It doesn’t matter if you just get out of prison. Can’t you just be down to earth and start anew? I believe that you will make a comeback one day, but you can’t just indulge in tall talk. Do you know just how powerful the Garrison family is right now? And besides, today’s era is a far cry from what it was six years ago!”

“Zoey, trust me,” Levi said earnestly. “I can make the Garrison family bow at my feet with just a word!”

THE PROTECTOR CHAPTER 3

Preposterous!

Levi’s bravado nearly drove Zoey and her parents round the bend.

Having been caged up for six years, did he finally lose his mind?

“Fine. If you say so,” Zoey said, shoving her mobile phone to Levi directly. “Then prove it! I’d like to see how you make the Garrison family bow their heads with just one word!”

“I...”

Levi was stunned.

It was true that he could exterminate the Garrison family with his words, but he had given them one month; it would be too uneventful to destroy them now.

“See, you can’t do it, can’t you? Then don’t you ever talk big if you can’t!”

Zoey smashed the phone to the ground, marking her wrath.

Following that, her parents pushed Levi away. “Go now. You’re not welcome here. We’ve got a family banquet to attend!”

“No. Mom, Dad, let him in!”

“What do you mean, Zoey?”

“I won’t remarry. My husband is back.”

...

Aaron and Caitlyn couldn’t talk her round, so they could only let him in.

After that, Zoey took Levi to her bedroom.

“Since you’re back, you’re still my husband. I don’t care about the gossips. Besides, I believe you’re innocent, and anyone with discerning eyes can see that it was the Garrison family who’d framed you!”

Levi could feel the warmth in his heart.

She trusted him, and that was more than enough for him.

“But you must promise me to start from zero and be down to earth. I believe you will achieve something great with your ability! I’ll give you five years!”

“That’s unnecessary,” Levi said. “Just give me one month. In a month, I’ll de—”

“Shut up! I don’t want to listen to your nonsensical and unrealistic talks! Why can’t we just be realistic?” Zoey shouted.

“Even if you have nothing now, as long as you take one step at a time, I believe you’ll get back on your feet!”

Levi shut up obediently.

“I bought you these six years ago.” Zoey took out a suit from the cupboard. “Change into it at once and follow me to the family banquet!”

“Zoey, what is up with you?”

Seeing Levi all dressed up, Aaron and Caitlyn were naturally dissatisfied.

Zoey clung onto Levi’s arm. “Mom, Dad, Levi is my husband now! I will make myself clear to Grandpa tonight!”

Aaron and Caitlyn looked daggers at Levi, sighing helplessly, “For Heaven’s sake!”

The Lopez family banquet was held at Golden Port Restaurant, where they contracted the entire restaurant.

Naturally, the Lopez family was not as powerful as the Garrison family, but they were considered above average in North Hampton.

When Zoey and her family arrived at the main hall, they were greeted with strange and jesting gazes.

In the past, when Zoey and Levi had gotten married, Aaron’s family status was the highest in the Lopez family.

But after Levi’s downfall, Aaron’s family had experienced a seismic shift in life, and their status in the Lopez family took a nosedive as they became the subject of ridicule, especially during family events.

“Look! Is that Levi beside Zoey?”

“Yeah! It’s really him! He’s released from prison already?”

All eyes fell on Levi at once.

Harry, the head of the Lopez family, snorted and turned a blind eye to the four of them.

The old man’s favorite now was Fabian, his eldest son, and his family.

Mainly because Fabian’s son-in-law, Samuel Robertson, was of mixed ethnicity who was born rich and had lived overseas.

This time, Harry was going to set up Zoey with Samuel’s younger brother, Chris, who had been casting covetous eyes on Zoey for some time now.

With no one paying attention to them, Aaron and his family could only find a place to sit first.

As they were about to take their seats, a voice was heard. “No, Aaron. You guys can’t sit here.”

It was a reminder from Henry, the second eldest son of the Lopez family.

“What?”

“There are sitting arrangements to the family banquet this time.”

Aaron looked puzzled. “How so?”

“There are four tables for the family banquet! And it’s decided according to the family contribution!”

“For example, the first table is given to the family who contributed over five million to the family in a year; a million for the second table, a hundred thousand for the third table, and less than a hundred thousand for the last table, or should I say no contribution at all!”

Henry smiled smugly. “Our family has made good profits this year, and we’ve contributed just about five million to the family. So excuse me, but this table here is ours.”

“Of course, you can also sit at the first table without contributing. That is if your family has tens of millions of assets.”

“Unfortunately, we couldn’t be any clearer about your family’s situation,” sneered Maddison, Henry’s wife. “Now that there’s an ex-convict in your family, I’m sorry that you guys can only sit at the last table!”

“Mom, Dad, as far as I know, Uncle Aaron and his family didn’t contribute much to the family last year,” said Shaun, Henry’s son, walking over with a glass in his hand. “Their company went bankrupt, and they even borrowed over two million from Grandpa. Clearly, it’s a negative contribution. It’s unfair to the relatives sitting at the fourth table! I say we add a fifth table for negative contributors!”

“Yeah, I agree!”

The rest of the Lopez family concurred.

“Okay, we’ll do as Shaun says! This shall motivate you people!”

Harry gave his consent.

“Hurry up and sit down. Don’t just stand there and make a fool out of yourselves.” Harry glared at Aaron.

With that, Aaron and his family walked over to the fifth table quietly.

“Which table should a ten billion contributor sit at?” asked Levi suddenly, pulling Zoey’s arm.

Levi was the one and only five-star God of War, and wealth to him was just a number.

In fact, he didn’t know exactly how much he had, but he could still fork out ten billion casually for the family contribution on behalf of Aaron’s family.

As soon as Levi said that, everyone was stunned at his query.

After a few moments of silence, the crowd blossomed into an enormous belly laugh.

“Ten billion? You must be kidding me! Even the aristocratic Garrison family may not have that much

money!”

“This kid must have a loose screw in the head to come here and embarrass himself!”

“Hey, Aaron. Did you know you have a son-in-law worth ten billion? Hahaha...”

Sensing the jeering gazes and titter from the people around, Aaron and his family wished the ground could swallow them whole.

This is embarrassing!

Too embarrassing!

Zoey’s temper sparked, and her eyes blazed with rage.

“Levi Garrison, is it not enough for you to talk big at home that you have to come here and embarrass me? Do you think you haven’t done enough after all these years?”

Zoey trembled as tears silently rolling down her cheeks.

“But I do have ten billion!” Levi said helplessly.

At this time, no one bothered to listen to Levi’s sheer bull because the star of the day, Fabian’s son-in-law, had arrived.

Everyone, including Harry, went out to the entrance to greet him.

“I’m sorry to keep everyone waiting.” Samuel wore an apologetic expression.

“Your flight was nearly ten hours late. What’s up with that?” Harry asked in concern.

Samuel smiled. “Grandpa, don’t you know? A big shot has arrived in North Hampton, and North Hampton Airport was sealed off for eight hours.”

What? Is there such a thing?

“Who’s this big shot to have the airport sealed off, Samuel?” Harry asked smilingly.

“It’s not just that. It’s said that a hundred planes escorted the private jet of that big shot, and there were a hundred thousand people guarding at the airport.”

“Damn!”

“What?”

The crowd gasped in shock.

“He’s the commander-in-chief of nine military regions, the God of War of Erudia. Haha, you may not believe it if I say this, but I met this great man when I was at a gathering abroad, and we even

exchanged numbers. I didn't expect him to take up a post in North Hampton! I'll ask him out sometime in support of the Lopez family. That way, you'll gain a foothold in North Hampton in no time," Samuel said loftily.

"God! That's incredible! How did you even get to know someone like him?"

"My brother-in-law is so cool!"

"The Lopez family's son-in-law is one of a kind! Of course, except for one!"

Everyone looked at Samuel with veneration; the old man was all the more impressed, Aaron and Caitlyn begrudged Fabian's son-in-law, and Zoey was envious as well.

But she believed that in five years, Levi, too, could make her grandfather proud.

Yet, unbeknownst to them, Levi was actually barely stifling in his laughter. This kid is quite something to know that I've arrived.

But his ability to make up nonsense is even more impressive.

"You're saying you know the God of War?" Levi asked.

Samuel raised his head. "Yeah, we had a drink together. Is there a problem?"

Levi chuckled. "Then why don't I recognize you?"

THE PROTECTOR CHAPTER 4

"Huh?"

Samuel froze, and so did the rest.

What does he mean?

Samuel frowned. "Are you saying that you're the God of War?"

Levi smiled. "Yes, I am the God of War. But I never knew you."

The crowd burst into laughter; Samuel especially laughed his head off.

Even old man Harry was amused as he had never seen such a sensationalist before.

Clown!

Levi is such a clown.

"Gosh, Zoey, your husband is hilarious!" Melanie, Samuel's wife, derided. "He called himself the God of War, just to prove himself and save his pride! Do you even know who the God of War is? He's the commander-in-chief of nine military regions who can wipe off a clan with just his words! What? Is the prison a war zone? Jeez, Zoey, what a husband you have there. I feel terrible for you!"

The others also tried to get a word in. "Don't bring him out in the future, Zoey. You might not think it's embarrassing, but we do!"

“Yeah, don’t ever let him attend any of our family banquet in the future. The Lopez family wants to preserve our reputation!”

“Aaron, your family is really rotten. I’m so disappointed in you.” Harry gave Aaron a dark look.

“God! What sin have I committed in my previous life to deserve this?”

Aaron and Caitlyn looked down, their expressions ugly.

This is the most humiliating day ever!

Zoey sat in the corner. In the face of many insults and derision, she didn’t utter a single word, but tears rolled down her cheeks silently.

Never in her mind would she expect to be confronted by such humiliating moments.

Zoey looked at Levi, feeling a little disgusted.

She didn’t mind that Levi was imprisoned, nor did she mind the stigma of him having gone to prison.

All she cared about was Levi’s attitude.

Initially, she thought that he would start from scratch and live a practical life after he got out of prison, but the Levi Garrison right now was a bitter disappointment.

He’s so unrealistic! A sensationalist! Not to mention his damned pride!

What a buffoon!

Zoey didn’t want to admit that this was her husband.

“Okay, aren’t you the God of War?” Samuel refused to let Levi off so easily. “There will be a welcome banquet tomorrow night in North Hampton, specially dedicated to welcome this big shot! I hope to see you there!”

Samuel was up to date.

Indeed, there was such a banquet.

As Levi had decided to settle down in North Hampton, the higher-ups had assigned him as the deputy of North Hampton, which was more reasonable.

After all, his purpose of being here was uncertain, and everyone was afraid of this big shot.

It was easy to cause panic.

For this reason, North Hampton had decided to host a welcome banquet.

“Oh? Can you also attend such a welcome banquet, Samuel?” Harry couldn’t help but ask upon hearing their conversation.

Samuel squared his shoulders and smiled. “I just received two invitation cards!”

In fact, Samuel had gone out of his way to buy two invitation cards for two million just to show off at the family banquet today.

All those present looked at Samuel in awe.

Now that’s two million well spent! He thought to himself smugly.

“Can you get any more of this invitation card, Samuel?” Harry asked cautiously. “If so, your father and I would like to expand our horizons!”

Fabian gazed at Samuel with anticipation in his eyes.

“I’ll get it no matter what!”

Samuel flat out agreed, although he could feel the burn in his pocket.

That’s another two million there!

“It’s just a matter of one phone call!”

Samuel made a call and purchased two more invitation cards.

“Say, Zoey,” Melanie said, scooting over to Zoey. “Will I see you at the banquet tomorrow? Hahaha...”

Zoey’s face darkened, knowing that Melanie was embarrassing her on purpose.

Not long after, a black car stopped in front of Golden Port Hotel, with a man in a suit walking in soon after.

“Aren’t you Riley, the secretary?”

Harry quickly went up to greet him upon realizing who the visitor was.

Riley, who came into contact with the upper management every day, was the secretary of the North Hampton Office Building.

Surely, he had to show his respect.

“Greetings, Mr. Lopez. I’m here for one simple purpose—to send the Lopez family ten invitation cards for tomorrow’s banquet!”

After dropping off ten invitation cards, Riley left in a hurry.

It was a mission assigned to him from the head secretary of North Hampton.

At this moment, the head secretary of North Hampton was sitting in the car outside.

He was afraid of meeting the legendary God of War.

The words of his big boss echoed clearly in his ears, Every important family member of the God of War's father-in-law's family must attend tomorrow's banquet. He was to send out the invitations in a low-profile manner while keeping the identity of the sender unknown.

Hence, he had assigned Riley for the task.

Levi said nothing when he saw this scene.

Samuel, however, was taken aback.

What's going on?

Didn't I just buy two invitation cards?

Why did they send us ten cards at once? And who was it again? Riley, the secretary?

"You're the best grandson-in-law, Samuel," Harry guffawed. "To have the secretary from the office building send us ten invitations at once with just a word; the Lopez family is proud of you!"

Fabian was all smiles.

"Damn! You're amazing, Samuel!"

Shaun regarded Samuel with admiration.

"Melanie has indeed married a good man! You're surely the happiest woman in the world! Unlike Zoey, who married a criminal!"

...

"I'm sorry that my husband is too amazing, Zoey. Just say the word if you need our help in the future. But I dare not get too close to you, though," Melanie paused. "Lest someone tries to jump his sister-in-law..."

Zoey could feel her anger boiling up.

It was obvious that Melanie was insulting her, but she couldn't do anything about it; Samuel's ability to have the secretary from the office building send the invitation cards in person with just a phone call was just too over the top.

Besides, an invitation for a banquet of this level wasn't something the Lopez family could easily obtain.

Aaron and Caitlyn, on the other hand, were even more envious.

With a son-in-law like that, I bet we'll wake up with a smile every morning.

Life will be all about counting money.

Right, isn't Samuel's brother in love with our daughter?

However, the couple couldn't change Zoey's mind, so they didn't muse out loud.

Meanwhile, Samuel was completely flummoxed by the whole thing.

Where in the world do I find connections in North Hampton?

They must be mistaken.

But since it's at this point now, I guess I should just go along with it.

It'll make me look good, anyway!

Samuel chuckled. "I'm sorry, Grandpa. I could only get us ten invitations. After all, there aren't many places available for this kind of banquet."

Harry grinned from ear to ear. "You're the cream of the crop, Samuel! Here, let Grandpa give you a toast!"

Upon seeing this, Aaron was green with envy.

"Grandpa, why don't you distribute these invitations?" Samuel said.

"Sure."

Harry had four children in total. Everyone received an invitation, all except for Aaron's family.

The last few remaining invitations were given to Shaun and some of his favorite grandchildren.

"Thank you, Grandpa!"

Shaun and the others flourished the invitation cards in their hands before Aaron's family.

Without a word said, Aaron's family bowed their heads and remained silent.

In Harry's eyes, they were no better than the younger ones, and they acknowledged it. They could only blame themselves for being worthless.

Just then, someone's voice broke the silence. "Why didn't we get an invitation?"

It was Levi.

THE PROTECTOR CHAPTER 5

Everyone laughed themselves silly at Levi's question.

"Do you think your family is qualified to get an invitation? Have you guys ever contributed to the Lopez family?" Shaun retaliated directly.

"Yeah! Dream on! Can you guys be any more shameless to expect to receive an invitation?" Henry questioned unabashedly.

Zoey and her parents had given up on all hope.

They looked at Levi with nothing but disgust in their eyes.

However, Levi let out a cold snort. "It's for my sake that this invitation is given to you! I intended to give them to my in-laws, and they were given to you passingly."

"Have some pride, Levi!" Fabian exploded. "Clearly, Samuel got these invitations through his connections. What the hell has it got to do with you?!"

"Yeah! Who the hell do you think you are?" Samuel's anger mounted. "How dare you try to take credit for this?"

Soon after, Henry pointed at Aaron. "Just look at your son-in-law, Aaron! Do something about him, and don't bring him to our next family banquet! We cannot tolerate such insolence!"

Levi was about to say something when Zoey pulled him outside. "Come with me!!!"

She couldn't stand him any longer as hot torrents of grief coursed down her face.

"Levi, please, don't embarrass me anymore. I really can't hold on if you keep this up!"

Levi wiped away her tears and asked, "Do you want to attend the banquet, Zoey?"

"Who wouldn't want to? Didn't you see the look in Mom and Dad's eyes?" Zoey said grumpily. "But there's nothing we can do, even if we want to go. It's not like you can get us in, can you?"

"I can!" Levi said decisively.

This was too much for Zoey to handle. Her temper sparked, and she turned on her heels, trying to leave.

"Zoey, why don't you trust me?" Levi asked.

"How am I supposed to trust you when you're behaving like this?" Zoey replied with a question of her own.

Levi chuckled. "I'll definitely get you inside. I, Levi Garrison, am a man of my word!"

Zoey nodded. "Okay, I'll trust you just this once! If you can't do it, we're over!"

"Deal!"

"Fine, I'm going all out on this one!" Zoey said resolutely while wiping her tears. "I don't need this stupid pride! I'm going to continue to attend this family banquet and tell everyone that my husband is capable of getting an invitation for tomorrow's banquet too!"

"Okay, ladies first. Let me just make one call."

...

"Azure Dragon, tell Jesse I'll attend the banquet he's hosting tomorrow," Levi said once the call went through.

"What? So you agree to attend the banquet? Thank God! The higher-ups were so worried that you won't give Jesse this honor!"

"Yes, I'll attend. But please ban some of the people from this event..."

"Roger that, Sir! I'll make the arrangements now!"

Returning inside, Levi saw Zoey holding her head high, looking as proud as a peacock.

It was obvious that she had made the announcement as many pairs of eyes were fixated on him.

"Say, how do you guys think this punk got the invitation? By stealing?"

"Who knows if he bought it for the sake of pretending!"

Samuel laughed. "Don't you guys know that one invitation cost over one million?"

"Aaron's family owes Grandpa about three million. How can they afford to buy an invitation?"

Right then, dinner was served, marking the start of the family banquet.

"I think the four of them can just have a bowl of noodles each. There's no need to serve them. What do you guys think?" Henry asked.

Samuel laughed. "Let's just feed them. Otherwise, it'll look like Grandpa is mistreating them."

"Alright then."

Other tables were bustling with noise and excitement, with everyone toasting each other and currying favor with Samuel, but it was deadly silence at Levi's.

Aaron glanced at Samuel, then back at Levi, sighing, "What's the point of getting envious? Such is my fate!"

Caitlyn glowered at Levi. Can today be any more humiliating?

However, they didn't dare to leave without the old man's permission and could only continue to suffer from the humiliation in awkward silence.

Right then, Samuel came over with a glass of wine, followed by a group of people who had been paying court to him.

He walked past Levi and stood before Zoey. "I was going to introduce my brother to you, Zoey. He's so much better than me! But it seems that you're not fortunate enough to enjoy a good life. It's a pity that you have a bad taste in men!"

Aaron and Caitlyn sighed.

If only Levi didn't show up, Zoey would have been with Chris, and our family would have been rich again.

How amazing is that?

But sadly, it seems that we are plagued by poverty!

Soon, the family banquet ended.

"Let's go to my house. I want to have a good talk with my grandson-in-law regarding the Lopez family's future development and tomorrow's banquet. All of you must sit in and listen. It'll be good for you," Harry instructed.

Aaron and Caitlyn looked at Harry in anticipation, hoping that the Lopez family would lend a hand to alleviate their current livelihood.

But little did they know Harry responded, "Aaron, you guys can go back on your own!"

Aaron hesitated a little. "Dad, but I..."

"No buts! We don't need you here. Besides, your good son-in-law just came back from prison. I don't want him to stain my place with bad luck!" Harry said, then left with the crowd.

Before leaving, Samuel, Melanie, and a few others stood before Levi, waving the invitation cards in their hands. "Don't disappoint me tomorrow night. Don't say you know me if you can't get in. I can't afford to throw my reputation down the gutters."

Levi snickered. "You'll never know who's the one who can't get in when the time comes."

"Alright then. We'll soon see about that."

Everyone left happily with an invitation card in their hands, leaving Aaron and his family sighing and groaning.

Aaron cast a deep glance at Levi.

If only he could bring honor for the family...

It's a pity that he just got out of prison. Even surviving is a problem for him.

After that, Levi followed Zoey home.

Compared to the Garrison family, this was his home—a home where a woman had been waiting for him for six years.

Back home, Levi took the initiative to lay a mattress on the floor, but Zoey let him sleep on the bed instead.

Thereafter, he lay on the bed while Zoey continued to draft a plan at the desk.

“What are you doing?” Levi asked.

“I'm drafting a proposal for an ecological park development project at West City. Even if the chance of success is not even one percent, I'm going to try my best to win this bid!” Zoey smiled.

Until the following night, not once did Zoey complain about him, nor did she show a long face.

But she couldn't help it anymore as it was almost time for the welcome banquet.

“Levi Garrison, I trusted you so much and bet everything on you. But where's the invitation? How on earth am I supposed to believe you now? I'd thought you would come up with ideas to get us in, but you didn't step out from this house nor made a phone call the moment we came home last night. Do you think the invitation will just fall from the sky?”

Aaron and Caitlyn added, “What are you waiting for? Zoey had made a big promise last night. If you don't make this happen, there won't be a place for us to live in the Lopez family in the future.”

Levi glanced at the clock. “It's almost time. Just follow me.”

Driving in Aaron's Haval, they arrived at Paradise Villa, where the God of War's welcome banquet was held.

“Zoey, I will prove to you now that I can do it!”

Levi pulled Zoey and headed towards the entrance.

THE PROTECTOR CHAPTER 6

“Well, well, look who's here. If it isn't Aaron and his criminal son-in-law.”

Along with the mockeries, Harry and the others had arrived with bags of gifts consisted of fine wine, wild ginseng, tea, and so on in their hands.

The Lopez family's plan was simple—to butter up the God of War as much as they could.

“I didn't expect you to come, Zoey,” Melanie said as she moved closer to Zoey, her voice laced with sarcasm. “Where's your invitation card? Show it to me. It's easy to purchase counterfeit ones these days.”

Melanie, Samuel, and the others were not the slightest bit convinced that Levi could get an invitation.

Just look at their status, there's no way they can get an invitation to the banquet!

It's like saying pigs could fly!

“I...”

Zoey hesitated because there was no invitation card, to begin with.

“Come on. What are you hiding?” Melanie laughed. “Don't tell me your invitation card is made of gold that I can't even take a look at it?”

Zoey clammed up, her head lowered.

“Aaron, show us your invitation card!” Harry demanded upon noticing the couple's odd demeanors.

“Dad, I...”

Aaron panicked.

“What? You won't obey even your own father's order? Hurry up and show it to me!” Harry bellowed.

Aaron panted heavily and could only tell the truth. “Dad, we don't have an invitation card... It was Levi who brought us here...”

Soon after they heard it, Samuel, Melanie, and the others laughed so hard that their belly hurt.

“You're such an idiot!” Harry glared at Aaron. “What a disgrace to have a son like you!”

Sensing the mass' scoffing eyes and ruthless laughter, a fresh swell of rage rose in Aaron as his last piece of dignity left in front of the Lopez family vanished without a trace.

Zoey, too, hated Levi to the core, knowing that they had lost all respect from the Lopez family.

“How shameless of you to attend the banquet without an invitation!”

“Let me tell you a fact. No matter how hard you try, your family can never enter this gate!” Samuel taunted.

“Let's go inside, Grandpa,” Melanie said as she held onto Harry's arm. “Don't let them get in the way.”

“You’re right. Knowing them is such a disgrace.”

The Lopez family shot daggers at Levi and hurried towards the gate.

Aaron was about to say something when Levi said, “Dad, look. They won’t be able to get in.”

Standing at the entrance of Paradise Villa were dozens of security guards who were hired to maintain order at the scene.

Samuel took out twelve invitation cards and handed them over. “For twelve, please.”

He said that as he straightened his back, looking proud.

After all, how many were there who could take out twelve invitation cards at once?

But the next second, the security guard said expressionlessly, “You people are restricted from entering and are banned from attending the banquet!”

“What?”

Samuel and the others thought they had misheard the security guard.

“That’s impossible! Riley, the secretary from the Office Building, sent us these invitations in person yesterday!” Harry argued.

Samuel put on a haughty face. “This is my invitation card. Let me in this instance! You can’t afford to mess with me!”

Thud!

Suddenly, a truncheon rested on Samuel’s head.

“Do you not understand human language? You people are restricted from entering! Must I explain to you in action?”

With the cold truncheon aiming at his head, Samuel was so frightened that he almost peed his pants.

But with so many eyes watching him, he mustered his courage and struck back. “I dare you to touch me! Don’t you know who I am? Let me speak to your supervisor!”

Wham!

The security guard knocked him down straight away with the truncheon; Samuel had completely wet his pants, and the Lopez family was all the more petrified.

“What are you guys waiting for? Scram!” the security guard barked.

The Lopez family helped Samuel up and made a dash.

“You were right. They couldn’t get in.”

Aaron was shocked at the scene that unfolded before him.

At that moment, Levi smiled and held Zoey’s hand. “We should get inside!”

“Don’t! We’re going to get ourselves killed. How are we supposed to get inside when Samuel and the rest can’t even get through the security checkpoint?” Aaron and Caitlyn said and back-pedaled in fear.

Zoey’s delicate body trembled as well. “Yeah, can we really get inside? We don’t even have an invitation card!”

“Didn’t you say that you’ll give me one last chance? How do you know if you don’t try?” Levi smiled.

“Okay, I trust you!” Zoey held Levi’s hand tightly.

“Officers!” Melanie’s voice was heard just as the four of them approached the security checkpoint. “Although they are members of the Lopez family, my grandfather had long kicked them out of the Lopez family! They are not related to us!”

“Yes, officers. They have nothing to do with the Lopez family,” Harry said in a flustered voice. “Please don’t take offense at us!”

Levi looked back and sneered.

Such heartless creatures!

When they arrived at the security checkpoint, Zoey even closed her eyes. To be honest, she’d rather die today than being humiliated.

Aaron and Caitlyn shared the same sentiment.

Harry and the others didn’t leave. They were hiding in a distance, intending to watch Aaron and his family make a fool of themselves.

“Welcome, Mr. Garrison and his family! You are our most distinguished guest. Invitations are not required!”

Upon hearing that, Zoey opened her eyes to see dozens of security guards lined up in two rows, saluting them.

As if they had entered fantasyland, Zoey and her parents made their way inside Paradise Villa.

Harry and the others, who were waiting for a good show outside, were completely dumbstruck.

“They... They went in? How is that possible?”

Truth be told, Zoey and her parents felt like they were on cloud nine when they saw the Lopez family’s

incredulous faces.

Aaron looked around, still in disbelief. “That was easy. How did you pull that off, Levi?”

It was only then did they feel that their son-in-law was somewhat useful.

At the very least, they managed to redeem themselves from the humiliation they had suffered.

Caitlyn smiled. “Levi also had connections in North Hampton before this, no?”

“You’re right, Mom. I have friends,” Levi replied.

Zoey looked at Levi suspiciously. She had a hunch that things were not that simple.

Almost none of his friends stepped forward when he was in trouble.

There were many who put the boot in instead...

Would anyone help him?

In the villa, Zoey and his parents were careful of their every movement.

After all, they couldn’t afford to break anything or offend anyone on such an occasion.

“Zoey, is that you? What are you doing here? Am I seeing things?”

Suddenly, a voice of surprise sounded from behind.

Zoey’s eyes were filled with disgust when she saw the incoming person.

The four people that were coming her way were dressed in tuxedos and had the bearing of royalty.

The man in the lead was Derrick Johns, the son of the president of Apex Group.

He had lusted after Zoey for ages, even offering millions to sleep with her, but she remained unmoved.

As an act of revenge, Derrick had caused Zoey’s well-developed company to go bankrupt.

“Why can’t I be here?” Zoey said coldly.

Derrick looked Levi up and down. “Is this your criminal husband? Did he bring you in?”

Upon that, he leaned in closer to Zoey and gave a lubricious chuckle. “I don’t care how you guys got in, but with my powers, I can send your husband back to jail again and get him locked up for a decade or two!”

Zoey believed Derrick could do it, given his expedients and abilities.

“What do you want?” Zoey looked at him warily.

“As long as you promise to keep me company, I swear I won’t trouble him! Otherwise, I’ll definitely send him in again!”

THE PROTECTOR CHAPTER 7

“You wish!”

Zoey would rather die than agree to such a condition.

“Fine. Just you wait!”

Derrick grinned insidiously before turning to leave.

Noticing Zoey’s pale complexion, Levi grasped her hand and asked, “Zoey, what happened? Who’s that guy just now?”

Zoey shook her head. “It’s nothing!”

However, she knew Derrick wouldn’t let this rest, so she was perturbed along the way.

Halfway through, a large group of people suddenly surrounded the four of them.

These people were members of the security team, each pointing at them with a gun.

Zoey was scared out of her wits. Her face drained of all colors as she gripped Levi’s hand tightly.

Likewise, Aaron and Caitlyn were paralyzed in terror, as they knew that it was Derrick’s revenge.

The leader of the group, decked out in combat suits, looked at them with cold and merciless eyes under the protective goggles. “Mr. Johns, is this the criminal that you were speaking of?”

“Yes, Mr. Lewis!” Derrick replied. “This guy’s fresh out of prison today. How is he qualified to attend such a banquet? I suspect he has something up his sleeve! If anything crops up on this occasion, can you afford to bear this responsibility, Mr. Lewis?”

“What? Is this for real?”

Ethan Lewis, the deputy team leader of the security team, was responsible for the safety inside. He wasn’t aware of how they had come in.

Derrick flashed a complacent smile at Zoey, then said to Ethan, “No matter what’s the situation, Mr. Lewis, I suggest we arrest him first! We need to get rid of any possible risks!”

“Right! How could he attend this banquet right after he was released from prison? Check their invitations first!” Ethan said coldly.

Zoey and her parents were dumbfounded.

What invitation cards! There were no invitation cards at all!

“Hand over the invitations!” Derrick spoke in an overbearing manner.

“We don’t have them,” Levi replied placidly.

“Haha. Did you hear that, Mr. Lewis? They have no invitations at all! Something is definitely fishy here!” Derrick was elated to hear that they came without any invitation.

“Men, arrest them!” Ethan gave his orders.

At that point, Zoey was already freaking out.

Mom, dad, and I will definitely be fine even if we’re arrested. But Levi will certainly be subjected to Derrick’s manipulation and get sent to jail again.

“Wait! We came in through the security checkpoint. What makes you think we don’t have the right to be here?” Zoey said indignantly.

“That’s impossible!” Derrick sneered. “An invitation is compulsory to enter this place! Even the host of today’s banquet, the God of War, needs an invitation! Something is not right if there’s no invitation!”

“Yes, that’s a first for me as well,” Ethan said with certainty, knowing that everyone, including the tycoons, came with invitations today. “Take them away!”

Aaron and Caitlyn squeezed their eyes shut in horror.

Zoey, too, was terribly frightened.

“Accept your fate, Zoey!” Derrick chortled. “This is the consequence of rejecting me!”

“Whoever told you that one must need an invitation to get in?” Levi’s voice sounded abruptly.

Everyone halted and stared at him with surprise.

Just then, Zoey tugged on Levi’s sleeves, signaling him to stop talking, while Aaron and his wife looked even more horrified by Levi’s retort.

Is he courting disaster?

Levi merely patted her shoulders. “Trust me again, will you?”

“Okay.” Zoey nodded.

After that, Levi’s gaze landed on Ethan. “Call your supervisor and ask him this—can Levi Garrison come in without an invitation?”

“Hahaha... Is he retarded? Who does he think he is?”

Derrick and his companions laughed so hard that their stomach hurt.

But Ethan was angered by Levi’s words, so he did as he was asked. “Okay, I shall ask the team leader if he knows you.”

Standing beside them, Derrick laughed heartily and was happy to see Levi make a fool of himself.

By then, many people had gathered around at the commotion, causing Zoey and her parents to lower their heads in embarrassment.

This is an embarrassment!

Ethan consulted Clement Phillips, the security team leader, through his headset.

When the voice came through the headset, his complexion turned for the worst. His eyes were filled with fear and trepidation as he looked at Levi.

“I-I... I got it, S-Sir...” Ethan stammered as he struggled to make out his words.

Derrick, who was unaware of the situation, looked at Ethan with anticipation. “How is it? Mr. Lewis?”

Slap!

The answer he got in return was an unexpected hard slap on the cheek that sent him flying seven to eight meters away. His mouth was full of blood, and he even lost a few teeth.

“Mr. Lewis, w-why?”

Derrick’s eyes widened as he stuttered.

Ethan stepped forward and threw another punch, causing blood to spurt from Derrick’s wounds.

“Why? You abused your power and deliberately made things difficult for Ms. Lopez! They may not have an invitation, but they are our honored guests who came in through proper means! But you! You had disrupted the order and dampened the mood of the banquet! Men, arrest him and lock him up for a few days!” Ethan ordered.

The two security guards next to him stepped forward and grabbed Derrick, dragging him away as if he were a lifeless corpse.

“Mr. Garrison, Ms. Lopez, a thousand apologies for the trouble!”

Ethan dared not stay there any longer as he led his men and hurried off.

The unexpected twist made Zoey and her parents dumbfounded.

What just happened?

Didn't they come to arrest us?

Why was Derrick arrested instead?

What's going on? This happened right after he reported his name.

The three of them gazed at Levi, with Zoey eyeing him doubtfully.

"Aren't you going to explain what's going on?" Zoey started.

"It's simple! We may not have an invitation, but we came in legally, so we're safe. And what Derrick did just now has disrupted the order of the banquet. You guys saw the horde of busybodies just now, no? That's a bad impression right there. If the God of War learned about what transpired just now, forget about Derrick, even Jesse Nielsen himself can't bear this responsibility."

"I get it now," Aaron responded immediately. "It's fine as long as we prove that we came in legally!"

Caitlyn nodded. "Yeah, that should be it."

Though Zoey felt that something was amiss, there seemed to be no loopholes in his explanation. To her, it sounded perfectly logical and reasonable.

Yet, the moment Levi turned his head, his eyes flickered.

He had heard what Derrick said just now. Instead of locking him up for a few days, he was determined to let Derrick rot in prison.

The dinner banquet was simple, but the people who attended were so great a personage that Zoey and her parents dared not make a sound once they were seated.

"Mom, Dad, why are you guys so tense? Walk around. Wouldn't it be nice to make friends and meet new people?" Levi smiled.

Aaron and Caitlyn exchanged glances. But in the end, they decided to stay rooted to their spot.

Zoey tilted her head, giving Levi a once-over. "Aren't you afraid?"

Levi's outward tranquility gave Zoey and her parents an illusion that he was accustomed to such an occasion.

"Why should I be?" Levi said.

Zoey pondered. He must be accustomed to it from facing vile and vicious people in prison.

Thus, she stopped asking.

In the meantime, there were more and more people arriving at the banquet.

Escorted by big crowds in front and behind, Jesse and a few other North Hampton big shots had arrived as well.

“Hmm? Aaron, I’ve noticed that everyone came with gifts. Even Nielsen’s secretary is carrying a gift box of some kind. I think it’s just us who came empty-handed,” Caitlyn observed.

The rest of the family caught a glimpse, and it was indeed so.

Everyone else brought gifts except for their family.

It was obvious as they were sitting at the corner, unmoving while the others had gathered together, waiting to present their gifts.

“It’s because we didn’t understand the rules. I wasn’t aware of it,” Aaron said as his head drooped.

“Yeah. But Dad, Samuel, and the others had thought about it,” Caitlyn said. “Did you see the gifts in their hands just now?”

Zoey sighed. “It’s all my fault. I wasn’t sure if we could get in.”

Aaron nodded. “Should I arrange for someone to send some gifts now? There’s still time.”

Levi quickly refused. “Mom, Dad, just relax. Perhaps the God of War doesn’t like gifts.”

“No, this is the least we should do,” Zoey said.

However, Levi let out a light chuckle. “I think the God of War will appreciate those who came empty-handed. Do you believe me?”

“I don’t.” Zoey shook her head.

THE PROTECTOR CHAPTER 8

“Did you guys see that? They came empty-handed.”

“Do they not know the rules? Or do they not respect the God of War at all?”

“I don’t think I’ve seen them before. Who are they? Did they sneak in?”

...

Soon, everyone noticed Aaron and his family.

Hearing the various mutterings, Aaron wished the ground would swallow him up.

This is too embarrassing.

It differed from being humiliated in front of someone familiar.

First of all, they didn't have any sense of presence in this place. And second of all, they were just nobodies among the many big shots.

It was a kind of psychological humiliation.

Not long after, the room was in turmoil.

Everyone had shifted their gaze to a few men walking in, dressed in military uniform.

The leader of the group was a bona fide King of War, who carried one star on his shoulder.

His imposing aura had everyone speechless.

“A quick introduction. I served at the Eastern War Zone, code-named Azure Dragon. I'm the God of War's right-hand man!”

Azure Dragon scanned the area domineeringly.

Aaron and his family shuddered in fear when they saw this scene.

“Man, this God of War is too scary! Even his right-hand man is the King of War!”

“Indeed! The God of War is Erudia's first war God with five stars!”

Caitlyn was so anxious that she was about to cry. “We should have at least brought something. What will happen to us if he thinks we are disrespecting him?”

“Azure Dragon, may I ask when is the God of War arriving?” Jesse asked.

Azure Dragon smiled. “Truth be told, the God of War is already in our midst right now. He tends to keep a low profile and hardly ever attends such events. It's beyond my expectation that he actually came.”

His words brought on a storm as people looked around frantically in search of this man.

“Stop searching,” Azure Dragon said sternly. “But keep in mind that the God of War has your every word and action in check. I will act as the mediator today. You can find me if there's anything you need.”

“Well, isn't this a hint?” Aaron whispered upon hearing this.

And the rest seemed to have understood his meaning as well.

“North Hampton Winston Gonzales presents the God of War with a pair of Legendary Pearl!”

“North Hampton Evergreen Chamber of Commerce presents the God of War with a two-hundred-year-

old wild ginseng!”

“North Hampton Apocalypse Club presents the God of War with a McLaren P1!”

...

Everyone at the venue rushed to the front to present their extravagant gifts, in which mansions were also on the list.

Seeing them presenting their gifts one after another, Aaron and Caitlyn bowed their heads in utter embarrassment.

Even Zoey wanted to make a run for the exit.

On the stage, Azure Dragon looked at the mountain of gifts piled up before him. His expression turning colder by the minute.

“What do you mean by doing this?”

Azure Dragon’s voice shocked the audience.

Even Jesse, the governor of North Hampton, held his tongue.

Everyone looked at Azure Dragon, not quite understanding what he meant.

“Are you insulting the God of War?”

“No, no. Absolutely not.”

Azure Dragon’s words scared the life out of everyone.

“Mark my words! This is what the God of War hates the most! Don’t use your tricks on the God of War! By doing so, you’re only looking down on him!” Azure Dragon reproached, and everyone understood at once.

Is the God of War short of money?

Not at all!

The God of War has unparalleled wealth and power!

“Please hold your anger, Azure Dragon! We were in the wrong!”

Azure Dragon glanced at the crowd. “Did anyone not give a gift just now?”

Everyone looked at each other and found that there was no one who didn’t present their gifts.

“Dad, raise your hand! This is your chance!” Levi reminded.

Zoey and her parents had been listening. They were relieved to hear that the other party didn't like receiving gifts. Even so, they weren't audacious enough to raise their hands.

"Zoey, raise your hand if you trust me. It's definitely a good thing!"

Zoey raised her hand, and everyone looked over.

Azure Dragon fixed his eyes on Zoey. "Good, very good! Your attitude is right to come empty-handed! That shows your respect for the God of War! Good job!"

Hearing the King of War's compliments, Zoey and her parents stood up subconsciously, overwhelmed by the flattery and honor.

"What's your name?" Azure Dragon asked.

"Nice to meet you, Azure Dragon. My name is Zoey Lopez. This is my father, Aaron..."

Zoey introduced her family courteously.

"Very good. I shall remember your names. I will give priority to you and your family for any good things in the future!" Azure Dragon pledged.

Everyone in the room was amazed, including Jesse.

Zoey and her parents expressed their gratitude in a fluster.

They never dreamed that such a blessing would fall into their laps.

Even at the end of the banquet, they felt like they were floating in the clouds.

"God, this is all real."

Aaron even pocketed a few name cards from big bosses who had expressed their goodwill to him.

"You're so lucky, young lady!" Caitlyn beamed.

Zoey looked at Levi. "Mom, it's all thanks to Levi! He expected that the God of War doesn't like gifts and encouraged me to raise my hand. I wouldn't have done it if it wasn't for him!"

"Levi has really knocked our socks off tonight!"

"Indeed. Do we even have the chance to attend this banquet if it wasn't for him?"

Aaron and Caitlyn's impression of Levi changed for the better.

"That's your luck," Levi said. "I just asked a friend to get us a few invitations, that's all."

Right then, Zoey regarded Levi with a rather different look.

It's as if everything was within his control tonight, as if he'd solved everything with just his words.

Could it be that he has some influential background?

Maybe he's behind all this today?

But how is it possible? He was imprisoned for six years!

Zoey dismissed that idea soon after.

It had been a long and thrilling night, but fortunately enough, it was a happy ending.

Aaron and Caitlyn felt dizzy with excitement now that they had redeemed and especially proven themselves to the Lopez family.

However, Harry called just then, and it was Aaron who picked up the call.

"You and Zoey don't have to go to work from tomorrow onwards!"

"What?"

Harry's cold and merciless voice sounded from over the phone. "You guys have disappointed me so much. When will you pay back the 2.8 million you owe me?"

"Dad, I..."

"Well, since you can't pay back, I'll take back the company and get Samuel and Melanie to take over the business. You're on your own!" Harry hung up.

Aaron's phone fell to the ground with a thud.

After learning about what happened, Zoey and Caitlyn sobbed, hugging each other.

"What's wrong?" Levi asked.

"Grandpa took back the company," Zoey sniffed. "We're unemployed now."

"Hmph, they'll regret this!"

Meanwhile, at the Lopez residence, Fabian asked gingerly after Harry hung up the phone, "Is it okay for us to do that? Levi doesn't have any influential background, does he?"

"Dad, I've already asked around," Henry said. "My friend's former classmate works at the Municipal Water Conservancy Bureau, and he was there at the banquet. He said that Levi is just a nobody who relied on a friend to get inside. What's more ridiculous, only their family didn't bring any gifts. As if that wasn't embarrassing enough, they even took it seriously when they heard that the God of War didn't like receiving gifts."

Everyone cracked up when they heard what happened.

Harry then let out a cold snort. "I must take back their company and make them jobless for disgracing me at Paradise Villa!"

He was simmering with anger because of the incident today.

It was Henry who hatched the plot to have Harry take back the company.

"That's right. They're a bunch of ungrateful buffoons who never treat Grandpa with respect!" Samuel chimed in. "I swear I'll make their life miserable!"

Harry looked at Samuel, his face full of anticipation. "The Lopez family depends on you now, Samuel. I don't think we can make it to West City's ecological park development project tomorrow, but it's okay. You have to work harder, Samuel, and get us more projects through your connections."

"Don't worry, Grandpa," Samuel replied.

The Protector Chapter 9

That night, Zoey barely slept a wink.

"Don't dwell on it too much and go to sleep," Levi comforted. "Harry will come to you in person and ask you to go back to support the business."

Zoey glared at him. "You think Grandpa will come to me in person? Please, I would thank the heavens if Dad and I can get our jobs back."

"Don't worry. I meant what I said. Harry will ask you to go back!"

Levi turned around, went to the balcony, and made a call. "Azure Dragon, put Nielsen on the line..."

The next morning, Harry woke up to a call from the Ministry of Construction, inviting the Lopez family to attend the bidding for the ecological park development project.

It was a pleasant surprise, as Harry didn't expect to have the chance to take part in the bidding given their qualifications.

Harry quickly gathered the Lopez family in the living room. "I heard before that someone is preparing to take part in the bidding. Who was it again?"

"Dad, it's Zoey!" Henry answered instantly. "She'd drafted a detailed proposal. But how could she take part in the bidding with her family's ability?"

Harry stroked his chin. "So you're saying Zoey has a detailed proposal, and we can take part in the bidding with that proposal?"

“Yeah! Zoey is still competent!”

“Where’s Shaun? Hurry over to Aaron’s and get that proposal! Who would have thought that this bunch of trash would still be useful!”

...

In the meantime, Levi, Zoey, and her parents were having breakfast in silence when a knock was heard on the door.

To their surprise, it was Shaun.

Shaun appraised the house with a glance. “You guys are living here in this dumpster? Is this even a hundred and fifty square meters?”

“What are you doing here?” Aaron asked, clearly displeased at him interrupting their peaceful morning.

“I’m here to get the proposal for the ecological park development project. The Ministry of Construction has informed us that we are going to take part in the bidding,” Shaun said.

“No way!” Zoey turned him down flat. “I drafted this proposal myself. Do it yourself if you’re going to bid for this project. This has nothing to do with me. Besides, I was fired.”

Shaun glowered at her. “Fine. I’ll let Grandpa talk to you!”

At that, he handed his mobile phone to Zoey.

“What’s going on with you, Zoey? Aren’t you going to hand over the proposal? Do you not acknowledge me as your Grandpa?” Harry’s angry voice echoed as soon as Zoey answered the phone.

Zoey welled up in tears. “You fired me, Grandpa. What do you need my proposal for? I won’t yield!”

“Hmph, what do you mean? If you don’t hand over the proposal, the Lopez family will break off all relations with you lot today!”

Zoey was all tears upon hearing that.

Levi rose to his feet. He rummaged for the proposal and handed it over to Shaun before consoling Zoey.

“Now, that’s more like it.”

Shaun looked at this family with ridicule written all over his face.

Meanwhile, Zoey and her parents looked disappointed when they saw Levi handed over the proposal.

Isn’t that a cowardly move?

What’s the use of having such a husband?

“Why did you give him the proposal?” Zoey questioned.

“Listen to me. Harry will definitely ask you to go back,” Levi asserted. “We need to go somewhere today.”

“How can I trust you like this?” Zoey raised her voice.

“You guys shall get a divorce if Dad remains silent!” Aaron added crossly.

“Deal!” Levi agreed.

On the other side, after securing the proposal, Samuel and Melanie were entrusted with the important task of taking over Zoey’s company, Imperial Meadows Limited.

Thereafter, they headed straight to the office building responsible for the ecological park project, where there was already a long queue when they arrived.

Thinking that all the Lopez family’s property would belong to him in the future, Samuel’s breathing hastened.

After waiting for one hour, it was finally Samuel’s turn.

Samuel was about to give a long-winded introduction of himself as soon as he entered the office with Melanie when the person sitting at the opposite piped up, “The Lopez family?”

“Yes, that’s right!” Samuel answered quickly in a dazed.

Melanie immediately handed over a stack of papers. “This is our project proposal! Please have a look!”

North Hampton Ministry of Construction was responsible for the approval and decision of this project. The person in charge on-site was Orlando Jennings, the leader of the Ministry of Construction management.

“Why didn’t Ms. Zoey or Mr. Aaron come?” Orlando asked straightforwardly, putting the Lopez family’s proposal under his hands.

“I beg your pardon?”

The question stunned both Samuel and Melanie.

“Allow me to introduce myself, Mr. Jennings. My name is Samuel, Samuel Robertson. I’m the key person in charge of this project of Lopez Group. As for Zoey and Aaron, they have been fired from Lopez Group. May I know why are you asking for them, Mr. Jennings?” Samuel asked curiously.

Hearing that, Orlando nodded with relief. “Oh, is that so? Alright then. You may leave now. The Lopez family is hereby disqualified from participating in the bidding for this development project.”

With that, Orlando pushed the proposal to the front, leaving Samuel and Melanie slack-jawed.

“M-Mr. Jennings, what do you mean?” Samuel faltered.

“Are you saying that this has something to do with Zoey, Mr. Jennings?” Melanie asked.

“Yes, that’s right. After inspections by the leaders, they have discovered that Lopez Group is a very suitable candidate for this project, especially Ms. Zoey’s Imperial Meadows Limited. Hence, it was decided tentatively to have Lopez Group’s Imperial Meadows Limited take on this project. But since Ms. Zoey has been fired, the Lopez family has no business in this matter any longer. We’ll have to choose again,” Orlando explained patiently.

Though it was said to be a preliminary tentative decision, the final decision had been made, and everyone knew what it meant.

“Mr. Jennings, Zoey may have been fired, but we took over Imperial Meadows Limited. You’re right to choose us. These are some documents regarding the takeover,” Samuel said, handing over a pile of documents excitedly. “Imperial Meadows is our responsibility, Mr. Jennings!”

Unexpectedly, Orlando slapped his hand away, scattering the documents all over the place.

“Scram! Don’t you understand a word that comes out of my mouth? I want Ms. Zoey to present me with her proposal. No one else from the Lopez family can replace her! We want to authorize this project to Ms. Zoey and Ms. Zoey only! Do you understand?” Orlando said, pointing at Samuel’s nose.

“Why does it have to be Zoey, Mr. Jennings?” Melanie asked sheepishly. “I’m Melanie Lopez, Zoey’s sister. I’ve studied abroad, and I’m much more capable than Zoey in many aspects. I can handle this project just as well, Mr. Jennings!”

Samuel nodded. “Yeah, Melanie is capable! So much more capable than Zoey!”

“Leave now!” Orlando threw the proposal on the table to the ground. “I’m telling you, unless Ms. Zoey comes in person tomorrow at eight o’clock sharp, the Lopez family will not have the qualification to compete in this project, and I will strike the Lopez family’s name off the list!”

“Get out now before I call the security!”

Orlando’s secretary pushed and shoved them out.

It was only then they realized the reason the project was designated to the Lopez family was not because of the Lopez family’s strength but because of Zoey.

“What did the little b***h, Zoey did to be given such a huge project?” Melanie was surprised.

“No wonder the Ministry of Construction called and invited the Lopez family to take part in the bidding! It’s because of Zoey,” Samuel stated the obvious.

As soon as they returned to the Lopez residence, Harry asked, “Samuel, how was it? Did we pass the preliminary selection?”

Samuel wore a gloomy expression. “Melanie, tell Grandpa!”

Melanie told the facts just as they had happened.

“What? It has to be Zoey?” Harry was astounded.

“Yeah, Mr. Jennings has hinted that this project will be assigned to Imperial Meadows Limited, but it has to be Zoey to seal the deal! We almost offended them,” Samuel said.

Thereafter, Harry sent Henry and Fabian to negotiate, but both of them were kicked out as well.

After thinking about it, Harry finally said, “Then go look for Zoey now! Restore her position and secure this project first!”

“Please hurry, Grandpa,” Samuel urged. “If they don’t see Zoey at eight tomorrow, they’ll give this project to someone else.”

The Protector Chapter 10

This time, not only Shaun but Samuel and Melanie also followed.

“What are you guys doing here?”

Aaron was furious to see the three of them, but he didn’t expect them to be so polite.

“Uncle Aaron, Aunt Caitlyn, where’s Zoey?”

They were carrying all kinds of gift boxes in their hands, which made Aaron and Caitlyn even more puzzled.

“Zoey? She’s not at home,” Caitlyn said.

Melanie grinned. “Where did she go, Aunt Caitlyn?”

Caitlyn shook her head. “No idea. She went out with Levi early in the morning.”

“Oh, okay, Uncle Aaron, Aunt Caitlyn. Please give us a call when Zoey comes back. We’ll be off then.”

Aaron and Caitlyn were all the more bewildered when the three of them left.

“What are they up to? Even giving us gifts? Are they sucking up to us?”

“Don’t tell me that Levi’s words actually came true?” Caitlyn mused. “It seems that I’m unable to see through him anymore.”

At this time, Levi and Zoey were wandering about aimlessly at their alma mater.

At Levi's suggestion, Zoey had turned off her phone.

It was already evening when Samuel and the others exited the Lopez residence.

They didn't go far. In fact, they were waiting in front of Zoey's neighborhood.

After waiting for three hours, Levi and Zoey had yet to return.

Harry had also checked in on them several times.

"Where the hell is she? Call Zoey now!"

Samuel grew impatient as he smoked one cigarette after another.

Right that instant, Melanie dialed Zoey's number.

"The number you have dialed is currently unavailable..."

Her expression stiffened upon hearing the automated message.

"She turned off her phone..."

"What? Is she doing this on purpose?" Samuel spat with sudden fury.

Shaun also tried to call, and sure enough, her phone was off.

"But Zoey doesn't know what's going on. Isn't this too much of a coincidence? Why did she turn off her phone?" Melanie said in surprise.

"Oh yeah, who knows Levi's number? He's with Zoey right now," Samuel asked.

"I don't."

"Let me ask Uncle Aaron and Aunt Caitlyn."

After asking, Melanie shook her head in dismay. "He just came back the day before yesterday, so they don't know his number too."

"F**k!"

Samuel lost his temper.

Right then, Harry called to inquire again.

Samuel passed the phone directly to Melanie.

"We don't know where Zoey is, Grandpa. They left home early in the morning. Her phone has been

switched off, and no one knows Levi's number. Even Uncle Aaron and Aunt Caitlyn have no clue."

Hearing this, Harry was more anxious than anyone else.

The Lopez family's social status would increase tenfold if we secured this project.

"Then keep searching! I want this settled by tomorrow morning!"

Harry mobilized every connection of the Lopez family to look for Zoey and Levi in North Hampton, including Zoey's classmates, friends, and colleagues.

However, Zoey's whereabouts were not known at all.

"Do you guys think Zoey has left North Hampton?" someone said.

Harry was so frightened that he almost had a heart attack.

He glared at Henry and huffed. "You wastrel! It's all your fault for coming up with that stupid idea! Why did we fire them and took back their company? Just how much will we lose if we can't find Zoey by tomorrow? More than a billion?"

Henry's heart lurched. "Dad, I didn't know things will turn out like this. Who could have ever thought that Zoey is the key! Why did the Ministry of Construction set their minds on Zoey in the first place?"

"Hurry up and find her! If you can't find her by eight tomorrow morning, I'll take back your company as well! You and your family won't get a single cent!"

"Dad, I'll get to it right away!"

Henry almost wet his pants upon hearing his father's threat.

"What are you guys still doing here?" Harry glared at Fabian and the rest. "Get searching! Unless you want to see a billion goes down the drain!"

"We're on it!"

That night, the entire Lopez family didn't rest and had been looking high and low for Levi and Zoey.

By this time, the both of them had long since gone to bed at a hotel.

Zoey was so exhausted from walking all day that she fell asleep right away without even turning on her phone.

Everyone had been calling and searching for Zoey all night, but to no avail.

It was almost dawn, and Harry's heart could barely take it anymore.

"If we missed out on this project, I'm taking three times more of each family's dividends this year! And Henry, I'll be taking back your company. Do whatever you want, you incompetent punks!" Harry

chided, slamming the table.

Henry paled and said in a low voice, “Dad, maybe they went out to play, and their phones died. They’ll turn it back on once it’s charged.”

“You think I’m a child? This wouldn’t have happened if it wasn’t for you!”

Saying that, Harry gave Henry a tight slap.

“Okay, it’s almost seven now. They should have charged and turned on their phones by now, yes? Try calling them now!”

Henry trembled as he dialed Zoey’s number, and to his surprise, the call went through.

“Hey, are you crazy for calling at this hour?”

It was Levi who answered the phone.

Everyone was astounded and ecstatically happy at this moment.

“Levi, it’s me, Uncle Henry!” Henry said immediately.

“Oh, Henry. Why did you call? Are you insane?”

Henry was about to explode when he heard that, but he kept his cool. “Levi, where’s Zoey? Put her on the line. I have something important to tell her.”

“She’s still sleeping. Just tell me if there’s anything important,” Levi rejected directly.

Henry tittered nervously. “Levi, it was a mistake to take back Imperial Meadows and fire Zoey. We decided to recall Zoey and let her take over Imperial Meadows Limited again. Come to the Lopez family mansion with Zoey now. Your Grandpa is asking for the both of you!”

“Oh? Reinstatement, eh? No thanks. Zoey has got a new job,” Levi said before hanging up immediately.

“I’m going to kill this bastard!” Henry exploded.

“You idiot! Call them again and asked for their whereabouts!”

Harry gave Henry another slap.

“Okay, okay.”

Henry called again. “Levi, I know we’re in the wrong! This was a mistake on our end. I swear there will be no next time. Give me your address, and I’ll go pick you guys up, okay?”

“What do you think you’re doing? Do you think you can just fire and reinstate someone as you please? Zoey is not a tool for you to mess around with!” Levi snapped.

“You guys can ask for anything as long as Zoey comes back,” Henry said promptly. “Salary is not a problem!”

“Fine, this is what’s going to happen. You want Zoey back? Sure, but whoever fired her in the first place shall be the one to invite her back!”

“It was me! I’ll be the one to invite her back!” Henry said.

“No, you don’t have the right to do that. It was Harry who fired her. Get Harry to come in person! Otherwise, Zoey is never going back!”

Levi was adamant.

Rage nearly consumed Harry when he heard this.

“What? You want me to invite that lass back in person? Are you courting death, Levi?”

At this moment, he could feel nothing but humiliation.

The Protector Chapter 11

In actual fact, Zoey had been awake for a long time now, but she didn't make a sound.

She looked at Levi wonderingly.

He was right.

The Lopez family really wants me back.

But why?

Zoey's heart leaped into her throat when she heard Levi requesting Harry to come pick her up in person.

Harry had always been high and mighty. Never in a million years would he accept Levi's proposal. Levi was just provoking him by having him personally invite her back.

"Fine. Forget it if Harry refuses to come! Bye!"

Levi hung up.

"Are you crazy?" Zoey nudged him. "How could you ask Grandpa to come and get me? I say we go back on our own and forget about everything. There seems to be something very serious going on based on their tone."

"Don't. Just wait. Three, two, one..."

Sure enough, Zoey's phone rang as soon as Levi finished counting down.

"Dad has agreed to go pick you guys up," Henry's helpless voice sounded. "Now give me your address!"

"University City's Borrmann Hotel!"

"And your room number?"

"You don't need to know that. We'll go down on our own when Harry arrives," Levi said.

This was to prevent Harry from not coming.

"Huh? Is Grandpa really coming?"

Having been living in Harry's shadows since she was a child, Zoey was frightened down to the soles of her shoes.

“What are you nervous for? He’s here to invite you back,” Levi said with a smile on his face.

Zoey was so terrified that she had forgotten Levi’s predictions from before—Harry will invite you back in person.

About half an hour later, a Mercedes Benz came to a halt in front of the hotel with Harry appearing in their line of sight.

“Come on. Let’s go down.”

Zoey was still trembling as she grabbed Levi’s arm, not letting go.

When Harry saw Zoey, he subconsciously yelled, “Zoey, you... Oh, get in the car! Grandpa has something important to discuss with you!”

Zoey was dumbfounded to see the pleasant smile on Harry’s face.

When did Grandpa ever smile at me?

In the car, Harry started, “I’ll get down to business, okay, Zoey? Haven’t you been working on West City Ecological Park development project before this? Well, now’s your chance. Mr. Jennings from the Ministry of Construction asked for you to submit the proposal and elaborate the plans to them.”

“You must do your best! I believe you can do this!”

And so, a few minutes before eight, a confused Zoey and Levi arrived at the office building responsible for this project.

“Ms. Lopez, you’re here,” Orlando greeted, shooting up to his feet and went up to welcome them. “Would Ms. Lopez and this gentleman like tea or coffee?”

“Tea for me and coffee for her,” Levi said curtly as he sat down graciously.

Zoey, however, was completely dumbstruck.

He’s Mr. Jennings! The person in charge of management for the Ministry of Construction!

Even Joseph Garrison has to bow down to him when he sees him.

Why is he so courteous to me?

“Did you hear that? Now go and make the arrangements,” Orlando said to his secretary.

“Ms. Lopez, please, have a seat,” Orlando said respectfully to Zoey.

“Come on. Sit,” Levi said, seeing that she was transfixed, he pulled Zoey to sit beside him.

Soon, the coffee and tea were served.

Zoey lifted her cup with both hands, still shaking while Levi crossed his legs, flaunting the bearing of a tyrant.

Orlando stood before them like a server, reverent and respectful.

He didn't even dare to glimpse at Levi.

He's that legendary man!

Taking in a deep breath, Zoey stood up and handed over the proposal. "M-Mr. Jennings, I'm Zoey Lopez. Nice to meet you. This is my proposal! Please have a look!"

Orlando chuckled. "Your ability speaks for itself, Ms. Lopez. We can leave the proposal aside. You have our full confidence."

Cough...

When Orlando's eyes met Levi's terrifying ones, he quickly took over the proposal and studied it with a few other project leaders, with Zoey explaining at the side.

About half an hour later, Orlando got up and said with a smile, "We were right about you, Ms. Lopez! It's perfect! The plan is ninety-five out of a hundred! After revising some details from our end, it's perfect now."

"Does that mean we got the job?" Levi asked.

Orlando nodded. "We received thirty-three bidding documents from the preliminary selection, and so far Ms. Lopez has the highest score! We have inspected Imperial Meadows Limited and Lopez Group's capabilities before this, and you guys are basically qualified to take on this project! Now we just have to go with the flow and sign the contract three days later."

Zoey knew it was all cut and dried!

Levi got up, pulled Zoey away and said passingly, "Thank you..."

"What? No, no. This is what we should do!"

Hearing Levi's words of gratitude, Orlando was so scared that he almost got down on his knees.

Even after coming outside, Zoey still felt as if she was dreaming.

"Zoey, how was it?" Harry and a dozen others gathered around her.

"Grandpa, we passed the preliminary selection and my score was the highest, ninety-five! Mr. Jennings asked me to drop by three days later to sign the contract. I... We will be responsible for the development of this project. But they are still going through the process, so we have to keep it a secret!"

Zoey originally wanted to say that she would work on this project on her own, but seeing Harry, she

instinctively changed her tone.

“Very good! I’m so proud of you, Zoey! You’re the Lopez family’s hero!”

Harry was excited, and so were the others.

After all, it was a major project of one billion.

For as long as Zoey could remember, Harry had only complimented her twice.

The first time was when she married Levi, an upstart six years ago.

And the compliment this time felt surreal to her.

“Zoey, are you sure we’re getting this project and all we have to do is sign the contract three days later?” Harry asked again, still feeling a little unsettled.

Zoey nodded. “Yes, Grandpa. I’m sure!”

“Okay, that’s a load off my mind!”

Harry heaved a sigh of relief.

Thereafter, Levi, Zoey, and the Lopez family dispersed and returned home, respectively.

“That was so unexpected, Dad!” Henry chortled. “We really got the job! I’ve asked my friend to ask Mr. Jennings’ secretary about it, and it’s true!”

Harry’s face was glowing. “Yes, it’s a great joy for the Lopez family.”

“Grandpa,” Samuel said, after hesitating for a long time. “Are you really going to give Zoey full authority to handle this project? I’m afraid that with Levi’s wild ambition, this project will have nothing to do with us when the time comes.”

Harry laughed. “Oh, Samuel, I’ve thought about that! Didn’t you hear me just now? Now that the project is ours and all we need is to sign the contract three days later, Zoey has no more use-value for us. Besides, can her small Imperial Meadows Limited develop a project of one billion?”

“So, you guys will go and sign the contract three days later! I only gave Zoey a nominal position. I don’t intend on having her take part in the development of this project.”

Samuel laughed sinisterly. “That’s a sick move, Grandpa!”

The Protector Chapter 12

Back home, Aaron and Caitlyn looked at Levi incredulously. “You were right. Dad really came to invite Zoey in person.”

“Dad, it seems you’ve lost this bet,” Levi said, smiling.

“But how could this project fall into our hands? There are so many stronger companies out there. Why would they choose us?” Aaron pondered out loud.

“Yeah, why did they insist on having me sign the contract?” Zoey blinked, waiting for Levi’s explanation.

She couldn’t help but think that Levi was behind all this. It was as if every word he said would come true.

“Don’t you guys remember what Azure Dragon said at the banquet that night?” Levi asked.

“I get it now!” Aaron said immediately. “It was all Azure Dragon’s intentions! A big shot sure does honor his promises! I mean, who else do you guys think could order Mr. Jennings around?”

Zoey smiled bashfully. “I thought Azure Dragon was just making a casual remark.”

“The words of a big shot must be fulfilled!” Levi beamed.

“Gosh, my family is about to go through the roof once we take over this project! Cook your best dish, Caitlyn. It’s a celebration,” Aaron said.

Perhaps it was because of their good mood, Levi looked much more pleasing to the couple’s eyes.

“Don’t worry about finding a job, Levi,” Zoey said. “Just stay with me.”

“Sure. I’ll make sure to assist you well.”

Three days later, Levi and Zoey suited up, ready to go over and sign the contract.

“Levi, I think I should give Grandpa a heads-up. They’re very concerned about this after all,” Zoey said.

“I don’t think that’s necessary. This is none of their business, anyway,” Levi said.

“Still, I think I should give them a call.”

Zoey dialed Harry’s number.

“What’s the matter, Zoey?”

“Grandpa, I’m just giving you a heads-up that we’re going to sign the contract now.”

“Oh, that, your sister and Samuel are already on their way there, so you don’t have to go. Don’t worry. They’re going to sign on your behalf! Just leave this matter alone and go to work at Imperial Meadows in peace,” Harry said, hanging up soon after.

Zoey was so startled that she almost dropped her phone.

“What is it?”

“Grandpa said that this matter has nothing to do with me and someone has already gone to sign the contract on my behalf,” Zoey sniveled.

Levi’s blood boiled upon hearing that.

The Lopez family is just as shameless as the Garrison family!

“Don’t worry. No one can take away what belongs to you,” Levi said in a low voice.

He turned around and drafted a message, sending it directly to the leader of the Ministry of Construction.

Meanwhile, a dozen of entrepreneurs had gathered at the bidding site, waiting for the announcements of the result.

Ultimately, it was Carlos Wayland, the deputy leader of the Ministry of Construction, who made the announcement.

“I hereby announce that the West City Ecological Park project will be developed by Imperial Meadows Limited of Lopez Group!”

The audience burst into an uproar at Carlos’ announcement.

No one could understand the logic behind Imperial Meadows’ victory.

Samuel, Melanie, and the others who went as representatives of Imperial Meadows rose to their feet and accepted the congratulations from the people around them.

“May we have the representative of Imperial Meadows Limited come to the backstage to sign the contract?”

The person who was ultimately responsible for the signing of the contract was still Orlando Jennings.

The deputy team leader only came to announce the result.

“Hmm? Where’s Ms. Zoey?”

Orlando looked up at the few of them with disgust in his eyes.

“It’s a pleasure to meet you again, Mr. Jennings,” Samuel greeted. “Zoey currently has too much on her plate, so she has sent us to sign the contract on her behalf instead.”

“Besides, the result of the bidding has been made and we’re set on taking on the project. What’s the difference between who should sign and who shouldn’t, Mr. Jennings?” Melanie chipped in.

“Oh, there’s a huge difference, my friend,” Orlando snickered. “Let me ask you a question, for example, if you’re here on behalf of Ms. Zoey to sign the contract, will you be signing her name or someone else’s name?”

“I…” Melanie was stumped.

Surely, they weren’t intending to sign Zoey’s name, but Harry’s.

Wouldn’t Zoey become the sole possessor of the project if they signed her name?

“By the way, Mr. Jennings,” Shaun added. “You may not be aware of this, although the Lopez Group has many subsidiaries, the president is Mr. Harry Lopez, who has absolute control of all companies. This time the contract will be signed under Mr. Harry’s name, and Zoey has also agreed to this.”

Orlando shook his head. “That won’t do! We’ve appointed Zoey Lopez to oversee this project. I don’t know who’s this Harry Lopez that you speak of. But since you people have said so, I’ll give Ms. Zoey a call. If she agrees, I’ll approve it on my side as well.”

The trio became flustered at once, knowing that Zoey had been kept in the dark and never agreed to this.

“Ms. Zoey, may I ask if you consented for someone else to sign the contract on your behalf and with Mr. Harry’s name at that?” Orlando asked straightforwardly once the call connected.

Upon hearing that, it dawned on Zoey that the project would have nothing to do with her from now on if she gave her consent, and if she didn’t, she supposed her grandfather would hate her for life. It was a decision she had to make between interests and her grandfather.

“I… I a…”

Zoey hesitated for a long time and was about to agree when Levi seized her phone.

“No! They didn’t even call! What’s going on? Worse comes to worst, we’ll just give up on this project. Just give it to whoever wants it,” Levi said.

Hanging up, Orlando gave Samuel and his companions a death stare, his face gloomy.

Realizing the graveness of this matter, they lowered their heads and dared not look at Orlando.

“I’d made myself very clear, didn’t I? This project has to be accomplished by Ms. Zoey from beginning to the end! No one else can replace her! If you insist on this, I can only replace someone else! There are so many people who can handle this project.”

“Listen, if you want this project, get Ms. Zoey to come and sign the contract now! Otherwise, we’ll take it as you’ve forfeited!”

Hearing Orlando’s words, the three of them ran like the wind.

“What? It has to be Zoey? I thought anyone could sign the contract!”

Harry was flabbergasted when he learned about it.

“Dad, what should we do now?” Henry asked. “Do we really have to let Zoey take over this project?”

“There’s no other way. But even after Zoey takes over, most of the profits will still be in our hands. Zoey is still obedient to me; we’ll just give them a little something when the time comes. After all, her small Imperial Meadows Limited can’t afford to work on this project by themselves. They’ll need our help,” Harry said.

“But Grandpa, how are we going to get Zoey to sign the contract? This has happened for the second time now,” someone asked.

“Hmph, I’ll go pick her up myself,” Harry sneered. “I won’t take no for an answer. Give her a call first!”

After the call went through, it was Levi who answered. “Huh? You guys don’t have to come. We’re busy.”

At that, Levi hung up directly.

The Protector Chapter 13

Everyone in the Lopez family was baffled.

Zoey would have agreed, but with Levi around her, they weren’t so sure about that.

“What do we do now? Who knows if Zoey disappeared with Levi again. If we don’t find them by afternoon, Mr. Jennings will consider us to have voluntarily given up on the project,” Samuel said anxiously.

“Hmph, she’s threatening me! Even going as far as to give me terms!” Harry retorted, then made a call. “What’s the meaning of this, Levi? You don’t want this project anymore?”

“That’s right, it has nothing to do with me, anyway! Weren’t you guys trying to lay Zoey off? We might as well leave this project alone,” Levi retaliated.

“Levi, Grandpa has no other meaning,” Harry toned down. “Come and sign the contract with Zoey. In the future, Zoey will be in charge of this development project. That’s what Mr. Jennings wants too.”

“Well, I’m not so sure about that. I’m afraid that Zoey would be laid off at any time.”

“Name your conditions, Levi. How can I get Zoey to sign the contract?”

Harry was infuriated, but he couldn’t help it.

“Conditions? Number one, Imperial Meadows Limited will fully develop this project, and no other companies of Lopez Group shall be directly involved. Number two, Imperial Meadows Limited shall be separated from Lopez Group and become an independent company. But Zoey has agreed to hand over some parts of the development project to you. I mean, we should all make money together, right? As long as you agree to the conditions mentioned, I’ll bring Zoey over to sign the contract right away!”

Harry blew a gasket after Levi finished speaking.

Levi is getting Zoey to cut all ties with the Lopez family.

In other words, the Lopez family will have nothing to do with this project, and it depends on Zoey if we want to get a piece of the pie.

But at this critical juncture, we should sign the contract first.

I must have this project.

Harry drew in a deep breath. “Okay, I agree!”

“Verbal promises are not enough. We should go through the formalities immediately,” Levi said.

“You...”

How I wish I can skin him alive! He’s not giving me a chance to think.

“Fine. I’ll send someone to get it done!”

...

In just three hours, Harry had completed all the formalities.

Imperial Meadows Limited was completely separated from Lopez Group and became Zoey’s company.

“Okay, we’ll go and sign the contract now!”

Levi brought Zoey to the bidding site and successfully signed the contract with Orlando.

So I’m in charge of a major project of one billion?

From bankruptcy to taking on such a huge project...

Zoey didn’t dare to think too much about it.

With the contract signed, Harry and the others were overwhelmed with mixed feelings.

“Isn’t Levi being too ruthless? He’s burning all our bridges,” Henry said.

“The nerve of him! Can Zoey even handle this project alone? Can she even sign this contract if it wasn’t for the Lopez family?”

“Yeah, she’s monopolizing everything. I refuse to accept this!”

Shaun, Melanie and the others were upset.

“Don’t worry, you guys,” Fabian chuckled. “We can still get this project! Even if Imperial Meadows Limited has become independent, Dad still owns thirty percent of their shares. Besides, developing a one billion project is not something anyone can pull off. Every bit of human and financial resources is indispensable. It’s impossible for a small company like Imperial Meadows to handle this alone.”

“Yeah, Imperial Meadows Limited is almost bankrupt now, and they still owe Grandpa money,” Shaun said. “Where will they get the funds to work on this project?”

“Well, there’s no need to consider Levi; he’s just a piece of trash, and Zoey has no connections of sorts in North Hampton. They’ll have to beg us to invest in them when the time comes.”

“Hahaha…”

Henry smirked. “Dad, I think we should impose a little pressure on them and get back the 2.8 million first!”

Harry laughed heartily. “You’re the worst, Henry. But that should do it! Shaun, go over in a moment and ask for our money!”

…

Aaron and Caitlyn had been informed.

They were so excited that they specially prepared a meal and waited for Levi and Zoey to come back.

However, Zoey looked glum despite signing a big contract.

“Mom, Dad, we’ve completely offended Grandpa this time! I bet they’re going to hate us for life.”

“Just ignore them! Our status has been the lowest in the family all this while and your Grandpa doesn’t even care about us! This time, we must make a name for ourselves and prove it to him!” Aaron said.

“Yes, I must work hard!”

“Levi,” Aaron said. “Although you contributed nothing to this incident, our family seems to be doing well after you come back. Come, let’s have a drink!”

Just as Aaron brought out a bottle of fine wine, Shaun arrived.

“Grandpa sent me here, Uncle Aaron! This is an IOU. Please return the 2.8 million that you owe us.”

Shaun’s statement hit Aaron and his family like a thunderbolt.

“Grandpa said that he’s going to make an appointment with a foreign specialist to seek medical advice,

and he has no money now, so he can only ask you guys to pay him back,” Shaun added. “It’s a little urgent, so you must settle your debt in three days. Otherwise, Grandpa’s health will only deteriorate!”

Shaun left after he gave them the distressing news.

“What’s wrong?” Levi asked.

Zoey bit the bottom of her lips and said, “We’re doomed. There’s no money, not at the company nor at home! The company has just started operating again, and we don’t even have half a million in our account. As for the family, we almost couldn’t afford to pay my brother’s tuition fee.”

Zoey had a younger brother who was studying abroad and was still relying on the family for financial support.

“I knew it,” Aaron sighed. “Dad wouldn’t have let us off that easily. I knew he would drive us into a corner until we pay him back.”

Zoey’s face was drained of all color and animation. “It’s not just about paying them back, we also need funds for the development project. We don’t even have the initial funds to start the project. Investment is needed, but it’s difficult. The project may be shelved when the time comes and the other party might even terminate the contract!”

“You don’t say! We’ve been warned by the bank and we can’t even borrow a single cent now.”

Aaron was on the verge of tears.

After all that talking, it all boiled down to this—money!

They could have solved everything if they had the money, but a man without a penny was no man at all.

Besides, it wasn’t just a matter of a penny now, but 2.8 million!

“I’ve seen this coming,” Aaron continued. “Your Grandpa is tricking us into giving them this project by forcing us to borrow money from them and have them invest in us.”

“If there’s no other way, let’s just give it up and give it to Grandpa,” Zoey said helplessly. “Now that Imperial Meadows Limited is in our hands, let’s take it one step at a time!”

“Why should you give it up?” Levi spoke. “2.8 million is not a problem! Just leave it to me!”

The Protector Chapter 14

Everyone looked at Levi in bewilderment. “What? Leave it to you? You just got out of prison. Do you have the money?”

“I... I’ll come up with something.”

Levi had a card with him, but he didn't know how much was inside.

“Don't force yourself and do anything that is out of line! We'll just let it go if things don't work out,” Zoey said, looking at Levi worryingly, afraid he would do something extreme.

“Don't worry. I'll take care of it,” Levi replied, holding her hands.

The next day, Levi went out alone.

As soon as he arrived at the intersection, a Maybach came to a halt at the side.

Azure Dragon got down from the car and ushered Levi to get in.

“Any updates on the Garrison family? Is anyone coming to apologize?” Levi asked.

Azure Dragon shook his head. “Not one of them are repenting.”

A cold glint flashed across Levi's eyes. “It's time to show them a little something.”

Arriving at the bank, Levi withdrew five million cash in one go.

The staff at the bank looked at him, appalled, and was especially horrified to see the man in military uniform standing next to him.

That's the King of War!

Hans, the general manager of North Hampton Bank's head office, came to serve in person.

In the end, he and Hailey, a tall woman with a pleasant-looking face, helped to carry the briefcases of cash from the VIP passageway.

Hailey couldn't help but steal a second glance at Levi, who seemed familiar to her.

“His identity is so intimidating, even our chief almost ran over here.”

After sending them off, Hans drew in a deep breath.

“Who was that, Mr. Lowery?” Hailey asked curiously. “Is the one next to him in a military uniform someone famous?”

“That person is a bona fide King of War! Having the King of War as his follower... Think about it,” Hans said lowly.

“Damn!” Hailey gasped in shock.

“So don't mention about today and keep everything confidential.”

Hailey nodded. “Understood!”

“No matter who asks, just say it’s a loan, and forge a receipt or something.”

“Yes, sir!”

...

At night, when Levi returned home carrying five briefcases full of cash, Zoey and her parents were dumbfounded.

They counted them three times, and lo and behold, there were indeed five million.

“W-Where did you get so much money? Please don’t tell me it’s from the loan sharks.”

Zoey freaked out.

“What loan sharks! Don’t worry about it! Anyhow, I got the money, so use this to solve your urgent problem first,” Levi said.

“Yes, let’s solve this first,” Aaron concurred.

“But 2.8 million is enough! Why did you get five million?” Zoey asked in confusion.

“You’ll see when the time comes.”

...

Upon hearing the news that they were going to pay up, Henry came to collect the money himself.

“Damn, Aaron. That was fast,” Henry jeered. “You sure there’s 2.8 million? It must be hard on you. I’d thought you couldn’t afford to pay us back.”

Aaron glared at him. “That is none of your concern. Anyway, I’ve put together 2.8 million, and that settles our debt!”

“Who said it’s 2.8 million?” sneered Henry, changing the subject. “We need to take the many days of interest into account. Here’s the IOU. Including the interest, it should be about five million plus, but we’ll just charge you five million.”

“What? Five million? How is it five million? Even the loan sharks are not as demanding as you!”

Aaron and Zoey were thunderstruck.

“Dad lent it to us unconditionally back then,” Caitlyn said. “How can there be interest?”

“My dear Caitlyn, you are so naïve! Dad borrowed the money to help you, but we’re all entrepreneurs; let’s not bring familial affection into this matter. What can I do if you people didn’t read the IOU carefully?”

Zoey and Aaron took the IOU and calculated them, and indeed there was interest.

They finally knew why Levi had brought five million.

However, it was obvious that the IOU had been amended!

How cruel!

I can't believe Grandpa is doing this to me!

Am I just an outsider to him?

Zoey teared up.

Aaron too was crestfallen.

Is he even my biological father?

How could he use such dirty tricks on us?

“What? You won't admit it? Okay, fine! I'll sue you then!” Henry sniggered.

“Why wouldn't we?! Five million, right? Here, take it!”

Levi put five briefcases of cash in front of Henry.

After checking them, Henry and a few others were gobsmacked.

Its real money! And there's exactly five million!

Levi recorded the scene and tore up the IOU.

“Where did you get five million?”

Henry was on the verge of doubting reality.

“That's none of your business. Get lost!”

Levi chased them out.

At the Lopez residence, everyone was staring at the five million on the table with eyes and mouth wide agape.

“How did they get this money? Did they go all out to collect five million just to prevent us from touching that ten billion project?”

Fabian arrived just then.

“Dad, I've found out that Levi borrowed these five million! He seems to have some property that can

be used as a collateral,” he said.

“Are you sure?” Harry asked seriously.

“I’m sure! The person in charge of this transaction was Ms. Hailey Stinson, the senior director of North Hampton Bank’s head office. I somehow managed to contact her, and she admitted herself it was a person named Levi Garrison who borrowed it. I’d spent a hundred thousand to get a copy of the invoice!”

After receiving the invoice, Harry confirmed it was true.

“Haha, borrowed? Let see how he’s going to pay it back.”

“The biggest question is, how are they going to work on this project? They would still have to come to us in the end!”

...

Zoey felt it was too surreal to solve such a big issue.

She was touched when she learned from the Lopez family that it was Levi who borrowed the money to settle their debts.

“We should bring in investments and start the project as soon as possible!”

“But that’s another big problem there. We’ll need lots of funds to develop this project.”

According to Zoey’s budget, a start-up capital of thirty million would be required and at least seventy million would be needed subsequently.

Aaron gave a low moan of despair. It was too difficult a task to accomplish.

“Do you have any idea?” asked Zoey, looking at Levi.

Levi smiled. “We’ll just look for big companies then. We’ll try door to door. This project is a gold mine! I’m sure many companies will be interested.”

Zoey nodded. “I know that, but I’m afraid they’ll ask for a lot in return once they agree. There will be many overlord terms!”

“There’s no harm in trying, right? You’ll never know if there’s someone who would invest with no strings attached if you don’t try,” Levi beamed.

“How is that possible?”

Zoey was deeply suspicious.

If truth be told, it was a matter of Levi's words regarding the investments.

"Oh yeah, don't you worry," said Zoey suddenly. "I'll pay back the five million; hopefully we can reel in some investments as soon as possible."

"There's no need for that. Why are we even discussing this topic?"

Levi smiled.

"But you also have to pay back the money, no? How are you going to do that? You haven't got any money."

At that, Levi nodded.

"Once we earn enough money from this project, I'm planning to get a house. It's inappropriate of us to stay with Mom and Dad," Zoey added.

"Do you still remember our marital home?" asked Levi, remembering suddenly.

"I do. You designed that villa yourself, and it was perfect! What a waste," Zoey sighed.

"I'm going to take back that villa," Levi said.

"That villa belongs to the Garrison family now, Levi. Don't do anything reckless. You can't fight them," Zoey persuaded.

"Don't worry."

Levi was determined to take back what the Garrison family took from him.

The next day, Zoey was busy looking for investment while Levi stayed home. He wanted to let Zoey run into a stone wall before making the necessary arrangements.

Aaron and Caitlyn looked at Levi who was smoking on the couch, their brows furrowed and they looked sullen.

"Put out the cigarette and come with me! I have something to tell you!" said Aaron coldly, glaring at Levi in revulsion.

Levi stubbed out his cigarette and followed suit.

"Dad, just fire away!"

Aaron's brows knitted tightly together into a deep frown. "Are you not aware of our situation now?"

"I think we're good." Levi smiled. "We got the project and as long as we reel in some investments, Zoey and our future will be bright as day."

“Yeah, and it’s because Zoey has a promising future, you’re at risk.”

“What?” Levi’s expression changed from delight to puzzlement.

“You should know that once this project is accomplished, Zoey’s net worth will increase by a few billion. She’ll gain a foothold in North Hampton in the future. Do you think you’ll still be worthy of her then?” Aaron said solemnly. “I’m not questioning your abilities, but you have to understand that you just came out of prison and things are different from six years ago. It won’t be easy to start a business again. The gap between you and Zoey will only grow.”

“That’s right,” Caitlyn agreed. “You’re lazing around and doing nothing all day! You don’t even have a decent job. Do you think you’re worthy of my daughter?”

“Exactly! Just imagine how humiliating will it be for Zoey if you’re still her husband by then.”

“We will find a proper time to discuss this with Zoey regarding your divorce! This is for the best, for both you and Zoey! Just prepare yourself,” Aaron sighed.

Levi chuckled. “Mom, Dad, is this what they mean by burning the bridges?”

“What do you mean, burning the bridges? Do you really think that it was you who secured this project? You only butt in a little. It’s because of Zoey’s ability that we got this project, okay?”

“Yeah. In simpler words, this matter has nothing to do with you!”

Levi could only give a half-suppressed laugh in this regard.

“Rest assured, Mom and Dad. I’ll make Zoey the happiest woman in the world!” Levi proclaimed.

Caitlyn glared at him. “And how do you intend to do that? You don’t even have a house! I could have believed when you had that big villa before, but now? You’re just a pauper with zilch! Not to mention you’re staying at my house! Aren’t you ashamed?”

“Just leave for a few days. I don’t want to see you for a while.”

“Yeah, Zoey has been busy recently, and she’s easily distracted when you’re around,” Aaron added on.

Having been kicked out of the house, Levi wasn’t angry.

This was what he owed Zoey.

Downstairs, a Rolls-Royce Phantom pulled over.

Azure Dragon got out of the car and greeted, “God of War, after you!”

Levi got into the car.

“Aaron, come, quick!” Caitlyn, who was watching through the window, suddenly shouted. “I think Levi just got into a luxury car.”

Aaron hurried over and saw a Rolls-Royce driving past his house.

“That’s a Rolls-Royce Phantom! The car owner must be a big shot! How could’ve Levi gotten into this kind of car?” Aaron said quickly.

“I just saw a figure from the back who looked a little like him. I guess I worried too much,” said Caitlyn with relief. “If he can afford to drive a Rolls-Royce, would we even be staying in this hundred square meters dumpster?”

Aaron snorted. “You’re still hoping on this gigolo?”

“Yes. I hope he starves to death.”

In the car, Azure Dragon asked, “Where to now, Sir?”

“To the Royal Villa!”

I must take back my villa!

“Sir, I’ve found out that the person living in your villa right now is Matthew Green! He’s the current general manager of Skyline Media under Garrison International!”

“He’s currently Ashton’s trusted aide! After betraying you, he immediately devoted himself to Ashton.”

Ashton was Levi’s Uncle, Jacob’s son. He had a reputation for being a man about town. And it was he who said that he wanted to marry Zoey at the banquet that day.

He had been coveting Zoey for a long time now.

Levi’s gaze went cold at the mention of Matthew.

He was once his trusted aide, his henchmen.

It was Levi who promoted him. If it hadn’t been for him, he would have committed fraud and gone to prison.

Levi could still remember that after his downfall, Matthew had become the Garrison family’s lackey who immediately contacted the media reporters to smear his name.

He had even forged a good deal of evidences of Levi’s ‘supposed’ crime and successfully sent him to prison.

Thinking about how Matthew once looked respectful before him, Levi found it ridiculous.

Very soon, he arrived at the Royal Villa.

Standing before the villa that he personally designed, rage bubbled just below the surface of his mind.

The nerve of him to stay at my marital home!

Die!

Upon noticing the two of them, the villa housekeeper came out and asked, “What are you people doing here and who are you looking for?”

Levi grinned. “I’m here to look at my house!”

“What? Your house? Are you sick in the head?”

“I’m telling you, the owner of this villa is Matthew Green, Mr. Green of Skyline Media!” the housekeeper sneered.

Levi tugged his lips into a wider grin. “Then did Matthew tell you who was the previous owner of the villa?”

“You think I care? I only know Mr. Green!”

Right at that moment, a Porsche Panamera pulled in.

The housekeeper immediately went to open the door.

Matthew, dressed in a suit, came down with a secretary supporting him at the side. The secretary, who was dressed in business attire, was hot. Her long legs wrapped in black stockings were especially attractive.

Seeing that they came back together, it was obvious they were up to some shenanigans.

“Who are these people?” Matthew asked, displeasure was written all over his face as he looked at the two people standing in front of the villa.

Levi slowly turned around. In the split second when their eyes met, Matthew got the shock of his life.

It just so happened that he had gone on a business trip during the Garrison family’s celebration banquet, so he didn’t meet Levi until today.

Meeting Levi right now, he could feel nothing but blind terror.

It differed from the rest of the Garrison family. Matthew had a psychological fear and awe for Levi.

Especially since he had done something despicable toward him; he couldn’t look Levi in the eye.

“Life seems good, eh, Mr. Green?” Levi asked with a smile on his face.

“W-W-What are you doing here?” Matthew asked, trembling.

“I’m here to have a look at my house!”

Levi sized up the villa.

“This villa has nothing to do with you now. So leave!” Matthew said, bracing himself and looking at Levi.

Levi smirked. “And if I don’t?”

Matthew’s secretary, Queena, glowered at Levi. “Who do you think you are? How dare you behave like a barbarian? Leave now! Or I’ll inform Mr. Ashton, and you’ll be sorry for this!”

At the mention of Ashton, Matthew suddenly got a newfound courage and he retort, “Levi Garrison, taking into consideration that you were my boss, I will not make things difficult for you. So please leave now!”

“Who do you think you are to make things difficult for me?” Levi disparaged.

“Why don’t you take a look at yourself in the mirror, Levi? You’re a nobody now! How dare you talk to Mr. Green like that?” Queena sneered. “Get down on your knees and crawl your way out!”

The Protector Chapter 16

“Slap them!”

Levi ordered softly.

Azure Dragon stepped up and gave a tight slap across Queena’s face.

His slap came with such shearing force that it knocked her off her feet and sent her flying almost eight meters away.

It ripped her flesh apart with deep cuts across her skin, and a few blood-stained teeth popped out from her mouth. Her hysterical screams filled the air, which sounded as if she was being butchered.

Matthew was stunned.

“D-Don’t you even dare lay a finger on me,” he quivered, “or I’ll call the security...”

Slap!

The slap from Azure Dragon came thick and fast, which made him see stars. Blood spurted out like a fountain from Matthew’s mouth. It almost knocked him out.

“P-Please don’t kill me...please don’t kill me...” Matthew shriveled and pleaded.

Gone was his usual shrewd and bossy demeanor when he was the big daddy of the corporate world. He was now just as powerless and utterly hopeless like a trapped animal!

“I want you to move out of the villa by eight o’clock tomorrow morning.” Levi ordered, “Or you’ll live

to regret for not heeding my call.”

“This is my villa and I shan’t let anyone stain it and pollute the place.” Levi said with a cold spark in his eyes.

The villa had been the den of Matthew and his guys for the past six years. Levi dreaded to think what kind of filth they had brought with them to the villa – which was absolutely intolerable for someone like him, who had an obsession for cleanliness.

“What?” Matthew could not believe his ears.

What makes you think I’ll give you back the villa, you little rotten punk? You’re just someone who’s fresh out from prison!

Levi took off shortly after he had issued the final notice to Matthew.

Meanwhile, Matthew did not return home but headed straight for Ashton, taking his secretary along with him.

Oblivious to what had happened at the villa, Ashton was having a swinging good time at the club, tucking himself between a blonde on his left and a brunette on his right.

“Something terrible has happened, Mr. Garrison!” Matthew shouted as he dashed into the club, “It’s a disaster!”

He recounted what happened at the villa to Ashton, making it sound worse than it actually was.

“There’s nobody but you who can help me now, Mr. Garrison.” Matthew said piteously, “Look at how badly we’ve been beaten up by Levi.”

Indeed, the swollen faces and puffy eyes of Matthew and Queena resembled more like the faces of pigs than human, which threw Ashton into an instant rage.

“Levi, you son of a b****!” Aston gritted his teeth, “Who do you think you are? How dare you beat up my subordinate?”

He threw a bottle of beer to the floor, smashing it.

“What a useless piece of crap you are!” he glared at Matthew scornfully, “How could you let him trample all over you like this?”

“Mr. Garrison, he’s got someone with him who’s a real tough guy.” Matthew bemoaned, “He’d even warned he would kill the both of us if we don’t handover the villa tomorrow.”

“What’s the big deal? It’s just Levi.” Ashton huffed, “He’s just a nobody to me. Let’s see if he’s got the guts to harm me when I bring my men to the villa tomorrow.”

“It’d be safer to bring more men with you, Mr. Garrison.” Matthew advised, “I’m afraid you’d be outnumbered by Levi’s men at the villa tomorrow.”

“Oh yeah? How about I bring Trey along with me then?” Ashton’s eyes gleamed with bloodlust as he spoke.

“That would be a slam dunk!” Matthew said with renewed confidence, “Everybody knows what Trey is capable of. It’ll be just a piece of cake to him!”

Trey was the notorious gang leader in North Hampton with several hundred men under him, known for their brutality and savageness.

He had stained his hands with the blood of so many enemies that he had virtually lost count of the exact number.

Trey had a good relationship with Ashton over the years, rendering his services whenever Ashton needed help in one of his malls.

All Trey had to do was to send over his men armed with axes and knives. That would be enough to scare the hell out of anyone and make them pissed in their pants.

Meanwhile, Zoey had just returned home after a long day to find that Levi was not in the house.

“Mum, Dad, where’s Levi?”

“I have no idea,” Aaron shrugged without even looking up, “perhaps he has gone to look for a job?”

“Let me give him a call.”

Zoey was about to make the call when Aaron stopped her. “You should focus on your career instead of wasting your time on Levi, Zoey.” he advised, “He would only be a distraction to you if he hangs around in the house all the time.”

“What do you mean by that, Dad?” Zoey stared at her father incredulously.

“That’s true, Zoey.” Caitlyn chimed in, “Can’t you see you’re poised for something huge? You’re in an entirely different league now, and you mustn’t let him smear your name.”

“Dad, mum, how could you say such a thing?” Zoey chided her parents for being ungrateful, “You know I wouldn’t even stand a chance if it wasn’t for Levi who had given me the invitation card to the banquet. It was Levi who helped me bag the project!”

“I know he played a role in this project.” Aaron agreed, “But it was your ability and credentials that eventually won you the contract. It has nothing to do with him.”

“Levi could give me advise. I have no qualms about his ability.”

“So you’re just going to let him cling on to you like a parasite that gives you advise?” Aaron snorted, “There’s no way we’d let him stick around with you, unless he elevates his status to be on par with you.”

“Yes, that’s absolutely true!” Caitlyn nodded, “We’ll never agree to it if he stays in his current condition.”

“Argh! You guys are simply unreasonable!” Zoey shook her head irritably, “Forget about it, I’ll go look for him myself.”

Zoey knew that Levi must have been chased out of the house by her parents. She called up Levi and beckoned him to come back.

Soon Levi was back in the house and he followed Zoey to her room.

“Don’t be mad with my parents, Levi. All you need is a little time to work things out, which I’m sure would help you make your comeback in no time.” she offered her encouragement.

“What about your end?” Levi asked, “Any luck on roping in the investments you needed?”

“It’s frustrating.” Zoey sighed, “Everybody has their own demands. It’s impossible to please everyone!”

“Don’t worry. Let me come along with you.” Levi consoled her, “I’m sure we could make it happen.”

“By the way, can you come with me tomorrow, Zoey?” asked Levi, “I’d like to take you to a place.”

“Sure.”

The next morning, Levi brought Zoey to the villa. The time was exactly eight o’clock.

“I’ll be getting our villa back today, Zoey.” Levi said with conviction, “This is supposed to be our house after we’re married. There’s no way I’ll let someone else stay in our place!”

“Huh?” Zoey was at a loss.

“What nerve you have to show up today?” Matthew grinned with malice when he saw Levi and Zoey.

“Have you already moved out of the place?” Levi asked coldly, “I’m taking back my villa today.”

“Who the hell are you to take away the villa from Ashton Garrison? You must be out of your mind!” A high pitch voice pierced through the air like the shrills of a high-stung cat.

It was the voice of Ashton Garrison, who had brought with him a large group of men.

Immediately, they surrounded Levi and Zoey.

A middle-aged man donned in a classic suit stood beside Ashton. He was cradling in his hands two shining walnuts that gave out a clacking sound. The thick, long scar across his face was impossible to overlook. It exuded an aura of evil.

The man was Trey, the big daddy of North Hampton’s underground society.

Everybody was well aware of his merciless killings and the hundreds of men that worked under him. They would avoid him like the plague.

Trey had brought more than a hundred men with him to the villa today. This was what Matthew had wanted to see.

The ghastly look on the faces of these thugs gave Zoey the chills as she nestled herself closer to Levi.

Ashton was all too delighted to see Zoey at the scene. He leered at her with a lewd smile on his face.

He had set his eyes on her for some time now, and today would be just the perfect opportunity to pin her down. He planned to sleep with her once they had beaten up Levi and made him a cripple.

“What brings you here, Levi?” asked Ashton, in his usual smugness.

“I’m here to take back my villa.” Levi replied with a stony look.

“Your villa?” he screeched, “What makes you think this villa belongs to you, idiot? This is my villa and I’ve given it to Matthew.”

“I’ll never forget how you’ve put me to shame the last time when you pissed off my VIP.” Ashton stepped up and gave Levi a shove, “It’s payback time now, kiddo! I’m going to break all your limbs before I take her away and make her mine!”

“Let’s go now, Levi” Zoey pleaded, “We’re hardly their match.”

“Where do you think you’re going? It’s all too late now!” Ashton shrieked, “Do you think you’d get away from Trey and his men?”

Clack! Clack! Clack!

More than a hundred of Trey’s men zeroed in on Levi and Zoey, waving their steel rods and various other lethal weapons as they tried to intimidate the both of them.

Levi was unfazed. He dialed a number and belted out his instructions, “Azure Dragon, send over a regiment from the North Hampton’s camp now. I want everyone to be armed in full battle gear!” Levi mumbled in his deep voice.

Gripped with fear, Zoey was hardly paying attention to what Levi had just said over the phone, while the rest of the crowd failed to make out what Levi had uttered with his low, deep voice.

“So it looks like you’re getting somebody to help you? And you’re even asking them to put on some kind of gear?” Ashton sneered sarcastically, “Fine, I can’t wait to see what kind of help you’ve enlisted to bail you out of this.”

Trey smirked as he looked at Levi with an amused curiosity.

Zoey on the other hand was shivering all over in horror, she felt as if she was standing on the edge of an abyss.

After about ten minutes, the security guards at the gates of the Royal Villas turned wide-eyed and mouth agape when they saw loads of war trucks, one after another, stormed into the premise. Each truck was full of soldiers.

A few of the trucks were even loaded with heavy artillery.

“Do you think there are more than a thousand soldiers in those trucks?” asked one guard.

“Holy cow! This is an entire regiment!”

The Protector Chapter 17

Levi’s villa unit belonged to lot A-88.

Unbeknown to Ashton and his men, the troops had formed a squarish formation surrounding the lots of A87, A88, A89 to B88.

Each of them stood on full alert, armed with fully loaded firearms that are ready to fire the first strike.

All they need was a command.

Outside the villa.

“So what’s the situation now?” Ashton was still grinning his grotesque grin as he taunted Levi, “Where are your men? Are they all having cold feet now?”

Levi signaled with a click of his fingers.

The next moment.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

The ground seemed to move under their feet as a synchronous marching of troops roared across the silent air.

“What’s going on here? What’s all that sound?”

Trey’s men looked around frantically, bug-eyed and tense as dogs.

The marching was getting denser and louder, the rhythm was so uniform and disciplined that it almost turned into a deafening boom.

“What the hell is that?”

Trey’s men froze when they saw the approaching troops coming at them from four corners.

Matthew, Trey and Ashton were shell-shocked and rooted to the ground like statues. Everybody was

muted with horror.

Never had they seen such a formation in front of their eyes. The soldiers aligned themselves in uniform rows, each armed with the deadliest weapons fit for a war!

Thud! Thud! Thud! The thumping continued.

Soon the troops stood in position, forming a human barricade as they occupied the four corners and fenced everybody in.

Everyone lifted their guns and aimed their barrels straight at Ashton and his group of men.

Crack!

Racks of heavy machine guns were set up with their positions adjusted accordingly to point straight towards Aston and his men.

Not to mention those massive weapons that include mortar and artilleries...

Clang! Clang!

The clanging sound of rods and other metal weapons resonated in the air. Trey's men had dropped their weapons and raised both hands in fear.

A few of them had even pissed inside their pants.

A strong, pungent smell of ammonia suffused the air.

Trey himself had dropped the walnuts and lifted his hands as well.

For decades, he had ruled the underground triads with his brutality and violent means. He had seen it all and had never been fazed by any opponent.

He could take down dozens of men in one go, breaking their ribs and even slashing their throats. These were all cakewalk to him.

Yet the scene in front of him belonged to a totally different league. War that was confined to the television was now playing out right in front of his eyes!

Thump!

Matthew dropped to the floor on his knees and pleaded, "Please let me go. I have nothing to do with this!"

Ashton stared at the guns pointed at him. Those soulless clanks of metal stared back at him like a plethora of ghostly eyes. It made his face turned ashen and his legs wobbled with fear.

"N-Neither do I. I have done nothing as well."

The unexpected twist of events had absolutely stupefied Ashton. He had never imagined Levi could summon an entire regiment with just one phone call...

Zoey was blown away as well by the dramatic turn of events. She needed a while to recompose herself before she turned her gaze to Levi.

She felt like she saw a magical halo glowing above Levi.

How is it possible that he summoned such a huge regiment with just a phone call?

A man stepped forward among the troops.

He had two gold stripes and three stars embroidered on the shoulder of his military uniform.

They could tell he was an army official.

“Steven Shaw, Colonel of North Hampton’s First Metallic Regiment, reporting for duty, Sir! We are here to protect the God of War, Sir!”

Steven Shaw cast an ambiguous glance at Levi as he raised his left hand to present a military salute.

Another man in military uniform stepped up from the opposing direction. He had a large gold star embroidered on his shoulder and a group of soldiers at his heels.

He had the colossal air of a warrior, he was none other than the King of War.

“The First Metallic Regiment had completely surrounded the compound, General Azure Dragon! Awaiting further orders, Sir!”

Steven Shaw ran up to Azure Dragon and present another military salute.

Azure Dragon took off his gloves and asked in his impersonal voice, “Do you know who owns this villa?”

“C-Could it be that it belongs to the G-God of War?” replied Ashton with a tremulous voice, while his body jerked uncontrollably as if he was having a seizure.

“Bingo.” Azure Dragon gave a set smile, “All the villas in this area belong to him.”

Ashton sucked in a deep breath. He was so gripped with fear that he almost passed out.

Trey was palpitating in horror when he heard the name. It drained his face of all color and immobilized his body, it was as if his soul had departed and left him with a hollow shell.

He would have never dared to step foot in here if he had known this area belonged to the God of War. It was as good as stepping into the gates of hell.

“Why did you bring your men here?” Azure Dragon glared at Ashton and Trey, “Are you trying to take down the God of War?” he snarled.

The Protector Chapter 18

Thump!

Thump!

...

Ashton, Trey, and Matthew, along with over a hundred of their men went down on their knees.

“It was all a misunderstanding. Just a misunderstanding...”

It was quite a spectacular scene to see over a hundred men going down on their knees, bending over their bodies and slamming their heads on the floor as they beg for forgiveness.

Zoey was so choked with fear that she almost fainted.

The turn of events could not be more theatrical than this.

How could so many thugs all turn into a bunch of crying babies all at once?

“Zoey, why don’t you get inside the villa and let them do their stuff?” Levi suggested.

The petrified Zoey gladly took his advice and dashed for the villa.

“Sir, please, I really have nothing to do with this. I’m just somebody who was hired by Mr. Garrison to act under his instructions...”

“Yeah, we’ve got nothing to do with this!”

...

Trey and his men were desperate to draw a line from Ashton by shifting all the blame to him.

Ashton was so contorted with fear that he spat out a mouthful of blood.

“Let them go!”

What came as a shock to Ashton, Trey and Matthew was when they saw it was Levi who gave the order.

His order prompted Azure Dragon to wave them away, “Get your ass out of here and don’t let me see you again!”

It was clear as day that it was not Azure Dragon, but Levi, who was calling the shots. Could it be that Levi...

It all pointed out to one scary truth they all dreaded to know.

Trey and his men tumbled and stumbled as they fled the scene at their quickest pace, fearing they could end up with a bullet in their heads.

“Please let me go, L-Levi, I’m innocent as well. It was Ashton who...” Matthew tried to dissociate himself from Ashton as well.

“Tell me, Azure Dragon, how do we punish a traitor?” Levi turned to Azure Dragon and smiled abruptly.

“All traitors would be slaughtered!” Azure Dragon gave a deafening roar.

Matthew was on the verge of a complete collapse.

But he knew it was all too late. This was the fate for traitors. Matthew must die!

The doomed fate of Matthew scared the daylight out of Ashton, who instantly got down on his knees to beg for his life “We are family, my dear brother. Please forgive me for not knowing your true identity.” cried Ashton, “We are all waiting for you to come home. I’m sure everybody would be thrilled to see you home again!”

Ashton played the emotional card as his last resort to save his own life.

“Don’t you remember how you guys have broken all my limbs and threw me to the streets like a dying dog?” Levi said sarcastically, “Is that how you’re supposed to treat your family?”

“Oh, that’s just a misunderstanding, my brother.” Ashton was almost to tears, “I’m sure it’s nothing but a misunderstanding!”

“Didn’t you just said that you want to sleep with my wife too?” said Levi as he walked closer towards Ashton.

“That’s just a joke, you know,” Ashton felt his legs were going jelly as he stuttered, “nothing but a joke, my brother...”

“What makes you think you can joke about something like this?”

Levi struck a killer punch right into Ashton’s face, which made him see stars and blacked out instantly.

“Send him back to the Garrisons! Tell them that this is my first present for them!”

Levi ordered, his face devoid of expression.

“Understood, Sir!” Azure Dragon replied subserviently.

“Well done, Steven Shaw.” Levi eyed him with satisfaction.

“Greetings to you, Sir!” A yelp from Steven Shaw led the whole of First Metallic Regiment to raise their right hand uniformly to present a military salute.

Levi reciprocated with a standard salute.

When he entered the villa, what greeted his sight was Zoey all curled up on the sofa, quivering with fear.

The spectacular scene today had left her numbed with shock.

She did not even have the courage to glimpse out of the villa.

“It’s alright now, Zoey.” Levi hugged her, “Everything’s over. The villa now belongs to us.”

“Are you sure?” Zoey lifted her head, her tone was uncertain.

“I’m sure!” Levi reassured her, “But I plan to tear down the house completely and rebuild from scratch. There’s no way we can move in now after those thugs had stayed in the house before.”

“I need to ask you something, Levi.” Zoey asked after she had recomposed herself “I want you to be absolutely upfront with me.”

“Sure, what do you want to know?”

Zoey bit her lips in hesitation, “What is your relationship with the God of War and Azure Dragon?” she demanded, “I need you to tell me nothing but the truth!”

The Protector Chapter 19

“I’ve already told you at the family banquet before,” Levi nodded, “I am the God of War.”

“There you go again.” Zoey dismissed his words and rolled her eyes, “You and your blabber.”

She did not believe his confession, and thought that he was just trying to brag around.

“Alright,” Levi said with a helpless shrug, “I have nothing to do with them.”

“But then how did you get Azure Dragon to show up with just a phone call?” she asked, puzzled, “Not to mention he even brought an entire regiment with him?”

“It was all a coincidence, when I was here last night and found out that Azure Dragon was staying in the same vicinity, I was sure that the God of War must be nearby as well.” Levi made up an explanation, “I know Ashton is bringing his men to the villa today, so I tipped off the authorities in advance. I told them that somebody is trying to harm the God of War, that’s why they sent over an entire regiment to protect him.” he could only put up a lie to appease her.

“That makes perfect sense to me now.” Zoey found his explanation plausible, “I recalled Azure Dragon

said the God of War lives around here, which explains why he's on high alert when Ashton and his men came to the villa."

"Do you want to take any of the stuff home with you? There's no way I'm going to stay here!" Levi said with an air of disgust.

"No, let's leave them here." Zoey shook her head, "It would only cause mum and dad to get curious if they see us moving our stuff home."

At Rivervale Mansion, North Hampton.

It was one of the most luxurious mansions in North Hampton. The place was the family mansion of the Garrisons, who had just listed their company shares on the stock exchange.

It had yet struck nine o'clock in the morning and it was still early for the Garrisons to leave for work.

Most of them were still in the house when they carried Ashton into the mansion.

Soon, every member of the Garrison family knew something terrible had happened to Ashton, and they immediately sent him to the hospital.

Joseph, Jaycob, Ben and everybody else rushed to the hospital.

"How's Ashton doing?" Joseph asked.

"I'm sorry, Mr. Garrison." the doctor sighed after he had examined Ashton's condition, "I'm afraid Ashton is not showing any response, he's now in a vegetative state."

"What do you mean he's in a vegetative state?" Jaycob could not believe his ears, "You mean my son has become a vegetable?"

"Ashton suffered from an extremely severe impact that turned him into a vegetable." the doctor explained.

"Who was the one who sent Ashton back to the mansion?" asked Joseph, who had slipped into a dark look.

"They were two guys we've not seen before, dad." Ben lowered his voice, "They left as soon as they sent Ashton back to our house. But they did leave a message..."

"What's their message? Spit it out now!"

The aura from Joseph was one of pure oppression.

"They said that this is the first present sent by Levi." Ben promptly spilled out the words.

"What? You mean this is a present from Levi?"

"So it was Levi who's behind all this?"

“I’m going to skin you alive, Levi!” Jaycob flew into such a rage that he almost flipped the table.

“Tell me, where is Levi now? I’m going to bash his brains in and squash him like the disgusting roach that he is!”

Jaycob was cursing and swearing like a madman, oozing violence and malice.

“Hold on, Jaycob.” Joseph mused over the message from Levi, “Levi said that this is just his first present, so we should expect for his second and third present to come in no time. Looks like Levi has just turned the tables on us, he’s letting us know that he’s now the one calling the shots instead!”

Joseph placed his hands behind his back and gave a brittle laugh.

“I’ve asked Bryan to find out what actually happened, dad.” Ben informed Joseph, “I’m sure he’ll update us soon.”

Soon after, they saw Bryan come running towards them, panting for air.

“I’ve found out what happened, grandpa, dad, Jaycob.” Bryan rasped, “Ashton and Levi had gotten into a brawl because of Royal Villa, which left Ashton being beaten up by Levi.”

“How could this be possible?” Joseph bemoaned, “Didn’t Ashton used to hang around with Trey, that triad leader? How could Levi have beaten the both of them and turned Ashton into a vegetable?”

The Protector Chapter 20

“I can’t figure it out too, since they told me Trey and Ashton had brought over a hundred men with them. So what caused Ashton to end up in such a bad shape?” Bryan shared with them his findings, “I’ve checked with Trey but he refused to say a word about it. All he did was warn us to stay away from Levi and don’t mess around with him.”

“What? How could this be true?” cried Ben in disbelief, “Doesn’t this show that Levi had scared the shit out of Trey? There must be something about Levi that made Trey said such a thing.”

“Judging by his words, it sounds like Trey is terrified of Levi.” Joseph nodded, “What’s going on here? Wasn’t Levi just released from prison? Where did he find the support to oust Ashton and Trey from the villa?”

Bryan’s wife, Victoria, was quick to offer her opinion, “I bet Levi must have become mates with some crooks when he was in prison and garnered their support, dad.” she gave a sly smile, “That could have given Levi the ammunition to stand up to Trey and his men.” While Trey might hold some influence, he was pale in comparison with the real big crooks on the streets.

It was probably one of those crooks who had teamed up with Levi to take out Trey and his men. I mean, didn’t Levi issued us a warning during the banquet to celebrate our share listing last time?

He demanded us to repent and offer an apology in one month's time, or we will have to defend with all we have if we refuse to apologize. It all pointed to the possibility that Levi must have garnered the support of some influential and powerful crooks to back him up.

"Yes, I'm sure that must be the case!" Joseph could not agree more with Victoria, "Levi must have found some real big shots while he was in prison to back him up, so he's now coming after us!"

"Looks like we've underestimated this little b*****d." Ben stroked his chin and said meditatively, "He's no pushover indeed."

"I don't give a heck what big crooks that's backing him up," Jaycob snorted, "I'll get even with him for turning my son into such a horrible state!"

Vengeance and hatred had blinded Jaycob.

"There's no way we would let him off, Uncle Jaycob." Bryan pointed out, "But we need to get a good grasp of the situation before we strike. We must find out who is backing him and what tricks he has up his sleeve. Even though we are not afraid to confront him directly, we still need to do it the smart way."

Joseph nodded in agreement, "Bryan's right. We should play our cards wisely." Levi is too naive if he thinks he could triumph over us simply because he had ousted Trey. What a joke! Trey is nothing more than just one of our lackeys. Our family is almost untouchable in North Hampton.

Besides, we have powerful connections in all kinds of sectors including politics, business, military, and even the mafias and thugs. So what if Levi had some big crooks as his backup? There's no way he could hurt our family, he won't be able to harm even a single hair of the Garrison family!

"You're right. Levi is too gullible to think he could trample over us with the help of some big guns." Jaycob's eyes gleamed with a bloodthirsty look, "I'll flip open all his cards so he'll never be able to play any tricks on us again. That's when we would make him pay with his blood!"

"But I have a bad feeling about this." Rick said with an ominous tone, "Levi is someone who is cold and calculative. I'm pretty sure he must have it all worked out inside his head. We'd better not be too reckless about it."

"I think you're getting a little paranoid about it, Uncle Rick." Bryan smiled over it, "There's nothing for us to fear given our status and influence now. We are as solid as they come. Whatever tricks Levi try to play on us will never work."

"I agree with Bryan." Joseph chimed in, "There's no need to be too worried by that, Rick."

"I don't know about this, but I think it's better to be safe than to be sorry," Rick sighed, "it's just that I can't shake the feeling that something's wrong!"

It was against Rick's reticent nature to say such a thing, but he had an awful premonition that something bad was going to happen.

He knew there was more to Levi than meet the eye. Levi is simply no pushover in any aspect!

...

At night.

Aaron lashed out at Levi the moment they reached home. "What do you think you're doing? Are you looking to get Zoey into trouble?" he snarled, "Get out of my house if you don't want to stay here!"

"What's going on, Dad?" Zoey and Levi were astounded, "What did Levi do?"

The Protector Chapter 21

"Don't think we are ignorant of what you'd done to the Garrison family," Aaron scoffed, "they have warned us to prepare ourselves for a bloodbath."

"Why do you have to piss off the Garrison family? Are you looking to get yourself killed?"

Caitlyn and Aaron were raving mad.

"If it's not for Zoey, I'd have kicked you out of our house a long time ago." Aaron spat with such fury that his veins stood out in his neck, "You could have been sleeping at the streets by now!"

Zoey did not want to aggravate the hostility of his parents towards Levi, but she felt Levi had acted too rashly as well.

We were lucky to have Azure Dragon bail us out this time. But what about next time? Will we get lucky again?

"Who are you to step on the toes of the Garrison family?" Caitlyn glared at Levi with total contempt, "You don't even have a place to stay on your own!"

"Mum, Levi actually has the villa..."

Zoey was trying to explain to her mum that Levi had just got his villa back, but Caitlyn cut her off abruptly, "Don't give me that crap about his villa. He's simply a ticking time bomb, you shouldn't hang around with him all the time. I'd rather you use your time to source for investors instead!"

"You should know well that the Garrison family is untouchable, not even the Lopez family could hold a candle to them. We'll be doomed should the Garrisons decide to come at us. I'm warning you, Levi, I'll get Zoey to seek a divorce with you if you ever dare to infuriate the Garrison family again!"

The next day.

Zoey and Levi planned to source for investors for their upcoming project. They were about to leave the house when Caitlyn reminded Zoey, "It's going to be the National holidays soon and your cousin is coming over to spend the holidays with us. Can you go and pick her up as your dad and I are too busy with our chores?"

“Sure, mum.”

Levi knew both Aaron and Caitlyn had got their hands full at the moment. Caitlyn worked in the hospital while Aaron had just started a small business.

It was another frustrating day for Zoey. Every investor she met had snubbed her proposal.

However, Levi watched quietly without interfering. All he did was take down the names of those companies who had snubbed Zoey’s proposal.

The string of ill-luck days for Zoey had left her with no choice but to hold back her project as long as she could, since she could not source the investments she needed to kick-start her project. She was just three days away from the commencement date, as stipulated in the contract.

It had definitely stressed Zoey to the extreme.

Aaron and Caitlyn were exasperated and wore a worried look on their faces.

“Don’t be too worried, Mum, Dad.” Levi gave a placid smile, “I’m sure the investors would show up when the time comes.”

He said it with an air of confidence, since he knew he had made all the necessary arrangements.

“You should just keep your mouth shut!” Aaron flared, “Of course it’s easy for you to say that, since it’s none of your business!”

Ding Dong...

The doorbell sounded. It surprised them to see Shaun at their doorstep.

“It’s good that you’re all here, Uncle Aaron and Aunt Caitlyn. Grandpa would like all of you to come for a family meeting tonight.”

Shaun left promptly after he had relayed the message.

Shortly after, Levi, Zoey and her parents came to the family complex of the Lopez family.

It was a vast complex that comprised several buildings. Its structure and scale were one of the most affluent and lavish in North Hampton.

Zoey instantly felt animosity in the Lopez family’s members looks when they greeted her. It was as if she had just snatched away the love of their lives.

It dawned on Zoey and her family that they were no longer seen as part of the Lopez family anymore, now, they are seen as enemy who had taken their cake away and have it all to themselves.

“Come over here, Aaron and you guys. Take a seat.” Harry and the rest of them greeted them with an unusual friendliness.

“How’s your project going along, Zoey?” Harry asked once everybody was seated.

“There’s a major issue with the funding, grandpa!” Zoey sighed, “We’re just three days away from the commencement date but I’ve yet to rope in investors for the project.”

“Hahaha....Didn’t I told you that this is too large of a project for a small company like Imperial Meadows?”

“That’s right, it’s good to know your own limits. Don’t act like some big guns when you’re just nothing but a soft and limp fry!”

...

Everyone started to mock Zoey when they heard about her funding problem.

Zoey and her family could only put up with their sarcasm in silence since she could find nothing to rebuke them. The lack of funding had now put her entire project into jeopardy.

The Protector Chapter 22

“I’m a bit offended, Zoey.” Harry smiled ruefully, “How could you forget about your own family?”

“Grandpa, I...”

“You should have come to me instead. The Lopez Group could work out something for you. You know it’s well within our means to take on that Ecological Park project of yours.”

“I could even provide the startup capital for your project!” said Harry seriously.

“I bet there’s going to be some conditions attached to it?” Levi drove straight to the point. “Or you wouldn’t be so kind as to provide the funding.”

He had seen through the ulterior motive for Harry to fund the project.

“Good, I like to deal with smart people.” Harry grinned, “It’d save me a lot of my time.”

His words prompted Samuel Robertson, who was sitting next to Harry, to pass over the contract to Zoey.

“Take a look at this, Zoey.”

Zoey immediately studied the contract when they passed it to her.

The content was straightforward.

The contract stated that Lopez Group would get up to ninety percent of the profits for the Ecological Park project for providing the funds to Imperial Meadows Limited.

It sent Aaron into a fit of rage after he read the contract.

The Lopez family are simply too cruel to ask for such a huge chunk of the profits.

Aaron was utterly pissed off. He felt that Harry had never regarded him as his own son, but just another prey he was targeting.

“Don’t be mad, Aaron and Zoey. Think about it, in three days’ time, the project would be automatically annulled if you can’t come up with the funding.” Harry’s grin was sly and pernicious, as if he was trying to lure the bait to the hook, “You would end up without a cent once the project was annulled. But if you accept our funding, you’d still get a ten percent cut out of the profits. That would translate to quite a considerable sum of a hundred million. It’s up to you to decide...”

“Unless you’re confident to pull in the funds that you need before the stated deadline.”

Given the tight deadline of just three days, Harry was pretty sure it was nigh impossible for Zoey to secure the funds she needed for the project. This would only leave her with no other options but to agree to his terms.

It would make the Lopez family the biggest winner with a whopping ninety percent of the profits. Even Mr. Jennings could do nothing about it.

“That’s true, Aaron.” Henry chipped in, “We should work together since we’re family. Let’s share the profits instead of having the cake all to yourself.”

“There’s no hurry to sign this. I’ll leave you guys alone to discuss it among yourselves.”

Harry and his company left Levi, Zoey and her parents to talk things out.

“Why don’t we just agree to their terms, Zoey?” Aaron and Caitlyn persuaded, “At least there’s still something left on the plate for us. You should know better that your chances of getting the funds are almost as good as zero!”

Their words almost swayed Zoey to put her name down on the contract. But she held back and sought Levi’s opinion.

“Don’t sign it!” Levi was adamant.

“Trust me, Zoey! I’m sure that I can secure the funding you need before the deadline expires!”

A fuming Aaron intervened before Zoey could fumble out a reply, “Don’t give me that crap again! Do we hold you responsible if we lose that hundred million? I firmly believe we should sign it.”

Zoey was in a dilemma as she eyed Levi skeptically. She did not have complete faith in Levi’s words.

“Alright, how about this?” Levi shrugged, “Since we have three days left to go, why don’t we hang on till the last day to see if we could pull in some investments?” he suggested, “It’s still not too late to sign the contract by then.”

“Sounds like a plan!”

“I could work with that!”

Everybody gave their nods of approval.

The same goes for Harry and his men. They agreed to the suggestion readily.

They were certain that Zoey would never secure the investments that she badly needed in just three days' time.

...

For the next three days, Zoey worked tirelessly from day to night to meet with potential investors for the project.

Yet, there was nothing to show for all her efforts.

Those who were interested demanded a ridiculous amount of return for their investments.

It would make more sense to work with Harry, since his offer was more or less the same than the rest.

Three days passed by without a trace. The deadline was set on tomorrow before ten o'clock to kick start the project, once over the given time, the project would be automatically annulled.

“Come on, we've got to sign the contract with Harry now.” Aaron stood up and said.

“What's the hurry? Why don't we just wait a little longer?” Levi tried to dissuade them from signing, “We have all the time till next morning eight o'clock to sign it.”

“Let's wait until tomorrow morning, Zoey. Don't sign the contract today.” Levi instructed.

“I need to step out for a while.” Levi left the house after he urged Zoey to stay patient for one more night.

The Protector Chapter 23

Levi left the house to meet up with Azure Dragon, whom he had instructed to wait for him outside the house.

“What can I do for you, Sir?” Azure Dragon asked.

“I want you to contact these companies.” Levi handed him a list of company names.

The following morning.

Zoey was woken up by Aaron in the wee hours of the morning.

“Where the hell is Levi? I presume he was out last night to source for funding, but what’s taking him so long to come back?” Aaron said disapprovingly, “He just can’t do anything right. He’s a born loser, a good-for-nothing!”

It angered Zoey to think that Levi did not even bother to inform her when he knew he would be out the whole night.

“We’d better sign the contract before it’s too late. Let’s meet up with Harry now!”

Harry and his men were already standing by at the family mansion when Zoey and her family arrived.

An euphoric smile hung on their faces as they greeted Zoey and her family.

It was all too gratifying for Harry and company to see the three of them come begging with their tail between their legs.

“You should have known better than to make a fool out of yourself, Aaron.” Henry and Fabian jeered at him, “Can’t you see that there’s no way you guys could ever get the investments?”

Aaron lowered his head and said feebly, “We’re here to sign the contract, dad.”

Anger welled up in his chest when he thought of Levi.

Had it not been Levi who advised them to hold back for three more days, they would have signed it on the same day when it was offered to them, It would have seemed more like a respectable deal at that time.

It had become anything but respectable in the eyes of Harry and his company now that Aaron had to beg them for the contract. Knowing the contract was now the last resort for Zoey, it would only make Aaron looked desperate and defeated in the eyes of the Lopez family.

Aaron and his family had never felt such humiliation before. This is all thanks to Levi.

“Yes, we are ready to sign it now, grandpa.” Zoey informed Harry.

“Sure, we can sign the contract. But there will be a change of terms.” Harry’s expression changed and he curled his lips into a grim smile, “We are no longer asking for ninety but ninety-five percent of the profits now. The remaining five percent would be yours.”

“What? Didn’t we agreed on a ninety percent cut for you and ten percent for us?”

A sudden terrible pang of shock hit Zoey as she stared at Harry incredulously. Harry had just dropped a bombshell on her.

“Don’t you know the terms changes accordingly?” Harry said scornfully, “That’s our offer. Take it or leave it.”

Knowing the ball was now in his court, Harry knew it was he who called the shots. The change of terms seemed justifiable to him since it was Zoey who desperately needed the contract.

Zoey winced at the cold-bloodiness of these people!

She bitterly resented her grandpa for his callous and selfishness.

“Fine then, I’ll pass! I’ll give up the project altogether!” she said in a fit of rage, “Nobody would get a dime out of it!”

“How could you say that, Zoey? Five percent would still give us fifty million, at least there’s something for us!”

“Your mum is right, Zoey. We can’t afford to lose it, just sign it!”

The relentless pestering from Aaron and Caitlyn left Zoey with no choice but to sign the contract.

“Stop! Don’t sign the contract!”

Just as Zoey was about to ink the contract, Levi showed up and halted her.

“There’s still time before the deadline,” he wrung away the pen from Zoey’s hands, “why do we have to sign it now?” he questioned.

“What do you think you’re doing, Levi?” Aaron almost wanted to slap Levi across the face “Why are you stopping us from getting the fifty million? Is it because you’re jealous you’ve got nothing for yourself?”

“Ten minutes! just give me ten minutes! Once the time is up you can do as you please.” Levi glanced at his watch and said, “You can sign it in ten minutes’ time!”

“Alright! I’ll give you another ten minutes to prove yourself!” Aaron muttered through gritted teeth, “Make sure you produce something in ten minutes’ time, or I’ll never forgive you for the rest of my life, much less allow Zoey to stay with you!”

“Okay!”

The unyielding attitude of Levi intrigued Harry. He was curious to see what would happen in ten minutes’ time.

“Alright, let’s wait for another ten minutes.”

Henry and the rest giggled with excitement. They could not wait to get their popcorn ready to watch some hilarious comedy in ten minutes’ time.

Ten minutes passed in a flash. Everything was at status quo.

“Just sign it!” Henry threw the contract in front of Zoey. He was certain there would be no white knight coming to her rescue.

Vroom! Vroom! Vroom!

At the same moment, a thunderous roar of engine noises filled the whole of the Lopez family mansion.

It attracted the curiosity of everyone to step out of the building.

What greeted their eyes was a succession of luxury cars making their way into the Lopez family mansion. They all came to a halt when they reached their building.

The Protector Chapter 24

It was a succession of top end luxury cars which included Maybach, Rolls Royce, and many more.

Each of these cars could easily cost over tens of millions!

The Lopez family looked on with a dazed expression. What the hell is going on here?

What are all these cars doing here?

Everyone went pop-eyed when they saw the faces of the people who alighted from the cars. They were a group of impeccably dressed, middle-aged men and women who carried an overpowering air of status and power.

Each of them carried a business savvy look synonymous to the directors of some top corporations.

“Huh? Isn’t that the President of Far East Investments, Mr. Feliciano Hayes? What brings him here?”

“Look, that’s the General Manager of Orc Investments Limited, Mr. Roberto Norris!”

“Isn’t that guy the boss of Starlight Property Development Limited, Mr. Lorenzo Woods?”

“Oh, my god! Even Pedro Zinno, the President of Hercules Property Development Company, is here too!”

...

Fabian, Henry, and the rest of them murmured among themselves into a frenzy.

The names they had murmured were the super-rich and powerful leaders who ruled the corporate world of North Hampton. Each of their net worth were in billions.

Lopez Group looked so insignificant in the eyes of these super rich. Any one of them could easily take out the Lopez Group without even battling an eyelid.

The scale and grandeur of so many big shots coming together was a sight to behold for Harry and his men.

It almost took their breath away.

Harry led Fabian and the rest to hurry themselves forward and greeted the billionaires with fawning attention; “Greetings, Mr. Zinno, welcome....”

However, nobody responded to their greetings. All the billionaires walked past them as if they were non-existent and headed straight to where Levi and Zoey were standing.

“How could it be?” Harry said in disbelief, “Could it be they are here to provide funding for Zoey’s project?”

Harry’s eyes widened in stupefaction, his jaws stiffened with astonishment.

Zoey froze when she saw the billionaires walking towards her. She wondered if her eyes were playing tricks on her. These were the same group of people she had approached before to solicit for their interests in her project, and they had all rejected her proposal.

What’s going on? What are they doing here?

“Hello, Ms. Lopez. I’m Feliciano Hayes from Far East Investments!”

“Good afternoon, Ms. Lopez. I’m Pedro Zinno and I represent Hercules Property Development.”

“Nice to meet you, Ms. Lopez. I’m Lorenzo Woods from Starlight Property Development.”

...

All the billionaires introduced themselves in a humble manner towards Zoey.

Everybody gasped in awe.

Harry and the others from the Lopez family were utterly lost for words.

It was beyond their wildest imagination to think that these billionaires would show up to fund for Zoey’s project.

Zoey was still trembling inside even though she tried to recompose herself, “H-Hello everyone...how are you...”

“Don’t be nervous, Ms. Lopez! We’re here to discuss our cooperation on the project!”

Feliciano Hayes flashed a cheesy smile, “Far East Investments would be interested to invest one billion into your project, Ms. Lopez!”

Lorenzo Woods counter-offered immediately, “Ms. Lopez, Starlight Property Development would be willing to provide up to two billion to fund your project!”

“No, Orc Investments is willing to invest up to three billion!”

“We are more than happy to provide up to three billion in funding and even take over the construction of your project. Please let Hercules Property Development be your partner instead!”

“Spark Corporation would invest up to five hundred million in your project! We would not ask for a share of your profits, Miss Lopez. All we want is to offer our sincere help!”

...

It was like some bidding war that had gone out of control. Every billionaire was competing to provide funding for Zoey’s project.

The highest bidder had offered to invest up to seven hundred million.

Everyone was reluctant to give up on the project, which could not had taken more than a billion in total.

But the bidding war had skyrocketed the total available funding by ten times its original amount.

The unexpected twist of events caused Harry’s blood pressure to shoot up exponentially, causing him to pass out on the spot.

Samuel, Shaun and the rest were almost on the verge of puking blood.

What the hell is going on here?

Why is everyone behaving like maniacs?

It was an earth-shattering feeling for Zoey as well.

She could still recall the smug and dismissive look in their eyes when they snubbed her initial proposal.

Yet the same group of people were now lining up to impress her, begging her to let them invest in her project.

Aaron and Caitlyn were too emotional to say a single word. They could only respond with their quivering bodies.

“Calm down, Zoey.” Levi put his arm around her to offer his support, “Why don’t you say a few words to show your appreciation for their interest in your project.”

“Right, I’m so glad that all of you are keen to invest in my project.” Zoey composed herself and said, “All of you are welcome to invest in my project!”

“Really? That’s good to hear it from Ms. Lopez herself.”

All the billionaires let out a hefty sigh and wiped away the sweat on their brows after they heard this.

The Protector Chapter 25

“However,” Zoey added, “I’m afraid you have misunderstood the amount of funding that I’m seeking. The amount you’ve mentioned is way beyond what I’m asking for. All I need for the project is only a hundred million.”

“Just name any amount, Ms. Lopez.” Lorenzo Woods said with an air of indulgence, “Unless you’re asking for tens of billions, I’m ready to pump billions into your project.”

The words of Lorenzo Woods sent Harry’s blood pressure up a few notches when he heard he was ‘ready to pump billions into your project’. His legs wobbled, and he saw stars spinning around his head.

Zoey’s mind was in a whirlwind as she quivered in her reply, “Everybody, I am humbled by your overwhelming interest in my project. But a hundred and fifty million would be more than enough for my project.”

“How about this?” Feliciano Hayes swept his eyes across the room and suggested. “Since there are fifteen of us here, why don’t we each come up with ten million?”

“That would be the perfect solution! It would give each of us an opportunity to help Ms. Lopez.” Feliciano Hayes said, “Make sure we are not treating this as an investment or loan. It should be a giveaway to Ms. Lopez!”

Gulp!

Aaron and Caitlyn were swallowing so hard that everyone could hear them gulp.

A hundred and fifty million giveaway to our daughter?

What makes our daughter turned into a money spinning machine all of a sudden?

Everybody is begging for her to take their money.

“No, it can’t be a giveaway.” Zoey insisted, “We should treat it as an investment.”

“It’s alright, Ms. Lopez. Ten million is nothing to us!”

“Yeah, it’s just some petty cash to me.”

Each billionaire insisted they should treat the ten million as a giveaway to Zoey.

“Hey, didn’t you hear what she’d just said?” Levi snapped, “She said it should be an investment.”

Levi’s sudden bawl made the billionaires shuddered with horror.

“Yes! Sure! Indeed! It should be an investment!”

Everyone nodded emphatically.

“So, ladies and gentlemen, would you mind coming to my company, Imperial Meadows Limited, to ink the contract?” Zoey asked.

“Of course, we are more than willing to come anytime to sign it!”

They continued their frenzied nodding of heads.

“I’m sorry, grandpa.” Before stepping out of the mansion, Zoey walked up to Harry and said apologetically, “I can’t accept your terms now, but I can assure you that the Lopez family will definitely have a share of the project.”

“You!”

Harry was breathless with anger as he pointed a trembling finger at Zoey. He let out a cry and finally passed out.

Levi and company soon left the mansion amidst a wave of awe mutterings and under the envious looks in everyone’s eyes.

It had been an emphatic victory for Zoey and her family.

It restored Aaron’s self-esteem to think he had finally regained his position in the Lopez family.

The signing went smoothly, and the funds all came in as promised.

Zoey was able to launch the project within the stipulated deadline.

Everything was smooth and went accordingly as planned.

It was already nighttime when they finally made it home.

Zoey and her family were staring at Levi with interrogating eyes.

“What’s happening here, Levi?” Zoey asked, “I’m sure you have something to do with it.”

“Yes, it was all orchestrated by me.” Levi admitted.

“But how did you do it?” Aaron was still feeling the effects from the shock, “It’s simply inconceivable!”

“It’s simple, actually.” Levi quipped, “All I did was show them the details of the project and let them know that this project is too good to be missed.”

“That’s impossible.” Zoey said warily, “Isn’t that what I’d just done when we first presented our project to them? What makes them snub my proposal when I’m sure I had given them a more detailed explanation than yours?”

“That’s because I’ve mentioned some names like Orlando Jennings, Azure Dragon and God of War.” Levi explained, “They agreed to it once they knew the whole story.”

“This...” Zoey went silent. She knew it was something she could never do, given her obstinate nature.

“Haha, even though we are hardly connected to God of War, these shrewd businessmen changed their stance once they find out that the God of War has something to do with this project, they’d even start buttering up to Zoey immediately.” Aaron gave a broad grin.

“That’s right.” Caitlyn agreed, “Since it was Orlando who decided on the project, with Azure Dragon keeping a close tab on its progress. These billionaires must have been under the impression that Zoey had garnered the support of all these people as well.”

The Protector Chapter 26

Their explanation seemed plausible to Zoey.

So, it was only because they wanted to please the big guns like Azure Dragon and Orlando that these billionaires showed up in person to invest in my project.

“So did you explain to every one of them in person?”

Zoey looked at Levi and felt her heart ached when she thought about what Levi must have gone through to get the support of those billionaires.

“Yes, I did. It was quite tiring indeed.” Levi smiled gently.

In actual fact, all he needed was just a call. His word was almost as good as a decree.

“I owe it to you, Levi.” Zoey said with heartfelt gratitude, “It’s all because of you that we’re able to pull this off.”

“You’re right. All credit goes to Levi. It was him who had turned the situation around, I had almost given up hope.”

Aaron was extremely pleased with Levi’s performance today.

“I am still grappling with what’s happening, actually.” Caitlyn gushed.

She was starting to see Levi in a more positive light now.

“Levi, why don’t you change into a new set of clothes since you’ve been wearing them for a while.” Caitlyn said, “Just put the clothes in the laundry basket and I’ll get them wash at the hospital. I am on duty tomorrow and I need to get my uniform washed as well.”

“Sure, mom.” Levi simpered, “Thank you.”

The following day.

Zoey and Levi left the house to follow up on the project while Caitlyn took her laundry to the hospital's laundry department.

Here, she could wash her clothes and get them sterilized as well.

The principal reason was because it was free and convenient since she worked in the hospital.

She had been using the laundry department to do her laundry ever since her family condition went downhill because of Aaron's failing business.

"Hey, you're taking your laundry here again to save on your utilities bill?" A woman walked in and asked in a penetrating voice, "Must you be such a cheapskate? Didn't your family used to run a large company?"

The woman's name was Jelena Keaton. She worked in the same department with Caitlyn.

Along with Caitlyn, she was tipped as the favorite to be the department's next assistant supervisor. There had always been bad blood between the two.

The nomination for the department's assistant supervisor would be out anytime soon.

Neither of them liked each other, since Jelena was a prickly character who would taunt Caitlyn whenever she saw the opportunity to do so.

"What's that got to do with you?" Caitlyn refuted, "You're not the one who's paying the utilities fees anyway!"

With Jelena gone, Caitlyn emptied her laundry into the basket.

Just when she was about to toss Levi's clothes into the washer, she found a lump in his pocket.

"What a careless chap! How could he even forget to clear his pockets?"

Caitlyn emptied the contents out of the pocket.

There was a pack of cigarettes and a lighter, both were of a navy green color. Caitlyn did not read the words engraved on the cigarette box and lighter.

If only Aaron was here, he was bound to recognize them instantly. Those were war zone cigarettes that no amount of money could buy!

One would need special connections to have access to those types of cigarettes.

The rarest of them would be those with a sniper logo. They were so rare that even the big guns could not get their hands on those cigarettes.

As it turns out, those cigarettes were only provided to the Special Operations Regiment...

“He should really cut down on his smoke.” Caitlyn frowned and dumped the cigarettes into the dustbin, “They could only do him more harm than good!”

Then there was Levi’s wallet.

Caitlyn thought for a moment and opened it up.

There was some loose change inside the wallet, together with Levi and Zoey’s marriage photo.

The only items remained were two small cards, a few chips and an identification pass.

One of the two cards was a black bank card. “This guy’s a pauper. How much money could he have in that card?” Caitlyn scoffed and put aside the bank card.

Little did she know that the black card was the worldwide limited edition American Express card with no spending limit attached to it. once used, It could even haul a plane to return to its port of embarkation, even when it had already taken off.

The other remaining card was a navy green card with a sniper logo on it.

The bunch of chips hardly interested Caitlyn. Her focus was on the identification pass.

It was a red color document with ‘Officer Pass’ written on it, which bore the symbol of the Divine Guard Unit.

“Huh! An officer pass for an ex-convict?” Caitlyn sneered, “Do you think that would make you a true officer?”

On second thought, she flipped open the Officer Pass.

The Protector Chapter 27

“What is this? God of War?” Caitlyn squinted her eyes to read the name written on the document, “What’s written here? Garrison something?”

Caitlyn was trying to figure out the full name on the pass when she was startled by a voice from behind, “What are you looking at, Dr. Black?”

Caitlyn had to put the pass behind her before she could get a good look at the name.

“Oh, nothing.” Caitlyn grinned.

The voice belonged to Jelena Keaton, who was eyeing Caitlyn suspiciously.

“I see, fine.” Jelena shrugged and left.

Unbeknown to Caitlyn, Jelena had been standing behind her while she was checking the Officer Pass. She had even quietly taped down the process with her cellphone.

Jelena sheepishly sneaked to a discreet corner of the hospital and took out her phone.

“Officer, I want to report a theft by Caitlyn Black of The Third District Hospital Cardiac Surgery department.” she whispered over the phone, “I saw with my own eyes that she had stolen an Officer Pass along with a bank card. There was a bunch of chips too, I bet there must be some confidential information inside. I have even taped it down as proof, Officer.”

“Whose Officer Pass is that? Did you see the name and rank?” The officer asked from the other end of the call.

“Oh, it belongs to the God of War, Officer! I am absolutely sure of that. I have the photo and the video to prove it.”

“Okay.”

Shortly after, the sharp shrills of police car sirens filled the air. A succession of police cars stormed into the compounds of the Third District Hospital.

A herd of police officers donned in bullet-proof vests charged into the main building.

Soon, Caitlyn was arrested and tucked into the police car. She was utterly confused and frustrated.

The police took away the rest of the stuff, including the photos and videos taken by Jelena Keaton, which would be used as evidence against Caitlyn.

They brought her directly to the City District Police Station, where the defenseless Caitlyn sobbed and wept woefully.

The nature of the incident alarmed the Captain of Patrol Squad, Xavier Fields, since it involved the theft of an Officer Pass.

He inspected the Officer Pass carefully with his naked eye.

“This couldn’t be fake. It’s a genuine Officer Pass!” he sucked in a deep breath and said, “This is unbelievable! It belongs to God of War!”

The others suggested, “We need to be absolutely sure about this, Captain. Why don’t we get someone from the military to examine it?”

“Yeah, I’ve just informed my buddy, Steven Shaw to come and check it out. He’s from the First Metallic Regiment of North Hampton, he should be here anytime now.”

“Captain, we’ve checked through the bunch of chips and those cards. But we were not granted the level of authority to access them.”

“Let’s wait awhile then.” Xavier Fields ordered, “I want you guys to interrogate that woman we’ve just

caught!”

Inside the interrogation room.

Caitlyn could hardly stop herself from shaking, even though she had almost run out of tears.

“Come clean with us! Where did you get those documents and cards?”

“T-They belonged to my son-in-law!” Caitlyn said nervously.

“Stop spouting rubbish!!! Do you know the importance of this Officer Pass?”

“I-I have no idea...” Caitlyn stared at them blankly.

“This is an Officer Pass that belongs to the God of War!” The officer yelled at the top of his voice.

Boom!

Caitlyn felt like something had exploded inside her head and clogged her brains.

“Do you know there are military secrets inside the wallet? You are now being accused of divulging top state secrets! If you refuse to come clean with us, you’ll be liable to face some real serious charges!”

“Tell me! Where did you steal the wallet and the Officer Pass?” the interrogation officer snarled abruptly at Caitlyn.

Caitlyn was sick with fear. She could feel nothing now but blind terror.

“I-I-I...this stuff belongs to my son-in-law...I’m not lying, I stole nothing...” Caitlyn sobbed.

Meanwhile, Steven Shaw had arrived at the office of the Patrol Squad.

“Where’s the Officer Pass?” Steven hurried over to ask for the pass.

“Here it is!”

Steven Shaw wasted no time in giving his utmost attention to inspect the pass.

After looking at it thoroughly for almost a minute, he put down the documents and sighed, “Yeah, it’s authentic all right!”

“This Officer Pass belongs to the God of War! Where did you find it?” he asked.

“It came from a woman.” said Xavier Fields, “It seemed like she has stolen it from somewhere.”

Steven Shaw seemed to recall something as his expression changed. “Can you find out the name of that woman,” he inquired, “I need to know.”

The Protector Chapter 28

“Sure. Can you find out the name of that woman in the interrogation room?”

“What is it? Caitlyn Black? Are you sure it’s Caitlyn Black?”

Xavier Fields gave the name to Steven Shaw.

Steven Shaw hoicked Xavier Fields to a discreet corner when he heard the name.

“You’ve got the wrong person! Caitlyn Black is the God of War’s mother-in-law!”

“What? Oh, my God!” Xavier Fields got the shock of his life.

“Listen, Xavier.” Steven instructed, “Just block any information and take it that nothing has happened today. Remember, don’t let out any word about it! I’ll inform Azure Dragon and we’ll leave it to the God of War to deal with this.”

“Alright, I’ll do as you say.”

Xavier Fields was still reeling from the sudden shock. He could hardly stop the quivering in his legs.

...

Levi was with Zoey when he received the call from Azure Dragon. He came down to the police station after they briefed him about the matter.

He took back his wallet from Xavier Fields without making a fuss about it.

Xavier and his men could finally heave a deep sigh of relief.

“Just leave the rest to me, God of War.” Xavier suggested, “I’ll follow up with Ms. Caitlyn Black and make sure everything’s back to normal.”

Levi nodded, giving his approval.

“You may leave now, Ms. Black!”

Inside the interrogation room, Caitlyn was so relieved to hear those words. It brought her to tears again, however, this time, it was the tears of gratitude.

“It was all a misunderstanding, Ms. Black. You’re free to go now, since we found out that the Officer Pass was a fake document. But please remind your son-in-law not to use such fake documents to swindle anyone, he could be arrested for it!”

“Sure, Officer!” Caitlyn nodded fervently, “I’ll make sure he gets the message!”

“Your son-in-law is waiting for you outside. You may leave now.”

Caitlyn walked out of the interrogation room.

Her temper flared the moment she saw Levi standing by the counter, waiting for her.

“Mum...”

“Don’t call me mum, I’m not your mum!” Caitlyn fumed, “You almost landed me in deep shit, you fool! Why do I have such a wicked son-in-law?”

It filled Caitlyn with resentment to be treated like a thief when they arrested her and took her to the police station. She had never been to a police station before, and never did she imagine that her first visit to the station was under such deplorable circumstances.

“You should leave Zoey for good. You’ll only ruin her future with those dirty dealings you’ve picked up in prison!” she ranted, “How dare you come up with the idea of making a fake Officer Pass?”

“The pass was real, Mum.” Levi scratched his nose in frustration, “I did not carry a fake pass with me.”

He could only blame his own carelessness, for he could have prevented the disaster.

“What makes you say the pass is real? Do you think you’re more professional than the officers here? I bet you must have been using it to cheat and swindle innocent folks like me. You’d better not get Zoey involved in your vices, or I shall never let you get away with it!” Caitlyn blasted out at Levi, “I’m giving you one last chance and I’ll keep it from Aaron and Zoey about this. You’ll be out of my house for good if I catch you doing this again, you hear me?”

Caitlyn was so full of rage she was about to explode.

“Alright, mum.”

With that said, they left the station and Levi sent Caitlyn back to the hospital.

When she was back at the hospital, Caitlyn was expecting everyone to cast weird glances at her at the hospital.

Contrary to her expectations, everyone behaved as if it was just an ordinary day at work.

What’s going on?

Didn’t a huge commotion happen just now? How could everyone react with such indifference?

“Are you alright, Dr. Black? I was so worried for you. Thank God you’re back!”

“I know I have been mean and crude towards you in the past, and I’m terribly sorry for that.” Jelena came up to her and said, “I’ve backed out from competing for the post of assistant supervisor now, since I believe you’re the better candidate for the job. I’ve informed the hospital about my decision.”

Caitlyn was completely overwhelmed when Jelena Keaton apologized to her and even offered to back

down from the post of assistant supervisor.

It was a post they had both been eyeing for years!

She's backing out from it?

What the hell is happening here?

Don't they know I've just been arrested and sent to the police station? They've even seen it with their own eyes!

But why is everyone behaving so oddly now?

The same goes for Jelena, she seemed petrified of me.

The rest looked equally terrified too.

I could see from their faces and the look in their eyes. I could feel it!

There's something fishy about this. I'll check with Levi!

Caitlyn took out her phone and called Levi, "What's going on here, Levi? Are you hiding something from me?"

The Protector Chapter 29

"I'm not hiding anything from you, mum." Levi repeated, "The pass is real."

"Huh! Do you think I'm a fool to take your word?"

Caitlyn hung up the call when she heard him kept insisting that his pass was real.

She was now certain this had nothing to do with Levi.

Caitlyn concluded that the police must have instructed the hospital to put up a normal front and act as if nothing had happened, in order to avoid tarnishing its reputation.

The project went smoothly for the days that followed.

But they would soon need to halt it because of the upcoming stretch of National holidays.

"Levi, can you go pick up my cousin at the University of North Hampton? Her name is Abigail Rogers." Zoey said to Levi, "I've sent her number to your phone."

She could not take time off from the project at this point of time, so she sought Levi's help to pick up her cousin.

“Sure, leave it to me!”

“But shouldn’t her name be Abigail Black?”

Levi gave her a quizzical look.

“That’s because Abigail has adopted her mother’s surname.” Zoey explained.

Levi called up Azure Dragon after leaving the construction site. “Get me a car, Azure Dragon.” he ordered, “I want to keep a low profile, so a normal car will do.”

Soon after, Azure Dragon showed up with the car.

It was a Maserati Executive GT.

“Whatever!” Levi shook his head helplessly and got into the car.

He parked his car at the main entrance of the east building of the University of North Hampton.

He waited for almost half a day, but there was no sign of Abigail.

Another thirty minutes gone by and Abigail was still nowhere to be seen. Levi took out his phone and dialed the number Zoey had given him.

“Hello, who’s this?”

A pleasant voice answered the call.

“This is Levi, your brother-in-law. I’m here to pick you up at your school!”

“Huh? I thought Zoey said she was too busy to fetch me?” Abigail said in a surprise tone, “I was thinking of going back on my own.”

“Where are you now?” asked Levi, “I’ll come over and pick you up!”

“I see. I’m currently at Dynasty KTV, VIP room 666!”

“Okay, wait for me. I’ll be there shortly!”

In the KTV room, Abigail had just hung up the call when her friend asked, “Who’s that on the phone, Abigail?”

“It’s my brother-in-law, he’s coming to fetch me.”

Abigail knitted her brows in disdain.

“Oh, do you mean that ex-convict, Levi? I know that guy. Everybody in North Hampton knows about his shabby past.”

“So he’s coming to fetch you? Are you sure? Haha!”

“Don’t you feel ashamed to be seen around with a guy like him?”

Abigail clenched her jaw amidst the mockery of her friends. She regretted for having agreed to let Levi come and fetch her.

It was a mere slip of tongue that made her agreed to it. I should have refused it right away.

“Why do you need him to fetch you, Abigail?” A guy asked. His name was Yannick Zann, Abigail’s classmate. He had been wooing her for quite some time. “Why don’t I give you a ride home instead. Didn’t you just see that I’d just got my new car, the BMW x5?”

He came from a rich family who ran a chain of hotels.

The party had been his idea as well.

What the others didn’t know was that he had a sinister motive for holding the party, he wanted to get Abigail drunk so that he could take her to a hotel and rape her.

Dressed in shorts and a cute sling blouse, Yannick could not peel his eyes away from Abigail’s long slender legs and her exposed shoulders which showed her fair skin tone. His blood was raving inside him.

Abigail shrugged. “But my brother-in-law would be here soon.”

“That’s easy. Why don’t you just ask him to go back on his own?” Yannick persuaded, “You know it’s so difficult to get everybody together for a drink.”

Yannick’s desire grew even wilder when Abigail smiled at him. Her rosy cheeks resembled two juicy cherries.

“Come on, let’s have fun and get some booze!”

Abigail’s besties chimed in and suggested they should play some games to encourage her to drink more. They were acting in cahoots with Yannick.

Their motive was to get Abigail drunk.

A few minutes ensued before the door to their VIP room was swung open, Levi walked in.

“Who are you, mister? What are you doing here?”

A few guys stood up and raised their voices at Levi as they flex their muscles in front of the ladies.

Levi gave them the cold shoulder, and merely looked around for Abigail.

When his eyes finally caught sight of Abigail, his gaze settled on her and he said, “I’m here to fetch you, Abigail.”

“Hahaha, so he’s that infamous brother-in-law of yours, Abigail?” Yannick jeered, “I’ve heard so much about him, about how he’d taken advantage of his brother’s wife and how he attempted to murder his adoptive parents. It’s no wonder they called him the ingrate who bit the hand that feeds him. He looked every bit like that type of person to me!”

The Protector Chapter 30

“Hahahaha..,”

The rest of them cackled.

Abigail felt utterly disgraced. How she wished there was a hole for her to hide herself without being seen.

She muttered in dismay, “This is so embarrassing! How could Zoey have asked him to fetch me?”

She refused to even lift her head to look at Levi.

Levi ignored the guys who kept taunting him.

“Shall we leave, Abigail?” he asked.

Abigail finally raised her head and looked straight at Levi, “Why don’t you just head back on your own? I don’t need you to fetch me. I know my way home.”

“But Zoey insists that I pick you up.” Levi’s patience was waning, “Come on, let’s go.”

“Hey, you! Didn’t you hear what Abigail said? She asked you to leave her alone. Are you deaf or something? Who do you think you are to insist that Abigail to leave with you? Get lost!”

“Yeah, Yannick will send Abigail when the party’s over.” The classmates cum lackeys of Yannick tried to get rid of Levi, “You’re not welcome here! Get your ass out of here!”

“You’d better leave with me now!” Levi’s eyes never left Abigail. He knew what nasty tricks her classmates were trying to play on Abigail. “I’ve promised Zoey to fetch you and that’s what I’m going to do!”

“I’m asking you to leave!” Abigail snapped, “Why do I have to go with you when I don’t even know who you are? I’ll go back on my own!”

Boom!

The door to their VIP room was blasted open by a forceful kick.

A guy was kicked into the room.

“What happened to you, Peyton?”

Everybody got up to help Peyton to his feet once they recognized he was one of their classmates.

Another girl was then shoved into the room. Her beaten face had swollen to the size of a pumpkin.

“Oh my God! What happened to you, Mae?”

Abigail and the rest rushed forward to lift her up. They were getting worried.

A teary Mae sobbed, “I ran into a group of bullies when I came out of the restroom. Peyton was trying to protect me so they beat him up too!”

At the same time, a few nasty looking fellows stomped their way into their room.

“Well, well, what have we got here? These little sexy students looked yummy to my eyes! Oh, what a grand feast we’ll be having tonight!”

The group of thugs drooled when they saw Abigail and her female classmates.

Their lecherous gaze swept across the pairs of fair, slender legs with salacious intent.

“So you’re the ones who had beaten up my pal?” Yannick stepped up and asked coldly.

A dozen of Yannick’s classmates stood up behind Yannick. They were all staring at the group of thugs with bulging eyes.

There was no reason for them to fear the thugs, given their numbers.

Besides, they could not wait to show how macho they were in front of their female classmates.

“Yeah, we’re the ones that whacked him upside down, so what?”

The leader of the thugs, a guy with his hair dyed in a freakish silver color, taunted Yannick with an amused look.

“I want you to apologize, or I’ll beat the shit out of you!” Yannick warned, determined to flaunt his bravery in front of Abigail.

“Hahaha, this is so funny it almost choked me, guys. Do you really think a few lame students like you could beat the shit out of us? What makes you think we’ll be taken in by your words? Just because you outnumber us?”

“Hahaha...”

The group of thugs chuckled in response to Yannick’s threat.

“Go! Get our men here! Tell our boss there’s a dozen of young schoolgirls here waiting for him! Get him over here, quick!”

The next moment, the expression on Yannick and the other guys turned wide-eyed, their mouths opened to let out a silent scream.

The thugs had called in their men. There were dozens of them with iron rods and shiny knives in their hands. They waved their weapons with a bloodthirsty look in their eyes.

They all gazed at Abigail and her classmates with a devilish grin, whilst they blocked the exit of the VIP room.

The students had never encountered such a ghastly scene before in their young lives. It scared the living daylight out of them and made them pissed their pants.

Even Yannick was starting to wobble.

Slap! Slap! Slap!

The silver-haired thug smacked at Yannick's face and sneered, "So what now? Where's that gutsy look of yours now?"

"Brother, please forgive me. I-I was wrong..."

Yannick's shoulders drooped and his body slumped like a deflated balloon as he surrendered.

Slap!

The silver-haired thug landed a tight slap on Yannick's face.

Bang!

Next, the thugs shoved and kicked at Yannick with such force that it made him spew out a fountain of blood.

The VIP room had now gone completely silent. Everyone muted and held their breath. They could only whisper a prayer in their hearts.

The Protector Chapter 31

April 15, 2021 by Chapter Novel

The students knew they had been outnumbered by the dozens of thugs who had now occupied their VIP room.

It petrified them when they looked at the faces of these thugs, who appeared to be contorted with menace.

It made their legs wobbled with fear and their eyes filled with horror.

They had completely forgotten about their female classmates now. All they wished now was to flee as far away as they could.

“I want all of you to get down on your knees! Let’s see who’s got the balls to stand when I ask you to kneel!”

The thugs shoved and pushed the boys to the ground, and made them kneel.

The girls followed suit voluntarily, since they had more to fret than the boys.

The leering eyes of these thugs had been all over their bodies.

Abigail was bolder than the rest and she turned only to see Levi sitting in a corner being so inconspicuous that even the thugs failed to notice him.

What a lame duck we have here! She moaned to herself, It’s such a pity that Zoey had married to a weakling like him.

Her disdain for Levi grew when she saw his expression, which somewhat appeared as timid and wimpy in her eyes.

She swore her future husband must never be a coward like him, but a true and fearless hero!

She shouted at the group of thugs with glaring eyes, “I’m warning you, get out of here and leave us alone, or I’ll call the police.”

“Go ahead, my little darling! Do you think we’d let you go?”

One of the thugs stepped forward and stretched out his hand, trying to touch Abigail’s face.

Slap!

Abigail slapped him in the face and her action sent the rest of the thugs into a state of shock.

Never would they have expected her to have the guts to lay her hand on them.

“Who’s the one that have the guts to hit my man?”

Following that, a few guys stormed into the room.

The leader of the group was a man with a big pot belly and tattoos all over his body.

“B-Beck...”

Yannick knew that Beck was one of the gang leaders of the underground society. He was known for his fearlessness and brutality, many had seen him cut up dozens of men single-handedly by himself.

Many of the young thugs worshipped him as their idol.

“This way please, Trey!”

It astounded everyone when they saw another person stepped into the room. It seemed like Beck was just the chaperon today to someone who was an even a bigger shot than Beck himself.

A group of thugs escorted the man into the room. He was cradling two shiny walnuts in his hands. A prominent scar ran diagonally across his face which resembled the teeth of a shark.

“Hiss! Trey is here as well?”

Yannick was so frightened he almost pissed himself in the pants.

As compared to Beck, Yannick knew better than his classmates that Trey was the real daddy of the underground world. He had over two hundred men at his disposal.

“Look at these girls, Trey! Young, bubbly students who look so juicy and tender, doesn’t it make you feel like you want to just gobble them up? Hehe!”

The silver-haired guy buttered up Trey and Beck with an unctuous grin.

There was an aura of pure lust reflected in the repugnant eyes of Trey and Beck.

Beck cast a few glances at Abigail and suggested to Trey, “This one seems like the cream of the crop, Trey. You should take this one.”

“Good.” Trey nodded approvingly, “I like your humility.”

Beck’s demeanor was anything but humble when he turned around to the group of students. “Bashed up all the guys and boot them out of the place. Leave all the girls behind.” he snarled in his raucous voice, “If any of you dare to leak a word or tell the police, I’ll make sure you won’t get to live another day!”

“No! No! This can’t be happening...”

The students were all stricken with horror, especially the girls, who feared for the worst.

All the girls knew what would be waiting for them if they were made to stay behind.

Even the brave-hearted Abigail could not hide her panic as her body quavered in fear.

The boys were utterly shell-shocked.

They had never expected it would end up in such a grisly manner.

“Trey, Beck, please don’t do this to us!” Yannick pleaded while he knelt on the floor.

“Oh? It seems like this guy know us?” Beck laughed.

“Of course I know you, Trey and Beck” Yannick proclaimed, “I’ve heard so much about you guys from the streets.”

“Who the hell are you?”

Trey asked disinterestedly.

“My dad is Felix Zann, President of Marriot Roman Hotel Group.” Yannick informed them, “He have had a drink with the both of you before.”

“Ah, Felix Zann of Marriot Roman Hotel.” Trey nodded, “Yeah, I know him.”

His answer seemed to offer a glint of hope to the students as they all heaved a deep sigh of relief.

Everyone gazed at Yannick with adulation. It seemed like they could lean on him when the going gets tough.

The girls looked at Yannick in a different light as well.

Even Abigail’s eyes glistened with a new respect now when she looked at him.

Yannick beamed with such heroism and courage that they really thought he would be their knight in shining armor.

The Protector Chapter 32

“My dad often speaks highly about the two of you!” Yannick pressed on, “Trey, since you have such a cordial relationship with my dad, why don’t you just let the matter rest and let us leave?”

“I know we are in the wrong, and we are really sorry for everything we’ve done. I’d really appreciate it if you could let us go and I’ll definitely repay your kindness, I promise!”

Yannick was getting bolder as he spoke, straightening his back and thrusting his chest forward.

Given his father’s reputation and his relationship with these guys, Yannick was certain that he could pull this one through.

He was confident that Trey and Beck would definitely spare him together with his classmates, on account of their relationship with his dad.

The room went dead silent again.

After a momentary pause, Trey broke the silence as a spark shined in his eyes. Slap! He slapped Yannick brutally on his face.

The slap was of such magnitude that Yannick bounced back a few meters. A few teeth flew out from his mouth, which was oozing blood. His face was contorted with pain.

“Who do you think you are? What nerve of you to ask me to let the matter rest and let you go?” Trey barked at Yannick, “You think I’d give a shit about you or your father? Even if your father’s here right now, I’ll make him kneel before me too!”

The bestiality of Trey’s demeanor paralyzed everyone and dented their hopes.

Just when they thought Yannick would be their savior...

The girls whimpered while the boys were in a daze. We’re not getting out of here unscathed.

This is it, we’re doomed! What else could we do now?

Abigail tried to calm herself down and tried to think of a way out.

How about asking Zoey for help?

Abigail could not help but turned to look at Levi, who was still sitting at a corner inside the dimly lit room, unnoticeable to Trey and his men.

What a useless piece of crap! An absolute good-for-nothing! Abigail thought to herself, Is he my brother-in-law at all? Shouldn’t he have done something by now to protect me, if he still has the guts of a man?

“Take away all the girls and beat up all the boys!” Beck ordered, “Just beat the hell out of them but keep them alive!”

The dozens of thugs immediately sprang into action and walked towards the group of students.

That’s it! We’re done!

Abigail closed her eyes and murmured a prayer.

“I’m giving you ten seconds to get your asses out of here!”

A sudden loud voice shot up from nowhere and shocked everyone.

They turned and looked towards the corner of the VIP room. What they saw was a man sitting on the sofa. He was hardly noticeable since he was dressed in all black.

“Drag that guy over here. Get him to kneel on the floor!” Beck demanded.

The silver-haired thug came up to Levi and clamp one hand on Levi’s shoulder, looking to jerk him up from the sofa.

But in the next instant, Levi’s eyes flickered as he grasped the thug’s wrist and twisted it around in a flash.

Crack!

The sound was crisp and clear. It was the sound of a broken wrist.

“Ahh!”

The silver-haired thug cried out as he felt excruciating pain and that stunned everyone in the VIP room.

His overturned palm was a gruesome sight to watch. Everyone was bathing in cold sweat, their scalp prickled with horror.

What kind of force would it take to twist a wrist as if he was twisting open a bottle cap?

Abigail was awestruck by the prowess and agility showed by Levi.

It seems like he’s not such a pushover after all.

“How dare you do this to my men? I’m going to make you pay with your blood!”

Beck’s howl resembled a mad beast. He was about to lunge himself at Levi when Trey halted him.

“Let me check him out.”

It aroused his curiosity when he realized they had failed to notice the man sitting in the corner, who had sat through the entire incident seemingly unfazed.

Trey and Beck, together with their men, moved across the room and walked up to Levi.

“Turn on all the lights!” Trey commanded.

Click! Click! Click!

Soon, the room was fully lit, and everything was in plain sight, including Levi who had been sitting on the sofa.

“You son of a b***h, how dare you just sit there looking nonchalant?”

Beck yelled heatedly at Levi.

Abigail knew this would be the end of Levi. She closed her eyes in despair.

Thump!

What ensued blew everyone off their mind. Trey slammed his knees to the floor with a thud and knelt in front of Levi.

The Protector Chapter 33

The thud came as a bombshell to everyone when they saw Trey went down on his knees.

Beck was slacked jawed with surprise.

The same goes for Abigail, and everyone else in the room, who reacted with a blank expression on their faces.

The room had become so quiet that they could even hear a pin drop.

Levi lit a cigarette and took a deep puff. The smoke he blew out encircled Trey like a ghostly chain.

“I remember you...”

Levi said nonchalantly.

Trey gave a sad grin when he heard this. I’m done now, this would only spell disaster now that I’m in the bad books of Levi.

Unaware of Levi’s actual identity, Beck was still trying to stamp his authority, “How dare you puff your smoke at Trey? You must be sick of living!”

“Shut up!” Trey stood up and shoved Beck a few meters away with a kick. “Get down on your knees now, all of you!” he blasted at his men.

Thump! Thump! Thump!

Dozens of Trey and Beck’s men fell to their knees, successively like a pack of dominoes.

Beck joined them and went down on his knees, even though he hardly had a clue of what was happening.

Everyone was in a guessing frenzy about Levi’s true identity.

They wondered who could command such an authority that scared the hell out of a powerful thug like Trey and made him kneel before him like a high-strung cat.

Yannick knew better than everyone that Trey and Beck were not somebody you would mess around with, given their notoriety on the streets.

That brother-in-law of Abigail must be someone with supreme dominance to make them go down on their knees.

He felt it more profoundly than everyone in the room.

Abigail's impression of Levi had taken a complete 180. She no longer looked at him with detest, but with curiosity and adulation.

In her eyes, Levi now seemed to carry a halo of valiance above his head.

Even the way he smoked enchanted her.

The rest of the girls were equally charmed by Levi, whose machismo and charisma were acutely absent in their male classmates.

His bravery in such a situation fueled their admiration to the fullest.

"So this would be the second time that we've met?" Levi asked.

"Yes... Yes... Yes..." Trey pressed his face to the floor as he replied. He was too afraid to look into Levi's eyes.

His whole body was shaking uncontrollably and there was a large urine stain on his pants. He had just wet himself.

"So what should we do about it?" Levi puffed, his cigarette smoke curled into a circle.

"Please feel free to punish us in any way you deemed fit, Sir..."

Trey felt only a complete and utter despair at that moment.

"Each of you will leave two fingers behind, that's it." Levi said in a desultory fashion, "There are too many young ones present. I don't want to show them my wrath."

The students were just young punks in the eyes of Levi.

"Yes... Yes... Whatever you say..."

Trey was thrilled when he heard Levi's punishment, it was much lenient than he had anticipated. He picked up the blade and chopped off two of his fingers under the watching eyes of everyone...

Many of the students nearly fainted at the swiftness and brutality of his action, as if they were watching an execution.

Soon the other thugs followed suit to chop off their fingers...

The scene would certainly leave its indelible mark on the minds of Abigail, Yannick and the rest of their classmates.

The harrowing experience would haunt them when they recall the horrifying screams that had seeped into their heads, insidiously like tea from a tea bag.

“Let’s go!”

Levi stood up from the sofa after he had finished his cigarette and grabbed Abigail by her arm to get out of the VIP room.

Yannick and the rest of them hurriedly followed Levi out of the room. They couldn’t wait to get out of there.

Beck, now left with eight fingers, asked in a trembling voice, “Who’s that guy, Trey?”

“He’s somebody you could never afford to mess around with in North Hampton!” Trey breathed deeply and said it with the certitude of a true believer.

Outside the KTV, Yannick was back to his boastful self again, “Are you alright, Abigail? I was just getting ready to throw everything at them if they dare to touch you!”

Abigail scoffed at his words. She could still vividly recall the timid look on Yannick’s face when he was so freaked out that he’d almost peed in his pants.

You are nothing but a coward compared to my brother-in-law.

“I’m fine.” she answered impatiently.

“Why don’t you let me send you home? I’d really like for you to check out my new car today, it’s a BMW x5!” Yannick suggested while he gave the car remote in his hands a click.

A car near them lighted up and gave off a buzzing sound. It was a brand new BMW x5.

All their classmates could barely conceal the envious looks in their eyes.

It would be any student’s dream to drive a brand new, powerful sports car that could cost easily over eight hundred thousand.

All the girls were eager to cast their nets at Yannick.

“You don’t have to send me back.” Abigail snubbed, “I’ll take a cab with my brother-in-law.”

She had been under the impression that Levi did not own a car since she was well aware of Zoey’s family condition.

“I have a car!” Levi led them towards the car park and stopped in front of his car.

“Holy cow!” Yannick blurted out in surprise, “Isn’t this a Maserati Executive GT?”

“This looks like the most exclusive model too!” Yannick added.

Click!

“Get in the car, quick!” Levi shouted at Abigail as he opened the door of the car.

“Alright.” Abigail flashed him a cheerful smile as she ran across to the passenger seat and tucked herself into the car.

Vroom! Vroom! Vroom!

The Maserati emitted a deep and powerful rumbling sound when Levi started the car.

Soon they were cruising on the highway.

At that moment, Levi seemed to feel a pair of eyes staring at him.

He turned to his side and was greeted by Abigail’s bright fever button eyes. They had not left his face since she boarded the car.

The spark in her eyes gleamed with affection.

She winked at Levi when he tilted his head and gave her a puzzled look.

“Why are you staring at me?” Levi muttered, “Turn around.”

“No way. Why should I?” Abigail gushed, “Don’t you know you looked so much better than those young chaps in my school? They’re just a bunch of wimps compared to you.”

There was hardly anyone who could hold a candle to Levi when she scanned through those faces in her head.

“Yeah, I know.”

“How did you do that, Levi?” she asked inquisitively while her eyes never left Levi’s face, “How did you make that two leader kneel in front of you and even chop off their fingers obediently? I know they were equally ruthless in their own ways.”

“Don’t ask. You’re too young to know about these things.”

“But I’ve heard a lot about you. I know my aunt and the rest of them have always treated you with contempt, they think you are just a piece of junk. I bet that’s because they do not know about your true identity.” Abigail pouted her lips and said, “I bet their attitude towards you would change completely if they knew what happened today. Zoey would worship you like her hero!”

“Don’t tell Zoey about what happened today. It’s between you and me.” Levi said to her.

Abigail nodded meekly, but there was a curious look in her eyes.

“By the way, does Zoey know that you are driving such a luxurious car?” Abigail asked with an air of interest.

“Don’t tell Zoey about the car too!”

Why couldn’t Azure Dragon just send me an ordinary car instead? Levi grumbled to himself.

Yet this was exactly what Azure Dragon felt he had done, for in his mind, it was the most unassuming car among the fleet of cars they possessed.

Kirin had even suggested to send Levi a Lamborghini Veneno Roadster, which cost almost nine million.

Soon, they arrived at the vicinity where Zoey’s house was situated. Levi stopped the car a few blocks away from the house.

Shortly after, Azure Dragon then informed his men to come and drove the car away.

Levi and Abigail were back in the house.

“Come in, Abigail.” Aaron and Caitlyn greeted her with open arms.

“I’m so glad you’re finally here, Abigail.” said Zoey, who darted a displeased look at Levi, “What took you so long to fetch Abigail?” she asked.

“Abigail was attending a group event.” Levi explained, “She needs to finish the event before she could leave.”

“Yes, yes, Levi was right.” Abigail played along, “We got held up by the event.”

Caitlyn gave Levi a reproving glance, “Yeah, seemed to me you’re incapable of even a simple task like this. Look how long you took to fetch Abigail?”

“Why don’t you spend a few more days with us, Abigail?” Zoey was thrilled to have Abigail staying with them for the National holidays, “I hope you could stay longer this time.”

“That’s right, we’re celebrating Zoey’s birthday in two days’ time. You must join us, Abigail.” Caitlyn gave an inviting grin.

“Of course, I’ll be more than happy to stay longer this time.” Abigail swooned her eyes at Levi and said, “I’ll stay a week with you guys this time.”

“That’s wonderful news indeed, Abigail!” Caitlyn pulled her over to the dining table, “Look at all the food I’ve prepared for you. Let’s tuck in!”

The food was reserved solely for Abigail since Zoey and her family had already eaten.

“What about Levi? Why isn’t he invited to the table?” Abigail slid a look at Levi and asked.

“Don’t worry about him. He can feed himself with some instant noodles.” Caitlyn snorted, “Why do I have to cook for him? He should be able to take care of himself. It’s only because of Zoey that we kept him in the house, if it were up to me, I’d get Zoey to seek a divorce a long time ago.”

Caitlyn was filled with resentment towards Levi after what happened at the hospital.

The Protector Chapter 35

“What? Divorce? I’m all for it! I fully support a divorce for the both of them!”

Abigail raised her hand eagerly.

“Huh?”

Her reaction drew a quizzical look on everyone’s faces.

Even Levi was baffled by her gesture.

Abigail hastily waved her hands in denial when she saw the pairs of eyes staring at her, “Oh, I was just joking.”

I would gladly become Levi’s bride if Zoey would divorce him! She thought to herself.

When night fell, Caitlyn demoted Levi to the couch, “Abigail will sleep in Zoey’s room. So you’re going to have to sleep on the couch.”

“Why don’t I take the couch instead, Aunt Caitlyn?” Abigail felt bad about it.

“How could we let you sleep on the couch?”

Caitlyn turned and scorned at Levi, “You should know that we are no longer living in the big house with those enormous rooms that we used to have. What’s the problem with sleeping on the couch? Do you think we could rely on you to give us a better life? Zoey is our only hope now.”

“Aunt Caitlyn, actually...” Abigail hesitated if she should tell Caitlyn the truth.

She knew it was well within Levi’s means to get them a bigger house. I mean, just look at the car he was driving? It was a Maserati Executive GT that could be worth more than a house!

Levi could have easily bought them a villa, or even two, Abigail reckoned.

“Actually what? what are you trying to say, Abigail?”

Caitlyn stared at her, looking puzzled.

“Oh, actually it’s nothing important.” Abigail shrugged, “Goodnight, Aunt Caitlyn.”

The next morning.

Despite being the National holidays, Zoey could hardly get a breather from her project. Even Aaron had to put down everything to give her a hand. Caitlyn was out too. She had gone to the hospital since she was on duty that day.

They left it to Levi to take Abigail around for a spin.

“Come on, Levi. Why don’t we go for a spin?”

Abigail suggested, leaning close to Levi.

“I’d rather stay at home.” Levi said lazily, “It’s full of people everywhere.”

He was still lying on the couch.

“Let me take you to a fun place!”

“Come on, get up, Levi...”

...

Abigail came up with several suggestions to tempt Levi to get out of the house. But nothing worked.

“By the way, what present did you get for Zoey’s birthday?” Abigail asked curiously, “You know her birthday is coming up in two days’ time right?”

“Oh yes! It’s time to prepare something for Zoey’s birthday!”

“Okay, come with me!” Levi got up immediately from the couch.

Abigail grimaced and pouted her lips with displeasure.

The all fired up Levi was a stark comparison to the disinterested look on his face just minutes ago, with his lackluster response to her every suggestion.

But the mention of Zoey’s birthday sprang him into action at once, as if it had filled him with renewed vigor.

Azure Dragon had been waiting outside to deliver the car Levi had specifically asked for today. It was an Audi R8 sports car.

“This is unbelievable, Levi! Another luxurious car? I’m sure this Audi R8 exclusive model could easily cost up to three million.”

Abigail had an excellent knowledge about luxury cars since she had worked as a model for car exhibitions before.

She had seen almost every kind of luxury car.

“Stop saying nonsense. Get in the car now!”

Levi stepped on the pedal and the car whizzed off like a rocket.

Inside the car.

Abigail’s eyes never left Levi.

“Why do you keep staring at me?”

Abigail’s gaze was making Levi uneasy.

“Why don’t you get a divorce, Levi?” Abigail suggested, “That way, you won’t have to put up with Zoey and her family again. Look at how they have treated you.”

“So you want me to stay single for the rest of my life?” Levi quipped.

“That’s not what I mean! You could marry me after you’ve divorced Zoey! Can’t you see that I’m as pretty as her, not to mention I’m so much younger too? Why don’t you consider me instead?”

Abigail pressed herself closer to Levi, which gave him the goosebumps.

This girl is bold and even aggressive.

“Why don’t you give me a chance, Levi? I got the looks and the body, and I am really gentle and loving. Not to mention you know how I idolize you...”

Abigail bared her long and slender legs as she inched closer to Levi.

The Protector Chapter 36

“Stop it, or I’ll tell Zoey.” Levi warned, without showing the slightest interest in her.

“Hmph! What a boring guy!”

Abigail slid back to her seat with disdain.

They had come to a building known as North Hampton Center. It was the most bustling and iconic building of North Hampton.

A revolving restaurant sat at the highest level of the North Hampton Center. It was one of the most lavish restaurants in North Hampton, known for its Michelin three-star chefs and its outrageous price tag.

A simple meal would cost easily over a hundred thousand, and it was not available for walk-in patrons.

Anyone who wished to dine in the restaurant would have to make a reservation one month in advance with a deposit of fifty thousand.

The seats would always be snapped up in less than a minute every time they open for reservations on their official website.

It would take more than just mere cash to get a seat in the restaurant.

Those who dined here were mostly wealthy businessmen and famous superstars.

If one was lucky enough to grab a reservation, the restaurant would send a gold-plated dining card.

It was regarded as a symbol of status if one could get to dine in the restaurant.

“Why did you take me here to North Hampton Center, Levi? I know you can’t be here to look for some necklaces for Zoey’s birthday?” Abigail tossed her head and asked, “Are you looking to make a reservation at the revolving restaurant?”

“You are one smart girl!” Levi complimented her with a smile.

“I know you’re not the kind of guys who’d go for the same boring stuff like necklaces.” Abigail winked at Levi, “Why not we turn it into something romantic and special instead?”

However, she turned cautious all of a sudden, “But do you know this restaurant would only accept reservations one month in advance? Besides, they require you to pay fifty thousand as deposit.”

“Oh, really? I didn’t know they have such rules?” Levi was surprised.

He only knew that it was a famous restaurant, and nothing else.

Not to mention those quirky rules.

“I know their rules because the owner of this restaurant is the father of my classmate. He has asked me here for a few times before.” Abigail explained.

“I see.” Levi nodded.

“But I didn’t accept his invitation, Levi.” Abigail was worried Levi might jump to conclusion, “I’m not those who would give themselves away just because some guy takes them to some nice posh restaurant.”

“Why are you giving me an explanation?” Levi frowned.

“Hurry, we need to get to the restaurant now, I don’t care what rules they have.”

Levi and Abigail made their way into North Hampton Center.

The revolving restaurant was at level eighty eight of the building.

Eight servers were standing at the entrance as soon as Levi and Abigail show up at the restaurant.

“Do you mind showing us your dining card?”

The servers were under the impression that Levi and Abigail were here to dine at the restaurant.

“No.” Levi shook his head, “We’re here to make a reservation. I’m looking to reserve the whole restaurant on the 3rd, that’s the day after tomorrow!”

Abigail was in some kind of a bewitched state as she gazed at Levi.

What a bold statement to make! To reserve the whole restaurant?

“I’m sorry, sir. Perhaps you are not aware of our rules here!” The server explained patiently, “We’d only accept reservations on our official website one month in advance, or you’re not allowed into our restaurant!”

“Didn’t you hear what I’ve just said?” Levi lighted up a cigarette, “I said I’m going to reserve the whole restaurant the day after tomorrow!”

Cough! Cough! Cough!

Levi’s cigarettes were war zone cigarettes. They were a peculiar kind of cigarettes with a strong tobacco scent.

Just one puff was enough to suffuse the air in the entire restaurant with its weedy smell, which many of them had mistaken it to be from some cheap tobacco brands.

Not to mention the way Levi was dressed in today was anything but lavish.

The servers gave him a despised look, “This place is not for you to mess around with. Do you know how much it would take to reserve the whole restaurant? It would cost more than all the money you could make in your entire life!”

“That’s right! Get out of here! This is not the place for paupers like you! All of our guests are wealthy and famous people. What makes you think you can compare yourself to them?”

The Protector Chapter 37

Levi took another puff and asked indifferently, “How much does it cost to reserve your whole restaurant?”

“Fine, I’ll enlighten you! It would cost at least five million to reserve the entire restaurant. Can you afford that?”

“Hahahaha...”

The servers laughed out loud when they saw the astonished look in Levi’s eyes.

Levi finished up his smoke and stubbed out his cigarette.

“So that’s all you need to reserve the whole place? Just a mere five million?” Levi said with a sardonic smile. Five million is just chicken feed to me.

“Don’t act like some big shot when you are just a nobody!” sneered the servers, “Look at those cheap stuff you’re smoking! You couldn’t even afford something better than those lousy, filthy, ten for a pack of cigarettes!”

Just when Levi was about to take out his wallet and put down the reservation, a high pitched voice came up from behind, “Who’s the one that’s looking to make a scene here at North Hampton Center? Let me see who the hell is he?”

Levi could feel a few shadows had gathered behind his back.

The voice came from a young man fully clad in Versace outfit with a Rolex Submariner on his wrist. Even his shoes were custom made from overseas.

Together, these would cost more than the life savings of any common folk.

The man was Kyle Jarvis, whose father owned the restaurant.

Kyle was Abigail’s senior in the university as well.

As compared to Yannick, Kyle came from a family that was way wealthier and powerful than Yannick’s. One could immediately tell from the way he was dressed and his charisma.

Kyle was a playboy known for his flings with different women, and his latest conquest was an internet celebrity.

“Oh? What brings you here, Abigail?”

Kyle’s eyes lit up when he saw Abigail standing behind Levi.

“Hello, Kyle!”

“I’m here to make a reservation!” Abigail said tensely.

Several times, Kyle had tried to woo her in the most exaggerated fashion.

Slap! Kyle gave a tight slap to the server next to him after he heard Abigail’s recount of what had happened.

“Don’t you know that she is my dearest classmate? I want you to process her reservation immediately!” Kyle shouted at his servers.

“But it’s not your classmate who wanted to reserve our restaurant, sir.” The server said feebly, “It was this man who wanted to reserve the whole restaurant for one full day!”

“Who’s this guy, Abigail?” Kyle eyed Levi curiously when he heard what his server had told him.

“I...”

Levi was just about to make known his intention when Abigail grabbed his arm and halted him, “Let me introduce my boyfriend to you, Kyle!”

Her words almost gave Levi the goosebumps again.

Abigail clung on even tighter to Levi, pressing her body against his.

Frustration kicked in when Kyle saw the affectionate display from Abigail.

The rage in him was driving him mad!

So Abigail has a boyfriend now?

What made her set her eyes on such an unsightly fellow? Doesn’t he look like some beggars on the streets?

“Are you kidding, Abigail?” Kyle suppressed his anger and forced out a smile, “Why do you have to go get some beggars off the streets to act as your boyfriend? Are you going to such great lengths just to avoid me?”

“Why do I have to lie to you, Kyle?” Abigail rebuffed, “We’ve just stayed in the same place the night before, haven’t we?”

Levi nodded in acknowledgement. Since it was true that they had stayed in the same place the night before.

Little did he know that others would interpret that differently. It was as good as telling them that Levi and Abigail were sleeping on the same bed.

“I’m utterly disappointed in you, Abigail!” Kyle was raving mad as he shouted at her, “How could you give in to his honeyed words? It pains me to know that you are such a loose and disgusting woman who would sleep around with beggars like him!”

His words elicited a cold, hard stare from Levi.

“What did you just say? Say it again!”

How dare you insult the cousin of my beloved wife? Are you looking to die?

The Protector Chapter 38

Abigail was quick to calm things down once she saw that Levi was about to flare up. “It’s fine, let’s not

forget what we're here for. We're here to make a reservation.”

Abigail turned to Kyle. “We would like to reserve the whole restaurant the day after tomorrow, Kyle. What do you think?”

“No can do! We would only accept reservations made one month in advance, and there is no such thing as reserving the whole restaurant!” Kyle touched the gold ring on his finger and snorted.

“How about if I double up the price to make it ten million?” Levi suggested.

“So you're telling me that you're flushed with cash?” Kyle grinned shrewdly when he heard that.

But his grin diminished all of a sudden when he turned volte-face. “How about this? Let me add a new rule to our restaurant. I hereby forbid the two of them and dogs to enter our restaurant!”

“Sir, do you mean we would accept any guests apart from the two of them and dogs?” his men intentionally repeated his question to embarrass Levi and Abigail.

“Exactly!” Kyle gave a brittle laugh, “To put it plainly, there are three dogs who would be barred from our restaurant!”

Even the angelic Abigail, whom he used to regard as his goddess, had now been condemned to a b***h in Kyle's eyes.

His words infuriated Abigail, and she snapped at him, “What's all this about, Kyle? You're doing all these just to vent your frustration at us and humiliate us, aren't you?”

“So what if I am doing it to humiliate you? This restaurant belongs to my dad, and I have every right to decide who we take in as our guest. I'm determined to shut the both of you out of my restaurant. What else can you do about it?”

The relentless Kyle even spat at Abigail's foot.

“You...”

Abigail seethed, yet she could do nothing about it.

She knew it was beyond her means to go head to head with Kyle, who came from a family that was so much powerful than hers.

Levi gazed at Kyle stoically, “I'm asking you for the last time. Are you taking my reservation?”

“Over my dead body! I will never let the both of you step into my restaurant!” Kyle refused resolutely, “No way!”

Levi merely took out his phone and dialed a number, “I want to take over the revolving restaurant at North Hampton Center and I need to see the acquisition contract in ten minutes!”

“Hahahaha...”

Everyone burst out in laughter after they heard what Levi had just said over the phone.

Even Abigail was too shameful to lift her head.

It was simply outrageous for Levi to say such a thing.

Kyle's family ran an extremely successful food and beverage business empire with outlets that span across the whole of North Hampton. They were more powerful than Trey and Beck, who were mere crooks on the streets.

It was inconceivable that Levi could buy over the restaurant in ten minutes' time!

"Hahaha... this is so ridiculous that it almost made me laughed to death! Did somebody just say he wants to buy out the jewel of our business empire in ten minutes' time? What a joke!"

Kyle and his men cackled in laughter.

They found Levi as ludicrous and dumb as some blockhead.

Even the servers were gazing at Levi as if he was some retarded fool.

They had met countless of the super-rich and A-list superstars who dined in their restaurant frequently.

Even they would never had dared to say such a thing.

"Let's get out of here, Levi." Abigail tugged at Levi's shirt and said in a soft voice, "There are still plenty of restaurants we can choose from."

"No! I've set my eyes on this restaurant and I'm not backing down!" Levi insisted, "Since they refused to accept my reservation. I'll just buy the place and make it mine."

"Hahaha, alright! We'll wait for that to happen!" Kyle theatrically lifted his hand and peered at his watch, "You have five minutes left to do that!"

The doors to the elevator swung opened when eight minutes had passed. A few men dressed in well-pressed suits walked up to Levi and said humbly, "This is the acquisition contract that you've asked for, Mr. Garrison. Please have a look!"

Their words turned everyone dumbfounded.

Abigail quivered in disbelief.

Could it be true that Levi is really buying over the restaurant?

It would be simply incredulous!

“Oh, I’m impressed with your efficiency! So you’ve even brought the contract along, eh?” Kyle scoffed at the scene in front of him, “What makes you think my dad will sign it? This is just too funny!”

Kyle’s mobile phone buzzed at the same time.

“What’s up, dad? Yes, I’m at the North Hampton Center now.”

Kyle did not expect to receive a call from his father.

“You stupid idiot!” Lloyd Jarvis was about to explode in rage as he lashed out at his son over the phone, “Do you know who you have run into? How could you antagonize him? Now you’ve cost us the whole revolving restaurant! It’s gone!”

“Dad, what are you talking about?” Kyle snubbed, “He’s just a dud who looked like some vagrant to me!”

“What the hell do you know? He’s way above our league and not someone we could afford to mess around with! I want you to kneel and apologize to him immediately, or you might not get to live till tomorrow! I’m not joking, son. I’ve already sold the revolving restaurant!”

“And it’s all because of you that made me lose the restaurant! I’m going to beat the hell out of you when you get home!”

Kyle’s face turned pale when he heard the wild rant from his dad.

His face turned as white as a ghost.

He realized with a pang that this was not a joke anymore.

This guy had really just bought over the restaurant in ten minutes!

Kyle cast a wary glance at Levi.

Meanwhile, Levi and Abigail were going through the contract to finish up with the formalities of the acquisition.

Levi finally put his signature to the contract, and he was now officially the owner of the restaurant!

A herd of people rushed out of the restaurant the moment the contract was inked.

Leading the herd was Yahir, the general manager of the restaurant. He ran up to Levi and greeted him with an ostentatious grin, “It’s our pleasure to meet you, Mr. Garrison. You are now the one and only boss of the restaurant. This way, please, Boss!”

“This way, please, Boss!” all the rest of the staff behind him echoed synchronously.

Kyle could only watch with stupefied eyes.

He could not believe what his eyes were telling him. So my family's restaurant now belongs to somebody else?

All in just a matter of ten minutes?

"Hold on," Levi waved at Yahir, "there's still some unfinished business left to do!" he flicked his eyes over to Kyle.

"Didn't you just insulted Abigail by calling her a b***h and spat on her? I want you to kneel and lick away all your spit on the floor. The floor has to be spotless before I let you go."

"Who the hell do you think you are to ask me to kneel and apologize?" Kyle hit back at Levi.

Known for his haughtiness in North Hampton, Kyle was fearless of Levi.

"Ahh!"

Levi grasped Kyle's finger at such lightning speed that it caught Kyle by surprise. Before he could figure it out, Levi had already bent his finger back to almost ninety degrees.

Crack!

Levi applied a little pressure, and his finger was broken.

The cracking sound pierced through the air and horrified everyone!

Bang!

Levi thrust his leg forward and shoved Kyle to the floor.

Crack!

Another cracking sound rocked the air.

Kyle's kneecap fractured as he slammed his knees to the floor, right in front of Levi and Abigail.

Thud!

Levi stamped his foot on one side of Kyle's face, with the other side pressed to the floor.

"I want you to apologize and eat up you own spit!" Levi ordered mercilessly.

His foot on Kyle's face was hurting him so badly that he felt his head was about to split.

It was the most torturous pain Kyle had ever suffered in his entire life. He was sure he would never want to go through it again.

"Yes, yes, I'll apologize!"

Kyle finally gave in.

“I’m sorry, Ms. Rogers! Please forgive me!”

Not only had Kyle apologized, he had even eaten and licked away his own spit, under the horrified gazes of everyone.

The scene was too nauseous for many of those who were watching on with saucer eyes. They were utterly shocked to the core!

It bewildered them to think that the once proud and arrogant Kyle Jarvis would stoop to do such a shameful act.

The man whom they called Levi Garrison was ruthless as hell!

Abigail’s heart was thumping so hard and fast that she felt like it was about to burst from the strain.

Kyle had stood out in Abigail’s group of friends as the undisputed leader of the pack. Yet he seemed more like a rat in Abigail’s eyes now, rubbing his nose on the floor like some mouse gnawing on leftover breadcrumbs.

The Protector Chapter 40

Levi is simply amazing!

His heroism had completely swept Abigail off her feet!

How she wished there were nobody around, so she could grab him by his neck and give him a big hug.

Levi and Abigail entered the revolving restaurant after ordering some men to whisked Kyle away.

“There’ll be no changes to your duties and everybody get to keep your jobs. I’m sure you guys are aware that I’m hosting a banquet on the day after tomorrow.” Levi said with a half-smile, “I’ll double your pay if you guys do a good job for me.”

His words were a real shot in the arm for all the staff in the restaurant.

Levi and Abigail stayed behind for their lunch after he had made known his requirements to the staff.

“How I wished there’ll be a guy who would throw me a birthday banquet here too.” Abigail gushed, “I’d be sure to cherish him my whole life.”

Levi turned a deaf ear to what she said and switched to something else, “Now that we’ve got the venue for the birthday banquet, it’s time to choose a birthday present.”

“Huh?” Abigail gave a start, “Do we still have to look for a present?”

“Just follow me.”

Levi took Abigail to a real estate agency in North Hampton Center.

“Isn’t this the real estate agency of Bayview Gardens?” Abigail squealed in surprise, “Are you out of your mind, Levi?”

Bayview Garden was in the most sought after neighborhood in the Uptown District. The minimum price of its apartments starts at seventy thousand.

Given its premium location, Bayview Garden would only fetch the highest price per square footage. The asking price for its apartments came in tens of millions.

“This is the place, Abigail. Let’s go in.”

The office was sparse since this was an upscale property where few could afford.

A female sales executive immediately came up to greet them when they entered the office.

Yet her enthusiasm waned when she saw how Levi was dressed. Besides, he looked relatively younger compared to the typical middle-aged buyers she frequently encountered.

There was nothing in Levi to convince her that he was somebody who could afford an upscale property like Bayview Garden.

“Sir, are you looking to rent a property?”

The sales executive asked with a tinge of contempt in her tone.

“Do you know this is the exclusive sales office for Bayview Garden? This is not the place for you to rent an apartment.” She waved them away impatiently, “This is not something young chaps like you could afford. To rent an apartment at Bayview Garden would cost over ten grand a month, let alone buying one. I’d advise you to go somewhere else instead.”

“You’ve mistaken my purpose for coming here. I’m not looking to rent an apartment, I’m here to buy one!” Levi rebuked her sternly.

“Did you just say that you’re here to buy an apartment at Bayview Garden?”

Mary, the sales executive, looked askance as she assessed Levi from head to toe.

Apart from the pretty girl who came with him, he hardly looked like someone who could afford to buy such an expensive property.

“Do you know how much it would cost to buy an apartment at Bayview Garden?” she eyed them cynically, “Even the cheapest ones are priced at seventy thousand per square meter. The apartments we have for sale ranges between eighty-five thousand per square meter to a hundred thousand per square meter! Any one of them could easily cost twenty to thirty million.”

“How could you afford such an expensive property?” she said with a sardonic grin.

“What do you mean we can’t afford it? How dare you look down on us?” a peppery Abigail fired back at her.

“Let’s be honest here! How could you guys afford a property worth tens of millions?” Mary refused to back down and shouted back at them, “Even a blind person could tell from that beggarly look of yours!”

Their outburst of words attracted the attention of unwanted eyes, who had come over to watch with an air of curiosity.

The leader of the pack was a woman clad in an all-black business suit in skirt and jacket. Her legs were long and slender, which looked extremely sexy in those beguiling black lacy stockings.

Her shapely figure oozed hotness as her voluptuous bosom arced up and down when she breathed.

Men could not peel their eyes away from her pretty face and her curvaceous body when they were here.

The woman was Chloe Macy, the General Manager of Bayview Garden Real Estate Agency.

“What’s going on here, Mary?”

Chloe came up to Mary with a puzzled look in her eyes.

“This couple is trying to stir trouble here, Chloe.” Mary gave Levi and Abigail a hard glare, “They refused to leave even though they know they couldn’t afford to buy our properties.”

“Hmm? Aren’t you L-Levi Garrison?”

Chloe was astounded when she saw that it was Levi.

The Protector Chapter 41

“Oh? It’s you?”

Levi recognized Chloe as well.

Chloe was Levi’s high school classmate. She was one of the most beautiful and popular girls in the school, with plenty of admirers pursuing her.

Chloe had tried to pursue Levi in the past, but Levi rejected her.

After high school, Chloe merely entered a normal university and ceased all contact with Levi.

But she kept herself updated about Levi’s news.

Chloe was especially grateful for Levi's rejection after she heard about his imprisonment. I'd be so embarrassed if we got together back then. I'm feeling mixed emotions facing him in person now, but I am feeling more excited than ever. I finally have the opportunity to flaunt my achievements in Levi's face! I want him to regret his decision of rejecting me!

"When were you released from prison?" Chloe asked.

"A fortnight ago!" Levi answered.

"Ahh, you were once the most successful upstart in North Hampton's business world. Such a pity you were sent behind bars. Otherwise, you might have become one of the richest men in this city. I remember I once confessed to you because you were so excellent and extraordinary. But you rejected me. I wonder if you will accept me now if I confess to you again? Hehehe..." Chloe lamented.

"What? You're an outstanding person now, Manager! You are the manager of Bayview Garden Real Estate Agency, as well as the top sales agent! You're earning a couple million a year, and you have your own house and luxurious car! Not to mention your captivating beauty. He's not good enough for someone like you."

"He must be regretting his decision of rejecting your confession back in the day! He may even offer himself up to you, now that he's released from prison."

"You're too good for someone like him, Manager. He is just a lowly person compared to you!"

...

The other sales agents were experienced and quick to assess the situation. They understood Chloe's intention immediately after she spoke. So all of them cooperated in her scheme.

Levi gazed at the employee's tag on Chloe's chest. She is the manager of Bayview Garden Real Estate Agency. I guess Chloe is a competent person in her profession.

Chloe said with a smile, "With my academic qualifications, I have no other choice but to become a sales agent. Although my achievements and a monthly salary of a few million may be insignificant compared to your earnings in the past, I am still doing better than you currently are..."

Chloe deliberately left her sentence hanging in an attempt to scorn Levi. She could not feel more pleased, looking at Levi's pitiful appearance. He was once the cream of the crop among our peers but look at him now. This must be fate.

Levi smiled. "Indeed, you looked like you're doing well for yourself!"

Chloe pretended as if a thought popped into her mind. "Oh right. We are having a high school reunion on the 7th of this month. Are you coming? If you are, please don't feel inferior by that time. It is a virtue to celebrate another friend's success, after all."

"High school reunion? Sure. I'll be there." Levi nodded.

“That’s great.” Chloe’s cheerful smile did not reflect her disappointment in Levi inwardly.

In Chloe’s opinion, Levi merely wanted to attend the reunion to butter up their ex-classmates.

She grinned. “Oh, are you here to purchase a house? I’m afraid that the cheapest unit available here will cost you at least thirty million, even if I provide you with all the offers and discounts I can. Why don’t you consider houses that are around three million instead? You should be able to afford that. However, you will have to look for properties outside of North Hampton for houses in that price range!”

The Protector Chapter 42

Levi stared at Chloe. “Well, that’s not going to work for me. I want to buy a house in North Hampton only.

“Hahaha…” Mary and the others laughed out loud. How long is he going to put up that act?

Chloe laughed as well. “Old friend, I must remind you. We only accept full payment in cash for properties under our agency. Even if you accept a unit with a mortgage loan, you will have to pay a few million for the down payment. I don’t think you can afford that amount as of now!”

Levi said coldly, “I am making full payment in cash as well!”

“Full payment in cash? Are you sure?” Chloe was shocked. He only dares to utter such outrageous nonsense because he cares too much about his pride. Hmph! I will see if he can live up to his own words. He will only embarrass himself in the end. Then I will spread this shameful incident to our high school friends tonight!

But everyone was dumbfounded after Levi added. “Let me see the most expensive unit you have here!”

Everyone fell silent as they looked at him in bewilderment.

“What did you say? The most expensive unit? Are you sure?” Chloe asked in a low voice.

Abigail scolded impatiently. “Are you deaf? He wants the most expensive unit!”

Chloe regained her senses. Hmph! The most expensive unit, you say? I can’t wait to see how you are going to pay for the house!

“Alright, follow me!” Chloe brought the crowd to the real estate model and pointed at one of the units. “This is the most high-end house in Bayview Garden, measuring at five hundred square meters. We will also include a free underground garage and storage for you. The price for this unit is fifty million!”

“What do you think?” Chloe looked at Levi smugly after she gave them a thorough explanation.

Mary and the others gazed at Levi mockingly. How are you going to pay now, since you talked so big?

Levi nodded his head satisfyingly. “Not bad!”

“I think this is not bad too.” Abigail nodded in agreement.

Chloe smirked. He could win an Oscar for that rhetorical statement! The question remain though, how are you going to afford a fifty million house?

Chloe had resolved to humiliate Levi then and there. She wanted to drive him into a corner with nowhere to escape. “Let’s look at the showroom, shall we? This is a ready unit, available for you to move in right away!” Chloe said with a smile. I will never let him leave so easily.

But she did not expect the subsequent turn of events.

Levi took out a credit card and said, “There’s no need for that. I’ll purchase it now.”

Everyone was stunned.

“What? You are purchasing the unit now?” Mary was the first to snapped herself back to reality.

“Are you sure?” Chloe’s voice trembled.

Levi handed the card to her. “Get on with it now! I have some other matter to attend to!”

Chloe received the card with shaking hands because she recognized the Centurion card she was holding. There’s no credit limit to this card! Is he really qualified to possess such a card?

Chloe proceeded to check out the payment with uncertainty.

The payment was successful after Levi entered the password.

He paid fifty million in one transaction! Chloe, Mary and the other sales agent were shocked to their cores. He really spent that much money to buy a house!

They stared at Levi with disbelief in their eyes.

Even with my capabilities, I have to earn this consistent amount for over ten years to afford that house. But Levi just paid the sum so effortlessly? Chloe thought to herself.

The Protector Chapter 43

What’s going on with him? I know Zoey is not doing well now. That means he relied on himself to afford this house. He is still as successful as before. Perhaps he rebuilt his empire since he was released from prison. From my experience, I can tell his net worth is at least over a billion at the moment. His current status is surely comparable to six years ago!

Chloe felt as if Levi was emitting a holy glow.

She regretted her behavior earlier. If I did not act that way, perhaps there might be a chance for us to be

together. At the very least, I know I am prettier than Zoey.

The purchase contract was printed swiftly.

Levi pondered shortly before signing the agreement. "I'm only staying in this house temporarily because the villa will be completing soon. Let's do this instead. You should sign this contract!"

Levi looked at Abigail.

Abigail was astonished.

She signed the papers in a daze. So Levi actually bought the house for me.

Chloe, Mary, and the others were losing their minds. He casually bought a fifty million house for his sister-in-law... How rich is this man?

That transaction attracted the attention of Bayview Garden's boss as well. He hurried over and treated Levi like an honored guest.

Chloe received a whopping commission of one and a half million from that sale alone.

Although she achieved her largest sale thus far, Chloe felt extremely bitter in her heart. I can't believe I missed out on the opportunity to enjoy ten or a hundred billion.

Mr. Wesley, the boss of Bayview Garden handed his name card to Levi. "It is my pleasure to be acquainted with you, Mr. Garrison..."

"Forget about that. You should fire that woman!" Levi looked at Mary. I need to teach her a lesson for looking down on others.

Mary broke down into tears, sprawling on the floor. But her fate had been sealed.

All the employees at Bayview Garden lined up to send Levi and Abigail off in the end.

He turned around and glanced at Chloe with a smile. "Don't worry. I will attend the reunion."

"Okay." Chloe's mood worsened to the brink of despair. Did I just give up a man with a net worth of over ten billion?

Abigail looked at Levi with admiration glinted in her eyes. "Does that mean I have a house now, Levi?"

"I am staying in that house with your sister for now!" Levi corrected her.

"Then I can stay there too." Abigail wanted to move out of the dormitory to stay in that house because she wanted to see Levi every day.

Three days passed in the blink of an eye as Zoey's birthday arrived.

Everyone paused their work to celebrate her birthday together.

Before Levi could inform Zoey about his dinner reservation at North Hampton city center's revolving restaurant, Caitlyn said first, "Someone arranged a birthday banquet for you, Zoey. You will receive a huge surprise soon!"

Aaron agreed with a smile. "She's right. The banquet will be held at Kempinski Hotel!"

Sensing her parents' mysterious behavior, Zoey said, "Kempinski? That place is very expensive. A meal alone costs over ten thousand! I do not need an extravagant birthday party!"

Aaron explained. "We're not the ones that made the arrangements, Zoey. Someone took the initiative. Moreover, we are talking about Kempinski Hotel's most luxurious meal. A table reservation amounts to over a hundred thousand."

Zoey looked at Levi subconsciously upon hearing that.

Caitlyn snorted coldly. "Don't worry, that person is definitely not him! He's not capable to even host a birthday party for you!"

Levi stopped Abigail as she was about to spill the truth about that revolving restaurant's reservation.

A Mercedes-Benz G came to a halt outside Zoey's house shortly after.

A man wearing a white suit with a bouquet of fresh flowers in his hand strode towards the door.

The Protector Chapter 44

Zoey recognized the man as the door swung open. He's the son of one of father's friends. I heard he went to live abroad.

"You're getting younger by the day, Uncle and Aunt! Here's some gifts I brought from overseas." Theo greeted politely.

He gifted Aaron with a few luxurious bottles of wine and Caitlyn with some expensive makeup products.

Aaron and Caitlyn were delighted to receive the lavish gifts from abroad. These presents will become a great topic of conversation with our friends and families. Levi is truly a useless son-in-law in comparison. He has never provided our family with anything useful.

"You're as pretty as ever, Zoey!" Theo leaned closer to kiss Zoey's cheeks as he complimented her. But she tilted away to avoid him instinctively.

Clap!

Levi stood in between Zoey and Theo. "I'm sorry, we do not practice this form of greeting here!"

Theo ignored Levi and said to Zoey with a smile. “Happy birthday, Zoey! You will like the surprise I’ve arranged for you tonight!”

Zoey nodded. “Ah? Thank you!”

Theo shifted his gaze onto her parents. “Uncle and Aunt, my parents will be attending the birthday banquet tonight as well.”

“Oh? Really? That’s great!”

Aaron and Caitlyn were excited to learn that news. We rarely keep contact with our old friends since our family’s downfall, especially Theo’s parents. They are both influential figures in government departments. His father, Steve Nash, is a high-ranking and powerful officer in the Department of Commerce, while his mother, June Webb, holds a leadership position in the Department of Education. With Theo’s family background, he is the perfect son-in-law candidate for everyone. Any girl will be considered lucky to marry him. We had the idea to pair him and Zoey up, but Steve did not want to establish any connection with our family previously. This is a golden opportunity to build a good rapport with Steve and June since they are willing to attend the birthday banquet later.

The thought invigorated Aaron. The best outcome will be for Theo and Zoey to become a couple.

Aaron and Caitlyn exchanged glances to express similar thoughts in their minds. This desired outcome will be rendered impossible with Levi’s existence. Let’s hope Zoey will think wisely for herself. We can tell Theo is interested in Zoey judging from the effort he’s putting in to celebrate her birthday.

Theo and Zoey’s parents chatted while Levi, Zoey, and Abigail sat beside them without saying a word.

“I’ve started a business overseas, and the prospect of the company is bright...” Theo began to describe his experiences overseas.

Aaron grinned. “You don’t really have to do anything on your own either, Theo. You are sufficiently excellent with your parents’ support.”

Before long, a Passat arrived.

Aaron and his family went to welcome the visitors at the door.

A couple got out of the car. They were Theo’s parents.

Steve was dressed formally with his hands behind his back. He appeared to be competent and gave off a stern vibe from the look of his neatly-combed hair.

Standing beside him, June wore a relatively casual outfit. But her outstanding temperament from years of working experience in the governmental department was clear to see.

“Welcome, Steve, June.” Aaron greeted them passionately.

“Hm.”

The Protector Chapter 45

Steve looked at Zoey and said, "I heard about that Ecological Park project you're working on. That's indeed an impressive accomplishment. Keep working hard then."

"Thank you, Uncle Steve." Zoey nodded.

June was friendlier in comparison. With a smile on her face, she said, "Zoey is clearly a competent girl."

Caitlyn seized the opportunity to curry some favor from June and Steve by asking them to help their daughter whenever possible. After all, Steve is extremely authoritative in the field of business.

Steve looked at Levi displeasingly. "Of course we're willing to help your daughter, but have you thought about how others will see us if we assist someone that is not related to us?"

Everyone knew Steve was implying for Zoey to become his daughter-in-law.

June added with a smile. "After all, we have rules to follow in our family. All our family members must have proper conduct and manners."

June was informing everyone indirectly that Zoey can be accepted into the Nash family as long as she completely severs her relationship with Levi.

Aaron responded immediately. "We understand that. How else did you manage to raise an extraordinary kid like Theo here?"

"Come on, It's almost time now. We should head straight for the hotel." Theo said.

"Hm. Let's go." Steve nodded sternly.

"Hold on!" Levi voiced out all of a sudden.

"What's the matter? You have something to say?" Everyone looked at him simultaneously.

Levi looked at Zoey. "Zoey, actually, I've prepared a birthday banquet for you at a restaurant. Let me bring you there."

Caitlyn said impatiently. "Hmph! So what? Theo arranged a banquet at Kempinski Hotel! One table there costs over a hundred thousand. I'm sure the place you've reserved paled in comparison to that."

Theo smiled politely at Levi. "I'm afraid Zoey won't be able to go to the banquet that you've prepared. I will suffer a loss of over a hundred thousand if we do not attend the banquet at Kempinski Hotel. Let me reimburse you the money, perhaps a few thousand is sufficient?"

Steve glared at Levi in dissatisfaction.

Levi returned Theo's smile. "My loss will be greater than yours."

"Oh? Which restaurant did you booked? I reserved the VIP private room at Kempinski Hotel with a minimum spending of one hundred and twenty thousand." Theo was curious.

Everyone gazed at Levi too.

"I made a reservation at North Hampton City Center's Revolving Restaurant." Levi answered.

"What? That restaurant requires a one month advance booking before the desired date. There's also a need to place a deposit in addition to the ridiculously expensive pricing." Theo was astonished.

"Indeed. I heard of that restaurant. Only the wealthiest people in the society and famous stars dine in that place. It's not uncommon for a dish to cost over a hundred thousand." Steve elaborated.

Theo asked with uncertainty. "You really booked a table there?"

"Not just a table. I booked the entire restaurant." Levi replied nonchalantly.

Everyone burst into laughter upon hearing Levi's outrageous claim. Even Steve broke character and sneered.

"What did you say? I'm afraid my ears are failing me. Did you say you've booked the entire restaurant? Do you know what's the requirement to execute that action? Putting aside your status, the money needed to book that place for a day is easily a few million. Are you treating me like a fool?" Theo chuckled aloud.

Caitlyn and Aaron grimaced. Why must Levi always embarrass us whenever there are outsiders? What a despicable person.

"Do you feel proud by your actions? You're just a joke in everybody's opinion."

Even Zoey found it hard to believe Levi this time.

The Protector Chapter 46

I know about the revolving restaurant Levi mentioned. Only someone with a status equivalent to Bryan can reserve the entire restaurant. Who does Levi think he is? This is an impossible feat for him! Moreover, I doubt Levi can afford a few million now.

Steve said, "Let's go and take a look at the revolving restaurant you've reserved then. The time is still early anyway. If anything goes wrong, we can always go to Kempinski Hotel since it's nearby."

"Alright. Let's go have a look at the restaurant then." Theo and June could not wait for Levi to make a fool out of himself.

Aaron and Caitlyn had no other choice but to follow them helplessly.

Zoey's mood dampened. I should really talk to Levi if things go south.

"Aaron, why don't you join us in our car with Caitlyn? Let the youngsters take the other car." Steve was creating an opportunity for his son.

In the end, Zoey and Abigail entered Theo's Mercedes-Benz G.

"I do not think someone as high and mighty as you should lower your status to sit in my car, Mr. Garrison. You should take a cab instead." Theo said to Levi with a smile.

"Take my car." Zoey handed her car keys to Levi.

The three cars arrived at North Hampton city center one after the other.

Zoey started to feel uneasy. Her hands that were wrapped around Abigail's arm, were trembling.

She was actually anticipating the surprise Levi prepared for her. But on the other hand, she was afraid of facing the harsh reality.

Theo stopped in his tracks abruptly and asked Levi, "Oh. I heard that the revolving restaurant would provide customers with a gilded card after a successful reservation. That card is the pass to enter the restaurant."

Steve nodded in agreement. "He's right. The restaurant sends the card to the customer's house in a Rolls-Royce, and the card is coated with real gold. Many celebrities and millionaires even keep the gilded card as a souvenir to signify their status."

Theo narrowed his eyes at Levi. "Where's your card, Mr. Garrison? Can we have a look at it?"

Steve added. "Yeah. We've never seen the card in person. Why don't you enlighten us?"

Zoey's anxiety intensified.

She knew Levi did not have the card as soon as she looked at him. This restaurant requires a one month booking in advance. Levi was released from prison two weeks ago. There's no way he made a reservation in time.

Even Abigail was dumbfounded. We really do not have the card.

Aaron's displeased voice was heard. "Do you have the card or not? Show us if you have it."

Levi said magnanimously. "I do not have the card because I reserved the entire place. This is different from booking a table."

"Hahaha... You don't have to sugarcoat your words if you don't have the card." Theo regarded Levi like he's a fool.

Steve shook his head helplessly. This young man is nothing compared to my son, yet he was the dark

horse of North Hampton's business world six years ago? This is the extent of his capabilities?

"I'll apologize on his behalf, Steve and June. Levi never changed his rotten personality of talking big." Aaron explained.

June smiled without a care. "Let's go then. We should hurry over to Kempinski Hotel."

"Wait a moment." Abigail stopped everyone from leaving. She suggested. "Although Levi does not have the card, we can verify his statement once we're there at the restaurant, am I right?"

Steve scoffed. "Sure. Let's go to the restaurant then."

The Protector Chapter 47

Everyone entered the elevator to go to the 88th floor.

Ding!

Zoey could feel her heart pounding heavily and restlessly against her chest as the elevator arrived on the 88th floor.

Thump thump thump...

But the next moment, everyone was showered with pieces of colorful glittery papers the moment they stepped out of the elevator.

"Happy birthday to you..." The birthday song was heard. Unexpectedly, it was a professional band performing the song.

Zoey looked up and saw the entire restaurant was decorated with huge pictures of herself. Every picture was a dear memory of the time she spent with Levi.

The venue was decorated lavishly with flowers. A sparkling chandelier illuminated the floor with a warm glow.

In the middle of the restaurant was a large, multi-tiered cake placed on top of a cart.

"North Hampton City Center Revolving Restaurant wishes you a happy birthday, Ms. Zoey! You are the first and only person to have a birthday banquet here. So we dedicated a souvenir for you to remember this day."

The restaurant manager handed a present to Zoey.

At that moment, tears were already streaming down her cheeks.

How touching! This is the best birthday celebration a girl can hope for! Abigail looked at Zoey in envy.

On the other hand, Theo and the rest were stupefied.

“Let’s go further into the restaurant, Zoey.” Levi held Zoey’s hand and lead her towards the cake placed in the middle of the room.

Levi gave a signal with a click of his fingers just as Zoey was caught in perplexity.

Whoosh!

A series of noises was heard.

Bang!

Fireworks were seen outside the windows swiftly after.

Whoosh!

...

Volley of fireworks were launched upward to the sky, and the people inside the revolving restaurant would get a perfect view of the mesmerizing scenery.

The fireworks were of the best quality as they lasted longer and covered a large area of the sky with dazzling sparks.

In the end, two large and colorful words embellished the sky. Happy Birthday!

Everyone in North Hampton was captivated by the breathtaking show of fireworks that filled the night sky at that moment.

Clarity washed over Zoey. All these arrangements are dedicated to me.

Finally, Levi grasped Zoey’s hands. “Zoey, I promise to protect and cherish you for the rest of my life.”

“I will stay by your side for the rest of my life too.” Zoey hugged Levi tightly.

Aaron and Caitlyn were touched by that scene. Levi really hosted a spectacular birthday banquet for Zoey in this place.

All the colors drained from Theo and his parents’ faces. I’ve made a thorough preparation for Zoey at Kempinski Hotel. But all my effort is completely insignificant compared to Levi’s arrangements.

Steve’s face darkened. His only desire was to leave the place immediately.

The birthday banquet lasted through the night.

Theo, unsettled by the unexpected outcome, began investigating the matter. I do not believe Levi has the ability to book the entire restaurant!

Looking into the matter was effortless with Nash Family’s influence.

Theo suddenly laughed after a few minutes. “Haha. Now I know what’s going on. The young master of this restaurant is Abigail’s senior. Moreover, he’s been pursuing her. I finally understood how Mr. Garrison managed to reserve this place. So it’s all because of Abigail.”

Everyone shifted their gazes onto Abigail, including Zoey.

Abigail nodded. “Yes. This restaurant belongs to my senior’s family. But now…”

Theo interrupted Abigail before she could finish her explanation. “I see. We understand everything now, Abigail. But I can see Mr. Garrison did place the effort to decorate this venue.”

Theo’s superficial compliments were actually an attempt to mock Levi.

They gave all the credits to Abigail for the successful birthday banquet because they thought Levi would never be able to reserve the restaurant without her help.

But Zoey did not let go of Levi’s hands. “I am moved by your efforts no matter what.”

The Protector Chapter 48

Zoey’s heartfelt words were sufficient to fill Levi’s heart with contentment. I could not care less about other’s opinions. All I want to achieve is to please Zoey.

Aaron and Caitlyn’s resentments toward Levi deepened upon hearing the whole story. “He’s just an opportunist!”

Everyone segued into the birthday banquet afterward.

Aaron and Caitlyn presented their gifts to Zoey, followed by Abigail.

Then Steve and June handed the presents they prepared as well.

Theo questioned Levi. “I suppose your gift must be invaluable too, Mr. Garrison?” I must humiliate him in front of everyone!

“That’s right. What birthday gift did you prepare for Zoey?” Caitlyn could not suppress her curiosity.

Levi smiled. “I did not bring my gift. Well, it’s more like I can’t bring the present with me.”

“So what you mean to say is that you did not prepare a present. Isn’t that right, Mr. Garrison?” Theo took out a delicate box and gifted the present to Zoey. “This is my gift for you. It’s a necklace from Cartier, the same design worn by a princess from a foreign country. I spent a lot of effort to lay my hands on this accessory.”

Caitlyn eyed the sparkling necklace. “This must have cost you a fortune, Theo?”

“Not really, Aunt. It’s about eight hundred thousand only,” said Theo with an indifferent tone.

“What? eight hundred thousand? Oh my God!” Caitlyn and the others were shocked.

“Thank you for the goodwill, Theo. As for the gift, I am not going to accept it as it’s an expensive gift.” Zoey rejected him firmly.

But Steve and the others gazed in their direction solemnly. “How can you reject Theo’s kind intention?”

Caitlyn accepted the present in Zoey’s stead immediately.

Theo looked at Levi. “This is indeed a wonderful banquet all thanks to Abigail, Mr. Garrison. You could’ve prepared a gift for Zoey though, even a cheap necklace to express your sincerity will do.”

June smiled. “It is rather inappropriate for you to come empty-handed, not to mention with your ‘special’ status.”

Aaron sighed and lowered his head shamefully.

Caitlyn was even more disgusted by Levi.

“That’s enough. We’re a married couple for so long, so there’s really no need to fixate on that problem.” Zoey smoothed things over in the end.

Levi and Zoey left for a stroll after the banquet ended. “I did prepare a birthday gift for you.” Levi said all of a sudden.

“What?” Zoey was surprised.

Levi took out a bunch of keys with a label. “It is time for us to have our own house and move out of your parents’ house.” Levi explained with a smile.

“What? Bayview Garden?” Zoey was astounded after she read the label on the keys because she knew of the overpriced properties in that area. Even Harry Lopez will not joke about buying a house in Bayview Garden.

“Come on. Let’s go have a look.” Levi brought Zoey to Bayview Garden.

“Oh my God. What did you do?” Zoey was losing her mind.

“Don’t worry. I rented the house. What do you say if I’ll have you pay the monthly rent?” Levi joked.

But he did not expect Zoey to believe in that joke. In her opinion, Levi certainly could not afford that house. He must’ve rented this place. But I’m touched, nonetheless.

“I’ll pay for the rent.” Zoey said in a rush.

Zoey had a wonderful night. She was smiling even in her sleep.

The Protector Chapter 49

At the Lopez family house, everyone was infuriated when they heard about Zoey's extravagant evening.

"Zoey had her birthday party at North Hampton City Center Revolving Restaurant. She's really spending money as she likes now!"

"If it weren't for grandpa help, I bet they wouldn't even be able to enter the restaurant." Melanie roared.

Henry and Fabian were dissatisfied. "Aaron is a disappointment! If we did not help them previously, they would be begging on the streets now, father. How dare they forget about their family after receiving that project?"

Harry grimaced. "I did not expect them to go against me as well. Aaron and Zoey were obedient in the past."

"This is all Levi's fault! Did you not notice the way everything is changing since Levi's back?" Melanie uttered.

A menacing look flashed across Samuel's face. "Hmph! Do they think they will be able to proceed with this project smoothly? Dream on!"

Harry looked at Samuel puzzlingly. "Do you have any good idea, Samuel?"

Malicious intent glinted in Samuel's eyes. "They should not be handling this project since we are not participating. Don't worry, grandpa. I am acquainted with a mafia boss. If he's willing to help us..."

Harry asked. "Who's the boss you're talking about?"

"Everyone refers to him as Nueve!" Samuel answered.

"Oh, you're talking about Nueve. He's infamous for killing over a hundred people with an axe."

"They say no one can match his cruelty and bloodlust."

"I heard Nueve was imprisoned for three years in the same prison as Levi. He was released from jail last year."

Harry and the others were obviously familiar with Nueve's name.

"Alright. You will handle this, Samuel. I will pay for the money." Harry was prepared to risk everything.

At this time, Zoey, Levi, and the others were unaware of the Lopez Family's scheme.

Zoey went to monitor the construction site in person as the project for West City Ecological Park started.

They hired a professional construction team due to their ample funding.

A few buildings were already taking shape because of their high efficiency.

That night, Zoey went to survey the site again. But she was met with a total mess as if something terrible had happened.

Zoey and Aaron jogged toward the scene hurriedly.

They saw two parties standing up against one another. On one side were the construction workers, while the other side were a group of unfamiliar thugs with scary tattoos on their bodies.

They were all carrying knives and other weapons as they closed in on the construction workers.

Following closely behind the thugs were a group of villagers.

“What’s going on?” Zoey and Aaron asked as soon as they arrived.

“Ms. Lopez, they claimed themselves to be ex-residents in this area. They are here to create trouble because of the on-going demolition. They destroyed our constructs and even harmed us.” The team leader of the construction site exclaimed. “This is so scary! They are evidently thugs who do not belong to this village.”

Zoey and Aaron shifted their gazes in the other direction.

The people on the opposite side did resemble criminals who were recently released from prison. Not only that, they gave off a sinister vibe as if they were, in fact, murderers.

“I am the boss of this project. Talk to me if you have any dissatisfaction.” Zoey addressed the crowd bravely.

The person leading the thugs was a muscular man with tanned skin. Horrible scars covered his face, shoulders, and body.

The Protector Chapter 50

The scars were obviously left behind after he recovered from grave injuries inflicted by knives.

The sight of his scars was sufficient to invoke fear in most people.

The man was nicknamed Chopper and he was a famous person in their circle. He was also Nueve’s right-hand man.

Chopper sneered at Zoey while wielding two knives in each hand. “You’re the boss? This demolition is

wrong in the first place. You forced your will on us and scammed us, the villagers.”

“He’s right. We want compensation!”

“We will wreak havoc on this place if you do not compensate us!”

Under the thugs’ leadership, the villagers shouted angrily.

Zoey stared at them with all seriousness. “I am sorry, but we’ve acquired the right to develop this area legally. If you feel that the compensation amount is not sufficient, then you should be looking for the department in charge of this matter, not us.”

Chopper jeered. “We don’t care about all those things. We’re all just common folks here, and all we can see is that you are building things on our land. I will give you two choices. Compensate us handsomely, or we will destroy whatever you build here.”

“That’s right! We want compensation!” Everyone shrieked.

Zoey finally got the hang of the situation. They are here to stir up trouble. These thugs must have forced these villagers to cooperate.

“Alright. How much do you want us to compensate you for?” Zoey asked.

“We have made the calculations. You only need to compensate us with one billion.” Chopper answered.

“Impossible! Don’t even think about getting a single cent!” Aaron retorted immediately.

Chopper narrowed his eyes menacingly. “If that’s the case, then destroy everything!”

The few thugs and over a hundred villagers began wrecking things after receiving Chopper’s command.

The workers tried to prevent them. But the thugs threatened them with knives aimed at their throats. “I’ll kill everyone who dares to move.”

Zoey and the workers could only watch idly at the side as they tear down everything that was built in sight, including the worker’s resting area.

After that, Chopper smiled satisfyingly. “I’m warning you now, Zoey. We will come here every day and demolish everything you’ve built if you do not compensate us.”

Then he threatened the workers. “I will kill all of you if you dare to inform the police.”

Chopper led the angry crowd away afterward.

Zoey and Aaron were on the verge of tearing up at the sight of the mess.

Chopper sneered at the villagers after they reached a secluded area. “Go back to your houses now and do not tell anyone about this. I know your address, so I will find you and let you suffer the

consequences should you disobey me.”

“We know. We won’t disobey you.”

The villagers left immediately.

Chopper dialed a number and reported cheerfully. “We’ve accomplished the task, Lord Nueve.”

An unpleasant voice was heard from the other line. “This is some easy money provided by the Lopez family. All we have to do is destroy a few buildings.”

“You’re absolutely right. I will visit the construction site again tomorrow night, Lord Nueve.” Chopper laughed out loud in excitement.

On the other hand, inside a clubhouse. A lot of people were seated inside a private room.

Among the crowd was Trey. But he was far from being the center of attention in that banquet because Nueve was the host of that event.

Nueve’s was ranked significantly higher in their circle compared to Trey.

Someone whispered. “What’s the matter, Lord Nueve? Are you facing any trouble? Just tell me if you need any men to do your biddings.”

Nueve, who was dressed formally for that occasion, responded with a smile. “Nothing of the sort. It’s just that the Lopez family gifted me with ten million to stir up trouble at the on-going West City Ecological Park construction site. I thought the task would be tricky, but things ended smoothly.”

The Protector Chapter 51

Trey could not help but ask after listening to Nueve's words. "Is Zoey the boss of that project, Lord Nueve?"

"You're right. There is someone named Zoey there. What's the matter?"

Trey was astounded after receiving Nueve's confirmation. Nueve is in deep shit now.

He warned Nueve cautiously. "I am telling you as a friend, Lord Nueve. Do not meddle in this matter."

Nueve was bewildered. "Oh? Why is that? Is there something wrong?"

"That woman should not be provoked. Let's not participate in this matter anymore, Lord Nueve." Trey said.

Nueve replied mockingly. "Haha. Are you telling me that there is a woman who I cannot provoke? That's interesting!"

Trey muttered. "How should I explain this? She's a unique woman. Anyone who dares to provoke her will face certain death. I'm afraid you'll not be an exception as well, Lord Nueve."

"Who are you to say that, Trey? How dare you belittle Lord Nueve?"

"That's right. You're spouting nonsense!"

Nueve was angered as well. "Fine. In that case, why don't you enlighten me about her background? Who's supporting her?"

"She... Never mind. I hope you will heed my advice and stay out of this matter."

Trey did not reveal Levi's identity after he pondered about it. If I tell anyone about this, I will certainly die a painful death.

"Hmph! Are you looking down on me, Trey? Very well, get lost then!" Nueve roared.

"You will regret it if you do not listen to me!" Trey yelled before he was tossed out of the venue by a few men.

Meanwhile, Zoey returned to Bayview Garden in despair. If this drags on, I will not be able to afford the rent without this project.

“What’s going on? Did something happen?” Levi asked.

Zoey explained everything to him.

He asked her after she was done. “Are you sure they will be there again tomorrow night?”

“Yes. I don’t know who’s the person orchestrating this. But their final goal is to stop me from proceeding with the project.”

“Okay. Leave this matter to me. I will go to the construction site tomorrow.”

...

Levi went to the balcony and made a phone call after Zoey slept. “I need some men tomorrow night, Azure Dragon.”

“You should contact Kirin for this, Sir. He’s got plenty of subordinates.”

Kirin contacted Levi shortly after. “I am the right person you’re looking for, Sir. I’ve been training a special squad in North Hampton since I have too much leisure time here. Their abilities are as good as the men we have in the base after receiving my training. I have a total of two hundred men ready to move out at a moment’s notice.”

“Okay. Bring that squad over here tomorrow night. There’s a mission for them to accomplish.” Levi answered in a low voice with a sullen look.

“Understood, Sir! This is the perfect opportunity to test out their actual combat skills.” Kirin’s excitement was as clear as day.

The five generals working under Levi were granted similar titles, but they had different responsibilities.

Azure Dragon was a war tactician and commander, while Kirin was a demon-like instructor tasked with training special squads for combat purposes.

Kirin had been training a new squad in North Hampton in the last two weeks. He shortlisted two hundred men out of ten thousand candidates.

The next day, Zoey took Levi’s suggestion and proceeded with their construction as usual.

Nueve was made aware of the happenings at the construction site. He said angrily, "What? They have the guts to continue with the construction? How dare they disregard me? Bring more men tonight, and make sure to teach them a lesson, Chopper! Feel free to disable a few of them as long as you do not kill them."

Chopper nodded with a menacing smile.

The Protector Chapter 52

Levi requested Zoey to bring the construction workers away in the evening.

He remained at the construction site with Kirin as they smoked continuously while waiting for Nueve's arrival.

Soon, a huge crowd arrived.

Chopper brought over a hundred skilled fighters with him this time. There were no villagers in sight as they were not needed anymore.

"Oh? It seems like they're missing. What a bunch of cowards." Chopper jeered.

"They are fearful of you, Chopper." The other thugs bootlicked Chopper.

"Well, since there's no one around, we shall level this place!"

Levi and Kirin showed themselves right after Chopper gave the order.

"Aha! There are still people here. Are the two of you workers in this place?" Chopper teased them.

"Yes. We are here to guard this site tonight." Levi took a puff of his cigarette.

Chopper sized up the two men. Then he chuckled. "Judging from your physiques and attires, I'm guessing you guys were from the army?"

"Yes."

"Isn't Zoey looking down on us? Does she think two ex-soldiers will be sufficient to handle us? You over there, do you think you can scare us with that walkie-talkie?"

Chopper looked at Levi and Kirin disdainfully. The men that I've brought with me tonight are equipped with combat skills comparable to ex-militants. "Beat them up, but don't kill them." Chopper commanded without bothering to do anything himself.

Kirin held the walkie-talkie to his mouth and spoke just as Chopper's men moved in their direction. "It's time to rumble."

Whoosh!

A flare shot up into the sky all of a sudden.

Bang!

Chopper and the others looked at the flare in a daze because they had never experienced something like this.

In the next moment, hurried footsteps were heard in every direction.

Anxiety crept into Chopper's heart suddenly.

Everyone's minds went blank as armored and armed soldiers surrounded them within a few seconds.

Bang!

Crack! Crack!

One soldier rushed toward Chopper before he could react and broke his wrists. The knives in his hands fell onto the ground.

Bang!

Bang!

Bang!

...

The thugs were nothing compared to the soldiers despite their experiences of having killed another person.

Their wrists were broken by the soldiers before they could even raise the weapon in their hands. Then they were shoved onto the ground.

In just a blink of an eye, Chopper and the hundred over thugs were left sprawled on the ground as they howled miserably.

One of the soldiers came to a halt in front of Kirin and saluted. "King of War! We, the Kirin's special squad, have successfully subdued all the enemies."

Kirin looked at the stopwatch in his hand. He said with a smile, "59 seconds. You've barely passed the test."

Upon hearing that, Chopper and the other thugs lying on the ground were scared out of their wits.

"What? Kirin's special squad? King of War?"

"Are we in deep shit now?"

"Why is the special squad here to confront us? We're just some ordinary thugs."

Chopper's scalp tingled as the acknowledgment nearly caused him to pass out due to the fear. We are the leading gang in the circle. But I did not expect some special squad to be targeting us.

Everyone understood the situation when they saw the lasers aimed at their bodies.

"Come out, snipers." Kirin ordered.

A team of snipers appeared out of nowhere.

Chopper was in utter disbelief. They even prepared snipers?

"Question their identities." Levi continued to smoke.

The Protector Chapter 53

Chopper looked at Levi incredulously. He's the King of War. Yet he's so polite to this man puffing on a cigarette. Who the hell is he?

Kirin grabbed Chopper by the neck and lifted him up, suspending him in mid-air.

“I’ll talk. I’ll tell you everything! Nueve sent us here.” Chopper blurted everything out as he was scared to death.

“Ask Nueve to meet me in thirty minutes. Do not make me go to him.” Kirin smiled eerily.

“Okay, okay, alright. I will make the call now!” Chopper complied.

Nueve was having the time of his life at that moment inside a bar. “Any update? Have you settled the matter? The people from the Lopez Family questioned our progress earlier.” Nueve asked casually after the call connected.

“Something terrible happened, Lord Nueve!” Chopper’s panicky voice was heard.

“What happened?”

“Please come here right now, Lord Nueve. We are being detained at the moment!”

The call was hung up before Chopper could elaborate further.

Nueve roared after being informed of the situation. “Gather all the men and follow me!”

Multiple vans arrived at the construction site half an hour later.

Hundreds of thugs rushed towards the scene, with Nueve leading the way.

They saw Levi and Kirin standing alone at the site while Chopper and the others lay on the ground.

“Who are you? Do you dare to tell me your name?” Nueve asked coldly.

Nueve was under the impression that he was the most formidable man in North Hampton, despite sensing something was amiss with the bizarre turn of events.

“So you’re Nueve? Who gave you the orders to do this?” Levi asked.

“Who do you think you are? How dare you question me?” Nueve scorned.

Thunk!

Nueve did not expect Kirin to take out a gun and aimed at his forehead. Moreover, the gun was loaded.

Everyone was stunned. Even Nueve's body was trembling. No one had the guts to point a gun at me before...

Nueve raised his arms in surrender as his legs wobbled. "Let's talk nicely. That gun of yours is quite uncommon. I'm guessing it's for military use?"

Nueve had his share of experience in society. He could distinguish that Levi and Kirin's decisive and imposing manners are traits seen only in military men.

Nueve had once seen the gun model in Kirin's hand. That gun is specially designed for soldiers in the Special Operations Regiment.

Kirin did not say a word. But his uniform was exposed when the wind blew open the trench coat he had donned.

There's a star label on his shoulders! He's a war king!

Boom!

Nueve was mind-blown as he gained revelation. What terrible luck do I have to stumble into them!

The lasers pointed at their faces did not help with the ominous atmosphere.

An unprecedented terror filled their hearts.

Clap!

Clap!

Clap!

...

The lights on the construction site were switched on the next second. The venue was suddenly as bright as day.

Everyone finally knew the source of the lasers pointed at their faces. They saw the snipers aiming at them with their sniper rifles from afar.

They were armed to the teeth with a few grenades hanging on their shoulder's vests...

"Kneel immediately, Lord Nueve. They are from the Special Operations Regiment!" Chopper yelled.

Thump!

Thump!

Thump!

...

Nueve and his men kneeled on the floor swiftly.

They threw all their weapons aside.

Trey's warning reverberated beside Nueve's ears at that moment. She is indeed someone I should not provoke. More importantly, Trey knew he could not inform me about these people's identity.

The Protector Chapter 54

"This is a mistake on my part. I will tell you everything. Lopez family's son-in-law, Samuel, contacted me! I have the chat history and receipt of the transaction. Here, take my phone!" Nueve knew that it was the information Levi wanted to know. So he informed Levi of the truth about Lopez family's request.

Kirin handed the phone to Levi.

Levi's face contorted with rage after he scanned through the content. The Lopez family must have got tired of living!

"We were only told to carry out the orders, Chief! Please show mercy and forgive us." Nueve groveled on the floor fearfully.

"I heard you all destroyed plenty of buildings here last night. So it is your responsibility to restore the constructs. I want all of you to work here starting tomorrow onwards! Moreover, you are going to compensate for the psychological trauma you inflicted on those workers. Fifty million should be sufficient." Levi said firmly.

“Okay, okay, okay. I agree with all your requests. We do not mind slaving here!” Nueve did not have the guts to reject Levi. He considered himself lucky to escape death.

Kirin, the King of War picked up Nueve’s knife and crumpled the piece of sharp metal into scrap effortlessly.

Nueve’s underlings were horrified by that sight. Our difference in status aside, this man can easily defeat hundreds of us without breaking a sweat.

“Let’s not wait until tomorrow. You will start working here tonight. I hope to see some results tomorrow morning. Also, the sewage system is not installed. I assume you will handle that task?” Levi added.

Pfftt!

Everyone knew what he was implying. He’s clearly telling us to scoop up others’ wastes.

But Nueve did not dare to oppose Levi’s suggestion.

“May I know your relationship with Ms. Zoey, Sir?” Nueve summoned his courage to ask that question in his mind.

“Oh. She’s my wife.” Levi answered.

Everyone gasped as clarity washed over them.

Samuel contacted Nueve after Levi and the others left. “How’s the progress, Lord Nueve? I’m waiting to pay you the rest of the amount.”

Nueve exploded with rage as he listened to Samuel.

“F*** you, Samuel Robertson! My brothers are crippled and I almost died because of you. Mark my words, you’ll face the repercussion. I will not forgive you, just you wait!” Nueve hung up the phone afterward.

Samuel was frightened.

Harry asked. “What’s going on?”

“Nueve said his men were crippled, and he nearly died. He also mentioned that he would not forgive us!” Samuel explained helplessly.

The entire Lopez family almost wet their pants, listening to his explanation.

“This must be Levi Garrison’s doing! He’s going to get us all killed.”

“That family is evil! They are deliberately harming us. Sooner or later, we are going to meet our downfall because of them!” Harry Lopez slammed the table furiously.

“What should we do now?” Fabian asked anxiously.

“What else can we do? We are going to ask them to apologize!” Harry screamed angrily.

The next day, Zoey, Aaron, and the other workers were dumbfounded after they arrived at the construction site because there were already people working tirelessly at the site.

Many constructs that were destroyed the night before were restored.

More importantly, the people moving the bricks were covered with tattoos.

“Aren’t these people the thugs from the other night?”

Zoey recognized the men to be the thugs that caused them trouble the other night. This is unbelievable. They may not be good at building things, but these men are great labourers.

“What’s happening?” Zoey and the others were confounded.

A middle-aged man dressed in all black hurried over in their direction with a bunch of subordinates following behind him at that moment.

Zoey and the others were terrified by that group of men closing in on them.

“What’s the meaning of this?” Aaron took out his truncheon.

The Protector Chapter 55

Zoey was afraid that the men were there to stir up a ruckus.

Unexpectedly, Nueve explained cheerfully. “Nice to meet you, Ms. Zoey and Mr. Aaron. You can call me Nueve. I am deeply sorry for causing this mess in the last two days. So I worked through the night to restore the constructs we destroyed the other day. Moreover, you can freely utilize my subordinates

until the completion of this project. I have around two hundred men with me, and please leave the sewage system to us. Also, we will not accept any payment for doing all these!”

Two hundred gang members to volunteer at our construction site? No one could fathom the situation. But Zoey had no other choice but to accept the arrangements.

Zoey asked Levi about that matter when she arrived home that night.

“I stayed in the same prison as Nueve previously. We were close to each other, so he did me a favor.” Levi explained.

Zoey investigated Nueve’s background earlier in the day. So she could verify Levi’s statement.

“You should not mingle with that lot from now on. The connections you have with those inmates are not desirable. Did you borrow the five million from those people as well?” Zoey quickly deduced the source of the money.

Levi nodded. “That’s right.”

“Alright. Let’s return this five million once I receive the payment.” Zoey said with determination.

At the Garrison family estate.

Joseph gathered every member of the Garrison family for a meeting.

Bryan informed everyone agitatedly. “I’ve investigated Levi’s background thoroughly. The man supporting him is Nueve. He was imprisoned previously because he killed someone and was placed in the same prison as Levi. Nueve was released from jail one year ago, and coincidentally, even Trey has to obey Nueve’s every order!”

“Did you know, Nueve’s subordinates are helping Zoey out at the construction site.”

Joseph said with a smile. “Now we know who’s the man supporting Levi. So it’s Nueve!”

Melanie asked apprehensively. “Is this Nueve a formidable man, grandpa?”

“He is indeed a formidable man. It is said that no one can match his cruelty and bloodlust.”

“But Nueve is not the most impressive man. That title belongs to Jack Smith, also known as the King of North Hampton. He is in charge of the whole North Hampton with hundreds of men working under him, including the Invincible-13.” Joseph clarified.

“Then should we be fearful of Nueve, grandpa?” Melanie asked again.

Ben sneered. “Nueve is nothing! It is as easy as ABC for us to kill him. However, we should be afraid of Jack Smith.”

Malicious intent glinted in Joseph’s eyes. “Alright. The one-month period Levi given us is around the corner. Let’s establish all our connections before I invite Mr. Smith over. It is time to face your doom, Levi!”

“Hahaha. That’s a brilliant move, grandpa! Nueve will have no other choice but to kneel when Jack Smith is here.”

“I can already imagine Levi’s dumbfounded expression in my mind. Hahaha...”

Everyone laughed out loud.

They thought Nueve was the person supporting Levi. So they wanted to invite the most formidable man in the underworld, Jack Smith, to intimidate him. But little did they know about Levi’s identity...

The next day, the Lopez family’s representatives, Shaun and Samuel, went to meet up with Zoey.

Zoey did not know the reason behind their visit. “What’s the matter? Do you need something?”

“Are you aware of your mistakes? Levi beat up Nueve’s subordinates and infuriated him. What’s wrong with both of you?” Samuel jeered. “You should hurry up and apologize to him. Otherwise, there will be no end to this matter!”

Zoey curled her lips into a sneer. “I see. I suppose you were the one to hire them in the first place?”

“That’s not true. How can you say that? They informed us because Levi hurt them. You need to apologize to him right away. Otherwise, they will blame us for his fault. You should take responsibility for your mess!” Samuel said aggressively.

“Hah.” Zoey laughed dryly. It is so obvious that the Lopez family is behind all these, yet they want me to apologize?

“Handle your own mess!” Zoey turned to leave after she said her piece.

But Samuel and Shaun swiftly blocked her path to prevent her from going anywhere.

At that moment, a group of workers wearing safety helmets hurried over in their direction. The man leading the group was Nueve.

“What’s happening here, Ms. Zoey?” Nueve asked.

“Stay out of this. You’re just a lowly worker.” Samuel shoved Nueve away.

But Samuel and Shaun were flabbergasted to see Nueve’s face after he took off his helmet. “Lord... lord Nueve... what are you doing here?” They were in utter disbelief.

“Beat them up.” Nueve barked an order and countless men rushed to Nueve’s side to give Samuel and Shaun a good beating.

“Don’t worry, Ms. Zoey. I will handle the security in the construction site from now on. No one will dare to step one toe out of line in this place.”

...

After that, The Lopez family guessed there was a friendly connection between Nueve and Levi since they stayed in the same prison.

On the other hand, Levi decided to look past that matter temporarily for Zoey’s sake.

Soon it was the 7th, the last day of a long holiday.

Chloe contacted Levi to remind him to attend the high school reunion.

“I am going to attend a high school reunion now. So I might return home a little late tonight.”

Levi and Zoey were not in the same class during high school. Moreover, Zoey was busy, so she did not have the time to attend the gathering.

“Alright. Go ahead then. Are you sure you want to wear that outfit?” Zoey had to ask after she saw the casual clothes on Levi.

Levi shrugged. “It’s fine.”

Levi saw Chloe exited the sales center after he walked out of the neighborhood.

Chloe drove her car in Levi’s direction after he waved at her.

She’s driving a Porsche Panamera. Her future husband will be a remarkable man, judging from this expensive car she bought for herself at this young age. At the very least, her future husband must be an executive from a large company or multinational corporation because an Average Joe will not satisfy someone like her. Levi thought to himself.

Chloe got out of the car and asked with a smile. “I thought you would bring Zoey to the reunion?”

“She’s busy, and it’s not her class anyway. So there’s no need for her to tag along.” Levi explained.

“Why don’t we go together?” Chloe sounded Levi out.

“Sure.” Levi had originally wanted to call Azure Dragon to send the car over after he exited the neighborhood. But he changed his mind after seeing Chloe.

Chloe thought Levi did not want to drive because of the inconvenience. I will not be surprised even if he drives a car that’s worth a billion. He did spend fifty million so casually, after all. Actually, he’s handsome even if he takes a cab. That’s the way wealthy people try to experience a commoner’s life. There will always be an explanation to justify Levi’s actions because he’s a billionaire.

“Were you released from prison a long time ago?” Chloe asked curiously.

Levi was a little surprised. She’s the first person to raise suspicion about my early release.

“You’re right.” Levi answered.

“What kind of business have you been doing all these years?” Chloe fixated her gaze on Levi despite her duty as the driver.

“I’ve been dealing with firearms...” Levi said. Firearms are the most common things within my reach in the last few years. It’s not a bad idea to use it as a cover up since I’m familiar with the topic.

“Oh! No wonder!”

The Protector Chapter 57

The high school reunion was hosted at the Royal Hotel. Although the place was not as extravagant as the revolving restaurant, a table reservation cost at least ten to twenty thousand. So the Royal Hotel was considered a lavish diner.

For someone receiving an average amount of salary, a meal there would cost three to four months of their monthly earnings. Not everyone in their class was so lucky in life. Some were doing good, while some were barely holding their life together.

A few men clad in suits were welcoming newcomers near the hotel entrance.

They crowded around Chloe’s Porsche Panamera upon her arrival.

“Oh? Isn’t this the prettiest girl in our class? I heard you’re earning a few million a year. I guess that’s true since you’re driving a Porsche!” A few male classmates began to bootlick.

Chloe flashed a shy smile upon hearing the compliments.

But the smile on everyone’s faces froze when they saw Levi getting out of the passenger’s seat.

They did not expect Levi to attend the reunion, not to mention coming to the venue alongside Chloe.

“Oh, it’s Levi, the influential figure back in the day.” A well-dressed man broke the awkward silence. He was the class monitor, Jed Barrett.

Even though he was the class monitor, Levi had always outshone him in the past. So Jed spent his younger days chasing behind Levi, trying to match up with Levi’s accomplishments.

Jed successfully entered one of the top universities and is currently working in a multinational corporation after graduation. He was rumored to be earning a few million a year as well.

Jed's car was a pricey Range Rover. He was one of the high achievers in the class.

Levi greeted him with a smile.

"We thought you wouldn't come, Levi." A few other classmates asked shockingly.

Jed rolled his eyes at the person who asked the question. "Levi is not a narrow-minded person. He's not someone to be bothered by his current situation."

Everyone discussed Levi's matter in the private room earlier. They shared a similar opinion that Levi would not attend the reunion because he would be too ashamed to face everyone else due to his recent imprisonment. But who would have thought Levi showed up in the end.

"You're right. Levi is a tough guy. We will never be able to reach his standard." The other classmates laughed.

They were implying Levi's presence as a show of his shamelessness.

Jed strode past Levi and came to a halt in front of Chloe. "You're finally here, Chloe. Come, follow me into the room now. Everyone is waiting for you."

Jed was interested in Chloe. He knew Chloe was still single, so he deliberately organized the gathering since he had the ability and qualification to pursue her.

Everyone crowded around Chloe and disregarded Levi.

"Shall we?" Chloe stopped to address Levi before he followed them into the hotel.

Many people had already arrived on the third floor of the Royal Hotel.

Some of them even brought along their partners. So the venue was much livelier than Levi expected.

Everyone stood up to welcome Chloe, especially the men.

Chloe was a beauty, a successful beauty, nonetheless. So she was shining brighter than ever in everyone's eyes.

Levi looked for a random seat and sat down.

"Are my eyes deceiving me? Isn't that Levi?" One of the men, Wayne Warren, exclaimed. "It's really him. Levi is here!"

Everyone turned to look at Levi all of a sudden.

Levi was once the most affluent among his peers, the dark horse in the city's business world right after he graduated from university. He was a man with a net worth of over a billion, admired by women and envied by the men.

But after his downfall at the Garrison family's hand, Levi became the most despicable person in everyone's mind. They rebuked and insulted him as much as they looked up to him in the past.

The Protector Chapter 58

"Didn't I told you all that Levi will certainly cause trouble? but none of you believed me!"

"That's right. Levi is a beast. He took advantage of his sister-in-law and almost murdered his parents!"

"His nature was clear as day from the arrogance he displayed in university!"

...

These were the words that were exchanged in the private room before Levi's arrival.

Wayne and a few of his classmates were jealous of Levi's accomplishments in the past, so they never liked him. But they did not have the opportunity to vent their resentment then. It wasn't until now that the gathering provided them with the perfect opportunity.

"What are you doing hiding among the girls, Levi? Join us at our table and tell us everything that happened to you in prison."

"Hahaha..."

Everyone burst into laughter as they eyed Levi disdainfully.

"I heard you were jobless and stayed with your mother-in-law after you were released from prison." Someone sneered.

"I heard every large corporation in North Hampton has blacklisted Levi, so it's not surprising for him to be jobless even with his capabilities." A girl added in a diminished tone.

It was at that moment did Levi found out that the companies in North Hampton had blacklisted him.

Wayne laughed. "Let me offer you a job. My company is hiring for security guard's position. The pay is four thousand with accommodation and meals provided. You should qualify for that job with your physique!"

Chloe could no longer stand listening to their mockeries. "Stop teasing him. He's got his own career now."

"Career? Don't tell me that you're his sugar mummy now, Chloe? Both of you arrived together, after all." Wayne spoke without filtering his thoughts.

But he quickly fell silent when he caught Jed's eye.

"Let's all move on to other topics of conversation." Chloe insisted.

Everyone took their seat afterward. Levi was rooted in his seat while Chloe sat beside him.

Wayne whispered beside Jed's ear. "Chloe is infatuated with Levi. She's sticking up to him even in his current condition. You should try harder, Jed."

Jed sneered. "Don't worry. I'll never lose to a criminal like him."

Levi was surrounded by pretty girls. On his other side was Lina, whose beauty was second only to Chloe in their class.

Lina was a beautiful and rich girl from a wealthy family with assets over a billion. On top of her good looks, Lina was good in her studies as well.

She had always been fond of Levi and sympathized with his tragedy.

"Levi, why don't you join my father's company as a Technical Advisor? The basic salary is eight thousand with additional bonuses. There are plenty of opportunities to receive a promotion too." Lina handed a name card to Levi.

“Okay. Thanks.” Levi accepted the name card because Lina offered him the position out of goodwill.

Chloe smirked beside Levi. Based on his current net worth, He should have more than enough money to purchase the company owned by Lina’s father.

The other girls on the other hand, were not as kind towards Levi as Chloe and Lina.

“We thought you would bring Zoey along with you. Where is she?”

“That’s impossible. Now that Levi’s been reduced to a sorry state, Zoey won’t tag along with him. She will not want to embarrass herself.”

“You’re absolutely right! Even I’m feeling ashamed to be referred to as Levi’s ex-classmates.”

...

The Levi now had become the perfect example of a man who should be avoided by all girls.

“Why aren’t we starting? Is there anyone else who’s coming?” Chloe hurriedly distracted others’ attention.

“The star for tonight’s reunion has yet to arrive!”

A thought popped into Chloe’s mind. “Don’t tell me Stephan is coming?”

“That’s right! Stephan is attending too!”

Levi remembered Stephan Simmons. His father was the director of a department in the district council. Even the headmaster had to condone Stephan’s behavior. He managed to enter one of the top universities, albeit having failed most of his examinations.

The Protector Chapter 59

“You might not know this, but Stephan’s father received a promotion. He’s now the Chief of the district council. So everyone must wait for him to arrive.”

“Jed’s achievements and Lina’s family background are nothing compared to Stephan’s influence.”

The statement sounded like an exaggeration, but that was the truth.

Everyone was not familiar with the concept of societal hierarchy during their university years. But now, after a few years of working in the society, they were made aware of the authority a high-ranking officer in governmental departments held, especially the Chief of a district.

The status of being the son of a district council's chief toppled all other personal achievements in the room combined because power will always be more coveted than money.

Soon, everyone stood up when they heard voices from the hallway.

Jed was especially passionate as he was the first person to welcome Stephan.

Stephan was dressed lavishly in Armani clothes, Gucci belt, Versace shirt, Patek Philippe wristwatch... The items on his person added up to millions.

A gorgeous lady with a slender figure like that of a model followed by his side.

Her voluptuous figure and long legs that were wrapped in black stockings stunned everyone inside the room.

"You're finally here, Stephan!" Jed welcomed Stephan with a bear hug in excitement.

"I see you're doing well, Jed. You're already wearing an Omega watch." Stephan said with a smile after he saw Jed's wristwatch.

Jed glanced at the gorgeous girl next to Stephan. "Aren't you going to introduce the pretty lady to us, Stephan?"

"She's just a random girl." Stephan said nonchalantly.

Stephan did not care to establish a proper relationship as he would change partner regularly.

Wayne's eyes gleamed. "She's a model! I saw her on television before."

The woman acted more arrogantly after Wayne acknowledged her fame.

Others merely looked at Stephan in envy. He can easily lay his hands on a model that we can only see on television.

Wayne shuffled forward eagerly. "Do you remember me, Stephan? I'm Wayne. I used to fight for your sake in the past..."

"Of course. You're Wayne." Stephan nodded.

Stephan's affirmation made Wayne excited. He raised his voice to the others inside the room. "Stephan remembers me! Did all of you hear that?"

"Stephan, my company is currently developing a new project, requiring approval from the district council. I hope you will assist me to speed up the process." Wayne seized the opportunity to ask for a favor.

"Sure. Consider it done."

"Do you need a chauffeur or bodyguard, Stephan?" Wayne's best friend, Robin, asked immediately.

Stephan joked. "I do need a watchdog."

"No problem. I'm the right person for the job. Woof woof..." Robin mimicked the sound of a dog shamelessly. It was his lifelong dream to become Stephan's pet.

Chloe was disgusted by the brazen demeanor of her classmates to butter up Stephan.

Stephan scanned the surroundings after he entered the room. "By the way, where is the criminal who took advantage of his sister-in-law, the pride of our class? Is he here?"

"Hahaha. Of course he's here! He's been blacklisted by every company in the city. He must be desperate to look for your help, Stephan." Wayne suggested hastily.

Jed looked at Levi. "Are you looking down on Stephan? Aren't you going to greet Stephan now that he's here?"

Stephan said mockingly. "Oh, please don't do that. Levi's a famous person in the city back in the day. I am not qualified to be greeted by him. My father even mentioned him a few times and asked me to learn from him. Perhaps he could teach me a few tricks about taking advantage of helpless girls. Hahaha..."

Everyone laughed out loud as well.

Wayne glared at Levi. "What are you doing? Did you not hear what Stephan said? You should build a good rapport with Stephan, so he could help you to look for a job that pays well and tick your name off from the blacklist."

But Levi merely sat in his chair without moving a muscle.

The Protector Chapter 60

Lina and Chloe were already in an upright position.

Chloe signaled Levi relentlessly with her eyes. I know Levi is very wealthy and has connections. But he's facing Stephan Simmons now, the son of the district council's chief. I do not think Levi has the capability to stand against that kind of authority. North Hampton is a commercial zone, so the district's chief has an unimaginable influence in this area.

"What are you doing just sitting there, Levi? Get up immediately!"

"Do you expect Stephan to greet you instead?"

Wayne and Robin gave Levi an earful for the way he was behaving. They even had the urge to drag Levi off his seat.

Jed grimaced as well. "You should show some proper manners, Levi."

Levi merely lit a cigarette and took a puff while disregarding the farce occurring before his eyes.

Fury glinted in Stephan's eyes as he looked at Levi.

His rage intensified upon noticing the pretty ladies sitting on Levi's sides. I've always wanted to sleep with Lina and Chloe. But my plans got ruined by Levi back in the day.

Everyone knew the situation was turning South upon sensing Stephan's wrath.

Jed panicked. Levi is courting death.

Stephan's girlfriend, Crystal, said coquettishly, "Hubby, this person is so arrogant. He's not taking you seriously at all."

Stephan's expression turned grim. Everyone has always treated me with respect wherever I go all these years.

"Get up! That's not where you're supposed to sit." Stephan jeered at Levi.

A dreadful silence filled the air inside the room as everyone held their breaths unwittingly. He's done it now, nothing good ever comes from infuriating Stephan Simmons.

But Levi merely sat motionless and ignored Stephan's existence.

"I'll repeat myself. Get up and get lost!" Stephan ordered harshly. I was not afraid of Levi when he was at his peak six years ago, much less now that he's fresh out of prison! My status is my biggest asset to back me up.

Levi puffed on his cigarette without saying a word while looking at Stephan and Crystal.

Menace flashed across Crystal's face as she grabbed a glass of water and poured the content on Levi. "Are you incapable of comprehending human language? It's time for you to get lost! Are you deaf?" Crystal shrieked.

Everyone did not expect things to progress to that stage.

Jed hurriedly tried to smooth the situation over. "Hurry up and apologize to Stephan, Levi. Then we'll look past this incident."

Wayne added. "That's right. Kneel on the floor and ask sincerely for Stephan's forgiveness. I'm sure he will show you mercy."

...

Everyone condemned Levi as they sided with Stephan.

Chloe and Lina looked at the crowd incredulously. Stephan and his girlfriend are at fault here. She even poured water on Levi, yet they want Levi to kneel and apologize? This is unreasonable and unacceptable! But Stephan always assumed he was in the right because of his unique status.

Levi put out the cigarette he was smoking. Then he met with Stephan's eyes and said casually. "Ask your father to apologize to me in person. Otherwise, I will not let you off."

"What? You want Stephan's father to apologize to you?"

Everyone was completely dumbfounded by Levi's request. They were dazed for some time before slowly regaining their senses.

"Are you crazy, Levi? Do you know who Stephan's father is? Do you think you are qualified to receive his apology?"

"That's right! Who do you think you are? Why is there a need for the district council's chief to apologize to you?"

"You're just a lowly criminal recently released from prison. Know your place!"

...

Wayne, Robin, and the others were going all out to insult Levi at that point.

The Protector Chapter 61

Even Chloe, who was slightly aware of Levi's capabilities, thought he was mad. You are rich and packed with connections. But Stephan's father is the Chief of the district council! Are you out of your mind to ask him to apologize to you? Are you seeking death?

Chloe did not expect Levi to be so full of himself.

Stephan nearly exploded with rage when he heard Levi's words.

He stretched out his hand to slap Levi's face. But Levi grabbed Stephan's hand in a split second and twisted his wrist. Then he kicked at Stephan's knee.

"Arrghh..."

Stephan wailed in pain and fell heavily in front of Levi on his knees.

Clap!

Levi swiftly dragged Crystal and slapped her forcefully, causing her to fall onto the floor.

The couple knelt before Levi in just a few seconds.

"What are you doing, Levi? How dare you hurt Stephan? Did you get tired of living?"

"You're out of your mind, Levi!"

Jed and Wayne yelled and rushed forward at the same time as Levi slapped Stephan across his face.

"Ah!"

"Ah!"

Both men screamed blue murder.

"Stop right there!" Levi commanded.

Everyone stayed still and looked at Levi in disbelief.

Chloe was already shivering fearfully.

Levi patted Stephan's cheek. "You better contact your father immediately and ask him to apologize to me."

Stephan hurriedly fished out his phone and made the call. "Father, come save me. Hurry up!"

Levi snatched the phone from Stephan and said with a smile before the other party could speak. "You're Draco Simmons, right? You better come here and apologize to me swiftly. Oh, by the way, my name is Levi Garrison!"

He's mad! He must be nuts! Levi has now become a lunatic in everyone's mind. He's blatantly provoking Stephan's father.

Malicious intent glinted in Stephan's eyes as he smiled wickedly at Levi after the latter hung up the phone call. "You're doomed, Levi Garrison! I will let you suffer along with Zoey and her entire family. I will never let you off the hook!"

Levi did not say a word and instead grabbed a fork and stabbed Stephan's thigh.

"Arrghh..." A horrible and hysterical scream rang inside the private room.

Stephan wanted to threaten Levi further. But he shut his mouth obediently upon meeting with Levi's eyes.

Everyone shared a similar thought at that moment. Levi's as good as a piece of dead meat now.

Chloe was shocked to her core. I did not expect Levi to destroy his own life like this. No one can save him now.

She leaned closer and whispered beside Levi's ear. "You should escape now. Run as far as you can from this place."

Levi smiled. "Why should I? I am still waiting for my apology."

Chloe was rendered speechless.

About twenty minutes later, rows of cars were parked outside the Royal Hotel as a horde of people rushed into the building.

Stephan was invigorated when he heard the thundering footsteps in the hallway.

Jed, Wayne, and the others were excited as well.

A group of men clad in suits and ties dashed into the room. An extraordinary air and overwhelming presence enveloped the body of the middle-aged man leading the group.

The man in lead was none other than Draco Simmons!

They hastened their footsteps after seeing Stephan and Crystal kneeling before Levi.

“Save me, father! He beat me up!” Stephan begged for his father’s assistance.

But Draco took large strides and came to a halt in front of Levi and asked him with concern, all the while ignoring his son. “Are you alright?”

The Protector Chapter 62

Draco’s subordinates did not have the courage to look at Stephan and Crystal. They focused all their attention on Levi.

“Are you alright? We were so worried when we received the news.” They said in a hurry.

Everyone else inside the room was flabbergasted.

Stephan was in utter disbelief. “I’m your son, father! I’m the one who’s injured.”

But Draco fixated his gaze on Levi despite Stephan’s effort to express his grievances.

“I’m fine. But my clothes are soiled.” Levi answered.

Everyone saw the visible wet stain on Levi’s clothes.

Draco was infuriated. He scanned the room and asked angrily. “Who did this? Who’s the one that poured water all over him?”

The other subordinates raised their voices as well. “Who’s the daredevil?”

Those in the know gazed at Crystal simultaneously.

Crystal lowered her head as her body trembled visibly.

Draco grabbed Stephan by his collar and slapped him mercilessly. "You're a wastrel! Why do I have a son like you? You will be the cause for my downfall!"

Slap!

Thump!

Draco beat up his son furiously. He finally stopped when he was out of breath.

Stephan was confounded. What's going on? Why is my father hitting me? I am the victim of this incident. Why does he concern about Levi Garrison instead?

The other classmates were also bewildered as they looked at Levi differently.

What's happening? Chloe was relatively calm. Don't tell me Levi's status is even higher than the Simmons family? Is that the reason behind his brazen attitude?

At that moment, a man dressed in a suit entered the room holding a briefcase.

"Isn't that the Head Secretary of North Hampton, Cedric Jones?"

"You're right! That's him! The Head Secretary of North Hampton City. He's the secretary of the most influential figure in the city. His appearance carries the same weight as the great Mr. Jesse himself!"

Everyone recognized Cedric as soon as he entered the room.

But Cedric behaved similarly to the others before him. He walked up to Levi hastily and asked him with concern. "Are you alright, Mr. Garrison? I am worried sick about you! Mr. Jesse left over ten missed calls on my phone because he thought something terrible happened to you. He's currently attending a meeting overseas, so he cannot come here in person. That's why he asked me to come in his stead."

Huh? Levi's ex-classmates were astounded to their limits. Who is Levi Garrison? Why is Mr. Jesse so attentive towards him? Oh my God! This is driving me crazy. Can anyone tell me his identity already?

"I'm fine. Jesse got worried over nothing. I'll treat him to a meal someday." Levi said with a smile.

"Yes. Sure. I will convey your message to him. Mr. Jesse will be pleased to hear this!"

The Head Secretary of North Hampton is so excited because of Levi's offer to treat Mr. Jesse to a meal?

Cedric turned to look at Draco sternly. "What's happening here, Mr. Simmons? My boss wanted me to clarify the situation with you!"

"This is all my fault! I failed my duties as a father in educating my child. This is the gravest mistake of my life for my son to offend you, Mr. Garrison!" Draco Simmons bowed deeply in front of Levi and continued. "I am deeply sorry, Mr. Garrison. This is all my fault. Please punish me!"

Everyone gasped after witnessing that scene.

No one expected that the district council's chief, Draco Simmons, to bow so lowly in front of Levi.

Stephan was dumbfounded.

Crystal fell into a daze.

Chloe was astonished.

Everyone inside the room was stupefied.

This is unbelievable. Levi Garrison's status is frighteningly overwhelming.

The Protector Chapter 63

Tap tap tap...

Footsteps rang in the hallway again.

A man dressed in police uniform and another man dressed in a soldier's uniform entered.

Jed voiced out unwittingly after noticing the badges on their shoulders. "The Captain of Patrol Squad and a colonel from the army!"

“I know him. He’s Steven Shaw, the Colonel of North Hampton’s First Metallic Regiment.”

“And that’s Xavier Fields, the Captain of Patrol Squad!”

Everyone’s scalps tingled with unease at that moment. I can’t believe Steven Shaw and Xavier Field is here!

Both men were having a meeting nearby. They rushed over as soon as they were made aware of the situation.

The two fearsome men came to a halt in front of Levi and saluted him.

The crowd could not be more amazed. Who is Levi Garrison, actually? Why are all these remarkable men in society showing such great respect towards him? Even Mr. Jesse nearly rush back to the country from abroad for him. Levi’s authority is beyond our comprehension.

A hint of terror glinted in everyone’s eyes as they looked at Levi. The lowly criminal has become a powerful figure in just a few minutes.

Chloe’s body shivered as she stood beside Levi. Her legs felt heavy as lead, rooting her to her spot. She finally understood the hidden meaning behind Levi’s explanation earlier. He said he’s dealing with firearms. If I think further from that perspective, Levi may be a high-ranking officer in the military.

She did not dare to imagine further.

“Bring them away and never let me see them again.” Levi commanded nonchalantly.

Draco complied without a moment to waste. “I will discipline this useless son of mine. He will not cause any trouble from now on!”

Everyone glanced at Crystal simultaneously.

Crystal knew she was doomed. I made a terrible decision in offending this man.

Draco and the others left swiftly after. But Levi asked for Steven Shaw to stay.

Steven stood politely beside Levi, admiring his idol. “Please give your orders, Sir!” Steven Shaw said.

Levi scratched his nose before he said, "I need one hundred thousand men next week. Convey my request to the regiment."

Levi was preparing his secret weapon to defeat the Garrison family.

Steven Shaw was shocked. But he nodded in agreement anyway. "I will accomplish this mission!"

The private room was already cleaned up by the time Steven Shaw left. The restaurant staff even changed the tablecloth for Levi's table.

Everyone tensed up as they eyed Levi nervously.

They knew Levi had the ability to destroy their future and career with a single word.

"Let's relax ourselves. This is a gathering, am I right? Let's enjoy the reunion then." Levi smiled.

Chloe immediately took the initiative to smooth things over. "Let's take our seats and pretend as if that incident earlier never happened."

Everyone's movements were stiff as they returned to their seats.

Jed, Wayne, and the others who sided with Stephan earlier were trying their best to diminish their presence.

Earlier, all of them felt the urge to bootlick Stephan to win over his favor, but none of them had the courage to do the same to Levi.

"They should be serving the dishes by now. I'm getting hungry already." Levi raised his tone.

Levi helped himself to the food after the dishes were served on the table.

He ate without a care for his image or any dining etiquettes, but no one had the guts to laugh at him.

Levi soon realized he was the only person eating inside the room. Everyone else was tensed and quiet.

He got up from his seat after he was done. "I'm full now. I'll take my leave first."

The Protector Chapter 64

Chloe wanted to send him back, but Levi rejected her offer.

Noises erupted inside the private room after Levi's departure.

"Oh my God! What just happened? Levi Garrison is so scary."

"The Head Secretary of North Hampton, the Captain of Patrol Squad, they were all here. You guys must be so ashamed now, attempting to hook him up with a job."

Jed, Wayne, and the others were beyond embarrassed by that comment.

"Oh? Is this the cigarette Levi was puffing on? I've never seen this brand before." Someone picked up the empty box and asked curiously.

"You're an idiot. This is a cigarette available only for military personnel. Moreover, this must be a rare edition limited only to the high-ranking officers based on the label."

"What's his current status, I wonder? He's so intimidating."

"He's truly an impressive man. He was a successful person six years ago. Now, his achievements are even greater than before!"

Chloe did not join in the discussion. Mixed emotions churned in her chest as she felt grateful and regretful at the same time.

Her phone rang all of a sudden. It was a call from Levi.

"Morris Atkinson did not attend the gathering today?" He asked.

Morris Atkinson was Levi's classmate as well as his best friend. He stayed by Levi's side throughout high school and their university years.

Morris contributed to the establishment and success of Levi Group in the past. But after Levi was tricked by the Garrison family, Matthew Green and the others betrayed him. So Levi assumed Morris to have betrayed him as well since he was the vice president.

Levi attended the reunion with the sole intention of meeting with Morris Atkinson. But he did not expect him to be missing.

“Huh? It’s only natural that Morris Atkinson won’t be able to attend.” Chloe replied, surprised by Levi’s question.

“Why not?” Levi frowned.

“He passed away, didn’t he?” Chloe reverted the question back to Levi. I even suggested everyone not to mention Morris’ name at the gathering in advance because I did not want to dampen the mood.

“Passed away?” Levi was caught in utter astonishment.

“Ah. You really don’t know? Not long after your imprisonment, the Garrison family and Levi Group confronted each other. The news of Morris jumping off a building was made aware to the public shortly after. It was said he committed suicide because he was afraid of facing the punishment for his crime.” Chloe explained.

“What? Something like that happened?” Levi asked astoundingly. I did not investigate this matter because I knew the Garrison family orchestrated everything. So I was oblivious to Morris’ death. But if that’s the case, perhaps Morris did not betray me after all. Someone must have driven him to his death. It is impossible for Morris to commit suicide out of fear of punishments!

“Alright. I understand now.” Levi hung up the phone. Then he contacted Azure Dragon to investigate the matter immediately.

Azure Dragon reported back to him after a few seconds: Morris Atkinson swore to protect Levi Group with his life. But the Garrison family set him up and forced him to jump off a building. The media falsified the news of Morris Atkinson’s embezzlement of company funds to engage in secret affairs. News reported him to have committed suicide out of fear of facing punishment.

“The Garrison family!” Levi punched a hole through the wall in anger. “I’ve misunderstood you, my brother!” Levi muttered to himself guiltily.

Zoey sensed Levi’s abnormal demeanor when he arrived home that night. She asked. “What happened to you?”

“Do you know about Morris’ death?”

Zoey was stunned. “I thought you knew all along.”

Levi elaborated. “I was only made aware of it earlier tonight.”

“Please do not act impulsively. Just let go of the past!” Zoey was afraid Levi would seek revenge against the Garrison family.

“He was my best friend! He’s dead because of me. How can you expect me to let go of this so easily? I will never forgive the Garrison family!” Levi said menacingly.

Zoey consoled him right away. “You need to calm down. Our business is still developing. We do not have the power to confront the Garrison family at the moment.”

Levi responded in an tone. “The one-month period I gave them will be up in another week. I will have them pay the price for what they did to Morris at his grave by that time!”

The Protector Chapter 65

The next day.

Azure Dragon accompanied Levi to Morris Atkinson’s grave.

Morris was not buried in a proper cemetery because of the Garrison family’s interference. He was simply buried in a secluded spot in the wild. Weeds had since covered his long-unattended grave.

Perhaps this grave will no longer be distinguishable after a few more years. “I am here to see you, my brother!” Levi said loudly. You were my first comrade-in-arms to weather the battlefield-like business world. No one will ever comprehend the bond we shared.

Levi cleared the weeds on Morris’ grave with his own hands and fixed his gravestone.

Levi took a limited-edition bottle of wine available only in the army and sat in front of his grave.

“Let’s share this quality wine today, my brother.” Levi gulped the content after he spoke.

“Azure Dragon, inform everyone in the Garrison family to pay the price for their terrible deeds here after six days.” Levi commanded.

“Understood, Sir.” Azure Dragon nodded.

“Kirin, ask Nueve to bring a few men here to fix up this grave. I cannot allow my brother’s grave to be in such a shabby condition!” Levi told Kirin.

Then he continued to drink the bottle of wine while taking a stroll down memory lane. I made a promise to Morris that I would provide him with the most luxurious Rolls-Royce during his wedding.

Levi stayed at Morris’ grave for almost an entire day.

“Let’s go and visit Morris’ parents.” Levi straightened himself.

“I’ve located his parents, Sir. They are staying in a village not far away from the city.” Azure Dragon reported.

Levi grimaced. “What? Morris’ parents worked as governmental staff in the past. They own a house in the city. So why are they staying in a village now?”

Azure Dragon hesitated briefly before he continued. “The Garrison family is behind this. They revoked his parents’ ownership of the house and their pension. So they had no other choice but to move to the village and are now barely surviving.”

Levi’s expression darkened. The Garrison family drove Morris’ parents to the brink of desperation! They would’ve been dead if not for their old age. I must destroy that wretched family!

“Let’s go! I want to visit them. I think of them as my own parents now. Anyone who dares to lay a finger on them will face certain death!” Azure Dragon and Kirin trembled fearfully as they listened to Levi’s unforgiving words. It’s been a very long time since he was so mad. I remember the last time was when he single-handedly faced the strongest battalion from those eighteen countries.

Nueve led a group of men to the spot and refurbished the grave shortly after the trio left.

Trey and all the other mafia bosses from different gangs followed Nueve. They brought no lesser than three hundred men with them. After all, it is our obligation to fulfil the task Mr. Levi gave us.

The village was not far away from North Hampton but was significantly more rural compared to the city.

The people staying in that lawless area all came from complicated backgrounds.

Homeless people and provocatively-dressed women filled the dirty alleyways.

Levi felt a heart-wrenching pain as he took in the surroundings. How can Morris' parents live in such a place?

He finally found Morris' parents abode in a small building with a total of thirty square meters located deep in an alleyway.

"Cough up the money now, you old fools! You're the only family left who haven't pay the fee!" Levi and the others heard the commotion from afar.

They realized what was happening after they entered the courtyard.

A few thugs with blonde hair were collecting protection fees from Morris' parents.

The two of them had visibly aged from when Levi last saw them six years ago. It was obvious they had suffered greatly.

"Please give us a little more time. We will receive our subsistence allowance soon. I will make sure to pay you first by that time!" Morris' father, Rowen Atkinson, was begging for mercy.

"Damn you! You told me the same thing last time." The leader of the gang raised his hand to slap Mr. Atkinson.

The Protector Chapter 66

His hand was stopped in mid-air as Levi caught his wrist firmly.

"Who the hell are you? Let go of me right away!" The leader of the gang threatened.

Bam!

Levi punched his face forcefully. His head snapped back and blood spurted everywhere.

The thug yelped in pain.

Kirin and Azure Dragon handled the rest of the thugs.

All of them scrambled away from the scene on all fours.

The leader of the gang yelled before he fled. "Damn you, old man! How dare you call for backup. I will summon Tiger here. Just you wait!"

They then left instantly.

Mr. Atkinson and his wife closed their eyes hopelessly.

Tiger was the boss in charge of the village. He had no lesser than fifty thugs working for him. And he had the guts to do as he pleased around the area.

Tiger and his subordinates maintained a living by collecting protection fees from the villagers. Anyone who did not submit the fees or was late to hand in the money would get beaten up or even crippled at times.

Tiger was a cruel man who had his share of living behind bars. His name would invoke fear in all of the villagers.

"Thank you, young man. You should leave while you can." Rowen said.

"Uncle, Aunt, it's me! Levi Garrison!" Levi introduced himself passionately.

"Levi? Is it really you? This is great. It's so good to see you after so long!" Rowen and his wife were on the verge of tears. Our dearest son, our only hope in this world, is gone. Seeing Levi now reminds us of Morris. Oh, Morris!

"Uncle, Aunt, please do not worry from now on. I will take care of you for the rest of your life in Morris' stead. No one will ever dare to lay a finger on both of you!"

Anger surged within Levi when he noticed the bruises on the old couple's necks. Bastards! They did not show any mercy to these elderlies!

Rowen glanced at the ground floor and said in a hurry. "Levi, you should leave immediately. They must have informed Tiger. He will be here soon."

"He's right. Your lives will be in danger once Tiger is here. That man is ruthless. You might even get crippled by him. Leave now while you can, my child!"

Morris' mother nudged Levi for him to run away.

"Uncle, Aunt, what will the both of you do if I leave?" Levi asked.

“Do not worry about us. We will at most suffer a beating. Moreover, our lives aren’t valuable anymore. You should survive and return to clear Morris’ name. Avenge him!” Rowen was tear-stricken as he talked.

Levi comforted them. “Fret not. I am now strong enough to protect the both of you and avenge Morris at the same time.”

“That’s not going to work. You’ve never seen Tiger in action. He even has the courage to murder someone!”

I see. This Tiger has instilled fear in everyone’s mind upon hearing his name. Mr. and Mrs. Atkinson are trembling at the mention of Tiger. That means he must have bullied them frequently. Levi thought to himself.

“Please leave now. We do not want to trouble you with this matter!” Morris’ mother was anxious. She urged them to leave while glancing at the ground floor from time to time.

“Uncle, Aunt. Please calm down. Nothing will happen now that I’m here. I want to meet this Tiger in person as well.” Levi turned to look at Kirin. “Ask Nueve and his men to come here.”

Kirin nodded. “Yes, Sir.”

“Go. Go now! It’s dangerous for you to stay.”

“No, wait. It’s too late now. They’re already here!” Rowen said frightfully.

Over ten men, wielding batons and all kinds of weapons, entered their vision. The scary man leading the group was wearing a singlet. The tattoo of a tiger was clearly visible on his torso. “Who the hell punched my brother? Show yourself this instance!”

The Protector Chapter 67

Tiger roared at the top of his lungs some distance away.

The other residents hurriedly shut their windows in fear. They wanted nothing to do with the mess.

The two elderlies grasped Levi’s arms as they heard Tiger’s voice.

Levi patted them. “There’s nothing to be afraid of.”

Tiger and his men reached the staircase swiftly, where Kirin and Azure Dragon were standing guard.

Tiger's face turned sour when he saw Kirin and Azure Dragon's imposing manner.

He sensed danger from the menacing aura exuding from their bodies.

"Who hit my brother?" He asked.

Tiger was furious because no one had ever dared to defy him in the village. He had always gotten his way each and every time. So it was an unprecedented scenario for his subordinate to be hit by another person. That's the reason why he came to seek revenge in person.

Levi said with a smile. "It was me."

"Aren't you the daredevil? Are you Rowen's relative? How dare you call for help to beat up my subordinate, Rowen Atkinson? I will torture you and your wife to my heart's content!" Tiger threatened the old couple blatantly in front of Levi.

Rowen and his wife were scared out of their wits. They begged for mercy right away. "Please forgive my nephew, Mr. Tiger. I beg of you. I promise there will be no next time."

"I can forgive him if you pay me five hundred thousand for the medical fee. I will call it even if each of them breaks one of their arms." Tiger sneered.

"What? Five hundred thousand?" The couple of elderlies were dumbstruck with terror. "You can't do that! They are still young. So please don't break their arms. Please break our arms instead!" Tears streamed down Rowen's cheeks as he begged Tiger.

"That's not going to work! Your arms are not as worthy as theirs. Hey! Are the three of you deaf? Don't force me to break your arms myself!" Tiger's lips curled upward maliciously.

Vroom! Vroom! Vroom!

The sound of tires screeching reverberated in the alleyway as multiple cars closed in on the area.

The sound attracted Tiger and his men's attention. They turned around to look at the source of the noise.

More than ten vans skidded to a stop.

Countless men rushed out from the vans and dashed into the courtyard.

Click. Click. Click...

The men assembled themselves around the narrow space and surrounded Tiger and his subordinates. The newcomers glared at the thugs with a baton in each of their hands.

“Mr... Mr. Tiger... I’ve counted their numbers. They have around two hundred people here, not counting the other one hundred standing outside.” A thug reported shakily.

“What? three hundred people?” Tiger and the other thugs were astounded.

They scanned the surroundings and discovered a problem. Every one of these men is huge and muscular. I can tell that they are skilled fighters because of the sinister aura they are giving off. These people are on a completely different level compared to us. Each of them can defeat five of us effortlessly.

“What’s going on here?” Tiger was trembling in fear as well.

At that moment, a smaller group of people appeared. Nueve walked in front with three other mafia bosses following closely behind him.

“Lord Nueve? And that’s Trey and two other Mafia bosses from North Hampton?” Tiger recognized the powerful men because he was an experienced thug. I am at most qualified to be Trey’s subordinate, while Nueve is certainly a figure far beyond my reach.

“What brings you here, Lord Nueve?” Tiger greeted him politely with a bow.

But Nueve completely disregarded Tiger. He walked towards the staircase and addressed Levi courteously. “Please give us your orders, Mr. Levi.”

The Protector Chapter 68

“What?” Tiger and his men were caught in disbelief as they witnessed the scene unfolded in front of their eyes. Lord Nueve is so polite towards him. Who is that young man?

Everyone was dumbfounded, including the Atkinsons. They stared at Levi incredulously. I can tell these people are far more capable than Tiger based on his reaction. But even they had to pay respect to Levi.

Levi merely waved his hand. "They bullied my godfather and godmother. I'll let you handle the rest."

He led the old couple into the house after he spoke.

Nueve turned around slowly and smiled at Tiger and his men ominously after he received the instruction. "Beat them up. Show no mercy!"

Tiger and his subordinates almost passed out from hearing Nueve's words.

"Rush them!"

Tiger and his gang members were helpless facing the crowd. The fighters barely warmed up themselves, but Tiger's party was already lying on the ground.

Nueve's men hit their opponents with batons mercilessly.

Tiger received the worst beating. Soon, he was lying in a pool of blood as his body twitched continuously.

His men received a similar fate.

Levi could not care less about the things happening outside the house because he had faith in Nueve's competency in dealing with the men and cleaning up the mess. I am quite sure I will not see a drop of blood on the floor by the time I walk through the door.

"You are so impressive, Levi." Rowen looked at Levi in amazement.

Levi smiled. "Be rest assured, Uncle. I have the capabilities now. I will make the entire Garrison family kneel before Morris' grave six days later to pay the price for their terrible deeds!"

"Huh?" Rowen thought the idea was unthinkable. But he felt a tiny bit of hope after what happened earlier.

"Uncle, Aunt, I hope I can have the honor of referring the both of you as my godparents from now on. We will move out of this place tonight!"

Levi brought the Atkinsons away shortly after.

The courtyard was spotless as Levi expected. Moreover, there wasn't a single trace of the crowd left behind in the courtyard.

Levi arranged for Rowen and his wife to stay in a five star hotel that night. He planned to purchase a new villa for them the next day.

Meanwhile, the Garrison family received Levi's invitation.

Bryan Garrison said mockingly, "Levi has the guts to summon all of us to kneel before Morris Atkinson's grave. He must be dreaming!"

Joseph responded nonchalantly. "Levi does not have a clue about the Garrison family's influence, after all."

"Haha, I can't wait to see the desperate expression on Levi's face six days later!" Ben and Jaycob laughed out loud.

Rick was a meticulous man so he couldn't help but asked. "Bryan, are you absolutely sure Nueve is the man who is supporting Levi?"

Bryan reassured him. "I am certain about that, Uncle. Nueve went to clean up Morris Atkinson's grave today and even visited his parents' house in the village. I also heard Nueve beat up the gang leader, Tiger, who's in charge of that area. So I'm sure Nueve is the person! There's no mistake about this."

Rick nodded. "That's a weight off my chest in that case. But we should proceed with caution nonetheless."

"Don't worry, Rick. I've contacted Jack Smith earlier. He promised to come in person and bring along all his men to support us." Joseph put on a wicked smile. "Levi Garrison, we had our ways of ruining your life six years ago. Now, we will force you to realize how easily we can muck up your life again."

The Protector Chapter 69

The next day.

Levi contacted Chloe, but all he could hear was her mumbling through the speaker as if she was occupied.

"Tell me your location. I'll come find you." Levi said impatiently.

“I’m at North Hampton city center’s Sue’s Western Cuisine Restaurant.”
Chloe informed Levi of her whereabouts.

Levi drove his car towards the aforementioned restaurant immediately.

Meanwhile, in Sue’s Western Cuisine Restaurant.

Chloe sat at a table awkwardly.

A middle-aged couple sat beside her. They were her parents, Theodore Macy and Suzy Shorts.

A young man and another middle-aged couple sat opposite them.

Chloe’s parents had forced her to attend a blind date. She was closing in on her 30s, after all. So it was understandable why her parents are starting to get anxious. The young man seated opposite her was Vernon Tate. He has a net worth of over ten million, and owned five properties across North Hampton.

Vernon Tate was determined to get what he wanted for the blind date today.

Although Chloe was an excellent woman, Vernon was certain that he was still better than her. His parents shared the same sentiment, which explained their relatively arrogant attitude during the meeting.

Theodore Macy and Suzy Shorts were satisfied with Vernon Tate as their potential son-in-law.

“If you do not have any objection, Theodore, let’s allow the young ones to get together.” Vernon’s father, Larry Tate, said.

“Ah? That’s great! Vernon is an outstanding young man. He’s the right man for our daughter.” Chloe’s parents were delighted.

Chloe knew Vernon was a good fit for her in every aspect. But the thought of someone flashed across her mind all of a sudden. She immediately rejected the idea. “No way. I think we still need more time to understand one another.”

“What? How much further do you need to understand one another? You’re sufficiently familiar with each other by now.” Chloe’s rejection did not amuse Larry and Vernon Tate.

“This is moving too fast. We’ve only known each other for less than a month!” Chloe steeled her resolution.

Vernon looked at Chloe surprisingly. “We can always get to know each other better after we start dating. Moreover, I think we are already familiar with one another. We are not getting younger, after all. I believe our relationship is heading towards marriage.”

Theodore, Larry and their wives nodded in agreement. “He’s right.”

At that moment, a figure arrived at the scene.

The man was none other than Levi Garrison.

He grabbed Chloe’s arm and ordered assertively. “Follow me. I need to talk to you about something.”

Everyone was dumbfounded, including Chloe.

She did not expect Levi to be in such a rush to the extent of grabbing her by force.

“Who are you? What are you doing? Let go of her!” Larry Tate was the first to regain his senses.

Theodore and Suzy eyed Levi curiously. “Who is he, Chloe? He looks a little familiar.”

Chloe answered helplessly. “He’s Levi Garrison.”

Chloe’s parents were taken aback. “What? Levi Garrison? No wonder he looks familiar. What is he doing here? Why are you still keeping contact with him?”

“We... we used to be in the same class. It’s only natural we kept in touch.” Chloe explained.

Larry Tate questioned immediately. “What is the meaning of this, Theodore? Did you arrange for Chloe to undergo two blind dates at the same time?”

Levi finally grasped the situation.

Theodore quickly clarified. “That’s not it. He’s her ex-classmate. Moreover, he’s nothing compared to Vernon. Levi is just a poor loser who’s fresh out of prison. He doesn’t even have a job.”

Larry Tate's expression softened significantly upon hearing that. They could not help the exaggerated reaction because they sensed the odd emotions glinted in Chloe's eyes upon Levi's arrival.

The Protector Chapter 70

Vernon Tate breathed a sigh of relief. He sized up Levi mockingly. "So, your friend is jobless, Chloe? I do have a security guard position available in my company. I'll offer him six thousand a month because he's your friend. His physique is perfect for the job. What do you say?"

Levi ignored him. He apologized to Chloe. "I'm sorry to have interrupted your blind date."

Chloe shook her head. "That's alright. Did something happen?"

"I am buying a house for an uncle and aunt of mine. So I came to you." Levi said.

"Oh. I see. I didn't know you have an uncle and aunt looking for a house? Hehe..."

Vernon and Larry sneered. A house? I guess Levi can at most afford the tiniest apartment in this city. Any place over two million will be impossible in his case.

From Theodore and Suzy's perspective, they thought Levi was looking for Chloe because he wanted a special offer. Chloe is a manager, so she has the authority to give out special discounts. There has been plenty of people looking for her to buy a house in the last few years because of this reason alone. Those people can save up to a few hundred thousand at times because of Chloe. Levi must be here for the special offer.

"I understand now. You're not satisfied with just Bayview Garden, I suppose?" Chloe was an experienced sales agent. She figured out Levi's intention after listening to him. He's looking for a villa. Otherwise, he could've directly purchased a house at the Bayview Garden Real Estate Agency.

"Yes." Levi nodded.

"I do have a few properties that might interest you. I'll bring you to our company now." Chloe then turned to look at the people seated around the table. "Uncle Larry, aunt, I'll be back soon. I have to handle this matter now."

Larry got up from his seat and suggested with a smile. "Why don't we accompany you? We can take a look at your workplace as well. What do you say?"

"Let us join you, Chloe." Vernon sounded excited. Then he glanced at Levi tauntingly.

Chloe did not agree to their request immediately. Instead, she turned to look at Levi as a gesture to seek his opinion.

Levi nodded. "Sure. Let's go together."

"Alright. We'll go together then."

Vernon paid for the bill before exiting the restaurant.

He said nonchalantly with the receipt in his hand. "A meal for six people that costs less than five thousand. This is cheap."

Theodore added cheerfully. "You must have luxurious meals even on normal days to consider this as a cheap meal, Vernon."

Vernon glanced at Levi before he replied. "Indeed. I spend at least two thousand for every meal because of my work."

Chloe's parents could not be fonder of Vernon.

Chloe said to Levi when they arrived at the underground parking lot. "I'll fetch you there."

"Okay. No problem. You are more familiar with the destination anyway."

In the end, Chloe fetched her parents and Levi, while Vernon brought his parents as they headed towards their destination.

They were almost at the suburbs after driving continuously for over an hour.

Vernon and his father scoffed. "We're almost at the suburbs now. I'm afraid he's going to buy a house in the village."

Vernon's mother added. "He should consider himself lucky to be able to afford a house."

But half an hour later, Chloe's car came to a halt in front of a villa area.

“Why are we here, Chloe? I thought your friend is going to buy a house?” Vernon asked curiously after getting out of his car.

Chloe looked at him in astonishment. “We are here to buy a villa!”

Silence filled the air following Chloe’s explanation.

The Protector Chapter 71

Everyone was astounded as they looked at Levi and Chloe in disbelief.

“Vi... villa?” Vernon asked with a shaky voice.

“That’s right. If we are talking about a normal house or flat, Bayview Garden will have served the purpose.” Chloe said.

Larry Tate and his son were flabbergasted. Our family can barely afford a house in Bayview Garden, not to mention the villas owned by Bayview Garden Real Estate. These villas cost at least thirty million to over a hundred million. Can Levi Garrison really afford a villa? We don’t believe this.

Even Theodore Macy and his wife were doubtful. We are relatively familiar with Levi Garrison’s current condition. He certainly can’t afford a villa. He’s no longer the billionaire he was 6 years ago.

Just as they were pondering about Levi’s current situation, a group of people rushed out from the villa area.

Chloe’s parents recognized the man leading the group of people.

He was Bayview Garden Real Estate’s boss, Jim Spencer, as well as Chloe’s superior. They met with him once during the annual general meeting.

Jim Spencer walked forward hastily in Levi’s direction and greeted him excitedly. “It’s an honor to meet you, Mr. Garrison. You could’ve informed me before your arrival. It is my duty to welcome you in person.”

“Welcome, Mr. Garrison!” All the staff working under Bayview Garden Real Estate lined up in two neat rows to welcome Levi. They even prepared a red carpet and flower petals to celebrate his advent.

Vernon, Larry, and the others were stupefied. What’s with this grandiose formation?

Theodore and Suzy on the other hand started to see Levi in a different light.

Levi said casually. "There's no need to go through all the trouble. I'm only here to purchase a villa."

Levi's words took Larry and his family by surprise.

Theodore questioned his daughter to confirm the thought in his mind. "Did he buy a house from you previously?"

"Yes. He bought the most expensive unit in Bayview Garden and paid the fifty million in cash. He's now the VVIP of Bayview Garden Real Estate." Chloe explained.

Her parents nearly passed out from the shock. This is crazy. He paid fifty million in cash?

"Please follow me, Mr. Garrison." Jim led Levi into the sales center in person.

The sales center was embellished with champagne and decorations in preparation to celebrate Levi's purchase.

"May I know what kind of villa are you looking for, Mr. Garrison?" Jim asked.

"The most expensive one." Levi answered without any hesitation. I will make it up to Morris by treating his parents well from now on. Buying them the most expensive villa is the least I can do.

Levi's nonchalant request frightened the Tate family members. Even if we combine all of our assets, they are not worth even a hundred million, yet Levi is here casually acquiring a villa worth more than our family's net worth.

Their faces reddened in embarrassment when they thought of the insults they threw in Levi's face earlier. Perhaps we are just some clowns in his eyes, making a fool out of ourselves.

"Please follow me, Mr. Garrison. This is the most expensive villa we have. The price is one hundred and twenty million, but we will provide you with a twenty million discount. The size of this villa is..." Jim began to explain the details of the villa.

"Okay. That's good. I want to move in tonight. Can you handle the rest for me?" Levi asked.

“Absolutely! We will also provide you with three housekeepers, a butler, a van, and a chauffeur.” Jim offered.

In the end, Levi paid for the hundred million villa in full amount using his card while everyone stared at him.

Then Levi pointed at Chloe and said, “She’s my agent. The commission belongs to her.”

“Please be rest assured, Mr. Garrison. I understand what you mean.” Jim smiled.

The Protector Chapter 72

Chloe did not know how she should respond to the turn of events. I can receive at least a fifty million commission from this sale alone. But I did practically nothing.

Chloe’s parents now realized Vernon’s success was actually nothing to be amazed by. Their family’s wealth was insignificant either. “Larry, let’s discuss our children’s matter another day.” Theodore said mercilessly.

“Huh? But...” Larry and his family were left rooted to their spot dumbfoundedly while Chloe and her family left swiftly.

Levi brought the Atkinsons to the new villa in the night. “Please stay here from now on. I will take good care of you in Morris’ stead!”

Levi finally felt at ease after he was done arranging his godparents’ accommodation.

...

Meanwhile, the Garrison family was keeping track of Levi’s movements as usual.

Bryan Garrison sneered. “Levi bought a house for Morris’ parents and even vowed to avenge Morris’ death.”

“Hmph. He’s just a piece of trash. I doubt he will ever find out the truth behind Morris’s death, much less carrying out any revenge.” Victoria responded disdainfully.

“Is the Lopez family aware of this matter? Bryan, I want you to inform them immediately. I want them to be present as well five days later. I want the Lopez family to see with their own eyes as I torment Levi. I can finally avenge Ashton after so long!” Jaycob spoke coldly.

Bryan Garrison’s arrival at the Lopez family scared Harry and the others.

Members of the Lopez family were fearful after they were made aware of the gathering at the cemetery.

Bryan threatened them. “I will wipe out the entire Lopez family if I do not see all of you there five days later.”

“Please be rest assured, Mr. Garrison. We will definitely be there!” Harry Lopez’s legs wobbled.

It was only until Bryan left that Harry unleashed his anger. “Levi is really a curse! Why must he go and offend the Garrison family? Now he’s invited trouble for our family too. I’m going to kill him! Let’s go to Aaron’s house now!”

Harry brought everyone to Aaron’s place. He asked Aaron to summon Zoey and Levi as well.

Levi and Zoey saw a lot of cars parked outside the house when they arrived. They were startled to see the crowd inside the house. Every member of the Lopez family was there.

“You’re a bastard, Levi! You’re the cause of the Lopez family’s demise!” Aaron rebuked Levi the moment he walked through the door. Everyone else started hurling abuse at him too.

Zoey shifted her gaze onto Levi incredulously after she knew about the whole story. She sniffled. “I told you not to provoke the Garrison family. Why did you not listen to me? I know you want to avenge Morris, but have you ever thought about us? Have you ever thought about me?”

“I...” Levi was interrupted the moment he started to speak.

“No! You never thought about anything from my perspective! You always do as you please. Now you’ve completely offended the Garrison family and involved my family in this mess! The Lopez family will cease to exist in North Hampton if the Garrison family is dissatisfied with us. Our lives are all in danger now. Do you want to drive me to my death before you’re contented?” Zoey was tear-stricken.

Levi did not explain. They will not listen to anything I say anyway.

“What should we do now?” Aaron panicked.

“There’s only one way to resolve this...” Harry voiced out. “Zoey must divorce him! Cutting all ties with Levi Garrison is the only way to secure ourselves now.”

The Protector Chapter 73

Samuel and Shaun agreed to the proposal. “That’s right. They must get a divorce! This is the only method to protect our family now!”

Although Aaron and his wife were mistreated by the Lopez family all along, they took their side in that argument.

Aaron said coldly, “Deal with your own mess. Do not trouble us. We agree for the both of you to get a divorce as well.”

Caitlyn nodded in agreement. “That’s right. I thought we would be able to live peacefully. But you had to stir up this mess. You no longer have the right to stay in the Lopez family!”

Everyone firmly requested for Zoey to divorce Levi. They did not want him to stay a second longer in the family.

Levi could not care less about the outsiders’ opinion. He only wanted to know Zoey’s stance.

Levi looked at Zoey and asked her. “What do you think? I will respect your decision.” Levi would not oppose Zoey’s wish if she desired to divorce him.

“To be honest, you’ve disappointed me greatly. You gave up a peaceful life to deliberately provoke the Garrison family. This is no longer a problem revolving around yourself because the Lopez family is now involved as well. The Garrison family can crush our family effortlessly if they wish to.” Zoey expressed her thought harshly.

Harry and the others were satisfied with what Zoey had said. Zoey will divorce Levi if she’s blaming him now. In this way, our family will escape this predicament unscathed.

“Can you please take into consideration others’ points of view before you do anything in the future? To prevent dragging my family into this mess, I have decided...”

Levi shut his eyes as he awaited Zoey’s judgment. It seems like she wants a divorce, after all.

“I will leave the Lopez family and sever all my ties with all of you. I choose to stay by my husband’s side and weather through every hardship together.” Zoey took a step forward and stood next to Levi.

Levi fell into a daze as he processed Zoey’s words in his mind.

He was overjoyed. She is indeed my wife!

Everyone else inside the house was bewildered by Zoey’s announcement.

Aaron and Caitlyn shouted simultaneously. “What do you think you’re doing, Zoey Lopez? You must get a divorce! Divorce him!”

Zoey shook her head. “No. I will not get a divorce. Why would I wait for him for six years if I wanted a divorce? Grandpa, if you desire to cut off all ties with Levi, then please banish me from the family.”

“This...”

Harry was reluctant to make the final call because Zoey was her granddaughter at the end of the day. Moreover, she was handling a large project with high returns at that moment.

“Hurry up and make the official statement, Grandpa. We can safeguard the Lopez family by sacrificing her alone.” Samuel urged. Other members of the family convinced Harry as well.

Aaron and Caitlyn had no other choice but to stand aside and watch on helplessly.

Levi’s voice was heard just as Harry was about to speak. “Do you believe in me? I will settle this matter without causing any trouble to the Lopez family. But I will only do so if you promise not to banish Zoey from the family.”

“No one will believe you. Where did you find the confidence to utter those words?”

“Even Zoey is disappointed in you, not to mention us.”

Levi's statement triggered a wave of dissatisfaction to erupt among the members of the Lopez family.

At that moment, Zoey was doubtful as well. So she did not expect anyone else to have faith in Levi.

Harry Lopez glanced at Levi and Zoey in an unforgiving manner before he announced. "I have decided to banish Zoey Lopez from the Lopez family. From now on, she will have no relationship whatsoever with the Lopez family. I will clarify this situation with the Garrison family and make a public declaration as well. We are no longer related to the both of you from now on. You will have to settle your own mess!"

The Protector Chapter 74

Aaron and Caitlyn looked at Levi disappointingly. They insulted him angrily. "You're just a piece of useless trash! You are not even capable of protecting your own wife! How can you stay indifferent after your wife is banished from her family? How can you call yourself a man?"

Levi merely held Zoey's hand and left.

He glanced at everyone else before exiting the house. "All of you will regret the decision you've made today."

"Hmph! Regret? Impossible!" Everyone sneered.

The news of Zoey's banishment was quickly spread all over North Hampton. Everyone knew Zoey because of Levi, so the news became a sensation in no time.

Bryan Garrison laughed out loud after hearing the news from Harry Lopez himself. "Haha. This is great! Even the Lopez family cut ties with him. Levi is truly all alone now!"

"Hmph! Just you wait, Levi. Nueve will ditch you too. I'll see what you can do by that time."

"Go to hell, Levi! Coincidentally, we can bury you next to your best friend in that cemetery."

Everyone in the Garrison family was pleased. In their opinion, Levi would be doomed after a few days.

Levi said with a smile after they arrived home. "You do believe in me, Zoey."

"No. I don't! I don't think you have the capabilities to settle this matter. But I promised to stay by your side for the rest of our lives during the birthday banquet the other night. So I will tough through everything with you." Zoey explained solemnly.

Levi grinned. I am getting more excited now that the time limit I gave the Garrison family is coming to an end.

That night, Azure Dragon suddenly messaged Levi: I've found out the truth behind Morris Atkinson's death. Someone filmed the entire process before he died.

Levi straightened himself in a jerk when he saw the message. His sudden movements startled Zoey.

"I'm heading out for a while!" Levi left in a hurry.

Azure Dragon was waiting for him in an SUV when Levi reached the Bayview Garden neighbourhood's entrance.

Azure Dragon began explaining after Levi got into the car. "Sir, Mr. Morris managed the company well after your imprisonment six years ago. He made the appropriate arrangements to prevent the Garrison family from taking over Levi Group."

Levi knew well of Morris' abilities. He's a business prodigy. He was adept at manipulating the rules and regulations to his advantage.

"The Garrison family wanted to get rid of Mr. Morris because he interfered with their plans. So they laid a series of traps for him and faked evidence to frame him. Embezzlement was one of their tricks. Mr. Morris' bank account was top up with one billion a day before your wedding. A few houses were suddenly registered under his name as well, with women living in those houses. Those women were the mistresses reported by the news. They faked plenty of evidence to falsify crimes against Mr. Morris. The Garrison family even included charges of corruption against Mr. Rowen."

Levi finally understood that the Garrison family had been planning the scheme for a long time after listening to Azure Dragon's detailed report. They wanted to eliminate me, as well as my most loyal subordinates.

"I've already sent people to look for the four mistresses I mentioned. They are in transit as we speak." Azure Dragon added.

Levi met with his eyes. "Then where are we going now?"

"We are going to Queen Private Investigator Agency. This agency has been active for years. They are skilled in digging dark secrets from the past. They possess a lot of dirty secrets of wealthy people and celebrities in North Hampton. Coincidentally, someone from the agency filmed Mr. Morris' death scene." Azure Dragon elaborated.

"Okay. Let's go and have a look at the evidence at Queen Private Investigator Agency."

The Protector Chapter 75

I know the Garrison family orchestrated Morris' death. But I want to know every single detail. The process of how they drove him to jump off the building, everyone involved in the process, as well as every turn of events. I must be informed clearly of all these elements!

Queen Private Investigator Agency was unexpectedly located in a luxurious manor.

Levi would not have believed that place to be a private investigator agency if he wasn't made aware of it in the first place.

Once they reached the entrance, the security guards requested them to get out of the car and undergo a thorough security check before they could enter the manor.

Azure Dragon whispered. "Sir, I did not reveal our identities."

Levi nodded. "Okay."

Levi seized the opportunity to size up his surroundings. This alloy door is custom-made. I think it's bulletproof. These guards are clearly seasoned men. They are unusually calm and collected. I can even sense their menacing aura. Perhaps they are veterans from the battlefield.

The guards searched their bodies while wearing a pair of white gloves.

They allowed Levi and Azure Dragon to enter only after an exhaustive search.

A designated guide led them through a special tunnel after they entered the manor.

Both of them arrived at a meeting room after some time.

A middle-aged man with neatly combed hair sat on a leather sofa. He held a glass of red wine in his left hand and a cigar in his right.

Behind him stood six men clad in suits. Their demeanor and presence revealed their competency in combat. Nueve's men were incomparable to these professional bodyguards. Moreover, they were evidently mercenaries judging from their varied skin complexion.

"Sir, he is the boss of Queen Private Investigator Agency, Francis Hicks, also known as Mr. Secrets. A lot of wealthy people and celebrities fear him the most." Azure Dragon explained.

Francis puffed on his cigar. "Levi Garrison? You're finally released from prison. It is quite a feat for you to be acquainted with Nueve."

Levi and Azure Dragon merely stared at him. I guess he is not just an Average Joe to be able to obtain that information. But of course, I revealed that piece of information myself. My database is highly confidential and classified. There is only one person in Erudia who has the right to access my database.

Levi smiled. "I assume you are aware of my intention here?"

"Of course! You want the video of Morris Atkinson's death." Francis returned the smile.

"What is your condition then?" Levi asked.

"Wonderful! I like dealing with straightforward people like you!" Francis placed down his wine glass and raised his hand. "Five hundred million, and the video is yours."

Azure Dragon gasped. It seems to me this Mr. Secrets is a greedy man.

"Five hundred million? That's a little expensive." Levi replied nonchalantly.

"Ah, you should know that I risked my precious life to take that video! We are talking about the powerful Garrison family, after all. They can easily annihilate me at any time. This video affects too many parties, aside from the Garrison family. A lot of influential forces will be hunting me if I hand this video to you. So five hundred million is a fair amount." Francis complained.

What he did not know was that he had revealed a piece of information unwittingly. There are other parties involved in Morris' death aside from the Garrison family. Levi leaned closer while maintaining eye contact with Francis. "Aren't you afraid I will seek revenge against you?"

Tap, tap, tap...

The bodyguards behind Francis moved in at once as they glared at Levi.

I can cripple Levi Garrison with a single command if I want. Francis puffed on his cigar again and sneered. "I know Nueve's power is almost comparable to Jack Jr., but he is just a mere thug at the end of the day. I do not take him seriously, much less you!"

Francis was a confident man. He could not care less about Nueve.

The Protector Chapter 76

"Haha. You are absolutely right. Nueve is nothing compared to you." Levi said honestly. Francis Hicks's imposing manner alone is superior to Nueve's.

Levi sat on the sofa and poured himself a glass of wine as well. He took a sip and said, "I can tell you firmly, Mr. Secrets. Five hundred million is not possible. But we can negotiate the price..."

Francis glanced at Levi. "I am a decisive person. Offer me a price then!"

Levi did not say a word. He raised his hand as well.

Francis was unsettled by that sight. "Are you kidding me? Fifty million? That's not possible! I can consider if you offer me four hundred million!"

Levi grinned. "You're mistaken, Mr. Secrets. It's not fifty million."

Francis stood up angrily. "Five million? You're outrageous, Levi Garrison! Let me be frank. I do not care about Nueve. You will face the consequences if you infuriate me!"

Levi patted Francis's shoulder. "Calm down, Mr. Secrets. I am a sensible person. So how would I offer you five million?"

Francis's expression softened visibly. He assumed Levi was making a joke earlier. But Levi's subsequent clarification shocked him to his core.

“I’m offering you five.”

The atmosphere inside the meeting room reached its boiling point afterward.

Bam!

Francis slammed the table and yelled at Levi furiously. “Are you f***ing kidding me? I’ll kill you!”

Crack crack crack...

The six bodyguards behind Francis Hicks drew their bayonets in just a split second.

Tap tap tap...

At the same time, the door to the meeting room swung open. Over thirty men rushed into the room. A total of forty men surrounded Levi and Azure Dragon, leaving them with no room to escape.

Every one of these bodyguards is highly skilled and proficient in combat. Francis looked at Levi mockingly. “Have you never heard of me from Nueve? No one in the entire North Hampton has the guts to lay a finger on me. Even the most powerful Mafia boss, Jack Smith, has to pay respect to me! So how dare a nobody like you dares to make fun of me? You must be tired of living!” Francis was burning with rage.

Levi was unfazed. “I am not making fun of you. I am sincere in doing business with you. five is more than enough to pay for the video.”

Francis Hicks and his bodyguards were engulfed by wrath after listening to Levi’s words. He wants to buy the invaluable video with only five? Is he dreaming?

Francis asked Levi. “Are you serious?”

“I’ve never been more serious my entire life. I’ll pay you five for the video.” Levi nodded.

“Then I should be serious as well! You can either buy that video from me for five hundred million or let me chop off your arms. Make the decision yourself!” Francis panted heavily in anger.

However, both Levi and Azure Dragon burst with laughter after listening to his threat.

Francis and his bodyguards were dumbfounded by their reaction.

“Do you really think you can leave this place unscathed?” Francis put on a wicked smile. “Do you know how I established my influence in this city? These bodyguards are the pillars of my success! Let me be honest with you. They are all mercenaries and veterans from the battlefield. All of them participated in wars and killed over ten people. Their combat abilities far exceed Nueve’s men. No one dares to harm me because of them. Not even Jack Smith himself!”

The Protector Chapter 77

“I’ve spent millions to nurture each of these bodyguards and spend over ten million on them every year.” Francis roared in Levi’s direction. “Who are you to compete with me? Do you think you can fight against me with Nueve’s support? What a joke!”

Based on Azure Dragon’s investigation, Francis Hicks is telling the truth. No one in North Hampton dares to lay a finger on him, despite being just an owner of a private investigator agency. His bodyguards do overpower the underworld forces in this city. “Are you done blabbering?” Levi asked casually.

“Get them!” Francis commanded in rage.

But at that moment, they saw Azure Dragon slowly removing his clothes beside Levi.

Thunk!

Everyone was stunned after Azure Dragon removed his singlet.

What they saw was a staggering amount of horrible scars covering every inch of his skin.

The bodyguards were war veterans. So they were aware of the cause of the scars. Most are bullet wounds. Some are scars left behind from flying shrapnel and the corroded areas of the skin are caused by chemical weapons...

Even people who experienced the battlefield like them could not imagine a person sustaining so many injuries that left so many scars on their bodies.

These wounds are only present on those godlike beings on warzones. They must have participated in thousands of wars to accumulate those scars.

The bodyguards were certain that Azure Dragon was a soldier as well. A legendary soldier nonetheless!

Francis was caught in perplexity when he noticed the terrified expressions on his bodyguards' faces. But he yelled at the same time. "What are you doing? Are you afraid? You're frightened by the sight of a few scars? Take him down, and I will reward the person who did it with a million!"

Finally, one of the bodyguards rushed forward with his bayonet after the order was given.

Bam!

Azure Dragon kicked that bodyguard and sent him flying backward. He crashed against the wall and remained on the ground with his body twitching.

"Gang up on him!"

All of the bodyguards closed in on Azure Dragon simultaneously.

Thump thump thump...

"Ugh..."

Wails of pain reverberated inside the room. A few moments later, only Azure Dragon and Francis remained standing inside the meeting room while Levi sat unmoving on the couch.

All forty bodyguards were lying on the ground, covered in their own blood. The scene was a grotesque sight to behold.

Francis was petrified. He scanned his surroundings in utter disbelief.

"The King of War from the Five Great Wars Regiment of Erudia, Azure Dragon..."

"And the God of War of Erudia..."

The mercenaries lying on the ground finally recognized Levi and Azure Dragon since they once crossed paths with each other on the battlefield.

The God of War's legendary achievements was spread throughout all warzones and battlefields for an extended period of time.

The mercenaries worshipped Levi as their God whenever they go to war. Placing faith in the God of War provides us with hope!

Now, the bodyguards were kneeling before Levi, worshipping him after recognizing him for who he was. "God... God of War... the legendary God of War..."

Mr. Secrets profession was to collect intelligence and exclusive information. So he knew about the God of War's arrival in North Hampton. Francis was even in the know of many details compared to others.

He grasped the situation immediately after listening to his bodyguards. They are the God of War and Azure Dragon in person!

"Can we discuss the price now?" Levi swirled the wine in his glass around.

Thump!

Francis groveled at Levi's feet and begged for mercy frantically. "It's my fault for failing to recognize the almighty God of War. Please spare my life! I beg you..."

Thump thump thump...

Francis slammed his forehead against the floor continuously to express his sincerity.

The Protector Chapter 78

Levi scoffed. "What do I need your life for? I only need the video!"

"I will give you the video, Sir! I will give you anything you want!" Francis was scared out of his wits.

"I'll pay you five as promised." Levi said.

Azure Dragon took out the money from his pocket and tossed it in Francis's face.

"You don't have to pay me, Sir..." Francis forced a hideous smile.

“Just take it...” Levi raised his tone.

Francis kept the five in his pocket obediently and swiftly handed the USB containing the video to Levi.

“Play it.”

Francis hurriedly played the video on the screen after receiving the order.

Soon, a footage was shown on the screen. The background was the rooftop of Levi Group’s building.

A lot of people were there, and they were divided into 3 parties.

Morris Atkinson was by himself. The other party was the Garrison family. Namely Bryan, Victoria, Ashton, Lionel, and Tammy. While the last party consists of a few youngsters, including Philip Hardy, Kit Page, Misty Dennis, and Holly Nelson.

Those youngsters were Morris’ close friends. Holly Nelson was Morris’ love interest as he had been pursuing her.

In the past, Holly promised to become Morris’ girlfriend officially after Levi’s wedding. He was his groomsman while she was Zoey’s bridesmaid.

The rest of the video was easy to comprehend.

The Garrison family threatened Morris to jump off the building. Otherwise, they would kill Holly and the others. They also mentioned about harming Mr. and Mrs. Atkinsons.

Morris had no other choice but to fulfill their wish in order to protect his parents, lover, and friends.

But Holly and the three other people smiled cheerfully after Morris leaped off the rooftop.

I see. So they conspired with the Garrison family since the very beginning to force Morris to jump off the building. The Garrison family easily took control of Levi Group once Morris was gone. Levi grimaced after he finished the video. The temperature inside the room seemed to have dropped below freezing point.

Francis could not help but shudder. This man in front of me is too scary. His wrath will bring countless deaths...

“Let me explain to you, Sir... Holly Nelson and the others joined forces with the Garrison family to set Mr. Morris up. After his death, Holly Nelson received benefits from the Garrison family. She is now the president of Star Entertainment.

Mr. Morris' close friends received promotions as well. They now managed a company of their own, respectively. They are responsible for Mr. Morris' defamation and they are the ones that leaked the falsified information about him to the public.” Francis offered.

Crack-

Francis stared in horror as Levi crushed the wine glass in his hands as it shattered into pieces. “All of them must die!” The words slipped through Levi's gritted teeth.

Francis's legs wobbled. He fell onto the ground on his knees.

“Let's go. We are visiting Holly Nelson tomorrow!” Levi ordered. Then he exited the place with Azure Dragon.

Francis knelt on the floor for a long time even after the both of them had left. His body was drenched in cold sweat. I agreed to Jack Smith's request when he contacted me 2 days ago.

He wanted me to tag along to Morris Atkinson's grave to intimidate Nueve and Levi Garrison. I will not accept that request now, even if I have a thousand lives to spare.

Levi Garrison is the legendary God of War! Now I understand why the only piece of information I could obtain about Levi Garrison during his imprisonment was that he went to the same prison as Nueve. That's because he left the prison a long time ago. His profile is now classified and protected by the army!

The Protector Chapter 79

Levi and Azure Dragon arrived at a manor afterward. It was the place Azure Dragon and the others were staying in.

“The four women are all here, Sir.” Azure Dragon whispered.

“Alright. Bring them in.” Levi ordered.

He scanned through the women’s profile on the couch. These women are executives in large corporations nominally. But they are, in fact, professional mistresses. Their profession requires them to seduce influential and highly-ranked figures and become their mistresses.

Once they’ve successfully established that status, they will deliberately leave pieces of evidence to spread the news of their infidelity and indirectly ruin these influential figures’ reputations. Morris’ case is a perfect example.

All of them tried to get close to him before his death. They purposefully allowed the paparazzi to capture photos of them together. After the fake news was released, the pictures of them entering hotels as a couple became solid evidence to back their identity as Morris’ mistresses. This is their job description, and they are usually paid handsomely after completing their tasks.

The four women entered the room after a short while.

Their appearance, demeanor, and temperament were completely different from the girls in nightclubs. They gave off an aura of that of a woman with professional career.

All of them eyed Levi arrogantly.

Levi compared their faces according to their profiles in his hand. “Nicole, Gina, Tasha, and Sasha.”

“Who are you? Why did you bring us here?” Nicole and the others glared at Levi.

“Perhaps all of you can no longer recognize me. Let me introduce myself. I am Levi Garrison.”

“What? Levi Garrison?” All four women’s faces fell when they heard that.

“Don’t be nervous. I am only here to clarify something with you. What happened to my best friend, Morris Atkinson, six years ago...”

They were startled as Levi raised his tone on purpose.

“I will let all of you leave unharmed if you confess the truth.” Levi stared at them.

Nicole and the other girls exchanged glances before they responded. "What? Everything about him was reported in the news, and that was the truth! He brought that on himself. What do we have to do with that matter? Let us go immediately. Otherwise, you will face the repercussions."

Levi smiled. "But your professions are clearly stated here on your profile. See?"

"You're slandering us! We did not do that! Morris Atkinson lied to us. Moreover, what's wrong with us staying with him if he's single? That useless piece of shit brought that on himself! We've got nothing to do with his death."

"That's right. Let us go now. Otherwise, you will receive a similar fate, Levi Garrison!" Nicole and the others threatened him. They were not afraid of Levi because they had someone supporting them.

"So, you're not confessing?" Levi asked.

"We're not telling you anything. There's nothing to tell anyway." Nicole said in a pompous manner.

Tap...

Levi did not speak further. He placed a gun and a few bullets on the tabletop.

All the colors drained from all four women's faces simultaneously.

"Do bear in mind that I have limited patience." Levi stared at them coldly.

Nicole crossed her arms in front of her chest and sneered. "You're not scaring anyone now. What are you going to do? Kill us?" We have a powerful figure backing us. Does he think we are some immature young girls? We know he's just trying to intimidate us. So there's no reason to be afraid at all.

Levi kept quiet. He disassembled a bullet and poured the gunpowder on the tabletop. Then he lit the gun powder with a match.

Whoosh!

Burning flame erupted as the heat washed over the women.

"Argh!" They stepped backward startingly because they were afraid of getting burned.

The Protector Chapter 80

Azure Dragon grabbed Nicole's arm and brought her forcefully to where Levi was.

Levi disassembled another bullet and poured the gun powder on Nicole's face.

Nicole was already struggling with all her might trying to free herself, but her effort was for naught.

The other girls were trembling in fear because they sensed the dreadful atmosphere.

Click!

Levi lit another match and brought the flame close to Nicole's face.

Levi's slightest mistake could cause a reaction between the fire and gun powder, leading to the disfigurement of Nicole's delicate face.

"No! Please don't! I'll speak. I'll tell you everything!" Nicole yelled hysterically as she stared unblinkingly at the flame.

Thump!

Nicole slumped onto the floor after Azure Dragon loosened his grip.

"What about the rest of you?" Levi looked at the other girls.

Thump!

They knelt before Levi one after the other. "We'll tell you everything. Rick Garrison came to us and orchestrated all these to happen. He registered the houses under Mr. Morris' name too. We are telling the truth. We even have evidence to back our words! They're all in our cellphones..."

All four of them were intelligent women. They knew they had to keep the evidence to protect themselves.

All the pieces of evidence were sufficient to prove Rick Garrison was the mastermind behind the falsifications.

“Ah, I see. So it is him!” I’ve always thought of him as the most righteous person in the Garrison family. He wears glasses, gives off a gentleman vibe, and even graduated from a prestigious university abroad. Moreover, Rick Garrison was the only one who treated me well in the family previously. Perhaps he’s the evilest and most cunning among all of them. Rick Garrison might be the family’s strategist judging from this scheme he pulled off. He must’ve planned this for a long time to overthrow me six years ago.

“Hahaha... I see now... Let them go.”

Nicole and the others were frightened when they saw a few soldiers walking around on their way out. They began to feel curious about Levi’s identity.

“I’ve finally understood everything related to Morris’ death. Very well! I will see for myself how carefree your current life is, Holly Nelson!” Levi curled his lips menacingly.

The next day, Levi went to Star Entertainment early in the morning.

He saw Holly’s posters all over the building’s lobby. She appeared to be radiant and dignified in the pictures.

“She was only an insignificant model in the past. She managed to achieve her success today because of Morris. Ha...” Levi sneered while examining the poster.

Azure Dragon whispered beside him. “I’ve made an appointment with Holly Nelson in advance, Sir. It’ll be our turn to meet with her soon.”

“Okay.”

A receptionist walked up to them after a short while. “Mr. Dragon, please follow me...”

The President’s office was located on the 36th floor.

A few security guards stood near the entrance. They allowed Levi and Azure Dragon to enter only after a thorough security check.

Holly was working inside the office.

She did not spare a glance at the visitors even after she heard movements at the door. “Please wait for a moment, Mr. Dragon. I’ll be there with you very soon!”

Levi voiced out at that moment. "Aren't you doing well, Holly Nelson?"

"Hm?" Holly felt the voice sounded familiar. She slowly looked up and exclaimed when she saw the visitor in her office. "Levi Garrison?"

The Protector Chapter 81

Holly was not afraid of Levi because of her current status. But she was reluctant to meet with Levi because she felt guilty towards Morris.

Levi smiled. "That's me. Why are you so nervous?"

Holly's legs were wobbling. But she put on a tough front. "What are you talking about. I'm not nervous in the slightest."

Levi took a seat on the sofa. "I am here to visit you. You were the bridesmaid for my wedding, after all."

"I am doing well. But we are not really close anyway, so there's no need for us to catch up with one another. Moreover, as you can see, I am busy now. So, you should leave immediately." Holly was quick to chase Levi away.

"Relax. I'm here to talk business." Levi beamed at her.

"What kind of business?" Holly asked curiously.

"It's about a video that I think you'll be interested in!"

Holly rebuked him angrily. "I am not interested in any video! Leave now!"

"Perhaps you should take a look at the video before you say that." Levi suggested.

Holly moved closer to him. "What video is that?"

Levi showed her the video of Morris' death.

Holly's face turned paper white instantaneously. She gasped after watching the video. "Where... where did you get the footage?"

"You don't have to know about that. I am here to talk business with you." Levi kept the smile on his face.

"That's impossible. That video is fake! Why would I harm Morris Atkinson? He was the one who cheated on me in the past!" Holly retorted.

Levi got up from the couch. "Well fine, I should leave then."

“Wait. Tell me what you want.” Holly said. “Alright. I’ll admit. I did harm him, but what about it? You’re not much better than me. You know about the truth, yet you decided to blackmail me instead of avenging your best friend. You are also a scum! What happened to you? Did the harsh reality teach you a lesson? Is that why you’re blackmailing me? To maximize the benefit you can get from me?”

Holly was under the impression that Levi was desperate because he was recently released from prison. So he needed to blackmail her for a living. Little did she know, Levi was merely toying with her.

“I’ll offer you a price. One billion!” Levi smirked.

“What? One billion? Are you crazy? Why don’t you go blackmail the Garrison family instead?” Holly was infuriated.

Levi smiled. “The Garrison family will have the ability to resolve this issue if I leak this video to the public. But what about you?”

“I...” Holly panicked. “But one billion is too much to ask from me. I cannot agree to that.”

Levi offered Holly a piece of his mind. “There are four of you inside the video and you’re telling me one billion is too much to ask for? I’ll give you one day to collect the money. I will release this video to the public if I do not see the money by tomorrow morning. I shall take my leave then.”

Levi got up and left the office with Azure Dragon.

Thump!

Holly collapsed onto the sofa in despair. It’s impossible for me to collect one billion even with my status as Star Entertainment’s president. Frankly speaking, it is already a difficult task for me to gather two hundred and fifty million even if we distribute the amount evenly among the four of us. “This isn’t going to work. I have to discuss with all of them!”

Holly dialed a few numbers swiftly after. The numbers belonged to the few people who stood beside her in the video, Philip, Kit, and Misty.

The three of them were acquainted with Morris through Holly. They became his closest friends, second only to Levi Garrison. But they betrayed him in the end.

The trio arrived at Holly’s office before long.

They were presidents in their respective companies now, with high net worth. Holly described everything that happened inside the office earlier to them.

The Protector Chapter 82

“What? A video? There’s really a video?” Misty was doubtful.

Holly nodded. “Yes. I’ve checked repeatedly. The video is real.”

“Does that mean our crimes will be exposed once the video is released to the public?” Philip asked grimly.

Kit nodded. “You’re right. Everyone will know about the Garrison family’s involvement as well. They will definitely sacrifice us by that time. I believe all of us are quite familiar with Rick Garrison’s tactics.”

Misty was on the verge of tears. “Then what should we do now?”

Holly said helplessly. “That’s the reason why I asked all of you here. We need to come up with a plan together.”

“Is there any other choice? We can only pay the one billion to purchase the video. Otherwise, we will have to face our demises.” Philip said.

“Yeah. What else can we do?” Kit was dejected.

“Guys, we are talking about one billion here. Each of us will have to cough up two hundred and fifty million. Are all of you willing to part with that sum of money?” Misty reminded them.

“Do we have any other choice even if we’re unwilling?” Philip retorted.

Bloodlust glinted in Holly’s eyes. “There is one other way...”

“What?” Everyone looked at her simultaneously.

“We will meet up with Levi Garrison and murder him on the spot!” Holly showed her ruthless nature.

The rest of the group exchanged glances and nodded. "You're right. This problem can be solved with Levi's death. I'll spend a million to hire a few hitmen. There's no need to waste a billion because of this."

Holly nodded. "Alright. it's settled then."

"I will contact the hitmen since I have some connections." Philip volunteered.

"Misty and I will pay for the fee." Kit offered.

"Then I will contact Levi and arrange the venue." Holly said menacingly.

Holly wasn't anxious to contact Levi after they were done with the arrangements.

She waited until 11 o'clock in the night before she dialed Levi's number.

"I've prepared the money, Mr. Garrison. Let's meet at Lufthansa Club at 12 o'clock. Remember to bring along the original video." Holly said.

Levi agreed. "Alright. See you then."

At that moment, Holly and the others were already there at Lufthansa Club.

Philip was the club owner, so they chose that venue to facilitate the execution of their plan.

"I've hired five professional hitmen for one million each." Philip said.

"Okay. All we have to do now is wait for Levi's arrival." Holly was a little nervous. But she was more excited to murder Levi.

Levi and Azure Dragon reached the club a few minutes before midnight.

Holly welcomed them at the entrance. Then they entered a private room.

Levi asked after he took a seat. "Where's the money? How are you going to pay me?"

At that moment, Holly and the gang revealed a menacing smile on their faces.

"Do you think you deserve the money, Levi Garrison? You will not be able to spend the money anyway!" Philip shrieked angrily.

“That’s right. You’re really a fool, Levi. You came here just because we asked you to.” Kit laughed in a sinister manner.

Levi looked at Holly. “What’s the meaning of this?”

“Hand over the original video now, Levi Garrison! I can consider sparing your life if you comply.” Holly demanded.

Bam!

Five professional hitmen entered the private room.

“There’s no use for you to struggle. They are all trained hitmen. You will never escape this place!” Philip threatened Levi.

“Give us the video immediately. Or else, we’ll kill you!” Everyone urged.

The Protector Chapter 83

Levi smirked. “Regretfully, I did not bring the video with me. But I arranged for someone to send it over. I think he will be here soon.”

“What? You did not bring the video with you?” Holly and her friends were enraged.

“Kill him!” Philip ordered.

But Holly stopped them. “Wait! Let’s obtain the video first before we decide on doing anything.”

Francis Hicks arrived at Lufthansa Club with the video shortly after.

Holly wanted to snatch the USB containing the video from Francis, but Levi was quicker.

“I can give you the USB, but you must pay me the money.” Levi smiled.

Kit shouted. “You’re still concerned about the money even under this kind of circumstance, Levi?”

“Do you really think we’ve prepared any money for you? Let me be honest then. We will destroy the video today and murder you as well!” Philip and Misty laughed maliciously.

Holly crossed her arms in front of her chest and sized up Levi in a pompous manner. "You are as ignorant as Morris was on the day of his death!"

Levi slowly looked up when he heard Holly's words.

All the colors drained from Holly and the others' faces when they met with his eyes. What's with him? His eyes... They're so scary.

In that moment, they thought they witnessed the gory and gruesome scenes on the battlefield reflected in Levi's eyes. Screams and wails of agony reverberated beside their ears.

They were completely petrified by Levi's frightening gaze.

Click!

Francis snapped his fingers.

Bam!

Crack!

The door to the private room was bust open.

Over a dozen men rushed into the room.

Crackle, crackle...

All five professional hitmen were left lying in a pool of blood before they could even react.

The scariest part was when Holly and the others felt something pressed against the back of their heads.

They broke out in cold sweat as clarity washed over them.

"This..."

Holly and her friends were dumfounded when they saw the muscular men with various skin complexion surrounding them.

"You're all a bunch of dimwits, Holly Nelson. Do you think five professional hitmen are sufficient to kill this man? What a joke!" Francis sneered.

Holly, Kit and Misty turned to look at Philip incredulously.

Philip explained helplessly. "I didn't know they're this weak! I hired them because they worked for the infamous Jack Jr.!"

Jack Jr. was the son of Jack Smith. He shared a similar influence on Nueve in the underworld of North Hampton. Jack Jr. operates a company providing security services, but in actual fact, it was a cover for a hitmen organization.

Philip spent five million to hire the hitmen from him. But he certainly did not expect them to be so useless.

Philip, Kit, and Misty were trembling fearfully. Holly, on the other hand, was relatively calm. She looked at Francis astoundingly. "Who are you?"

"They are here because of me!" Levi said as he walked up to Holly.

Chills traveled down Holly's spine. She asked frightfully. "What... what do you want?"

"I want to let you know the repercussions of committing a betrayal!"

Levi gave a forceful slap across Philip's face causing him to pass out immediately.

At this moment, Holly was losing her mind. Her legs wobbled uncontrollably as she sobbed unwittingly in terror.

The Protector Chapter 84

Thump!

Philip fell onto the floor.

Misty and Kit yelped hysterically.

"I want all three of you to come to Morris' grave and repent three days later. Obey me, and I can consider sparing your lives. Otherwise, you will all end up like him!" Levi patted Holly's cheek. They will have to pay for their sin with their lives. But I want them to repent in front of Morris' grave first.

Levi left with his men afterward, dragging Philip's unconscious body with them.

Holly and the others were rooted to their spots as they shivered continuously.

They never wanted to be caught up in such a dreadful situation again in their lives.

Levi said to Francis after they left Lufthansa Club. "Buy me a coffin."

The next day.

A commotion broke out in front of the Garrison family's manor early in the morning.

The scream startled every member of the Garrison family.

Joseph Garrison hurried to the front door in his pyjamas. "What's going on?" Everyone was puzzled as well.

They were horrified to see the coffin placed in front of the manor's entrance. The striking red color of the coffin was an appalling sight to behold.

The guards of the Garrison family looked at the coffin warily. No one knew what was inside the coffin because none of them had the guts to move closer.

"Who sent this coffin here?" Joseph yelled. Who dares to provoke the Garrison family? Are they trying to court death?

Jaycob said coldly. "This must be Levi's doing, father! He's sending us a warning."

"That's right. It must be him! Who else would have the guts to do this?"

Joseph ordered. "Someone take a look at the coffin. I want to know what's inside."

But no one dared to step forward because they were scared out of their wits. What if it's a bomb?

Bryan Garrison wanted to go, but he hesitated.

At that moment, Rick Garrison, with his gentle appearance, moved closer to the coffin and shoved the cover.

Everyone gasped when they saw the body lying inside the coffin.

“That’s Philip Hardy.” Rick recognized the person immediately.

“What?” Everyone was shocked.

“Levi is quite something to track them down. I’ll have to question Holly Nelson in person now.” Rick said.

Holly, Misty, and Kit arrived at the Garrison family house after a short while. They explained everything and concluded Levi’s ability to the Garrison family.

“He’s a scary man. There were a lot of bodyguards from overseas beside him last night. The professional hitmen we hired were like toddlers when facing them!” Holly recounted the terrifying experience.

“Hmph! That’s nothing to be afraid of. Can he ever outnumber our family’s force?” Bryan and the others were unfazed.

Rick expressed his thoughts calmly. “We should be more careful, nonetheless. I am acquainted with a group of mercenaries from overseas. I will bring them here since we have time to spare.”

Jaycob smiled. “That’s great! Levi will surely face his doom by that time.”

Holly and her friends could finally relax after realizing the Garrison family’s ample preparations. “How dare Levi asked us to repent? He should just go to Hell instead!”

“I can’t wait to see the surprises my son will be showing us two days later.” Ben Garrison and his wife grinned smugly. They were Levi’s adoptive parents, but they had always treated him like a servant.

Bryan and Victoria laughed wickedly. “Oh, how we wish time would go faster!”

The Protector Chapter 85

While he was at home, Levi received a phone call from Zoey, asking him to visit the construction site.

Surprisingly, Levi only saw Nueve’s men working when he arrived.

Zoey’s workers were nowhere to be seen.

Levi walked up to Zoey and asked. “What’s going on?”

“What’s going on? This is all because of you! My workers knew about my banishment from the Lopez family after the media reported the news. They did not want to be dragged into this mess, so they are on strike temporarily. The same thing is happening at Imperial Meadows too. Even my secretary left her job. What should I do now?” Zoey stared into Levi’s eyes.

Levi could understand the workers’ sentiment. The Garrison family is infamous for their cruelty. No one would want to offend them. It is a given they would want to leave because even the Lopez family banished Zoey to save themselves.

Levi scratched his head embarrassingly. “I’m so sorry. I did not consider this outcome.”

“Are you finally aware of the consequences of your recklessness? Why didn’t you listen to me? Were you not satisfied with our current lifestyle? The Garrison family was not troubling you, and I am given the opportunity to handle this huge project. We had a great life, so why did you have to go to such great lengths to destroy it?” Zoey bombarded Levi with volleys of questions.

Levi took a deep breath and answered with a smile. “You’re right. We were living a peaceful life. But what should I do about Morris? Do you think I can be at ease, knowing how my best friend died and choose to do nothing? I, Levi Garrison, am a man of honor. I do not provoke others deliberately, but they crippled me and falsified crimes against me. They put me behind bars and robbed everything away from me. So how can you expect me to stand by and watch them get their way? You should be the person to know me best. I never take anyone’s possession by force, but I will not allow others to step all over me and remain indifferent! Especially when this matter concerns my best friend’s life and my previous glory. I must retrieve the things that were taken away from me at all costs!”

Zoey looked at Levi in disbelief.

She gained revelation at that moment. I’ve always neglected Levi’s feelings. He is shouldering plenty of burdens as well.

Zoey hugged Levi and sobbed in his arms. “I will stay by your side through thick and thin, Levi.” She glanced at the construction site and continued. “I may lose my life anyway in two more days. So why do I have to care so much about all these things?”

Levi was touched by Zoey's unwavering love for him. "Do not worry, Zoey. I will handle this."

"Okay. I believe in you." Zoey said what she had to because she wanted to encourage Levi. But she did not have any faith in Levi because she could not picture his victory against the Garrison family. Anyway, I've steeled my resolution to accompany him to the end, even if we will die together.

The promised day was nearing in a blink of an eye.

The next day would be the day Levi would confront the Garrison family as he vowed.

Zoey prepared a lot of dishes that night and even brought out the best wine they had.

Levi suddenly said after he gulped a few glasses of wine. "Tomorrow will be the day we prosper, Zoey. Should we give your family another chance to join us?"

"You..."

Zoey's first instinct was to rebuke Levi. He's still talking big! But Zoey smiled warmly after she considered the possibility of them dying together the next day. "Really? Will we prosper?" I should do my best to please him in our final moments.

The Protector Chapter 86

Levi thought that Zoey had believed him, so he said immediately, "Of course it is real! From tomorrow onwards, Levi Group will be returned to us. Isn't it a piece of great news?"

He stared at Zoey and said in a serious tone, "Truth be told, I cannot stand every single one from the Lopez family! However, they are your family members after all, so I would like to give them another chance."

"As long as they agree to support us tomorrow, and accept the Garrison family's repentance and apologies, I will support them. After it is over, Levi Group will take them in and boost the status of the Lopez family in North Hampton!"

Zoey felt really vexed listening to Levi's boasting.

It was impossible.

Firstly, the Garrison family would not apologize.

Secondly, Levi was certainly unable to defeat the Garrison family, and would not be able to retake the Levi Group.

However, considering the last day, Zoey did not interrupt him.

“Alright, then please give the Lopez family another chance!”

Zoey smiled slightly.

Levi successfully got through to Harry’s phone.

“Levi, what are you doing? Calling for help? Let me tell you, there is no way!”

Harry’s frustration could be heard from the other end.

Levi laughed, “For the sake of Zoey, I have called you Grandpa! I have decided to give you a chance. As long as you support me and stand by my side tomorrow, I guarantee that the Lopez family will replace the Garrison family!”

“Scram! Are you a lunatic? What is going on in your head?” Harry shouted into the phone.

After that, Levi then made another call to Aaron.

In the end, Aaron gave him a harsh scolding too.

“By the way, I will come and pick Zoey up tomorrow. If you want to court death, then go ahead on your own!”

Beep beep beep...

Aaron hung up the call angrily.

This time round, Levi kept quiet.

The Lopez family is missing out on such a brilliant opportunity!

Zoey laughed.

It is definitely going to end up like this.

Who would believe all these?

Unless he was a fool!

Zoey teased, "It's alright. Rejecting you will be their greatest regret in life! We gave them the chance, but they did not want it!"

"Mmm, indeed. The Lopez family has missed the chance."

Before they slept at night, Azure Dragon called.

"God of War! The commander-in-chief of the First Army of North Hampton just sent a message saying that everything is ready! The 100,000 soldiers are ready to go!"

"Good, listen to my command!" answered Levi.

Levi and Zoey woke up very early the next day.

Then, they drove Zoey's car to Morris' grave.

On the way there, Zoey saw tanks passing by and a line of soldiers marching forward. The sight of it was beyond her imagination.

There was an approximate number of tens of thousands of people.

A long line of tanks had formed with no end in sight.

In addition to helicopters flying around in the sky, there were also bombers flying by at low altitude, making a loud humming sound.

Zoey was astonished. She asked, "Is there going to be a military exercise?"

Levi laughed and said, "I guess so."

"Isn't it such a large scale exercise? I have never seen one with such a scale before!"

Zoey was shocked.

Why are there bombers and cannons here?

Very soon, the both of them had arrived in front of the grave.

Nueve's men had already prepared the grave, while Levi had also erected a tombstone.

Zoey paid her respects to Morris.

Until now, Zoey could not believe that Levi was able to defeat the Garrison family.

Was Levi going to do this alone?

She thought that Levi would find some people to help him out. Seeing that he was going to be on his own, Zoey was extremely disappointed. No, she was in despair.

Secondly, Levi was certainly unable to defeat the Garrison family, and would not be able to retake the Levi Group.

However, considering the last day, Zoey did not interrupt him.

"Alright, then please give the Lopez family another chance!"

Zoey smiled slightly.

Levi successfully got through to Harry's phone.

"Levi, what are you doing? Calling for help? Let me tell you, there is no way!"

Harry's frustration could be heard from the other end.

Levi laughed, "For the sake of Zoey, I have called you Grandpa! I have decided to give you a chance. As long as you support me and stand by my side tomorrow, I guarantee that the Lopez family will replace the Garrison family!"

"Scram! Are you a lunatic? What is going on in your head?" Harry shouted into the phone.

After that, Levi then made another call to Aaron.

In the end, Aaron gave him a harsh scolding too.

“By the way, I will come and pick Zoey up tomorrow. If you want to court death, then go ahead on your own!”

Beep beep beep...

Aaron hung up the call angrily.

This time round, Levi kept quiet.

The Lopez family is missing out on such a brilliant opportunity!

Zoey laughed.

It is definitely going to end up like this.

Who would believe all these?

Unless he was a fool!

Zoey teased, “It’s alright. Rejecting you will be their greatest regret in life! We gave them the chance, but they did not want it!”

“Mmm, indeed. The Lopez family has missed the chance.”

Before they slept at night, Azure Dragon called.

“God of War! The commander-in-chief of the First Army of North Hampton just sent a message saying that everything is ready! The 100,000 soldiers are ready to go!”

“Good, listen to my command!” answered Levi.

Levi and Zoey woke up very early the next day.

Then, they drove Zoey’s car to Morris’ grave.

On the way there, Zoey saw tanks passing by and a line of soldiers marching forward. The sight of it was beyond her imagination.

There was an approximate number of tens of thousands of people.

A long line of tanks had formed with no end in sight.

In addition to helicopters flying around in the sky, there were also bombers flying by at low altitude, making a loud humming sound.

Zoey was astonished. She asked, "Is there going to be a military exercise?"

Levi laughed and said, "I guess so."

"Isn't it such a large scale exercise? I have never seen one with such a scale before!"

Zoey was shocked.

Why are there bombers and cannons here?

Very soon, the both of them had arrived in front of the grave.

Nueve's men had already prepared the grave, while Levi had also erected a tombstone.

Zoey paid her respects to Morris.

Until now, Zoey could not believe that Levi was able to defeat the Garrison family.

Was Levi going to do this alone?

She thought that Levi would find some people to help him out. Seeing that he was going to be on his own, Zoey was extremely disappointed. No, she was in despair.

The Protector Chapter 87

Zoey stopped worrying.

After all, she was originally going to die with Levi.

So what was there to worry so much about?

Shortly after, a Haval sped by.

Aaron and Caitlyn alighted from the car.

Levi had thought that Aaron would stand by his side to show him support.

However, he did not expect Zoey's parents to come and drag Zoey into the car.

Zoey screamed in shock, “Dad, Mom, what are you doing? Why are you pulling me away?”

“You cannot stay here and court death with this useless piece of trash!” Aaron shouted.

“That’s right, you need to come with us! We won’t let you die with him!” Caitlyn held tightly on Zoey.

Zoey finally realized why her parents came.

They wanted to bring her away.

She was starting to feel anxious as she was about to be dragged towards the car.

Zoey struggled and shouted at Levi for help, “Levi, save me! Save me!”

“Dare he? If he dares, then I will make sure both of us perish together!” Aaron stared angrily at Levi.

Levi looked at Zoey coldly, and did not take any other action.

In the end, Zoey struggled to break free but to no avail. Aaron held onto her as Caitlyn drove away.

She looked out of the windows at Levi, who was standing there alone and cried bitterly.

It seemed that they were going to go on their separate ways from that moment onwards.

However, no matter how much Zoey cried, Aaron was not going to give in.

After taking Zoey home, Aaron and Caitlyn made sure that she was taken care of.

It was the Lopez family’s wish to bring Zoey home.

There was no need for her to die with Levi.

As the Lopez family had ended their relationship with Levi, they would not turn up today.

After Zoey left, Azure Dragon, Kirin, Phoenix, Black Tortoise and White Tiger, the Five Great Wars Regiment appeared in black suits.

Azure Dragon had even brought Rowen and his wife over.

“Has Ms. Lopez left already?” Azure Dragon asked.

“It’s good that she left. I do not wish to reveal my identity yet!” Levi said.

Kirin walked over to Levi and said, “God of War, The commander-in-chief of the First Army reported that they are ready and prepared to set off! They are stationed three kilometers away and can reach in ten minutes!”

After hearing what was said, Levi nodded his head. “Mmm, tell them to wait for my command!”

“Understood!”

Kirin nodded his head.

At this moment, Nueve arrived. He did not bring many people with him.

Those who came were big shots, like Trey.

They had donned their suits. Several people stood by after receiving Levi’s orders.

Azure Dragon stood beside Levi and said, “God of War has just received news that the Garrison family is about to set off.”

At the Garrison family’s manor.

Joseph waited for everyone in the Garrison family to suit up and get ready to leave.

Jaycob was growing really impatient and could not wait any longer.

His son, Ashton, was still lying in the hospital. The chances of him waking up were really slim.

He swore that he must definitely tear Levi up into a dozen pieces!

As for Rick, he had always looked gentle. There was a smile on the corner of his mouth, which made him look very mysterious.

Bryan glanced at Victoria and said, "My little brother was crippled six years ago because of me. I also made you crippled this time round! Do you still remember this baseball stick? That's right, it's the one I used six years ago! Hahaha..."

Bryan revealed a cruel smile as he tossed the baseball stick into the car trunk.

Ben and Winnie smiled coldly. "Son! If not for the fact that we took you in, you would have died! Do you actually want to kill us now? This is ridiculous!"

Holly also arrived together with two others.

The Protector Chapter 88

"Quickly! We cannot wait to see Levi embarrassing himself!"

Joseph leaned against the car door and waited with a walking stick in his hands.

"Dad, all of us are prepared! Also, the mercenaries that Third Brother has hired are in their positions!" Ben said.

Joseph nodded his head, "Mmm, the Garrison family alone can get rid of Nueve several times, let alone Jack Smith and the others! This time around, I will get rid of Levi and at the same time, let everyone in North Hampton know how powerful the Garrison family is!"

"Dad, Jack Smith is here."

Rick ran over.

There was indeed a black car parked in front of the Garrison family's manor entrance.

The second car was a Lincoln limousine.

The car door opened, and an old man walked out. He wore a black traditional Chinese jacket, with two legendary pearls in his hand.

He looked like he was well into his twilight years, giving people the impression that he was dying.

However, there was a light in his eyes that one could not simply ignore.

Especially when he lifted his head, there was a powerful presence lingering that made people breathless.

He was North Hampton's leading mafia boss, Mr. Jack Smith.

As the name implied, the King of North Hampton was here.

There were thirteen people following behind Jack Smith.

They were named North Hampton's Invincible-13.

13 powerful experts!

The Invincible-13 used to be like Nueve and were mafia bosses in their own districts, but they were vanquished and came under Jack Smith as his underlings.

Not only that, Jack Jr. was also here.

He was part of the Palm Killer Organization!

Seeing that Jack Smith had arrived, Joseph brought everyone from the Garrison family over to welcome him.

With the Garrison family's current abilities, they did not dare to compete with him!

"Today, we invited Mr. Jack Smith here to help us show our prowess. There is no need to take action. Your presence alone would definitely scare Levi away! He will not dare to do anything to us." Joseph laughed.

Jack Smith did not care. It was already a waste for him to come down today just to make an appearance on behalf of the Garrison family.

He looked at Joseph and asked, "What about the project you were talking about?"

Joseph immediately responded, "Tomorrow! We can proceed tomorrow!"

It turned out that the Garrison family had lured Jack Smith over with a lucrative project so that he was willing to make an appearance.

"Good!" Jack Smith nodded his head.

Another car arrived shortly.

A middle-aged man alighted from the car.

“This is Smiling Buddha, who controls half of North Hampton’s entertainment clubs! He keeps a very low profile, but apart from me, no one else is his opponent in North Hampton!”

Jack Smith introduced the middle-aged, chubby man to the Garrison family. The chubby man laughed. He looked friendly and kind, but he was actually very cruel.

“As for this person, he is Bob, who is engaged in the jade jewelry business. He is well-known in North Hampton, and Nueve has suffered a big loss before thanks to him!”

“And Jimmy Jacuzzi! Good old Jimmy is outstanding. He owns six casinos in Hong Kong, Macau and other places. He is involved in all kinds of businesses!”

Jack Smith introduced everyone.

The Garrison family were in awe of their presence.

All of these impressive figures from North Hampton’s underground world showed up this time!

Levi’s supporter was only Nueve. There was more than a dozen of them here who could compete with Nueve and were even better than him.

All of these people, combined with the Garrison family’s power, would mean that Levi was in hot soup. Levi was unable to beat them, given their mighty forces.

Jack Smith looked at his watch, and said, “It’s time. Let’s set off!”

“Let’s go!”

Immediately, a long line of cars set off toward Morris’ grave.

The Protector Chapter 89

Many people were surprised to see a long line of vehicles.

What is happening in North Hampton?

The Lopez family was shocked to find out what was happening.

“Jack Smith, Smiling Buddha, Bob and the others have all gone there! It is frightening!” Samuel shook in fear.

Harry drew in a breath. “Oh my god! Levi is going to be in deep trouble this time!

“This is really scary! I heard that there are thousands of people involved!”

“It is fortunate that we have broken all ties with him in time. If not, the Lopez family would be involved as well!”

Shaun and the others drew in their breaths fearfully.

Henry laughed. “Levi, you are really naive! What do you have to fight with the Garrison family? They have become so powerful!”

Zoey had received the news that there was a long line of vehicles on the roads in North Hampton.

She was sobbing hard, knowing that there were so many people and vehicles heading in a certain direction.

How is Levi going to manage this on his own?

“You are not allowed to go anywhere! Even if Levi is dead, you cannot go anywhere!”

Aaron and Caitlyn stared fixedly at her.

The Garrison family and Jack Smith’s army proceeded to the grave in a majestic manner.

On the way there, Jack Smith said to Joseph, “Francis Hicks is actually not coming.”

Joseph laughed. “He is a mafia boss who likes to remain hidden, so he probably does not want to participate in such trivial matters.”

Jack Smith laughed too. “That’s right. If not for the project, I won’t turn up either.”

Everyone was waiting in front of Morris' grave.

Rowen and his wife were a bit worried, and could not help but persuade Levi, "Levi, why don't we just forget about this? The Garrison family is too powerful, and we cannot beat them after all!"

Levi smiled and reassured them, "Please rest assured. I will be able to manage the Garrison family!"

Nueve, Trey and the others also laughed. "No matter who they are, they will succumb to us obediently!"

Very soon, there was a sound of explosion.

Everyone saw the impressive line of cars. Luckily, the surrounding area was big and deserted enough to accommodate them.

Rowen and his wife were shocked at the vast number of vehicles. There were at least tens of thousands of them!

Most of them were MPVs and trucks.

The number of people inside these trucks was unimaginable!

The cars in front were luxury limousines.

One of the car doors opened, and Joseph and the others got down slowly.

Everyone from the Garrison family held their heads up arrogantly. They were high-spirited.

Their purpose today was not only to get rid of Levi and Nueve but also to show the Garrison family's powerful connections to the whole of North Hampton!

They had an air of arrogance around them and completely disregarded Levi.

After seeing them alighting from the cars, Nueve, Trey and the others went pale.

"North Hampton's Jack Smith... Jack Jr... Smiling Buddha... Bob... Jimmy..."

They uttered out all their names in astonishment.

In North Hampton, they were the real big shots. As compared to them, Nueve and Trey were mere gangsters.

Any one of them was able to get rid of Nueve and Trey.

“I’ve got no idea what benefits the Garrison family has offered them, but there are so many of these big shots gathered here!”

Nueve drew a sharp breath.

At the sight of Nueve, Trey and the others looking at them in shock, all the members of the Garrison family laughed.

Things were proceeding according to their expectations.

Nueve and the others saw the King of North Hampton like a fearful mouse spotting a cat.

They could not help it!

The Protector Chapter 90

However, they saw Levi standing there like an upright spear. He had an indomitable spirit and looked inspiring.

The Garrison family members looked angry.

“Levi, do you not realize that danger is about to befall you?” Joseph snorted.

Levi laughed and nodded his head when he saw the Garrison family looking at him.

Bryan and Victoria smirked. “Let’s see how you are still able to keep up that smile of yours later.”

“That’s right! Your supporter, Nueve is nothing more than an ant!”

Ben and his wife could not continue watching this.

As for Jack Smith and the other big shots, they were just for show.

The real trump card was of course their underlings.

“Gosh! The Invincible-13 are here! This is the first time!”

When Nueve, Trey and the others saw Jack Smith and the 13 men behind him, they drew in their breaths.

The Invincible-13 was the group of master experts in North Hampton. For most cases, one or two of them were enough to bring things to order. All 13 never appeared together like this before. Now that all of them had shown up, something major was about to happen.

A large group of people followed behind the Invincible-13. There were hundreds of people, all dressed in black, with weapons strapped to their waists.

Jack Smith had revealed his trump card. There was a gathering of 500 thugs!

Not only that, Smiling Buddha, Bob and Jimmy's subordinates also appeared at once. They followed behind the Invincible-13.

There were about a thousand people in total!

With such a massive scale of people present, something was definitely up!

The Garrison family also did not lack resources and men!

They too took out their trump card. They had spent a sum of money to hire a lot of security personnel. So there were about 500 people in total.

Rick was cautious, so he had hired a group of mercenaries. Even though there were just a few dozens of them, they had the necessary weapons with extremely strong combat power.

All in all, there were about 2000 people.

Nueve, Trey and the others felt fear and trepidation in the face of disaster. Their hearts were in their mouths.

There are too many people!

Rowen and his wife were too shocked as they witnessed such a sight.

There were too many people after all.

Seeing the mass of people behind him, Jack Smith commented, "Mr. Garrison, you are making a big fuss! Just 10% of them will do!"

Joseph laughed in embarrassment, "Sorry! I am quite cautious in my dealings because I want to avoid the possibility of making mistakes!"

"Alright, then. Today, I, Jack Smith will give you a bit more power!"

Jack Smith waved his hand. Nearly two thousand people surrounded the cemetery, stood guard and kept watch on all three levels of it. Not even a bird could get in.

They looked like they had the intent to kill as they gripped tightly on the weapons around their waists.

At the sound of a command, they would rush out and slash intruders into pieces.

Jack Smith stepped forward and sneered, "Nueve and others, are you not going to kneel down already?"

"Yeah! You guys do have some guts to think of competing with us with that little bit of capability of yours!"

Bob, Smiling Buddha and the others laughed grimly.

Nueve and Trey were boiling with rage when they saw Jack Smith mocking them. "King of North Hampton, you are right in saying that we have always respected you. But it is impossible for us to do so today!"

"Seems like all of you want to protect Levi with your lives?"

"What benefits have you gained from him, I wonder? All of you are willing to be his slaves!" Jack Smith teased.

Nueve snorted, "Jack Smith, you will never understand who you're facing today!"

"Hahahahaha..."

After hearing what he said, the rest laughed out loud.

"Isn't he just another piece of trash that has been released from prison?"

The Protector Chapter 91

“Hahahahaha...”

Nueve and Trey sneered this time round.

It made Jack Smith feel strange.

“His status and identity are what all of you desire and aim for!” After Nueve said this, everyone began mocking him again.

No one could believe that a person who had just been released from prison would actually be someone so powerful and admirable.

Rick, who was more prudent, digested Nueve’s words properly to figure out what he meant.

It seemed like Levi had a bit of power and status now.

He could be because he had met a benefactor in prison.

But so what?

No matter how brilliant he was, he was of no match to Jack Smith.

Also, he could not deal with so many groups working together.

No matter what, Levi only had one way out and that was death.

Levi waved his hand. Nueve and Trey kept their mouths shut, and stood at a corner obediently.

Levi looked carefully at Jack Smith and the others, then laughed and said, “Jack Smith?”

“Impudent brat! Do you think a b*stard like you have the right to address the King of North Hampton this way?” Joseph shot angrily.

“That’s right, such a piece of trash like you does not even have the right to talk to the King of North Hampton!”

Ben stared furiously at Levi.

Levi curled his lips into a smile. "Joseph, the Garrison family's connections and strength are incredible! You are stronger than I thought!"

The Garrison family was capable to summon such a huge army. It was enough to prove that they were a rich and powerful family in North Hampton.

"Hahaha... Do you now know our strength? Kneel down now, if you want us to spare your life!"

Bryan and Victoria laughed.

Levi faced the bunch of clowns and sneered, "I have given you a whole month to think about this. Haven't you actually considered why I have so much confidence?"

After listening to Levi, the Garrison family was shocked.

Bryan quickly regained his senses and shot back immediately, "Hmph, isn't Nueve the source of your confidence? Do you think we are stupid? We have checked thoroughly. Nueve and you were in prison together and that was where you met him!"

Upon listening to Bryan's words, Levi laughed aloud. "Hahaha... Seems like Ashton is not awake yet. He will tell you everything once he wakes up."

At the mention of Ashton, Jaycob went insane and exclaimed angrily, "I will definitely not let you off today, Levi! You turned my son into a vegetable. I will kill you today!"

Levi could not be bothered with Jaycob's crazy antics. He looked at Rick and said, "My favorite third uncle who treats me the best, have you not given any thought about why and how we have come to this?"

At this moment, Rick's facial expression changed.

He had indeed felt that Levi was not behaving like usual this month.

But he could not pinpoint why or how.

Everything looked reasonable on the surface but it also seemed unreasonable at the same time.

Rick felt that something was amiss after hearing Levi saying such a thing.

Levi was an intelligent man. Didn't he know that even with Nueve's ability and support, he would not be able to shake up the Garrison family?

If so, then why would he want to challenge them?

Even with so many big shots from North Hampton present, why did that not affect Levi?

That meant that he had enough resources and strength to counter the Garrison family!

He swept his gaze past Levi, and caught sight of the five men behind him. Azure Dragon was amongst them.

Rick felt that the five of them looked very unusual. They seemed to possess special powers and had a unique aura!

What was more, they looked indifferent, as if the presence of two thousand people did not matter at all.

"Mmm? Doesn't that person look a bit familiar?"

The person in front of him, Azure Dragon, looked a bit familiar, but Rick could not remember where he had seen him.

Are these five people Levi's hidden trump card?

The Protector Chapter 92

Ben did not think so much. He stared at Levi and smirked, "You brat, are you not going to greet your parents now that they are here?"

Levi's adoptive mother, Winnie, looked at Levi in disdain. "If I knew that you were going to betray us, I wouldn't have picked you up from the streets. I should have let wild dogs attack you and leave you to die! A b*stard like you shouldn't be allowed to survive."

Breathe.

Upon receiving his adoptive parents' harsh remarks, Levi took a deep breath.

If not for the fact that they had adopted him, these few sentences were enough for him to chop their heads off.

He was bitterly hurt!

His adoptive parents actually treated him like this!

I really hate this!

This is the most heartbreaking thing in my life.

Ben's words pierced Levi's heart. "Honestly speaking, we never think of you as our son. You are merely our tool!"

Levi's adoptive mother, Winnie added, "That's right! We only had one motive when we adopted you last time. You would take up another place in our family, and so we can receive an extra share of the Garrison family's inheritance! That's it! Otherwise, do you think we will raise a b*stard like you?"

The Garrison family spoke in unison, "Yes, our family has valuable connections. Do you think you are good enough to be in this family? You are merely a wild dog with impure blood in you! You are not worthy to be part of the Garrison family!"

Victoria was still unable to see the truth, so she stared at Levi. "Levi, are you still thinking of overthrowing the Garrison family? Stop dreaming! It's not enough just because you have got Nueve on your side. He is merely an insignificant ant."

Levi then broke into a laugh again. "I have already given you all a month to think about it. Why are all of you still behaving like foolish pigs? Do you really think my supporter is Nueve? Do you think he dares even if I lend my courage to him?" Levi raised his voice.

"No, Mr. Garrison!"

Nueve and the others fell to their knees in utter shock.

At this point in time, everyone at the scene saw that Nueve was fearful of Levi.

He has another hidden trump card that we do not know about!

Rick thought about it and a scary thought flashed past his mind.

Levi looked at Holly and laughed. "Now that you are in front of his grave, don't you feel a bit of remorse? Don't you think that Morris is looking down at you from up above?"

To be honest, Holly was feeling a bit remorseful.

However, she lifted her head and said arrogantly, "Hmm, it's better that he is dead. If he were still alive, would I be able to live so comfortably now? He should be glad that he was able to be of value to his goddess as a substitute!"

Levi smiled. "So you don't feel the need to repent at all?"

"Of course!"

Levi then looked at the Garrison family members again. "Do all of you not feel an ounce of remorse too?"

Spit! "You are a b*stard and that is another b*stard who is dead. What is there for us to repent?" The Garrison family kept labelling them as b*stards.

Rowen and his wife were in tears.

Their son died a terrible death, and yet he was cursed and labelled a b*stard!

Who could withstand such injustice?

Joseph was furious and exclaimed in anger, "King of North Hampton! May I trouble you to take action? I cannot watch this any further!"

Jack Smith nodded his head. "Alright, as you wish!"

"I do not want to see them still standing!"

Jack Smith commanded for everyone to charge ahead.

Vroom!

At this point in time, a revving sound came from outside.

Everyone turned their heads to look in the direction of the cars arriving.

The most frightening thing was the sight of a police car in the middle of those cars!

The Protector Chapter 93

The thugs stopped temporarily and looked behind.

Jack Smith smiled after taking a glance. "Mr. Garrison, you really impress me. Are there more people coming? Is there even a police car? This is really impressive!"

However, Joseph, Rick and the rest of the Garrison family were dumbfounded.

They stood there, at a loss.

The Garrison family had exhausted all their resources, and all their connections were already present at the scene.

Why are there more people coming?

Joseph questioned immediately, "Jack Smith, didn't you invite these people?"

Jack Smith laughed. "You are kidding, Mr. Garrison. All those who I have invited are already here."

"That's right. All our connections are here already."

Bob, Smiling Buddha and the others responded.

"That is strange! Who are these people? This is bad..."

As soon as they realized something, they turned towards Levi.

He is so calm. He must have invited these people here.

Very soon, these cars stopped outside.

A few people alighted from the police car...

"Captain of Patrol Squad Xavier Fields, Deputy Captain Derrick King, and Captain of Criminal Investigation Team Alex Williamson..."

Jack Smith was very familiar with the people in the police department. He called their names out one by one.

After listening to their names, everyone was struck.

The Garrison family, in particular, was shocked to see the presence of the police. Ben grew extremely pale and was frightened.

Bryan and Victoria were trembling in fear.

At this moment, some more people alighted from the other cars.

At the sight of all these people, Jack Smith, Bob and the others felt intimidated.

“Oh my god! Leader Mr. Jesse Nielsen, Deputy Leader Zenneth Fuller, Uptown District Leader Draco Simmons, First Secretary Cedric Jones, and commander of the Ministry of Construction and the Ministry of Land...”

Jack Smith was very familiar with these leaders from North Hampton. He mentioned all of their names.

He was going berserk at this moment!

Why are they here?

Even though Jack Smith was known as the King of North Hampton, it was merely a nickname. There were many people who were above him in terms of rank and status in North Hampton.

He was extremely fearful of all these people before him!

If all of them were to put in a bad word about him, he would cease to exist.

Not only was Jack Smith afraid of their presence, but Bob and Smiling Buddha were also fearful.

These people were their enemies!

Although the Garrison family was different from them, they were also afraid of the presence of these big shots!

They were more fearful of the purpose of these people’s arrival. Why are they here?

Rick was very quick to notice that Jesse, Xavier and the others had donned black suits with a white flower pinned to their chests.

It was apparent that they were here to pay their respects to Morris!

His head was about to explode at this moment!

Rick tried to reassess Levi again. Just who exactly is he?

Even these big shots are here to pay their respects to Morris!

Jesse and the others walked over. Xavier furrowed his eyebrows, and yelled, "Make way!"

The thugs were shocked by Xavier and carved out a path for him to walk through.

They were drenched in perspiration as they looked on at Xavier and the others walking past.

Jack Smith, Joseph and the others stood on the other side of the path, waiting anxiously.

At the sight of Jesse and the others, they went over to welcome and greet him.

Xavier yelled coldly, "Scram!"

"Don't block the way!"

Jack Smith and the others were shocked and stood aside, not daring to move.

Jack Smith took out his handkerchief to wipe away the perspiration on his forehead.

Joseph was so frightened that his blood pressure rose and he almost fainted.

Everyone could only stare as Jesse and the others walk towards the grave.

The Protector Chapter 94

When they arrived in front of the grave, everyone simply nodded their heads to Levi and paid their respects to Morris. Then, they walked towards Rowen and his wife to offer their condolences.

Rowen used to work in the department, so he knew who these people were.

He cried tears of joy and lifted his head, smiling, "Morris! Can you see this? Your leaders are here to pay their respects to you!"

The elderly couple started crying.

Dozens of big shots from North Hampton paid their respects to Morris, one at a time!

Jack Smith was disappointed as he witnessed this scene!

They all seemed to have fallen into an icy cold cavern...

Gradually, they understood why Nueve and Trey would sacrifice their lives for Levi.

Jack Smith now understood why Francis Hicks did not want to come, and even warned him not to.

Francis Hicks knew about this!

We cannot get involved in this matter!

Holly, Kit and Misty saw the top leaders of North Hampton paying their respects to Morris.

They had mixed emotions in their hearts.

After all, they did not know what was in store for them.

"I..."

Joseph's legs could not stop shaking. He was speechless.

Jaycob too had no intention of seeking revenge anymore.

Rick was extremely confused.

"This, this, this..."

Ben was too shocked to say anything.

Winnie stared at Levi in disbelief. She did not expect this.

Bryan, Victoria and the others were all flabbergasted.

What is Levi's actual identity?

Why are all the leaders here?

Even those with strong connections could never bring all these people together!

A million doubts and questions filled their heads.

“My condolences, Mr. Atkinson!”

After these big shots from North Hampton paid their respects, they left without staying any longer.

They also did not look at Jack Smith or anyone else.

This made the others present very confused.

What is happening here?

Ben laughed all of a sudden. “I get it now! Mr. Nielsen and the others came here to pay respects to Morris out of respect for Rowen and his wife. They used to old leaders in the department after all!”

“That’s right. After knowing that Levi has caused such a big commotion, it is only natural for them to come here and pay their respects!” Joseph said immediately.

Bryan also thought it through. “If Mr. Nielsen and the others are Levi’s supporters, why did they not come and attack us, but left immediately instead?”

“That’s right, that must be it!”

Jack Smith also agreed.

“So, as long as we do not hurt Rowen’s family and touch Morris’ grave, we will be okay. As for the other people, we can do whatever we want to them!”

Jaycob’s eyes had a murderous look in them.

He had wanted to kill and get rid of Levi a long time ago.

“Yes! I need to make sure that Levi kneels in front of me today!”

Joseph shook his walking stick.

The thugs recovered from the shock they experienced earlier and looked fiercely at Levi once more.

At this moment, Levi waved his hand to summon Azure Dragon and the rest to his side.

“Tell them that we are going to act!” Levi commanded.

“Understood!” Azure Dragon nodded his head.

After that, he took out a walkie-talkie and commanded, “Act now!”

Levi saw the Garrison family members staring blankly at him. He smiled and said, “I’m sorry for the delay and thank you for waiting. The real dish is about to be served!”

Bryan exclaimed, “Levi, what tricks do you have up your sleeve again?”

Whoosh!

...

Just when Bryan stopped talking, a signal flare was launched in all directions.

Bang!

Everyone was at a loss as they saw the signal flare exploding in the sky.

The Protector Chapter 95

Jack Smith had never seen such a thing!

He did not know what kind of messages these signal flares were sending.

However, the mercenaries had a horrified expression on their faces.

Upon seeing the signal flare, they knew that something major was going to happen.

It was a signal flare specifically used by the military!

“This is not good. Mr. Garrison, we need to retreat as soon as possible!” The head of the mercenary reported to Rick.

However, Rick who was inexperienced in this aspect could not understand what he meant.

“Why should we retreat? We have yet to find out what exactly is happening!” Rick responded coldly.

“Then we will retreat. We do not want the money anymore!”

The mercenaries knew what the signal flare represented. Thus, they wanted to retreat and leave.

It was not necessary for them to risk their lives for money!

Boom!

Just when they were about to retreat, there was a sudden movement of the earth, and the ground under everyone’s feet moved.

All of them clearly saw the sand and stones tumbling and shaking under their feet!

The vibrations became more intense and violent. Some people were unsteady and could not remain standing.

It felt as though a giant earthquake was approaching.

The mercenaries bent down slowly and placed their ears on the ground to listen.

In an instant, their facial expressions changed.

This vibration is too loud!

In the past, they had experienced being surrounded by hundreds of enemy mercenaries on the barren battlefield, and the vibration then was loud enough.

However, based on the current vibration and their previous experiences, the scale was much greater than they had encountered.

It would be a rough estimate of about 100,000 people on the battlefield!

100,000 people?

What kind of concept is this? He was unable to imagine it!

Buzz buzz buzz...

This time, there were bursts of low buzzing sounds in the air.

Everyone looked up and was shocked to see small planes hovering in the sky. They could already feel the impending storm.

What was worst was seeing these planes lining up in formation and flying around in groups, circling the sky above.

Everyone was counting the number of planes in the sky.

There were at least hundreds of them!

Not only that, there were hundreds of helicopters dominating the lower airspace as well. They were densely packed and covered the entire sky for miles.

The sky became dark and nobody could see a thing.

The sheer number of these planes had completely covered the sun, blocking out all the sunlight!

There was the sudden arrival of dozens of huge transport planes aimlessly hovering in the air!

Boom boom boom!

The ground below them was shaking violently.

Many people were unsteady on their feet.

“Look!”

Someone standing on the outermost circle shouted, leading everyone to look behind.

A few colossal objects appeared in their line of vision.

When they finally saw them clearly, everyone’s faces had already grown pale.

They were all in complete shock!

The colossal objects were a line of war chariots and battle tanks!

They came in from all four directions.

The mercenaries estimated the number to be at least a few thousand!

It is an epic battle scene!

“Look!”

Everyone saw the infantry among the war chariots. There were so many of them, densely packed together, and they could barely see their individual heads!

Click click click...

The formation of battle tanks was followed by a large infantry. They came at a uniform, world-shaking pace.

“There are four columns in one regiment! As a rough estimate, we can see twenty groups!”

“We can see about 20,000 people!”

“But it is just a small portion. There are a lot more at the back! The main army!”

The mercenaries analyzed the situation using their professional expertise.

The Protector Chapter 96

“What? You can already see 20,000 people from here? Aren’t there still at least thousands of tanks and armored vehicles? And thousands of airplanes and helicopters?”

After hearing the shocking numbers, Jack Smith, Bob and the others were about to explode in fright.

This was definitely not something they could handle, let alone compete!

Why are we here?

Why can’t we just live our lives comfortably?

These gangsters and their subordinates trembled in fear. Their legs grew weak, and they almost fainted.

They thought that they were only here to fight.

Was there a need for airplanes, tanks, and artillery with tens of thousands of troops?

The Garrison family saw what was happening. A chilly stream of air rushed up to their bodies as if to freeze all the blood in them.

This is frightening!

Why are there troops here all of a sudden?

How did this happen?

What on earth is happening?

Rick grew extremely solemn. He was extremely afraid that things were happening accordingly to what he had initially predicted.

Jack Smith thought about it and said, "Could it be a military exercise? This area is extremely suitable for it!"

Joseph took a few deep breaths. "I also think the same way! I received a piece of news in the morning, saying that there are many tanks heading in this direction. It seems to be a military exercise going on, and we just happen to chance upon it! We seem to be in their way!"

Instead of thinking of the worst-case scenario, everyone wished to believe that it was a simple military exercise.

Rick shook his head. "Perhaps not! This has definitely got to do with Levi!"

"All are loaded standard weapons! They have bullets in them! These are real guns and live ammunition! I guarantee it!" The head of the mercenary, James, said in a serious tone.

His experience, together with his subordinates were able to see clearly that the guards had real guns and live ammunition!

Hiss!

Many people drew in their breaths at that instant.

They were panicking.

Boom boom boom...

The war chariots and armored vehicles stopped one by one when they were about 500 meters away from everyone.

However, the infantry at the back passed by the war chariots and armored vehicles and continued to advance.

It was a bone-chilling sight.

There were a lot of people on the vast plain.

Click click click...

The infantry was approaching, closer each time, and now everyone had a better view of the sheer number of them.

“Just now, we only saw a small part of the infantry. Now, the numbers have increased. We can see at least 40,000 to 50,000 people! There is about the same number of people at the back!”

“Tell everyone this piece of bad news: There are about 100,000 people in strength!”

James stated the fact, and he was growing desperate and hopeless at reality.

An infantry of such magnitude would absolutely sweep every single person on the battlefield away!

With this fact in mind, everyone grew dead silent and despondent.

There are 100,000 people!

A full 100,000!

“I... I... I... I... I... I...”

Jack Smith was so scared that his teeth chattered in fear, rendering him speechless for a long time.

Click click click...

The infantry stopped at a distance of fewer than 20 meters from everyone, which was a good distance for their handover process.

These soldiers looked ruthless, holding tightly onto their weapons that had been loaded, and took aim at everyone.

There was no doubt that as long as they fired their weapons, the Garrison family, Jack Smith and the others would be brought down immediately!

In front of all these soldiers, they had no fighting power at all when they saw a series of cold muzzles pointed at them.

Plop! Plop! Plop!

They dropped their weapons on the ground and raised their hands up in surrender.

The Protector Chapter 97

They would not even think about putting up a fight. There were at least 100,000 soldiers around!

Many of them regretted it in their hearts. Why did they join the underground world of all things?

Seeing the army advancing towards them, Jack Smith and the other big shots grew afraid.

The pearls that he had initially held in his hands went missing.

The others, like Smiling Buddha and Bob, felt their blood pressure rising. If not because there were people supporting them, they would have fainted and collapsed onto the ground.

The Invincible-13 had also grown pale in shock. They did not even dare to lift their heads!

Joseph was so afraid that he almost coughed out blood. The muzzles were directly pointed at them, so one more step from the soldiers would mean that the muzzles were about to come in contact with their brains.

It was extremely terrifying!

The mercenaries really hated Rick to the core!

If they knew that this was going to happen, they wouldn't have been lured here by the handsome reward.

They would lose their lives anyway, so how could they spend the money?

At this point in time, there were dozens of transport planes in the sky, and the cabin doors opened.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh...

The paratroopers landed one at a time.

Hundreds of helicopters also moved in the sky, circling above Joseph and the others.

Everyone was able to see clearly that there was a famous sniper in the helicopter, and the sniper's rifle was aiming at them.

There were even machine guns facing them, with their angles adjusted.

The paratroopers descended continuously from dozens of transport planes. After landing, they turned their backs to Levi in a half-squatting posture and faced the Garrison family with their weapons aimed at them.

There were thousands of paratroopers, and they all happened to be guarding the open space.

Boom boom boom...

There was some movement on the outer circle.

The cannons were pushed out with their muzzles pointed towards the sky.

However, the Garrison family, Jack Smith and the others knew that they were facing another layer of doom.

They were surrounded at all sides, and the large weapons and battle tanks with guns had driven up so close to them.

Even the helicopters in the sky were directed at them.

They were completely surrounded this time round. There was no way they could escape from this.

Frightening!

Really frightening!

The mercenary, James, and his counterparts were unable to withstand the pressure.

They threw their weapons down, raised both their arms up in surrender, and said, "We were conned by the Garrison family! We did not do anything!"

And then they lay on the floor and placed both hands on their heads. They looked pathetic.

After that, Jack Smith responded and pointed at the Garrison family immediately, "Everything is done by the Garrison family! They invited us here, saying that they have a project that is worth 2 billion! We are so clueless! We did not know! We are in the wrong! We are in the wrong!"

After saying so, Jack Smith and the other big shots followed what James did. They lay down on the ground and placed hands on their heads.

Plop!

Plop!

Soon, all their subordinates followed suit. They also lay on the ground and placed their hands behind their heads!

One after another!

Following this, all the security personnel, bodyguards, guards and the mercenaries hired by the Garrison family also lay down on the ground. All of them pushed all the blame to the Garrison family.

In the blink of an eye, there were about a thousand or so people surrendering.

The only people left standing were the Garrison family members, Holly and the others.

They looked right and left to see and realized that they had two choices. They could either continue to have the gun muzzles pointed at their heads, or lie on the ground like what the rest were doing.

They had no choice but to lie on the ground!

Levi shouted from afar, "Joseph?"

Upon hearing his name being called, Joseph grew so frightened. His whole body was cold and sweaty, and his face looked so pale as though he was seriously ill.

He looked helplessly at Levi, who was standing not too far away.

"Ben?"

"Winnie?"

"Jaycob?"

"Rick?"

"Bryan?"

...

"Holly?"

...

The Protector Chapter 98

Levi looked at the Garrison family members and called their names out one by one.

They did not dare to say a thing to Levi. It was because when Levi yelled out their names, it felt like he was declaring their deaths.

Everyone stared at Levi blankly. They did not know what he was going to do.

Everyone was utterly confused and was in complete shock.

Levi placed his hands on his back and shouted at everyone in the Garrison family, "Haven't all of you been guessing what my trump card is? I am telling you now. This is my trump card!"

“This magnificent army with thousands of men and weapons is my trump card!” Levi continued yelling.

The Garrison family became deathly still after hearing what Levi said.

Rick closed his eyes in despair.

Things had actually turned out exactly the way he had guessed!

Holly froze, and her teeth could not stop chattering.

At this moment, there was a path created from the outer circle, surrounded by the crowd. A middle-aged man with two stars on his shoulder quickly walked towards the cemetery.

“King of War! He is the King of War!”

The Garrison family was in shock as all of their facial expressions changed drastically.

Everyone directed their gazes at the King of War walking towards the cemetery.

They saw the King of War approach Levi and greet him respectfully, “North Hampton’s commander-in-chief of the First Army, Garfield Perkins, is here to report to the Chief! The assembly of the First Army is complete, Chief! Please give further instructions!”

Many people could not believe their eyes upon witnessing this scene.

It was indescribable!

He was the King of War with 100,000 guards under his charge, yet he actually addressed Levi as his chief?

Who on earth is he?

Oh my god!

It is unimaginable!

This was a huge shock to the Garrison family. They did not expect to see this!

Thus, they could not accept the fact!

Rick shut his eyes tightly.

Garfield's action had cemented the thoughts in his head.

Levi is the one!

"Alright, fire the cannons!" Levi commanded.

Garfield waved his hand, and at that moment, dozens of cannons fired their shots at once.

Boom!

Boom!

Boom!

The cannons fired, shaking the earth like thunderbolts.

"Mr. Morris, rest in peace!" 100000 soldiers shouted in unison.

The voices of 100,000 soldiers sounded like thunder. It was a totally earth-shattering sight to behold.

Rowen and his wife cried again.

Levi had given Morris the best, most respectful and most impressive send-off.

Levi faced Morris' grave and said emotionally, "My brother, this is your belated send-off!"

After everything was done, Levi turned around slowly.

At this moment, Azure Dragon and the others had changed into their military uniforms. Each one of them had a star on their shoulders.

The Five Great Wars Regiment!

Azure Dragon held a set of military uniform and brought it to Levi respectfully.

The Phoenix King of War helped Levi to change out of his black suit and into the military uniform.

After changing into the military uniform, Garfield and the other soldiers looked at Levi in awe.

Standing in front of them was their leader of indomitable military spirit!

He was their role model, the legendary God of War of Erudia!

There was a total of 5 stars on Levi's shoulder!

He was the only God of War with 5 stars in the whole of Erudia's history!

At this sight, Rick had already fainted.

Levi's imposing demeanor was unmatched!

He stared at the Garrison family with indifference and said, "Do you still remember the day you listed your company on the stock market? The God of War said that he would attend the dinner banquet! That was right!"

"Because I am the God of War!"

The Protector Chapter 99

The Garrison family definitely remembered that they would hold a dinner banquet to celebrate the listing of their company.

That day, the God of War had announced that he would come.

That made the Garrison family excited, and they even thought that they would rise in fame and reputation.

However, it was destroyed by Levi.

The Garrison family then saw Levi as a sinner of their family.

This was because Levi was the unlucky one who had disrupted their stroke of luck.

After that, the Garrison family used all means and ways to seek connection with the God of War but was subsequently rejected.

They were most puzzled by the fact that the God of War had come to the dinner banquet, but no one seemed to have noticed it.

They finally understood it now.

It was because Levi was the God of War!

Why else would Levi cause such a huge commotion at the Garrison family's dinner banquet?

Why did he give the Garrison family a month to make an official apology?

Why did he warn the Garrison family time and again?

Why did he have such confidence?

Because he was the supreme God of War!

Like what Melanie had said, the God of War was the commander-in-chief of the Nine Warzones of Erudia, and he could destroy the entire family really easily!

It was already too late.

Everyone had only reacted when it was too late.

Levi put on his military cap slowly and solemnly. After wiping it clean, he looked at the 100,000 soldiers in front of him.

Upon seeing this, Garfield shouted, "God of War!"

"God of War!"

The entire army shouted that exciting title in unison.

They all looked at Levi, who was the first person in Erudia who held onto such an impressive title!

Their collective voices inspired awe throughout the empire.

The Garrison family was also caught in fascination at this awe-inspiring sight.

This man is Erudia's God of War!

Just by his presence, everyone knew that with him around, Erudia would be protected and kept safe for thousands of years!

Levi was firmly captured in the hearts of the millions of soldiers of Erudia!

However, the Garrison family members were knee-deep in regret.

This was because Levi used to be a part of the Garrison family.

He had worked hard and fought hard for the Garrison family!

However, the Garrison family had done so many cruel things to him, even forcing him to leave home.

Levi's gaze landed slowly on the Garrison family members. Then he said mildly, "Did you expect this? The bastard that should be eaten alive by wild dogs! Now I am someone you cannot even touch!"

Upon listening to him, the Garrison family were in shock.

Levi looked at Joseph. "I was supposed to be your grandson, but now I am the commander-in-chief of the Nine Warzones of Erudia with hundreds of thousands of soldiers under my command!"

Then, he turned to look at his adoptive parents. "I was supposed to be your son, but now I am formidable enough to be worshipped by everyone!"

Next, he glanced at Bryan and Victoria and said, "I was supposed to be your little brother, but now I have the power and wealth to hold everything under my control!"

Finally, he gazed at Holly and said, "I was supposed to be your husband's friend, but now there is no one else controlling me but myself!"

Levi's voice was like a knife slicing into the hearts of everyone.

At this moment, everyone no longer felt pain but numbness.

They were all completely numbed in shock.

None of them could feel the pain from their nails digging deep into their palms!

What did they miss?

It was unimaginable!

Everyone's minds went a total blank. They were unable to think clearly on these matters.

The Garrison family thought about it. If they had not dealt so harshly with Levi in the past, how would the Garrison family have prospered?

Perhaps they would have taken control of North Hampton overnight and became the only powerful family, right?

Holly thought about it. If she had not treated Morris badly in the past, who would she have become?

Her husband's brother was a powerful figure in Erudia! Perhaps she would have been the noblest woman in North Hampton, right?

However, there was no room for regrets!

It was too late!

They had to bear the painful consequences!

The Protector Chapter 100

Take revenge and avenge myself!

Levi's facial expression changed suddenly and he roared, "When you raised me as a child, I was proud of the family name Garrison! I secretly swore that I would live my entire life repaying your kindness!

I wanted to fight for the family! I wished for the Garrison family to be proud of me and my achievements! Then, when I made plans to develop the Garrison family into the strongest family in North Hampton, do you know what you did to me?"

"My parents, brother and sister-in-law betrayed me behind my back! My beloved family members broke my limbs and threw me into the trash! You even framed me and sentenced me to prison! Ah? Where is your conscience?"

Plop!

Joseph could not endure such tremendous pressure, so he was the first to kneel down to the ground.

Plop!

Ben and the others kneeled down on the ground too.

They could no longer withstand it.

All of them were drenched in perspiration beneath their clothes and were struggling to breathe.

Levi then looked at Holly. "It's unfortunate that my friend, Morris, has always seen you as his goddess. He treated you like the most precious jewel on earth! Yet you betrayed him, and even plotted to kill him! Whenever you look down from the skyscrapers, have you ever thought of my friend, Morris? Ah?"

"I've even reminded all of you that if you are not going to repent in front of Morris' grave, you will end up badly like what happened to Philip. Did my words fall on deaf ears?"

"I..."

Plop! Holly also fell to the ground.

Kit and Misty had already burst into tears!

Joseph was the first to express his remorse. He exclaimed, "We are in the wrong! We are in the wrong! We confess to all the crimes we have committed."

"We too know that we are in the wrong! We hereby repent!"

The others kneeled down and kowtowed to Levi, one after another!

Holly and the others also kowtowed in front of Morris' grave.

Their foreheads were bleeding from the impact.

Ben continued to say, "Levi, we have admitted that we are in the wrong. Seeing that we have nurtured you in the past, can you please forgive us? Can you spare our lives?"

Winnie added, "Levi, to be honest, we have been treating you like our own. As long as you are willing, we are still your parents. The Garrison family will still be your home!"

Bryan took the chance to continue, "That's right, Levi! My wife and I welcome you back to the Garrison family too! You can be the patriarch of the family. Right, Grandpa?"

Joseph said immediately, "Yes, yes. That's right! Levi, as long as return to the Garrison family, you will be the patriarch!"

Jaycob even said, "Levi, Ashton deserved what you did to him! You should have beaten him to death!"

At the sight of the Garrison family members' desperate looks, Levi sneered and said, "If not for my current identity, do you think you would be kneeling down here in repentance? Would you allow me to return to the Garrison family? Or let me become the patriarch? You wouldn't!"

He could not stop laughing. "All of you are only concerned about the benefits. Relationships and emotions mean nothing to you at all! Ever since I stepped into prison six years ago, I have severed all ties with the Garrison family! Today, I have a very simple goal. I want to seek revenge!"

Levi shot a cold and heartless look at every member of the Garrison family.

"Seek revenge!"

The 100,000 soldiers chanted in unison. It was an earth-shattering moment.

Joseph vomited out blood at this instant.

Looking at Levi's determination, he knew that the Garrison family was doomed!

The Protector Chapter 101

Levi looked at everyone and said, "Bryan, Victoria, Lionel, Tammy, Russell, Patrick, Holly, Kit, Misty, and Rick. Look at me, all of you!"

Everyone's hearts were in their throats when their names were called. They knew what was going on. It's like Hades and his Furies sentencing punishments to us.

All of them had no other choice but to obey Levi's order.

"Did you murder Morris Atkinson?" Levi asked them.

"No..."

Someone was about to deny it. Then his eyes met with Levi's unforgiving gaze.

Everyone nodded immediately. Admitting our crime is a wiser choice now.

"All of you are going to repent by kneeling in front of Morris's grave for 3 days and 3 nights!" Levi commanded harshly.

Garfield Perkins waved his hand. Soldiers brought Rick and the others forcefully to Morris's grave.

Levi looked at Morris's tomb and said with a smile, "Morris! I've brought all the accomplices who conspired your death to repent in front of you! I will send every one of them to accompany you soon!"

Mr. and Mrs. Atkinson were tear-stricken. Levi's effort to avenge Morris touched them.

Levi looked at the other members of the Garrison family.

"Bryan and Victoria, do you still remember how you broke my legs that night?" Levi grinned at them menacingly.

The couple was scared out of their wits.

Tap tap tap...

The scariest part was Levi's continuous advancement in their direction.

Bryan and Victoria wanted to back away from him, but they had nowhere to escape because of the guns pointed at the back of their heads.

Finally, Levi came to a halt in front of them.

He took the baseball bat from Bryan's hand and sized up the stick. "Is this the bat you used to break my legs 6 years ago? I suppose you kept it all this while so you can cripple me again?"

Thump thump thump...

Both of them slammed their foreheads against the ground to beg for Levi's forgiveness as an ominous feeling crept into their hearts. "Please forgive us, Levi! We will not repeat our mistake. Just think of us as your servants from now on."

Levi sneered while tapping the baseball bat. "But you did not show me any mercy 6 years ago."

"That was because we were..."

Bam!

"Argh!"

Levi smashed Bryan's knee with the bat as soon as he tried to explain himself. Bryan howled in pain as his bones shattered.

"This is the treatment I received from you in the past!"

Bam!

"Arghh!"

Levi did not spare any of Bryan's limbs. The latter rolled on the floor, screaming hysterically in agony.

Then Levi looked at Victoria.

"Don't touch me! I'm just a woman!" Victoria shielded herself with her hands.

"But you are an evil woman!"

Bam!

Levi broke Victoria's hands and legs as well. Then he tossed the disabled couple at the side of Morris's grave to repent for their sins.

They are related to that matter, after all! Levi thought to himself as he shifted his gaze onto Joseph Garrison and his foster parents.

Joseph and the others lowered their heads fearfully.

"I never thought we would end up in this situation!" Levi said in a self-deprecating manner. "I can declare that I am innocent! I've worked hard for this family since I was young to repay all of you. Who was the person to bring fame and wealth to the Garrison family in the past? That person was me! Did I not prove my sincerity by treating all of you with kindness?" Levi questioned.

The Protector Chapter 102

"You're absolutely right, Levi!" Joseph and the others said in a hurry.

"I will not harm you because you used to be my grandpa and my foster parents. I am not an insensible person, but I will deprive the Garrison family of all possessions, especially my Levi Group!

I will also sever all ties with you from this moment onwards. Your fates will have nothing to do with me from now on. Also, don't you dare try to do anything by quoting my name. Otherwise, all of you will face certain death!"

Levi's judgment was simple enough to understand. The Garrison family was doomed. They were one of the wealthiest families in North Hampton, but Levi now turned them into an ordinary family without any power or money. That punishment was worse than death in their opinion.

Joseph and his family's years of effort turned into dust with a single order from Levi. The Garrison family's assets, worth up to billions, were taken away from them, leaving them with absolutely nothing. That sudden and drastic change was unacceptable and surreal to the Garrisons.

Levi looked at Jack Smith and the other underworld figures. He sneered. "All of you do not have to die. But you disrupted the peace at Morris's grave. So you will kneel before him for one day and one night!"

"Yes. Yes! Everyone kneel!" All the thugs followed Jack Smith's order and knelt.

“We will also turn this place into a proper cemetery dedicated to Mr. Morris Atkinson after this, sir!” Jack Smith offered.

Levi did not reject his proposal.

Finally, Levi addressed the 100 thousand soldiers. “Thank you for your hard work, brothers!”

“God of War!”

“God of War!”

“God of War!”

The battle without any casualties ended with the war cry.

Zoey did not know how long had passed, but she had cried her eyes out and fainted 3 times.

Aaron called Harry to ask about the situation.

Harry said, “I received an update saying the confrontation has ended. But no one exited the place or saw Levi anywhere. So I suppose he’s dead.”

Harry was concerned about Zoey’s condition because she was still handling that huge project. “How’s Zoey?”

“Zoey passed out for the third time, father!” Aaron answered helplessly.

Harry rebuked angrily, “What are you doing? Is that how you console her? Try harder! Levi’s death is a favorable outcome. In this way, Zoey can marry another person. If Samuel’s brothers are not good enough, then we will look for a better candidate. Bear this in mind. The Lopez family will thrive once Levi is out of the way.”

Harry almost laughed out loud on the other end of the phone. I can finally exploit Zoey and her family to my heart’s content with Levi gone.

Zoey gradually regained her consciousness after some time.

She questioned her parents while looking at them. “What’s the situation now? How’s Levi?”

Aaron sighed. “To be honest, I do not want to tell you this.”

“What’s going on, Dad? Hurry up and tell me!” Zoey grabbed Aaron’s arm.

“I received an update from your grandpa. Levi is dead!”

Zoey slumped onto the floor and shrieked hysterically after listening to her father. “Levi!”

The Protector Chapter 103

Meanwhile, Rick Garrison knelt before Levi.

Rick told Levi he had something to inform him when Levi was about to leave.

“What’s the matter? Spit it out.”

“Mr... No, that’s not right. Sir. Do you really think we, the Garrison family, were capable of pulling off the feat 6 years ago by ourselves, sir?” Rick asked.

Levi narrowed his eyes in response. He seemed to have noticed the problem too. Now that I think about this, there are a lot of details that don’t quite add up. For example, the Garrison family should not have been able to take control of Levi Group so easily. Moreover, there must be someone who orchestrated the multiple charges against me and my imprisonment. I do not believe the Garrison family to be so competent. There is someone else supporting them!

Rick smiled. “We harbored the intention for a long time but did not have the capabilities to execute the plan. But someone suddenly appeared and provided our family with assistance amidst our hesitation.”

“Who is that person?” Levi asked coldly.

“Oswald Rogers. You and Ms. Zoey’s schoolmate in the past, sir!” Rick revealed that person’s identity.

Levi took a deep breath at the mention of Oswald Rogers. Oswald was in the same high school as Zoey and me. He was also Zoey’s classmate. We competed for Zoey’s favor in the past, and I came out as the winner. But Oswald did not give up pursuing Zoey until our wedding day.

Oswald's family background is more than just impressive. The Rogers family's net worth is easily over billions with properties all over the globe. They are the true top-tiered family in North Hampton, at least 10 times more influential than the Garrison family.

Every decision they make can alter the economic standing of this city. If Oswald Rogers is the mastermind, then everything makes sense. He does have the power to place me behind bars effortlessly.

Rick continued. "Oswald Rogers was angry because of your marriage to Ms. Zoey. So he planned everything with the goal to destroy you."

Levi finally understood why the Garrison family decided to execute the plan on his wedding day. This is all because of Oswald Rogers. Well, it is not surprising for him to get mad, knowing the love of his life was getting married to another man.

Rick shook his head in despair. "Oswald would not have gotten the opportunity if we did not harbor ill intent in the first place. Ultimately, this is still the Garrison family's fault."

Levi glared at him. "Glad you know."

Zoey had no other choice but to accept the reality because Levi did not return home after she waited for him for the whole day.

Harry Lopez even hosted a dinner banquet to celebrate the joyous occasion.

Zoey was brought to the banquet venue in a daze by her parents.

"We are having this banquet tonight for very simple reasons. The first being the reinstatement of Zoey Lopez as part of the family. The second reason is to celebrate Zoey's escape from her disastrous marriage. Lastly, the Lopez family will develop the West City project alongside Zoey from now on. So, cheers everybody!" Harry announced with his wine glass raised.

Everyone else in the family raised their glasses as well, with delightful smiles on their faces.

The Lopez family was exhilarated as if they were hosting a New Year's celebration.

Aaron and Caitlyn forced themselves to join in the fun.

Zoey was the only person who stood out like a sore thumb during the banquet due to her lifeless condition.

Harry gazed at Zoey. "Now that Levi is gone, you should consider remarrying, Zoey. There are plenty of excellent candidates in North Hampton to choose from. You will meet a better person soon."

"Who dares to ask my wife to marry another man?" A cold, harsh voice was heard all of a sudden.

Everyone turned to look at the door.

Levi was standing at the entrance, alive and well.

"Le-Levi Garrison?" Harry staggered as he nearly collapsed onto the floor.

"Are you a man or a ghost?" Samuel was close to hiding under the table out of fear.

Everyone was caught in perplexity and terror because a supposedly dead person had returned.

The Protector Chapter 104

"Do I look like a ghost?" Levi entered the venue and walked up to Samuel while the others gasped frightfully.

Samuel touched Levi's arm with his trembling hand. Then he said in surprise, "You're warm. You're still alive! But that's not possible!"

Levi sneered. "So you wanted me to die?"

"Ah? Of course not!" Samuel was panting heavily.

"Levi!" Zoey rushed over to him and wrapped her arms around him tightly.

Levi hugged her as well. "I'm sorry to have made you worried. My bad."

Harry was confused. "This is impossible! The Garrison family and Jack Smith wouldn't have spared your life!"

"That's right! How can you stay alive when the Garrison family is targeting you? This is not possible!" Everyone added.

Even Zoey was looking at Levi curiously. “They’re right. How did you resolve the situation earlier?”

Levi tousled her hair and smiled. “I told you I can handle this matter.”

A thought popped into Zoey’s mind. “I saw a lot of soldiers nearby Morris’s grave just now. Is this related to them?”

Levi answered, “You’re right. The soldiers were having a military practice near that area in North Hampton. They dealt with the Garrison family because of their unwelcoming behavior. Luckily, I’m acquainted with the Azure Dragon. So he punished the Garrison family heavily on my behalf after knowing the whole story and promised to return Levi Group to me.”

Everyone in the Lopez family was dumbfounded after listening to Levi’s explanation. They looked at him incredulously. Levi Group will be his possession again? Does that mean he will have a net worth of billions? So he will regain his former glory!

“Levi, I...”

Harry was about to bootlick Levi when the latter left the banquet with Zoey.

Every member of the Lopez family chased after them.

Harry shouted from behind, “Levi Garrison will forever be our family’s pride. We must follow them. Hurry up!”

But they failed to catch up with Levi and Zoey.

Levi brought Zoey to the revolving restaurant in North Hampton city center to celebrate the success that night.

Harry made no fewer than 20 calls to Zoey, while the other members of the family visited Aaron’s house. They were eager to butter Levi up.

In the end, Levi was annoyed by their relentless pestering. So he said, “I’ll go to Levi Group to take over the business tomorrow with Zoey. Come to the company tomorrow if you have something to say.”

Everyone from the Lopez family finally stopped badgering them. But they could not sleep that night due to their excitement.

Early in the morning the next day, everyone from the Lopez family followed Levi and Zoey to Levi Group. Even Harry Lopez tagged along. Not one of them wanted to miss that glorious moment.

Members of the Lopez family were filled with exhilaration as they gazed at Levi Group's skyscraper, including Zoey.

Levi went to the receptionist and stated his aim for his visit. "My name is Levi Garrison, and I am here to take over Levi Group today."

The receptionist looked at Levi in a daze. "Are you crazy? You're the first person to come here with such a ridiculous request."

Zoey retorted immediately, "The Garrison family stepped down from Levi Group's management, didn't they?"

"They did. But most of the board members are still present. Moreover, they already bought Levi Group's shares which were under the Garrison family's possession," explained the receptionist.

Zoey was confused. "What do you mean?"

"Are you not aware of the parent company behind Levi Group?" The receptionist asked.

Levi gained revelation instantaneously. The Rogers family! They are the holding company of Levi Group. That means the Garrison family never had control of Levi Group, to begin with. This company belongs to the Rogers family!

The Protector Chapter 105

Harry and the others questioned, "What's going on?"

Melanie checked Levi Group's status on the Internet with her mobile phone and explained. "Sky Incorporated is the majority shareholder of Levi Group. This company completely belongs to Sky Incorporated after the Garrison family gave up their shares."

"Sky Incorporated is the holding company owned by the prestigious Rogers family, right?" Henry asked.

Harry frowned. He asked the receptionist with all seriousness, "That means Levi Group has always belonged to the Rogers family, and Levi Garrison is not at all related to this company?"

She nodded. "That's right. The Rogers family took control of Levi Group 6 years ago. I don't know how all of you found the courage to come here demanding to take over the company when Levi Garrison is just a nobody here."

At that moment, a group of people ushered the CEO of Levi Group, Howard Corbyn, into the company.

Oswald Rogers was the chairman of Levi Group, while his trusted aide, Howard, was the Chief Executive Officer.

Howard Corbyn had a busy night as well. I received the news of the confrontation between the Garrison family and Levi Garrison last night. Surprisingly, they stumbled into the God of War amidst their argument while the soldiers were having a military practice nearby. The Garrison family invoked the God of War's wrath and suffered greatly. They had to give up all their family's assets, so I spent the entire night purchasing the shares under their possession. Oswald even told me the Garrison family is a bunch of fools to have infuriated the God of War. He was also amazed by Levi's unbelievable fortune to have escaped the predicament by receiving the God of War's help.

But Oswald and Howard did not know that the God of War was actually Levi.

Howard saw Levi and the others gathering in the lobby as soon as he entered the company building.

He walked up to the crowd with a frown. "What's the matter?"

The receptionist answered, "Mr. Corbyn, these people said that they are here to take control of the company. I suppose they are here to stir up trouble."

Howard eyed Levi and Zoey as he listened to the receptionist. He sneered. "Oh? So it is Levi Garrison in the flesh!"

Howard recognized Levi because he participated in the scheme 6 years ago.

"Are you part of the Rogers family?" Levi asked mockingly.

"That's right. You sure move quick, coming here to take over the company right after the Garrison family's downfall. But let me tell you now. Levi Group is no longer related to you, Levi Garrison. We are now the majority

shareholder of Levi Group, so this company is ours legally!” Howard raised his voice.

“Look at this group of clowns! Do you think you can become rich instantaneously by taking over Levi Group? Idiots! Hahaha...” The people surrounding them were laughing hysterically at Levi and the Lopez family.

Harry, Aaron, and the others lowered their heads. This is so shameful! It’s like we are a bunch of country bumpkins. How can the Lopez family continue to stay in North Hampton if this incident spreads around?

“It’s time for all of you to leave! Levi Group does not welcome you! Take them away, guards!” Multiple security guards closed in on Levi and the others after receiving the order from Howard.

Levi and the rest of the Lopez family were chased out of the building by the security guards in the end. “Know your place, you poor people!” The guard rebuked them.

Disgrace! This is the worst humiliation the Lopez family has ever suffered. There will be no way for us to recover from this insult. Everyone in North Hampton will laugh at us from now on. Harry Lopez thought to himself.

Levi grimaced in silence. I did not deal with the situation right away because I want to toy with the Rogers family further. All of you will suffer in despair soon. Just you wait, Oswald Rogers!

The sheer humiliation was unbearable to the Lopez family after being thrown out from Levi Group. All of them stared at Levi hatefully.

The Protector Chapter 106

We tried so hard to please him last night because we thought he’s wealthy. But he is just a poor loser with nothing on him. Not only did we gain nothing, but we also lost our family’s dignity because of him.

“Levi Garrison! Do you care to explain yourself? How dare you come here without grasping the situation properly? I want to strangle you to death so badly right now!” Harry Lopez exploded with rage.

Samuel scolded Levi angrily, “Are you hallucinating by any chance? This company has got nothing to do with you!”

Henry was stomping his feet furiously. "Great! You've successfully ruined the Lopez family's good name. Are you happy now?"

Aaron and Caitlyn were sobbing. "You are truly a good-for-nothing piece of shit. Why are we still related to you? When will you stop daydreaming and be a down-to-earth person? We must've committed unforgivable crimes in our past lives to deserve an awful son-in-law like you. How we hope we can sever all ties with you!"

Zoey could not hide her disappointment either. Levi has crossed a line by doing this. He brought shame to the entire family. The Lopez family is well-known throughout North Hampton, yet we were chased out by the security guards earlier. This is all his fault!

Zoey glowered at Levi. "How many times have I told you that you should be honest, stay calm, and stop indulging in your daydreams? You've truly disappointed me this time. Not only did you fail to make us proud, but you also brought dishonor to the Lopez family! But let's forget about this. I believe in your capabilities, so let's work hard together in the future." Zoey consoled Levi in the end.

This is why I am infatuated with Zoey. She believes in me no matter how disappointed she is with me. Having a woman who places her faith in one under all circumstances is such a blessing. "Okay. I will listen to you from now on." Levi smiled. "But you don't have to worry because I will take back Levi Group sooner or later."

"Stop that bullshit! I can hardly contain my urge to slap you!" Samuel and Shaun were consumed by rage.

Harry warned his son again. "You better monitor your son-in-law well, Aaron. The Lopez family is not related to him in the future. So don't you dare cause any trouble for us!" Then they left resentfully.

Aaron and Caitlyn glared at Levi. "Useless idiot. You're not better than a piece of trash!" Both of them left as well after they spoke.

Zoey comforted Levi. "They are only saying that because they are mad. Don't take their words to heart. I am a little angry at you after what happened too."

Levi smiled indifferently. "It's okay. It's all water under the bridge now."

A gold color, custom-ordered Rolls-Royce arrived at Levi Group's entrance shortly after Levi and Zoey departed.

Howard Corbyn and the other executives hurriedly went to welcome the person. Howard even took the initiative to open the car door.

A man wearing a white suit got out of the car. His entire outfit was custom-made by the best tailor from abroad.

That man adjusted his gold-rimmed spectacles and asked with a smile. "Levi and Zoey left?"

That man was Oswald Rogers.

"They left, Mr. Rogers. Levi was as disgraced as a dog!" Howard reported cheerfully.

Oswald sneered. "I will begin my plan to target Levi and Zoey soon. Levi will meet the same fate as Morris Atkinson, while I will have Zoey sleep with me on her own accord and please me with her body!"

The Protector Chapter 107

April 19, 2021 by Chapter Novel

Howard and the other subordinates put on a menacing smile. No one has ever escaped a terrible fate after being targeted by Mr. Rogers. Any man who offends him is either dead or crippled.

He has never failed to obtain any girl he's interested in either. This is the first time Mr. Rogers is so fixated on targeting someone. Levi Garrison and Zoey Lopez will end up with a worse outcome than 6 years ago, and there will be no way for them to escape this time.

Howard said, "Levi is extremely lucky recently, Mr. Rogers. He encountered the Azure Dragon a few times and even met with the God of War yesterday."

Jealousy glinted in Oswald's eyes. "You're right. He is lucky. I envy his luck to get to meet with the God of War. He stumbled into the man even the richest men in the entire North Hampton like us have never met once. However, Levi also met with me. Our meeting will be the start of his endless nightmares!"

That embarrassing incident involving the Lopez family spread like wildfire as they expected. Everyone in the family could no longer hold their heads high.

Aaron and Caitlyn were also ridiculed by their colleagues.

Zoey did not escape a similar fate. Her friends were deliberately mocking her as well. This is all Levi's fault. Luckily, we are no longer staying with my parents. Otherwise, there will be no end to the insults directed at him. Nonetheless, I am glad that Levi is still alive despite our current circumstances.

Levi left the house early in the morning that day, while Zoey went to work as usual.

He visited Kirin's training base.

All 80 mercenaries hired by Rick Garrison the other day were captured by Kirin and brought to the training base because Levi had a task for those people.

He wanted to keep the mercenaries by his side because it was a hassle for him to transfer men from the North Hampton warzone to do his bidding all the time. Levi was preparing for the future troubles he had to face.

James and the other mercenaries were beyond shocked to receive the offer to become the God of War's bodyguards. We are all familiar with the God of War's legendary achievements and title. He is our motivation to survive in every warzone. This once-in-a-lifetime opportunity to serve him will bring honor to our family!

"I've assigned these people to serve you, sir! I also selected a few outstanding soldiers from the few warzones nearby to form a Special Operations Regiment. So I will need your consent by signing on this order," Kirin said with a smile.

Kirin was a man who was addicted to training soldiers into elite members of the special troop during his leisure time.

"Hand the papers to me. I'll sign it."

"By the way, will you attend our first practice, Sir? The newbies can admire you at that time!"

"Okay." Levi agreed.

Then he left after he was done assigning the tasks to the mercenaries.

Levi saw Abigail in the house when he returned to the Bayview Garden. "Don't you have class today?" Levi asked in surprise.

“There’s no point attending those classes because I am already familiar with the content. I am very smart, after all.” Abigail sipped on her yogurt drink while pacing around the living room in her shorts.

“Oh! My parents will visit North Hampton tomorrow. I will treat my aunt and the others to a meal as well. You must join us, Levi!” Abigail said cheerfully.

“Okay.” I heard Caitlyn came from an influential family. She disregarded the Black family’s opposition and married Aaron of her own accord. Her action infuriated them. I’ve never seen Abigail previously because Caitlyn’s family never attended my wedding 6 years ago.

The Protector Chapter 108

Aaron asked Levi and Zoey to visit his house that night.

He glared at Levi fiercely. “We’ll forget about the incident that happened yesterday morning, but you better don’t embarrass us tomorrow. I’ll kick you out without any hesitation if you dare to act shamelessly!”

Zoey was caught in perplexity. “What’s happening tomorrow, Dad?”

Levi smiled. “Abigail’s parents are visiting tomorrow.”

“Oh? Do you already know? I suppose Abigail told you? He’s right. They are visiting North Hampton tomorrow, and they will treat our family to dinner.” Aaron elaborated.

Caitlyn said solemnly, “Zoey, you are aware of the Black family’s influence, right? I have to remind you in advance not to commit any error tomorrow because of your uncles’ significant social status.”

“Alright, Mom.” Zoey nodded.

Levi asked nonchalantly, “Why are you so nervous? We are just having a meal together.”

“Of course we are nervous. Abigail’s parents are no ordinary people!” Aaron looked at Levi and Zoey. “Do you know why Abigail takes her mother’s surname? That’s because her mother, Pamela Rogers, is a member of the ultra-wealthy family in North Hampton, the Rogers family! They requested for Abigail to take her mother’s surname.”

“I see. No wonder Abigail’s surname is Rogers.” Zoey was informed of that matter for the first time.

Levi’s eyes gleamed pensively. So, they are related to Oswald Rogers and his family.

“Are you aware of the importance of this situation now? Pamela is the Rogers family’s representative.”

Levi and Zoey were only allowed to leave after Aaron nagged them relentlessly to be mindful and stay vigilant when meeting Abigail’s parents.

The next day, Abigail’s parents, Bailey Black and Pamela Rogers, visited North Hampton. They stayed in the Marriott Hotel and hosted the dinner gathering at the same venue.

A normal room in the Marriott Hotel cost a few thousand per night, while the presidential suite was priced at no less than 80 thousand.

It was a must for Bailey Black and Pamela Rogers to stay in the presidential suite of a 5-star hotel whenever they went on a trip.

Aaron and Caitlyn were astounded when they learned of the price because a night’s stay was equivalent to 3 times of Caitlyn’s monthly salary.

Four people were seated inside the VIP private room on the second floor of the hotel when Levi and the others arrived. There was another man inside the room aside from Abigail and her parents.

Levi could sense Abigail’s gloom instantaneously.

She hurried over toward the door when she saw them. “You’re finally here, Levi!”

Bailey, Pamela, and the unknown man stood up simultaneously.

Bailey Black was calm, collected, and dignified.

Pamela, on the other hand, was covered in lavish clothing and accessories. She gave off the temperament of a member of the royalty. Besides, she seemed radiant like a famous celebrity because of her great effort in taking care of her body.

That unknown man was tall and burly, with muscles that rippled all over his body.

Levi knew that man was a soldier with a single glance.

Aaron and his family sat around the table warily after a warm greeting between two parties.

Abigail sat in between Levi and Zoey as if she was hiding from that man.

Aaron did not dare to speak in the presence of Pamela Rogers.

Caitlyn looked at that unknown man and asked, "Who is this, Pamela?"

Pamela answered delightfully, "Caitlyn, this boy is the son of your brother's close friend. His name is Will Ramos, and he is an outstanding child. He is the first-ranking soldier in his camp, so he is selected to participate in the private training camp organized by the King of War, Kirin. Will will be the upcoming military leader in the future!"

The Protector Chapter 109

Levi thought to himself. So, he's one of the soldiers transferred here by Kirin? I guess he told everyone about the selection because that is indeed a significant achievement.

Will Ramos straightened his back and puffed out his chest proudly.

He greeted Caitlyn and her family politely when Pamela mentioned his name.

Lust glinted in his eyes as he glanced at Zoey. Beauty sure runs in their family.

"Do not hesitate to ask me for help in the future, should you require any assistance. I will certainly have the capabilities to settle your troubles," Will said to Aaron, Caitlyn, and Zoey.

Bailey Black nodded in satisfaction. "This boy is highly competent. I am sure he will become one of the highest-ranked soldiers in near future!"

Pamela smiled. "That's for sure. I've never misjudged anyone. He will serve the King of War, Kirin, since he is selected to take part in the Special Operations Regiment training camp. Are you aware of Kirin's great name?"

Aaron replied, "Kirin is the trusted aide of the commander-in-chief for the Nine Warzones, God of War."

"That's right. I guess you and your family aren't completely ignorant. Will will soon serve the God of War. Can you imagine the bright future that awaits him?" Pamela asked.

Aaron and Caitlyn glared at Levi. Then they shook their heads and sighed. "His future must be promising!" Why is our son-in-law so useless when compared to others?

"I can't say the same for your son-in-law." Bailey sneered.

Aaron's face turned sour. "You're right. He's just a nobody."

"Dad, Uncle, that's not true. My brother-in-law is amazing!" Abigail defended Levi while looking at him admiringly.

Anger surged within Will Ramos at that sight. I've always liked Abigail, and I've now received recognition from Pamela Rogers herself. But Abigail still never smiles at me or shows any interest in me. So why is she looking up to this criminal who is just recently released from jail? This is outrageous!

"Don't be fooled by him, Abigail. His achievements 6 years ago were barely acceptable. But now, he's just a piece of human trash," Bailey said unmercifully.

"That's right. You're absolutely right. Levi is nothing compared to Will." Aaron and Caitlyn agreed with Bailey.

Abigail was about to speak further, but Levi held her hand to stop her.

Will noticed the intimate interaction of Abigail and Levi under the table. He gritted his teeth angrily and clenched his fists. But then he said with a smile after regaining his composure. "The day after tomorrow will be the first day of our training camp. I want to invite both of you to the ceremony, Mr. Black and Mdm. Rogers. Perhaps we can get acquainted with the King of War, Kirin, if we're lucky."

Kirin allowed the soldiers to bring their families along to the opening ceremony of the training camp. Will wanted to bring his parents initially, but he changed his mind on the spot and offered the chance to Bailey and Pamela.

“I heard the news of the God of War’s participation in this ceremony as well. Although we will not get the opportunity to get acquainted with him, being able to admire him from afar in person is already a once-in-a-lifetime blessing.” Will was filled in anticipation for the day to arrive. I idolized the God of War and the five Kings of Wars serving him since I became a soldier. It is my biggest wish to meet them in person. So there is no way I can stay calm, knowing I can finally fulfil this greatest wish of my life soon.

“What? Really? Not only can we meet with the King of War, Kirin, but we can also see Protector of Erudia, the God of War in person?” Pamela and Bailey almost leap in excitement.

“That’s right. Each soldier is allowed to bring 3 people to the ceremony, so Abigail should tag along too.” Will deliberately glanced at Abigail.

The Protector Chapter 110

“Okay. We are attending the ceremony for sure! This is awesome! What if I am lucky enough to become acquainted with the God of War? I will be treated with respect even in the Rogers family if that happens.” Pamela began to imagine a better life in her mind.

“We are so jealous of you. This kind of opportunity will never be available to us even after many lifetimes.” Aaron and Caitlyn envied Abigail and her parents because they wanted to meet with those legendary figures as well.

Zoey, on the other hand, was unfazed.

Pamela said arrogantly, “Well, we can’t help you with that, Caitlyn. This ceremony is not available to everyone, after all.”

However, Levi voiced out nonchalantly all of a sudden. “It’s just an opening ceremony for a training camp. We can attend whenever we want.”

Dreadful silence filled the room as they looked at Levi after he spoke.

Even Zoey frowned at him. He’s not able to change his bad habit of talking big even now.

Will burst out with laughter. “Hahaha... what did you say? You can attend whenever you want? What a joke! Do you know the qualifications required to be shortlisted for this training camp? Only the top ten most outstanding

soldiers from each warzone are selected. Who are you to join the ceremony anyway, Mr. Nobody?"

Levi chuckled. "I can go because someone invited me. He even told me the ceremony would not proceed without me."

Bailey and Pamela's faces were contorted with rage as they glowered at Levi.

Aaron and Caitlyn grimaced while Zoey lowered her head, desperate to find a place to hide. He's getting more and more ridiculous. The opening ceremony cannot proceed without him? I do not expect anyone to believe him because even I can't bring myself to listen to him.

Abigail thought Levi was boasting too much as well. She was embarrassed by his brazenness too.

Will laughed out loud. "You're hilarious! The ceremony cannot proceed without you? Do you think you're the King of War, Kirin, or the God of War?"

Pamela gazed at Caitlyn and Aaron solemnly. "I am worried about the well-being of your family. This is unacceptable!"

Aaron exploded with rage. "What did I tell you last night? Did I not ask you to behave and stop daydreaming? Are you disregarding my words now?"

"We shouldn't have brought you here in the first place. You bring nothing but shame to our family." Caitlyn glared at Levi fiercely.

Levi sneered. "You can say all you want, but I will attend the ceremony anyway."

Bam!

Bailey slammed on the table furiously. "Is this how your son-in-law behaves, Aaron? He's not respecting us at all!"

Pamela was upset as well. "We don't have to finish this dinner if your son-in-law is so capable! I'm afraid we are too lowly to share a table with your family's high and mighty status. Let's go! We're not staying here any longer."

No one expected the sudden turn of events as the dinner ended disastrously.

Aaron and Caitlyn were startled. We wanted to seize this opportunity to mend my relationship with the Black family with their help. But Levi had to ruin everything as always.

Colors drained from their faces. "Please console your parents, Abigail. This is all our fault. We will apologize to them personally after your parents' anger subside." The couple placed their hopes on Abigail.

"Okay. Leave it to me." Abigail glanced at Levi with complicated emotions in her eyes.

Will leaned against the door and jeered at Levi. "I hope to see you at the opening ceremony the day after tomorrow."

The Protector Chapter 111

Will left the room cockily, leaving Aaron and his family to look at one another helplessly.

Caitlyn said despondently, "The Rogers family and the Black family are both powerful families with strict household regulations. They do not condone this type of behavior. So I cannot blame them for being mad."

Aaron fixated his hateful stare on Levi as he roared, "I can't wait to strangle you to death with my own hands one day!"

He was about to slap Levi when Zoey stopped her father.

"Calm down. We'll just apologize to Uncle and Aunt another day." Zoey comforted her parents.

"Calm down? He tainted our reputations in front of the Black family and the Rogers family! What are you trying to do, Levi Garrison? Do you want to drive us to our deaths before you change that shitty attitude of yours?" Caitlyn pointed at Levi as she rebuked him.

Levi said helplessly. "Father, mother, I really do have to attend the opening ceremony."

"That's not the issue here. You brought shame to our family and offended Bailey and Pamela! So what if you attend the ceremony? That doesn't change anything. You're still a piece of human trash!" Aaron yelled angrily.

Caitlyn could not contain her wrath too. "Perhaps you can participate in the ceremony because you once stumbled into the God of War due to sheer luck.

But he's not acquainted with you at the end of the day. You have nothing to back up your big words as always!"

Zoey immediately dragged Levi away. They will force us to get a divorce if we stay there any longer.

The next day, Abigail contacted Aaron in the afternoon and told him her parents had calmed down. Abigail's parents were willing to accept their apology if they bring Levi along and make him ask for their forgiveness sincerely. But they wanted to deal with Aaron and his family only after the opening ceremony ended.

Aaron ordered Levi to beg for Bailey and Pamela's forgiveness in person. Otherwise, he would have to divorce Zoey.

Levi agreed to his request.

The opening ceremony for Kirin's Special Operations Regiment occurred the next day.

Kirin contacted Levi early in the morning, informing the latter that he would be picking him up.

Levi asked Aaron, Caitlyn, and Zoey if they wanted to tag along with him to the opening ceremony, but they scolded him instead.

Zoey chided him and told him not to interrupt her during her office hours.

Meanwhile, the army sent a car to pick Will up.

Abigail and her family got into the car together with him.

Pamela could not hide her exhilaration for having the opportunity to sit in an army vehicle despite her extraordinary family background.

The soldier driving the car said cheerfully, "You guys are so lucky, Will. The King of War, Kirin, will be instructing all of you personally. Most importantly, the God of War wants to give a motivational speech to all of you too."

Will was fidgeting in his seat as he could barely contain his excitement to meet with his idol, the God of War. "You're right. I can't believe I am blessed with this good fortune." Will smiled in embarrassment.

"That's because of your remarkable excellence. They wouldn't have selected you otherwise!" Pamela complimented him.

The soldier driving the car nodded in agreement. "She's right. You must be an elite soldier to qualify for the training camp."

Will straightened his back proudly as they flattered him. But disappointment rose within him when he turned to look at Abigail.

Abigail was not gazing at Will with admiration as he thought she should be. In contrast, she was acting indifferently.

The car entered the military zone after some time.

They finally arrived at the training base after another hour.

All of them were impressed by the sight of soldiers equipped with actual weapons standing guard all over the place.

The participants for the training camp and their families were arranged to sit in a large, vacated area.

A total of 100 participants were selected to join the training camp. Everyone was looking around enthusiastically as if it was their first day of enlistment in the army.

The Protector Chapter 112

Someone whispered, "It's better to keep quiet in this place to prevent offending anyone here. They're all formidable men."

"You're right. There are plenty of veterans attending the training camp for the first time, but they are already part of the Special Operations Regiment."

Will was not his usual arrogant self after hearing the whispers. He stayed silent and became timid among the crowd.

Pamela and the others were more excited than frightened. The people inside this base are all highly ranked soldiers and impressive men in the army. We can count ourselves lucky to be acquainted with just a few of them.

"Alright. Friends and families, come over here. I want all the soldiers to follow me!"

In the end, the crowd was segregated into 2 groups. The soldiers were crouching in front while their families sat behind on the benches provided.

Pamela and Bailey were overjoyed to see the colonels and officers lined up in front of them.

Pamela began to scan her surroundings as a thought popped into her mind.

She sneered after examining the crowd. "Levi Garrison is a joke. Didn't he say he'll be attending as well? Where is he? I can't even spot his shadow among all these people."

"Don't tell me you believe in that scum's words? I did not even take him seriously last night," Bailey responded mockingly.

Abigail started looking for Levi as well. She thought Levi would come, but she did not see him anywhere.

Will had already searched the crowd with his gaze, and he did not encounter Levi either. He thought to himself sarcastically. Where are you, Levi Garrison? You're just a piece of human trash good at talking big at the end of the day.

"Quiet down, everyone. The King of War, Kirin, will make an appearance soon." An officer waved his hand in front to signal everyone. The crowd fell silent as they held their breaths involuntarily, waiting for the King of War to show himself.

A military SUV drove into the area shortly after. The soldiers and guards saluted immediately at the sight of the vehicle.

A murmur of excitement rippled through the crowd. "The God of War is here!"

Pamela and Bailey stared unblinkingly at the SUV.

A young man dressed in a military outfit with one star embedded on his shoulder got out of the car. That man was the King of War, Kirin.

Every soldier gazed at him with respect after he got out of the car.

All the family members gasped in terror when they saw Kirin's appearance. The King of War is such a young man?

Everyone's eyes were still fixated on the SUV because they assumed the next person to come out of the car would be the God of War. But they were met with disappointment.

Someone was seated inside the SUV, but he did not get out of the car.

Kirin moved forward and addressed the crowd. "First of all, I want to welcome everyone to the training camp's opening ceremony. Next, I have a statement to announce. The God of War himself is seated inside the car. But there are privacy rules to follow in the army. Non-military personnel are not allowed to meet with him."

Everyone was well aware of the privacy rules, but they could not help feeling a little regretful for missing the opportunity to meet with the God of War. Even Will Ramos was disheartened.

Kirin added, "However, the God of War will meet with the newcomers later."

The passion returned to Will's deadpan eyes instantaneously. I can finally meet my idol!

The friends and families of the participants stared intently at the SUV in an attempt to discern the God of War's figure. Pamela Rogers and Bailey Black did that too.

Pamela even put on a pair of glasses to aid with her eyesight.

Abigail looked in the direction of the SUV curiously as well.

Suddenly, she exclaimed subconsciously, "Why does he resemble my brother-in-law?"

Pamela was shocked. "You think so too? That man inside the car does look like Levi Garrison!"

"Let me see!" Bailey Black put on his glasses and narrowed his eyes at the SUV. "I think this person does look similar to him too!"

The Protector Chapter 113

Abigail and her parents exchanged glances with one another as a thought flashed across their minds. Could Levi Garrison be the God of War?

But they quickly erased that idea. That's impossible. If Levi is the God of War, why did he let Aaron and Caitlyn live in such a small room? Why is Aaron still driving a Haval if his son-in-law is so capable?

“Say, will the God of War wear a military outfit if he’s here in the army base?” Bailey asked suddenly.

“Of course! This is such an important ceremony.” Abigail and her mother answered at the same time.

They did not believe the God of War to be Levi despite the resemblance in appearance.

At that moment, someone got out of the car.

That person was Azure Dragon dressed in his military outfit.

Kirin nodded in Azure Dragon’s direction when he sensed his movements.

“That must be the God of War!” Everyone gazed in that direction frantically.

The outsiders thought that only the God of War could trigger such respectful acknowledgement from Kirin. But they did not know it was normal for Kirin to greet Azure Dragon that way because the latter was Kirin’s senior.

Moreover, Azure Dragon’s rank was blocked by the car because he got down from the other side of the vehicle. So the crowd assumed him to be the God of War.

“I am right! There’s no way Levi Garrison is the God of War. I am satisfied with this outcome now. We’ve finally seen the God of War’s great appearance.” Pamela and her husband were exhilarated.

Everyone was under the impression that they had met with the actual God of War. But they did not know that Azure Dragon deliberately got out of the car to ventilate the air inside the vehicle because Levi wanted to smoke.

The opening ceremony ended quickly.

Pamela Rogers and Bailey Black had their wish fulfilled as they were acquainted with Kirin before they left.

However, they did not know that Levi had arranged for Kirin to look for Abigail on purpose. Pamela and Bailey were contented because they thought the meeting with Kirin was due to fate.

The newcomers were gathered together after their friends and families left.

Will and the other soldiers were agitated because they would be meeting the God of War now.

Levi got out of the car and walked toward the group of soldiers with Azure Dragon beside him.

Will was positioned at the back of the platoon, so he could not get a good look at the on-going scene. He barely made out the newly appeared figures.

“Oh? That person’s silhouette looks like Levi Garrison,” Will uttered to himself in astonishment with a frown.

Levi and Azure Dragon stood in front of the platoon.

Clarity washed over everyone when they saw Azure Dragon’s rank. He’s not the God of War. The God of War is the man standing next to him. That man in casual wear!

Kirin came to a halt in front of Levi and saluted him. “Report, Sir! We have gathered all the newcomers. Please provide us with further instructions!”

Kirin’s gesture had indirectly reflected Levi’s status.

Levi raised his voice firmly, “At ease, soldiers!”

All the newcomers made a similar and synchronized movement upon receiving the order.

Everyone panted heavily as they gazed at the God of War in awe, who was merely a few steps away from them.

Color drained from Will’s face after he discerned Levi’s face. H-H-He... He’s the God of War? I’m not mistaken, right? Levi Garrison is the God of War. No wonder he said he could attend the ceremony at will. He even mentioned the ceremony would not proceed without him...

Will’s heart was beating in his throat as adrenaline coursed through his body. He was scared out of his wits.

When he looked up, Will noticed Levi was staring at him with a smile. Fear overwhelmed him at that acknowledgement.

Thump!

Will’s vision went black as he passed out on the ground.

Everyone was stunned. We are excited, but his condition is simply an exaggeration.

Levi asked coldly, "Where is this soldier from? What's with that terrible stamina and fragile body?"

The Protector Chapter 114

"He is Will Ramos from South City's South Warzone, Sir!" Someone reported immediately.

Kirin said furiously. "How did he qualify the selection with that kind of stamina? Send him back to where he came from!"

Afterwards, Levi's brief pep talk to the soldiers marked the beginning of the training camp.

Aaron visited Levi's house when he returned home that night.

He was there to inform Levi that Pamela and Bailey were willing to accept his apology that night because they were in a good mood.

"Okay. I'll go," Levi agreed. He also reserved a table at Grand Royal Restaurant with Zoey.

Abigail and her parents arrived after a short while.

Pamela and Bailey were over the moon as they smiled dazzlingly the whole time. They were even polite to Aaron and Caitlyn when they exchanged greetings.

"Why are you so happy? Let us be a part of the joy too." Aaron and Caitlyn were intrigued.

Pamela was pleased. "This is all because of Will. Not only did we become acquainted with the King of War, Kirin, during the ceremony earlier, but we also got to see the God of War's appearance."

Abigail nodded in agreement.

"Really? You're now acquainted with Kirin?" Aaron was caught in excitement. I want to get to know these influential figures too.

Exhilaration was written all over Bailey's face. "That's right. He even knows our names. He said Abigail looks like his sister."

"What? The King of War, Kirin, knows your names? Oh my God!" Caitlyn was astounded.

Pamela explained, "They had our information as well as Will's, so they know everyone about us. I think Kirin accepted us as part of his circle. Why else would he take the initiative to meet with us?"

Bailey nodded. "Yes. We do have the qualifications and background to be included in his circle. Kirin told us to look for him if we face any trouble in the future."

Aaron and Caitlyn could not be more jealous about Abigail and her family's luck.

"I am very happy today. Do not hesitate to contact me if you need any help in the future, Caitlyn," Bailey said to his sister.

"Thank you, Bailey. Thank you!" Aaron and Caitlyn expressed their gratitude immediately. We've been waiting for so long for him to say that.

Bailey shifted his gaze onto Levi. "But he must apologize first!"

"Yes, that's right. He needs to say that he's sorry. Otherwise, we will never accept all of you." Pamela was determined.

Abigail whispered to Levi as she was caught in a difficult position too. "Please don't mind this, Levi."

Zoey urged him as well. "Just do as they say."

"I'm very sorry, Uncle and Aunt. I shouldn't have talked back to you yesterday." Levi apologized.

"Okay. I will forgive you because I am in a good mood today." Pamela waved her hand.

Bailey questioned him suddenly. "By the way, did you attend the ceremony today? We did not see you there just now."

Pamela stared at Levi mockingly. Let's listen to his excuse.

“I went. But you were not qualified to meet with me.” Levi told them the truth.

But his honesty infuriated Pamela and Bailey. They glared at him in fury.

Aaron and Caitlyn were dumbfounded. We poured in so much effort to finally get on good terms with them. But Levi has to ruin everything again.

Zoey was dazed. What did he say?

The door to the private room was pushed open just as Pamela and Bailey were about to unleash their anger. “Mr. Black, Mdm. Rogers, something terrible has happened. Mr. Ramos was kicked out from the North Hampton Warzone because he’s not qualified to join the training camp due to his poor body condition. They will be sending him into the room now.”

The Protector Chapter 115

Pamela and her husband’s faces turned white upon hearing the news. “What? Poor body condition? Not qualified to participate in the training camp? Is there a mix-up here?” They were caught in utter disbelief. We know Will’s capabilities well. He is definitely strong enough to take part in the training camp.

The door was pushed open again while they fell into a daze.

Two waiters brought Will into the room as he lay on a stretcher. Two men from the army followed behind them. They were tasked to send Will back.

“He’s really here. What happened?” Pamela asked in a hurry.

But Will saw Levi from the corner of his eyes when he was about to speak.

“Argh...” He passed out again.

The soldiers sneered. “Look at that. This is the eighth time he fainted. How can he participate in the training camp in that condition?”

They were puzzled as well. What’s wrong with him? He blacked out whenever we mentioned the God of War. But this time, he fainted before anyone said anything.

Pamela talked to one of the soldiers. "Is there any chance for Will Ramos to reenter the training camp?"

"I'm afraid that's not possible. He passed out in front of the God of War. That's considered an offensive act. The King of War, Kirin, is very displeased with him. I believe that Will Ramos' career is ruined from today onwards." The soldier answered honestly.

"He disrespected the God of War. That's a gutsy move!" The other soldier added sarcastically.

Pamela and Bailey were unsettled by the soldier's elaboration. Did he offend the God of War? Even the Rogers family and the Black family do not have the courage to do that.

No one had the interest to continue with the meal after the soldiers left.

Will regained consciousness after some time.

He was about to pass out again when he saw Levi after he woke up. But Levi quickly ordered, "Don't faint again."

Will finally recomposed himself, but his face was filled with terror and his mind was blank.

"What happened, child?" Pamela asked.

"I... I saw the God of War..." Will stammered.

"But why did you pass out?" Bailey and Pamela were caught in perplexity.

"That's because the God of War is..."

Will looked at Levi in fright as he spoke.

He wanted to inform them of the truth about Levi's identity, but the words stuck in his throat.

The privacy rules of the army surfaced in his mind. I will be exposing classified information protected by the army if I tell them about the God of War's identity.

Everyone gazed at Levi as well. A thought popped into their minds. Perhaps he's trying to tell us that Levi is the God of War? The resemblance between the man seated inside the car and Levi is too uncanny...

They waited for Will to complete his sentence anxiously.

Finally, Will uttered, "The God of War is my idol. My body is weak, so I fainted when I saw him. I am a huge embarrassment to everyone."

"Oh, I see. You almost scared me there. I thought you're trying to tell us that Levi is the God of War." Pamela breathed a sigh of relief.

"That's fine. Take a good rest to recover your health. You don't have to participate in the training camp anymore." Pamela consoled him.

Bailey eyed Levi and asked the question in his mind, "Did you see him at the training base today, Will?"

"Yes!" Will gave Levi a look with complicated emotions in his eyes.

"What? So you really went?" Pamela and the others were in disbelief.

"Mr. Black, Mdm. Rogers, please take me away for now. I would like to rest."

The Protector Chapter 116

Will did not have the courage to stay a second longer in the same room as Levi.

“We’re not finishing the meal anymore. We’ll be leaving now,” Pamela said.

Aaron and Caitlyn were worried. “Have you forgiven us then?”

“Yes! I’ve accepted his apology. By the way, you are allowed to attend Mother’s birthday banquet this year. She has accepted your return to the family,” Bailey Black answered.

Caitlyn was delighted after she was informed of the news. I can finally attend Mother’s birthday banquet since I left my home 20 years ago.

“We will be there!” Aaron said emotionally. We can hold our heads high by the time we attend the banquet because Zoey’s project is progressing well.

Caitlyn glanced at Levi happily after Pamela and her family left. “Alright. We will forgive you this time.”

Aaron pleaded with his wife sincerely, “Will you allow me to hang out with my friends tonight, Caitlyn?”

“Fine. Off you go. Take this bank card with you. I’m warning you now. Do not gamble tonight!” Caitlyn handed a credit card to Aaron.

Levi knew Aaron was a gambling addict since a long time ago. He lost a lot of money in the past. I even had to clear his debt previously. Caitlyn forbids him from taking part in those entertainments afterwards. He’s not allowed to drink with friends too. I suppose she’s making an exception today because her return has been accepted by the Black family today.

“Alright! I’ve quit gambling for a long time now!” Aaron was elated like a child.

Levi was amused by his behavior. He’s a typical henpecked man.

The four of them parted ways afterward.

Aaron went to meet up with his friends.

They were tipsy after gulping a few bottles of wine down.

Alex Glen placed his arm around Aaron's shoulder. "I heard there's a new underground casino in North Hampton. Why don't we try out our luck there?"

Aaron shook his head. "No way! I made a promise to my wife not to gamble anymore."

"Don't worry. We are just going to play a few rounds to try out our luck. You won't lose any money," Alex persuaded him.

"That's right. We did not bring a lot of money with us anyway. We'll play in small amounts, just for fun. What if we get lucky? Do you know Andrew Zafer from the marketplace? I heard he earned 800 thousand from the casino with a mere 3000 starting amount!"

"He's right. We are so jealous of him!"

Aaron's resolution wavered as his friends convinced him. "Fine. I'll go. But I have to say this in advance. I can only fork out 5000."

"Sure, sure..." Aaron and the gang headed toward the underground casino together.

Aaron was especially excited when they arrived at the venue.

A man, dressed lavishly with a glass of red wine in his hand, was seated on the second floor of the casino while he gazed at the crazed gamblers beneath him. He asked with a smile, "Aaron Lopez is here?"

"Yes, Mr. Rogers."

The men engaged in that conversation were none other than Oswald Rogers and Howard Corbyn.

Oswald sneered while looking at Aaron. "I've been thinking of ways to target all of you, but here you are, offering to step into my trap on your own accord."

Howard sought out Oswald's opinion. "How should we proceed, Mr. Rogers?"

"He's going to lose! We'll make him lose everything. Even the Lopez family will not be able to cover his debt. I am going to force Levi to his death with this staggering amount of money!" Oswald grinned like a madman.

Howard nodded. "I'll make the necessary arrangements, Mr. Rogers. I will make sure to let Aaron Lopez learn his lesson well this time."

The Protector Chapter 117

Aaron was oblivious to the incoming danger that awaited him. He was enjoying himself to his heart's content at that moment.

He had won for a few consecutive rounds and earned roughly 100 thousand. On his 10th straight win, Aaron's earnings accumulated to a few million.

Alex and the others persuaded Aaron to continue with his gambling. "You're too lucky today, Aaron! Go on! Let's go big! 10 million is easily achievable with your insane luck tonight!"

A gambling addict caught up in his moment of glory often lost his ability to think rationally. Aaron was confident he could bring home 10 million by the time he was done gambling that night.

Zoey and Levi were startled awake by the ringing from their phones in the middle of the night.

Caitlyn had dialed their numbers relentlessly.

Zoey was wide awake the moment she answered the call. "What? Oh my God!"

Her face went paper-white as the phone slipped out of her hand and fell onto the floor with a thud.

Levi asked immediately, "What's wrong?"

Zoey sobbed. "Father went to the casino and lost 300 million. He's being detained right now because he was caught cheating."

"What? 300 million? How did he lose so much money?" Levi frowned. Something's wrong. Someone must have set a trap for Aaron.

"Where is he?" Levi added.

"I don't know. Let's meet up with Mom for now."

Caitlyn was already tear-stricken by the time Levi and Zoey arrived.

Levi floored the accelerator toward the underground casino after Caitlyn informed them of the location.

The atmosphere inside the casino was unbearable. Deafening noises and cigarette smoke lingered in the air.

A few muscular men came in front of Levi, Zoey, and Caitlyn. "Who are you people?" They inquired fiercely.

Levi stated the aim of their visit directly. "We are here to look for Aaron Lopez."

"Oh. You are that cheater's family. Follow me." They led Levi and the others to the second floor.

Levi sounded the situation out in the meantime. "What happened here, actually?"

"Aaron Lopez cheated after he started to lose money. Then we caught him red-handed. How dare he cheats after losing 300 million to the casino? We need to follow the rules here and chop off his fingers!" One of the men sneered.

Zoey and Caitlyn were frightened as their faces turned to the shade of chalk.

More than 10 men stood menacingly inside a large private room on the second floor with batons in their hands.

Levi, Zoey, and Caitlyn caught the distinctive smell of blood the moment they entered the room.

A person was lying on the floor in a curled position. His body twitched faintly in a pool of blood.

"Dad! Aaron!" Zoey and Caitlyn rushed forward when they recognized the person to be Aaron Lopez.

Levi grimaced when he saw how terribly beaten Aaron was.

"Save me! Save me, please!" Aaron yelled fearfully when he saw his family.

The few thugs surrounded Levi and the others instantaneously.

A scary-looking man sat on the sofa with a gold necklace around his neck, dressed in a leopard-printed shirt.

He tossed a cigarette butt on the floor and crushed it with his foot. Then he looked up. "Are you Aaron Lopez's family members?"

"Yes. That's right. He's my father-in-law." Levi met that man's eyes.

"Let me introduce myself. I am the owner of this casino. My name is Enzo Fielder. Everyone refers to me as Mr. Enzo."

Enzo pointed at Aaron. "Your father-in-law lost 300 million to the casino and tried to trick us. According to the rules of this casino, he will have to settle the 300 million debt and let us chop off all 10 of his fingers to settle the score. Otherwise, he's going to die here! Hehe!" Enzo threatened Levi and the others.

Zoey and Caitlyn were trembling in a terror-stricken manner.

Aaron cowered in Caitlyn's arms as his body quaked uncontrollably.

The Protector Chapter 118

Levi sized up his surroundings and said mockingly, "Why do I feel that this casino is not a place of such high standards that someone could lose 300 million in a night?"

"Hmph! That's because your father-in-law took a great risk. He thought he could win 100 million after earning 10 million. So who is to blame for his greediness? More importantly, no one can condone his cheating behavior in this place." Enzo waved his hand. Alex and the others were dragged forward swiftly.

"Tell them whether I'm speaking of the truth or not!" Enzo ordered.

Alex and his friends answered immediately. "Yes. That is the truth. We told Aaron to stop after he won 10 million. But he wanted to continue gambling to win more money. So he brought this on himself for losing ultimately. We did not expect him to cheat afterwards! Why do we have a friend like you, Aaron?"

Aaron looked at his friends incredulously in a daze. "All of you framed me! You set a trap to frame me!" Aaron roared.

Alex glowered at him. "Did we force you to do anything? You made all the decisions on your own accord!"

Aaron fell silent. True, no one forced me to do anything. I did everything willingly. I can only blame my own greediness.

Zoey understood that it was a set-up, so she whispered to Levi, "Should we call the cops?"

"No. Calling the cops will only worsen the situation. They might resort to desperate measures if we do that," Levi answered.

Unfortunately, Enzo overheard their conversation. He sneered. "Call the cops? Sure, go ahead and do that. He borrowed the money from others, so we have written proof as well as the various documents he mortgaged to us. We carried out every procedure according to the law. Please feel free to contact the cops. The court will confiscate the Lopez family's business and properties by that time!"

Everyone looked at Aaron in bewilderment.

Aaron nodded. I did mortgage the family house and business. I deliberately went to the Lopez family house to steal the documents after I lost all my money. I wanted to get the money to turn the tables around. But I lost everything instead and even incurred a 300 million debt on myself.

"Please don't tell my father about this. He will kill me if he knows what I've done!" Aaron said hurriedly.

Enzo jeered at Levi and the others. "Do you want to call the cops? It's up to you to make the decision!"

Zoey was clueless as to how she should react to the unexpected turn of events.

Levi grimaced. They clearly planned every move to target us.

"Have you made up your mind?" Enzo asked.

"We will not call the cops, and we'll return the money. But we do not have 300 million with us right now. Can you give us a few days to collect the sum?" Zoey proposed.

“Sure. No problem!” Enzo added mockingly. “I am not worried at all. If all of you disappear, then I will look for Harry Lopez instead.”

“But can you please don’t chop off my father’s fingers?” Zoey pleaded for mercy.

“I’ll do you a favor. You can bring him away now. But for every extra day you fail to return the money, I will chop off one of his fingers...” Enzo smiled sinisterly.

“Alright. We agree.” Levi brought Aaron and his family away from the casino in the end.

Caitlyn was on the verge of tears when they reached the entrance. “What should we do? Where can we find 300 million at a moment’s notice?”

“We have no other choice but to say that we’ll return the money. This is the best we can do to delay the situation from turning south immediately,” Zoey lamented.

Aaron rebuked Levi when he saw the smiling expression on the latter’s face. “Why are you smiling? Why don’t you come up with a solution instead, you useless piece of shit! I could’ve settled this issue effortlessly if my son-in-law is a capable person. Regretfully, you are a good-for-nothing piece of crap! You are to blame for everything that has happened today!”

The Protector Chapter 119

Levi was stunned after listening to Aaron. He looked at his father-in-law in disbelief. Is he blaming me for his own wrongdoings?

Zoey was slightly upset. “What are you saying, Dad? You caused this mess yourself. Levi has got nothing to do with this matter.”

“Don’t give me that nonsense! He could’ve paid for the 300 million debt easily if he’s as successful as before. But he doesn’t even have a single dime with him now!” Aaron stared at Levi hatefully. “Aren’t you capable? You said you’re acquainted with the God of War, right? Can you handle this mess now? You must divorce Zoey if you fail to take care of this matter. I am a man of my word!”

Aaron vented all his pent-up anger at Levi after the horrible experience he underwent.

Caitlyn glared at him. "What are you talking about? That's not important. The most important thing is to find a way to collect 300 million as soon as possible. Let's go home now!"

Enzo dialed a number after Levi and the others left. "I've executed your orders, Mr. Rogers."

"Okay. You can pay Harry Lopez a visit directly after a few hours." The person on the other end of the phone replied.

Aaron suggested when they arrived home, "Honey, only your brother, Bailey, can help us now. Let's borrow money from them while they are still in the city!"

"You are only going to infuriate them for knocking on their doors in the middle of the night. We'll wait until tomorrow before we do anything!" Caitlyn glowered at her husband.

Zoey asked her father with a grim expression, "What happened exactly, Dad?"

Aaron described everything in detail from the beginning. He had won multiple rounds consecutively and accumulated winnings up to 10 million initially. But when he seized the opportunity to gamble further, he began to lose...

"I realize now that I've been tricked. Alex and his friends are a group of bastards!" Aaron snarled.

Zoey nodded. "That was indeed a trap."

"We have two ways of resolving this issue now. The first way is to return the money. The second method is to investigate this matter and find out the person who set you up. Personally, I think the second method is a wiser choice. We should investigate deeper before we pay them." Levi offered his idea.

Aaron stared at him fiercely. "Are you suggesting that on purpose? Did you not listen to what they said? Now you're telling me to wait and spend time to carry out an investigation? By the time we find out anything, I'll be left fingerless and even toeless!"

"Alright, let's not argue anymore. We'll go to my brother's place to borrow money from them come morning." Caitlyn was displeased.

Levi left the house quietly afterward.

Zoey wanted to think of an alternative solution, so she left as well.

The next morning, everyone in the Lopez family was still sound asleep when someone busted the door open with a loud bang.

A group of burly men covered in tattoos rushed into the house in an imposing manner.

They went straight to the Lopez family's living room.

Harry and the others hurriedly checked out the situation as they were startled by the commotion. All of them were frightened by the unwelcoming sight.

"What are you doing? You're trespassing on private property, so don't you dare do anything to us!" Harry bellowed in rage.

Enzo threw Aaron's IOU at Harry without saying a word.

Harry and the others were shocked after reading the note. "What? Aaron owes you 300 million? He even mortgaged the Lopez family's properties and business?"

Harry's vision went black as he nearly fainted.

Enzo said with a smile, "That's right. All the Lopez family's possessions are mortgaged to me now, including this house. Aaron Lopez even brought me all the necessary documents, so we are simply following the legal procedures here."

The Protector Chapter 120

Harry hurriedly went to look for the mortgage documents, but he soon realized all the documents were stolen.

"I was wondering to myself why Aaron sneaked into the house last night. So he came here to steal the documents!" Henry said angrily.

"You better pay me 300 million as soon as possible, now that I own all your properties and business. I will have the court to confiscate these possessions

if you do not cough up the money!” Enzo urged the Lopez family in a joyful manner.

Harry Lopez did not say a word. I had not distributed the Lopez family’s inheritance previously. So Aaron’s IOU is legally binding because of his status as my descendant.

“You son of a b*tch, Aaron Lopez!” Harry was seething with rage.

“You have one day to return the money to me. Otherwise, I’m sure you know what consequences await you.” Enzo left after he spoke.

All hell broke loose in the Lopez family.

“Let’s go to Aaron’s place right away!”

Aaron and Caitlyn were about to depart from their house at sunrise.

Bang, bang, bang...

Someone banged on their door impatiently.

A group of people rushed into the house with Harry leading the way after Aaron unlocked the door. He slapped his son across the face without a second thought. “What a dumb son I have! What have you done?” Then Harry slapped Aaron a few more times.

“You... You already know, Father?” Aaron asked timidly while covering his face.

“A bunch of people came to stir up a ruckus at the family house early in the morning. What do you think?” Harry panted heavily.

Fabian said with a grimace, “You better start talking.”

Henry sneered. “I heard you lost the money because you gambled again? You are just like your son-in-law, always failing to correct your bad habits!”

Harry fixated his eyes on Aaron. “I’ll chop off your ears if you do not explain everything clearly today!”

Aaron glanced at Caitlyn before he began. “This is all Levi Garrison’s fault!”

“What? How is this matter related to him?” Harry asked in surprise.

Aaron nodded. "Levi lost the money because he went to the casino. I had no other choice but to steal the documents because they wanted to kill Levi on the spot!"

He knew his family would beat him up if he informed them of the truth while their anger was at the boiling point. So he placed all the blame on Levi instead.

They did not trust Aaron's words at that moment, so everyone turned to look at Caitlyn.

Caitlyn said through her gritted teeth, "That's right. It's all because of Levi Garrison. Aaron has already quit gambling for 6 years now. Levi has been gambling because he wants to become rich. Do you still remember the money we paid back previously, Father?"

Harry nodded. "Of course. Don't tell me that Levi earned that 5 million through gambling?"

Caitlyn nodded. "That's right. He did not borrow the money but got it through gambling. This time, he lost 300 million."

Henry questioned her, "But I verified this myself. He really did borrow the money."

Caitlyn responded with a question on her own, "Do you think he can borrow that large amount of money without anything to mortgage, Henry?"

Henry understood instantaneously. "Now I get it. The bank loaned him the money because he has the capability to return the money through gambling!"

Caitlyn's speech convinced every member of the Lopez family.

Aaron gave his wife a thumbs-up internally. She's brilliant! We've successfully placed all the blame on Levi with that perfect excuse.

Aaron seized the moment and said, "Don't you see why Levi is not here? That's because he fled in advance!"

Harry was infuriated to his limits. "I'm going to kill you, Levi Garrison!"

"Let's go and find Levi now!" Everyone left angrily.

The Protector Chapter 121

Aaron drew in a deep breath after the Lopez family had left—they were safe for now.

“Whew—honey, you sure are smart!”

Aaron didn't forget to give Caitlyn a word of compliment.

“Hurry up and go look for my brother and Pamela! Or you'll be the one to lose a finger!” Caitlyn said as she rolled her eyes at him.

The two immediately rushed to the Marriott Hotel.

“Is there something you want for you to see us at this hour?” Pamela asked.

“Bailey, Pamela, I'll cut to the chase then! We want to borrow three hundred million from you! We're in need of money for our business!”

“Don't worry about us not paying you back. You guys should know about Zoey's project. It's a project worth more than a billion. Three hundred million will definitely not be a problem!”

Aaron and Caitlyn went straight to the question of money.

Pamela and Bailey exchanged glances.

“We need to discuss this first!”

After half an hour, the two agreed to lend them three hundred million—mainly because Zoey's project was guaranteed to succeed.

“That's great!” Aaron was exhilarated.

However, at this moment, Pamela's phone rang.

It was Oswald.

Pamela answered the call. “Oswald, what's the matter?”

“Aunt Pamela, I have something to tell you...”

Pamela gave Aaron and Caitlyn a puzzled look. Her expression took on a drastic change the more she listened to Oswald.

“Okay, I got it. I won’t lend it then!”

After hanging up the phone, Pamela snapped, “You people were lying? Do you really need money for your business? Aaron, you’ve lost three hundred million from gambling, didn’t you?!”

“Get lost, now!” Bailey’s fury sprang to life when he learned about the truth. “Come see us again only after you settled your debt!”

Then the couple kicked Aaron and Caitlyn out, leaving them stupefied.

Why did they change their mind after answering one phone call?

“What do we do now?”

Aaron sweated with anxiety.

On the other side, Zoey was trying to find a solution as well, but the most she could come up with was fifty million.

She was at her wits’ end, as they had already invested the rest of the money in the project.

Besides, the project would have to be suspended as well if she took that fifty million away.

It was to check on this matter that Levi had left early this morning.

However, the strange thing was that the other party clearly didn’t cheat. It was Aaron who lost the money after gambling with an expert.

It was clearly a deception, yet it was seamless.

There must be something fishy. I can definitely find out the truth if I call the cops, but Aaron will have to be imprisoned, and Zoey will be heartbroken if that happens.

Levi didn’t want that to see that. He could have easily paid up that three hundred million, but he wanted to find out the mastermind behind this scheme first.

Everyone had thought of every possible way, but they just couldn’t get the money together.

Dread gnawed at Aaron's insides at the thought of having his fingers chopped off tomorrow.

"Honey, what should I do? Think of something! I don't want to have my fingers chopped off!" Aaron shouted anxiously.

Caitlyn creased her brows. "I heard Zoey will contact major investors next to borrow money, but I'm afraid it'll take a little longer. Probably a few days."

"Few days? I don't have a few days! My fingers will be chopped off in a few days, that's for sure!"

Aaron got all sweaty.

"So find someone to replace you during these few days."

There was a bright light in Aaron's eyes. "You mean I should put Levi on the spot and have his fingers chopped off on my behalf?"

"Who else do you think if not Levi? You've thrown the blame on him, anyway!"

Caitlyn gave him an angry stare.

Aaron nodded in approval. "That's right! He's just a good-for-nothing. What's the big deal with having his fingers chopped off? He has to rely on us to feed him, anyway! That's going to be the biggest contribution he's ever made for the family!"

The Protector Chapter 122

Caitlyn sighed. "But the problem is Zoey. If she finds out, she definitely will not agree to this."

"We'll just hide from her then and tell her that the casino is giving us a few more days. We'll trick Levi to come over and have him go in my stead," Aaron said.

"Then we'll have to call Dad and the others over to impose a little pressure on him. They've been looking for him all day, but to no avail," Caitlyn said.

Aaron quickly made the arrangements.

After learning the news of the postponement for a few days, Zoey was much more relieved, but she didn't stop looking for solutions.

When Harry heard that Levi had been found, he immediately rushed over.

Thereafter, Aaron gave Enzo a call, asking if he could let Levi take his place.

To his surprise, Enzo agreed at once.

After hanging up, Enzo called Oswald.

"Mr. Rogers, you were right. The Lopez family is using Levi as a substitute."

"Okay. Let's make it a slow and terrible ordeal for Levi. Send me the footage of his fingers chopped off tomorrow!"

Oswald's cold and crazed voice sounded from over the phone.

...

Levi's investigation was beginning to take shape when Aaron called.

"Levi, come quick! Things have changed! Come straight to the casino!"

Hanging up the phone, Levi made a beeline for the casino. He realized Harry and the others were there when he arrived.

Upon seeing him, they charged forward, pushing and shoving him.

"What the hell? Did you lose three hundred thousand in gambling? You've f**king ruined the Lopez family!"

"You're going to destroy the Lopez family! I'm going to kill you!"

...

Utterly confused, Levi stared at the crowd incredulously.

Me, gambling?

It dawned on him that Aaron and Caitlyn had put the blame on him when he noticed their unnatural demeanor from afar.

Thus, it was inevitable that Harry and the others would vent their anger on him as they didn't know the truth.

Aaron seized the chance to come forward, scolding, "Take responsibility for what you've done, Levi!"

"Yeah! Take care of it yourself!"

The mass put in their two pennyworth.

Aaron pulled Levi to a side and said sternly, "You will go to meet Mr. Enzo on my behalf later! Or I'll get Zoey to divorce you if you refuse! I have your marriage certificate and household registration in my hands, so I mean what I say!"

"You'll be our best son-in-law if you go in Aaron's stead!" Caitlyn added. "We won't cast you aside even if you've lost all your fingers. Zoey and we will support you for the rest of your life!"

"Yeah, hurry up and agree! It doesn't matter if you lose a finger anyway," Aaron said in a low voice.

Disappointment!

What a disappointment!

Levi could only feel the indifference and coldness of humanity.

How could they do this to me when the chips are down?!

If it weren't for Zoey, he wouldn't have wanted to stay in this home.

However, Aaron and Caitlyn had no other choice.

"What are you people hesitating for? Send him out and let him take care of everything!" Harry urged.

At this moment, Enzo came with his men, surrounding Levi and the others.

"He'll go!"

Before Levi could react, he was pushed out by Aaron and Caitlyn.

"Levi Garrison, right? Take him away!" said Enzo with a sneer.

With that, Levi was taken away by Enzo's followers.

Aaron and Caitlyn heaved a sigh of relief.

“Let’s go now before we get dragged into this!”

Aaron and Caitlyn departed instantly, afraid that Enzo would go back on his words.

The Protector Chapter 123

“I’m wondering if we can push everything on Levi,” said Aaron with a frown after leaving the underground casino.

Caitlyn’s expression changed slightly. “You mean to transfer the three hundred million debt to Levi and then get him to divorce Zoey and cut off all ties with him?”

“Yeah! That would be killing two birds with one stone; we don’t have to pay the money back and we can send away that odious brat.”

“Drop it, you. You’re the one who lost the money, and you signed the agreement. How are you going to do that?”

Aaron sighed, his heart sinking. “I need to think of a way.”

In the casino, Levi was brought into a small and dark room.

Enzo sat in front of him, surrounded by sturdy men.

“Your father-in-law has pushed you out to have your fingers chopped off on behalf of him, Levi Garrison,” said Enzo with a bloodthirsty smile. “Are you ready?”

Enzo picked up a sharp machete that glowed under the lights.

To the side were people holding cameras in their hands, ready to film.

It was an assignment from Oswald to film the process of Levi having his fingers chopped off.

“Hold it right there!” said Levi suddenly.

Enzo grinned, revealing his rows of gold teeth. “Why? Are you afraid? Haha...”

Levi said nothing and silently lit a cigarette.

Cough...

The next second, everyone was choking and coughing violently.

“What on earth does that cigarette contain?” Enzo asked, inspecting the cigarette. “The smoke is so strong!”

“I think it’s a special cigarette from the war zone, Mr. Enzo,” said a thug uncertainly. “My childhood friend who’s a soldier gave me one before. The tobacco scent is really strong.”

Everyone’s expression changed at the mention of the special cigarette.

Enzo snorted. “Drop it, you guys. You think a crook who just came out of prison can smoke a cigarette like that?”

Levi took a puff of his cigarette and said calmly, “Tell me who instructed you to do this before I finish smoking this cigarette or you’ll be sorry for this.”

Enzo and his men burst into laughter.

Levi’s going to get his fingers chopped off. Why is he even threatening me?

Everyone looked at Levi as if he was a fool.

Who exactly is having it worse?

Enzo guffawed. “Is this kid crazy? Don’t worry. It won’t hurt. It’s just one cut!”

“There’s not much time left,” said Levi, looking at the cigarette that was about to burn out. “You’ll be really, really sorry for this if you choose to remain silent.”

Enzo and his men snickered. “Okay then, show us what you got. We’d like to see what you are going to do to us after smoking that cigarette.”

Everyone watched as Levi finished smoking the cigarette, threw it to the ground, and stomped it out.

He lifted his head and glanced at Enzo and his men. “You’ll soon regret this!”

“Regret, my foot! Not before I chop off your hand!”

Shook with fury, Enzo lifted the knife in his hand suddenly.

Bang!

The door suddenly collapsed with a deafening crash, causing Enzo to stop in fright.

In the next second, sturdy men with different skin colors but uniformly dressed in suits rushed in from the outside.

With an average height of over six feet two, they stood there like mountains.

These people were none other than James and other mercenaries that Rick had hired.

They were currently hiding in the shadows, serving as Levi's bodyguards.

It was through the signal Levi had left that they found this place.

"Attack!" James commanded, and with a loud howl, the mercenaries pounced on their prey like tigers dashing down a mountain.

The Protector Chapter 124

Bang!

Crackle!

"Ugh..."

Despite being at the top of their class, the thugs at the casino were not at the same level as the mercenaries who had been in and out of the battlefield all year round.

They were all knocked down in less than a minute, unable to deal with James and his mercenaries' mortal blows.

While the thugs bathed in blood, their faces disfigured, Enzo was the last man standing.

"Beat him!" Levi ordered expressionlessly.

James grabbed Enzo's face and punched him hard. After seven to eight consecutive blows, Enzo's face sank in and was beyond recognition.

The shrill cries like those of a pig being slaughtered reverberated in the small and dark room.

They'd never expected Levi to have so many bodyguards with extremely high combat effectiveness following him.

"Well, what did I say?" Levi scoffed, looking condescendingly at the battered thugs.

"Now, spit it out!"

After being forced to take Aaron's place, Levi figured out that instead of investigating, he might as well use violence to make these people speak.

"I can't," Enzo said in fear. "I'll be as good as dead."

"Beat him! Beat him until he speaks up!" Levi said coldly.

James and the others were militant and enjoyed crushing their enemies. At his command, they grew more violent, giving Enzo the most terrible beating.

Until everyone was beaten half dead, Enzo raised his arms to surrender. "I'll speak! I'll tell you everything!"

James yanked him toward Levi.

"I-It was Howard Corbyn of Levi Group! We were forced into this!" Enzo confessed, but not daring to mention Oswald's name.

However, Levi knew at once that it was Oswald.

He glanced at the camera on the table and chuckled. "It was he who asked you to film the chopping of my fingers?"

"Yes!"

Enzo nodded.

Levi gave James a look. He immediately understood as he pinned Enzo to the table and put his hand on it, slowly lifting the sharp knife.

Next to him, another mercenary took the camera.

“No! No!”

Sensing the situation, Enzo yelled at the top of his lungs.

“AAAAARRRGH!”

Then he let out a terrible scream.

Thereafter, Levi asked Enzo to send out the video, which Howard showed to Oswald upon receiving it.

“Hahaha... Did you hear his scream? I can’t believe a human is capable of making that sound!”

Oswald had a good laugh.

“Howard, send this video anonymously to everyone in the Lopez family, including Zoey,” he instructed.

Very soon, everyone in the Lopez family received the video.

Seeing that the person in the video had his fingers chopped off brutally, Aaron felt a flash of terror, his expression turning for the worse.

“Damn! That was too scary! Thank God that wasn’t me!”

“They really mean it!” Caitlyn got the scare of her life, and so did Harry and the others.

Zoey, who was still on the hunt for a solution, almost threw her phone to the ground after looking at the footage that she had received suddenly.

“Dad’s fingers were chopped off? Was he trying to comfort me when he said that it was postponed for a few days?”

Zoey quickly made a call. “Dad, what happened to you? Are you okay?”

“I’m fine,” Aaron said.

“Then who was it who had his fingers chopped off?” Zoey asked in confusion.

“I-It was Levi...” Aaron faltered.

“What? Levi? How could it be?”

The Protector Chapter 125

“Why is it Levi?” Zoey sobbed after learning the truth.

Caitlyn snatched the phone over and said, “Sweetie, we had no choice! It was Levi who volunteered to take your Dad’s place!”

“How could you do that? You didn’t even tell me! Wait there, I’m coming home now!” Zoey cried.

Shortly after, Zoey arrived home.

“Sweetie, Levi told us not to tell you!”

“It doesn’t matter if he loses a few fingers anyway, but I can’t lose any,” Aaron said.

A sob caught in Zoey’s throat.

“Sweetie, you’ll have to return the money as soon as possible. That way we can buy Levi a few more days,” Caitlyn said.

“But that just means he’ll lose a finger with every passing day!” Zoey screamed. “How could you bear to do it?”

“It’s not like we have a choice. You can’t just watch your dad suffer, can you? He’s still young so he can take it!” Caitlyn comforted.

“Did you force him to go?” Zoey asked, staring at them.

“He did it of his own free will. We didn’t force him!” Aaron denied.

Caitlyn exchanged a look with Aaron and blurted out, “Sweetie, once we settle this debt, you should get a divorce with Levi!”

Zoey looked incredulous. “What? Divorce? Dad, Levi suffered in your stead! How could you just give him the brush after using him? Are we such heartless people?”

“Sweetie, Levi’s sacrifice won’t go unnoticed,” Aaron and Caitlyn said hastily.

“We’re not ungrateful people. We’ll compensate him with enough money once this is over!”

“You...”

I’m so disappointed in them today...

“But you must divorce Levi! He has never been good enough for you in the first place, and now that his fingers are gone, he’s not worthy of you! I can never tolerate my daughter marrying a cripple with incomplete fingers!” said Aaron adamantly.

Zoey was bemused.

How can they be so cruel to Levi just to save themselves?

“Zoey, you can’t cry over spilt milk now. Just hurry up and pay off the debt if you want Levi to suffer a little less,” Caitlyn said.

Just then, Harry arrived.

“Our turning point is here!”

Harry couldn’t contain his excitement.

“What do you mean, Dad?” Aaron asked quizzically.

“Someone has just come to inform us that there is a person willing to help us pay back the money, but on one condition—Zoey must remarry!” Harry said.

“Really?”

Harry raised the three hundred million check in his hand. “They brought the check! Now the question is—Zoey, will you remarry or not?”

Zoey was momentarily lost, but she knew that three hundred million was too big an amount to get at this moment.

“What are you hesitating for? Go on, say yes!” Aaron urged. Right now, money was gold.

“Just say yes. If you agree now, Levi won’t have to suffer so much,” Caitlyn said, causing Zoey to shudder as the cruel image from the video flashed in her mind.

For Levi!

“Okay, I agree to remarry!” said Zoey.

The adults were instantly relieved.

Harry took out a keycard and handed it to Zoey. “If you agree, go look for him at Sheraton Hotel! We only have the right to use the check once you arrive at the hotel!”

The Protector Chapter 126

“Who is this person, Grandpa?” Zoey asked.

“I don’t know. But we were informed that he’s someone who has pursued you before. As long as you marry him, he’ll pay the three hundred million for us and he promises that the Lopez family will be worry-free for life,” Harry said.

Aaron and Caitlyn looked at each other, their eyes brimming with joy at the blessing in disguise and at Zoey’s remarriage to a super-rich man.

“Go on then! Mr. Enzo has changed his mind and is only giving us one day. If you’re late, Levi will lose all his fingers!” Harry prodded.

Hearing that, Zoey accepted the keycard and dashed out.

Naturally, these were all Oswald’s arrangements.

It was he who gave them that three hundred million check. In his opinion, it was equivalent to not spending a single cent as the money would be returned to him after the Lopez family gave the check to Enzo.

Not only could he turn Levi into a cripple and hound him to death, but he could also get Zoey; it was simply the most profitable business.

With an apprehensive heart, Zoey finally arrived at the hotel.

She knew what it signified, but the primary purpose at present was to pay back the money quickly and relieve Levi of his sufferings.

And only by meeting the said person would he solve their problems.

Arriving at the designated presidential suite, Zoey took a deep breath before opening the door.

Standing in front of the French windows in the vast living room was a man whose back Zoey felt was familiar.

When he turned around, Zoey was stunned.

“Oswald, it’s you?” she asked in disbelief.

She had thought it would be someone else. After all, Oswald had never harassed her for the past six years. He would have made his move long ago if he wanted to have her.

“Are you wondering why I haven’t been looking for you for the past six years?” Oswald said, seeing through Zoey’s mind as he adjusted his gold-rimmed spectacles.

Zoey nodded.

“The truth is—I’ve been watching you all this time during these six years—our number one beauty of North Hampton. I wanted to see how long you two can last, but I didn’t expect you to hold on for six years,” Oswald sneered.

“You set up the whole thing about my dad losing money?” Zoey asked, remembering the matter suddenly.

“How could you say that? No one forced him to gamble.” Oswald shrugged.

“You... You’re a scoundrel!” said Zoey angrily.

“Just give up, Zoey! If I could destroy you people six years ago, I can do it again!” Oswald cackled with laughter.

Thunderstruck, Zoey gazed at Oswald incredulously. “You did that six years ago?”

Oswald sniggered. “How do you think the Garrison family could overthrow Levi six years ago?”

Zoey was as angry as hell upon learning that piece of information.

“I’m giving you two options, Zoey. One, strip naked and lie on the bed. Two, leave now, but it will be disastrous for Levi. His fingers and toes will be chopped off, but I can’t say if he’ll choose to jump off the cliff in the end!”

Oswald’s lips curved into a malicious smile at the thought that his goals of forcing Levi to death and having Zoey get into his bed were about to be achieved.

Zoey was utterly floored.

Oswald had planned everything beforehand, and she was left with no choice but to listen to him. Otherwise, Levi would be either crippled or dead.

The Protector Chapter 127

Meanwhile, as soon as Zoey arrived at the hotel, Harry received a message: You can use the check now.

Aaron headed to the underground casino with Harry.

As soon as they arrived, they were brought up short by the sight of Levi coming down from the second floor, holding a stack of documents of title deeds and so on in his hands.

Most importantly, Levi's fingers were all completely intact!

He was clean from head to toe, with not a single stain of blood to be seen.

They looked at Levi's fingers.

Perfectly intact!

All ten fingers are still there!

How is it even possible?!

His fingers were clearly chopped off from the video!

As their mouths were still wide agape with incredulity, Levi had already come up to them.

"Where did you get this check?"

Levi took over the check and had a premonition of something bad as he studied it.

"H-How are you okay? Didn't you have your finger chopped off?" Aaron was baffled.

Levi ignored them and suddenly raised his voice, "How in the world did you get this check?"

"Uh..." Aaron hesitated.

“Spit it out!” Levi snarled, exuding a breath of hostility that made the two of them hold their breaths as if they were being strangled at their necks. His gaze was especially terrifying.

Intimidated, Aaron gave him a factual account of the chronology of the incident.

“At Sheraton Hotel on Maxwell Street!” Aaron finished.

“How long has it been?!” Levi asked.

“It’s probably too late!” Aaron lowered his head.

Harry nodded. “Yeah, it’s too late, even if you get there in a sports car!”

Levi threw the pile of documents to the ground, pushed them aside, and dialed Azure Dragon’s number as he walked out.

“I need a chopper! Immediately! Now!”

Levi’s voice was cold to the extreme.

Less than five minutes after he left the casino, a military helicopter came to a halt on the square.

Ignoring the astonishment of those passing by, Levi boarded the helicopter.

A sports car might not make it there on time, but a helicopter could.

“I want the Sheraton Hotel’s blueprint layout!”

A gleam of murderous intent flashed in Levi’s eyes.

In Sheraton Hotel’s presidential suite, Zoey was still confronting Oswald.

“There’s no use stalling for time, Zoey! The more you hesitate, the more Levi will suffer!” Oswald chortled.

Of course, Zoey understood that point, but she couldn’t get past the hurdle in her heart. She even wanted to jump off the building and get it over with.

Oswald stood with his back facing the window, appraising Zoey.

“Relax, I won’t force you! I’ll wait for you to get into my bed whenever you wish!”

The grin on Oswald's face widened like a devil from hell.

"Do you want me to broadcast it to you now to see how many of Levi's fingers have been chopped off?"

Oswald was well versed in psychological warfare. He was destroying Zoey's psychological defense to a great extent.

"You're a monster!" Zoey shrieked, glaring at Oswald.

"You're not the first person to call me that! Every woman that I've slept with and every man that I've killed called me a monster!" Oswald gave a broken smile as he inched closer.

Zoey stared at him in horror, moving back slowly.

"What? Is Levi that cripple really so good? How am I inferior to him?" Oswald asked.

"No! You can never match him!" Zoey shouted.

Oswald took out his phone and sniggered. "Howard, tell Enzo to chop off Levi's hands and feet for me and send me the video!"

The Protector Chapter 128

"Wait!" Zoey shouted in panic when she heard that. "I'll listen to you only if you don't make things hard for him! Just don't touch him!"

"Then come on!"

Oswald opened his arms wide, waiting for Zoey to fall into his arms.

Bang!

Crack!

Then, suddenly, the French windows behind Oswald made a sound like ice breaking and it shattered.

A man rushed in from outside—it was Levi!

Bang!

With a hard kick, he sent Oswald flying out of the way.

Boom!

Oswald slammed into the wall, bleeding all over the place.

He was about to struggle to his feet when Levi grabbed his hair.

Oomph!

Levi gave him a sharp punch to the face, causing Oswald's spectacles to crumble.

Oomph!

Then came the second punch.

Oomph!

At the third punch, Oswald passed out.

"Stop... Stop it!" shouted Zoey, coming back to her senses. "He's going to die!"

Right now, Levi had surely lost all sense of rationality.

He had never been so infuriated before.

Zoey was his bottom line.

And whoever crossed that line was a dead man!

Zoey looked at Levi in fear. She could feel his overwhelming hostility.

This is a thirty-story building!

How did he come in from the outside?

He's the devil of a man!

"Let's go!"

Zoey pulled Levi away, afraid that he would really beat Oswald to death if they stayed there any longer.

After Levi had left with Zoey, several bodyguards entered the room.

The sight of Oswald lying in a pool of blood scared them.

“Who did this?”

“No matter who did this, even God can’t save him now!”

“Who the f*ck in North Hampton has the audacity to lay hands on Mr. Rogers?”

Zoey knew they were in deep trouble.

She was keenly aware of Oswald’s identity as the sole heir of the aristocratic Rogers family, not to mention his tens of billions of wealth, his network of connections ramified all over the military, political, and business circles.

He was the true juggernaut of North Hampton!

Compared to the Rogers family, they were as small and insignificant as ants.

She was glad that she had responded quickly. Otherwise, Oswald would have been dead by now and the consequences would have been disastrous.

“Don’t mention any of this when we return,” Zoey instructed.

When they returned home, everyone looked at Levi incredulously.

“What happened? Did they make things hard for you? What about those title deeds and other stuff?”

Levi took out the IOU and tore it off in front of the mass.

“It’s settled. You guys don’t have to bother about it anymore,” Levi said coldly.

“Huh? How did you do it?”

Aaron and the others were utterly perplexed.

It was only then that Zoey noticed Levi had come through all those perils unscathed. Not only did he not lose a finger, he even got the IOU.

“I called the cops once I got a lead. The underground casino should be toast by now,” Levi said.

It wasn't long before the police called.

Not only was the underground casino taken down, but Aaron's matter was also revealed to be a fraud.

All the suspects had been apprehended and the seventy thousand that Aaron lost had been returned to him.

Aaron hugged Levi with much excitement. “Oh Levi, you're the best son-in-law we could ever have! You're a keeper! I can't believe you've settled this!”

Even Harry had to admit that Levi was useful this time.

Caitlyn, too, shed tears of joy.

After all, the Lopez family was almost ruined.

However, Zoey couldn't afford to be happy.

The Rogers family definitely will not let this slide!

The Protector Chapter 129

In Zoey's opinion, offending the Rogers family was much more of a crisis than this.

Reckoning that they would probably exterminate the entire Lopez family for this, she told Levi everything as soon as they returned to Bayview Garden.

“Yeah, I know.” Levi nodded.

“What should we do next? The Rogers family will soon find out about this!”

Zoey was stressed out to the extreme.

“Don't worry. You still got me.” Levi smiled.

Zoey wouldn't have believed it if Levi had said that in the past.

However, the scene of Levi breaking in through the window today was etched in her mind.

It made her feel safe and secure, and she was no longer afraid to take on the world with Levi.

Besides, if the Rogers family were to question them, she felt she could plead with Pamela.

At night, while flipping through different news channels on her phone in bed, Zoey came across a piece of intriguing news that happened on the streets of North Hampton.

There was a military helicopter parked directly on the square with someone boarding it without giving so much of a backward glance.

For some reason, Zoey actually associated the helicopter with Levi.

After all, the figure of the person in the image looked rather similar to him, although it was fuzzy.

Could it be Levi who came to Sheraton Hotel by helicopter and broke in through the window on the thirtieth floor?

There is a possibility!

Otherwise, what other explanation could there be?

I'll have to look for witnesses when there's time to see if it was Levi who boarded that helicopter.

Golden Villa, the top luxury villa in North Hampton, covered an area of over fifty hectares.

It was where the aristocratic Rogers family resided.

That night, the atmosphere at home was somber and dead.

After all, Oswald, the heir of the family, was almost beaten to death and was still unconscious.

The entire Rogers family was infuriated.

At the pitiful sight of his grandson, Glenn exuded an aura of overwhelming force.

Glenn had once fought on the battlefield. Although he had retired from the military, his bold and domineering aura was still palpable.

At the end of his military career, Glenn had served as an instructor.

He had taught many students and some of them could now be found in every major war zone, such as Steven Shaw, the Colonel of North Hampton First Metallic Regiment.

Over the years, Steven had been a great help to the Rogers family.

Besides the Rogers family's own strength, it was the network of connections that Glenn had accumulated in the past, covering the military, political, and business circles, that had enabled the Rogers family to achieve their current level of success.

Therefore, no matter what time of the day it was, his students were always at his beck and calls.

"Who did this?" Glenn demanded.

A gentle-looking middle-aged man stepped forward. He was Anthony, Oswald's father.

"Dad, it was Levi Garrison. This is a sticky business. Oswald was beaten up by him for making indecent moves toward Zoey at the hotel. But the point is, the underground casino has been taken down, and they had ratted out on Oswald."

Anthony's expression was very unsightly.

"Is the underground casino really owned by Oswald?" asked Glenn with a gloomy face.

Anthony nodded. "Yes, it is. Fred Turner from the Criminal Investigation Team just called to confirm. Even the captain, Xavier Fields, knows about this. It's a devil of a tricky problem if we get back at Levi for this!"

"What did Fred say?" Glenn asked.

"They knew about the assault on Oswald, but they advised us to smooth things over and treat it as if it never happened," Anthony said.

“Now is not a good time to meet with a mishap when the Rogers Group’s fortieth-anniversary celebration is just around the corner. The impact is just too big,” Glenn sighed.

The Protector Chapter 130

However, Glenn changed the subject soon after. “But look at my grandson. How can I stomach this?”

“As you said, the celebration is around the corner. Let’s get back at Levi once it’s over,” someone suggested.

“Okay, we’ll give him a few days to fool around, then I want him dead, no matter his background or power!” said Glenn distantly.

Then, having thought of something, he instructed, “Inform those students of mine to attend the celebration!”

Everyone felt a rush of excitement when they heard that.

Some of Glenn’s students served in the war zones, and others were in politics.

In terms of age, they were about thirty to forty years old and each of them was in the prime of their life. All held influential positions, like Steven Shaw.

It would have been a magnificent sight to see such people come together for the celebration.

In the next few days, what Zoey had been worried about didn’t happen and it made her jittery.

Thereafter, she found out through connections that the casino belonged to Oswald, which explained why the Rogers family had left it at that.

“No wonder Levi was so confident. He knew the Rogers family wouldn’t dare to make it public,” Zoey mused, smiling.

In fact, Levi didn’t know about it at all and was still waiting for the Rogers family to take their revenge.

He was shocked when he learned about it from Azure Dragon.

“It is said that the Rogers family will be having their fortieth-anniversary celebration a week later. I supposed they’re afraid of the negativity it will bring about if they make a move on you now,” Azure Dragon said.

Levi tugged his lips into a smirk. “Fortieth-anniversary celebration? Nice, I’ll be there by then to present them with the biggest gift they will ever have!”

The Rogers family must be exterminated!

It wasn’t only Oswald who directed the entire conspiracy back then, but the Rogers family was also part of it.

“By the way, Sir, I’ve found out what you asked me to investigate. The Rogers family only possesses part of Levi Group’s core technologies. Other core technologies have disappeared, but there are corresponding products on the market,” Azure Dragon said.

Inspired by what happened to Oswald, Levi felt that there were probably other forces who targeted him back then as well other than the Garrison family and the Rogers family.

Levi Group, which was founded by Levi, was mainly involved in the fields of medicine and science and technology.

At that time, he had turned the volume up to eleven and broke into the market, and was reckoned to have taken advantage of many people.

The core technology developed by his team was especially terrifying, as it had elevated Levi’s net worth by billions within a year.

Many people had coveted Levi Group’s core technology, and even more people wanted him dead.

Hence, Levi had asked Azure Dragon to find out who was possessing the core technology.

Just as he thought, the Rogers family only controlled part of it, and there were others who also took part in plotting his downfall.

“Keep searching according to those online products!” Levi ordered.

Even if the whole North Hampton was turned upside down, revenge was his ultimate goal!

For the past few days, Aaron and Caitlyn had been very nice to Levi.

Perhaps they felt guilty, but for Zoey's sake, Levi shrugged it off.

When Levi came home at night, Abigail surprisingly showed up at their door.

"Levi, I've got great news!" Abigail beamed.

Levi put on a confused expression. "Great news? What? Are you getting married?"

"Pfft! I don't even have a boyfriend. Who am I supposed to marry? You?" Abigail said, eyeing Zoey with hidden intentions in her words.

"Then what's the great news? Say it," Levi said.

The Protector Chapter 131

Abigail chuckled, deliberately holding him in suspense.

“Abigail’s favorite celebrities are coming to North Hampton,” Zoey piped up. “This girl has been yapping about it all night.”

Abigail glared at her. “Why did you say it?”

Levi frowned. “That’s all?”

Abigail nodded with pride. “Yeah, my idols are coming. How is that not great news?”

“Oh.”

Levi walked away.

Abigail went after him. “Are you upset?”

“Lame.”

“What do you mean, lame? One of them is pretty, and the other is handsome! Here, let me show you their pictures! This is Yelda Zamora. She’s not only pretty, but her singing is superb! She’s the hottest female star out there!”

Abigail showed Levi some pictures through her phone.

Levi flicked a glance. “So-so. She’s worse than your sister though.”

“And this is Zak Copland! Look, isn’t he handsome?”

Levi pushed her out and closed the door behind him.

That’s more like it.

Levi had never been interested in celebrities!

It was always the soldiers who sacrificed and struggled for the glory of the country, but it was these celebrities who received the honor and enjoyed special privileges instead!

No one knew his brothers had died for the country and that their bodies had been left in the wilderness, but these celebrities made it to the news with just a headache and elicited pity from the public with just a paper cut on their finger from filming.

While the martyr’s grave was left collecting dust, an entertainer’s anecdotes were known to all.

It was based on this standpoint that Levi couldn’t get himself to like any celebrities.

Outside the room, Abigail went to harass Zoey again.

“Zoey, do you know they were invited to Rogers Group’s fortieth-anniversary celebration? Uncle said that I can finally meet them on that day!” she squealed.

“Oh.” Zoey gave a noncommittal reply.

“I’ll get some more of those invitation cards. Why don’t you come with Levi?”

Abigail was excited.

“Okay,” Zoey said. “We’ll be there.”

The next day, with time to spare, Zoey went shopping with Abigail and Levi.

After walking around a few malls in a row, Abigail and Zoey bought nothing.

But on the contrary, the ordeal of having to go shopping had tormented Levi, the God of War.

Shopping with women is so much more tiring than killing enemies on the battlefield.

At noon, Levi eventually decided firmly not to continue shopping anymore, so he said, “Let’s eat first! Or else I’m not moving!”

Unable to argue with Levi, Abigail and Zoey could only agree to eat first.

“That’s North Hampton Center up ahead. Let’s go over there.”

Levi was really exhausted.

Arriving at the North Hampton Center, they were surprised to see the crowd that was two times more than usual.

Many people were dressed uniformly, rushing in a direction, and holding what seemed like a light stick in their hands.

Seeing the crowd, Abigail was ravishing with joy.

“God, my idols are here!”

“I can’t believe they’re having an event at North Hampton Center today!”

Abigail dragged Levi and Zoey to the front.

As there was an elevator just ahead, Levi held his peace.

It was only after coming to the center of the mall did Levi realize how scary it was.

There was a stage at the front, which he supposed the celebrities would show up there, and many

people behind the stage, where celebrities including Yelda Zamora and Zak Copland were on standby.

They were here to take part in some business activities to earn some quick money before attending the Rogers family's fortieth-anniversary celebration.

However, the worst part was that there were thousands of people gathering around the stage.

The Protector Chapter 132

Not only that, but there were also people around the guardrail on the second, third, fourth, and up to the tenth floor.

Levi couldn't imagine just how many fans had gathered today. Are there at least a thousand of them?

The fans were chanting their idol's name like believers who had been brainwashed, and Abigail joined in as well when she arrived.

More than a hundred security guards were guarding around the stage to keep the fanatical fans outside.

Even the stage was cordoned off with barricade tapes!

Levi couldn't stand such a scene.

Irritated, he pulled Zoey's hands and walked straight toward the elevator.

"Where's Abigail?"

Before he knew it, Abigail had already vanished from his sight.

"She said she's going to meet her idols and told us to eat first. She'll look for us later," Zoey said.

"Okay."

Levi and Zoey were about to enter the elevator when a few security guards stopped them.

"No! You can't take the elevator!" the security guard said coldly, stretching his arm.

"Why?" Levi's forehead puckered.

"Unauthorized persons are not allowed to use the elevator today besides staff members and the celebrity teams," the security guard explained.

Levi snickered. "So you're saying that celebrities have special privileges?"

"Yes! To ensure the safety of the celebrities, you guys are forbidden to take the elevator!" the security guard said ruthlessly.

“Come on. Let’s try the escalators!”

Levi and Zoey came to the escalators, but the security guards stopped them again for the same reason.

Levi looked up to see that all the escalators had been cordoned off from the first floor to the tenth floor.

Just then, Zoey picked up a call from work and took off, leaving Levi with no choice but to eat alone.

“That area is separated from this one,” said the security guard, pointing at the opposite side. “You can take the escalator over there.”

Levi looked around briefly. I can reach the elevator on the opposite side if I pass through the stage area.

He wandered to the front stage, planning to walk through there.

Heedless of others, Levi crossed over the barricade tape directly.

“What are you doing? Stand there!”

“Stop right there!”

Suddenly, more than a dozen security guards rushed over, touching the electric batons behind their backs and locking their eyes on Levi.

Levi chuckled. “Chill! I’m just trying to get to the elevator on the opposite side. I promise I’ll stay out of your way.”

“Get back!” the head of security barked. “No one is allowed to go through here! Didn’t you see the barricade tape?”

“The celebrities who are here today are all A-list celebrities. Can you afford to bear the responsibility if something goes wrong?” another security guard questioned.

Levi sneered, “A mall is considered a public place, no? Why aren’t tourists allowed to pass?”

“You can on usual days! But not today!” the head of security said.

“You people are hogging public resources, are you not? Do celebrities have any special privileges for you to obstruct a person’s passage in a public place?” Levi asked in a low voice.

“Yes! They have the privilege! Their performance fee costs tens of millions! That’s the privilege!” the security guard said.

“What if I insist to cross over?” Levi sneered.

“This place has been cordoned off. You can try!”

A dozen more security guards came, making it over thirty of them glaring at Levi.

Levi flashed a cruel smile. “Fine, a blockade, eh?”

He fished for his phone and dialed a number. “Kirin, bring your troops to North Hampton Center! I want to lay siege to this place!”

The Protector Chapter 133

How are you calling this a blockade?

I'll show you what a real blockade looks like!

Anger overpowered Levi.

Otherwise, he wouldn't have troubled Kirin!

Seeing how Levi was putting on airs about laying siege to North Hampton Center, the security guards laughed themselves silly.

Is he crazy?

Calling the troops to lay siege to this place?

Who does he think he is?

A high-ranking officer of the war zone?

Show us what you got then!

The commotion over here had soon attracted the celebrity team's attention as a few celebrity managers came over, asking what was going on.

The ringleader was Monica, Yelda Zamora's manager. She was the top celebrity manager in the entertainment industry, who had entirely arranged the event today on her own.

In another word, she had the final say!

Monica shot Levi an icy stare. "What is your problem? Can't you see that this place has been blockaded?"

Levi gave a half-suppressed laugh. "Who gave you the right to do that?"

Monica froze at that question.

It was a question which she didn't know and had never thought about the answer.

After all, it had been normal all along for celebrities to go out with bodyguards, occupy a place and cordon off an area. So it became a default rule.

Celebrities had an inherently noble identity with a very high net worth.

And therefore, no one was allowed to come near to them.

So much so that roads would be blocked off to prevent pedestrians from passing by when they were

shooting variety shows.

It was as if this privilege was given to them in silent acquiescence, and the passerby would consciously abide by it.

Thus, they were completely caught off guard and didn't know how to answer when Levi raised that question.

"Standing here today are all A-list celebrities of Erudia. They're noble and worth billions. They can enjoy this privilege! If anyone is allowed to come and go freely at this time, then what's the difference between our artists and you ordinary people?" Monica snapped.

Levi laughed. "So you mean to say that celebrities are people of status?"

"Yes, you can put it that way! After all, what they did is beyond what you can think of! It's only right for them to enjoy this privilege!" said Monica solemnly.

"Don't you even think about creating trouble here or we'll hand you over to the police!" She further threatened.

"Bloody f*ck!" Levi cursed. "I just want to ride the elevator and grab a meal, but you guys are here blabbering on and on about blockading this and that. If that's what you want, I'll show you what a real blockade looks like!"

Monica and the others laughed at Levi's bravado.

A real blockade? What the hell is a real blockade?

Are you kidding me?

Monica was about to call security to kick him out when the crowd went wild at the few celebrities walking over.

Monica immediately went up to them.

The two stars in the lead looked very dazzling.

They could be distinguished at first glance, even among a sea of celebrities.

The man, whose skin was fair, was decked out in a white suit. He exuded a feminine aura that was most in line with the contemporary standard of a hunky boy-next-door.

As for the woman, she was wearing a long white dress that accentuated her petite and sexy figure, and as she flaunted her gorgeous face, she looked like an angel descending to the earth.

They were none other than the popular stars, Yelda Zamora and Zak Copland.

"Monica, what's the matter?" Yelda asked.

“This fella insisted on trespassing, and after we stopped him, he said he wants to blockade this place,” Monica sneered.

The Protector Chapter 134

“Just let him go over there, Monica,” Yelda said softly. “It’s no big deal.”

“No, Yelda! What if he has evil intentions? Look at him. I have no reason not to suspect that he’s coming for us!” Zak suddenly spoke, his voice cold. “Where’s security? What are you waiting for? Seize him!”

Zak was especially sick of such a fan who tended to act up to attract their idol’s attention.

To him, Levi was that perfect example.

Yelda looked at Levi and said, “Just let him go! Who knows if he has something urgent to attend to!”

“Hmph, no way! This is dangerous for us! Don’t you know how valuable our identities are? What if he means malice? This is why the place is sealed off! To guard against people like him!”

Zak was uncompromising.

Just as the security guards were about to make their move on Levi, he took out his phone and bellowed, “Kirin, where the f*ck are you?”

“We’re already in position, Sir! Initiating North Hampton Center’s lockdown!” Kirin’s voice was heard.

Everyone could hear their conversation clearly.

Zak and Monica laughed out loud.

“Who are you trying to scare here? Who do you think you are to lock down North Hampton Center?”

“If you can lock down North Hampton Center, I, Zak Copland, will eat a turd!”

At this moment in time, something big was happening outside of North Hampton Center.

Every pedestrian on the square in front of North Hampton Center stopped to look up at the sky.

There were at least a dozen helicopters hovering above North Hampton Center building!

Whoosh!

The helicopter hatch opened. One by one, heavily armed guards came down, landed on their feet and lined up in formation, heading for the interior of North Hampton Center.

“Attention, everyone! The lockdown of North Hampton Center is now in effect! Clear out as soon as possible! Attention, this is not a drill...” A deafening sound was heard from the loudspeakers of every helicopter.

The crowd was in a complete state of panic as they were curious about what was happening.

Inside one of the helicopters, a soldier was operating the computer.

He quickly hacked in and took control of North Hampton Center’s PA system...

Despite the warning outside, it was inaudible inside North Hampton Center.

Zak and Monica were still making fun of Levi. “Well, what are you waiting for? Where are your men? God, this is hilarious!”

Buzz... Buzz... Buzz...

A loud noise reverberated from the PA system inside the mall, making everyone stop all their movements to look up.

“Attention, everyone! This is Yash Warner speaking, the Captain of Kirin Special Operations Force of North Hampton. We’re imposing a lockdown on North Hampton Center right now! Please cooperate with us!”

The announcement made through the loudspeakers was played over and over again.

Before anyone could react, the sound of uniform marching was heard from behind them.

Thump... Thump... Thump...

Everyone looked back to see heavily armed guards, marching in in groups of tens, surrounding them from all sides.

“Freeze! Freeze!”

The security guards were all put to the ground in no time.

Above the high level was a guard who came descending from the sky with a rope tied to his body.

It turned out that they had attacked from above...

All the security guards on the other floors had been subdued at the same time!

The Protector Chapter 135

Everyone got a nasty shock, including Zak, Yelda, Monica and the rest of the celebrity team and security guards.

Levi was just talking about cordoning off this place, and it really happened!

And they're all from the Special Operations Regiment!

The next moment, Levi ripped off all the annoying barricade tapes before their eyes and replaced them with military ones.

The barricade tape the security guards had put up from before was to barricade the public from getting near to the artists, but the point of the military tape now was to encircle the celebrity team.

Everyone huddled together, shivering in fear.

So what if they had fame and status?

They were as scared as ever to encounter the Special Operations Regiment!

Right then, Yash Warner, whose voice was heard from over the PA system, showed up holding a loudhailer in his hand, still warning the people, but at the same time mollifying their anxiety by telling them it was just a simple lockdown.

Yash was armed to the teeth and had several grenades hanging on his chest.

Following behind him were dozens of well-trained soldiers who were jogging up to the front of the stage, standing before Levi amidst the horrified looks of the cadre of celebrities.

“Reporting, Sir!” Yash shouted, giving a military salute. “Yash Warner, the Captain of Kirin Special Operations Force of North Hampton, is here to protect the Chief! Awaiting your orders, Sir!”

A deathly silence filled the atmosphere...

Monica, Zak, Yelda, and the security guards regarded Levi with an astonished look.

Chief?

What?

He's their Chief?

And a very young one at that?

Levi glanced at Yash.

This is great!

Kirin's hellish training is really something!

These ordinary soldiers were as good as the Imperial Guards, despite the short training period.

"Mm, that was fast!"

Levi nodded, then looked at Monica, Zak and the others.

"This is what you called a blockade! Do you understand now?"

Everyone was drenched with sweat at Levi's words. They were so frightened that they almost passed out.

However, one thing they could make out for sure was that Levi was the Chief of the Warzones!

No wonder he was so full of himself when he said he was going to cordon off North Hampton Center.

It turned out that he really had the power to do so!

Zak's face darkened as he remembered what he said about eating a turd if Levi could cordon off this place.

Levi's identity was unexpected.

Who would have thought that a passerby who was just going to grab a meal turned out to be the Chief who could summon the Special Operations Regiment with just a word?

Everyone shuddered when they noticed Levi's stern gaze on them.

"According to your logical thinking, I should be as noble as you, right?" Levi sneered.

Monica and Zak nodded fervently. "Yes, yes, yes! You're definitely someone of noble status, Chief!"

"Then should I also enjoy special privileges and occupy public resources wantonly?" Levi asked.

"Definitely! What are you talking about, Chief? You can do whatever you want!"

Naturally, Monica and Zak became docile and obedient, wanting to make friends with the Chief.

But Levi raised his voice the next second. "Does that mean I should bring along a troop with me to cordon off this place just to have a meal at the mall?"

"Huh?"

Levi's sudden rage had Monica and the rest trembling.

"Privilege? There are so many people with privileges! If everyone behaves like you, wouldn't it be a mess?!"

The Protector Chapter 136

“It’s not wrong for you to organize an event, but is it necessary to block all the places? There are so many people and not everyone is here for you.

They’re like me, who came to eat and buy clothes. Why do we have to wait for hours because of your event? If we’re talking about privileges, what do you think about only continuing your event after I cordon off this place and finish my meal?”

Faced with Levi’s questioning, Monica and the rest looked down and dared not speak a word.

All this while they had only considered the safety of the artists and their own privileges when holding events that they had disregarded the problems of other people’s livelihood.

Perhaps ordinary people were simply not qualified for their consideration in their eyes.

“We were wrong, Chief. We’re aware of our own mistakes and we shouldn’t have occupied public resources! We will definitely think before organizing any events in the future!”

Monica took the initiative to apologize.

Levi gave the crowd a perfunctory glance. “Cancel the event. Yash Warner, take them back and have everyone write a ten thousand-word letter of remorse before releasing them!”

“What?”

Everyone was stunned when they heard that.

Are you kidding me? You’re asking these high and mighty celebrities to write a ten thousand-word letter of remorse?

However, at Levi’s ferocious gaze, everyone lowered their heads.

Lastly, Levi looked at Zak. “I think I’ll not watch you eat turd. It’s too disgusting.”

Zak was badly shaken.

It definitely wasn’t a good thing to be remembered by such a big shot.

After Levi had left, Yash fell back with his men and the celebrities had left as well.

The mall was soon restored to order, and Levi had his meal as he wished.

Very soon after, Abigail found Levi.

“Levi, you totally missed it. A big chief wanted to have a meal, but the place was sealed off, so he put

this place on lockdown in a fit of rage. He even took away my idols and they supposedly have to write a letter of remorse. How tragic.”

As Abigail was among the crowd, she only had a general idea of what transpired just now, with most of it having heard from other people.

“They deserve it,” Levi said coldly.

“But I heard the Chief is only in his twenties. Do you think there’s such a young Chief, Levi?” Abigail queried. “I mean, generally speaking, shouldn’t they be in their forties and fifties by the time they earn their qualifications and get to the top?”

“Everything is fair and just in the military. Anyone with the capability can become a Chief! It’s normal to have a high-ranking position in your twenties,” Levi said.

“Oh, I see.”

Abigail continued with regret, “I’m just sad that I couldn’t meet my idols this time. But my uncle has invited me to the fortieth-anniversary celebration. You should come too, Levi.”

Hearing that it was the anniversary celebration of the Rogers family, Levi agreed.

“Sure, no problem.”

At the training base, Yash had just released the celebrities who had finished writing their letters of remorse and was about to report to Kirin when he bumped into Steven Shaw along the way.

“Hey Steven, what are you doing here?”

Yash and Steven were once soldiers of the same class, and they studied together later.

So they had a close relationship.

“Mr. Rogers’ family business is holding a fortieth-anniversary celebration,” said Steven, taking out a gilded invitation. “He invited us over and I’m here to give you your invitation.”

Yash accepted the invitation. “He still remembers us?”

It turned out that Steven and Yash were Glenn’s students.

“Yeah! Many comrades will be there for the celebration, just to see Mr. Rogers,” Steven said.

“Okay, let’s go together,” Yash said.

Steven smiled, looking a little embarrassed.

Yash could tell at a glance that Steven had a favor to ask of him. “What is it, Steven? There’s no need to be polite between us.”

“I’ll be straightforward then! I spoke on the phone with Mr. Rogers just now. He told me to ask you if you could invite Kirin to attend the Rogers family’s grand celebration,” Steven said.

Surely, it was Glenn’s idea.

As for inviting the God of War, the Rogers family wasn’t qualified, and thus Glenn dared not even think about it. But he wanted to give Kirin a try.

Kirin was one of the five great Kings of War under the command of the God of War. It would be the Rogers family’s greatest honor if he accepted the invitation.

“It was for an assignment that I came into contact with the God of War, Azure Dragon, and the others. There’s no substantial relationship or whatsoever,” Steven added. “But you and Kirin are different! He’s equivalent to your master!”

Yash’s expression changed slightly. “Since Mr. Rogers said so, I’ll give it a try.”

Shortly after, Yash came to report at Kirin’s command post.

“Are they gone?” Kirin asked without looking up, his legs on the table.

“Yes, Sir!”

But Yash stood rooted to the spot after finishing his report.

“What is it?” Kirin looked at him in puzzlement. “Don’t just stand there! Say it!”

“Reporting, Sir!” Yash straightened his back. “My instructor, Mr. Glenn Rogers, wishes to invite you to the Rogers family fortieth-anniversary celebration.”

“Oswald Rogers, that Rogers family?” Kirin asked.

He had heard it from Azure Dragon before that the Rogers family was the enemy of the God of War.

“Yes, Sir!” Yash nodded.

Although it seemed like a slim chance, at least he tried.

“Okay, I’ll go!” Kirin accepted the invitation.

“This is great! Thank you, Sir!” Yash saluted.

Immediately, the Rogers family learned that Kirin would be attending their grand celebration.

Glenn was all smiles.

“Haha, God bless the Rogers family! That would be the greatest honor for us if Kirin shows up! Hahaha... He’s the God of War’s right-hand man; it’s equivalent to us having a little something going on with the God of War! Our status will definitely rise after this celebration!”

“Yeah, Dad,” Anthony agreed. “Although we’re one of the top ten wealthiest families in North Hampton, we’re still at the bottom of the list after all. We can definitely move up a few places after this celebration!”

The Rogers family were so excited that they clenched their fists.

The celebration was good news to them as well.

In layman’s terms, it was very likely that their dividends would increase from fifty million to a hundred million.

“Pass on my orders,” said Glenn, looking at everyone. “Ramp up the publicity! And spread the news that the King of War, Kirin, will be our guest of honor for this celebration!”

The attendance list of the Rogers family’s grand celebration spread like wildfire in North Hampton and seeing that the most honored guest was none other than Kirin, the God of War’s right-hand man, many powerful families in North Hampton were envious.

So what if they were rich?

And so what if they had connections all over Erudia?

None of those was equal to Kirin’s attendance at the celebration.

“Dad, Pamela’s daughter, Abigail, wants her brother-in-law and sister to attend as well. As you know, those are Levi and Zoey, and so I said yes,” said Anthony to Glenn.

Glenn patted Anthony’s shoulders. “You did the right thing!”

“We’ll show Levi just how great the Rogers family is!” Glenn chortled.

The Protector Chapter 138

“In fact, we should thank Levi for this,” Anthony added. “We only possess part of the core technology developed by his team, but we’ve made a net profit of at least twenty billion in the past six years, haven’t we?”

“Yeah, that kid sure was capable. Even the richest man in North Hampton remembers him!” Glenn

withdrew his smile and continued coldly, “But I can’t stand him beating my grandson to a pulp like this! I must hit him after the celebration!”

“Right, the overseas experts and doctors are arriving soon, aren’t they?” Glenn asked as a thought occurred to him. “Make sure Oswald attends the celebration!”

The Rogers family had hired ten foreign experts to treat Oswald to make sure that he could attend the celebration.

“Dad,” answered Anthony, “They’ll arrive today at twelve midnight! Five days will be enough!”

“Okay, bring them here and make sure nothing goes wrong,” Glenn said.

“Don’t worry, Dad. I’ll pick them up myself!”

At this moment, Levi was at the manor where Azure Dragon and the others lived.

Kirin had just informed Levi about the invitation he received from the Rogers family.

“Mm, you did great. I’m going too as an ordinary guest. But you, you’re the guest of honor, kiddo!” Levi teased.

“Our little Kirin will be the most important guest at the grand celebration,” Azure Dragon joined in.

“Stop teasing me, please!” Kirin said immediately.

Right then, the valiant and heroic Phoenix came forward, saying respectfully, “Reporting, Sir! I just received news that the Rogers family has hired ten foreign experts to treat Oswald Rogers. They’ll be landing at the private zone of North Hampton Airport at twelve tonight!”

“They’re here to treat Oswald?”

Levi’s expression darkened.

“Yes, Sir! The Rogers family wants to make sure that Oswald attends the grand celebration, so they invited top medical experts from all over the world,” Phoenix said.

Levi raised his arm to look at the time. It was a quarter past ten.

“Let’s go and take them down,” said Levi, rising to his feet. “The nerve to treat Oswald!”

North Hampton Airport had always been busy.

But tonight, there were black cars stopping before the private passageway, headed by a Rolls-Royce with dozens of hefty men in suits standing next to it, all of them looking aggressive.

Coming down from the Rolls-Royce was Anthony.

They were here to pick up the foreign medical experts.

Such a grand scene was only in line with the Rogers family's reputation as it brought about an uproar among the crowd.

Anthony glanced at his watch. It was exactly twelve.

"Okay, the experts are coming out soon. We'll leave immediately once we pick them up!" Anthony instructed, his men standing by sternly.

Shortly after, a team of twenty came out from the private passageway.

This included the foreign experts and their assistants, as well as a good deal of equipment.

"Welcome, Mr. Jeffrey and team!" Anthony greeted.

"This way please!"

With a wave of his arm, Anthony's men took over the medical team's equipment and loaded them into the car, and the medical team was ushered into their respective rides.

Chuff... Chuff... Chuff...

However, at this moment, there was a rumbling sound in the sky.

It was the sound of a propeller spinning at high speed.

Thump!

Thump!

Thump!

...

Rays of bright light shone on the car and the people's faces from mid-air, lighting the place up like daylight.

In the face of such strong light, everyone was so shaken that they couldn't open their eyes.

The Protector Chapter 139

The sound in their ears was getting louder like thunder.

The fierce wind the propeller produced was raging and everyone was almost blown away.

Only then did everyone see clearly that those were helicopters in the air.

After taking a closer look at the symbol, everyone's heart sank.

Those were helicopters from the war zone!

“Everyone, listen and stay wherever you are!”

A loud voice was heard from the loudspeaker.

Thereafter, they saw men after men in suits of different skin colors, and height about a head taller than the Rogers family's guards, sliding down the helicopter's ladders.

The hefty men in suits who landed and seized the foreign medical team directly from the Rogers family were none other than the mercenaries under James' leadership.

Along with the medical equipment that had been loaded in the car, everyone and everything was loaded into the helicopters instead.

Anthony and the rest could only look on as the mercenaries took away the medical team and equipment from them.

Firstly, the Rogers family had no ability to fight against these mercenaries.

Secondly, Anthony was afraid of these symbols on the helicopters.

Chuff... Chuff... Chuff...

It was not only until the helicopters had left that Anthony came back to his senses.

What just happened?

These mercenaries are well-trained, and it took them only one minute to raid the place.

It was so fast that we couldn't even react in time.

“What do we do now, Mr. Rogers?” the head of the bodyguards asked.

“Go home. What else can we do?”

Anthony made a sour face.

Returning to the Rogers residence, Glenn was shocked when he learned about the episode at the airport.

“You didn’t stop them?” Glenn asked. “They’re just a bunch of foreign bodyguards!”

But Anthony shook his head. “Dad, listen to me. That group of people was well-trained. You can tell from the way they glide down the helicopters that they must have served in the military. I suspect they’re mercenaries!”

Glenn looked dazed. “Mercenaries? But I don’t know anyone who dares to deploy mercenaries in North Hampton.”

“There is one. Didn’t Rick Garrison hire some mercenaries a while ago? They were detained after the incident and have yet to be released. I think it’s them,” Anthony said.

“So you mean to say that it’s Rick who is using this group of mercenaries?”

Glenn already had an answer in his mind.

Anthony nodded. “Most probably so. Those symbols on the helicopters are military symbols! Who would dare to use these helicopters?”

Glenn was puzzled. “Is there anything wrong with these doctors? Why were they detained?”

“We don’t know and didn’t dare to ask!”

On the other side, Levi had directly sent these doctors out of Erudia.

You want to treat Oswald?

No way!

For the next few days, the Rogers family had been asking around to find out the reasons, but to no avail.

They found nothing solid about these mercenaries.

“Could they be coming for Oswald?” suggested Leo, Oswald’s uncle.

Glenn and Anthony glared at him. “What nonsense are you spouting? How could such a great person hold grudges against Oswald?”

“The only use of these experts is to treat Oswald. Isn’t it obvious that they were detained because the other party didn’t want them to treat him?” Leo analyzed.

“It’s only Levi who doesn’t want Oswald to be treated in the whole of North Hampton,” Glenn retorted. “Are you suggesting that Levi is the God of War?”

“Of course not! How could Levi be the God of War? That’s too ridiculous!”

Leo shook his head.

The Protector Chapter 140

“Oswald is not getting any better. I don’t think he can make it to the celebration,” Glenn sighed.

Anthony knew the importance of the celebration this time. It was basically a guarantee that Oswald would become the heir if he attended the celebration.

“Dad, can we postpone the celebration?” asked Anthony, hoping fervently for his son to attend it.

His words had Glenn’s anger spiked.

“How can we postpone such a big event? What do you think my students will think about us? What if we anger Kirin?”

“No, we can’t postpone the celebration!”

Rogers Group’s fortieth-anniversary celebration was just around the corner, and almost the whole of North Hampton was aware of it.

Everyone was proud to have the invitation to the grand celebration. Many people had even sent pictures of the invitation to their friends to show off their status of being acquainted with the Rogers.

One could see how well the Rogers family’s publicity had been done.

The night before the celebration, Abigail specially came to deliver Levi and Zoey their invitations.

Because of what happened to Oswald, Zoey had been worried to this day. She dared not attend the Rogers family’s celebration, lest they flew into a rage at the sight of them.

“If you won’t go, I’ll go.”

Naturally, Levi wanted to go and Abigail was very happy about that because he would be hers alone if Zoey refused to go.

“You must watch over Levi!” Zoey urged. “He has beef with the Rogers family!”

“Don’t worry, Zoey. Grandpa loves me very much. No one can touch him,” Abigail said.

Aaron and Caitlyn didn’t receive the invitation.

In Pamela’s opinion, they had no rights to attend the celebration.

The next day, the City Convention and Exhibition Center became the venue for this grand celebration.

The street in front of the City Convention and Exhibition Center was taken over by the Rogers family

for the day, and a variety of banners and flying balloons were hung on both sides of the dozen-kilometer-long road.

The Rogers family had spent a tremendous amount of money to decorate the venue.

They sure were willing to spend that money. After all, even the invitation cards were gilded with gold.

Not to mention the dozens of A-list celebrities and countless influencers who were invited.

The parking lot in front of the venue was filled with rows of luxury cars.

The Rogers family's network of connections was not to be frowned upon. Everyone who attended the celebration was wealthy and respectable.

The Lopez family was simply out of their league.

Abigail and Levi arrived at the venue and made their way in easily after showing their invitations.

As the celebration hadn't officially started yet, everyone was waiting at the lounge where a buffet was being served.

Levi and Abigail looked for a seat and had just sat down when a voice was heard from behind.

"Levi, is that you?"

Levi looked back to see a graceful woman in a long burgundy dress. She had a voluptuous figure, slender legs, and a charming and seductive temperament.

The woman was looking at Levi with her doe-like eyes.

Levi recognized the woman as May Holland, his and Morris' business partner in the early days, who had both the capability and the creativity to succeed.

Their start-up team was riding high at first, but many had opted out when they started to lose money, leaving only Levi, Morris, and another girl.

Among those who opted out was May.

"It really is Levi!"

Another voice was heard from the side.

Standing before Levi right now were four other people. They were Yoyo Peterson, Leon Watson, Hansen Wood, and Bryce Chadd, his start-up partners from the past.

Yoyo was that only girl who stayed on while the others had opted out.

When Levi's start-up business became successful later on, they had wanted to rejoin, but he rejected them.

Levi could still remember how Leon and the other two guys had come to laugh at him on the day of his imprisonment.

The Protector Chapter 141

The ridicule of his classmates and his partners' betrayal that day had left a deep scar in Levi's memory.

Etched deep in his heart were the faces of Leon and the others.

These people were unforgettable!

Furthermore, Yoyo had refused to back out after their business venture had failed that year.

Nonetheless, she had later gone on to take care of her family's business.

After that, Levi had cut all ties with them, so he was unaware of their current statuses.

However, after leaving the team that year, some of them had gone on to start their own businesses and had become quite successful.

Yoyo and May had done the best. Both of them ran companies with market values of one billion.

Leon's group did quite well too. The three of them were each worth several hundred million.

After all, at that time, only high-achievers could be partners with Levi.

Even so, compared to Levi, they were subpar.

No matter how hard they tried, there was an insurmountable gap between them and the Levi from six years ago.

Later, when they heard that Levi was in prison, Leon and his friends were so happy that they went to gloat over his predicament.

Levi greeted them, "Yoyo, May, you came too?"

Before the girls could reply, Hansen and Bryce said, "Why can't we come? Yoyo and May are the young elites of North Hampton enterprises, and they're worth more than one billion each. Our net worth may not be as impressive, but we're still worth several hundred million. We were officially invited by the Rogers family."

Leon sneered, "That's right. We are definitely qualified to come. Conversely, your eligibility is questionable."

"You have just been released from prison, and you don't run any company. You are penniless. How did you get in?"

The three ganged up to deride Levi.

Glimpsing the invitation card in Levi's hands, Bryce snatched it from him.

“Ms. Zoey? Hahaha... Now, I know. You got in using your wife’s invitation card?” Bryce laughed at his expense.

They were simply stating facts. The name written on the card was Zoey’s.

Leon chuckled humorlessly. “It turns out that you depend on your wife! I heard that Zoey recently received a promising contract, which allows her to barely qualify for this event.”

Hansen mocked, “North Hampton’s best, Mr. Levi Garrison, is now depending on a woman?”

Despite their relentless insults, Levi did not show any reaction.

In his eyes, these clowns were totally worthless.

They were nobodies compared to the Garrison family, let alone today’s giant – the Rogers family.

Nevertheless, to Yoyo and May, Levi was but a shadow of what he had been.

In their opinion, the leader who used to be invincible and was always in control had turned out to be a pathetic bum after six years in prison...

Not only was he depending on a woman for support, he had not challenged nor retorted his tormentors’ verbal abuse.

How full of life and motivation was Levi in his glory days when he founded his business!

At that time, Yoyo had been deeply in love with Levi. Nothing could make her leave him, not even his failure in his undertakings. She had wanted to stay with him for always.

Those days, Levi’s every word and every move had won May’s heart.

May was daring and proactive. Many times, she had pursued and even tried to seduce him.

Nevertheless, she had been rejected by Levi each time. That was the real reason she left when the business failed.

No matter how times had changed, this was the man they had loved so deeply.

The two were deeply moved after seeing Levi’s current state.

However, what they felt was immense luck and joy!

After being rejected, May had left in order to improve herself. Her goal was to succeed so that Levi would regret his decision.

Yoyo’s feelings were not so different. If Levi had been successful and lived happily ever after with Zoey, she would be heartbroken. However, what she felt now was unbridled joy!

The Protector Chapter 142

The bottom line was that the less successful Levi was, the more joy and satisfaction they would feel.

As long as Levi failed and deteriorated, that would prove that their decision to leave him was right.

It proved that Levi was unworthy of them.

They looked at each other, and their thoughts were more or less the same.

They were different from Leon and his two friends in that they felt emotional but they would not ridicule or taunt Levi.

“Enough, you guys, shut up! Do not forget that we were partners before. Even though Levi rejected our joint venture back then, he helped us a lot,” May spoke up for Levi.

She was full of authority, speaking like a queen.

With one sentence, she stopped the trio’s taunts.

Yoyo was different from May in that she gave support quietly.

“Are you doing alright?”

She had a lot that she wanted to say to him but could only force out four simple words.

“Yeah, I am alright,” Levi replied.

Yoyo looked at Levi, and a myriad of emotions surged through her heart.

Where is the man who was in control of everything?

So it turns out that time can really change everything. It can prove that my opinion at that time was wrong.

Time proved that my parents were right when they said that Levi’s surge of energy will die off and that he is not worthy of me.

It’s true, then.

Everything is now proven to be true.

Hansen looked at Levi and laughed, “Levi, I would like to ask you, how do you feel now, looking at Yoyo and May who are each worth a billion?”

“I’m certain you regret rejecting them, don’t you?” Hansen chortled.

Bryce said, “Aside from the fact that Yoyo and May are doing much better than Zoey, Zoey’s company

nearly went bankrupt not long ago!”

Leon laughed and said, “You regret it, don’t you? If Yoyo or May helps you now, you will definitely make a comeback. However, you don’t even have this opportunity. You are not worthy of them!”

Hearing all this, neither Yoyo nor May said a word.

May stood with her arms folded, like a goddess on a pedestal.

If Levi were to confess to her now, she would ruthlessly reject him.

She would even reply, “There was a time when you couldn’t be bothered with me. I’m not the same now. Levi, you are not worthy of me.”

Yoyo, too, felt the same, more or less.

If she had another chance, she would not love Levi again.

Seeing this scene, Abigail came over and held Levi’s arm. She sneered, “You are, after all, just ordinary, short-sighted folk! My brother-in-law is still amazing. In his eyes, you are nothing but tiny little ants. That’s why he does not bother to reply to your insults.”

Abigail might not know everything about Levi, but she did have an inkling of his true ability.

Someone who offhandedly named her as the owner of a fifty-million-home and just as casually bought the revolving restaurant in North Hampton Center was not someone to be derided by the likes of May and her buddies.

“Hahaha... Levi, is this your sis-in-law? What a lovely girl!”

May smiled and looked at Levi contemptuously.

It was so difficult to start a business now – more than a hundred times harder than six years ago.

If Levi were to try to reach her level now, it would take him a whole lifetime to catch up.

May laughed, saying, “Old friend, I heard that you are not working yet. If you would like to, come and work for me as a head technician. I’ll give you a handsome salary.”

She imagined the man who once rejected her at his pinnacle of success working under her.

Just the thought filled her with pleasure.

Levi rejected her offer, saying, “It’s not necessary. After today, the Levi Group and the Garrison family’s companies will be under me again along with the Rogers family’s businesses. I’ll have a job then.”

After hearing Levi’s claims, the whole group was stunned into silence.

The Protector Chapter 143

When Levi said this, not only did May and the others doubt him, even Abigail found it unbelievable.

She knew her brother-in-law was amazing.

However, taking back Levi Group and the Rogers family business was too far-fetched.

How is that possible?

Even the Levi from six years ago, who was at the pinnacle of success, could not achieve this!

In the face of the Rogers family, he was no more than an ant.

“Hahaha...”

A few seconds later, Leon and the others burst out laughing.

May and Yoyo looked at each other and laughed aloud as well.

This was the most ridiculous joke they had ever heard all their lives.

A scumbag who just got out of prison is going to wipe out the Rogers family, who is worth tens of billions in industries?

Yoyo and May knew Levi only too well because they had worked together before.

Levi had always loved to ‘brag.’

He always casually mentioned doing something impossible.

Later on, he would really achieve it.

Nevertheless, that was the Levi from six years ago who could move mountains.

He had the ability, the motivation, and the connections.

Everything had been as easy as ABC for him.

However, the Levi they knew today had nothing.

There was no way he could do anything amazing or incredible, least of all, wresting tens of billions worth of businesses from the hands of the Rogers family.

This was just impossible!

It was as possible as the sun rising from the west.

In other words, only in his dreams.

May did not point out the obvious, instead, she congratulated him with a smile, “I congratulate you in advance! Take back the Levi Group and take down the Rogers family!”

The others laughed and agreed, “That’s right, Mr. Garrison, soon you’ll be worth fifty billion. Just help us out a bit when you succeed, anything from five hundred million to one billion would do.”

None of them thought Levi would take it seriously.

Levi told May, “Thank you. When the time comes, I’ll consider you for joint ventures.”

Yoyo looked at Levi with compassion in her eyes.

The Levi in front of her now was simply too pitiable.

From the pinnacle of pride and success, he had fallen so low as to console himself with tall tales.

It was so tragic and sad.

In the twenty or so years of her life, Yoyo had never misjudged any person or situation.

Her only exception was Levi.

She thought he was a winner, but he turned out to be a loser!

Leon patted Levi on the shoulder and sneered, “Garrison, don’t give up. We have faith in your ability. Truth be told, the Rogers family mastered a small part of the core medical technology you developed in the past, and it was so incredible. Did you know that with your technology, they made more than twenty billion?”

May smiled, “It was really incredible! It had the ability to transform a whole clan from rags to riches!”

May looked at Levi, “Levi, my offer to hire you as the head of my technical department is genuine and sincere. You have the ability, but you’ve lost your motivation. I believe in you, and I can give you a future.”

“That’s right. You can come to me too. The Rogers family really made a fortune from your technical skills in the medical field.”

Even Yoyo was interested in hiring Levi.

Pushing this man off his pedestal and then stepping on him was really enjoyable.

“Yoyo, what are you talking about?”

Suddenly, a stern voice was heard.

A tall man wearing a suit and leather shoes appeared. He wore an unhappy expression on his face.

It was Luke, a senior staff member of the Rogers family Group, the super henchman of Leo Rogers, and the second in command of the Rogers family. His position in North Hampton circles was very high, equivalent to representing Leo Rogers.

Luke and Yoyo got along well. It was rumored that they were a couple.

In truth, their relationship was not confirmed, but he seemed to be Yoyo's best choice for a husband.

The Protector Chapter 144

Yoyo would not be moved even if a blast from the past returned in the form of the man she idolized eons ago.

The crux of the matter was that the present Levi was far inferior compared to Luke.

Seeing Levi today, Yoyo became more determined than ever to choose Luke.

May, Leon, and the others quickly greeted Luke when he arrived.

Luke's status was too high, way above theirs.

They should try to associate with him more.

Yoyo smiled as she asked Luke, "What's wrong, Luke?"

"While you were chatting, you mentioned something taboo to the Rogers family..." Luke looked right and left as he replied.

"Oh? Taboo?"

Yoyo's face turned pale.

Luke nodded and said, "Who gave the information that the profits of the Rogers family are related to Levi's core technology?" "Do not listen to rumors!" "The core technology was invented by the Rogers family's own technical team. It has nothing to do with Levi."

"Don't say such things again. It's alright if I hear it, but if any other of the Rogers family members were to hear that, you will get into trouble."

"I understand. I do understand..."

May and the others were afraid when they heard this.

Yoyo nodded her head too.

The truth was that everyone knew what really happened with the medical technology invention.

It must not be said in public, though.

Levi heard and understand exactly what was happening.

He could only feel upset that the Rogers family members were shameless.

Undeniably, they had profited by using his techniques. Yet, no one was allowed to even mention that.

It was absolutely shameless.

Yoyo saw that Luke was accompanied by a dozen bodyguards. In the midst of them, an assistant held a password-protected attaché case.

Out of curiosity, she asked, “Luke, what are you delivering?”

Luke laughed as he replied, “This is a gift for Kirin. It’s priceless, so I need to keep an eye on it personally.”

In an instant, May and the rest became curious.

Even Levi’s curiosity was piqued.

What would the Rogers family give to Kirin, the scoundrel?

Yoyo laughed, “Luke, what’s inside there? Can you tell me?”

Luke whispered, “The gift to Kirin is a watch! It is a custom-made Patek Philippe Starry Night model, the only one in the world, worth tens of millions!”

The crowd gasped in astonishment.

Indeed, the Rogers family was truly wealthy to present such a treasure to Kirin as a gift.

At the mention of a watch, Levi thought of his good friend, Morris.

Rich men generally had the same interests – cars, beautiful women, antiques, and the like.

Morris loved watches.

There were all types of well-known watches in his home, and many of them were limited editions.

Of course, they were all gone now.

Luke smiled and said, “I’ll reveal another secret, but you must keep it to yourselves. This watch was owned by the assistant director of Levi Group, Morris. He had it custom-made in the Patek Philippe headquarters. It is the most expensive piece in his collection of thousands of watches.”

Upon hearing Luke's speech, everyone was surprised and turned to look at Levi.

Fury!

Levi was furious!

It was bad enough that his best buddy's possessions were divided up, but to be used as gifts? It was atrocious!

"Alright, you guys must keep this a secret. It's not to be told to anyone else!"

Luke left with the watch with his bodyguards in tow.

Abigail whispered to Levi, "Brother-in-law, please don't be angry! If it's given to the Kirin as a gift, grandpa and I can't do anything about it."

Levi said nonchalantly, "It doesn't matter as I shall take back the watch soon enough!"

"Hahaha..."

May and the others laughed again.

"How are you going to get it back?" Yoyo sneered as she asked him.

"Do you think you are Kirin, the King of War?" The crowd asked him.

Levi said softly, "When the time comes, Kirin will bring it to me personally!"

The Protector Chapter 145

“You are so disappointing!”

Yoyo shook her head and looked at Levi in disgust.

Are you now depending on tall tales to console yourself?

May and the others were now taking Levi as a joke.

Hansen laughed as he said, “Levi, did you see Luke just now? That’s Yoyo’s boyfriend. How can you compare yourself to him? He is more awesome than you were six years ago when you were at your peak!”

“Haha, Yoyo, do you now see what a poor choice you made at that time? Your judgment was really horrible!”

“Now that you have chosen Luke, you just escaped from a great tragedy!”

...

Yoyo was still feeling glad.

She often imagined Luke’s expression of regret, hoping to see it in person one day.

And now, her wish had come true!

“Brother-in-law, let’s leave. Just ignore them!”

Abigail was so furious that she felt she would kill the two women if she listened to their insults any longer.

“Listen, you guys, truth be told, he was once at the pinnacle of success. Now, he is still at the peak!”

With that, Abigail took Levi away from the place.

The moment they left the guest hall, they ran into the Rogers family.

Leading the group was naturally the domineering Glenn, followed by Anthony, Pamela, and the others.

“Grandpa, uncles, dad, mom...”

Abigail greeted them cheerfully.

However, Glenn and the clan were looking at Levi.

“Levi? Hahaha...”

Suddenly, Glenn broke out in laughter.

Anthony went to Levi and whispered in his ear, laughing, “I promise you that you won’t leave this place alive!”

It was an undisguised threat!

Levi laughed as he replied, “Why isn’t my old classmate, Oswald here? Is he hospitalized and unable to come? “

Pamela and Bailey Black did not know about it. Immediately, they replied, “What nonsense are you talking about, Levi? Oswald is perfectly fine!”

However, Glenn and the others were disturbed.

In fact, they were bursting with fury, ready to kill Levi!

He was challenging the power of the Rogers family!

Levi continued laughing as he said, “Go on with the treatment. Our country, Erudia, has lots of fine doctors. There’s no need to seek any doctors from abroad.”

With these words, silence fell on the group.

Glenn’s countenance looked crazed.

Levi knows about the doctor from abroad!

Other than the Atkinson family and the people who abducted the doctor, no one knew about this.

Everyone looked at Levi with suspicion in their eyes.

Can it be possible that Levi orchestrated the abduction of the doctor?

How can that be possible?

Military helicopters were used, and mercenaries were employed.

How can Levi do all that?

It is impossible!

We have thoroughly checked Levi’s present situation. He has few helpers – only Nueve, Trey, and some others are giving him aid.

We can only suspect that he knows about the foreign doctor, that is all.

“Ho ho ho...”

Levi laughed mysteriously and left with Abigail.

Glenn and the clan were left wondering.

Nevertheless, they were certain deep down that Levi only knew about the doctor and was not responsible for the abduction.

Just then, a staff of the Rogers family ran over to them and reported, "Master, there is a problem with the dinner. We need some help to resolve it."

The dinner and the celebration were equally important. Nothing must go wrong.

Glenn instructed Pamela and Bailey Black, "You both go and resolve the dinner problem. It must go on without a snag!"

"Yes, father!"

The men of the Rogers family must attend the celebration ceremony.

Hence, the only person they could send was Pamela.

By now, almost all the guests had arrived.

Everyone was seated according to their seating arrangement. Due to her relation to Levi, Abigail was seated at the back of the hall, close to the center aisle instead of near the front.

The Rogers family would never let Levi sit near the front.

May, Yoyo, and the others were seated near the front, close to the center.

Before they took their seats, they waved to Levi to show him that they had better seats.

In a short moment, the guests had filled the few hundred seats.

The Protector Chapter 146

The guests were from all walks of life, covering the military, political, and business circles. They were all bigwigs in their respective areas.

It was a testament to the Rogers family's wide network and sphere of influence.

The empty front row seats were reserved for the ceremony's VIPs, who were usually the last to arrive.

Members of the Rogers family had all taken their seats. The scene was a perfect representation of the wealthy and powerful being in a class of its own.

Roaring cheers could be heard when the celebrities, including Yelda Zamora and Zak Copland, made

their appearances. The enthusiasm of the crowd was pushed to a climax.

After the celebrities settled down, Glenn Rogers walked up on stage and said a few words of welcome.

Following his opening speech, Glenn said impassionedly, “Now, let us welcome our heavyweight guests of the night...”

“I’m proud to say that the following 20 guests whom I’m about to introduce, are all my mentees throughout my military career.”

“First, let us welcome Steven Shaw, Colonel of the First Regiment of North Hampton!”

“Now, let us welcome Yash Warner, Captain of the Kirin Special Operations Force of North Hampton!”

“Third, we have Warren Klein, Commander of the Special Warfare Command of West Lakebran!”

“Fourth, we have Gilbert Hawkins, District Governor of El Swepel in North Hampton!”

“Fifth, let’s welcome Danny Heath, North Hampton’s Minister of Commerce!”

The crowd was exuberant, and everyone clapped loudly as Glenn introduced his former mentees.

The man’s protégés were scattered all over the country, and all of them were at the pinnacle of their lives and careers.

Around 20 of them were commanders or held equivalent positions, while at least 50 of them were higher-ups in the military or political circles.

Everyone, including the rich and powerful, stood in awe of those former protégés of Glenn.

Each of them was a formidable force not to be trifled with!

With so many outstanding individuals who were previously under the Rogers family’s wing, it was almost impossible to gauge the immeasurable influence of the family.

Every member of the Rogers family was proud to be one of the Rogers.

Glenn was definitely the proudest person among everyone in attendance as he presented his mentees, who were all successes in their own rights.

That was what the Rogers family was made of!

There was no one in North Hampton who would dare to pit themselves against the Rogers family.

The dozens of celebrities who attended the event were proof of the Rogers family’s wealth, while the high-ranking military and government officials demonstrated the family’s vast network.

Witnessing the star-studded occasion, Leo Watson sneered and said, “Look at this grandeur, Levi is definitely no match for the Rogers family.”

May and Yoyo, who were also stunned by the impressive scene, readily agreed. “Honestly, the Rogers family could be considered the most powerful family in the country. What we are currently seeing may not even be a fraction of what they are really made of! They are already beyond the level of conventional riches. It seems like they are truly the creme de la creme of the country! I highly doubt that there would be anyone who would get the better of that family!”

After Steven Shaw and the remaining guests were seated, the front row seats were almost fully filled.

But the center seat was still vacant.

Everyone knew very well who that special chair was reserved for.

It was none other than the Kirin King of War!

In extremely high spirits, Glenn Rogers announced in a bright voice, “Now, ladies and gentlemen, let’s give the loudest round of applause to welcome the legendary God of War of Erudia, one of the Five Great Wars Regiment, the Kirin King of War!”

Clap! Clap! Clap!

The audience responded with thunderous applause.

The Rogers family would definitely have their status elevated even further after today, with the Kirin King of War gracing the ceremony.

Under the crowd’s expectant gazes, Kirin entered the venue, flanked by Anthony, Leo, and a few others.

Everyone was thrilled to be able to see the Kirin King of War in person!

As Abigail had already been in the man’s presence previously, she did not feel the same excitement as the rest of the people.

Levi smiled and said, “Look what a grand welcome Kirin has received!”

What baffled many was that, Kirin was donning his military uniform. With a dignified and domineering air surrounding him, the man looked truly majestic and powerful.

The other military officers, such as Steven Shaw, who made their appearances before Kirin, were all dressed in suits. None of them came in their military uniforms.

After all, they were attending a private event, and it did not seem appropriate to be decked out in military uniforms.

As such, it was mystifying to majority of the attendees that the Kirin King of War had donned his uniform.

It was as if he was out on a mission instead of attending a joyous ceremony.

However, Glenn and the rest did not dwell on it.

They even thought that the man's choice of dressing was a great idea, as it made him look more dignified, intimidating, and revered.

At the same time, it also showed the rest of the guests that being a part of the event meant serious business for Kirin.

This could only benefit the Rogers family, as it created an illusion that, instead of being specifically invited as a guest, Kirin was already on friendly terms with the family, and had specially come to show support for the event!

The Protector Chapter 147

Kirin went up the stage with a stoic face.

The Rogers family had prepared a gift for the man and had arranged for it to be presented to him on stage. This moment had come!

Members of the Rogers family were all in a state of ecstasy as they looked at Kirin standing on stage in his military uniform.

This instant was the highlight of the Rogers family's 40th-anniversary celebration!

The rest of the guests in the audience had looks of envy on their faces as they witnessed this glorious moment.

After today, the Rogers family's status among the wealthy and powerful families was bound to be raised by a few notches.

Overwhelmed with excitement, Glenn announced, "Next, on behalf of the Rogers family, I would like to present the Kirin King of War a token of appreciation!"

Escorted by eight bodyguards, Luke Quarrell walked on stage, holding an exquisite gift box in his hands.

"Look, Yoyo! It's your boyfriend, Luke! He must have gained recognition and is extremely trusted by the Rogers family to be entrusted with such an important task!"

"Exactly! He's one of few who get to be in such close contact with the Kirin King of War! That's so impressive!"

"Yeah! How can Levi compare to Luke?"

Hansen Wood and Leo Watson were engaged in an animated conversation, showering Luke Quarrell with compliments.

Yoyo was all smiles and wore a slightly smug expression on her face.

Her reaction was equivalent to admitting that Luke was indeed her boyfriend!

The woman was also thankful that Levi had previously rejected her. Otherwise, she would not have been able to be a part of such a momentous occasion now!

The other people around, who had overheard Hansen and Leo's conversation, had also turned their gazes towards Yoyo. They seemed to be also admiring her good fortune.

Yoyo was enjoying the feeling of being envied by all and derived great satisfaction from it.

She even felt like standing up and shouting out loud: Do you guys see that? That man over there who is presenting the gift to the Kirin King of War is my boyfriend!

Yoyo deliberately turned around to look at Levi.

It was as though she was silently conveying a message to the man, telling him that he was not good enough for her.

Luke went up on stage and stopped next to Kirin. Holding the gift box with both hands, he extended his arms.

Glenn did a brief introduction of the gift, saying, "This present, which we have specially chosen for the Kirin King of War, was custom-made by Patek Philippe. It's one of its kind and worth ten million! We felt that only a unique timepiece like this would suit the King of War's honorable status!"

Glenn paused and looked at Kirin before continuing, "Please don't misunderstand, Sir. This is purely a token of appreciation from the Rogers family, to thank you for being here with us on this significant occasion. I can promise, in front of the media and everyone else present, that we have no other intentions. It's just meant to be a souvenir, and we hope that you will accept it!"

Glenn wanted to avoid unnecessary rumors about the Rogers family attempting to bribe the Kirin King of War and also hoped to ease any concerns which Kirin might have.

"Open it!"

When Luke opened the gift box, the exclusive watch sprang into sight.

It was indeed a stunning beauty and definitely worth the high value of ten million!

With slightly shaky hands, Luke presented the watch to Kirin.

This could be considered the greatest achievement of Luke's life so far.

The audience held their breaths when Kirin accepted the gift.

Successive gasps of astonishment could be heard among the other guests.

Guests in the front row, who were closest to the stage, even had goosebumps when they took in the sight. They consisted of representatives from other wealthy and powerful families.

Even though the acceptance of the watch by Kirin seemed like a simple gesture, it held profound significance.

This could mean that the Rogers family would have Kirin's backing from now onward!

With this, the Rogers family would dominate the rest of the wealthy and powerful families in North Hampton and might even become one of the most formidable families in the country.

"Sir, would you like to say a few words?" Glenn Rogers asked Kirin tentatively.

Kirin suddenly flashed an unfathomable smile and said, "Where's Oswald Rogers? I've heard since long ago that Mr. Oswald is a rare, unparalleled talent in North Hampton! I don't seem to see him here today?"

The hearts of everyone from the Rogers family skipped a beat when they heard Kirin's question.

Two people had asked about Oswald today.

The first one was Levi Garrison.

And now, it was Kirin!

What were the odds that two seemingly unrelated people had asked the same question on the same day? That raised question marks for the Rogers.

It was almost as though they had discussed it prior and colluded to ask the same question on the same day.

The idea was also reinforced by the knowing smile on Kirin's face.

However, it was merely a passing thought.

Instead of feeling uneasy, the Rogers were actually delighted that the Kirin had asked the question!

The Protector Chapter 148

To the Rogers family, being noticed by the Kirin King of War was a blessing to Oswald!

Anthony Rogers was more exhilarated than any of his other family members. It was a great honor that his son had received such a flattering compliment from Kirin.

Audible whispers could be heard from the crowd.

They were all envious of the attention given to the Rogers family by Kirin.

Kirin had even made a special mention of the successor of the Rogers family! It was almost unbelievable!

Glenn and Anthony shot each other a meaningful look.

They were both burning with hatred for Levi Garrison and wished that they could skin him alive at this instant.

If Oswald had not been injured by Levi, he would have been able to join the other members of the family at today's ceremony and receive compliments from Kirin in person.

It was entirely Levi Garrison's fault!

"Sir, my grandson is still in the hospital recovering from his injuries." Glenn did not dare to deceive Kirin and gave a truthful reply.

"Oh, it's fortunate that he's in the hospital though. At least it's not the crematorium," Kirin said with a wry laugh.

"Huh?" The Rogers family members were puzzled, as they were unable to comprehend the meaning behind the man's words.

However, they still laughed along.

"This way please, Sir!"

Glenn personally ushered Kirin down the stage and to his seat—the center seat of the front row!

It was the seat reserved for the most important guest of the night.

Everyone knew that only the Kirin King of War was deserving of that seat.

No one else would dare to claim that seat.

Once Kirin stepped off the stage, the other military officers, including Steven Shaw and Yash Warner, all stood up respectfully and waited for Kirin to take his seat.

Besides the military officers' veneration for him, Kirin was also revered by a majority of the other guests.

With 20 high-ranking officers and the King of War gathered together to celebrate the Rogers family's anniversary, the family was immensely gratified and felt triumphant!

Glenn Rogers led Kirin to the seat right at the center, which was specially reserved for the man, and said, "Sir, please take your seat! We have specially left the best seat in the house for you. No one else would dare to sit here!"

"Please have a seat, Sir!" Yash Warner said to his commander as well.

However, Kirin remained standing at the spot and did not move.

He neither sat down nor walked away. He was simply in a daze as he stared at the empty seat.

Everyone was at a loss as to what to do or say next, especially the Rogers family.

What could Kirin be thinking about?

It was almost impossible to read the thoughts of a big wheel like the King of War.

Glenn was so nervous that his legs turned wobbly. After taking a deep inhale, he plucked up the courage to ask, "Sir, is there anything concerning you?"

"Did you just say that this is the best seat in the house?" Kirin asked.

Even though Glenn was a little puzzled at the man's question, he gave a firm nod and answered, "Yes, indeed! This is the best seat which we have specially arranged for the most important person here tonight!"

Kirin's lips curled into a faint smile as he said, "If that's the case, I'm afraid I shouldn't be sitting here. I'm not qualified to take this seat, I can at most only take the one beside it!"

Everyone was shocked by the King of War's declaration. People were boggled that Kirin had implied that there was someone more important than him!

"What? Who else would be more worthy than the Kirin King of War?"

A burst of helpless laughter escaped Glenn's lips as he said, "Sir, stop pulling our legs. You are our most prestigious guest of the night, and the only person who's entitled to this seat!"

However, Kirin shook his head and insisted, "No, I'm really not!"

"Huh? Can you please enlighten us then, Sir? Who could be a better fit than you for this chair? We really have no idea!"

Glenn and the rest racked their minds for a potential individual but still could not figure out who else could be on par with the Kirin King of War!

Kirin smiled and said, “The only person who can sit here is not me. It’s someone else instead.”

“There’s someone else?” Glenn was even more confused.

“Yes, he is the only person who’s entitled to this seat. That person I’m referring to is also here with us tonight. I’ve already spotted him!”

Everyone was intrigued by the ‘someone’ whom Kirin was being secretive about.

“There’s someone among us who is of a higher status than the King of War?”

This sudden new revelation caused a great commotion among the crowd.

The Protector Chapter 149

Everyone looked around, but they could not find a person who was of a higher status than Kirin.

The Rogers family was very puzzled, curious as to who it was.

“Who is the person you speak of, may I ask?” Glenn Rogers questioned.

Kirin laughed, “He is my master!”

“Master?”

“Kirin’s master?”

Hiss!

...

Everyone drew in their breaths.

Kirin’s master?

To everyone, it meant that the person shared the same status as the God of War!

Back then, Levi had taught Kirin a lot of valuable skills. Kirin always saw him as his leader and master.

No one could understand the relationship they shared.

“Kirin’s master is also here? Why do we not know about this?”

Glenn, Rogers, and the others also broke into a cold sweat.

The Rogers family did not even notice such an important figure present at their celebration.

This was frightening.

If Kirin were to blame the Rogers family, they would not be able to take the social backlash.

Glenn asked in a frightened voice, “May I ask where your master is? The Rogers family will extend our warmest invitation!”

Kirin waved his hand. “There is no need. I will invite him personally!”

As soon as Kirin took a step, all the senior officials of the Rogers family followed suit, along with Steven Shaw, Yash Warner, and the rest of the distinguished guests.

Thousands of people looked at Kirin and the group of people behind him.

Everyone was curious about the identity of Kirin’s master.

Kirin arrived at the center aisle. He passed the front row and walked straight towards the back.

The first row was eliminated!

Everyone in the middle and back rows began to feel agitated as they looked at each other.

May, Yoyo, and the others were especially agitated.

May asked in doubt, “Who can this person be?”

Yoyo shook her head. “Such an important figure is probably hiding in the corner!”

Very soon, Kirin and the others walked past them.

This made May and Yoyo extremely disappointed.

Everyone wished that they could join Kirin and his group of people.

Their small clique got up immediately and looked towards the back row.

They really wanted to know who the mysterious person was!

Everyone present was excited to find out.

Levi was the only one who remained in his seat, looking stoic.

Abigail witnessed his impassiveness and joked, “Brother-in-law, could it be you?”

Levi responded, “Yes, you guessed right!”

However, Abigail thought that Levi was just joking.

In the next moment, Kirin's group cleared the middle row and walked towards the back row.

A commotion broke out in the back row as people stood up immediately.

The Rogers family felt really nervous at the sight of this.

They had actually arranged for Kirin's master to sit in the back row. The thought of it scared them.

The Rogers family's reputation was about to be ruined!

They reached the back row.

Glenn cast a sweeping glance over the guests. There was no one he recognized apart from his granddaughter, Abigail, and Levi, the person he was going to kill in a while!

There was no one else he could recognize.

Anthony and Leo also felt the same way.

The people in the back row were barely allowed to join the celebration. To the Rogers family, these people were not required to be there.

There was really no one else they could recognize!

However, Kirin's master was in the crowd!

Everyone grew anxious because the answer to their burning question was going to be revealed soon.

Abigail's heart leaped to her throat as Kirin approached them.

Kirin stopped in his tracks all of a sudden.

Everyone held their breaths.

What was even more freakish was that Kirin happened to stop at the row where Levi and Abigail were in!

Abigail felt as though she had won the lottery.

Is he actually in this row?

She looked intensely at Levi.

The Protector Chapter 150

Is his master really my brother-in-law?

She thought Levi was just pulling her leg!

Yoyo and May too noticed that Kirin had stopped at Levi's row this row and whispered among themselves, "Isn't it such a coincidence?"

At the sight of Kirin, the person at the end of the row felt so pressured that he immediately stood up and left his seat.

The others in the row also followed suit.

This was because they clearly knew that they were not Kirin's master, so they had to leave in order to make way.

Tens of people left the row quickly and lined the aisle.

The only people left in the row were Levi and Abigail.

Levi sat there, as calm and steady as he could be.

Abigail stood up and looked at her surroundings. She did not know if she should sit or stand and was at a loss.

She wanted to leave, but Levi was still in his seat, so she did not know what to do.

Oh my god!

Is Kirin's master really my brother-in-law?

In an instant, a thousand pairs of eyes riveted on them.

Levi and Abigail were the center of attention!

Overwhelmed with anxiety, Abigail became breathless.

Time seemed to come to a standstill at this moment.

Everyone was lost in their thoughts, and their minds became a complete blank.

Abigail's teeth chattered, and her limbs trembled in fear. She really wanted to ask Levi, but she did not have the strength to open her mouth.

This man is too mysterious!

Kirin's started to move, his shoes creating a rhythmic beat on the carpet.

As if a sledgehammer had slammed into their hearts, the sound brought everyone back to their senses.

They saw that Abigail and Levi were the only ones left in the row.

Everyone figured out what that meant.

Abigail is a woman, so she definitely cannot be Kirin's master!

There is only Levi left!

He is Kirin's master!

Glenn and the others, who were following behind Kirin, could not respond to this piece of information. They were reeling from the shock.

Every one of them felt like walking corpses as they stood rooted to their spot, mouths gaping.

They could not react.

They could not react at all!

This was because they did not expect such a thing to happen at all.

Levi being Kirin's master would be their worst nightmare come true!

Yoyo, May, and Leon Watson looked on as Kirin moved.

They saw that only Levi was seated there.

Their scalps grew numb as blood rushed to their heads. It felt as though their heads were about to explode.

He is Kirin's master?

Impossible!

Absolutely not!

Levi's ability and reputation had deteriorated, and he was no more than a waste of space! So how could he be Kirin's master?

Even the Levi from six years ago did not have the right to be acquainted with Kirin.

How was he able to become a military big shot after being in prison for six years?

Everyone who knew Levi thought of him this way.

If this was real, then it meant that the Rogers family was going to face a major disaster!

It only took a short while to reach Levi, but to the audience, it felt like a century.

Kirin finally made his way towards Levi and stood in front of him.

Abigail, who was at such close proximity to Kirin, almost fainted on the spot.

Everyone saw Kirin looking respectfully at Levi. After doing a military salute, he boomed, “God of War, Kirin of Northwest War Zone is here to report to you!”

After listening to what Kirin had said, everyone felt as though tons of explosives had gone off in the room, pulverizing their bodies and shattering their souls.

The God of War that Kirin mentioned could only be one person – the one right at the top!

Is the God of War here to grace the Rogers family’s 40th anniversary celebration?

Everyone was deathly silent.

No one said a word.

However, their hearts were beating loudly in their ears!

The Protector Chapter 151

Shocking!

Extremely shocking!

This was definitely the most unforgettable thing ever experienced by the thousand people present at the scene!

Monica, Yelda, Zak, and the others did not think that they would bump into Levi here, let alone come to find out that he was a king among peasants.

Kirin continued to say, “God of War, please follow me to the first row. It is the only place befitting of your status!”

Levi nodded his head, “Mm.”

The audience was slowly recovering from their shock.

Kirin turned around slowly and looked at the Rogers family. He said, “Glenn, didn’t you ask me who my master is? Let me tell you, my master is none other than the commander-in-chief of the Nine Great War Zone, Erudia’s only 5 Star God of War!”

“Oh yes, his name is Levi!”

Upon hearing Kirin’s declaration, Glenn could not suppress the congested blood in his mouth and coughed it out violently.

Anthony’s face darkened. He staggered and collapsed on the ground.

Leo’s blood pressure spiked, and he fainted under the sudden pressure.

Each member of the Rogers family was at the verge of a breakdown.

Levi is actually the God of War!

This was what the Rogers family was most unwilling to accept!

Disaster!

A major disaster was approaching the Rogers family!

The Rogers family was on its way to destruction, starting from the moment Kirin stood beside Levi!

No one was able to rescue the Rogers family!

“What? Levi is the God of War? I don’t believe it! I don’t believe this!” Yoyo was unwilling to accept the fact.

Yoyo had felt carefree after Levi had been ridiculed. The chain of events had allowed her to make a quick comparison between Levi and Luke, and Luke had come above.

She thought that Levi would never be able to match up to Luke in this lifetime!

However, in the blink of an eye, Levi transformed into Erudia's God of War!

Before him, Luke was a nobody!

Yoyo could see a world of difference between them, but she was unwilling to accept the truth.

Leon Watson and the others were shocked to realize that the boy they used to bully had turned out to be someone extremely outstanding!

He is the only 5-Star God of War!

Levi did not retaliate when they insulted him just now, not because he was fearful, but because he could not be bothered with them.

They were insignificant to Levi, so there was no point crushing them under his feet!

May stared in disbelief.

Like everyone, she also thought that Levi had fallen from the peak of his success.

She also tried to step on him in order to derive some sort of pleasure!

However, who would have thought that he could grow significantly stronger and more powerful in a span of six years?

Abigail broke into a cold sweat and looked at Levi in fear.

Levi touched her head and smiled, "Silly girl, why are you so anxious? Regardless of my identity, I am still your brother-in-law."

"Oh." Abigail trailed after Levi.

With everyone looking at them, Kirin took the lead while Levi and Abigail followed behind. They walked slowly towards the front.

When they saw Levi inching closer towards them, May and Yoyo felt as though their hearts were about to fly out of their throats.

At this moment, their hearts felt as though they were about to explode.

Levi then stopped at their row all of a sudden.

At that instant, May, Yoyo, and the others felt like dying.

They felt numb all over as though an electric current had passed through their bodies, electrocuting them.

A gust of cold air rushed up from the soles of their feet, instantly making their blood freeze.

Levi barked, “Get out of the way!”

At his command, the people in the row excused themselves from both ends, leaving only May and the others behind.

The Protector Chapter 152

When May saw Levi’s gaze settle on her, her breathing quickened, and she struggled to breathe.

Hiccup!

Hiccup!

Hiccup!

Leon, Bryce, and others could not withstand such immense pressure. They fainted and collapsed onto the ground with a loud thud.

May and Yoyo were extremely nervous.

With his status, Levi had the authority to sentence them to death!

Levi looked at the two women and laughed, “Just now, didn’t you ask me if I regretted rejecting both of you last time?”

May and Yoyo did not dare to look into Levi’s eyes.

“Let me tell you this now. I have never regretted it! No matter when or what happens, I will only choose Zoey! Whether she is poor or rich, young or old, I will still choose her!” Levi said.

At this moment, May and Yoyo envied Zoey so much.

Six years ago, they had been green with jealousy when Levi and Zoey got together.

They were even more jealous of them now!

Levi was at the pinnacle of the military regime of Erudia. He was invincible and possessed all the power in his hands.

Even if that was the case, he would not forsake or abandon his wife.

This is deep, profound love!

Many people were extremely touched.

Not taking Levi's identity into account, their love and affection towards each other was a subject of envy.

One will not leave, and the other will not be abandoned.

Abigail was the most envious of them.

Finally, Levi said to the two of them, "Like what Abigail said, her brother-in-law was at his peak six years ago, and now, her brother-in-law is still at his peak!"

Thump!

Upon hearing Levi's words, Yoyo and May could not take it and fell onto the ground.

They were drenched in cold sweat.

Levi and Kirin arrived at the front row and sat down.

He had Kirin and Abigail beside him. Steven Shaw was there too!

The moment Levi appeared, people no longer had the word 'master' in mind!

At this moment, everyone understood why Kirin had worn his military uniform.

He was not here to attend the celebration.

He was here on a mission!

Levi waved his hand.

Kirin understood immediately.

Kirin commanded the mass of people, "Except for the Rogers family, everyone else, please leave quickly! Please keep this matter confidential. You will be asking for trouble if you dare to reveal this!"

With this in mind, everyone made their way out, dying to escape from the scene as quickly as possible.

Leo Watson and the others were carried away.

May and Yoyo crawled out.

The venue was cleared very soon. Levi said to Abigail, "Abigail, please wait for me in the living room. I need to settle some matters."

Abigail also left obediently.

After that, everyone from the Rogers family knelt in front of Levi.

They kowtowed before him, begging for mercy.

“Where is Levi Group?” Levi asked.

“Please take it back! Levi Group has always been yours!”

“How about the Garrison family’s properties?” Levi questioned further.

“They are also yours!”

Levi continued, “Rogers family?”

At this moment, everyone in the Rogers family hesitated.

However, Glenn responded immediately and said, “Also yours!”

Levi lit a cigarette and smiled, “Alright, then let’s start discussing more important matters.”

“Back then, you framed me, killed my friend, and even seized everything from the Levi Group. Why did you do that?” Levi questioned.

“God of War, it was you who dabbled in the pharmaceutical and technology markets back then, and the Rogers family coveted your core technologies!” The Rogers family answered honestly.

Levi took a deep breath before continuing, “Give me the names of the others who were involved in this matter back then!”

The Protector Chapter 153

The Rogers family replied, “God of War, even though we planned everything under Oswald’s name back then, the Rogers family actually benefited the least from it.

We only benefited from a small part of the core technologies and took over Levi Group! The bulk of it went to the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce!”

“North Hampton Chamber of Commerce?” Levi furrowed his eyebrows.

“Yes, it is made up of the 4 aristocratic families – the Hendersons, the Williamsons, the Andersons, and the Robinsons. There are also a lot of business associations consisting of rich corporations. They dominate North Hampton, and are in a tight competition with Winston Gonzales, the richest person in North Hampton!” Glenn said.

Levi knew about the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce.

The former hegemon of North Hampton's world of commerce.

It was known that the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce held nearly half of North Hampton's economic lifeline.

Their annual GDP contributions were frightening!

When Levi succeeded in starting his own business, the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce wooed him to join them. However, their condition was that he had to hand over the core medical technologies of Levi Group.

Levi rejected the proposal.

In retrospect, Levi had already been a target of the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce.

Because he had rejected them, he was maimed and imprisoned. His brother had been killed, and his wife had lived as a widow for six years.

The business world was akin to a battlefield and might even be more deadly.

Despite how decent wealthy entrepreneurs looked on the surface, they could actually be bloodsucking cannibals, swallowing people up whole!

The number of people who had lost their lives because of the rich was unfathomable!

Levi was insignificant to them, so many people might have forgotten about him.

He was not worth remembering at all!

At this moment, Azure Dragon and Phoenix had arrived. They informed Levi that those online products were from the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce.

Tap tap tap...

Levi tapped his fingers rhythmically on the armrest.

"Since that is so, let North Hampton Chamber of Commerce disappear!" Levi ordered.

The Rogers family were on the floor, not doubting what Levi said.

The four giants of the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce believed that their wealth dominated North Hampton with their influential businesses. No one could affect them.

Messing with the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce was akin to messing with North Hampton's foundation!

However, they would not expect the God of War to be the one messing with them!

Glenn asked, "God of War, will the properties and businesses under Levi Group and the Rogers family

be transferred to you?”

“Transfer them to Kirin!” Levi said.

Within a few hours, all the properties and businesses under Levi Group, the Garrison family, and the Rogers family were transferred to Kirin.

Kirin’s real name was Neil Rhodes.

From then on, Neil became the new owner of all the Rogers family’s assets.

As for the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce, Levi wanted to take his sweet time torturing them. He wanted to see them go insane with his tricks and watch them become fearful as they beg for death’s arrival.

Levi’s gaze fell on Anthony all of a sudden. “Did you say earlier that you wanted to attack and kill me?”

Anthony was shocked to hear Levi’s words. “Please spare my life, spare my life...”

Levi stood up and smiled, “Spread the news! Say that Mr. Rhodes has become the owner of Levi Group and Garrison Group!”

“Understood!” Glenn responded.

“Oh yes, I hope to see Oswald tomorrow morning. He owes my wife an apology!”

There was a look of malice in Levi’s eyes!

After that, Levi left, bringing Abigail along with him.

When they were about to reach the exit, they bumped into Pamela and Bailey.

“Abigail, why are the both of you leaving?” Pamela asked curiously.

Abigail looked at them, feeling confused. “Dad, Mum, the celebration is over.”

Bailey retorted immediately, “What rubbish! It only started 30 minutes ago. The celebration lasts for about 4 hours, doesn’t it?”

The Protector Chapter 154

“It’s really over! Do you not believe me?” Abigail said helplessly.

Pamela stared at Levi and said, “Abigail, why did you even bring him here? How embarrassing!”

“Yes! If not for you, what right does he have to attend the celebration?”

Bailey shot back at Abigail and proceeded to enter the venue with Pamela.

Abigail really wanted to tell them that the celebration ended because of Levi.

However, her parents had already gone ahead.

Bailey and Pamela were in shock when they entered the venue.

There was not a single soul in sight.

They saw Glenn and the others on their knees, drenched in cold sweat.

They tried their best to get an answer from the Rogers family, but no one revealed the reason.

Outside, Levi looked at Abigail whose head was lowered. She seemed fearful of him, so he could not help but ask, “Why are you afraid of me? I am still your brother-in-law.”

Abigail lifted her head all of a sudden and planted a kiss on Levi’s face.

Crash!

Thankfully, Levi was quick to respond, if not, Abigail would have kissed him.

Levi was shocked by Abigail’s reaction, “W-What are you doing?”

Abigail chuckled in delight, “Brother-in-law, you were so cool just now!”

Flabbergasted, Levi almost vomited blood.

Wasn’t she terribly afraid of me just now?

Why did she try to kiss me all of a sudden?

Young girls have such strange ideas these days!

As they headed towards the car, Abigail laughed and said, “Brother-in-law, you are my idol from now on!”

...

Two strange things happened in North Hampton today!

Firstly, the Rogers family’s 40th-anniversary celebration had been suddenly interrupted. All the guests left without a reason. Why was that so?

Secondly, news broke out that a mysterious man known as Neil Rhodes had taken over both the Garrison Group and Levi Group.

With regard to these two matters, the Rogers family kept mum about them, saying that they were trade secrets.

“What on earth is the Rogers family doing, handing over Levi Group and the Garrison Group?”

“What was the Rogers family’s celebration about? So secretive!”

“Who is this person called Mr. Rhodes? How is he related to them?”

...

The news spread across several luxurious villas in North Hampton, attracting the attention of the four giants of the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce.

When Levi and Abigail returned home, Aaron and Caitlyn were around.

Caitlyn stared at Levi, “You are forever frolicking around with nothing better to do. If you are so free, why don’t you help Zoey out? Why bother attending such a celebration? Are you even qualified to be there?”

Bailey humphed, “Yes, that’s right. Levi, we hope that you can rely on your own ability to attend such a celebration instead of depending on Abigail!”

Zoey also felt that Levi liked to join in the fun at such celebrations.

Casting all grievances with the Rogers family aside, she felt that there was no need for Levi to attend the celebration since he did not have the status to do so.

Levi laughed, “Dad, Mum, and Zoey, I was at the Rogers family to deal with something!”

Aaron, Bailey, and the others were dubious when they heard Levi. They asked, “What’s the matter?”

“I went to settle some scores with Oswald!” Levi responded.

Zoey was shocked.

She was afraid that Levi would do something foolish. Things would get out of hand if they were targeted by the Rogers family.

Zoey told her parents about what happened the other day.

“What? So it was Oswald who planned the entire thing! But Levi, what did you do? You almost beat Oswald to death? Do you want to die?”

“If you plan to die, then don’t drag us into it!” Aaron and Caitlyn spoke angrily.

Zoey asked, worried, “What did you do to the Rogers family today?”

Levi said, “The Rogers family will bring Oswald here personally to make an apology!”

The Protector Chapter 155

“Hahahaha...”

After hearing this, Aaron and Caitlyn roared in laughter.

“What are you talking about? The Rogers family will come here to apologize? Are you drunk?”

“The Rogers family is one of the most highly regarded aristocratic families in North Hampton. They have assets worth tens of billions. Why would they come to apologize to you?” “

“Do you honestly think you are such an important figure? Beating up Oswald and even getting them to bring him here to make an apology?”

Aaron and Caitlyn looked at Levi.

They simply could not believe it!

Zoey was not going to believe him either!

Even the Levi who was at his peak six years ago would not have such a capability!

Abigail saw that they did not believe him and smiled in secret.

As she was reminded of what happened at the celebration, she shot a look of envy towards Zoey. In Abigail’s eyes, Zoey was the most fortunate woman on earth.

However, Abigail felt that she had an advantage over her cousin because she knew about Levi’s real identity.

Abigail felt a warm, fuzzy feeling in her heart when she thought about it.

Zoey looked at Abigail and asked, “Abigail, is that so?”

Abigail shook her head, “I don’t know!”

She was in the living room at that time, so it was true that she did not know the details.

Levi said, “I spoke privately with the Rogers family. Abigail was not around.”

“Hahaha...”

“Who do you think you are? What right do you have to talk privately with the Rogers family?”

Aaron and Caitlyn laughed.

Zoey also thought that Levi was bragging, so she did not take it to heart.

Aaron and Caitlyn did not leave that night. They continued to stay in Bayview Garden.

There was a knock on the door the next morning.

Zoey opened the door and got a shock.

Glenn, Anthony, and the others were here. They even brought Oswald, who came in a wheelchair.

“Why are you here...”

Zoey appeared confused.

Aaron and Caitlyn were extremely puzzled.

“Ms. Lopez, the Rogers family is here to make an apology to you! On behalf of Oswald’s foolish behavior, we would like to sincerely apologize to you!”

Glenn, Anthony, and the others bowed.

Bang!

At the same time, Glenn kicked the wheelchair, and it tipped over.

Oswald, who was handicapped, toppled to the floor. His voice trembled, “Ms. Lopez, I-I am in the wrong, I will n-never dare to do it again... Please forgive me!”

At this moment, Zoey and her parents were in total shock. Their minds went blank.

They never expected that the Rogers family would come over to make an apology!

Levi was right!

“In order to express our sincerity, we would like to compensate Ms. Zoey Lopez with a 100 million for any psychological harm caused! The sum of money has been wired into Imperial Meadows Limited’s bank account,” Glenn said.

Zoey’s phone rang. It was a message from the finance department. There was indeed a transfer of 100 million.

“Get up quickly!”

Seeing all these rich aristocrats standing in front of her, Zoey’s heart could not stop racing.

Aaron and Caitlyn were also frightened.

Glenn asked, “Ms. Lopez, can you please forgive us?”

“Yes!” Zoey exclaimed.

“That’s great! Goodbye, Ms. Lopez!”

The Rogers family left quickly, dragging Oswald away.

At this moment, Levi sauntered over, drinking a cup of warm milk, “Have they apologized?”

“Levi, how did you do it? Oh my god! Glenn from the aristocratic Rogers family actually came to make an apology!” Aaron and Caitlyn looked at Levi curiously.

Zoey thought that it was miraculous.

“Very simple! I made things clear to the Rogers family. Besides, they are also quite understanding and reasonable!” Levi said plainly.

Indeed, I reasoned things out with them last night. With guns pointing at their faces, how could they not understand and be reasonable?

The Protector Chapter 156

Aaron said immediately, “Actually, the more powerful they are, the more likely they are willing to make peace. They also pay more attention to morality and etiquette. If not, would they be able to remain in their current positions?”

Caitlyn also nodded her head, “Yes, that’s right. These important figures are reasonable and easy to talk to!”

Zoey felt that something was fishy, but she could not put a finger on it.

She knew that Levi could not compare to the Rogers family in terms of status and ranking.

“Next, let’s prepare ourselves to attend your grandmother’s birthday party. We need to choose some exquisite gifts for her! Let’s brainstorm for a suitable gift and buy it on another day!” Caitlyn emphasized the importance of her mother’s birthday party.

Aaron thought the same. As the son-in-law of the Black family, it would be great if he could shine at the birthday party.

Aaron and Caitlyn were very confident after receiving the huge sum from the Rogers family.

Everything was back to normal. Zoey’s project was starting to take flight again.

There were numerous companies who requested for a collaboration.

After all, with the development of the Ecological Park, there would be markets for the catering of food and beverages, accommodation, and the like.

Companies that were fast and efficient could take advantage of the opportunities available.

“Oh yes, Levi, I will have to attend a meeting to discuss the collaboration in the afternoon. A foreign catering company intends to work with us on western cuisine! Would you like to go?” Zoey asked in the morning.

“Go ahead with the collaboration. I have other things to attend to.”

It was because Levi really had some serious matters to deal with.

Azure Dragon and the others informed him about it.

He arrived at the manor where Azure Dragon and the others lived.

Phoenix approached him with a document.

“Reporting to you, God of War! The Dragon legion of the Iron Brigade has successfully completed its mission and evacuated the frontline. According to the protocol, we will now retreat to the neighboring province of the South War Zone to rest and reorganize! Please give us your orders!” Phoenix reported to Levi.

Levi glanced at the document and nodded, “Alright, let Dragon legion rest and reorganize. Wait for my next orders!”

As the commander-in-chief of the Ninth War Zone, Levi had the responsibility and the power to mobilize the guards.

However, the guards he usually deployed to the frontier battlefields were from the Iron Brigade. He had personally trained them.

The Iron Brigade was divided into several teams. Dragon legion’s combat skills were top-notch. They were the most powerful!

Dragon legion had been fighting at the border for two years in a row, so it was high time for them to rest and reorganize themselves.

“This is quite timely. I will be heading to South City to attend Zoey’s grandmother’s birthday party soon. I will head to South War Zone then!” Levi said.

“That is really good news! The guards from the Dragon legion would like to meet you!” Phoenix beamed.

After returning home that night, Zoey told Levi that the collaboration went well and was successful.

Fick Group sealed the collaboration after putting in a deposit of 30 million.

This was the first sum of money Zoey received for the project.

She gave Levi a card.

“What are you doing?” Levi was stunned.

“Didn’t you borrow 5 million last time? Return the money quickly!”

It turned out that Zoey always had this in mind.

“Alright then, I will keep it.”

Levi kept the card. He then started to look at Fick Group’s contract.

He found out that it was a member of the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce.

“This is a company owned by foreigners. They are given such preferential treatment in terms of the area and policy! The conditions are much better than the domestic companies!” Levi sighed.

It seemed that this area attracted foreigners to come and develop, with policies giving them great access and preferential treatment.

There were even times when they had direct access to certain areas.

Zoey laughed, “Do you only know about this now? It has always been like this! These foreigners always have special privileges when they set up businesses in our country. It cannot be helped!”

Levi grew serious, “Are they so superior? What a joke!”

The Protector Chapter 157

Zoey shook her head, “It cannot be helped. It is true that they are superior! Everyone is in silent agreement!”

Levi frowned, “We are in mighty Erudia. Since when did they become more superior than us?”

“It cannot be helped! Foreigners are welcomed everywhere! Those international students are treated so well in terms of welfare benefits! Moreover, many girls like meeting these international students. When they see foreigners around, they get so excited to hang out with them!”

“This is a common phenomenon, so even if you find it unfair, it cannot be helped.”

Zoey shrugged her shoulders.

It was a recent phenomenon.

In some cases, when people participated in biddings, they focused on the fact that the companies were owned by foreigners instead of looking at the strength and future prospects of the companies.

A coldness shone in Levi's eyes.

"Oh yes, I plan to buy a house for Dad with this money. However, the old house is under his name. He also wants to put the old house under Mum's name tomorrow at the Housing Authority. What do you think?" Zoey asked.

"It's your own money, so you can decide what you want to do with it."

Aaron arrived at the Housing Authority the next morning.

There was a long queue at the entrance of the Housing Authority.

He queued for almost an hour before it was his turn.

When Aaron entered with the document in his hands, two people rushed in front of him and jumped the queue.

"Hey, hey, hey, what are you doing? You are jumping the queue!" Aaron yelled.

The two tall men in front turned around to look at him. They were foreigners.

With a sneer, they flipped him off.

"Stay away from us!"

Aaron was momentarily stunned.

He had queued for almost an hour. Not only was his turn skipped, but he was also yelled at and insulted!

This is pure bullying!

Aaron was not the only one who was unhappy.

The people behind him were also upset.

What right do they have to jump queue?

Everyone was patiently waiting for their turn, so what gave them the right to jump the queue?

It was the peak period. There were at least 70 to 80 people behind Aaron.

The two people had jumped the queue as soon as they arrived. They even had the audacity to cut to the front of the line, angering many people in the queue!

"Queue from the back! Don't cut the queue!"

"Go to the back right now!"

“Regardless of your background, go and join the end of the queue!”

Everyone yelled and shouted at the two foreigners.

It caused a public outrage.

However, the two foreigners were unbothered and did not even bother to turn around.

Seeing that many people were also upset and on his side, Aaron grew more courageous and went forward to shove the men.

The two of them turned around.

One of them said, expressing his displeasure, “What do you want?”

“You cannot just cut in as you please! Walk to the back and join the queue from there! Do you not see all the people in the queue?” Aaron spoke coldly.

The others chimed in, “Yes, go to the back of the line! You have no special privileges! You are just like us!”

The two foreigners sneered, “Hmph! We have never joined any queues since we arrived in Erudia, alright? We have special privileges and are given priority in whatever we do! Besides, our matters are more important than all of yours!”

“What do you mean by priority? Who said that? You need to queue up no matter where you go! What is so important? Quickly, join the queue at the back!” Everyone shouted.

“It’s my turn next! The two of you, go to the back!”

Aaron stepped forward with his document, prepared to enter the Housing Authority.

However, he was stopped by the two foreigners.

One of them snatched Aaron’s document away from him and mercilessly tore it into strips.

The Protector Chapter 158

Boom!

Aaron was stunned.

The others too.

They did not expect the two foreigners to be so daring.

They actually tore up someone's document!

“Lowlife! Scram! Get out of our way!”

The two foreigners pointed their middle fingers at Aaron again. They cursed and insulted him, and even shoved him around.

Aaron was furious. “I will fight you till the end!”

Aaron was certainly not their opponent. They were about 1.9-meters tall. Soon, he had two slap marks on his face.

A huge commotion erupted.

The staff from the Housing Authority appeared.

A middle-aged man said angrily, “I am Neville, the director on duty today. If there is anything, please let me know!”

Everyone shouted, “They jumped the queue! They even tore up someone's application document and hit the man!”

Aaron too cried and complained about what had happened to him.

Despite their complaints, the director immediately sent the two foreigners into the hall.

“Gentlemen, please come with me. You have more important business matters to attend to.”

Neville actually did such a thing with so many pairs of eyes looking at him.

Such an action naturally made everyone angry, and they reacted strongly to the situation.

“Why? Why are they allowed to enter?”

“Yes, why can they jump the queue? Do foreigners have special privileges?”

...

Neville signaled everyone to calm down and keep quiet.

“Let me explain why! Some people have special privileges! They've come to our country to help us develop and generate as much income as possible to spur our economy. Compared to most of you, their affairs are more important! So what if they jumped the queue? They did not really affect you, did they?” Neville made an attempt to explain.

“But...”

“What do you mean but? If you don't wish to proceed, then please leave!” Neville was harsh.

Everyone got back in line and did not protest anymore.

Aaron was furious. He lashed out, “How about what happened to me? Give me an explanation! My document was torn!”

Neville looked at the pieces of paper on the floor and said coldly, “Your document is torn? Then make another application!”

“Then how about them laying their hands on me?” Aaron pointed at his face.

Neville laughed, “My staff said that you were the one who started it first!”

“You...” Aaron was exploding with rage.

Just then, an employee ran out and whispered in Neville’s ear.

Neville’s expression changed as he glowered at Aaron, “Do you still wish to continue with your application?”

Aaron was stunned, “What do you mean?”

“The two gentlemen are really angry with your behavior just now! They want you to kneel down and apologize to them before they can forgive you!” Neville said.

Aaron could not believe his ears, “What? They were the ones who jumped the queue and ruined my document. Why should I kneel down and apologize? What kind of law is that?”

“You are obviously in the wrong!” Neville said in a serious tone.

Aaron was shocked at his response, “My fault?”

“Did you know? The two gentlemen are important figures! Their business enterprises generate a lot of revenue and have provided many jobs. This benefits all of you in North Hampton! Their time is precious, so what’s wrong with them jumping queue?”

“You actually wasted their time, so isn’t that your fault?”

Aaron was shocked at the warped reasoning, “What do you even mean? Me?”

“You? What about you? Do you still want to carry on with the paperwork? I have made myself clear. If you are not going to apologize to them, then you can forget about settling your paperwork! Trust me, I can blacklist you forever!”

Neville was obviously threatening him.

The Protector Chapter 159

Aaron was flummoxed.

He did not expect such a thing to happen.

He did not even think that Neville could be so cruel and harsh to him in favor of those two foreigners!

The onlookers also did not dare to say a word.

Neville was not going to deal with administrative matters if they had something to say.

Everyone could only turn a blind eye to Aaron's predicament.

"What do you think? Spit it out!" Neville commanded in a harsh tone.

"I choose to apologize and redo the paperwork!" Aaron lowered his head at the end of the day.

In order to have a new house to stay in, he bit the bullet and chose to apologize. It was the only way he could ensure the necessary documentation was done.

"Alright, the two gentlemen happen to have time today. They want you to queue at the back! When you get to the front again, you can then apologize to them! Once they are satisfied with your performance, I will proceed with your application and paperwork!" Neville patted Aaron's face after saying so.

Aaron was about to explode from rage.

The two gentlemen said earlier that their time was precious, but when it came to ridiculing him, they actually had the time to wait for him to rejoin the queue.

"Alright, I agree to that!"

Aaron endured once again. He proceeded to join the back of the queue.

The two gentlemen laughed out loud after witnessing what had happened.

They even flashed their middle fingers at Aaron, still cursing him.

Neville grinned at the two foreigners while serving them coffee and snacks.

Aaron stood at the back, fuming.

The more he thought about it, the angrier he felt.

He could not let them walk all over him!

"Maybe I should ask Levi for help!"

When Levi received Zoey's call informing him that Aaron was in trouble, he dashed directly to the Housing Authority.

He found out that there was a long, snaking queue at the Housing Authority!

Aaron was standing right at the end of the line, his expression clouded over. There were two slap marks on his face.

Levi walked over to him and asked, "Dad, what happened to you?"

"Levi, I was hit..."

Aaron acted like Levi was his savior and told him everything that had happened.

Levi grew furious after listening to Aaron.

He had discussed this problem with Zoey last night, but he did not expect it to happen to his father-in-law today.

Levi walked to the front of the line with Aaron in tow.

"Come, Dad, I will demand an explanation for you! How can we just forget all about this and brush this aside?" Levi said angrily.

Once again, Aaron felt a sudden surge of courage and confidence and rushed to the front with Levi.

"Who hit him? Come out now!" Levi stood at the entrance and questioned in a demanding voice.

Neville walked out with several employees in tow.

When Neville saw that it was Aaron, he shot back angrily, "What do you want? Didn't I ask you to queue at the back?"

"Let me ask again. Who hit him?" Levi asked coldly.

"Are you yelling now? Did you get someone to come to your rescue? Let me tell you this, you can forget about settling this paperwork from now on. I will stop you from doing so forever!" Neville flew into a rage.

Aaron was shocked by his tirade.

Levi glanced at his name tag and sneered, "Your name is Neville, right?"

"Yes, so what? Are you going to write me up?" Neville pointed at Levi's nose and yelled at him.

Levi could not be bothered with him. He whipped out his phone and dialed a number.

"Hello, is this Jesse? Please get the Captain of the Housing Authority to make a trip down! Ask him if he knows someone by the name of Neville!" Levi ordered.

Jesse wiped the perspiration on his forehead upon picking up the call.

The First Secretary, Cedric, asked, "What happened?"

"Quickly inform Mark from the Housing Authority to make a trip down there. Someone named Neville has offended God of War!" Jesse instructed.

...

After seeing Levi hand up, Neville snorted, "Why? Are you done with the call? Do you want to get me into trouble or do you want to fire me?"

The Protector Chapter 160

Levi pushed him away and walked towards the hall. His gaze landed on the two foreigners. “Were you the ones who hit him?”

At the sight of Levi, both of them stood up and walked towards him.

“Yes, we were the ones who hit him! Why? Do you want to seek revenge for him?”

The two of them spoke choppy English while looking disdainfully at Levi.

“Apologize! Since you’ve hit him, then you should have the guts to apologize!” Levi ordered.

“Apologize? Impossible! Why should we apologize to you critters?”

Both men looked extremely smug.

Levi and Aaron were considered lowlifes in their eyes.

The two foreigners refused to pay them any attention at all.

“Apologize! You have to apologize for hitting him!”

Levi was very determined. He shot a cold glare at them.

The two foreigners were unhappy with the way Levi was staring at them. As they were much taller than Levi, they looked down at him condescendingly.

One man extended an arm to push him.

Thump!

However, Levi reacted as quickly as lightning and kicked his knee.

The man groaned when his foot made contact and collapsed onto the ground in agony.

Thump!

It was the same for the other foreigner. He kneeled down on the ground and screamed in pain.

The both of them struggled to get up, but Levi stepped on their shoulders. They looked deflated and could no longer get up.

They could only kneel down obediently!

“Dad, do what they did to you! Since they slapped you, you will return them the favor!” Levi told Aaron.

Aaron hesitated for a while before walking towards them.

Slap. Slap. Slap...

He gave them few continuous slaps. The clear, crisp sound filled the room.

Aaron let out a breath that he had been holding in all this while.

“Great!”

“This is great! I feel so good!”

Everyone outside clapped and cheered for them.

Who is able to endure the sight of our own being bullied in our own territory?

This is so good!

“Remember, you are in Erudia. You have to cooperate with us at the very least. This is not where you can throw your weight around because of your special privileges!” Levi chastised.

The two foreigners continued to stare at Levi in disdain. “Such a lowlife! Let’s wait and see what will happen to you!”

Neville continued, “Yes, you are doomed! Do you know what you have just done?”

“I asked them for an apology. Was that so wrong?” Levi replied.

He kicked the two foreigners and commanded, “Apologize!”

“First, apologize for jumping the queue!”

“Second, apologize for tearing up the application document!”

“Third, apologize for hitting people!”

At this moment, Aaron thought that his son-in-law was a domineering person.

How is he a useless piece of trash?

Aaron too exclaimed, “Yes! Apologize!”

“Hey! Do you know what on earth you are doing? You are in deep trouble!” Neville shouted.

Levi did not care about what Neville had to say. He stared furiously at the two foreigners and laughed, “You don’t wish to apologize, right? Alright! I have a way to make you obey. Also, you will be deported and kicked out of Erudia.”

“Do you even know what you are doing? Are you crazy? You are finished!” Neville warned.

Levi laughed, ‘Why? Are you unhappy seeing your foreign masters kneel on the ground? I heard that you were the one who gave them such privileges! I would like to ask you – What right do they have to be granted these privileges? Our fellow countrymen have been waiting in queue for 1 to 2 hours, and yet you let these foreigners jump the queue as they like! Are you going to keep this up?’

“Let me tell you this! I will not settle your paperwork for you from now on!” Neville threatened them.

“Haha... then let’s wait and see!”

At this moment, a white luxury car stopped outside.

The Protector Chapter 161

Two people got out of the car and jogged toward the scene in a hurry.

Neville was surprised to see the people moving in his direction. He quickly welcomed them, “I thought you went to attend a meeting, Sir? Why have you returned all of a sudden?”

Mark stared at Neville hatefully. Then he shouted. “You’re fired, Neville Heath!”

Boom!

Neville was shocked to his core as he looked at Mark in disbelief.

Then he turned to gaze at Levi. I saw him making a phone call earlier. I can’t believe this. Why am I fired?

Neville wanted to retort after recollecting his thoughts, but Mark shoved him aside. “Get lost! I don’t want to listen to your explanation. I am already aware of the entire incident!”

Mark came to a halt in front of Levi in the lobby and addressed the latter with a smile, “Mr. Garrison, I am here to apologize to you after being informed of the things that happened earlier.”

Then, he spoke to his employees, “We will treat our customers on a first come first serve basis according to the rules from now on! Anyone who does not make an appointment will have to wait for their turn. Any employee who makes an exception for any customer will face a similar fate as Neville Heath!”

“Yes!” Everyone agreed with Mark’s announcement.

“Stop processing their documents. They will have to wait in line obediently for their turn!” Mark ordered harshly.

Both foreigners were almost done with the procedures, but Mark erased all their data on the computer. They had no choice but to redo everything.

“That’s the outcome we wanted to see!” Everyone was excited.

Mark then arranged for his employee to reprocess Aaron’s procedure that had been destroyed previously.

The foreigners were dumbfounded. They did not expect Mark to be so adamant.

Mark walked up to them in a displeased manner. “We will not process your documents if you do not apologize. You’ll have to leave the country when the time comes. Consider your options and make a decision now!”

The foreigners exchanged glances and yielded in the end.

They looked at Levi and Aaron. “We are sorry. Is that sufficient?”

“Well, I do not accept your apologies,” Levi responded unexpectedly. “People like you should be deported!”

The crowd supported Levi’s statement. “That’s right! They should be deported. How dare they act like barbarians in this place?”

“Yea! Chase them away!”

Levi contacted Xavier to check the foreigners’ backgrounds.

Xavier discovered a lot of problems with the foreigners’ profiles. For instance, they faked their travel visa. That reason alone was more than enough for them to be deported.

Xavier’s subordinate arrived at the venue swiftly and warned the foreigners to leave the country within a week. Otherwise, they would be deported.

They stared at Levi and Aaron resentfully before taking their leave.

In the end, Aaron achieved his aim and completed the procedure.

He was extremely satisfied with Levi’s performance that day. “You made a wise decision to contact the boss of this place and dealt with this matter effortlessly.” Aaron smiled.

Levi was stunned. Well, technically, the boss came because I ordered him to.

The two foreigners were furious as they went home. We’ll kill you, Levi Garrison!

At that moment, a man dressed in a white suit arrived. He asked the foreigners. “Terry, Drake, have you been given the warning to leave the country?”

The Protector Chapter 162

That man was the owner of Fick Group, Charles Dickens.

Terry and Drake were his younger brothers. They had moved to North Hampton, intending to settle down in the city. But trouble found them almost immediately.

At that moment, Charles's men had already updated him with the news he wanted to know.

"The person who bullied you is my business partner, Zoey Lopez's husband, Levi Garrison!" Charles said coldly.

"We must get our revenge against him!" Drake and Terry said fiercely while covering their swollen faces.

Charles's eyes gleamed dangerously. "Very well. I will toy with his wife since he dared lay a finger on my brothers. Zoey Lopez's body is too alluring to resist. I will make the arrangements to get her into my bed tomorrow. Both of you will join me by that time. You can have your revenge on her any way you like!"

"Hehehe..." Drake and Terry laughed lecherously.

"That's the plan for now. I will invite Zoey Lopez to a banquet tomorrow night. Then we will get her drunk..."

The next day, Chloe was waiting at the entrance when Levi exited Bayview Garden.

"Are you waiting for me?" Levi was surprised.

"Are you free tonight? Let me treat you to a meal. I received my salary today, and thanks to you, the amount was very generous indeed. So I feel the need to treat you to dinner," Chloe said joyfully. I earned a total of 8 million last month because of the commission from the 2 properties Levi bought from me. This is surreal!

"Alright. Tell me the venue. I'll be there later."

Chloe was delighted when Levi agreed to her offer. "We'll have dinner at Grand Imperial Hotel tonight!"

"Got it."

Meanwhile, Zoey was invited to a dinner banquet hosted by the Fick Group to celebrate their collaboration.

Zoey agreed to attend the banquet without any hesitation because of Fick Group's sincerity during their previous discussion.

She did not question their intention because they even invited Zoey's secretary.

The event was held inside the VIP private room in Grand Imperial Hotel that night.

Zoey noticed a lot of people inside the room when she arrived.

Charles introduced the other guests to Zoey as his business partners. They were are eager for an opportunity to collaborate with Zoey's company.

Zoey completely lowered her guard.

Hard liquor was served during the banquet, but Charles deliberately prepared low-alcohol wine for Zoey and her secretary.

Despite the low alcohol content, they were forced to drink continuously due to the rounds of toasts.

Zoey was getting a little tipsy even though she merely sipped her drink every time.

Charles said courteously. "Ms. Lopez, our norm is quite different from the locals in Erudia. We drink with alacrity when we're among ourselves, unlike the businessmen we've seen in this country!"

Charles did not urge Zoey to drink throughout the banquet. But he would utter comments from time to time, indirectly forcing Zoey to drink the wine to get along with the other business partners.

Zoey had no choice but to obey because she did not want to ruin the atmosphere. Soon, she was drunk.

Thump!

After a few more rounds, Zoey finally fell face front on the tabletop as her consciousness faded.

A menacing smile spread across Charles' face at that sight.

Zoey's secretary sensed the peculiar turn of events, but her condition was no better than Zoey's.

The secretary passed out as well swiftly after.

Charles and his business partners laughed salaciously at the sight of the two unconscious women inside the room.

They had, in fact, taken some medication to prevent them from getting drunk in advance, so the hard liquor did not affect Charles and his friends.

Charles dialed a number with his phone. "You can come in now, Drake and Terry."

Then he turned to admire Zoey's unparalleled beauty after hanging up the phone. "You belong to us tonight, baby!"

The Protector Chapter 163

Drake and Terry rushed to the 6th floor impatiently after they received the news. They had been waiting inside the hotel lobby the entire time.

The pictures of Zoey sent by Charles earlier aroused them.

At that moment, Levi and Chloe reached the Grand Imperial Hotel. He saw the familiar figures of Terry and Drake immediately.

“What are they doing here?” Levi and Chloe chased after them curiously.

The two foreigners entered a private room hastily when they arrived on the 6th floor.

“Something’s wrong.” Levi came to a halt in front of the door.

“So, this woman is Zoey Lopez? She’s exquisite!”

“I heard the women in Erudia are extraordinarily charming, but I certainly did not expect to sleep with a girl as gorgeous as her so quickly!”

Terry and Drake sounded excited.

“We’ll sleep with her right here, right now!” Charles said firmly.

Levi turned to address Chloe. “Do not enter the room no matter what you hear later on!”

Chloe nodded subconsciously as she took in the sinister expression on Levi’s face.

Bam!

The door to the private room was pushed open just as the people inside were about to get wild.

Someone entered the room and locked the door behind him.

Drake and Terry yelped when they saw Levi. “That’s him, brother! He’s the one who beat us up!”

Charles narrowed his eyes at Levi. “So, you’re Levi Garrison?”

“Yes. That’s me.”

Levi understood they were targeting him because they recognized him instantaneously.

Charles sneered. “Very well. I’m glad you’re here. You will pay the price for harming my brothers. I’ll tie you up and have you bear witness as we ravage your wife tonight!”

“Hehehe...”

All the foreigners inside the room revealed a similar lecherous smile.

In their opinion, Levi had no other choice but to concede because they had the numbers.

Charles and his friends closed in on Levi.

Thump!

Levi grabbed Charles all of a sudden and kicked him forcefully in his knees.

The latter screamed bloody murder and fell onto the floor.

Thump!

Levi swung a forceful punch at Charles's face.

Charles sprawled on the ground in agony.

“Do you like to drink liquor? I'll make sure all of you drink to your heart's content!”

There was still plenty of liquor inside the private room.

Levi picked up a bottle of hard liquor and forced the contents down Drake's throat.

“Hmmm...”

Drake struggled mightily, but he was pinned on the ground as Levi poured bottle after bottle of hard liquor into his mouth.

Levi forced Drake's jaws together to force the vomit back into his gastrointestinal tract when he wanted to puke.

Drake's stomach was visibly bloated after he was forced to drink multiple bottles of wine. He rolled on the ground in pain as he retched up blood.

Terry and Charles were met with a similar fate.

Levi unleashed his unprecedented wrath on the brothers that night.

The Protector Chapter 164

They must be tired of living to dare lay a finger on Zoey! But Levi did not want to show them mercy by killing them. So he used that method to torture them instead.

Levi finally exited the room with Zoey on his back after a long while. Chloe saw Levi dragging Zoey's secretary along as well.

"I'm afraid we can't have our dinner tonight. I'll treat you to a meal another time. Please help me send her home." Levi asked Chloe to take care of the secretary.

"Okay. Leave this to me."

Chloe caught a glimpse of the room before she left. The gory scene was carved into her mind...

The sound of the ambulance pierced the night shortly after Levi left the venue.

Charles and the others were sent to the hospital to receive treatment. They were diagnosed with gastrointestinal bleeding, severe burning of the throat mucosa, and impairment of internal organs due to excessive drinking.

Everyone was puzzled by the amount of liquor they drank to lead to such a disastrous outcome.

Zoey did not sober up until midnight. She breathed a sigh of relief when she saw Levi beside her.

Zoey was infuriated to learn the truth.

Levi grimaced. Charles and his brothers had invoked my fury. I have shown them mercy by allowing them to live.

Zoey added warily, "You did not kill them, did you?"

"Don't worry. I merely taught them a brief lesson."

The next day, someone knocked on the door early in the morning.

Harry, Aaron, and the other members of the Lopez family were at the door.

"How can you be sleeping at a time like this? Something bad happened!" Harry chided.

"What happened?" Zoey was startled.

"This is all thanks to what you and Levi did last night!" Harry glared at her. "Levi tortured Charles and his business partners last night, causing them to suffer grave internal injuries!"

"Oh? Really?" Zoey's face turned paper-white. This is the brief lesson Levi mentioned?

“You had to offend powerful men like them out of all the people in this world!” Harry pointed at Zoey. “Now you’ve made a mess! The Imperial Meadows and the Lopez family’s business are all ruined!”

“What happened exactly, grandpa?” Zoey asked anxiously.

“Don’t you know? Fick Group is a member of the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce! The chairman of Fick Group’s board of directors, Alaric Taylor, announced his desire to take revenge on us! They cut off all monetary supplies, connections, and business partners related to the Lopez family. Your West City Ecological Park project will be the next to suffer!” Harry explained.

Zoey received a phone call swiftly after as they predicted.

One of the investors of the West City Ecological Park, Feliciano Hayes, had withdrawn his capital.

Another phone call followed. This time, it was Roberto Norris calling to inform her of the same thing.

Soon, all of the investors had pulled out from the project.

Zoey’s face turned ashen. Damn it! It’s over. I’m doomed. The West City Ecological Park project is ruined now that they’ve withdrawn their investments. I will have to pay a large amount of compensation too. Not to mention this huge trouble related to Fick Group...

Tears flowed down her cheeks uncontrollably. Why do I have to suffer the consequences when Charles and the others intended to defile me in the first place?

“They are people from the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce! This is all because of Levi Garrison! Where is he?”

Everyone was looking for Levi because he was the culprit.

“Do you know what you’ve done, Levi Garrison?” Harry wanted so badly to slap him.

The Protector Chapter 165

Levi heard the commotion while he was brushing his teeth, but he responded carefreely, “Don’t worry. There’s nothing to be afraid of.”

“What? The Lopez family’s businesses are collapsing. Even your wife’s company is affected!” Harry yelled angrily.

“You started this mess. So, what do you think we should do now?” Henry asked coldly.

“It’ll be alright. This matter will resolve by itself,” Levi replied nonchalantly.

“Fine! That’s alright. We have a way of resolving our problem!” Harry left furiously with his family.

Aaron looked at his son-in-law helplessly. He thought Levi was impressive when he dealt with the foreigners two days ago, but Levi disappointed him again. Rescuing Zoey was the right thing to do, but he did not need to go to such lengths to teach them a lesson. Now, he caused trouble for everyone because of his reckless actions.

Zoey defended Levi when Caitlyn began to criticize Levi. “Don’t blame him for what happened. This is all because of my careless mistake. There’s no use arguing at this point!”

Aaron’s plan to do a property survey for a new house was ruined. There’s no money to buy a house now, not to mention the possibility of having to compensate others.

Zoey was in a state of agitation. “I’ll figure out a way.”

Levi, on the other hand, was unfazed.

The financial department manager contacted Zoey shortly after. He told her Harry Lopez had withdrawn 100 million from the company’s account.

That sum was the compensation fee paid by the Rogers family because of the psychological trauma they had inflicted on Zoey and her family.

“Father is behaving outrageously! The Rogers family gave Zoey the money. Who gave him the right to take the money from her?” Aaron was mad.

Zoey and Caitlyn were filled with grievances.

Aaron took the initiative to question his father.

“Levi dragged us into this mess, so he should bear the responsibility. It’s not wrong for me to take this money from your family since he is your son-in-law,” Harry retorted.

Aaron clenched his fists. “That’s unreasonable, father. Moreover, you’re committing embezzlement by taking the money away in private. You’re going against the law!”

Harry snorted coldly. “Fine by me. Why don’t you call the cops on me?”

“I...” Aaron fell silent. I can’t do that. Moreover, father is one of the directors in Imperial Meadows’s board of management. The chances of winning an embezzlement lawsuit against him are slim.

Harry added with a sneer, “Have you forgotten about your crime of stealing the documents previously? Your life will be ruined if I turn you in by showing the evidence to the police.”

“I... Anyway, what you’re doing is wrong, father!” Aaron hung up the call furiously.

The Lopez family resolved their family crisis effortlessly after receiving the 100 million sum. They even profited from their selfish action. But Zoey’s company paid the price in return.

Caitlyn lamented, “What can we do? They’ve always been this way. We are used to being mistreated by them. They’ll seize the money sooner or later anyway.”

Aaron and Caitlyn had been victims of familial betrayals on multiple occasions. The Lopez family would butter them up to gain benefits whenever they were doing good. They persuaded Aaron and his family to share their fortune by using the moral obligations of being part of the Lopez family. But whenever Aaron and his family faced troubles, none of their so-called 'family' would show up to lend them a helping hand. The other members of the Lopez family would only think of ways to worsen their predicaments and maximize their own profits. Aaron and Caitlyn's sentiment of treating the Lopez family with sincerity was clearly not reciprocated.

Levi was done freshening up at that time. He poured a cup of warm milk while he questioned Zoey, "Did all of the investors pull out from the project?"

The Protector Chapter 166

Zoey nodded. “Yes. I suppose they’ll be asking for compensation too.”

Levi sipped from his glass and said with a smile, “That’s alright. They’ll regret their decisions soon.”

“What do you mean?” Zoey was puzzled.

“Be patient. Someone will invest in that project very soon,” Levi comforted her.

“Do you have a plan in your mind?” Zoey looked at Levi curiously.

“Don’t worry. This matter will be resolved after today,” Levi assured Zoey and her parents calmly.

But they were not convinced by Levi’s words because they were up against the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce.

Everyone involved in the business world in North Hampton was well aware of the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce’s influence.

The North Hampton Chamber of Commerce was controlled by the 4 ultra-wealthy families in the cities, under the management of 8 council members.

The chairman of Fick Group’s board of directors, Alaric Taylor, was one of the council members.

Alaric wanted to seek revenge on Zoey and her family because of what happened to Charles.

All the investors for Zoey’s project withdrew their capital because of a single command from him.

The North Hampton Chamber of Commerce was a formidable organization as they could easily sever all connections related to the Lopez family’s businesses.

The news of Levi’s violent act spread like wildfire in North Hampton that day. They demanded a large amount of compensation and prevented anyone from investing in Zoey’s project.

A lot of companies were interested in the West City Ecological Park project initially because of its promising prospect. The potential investors immediately erased the thought in their minds because of that warning from the Chamber of Commerce.

Zoey was left helpless and clueless as to how she should salvage the situation while being ostracized by the entire industry.

But the bad news did not end there. Zoey’s employees handed their resignation letters one after another. Even the secretary involved in the incident last night quitted her job.

The secretary also made an official statement. She told the public that Charles and his business partners did not step a toe out of the line. They were having an ordinary dinner banquet when she witnessed Levi entering the room and tormenting everyone mercilessly.

Boom!

Zoey's mind went blank upon receiving the news. Someone must have bribed her. She suddenly became their witness against Levi. Suzie passed out last night. Charles and his friends would have defiled her if Levi did not show up. Levi rescued her, but she betrayed us! I nourished a viper in my bosom!

Zoey could not fathom Suzie's abrupt change in loyalty. I picked her out personally among all the fresh graduates, so I certainly did not expect her to do this. I can understand the other employees' decisions to leave, but Suzie...

Zoey sat in her office gloomily as unprecedented desperation washed over her.

The door to her office was pushed open after some time. A few men clad in suits entered the room.

"Allow me to introduce myself, Ms. Lopez. I am Baker McKenzie from Botts & Ellis LLP. We are hired by Mrs. Dickens to represent her son, Mr. Charles Dickens, in this lawsuit. We came here to inform you about the compensation amount you have to pay our client due to the injuries your husband, Mr. Levi Garrison, inflicted on our client. The sum is 800 million. Please take a look." Baker handed Zoey a piece of paper.

Zoey's face turned pale after she skimmed through the document.

"We will press charges against you and your husband if you do not wish to settle this matter in private. We have a large amount of evidence, including surveillance footage, witnesses from the hotel's waiters, the official statement from Ms. Suzie Bones, and 8 other victims in this incident. Let me remind you – this lawsuit is highly advantageous to us. Please take a look at this injury report too. Do you think you have the liberty to choose, Ms. Lopez?"

The Protector Chapter 167

Botts & Ellis LLP was a law firm established by Zoey's ex-classmate, Arnold Botts. That firm was one of the most prestigious firms in North Hampton. They won almost all the cases they accepted.

Zoey was devastated. She was frightened when she saw the injury report. I can't imagine the things Levi must have done to cause so much damage. But I can certainly picture the troubles we have to face soon.

We will have a tough time ahead because of this injury report alone. Although Charles and his business partners wronged me in the first place, I do not have any evidence that prove their vile acts.

"Also, allow me to inform you this, Ms. Lopez, I am the best lawyer in my firm. Ever since they hired me at Botts & Ellis LLP, the firm had never lost a single case. So trust me, this lawsuit will not be an exception. You should think wisely now!" Baker sneered.

Baker's assistant added, "I heard your husband, Levi Garrison, was released from prison recently. With

his record, it is not so difficult to place him behind the bars again.”

The group of lawyers manipulated the situation to their advantage with the sole purpose of driving Zoey into a corner.

“Alright then, we will be waiting for your reply, Ms. Lopez. Consider your options well.” Baker and the others left afterward.

Zoey was left alone inside her office. Tears welled up in her eyes as she thought to herself, Perhaps I can seek help from Arnold. He pursued me in the past, but I rejected him.

Zoey spent a lot of effort to obtain Arnold Botts’s number. Then she called him.

“Oh? Why are you contacting me, Zoey?” Arnold said in a surprised tone.

Zoey forced a smile. “Hello, Arnold. I’ll cut to the chase. I’m facing some difficulties...”

“Yes, I know. You’re talking about the incident involving Levi Garrison and Charles Dickens from Fick Group, am I right?”

“Yes, that’s right. Can you help me with this lawsuit? We can discuss the price to fit your liking,” Zoey pleaded with sincerity.

Arnold grinned. “I am aware of this lawsuit because the best lawyer in my firm accepted the case. I’ll be frank – you’ll have a difficult time trying to win against him for this case. Let me offer you a piece of my mind, Zoey. You should ditch Levi while you can. He’s just a useless man now. Let him return to the jail. Then, you can remarry someone better. Everyone from our high school is doing far better than Levi Garrison. Take me for an example. My law firm, Botts & Ellis LLP, has been flourishing for the past ten years! There are a lot of outstanding lawyers working for me currently,” Arnold persuaded Zoey.

Zoey countered immediately, “Levi did not hurt them on purpose. Charles and his friends tried to take advantage of me after getting me drunk. Levi was merely rescuing me.”

“That’s impossible! I have been friends with Mr. Dickens for a long time now. He’s a gentleman, as far as I’m concerned. He will never do such things. His friends are as noble as him. Do you have any evidence to back your words?” Arnold said.

“You...” Zoey did not expect Arnold to be in cahoots with Charles and his gang.

“Don’t worry, Zoey. I will make sure Baker does a splendid job this time and push for Levi to be sentenced to life imprisonment. You will have the opportunity to ditch him soon.” Arnold laughed wickedly.

“You don’t have to worry about my matters. Moreover, you are not qualified to judge my husband’s character!” Zoey hung up the phone angrily.

Inside the office of Botts & Ellis LLP’s building, Arnold crossed his feet on the table while wearing a suit. He was sipping casually on a cup of coffee.

The Protector Chapter 168

He had accepted this case immediately and devised a plan for Alaric Taylor when he heard Zoey was involved in this matter. Arnold ordered his subordinate, "Inform Mr. Taylor to prohibit all the law firms in North Hampton from accepting Zoey's case using his connections."

His assistant nodded. "Yes, sir."

All the law firms in North Hampton soon received the news: No one is allowed to accept Zoey Lopez's case.

Zoey, on the other hand, was oblivious as she wasted all her time contacting every law firm she could to fight for her lawsuit. But every firm turned her down.

Zoey quickly realized something was wrong after receiving the continuous rejections. Someone is pushing me into the depth of despair. They want to send Levi into prison and ruin everything I have.

Zoey dialed Levi's number without wasting another second.

Levi was astounded by the turn of events when he arrived at Zoey's office. I did not expect this to happen. Perhaps I've underestimated the Chamber of Commerce's authority. Well, Arnold Botts's involvement is out of my initial consideration too.

"We are left with two choices. We can either pay the sum of 800 million or proceed with the lawsuit. But I contacted all the law firms I could, and all of them refused to represent us," Zoey sobbed.

"You don't have to think about the lawsuit anymore. They have planned everything, down to cutting off all your resources and connections. But believe me, this is not the extent of their plans." Levi's smile widened.

The legal team from Fick Group arrived shortly after as Levi had predicted.

They requested Zoey to compensate them with a sum of 300 million for Charles Dickens's injuries and the delay of the West City Ecological Park's progress.

I did breach the agreement. And it is clearly written on the agreement that I have to compensate them with 10 times the amount they invested. Before Zoey had time to catch her breath, Alaric sent his men from the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce to visit Zoey.

They offered to purchase Zoey's company for 300 million, including the West City Ecological Park project.

Boom!

Zoey was flabbergasted. They planned everything. They are pushing me into the traps they laid out for me, one after the other. I'll be left with nothing by the time this incident comes to an end. Alaric offered

to buy out my company for 300 million. Then I'll have no other choice but to pay Fick Group with the lump sum for breaching the contract. They will take control of all my assets, worth up to a billion, in a breeze. My assets will depreciate further if I do not agree now since I do not have sufficient cash flow to operate my business at this point. 300 million is already considered a great deal.

Alaric and Arnold were proud of this scheme they devised because they would be able to rob Zoey's possessions while pushing Levi into jail simultaneously.

Alaric's subordinate said with a smile, "Our offer coincides with the amount you have to pay Fick Group for breaching the contract. If you agree to our proposal, let's handle the procedures right away."

Zoey hesitated. I will have to pay this 300 million sum. I really do not have any other choice. Should I just accept this offer?

"Hesitate no more, Ms. Lopez. Your asset may depreciate to 200 million tomorrow," That person urged Zoey to agree to his offer.

Levi suddenly voiced out at that moment. "300 million? That's not a problem!"

Everyone was astounded by Levi's statement. Zoey was not an exception. 300 million is not a problem? He's talking big again.

"Don't worry. I can afford 3 billion, not to mention 300 million. Let's just wait until tomorrow before we decide anything."

Zoey looked at Levi incredulously. “Are you really capable of acquiring the money?”

“Did I say that I’d pay them? Why should we do that? We’re not at fault in this incident.” Levi smiled.

“But they have all the evidence. We have no other choice but to concede!” Zoey rubbed her temples.

“All you have to do now is to proceed with your work as usual. You can approve the resignations of your employees, but you need to make a statement in advance. Tell them that anyone who quits their job now will not be accepted in Imperial Meadows from now on. The employees who stay with the company through this crisis will receive an increased salary and more benefits,” Levi told Zoey what to do.

“But we have no money to fund our operations now. Moreover, no one will dare to invest in my company after that official warning given by the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce,” Zoey said with uncertainty.

“Just do as I say. Someone will invest in your company today,” Levi assured her.

Zoey placed her faith in Levi and heeded his advice.

She made the announcement as Levi suggested. Many of her employees were enraged to receive the notice.

“There’s no need for me to return to this rubbish company anyway!”

“That’s right! Imperial Meadows is going bankrupt soon. What’s the point of acting tough now?”

Zoey merely endured the insults in silent.

At that moment, a Maybach stopped in front of Imperial Meadows’s building.

A few men got out of the car. The man leading the group was dressed in a suit and wearing a pair of sunglasses.

That man was none other than Kirin. Today, he was playing the role of a company’s president instead of a military instructor.

“Hello, please inform Ms. Lopez that Levi Group’s president, Mr. Rhodes, is here to meet her.” The receptionist immediately contacted Zoey after Kirin’s assistant spoke to her.

Zoey came to the lobby to welcome Kirin in person afterward.

Kirin was a skilled fighter and an experienced instructor, but he wasn’t familiar with business talks. Hence, he addressed Zoey in a straightforward manner, “I am would like to invest in an ongoing project under your company, Ms. Lopez. I’ll provide you a 300 million capital for now. Let’s sign the contract now if you agree to my offer.”

His assistant handed the contract to Zoey after Kirin waved his hand.

Zoey was shocked after she glanced through the agreement. This is not a collaboration. He might as well just give me the money!

Kirin added, “We have an ongoing medical-related project as well. I know your company has expertise in this field, so we will let you handle this project too, Ms. Lopez.”

The assistant handed Zoey another document.

That project would only provide Zoey’s company with a 100 million investment, but that was mainly due to Imperial Meadows’s limited capacity.

“Will you agree to my offer, Ms. Lopez?” Kirin inquired.

“Of course! Thank you so much, Mr. Rhodes!” Zoey expressed her gratitude agitatedly.

Then, she gazed at Kirin curiously. “If you do not mind me asking, Mr. Rhodes, why are you choosing to invest in my company when we’re in a tight spot? I have to ask because I cannot think of a valid reason myself.”

Kirin answered, “Firstly, I have faith in your company’s prospect because your business is in demand. The second reason is that I am not afraid of the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce.”

“What kind of relationship do you share with Levi Garrison, Mr. Rhodes?” Zoey questioned.

The words slipped out of Kirin’s mouth subconsciously. “He’s my... He’s someone with great potential, in my opinion. Levi Group’s advancement in the medical field was unparalleled in the past. I acquired Levi Group and the Garrison family’s businesses because I do not want this technology to go to waste. I came here to invest in your company partly because of this reason too.”

The Protector Chapter 170

“Okay. I understand now.”

The investment made by the mysterious Mr. Rhodes spread quickly throughout the entire North Hampton.

The North Hampton Chamber of Commerce was one of the few to take particular interest in that news.

Alaric Taylor, an obese man, was puffing on his cigar inside his office. “Who is this Neil Rhodes? Why have I never heard of him?”

Alaric’s assistant replied. “We’ve investigated his background. There is limited information on him.”

“I don’t know what’s wrong with the Rogers family. Why did they give him Levi Group and Garrison

Group all of a sudden? Check out the relationship between Neil Rhodes and the Rogers family,” Alaric ordered. Then, he put on a mischievous smile. “It doesn’t matter to me even if you obtained that investment from Levi Group, Zoey Lopez. You cannot save Levi Garrison anyway. This is the repercussion you must face for harming my godson!”

No one expected Charles Dickens to be Alaric’s godson.

Zoey’s company was finally getting back on track after she received the investment. But I must pay the penalty for breaching the contract. Otherwise, Levi will face time in jail. I’m still worried about this because there’s no way I can collect so much money in this short period of time.

Meanwhile, Levi was hanging out with Azure Dragon and the others.

Azure Dragon laughed out loud when he was informed of the ongoing situation. “Hahaha! What a joke! Is there actually someone who has the guts to send you into prison at this time and age?”

Levi shared his thoughts while smoking a cigarette, “I did not expect these foreigners to have the support of the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce.”

“What are you going to do next, Sir?” Azure Dragon asked.

“Firstly, I’ll visit those people who committed perjury. Then, I’ll deal with the lawyers. The last thing to do is to show the necessary evidence to deport those foreigners,” Levi elaborated.

“Evidence? But there is no evidence as far as I’m concerned.” Azure Dragon was astounded.

However, he quickly gained revelation at the sight of Levi’s sly smile.

Levi Garrison was a man with a plan. He was not only a formidable enemy on the battlefield with unrivaled combat skills, that man was also a brilliant tactician. Dealing with that incident was a piece of cake to him. He had deliberately left traces behind when dealing with Charles and the others last night.

Phoenix took up the responsibility to look for the few waiters in the hotel who had falsified statements as witnesses that night.

Levi and Azure Dragon went to meet with Zoey’s secretary, Suzie. Levi had to deal with matters related to his wife in person.

At that moment, youngsters were dancing to the music inside the Space Bar located in North Hampton.

Suzie treated her friends to party in the bar after receiving a million in cash from Alaric that day. She booked the VIP table in the bar and even ordered the most luxurious meal they had.

Suzie was washing her hand with a bottle of expensive champagne when Levi arrived at the bar.

He sat quietly next to Suzie and chatted with her casually, “Are you having fun spending the money Alaric Taylor gave you?”

Suzie was stunned when she heard Levi's voice. When did he appear next to me?

"Why are you here, Levi Garrison? And what nonsense did you spout?" Suzie recollected her thoughts after a while.

Levi beamed at her. "I remember you were drunk as well last night. I saved you and arranged for someone to send you home."

The color drained from Suzie's face as she listened to him. She refuted his statement firmly. "Nonsense! I wasn't drunk yesterday, nor did you save me!"

"Go on. Please go on with your lies." Levi smiled.

Suzie's male friends stood up and surrounded Levi in an instant. "Who the hell are you, kiddo? What's going on here?"

Levi could not care less about the few lowly men surrounding him.

He continued to stare at Suzie. “Is that so? But I saw with my own eyes how drunk you were.”

“Impossible! I wasn’t drunk! I attended a dinner banquet with Ms. Lopez yesterday. Then, you came in and beat those people up. You even tortured them and warned me not to tell anyone!” Suzie summoned her courage and placed the blame on Levi unwaveringly.

“Oh really?” Levi demanded.

Suzie was not afraid because she had her muscular friends’ support. She shrieked angrily. “Don’t you dare pull any tricks on me, Levi Garrison! I’m telling you, you cannot escape the charges pressed against you!”

“You’re an ungrateful human being. Those foreigners would’ve raped you if I did not rescue you last night,” Levi responded.

Fear crept into Suzie’s heart when she was reminded of the frightening scene from yesterday.

But she braced herself and said, “Hmph! That’s not possible. Mr. Dickens is a well-known gentleman. He’s polite toward all ladies. Don’t go judging him with your despicable standards!”

She’s good at telling lies. Levi took out his phone and pulled up his gallery. He then waved his phone in Suzie’s face. “This is the video of you in a drunken state that I took last night. I wonder who is the person touching you in this video? Oops! I believe these hands belong to Mr. Dickens!”

Suzie was dumbfounded when she saw the video. He took a video of me. This video is proof that I falsified my statements! I’ll face time in jail if I’m exposed.

Suzie’s face turned to the shade of chalk instantaneously.

“Delete that video right now!” She made a fruitless attempt to snatch Levi’s phone. Levi nimble avoided her and got up to leave.

Suzie hurriedly stood up as well. She yelled furiously, “Give me the phone!”

“Why should I give you this phone?” Levi asked.

“Give her the phone immediately!” Suzie’s friends blocked Levi’s path and ordered him in an unfriendly manner.

“Oh please. This is my phone,” Levi said.

One of the men, Clement Marrow, demanded harshly, “I order you to hand the phone over right now! Truth be told, the person in charge of this bar is my brother, Chopper. I guarantee you will not walk out of this place unscathed if you do not give me the phone.”

Her friends' presence boosted Suzie's courage. "You'll suffer greatly tonight if you do not delete the video, Levi Garrison!"

Levi ignored them. Clement reached out to snatch the phone just as Levi continued to walk ahead.

Thump!

Azure Dragon appeared out of nowhere and punched Clement's face. Blood splattered everywhere.

Thump!

Another man fell to the floor.

In a matter of seconds, Suzie's friends were all lying on the ground.

"Who the hell dares to cause trouble on my turf?" A loud voice pierced the atmosphere inside the bar.

A dozen men rushed toward the scene. They were thugs in charge of the security in that bar.

The bar's manager had informed them about the fight, so they came in a hurry.

Levi thought that voice was a little familiar. That's Chopper, who works on the construction site as a helper. He's one of Nueve's men.

Chopper's face turned pale when he recognized Levi's face. "So, you are the bastards causing trouble on my turf?" Chopper strode past Levi and Azure Dragon and came to a halt in front of Clement and his friends.

Slap!

Chopper slapped Clement forcefully across his face as the latter spat out a mouthful of blood and a few of his teeth.

The Protector Chapter 172

Slap!

Chopper slapped another person's face.

The few thugs following Chopper beat up Clement and his friends mercilessly.

The manager was astounded. Why is he beating up our VIP customers tonight? How did they end up becoming the troublemakers?

"I am certain that they stirred up trouble in this bar!" Chopper interrupted the manager before he could

explain.

Unexpectedly, Chopper shuffled toward Levi and said to him politely. "I'm sorry to have bothered you with this inconvenience. I've dealt with those idiotic punks, Mr. Garrison."

"Well done." Chopper was elated to receive a compliment from Levi.

Suzie and her friends were puzzled. That's the complete opposite of what happened.

Levi waved his phone at Suzie. "I'll be taking my leave, then."

Levi left with Azure Dragon afterward.

Suzie chased after them immediately because Levi still possessed the video that could ruin her life.

But by the time she arrived at the door, Levi and Azure Dragon had disappeared without a trace.

"Boo hoo..." Suzie knelt on the floor as she cried her eyes out. I'll be doomed if I cannot find Levi Garrison! I'll have no way to escape imprisonment if he turns in the video.

Suzie was overwhelmed by fear and regret. I cannot go to jail now. I just graduated from university, and I have a bright future ahead of me. Oh! How I wish I can turn back time. I lost sight of everything because of that 1 million offer.

Meanwhile, Phoenix had completed his tasks. He tracked down all the transaction histories and call logs of the waiters that witnessed the event. The waiters were cowering in tears before Phoenix.

Inside a luxurious villa in North Hampton, Arnold Botts was puffing on a cigar while a sexy lady lay on his bed.

He eyed the woman on the bed and sneered, "The next person to fill that position on the bed will be you, Zoey Lopez!"

Many of her ex-classmates had always coveted Zoey because of her beauty, especially those who were now successful and accomplished in life.

Arnold was determined to get his way because this was a once-in-a-lifetime opportunity for him to sleep with Zoey. I'll have a taste of the woman who rejected me in the past!

At that moment, someone pressed on his doorbell.

Arnold put on a bathrobe and went to open the door after he cursed that person who disrupted his train of thoughts.

It was Levi who was standing on the other side of the door.

"Oh my! Look at that! Levi Garrison, the man who used to be a powerful figure in North Hampton. Welcome!" Arnold invited Levi into his villa instead of chasing him away.

“Are you here because of your lawsuit?” Arnold asked.

“You’re right. You are the owner of Botts & Ellis LLP, after all. You are the only person I can come to at a time like this.” Levi smiled.

“What’s going on?” Arnold feigned ignorance.

“I am here because no lawyer in the city would represent us in this lawsuit. I was hoping if you could enlighten me on the situation,” Levi answered.

“Haha! Frankly speaking, I arranged for all this to happen. No one in this field will have the guts to accept your case now,” Arnold blurted out the truth because he was not afraid of Levi. In his opinion, Levi was there to beg him for mercy.

“Oh no! It’s you?” Levi pretended to be in disbelief.

“That’s right! I want to drive you and Zoey into a corner. I want both of you to be caught in a helpless and desperate situation. And here you are, coming all the way to my villa to beg me!” Arnold beamed at Levi.

“That means you planned everything with Alaric Taylor’s help?” Levi questioned him.

“Yes! I bribed those witnesses too. My arrangements are flawless! You will have to face death if you do not beg me right now, Levi Garrison!”

Arnold Botts laughed wickedly. You're completely under my control, Levi Garrison! You're doomed!

"So, it is you who have been manipulating every turn of events!" Levi acted as if he was furious.

"That's right! I agreed to accept the case without any hesitation when the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce contacted me previously. I pursued Zoey in the past, but she rejected me mercilessly and even told me that I do not deserve her. But times have changed – I am the person who can alter your fates now!"

Arnold Botts could never let go of the humiliation he experienced in his younger days. But he finally had the opportunity to toy with Zoey. I will play with her to my heart's content!

"You..." Levi put up a scared front.

Arnold moved closer to Levi and jeered at him, "I am your master now, Levi Garrison. You will lose if you fight me in this lawsuit. I will see your face again behind bars."

"But that wasn't my fault. They tried to take advantage of Zoey and threatened me too. I was only defending myself," Levi uttered the words desperately.

"Hehe. I am aware of that, naturally. Charles and his friends are a bunch of sex fiends. They have toyed with plenty of women over the years. They wanted to defile Zoey on purpose as a form of revenge against you. It was also their intention to tie you up and let you witness the entire process. But what can you do even if you know all about the truth now? You don't have any evidence against us!" Arnold challenged Levi smugly.

"Then what should I do, old friend? Can you please help me?" Levi faked a plea.

Arnold put on a cunning smile. "That's very simple. Pay me 200 million and leave Zoey under my care for 1 week. This is not too much to ask, am I right? 200 million should not be a problem now that someone has invested in her company. I'm offering you a fair deal now. Let your wife please me for 1 week in exchange for your safety." Arnold patted Levi's shoulder. "Think wisely, Levi. You're doomed if you cannot fulfill these two conditions. I guarantee you will be sentenced to life imprisonment. You can never escape that place for the rest of your life!"

Levi laughed after Arnold was done threatening him. He sat on the sofa and crossed his legs while puffing on a special cigarette from the army.

His demeanor had changed completely from when he was begging Arnold Botts moments ago.

Arnold stared at Levi incredulously. He's supposed to be begging me. Why is he acting like the boss now?

"What are you doing, Levi Garrison? Are you tired of living?" Arnold screamed.

Footsteps reverberated inside the room all of a sudden.

Arnold assumed the sound was made by the woman he slept with earlier, so he said harshly. "Didn't I tell you not to come out here?"

"I'm not allowed to come out here?" Arnold turned his head around immediately when he heard the voice of a man instead. Then, he saw Azure Dragon walking slowly in his direction with a camera in his hand.

"Who are you? What are you doing here?"

Azure Dragon strode up to Levi while disregarding Arnold. "I've captured the whole process, Sir!"

Arnold tensed up when he saw the camera. He asked frightfully, "You recorded the whole conversation earlier?"

Clarity washed over Arnold instantaneously. Levi put up a pretense by begging me for mercy. He set a trap for me to spill the truth on my own accord. I did not expect him to do this. Levi Garrison is just a nobody, in my opinion. Perhaps I've underestimated him.

Levi checked the footage and said with a smile, "You're right. I wanted to record just the voices with a recorder. But on second thought, filming the entire process will be more convincing."

The Protector Chapter 174

Levi's confidence unsettled Arnold. I'll be a goner if this footage is exposed to the public. My law firm will collapse, so will my life!

Arnold was drenched in a cold sweat at that moment. His anxiety was much more intense than Suzie's. Suzie's concern was merely the fear of imprisonment while Arnold would lose everything, including his wealth, career, and life.

Arnold stared at Levi hatefully, unwilling to give up without a fight. "Hand me the footage now. Then, we can discuss the terms like civilized people. Otherwise, you will suffer miserably."

"Are you threatening me?" Levi grinned at him.

Arnold grasped the situation in a heartbeat. Levi Garrison is a formidable man. He would not think of doing this if he's just an Average Joe as I thought. Threatening him is futile.

Arnold suppressed his undulating emotions. He tried to negotiate with Levi, "Just tell me what you want."

Levi shook his head. "I don't want anything."

"No, wait! I will assist you in this lawsuit if you give me the footage. I can guarantee your victory, and you will receive a handsome amount of compensation too!" Arnold suggested. Levi's only wish at this moment should be to win this lawsuit and free himself from all the charges pressed against him.

Levi's lips curled into a pensive smile. "Why would I need a rubbish like you to help me with the lawsuit?"

Levi got up to leave after he spoke.

"You can't leave now! Let's discuss the terms as you wish." Arnold blocked Levi from moving forward. "I can promise you anything as long as you delete the video!" Arnold was on the verge of tears.

Azure Dragon lifted Arnold and tossed him on the sofa.

Arnold wailed and shrieked, but he could not do a thing as Levi slowly disappeared from his vision.

Outside the villa, Phoenix met up with Levi. He handed him some documents. "Here's the transaction history and call log between Arnold Botts and Alaric Taylor, Sir!"

"Well done. We've gathered all the evidence we need. Place this on Xavier Fields's working desk, Phoenix. He will go through these documents tomorrow."

Levi puffed on his cigarette and disappeared into the night.

That was destined to be a long and unbearable night for Zoey and Aaron because their fates would be

determined at sunrise.

That night was not pleasant for the few waiters who committed perjury too.

At 8 o'clock in the morning, a series of police sirens were heard as police cars surrounded the Grand Imperial Hotel.

A dozen policemen got out of the car and rushed into the hotel. Then, they swiftly brought the waiters away.

Inside her apartment, Suzie was distressed by the unexpected turn of events.

“Don't worry, Suzie. You have the support of Arnold Botts and the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce. Levi Garrison will not escape the terrible fate waiting for him with these impressive forces going against him. Don't concern yourself with the video. You only have to stick firmly with your statement that Levi edited the video,” Her friends comforted her.

Suzie felt a little better after listening to her friends. That's right. Levi is nothing compared to the people supporting me!

However, with that thought in her mind, the sound of sirens reverberated through the entire apartment.

Suzie and her friends ran to the windows to check out the situation. They saw a police car parked below the apartment.

Suzie passed out in fear. But she was taken away by the policemen anyway.

On the other end, Arnold went to Alaric Taylor's Alaric Group early in the morning. He was actually Alaric's godson as well.

Inside the chairman's office, Arnold was begging Alaric to help him.

“You must save me, godfather! Levi Garrison has the evidence that could ruin my life.” Arnold's face was paper-white.

Alaric chided while smoking his cigar, “How can you introduce yourself to others as a lawyer when you are such a coward?”

The Protector Chapter 175

Arnold's body shuddered as he explained, "That's not it, godfather. Levi is a capable man. Not only did he trick me into revealing all the truth, but he also filmed the entire conversation. I just received news of the few waiters and Zoey's secretary's arrests for committing perjury! I will be his next target. You have to save me, please!" Arnold begged Alaric.

Alaric stood before the French windows overlooking the city of North Hampton. He said after taking a puff of his cigar, "Who has the guts to harm my godson? Don't worry about this, Arnold. Nothing will happen to you. The vice-captain of the patrol squad needs to pay his respects to me as well. Do you know how much I have contributed to the city's advancement every year?"

Alaric was unfazed. Not only am I one of the council members of the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce, but I am also the owner of Alaric Group, a business worth up to 8 billion. What do I have to fear?

But the next second, a series of police sirens blared in front of the Alaric Group's building.

The sound filled every corner of the skyscraper.

The color drained from Alaric's face when he saw the police cars parked near the entrance of the building.

Arnold was already shivering in terror. They are here to capture me!

Alaric continued to puff on his cigar. His brows were knitted together tightly, but he reassured his godson, "Don't worry, Arnold. No one will dare lay a finger on you as long as I am here."

A few policemen barged into Alaric's office.

They displayed Arnold's arrest warrant immediately.

Arnold was so frightened, he was soaked in a cold sweat.

Alaric raised his voice, "Try and take him away if you have the courage to do so!"

"He's not the only person we are taking away. You are following us as well." A voice was heard suddenly. Xavier Fields showed himself a split second later. In his hands was another arrest warrant to detain Alaric.

"Captain Fields?" Alaric was surprised to see Xavier Fields.

Xavier Fields knew Alaric was a tricky man to handle, so he had to deal with him in person. "Alaric Taylor and Arnold Botts, we have solid evidence to prove your crimes. Please cooperate with us to undergo the investigation. Otherwise, we will take you by force."

Four policemen stepped forward and arrested them after Xavier waved his hand.

Alaric did not expect himself to be targeted. I am the council member of the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce!

Everyone else shared Alaric's sentiment because no one foresaw the arrest of a council member of the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce.

The evidence against them was indeed irrefutable, but both Alaric and Arnold were astounded to see the transaction histories and call logs. We purposefully encrypted this information! So why is it here?

Arnold knew the precautionary measures he had to take as he was a lawyer. The police and investigators shouldn't have been able to crack the security encryption. But they did not know Phoenix was one of the best hackers in the world. He dealt with the issue effortlessly.

With that, Alaric Taylor and Arnold Botts were captured. Charges were pressed against Charles and his friends who were staying inside the hospital. All of them would either be placed behind bars or deported upon their recovery.

This news spread like wildfire throughout North Hampton. Justice had prevailed. However, Alaric Taylor's arrest shocked the public the most.

The members of the Chamber of Commerce were astounded by that matter. However, they had no other choice but to concede because Xavier Fields was the man to take Alaric into custody.

Inside Zoey's office, two people were wrapped in a tight embrace. "So, you've predicted these to happen. You're so smart to deliberately leave evidence at the scene! No wonder you were so calm the whole time!" Zoey's eyes shone as she spoke to Levi.

Levi smiled. They are too young to be competing with me.

The Protector Chapter 176

Levi Group contacted Zoey's company after the crisis was resolved. They wanted to contribute an additional 200 million investment to expand Zoey's business.

Zoey accepted the offer without a second thought.

In the afternoon, Zoey made another announcement. "Any employee who weathered the crisis with us will receive a higher salary and more benefits from now on!"

She even promoted a few of her employees because the majority of the workers had quit.

The announcement made a huge impact on the business world in North Hampton.

Imperial Meadows was also hiring a large number of new employees as they needed to expand their business.

A massive crowd of applicants gathered in front of the company's entrance.

At the recruitment venue, a middle-aged obese man in a suit tossed his resume on the table. "I was the head of the legal department in Imperial Meadows, Elmer Reid. Register my name immediately because I'm coming back to work now."

But the recruiter sneered. "Elmer Reid, you say? You're on the Imperial Meadows's recruitment blacklist. You will never be employed by this company again for the rest of your life!"

"Who are you? How dare you reject my application? Bring the head of the HR department here right now!" Elmer roared.

He was not pleased to be stopped by a few lowly employees at the entrance of the company.

"He's right! We used to be Imperial Meadows's employees. So why aren't you letting us in?"

"We worked in this company for years. Imperial Meadows cannot operate without us!"

"Not only do we want to rejoin the company, we demand to receive the extra benefits too!"

The crowd yelled and screamed at the recruiters, following Elmer Reid's lead.

They were the employees who resigned amidst Imperial Meadows's crisis. They returned to the company after they heard about Zoey's announcement. But all of them were infuriated after they learned that their names were registered on the blacklist.

Elmer Reid said angrily, "Give us a proper explanation. We can sue you for inflicting psychological trauma on us and demand compensation!"

Zoey appeared at that moment. "I warned you of the consequences of leaving the company previously. All of you are on Imperial Meadows's blacklist now!"

The ex-employees cowered when they saw Zoey.

Elmer said with a smile, “We have reflected on our mistakes now, Ms. Lopez. Please give us another chance.”

“That’s right. We are terribly sorry. Please give us another opportunity!” The others pleaded as well.

“I already gave you a chance,” Zoey responded unmercifully.

The employees who stayed with Imperial Meadows before were grateful for their decisions. We would be facing the same situation as them if we followed them previously.

Zoey was adamant. “Anyone who’s on the blacklist will never be accepted in Imperial Meadows!”

“Fine! Do not blame us in that case, Zoey Lopez! We’ll stay here to protest until you return the jobs to us!” Elmer Reid retorted.

All the other ex-employees did as Elmer said. They blocked the company’s entrance to prevent anyone from entering.

“Let’s see who has got more time to waste now!” Elmer added. “I will also sue you for creating this unreasonable rule and infringing our basic human right to apply for a job. I will demand a large amount of compensation due to this horrible psychological trauma you have inflicted on us!”

Elmer Reid is adept at manipulating the law to his advantage. More importantly, we cannot operate as usual if they continue to protest here. Zoey saw Levi just as she was troubled by the predicament.

A large group of scary men followed behind Levi.

“Who dares to stir up trouble in front of the Imperial Meadows’s building?” Levi shouted.

The Protector Chapter 177

“That’s me. Do you have a problem with that?” Elmer accepted the challenge.

Chopper and his men surged forward with a wave of Levi’s hand.

They quickly surrounded Elmer. Chopper patted Elmer’s cheek tauntingly. “What’s going on? Are you causing a ruckus?” Chopper asked with a grin.

Elmer was scared out of his wits when he saw the menacing appearance of the thugs. The scars and tattoos covering Chopper’s skin did not help ease his anxiety.

Chopper’s subordinates took care of the other employees who followed Elmer’s lead.

But Elmer summoned his courage and confronted Zoey, “How dare you hire these thugs to threaten me.

I will sue you! You're dead!"

Zoey jeered at him, "Oh, I'm sorry. I don't know them."

Chopper agreed with her. "That's right! We don't know one another. I am here to settle this dispute because I do not like the way you are causing trouble here! Do you have a problem with that?"

Everyone supported Chopper, "That's right. We don't like how you're bullying the others. We will interfere in this matter regardless of what you say!"

"You..." I know they are acquainted with each other, but I do not have any proof. "What do you want? I am a lawyer, so I am not afraid of you!" Elmer spoke with an unconvincing tone.

Chopper patted his face again. "We don't want anything. Though I do know your daughter is a student at North Hampton Primary School, and your wife is working at Sunshine Hypermarket..."

"What?" Elmer was taken aback by Chopper's words. He's blatantly threatening me. But I can't say or do anything because of how he phrased his sentence!

"This is my bad! I will not repeat my mistake in the future!" Elmer surrendered.

"Don't you know that you should apologize after you make a mistake?" Chopper sneered.

Elmer stood in front of Zoey and apologized, "We are terribly sorry, Ms. Lopez. We will not cause you any more trouble!"

Everyone admitted their mistakes as well. They regretted their decisions. We could've enjoyed these benefits if we did not submit our resignation letters in the past.

Members of the Lopez family were filled with regrets as well.

"What? Levi Group invested a total of 600 million? Imperial Meadows will be expanding its business?" Harry Lopez was astonished.

Fabian nodded. "Yes. They have sufficient capital to expand their business after setting aside the money needed for the West City Ecological Park project. Imperial Meadows will be on par with Lopez Group soon!"

"What?" Harry Lopez was in utter disbelief. I thought I was so smart to take away that 100 million, but the tables have turned. We've messed up our relationship with Zoey at this point! "Perhaps it is time we try to reconcile with Zoey."

Levi was fully occupied by the matters related to Levi Group in the past few days. He decided to rename the company as Morris Group to pay respect to Morris Atkinson as well as to announce his rivalry with the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce.

Zoey's grandmother's birthday banquet was around the corner.

Aaron and Caitlyn were putting a lot of effort into preparing the birthday presents.

Caitlyn purchased a jade statue for her mother because her mother was a collector of those antiques. Aaron, on the other hand, spent 300 thousand on a famous painting.

Zoey bought a set of expensive supplements for her grandmother.

Aaron was satisfied with the presents they had prepared for Caitlyn's mother. He reminded Levi, "You should come up with something too, Levi. This will be your first time meeting with your grandmother-in-law. Remember to buy an expensive gift. Get the money from Zoey if you have to."

Caitlyn glared at Aaron before turning to look at Levi. "The price is not the priority. It is more important for you to put thought into the gift."

The Protector Chapter 178

"You're right! The Black family is almost as influential as the Garrison family. They might even think of the expensive gifts as cheap objects," Aaron said.

I should prepare a thoughtful present since this woman is Zoey's grandmother. "Father, mother, does grandmother have any special hobbies or quirks?" Levi asked.

"I'm not sure about her hobbies, but she does have a bad habit," Caitlyn answered. "She likes to drink and smoke. My mother never listens to our advice."

Levi smiled. "Then I will prepare alcohol and cigarettes for her."

"What? Don't mess around, Levi! My siblings will scold me if you prepare those items as my mother's birthday present. Moreover, with my mother's status, she's not the type of person to just indulge in any alcohol and cigarettes. So you can erase that thought from your mind," Caitlyn warned him.

"It's better for you to go empty-handed than adding to the trouble," Aaron added.

"Alright then." But I will prepare a present for her. And this will be something grandmother has never seen because no one can buy this with money.

The next day, everyone departed for the Black family house.

Abigail tagged along with Levi and the others.

Although Zoey was rich, the money was placed inside the company's account. Aaron did not have sufficient time to purchase a luxurious car either. Hence, they took the train to their destination. It was, after all, only a 40-minute ride.

Aaron and Caitlyn were reassured after they saw Levi leaving the house without a present. They were afraid of Levi's unpredictability and his tendency to worsen every situation.

Forty minutes later, they arrived at the South City train station.

Aaron and Caitlyn walked in front with excitement, followed by Zoey and Abigail. Levi trailed behind them, carrying all their belongings.

South City was hosting a National Economy Forum at that time, so the city council had enhanced the security in every train station and airport.

A security check was placed at every train station exit.

Beep beep beep...

The security alarm was triggered when Levi passed through the gates.

Chaos broke out at the exit immediately. Everyone scrambled to hide in the corners. The security guards were invigorated as the piercing sound of the alarm had startled them.

The security teams assigned nearby the train station hurried over upon sensing the commotion.

Levi stood at the exit, not knowing what he should do as the alarm would not stop beeping.

Everyone stared at Levi apprehensively. Aaron and his family were dumbfounded as well.

“Don’t move! Raise your hands!” The guards loaded their guns and aimed the weapons at Levi.

Levi was not carrying anything because all their belongings had to pass through the security check. As a result, everyone was under the impression that Levi had hidden a dangerous object on his body.

The security team was especially tense due to the ongoing event in the city.

“Please evacuate immediately!” Everyone left the scene under the security team’s arrangements, including Zoey and her family.

Levi was left alone at the security gate after a short while.

“What are you hiding? Reveal the objects immediately!” The security guard shouted nervously.

Levi smiled. “I’m not carrying anything else on me.”

“That’s not possible! Why else was the alarm triggered? We can show you leniency if you hand over the object on your own accord right now!” The guard persuaded Levi.

“There’s nothing to hand over, honestly,” Levi answered carefreely.

He walked through the security gate calmly while reaching into his pockets slowly.

“Do not move! Stand up straight and raise your hands!”

“We will shoot you if you do not comply!”

Everyone yelled frantically as they did not know what Levi was planning to do.

But Levi did not heed their warning. He continued to do as he pleased.

The Protector Chapter 179

The security guards were drenched in sweat under the stressful environment. Everyone could feel their hearts pounding heavily against their chest as that was the most challenging situation they had ever faced.

They stared at Levi unblinkingly while tightening the grip on their guns with trembling hands.

They had orders to shoot Levi on the spot if he took out anything deemed to be dangerous from his pockets.

Swish-

Levi removed the item from his pocket at that crucial moment.

Phew!

Everyone breathed a sigh of relief when they saw the object. It's just a cigarette.

Levi placed the cigarette between his lips and said with a smile. "What's with the tensed atmosphere? I am not carrying anything dangerous on me. Can I borrow a lighter, bro?"

The leader of the security team, Perry Chapman, strode up to Levi and lit his cigarette. At the same time, he searched Levi's body and discovered nothing.

Perry waved his hand. Two other female guards shuffled forward and searched Levi's body again. The result was the same.

Then, one of the female guards scanned Levi's body with a handheld metal detector.

Beep beep beep...

The alarm on the metal detector rang again.

Perry immediately pointed his gun at Levi. The other guards behaved similarly. The atmosphere turned as heavy as before.

The female guard continued to scan Levi's body. The metal detector was triggered when it hovered over his abdomen, chest, back, waist, knees, and other parts of his body.

She ordered Levi with a frown. "Please remove your coat, sir!"

Levi complied because that was the standard procedure.

Nothing was wrong with Levi's coat after the female guard scanned his outerwear.

But the metal detector beeped again when she scanned Levi's body.

"Please remove your shirt, sir!"

The same thing happened.

"Remove your singlet now!"

Everyone was flabbergasted after Levi took off his singlet.

They were horrified by the numerous scars covering his body. The scars were left behind after sustaining cuts, bullet wounds, burns, and all other kinds of injuries.

What kind of person could he be to receive all these scars? There are more of these scars than we can see, judging from how the wounds overlap with one another. Is he a soldier? The thought flashed across Perry's mind.

"Bring this mister to undergo a full-body imaging," Perry commanded.

The security guard subjected Levi to a scan using the equipment available inside the imaging room.

Levi's X-ray was displayed on the screen shortly after.

Everyone nearly passed out after examining the X-ray. There were 13 bullets embedded in his body. Three of the bullets were inches away from his brain, heart, and lungs. The bullet wound would've been fatal if the bullet's trajectory swayed a little.

The rest of the bullets were lodged elsewhere in his body. Luckily, the bullets did not hit his vital organs, so Levi was not affected by the metal pieces inside his body.

At that moment, Perry and the other guards were suddenly regarding Levi with the utmost respect. This man is a soldier who fought for our country. He sacrificed himself to protect our nation! He's not flinching a little, even with all these scars and bullets embedded in his body. Men like him are the reason we can carry on with our lives in peace!

"Sir, these are the identifications we took from him!"

The security guard handed Perry Levi's identification card and military card.

Perry's legs wobbled, and he nearly slumped onto the floor after glancing at his military card.

"God... God of War? He's the God of War?" Perry had never been so afraid in his life. We've heard of the God of War's recent arrival at North Hampton.

The Protector Chapter 180

I did not expect God of War to be here in South City.

At that moment, countless tanks arrived at the South City train station.

Heavily armed soldiers sealed off the entire area with swift motions.

The two soldiers leading the troop were evidently high-ranking officers in the army.

Perry shivered fearfully at the sight of the two people who rushed into the office. He had predicted this to happen.

“Are you Mr. Chapman? Let me introduce myself. I am Mortimer Lambert from the South Warzone.”

Perry was familiar with Mortimer Lambert’s existence. He’s one of the captains in the South Warzone.

Perry shook hands with Mortimer immediately. “It’s a pleasure to meet you, Captain Lambert!”

“This is one of the captains serving under the God of War himself, Captain Alfie Steele. His troop recently returned from the battlefield,” Mortimer introduced the other soldier next to him.

Perry saluted at once. “Captain Steele, thank you for your services!”

Perry was aware that Alfie Steele and his men were actively protecting Erudia on the battlefield.

Alfie returned the salute. “Thank you for your hard work too, Mr. Chapman.” Then Alfie added, “I heard you took the God of War into custody?”

Boom!

Perry was stunned by that question. I’m doomed. More importantly, I cannot explain myself under this circumstance. The God of War is a high and mighty person, yet I subjected him to a security check and even searched his body! I must have offended him!

“That’s alright. All of you did the right thing.” Levi walked out of the imaging room after putting on his clothes.

“Sir!” Alfie, Mortimer, and their subordinates saluted Levi immediately.

Perry and his security team members said helplessly, “We are terribly sorry to have wronged you, Sir. Please punish us!”

“Punish? Nonsense! You did the right thing! We should stay vigilant and tighten the security at a crucial time like this. It is a must for everyone to undergo the security check, regardless of their status,” Levi responded.

Tears brimmed in Perry's eyes. The God of War is such a gracious person. It must be an honor to serve him. I can clearly distinguish the unique pride in Captain Alfie and his men. Other soldiers do not give off an aura like this.

"What are you doing here with all your men, Alfie? Did you come here to wage war?" Levi looked at Alfie sternly.

Alfie answered swiftly, "I did not plan to come here initially, Sir! But I hurried over when I heard you were detained."

Levi chuckled humorlessly after he kept his identifications. "Do you think something bad will happen to me? This is just a normal security check! Ask all your men to retreat right now."

"Yes, Sir!" Alfie quickly relayed the commands.

"Don't worry. I will visit the battlefield once I have the time." Levi dragged Alfie aside and provided the latter with a few instructions.

"Please rest assured, Sir. We have plenty of those things. I'll send the items over on time tomorrow," Alfie smiled.

Levi patted Perry's shoulder before he took his leave. "Keep up the good work! The internal security of this nation is resting on your shoulders."

"I will fulfill my responsibilities and duties, Chief!" Perry saluted with a burning passion.

"Oh, by the way, you guys should retreat after I leave this place."

Levi left first to prevent attracting any attention to himself.

Zoey and the others heaved a sigh of relief when they saw Levi exiting the train station unscathed.

Abigail blurted uncontrollably when she saw Levi. "Did they discover your identity, Levi?"

"Identity?" Zoey and her parents gazed at Abigail simultaneously.

The Protector Chapter 181

Abigail realized that she had let the cat out of the bag.

“Does Levi have any other identities?”

Zoey looked at Abigail dubiously, wondering if they were hiding anything from her.

Levi laughed it off as he joked, “Abigail was just worried that they’d found out that I was an ex-convict.”

“Yeah, I thought that was the reason the alarm went off,” Abigail reacted swiftly to Levi’s cover-up, which managed to temporarily ease Zoey’s suspicion.

“What happened just now? Were you carrying anything that caused the alarm to sound non-stop?” Aaron asked.

“Oh, it’s just my lighter that is made of brass, that’s why it got picked up by the metal detectors!” Levi replied, as he took out his lighter and showed it to Aaron.

“Oh, let’s go then, Bailey had sent someone to pick us up. The car had been waiting outside for a while!”

Caitlyn was also raring to go.

The group was driven to the Hilton Hotel.

Due to the large number of guests invited to the birthday banquet, the guests were temporarily arranged to stay at the hotel.

“It seems like dad and mom had not yet completely gotten over what happened last time! Otherwise, we would be staying at the Black family mansion instead of the hotel, together with the rest of the guests!”

Caitlyn’s disappointment was apparent as she said that.

“Don’t worry, honey, we’re going to impress your family members later. I guarantee that their opinions of us will change for the better after that!”

Aaron was brimming with optimism as he comforted his wife.

It was important to the couple to be recognized by the Black family.

After everyone settled down in their hotel rooms, Abigail went to look for Levi and Zoey. “My cousins from the Black family are having a gathering tonight, do you guys want to tag along?” She asked.

“Sure, we’ll go!” Levi and Zoey accepted the invite readily.

Abigail drove them to the venue in her pink Maserati.

The gathering was held at the Scarlet Aegis Hotel.

A meal there costs at least ten thousand.

Different models of luxury cars could be seen parked in the hotel's parking lot.

Abigail led Levi and Zoey to the private room, where dozens of people had already gathered and were engaged in animated discussions with each other.

“Hey, Abigail is here! Let's welcome her!”

As Abigail was also a part of the Rogers family, she was very well-liked and popular among her cousins in the Black family.

For everyone else in the room, it was their first time meeting Levi and Zoey.

When they saw Zoey, most of them were stunned by her beauty and were eager to know her.

“Abigail, why are you not introducing your friends to us?” One of Abigail's cousins urged.

“This is Aunt Caitlyn's daughter, Zoey. She's our cousin too! This is Levi, Zoey's husband,” Abigail said.

“Oh! So it's our cousin Zoey!”

Abigail's brothers were the first to greet Zoey.

As for Levi, he was being treated as though he was invisible.

There were also a few attendees at the gathering who did not belong to the Black family, which meant that they were not blood-related to Zoey.

The men who belonged to that category couldn't keep their eyes off Zoey. After all, it was not everyday that one would come across such an exquisite beauty.

After some mingling with the others, Levi found out that tonight's gathering was organized by Zoey's cousins, Keane and Quintus.

As the both of them were direct male descendants of the Black family, they were both held in high regard by the rest.

Naturally, they were also the main focus of every discussion topic which went on that night.

Keane laughed as he said, “Zoey, I heard that your husband, Levi, was previously a dark horse of North Hampton's business arena. Even the business moguls and owners of leading enterprises in South City knew his name. What's he up to these days?”

Quintus chuckled and said, “Yeah, I remember that too. But we haven’t heard any news about him in a long while.”

The two men were not trying to take a dig at Zoey, but were genuinely curious.

The Black family was among the wealthiest in the city. Naturally, Zoey and her family would not be important enough for them to pay any attention to.

They did try to find out more about Levi, during the days when he used to be a rising star in the business arena.

However, no one had news about Levi after he went to jail.

The Protector Chapter 181

22/04/2021 by Chapter Novel

Abigail realized that she had let the cat out of the bag.

“Does Levi have any other identities?”

Zoey looked at Abigail dubiously, wondering if they were hiding anything from her.

Levi laughed it off as he joked, “Abigail was just worried that they’d found out that I was an ex-convict.”

“Yeah, I thought that was the reason the alarm went off,” Abigail reacted swiftly to Levi’s cover-up, which managed to temporarily ease Zoey’s suspicion.

“What happened just now? Were you carrying anything that caused the alarm to sound non-stop?” Aaron asked.

“Oh, it’s just my lighter that is made of brass, that’s why it got picked up by the metal detectors!” Levi replied, as he took out his lighter and showed it to Aaron.

“Oh, let’s go then, Bailey had sent someone to pick us up. The car had been waiting outside for a while!”

Caitlyn was also raring to go.

The group was driven to the Hilton Hotel.

Due to the large number of guests invited to the birthday banquet, the guests were temporarily arranged to stay at the hotel.

“It seems like dad and mom had not yet completely gotten over what happened last time! Otherwise, we would be staying at the Black family mansion instead of the hotel, together with the rest of the guests!”

Caitlyn's disappointment was apparent as she said that.

"Don't worry, honey, we're going to impress your family members later. I guarantee that their opinions of us will change for the better after that!"

Aaron was brimming with optimism as he comforted his wife.

It was important to the couple to be recognized by the Black family.

After everyone settled down in their hotel rooms, Abigail went to look for Levi and Zoey. "My cousins from the Black family are having a gathering tonight, do you guys want to tag along?" She asked.

"Sure, we'll go!" Levi and Zoey accepted the invite readily.

Abigail drove them to the venue in her pink Maserati.

The gathering was held at the Scarlet Aegis Hotel.

A meal there costs at least ten thousand.

Different models of luxury cars could be seen parked in the hotel's parking lot.

Abigail led Levi and Zoey to the private room, where dozens of people had already gathered and were engaged in animated discussions with each other.

"Hey, Abigail is here! Let's welcome her!"

As Abigail was also a part of the Rogers family, she was very well-liked and popular among her cousins in the Black family.

For everyone else in the room, it was their first time meeting Levi and Zoey.

When they saw Zoey, most of them were stunned by her beauty and were eager to know her.

"Abigail, why are you not introducing your friends to us?" One of Abigail's cousins urged.

"This is Aunt Caitlyn's daughter, Zoey. She's our cousin too! This is Levi, Zoey's husband," Abigail said.

"Oh! So it's our cousin Zoey!"

Abigail's brothers were the first to greet Zoey.

As for Levi, he was being treated as though he was invisible.

There were also a few attendees at the gathering who did not belong to the Black family, which meant that they were not blood-related to Zoey.

The men who belonged to that category couldn't keep their eyes off Zoey. After all, it was not everyday

that one would come across such an exquisite beauty.

After some mingling with the others, Levi found out that tonight's gathering was organized by Zoey's cousins, Keane and Quintus.

As the both of them were direct male descendants of the Black family, they were both held in high regard by the rest.

Naturally, they were also the main focus of every discussion topic which went on that night.

Keane laughed as he said, "Zoey, I heard that your husband, Levi, was previously a dark horse of North Hampton's business arena. Even the business moguls and owners of leading enterprises in South City knew his name. What's he up to these days?"

Quintus chuckled and said, "Yeah, I remember that too. But we haven't heard any news about him in a long while."

The two men were not trying to take a dig at Zoey, but were genuinely curious.

The Black family was among the wealthiest in the city. Naturally, Zoey and her family would not be important enough for them to pay any attention to.

They did try to find out more about Levi, during the days when he used to be a rising star in the business arena.

However, no one had news about Levi after he went to jail.

The Protector Chapter 182

People stopped being curious about him after that. After all, no one would waste time inquiring about a nobody.

Hayden Zeller, a distant relative of the Black family who was from North Hampton, joined in on the conversation and said, "Oh I know what happened! Levi was sentenced to jail after he was convicted of taking advantage of his sister-in-law! If I'm not mistaken, he was only released a few days ago?"

"That's right! It was one of the biggest news in North Hampton when it happened!" Some others, who were listening to the conversation, concurred.

Keane's expression changed when he heard that, but still remained friendly as he asked, "So, Levi, you're currently unemployed?"

Levi nodded and replied, "Kind of!"

After getting the man's answer, Keane and Quintus had totally lost interest in continuing the

conversation.

Even Zoey, who had just secured an investment of a few hundred million, suddenly seemed boring to them.

The men changed topics and carried on with their own conversations. Zoey hardly had anything to contribute to their subsequent discussions.

“Oh, by the way, is Russell back yet?” Keane asked all of a sudden.

Russell was his dad’s godson. The man had been outstanding since young, and he’s currently the leader of a subdivision of the Special Security Unit.

Word has it that he was going to be promoted to the Chief of the Special Security Unit next year.

“Speaking of Russell, he’s truly the pride and joy of our grandma!”

Quintus laughed.

That was indeed the case.

Even though Russell was not related to the Black family by blood, he was the elderly Mrs. Black’s favorite.

He had always been conscientiousness and performed well in every endeavor he partook in.

Russell would only be twenty eight next year, so it was an impressive feat that he was already the Deputy Chief of the Special Security Unit.

The Black family had an abundance of wealth, but what the family lacked however, was a talent like Russell.

He was the perfect missing piece to the puzzle for the Black family.

Shortly after his name was mentioned, Russell Black arrived at the gathering, still dressed in his uniform.

“Hi everyone, so sorry that I’m late. I have been really busy with the preparations for the upcoming economic summit these few days! I even had to specially apply for leave to attend grandma’s birthday banquet tomorrow!” Russell explained, and let out an embarrassed laughter.

“Russell is such a busy man, but he knows he’s the apple of grandma’s eye, so he has to be here by hook or by crook!” Someone teased, and everyone else laughed along.

However, Keane switched the topic abruptly, asking, “I heard that there was an incident at the train station today, that even your Chief had to handle the matter personally?”

Russell nodded and replied, “Yeah! You heard about it too? That’s actually the reason I was late for tonight’s gathering!”

“Russell, tell us what happened! I’m sure everyone wants to know about it,” Quintus said.

Russell scanned the curious faces in the room and chuckled, before elaborating, “There was a super big shot who visited the train station today! He came to examine our security measures without informing anyone beforehand. Thank goodness we discovered that it was him!”

Russell let out a gasp, as he recalled the dramatic events of the day.

“So how did you guys find out that it was him?” Everyone was eager to know what happened next.

“When he went through the metal detectors while exiting the train station, the alarm sounded! We stopped him from leaving and did a body check on him. Guess what we found?”

Everyone held their breaths as they waited for Russell to continue.

“We found out that there were 13 bullets and 7 grenade shrapnel lodged inside his body! One of the bullets was even in his skull and another one in his heart! It’s the metal from the bullets and shrapnel that caused the alarm to sound!”

Even Russell himself found it inconceivable.

“What??? 13 bullets and 7 grenade shrapnel???”

Everyone was shocked by what Russell told them and sharp inhales could be heard all round.

“What’s even scarier was that his entire body was covered with scars. From my estimation, there were definitely no less than a thousand of them!”

Everyone went pale with disbelief at Russell’s description of the man. It was unimaginable as to what kind of horrors he must have gone through.

“What was the time when he was there?” Zoey suddenly asked.

“It was around 2.10 in the afternoon!” Russell replied.

Zoey turned to look at her husband. She had registered that it was the same time Levi was held up at the security check earlier today.

Besides, Levi had nothing on him which could have caused the alarm to sound.

The Protector Chapter 183

After Russell's description of the event, Zoey suddenly realized that it could have been the metal pieces lodged inside of Levi's body which caused the metal detectors to go off, instead of the lighter, which was what he had told them earlier on!

She wished that she could see through Levi's clothes, and verify what Russell said with her own eyes that very instant.

Quintus, who was intrigued, asked, "How's that even possible? Russell, who is this guy?"

"We don't exactly know who he is, as his files had been classified as 5s level, which means no one in the entire of South City would have access to it! But I heard from our Chief that he used to be an officer from the Iron Brigade!" Russell replied excitedly.

"Iron Brigade? Isn't that the team that's personally led by the God of War?"

"Exactly! That's the strongest military unit in Erudia! Every soldier who's part of that team is a man of indomitable spirit!"

...

The men at the gathering were all stirred at the mention of the 'God of War' and the 'Iron Brigade'.

Every man, regardless of age, would have dreamed of becoming a soldier at some point in time of their lives.

Being in the Iron Brigade was the greatest recognition and highest honor for every soldier.

"Yeah, when I was at the military academy, my goal was also to join the Iron Brigade and fight alongside the God of War!"

Russell was no exception.

Abigail was feeling proud when she saw the longing expressions of those men in the room.

At that moment, she really wanted to stand up and tell everyone that the God of War, who was revered by all, was none other than her cousin-in-law, Levi!

"If those warriors from the Iron Brigade could be present at grandma's birthday banquet, I bet grandpa and grandma would both be delighted!" Keane said.

"Yeah, grandpa and grandma were once guards as well! They'll definitely be over the moon to meet someone from the Iron Brigade!"

"Exactly! Grandpa and grandma love the special alcohol and cigarettes provided by the war zones, but nowadays they hardly have the chance to enjoy them anymore."

...

Everyone was contributing to the lively discussion going on in the room.

Quintus looked at Russell and said, “Russell, do you think you can pull some strings and invite just one of the officers from the Iron Brigade to join us at grandma’s birthday banquet tomorrow?”

“Yeah, if you can do that, it’ll definitely be the best birthday present for grandma!” Keane added.

Russell hesitated for a second before nodding his head and said, “OK, I’ll try. Hopefully, we can give grandma a surprise tomorrow!”

Even though he agreed to ask around, Russell was not confident at all that he’ll succeed in his task.

The main reason for that was because his Chief, Perry, had told him earlier on that the man who appeared at the train station in the afternoon was someone out of his reach, not to mention Russell, who was only a leader of a subdivision of the Security Unit.

No one at the gathering bothered to talk to Zoey or Levi for the rest of the night, it was just as if the both of them were invisible.

To a big family like the Blacks, they were merely nobodies.

After the dinner gathering ended, Russell specially paid Perry a visit to tell him his thoughts.

Perry was scared out of his wits when he heard the idea. He pointed at Russell and said, “Y-y-you... you have the audacity to invite that man???”

Russell was trembling with anxiety at his Chief’s reaction and replied, “Chief, is that guy someone very important?”

As the information was classified, Perry was unable to divulge any details to Russell.

“That’s right, anyway, you should really stop thinking about it. I’m not even qualified enough to invite Captain Steele from the North Hampton Dragon legion, let alone that man from this afternoon. Just drop the idea completely!”

Perry rejected Russell’s request without giving it any consideration.

“Alright then. But Chief, you have to be there with the Deputy Chief tomorrow, deal?” Russell said.

“Don’t worry, I wouldn’t miss old Mrs. Black’s birthday banquet for the world!”

Everyone was disappointed when Russell conveyed the negative outcome to them, but they did not blame him.

After all, the Iron Brigade had a special status in the military. No one expected that it would be easy to invite them.

Meanwhile, Zoey started having major suspicions about Levi after the gathering.

The Protector Chapter 184

Even though they had been sleeping on the same bed, they had not been intimate, so it was only natural that Zoey had not seen Levi's naked body.

As such, she had planned to examine Levi's body tonight, in order to verify if he actually had those scars on his body.

However, Abigail had requested to share her bed, so in the end, Zoey was unable to carry out her plan.

The next day arrived and it was the day of old Mrs. Black's birthday.

Levi and the rest were being woken up early in the morning, and were all gathered at the hotel lobby.

Shortly after, transportation arranged by the Black family arrived to pick them up to the Black family manor.

Aaron clutched the birthday gift for his mother-in-law in his arms. He was looking forward to impressing his wife's family at the banquet later on.

Caitlyn had also checked with Levi if he had prepared any gift, and only felt at ease after confirming that he had not done so.

The scale of the Black family was comparable to the Garrison family, which was recently listed.

The family manor was extremely posh and grand.

The various luxury cars that were parked at the front porch were sufficient to form an auto show.

The three brothers from the Black family stood at the entrance to receive their guests personally.

The head of the Black family household, Robert Black, and his wife Meredith, were in the main hall of the manor. They were both dressed in red, all ready for the auspicious occasion.

After they were discharged from the military, the both of them started from scratch and managed to build a successful business empire over the years. Because of their hard work and efforts, the Black family had become one of the wealthiest family in the city.

In addition to that, the family was also flourishing. The couple had expanded their family and was joined by their many children and grandchildren.

The two esteemed elderly of the Black family were very contented with their current state of life.

"Dad, mom, look who's here!"

Bailey led Aaron's family to Robert and Meredith.

"Dad, mom!"

Caitlyn was overwhelmed with emotions and shed tears of joy when she met her parents.

Aaron was also feeling emotional and was ready to greet the two elders.

But Robert merely gave a slight nod, while Meredith let out a cold snort and only took a glance at them, before looking away.

Caitlyn and Aaron were both stunned to be given the cold shoulder.

Caitlyn immediately realized that, even though her mom had invited them to her birthday celebration, it would still take some time for her to fully accept them.

However, Caitlyn was already feeling grateful to be able to see her parents again.

The atmosphere in the room turned awkward for a moment.

To ease the tension, Pamela said, "Oh, mom and dad, weren't you two looking forward to meeting Zoey?"

While saying that, she shoved Zoey in front of the two elders.

"Hi grandpa, hi grandma!" Zoey greeted her grandparents politely.

As it was her first time meeting her grandparents, Zoey was a little nervous.

After sizing Zoey up carefully, Robert and Meredith said in satisfaction, "She seems like a good kid, We like her!"

"Oh, I heard that Zoey is really capable. She even managed to secure a few hundred millions of investment for her company!"

The two elders of the family thought rather highly of Zoey, especially Meredith.

That was because the old lady was a successful woman herself, and had never shown preference for boys over girls.

Instead, among her children and grandchildren, she actually valued the females of the family more.

Back in the days, she had also placed high hopes on Caitlyn, but her daughter ended up eloping with Aaron, which broke Meredith's heart.

That was the reason why the mother and daughter had not seen each other for over twenty years.

Bailey shot a glance at Levi and said, "Why are you still standing there? Aren't you going to introduce

yourself?”

With a grin on his face, Levi walked towards the elderly couple and said, “Hi grandpa and grandma, it’s a pleasure meeting the both of you. I’m Zoey’s husband, Levi!”

Robert observed Levi for a few seconds, and felt that there was a mysterious aura surrounding him.

But he wasn’t able to pinpoint exactly why.

Either Levi is trying to conceal something, or he is just someone who usually goofed around, was what Robert thought.

“I heard that you were once the rising star in the business circle of North Hampton, but was sent to jail for six years! You just finished serving time recently, right?” Meredith spoke.

Even though Meredith appeared to be unconcerned, she was, in fact, very in touch with what was going on in Aaron’s family.

“That’s right, grandma, I just got released from prison.” Levi answered truthfully.

“So, what are your plans going forward?” Meredith asked.

“Since Zoey is doing so well, my plan is just to assist her whenever she needs me! I’m a lucky man to have a wife I can depend on!”

Everyone froze upon hearing Levi’s words.

The Protector Chapter 185

Looks of shock appeared on everyone's faces.

Especially Caitlyn who was seized by terror.

Everyone was well aware of Meredith's stern and stiff personality. She couldn't tolerate people who behaved in a boisterous manner like Levi.

Someone with a military police background like Russell would be well-liked by her.

Besides, how could a mere foundling gain a foothold in a wealthy family?

Meredith gave Levi a deep look before she left, obviously disappointed in him.

Robert let out a deep sigh before following suit, lamenting about how Zoey, given her status would marry such a husband.

"What the hell are you doing? You're challenging the authority of the old lady. She hates people who fool around like you the most!"

Bailey and Pamela glared daggers at Levi.

"You've ruined us! The old lady has finally accepted us because of Zoey, but you just had to provoke her again, didn't you?!"

Caitlyn almost cried from exasperation.

Would the old lady have accepted us immediately today if our son-in-law weren't Levi, but someone else?

Aaron hugged Caitlyn. "Honey, don't cry. We'll regain our dignity and make the old lady acknowledge us when the birthday banquet officially starts later."

"I supposed that's all we can do."

Caitlyn was physically and mentally frustrated.

Shortly after, most of the guests had arrived, apart from the big shots.

Robert and Meredith personally greeted them at the door, with Levi and the others following behind them.

Soon, several cars marked with the SWAT logo appeared.

Russell was the first to come down. He ran to the back, opened the car door, and greeted the leaders one by one.

“Grandpa, Grandma, let me introduce you. This is Shane Young, the captain of the Special Security Unit; Hugo Gibson, the vice-captain; Frankie Wimmer, the political commissar; Quincy King, the vice-captain of the City Patrol Unit...”

Russell introduced them to about seven to eight leaders in one breath.

There were about a dozen more leaders behind who were at the same level as Russell, all of whom held official positions such as team leaders.

Perry led everyone forward, extending their blessings, “Mrs. Black, may you be blessed with longevity and great prosperity...”

“Welcome, Captain Chapman. Welcome...” Robert and Meredith grinned from ear to ear, seeing the support of so many leaders.

Keane and Quintus chuckled. “You really outdid yourself there, Russell!”

“Mr. and Mrs. Black, I would like to commend Russell,” Perry said. “He has so much potential! I’ll make him vice-captain next year! The Black family will have something to be proud of again.”

Hearing those compliments coming straight from Perry’s mouth, Meredith and Robert were all the more exhilarated as they looked at Russell with satisfaction.

The Protector Chapter 186

Levi had heard of Jennie and Logan just now.

Jennie was the daughter of Xaiden, the eldest son of the Black family, and she was currently the deputy governor of New Alliance Bank in South City.

Her husband, Logan Zachs, was all the more powerful. His grandfather, who had now retired, once served on the front lines of South City.

His father was the deputy director of the Ministry of Economy and also served as a leader in the Ministry of Commerce.

Jennie and Abigail were both Meredith’s favorite granddaughters.

As expected, Jennie and Logan arrived shortly after, together with Logan’s grandfather, Graham, and his father, Felix.

Graham was also a big shot who was formerly the deputy leader at the South War Zone. He had many disciples but had since retired.

Felix was in the prime of his life, holding an important position.

Their attendance had greatly elevated the Black family's social status.

“Happy birthday!”

Graham and Felix extended their wishes one after another.

Meredith grasped Jennie and Logan's hands, smiling brightly with narrowed eyes.

Envy!

They were filled with envy!

Both Aaron and Caitlyn had been dreaming about the day their son-in-law could set the Thames on fire just so they could keep their head up.

But unfortunately, their son-in-law can never compare to that of others!

Just their luck to have met such a son-in-law like Levi.

“Haha, the younger generation of the Black family is full of talents! Let alone our grandchildren, how many people in South City have as many talents and skills as our grandson-in-law?” Meredith said proudly in front of hundreds of guests.

“That's right,” Russell and the others chimed in. “How many are there who are as gifted as Logan in South City?”

Logan adjusted his tie, smiling, “I don't deserve your praise, Grandpa, Grandma. The sons-in-law of the Black family are all outstanding! I heard that there's a son-in-law from North Hampton. Isn't he very powerful? He'd built a multi-billion conglomerate from scratch! Is he here?” Logan asked, looking around.

Knowing that Logan was referring to Levi, Aaron and Caitlyn suddenly felt ashamed. They lowered their heads and pulled Levi aside, wanting to hide.

“Aunt Caitlyn, Uncle Aaron, why are you guys hiding? North Hampton's son-in-law, Levi Garrison, is over here!”

Someone mercilessly pointed out Levi's position.

Everyone around retreated, revealing a large open space showing only Levi and his family.

At once, all eyes zeroed in on them.

“So you are Levi Garrison?” Logan smiled. “I heard that your net worth was over a billion. How about now? I bet it's now worth more than the entire Black family.”

“Yeah, with your potential, hitting ten billion is pretty attainable!” said Jennie.

Being watched by hundreds of noble relatives, Aaron and Caitlyn broke out in a cold sweat.

They were too anxious.

This moment was too humiliating.

It was evident to Zoey that they were deliberately putting Levi in a tough spot.

Just as she was about to speak up for him, Levi blurted, “To answer Jennie and Logan’s questions, yes, it has definitely surpassed that of the Black family since long ago!”

Money was just a number to him.

If he could look down upon the Rogers family who worth tens of billions, what more the puny Black family?

Everyone gasped at Levi’s reply.

Levi’s bravado is really something!

What a load of crap!

“Haha, isn’t that a given, Captain Chapman! Russell has always been the pride of the Black family,” said Meredith unabashedly.

This made everyone envious, especially Caitlyn and Aaron.

How nice would it be if Mrs. Black could be proud of them someday?

Too bad they couldn’t do it by themselves and could only rely on their daughter and their son-in-law.

But could a useless son-in-law like Levi ever make them proud?

Never!

“Grandpa, Grandma, I was going to invite the big shots from the Warzone, but there’s only so much I can do,” Russell said humbly.

“This is more than enough, Russell,” Meredith smiled approvingly. “It’s enough that Captain Chapman and the others could make it!”

“Indeed! With you, Russell, plus Jennie and Logan, it’s the right degree of pomp!” Keane and Quintus both laughed.

“How intimidating! Can you give us an exact number regarding your net worth?”

“Yeah, tell us! Grandpa and Grandma will certainly be proud of you!”

Logan and Jennie laughed out instead of getting angry.

“Levi, don’t!”

Zoey and her parents were so anxious that they almost covered Levi’s mouth.

But Levi slowly raised a finger. “At least this much!”

“At least ten billion?” Logan asked.

“No.” Levi shook his head.

“Could it be a hundred billion?”

Logan winced when he said that number.

Levi chuckled. “You’re wrong. It’s at least one trillion!”

“Pfft!”

“Hahaha...”

Everyone laughed themselves silly at Levi’s words.

The reason everyone was quiet from was before was to see how far Levi could go with his big talk...

But who knew it was out of this world!

At least one trillion?!

What on earth is this?

It’s the equivalent of a hundred times the Black family...

Logan, his grandfather and father all laughed.

They had never seen such a man with such bravado before.

Forget about personal ownership. Even the Ministry of Economy doesn’t have that much money!

The others laughed wildly.

Even Russell, a man of speech and manner, roared with laughter.

As for Meredith and Robert, their faces were turning as black as charcoal.

It was an insult to them!

Levi was blatantly challenging their authority!

“You’re both sons-in-law. How can there be such a huge difference?” Meredith flared with anger.

“Discipline your son-in-law,” she said directly to Aaron and Caitlyn. “He should know what he should say and what he shouldn’t say on such an occasion!”

Aaron and Caitlyn trembled in fright and dared not raise their heads.

Caitlyn was even shedding tears.

She had never felt so upset before.

Even after what had happened at the Lopez family, she had never been so upset.

Caitlyn had been longing to her family for thirty years and now there was finally a chance.

But she was utterly humiliated in front of her relatives when she finally met them for the first time!

She wanted to end her life there and then!

It’s Levi’s fault!

It’s all Levi’s fault!

Aaron’s fist clenched.

He swore he would punch Levi in the face once the birthday banquet was over.

This is too f**king embarrassing!

Zoey, too, was disappointed through and through with Levi.

Levi has gotten used to talking big. It’s become a habit.

He wasn’t thinking clearly when he said he had ten billion to the Lopez family.

But now, to the Black family—a trillion?

Does he not understand the concept of money?

How could he say such big words?

Zoey regretted it.

She should have listened to her parents and left Levi at home.

Sure enough, her parents were put to shame as soon as they arrived.

Unfortunately, there was no crying over spilled milk!

“They’re both sons-in-law, but they’re like night and day! One’s a great catch, and the other is trash!”

“I heard that Levi Garrison has a bad reputation. He harbored evil thoughts towards his sister-in-law and almost killed his adoptive parents!”

“Their entire family is trash. Otherwise, Mrs. Black wouldn’t have only met this daughter of hers after thirty years!”

...

Hearing all kinds of comment from the people around, tears flowed down Caitlyn’s face like a river.

How embarrassing!

This was definitely the most humiliating moment in her entire life!

Aaron felt the same too.

He thought that he could steal the limelight at the Black family, but he was utterly disgraced.

“Quickly get inside! What on earth are you doing here?”

The Protector Chapter 188

“Don’t you think you have done enough to embarrass the entire family in front of so many people?!” Bailey chided in disappointment.

Aaron and Caitlyn had no choice but to return to the villa.

“Don’t follow me!” Caitlyn shouted at Levi.

After arriving at the manor’s main hall, everyone was seated according to arrangements.

Aaron and his family were seated at the corner, far away from Meredith.

Only those who Meredith regarded as important could sit at the front.

“Honey, the gift presentation is up next. I’m sure Meredith will be happy to accept our gifts,” Aaron said.

Caitlyn wiped away her tears and waited silently.

When the guests had filled up the room, the host announced the start of the banquet and the ceremonies proceeded one after another.

“Now is the time for gift presentation!”

Everyone started presenting their gifts as soon as the host finished.

There were gifts of a wide variety, but they were all valuable.

Hearing what the others had brought, Aaron and Caitlyn were filled with aplomb.

Because none of those gifts that were presented could be compared to what their family had prepared.

Those gifts were far inferior to theirs!

In the face of all sorts of gifts, Meredith simply nodded indifferently.

“Come on. Let’s go! She will definitely be happy!”

Aaron and Caitlyn quickly pulled Zoey to the front, waiting to present their gifts.

“I see you’re well-prepared, Caitlyn,” said Xena, Caitlyn’s cousin who was queuing at the front with her husband, Samson Fleming.

“Haha, and so were you!”

Aaron and Caitlyn smiled, thinking about how happy Meredith would be upon receiving their gifts in just a bit.

“Up next, it’s the birthday gift of Xena and Samson—an authentic calligraphy painting of an ancient notable artist worth seven hundred thousand—a five-hundred-year-old wild ginseng, and last but not least, a Jade Buddha Xena had sought from the holy mountain to bless Mrs. Black with good health!” the host read out the list of gifts Xena’s family had prepared.

The whole room burst into applause.

Everyone was satisfied with their gifts.

The Jade Buddha especially was thoughtful.

Hearing that, Meredith flashed a smile at last, obviously liking these gifts very much.

“Xena, Samson, I like your gifts very much!” Meredith said.

However, Aaron, Caitlyn and Zoey were dumbfounded.

Because the gifts they had prepared were almost exactly the same as theirs!

Most importantly, the former's gifts were several times more expensive than theirs!

And they were queueing right behind them!

They wondered what Meredith would think of them if she found out their similar but relatively cheaper gifts.

Aaron and Caitlyn were so nervous that they could barely breathe.

“Up next, we have Caitlyn and Aaron's gifts! Hmm?”

Seeing the gifts, even the host himself was stunned.

“What a coincidence.”

“What is it? Is there a problem with their gifts?” someone asked.

The host organized his thoughts and read aloud, “Caitlyn and family have gifted a calligraphy painting worth three hundred million, a hundred-year-old wild ginseng, and a Jade Buddha requested from North Hampton's Temple of Peace...”

“Yes, how thoughtful! They're exactly the same gifts as what Ms. Xena and her family had prepared! Except that they're lower in value by a double!”

Aaron and Caitlyn wished the ground could swallow them whole as soon as the host finished.

How embarrassing!

What a disgrace!

The Protector Chapter 189

Why is life so unfair to us?

Why does such misfortune always befall us?

Their gifts were exactly the same, but the price was twice as low as theirs! And they were queueing right behind them!

Even Zoey felt ashamed. She couldn't bear to stay there any longer.

Xena and Samson looked at Aaron's family helplessly.

They didn't expect that they had prepared similar gifts!

“What do you mean, thoughtful? Isn’t that just a duplicate?”

“At least prepare similar gifts at the same price. Who are they trying to fool?”

“Aren’t they looking down on Mrs. Black? Is Mrs. Black short of that few hundred thousand?”

“Are you kidding me?”

...

The crowd erupted in anger.

Seeing the gifts Caitlyn and her family had gifted, Meredith snorted angrily, “If you don’t want to prepare gifts, just don’t! Why do you keep embarrassing yourself?!”

Robert sighed. What a disgrace...

With no dignity left, Caitlyn longed to bury her head into the ground!

They’ll remember this day forever!

I shouldn’t have come!

It’s all Levi’s fault!

If Levi is powerful enough, we wouldn’t have been reduced to such a state.

If Levi’s worth a dozen of billions, Mom would have been happy with just our presence alone.

Right behind them was Logan’s family.

Graham and Felix casually presented some symbolic gifts.

In fact, with their status, their presence was the greatest gift.

Meredith was thrilled.

“Grandma, I present you with a pair of Legendary Luminous Pearls worth ten million! I had to travel to ten foreign cities in order to get it at an auction,” said Logan.

The crowd seethed with excitement.

As compared to the few hundred thousand gifts from Aaron and his family before, it was an instant kill. The difference was like night and day.

Meredith liked this pair of Legendary Luminous Pearls so much that she personally accepted them.

“See that?” She gave Aaron’s family a look. “This is what you call a gift! Even if Logan’s gift is worth a penny, I would still like it because it’s prepared with intentions!”

Caitlyn and Aaron hid at the corner and dared not look up.

They could only hope for the birthday banquet to end soon and leave South City as soon as possible.

“I’m going out first,” Levi suddenly said to Zoey and vanished from sight, just as Zoey was about to ask him something.

In the main hall, gifts were still being presented.

And with greater value!

Xaiden presented a three-billion project contract. Everyone in attendance was stunned!

Russell and the others presented their gifts as well, with Russell giving a rare special saber instead of gifts worth tens of millions.

“I know you like this stuff, Grandma. I went to great lengths to get this,” Russell said.

“Yes, I like it!”

Meredith used to reign over the battlefield, and hence she liked the saber very much.

Finally, a few other grandsons-in-law also presented their gifts, which made Meredith beam in delight.

“Allow me to speak on behalf of all the sons-in-law in the Black family...” Logan suddenly spoke. “It seems that every son-in-law has presented their gifts besides Levi Garrison from Aunt Caitlyn’s family, am I right?”

“Yeah, he didn’t!”

Everyone shifted their gaze to Aaron’s table, focusing on them again.

“Oh yeah, where is he? Did he run away?”

The Protector Chapter 190

“No way. Doesn’t that mean he didn’t prepare anything? Did he have to run away for that?”

“I know, right? I mean, even if he did prepare something, Mrs. Black wouldn’t have liked it either.”

Everyone sneered.

“Who said I didn’t prepare a gift?” a voice as loud as thunder was heard.

Everyone turned to look in the direction of where the sound came from, only to see Levi standing at the doors, holding two black plastic bags in his hands with a cigarette in his mouth.

Meredith and Robert’s faces scrunched up in disgust at Levi’s frivolous appearance.

They hated it. And seeing the two black plastic bags in his hands that were obviously meant for grocery shopping, what good could come out of it?

“Hahaha, this is hilarious!”

“Could there be vegetables or steamed buns inside?”

...

Everyone laughed so hard that their stomach hurt when they saw those two plastic bags.

Using such a bag to pack his gifts on such an occasion was definitely an insult to the old lady!

“What are you doing, Levi? No one asked you to get any gifts!”

Afraid that Levi was up to no good, Caitlyn and Aaron were about to dash forward to stop him.

It was already humiliating enough.

If Levi did anything to add fuel to the fire, they were as good as dead.

“Sit down!”

Meredith suddenly shouted.

Caitlyn and Aaron could only obey.

“Grandma, what can he even put in that bag?” Logan asked. “Let’s just skip this.”

But Meredith was stubborn. “No! Let him come. I want to see what his gift is.”

“Yeah, let’s see what this son-in-law has prepared.”

Everyone was burning with curiosity.

“Come here, Levi!” Logan grinned, glad to watch Levi make a fool of himself.

After all, Levi was the Black family’s son-in-law who was often bracketed with him back then.

With that, Levi went forward step by step, smoking a cigarette.

Seeing the plastic bags, everyone was guessing what was inside.

With Levi approaching, Perry and the others who were sitting at the front were petrified when they suddenly recognized him.

Perry instinctively shot to his feet and was about to greet him when he stood frozen upon noticing the expression in his eyes.

Everyone looked at Perry curiously.

“What’s wrong, Captain Chapman?” Russell, who was next to him, asked.

Perry sat down quietly. “Nothing! I just got a cramp in my leg.”

Levi came to Meredith and Robert at last.

“How dare you smoke in front of Grandpa and Grandma? Do you have a death wish?!” Logan was very displeased.

However, Robert and Meredith noticed something strange.

The cigarette in Levi’s mouth seemed to be a special cigarette from the war zone.

Especially that strong tobacco scent. It could only be found in the Warzone!

Robert and Meredith were sure of that.

“Shall I open it?” Levi asked.

“Go ahead!”

For some reason, Robert and Meredith were looking forward to it.

As if something good could be found inside this filthy plastic bag.

Levi took out two boxes of cigarettes and two bottles of liquors from the bag and presented them before Robert and Meredith.

“Grandson-in-law Levi Garrison presents two boxes of cigarettes and two bottles of liquors!”

The military green packaging of the cigarettes and liquor was very simple, and its workmanship was

very rough.

“Levi, are you crazy?” Logan guffawed. “How could you present such poor quality cigarettes and liquor as gifts?”

The Protector Chapter 191

Everyone caught a glimpse of the packaging and seemed to be thinking along the same lines.

How good could those cigarettes and liquors be from that crude packaging?

Aaron and Caitlyn wanted to hide under the table when they heard that.

No wonder Levi asked the old lady for her preference just now.

If the cheap goods are exposed this time, it'd be over!

Mom would definitely cut ties with us on the spot!

Caitlyn had to hold herself back from strangling Levi!

“Those must be poor cigarettes and liquor!” someone said.

Russell, Perry and the others, however, hesitated for a moment.

It seems to be special cigarettes from the Warzone.

Especially that dragon symbol on the packaging...

Quintus and Logan exchanged glances and laughed, “Grandpa, Grandma, why don't we just throw these poor quality gifts into the bin? They're an eyesore!”

“Shut up!!!” Robert and Meredith suddenly roared in unison.

They took the cigarettes and liquors in their hands, appraising them as if appreciating a work of art.

The careful way they handled the gifts was all the more palpable than holding the ten million Legendary Luminous Pearls just now.

Their knitted brows gradually relaxed as a heartfelt smile flashed onto their faces.

They were much happier than receiving those gifts from before!

Everyone looked at the two puzzledly, wondering what was so famous about these cigarettes and liquor.

After a full minute, Robert and Meredith looked at each other and said excitedly, “It’s real!”

Levi took a drag of smoke, smiling, “I wonder if you like what I’ve prepared for you?”

“Yes! We love it!”

Robert and Meredith nodded incessantly.

Meredith even took over the microphone, beaming, “The gifts from my grandson-in-law, Levi Garrison, are my favorite!”

A deathly silence filled the room.

Aaron and Caitlyn who were waiting for the verdict were especially taken aback and Zoey was filled with disbelief.

Logan, Quintus and the others couldn’t believe their ears as they asked curiously, “Grandpa, Grandma, are you guys mistaken? It’s obvious from the packaging that it’s of poor quality! How could it be your favorite?”

“You guys are too shallow! You will most likely never see these cigarettes and liquor in your lifetime,” said Meredith, waving the boxes of cigarettes and liquor in her hands with unrestrained excitement on her face.

Robert chimed in, “These are special cigarettes and liquor from the Warzone!”

“It’s true that they’re scarce, but it’s not like they’re very rare,” Logan said.

If he wanted it, he could have gotten them through connections.

Meredith glared at him. “Hmph! Do you think that these are merely cigarettes and liquor from the war zone? These are special cigarettes of the Iron Brigade under the command of the God of War, the protector of Erudia! There are special signs on the packaging, such as the dragon and the words at the bottom!”

“Anyone with a little background knows that the Iron Brigade’s special cigarettes and liquor are not available to the public! You can’t buy a glass of the Iron Brigade’s special liquor even if you have tens of billions!”

“Exactly! You can’t get the Iron Brigade’s special liquor, no matter your background or your connections!”

“We had it once at the home of a retired soldier of the Iron Brigade, and we couldn’t forget its taste until today. This is the real Iron Brigade’s cigarette and liquor!”

A hush descended over the crowd at those words.

The Protector Chapter 192

Everyone regarded Levi with an incredulous gaze.

How did he get those special cigarettes and liquors that couldn't be bought with ten billion?

What did he do?

Robert and Meredith were hugging the special cigarettes and liquor as if they were their most precious treasure.

“Dear, we'll just take a little sip of liquor and smoke half a cigarette every day. These things are too rare and they'll be gone before we know it,” Meredith said with distress.

Levi smiled. “If you want it, I can still get it for you. I guarantee you can have them every day! I got a little today because I was afraid you wouldn't like it.”

“Really???” the old couple asked in disbelief, their eyes rounded.

“There's plenty of this stuff,” Levi chuckled. “I promise I can get them. Once the banquet is over, I'll send another car over!”

There are plenty of these with the Dragon Legion.

“That's great!”

“We're proud to have a grandson-in-law like you!”

The old couple had forgotten about everything else and only had eyes for Levi when they saw these cigarettes and liquor.

“Alright, that's about it,” Levi smiled. “Many people are watching.”

Upon realizing the enormity of their faux pas, they laughed bashfully.

“Caitlyn, Aaron, Zoey,” said Meredith, pointing at the said family. “Come sit with me!”

Caitlyn and Aaron could not believe their ears..

They went forward in a daze and sat at the table where Meredith and Robert were seated.

“Let me take the opportunity of the birthday banquet to announce something,” Meredith said. “The Black family has agreed to my daughter, Caitlyn Black's return!”

Caitlyn wept with joy at the announcement.

She had been waiting for this day for almost thirty years!

Aaron was also incredibly emotional.

The Black family had finally accepted them!

Zoey was happy as well.

“Caitlyn, Aaron, you two got yourselves a good son-in-law there.”

Robert and Meredith couldn't help but compliment.

Aaron and Caitlyn were delighted. “Levi, you've made us proud! We shouldn't have blamed you.”

“Mom, Dad, glad that you're happy,” Levi smiled.

Aaron and Caitlyn squared their shoulders, looking at the crowd arrogantly.

Now that Mr. and Mrs. Black have voiced their approval, who dares to make fun of us now?

Our son-in-law is just as capable, thank you very much.

Everyone kept their lips sealed. Instead of mocking them, they were now looking at them with envy.

Because Graham, Felix, Perry and the others were seated at the same table.

That meant that in Meredith's eyes, Aaron's family was just as important as them.

Just then, someone suddenly came in, reporting, “Reporting, Mr. Black. A few military officers outside who claimed to be stationed at the South Warzone want to congratulate Mrs. Black on her birthday!”

Puzzled, Robert asked, “Did they mention their identities?”

“They did! One of them is the head of the Dragon Legion of the Iron Brigade, Captain Steele, and there were a few colonels as well,” the subordinate replied.

“What? The captain of the Dragon Legion of the Iron Brigade?”

Robert, Meredith and the others jumped to their feet.

Even Graham, who was once a deputy leader and Felix, the deputy director of the city's Ministry of Economy, shot up.

The fact that the Dragon Legion was stationed at the South Warzone was well known among the higher-ups.

Quintus and Keane looked at each other. A thought occurred to them as they said, “Damn, Russell! You even invited Captain Steele of the Iron Brigade?! That's a big surprise!”

The rest of the Black family looked at Russell admiringly. “Did you specially prepare this Russell? I thought you said you couldn’t invite anyone from the warzone!”

“Yeah, Russell must have lied to us to give us a big surprise!”

Russell’s parents gave him an approving look.

Robert and Meredith were all the more surprised to hear that they were military officers from the Iron Brigade.

Their eyes crinkled into a smile.

“Not bad, Russell! I didn’t expect so many surprises today! You’re Grandma’s greatest pride and joy!”

Under such circumstances, Russell had to claim credit, even if he didn’t want to.

If not, he was afraid that Meredith would be disappointed.

“Yes, that’s right,” said Russell, bracing himself. “I’ve specially prepared this segment for you, Grandma. Just to give you and Grandpa a surprise!”

Perry, who was sitting beside Russell, was flabbergasted.

Didn’t Captain Steele come because of the God of War?

What has it got to do with you, Russell?

“Russell, what’s going on? Did you really invite him?” Perry asked.

“Yeah, Captain Chapman. I gave it a try at the war zone and it worked!”

Russell kept a straight face.

Robert and Meredith got up and greeted them at the doors, with the latter smiling, “I knew it! Russell is a late bloomer!”

Robert and Meredith were brimming with joy.

Seeing that, Caitlyn and Aaron were surprisingly jealous.

We were supposed to have gained the old woman’s favor, but her attention has now shifted to Russell instead.

They looked at Levi grudgingly...

Getting the Iron Brigade’s special cigarettes and liquors is nothing special!

Inviting the military officers from the Iron Brigade is what counts!

Following behind Robert and Meredith, Russell clenched his fists.

He swore to work hard and turn all these into a reality!

Just then, Captain Steele and the others had arrived at the doors.

Upon seeing Meredith, Alfie came forward, wishing, “Captain Alfie Steele of the Dragon Legion of the Iron Brigade and his three adjutants wish you a happy birthday, Mrs. Black.”

Mortimer, who was standing beside Alfie, stepped forward. “The captain of the South Warzone, Mortimer Lambert, wishes you a...”

Seeing them offering their best wishes one after another, Meredith was very excited.

Coming from the military themselves, they regarded Alfie and the others with more importance than those who were in politics like Graham.

Especially since Alfie came from the invincible Iron Brigade...

This was such a great honor!

Robert and Meredith were most pleased to see Alfie and the others attend the birthday banquet.

However, Russell, who stood at the back was a little nervous.

He was afraid of exposing himself.

He didn't dare to greet them at all because he had never seen them before.

Russell deliberately hid at the back, afraid of getting noticed.

But Meredith pulled him to the front, asking with anticipation, “I wonder what's Captain Steele's comment on my grandson Russell Black?”

Alfie froze. This old lady is so weird. I don't even know who's your grandson; how am I supposed to evaluate him?

But at the thought that she was the grandmother of the God of War's wife, he said politely, “Russell looks sharp and the country will be counting on him in the future!”

“Hahaha, wonderful!”

Robert and Meredith couldn't help but laugh heartily at Alfie's high evaluation of their grandson.

The Protector Chapter 194

“God bless the Black family!”

A blend of emotion fermented inside of everyone in the Black family; Russell’s parents were so thrilled that they could almost cry while Quintus, Keane, and some other of Russell’s cousins were truly stoked.

The place seethed with enthusiasm, and the atmosphere was at its climax.

Because that was an appraisal from the captain of the Iron Brigade, whose words were very authoritative.

Robert and Meredith were so proud that they had forgotten about the special cigarettes and liquor that Levi had gifted them.

Aaron and Caitlyn felt wretched.

The spotlight was supposed to be on them.

The old lady had liked them most!

But before they could bask in the limelight, the attention was shifted onto Russell.

“I’ve heard about Russell Black for a long time,” Mortimer added. “He will have a promising future if he becomes vice-captain of the Special Security Unit before thirty years old.”

Russell was feeling very emotional as well to receive Captain Steele and Captain Lambert’s approval despite the blunder he had made.

“Captain Steele, Captain Lambert, Colonels, please,” Robert and Meredith ushered them inside.

But Alfie rejected the offer, “We just came to greet you, Mrs. Black. We should make our move now.”

“Does Captain Steele have any other urgent matters to attend to?” asked Meredith, with an air of great surprise.

“Yes, that’s right. The God of War of my division is going to inspect the Dragon Legion that I’m leading. I need to go back and get the troops ready,” Alfie said.

Mortimer nodded. “Yes, Mrs. Black. My legion is going to be inspected as well. We need to prepare ourselves.”

“What?” The God of War of the Iron Brigade? He must be a famous general who shines on the battlefield!”

Robert and Meredith were filled with deep veneration.

But as if she thought of something, Meredith pleaded, “I guess we have no time and are not qualified to attend such inspections. Could you allow my grandson, Russell to visit and gain some insight, Captain Steele?”

Seemingly hesitating, Alfie agreed to her plea, “Okay, sure. The inspection takes place in a few hours. Russell, wait for our notice.”

Meredith and the rest of the Black family were all thrilled.

If Russell visits the Dragon Legion, it would be great for his career prospects.

After the Black family had sent them off, the birthday banquet continued.

Meredith was obviously indifferent to Aaron and his family. At most, she would only say a word or two to Levi.

The conversation made during the birthday banquet now revolved around Russell.

Levi was unfazed as he stared at the table of dishes and feasted on them.

In the eyes of the others, his table manners was repulsive.

It was as if he had been starving for over a week.

Especially since Felix, Graham and other big shots were sitting at the same table, Levi’s table manners was a big disgrace to Meredith.

Meredith was displeased, but she couldn’t say much seeing as Levi gifted her the special cigarettes and liquor.

Indeed, Levi was uncouth. He should have watched his manners, especially since he now had Meredith’s favor.

Russell eventually got sick of it. “Levi, come out for a moment. I need to have a word with you.”

Meredith looked at Russell approvingly.

How astute! The problem has been resolved.

Levi followed Russell outside.

“What do you wanna talk about?” Levi started while picking his teeth with a toothpick.

How Russell wished he could punch him in the face at his sluggish appearance.

But he said with a smile outwardly, “I have a question, Levi. How did you get the special cigarettes and liquor of the Iron Brigade?”

The Protector Chapter 195

“I had it delivered, of course,” Levi chuckled.

“Delivered? Could it be someone from the Iron Brigade?” Russell asked quizzically.

Levi nodded. “Precisely. Didn’t you see him just now?”

“What? You mean Captain Steele?”

Russell looked at Levi incredulously.

“Yeah, him! Why else would he be here if not to deliver the cigarettes and liquor?” Levi said.

“Hahaha...” Russell laughed out loud.

This man can really talk big!

“I’ll have another carload sent over,” Levi said.

“Hahaha, nice,” Russell responded sarcastically, looking at Levi as if he was a clown.

I’ll soon find out whether Captain Steele is sending another carload of special cigarettes and liquor or not.

I’m going to the South Warzone after all.

“You were saying that you invited Alfie over, huh?” Levi suddenly asked.

Russell became a little flustered at that question.

But what was there to be afraid of if Alfie didn’t even expose him?

“Yeah, I invited him to congratulate Grandma on her birthday!” Russell admitted tenaciously.

Levi’s grin widened meaningfully, making Russell uneasy as if Levi had seen through his lies.

Not daring to stay with him any longer, he turned around and went back to the main hall.

The birthday banquet finally ended after a few hours.

Meredith had specially called Aaron and his family to stay behind, which made Zoey very happy.

Russell took his leave as well. “Grandpa, Grandma, I just received a notice asking me to hurry over to the South Warzone.”

“Go on now. You’re the pride of the Black family. Everyone must learn from Russell,” Meredith praised.

“You must tell us everything when you come back,” Quintus said.

Thereafter, Meredith checked the headcount. “Is everyone here? Caitlyn, where’s your son-in-law?”

“I have no idea where he went, Mom,” Caitlyn replied.

“Whatever. Just let him be,” Meredith dismissed him, for he was just an unimportant person.

However, Caitlyn and Aaron were furious.

This is clearly a good chance, but that bastard went missing.

How incompetent!

At this time, Levi had called Abigail to send him to the South Warzone.

As Russell was anxious, he made his way to the Dragon Legion’s encampment at the South Warzone as quick as possible.

Upon his arrival, he was like a country bumpkin who had just entered the city; everything was new to him.

He looked around and dared not touch anything, for fear of breaking things.

Alfie had arranged for a soldier to welcome Russell.

Halting before a warehouse, there was a car parked at its entrance with a few men moving boxes and boxes of goods to a car.

Noticing the packaging, Russell thought it looked similar to the special cigarettes and liquors that Levi had brought.

“May I ask what are these, comrade?” Russell couldn’t help but ask.

“Oh, these are the Iron Brigade’s special cigarettes and liquors! The captain has ordered us to load a car of them to send them over to the Black family,” the soldier replied.

Russell was thunderstruck.

Are they seriously sending a carload of these to the Black family?

Levi was right!

What is his identity?

If getting two bottles of liquor and two packets of cigarettes means nothing, then getting a carload of these is a whole different problem.

Russell arrived at the training ground in trepidation.

The Dragon Legion and several thousands of soldiers had all assembled and lined up in columns, looking ever powerful and ever triumphant.

The Protector Chapter 196

Seeing the spirits of the Dragon Legion had Russell's adrenalin pumping.

The pride and fervor in their eyes was so compelling that it could drive one crazy.

They were whom Russell aspired to be!

Their existence was fearsome!

Although his regiment was at the forefront of the South Warzone, they were a far cry from the Dragon Legion.

Russell and the others were seated at the observation deck.

Everyone was waiting for the God of War of the Iron Brigade.

If not for the regulations, Russell would have filmed everything.

He was too excited!

Everyone was waiting in silence. No one dared to speak a word the whole time.

Finally, a car drove into the encampment and made its way quickly to the training base.

Russell frowned when he saw the pink car from a distance.

Where have I seen this car before?

Isn't that Abigail's pink Maserati?

The pink Maserati stopped at the training base.

A girl alighted from the driver's seat.

Isn't that Abigail?

Russell was dumbstruck and when he saw the person coming down from the passenger's seat, he nearly suffocated.

Levi!

It's actually him!

What are they doing here?

That person can't be him, right?

For a moment, it was as if Russell's heart had stopped beating.

Levi told Abigail to stay where she was as he walked step by step toward the Dragon Legion.

Seeing Levi approaching, all the soldiers lifted their chins up and stood upright like a pike.

Alfie and Mortimer jogged toward Levi and saluted him. "Reporting, God of War! The Dragon Legion and the South Warzone Legion have assembled! Awaiting your instructions, Sir!"

What?

God of War?

The group observing was mind blown.

No one had expected that the God of War of the Dragon Legion was THE God of War himself!

What was even more unbelievable to Russell was that Levi was THE God of War!

No wonder Levi acted so arrogant at the birthday banquet.

No wonder Levi could present the special cigarettes and liquor of the Iron Brigade.

No wonder Levi said he had Captain Steele deliver them.

...

It's because Levi is the God of War!

Levi came before the soldiers and commanded in a clear tone, "At ease!"

The uniformed movements of thousands of soldiers were jaw-dropping.

"I'll keep this short. Since you've all come down from the front line, rest and reorganize, but training must still go on. You must always be ready for war!" Levi lectured the Dragon Legion.

He then looked at the legion, smiling, "The soldiers of Erudia are tough! And so is our legion. Catch up on your training and be prepared at all times to sacrifice for the country!"

Despite Levi's brief speech, it ignited the fire in their hearts.

“God of War!”

“God of War!”

...

Thousands of soldiers shouted vigorously.

The scene was earth-shattering.

It was definitely a scene Russell would never forget in this lifetime.

After the inspection, Levi came toward Russell.

“Take a load of cigarettes and liquors with you later. But you should also advise Grandpa and Grandma not to drink too much,” Levi said.

“Yes, yes, yes...” Facing Levi again, Russell was so scared that he was drenched in sweat, even his speech was stuttering.

With that, the carload of special cigarettes and liquors were moved into Russell’s car.

Russell arrived at the Black family’s residence.

“A carload of the Iron Brigade’s special cigarettes and liquors? Did Russell send them back?”

“My grandson is too capable! Oh, my God!”

“God bless the Black family!”

The Protector Chapter 197

The Black family was numb with shock when they saw Russell's car loaded with special cigarettes and liquors.

Robert and Meredith's eyes twinkled.

"God has indeed blessed the Black family! My son is too amazing!" Xaiden praised.

Robert and Meredith grasped Russell's hands, only to make him feel awkward because this had nothing to do with him at all.

"Grandpa, Grandma actually—"

"This is enough, Russell," Meredith interrupted, thinking that Russell was trying to be modest. "This carload of cigarettes and liquors are enough for the rest of our lives."

"Yeah, you don't have to say much, Russell. We understand."

Robert patted on Russell's shoulders.

On second thought, Russell stopped trying to explain, remembering that he had signed a non-disclosure agreement to keep everything he saw a secret before leaving the South Warzone.

"Work hard, Russell. Your Grandpa and I have decided to exhaust all our resources to nurture you," Meredith said.

Quintus and the others were envious, and so were Aaron and Caitlyn.

Didn't Levi say he would send a carload of special cigarettes and liquors?

Where is he?

Robert asked Russell, "So who did you meet today, Russell? Who's the God of War of the Iron Brigade?"

"Yeah, tell us, Russell. We wanna know." The Black family was curious.

Russell gave a nervous titter. "Grandpa, Grandma, as much as I want to tell you, I can never reveal his identity. I've signed a non-disclosure agreement."

"It even involves a non-disclosure agreement?! Oh, God..."

Meredith and Robert looked at each other in the eye with a look of horror.

"But what I am sure of is," Russell continued, "that the Black family will prosper from now on! So Grandpa, Grandma, you guys have to be nicer to all the aunts and uncles, such as Aunt Caitlyn and Uncle Aaron. There's only hope if the Black family unites!"

Because the God of War was the son-in-law of the Black family, and Russell could guarantee that!

Hence, he specifically reminded them by mentioning their names.

"That's a given!" Robert and Meredith promised. "We've accepted Caitlyn and Aaron again. They are one of us now."

Hearing that, Aaron and Caitlyn couldn't hold back their excitement.

"Thank you, Mom and Dad!"

Meredith flashed a look at them. "You should thank Russell."

“Thank you, Russell!” the both of them said in unison.

Russell gave an awkward smile.

“But your son-in-law is not too bad,” Meredith said, be thought of something.

Mom clearly liked Levi’s presents the most just now. How did it become ‘not too bad’ in the blink of an eye?

However, Caitlyn was contented.

At this time, Levi and Abigail had returned.

“Didn’t you say you were gonna send another carload of special cigarettes and liquors, Levi?” Logan sneered.

Levi pointed at Russell’s car. “Didn’t I have them deliver already?”

Just as Russell was about to speak, Logan roared, “Bullshit! Clearly, it was Russell who sent these back. What the hell has it got to do with you?”

“Yeah! You’re too much! All of us saw that it was Russell who sent these back!”

“You do have credit today, but you can’t just take Russell’s credit!”

...

Everyone mouthed off at Levi.

Russell was vexed, but he couldn’t get a word in edgeways.

He’s a God! How could mere mortals judge him?

The Protector Chapter 198

“The fact that you can get those special cigarettes and liquor means you are somewhat capable. As long as you act wisely, you could turn out quite well. But don’t try to seek loopholes and indulge in petty tricks,” Meredith said coldly, displeased with Levi’s behavior.

“You two need to discipline him more. After all, Zoey has a bright future ahead of her,” Robert said to Caitlyn and Aaron.

“Yes, Mom and Dad. We understand!”

At their departure, Meredith asked, “Russell, what do you think about Levi?”

Russell was scared stiff.

How can I comment on this person?

I still want to live.

“No comment,” Russell replied.

“Logan, what do you think?” Meredith asked again.

Logan looked deep in thought. “Levi is indeed capable, seeing how he could get his hands on the special cigarettes and liquor. But since he’d spent six years in jail, his powerful side has probably smoothed out, and he’s picked up on many bad habits. I think it will be hard for Levi to develop.”

Meredith nodded in agreement. “Mm, I think so too.”

The next day, everyone left one after another.

When the Black family offered to give them a ride, Zoey rejected it and requested to take the high-speed rail instead.

Mainly because she wanted to see what would happen to Levi at the security checkpoint.

When they arrived at the security checkpoint, Zoey deliberately let Levi pass first.

Seeing Levi pass through easily, they were stunned.

“Come out and go in again,” Zoey demanded.

Levi had no choice but to enter again. However, the alarm still didn't go off.

Zoey was taken aback.

Have I really mistaken?

In fact, the system had been rebooted since Levi left that day.

He could easily pass through all security checkpoints now without sounding off the alarm.

Just after getting on the high-speed rail, Alfie sent a message. The big shots of the South Warzone and South City just knew about your arrival at South City.

Levi had already left when they came to look for him.

Levi replied immediately. Tell them I'll definitely inform them the next time I visit South City.

On the high-speed rail, Caitlyn said, "Zoey, you should really consider the advice that your uncles have given."

"What is it?" Levi asked.

Aaron sighed, "Zoey's uncles had suggested that she sever all ties with the Lopez family and establish a new company."

"That's a great idea! She should have done that a long time ago!" Levi raised both hands in favor of that suggestion.

They're a bunch of assholes who can never be satisfied.

Aaron shook his head. "It won't be that easy! Dad has shares in Zoey's company. We'll have a tough row to hoe."

Zoey was also worried about this.

She knew Harry far too well.

"Zoey, just go all out. I'll handle it if there's any trouble," Levi said.

He wasn't worried about the Lopez family now, but the retaliation of the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce.

Now that Levi Group was in his hands again, the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce was bound to keep their guards up.

After returning to North Hampton, Kirin told him it was decided that Levi Group would merge with Garrison Group after negotiation and be named Morris Group in remembrance of Morris Atkinson.

Levi would also use Morris Group to destroy the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce.

It was equivalent to Morris himself trampling the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce!

Levi understood that this would surely lead to objection from the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce. But he would be there for the ceremony by then.

The Protector Chapter 199

The renaming of Levi Group had created a storm in the entire city.

Especially since it would be renamed to Morris Group, anyone who knew the ins and outs of the situation knew they were coming after the Rogers family and the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce.

It was an act of revenge.

According to gossip, the person who now controlled Levi Group was Neil Atkinson, someone who had yet to appear in North Hampton.

Everyone was suspecting him to be a relative of Morris.

Because someone had discovered that Morris's parents had moved into the most expensive villa at Bayview Garden from the village and that Zoey's Imperial Meadows Limited had been receiving a huge chunk of investments from Levi Group.

...

The gossips had stated that the relationship between Neil and Morris was not so simple and that Neil was aiming for the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce.

On a small island at North Hampton's Arrior Lake, there were boats surrounding the island. On it stood hundreds of men in black with their waists bulging, obviously carrying a weapon.

They were even military helicopters hovering in the sky from time to time, patrolling the perimeter.

The worse part was that the entire scenic spot of Arrior Lake had been booked today.

And the person who did the booking was on this small island...

On the island were six elders who were sitting by the lake, quietly fishing,

Behind them stood eleven people, which included seven directors from the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce, and four heirs of four noble families in North Hampton, the Hendersons, Andersons, Williamsons and Robinsons.

The four elders fishing at the front were the current heads of the four biggest noble families, Wallace Henderson, Clifford Anderson, Baldwin Williamson, and Eric Robinson.

They were the top four families on the list of the wealthiest families in North Hampton.

The four elders were even more powerful than Glenn from the Rogers family.

While the Rogers family's wealth amounted to fifty billion, the Hendersons, Andersons, Williamsons, and Robinsons's wealth amounted to a hundred billion.

Together, they had established the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce.

In short, they had occupied almost half of North Hampton's economic lifeline. They were the real juggernauts of North Hampton.

The two other elders who were fishing with them were no less than they were.

Grover Cooke, who had now retired, was once the governor of North Hampton.

He had many disciples, and his descendants all held important positions in North Hampton.

Even the current governor, Jesse Nielsen, was his student.

Jesse would often go to Grover to seek advice because there was a saying that Grover's words could make people grovel at his feet.

The other elder was Xander Hoyles, the vice commander-in-chief of the North Hampton Warzone.

Due to a transfer order, the position of commander-in-chief of the North Hampton Warzone had been vacant, which meant that Xander was the leader of the North Hampton Warzone now.

The two of them were friends and classmates with Eric and the others.

It wasn't uncommon for them to meet up for fishing.

On the small island not far away was a platoon of guards.

Any little decision made by these six elders was influential enough to shake up the entire North Hampton.

It was indeed the case because many things in North Hampton were conferred by the six of them.

...

If the four wealthiest families and North Hampton Chamber of Commerce could achieve such success, it was needless to say that their connections ramified all over North Hampton.

From war zones to towns, everywhere had traces of the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce.

Hence there was this saying that ‘messing with the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce was akin to messing with North Hampton’s foundation’.

They were different from the Rogers family.

It wouldn’t be so easy to destroy them.

Besides, if the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce were to be destroyed, they still had Grover and Xander at the top.

The Protector Chapter 200

According to this situation, it was simply impossible for them to be destroyed.

But they didn’t expect that their opponent was Levi—the only five-star God of War in history!

The God of War would crush everything!

...

At this moment, Eric suddenly caught a fish.

After putting it in the basket, he looked at Grover and Xander, smiling, "Grover, Xander, have you two heard about the recent events in North Hampton?"

The grizzled-haired Grover moved his fishing rod and said with a little doubt, "Are you talking about the matter with Director Alaric Taylor of the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce or the matter with the renaming of Levi Group to Morris Group?"

Grover might be retired, but he still had everything under control.

Wallace gave him a meaningful look. "I supposed you can look at these matters as one?"

"You're suggesting that Neil Atkinson of Levi Group is behind all this?" asked Xander.

Clifford nodded. "Most likely. According to our investigations, Neil should be Morris's uncle. He's changing the name of Levi Group to Morris Group to help Morris Atkinson's best friend, Levi Garrison. That's why they invested in Zoey and even took care of Alaric and Charles."

"We've questioned the Rogers family in the past for a few days, but they remained silent about relinquishing the Garrison family's properties and Levi Group," Baldwin said. "They only warned us to be careful, saying that we've met our match this time."

"In a word," Eric summed up. "This mysterious Neil Atkinson is a powerful man. He's definitely something to be able to send Alaric to jail and retake Levi Group and Garrison Group from the Rogers family's hands."

Those were the information that the four noble families had obtained.

It was considered intimidating because other enterprises and families had yet to know about the change of ownership of Levi Group.

“To be honest, I’ve known you guys for over ten years now and I’ve never seen such somber expression on all four of your faces,” Xander suddenly chuckled.

Grover nodded. “Exactly! It’s my first time seeing you guys like this. It means that Neil Atkinson is really stressing you out.”

“Sure, there’s stress, but it’s just enough to get our attention,” Wallace smiled. “He can’t threaten us!”

Eric stroked his long white beard, chortling, “That is without a doubt! No one can mess with the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce.”

Xander nodded. “That’s right! There’s no way they can break apart the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce!”

Metaphorically speaking, the Garrison family and the Rogers family were just growing saplings that could be uprooted by manpower while the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce was a ten-thousand-year-old tree that would probably require ten people to encircle it. It would be impossible to uproot it based on manpower alone.

Clifford flashed a cruel smile. “Although there isn’t a threat, Neil Atkinson is really a thorn in the flesh. We must get rid of him as soon as possible!”

Understanding the meaning behind his words, Grover and Xander smiled, “We can still find out his identity for you guys.”

With that, Xander suddenly caught a fish and threw it into Clifford’s basket.

“Just like this. I caught a fish for you and it’s up to you whether you want to release it or cook it.”

He was comparing the fish to Neil.

The four of them nodded.

The Protector Chapter 201

They moved on to the next topic of conversation afterward.

“The legendary protector of Erudia, the God of War has arrived in North Hampton for so long, yet we’ve never met with him. I am deeply ashamed of myself!” Eric said helplessly.

“That’s right. We all wanted to meet with him just to have the honor of seeing his face with our own eyes!” Wallace added.

Grover Cooke laughed. “The God of War even rejected the wealthiest man in North Hampton, Winston Gonzales’s invitation, much less the rest of you.”

Xander Hoyles let out his laughter as well. “Let me tell all of you something unbelievable. I am supposed to be the highest-ranking officer in the North Hampton Warzone, but regretfully, even I have never seen the God of War in person. He’s active around the North Hampton’s warzone and even hosted a military practice. But he disregarded me and directly transferred the First Army to do his bidding!”

Grover was astounded. “You too? Oh my God!”

“To be honest, to him, I am just an insignificant person. I have to pay my respect to Azure Dragon and the other Kings of War despite their lower rank. They are the strongest military force in Erudia, after all!” Xander explained.

Eric and the others shook their heads in disappointment. “I guess there is no hope for us since even someone like Mr. Hoyles does not get to meet with him.”

Xander Hoyles flashed a pensive smile. “No, that’s not true. There is a chance for you to meet with him. There’s a ceremony to welcome the new commander-in-chief for the North Hampton warzone soon. The God of War will certainly attend the ceremony. There are a few seats open to the public to participate in the ceremony, so all of you can try to seize the opportunity then!”

“Really? That’s great! We can finally meet with the God of War!” Everyone else could barely contain their excitement.

Baldwin grinned. “I heard that not only is the God of War a young man in his twenties, but he is also single! Coincidentally, my granddaughter, Yara, is single as well. She can be the perfect match for him. They will be a great couple!”

Clifford retorted immediately. “Is that so? Are you saying that your granddaughter is better than mine?”

“Hey, all of us have granddaughters as well!” The others voiced out in displeasure too.

Even Xander took part in the heated conversation. “I have a granddaughter too. She’s in the army. Does that count as an advantage?”

“Ah, in that case, your granddaughter certainly has the edge over ours. We should’ve sent our granddaughters to join the army too in the past!”

Eric suddenly changed the topic of conversation. “Let’s talk about business now. Levi Group and the acquired Garrison Group will be changing their name to Morris Group three days later!”

“There’s no other way to handle this matter. We’ll have to sound out Morris Group’s capabilities!”

...

Zoey was made aware of the matter regarding Levi’s group name change into Morris Group’s.

“I heard Neil Atkinson is Morris’s uncle. No wonder he helped us through our crisis. Do you know anything about this?” Zoey asked curiously.

Levi shook his head. “I don’t know Morris has an uncle!” Levi could barely contain his laughter. These people are ridiculous. How can Kirin be Morris’s uncle when he’s clearly 7 years younger than Morris?

“I heard Levi Group will be hosting a name-changing ceremony three days later. Are you going to attend the ceremony to check out the situation?”

Zoey was busy with her matters of establishing a new company, but she was curious about that event. So she asked Levi to attend the ceremony instead.

“Sure. I’ll check out the event.”

What Zoey did not know was that Levi would attend the ceremony even without her reminder.

He decided to bring Mr. and Mrs. Atkinson too.

Levi informed Morris’s parents about that matter when he visited them at Bayview Garden Real Estate’s villa.

The Protector Chapter 202

Levi told the aged couple he would pick them up in person three days later.

He saw Chloe the moment he exited the villa’s neighborhood.

She was there because she was introducing one of the properties there to a customer.

“I’m getting off work now. Why don’t I treat you to a meal if you’re free?” Chloe offered with a smile.

Levi suddenly remembered the promise he made after they were met with the impromptu situation the other day.

“Sure. Let’s have a meal, but it’s going to be my treat!” Levi answered.

Levi was chauffeured to the villa earlier, so he did not have a car. He had no other choice but to let Chloe drive him to the restaurant.

They decided to have their meal in a high-end Chinese restaurant, where their patrons can only be those with the restaurant’s membership.

“I’m sorry, Ms. Macy! All the private rooms are fully booked. We only have open seats left in the hall.” The restaurant staff informed Chloe.

Chloe looked at Levi immediately to seek his opinion.

“Fine by me.” Levi nodded.

They sat at a table close to the window.

Chloe was a regular customer, and she was vaguely familiar with Levi’s preference too. So she ordered a few dishes that suited Levi’s taste.

Levi enjoyed the meal to his heart’s content.

“Is that really you, Chloe?” Someone exclaimed.

Two men dressed in suits stood a few feet away from their table. One of the men was clearly excited to see Chloe.

Levi felt that the man looked a little familiar. Oh, I remember him now! He’s one of my juniors from high school, William Hanks.

William studied Finance and graduated from a university in South City. Levi allowed him to enter Levi Group despite his lack of qualification due to William’s status as his junior.

William appeared to be in a neutral stance after Levi was met with trouble in the past, but he actually sided with Matthew Green.

Chloe did not like William because he was annoying and had been relentless in pursuing her.

He firmly believed he deserved Chloe especially now that Levi Group had regained its momentum.

“Chloe, let me introduce to you. This is the manager of Gatsby Group, Mr. Paterson. We are currently discussing a project that’s worth a hundred million!” William introduced the chubby man next to him to Chloe.

Mr. Paterson looked at Chloe lecherously.

At that moment, William noticed Levi.

He fell into a daze for some time before he addressed him subconsciously, “Mr. Garrison... wait, no. Levi Garrison, you’re here too?”

In William’s mind, Levi does not deserve any honorifics now that he had been reduced to someone with a lowly status.

“That’s right. You’re able to recognize me?” Levi smiled. William Hanks is considered half a traitor. There are still plenty of traitors like him among the current staffs in Levi Group. I have to utilize this name-changing ceremony to reassemble the company’s employees. I’ve regained control of Levi Group for some time now, but I’ve yet to remove these rotten people.

“Hahaha, of course! You were so glorious in the past! I even worked as your driver and valet when I first entered the company...”

William remembered everything that happened in the past vividly.

“I did not get any promotion while you were in charge of the company, Levi Garrison. You’ve never treated me like your junior, always asking me to do those hard and dirty chores! I was promoted and given important tasks to handle after you left, and can finally put my talents to good use! I am now the vice-director of the marketing department!” He pointed at Levi and continued, “Regretfully, you are no longer my boss. You are just someone who, at most, qualifies to clean my shoes...”

Levi and Chloe exchanged glances. Both of them snickered.

Levi scoffed. “Sorry to disappoint you, but I am still your boss!”

The Protector Chapter 203

William was stunned upon hearing what Levi said.

He regained his senses and sneered. “Are you trying to crack some joke, Levi Garrison? My supervisor is the director of the marketing department, Mr. Barclay Burns, while my boss is Mr. Neil Atkinson, who recently acquired Levi Group! Where do you think you fit into this equation?”

Levi did not say a word. He merely regarded William with a smile.

William curled his lips mockingly. “Perhaps you’re going to tell me that you are actually the mysterious Mr. Neil Atkinson? You can stop your day-dreaming! Levi Group is no longer related to you now. Moreover, the company is changing its name too. When that time comes, the company’s final connection with you will be severed too!”

Levi took a sip from his drink. “You will know sooner or later if I am still related to the company.”

William ignored Levi and turned to look at Chloe. “Why are you hanging out with him? Don’t you know? He was placed behind bars for the last six years because he tried to take advantage of his sister-

in-law. He's been blacklisted by all the companies in North Hampton, so he's destined to fail now. Moreover, he's got a wife. This man is clearly latching on to you with ulterior motives. You have to be careful not to fall into his traps! You'll regret for the rest of your life if this piece of trash takes advantage of you." William advised Chloe with concern.

Mr. Paterson added, "That's right. You are a successful, young, and beautiful woman. You need to settle down with an outstanding man as soon as possible to prevent a scum like him from attaching himself to you. Look at William. He's young and accomplished. I think he's quite a perfect match for you, Ms. Macy."

Chloe responded coldly, "I'm sorry, but I do not need the both of you to worry over my matters. Besides, I think Levi is a great man. He's even treating me to dinner tonight."

William laughed out loud. "Are you kidding me, Chloe? Levi is treating you to a meal? The signature dishes you've ordered will cost you at least twenty thousand. How is he going to pay for that?"

"That's none of your business!" Chloe was enraged.

William and Mr. Paterson had no other choice but to leave resentfully.

Levi and Chloe left afterward.

William hurriedly followed them.

"What? That poor loser doesn't even have a car! He needs Chloe to fetch him!" William chided.

Mr. Paterson was mad as well. "How can you let an ex-convict like him to surpass you, William?"

William punched the wall forcefully. "Levi Garrison is too cunning! I have to find a way to teach him a lesson! Ah, that's right. I just got an idea..."

William's eyes shone with excitement.

In the subsequent two days, the news of Levi Group's preparation for the name-changing ceremony became heated.

After all, they were a force that could threaten the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce's long-standing influence.

A day before the ceremony, Levi received a call from an unknown number. William's voice was heard after the call connected. "Good day, my ex-boss!"

Levi was puzzled by William's politeness.

"I am here to inform you of wonderful news. After the name-changing ceremony tomorrow, all employees in Levi Group will receive an increment in salary and benefits ranging from twenty to forty percent. All the people who worked for you previously will receive an average of thirty percent

increment, so we decided to throw a party to express our gratitude toward you, our ex-boss! You mustn't reject our invitation because we deliberately hosted this party for you. Everyone is eager to reunite with you."

A thought popped into Levi's mind as his lips curved upward. "Sure. I'll be there!" He agreed to attend the party.

"Alright then. I can't wait to see you there!"

The Protector Chapter 204

Over a dozen executives of Levi Group hosted a party in the largest private room in Galaxy Hotel that night.

They prepared a lot of champagne inside the room.

All the executives present were once Levi's subordinates.

Melissa Floyd replaced Matthew Green as the vice-president of Levi Group after his disappearance.

Melissa used to be Levi's personal secretary. She was an elite who was selected by Levi among one thousand candidates.

She was a capable person. Her accomplishment of receiving a promotion from a personal secretary to the vice-president position reflected her abilities.

In the past, Melissa tried to seduce Levi countless times and even borrowed the strength of the media to spread baseless scandals about herself and Levi. Her underhand tactics nearly caused Levi and Zoey to break up back in the day.

After that, Levi exposed her tricks and demoted her to an average employee. So she had always harbored hateful feelings toward Levi.

Melissa also participated in the scheme to cause Imperial Meadows's bankruptcy.

She could not care less about Levi with her current status, but William Hanks offered her an opportunity to humiliate Levi. So she decided to attend to the party too.

She wanted to witness Levi's current condition with her own eyes.

The others who attended the party were Barclay Burns, the director of the marketing department, Eileen Barn, the director of the PR department, Leroy Bird, the director of the legal department, as well as the director of the HR department, Kennelm Pitt.

All of them underwent vigorous training while Levi was their boss because he wanted to cultivate them. They did not receive speedy promotions. Instead, they were forced to learn and experience more as an average employee in the company. However, none of them understood Levi's intention. They hated Levi because they felt he was bullying them and restricted their growth in the company.

So they were the first group of employees to turn against Levi and joined the Rogers family's rank after Levi's imprisonment.

The other subordinates who were loyal to Levi were either drove to their deaths or forced to resign.

Barclay and his peers had the potential, so they managed to climb up the corporate hierarchy and landed jobs as executives.

Even now, they were still not grateful for Levi's cultivation. They were still under the impression that Levi mistreated them. So they loathed Levi deeply.

They blamed Levi all the more because they were promoted immediately and received a high salary the moment Levi was gone.

In their mind, Levi nearly ruined their lives. They were all insignificant employees of the group under Levi's management. But all of them became successful people with an annual salary of over a million after Levi's departure.

So they always shared a private joke among themselves: Thank God Levi went to jail!

"Is he here yet?" Everyone was getting impatient.

Levi and Morris were extremely strict in the past, so their employees did not have the courage to even look them in the eyes. But the high and mighty Levi Garrison six years ago was now an average Joe in the city.

They could not wait for Levi to witness their achievements. All of them wanted to humiliate Levi to their heart's content.

"Oh! Our ex-boss is finally here!" William announced cheerfully.

Levi followed behind him.

He entered the room with an indifferent appearance while giving off an overwhelming presence.

Most of the people inside the room were almost suffocated by his domineering aura.

Everyone was dazed as they did not expect Levi to still carry his imposing manner from before.

They wanted to direct volleys of insults at Levi the moment he entered the room, but they simply could not utter a word.

The first person to break the silence was Melissa Floyd. She came to a halt in front of Levi in her high heels and said with a smile, "My beloved Mr. Garrison, you're finally released from prison? This is not

really favorable since that place suited you the most. Why didn't you stay there for a few more years? Personally, I would suggest that you stay behind bars forever!"

The atmosphere inside the room turned heavy after Melissa addressed Levi with the harsh words.

The Protector Chapter 205

Kennelm Pitt, the director of the HR department scoffed. "That's right. Didn't you always admire the military management style, Mr. Garrison? Life in prison suits you the best!"

The director of the PR department, Eileen Barn added, "That's true. You must've stayed behind bars for six years because you enjoyed the environment!"

...

Everyone greeted Levi with insults.

"Please, come in, my beloved Mr. Garrison!" Melissa ushered Levi into the room.

Upon entering, Levi saw the decorations inside the room immediately.

They even hung a couple of banners on the wall.

The first banner read: Thank God for your imprisonment, Levi Garrison. We would not achieve our success today if you did not go to jail.

Printed on the second banner were the words: We hope you stay in prison forever, Levi Garrison.

...

Levi noticed a lot of champagne inside the room as well, but he did not understand the reason behind the large amount of drinks.

Everyone was disappointed to see Levi's reaction because he was not infuriated after looking at the banner.

They asked Levi to sit down, then proceeded to surround him.

Melissa said, "I have to thank you, Mr. Garrison. You forced me to start from the bottom of the company with a monthly salary of a little over four thousand and an annual salary of fifty thousand. Do you know how much I am making per year now? My current annual salary is fifty million!"

Eileen added, "You turned us into a bunch of cheap labors by using the excuse of trying to cultivate us. I did not receive a salary of close to ten thousand previously, but look at me now! My yearly bonus

alone is already at least ten million!”

The marketing director, Barclay chided, “Thank you so much, Levi Garrison! I used to go to work on a scooter, but I am now driving a Lamborghini to work!”

The director of the legal department, Leroy was furious. “This is all your fault, Levi Garrison! You nearly ruined our lives. Do you see how terrible our lives were? You were the cause of our miseries!”

Kennelm shouted, “Serves you right for facing jail time! It was because of that only did we get the opportunity to flourish in our lives!”

“Levi Group has been doing so well since the Rogers family took control. The company is worth at least seven billion in the market now!” Someone mentioned.

Levi suddenly laughed. “The company’s value increased only a mere three billion in six years, and yet you’re so proud of that achievement?”

“That...” Everyone was stunned.

Levi continued, “Levi Group was already worth four billion during its first year of establishment. We were growing at an exponential rate. We even did a simulation to project our company’s growth. Levi Group would be considered a failure if the company failed to achieve a market value of less than fifty billion after 6 years!”

Everyone was rendered speechless. They knew Levi was indeed telling the truth because they were informed of the company’s potential in the past.

But Levi Group’s growth turned negative during its second year after Levi’s imprisonment. The company only showed gradual improvements in its performances for the subsequent years.

None of Levi Group’s employees knew that their core technology and advantages in the market were taken away by another party.

William retorted immediately when he saw that everybody had fell silent. “Nonsense! What you said was all hypothetical. How can you rely on that to survive in the business world? Can you guarantee a positive return every year?”

Melissa recollected her thoughts as well. “That’s right! There are so many changes in the market every year. You cannot possibly predict every turn of events!”

Eileen frowned. “Let’s be honest, Levi Garrison. We would only stay as mere lowly subordinates even if the company developed into a fifty billion corporation. There’s no way we would be as successful as we are now.”

Leroy, Kennelm, and the others agreed. “He’s right. Your achievements have got nothing to do with us. We wouldn’t be making as much money as we are now if we stayed under your management!”

The Protector Chapter 206

Melissa said, “You may not know this, Levi Garrison, but Mr. Atkinson has decided to increase all the employees’ salary since he acquired the company. I will be receiving a thirty percent increment as the vice-president of the company. You can calculate the additional amount yourself!”

“That’s right! Look at how generous Mr. Atkinson is. Don’t you feel ashamed by how petty you were?” Others mocked Levi.

Levi put on a wry smile. How can I be oblivious to this? I was the one that made the arrangements, after all.

Melissa lifted Levi’s chin daringly. “My beloved Mr. Garrison, I am not embarrassed to say this. You rejected me when I confessed to you when I was still working as your personal secretary. Do you regret your decision now? Do you still think that Zoey Lopez is better than me?”

Levi beamed at her. “That’s a given. Zoey is and always will be better than you.”

Melissa laughed out loud. “You’re a fool, Levi Garrison! That woman is close to announcing bankruptcy!”

“But she had received the necessary investment.” Levi firmly believed in Zoey’s capabilities. He knew she merely lacked the opportunities to prove herself. So he gave her the opportunity she needed the most.

“Hahaha...”

Everyone inside the room burst into laughter after listening to Levi.

“You’re hilarious, Levi Garrison! Don’t you know which company was the one that invested in Zoey’s company?”

“It’s our company, Levi Group, that provided her with the capital!”

“Although Mr. Atkinson proposed to invest in her company, most of the procedures are handled by us! Ms. Floyd has to sign the papers, and the investment has to go through the Director of Finance Department, Mr. Snyder! They are the people who will decide the fate of that money now!” Everyone sneered.

Melissa pointed at Levi. “To tell you the truth, Levi Garrison. We have the authority to decide whether Levi Group will invest in Zoey’s company. We can always pull out of the deal or postpone the date to transfer the money to them. Perhaps I can pull some tricks so that Zoey has to compensate us in return for violating the contract!”

William patted Levi’s shoulder. “Did you hear that, you arrogant scum? We are the ones that are in control of you and Zoey Lopez’s fates!”

“That’s right. You have to follow our orders obediently, Levi Garrison! Otherwise, we will force you and Zoey to the brink of desperation!” Kennelm laughed wickedly.

“Are you threatening me?” Levi could hardly contain his urge to laugh. I planned to expose these traitors tomorrow at the company. Well, they certainly saved the trouble by surrendering themselves now.

“Of course! Levi Group will pull out of the deal immediately with a single order from me! I will also include Zoey’s company on the blacklist. No one will dare to invest in Imperial Meadows after that. All she can do by that time is to wait for bankruptcy to knock on her door!” Melissa boasted.

“Then what should I do for all of you to let Zoey off the hook?” Levi asked.

Melissa straightened herself and walked toward the cart filled with numerous bottles of champagne. “That’s easy. We will let her off the hook if you obey our orders!”

Melissa Floyd grabbed a bottle of champagne after she spoke.

Bam!

The cork popped open all of a sudden as Melissa aimed the bottle at Levi.

Whoosh...

Levi was doused by the jet of champagne.

Everyone followed Melissa’s action.

Each of them took a bottle of champagne.

Bam!

Bam!

Bam!

...

The corks of the bottles popped open after they shook the bottles vigorously. Then they sprayed the champagnes in Levi’s direction.

Levi was thoroughly drenched in the champagne shower.

He finally knew the reason behind the large amount of drinks. They wanted to humiliate me with the bottles of champagne.

“Hahaha...”

Whoosh...

Sounds of their evil laughter were mixed with the splashing sound of champagne...

The Protector Chapter 207

All of them vented six years' worth of pent-up resentment in their chests at Levi. He was put to shame by everyone.

Soon, they wasted every bottle of champagne on Levi.

Levi did not care about the treatment. He merely acted as if he took a shower with the champagne. I will let them pay the price for what they did and what they are doing to me now tomorrow. They will taste cruelty at its finest tomorrow!

Kennelm was not satisfied. He shouted at Levi, "Get over here and lick my shoes clean!"

Leroy, Barclay, and the others mimicked Kennelm as well.

Levi ignored them.

William jeered at Levi. "You should take a look at yourself in the mirror now! How can you become so useless to the extent of not putting up any resistance? Weren't you a domineering boss six years ago? Where did that attitude of yours go? I can't even bring myself to insult you further after looking at how pitiful you are!"

Talia smirked. "If you kneel and let me ride on you while you crawl around the room, I will promise not to trouble Zoey in the future, Levi Garrison!"

Levi stood still.

Everyone thought he was hesitating.

"Kneel down right now! Don't you care about Zoey Lopez at all?"

"Know your place, Levi Garrison! You only deserve to live a lowly life like this from now on!"

Everyone hurled insults at him.

Melissa crossed her arms in front of her chest and sized up Levi proudly. "Do as I say immediately!"

Melissa could only be satisfied when she gets to step on Levi literally.

After all, she was a mere secretary in the past and was fired by Levi Garrison.

“That’s enough!” A girl stepped forward and stopped everyone at that moment.

Levi recognized the girl. She’s the intern I selected back in the day, Elena Holmes. I remember her for her professionalism.

Elena was one of the team leaders in the Finance Department now.

Inwardly, she was always grateful toward Levi.

“How can all of you forget about Mr. Garrison’s kindness? Do you think you will be where you are now if he didn’t hire you in the past? Moreover, he did not do anything wrong, so why do you hate him so much?” Elena raised her voice.

“Hmph! What are you doing, Elena? Don’t you hate him? Do you think you will accomplish your current success with him managing the company? Are you betraying us? Fine! You don’t have to come to work starting tomorrow. Hand in your resignation letter to the HR department tomorrow!” The director of the finance department, Bob Snyder scolded.

“That’s right. You’re fired!” Melissa spoke as well.

Elena broke down in tears. I was merely expressing my thoughts. Why am I fired?

Melissa said coldly after Elena began to cry. “Damn it! You’ve ruined the atmosphere. Let’s go back now. I need to prepare for tomorrow’s name-changing ceremony anyway!”

She sneered at Levi before leaving, “Don’t worry, Levi Garrison. This is not the end. I will mess Zoey Lopez’s life up if you do not obey me!”

Eileen took out two stacks of cash and tossed the money in Levi’s face. “Pay the bill later. You can keep the change, you filthy beggar!”

“Hahaha…” Everyone laughed. They felt contented after venting their anger and resentment.

Levi and Elena were left alone inside the private room.

“Do you regret what you did?” Levi asked.

Elena wiped the tears off her face and shook her head. “No! They’ve done some pretty despicable things to achieve their current success. I have wanted to part ways with them since a long time ago!”

The Protector Chapter 208

Levi nodded, satisfied with Elena’s determination. “Don’t worry. No one will fire you. Come to work

as usual tomorrow.”

At that moment, Elena thought he saw glimpses of the thriving Levi Garrison from six years ago.

“Alright, Mr. Garrison. I will do as you say!” Elena answered.

...

Melissa and the other executives were filled with exhilaration after leaving the hotel.

“This is awesome! I still can’t believe we really toyed with Levi Garrison earlier!”

“That’s right. I can’t even find words to describe this amazing feeling!”

Melissa reminded them, “Alright, settle down. It’s time to go back and prepare for tomorrow’s name-changing ceremony. Levi... Morris Group will become a corporation worth over ten billion starting tomorrow. We are all going to have a better future going forward!”

“Understood!”

Everyone began to imagine how their lives would prosper.

Zoey’s heart ached when she saw how Levi looked when he returned home that night.

“I know everything. They sent me the video!”

William and his friends recorded the scene where Levi was showered with champagne and deliberately sent the video to Zoey earlier.

Tears welled up in Zoey’s eyes as she witnessed Levi’s helplessness.

“I heard you suffered the humiliation on your own accord because of me. This is all because of my incompetence. I can do nothing because Levi Group happens to be the investor! They are in control of my life now.” Zoey was filled with guilt.

Levi smiled. “It’s fine, dear. They will face retribution. I’m going to take a shower now. Help me prepare a set of fresh clothes. I will attend the name-changing ceremony for Levi Group tomorrow.”

“Okay!” Zoey stared at Levi’s figure from behind while thinking to herself. I will not let him suffer anymore in the future. I swear!

The next day, at Levi Group’s building.

Elena went to work as always.

But someone from the HR department handed Elena a discharge letter the moment she walked through

the door. “You can leave this place after you receive your salary from the finance department. Elena Holmes, You’re hereby fired!”

Elena was stunned. She thought Levi had made the necessary arrangements for her. I guess he was only comforting me. Moreover, he can’t even protect Zoey Lopez since he was released from prison recently, it’s a given he won’t be able to protect me too. But I do not blame him and I will never regret the words I said last night!

Elena went to the finance department to receive the rest of her salary. Then she went to the HR department to deal with the discharge procedures.

People pointed at her and whispered among themselves wherever Elena went. Not only was she fired by Melissa and her gang, but they had also spread baseless scandals of Elena fooling around with aged men that has cost the company’s reputation.

“Girls like her may appear to be pure and innocent on the surface, but who knows? she might have slept with countless of old men!”

“That’s right! She’s always pretending to be innocent when in truth she’s just a slut...”

“I also heard that she gave birth to children for three aged men at the same time! She’s shameless!”

...

Unbearable insults and abusive remarks rang beside Elena’s ears on her way out of the company.

She could no longer contain herself as tears streamed down her cheeks uncontrollably.

At that moment, Melissa and the other executives saw the scene near the elevator. They sneered, “This is the repercussion for disobeying me!”

The other executives laughed smugly.

Elena ran out of the company with her head lowered.

Bam!

She bumped into someone.

Elena looked up only to see Levi Garrison in front of her.

“What’s the matter? Did they fire you?” Levi asked.

Elena nodded.

“Alright. Follow me. I will seek justice for you.”

Elena hesitated.

“Do you have faith in me?” Levi looked at Elena in an assertive manner.

“I do!” Elena decided to risk everything. I have nothing to lose anyway. What if this turns out to be a success?

The Protector Chapter 209

The name-changing ceremony was scheduled to begin at 10 o'clock in the morning.

However, the new owner of Levi Group, Neil Atkinson, hosted a meeting for all members of Levi Group's senior management at 8 o'clock in the morning.

Melissa and the others were waiting impatiently inside the meeting room.

She took out a compact mirror to check her makeup. “Do you think there's anything wrong with my outfit?” She asked Eileen Barn to help rearrange her clothes.

The others were tidying up their appearances as well.

After all, it was their first meeting with their new and mysterious boss. So they wanted to leave a good first impression.

Melissa was even prepared to offer her body. I will conquer the new owner of Levi Group! I did not climb so high up the corporate ladder with my capabilities alone. I'd achieved my current position because I've slept with Howard Corbyn, Oswald Rogers, and many other influential men. This is my go-to method to receive promotions, after all.

Over a hundred members of Levi Group's senior management had arrived inside the meeting room as they waited in silence.

They tensed up the moment they heard footsteps rang in the hallway.

A young man wearing sunglasses entered the meeting room while being surrounded by multiple assistants and secretaries.

Everyone hurriedly stood up.

Kirin's appearance surprised everyone after he removed his sunglasses. He's so young! I heard there are rumors saying that he is Morris Atkinson's uncle, but he's clearly more suited to be his younger brother!

Indeed, Kirin was only twenty years old at that time.

Melissa's eyes gleamed. I did not expect our new president to be a handsome young man. I can easily handle someone like him. I am sure he will succumb to my allure if I put in just a little effort.

Despite Kirin's young age, his domineering presence was distinguished. Everyone felt chills traveling down their spines when his gaze swept across the room.

"Everyone, please take a seat. Let me introduce myself. My name is Neil Atkinson, and I recently acquired both Levi Group and Garrison Group from the Rogers family. I am currently the acting president of these two corporations."

Melissa said immediately after Kirin introduced himself, "May I know what's the agenda for today's meeting, Mr. Atkinson? Please provide us with further instructions!"

Everyone was not enlightened of the reason behind the sudden meeting hosted by Kirin.

Kirin smiled. "Let's be patient and wait a little longer."

Melissa asked curiously, "Are we waiting for someone else? Do you mean there's another person who is going to attend this meeting, Mr. Atkinson?"

Kirin nodded. "Of course! Did I not make myself clear earlier? I am only the acting president. That means that I am only in charge of showing my face in public when dealing with all company-related matters."

Kennelm Pitt from the legal department raised a question. "Are you saying the real owner of Morris Group is another person and is making all the decisions from behind the scene?"

Kirin smiled. "Yes. You're right. To put this into simpler words, I am only working for my master."

Everyone gasped in astonishment. Neil Atkinson is already capable of taking control of the Rogers family's possession. How much more powerful can his master be?

Melissa responded instantaneously, "So what you're saying is that we are waiting for the real owner of the company?"

"Yes. That's right! He's the one that convened this meeting, and he will be here soon." Kirin answered.

Everyone felt more anxious than before. Who is the new owner of Morris Group?

Time seemed to crawl slower as every minute felt like a century.

Everyone inside the meeting room straightened themselves in their seats when they heard footsteps reverberated in the hallway.

The door to the meeting room was pushed open.

But the person who entered the room was Elena Holmes.

Even Kirin was momentarily dazed. Who is she?

All the executives were enraged to see Elena, especially the director of the finance department, Bob Snyder. He chided at once, "What are you doing here, Elena Holmes? This is an exclusive meeting room for the senior management of the company. You're already fired, so why are you here?"

Melissa was angered too. "Yeah, what are you doing here? Do you think you are qualified to be here? Tell me, who permitted you to come in here?"

The Protector Chapter 210

"I'm the one that permitted her to enter!" A man's voice was heard at that moment.

Levi made his appearance as everyone inside the room stared in his direction. He entered the meeting room together with Elena.

"What is the meaning of this, Levi Garrison? You do not belong here! Melissa rebuked him in rage. Then she pointed at the director of the security department. "What's the matter with you? Why did you allow a scum like him to enter the building? He even managed to come all the way up here!"

"That's right! What are you doing here, Levi Garrison?"

"Do you think Levi Garrison can support you, Elena? He's just a piece of trash!"

Leroy, Kennelm and the others were hopping mad at the moment. What will happen if they offend Mr. Atkinson?

But something unbelievable and unimaginable happened the next moment.

Levi walked toward the front of the meeting room where Kirin was seated.

Kirin regarded Levi with admiration and offered him the seat politely. "You're here?"

Levi took the seat and crossed his legs on the tabletop. He answered cheerfully. "All of you were asking me for a reason behind my appearance. Well, I am here to attend the meeting!"

Kirin reported next to him. "Sir, all 107 members of Levi Group's senior management is here. Please provide us with further instructions!"

Boom!

Kirin's words hit everyone inside the room like a ton of bricks.

Boom, boom, boom...

Everyone was shocked to their cores. They were in utter disbelief. Levi Garrison is the owner of Levi Group?

Elena frowned as her mind went completely blank.

Melissa, who was closest to where Levi was seated, felt her heart stop beating altogether at that moment. Her breathing ceased, and her face turned paper-white like that of a lifeless body.

Barclay Burns, William Hanks, Eileen Barn, and Leroy Bird were petrified.

...

Everyone inside the room was dumbfounded.

No one expected the new owner of Levi Group to be Levi Garrison. Wasn't he released from prison a short while ago? He should be penniless, so how is he capable of acquiring Levi Group?

At that moment, clarity washed over Melissa and the others. Neil Atkinson is not related to Morris Atkinson. Levi Garrison wants to commemorate Morris Atkinson, so he's changing the company's name to Morris Group! He's also the reason why Morris's parents can stay in that luxurious villa. Levi Group is determined to invest in Zoey's company despite the ban ordered by the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce because Levi Garrison is still in charge of the company!

...

All the questions troubling their minds were resolved in that instance.

The thought of Levi Garrison being the new owner of the company never crossed anyone's mind because Levi was totally out of their considerations.

Levi glanced at Melissa and her friends. Then he beamed at them. "Hello everyone, we meet again!"

Kennelm Pitt, who was relatively aged, passed out on the floor with a thud when he was reminded of the insults he directed toward Levi last night.

Barclay Burns and William Hanks trembled frightfully. They felt a hot and humid sensation trickling down their legs as a pool of steaming liquid formed where they stood.

They literally peed in their pants out of fear.

Leroy Bird, Bob Snyder, and the others slumped into their seats as their legs turned to jelly. All their strengths appeared to have seeped away from their bodies.

Eileen Barn cried in terror.

Melissa crumbled under the overwhelming pressure as she saw that Levi was staring at her the entire time.

She felt like puking a mouthful of blood.

Bizarre reactions were observed on those who participated in the gathering last night.

Everyone was confused by that peculiar scene, including Kirin.

Levi slowly took out a cigarette and Kirin hurriedly lit the cigarette for him.

Everyone felt restless and uneasy.

After taking a puff of his cigarette, Levi said. "Tell me, what should I do about what transpired last night?"

The Protector Chapter 211

Levi's words sounded like the Grim Reaper's calling to Melissa and her friends.

Thud!

Thud!

Thud!

...

Melissa and 38 other members of the senior management knelt on the floor.

Thump, thump, thump...

They slammed their foreheads against the ground frantically.

All of them did not seem to care, even as their foreheads were bleeding. That was the least of their concerns because they sensed death closing in on them.

William Hanks and Melissa Floyd were feeling the most fear out of everyone who knelt on the ground because William was the one that suggested the gathering, while Melissa orchestrated the rest.

Levi's voice rang beside William's ears all of a sudden. 'I am still your boss'. He was telling the truth!

Levi waved his hand. "The rest of you stand behind me."

Everyone did not understand Levi's intention, but they gathered behind him anyway.

Melissa Floyd and 38 other people were the only ones left kneeling inside the spacious meeting room.

They did not stop slamming their heads against the floor.

Many were already bleeding profusely from their foreheads.

"Please forgive us, Mr. Garrison! We've made a mistake. We've committed a grave error!"

Oh! How we regretted our actions! Why did we provoke Levi Garrison? This is all William's fault! We would not have sought revenge against Levi in the first place if it were not for him. Levi Garrison was long gone from our minds previously!

Everyone shot a resentful look toward William Hanks. They wanted so badly to rip him apart.

Levi remained indifferent while they begged him for mercy. He ordered loudly, “Bring the things here!”

Over a dozen muscular men clad in black outfit entered the meeting room at once. Each of them carried a tightly sealed wooden barrel with unknown content.

The people kneeling on the floor felt their hearts sank with a thud as they sensed something bad was about to happen, looking at those tightly sealed barrels.

Levi grinned. “Don’t you guys enjoy showing off your allures by soaking yourselves in champagne? Let me fulfil your desires today!”

The burly men removed the caps of the barrels right after Levi waved his hands.

“So smelly!”

A horrible stench filled the room instantly. Everyone felt as if they fell into a cesspit because the reek was unbearable.

“Could it be...”

Everyone had guessed the content of the barrels. Manure!

Whoosh!

...

The muscular men dumped over ten barrels of manure over the heads of Melissa and her gang.

Levi deliberately prepared a manure shower for them.

“Aargghhh...” They shrieked.

All of them dressed glamorously for the meeting, but they were now covered in manure from heads to toes. The filth even entered their mouths...

The others, who witnessed the scene, could never imagined that the highly-paid elites of the society were met with such an outcome. This is the worst punishment ever!

“These people are now fired and permanently blacklisted from reentering Levi Group!” Levi announced.

“Ahhh!”

Hysterical wails filled the meeting room once again. That penalty meant that our lives are officially ruined!

Levi glanced at the miserable crowd and added, “Elena Holmes will be Morris Group’s Finance

Department Director from now on!”

Unprecedented excitement washed over Elena. This is unbelievable! Not only am I not fired from the company, but I am also promoted to the department director’s position. This unexpected turn of events is happening only because I stood up against them last night!

Melissa and her friends were astounded to hear Elena’s promotion. Karma really is a b****!

Levi straightened himself and ordered coldly, “Clean up the mess, especially those trashes. I don’t want to see them in here anymore!”

“Yes, Sir!” Kirin nodded.

Levi led the rest of the crowd to another meeting room.

Members of Garrison Group’s senior management were waiting for them in that room.

The first thing that Levi did was to incorporate Garrison Group into Levi Group.

The Garrison family had prepared everything, so all Levi had to do was to sign the papers.

The Protector Chapter 212

The ceremony to change the company’s name was held after all preparations were in place.

All the reporters from every major media and newspaper gathered to witness the ceremony.

A stage and various equipment were installed on the spacious plaza in front of Levi Group’s building.

Levi remained hidden as usual. He sat inside his office, casting his gaze outside the window with the entire North Hampton’s view spanned before him.

He could observe the happenings at the plaza clearly from where he sat.

Kirin would be the person to attend the ceremony this time. But he wore sunglasses to cover up his face as usual.

“Should I attend the ceremony now, Sir?”

“Go ahead.”

At that moment, Levi could see a few mysterious and unwelcome guests lurking around the venue as his eyes swept through the crowd. They are probably men from the North Hampton Chamber of

Commerce or other business competitors. I suppose they are here to investigate Niel Atkinson's identity.

The name-changing ceremony began at 10 o'clock.

Kirin walked up the stage with all eyes on him.

The reporters spammed the shutters on their camera continuously.

Countless powerful men in the industry began searching for Kirin's background information as his pictures and videos spread like wildfire.

But Kirin's sunglasses fulfilled its function as everyone had a hard time recognizing his facial features. Their intensive search resulted in nothing. No one could figure out anything about Niel Atkinson.

Standing next to Neil were the people in charge of Levi Group and Garrison Group previously.

Mr. and Mrs. Atkinson attended the ceremony as well. They wanted to witness that significant moment.

Kirin made the official announcement. "Levi Group and Garrison Group has signed a merger agreement earlier. These two corporations will join forces from now on and operates under the name, Morris Group."

Bam, bam, bam...

A stir rippled across the crowd as ceremonial flowers shot up into the sky.

Mr. and Mrs. Atkinson were tear-stricken. They looked up the sky and sobbed. "Are you seeing this, son? The company is now named after you!"

The reporters were getting impatient at that point. "May I know what's your relationship with Mr. Morris Atkinson, Mr. Atkinson?"

"Please describe your relationship with Mr. Neil Atkinson, Mr. Rowen Atkinson."

The reporters were very interested in the relationship between the two parties.

Kirin smiled pensively. "Relationship? Well, all I can say is that we're a family!"

Kirin's statement provided food for thought for the reporters. There was obviously a hidden meaning behind his words, but none of the reporters could figure out what he was implying.

They tried to sound Kirin out with further questions, but Kirin answered without revealing anything.

The question and answer session with the reporters ended swiftly.

The subsequent segment was the highlight of the ceremony. They were going to change the inscribed board of the company from Levi Group to Morris Group.

The name-changing ceremony could only be considered a success after they changed the inscribed board.

The workers quickly brought the new board over and removed the old, inscribed board for Levi Group.

Kirin was about to hang the new inscribed board to officiate the event when chaos erupted at the scene.

“Something is happening! Look over there!” Someone shouted all of a sudden.

Over a hundred men clad in black clothes appeared out of nowhere and headed in the direction of the stage.

They wore face masks to cover up their faces and wielded baseball bats in each of their hands.

Everyone was frightened by the imposing manner of those scary men.

“Break everything! Crash this whole place!” The man leading the way shouted.

The men in black hastened their steps and surged forward.

The media and the guests of honor gathered around the stage were startled.

All hell broke loose at the scene.

The Protector Chapter 213

The men had only one goal. They wanted to disrupt the name-changing ceremony and thoroughly discredit Neil Atkinson as well as Levi Group.

All of them raised the baseball bats in their hands and rushed forward.

They were merely fifty meter away from the venue...

Levi witnessed everything from the president's office.

A voice was heard through the earpiece Levi was wearing. “Sir, all thirty snipers have locked on to the targets. Please provide us with further instruction.”

No one knew that a few teams of snipers had surrounded Levi Group's building by positioning themselves in the skyscrapers nearby. The snipers aimed their rifles at the incoming mob.

They had been waiting for those men in black to show up.

Levi gave the order as the mob moved closer to the crowd. “Shoot.”

Azure Dragon relayed Levi’s order as he commanded. “Attention to all sniper teams. Shoot. I repeat. Shoot.”

thirty snipers began to execute the order simultaneously.

The man charging ahead of the mob lost his balance and fell face first to the floor.

Thump!

Thump!

Thump!

The rest of the men armed with baseball bats were shot after a split second and they fell onto the ground as well.

Kirin and the others stared at the astonishing sight as over a hundred men fell onto the ground and stayed motionless afterward.

No one expected that to happen. What’s wrong with them? Why are they lying on the ground now? They were charging toward us just a few moments ago.

Everyone was puzzled, including those lying on the floor. The angry mob lay on the ground with their bodies numbed. They could not muster any strength regardless of how hard they tried. No one could figure out what had actually happened.

Inside the president’s office.

Azure Dragon’s voice was heard from the earpiece. “Sir, the sniper teams had accomplished their mission.”

“Well done. Retreat.” Levi commanded.

The snipers disappeared without a trace upon receiving the order.

The snipers had loaded their rifles with shots containing anesthetics instead of real bullets.

The dose of the anesthetic shots was potent enough to paralyze even an elephant.

Most importantly, the shots would not leave any visible wound on the skin.

Kirin addressed the crowd after everyone calmed down. “Well, it seems like there’s a lot of people that are eager to congratulate us for the success of this name-changing ceremony. I am beyond honored. Thank you!”

The people lying on the ground felt extremely uncomfortable. Their bodies would not move, so they could not escape even if they wanted to.

In the end, all of them bore witness as Kirin changed the new inscribed board and officially renamed the company to Morris Group.

Xavier Fields sent his men to capture the entire mob after the ceremony ended.

The anesthetics wore off by the time they arrived at the police station.

They had no way to figure out what happened to them at that point. But none of them could escape punishment for harassing the public.

Those men were actually recruited by the North Hampton Whirlwind Security Company.

...

A few elderlies gathered beside a famous lake in North Hampton.

They were Eric Robinson, Baldwin Williamson, and the gang.

Clifford Anderson said grimly. "But that's impossible! I did not turn to the underworld bosses for help because I wanted a secured outcome. So I deliberately assigned this task to the prestigious Whirlwind Security Company. I requested them to complete the task as quickly as possible and flee the scene afterward. I did not expect them to commit such a blunder!"

The Protector Chapter 214

Wallace Henderson was caught in perplexity. “That’s right. Most of the men recruited by Whirlwind Security Company are ex-policemen and ex-soldiers. They are well-known for their efficiency and skills. I heard the team leaders were even mercenaries in the past. So why did they fell flat on their face all of a sudden?”

Eric took a deep breath. “This must be Neil Atkinson’s doing. He made the preparations in advance. But I do not understand how all of them fell at the same time. Even those men who experienced that bizarre fall did not know what happened to them.”

Baldwin stroked his chin. “Perhaps we underestimated Neil Atkinson! By the way, have you figured out his identity yet?”

The rest of them shook their heads. “We’ve utilized all our connections to investigate his identity, but nothing came up. His information seems to be classified.”

At that moment, the heir to the Anderson family, Virgil Anderson, walked hastily toward the elderlies. “Father, Uncles, the vice commander-in-chief, Mr. Hoyles, from the warzone has updated me with the latest news. He told me he is somewhat familiar with Neil Atkinson, and he is still investigating this matter. He wanted me to reassure all of you to be patient because he will find out Neil’s identity sooner or later.”

Eric Robinson’s son, Sheldon Robinson, brought news as well. “Mr. Cooke told me Neil came from the Northwest region. He is still trying to look into other aspects of his background.”

Grover’s information was accurate. Kirin was indeed serving the army in the Northwest warzone.

“Haha! That’s great! We will observe Morris Group’s plan for now.” Eric said.

Clifford nodded. “I’ve dealt with Whirlwind Security Company. The North Hampton Chamber of Commerce will have nothing to do with them.”

...

Inside Morris Group.

Levi proposed future development plans for the company. “We lack staff at the moment because we fired a lot of executives previously. Moreover, we’ve recently acquired Garrison Group as well. First, we have to recruit the company’s veterans who left due to pressure in the past. Then we will absorb talents from all over Erudia into our company.”

Kirin scratched his head embarrassingly. “I am adept at war and training soldiers, Sir. But doing business is not my forte.”

“The North Hampton Chamber of Commerce had taken control of Levi Group’s core technology, but these pieces of information has been carved into my mind. We will produce similar products as them and sell our items at a lower price...” Levi smiled cunningly.

Kirin gave him a thumbs-up. This is a brilliant move. Our products will certainly affect the existing market if we offer a more competitive price. More importantly, they’ve stolen our technology. So they cannot stir up trouble either to prevent exposing their crime. They can only stand by and watch as Morris Group take over the entire market little by little.

“We cannot leave the vice-president position empty. I need to find someone capable of taking up this responsibility. Have you found a suitable candidate?” Levi asked.

Kirin nodded. “Yes, Sir. I’ve shortlisted two very competent candidates. They will be here to attend the interview tomorrow.”

Levi was satisfied with Kirin’s efficiency. “Great. I will participate in the interview tomorrow to select the best candidate.”

Levi returned home late in the night. He spent some time chatting with Zoey.

Zoey was amazed. “Mr. Atkinson is so impressive!” Evidently, she had seen the news report that day.

Levi had the urge to inform her that Neil Atkinson did not know a thing in the field of business.

“Oh! Did you know? My best friend, Iris Anabelle, is returning from overseas. I’m a little busy tomorrow, so can you help me pick her up at the airport?” Zoey asked.

“Okay. I’ll pick her up tomorrow.”

Levi was acquainted with Iris too. She was a top beauty, on par with Zoey, in the past during their high school years.

The Protector Chapter 215

Iris is a very competent person. She obtained two Master’s Degrees from two of the top universities in the country, then she studied abroad and stayed there to develop her career in the finance industry. Zoey was curious. She’s doing so well abroad at the moment. So why is she returning to the country all of a sudden?

Levi was puzzled too. It’s best to not try to figure out a woman’s thought process. They are complicated beings after all.

“What did she say to you?” Levi asked.

Zoey answered joyfully. “She told me she’s returning to North Hampton to develop her career. She has even bought a house here!”

However, Zoey frowned slightly as confusion glinted in her mesmerizing eyes. I wonder which company in North Hampton is capable of attracting Iris’s attention?

The next day, Levi drove Zoey’s car to the airport early in the morning.

Levi waited for a short while at the airport’s exit before Iris Anabelle showed up.

Iris was a slender woman at the height of 170cm. Her long legs were even comparable to professional models. She wore a pair of Ferragamo high heels and a black coat. Iris appeared to be overbearing and indifferent while wearing a pair of shades on her delicate face.

Her temperament was outstanding to the extent of convincing others to think of her as a famous star. Passers-by began taking photos of her with their phones.

Iris recognized Levi immediately. She strode up to him and tossed him her luggage.

“Send me to Morris Group before 9 o’clock. I’m in a hurry.” She demanded.

Levi felt helpless as he thought to himself. I came all the way here to pick you up. Not only did you fail to show your gratitude, but you are treating me like your servant?

But he stuffed the luggage into the trunk anyway.

“There’s only an hour left. Hurry up!”

Iris ordered harshly after she eyed her expensive Patek Philippe wristwatch upon entering the car.

“Alright. I’ll make sure you reach in time.” Levi started the engine.

Iris removed her shades, revealing her delicate facial features and flawless complexion. Iris Anabelle was definitely a woman with beauty comparable to that of Zoey Lopez.

She sized up Levi. “You’re still planning to stay by Zoey’s side?” She asked out of the blue.

“Why should I leave her?” Levi was bewildered.

“Because you do not deserve her! Putting aside your poverty, the fact that you were imprisoned previously was sufficient to make you an unworthy partner for Zoey. I am not discriminating against you, but your tainted record will affect Zoey’s future. Her company is getting on the right track now. She will expand her business after receiving the investment from Morris Group. When that time comes, Zoey can finally cut ties with the Lopez family. She will be one of the most respectable figures in North Hampton’s business world. What about you? What can you contribute to her success except being a burden for staying by her side? Others will jeer at her because of your bad record, not to mention the

reason behind your imprisonment will be discussed behind Zoey's back when she's successful. You probably cannot fathom the impact of this issue, but you can see what I'm trying to tell you, right? You and Zoey will not benefit from staying together!"

Iris spoke eloquently as she bombarded Levi with her own opinions.

She continued upon noticing Levi's silence. "Also, I no longer see any fighting spirit in you. You are no longer the same Levi Garrison from before. You bowed down in the face of harsh reality. The Levi Garrison from six years ago will not stoop so low as to chauffeur me from the airport."

Levi glanced at Iris through the rearview mirror. He asked. "So?"

"So you have to get a divorce with Zoey! I will interfere and handle this matter once I settle down here." Iris said domineeringly.

The Protector Chapter 216

Levi put on a wry smile. "You have got to be kidding me! I'm not married to you anyway."

"Zoey is my best friend. I cannot allow her to ruin her life!" Iris said coldly. "Unless..."

"Unless what?" Her words piqued Levi's interest.

"Unless you become successful again. You have to be as accomplished as Zoey to deserve her. Otherwise, I will never agree for you to stay by her side!"

Levi laughed. "I am the one who aided Zoey to achieve her current success, you know?"

Iris grimaced. She questioned Levi in an icy tone. "Are you telling me that you regained control of Levi Group and proposed to change the company's name to Morris Group?"

Levi grinned. "You're a smart lass all right! You're absolutely correct!"

"Can you be a little more grounded, Levi Garrison? You're ridiculous! I've researched everything about Morris Group. The Chairman of the company, Neil Atkinson, has got nothing to do with you!"

Iris kept quiet after she spoke her piece.

Pin drop silence filled the atmosphere inside the car.

Since young, Iris had been an assertive and domineering person, not to mention she had the abilities to back up her attitude.

She became more arrogant after she accumulated experiences and established her reputation in the financial world abroad.

Iris would only treat a few formidable figures in the financial world with respect at that point. I did not care to take Levi Garrison in the past seriously, much less this Levi Garrison who was recently released from prison! I realize he's a really terrible man after that brief conversation we had. Women like me and Zoey are far too good for someone as lowly as him. I've made up my mind. One of my goals for returning to the country is to separate Levi from Zoey!

They arrived at Morris Group after a short while.

"Bring my luggage back to Zoey's place for now. I will contact Zoey again at night." Iris took a few bills and tossed the money at Levi before getting out of the car. "Don't worry. I'm paying you for your hard work."

In Iris's opinion, Levi was a mere servant who can be tasked around with money.

Levi thought to himself as he looked at the money now lying on the passenger seat. She's humiliating me with money! Whatever. I'll bring her luggage back for now.

Kirin called just as Levi was about to leave. "Where are you, Sir? Both candidates have just arrived. We'll be starting the interview at 10 o'clock sharp, as I mentioned previously."

Levi patted his head after listening to Kirin's reminder. I totally forgot about this because of Iris. "I'm already here. I'll head upstairs right away." Levi answered.

"Alright. I will make the arrangements now." Kirin said.

Kirin had settled everything by the time Levi reached his office.

Inside his office was a screen showing the live surveillance footage inside the meeting room. Both candidates would undergo their interviews in the meeting room in a short while.

Kirin was present inside the meeting room. But he was merely there to show his face. The other executives would be the ones to question the candidates. Elena Holmes was one of the executives to participate in the interview.

Kirin was wearing an earpiece to relay Levi's questions to the candidates.

"The first candidate, please enter now."

Thus, the interview officially began. The first candidate was a woman. She had a slender body figure and captivating looks.

Levi was dumbfounded when he saw the woman's appearance through the screen. That's Iris Anabelle! So that's why she returned from abroad. She's here to apply for the vice-president position in Morris Group!

The Protector Chapter 217

No wonder she asked me to send her here. This is all Iris's fault. I would've grasped the situation earlier if she did not bash me with all those insults just now.

Iris's interview started before Levi could recollect his thoughts.

She was indeed a highly competent candidate as she wasted no time to impress the interviewers with her performance.

Levi recomposed himself and began questioning her through Kirin.

Levi's inquiries were all in point and reflected his professionalism.

Iris was amazed whenever Kirin asked her the questions. This Neil Atkinson is a remarkable man! The way he tackles a situation from a unique point of view is simply astounding! He's a business prodigy. My career can only flourish under the leadership of a brilliant man like him. This will be a great opportunity to polish and further enhance my talents.

However, what Iris didn't know was that it was Levi who was coming up with the questions.

She resolved all the queries one after the other in a calm and collected manner.

She'd prepared herself thoroughly before attending this interview. She has considered Morris Group's future and laid out detailed plans to further advance the company in this industry. Levi thought Iris was indeed a capable person for the job. This is the type of talent I need in my company!

"Kirin, tell her she's hired." Levi said.

Kirin hesitated. Then he whispered. "Sir, there's another candidate who hasn't undergo the interview. Don't you wish to compare the candidates?"

"That's not needed. She's the person I need to fill in the position. Ask the other candidate to apply for another executive position." Levi answered.

Inside the meeting room.

Kirin put on a dazzling smile. "Congratulations, Ms. Anabelle. You are officially hired as the vice-president of Morris Group. Please familiarize yourself with the work environment today. You can start working tomorrow once you're done handling the onboarding process with the HR department."

"This..." The other executives inside the room were stunned.

Even Iris was taken aback. I have the confidence to land this job. But to make this announcement right here right now is unexpected. Under normal circumstances, the executives will have to discuss and

come up with a decision for a matter as important as this. Moreover, there's another candidate that is waiting outside the room.

Elena asked, "What about the other candidate, Mr. Atkinson?"

Kirin smiled. "Ms. Anabelle is the right person for this job. Ask the other candidate to apply for another position."

"Understood."

Iris was astonished. She could not help but admire Kirin's decisiveness. He's a resolute yet eccentric man. Only great men can possess a personality like this. I've come to the right place!

Iris walked up to Kirin, intending to discuss work-related matters. But Kirin responded in a friendly manner. "I'll be frank, Ms. Anabelle. I'm just another employee of this corporation. The true owner of this company is another man. He was the one who interviewed you earlier."

Shocked, Iris inquired about the company's owner and even requested to meet with him.

"You'll get the chance to meet him in the future."

Back in Levi's office.

Kirin wiped the cold sweat off his forehead. "Isn't that decision too hasty, Sir?"

Levi smiled. "Not at all! That woman is bold and she can think outside the box. That kind of character is needed for a company's constant development. I scanned through the other candidate's resume, and his style is not what I'm looking for."

Levi had already made the comparison in advance. Then he curled his lips and thought to himself. I'm guessing you never expected me to become your superior, am I right, Iris Anabelle?

Iris handled her onboarding procedures at the HR department and toured around the company before exiting with a pile of documents in her hands.

Unexpectedly, she was surprised to find Levi waiting for her at the entrance.

Levi had just reached the entrance too.

Iris eyed Levi confusedly. Then she took out more money from her purse and tossed the cash to Levi after entering the car. "Consider this the fee as well as your tips since you waited for me." Iris said.

She had gotten used to the norm abroad where people would tip the waiters, valets, and cab drivers for their services. In Iris's opinion, Levi was the same standard as those people, perhaps even more inferior than them.

Levi took the cash and stashed the money into his wallet.

Iris shook her head and sighed at that sight. He's willing to accept the money without any complaint. He really doesn't deserve Zoey anymore.

Levi added. "You're even tipping me? Did you strike gold earlier?"

Iris pointed at Morris Group. "Do you know this place?"

Levi nodded. "Of course. This place used to be Levi Group."

"Yes. Morris Group had acquired Garrison Group. This company's assets are worth more than ten billion now, so the prospect is something to behold. I am the newly-hired vice-president of Morris Group. I do not prioritize the salary, but they are paying me seventy million annually." Iris explained to Levi as if that was an insignificant matter. I can earn this much money while I was abroad anyway. I applied for this job in Morris Group mainly to fulfill my dreams.

"Congratulations then!" Levi grinned. He added to himself internally. I'm afraid you will never know this. But I am your boss, I will be the one that get to decide the amount of your annual salary.

Levi brought Iris back to Bayview Garden.

She was stunned after taking a look at the house. "You bought this?" Iris asked with uncertainty.

"Oh, no. We rent this place." Levi answered.

"Hahaha..." Iris laughed out loud. "Don't you feel ashamed, Levi Garrison? You are asking Zoey to stay in a rental house with you? Let me guess, Zoey pays for the rent too?" There's no way Levi can afford to pay the monthly rent for this place. A luxurious house like this costs at least ten thousand a month to rent.

Levi nodded. "Yes. Zoey is paying the rent."

"If I married a man like you, I would've divorced you without any hesitation. You are just a burden to Zoey!" Iris glared at Levi. "Don't you dare spew nonsense about love in front of me. If you do love Zoey, you should leave her with her best interest in your heart!"

Levi sneered. "You're underestimating me too much, woman. Believe me when I say this. I'm the one that gave you and Zoey everything you have."

Pffft! Iris rolled her eyes at Levi. Ridiculous! He's outrageous. The only improvement I can see in him is his ability to talk big shamelessly.

“I don’t mind marrying you if what you said is the truth!” Iris trembled with rage.

“Remember what you just said. Do not regret your decision in the future.” Levi beamed at her.

Iris was about to lose her mind when she saw Levi sizing her up. He’s a scumbag!

She went into the guest room and slammed the door behind her, reluctant to see Levi’s face for a second longer.

In the afternoon, Zoey returned home earlier than expected.

“Let’s go out and celebrate your return to the country, Iris!” Zoey was very excited.

“Sure. It’s my treat today since I got the job!” Iris said with a smile.

“That’s great!” Zoey was genuinely happy for her best friend.

“There will be plenty of opportunities for us to collaborate in the future, Zoey. I’ll definitely help you out with the investments.”

“Let’s go and have our meal!”

Iris said to Zoey straightforwardly when she saw Levi coming out from his room. “I need to talk to you about an unpleasant matter.”

Zoey was confounded. “What do you mean?”

“You should divorce Levi.” Iris added. “I believe your parents and relatives will agree with me for you to split up with him.”

“What? Divorce?”

The Protector Chapter 219

A Porsche 911, worth over a million, was parked outside the house when they arrived at the entrance.

“My car is here!” Iris opened the car door and entered the driver seat.

She had purchased everything she needed before her return to the country. One of the cars she bought was this Porsche 911, while the house she acquired was next to Levi and Zoey in Bayview Garden.

“Get in, Zoey!” Iris shouted.

Zoey hesitated. There are only two seats available in this sports car. What about Levi?

“Hmph! Let him take a cab. Do not drive there, Levi Garrison! The place we are going to does not allow any car below one million to enter.” Iris reminded Levi sternly. I am going to show him the difference between our standards right here and now. He should just take a cab there instead of sticking out like a sore thumb at that high-end restaurant for driving a cheap car.

In the end, Zoey joined Iris in her car while Levi took a cab to their destination.

Royale Club Restaurant was located in a secluded place. The restaurant accepted only customers with advanced booking. Any customer who wished to dine in must register as a member by paying a two million registration fee. Besides, they had to book a table a week, or even a month earlier. The reason behind the hassle was the expensive ingredients that required advanced preparation.

The Royale Club Restaurant was part of Leo Rogers’s business. The place was nominally run by the Rogers family, but Levi was the actual owner.

Numerous luxurious cars were parked outside the restaurant. Even Iris’s Porsche 911 did not seem significant among the expensive cars.

She jeered at Levi. “Do you see this, Levi Garrison? Zoey and I are people who deserve such lavish lifestyle. You don’t have a thing you can provide for Zoey. You are just an embarrassment and a burden to her!”

Levi ignored her.

Iris showed her member card to enter the restaurant, but her card was merely an entry-level silver card.

She waved the member card in her hand. “Do you see this card? I have to pay two million a year just to qualify as the lowest ranking member in this restaurant!” Iris glanced at Zoey. “I’m sorry to say this in front of you, Zoey, but Levi Garrison will never get the chance to step into this place without us.”

Zoey was caught in a difficult position. But she could do nothing about Iris’s blatant personality.

“Welcome!”

For some unknown reasons, every staff inside the restaurant was looking at the trio apprehensively with respect and even fear.

Iris did not know what was going on either. What’s with these people? Am I that scary-looking?

Little did she know, they were actually wary of Levi’s presence. Every member of the Rogers family was afraid of Levi more than anyone else.

The manager of Royale Club Restaurant, Alger Palmer, immediately rushed over to greet them. “Esteemed Mr. Garrison, Ms. Anabelle, and Ms. Lopez, welcome!”

All the other waiters and waitresses raised their voices at once. “Welcome to Royale Club Restaurant!”

Then Alger shouted. “Clear the tables. Ask all the other patrons to leave right away! Our restaurant will only serve Mr. Garrison and his guests tonight!”

Soon, Levi, Zoey, and Iris were the only patrons left.

Zoey and Iris were in disbelief as they witnessed that scene. What? What’s happening? Are they chasing all the other patrons away because of me? But I am only a silver member here. I believe there were other gold, platinum, and diamond-ranked patrons dining here earlier.

In the end, Levi and the ladies were arranged to sit in the best spot inside the restaurant.

Iris was confused. This seat is only open for diamond card members, and that’s equivalent to spending fifty million in this place every year. My card obviously does not fulfil that requirement!

The Protector Chapter

220

Why am I allowed to sit here when I am only a silver card member? Something's wrong. There must be something going on here. I've sensed the bizarre atmosphere since we walked through the door earlier.

"Are you satisfied with our services, Mr. Garrison and esteemed guests?" Alger sought out their opinions while looking at Levi, naturally.

Levi replied with a smile. "It's acceptable."

Zoey was anxious while Iris said coldly. "What are you talking about, Levi Garrison? You're not qualified to voice out your opinion in a place like this."

Clarity washed over Alger Palmer instantaneously. These two ladies must not be aware of Levi Garrison's identity. He quickly smoothed things over. "Please calm down, Ms. Anabelle. We accept every feedback given by our patrons. You can even give us suggestions as to how we can improve our services. We will try our best to please Mr. Garrison!" Leo Rogers's words rang beside Alger's ears as he shuddered fearfully. You will suffer greatly if anyone inside the restaurant displeases Levi Garrison.

Maintaining Levi's good mood was the utmost priority for every staff in Royale Club Restaurant at that moment.

Alger bowed deeply while asking for Levi's opinion. "Do you have any suggestion for us, Mr. Garrison?"

"I do have one suggestion. Hurry up and serve the dishes. I am famished!" Levi said impatiently.

Alger waved his hand at once. "Hurry up and serve the dishes. Bring out all the best dishes we have in the restaurant immediately!"

"That's the spirit!"

Alger was visibly excited to receive a compliment from Levi.

He took out a handkerchief to clean Levi's leather shoes after noticing some stain. "There is some dirt on your shoes, Mr. Garrison. Let me wipe off the stain for you."

Zoey and Iris widened their eyes incredulously.

They stare in horror as Alger crouched down to clean Levi's shoes. Oh my God! What's going on?

They were aware of Alger's elevated status as the manager of Royale Club Restaurant. Most wealthy people had to pay their respect to him because the restaurant was part of the Rogers family's business, after all.

So what is he doing, cleaning Levi's shoes in front of us? Who is Levi, actually? This is unbelievable!

The entire table was swiftly filled with freshly-prepared dishes after Zoey and Iris recovered from their momentary daze.

Iris was shocked when she saw the dishes served on the table. These are not what I ordered. All these dishes are the most expensive items on the menu because of the rarity of the ingredients. This meal alone will cost me over two hundred thousand!

Iris smiled awkwardly. "Is there an error with the kitchen? These are not the dishes I ordered."

Alger answered with a courteous smile. "Please be rest assured, Ms. Anabelle and Ms. Lopez. This meal is completely free of charge. All of you have the right to dine in here anytime, without any booking and payment!"

Iris was bewildered. "This... this... But manager, I am only a silver card member!"

"That's alright. All of you can enjoy more benefits than those entitled to diamond card members." Alger added.

Iris and Zoey were caught in perplexity. They gazed at Levi, who was stuffing his face with the luscious foods at the moment. It seems like he's the crux of all that's happening...

Iris could not contain her curiosity. "Who are you, Levi Garrison? We seem to be receiving all these extraordinary treatments because of you."

Levi responded without even looking at her. "You're right. It is because of me."

“Then who are you?” Iris gulped as anxiety crept into her heart.

Zoey tensed up as well.

Levi wiped his mouth and answered. “I am the owner of this restaurant. So it’s only natural that I can enjoy everything here as I like.”

Silence filled the air after Levi spoke.

The Protector Chapter 221

Zoey and Iris were petrified. They were slightly convinced by Levi’s statement at that moment. This is the only logical explanation. Firstly, they chased all the other patrons away upon our arrival, then they served all their finest dishes to us for free, not to forget, the manager of this restaurant actually cleaned Levi’s shoes for him!

...

Iris’s phone rang all of a sudden. Her lips curved upward after she looked at the screen. I asked a friend to investigate this restaurant’s information after sensing the odd atmosphere. And I’ve received the reply now. Leo Rogers is the single owner of Royale Club Restaurant.

“Hahaha... How dare you tell us this restaurant belongs to you,

Levi Garrison?” Iris questioned him.

“That’s right. Is there a problem?” Levi admitted magnanimously.

Iris glowered at him and handed her phone to Zoey.

All the colors drained from Zoey’s face after reading the message. We were both astounded by Levi’s statement earlier. We really thought he’s the owner of this restaurant.

Zoey smiled. “Please don’t mind him, Iris. Levi likes to joke around.”

Iris sneered. “I realized that earlier. He’s full of big-talks. Can you show us your business license, Mr. Palmer?”

Iris was a meticulous person. She wanted to expose Levi’s lie with evidence.

Alger had no other choice but to show her the business license.

Iris slammed the business license in front of Levi. “Look intently at this. Do you see who’s the owner of this restaurant? This place belongs to Leo Rogers! Do you see your name anywhere on this license?”

Alger retorted internally. He could have the entire Rogers family with a single word.

Iris chided at Levi’s silence. “Please think before you speak in

the future, especially when you're in public spaces. Please do not bring shame to Zoey's good name!"

Zoey was still puzzled by everything that had happened. She whispered at her best friend. "What's going on, Iris? Why are we receiving this kind of ultra-luxurious treatment?"

Iris frowned. "The only explanation I can think of is because of my status as Morris Group's vice-president. Most people already know that Mr. Atkinson purchased Levi Group and Garrison Group from the Rogers family. I suppose the Rogers family is treating Mr. Atkinson like a VVIP now. So it is logical for me, his vice-president, to receive similar treatments too."

Zoey was amazed. "Mr. Atkinson is so impressive! But I guess this is not a surprise. Someone who have the capabilities to deal with the Rogers family must be a distinguished man."

Iris smirked. "Let me tell you a secret, Zoey. Neil Atkinson is actually just an employee."

Zoey was taken aback. She asked in disbelief. "Are you telling me there's someone else who's in control of Morris Group?"

Iris nodded. "That's right. I only knew about this after Neil Atkinson informed me that it was actually the real owner of Morris Group who interviewed me virtually. He's indeed a formidable man. He outshines all the other exceptional men I've met in my field in terms of his thought process and his vision of the company's prospects. It is not an exaggeration to say that I'm his fan now!"

Admiration glinted in Iris's eyes as she described Levi's abilities. She was truly captivated by Levi's competency that

day.

Levi, who was enjoying his lobsters at the side, smiled. I did not expect Iris Anabelle to become my fan now.

“Really? Then I suppose he’s someone that’s old with a lot of experiences?” Zoey asked curiously.

“That’s not it. Mr. Atkinson told me he’s a young man, about the same age as your Levi Garrison.”

The Protector Chapter 222

Iris looked at Levi and lamented. “They are about the same age, but why are there such a big difference between them?”

Zoey defended Levi “Levi is still a capable person. You should give him a few chances to prove himself.”

Iris turned her head to the other side, not wanting to look at him anymore. “Morris Group is hiring at the moment, but he’s clearly not a good fit. He’s only suitable for positions such as cleaners and security guards.”

Iris was implying Levi’s status to be equivalent to trash.

Zoey smiled. “I suppose you’re eager to meet with this mysterious boss, Iris?”

Iris responded with heightened anticipation. “Mr. Atkinson told me I would meet with him soon. I can guarantee he is an influential figure in North Hampton. I am so lucky to be able to work with him!” After that, Iris shifted the topic of conversation. “Zoey, I really recommend you to file a divorce with Levi as soon as possible. You are progressing so well now in your career. In contrast, Levi is worsening by the day. With the way things are moving, Levi will propose a divorce sooner or later. So you might as well do it now. I can introduce better candidates to you. All of these men are elites in their respective fields, and are more accomplished than Levi ever was or will be.”

Zoey rejected with a smile. “I know you have my best interest in your heart, Iris. But I will only be with Levi for the rest of my life.”

Iris sighed. She knew how stubborn Zoey could be. Perhaps I should target Levi instead. I will force him to leave Zoey.

Iris ditched Levi and sent Zoey back to the house after dinner.

Soon after the ladies left, a group of people surrounded Levi.

Leo Rogers and his men had arrived. “Should I send you back in person, Mr. Garrison?” Leo asked.

“That’s not needed. I will go back on my own.”

Levi lit a cigarette and disappeared into the night.

He decided to return to the house on foot because he wanted to contemplate his strategy to deal with the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce. This Chamber of Commerce is a long-standing organization in North Hampton, after all. This organization's downfall will affect the economic growth of North Hampton, as well as other sectors. A lot of people will become jobless by that time... That is not an outcome I desire. I cannot manipulate North Hampton's development to fulfil my selfish wishes. The best way to handle this situation is to first expand Morris Group to the extent of being able to replace the Chamber of Commerce's position. Then I can corner them with fewer concerns.

At that moment, a Maybach that cost over ten million was parked beside the road, with its turn signal flashing.

Something bad had happened evidently.

A girl's cry for help was heard, but her words were not distinguishable as she mumbled in a panic-stricken manner.

Upon arriving at the scene, Levi saw an aged man suffering from cardiac arrest in the backseat. He deduced that man to be a chronic heart disease patient judging from the medications next to him. His condition is severe.

"I can save your grandfather. Move aside!" Levi said.

The girl did as Levi said. She moved aside to let Levi help with her grandfather's condition.

Levi has the necessary skills befitting that of a professional doctor. He was involved in medical-related business six years ago and had polished his skills on the battlefield. It was a common thing for him to operate on the injured soldiers in the warzone. So he had the confidence to save that aged man.

“What are you doing? Stop immediately!” Someone shouted angrily.

Levi turned around and saw over a hundred men standing behind him.

They were the aged man’s bodyguards.

The bodyguards were about to seize Levi because they thought he was harming the aged man.

“I am rescuing him. Move aside!” Levi ordered harshly.

The bodyguards’ leader warned Levi. “We have a professional medical team. You are not needed here. So you better stop what you’re doing!”

The Protector Chapter 223

“Haha, you call yourselves bodyguard with those slow movements? These medications will not work on him anymore now that he’s ten minutes into cardiac arrest. In a few more minutes time, he’ll be gone forever.” Levi explained with a smile.

The bodyguards’ faces fell after listening to Levi. There are eight more minutes before the medical team is here by taking the helicopter.

The girl grasped the severity of the situation. “That’s right! The medication is no longer effective. Grandfather requires immediate medical attention!”

Levi added. “He’s experiencing a cardiac arrest. Do as you wish and wait all you want then!”

The girl begged Levi. “Please save my grandfather, mister!”

“Alright. Step aside. Let me try and help him!” Levi agreed because it was a life and death situation.

The bodyguards could only stand and watch.

Levi had no other choice but to use his hands to perform the resuscitation procedures since there wasn’t any medical equipment around. He pressed the aged man’s chest repeatedly...

A helicopter landed three minutes later.

A dozen doctors hurried over with a team of helpers behind.

The staggering number reflected the old man's status.

The doctor leading the group of people mumbled to himself remorsefully. "We're late! It's over ten minutes now. His heart must've stopped beating."

The other doctors following him were nervous as well. If he's gone, we will follow him to his grave too! He's too important. That man is the wealthiest person in North Hampton, Mr. Winston Gonzales!

The doctors shoved aside the bodyguards who were rooted to their spots dumbfoundedly and arrived at the side of the Maybach.

"You're finally here, Doctor Woodward! Grandfather entered into a cardiac arrest state for a long while now!" The girl scolded.

Doctor Woodward grumbled internally. Shit!

But when he saw Levi performing the resuscitation procedure, he was stunned. "What's this? What is he doing?"

The group of doctors were horrified.

"He said he could save Mr. Gonzales." The leader of the bodyguards said.

“What? That’s nonsense! This is ridiculous!” Doctor Woodward shouted. This stranger’s interference took away every last bit of hope we have to rescue Mr. Gonzales! He must be dead now. That means we’re all goners too.

Doctor Woodward chided. “Were you all born yesterday? Why didn’t you stop him?”

The bodyguards lowered their heads in silence.

Cough, cough...

At that moment, they heard a series of coughing amidst the commotion.

Everyone bore witness at the miraculous scene as Winston Gonzales, who was experiencing cardiac arrest mere moments ago, straightened himself in a seated position.

Levi got out of the car and fed Winston the medications.

The medications were now effective as his heart was now pumping.

Winston Gonzales was no longer coughing or experiencing shortness of breath after taking the medications.

Everyone was astounded by that amazing sight.

Levi glanced at the doctors and said. “You can now bring him to the hospital to monitor his condition. There shouldn’t be any problem now.”

Winston grasped Levi's hands and expressed his gratitude. "Thank you so much, young man. I would've died today if it wasn't for you."

Levi beamed at him. "You don't have to thank me. You should go to the hospital now to review your condition thoroughly."

A few doctors came to bring Winston Gonzales away on a stretcher.

He reminded his granddaughter before entering the helicopter. "Bring that young man to our house, Una. He is our family's savior."

Linden Woodward wanted to talk to Levi as well. He was curious about the method Levi used to resurrect Winston.

But when Una and Linden turned around, Levi was already gone.

The Protector Chapter 224

Winston was pleased when he was informed of the turn of events. "That young man has a commendable attitude. He must know I am rich after noticing all the luxurious cars and helicopters, yet he still left silently.

I must reward him handsomely. I can turn him into a billionaire

if he comes from a poor family. If he is already a successful person, then I will bring him to greater heights in life. He will become a significant figure in North Hampton!”

Everyone was impressed by Winston’s announcement. He was the wealthiest person, after all. He was a god-like being, in everyone’s opinion. He was someone who can alter another person’s fate effortlessly. His connections with all the influential forces in North Hampton surpassed even the Chamber of Commerce.

“Utilize all possible means to look for that young man. I want to know his identity by tomorrow.” Winston ordered.

That night, over ten thousand men were tracking down Levi’s whereabouts.

Una was filled with regrets. “I forgot how he looks like because I was overwhelmed by fear at that time.”

Zoey and Iris were discussing their future plans when Levi arrived home.

Iris said to him coldly as soon as he walked through the door. “I will move into my new house tomorrow. I hope you can come help me. Do not worry because I will pay you.”

Zoey laughed awkwardly. “What are you talking about, Iris. Levi will help you if he’s free. There’s no need to pay him.”

Iris snorted. She thought to herself. Well, your husband already

took my money earlier in the day!

The next day, Iris went to work early in the morning.

She left Levi to handle everything about her moving in.

Levi had no other choice but to play along with Iris's request because of Zoey.

Iris's house was spacious. She purchased brand new furniture for her home. So the movers sent a few lorries of items to her house.

They gave Levi a set of uniform as well.

Levi participated in the movers' rank after he changed into the uniform.

He carried the electrical appliances into the house under the blazing sun.

At that moment, an expensive Ferrari drove into Bayview Garden and came to a halt in front of Iris's house.

A girl dressed in luxurious clothing got out of the car. She revealed her beautiful facial features after removing her sunglasses.

Another woman dressed in a black professional suit got out of the passenger seat with a briefcase in her hand.

Levi had met with the girl last night. She was the

granddaughter of the wealthiest man in North Hampton, Una Gonzales, also known as the Princess of North Hampton. Una was fond of playing the piano, so her family purchased three billion worth of insurance to protect her hands.

She rushed forward to meet with Levi excitedly. “It is you, Mr. Garrison!” Una greeted him with a smile

All men from the Gonzales family had failed to locate Levi last night. Just as the time limit given by Winston was about to run out, someone discovered him working together with the movers.

Una hurried over immediately to express her gratitude.

She was certain Levi worked for Ants Movers Company as he was wearing the uniform.

Levi stopped his work at hand and asked, “What’s the matter?”

He did not remember Una because he was focused on rescuing Winston last night.

“Do you remember what happened last night? You saved my grandfather!” Una said.

“Oh. It’s you. Why are you here?” Levi asked.

“I am here to thank you, Mr. Garrison! You have my gratitude for saving my grandfather!”

“You’re welcome. There’s no need for you to come all the way just to thank me.”

Una shook her head. “There is a need to thank you in person, Mr. Garrison. I shall fulfil all your wishes to express my gratitude.”

The Protector Chapter 225

Levi had to continue with his task of moving the furniture. So he said impatiently. “I don’t need anything. A verbal gratitude from you is more than sufficient.”

But Una was determined. “No way! I have to do something!”

“I don’t need anything.” Levi was frustrated.

“Let me tell you my grandfather’s identity. The man you rescued last night is the wealthiest man in North Hampton, Winston Gonzales. I am his granddaughter, Una Gonzales. I am currently working in Miracle Med Corporation, a company under Gonzales Group. My company’s assets are worth over ten billion!”

Levi was stunned after listening to Una’s introduction. I see. So I saved the wealthiest man in North Hampton last night. No wonder that scene last night was so impressive. That helicopter arrived in just eight minutes while carrying an entire medical team.

Una was satisfied with the outcome as she looked at Levi’s dumbfounded expression. Everyone has always reacted in this manner whenever they found out about my identity.

She looked at Levi proudly. “Do you believe that I can fulfil all your wishes now? Just tell me what you want, and I will make it a reality.”

Levi shook his head. “Thanks but no thanks.”

“Why don’t I offer you a hundred million?” Una suggested.

Her assistant pulled out a cheque from her briefcase immediately.

Una signed on the cheque and handed the paper to Levi magnanimously. “Here you go!”

Levi grimaced. He stared at Una displeasingly. Is she trying to insult me? Does she think her behavior is acceptable just because her family is the wealthiest in North Hampton? I’ve accumulated so much money in the last few years even ten trillion is insignificant to me! The wealthiest man in North Hampton is just a nobody in my opinion. Expressing your gratitude by shoving a hundred million cheque to me is a form of insult. I am countless times richer than you, for God’s sake!

Una and her assistant exchanged glances when they saw the changes in Levi’s expression. A similar thought flashed across their minds at that moment. He is a commoner, after all. He must be trying to ask for more now that he’s aware of our status. A mere employee of a movers company is seizing this golden opportunity to earn some big profit. Well, I can’t blame him. This is human nature.

“How about two hundred million then?” Una sounded Levi out.

Levi’s expression was stone-cold as before.

Hahaha! Una almost laughed out loud. He's obviously not satisfied with that amount.

She took a deep breath. "What about a billion? That and my grandfather is inviting you to our house as a guest. You will be our family's guest of honor from now on. No one in North Hampton will dare to disrespect you."

Levi said coldly. "I'm sorry, but I am not interested in money. I do not lack money either."

Then he turned and walked inside the house.

Una and her assistant looked at one another. As expected of an Average Joe, he's not satisfied with one billion. Judging from his attitude, he's probably going to ask for ten billion. The Gonzales family can certainly afford ten billion, but I cannot make this decision on my own. I need to consult grandfather about this matter.

They followed Levi into the house.

An envelope was placed on the table near the door with Levi's name written on it.

Una handed Levi the envelope after she entered the house.

He did not notice the envelope previously.

After he unsealed the envelope, Levi saw a stack of cash that's around a few thousand.

Attached with it was a note: The fee for your hard work today.

Levi slipped the money into his pocket and tossed the note away.

Una and her assistant witnessed everything.

The Protector Chapter 226

He worked so hard the whole day for that little amount of money? But he's not satisfied with one billion? He's too greedy! Una's impression toward Levi worsened instantaneously. I thought he was a kind-hearted and knowledgeable man for saving grandfather's life last night.

But it seems to me he's just a greedy person with a terrible personality. He thinks he deserves ten billion because he saved someone when he can only earn a few thousand from a day's labor. But I cannot unleash my anger on him now because he did rescue grandfather last night.

Una said with a smile. "I'll get back to you after I discuss with my family, Mr. Garrison."

Levi urged them. "Please leave now. I don't need a single cent from you, I'm not short of money anyway."

Una left with her assistant afterward. We know Levi is playing

hard to get. He's implying to us that he wants ten billion while rejecting our offers on the surface. There's no way he's sincere about not needing this large amount of cash!

“Let's discuss this matter with grandfather and the others. I did not expect him to be such a jerk. These poor people are the greediest as I expected!” Una's face was contorted with rage.

But little did they know that Levi could not care less about the money. A trillion meant nothing to him, much less a mere billion. Levi was infuriated by Una's sudden and unwelcome visit. He continued to focus on his work after they left.

The Gonzales family house was the largest and most luxurious villa in North Hampton.

The Gonzales family members built a private hospital next to the villa because they were worried about Winston's health. The hospital was equipped with three helicopters and forty medical staff. Their services were exclusive only to the Gonzales family.

Winston Gonzales was resting at that moment. He felt fine after he was brought back to the villa last night and his condition improved significantly compared to before.

Winston was discussing Levi's miraculous techniques with Linden when Una returned to the villa.

Winston asked in a hurry. “Did you find him, Una?”

“I found him. He’s working for Ants Movers Company. There’s no need to investigate further. I have the pictures here.” Una handed a few pictures to her grandfather and other family members.

Levi was working diligently while wearing the company’s uniform under the blazing sun in the photos.

“He’s earning a few thousand from his current occupation. So he’s considered well off among the commoners.” Una said.

Winston questioned her immediately. “What did you do? Did you thank him? I told you to give him a hundred million, didn’t I?”

“I did. But he rejected me.” Una put on a long face.

“What? He rejected a hundred million? That young man has got a great personality!” Winston was impressed by Levi.

“That’s not the case, grandfather. He’s simply too greedy. He rejected me even after I tried to offer him one billion! I suppose he’s planning to get ten billion from us after knowing your identity.”

Everyone gasped after listening to Una’s explanation. Ten billion is a huge amount for an ordinary person working as a mover!

Winston frowned. “Did he say that out loud?”

Una described the incident in detail.

Winston nodded after she was done. “You’re right. He is planning to get ten billion from us.”

“What should we do, grandfather? I think it’s a waste to offer ten billion to someone like him.” Una said.

The other family members were wearing a disdainful expression as well.

“That’s right! I don’t think he will stop at ten billion. He will keep asking for more because of your status as the wealthiest man in North Hampton!”

The Protector Chapter 227

Winston was surprised. “But he did not give off this kind of vibe last night.”

Una shared her thoughts. “I think this is his tactic of playing hard to get. He’s trying to maximize the benefit he can get from us.”

“That’s right. He must have left the scene deliberately last night after discerning our extraordinary status. He wanted us to locate him so he can get more money from us!”

Winston sighed. “Ten billion is not a problem. But I do not think he deserves this money.”

“I’ll look into his background in detail.” Una was annoyed.

...

Zoey’s company was doing well recently. She even had plans to sever all ties with the Lopez family and establish a new company.

But the Lopez family saw through her actions despite how careful she was.

“Traitor! Aaron and his family are all traitors!” Henry shouted angrily.

Harry’s expression darkened as well.

Samuel and Melanie said at the same time. “Grandpa, we already told you that Zoey does not care about you. Look at what she’s planning to do now. She’s cutting ties with the Lopez family!”

“Does she have the guts to do so? I am still one of her company’s shareholders!” Harry roared.

“If she’s planning to establish a new company, then she must have thought of a way to handle this issue, grandpa.” Samuel said.

Fabian asked. “Then what can we do? Zoey’s company received a few hundred million of investments lately. I even heard Morris Group would be collaborating closely with her in

the future.”

“That’s the problem. We cannot stop her. She can give up Imperial Meadows at any time with the capital she has currently. Grandpa’s shares will not make any difference!” Henry answered.

Harry sighed as well. He could not think of any way to salvage the situation.

Samuel voiced out all of a sudden. “I have an idea, grandpa!”

Harry and the others looked at him at once. “What’s the idea? Hurry up and tell us!”

“Do you still remember my younger brother? The one that I wanted to introduce to Zoey in the past.”

“Yes.”

Samuel smiled smugly. “My brother is coming to North Hampton tomorrow. He’s a brilliant hacker. He can hack into almost any company’s system. My idea is to let my brother, Chris, to hack into Imperial Meadows’s account and transfer all the money into grandpa’s account. You are one of the company’s shareholders, so Zoey cannot take any legal action against you.”

Everyone contemplated the idea. Zoey will not be able to do anything after the money is transferred to grandpa’s account. She will not have the guts to sue us, much less Aaron and his wife.

Harry pondered about it for a moment before he said. “Yes. That’s feasible. She cannot do anything by the time the money is transferred to my account.” This is the same as before when I took the one hundred million given to them by the Rogers family. They could not do a thing back then either.

“We must screw Aaron and his family over. They are too smug lately! I heard Aaron is announcing to everyone that he’s buying a new house and a new car!” Henry and the other members of the Lopez family were not pleased by Aaron’s good fortune.

They were looking forward to ruining the happy moment for Aaron and his family.

Meanwhile, Zoey and her family were oblivious to the Lopez family’s preparation.

Aaron and Caitlyn were celebrating the family’s success every day while it lasted.

The next day, Chris arrived at North Hampton. Harry welcomed him in person and even treated him to extravagant meals. Then they began to execute their plan.

“I’ll need some information about the company...” Chris said.

Harry Lopez was one of Imperial Meadows’s shareholders, so it was an easy task for him to obtain classified information about the company.

The Protector Chapter 228

He could even lay his hands on some of the most confidential information about the company's account.

“Alright. Leave it to me.”

Samuel and Chris left the house to carry out their plan in a secluded place.

But the brothers were not the only ones at that place. There were three other people on their team.

They began working inside an abandoned factory.

Overnight, They were able to hacked into Imperial Meadows Limited's system and accessed the company's account.

“Haha! There is more than six hundred and thirty five million in Imperial Meadows Limited's account!”

Samuel and Chris were astonished.

“I think Zoey Lopez did not have the time to utilize this money because she received the amount recently.” Samuel said mischievously.

“Great! The money belongs to us now!” Chris laughed suddenly.

All the money within Imperial Meadows Limited's account was transferred away in less than five seconds.

Chris and Samuel smiled smugly. I bet Harry Lopez and his family didn't see this coming. We did not transfer the money to Harry's account. Instead, we moved all the money into a joint account overseas that's under our names.

"We'll target the Lopez family now!" Chris's eyes gleamed with excitement.

"Yes. Let's hurry! I returned to North Hampton two months ago for the sole purpose of collecting confidential financial information about the Lopez family." Samuel put on a pensive smile.

The reason behind Samuel's return to the country was to steal the Lopez family's fortune. He had spent the last two months gaining Harry's trust and collecting crucial information on the family's financial status. A hacker's ability is limited without any information. So the best thing to do is to search for loopholes in advance. I've waited so long for this to happen. Originally, I did not want to carry out my plan so soon, but all my effort will be for naught once Zoey cuts ties with the Lopez family and establish her own company. So this is the best time to take their possessions and flee. We will place the blame on the Lopez family. They can't possibly explain themselves after this. We've been lying to Melanie all this while with our fake rich overseas family background.

"There is one hundred and fifty million in Lopez Group's account! The rest of the branch companies' assets add up to sixty million. They have a total of twenty million in their

personal accounts. So we are looking at a sum of two hundred and thirty million from the Lopez family!” Chris and his team hacked into their accounts effortlessly.

Click!

All the money under the Lopez family’s possession was transferred away the moment Chris pressed on the keyboard.

“Hahaha! We have eight hundred million now! This money is enough for us to live carefreely for the rest of our lives!” Samuel and Chris hugged each other tightly.

After that, Chris faked some bank account statements to convince Harry that the money was transferred to his account.

They erased all traces of the other transactions as well by replacing them with fake figures.

For a short while, the members of the Lopez family would still be able to see the balance in their bank accounts, but the money was, in fact, gone. Samuel and Chris would’ve already fled by the time they realize the truth.

Moreover, they transferred the money to an overseas bank account registered under Harry Lopez’s name. So Harry would become the scapegoat as the records of transactions would show that he transferred all the money to his account.

But the money would’ve disappeared without a trace by that time.

Samuel and his brother were able to fake their wealthy family

background because they scammed over ten million using that method in the last few years.

“You’re doomed now, Lopez family! It’s a pity that I didn’t get to sleep with Zoey.” Samuel lamented.

The Protector Chapter

229

At that moment, Harry and the others were waiting anxiously for an update.

A message was sent to Harry’s personal number: We’ve successfully transferred all six hundred and thirty five million from Imperial Meadows Limited.

Harry deliberately checked his bank account and verified that it was true.

Little did they know, Harry merely accessed a fake statement because the money was already in Chris and Samuel’s possession.

The brothers returned at midnight. “Grandpa, I think you should inform Zoey and her family that you transferred the money away to save the trouble. They can’t do anything to us if

we do that.” Samuel tricked Harry.

Henry nodded in agreement. “That’s right. It will be troublesome for us if they contact the police after realizing the money is missing.”

“Okay. I will go tomorrow.” Harry agreed.

Samuel and his brother exchanged a wicked smile. There’s nothing to worry about now since we convinced Harry Lopez to admit his doing. This matter has got nothing to do with us from tomorrow onwards!

The next day.

Zoey was informed by the finance department of a bad news when she arrived at the company. All their money in the company’s account was gone.

“What?” Zoey was dumbstruck. All the money is gone? There’s nothing left in the company’s account..

Zoey nearly passed out from the shock.

“Stay calm, Ms. Lopez. Our technicians are looking into this matter. They said the money was transferred into a personal account.” The person in charge of the finance department said.

Zoey was puzzled. “How is that possible? How can someone move the money inside the company’s account?”

“This can happen under two circumstances. The first possibility is that we are facing a very skilled hacker. The next possibility is that an insider committed this embezzlement. They know the classified information about the company’s account and are even knowledgeable of the firewall password.”

Zoey said without any hesitation. “Let’s contact the police!”

Harry arrived with his family at that moment. “Is there really a need to call the cops, Zoey? This is a family matter, after all.” He said.

“Huh? What’s going on, grandpa?” Zoey was confused.

Harry put on a gentle smile. “Zoey, I transferred all the money to my personal account because I am worried that you will not make sound judgments with the large amount of money received from the investments.”

Zoey stared at Harry incredulously. “How can you do that, grandpa? This money has got nothing to do with you! That’s the investment capital I received from Morris Group!”

“That’s not right, Zoey! How can you say that? I gave Imperial Meadows Limited to your family in the past, and I am one of the shareholders. So at the end of the say, this company belongs to the Lopez family!”

“That’s right! What do you mean by that? Are you abandoning your family and betraying your ancestors?” Melanie and Samuel placed the blame on Zoey.

“That’s not what I meant, grandpa. I am still a member of the

Lopez family.” Zoey’s voice was shaky.

Harry was infuriated. “Let me be frank! I took the money away. We should stick together as a family and share this fortune if you are a member of the Lopez family. If you consider yourself otherwise, then feel free to call the cops on me!” Harry left angrily with the others afterward.

Zoey slumped onto the floor helplessly. Are they even my family? How dare he call himself my grandpa? How can they behave so unreasonably?

Zoey had no other choice but to return home since she couldn’t proceed with any project without any money in the company’s account.

Harry had informed Aaron and Caitlyn in person as well. He acted overbearingly even when he took the money without consent as if Aaron and Zoey were at fault for not handing the money to him in the first place. Zoey and her mother held onto each other and cried their eyes out.

The Protector Chapter 230

“Why are we living such difficult life? We’re both married to useless men. Levi already proved his incompetence, are you trying to match his pace too?” Caitlyn broke down in tears.

Aaron retorted. “I’m not incompetent! Don’t compare me to

Levi Garrison!”

“Then why are you not taking any action when your father bullies us? He took over six hundred million from us. Get the money back for our family! Why are you still here?” Caitlyn chided and pushed Aaron.

Crack!

Aaron smashed a glass on the floor.

“I want to do that too, but you know well of my father’s personality. There’s no way for us to get the money back at this point!” Aaron yelled.

“Then call the cops on him! We have the evidence needed to take legal actions!” Caitlyn added.

“But that’s my father! How can I call the cops on him? That’s an unfilial act! How do you expect me to face my ancestors in the afterlife?” Aaron was mad.

“Then what should we do? Are we letting go of this matter now?”

“Let’s think of a way!”

...

Aaron and Caitlyn were clueless as to how they should

proceed.

“I’ll go look for Levi.” He was Zoey’s last and only hope.

Meanwhile, the entire Lopez family was celebrating the joyous occasion.

They were extremely pleased to have finally taught Aaron and his family a lesson as his family had been getting under their skin.

Melanie said to Harry. “Grandpa, this success is made possible because of my husband and his brother!”

Harry smiled. “Don’t worry. I will reward you handsomely.”

However, Samuel hurriedly added because he was worried Harry would discover the empty bank account by attempting a transaction. “There’s no need to rush for the reward, grandpa. Let’s use the money only after this matter settles down. Let’s leave the money alone for now.”

“Alright, Samuel. I’ll listen to you. Let’s distribute the money only after this matter settles down!” Harry agreed.

“Grandpa, I’m accompanying Chris to visit his friend at South City. We’ll be back in two days. You should stay by grandpa’s side, Melanie. Help the family to counter Zoey and her family if they try to do anything foolish.” Samuel suggested.

“Sure. Don’t worry, dear. I’ll be here while you’re gone!”
Melanie smiled.

After that, Samuel and Chris fled swiftly to a destination unknown to the others.

The Lopez family, oblivious to the truth, was indulged in their fantasy of having six hundred million in their possession.

Harry grinned. “The Lopez family is now sitting on near a billion worth of assets. We will focus on expanding our family’s businesses from now on!”

...

Levi was not furious when he learned of the news. Instead, he sensed the peculiarity at the turn of events. “But that’s impossible. Your grandfather shouldn’t have the authority to transfer all the money away, even with his status as one of the shareholders. A transaction like that requires your approval as well as the finance department’s consent.”

Clarity washed over Zoey after listening to Levi’s reminder. “That’s right. It’s not possible, not to mention I am the only person who knows the password.”

Levi smiled. “There’s only one possibility in this case. They hacked into the company’s account and took the money illegally.”

“Are you saying that grandpa hired a hacker?” Zoey asked.

“That’s right. A hacker can easily hack into Imperial Meadows Limited’s account if your grandfather feeds the hacker with the information he knows.” Levi nodded.

“But this doesn’t make any sense. If grandpa did hire a hacker to do the job, he didn’t have to inform me of his doing. He admitted his crime for no apparent reason.” Zoey was confounded.

Levi stroked his chin. He was caught in perplexity as well. “That’s right. This is suspicious. Why did he tell you?”

The Protector Chapter 231

“Let’s do it this way. Why don’t you go home first, and I’ll get a friend to check it out. That way, we’ll know what it’s all about.”

Levi arrived at Azure Dragon’s residence and found Phoenix.

He delegated the job to Phoenix.

Phoenix did not use his privileges, instead, he used his skill and started searching.

“Sir, Money from Imperial Meadows Limited’s account had indeed been transferred elsewhere.”

Phoenix swiftly produced the results.

“Has it been transferred to the account that belongs to Harry or others from the Lopez family?” Levi asked.

“No, it’s an overseas account! Although it was done using Harry’s name, it is now unlisted. There is no record and it’s hard to check. I’ll need some time.”

“Hmm? I’ve found something new! Money from the Lopez Group account and the personal accounts of all 17 of the Lopez family members, totaling two hundred and thirty million has been transferred to this overseas account. This happened within a minute of the time the money from Imperial Meadows

Limited's account was transferred!"

Phoenix made another important discovery.

"What? Money from all the Lopez family members' accounts has been transferred?" Levi asked.

"That's right. Exactly!"

Phoenix explained, "The other party has created a fake account and a fake transaction history. It shows that the money from Imperial Meadows Limited has been transferred to Harry! If they check their accounts now, it shows the money is still there but it's actually fake. There is no money in the account!"

Levi was shocked when he heard this. "This person has scammed the whole Lopez family!"

"Exactly! The Lopez family are under the impression that the money from Imperial Meadows Limited has been transferred to them. But in actual fact, this amount as well as all the money from the Lopez family has been transferred out by this scammer. The Lopez family does not even realize it yet!" Phoenix announced.

"Phoenix, trace this account. We must find out where all the money has gone to." Levi instructed.

"Sir, be rest assured. It's true that the other party is skillful but now that their opponent is me, they'd certainly met their match." Phoenix said reassuringly.

...

Meanwhile, someone from Imperial Meadows had made a police report.

This was because there was evidence of Harry personally transferring the company's funds.

Soon, the police arrived at Imperial Meadows.

Zoey and Aaron were summoned with the others.

All of them got a fright.

"Who made a report? Who reported to the police?" Aaron asked.

Neither Aaron or Zoey would have made the report because they already knew it was Harry's doing, that is, unless they decided to disown their father and grandfather.

They had even issued a warning those who knew about the incident not to report to the police.

However, evidently, someone had made the report.

"No, it's not us. None of us made the report!"

The staff were shaking their heads, for it was as they said, they did not make any report.

Naturally, it was Samuel and his gang that had made the

report.

By doing so, they would put all the blame on Harry.

After he had been charged, he would obediently surrender his position.

The brothers had planned everything.

At this time, they had also took down the fake account.

The policeman said without any emotion, “We have received an anonymous call reporting that Harry had transferred more than six hundred and thirty five million of public funds! We have all the evidence we need.”

“We heard that Harry had admitted to you all that he was the one that transferred the funds, is that true?” The policeman asked.

The staff nodded their heads.

“Alright. We have witnesses and evidence. We shall go for Harry now!” The policeman said.

They brought Zoey, Aaron and the others along.

At the Lopez family home, everyone was talking and laughing.

All of a sudden, the sound of police sirens were heard.

A few policemen rushed in and held Harry down.

They had with them a warrant for arrest.

“Harry Lopez, you are under arrest on suspicion of moving public funds, illegally hacking into the network, network theft and other charges.!”

Harry and the Lopez family were shocked to their cores.

The Protector Chapter 232

They stared at Aaron and Zoey in disbelief, their first thought was that these two were the ones that had reported to the police.

It was only mere moments ago when they had been discussing that Zoey and Aaron would not dare to make a police report.

“You... both of you have betrayed your ancestors! Arrgh!”

Suddenly, Aaron spat out a mouthful of blood.

“You two brainless morons!!!”

“How could you do this to your father and grandfather! You are

not fit to be members of the Lopez family!”

“Your ancestors must feel so ashamed of you!!!”

The Lopez family rushed forward as if crazed. It seemed as if they would lynch the father and his daughter.

“No... it wasn't us. We did not report to the police!”

“It's not us!”

Both Aaron and Zoey started to wail aloud. They felt wronged.

Harry glared at them, “Do you two want to see me die? Alright, you must be happy now that I'm going to rot in prison! Are you satisfied now?”

“Grandpa, no, we didn't mean to...”

Zoey wept silently.

“Somebody, I want to check Harry's personal account to see if the money is there,” the detachment leader, Captain Timothy Lourdes from West Point ordered.

Soon, the technical department sent a message: Captain, there is no money in Harry's account, not a single cent!

Harry asked in shock, “How can there be no money?”

The other members of the Lopez family were stunned as well.

Harry's personal account originally had ten million.

"What? There's no money in it? Isn't there supposed to be a transaction history?" Timothy asked in shock.

"Captain, we just checked. The money was transferred out again. This time, it was transferred to an overseas account!" The technical department reported back.

"What? Harry, did you actually transferred the money to an overseas account? Seems like you work fast!"

Harry was stunned, "No, I did not! I don't even have an account overseas!"

Suddenly, he realized something and he let out a yell of dismay, "Oh no! It must've been Chris and Samuel who transferred the money!"

"Everyone, quickly! Check your personal accounts and the company's account!" Harry alerted everyone.

Each of the members of the Lopez family checked their own personal bank accounts and the company's account, as well.

Each one of them found out that their accounts had been emptied.

In each one's account, there was not a single cent left!

The company's account, too, had the same fate and was left

with zero balance.

“It must be Chris and Samuel!”

Henry and Fabian reacted one after the other.

Shaun Lopez said, “Now I know why they’d left, they were running away. They even set up grandpa to admit to transferring the funds so that grandpa will be charged!”

Thud!

Once Melanie realized the truth, she fainted on the spot.

Harry slapped at his forehead in frustration, “Now, I know what happened. Samuel came back for two months in order to gain my trust! I was gullible enough to believe that the Lopez family’s future could be entrusted to him and I made everything transparent for him. With his brother’s hacking skills, it’s as easy as pie to withdraw the money!”

“I didn’t expect this punk to set me up...”

Harry started seeing stars and nearly fainted.

“Accursed Samuel!”

Fabian was furious.

The technical department checked all the accounts of the Lopez family.

It was confirmed that the Lopez family's total of two hundred and thirty million was also transferred to the overseas account.

Timothy asked, "Can the money be retrieved?"

"Quite impossible! Currently, the overseas account has been closed and the funds have disappeared..."

Everyone heard the conclusion given by the technical department.

Thud!

Flop!

One after the other, the Lopez family members collapsed on the ground.

All of their faces were as pale as death.

Aaron and Zoey, too, had similar expressions on their faces.

The funds cannot be retrieved!

The Lopez family is doomed!

The Protector Chapter 233

Shaun Lopez quickly explained everything to the arresting officer.

The prime suspects were Chris and Samuel.

Timothy said solemnly, “You can’t just bring up two names, Chris and Samuel, and expect us to believe what you say. What we need is proof!”

“Right now, we know that the funds of Imperial Meadows Limited were transferred by Harry. This is shown in the transaction history! All the other monies were also transferred by Harry. Our technical team has searched and discovered that the overseas bank account was opened by Harry!”

“We have all the proof. Harry, what else can you say?” Timothy asked coldly.

“Friends, just think! If it were really my grandpa, why would he tell Zoey and the others?” Shaun Lopez protested.

Timothy sneered, “That’s because Harry wanted to blackmail Zoey with family ties! He is certain that due to their relationship, she and the others would not report to the police. That is the reason why he did so.”

“This...”

Everyone was tongue-tied.

What Timothy had said was exactly what the Lopez family had initially thought, too.

“Besides, our technical team has checked and we know that no one by the name of Chris ever came to North Hampton. There is no trace of him ever boarding a plane or a train! You guys are making it up, aren't you?”

Upon hearing this, everyone realized that all of this was planned way ahead.

There was alibi to show that Chris was never here.

Samuel and his brother are really too crafty!

“Take him away!” Timothy Lourdes ordered.

Harry could do nothing but to accept his fate.

However, at this moment, Timothy Lourdes received a call from Xavier Fields.

“Alright, I'll come back this very instant,” he replied and left immediately with his men.

“Your case will be put on hold. I'll get to the bottom of this!”

This left the Lopez family totally bewildered.

Harry was momentarily safe from being arrested and he immediately gave the instruction, “Quick, call the scoundrel and ask him what the hell is going on?”“

Melanie dialed Samuel’s number and unexpectedly, the call got through.

“Samuel, you beast, what have you done?” The moment he picked up the call, Melanie started scolding him.

“What’s the matter? Did that old fart, Harry, finally been arrested? Serve him right!”

The moment Samuel said this, everyone knew that he was the culprit.

“Samuel, where are you now? Return our money to us this instant!”

Melanie felt like blowing her top off.

On the other end of the line, Samuel sound surprised, “What money? I don’t understand what you’re saying.”

Melanie was so furious that she could cry, “Samuel, stop pretending. You have transferred all the money out of the bank accounts of Zoey’s company and all of the Lopez family members.”

“How can you blame me for this? Wasn’t the money from Zoey’s company transferred out by your grandpa? This is

documented in the transfer history. Furthermore, he admitted it himself. So, how could it have anything to do with me? Now that the money's gone, you should question Harry about it instead of me!"

Samuel sneered.

"You..."

Melanie was so exasperated that she almost smashed her phone on the floor.

"Alright then. Where are you now? When are you coming back?"

Melanie took control of her emotions and tried her best to speak calmly with Samuel.

If Samuel returned, the problem could be solved easily.

"Me? Well, I'm overseas now! I'll return sometime later!"

It was noisy at Samuel's end.

Boom!

The piece of news was disastrous to the whole Lopez family.

If he had escaped abroad, it would be very difficult to get him back!

The Lopez family would have to face the current crisis on their

own.

Not only did they lost every cent, on top of that, Harry could go to jail.

The consequences were unimaginable.

Harry gestured to Melanie, hinting at her to try and trick Samuel into coming back.

Melanie racked her brain, “Samuel, I’ve not been feeling well for the last couple of days, I am constantly feeling nauseous. You know that don’t you? So hurry back and accompany me to go see the doctor. I think I’m pregnant.”

The Protector Chapter 234

Fabian, Henry and the others gave Samuel a thumbs up.

Melanie was probably with child.

Everybody knew this.

No matter what, Samuel would certainly care about his own child.

Fabian interjected, “Samuel, Melanie is definitely pregnant! Why don’t you take her for a full medical exam? After all, you’re the father of the child and we wouldn’t want to do anything rash!”

“Haha, Fabian, like hell I’ll go! Don’t you know what type of woman your daughter is? She’s a slut! She has slept with numerous sons of bitches. So how can you pin the responsibility on me for her pregnancy?”

Nobody expected Samuel to rant in this manner.

Melanie was angered upon hearing these words, “Samuel, are you a man? How can you say such treacherous words!”

Samuel snorted, “Hah, Melanie, you are an immoral woman! You probably don’t even know who the father of the child is! How dare you try to put this responsibility on me? Get lost! You and your whole family are scoundrels! Beat it!”

With those words, Samuel hung up the phone.

Everyone was surprised. No one had expected this.

Melanie was so upset that she fainted on the spot.

Fabian was seething with anger.

The others quickly called Samuel’s line but he had switched off his mobile.

No one could get through.

After a while, when they tried calling it again, the number was unregistered.

“What should we do now?”

Everyone was speechless.

If they could not find Samuel and his brother, they would never be able to recover even a single cent.

Henry said in despair, “Just now, I asked my friends to check Samuel’s identity. Everything about him is fake. He is an unregistered citizen and certainly not a wealthy man from overseas.”

When the rest heard this, they began to understand.

Right from the very start, Samuel was here to cheat them of their wealth and Melanie was deceived in the process.

He had deceived Melanie for more than a year, using her like a tool. On top of that, he had taken all of the Lopez family’s wealth.

However, the crux of the matter was that they had no evidence at all of his deception.

Even the marriage certificate was fake. Their marriage was never registered.

If they were to go by evidence, Samuel and Chris had never

been with the Lopez family at all.

The Lopez family had nothing to show that they existed.

They had no proof at all.

It can only be said that Samuel and his brother had committed the perfect crime.

Originally, the two brothers had planned to deceive Zoey the same way they did with Melanie, but unexpectedly, Levi came back.

Both Caitlyn and Aaron were shocked.

They recall that at the beginning they had considered a marriage between Zoey and Chris.

With the new revelations, they now know that if Zoey had married Chris, not only would they have lost all their money, but Zoey would have been sexually taken advantage of as well.

A trickle of blood appeared at the edge of Harry's lips as he anxiously asked, "Is there any way of locating them? Even if we forego the money, these two bastards must be found!"

"Exactly! If I see these two animals, I'll definitely slaughter them."

"Yes, I swear on my life, I'll slaughter these two animals!"

...

The Lopez family members had the same thoughts. They could lose the money, but they want revenge on Samuel and his brother by taking their lives.

However, with the resources and manpower available to the Lopez family at this moment, it was too difficult to find these two people.

Furthermore, Harry was in a situation where he would get sent to jail at any time.

Zoey had just sought the help of her best friend, Iris.

Iris had replied that It would be very difficult, almost impossible, but she was still willing to give it a try.

Zoey knew that this was a polite reply. This is an impossible task.

“Oh, who can solve this problem? God please, save the Lopez family!”

Harry wailed to the sky above.

“I can locate these two people! I can solve this problem!”

At that exact moment, a voice was heard.

Without anybody noticing, Levi had already arrived at the Lopez family home.

The Protector Chapter 235

“You?”

Henry sneered with disdain.

Fabian was annoyed and he raised his voice angrily, “A piece of trash like you can do nothing constructive but only destroy things!”

Harry followed suit and hurled insults at Levi, “Exactly! What are you doing here? How could the likes of you solve this problem? For goodness’ sake, don’t come and make things worse.”

Melanie was even angrier, “Levi, you trash! Are you gloating at the Lopez family’s downfall and rubbing salt in our wound?”

...

Facing the onslaught of verbal attack from the Lopez family members, Levi replied with disdain, “To be honest, I have nothing to do with the crisis your family is facing. I am only solving the problem for my wife’s sake!”

“When the time comes and I am able to retrieve the money then, I dare you not to take even a single cent!” Levi replied

coldly.

Harry sneered and gave him a look of disbelief, “Alright. If you can retrieve the money, we will not take a penny!”

“Okay, when the time comes, don’t you all regret it!”

“Zoey, dad, let’s go!”

Levi left with the both of them.

“Levi is only here to gloat. His intention is only to rub salt in our wounds. How cruel!”

“This piece of trash is no better than Samuel!”

“If he can retrieve the money, I’ll give him my head on a platter.”

“Our family is really unfortunate. Not only did we meet a scammer and now we have to deal with this piece of trash.”

The Lopez family members lamented together.

After leaving the Lopez family home, Zoey asked with uncertainty, “Can you really do it?”

“I can certainly try!”

Levi laughed.

“What can you do? Samuel and his brother are highly skilled. They left no trace. Even the police’s technical team couldn’t track them down, what makes you think you can? Who do you think you are?” Aaron sneered.

Caitlyn spoke, “Levi, don’t you go and complicate matters! Don’t mess it up any further. I hope you’re happy now that Zoey has lost everything. You must feel that you’re worthy of her now, right?”

The two said in unison, “Well, let me tell you right now, even though Zoey might have lost all her wealth, you are still an ex-convict and unworthy of her!”

Zoey, fearing that the situation would take a turn for the worse, hurriedly asked Levi to leave.

“Levi, please don’t get involved in this! The police must have found something. Earlier, grandpa was about to be taken away but then he was released. So, presumably, they must’ve found some new information. “

Zoey elaborated.

At that moment Levi had the urge to say, “I was the one that asked Xavier Fields to let him go.”

“By the way, another batch of Iris’ furniture has arrived. Why don’t you go and help her with the move? I’ll go to her to see if she can help me!”

And so, Levi donned the work clothes of the moving company again and continued to help Iris with her move.

...

Meanwhile, at Villa Private Hospital in North Hampton, the richest man, Winston Gonzales was in the pink of health and he was feeling really great.

After Levi saved his life, his health has been improving steadily.

“Grandpa, I’ve found out who this person really is – he is Levi of Levi Group corporation!”

Una said excitedly.

“It turns out to be him!”

It was apparent that Winston Gonzales knew about Levi.

He was after all, the famous dark horse from six years ago.

They have all heard about him.

“That’s right. His prison term of six years had just ended. He’s currently working in Ants Movers Company and I saw him moving furniture today!” Una said.

Winston Gonzales sighed and lamented, “Six years of prison life can destroy a gifted man. He is now willing to even work as a mover!”

Linden said, “Well, it seems the truth is that he is not willing! After meeting you, Mr. Gonzales, he is not satisfied with one billion. He wants ten billion or even more.”

“Now we finally understand why he wants ten billion. It’s because he wants to make a fortune out of this incident.”

The Protector Chapter 236

One of the managers of Miracle Med Corporation said, “Mr. Gonzales, Ms. Gonzales, I’ve crossed paths with Levi Garrison six years ago. That man is cunning and ruthless. He will do whatever it takes to achieve his goals. I’m afraid you’re his target this time.”

“That’s right. Levi Garrison is a smart man. He will use some underhand tricks if we do not fulfil his wishes. Perhaps he will publicize his heroic act of saving your life and manipulate us into complying his every request.”

Everyone despised Levi at that point. “He’s simply abhorrent!”

Una hated Levi as well. She sneered. “I’ve investigated his background, grandfather. Levi has been jobless since his release from prison. He’s only relying on his wife to survive now. In my opinion, he’s trying to scam a boatload of money from us this time! With that being said, the Lopez family is actually facing some tricky problems now.” Una added.

Her words piqued Winston’s interest. “Oh? What kind of trouble?”

“The Lopez family will announce bankruptcy soon since nearly a billion was taken away from them as well as from Zoey Lopez’s company. Their head of the family, Harry Lopez, may be facing time in prison soon.” Una explained.

Winston's eyes gleamed. "This is a brilliant opportunity!"

Una and the others gained revelation. "Are you saying that we should return Levi's favor by helping the Lopez family through this crisis?"

Winston smiled. "That's right."

"This is a wonderful idea! This way, we can stop Levi Garrison from harassing the Gonzales family from now on!" The others exclaimed.

Winston reminded, "You'll handle this, Una. I'll contact the related departments to exempt Harry Lopez from his imprisonment. I am going to meet with Levi in person after we settle this matter to clear things up once and for all. He saved my life, and now I am rescuing his family. This should be a sufficient repayment."

"Yes, grandfather. I wonder what kind of trick can Levi pull this time." Una said proudly.

...

Just as the Lopez family was at a loss, Captain Timothy Lourdes from West Point detachment contacted Harry and told him he did not have to face jail time because someone else was found to be involved in that issue.

Tears of joy streamed down Harry's cheeks.

A Rolls-Royce stopped in front of the Lopez family house after a short while.

Una visited with a few of her assistants. “Let me introduce myself. I am Una Gonzales from the Gonzales family.”

Shaun, Melanie, and the other members of the Lopez family were shocked to their cores. “The granddaughter of the wealthiest man in North Hampton?” They almost knelt in front of Una as their legs wobbled.

“I am here to help the Lopez family to weather through your current crisis. Please check because there should be money inside your bank accounts now.”

Everyone did as Una said in a hurry.

And lo and behold, their money was indeed returned to them in full. They also found out that the Gonzales family was behind Harry’s exemption from imprisonment.

“You don’t have to worry. This matter is water under the bridge now.”

Harry was tear-stricken. “I only have one question for you, Ms. Gonzales. Why are you helping us?”

Una smiled. “The Gonzales family was indebted to someone in the Lopez family. We’ve returned the favor, so there’s no need to inquire further about the person’s identity. You will have nothing to do with the Gonzales family from now on.”

Una went to Imperial Meadows directly after leaving the Lopez

family house to resolve their money crisis.

Zoey and Aaron questioned Una's intention, but she merely gave them same answer she gave to the Lopez family.

The Gonzales family did not want Levi to boast of his achievements for saving Winston's life to prevent him from taking further advantage of the situation. So they did not reveal his identity as the person who helped them.

Zoey contacted Levi just as he was done helping Iris with the move into her new house. "What? The Lopez family's financial crisis is resolved?"

The Protector Chapter 237

Levi was surprised. Did Samuel and his brother gain some conscience, so they returned the money?

"I'll talk to you in detail later in the night. I need to get my work done for now!" Zoey hung up the phone immediately afterward.

Levi was about to remove his uniform when a few luxurious cars appeared before him.

Una got out of the car, followed by Winston and over a hundred bodyguards surrounding them.

Their arrival was so impressive to the extent of attracting attention from the other wealthy people staying inside Bayview Garden.

“Nice to meet you, Levi Garrison. My name is Winston Gonzales.” Winston took the initiative to greet Levi while glancing at his uniform. Seems like he is the worker of this movers company.

“What’s the matter? Are you looking for me?” Levi frowned.

Una said with a smile. “We are here to inform you that we’ve repaid our debt toward you for saving my grandfather’s life.”

A thought popped into Levi’s mind. “Did you resolve the Lopez family’s crisis?”

“That’s right. Mr. Garrison is indeed a smart man. We have paid eight hundred and sixty five million in total to the Lopez family as well as Zoey Lopez’s company. I’ve also exempted Harry Lopez from facing jail time.” Winston elaborated.

Una added, “We’ve cleared out debt. So from now on, you can stop harassing the Gonzales family since we’ll have nothing to do with each other anymore!”

Winston said, “Mr. Garrison, I am someone who does not like to be indebted to anyone. So I seized this opportunity to return your favor.”

“Stop right there!” Levi spoke just as Winston and the others

were about to leave.

Una and Winston stopped abruptly and exchanged glances with each other. He's indeed trying to scam us. He's a troublesome man to get rid of.

"Are you not satisfied with the amount of money we paid to your family, Mr. Garrison?" Una could not help but feel disdain for Levi inwardly. You're an overly greedy man. Do you really desire ten billion that much?

Levi shook his head. "That's not it. I can settle this matter by myself, so why did you meddle into our family's business?"

Winston and the others were not pleased to listen to that remark from Levi. Levi Garrison is indeed behaving as we expected. His greediness knows no bounds, and he will do whatever it takes to attain his goal. He wanted to get ten billion from us, but we are trying to dismiss him with a mere one billion. So he's not satisfied with this outcome.

Winston Gonzales was a little mad. "Are you trying to go overboard with your endless requests just because you saved my life previously?"

"That's right, Levi Garrison! What are you trying to pull here? It is a fact that you rescued my grandfather, but we just saved the entire Lopez family. Will you be satisfied only when we provide you with ten billion or perhaps a hundred billion?" Una expressed her stance firmly. "Let me inform you now. There is no way that will ever happen!"

"Indeed. Are you trying to coerce the Gonzales family into fulfilling your greed because you saved Mr. Gonzales? Well, as

Una said, that's never going to happen! It is too late now for you to pull any more tricks because the Lopez family had already accepted our kindness!"

...

Winston said coldly, "If I have seen through your personality back then, I wouldn't have allowed you to save me!"

Una lifted her chin proudly. "Let me tell you now! My grandfather is a fortunate man! He would've survived even if you did not volunteer to save him that night!"

"That's right! Mr. Gonzales was fine in the first place. You merely got lucky! We just did not expect you to scam us because of what happened!"

Levi was a loathsome being in everyone's opinion at that moment.

Levi responded with a smile. "You guys are taking this matter too seriously. Don't worry, I've already forgotten about that incident the other night. I don't need any reward, and I don't need nor lack any money!"

The Protector Chapter 238

Levi's words did not impress the others. What a hypocrite! He's telling us he doesn't want anything when he actually

wants hundreds of billion from us! How dare he say he doesn't need money when he's just a lowly mover. He's a despicable hypocrite!

Winston, Una, and the rest of the crowd stared at Levi with contempt. He's not much better than a dung beetle in terms of his personality!

"You don't have to meddle in the Lopez family's matter. I will return the money to you." Levi said coldly.

Winston and the others were stunned. Someone as greedy as him is offering to pay us back the money? Does he have eight hundred million with him? What a hilarious joke!

Una said immediately, "Okay. So, you want to return the money? Then pay us the full amount right now!"

Winston added, "Let me witness your capabilities too, Mr. Garrison!"

They urged Levi to return the money on the spot.

But Levi said, "I will return you the money, but not now. So please leave for the moment."

Everyone sneered after listening to Levi's statement. That's hypocrisy at its finest! There's no way he can return eight hundred million to us. He's filled with empty talks.

"That's enough, Mr. Garrison. We'll be leaving now. You don't

have to return the money. I am contented so long as you stop bothering my family and never scam another person by boasting about this incident.”

Una said to her grandfather. “He can’t do that now. There are so many people here to bear witness of our conversation.”

Then they left angrily.

Levi Garrison was a man rotten to his core in their eyes.

Levi knew they misunderstood him. The Gonzales family thinks I’m trying to scam them after I saved that old man’s life. Hmph! Winston Gonzales? He’s not someone that I care about. That money is insignificant to me as well. I did not want to pay them just now because I want Samuel and his brother to cough up the money they’ve stolen first.

Levi went to meet up with Phoenix after he changed his clothes.

“Sir, I’ve tracked down and froze the eight hundred million sum. They did not have the time to spend any of the money yet. We will recover the money soon.” Phoenix reported.

“Okay. What about Samuel and Chris? Have you located them?” Levi asked.

That was Azure Dragon’s responsibility.

“Yes. They are still in North Hampton. They are considered smart because they knew how easily they’ll expose themselves in the airport and train station if they leave now.” Azure Dragon

answered.

“Let’s go. I want to meet them in person.” Levi said.

Levi was astounded when he found out that Samuel and his brother were hiding in the same village where Rowen Atkinson and his wife stayed previously.

That action reflected the brothers’ wariness of their current situation.

Samuel, Chris, and three other people were playing poker inside a rent house.

A message was sent to Samuel’s phone at that moment.

Samuel and Chris were horror-stricken after reading the message. All the money we’ve stolen has been frozen!

“This is bad. If they have the power to freeze our account, then they must have the abilities to track us down!”

“We need to leave immediately!”

The five of them hurriedly packed their bags and left the house.

But they stumbled into two people at the alleyway.

It was Levi and Azure Dragon.

“It’s you, Levi Garrison?” Samuel was shocked.

Levi smiled. "Aren't you a brilliant man, Samuel Robertson?"

"How did you find us?" Samuel was curious.

Chris's eyes reddened with rage as he took out a knife from this pocket swiftly. "Let's stop wasting time now, brother. We'll murder them and flee right away. What do you say?"

Click click click...

Samuel and the other three people withdrew their knives as well.

They closed in on Levi and Azure Dragon slowly with the weapons in their hands.

They were determined to kill Levi.

The Protector Chapter 239

“Go to hell, Levi Garrison! You’ve been a thorn in my side for a long time now!”

A series of fast-paced footsteps was heard just as Samuel and the others rushed forward with knives in their hands.

Over fifty men appeared behind Samuel and his gang.

The person leading the group was a pot-bellied and menacing man.

He beat up Samuel and his friends effortlessly. Soon, all five of them were lying on the ground wailing in pain.

The thugs walked up to Levi and addressed him simultaneously. “Good day, Mr. Garrison!”

The group of men was none other than Tiger and his gang.

They were aware of Levi’s arrival as soon as he stepped foot into the neighborhood.

Tiger saw Samuel and the others tried to harm Levi when he reached the scene, so he quickly taught them a lesson.

In the end, Tiger sent Samuel and his accomplices to the police

station.

That village was under the West Point Prefecture, so Captain Timothy Lourdes handled Samuel and Chris.

They come clean about their plan throughout the interrogation process.

Samuel and Chris mentioned that the money they stole was frozen when questioned about that matter.

Timothy's first thought was that the Gonzales family was behind this because they helped to settle Harry Lopez's situation previously. The way I see it, the Gonzales family really proved their capabilities this time. Not only did they locate the Robertson brothers, but they've also froze the bank account.

The money was transferred to Timothy afterward, with a note telling him to return the money to the Gonzales family.

Timothy sent the money to the Gonzales family house in person after he dealt with the necessary procedure.

Members of the Gonzales family were surprised to receive the money.

They wondered if Levi Garrison was the person who returned them the money.

But Timothy merely responded with a smile. "This has got nothing to do with Levi Garrison."

Everyone laughed. He's right. Levi does not have the ability to return the money. He's just a poor and pretentious man.

Timothy went to the Lopez family house to explain the whole incident afterward.

"That's great news! Let them stay behind bars! Thank you so much, Captain Lourdes!" Tears of joy streamed down Harry's cheeks.

Timothy smiled. "You don't have to thank me. Thank the Gonzales family if you want. They're the ones that tracked down the money and the criminals!"

With that, the Gonzales family thought Timothy Lourdes was the one that returned the money to them, while Timothy and the Lopez family thought the former resolved the matter.

Everyone was happy with the outcome. Samuel and his accomplices were caught, and no money was lost.

Iris hosted a banquet and invited Zoey's parents after she was done moving into her new house.

"First of all, congratulations, Uncle and Aunt, for resolving this crisis." Iris congratulated Aaron and Caitlyn.

They glared at Levi and said, "Didn't you mentioned that you would handle this matter, Levi?"

"Yes. And I did!" Levi replied.

"Enough with that nonsense! The Gonzales family are the ones

that settled this matter. They're the ones that found the culprits and recovered the money. You contributed nothing! How can you tell such blatant lies?" Aaron and Caitlyn could not stand Levi's habit of always wanting to show off.

Levi was stunned. How did that happen? Oh, I think I know what happened. Tiger and his men must have dropped Samuel and his friends at the police station without saying anything. They fear the police the most, after all. That's why everyone thinks that the Gonzales family saved the day. Well, whatever. I could not care less about them.

Zoey hurriedly smoothed things over. "That's enough. Levi was just trying to console us."

The Protector Chapter 240

"Hmph! Stop making all these big talks in the future!" Aaron said angrily.

Iris smiled. "Levi has been helping me with the moving in process in the past two days. So he doesn't have the time to deal with any other things."

"Fine. Let's stop talking about him." Caitlyn rolled her eyes at Levi.

Harry sighed, "Say, who do you think the Gonzales family was indebted to in our family? Why did they help us to such extent?"

A thought popped into Zoey's mind. "Could they be referring to the Lopez family from South City? I'm afraid they are the only ones capable of getting acquainted with the Gonzales family."

Aaron and Caitlyn were surprised by Zoey's reminder.

The Lopez family in North Hampton was merely a branch family.

The original Lopez family came from South City, and they were a powerful clan.

With that being said, plenty of people carried the Lopez surname all across Erudia, similar to Harry and his family. So they were not even slightly related to the Lopez family in South City.

In their mind, only the powerful Lopez family from South City could be acquainted with the wealthiest man in North Hampton.

"Alright, let's stop discussing this. Let's talk about you, Iris. I heard that you will be collaborating closely with Zoey from now on?" Aaron looked at Iris.

Iris beamed at him. "We are planning something big at Morris Group currently. There will be plenty of chances to collaborate with Zoey by that time."

"What's the plan? Can you tell us?" Zoey asked curiously.

Admiration glinted in Iris's eyes. "This is related to that mysterious boss of mine. His vision is really extraordinary! We will tackle the medical and technology field soon, producing similar products as the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce, in an effort to replace them in the market!"

Zoey shot Levi a complicated look as Iris elaborated.

"Iris, we all know the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce has Levi Group's core technology in the medical and technology field. How do you plan to produce the same products without that information?" Zoey had to ask. Levi could have rebuild his empire anytime he wants if he has Levi Group's core technology.

Iris grinned. "That's the reason why I am impressed by my boss's abilities. He knows all the data and information!"

"Wow! That's crazy!" Zoey was astonished. She glanced at Levi unwittingly.

Levi had an eidetic memory, so he memorized all the information in his mind. But no one expected him to remember, not even Zoey. The information would amount up to a few hundred thousand pages if printed out, so the feat to recall every piece of information seemed impossible to everyone.

Iris was filled with excitement and anticipation. "My boss is simply too mysterious and amazing. I assume he is still single. I will definitely pursue him if I meet with him!"

Zoey smiled. I know how domineering Iris can be, not to mention the stringent requirements needed by a man to meet her expectations. Iris has never fallen for anyone despite their

relatively good accomplishments and rich family backgrounds. Perhaps she even raised her standards after meeting with so many outstanding people abroad in the last few years. I know how rare it is for her to be finally attracted to a man. Even I'm starting to wonder what kind of a person he is!

"Good luck! You will definitely achieve that with your qualifications." Zoey said.

However, Levi butted in their conversation. "That's not possible. You can stop dreaming now. He'll never be interested in you."

"What do you mean, Levi Garrison? Do you think you're my boss?" Iris demanded.

Levi nodded. "Yes. I am your boss."

The Protector Chapter 241

Iris narrowed her eyes at Levi.

“Stop looking at me. I will never be interested in you no matter how pretty you are.” Levi said.

Iris sneered. “Fine, I’m not going to make any comment. You were the company’s boss in the past.”

They did not take that seriously because they thought Levi was merely making a joke.

In the days that followed, Zoey’s career was progressing well. She was close to establishing a new company.

At the same time, Iris had gotten used to working in Morris Group. The first idea she proposed was for them to build a new factory.

Although Levi Group had a factory, the size and production were too small. They needed to expand their production scale if they wish to replace the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce.

Iris suggested for them to look for a new place to build the factory.

Inside Morris Group, Kirin gave Iris a thumbs-up. “Your idea

impressed the boss. He'll handle the venue and equipment needed to build the new factory, while you will handle the paperwork so that we can begin our production as soon as the factory is established.”

“Okay. I understand.” Iris was excited. I received a compliment from my mysterious boss! Hmph! How dare you say that the boss will never be interested in me, Levi Garrison? Look at how impressed he is with my performance!

At that thought, Iris asked Kirin. “When can I meet with the boss, Mr. Atkinson?”

Kirin smiled. “Be patient. The boss will meet with you when he wants to.”

Anticipation filled Iris's chest. I am going to pursue him when that time comes!

Levi had been working tirelessly in the last few days to deal with the venue and equipment needed for the new factory.

He only had the time to meet with Zoey at night.

Zoey was puzzled by Levi's packed schedule and when she questioned him about it, Levi only told her he found a job.

Zoey felt glad upon hearing that. She was contented as long as Levi was working hard.

...

The North Hampton Chamber of Commerce kept track of Morris Group's plans.

“Hmph! Do they think they can build a new factory as they like? I will make sure they won't be able to secure any place to build their factory!” One of the council members of the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce, Ron Bale, spoke displeasingly.

After searching for days, Morris Group finally found a new place.

The place was originally a large-scaled clothes factory, but was already abandoned for a long time.

However, the size and the strategic location fitted Morris Group's standards to build a new pharmaceutical factory.

The company paid a fifty million deposit in advance. They would purchase the factory for two hundred million by signing a contract today.

Levi went to sign the contract in person.

The executives and upper management of Morris Group reached the venue before Levi and Azure Dragon.

At the office, a lot of people were cramped inside.

A middle-aged, nearly bald man was seated on a chair.

The man exudes arrogance. He leaned on the back of the chair while crossing his legs on the tabletop. He regarded everyone

conceitedly while puffing on a cigarette.

Behind him stood a dozen of muscular and menacing men.

Elena introduced both parties. “Mr. Garrison, this is the owner of this factory, Mr. Mason Pena.”

Levi nodded at Mason. “Nice to meet you. I am Morris Group’s representative, here to sign the contract.”

But Mason merely shook his legs and puffed on his cigarette, all the while ignoring Levi.

Levi stopped Azure Dragon as the latter was about to teach Mason a lesson.

“We have to prioritize the contract.” Levi said.

Mason glanced at Levi disdainfully and tossed him an agreement.

“Sign it!”

One of the men standing behind Mason shouted just as Levi was about to flip through the agreement. “You only need to sign on the contract! Why do you have to read through the content and waste our time waiting for you to finish?”

The Protector Chapter

242

“That’s right. We’ve already discussed everything. All you have to do now is to sign the papers. Why did you pay us the deposit if you’re so cautious in the first place?” Mason jeered at Levi.

“Are you trying to force a deal?” Levi asked.

“When did I do that?” Mason sneered.

Levi disregarded him and started to scan through the agreement.

He grimaced after a short while and turned to ask Elena, “What was the price we agreed upon yesterday?”

Elena answered, “two hundred million. We paid a deposit of fifty million yesterday.”

Levi sneered. “That’s not right, Mr. Pena. two hundred million was the price we agreed upon after the discussion yesterday. Why did the figure become two billion on the agreement?”

Everyone gasped after listening to Levi’s comment. They’ve marked up the price by ten folds!

The other executives were shocked after flipping through the agreement. They questioned Mason. “What do you mean by this, Mr. Pena? Why is it two billion listed on the contract now? You better explain yourself!”

Mason glanced at the crowd nonchalantly. “Explanation? Hmph! I’ll be frank with you guys! two hundred million was the price for yesterday. This factory is worth two billion today!”

“That’s improper, Mr. Pena. How can you amend the agreement without mutual consent at the last minute?”

“That’s right. You are violating the contract.”

Elena and the others chided.

Mason said with a smile. “Is there a rule stating that I cannot amend the price? Over ten companies contacted me last night, telling me they are interested in purchasing my factory. Someone even offered me three billion. So two billion is already considered a cheap price!”

That kind of situation was commonly seen on the business field.

A lot of businessmen would change their stance at the last minute because they regretted the offer they accepted. Last-minute changes were either due to the businessmen’s greediness or due to underhand tactics by competitors.

Everyone looked at Levi to sought out his opinion.

Levi beamed at Mason. “In that case, return us the deposit. We will not be buying your factory now.” It is not a difficult task to look for a similar factory like this. I do not have to concede under this kind of circumstance.

Elena, who was in charge of the finance department, said, "Please return the fifty million deposit to us, Mr. Pena."

Unexpectedly, Mason looked up and asked with a confused look. "Deposit? I don't know what you're talking about."

Elena explained patiently. "We paid you fifty million as a deposit yesterday after the discussion with your company. I even have the receipt here with me!"

Mason feigned ignorance. "Did something like that happen?"

"What's going on? Are you trying to play the fool?" Elena was trembling with rage.

"I am not playing the fool. I really don't know anything about this. Look around and speak for yourself. Are the people who engaged in discussion with you yesterday here in this room?" Mason asked.

Elena glanced at her surroundings. They're not here.

"You got cheated by someone else! Our company went bankrupt a long time ago. They were merely the temporary workers for our factory. I think they stole our company's stamp and signed the receipt for you. They're the ones that scammed your money! So look for them if you want your deposit back because I have got nothing to do with this!"

Everyone was dumbfounded after listening to Mason. First, he changed the price from two hundred million to two billion. Now he's trying to scam our deposit. This is the first time we've seen someone as shameless and despicable as him after

working in this field for so many years!

However, Levi merely smiled. “So, you do not plan to return us the fifty million right, Mason Pena?”

The Protector Chapter 243

Mason lowered his legs and straightened himself on the chair. He looked at Levi. “What do you mean by that? I don’t have the money with me, so why are you asking me to return the deposit to you?”

Everyone was infuriated by Mason’s attitude.

“Leave right now if you do not want to sign the contract! You are all not welcome here in my office! Send them away!”
Mason ordered.

The ten burly men stepped forward and they started to shove Elena and the others toward the door.

At the same time, over twenty men entered the room with baseball bats in their hands.

Mason Pena has always been a thug. He had hired a group of gang members after earning some money through the clothing factory in the past. Not to mention, he was infamous around the area.

Mason crippled a lot of his business competitors as well as partners. He did not spare their families from a similar fate too. So, many were fearful toward him.

Morris Group was the only party that dared to approach him for a business opportunity.

In actual fact, the factory was worth at most fifty million. Mason was already committing a daylight robbery by asking for two hundred million, much less two billion.

“Get lost before we cripple every last one of you!” The thugs began to threaten Elena and the other employees. They were frightened by the unprecedented situation because they have been mere office workers their entire lives.

Only Levi and Azure Dragon remained rooted in their spots.

Levi asked, “I’ll give you another opportunity to discuss this matter in a civilized manner, Mason Pena!”

Mason stood up and threatened, “So, you’re not going to leave, are you? Do you want me to break your limbs before you’re willing to leave this place?” He waved his hand. “Men, beat him up!”

Azure Dragon withdrew a gun from his waist just as the thugs were about to take action. He pointed the gun at Mason’s head.

“Wait!” Mason yelled.

He slowly raised his hands. His body, which was now covered in a cold sweat, trembled fearfully as his legs wobbled.

The other thugs looked at Mason astoundingly. They could not fathom Mason's hesitation.

But clarity washed over them when they saw the gun in Azure Dragon's hand. All of them were petrified.

Tap tap tap...

A series of hurried footsteps were heard in the hallway the next moment.

Then a few muscular men with various skin complexion rushed into the office.

They were the group of mercenaries led by James.

Plop! Plop! Plop!

The thugs could not even defend themselves now that they're facing a group of professional fighters.

Within a few seconds, they were left sprawling on the floor, covered in bruises.

Mason and his men were dazed.

Azure Dragon grinned. "Weren't you acting all high and mighty? Why don't you put up that arrogant act once more?"

Mason was scared out of his wits as he reminded Azure Dragon. “Please be more careful with that gun in your hand, sir!” He was afraid that Azure Dragon would misfire and end his life right there and then.

Boom!

Azure Dragon lifted the slightly obese Mason single handedly and tossed him on the floor.

Mason yelped painfully. Then he wailed in agony when Levi stepped on his legs.

“I saw you crossing your legs on the table earlier. Are you telling me to break them for you?” Levi asked with a smile.

“No... No...” Mason panted in pain.

Levi sat on the desk and lit a cigarette. Then he questioned Mason after taking a puff. “Do you admit that you’ve received the fifty million deposit from us?”

“I...” Mason hesitated.

Levi stuffed the lit cigarette into Mason’s mouth ruthlessly without saying a word.

“Arrghh...” The latter screamed bloody murder.

“I admit! I admit!” Mason shouted.

The Protector Chapter 244

“OK then, let me ask you, why has the price suddenly increased? And why did you deny us our deposit of 50 million? Who instructed you to do all these?” Levi questioned.

Mason shook his head and replied, “None, it’s all my own doing. There’s no one else that’s in on this.”

The corners of Levi’s mouth curled into an unfathomable smile as he waved at James, and said, “I heard that you’re an expert at interrogating people, show me how you do it!”

“Understood, Mr. Garrison!”

James stepped forward and flashed a devilish grin at Mason. “Don’t worry, it won’t hurt at all!”

James opened a plastic bag which contained all sorts of knives. Just by looking at it was enough to make one’s hair stand.

James picked up a small boning knife and said with a smile, “Mr. Garrison, I intend to use this knife to slice off his fingernails and toenails first... “

Upon hearing those words, Mason could already imagine the

excruciating pain which would be inflicted on him.

“After that... “

“I’ll talk!”

Before James could complete his sentence, he was interrupted by Mason Pena.

“I’ll tell you everything! It’s Ron Bale from the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce who instructed me to do that! He told me not to sell this place to you at all costs. Not only that, but he also asked me to find ways to take advantage of your company!”

Mason did not hold back any information and told Levi everything he knew.

“Very well, so it’s the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce!”

Levi fixed his gaze on Mason as he said, “So, are you going to sell this building to me now?”

James, who was beside Levi, sniggered as he stared at Mason.

Mason wiped off the beads of perspiration on his forehead and replied decisively, “Yes! I’ll sell it to your company for two hundred million!”

“Did I say that that’s the price that I’m going to pay?” Levi asked.

“Huh? Isn’t two hundred million the price we agreed upon?”
Mason was confused.

Imitating Mason’s tone, Levi said, “Oh, the price can be changed anytime! There are currently a few dozens of factory buildings for me to choose from. There’s even one that is as cheap as ten million!”

“I’ve made a careful assessment just now. I think this place is worth at most fifty million! I shall purchase this building at fifty million then!”

In fact, Levi had offered a fair price.

Previously, Mason had considered selling the building to another interested party who had proposed thirty million for it.

“I... “

Mason was at a loss for words.

All he could feel was regret!

A deep sense of immeasurable regret!

If I did not listen to Ron and proceeded with the sale earlier on, I would have already received two hundred million.

Now look at what that plan has caused me, I can only settle for fifty million!

After both parties signed the sale and purchase agreement, the construction team which Iris had already engaged, started

renovation works in the building. It was estimated that the works would take three days to complete.

The next step would be to wait for the shipment of the equipment.

Even though Mason was upset with how things had turned out, he had still managed to get fifty million.

That very day, Ron from the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce rang Mason up.

“Mason Pena, what’s wrong with you? You sold the building? And for just fifty million? Are you an idiot or what?” Ron lashed out the second Mason answered the phone.

“Ron Bale, who do you think you are? Who gave you the right to tell me off? Let me tell you, you’ve caused me a huge loss! Don’t let me see your face, or I’ll definitely kill you!”

Mason hung up after saying that, without waiting for Ron’s reply.

Ron was so mad that he almost slammed his phone on the ground.

Also present were three other members of the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce, namely Xawery Yount, Braylen Stewart and Wildan Saenz.

They had grim expressions on their faces as well.

“We have to think of something to deal with Morris Group!”

Ron said frustratedly.

Wildan smiled and said, "I just received news that Morris Group had ordered a huge batch of equipment and apparatus from the Dynatic Medical Apparatus Company in the South City!"

"Is there a way for us to interfere with that?" Everyone asked.

"Of course! The owner of Dynatic Medical Apparatus Company happens to be my dormitory mate in college!" Wildan had an insidious smile on his face as he said that.

The Protector Chapter 245

Wildan gave a call to Wylder Prosser, the owner of Dynatic Medical Apparatus Company, on the spot.

Wylder agreed to his old friend's request.

As Dynatic had already signed the purchase order with Morris Group and had also received full payment for the goods, the only thing Wylder could do was to delay the shipment of the goods for as long as possible.

It would create huge problems for Morris Group if the goods were late by a few months.

According to the plan Levi and Iris had, the medical apparatus had to arrive within a week.

“That’s great! Apart from that, we should also impose strict restrictions on all medical equipment and apparatus businesses to ban them from transacting with Morris Group!”

Ron and the other three men looked at each other with knowing smiles on their faces.

“Morris Group, you’re just a greenhorn. Pitting yourself against the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce is going to make

your life really difficult!”

The men’s cunning laughter resonated through the room.

The North Hampton Chamber of Commerce acted quickly and had issued prohibition notices to the relevant companies.

There were not many companies which were engaged in the sale of medical apparatus in the first place.

And limits had been imposed on all of those companies as well.

Any company which attempted to sell equipment to Morris Group would be openly declaring itself as the enemy of the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce.

So it was only natural that no one would dare to take such a risk.

Levi and his team had not realized that they were already in deep trouble.

After all, the company had already finalized the purchase agreement with Dynatic.

Meanwhile, Levi had been busy getting in touch with his former employees.

Those who had previously worked under him were all in dire straits, as they had been blacklisted by the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce, the Rogers family, as well as the

Garrison family.

As such, no matter how capable they were, it would still be impossible for them to gain employment.

After more than ten days of recruitment, twenty seven talents had returned to the company.

Some of them were members from the private technical group which Levi had set up previously.

One of the members was Talia Stone, a top student whom Levi had previously scouted from the Pharmaceutical University. She was one of the pillars of the technical team, and Levi was very glad to have her back.

Talia was very excited to be back as well.

“Do you know where the others are now?” Levi asked.

Talia thought for a while before replying, “Mr. Garrison, I only know the whereabouts of our team leader and the two assistant leaders, but I haven’t heard from the rest of the team members.

The two assistant leaders, namely Tom and Charlie have both been headhunted by the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce. I heard that they are doing really well now!”

Levi let out a sigh.

When the technical team was first set up, for security reasons, the core technology was split into three; the team leader and

the two assistant leaders each wielded one third of it.

Logically speaking, the technology which the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce currently had possession of, must have been obtained from the two assistant leaders.

However, word had it that the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce was already coming close to having the entire core technology.

That would imply that the team leader, Isaiah, had also divulged his portion of the technology to them.

“How about Isaiah? Has he joined the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce too?” Levi asked.

Talia shook her head and replied, “No, our leader had remained loyal all the way! He would rather die than to betray the team. He remained firm no matter what tactics the other party used on him, whether to tempt or force him into giving up the technology.

He did not budge even when they broke his leg. From what I know, Mr. Wade had opened a small pharmacy and is just getting by! Thankfully, his pretty wife had stayed by his side throughout the entire ordeal. She even used up most of her savings to help him start the business!”

Levi got the address of Isaiah’s pharmacy from Talia.

Around half an hour later, he arrived at the pharmacy, which was in a small alley.

Levi pushed open the door and was greeted by a middle-aged man, who approached him with a limp.

“Sir, are you looking for any medicine?” The man asked.

Levi recognized Isaiah at first glance, even though it seemed like he had aged twenty years...

The man was only in his thirties, but had the appearance of someone in his fifties.

“Isaiah! It’s me!” Levi exclaimed.

“What? You... You’re Mr. Garrison...”

Isaiah took a while to recognize Levi. He was overwhelmed with emotions as tears welled up in his eyes.

The Protector Chapter 246

“You’ve suffered greatly all these years, Isaiah!” Levi glanced at Isaiah Wade’s legs.

Isaiah wiped the tears off his face. “I’m fine, Mr. Garrison. I’m so glad to see you again!”

Levi patted his shoulder. “Don’t worry, Isaiah. I am here to bring you back this time!”

At that moment, an annoying voice was heard. “Why are you crying, you useless junk? Are you reminiscing your dead parents or something?”

A woman walked out from within the house swiftly after.

She wore heavy makeup on her face and was dressed provocatively. Her eyelashes batted in a seductive manner. In addition to her fashionable appearance and mature temperament, her body was voluptuous. Any ordinary man would have a hard time peeling their eyes off her.

Levi glanced at her and saw that the woman was dressed in luxurious clothing. She wore Chanel clothes, carried an LV bag, paired with Ferragamo high heels. Strapped on her wrist was an Omega wristwatch worth over a hundred thousand.

Levi could not imagine such a wealthy woman living inside that little pharmacy. But he had seen that woman before. She was Isaiah’s wife, Sasha Lynch.

Many of Isaiah’s colleagues were jealous of him in the past because of Sasha’s beauty.

Isaiah treated his wife extremely well. He would always hand over all of his salaries to her, and would eat instant noodles by himself for a month in order to save up so that he could afford to treat his wife to an extravagant meal.

Sasha eyed Levi dumbfoundedly for a few seconds. “Levi Garrison? Hahaha! Your ex-con boss is here to visit you, you useless junk! You pieces of trash finally have the chance to

reunite.” Sasha laughed uncontrollably.

Isaiah grimaced. He hurriedly said to his wife, “Honey, mind your words please. He’s my boss!”

“What do you mean by that, you useless junk! How dare you oppose me?” Sasha screamed angrily.

Isaiah was well-known for being afraid of his wife. He immediately lowered his head.

“Know your place, Isaiah Wade! I am providing you your daily meals, accommodation, and clothes! Do not forget that I am the person who sponsored this pharmacy! So how dare you oppose you? Did you got tired of living?” Sasha yelled.

“I’m sorry, honey... I will not repeat this mistake anymore...” Isaiah apologized submissively.

Levi felt chills spreading across his chest at that sight. This woman was obedient and polite when Isaiah was successful. She even cooked his lunch and sent the meals to his office every day back then. But look at her now. She’s mistreating him now that he’s down and out.

The Protector Chapter 247

Sasha glanced at Levi and jeered at Isaiah. “Why am I stuck with a useless junk like you? You gave up a job that would pay you ten million annually for this ex-con in the past.

Look at how well Tom Frazier and Charlie Reeds are doing now. They are receiving an annual salary of twenty million, driving luxurious cars, and staying in expensive villas. What about you? You are living in the dumps!”

Isaiah apologized again. “Honey, this is all my fault. I am a piece of trash. But this has got nothing to do with Mr. Garrison!”

“Hmph! Both of you are pieces of shit!”

At that moment, a series of honks were heard from outside the pharmacy.

A Mercedes-Benz worth over a million was parked outside the store.

A man dressed in a suit got out of the car. He appeared to be an elite in the business world.

“What’s taking you so long, Sasha? I’ve been waiting for half a day now.” A man entered the pharmacy.

The man was stunned when he saw Levi.

He was none other than one of the traitors who turned against Levi, Tom Frazier. He was the vice team leader, as well as the person who disclosed one-third of the information related to Levi Group's core technology.

“Oh? I thought my eyes were playing tricks on me. But it is you, the crippled Mr. Garrison! You're finally released from prison. I could've picked you up if you'd informed me earlier!” Tom said cheerfully.

He glanced at Isaiah's leg and jeered at Levi. “You're a cripple, Mr. Garrison, and so is Isaiah. Are you guys preparing to form a team to participate in the Paralympics?”

“Hahaha... That's right! They can be a team of cripples!” Sasha could not contain her laughter.

Levi said, “Do you speak to your parents with that foul mouth of yours?”

Tom was displeased instantaneously. He pointed at Levi. “I cannot say anything to you if you were the Levi Garrison from six years ago. But who are you to insult me now? Do you have a death wish?”

Isaiah chided subconsciously, “How dare you speak to Mr. Garrison with that tone! Do you think you're qualified to carry that attitude in front of him?”

Isaiah thought of Levi as his savior. So he would not allow anyone to criticize Levi.

“Oh? Are you an accomplished man now, Isaiah? Since when do you have the guts to defy me?” Tom patted Isaiah’s face.

Isaiah shouted angrily as he unleashed the pent-up rage in his heart. “You are not welcome here! This is my place, so get out now!”

The Protector Chapter 248

Tom laughed after listening to Isaiah. “Are you hearing this, Sasha? Did he just say that this place is his?”

Sasha slapped Isaiah furiously. “What’s wrong with you? This is my place! You’ve got nothing to do with this store. Moreover, how dare you talk to Tom in that unfriendly tone?”

Isaiah covered his cheek incredulously. “Did you just slap me because of him?”

“That’s right! I slapped you because of Tom. Tom is the only man I love!” Sasha hugged Tom’s arm and plastered her body to him intimately after she spoke.

Tom held Sasha in his arm and deliberately grabbed her buttocks.

Boom!

Isaiah was dumbstruck by that sight.

Witnessing his wife offering herself up to another man was an utter humiliation to a man.

Tom chuckled smugly. “Do you know why I’m here to pick Sasha up? That’s because I’m bringing her to the hotel! Have you taken a look at what your wife is carrying in her bag? She’s going to put on a fashion show for me while wearing clothes that you’ve never even seen!”

Tom took out a few sets of outfit from within Sasha’s bag.

Sasha acted coquettishly toward Tom. “You’re so mean...”

Isaiah felt blood rushing to his brain as his face contorted with rage.

“I must compliment your wife, Isaiah. She’s so great in bed that I can’t get enough of her even after six years!” Tom kissed Sasha to prove his statement.

Sasha laughed skittishly. “You’re amazing too, Tom. This useless junk here is nothing compared to you. I doubt his lower body is still functioning at this point!” She glowered at Isaiah as she made the comment.

Tom added, “Perhaps you’re wondering why Sasha stayed by your side for so long? That’s because she has yet to lay her

hands on the information of the core technology in your possession.

Otherwise, Sasha would've left you a long time ago! You're only needed because of those data. Other than that, you're completely useless!"

Sasha said disdainfully, "That's right. Why would I sacrifice so much time staying by your side if not for the information? I have to admit, you are indeed a good secret-keeper. I wasted six years with you, but never once had you divulge the complete information to me!"

Isaiah nearly experienced a cardiac arrest as he listened to those brazen words from the shameless couple. Everything's clear to me now.

The reason why Sasha was reluctant to let me touch her body in the last six years, the reason behind Tom's frequent visits to the pharmacy, the luxurious clothes, and the endless amount of money she has even though she's unemployed. I'm being cuckolded.

More importantly, the man who wronged me is my own apprentice. I trained Tom and Charlie when they were young. They even addressed me as their master back then.

I was moved by Sasha's dedication to staying with me even though she mistreated me all these years. Now I finally understand the reason behind all of these!

The Protector Chapter 249

Isaiah had doubted Sasha since a long time ago, but his affection toward her caused him to place blind faith in his cheating wife.

On the other hand, Levi finally gained revelation as to how the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce managed to get near-complete information on Levi Group's core technology.

So it was Sasha that'd tricked Isaiah into telling her all these years. Otherwise, he's not the type of person to divulge any of the information.

Tom sized up Levi and sneered. "What's the matter? Did you find a helper, Isaiah? Well, I'll be frank with you. Levi Garrison is just a man who's relying on his wife now! He's the same as you, a crippled, useless piece of junk!"

Sasha glared at her husband menacingly. "Since we've told you everything, it's time for you to get lost, Isaiah Wade! This is my place, after all!"

Tom held Sasha closer in his arms. "That's right. You're as good as a piece of trash now that your usefulness has come to an end!"

"Did you know, Isaiah? I've bought two houses and two cars

with the salary you've given me in the past. You're just a poor loser now. Do you think you're qualified to stay as my man?" Sasha jeered at Isaiah.

Tom laughed. "I'll let you in on another secret, Isaiah. I am not the only man who cuckolded you. Plenty of others in the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce slept with your wife too. They even praised her for her outstanding techniques!"

"I'll kill you!" Isaiah rushed forward with reddened eyes and veins throbbing visibly on his forehead.

Bam!

Tom punched Isaiah easily and the latter fell backward.

He was about to swing another punch, but Levi caught his wrist.

Tom staggered backward after Levi exerted a little force to push him off.

Levi's idea was to have Isaiah teach the shameless couple a lesson they would remember for the rest of their lives, which was the reason why he hadn't interfere until that moment.

In the meantime, Sasha tossed a suitcase filled with Isaiah's belongings on the floor. "Take your rubbish with you and get the hell out of here!"

Isaiah felt his heart wrenched with pain as he was chased out

of the house mercilessly by his wife. I worked so hard in the past with the sole intention of providing Sasha with a comfortable life. Not only did she scammed all my money and cheated on me, but she's also even chasing me away now.

Isaiah stared at the shameless couple with malicious intent. His body was trembling with rage.

Levi asked Isaiah, "Do you want to surpass them, Isaiah? Do you want to render them speechless and make them look up to you?"

"I do!"

"Do you want that slut to grovel on the floor and repent?"

"I do!"

"Do you want that despicable man to kneel before you and beg for your forgiveness?"

"I do!"

"Will you accept my offer if I provide you with such an opportunity now?" Levi asked.

"I will!" Isaiah roared. "I swear to accomplish great success even if I have to work my ass off! I will make these two shameless people pay for their sins!"

Isaiah steeled his resolution as the last shred of love he had for Sasha vanished.

“Great. You are my employee from this moment onward.” Levi announced.

“Hahaha, did you hear him, Tom? He wants us to pay the price for our sins!” Sasha laughed out loud.

Tom leaned against the Mercedes-Benz and sneered. “You’re a fool, Isaiah. Are you expecting Levi Garrison to give you the chance to rise up? He can’t even take care of himself now! Much less give you any kind of opportunity. What a joke!”

Sasha added. “That’s right. Don’t you have a brain you can think with? Levi was recently released from prison. Do you still expect him to be Morris Group’s boss? In your dreams!”

Isaiah narrowed his eyes and shrieked at them. “I believe in Mr. Garrison! He will provide me with a platform to prosper. By that time, I swear to make you pay!”

“Sure. We’ll be waiting for you. You’re such a hilarious brainless git...” The two of them entered the car and left before Isaiah’s eyes.

The Protector Chapter 250

Tears came to Isaiah, a middle-aged man, as he sobbed uncontrollably and cried his heart out.

The shameless couple's outrageous behavior drove Isaiah to the brink of depression.

He apologized. "I've wronged you, Mr. Garrison! I've revealed almost everything I know of the core technology to that bitch! I'm really useless!"

Levi smiled. "Don't worry about that, Isaiah. I foresaw that the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce would lay their hands on the core technology."

Isaiah was a smart man. After pondering for a while, he connected the pieces of information in his mind. Then he asked surprisingly, "Are you planning to fight against the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce, Mr. Garrison?"

"That's right!"

"But Mr. Garrison... You're recently released from prison..." How do you plan to fight against them?

Levi said with a smile, "I suppose you know about Levi Group's recent name-changing ceremony, Isaiah? The company is called Morris Group now."

Isaiah's body shuddered greatly, listening to him. He widened his eyes incredulously. "Are you by any chance the boss of Morris Group, Mr. Garrison?"

"Shh! Let's keep a low profile." Levi gestured for him to keep quiet.

Soon, A Rolls-Royce Phantom swiftly came to a halt next to them.

Let's go. Follow me to the company now. We'll use the shortest time possible to establish a technical team. We are going to regain our previous glory and make them regret!" Levi said.

Isaiah felt his blood boiling with anticipation. He agreed without a second thought. "I've waited this day for so long!"

Tears of joy brimmed in his eyes.

He had spent the last six years learning and following updates in the industry, maintaining and polishing his professional knowledge.

Isaiah took out his phone and dialed Sasha's number.

Sasha said to him mockingly after the call connected, "What's the matter, you useless piece of crippled trash? Did you regret your decision, so you're calling me to beg me? Well, it's too late now. In my mind, you're no better than a stray dog. You should just get lost!"

Isaiah grimaced. "This is the last time I'm calling you, Sasha Lynch! I will make sure you regret what you've done. You will kneel before me and repent for your sins by that time. Don't worry because that day will come sooner than you think!"

"Hahaha, you should consider a career as a comedian! How do you plan to realize your big talks?"

Sasha and Tom's laughter was heard from the other end of the phone.

Then, Tom pressed his body against Sasha. "Should we film our intimate moment today and send that cripple the video?"

"Hmm, you're so bad..."

Isaiah exploded with rage after listening to their interaction.

Bam!

Crack!

He smashed his cellphone on the ground forcefully. Shame! This is the worst shame a man can experience!

Isaiah and Levi were walking on the streets, discussing the company's future direction after visiting Morris Group.

Tom and Sasha found Isaiah at that moment. Their disheveled clothes reflected the activity they were engaged in moments ago.

"Let's go and get a divorce! It's the right time for me to finally ditch you!" Sasha jeered at Isaiah.

"I..." Isaiah hesitated.

Making that important decision at a moment's notice was challenging for him. His relationship with Sasha had lasted for a decade, after all.

Tom immediately mocked him. “What’s the matter? You don’t want to get a divorce? Do you plan to linger around Sasha in the future?”

Sasha pushed Isaiah. “Get lost! You’re no longer worthy of me!”

“That’s it? That’s how easily you’re disregarding our relationship that has lasted for so many years?” Isaiah questioned her with a stern expression.

“Haha! You have the audacity to ask me that question? Let me be honest with you. I only stuck with you for ten years because I coveted your money!” Sasha answered mercilessly.

Isaiah was about to agree to her request to file for a divorce when Levi stepped in. “Divorce? In your dreams!”

The Protector Chapter 251

“I will heed Mr. Garrison’s advice. I will not divorce you!”

Sasha and Tom nearly passed out from anger.

“Fine! Just you wait! I’ll force you to sign the papers if it’s the last thing I do.” The two of them left furiously afterward.

Although Isaiah did not understand Levi’s intention, he believed Levi to have his reasons.

He swore to take revenge on Sasha and Tom from the moment he was chased out of the house.

Soon after that fiasco, Isaiah successfully entered Morris Group and headed the Medical Technology department.

At the same time, Morris Group released a hiring announcement to recruit professionals in medical and technology-related fields with lucrative salaries.

A lot of people put forth their best effort in an attempt to join Morris Group following the announcement.

The news quickly reached Sasha's ears. Coincidentally, she was having a meal with Tom and Charlie.

"Hmph! I can't believe Morris Group decided to hire that cripple!" Sasha was not pleased. I expected him to live a pitiful life on the streets after I chased him out of the house. I certainly did not expect him to get a job so quickly.

Tom was enraged too. "Isaiah Wade's name is blacklisted by all the companies in North Hampton. Morris Group's boldness to recruit him is unbelievable!"

Charlie said with a smile. "Don't worry about it. He's not going to last in Morris Group."

Sasha was confused. "What do you mean?"

"Well, Morris Group will cease to exist in North Hampton soon!

Isaiah will once again become a piece of trash by that time.”
Charlie sneered.

Tom was more focused on the technical side of the business, so he was not informed of some insider information.

He asked, “Is there something wrong with the company, Charlie?”

“Morris Group has been provoking the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce all this while. The councils of the Chamber have begun to take action. Isaiah was brought over to Morris Group to aid in the production of pharmaceuticals. But the equipment needed is no longer available in the market due to the Chamber of Commerce’s influence. Just you wait. Isaiah will be living on the streets soon.” Charlie laughed.

“Hahaha... This is awesome! Isaiah is destined to be a crippled loser. He’s really a joke, thinking he’s able to make us regret the things we’ve done.” Tom said.

Sasha was overjoyed as she listened to Charlie’s predictions.

At that moment, Charlie hugged Sasha and teased her. “Tom said you’re mine for tonight!”

“You’re a meanie, Charlie...” Sasha leaned against Charlie’s chest and acted coquettishly.

Meanwhile, Isaiah immersed himself in his work. He had assembled the technical team too.

Isaiah was a brilliant man. He fine-tuned the previous core

technology, allowing Morris Group to produce products with better quality and cheaper prices compared to the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce.

His efforts had pushed Morris Group one step forward in their goal of replacing the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce.

In just four days, Isaiah with the rest of the team had finalized the adjustments.

After all, Isaiah had been ruminating on that matter in the last six years.

They had made the necessary arrangements at the factory as well. So all that was left was to wait for the production to begin.

Iris was holding a meeting when she looked at Doug Rice, the head of the procurement department, and said. “Mr. Rice, what’s going on with the equipment we ordered from Dynatic? The items were supposed to arrive in three days, It’s been five days now!”

Doug wiped the nervous sweat off his face. “Ms. Anabelle, Dynatic recently informed us they are repairing the equipment we ordered from them due to an unforeseen issue. They told us to wait...”

Iris retorted immediately. “That’s not possible! I checked the equipment in person previously. There’s nothing wrong with the machines!”

“Are you saying that Dynatic is deliberately delaying the

shipment?” Doug asked.

“Contact Dynatic’s owner, Mr. Wylder Prosser, for me!”

Iris questioned Wylder as soon as the call connected, “Mr. Prosser, where is the equipment I ordered from you?”

“About that, there’s something wrong with the machines purchased by Morris Group. So you will have to wait.” Wylder answered.

“For how long?”

“At least a month.”

The Protector Chapter 252

Everyone gasped after listening to Wylder’s response. They are obviously doing this on purpose!

Wylder added. “I sent the machines back to the original manufacturer to undergo repair and services. Please be considerate since we already speed up the progress to a one month waiting time.”

Iris said, "I'm going to your company to assess the situation in person. You can ship us the other stocks you're keeping. We are in a hurry, so we don't have the time to wait any longer!"

"Oh no, I'm so sorry, Ms. Anabelle. I've sent out all my stocks because other parties purchased the equipment."

"Is that so?" Iris kept her cool. She knew he was provoking her on purpose.

"That's right! I can't believe this coincidence either. Out of all the equipment I shipped out, only the ones ordered by Morris Group are faulty." Wylder smiled cunningly.

Everyone was infuriated by Wylder's tone.

The delay is clearly intentional! We've prepared everything, and those equipment are the only element lacking now!

"Ms. Anabelle, I'm going to have to trouble you to wait for a little longer," Wylder said with a smile.

"I can't! You promised to send the machines here in three days. So what's the deal now?" Iris was hopping mad.

Wylder sighed. "If that's the case, I do have another idea..."

"What idea?" Iris asked.

"You will have to top up more money. I can send you the backup stock from my personal storage." Wylder answered.

“How much are you asking for?”

“You ordered the equipment for five hundred million previously. If you give me five billion now, I will send you the backup stock immediately. You should know that this equipment is my trump card. So the price that I’m suggesting is a very reasonable one.”

He’s outrageously greedy! All the executives in Morris Group were astounded. No one expected Wylder to pull off a scheme like that.

Iris jeered at him. “Do you take me for a fool, Wylder Prosser?”

“Haha. We can call off this deal if you’re reluctant.” Wylder was determined.

“Fine. Then refund us the money. We’re rescinding our order from you!” Iris chided.

“Sure. I will return the money to you. But I’ll be honest with you, you will regret your decision because I am the only person who has the equipment you’re looking for. I’ll be waiting for Morris Group to beg me later on.”

Iris began looking for another supplier after Wylder refunded the money. She contacted all the medical equipment suppliers in North Hampton and cities nearby, but none of them was willing to sell them the machines when they heard Morris Group’s name.

Doug Rice and the other employees were on the verge of tears. They are clearly targeting our company.

“What should we do now. Boss required us to begin the production in these few days. The North Hampton Chamber of Commerce will know of our intention once we drag this any longer.” Iris was anxious. It will be too slow for us to acquire the equipment from other places. The transport will be a huge problem we have to address, due to the possibility of others sabotaging the machines en route to the factory.

Doug asked, “Should we discuss this matter with Wylder Prosser again? The additional cost doesn’t matter. Acquiring the equipment is our top priority now.”

Iris rubbed her temples. “Let me think of another way.”

At the same time, in Bale Group, one of the companies under the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce.

Ron Bale, Wildan Saenz, and others gathered together.

“Hahaha. Let me see how you’re going to resolve this now, Morris Group!” Ron smiled wickedly.

Wildan was delighted as well. “I told my friend, Doug, to request five billion from them.”

Xawery Yount asked the question in his mind, “What if Morris Group is willing to pay the sum?”

The Protector Chapter 253

Braylen Stewart responded cheerfully. “Then we’ll let Doug provide them with the equipment. But we will create some trouble during the transportation to destroy the machines!”

“Hahaha... How much loss will Morris Group suffer by that time?”

The few cunning men were overjoyed.

Another day passed, and Iris failed to come up with any new idea.

She wanted to resolve the issue on her own because she was desperate to prove her capabilities to her mysterious boss.

In the end, Iris contacted Wylder Prosser.

“Hahaha, I was wondering who called. Didn’t I tell you that you’ll regret your decision? So, what’s up?” Wylder said smugly. Morris Group is filled with useless and incompetent workers. They have to beg me, after all.

Iris cut to the chase. “Mr. Prosser, I can pay you an additional one and a half billion at most.”

“You’re decreasing my asking price from five billion to one and a half billion? Haha! I have to say, you’re good at negotiating! I’ll have to host a meeting to discuss this matter.” Wylder did not reject her immediately.

After he hung up on Iris’s call, Wylder contacted Wildan Saenz and the others through a video call. “What should I do now? Morris Group offered to pay one and a half billion instead.” He asked.

After a brief discussion among the four people, Wildan answered with a smile, “Sell the equipment to them, Wylder. We will cause some trouble during the transportation. Those machines will never reach Morris Group!”

Wylder was excited. “Doesn’t that mean I made a billion and a half for nothing?”

“Haha! Exactly!”

“Wait for another day before you get back to her, Wylder,” Wildan suggested.

“Alright. Got it!”

Inside Morris group.

Iris and the other executives were anxiously waiting for Wylder Prosser’s reply.

Isaiah reported to Levi at once after he was informed of the situation.

Levi was surprised after listening to him. I expected us to stumble into such a predicament if we purchase the equipment in North Hampton. That's why I asked Iris to order the machines at South City. I did not anticipate this problem to arise.

North Hampton Chamber of Commerce's extensive influence piqued Levi's interest. It's not fun to target them if they do not provide me with any challenge. "Alright. I'll handle this, Isaiah."

Levi dialed another number. "I need some equipment to arrive at my place by tomorrow."

"Consider it done, Sir!" The person on the other end of the phone answered.

Inside Morris Group.

Isaiah informed everyone that their boss had dealt with the issue regarding the procurement of the equipment.

"What? We can receive the equipment by tomorrow?" Iris was beyond excited.

"That's right!" Isaiah nodded.

Iris looked at Isaiah in envy. He's able to interact with the mysterious boss directly.

Iris asked curiously. "Mr. Wade, what kind of a person is our boss?"

"He's a great person and the man I admire the most in my life!"

Isaiah responded.

Elena agreed as well. “That’s right. Our boss is also my idol!”

Iris’s curiosity intensified after receiving their answers. I must pursue him!

Wylder Prosser contacted Iris the next day at 9 o’clock in the morning.

“What’s the matter, Mr. Prosser?”

Wylder said, “Our company has decided to sell the equipment to you for one and a half billion, Ms. Anabelle. We will send the equipment to you by today once you pay the amount. You are free to arrange your own transportation if you’re worried.”

In Wylder’s opinion, Morris Group would definitely agree to his proposal because they were desperate.

“Oh, you’re calling because of the equipment. That’s not needed anymore. We’ve acquired what we needed.”

The Protector Chapter 254

“What?” Wylder was taken aback. They’ve acquired the equipment? How is that possible? The North Hampton Chamber of Commerce had prohibited every medical equipment company from dealing with Morris Group. So how

could they've possibly lay their hands on the machines?

“Are you sure, Ms. Anabelle?” Wylder questioned her with uncertainty.

“That’s right. They are much more efficient. We will receive the equipment by 12 o’clock in the afternoon today.” Iris replied to him.

“Ah? Where did you purchase the equipment?”

“That’s none of your concern. This is our company’s matter. Goodbye!”

Wylder Prosser slumped in his seat, disheartened. There goes my wonderful dream of earning one and a half billion effortlessly.

He hurriedly reported the unexpected turn of events to Wildan Saenz and the others.

The few councils of the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce were astounded as well.

“They’ve procured the equipment?”

All four men utilized their connections at once to investigate the matter. What they found was that none of the medical equipment companies in North Hampton and surrounding cities had sold any machine to Morris Group.

Where did they source out the equipment then?

“The most important thing to do now is to figure out the transportation route of the equipment. We need to stop them immediately!”

They were in a state of agitation.

Meanwhile, Levi was hanging out with Azure Dragon and the others.

Levi received a phone call from Kyrie Duncan, the head of the logistics department in the North Hampton Warzone, at that moment.

“The medical equipment you purchased from North Hampton Warzone’s Defense Research And Development Centre is being transported now, Sir! As you ordered, we’ve arranged a fully-armed squadron to escort the logistic team!” Kyrie reported.

No one expected Levi to procure the equipment from the Warzone’s Defense Research And Development Centre.

Levi nodded. “Okay. Thank you. This set of equipment is bought under Morris Group’s name, Mr. Duncan. I’ve transferred the payment. Please check.”

“Understood, Sir!”

Levi reminded after hanging up the phone call. “Kirin, tell Iris and the others to wait for the equipment at the factory. The machines will arrive in two hours.”

Then he looked at Azure Dragon. “Spread the information on the transportation route, Azure Dragon!”

Inside Bale Group.

“We’ve identified the transportation route! There’s still one and a half hour for us to stop them.” Ron Bale glanced at his watch worriedly.

Braylen Stewart said through gritted teeth, “Should I contact Phantasma? We’ll let him handle this!”

“Okay. Make sure Phantasma destroys those machines!” Their eyes gleamed with malicious intent.

Phantasma was one of the mafia bosses in North Hampton. He ran a credit company, with most of his employees being thugs.

He was a ruthless man who would not hesitate to kill another person. Phantasma often did the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce’s biddings. It was a common thing for him to cripple others while dealing with those matters.

“We can rest assured if Phantasma handles this task.”

“He’s cruel and meticulous. What he does will never be traced back to us even if he murders someone.”

On a secluded highway in North Hampton.

A bunch of vicious-looking men placed plenty of nails on the road and parked multiple cars to block the path.

A long-haired man dressed in a black outfit was seated inside an SUV parked aside. His fingers were covered with rings as he puffed on a cigar.

If one were to look closely, a pupil was missing from one of his eyes, so his appearance was indeed frightening like a ghost. The man was none other than the infamous Phantasma.

“Stay vigilant and work smart later on. They reminded us to cripple a few people as a warning to Morris Group...”
Phantasma’s hoarse voice was capable of sending chills down others’ spines.

The Protector Chapter 255

“Don’t worry, boss!”

Phantasma’s subordinates rubbed their palms together in excitement. Strapped around their waists were various sharp blades.

The logistic team finally arrived after a short while.

The logistic team was made up of thirty cars because the machines were worth up to five hundred million, after all.

The car leading the team came to an abrupt halt upon noticing the row of cars messily parked in the middle of the road.

The rest of the cars stopped as well.

Doug Rice was seated inside the car leading the team.

He was about to get out of the car and check out the situation when he saw over a dozen menacing-looking men advancing in his direction.

Doug was scared out of his wits.

Phantasma and his underlings walked up to the car and he knocked on the car window.

Doug was fearful as he looked at the batons in their hands. He immediately lowered the car window.

Phantasma croaked. "Are you from Morris Group?"

"Yes... That... That's right..." Doug nodded.

"Okay. You may leave now, but those machines will have to stay." Phantasma ordered.

"I can't do that. We can't leave without the equipment..." Doug said.

The rest of his sentence was stuck in his throat as Phantasma's subordinates glared at him.

Doug immediately contacted Iris and informed him of the predicament.

Iris and the others were worried sick.

But Elena was unusually calm. “There’s no need to worry. Boss has arranged everything. All we have to do is wait here patiently.”

Phantasma led his men toward the back of the convoy afterward.

Although the Warzone Defense Research And Development Centre produced the equipment, the logistic team was not provided by the army. Instead, it was Doug Rice who had hired the logistic team.

Phantasma and his men would have fled in fright if they saw that it was a fleet of military vehicles.

All the carriages attached to the cars were covered by black drapes.

Phantasma and his men removed the black drapes and sized up the equipment underneath.

They smiled wickedly when they have ascertained all thirty cars to be loaded with the medical equipment.

Phantasma contacted Ron. “Mr. Bale, I’ve checked all thirty cars, and all of them are carrying the equipment.”

“Excellent! Destroy all the machines, Phantasma! Morris Group can dream about laying their hands on the equipment!” Ron said coldly.

“Okay. I will check the rest of the cars and destroy everything. I’ll also cripple a few men afterward.” Phantasma continued to examine the remaining vehicles.

The rest of the cars were loaded with accessories and spare parts of the machines.

In the end, there were only three cars left to check.

Phantasma felt panic rising within him at the sight of the last three cars. For some unknown reason, His left eyelid was twitching continuously.

With an apprehensive heart, Phantasma walked up to the cars.

He used his baton to part the drapes.

The interior of the car was dark, but he could make out a group of people inside.

One of Phantasma’s subordinates exclaimed, “There are so many people inside!”

Another man added. “These must be the workers to unload the equipment.”

Phantasma ordered harshly, “All of you, get out of the car! Someone come and part the drapes!”

Two of his underlings parted the drapes. Sunlight illuminated the dark interior at once.

Everyone was frightened when they saw the people sitting

inside the car.

Phantasma and his men dropped their batons unwittingly. The cigarettes held between their lips fell as their jaws dropped.

Inside the car were over a dozen men dressed in military outfits. They were pointing their loaded guns at Phantasma and his subordinates.

No one expected to see a group of fully-armed soldiers inside the car.

“Did you just order us to get out of the car?” The company commander leading the group pressed his pistol against Phantasma’s head.

The Protector Chapter 256

Swish...

Everyone got out of the car.

The rest of the soldiers in the other two cars got out as well.

Over a hundred armed soldiers surrounded Phantasma and his men while pointing their guns at them.

Phantasma and his subordinates were scared out of their wits. They were so close to losing bladder control.

The unexpected turn of events was completely unimaginable to Phantasma and the others.

Phantasma and his gang dropped their batons.

Some even succumbed to the heavy atmosphere as they slumped onto the ground.

Phantasma, with a gun pressed up against his head, was trembling fearfully. He raised his hands and shouted. "This is a misunderstanding! This is all just a misunderstanding!"

The company commander said with a stern voice, "I am the North Hampton Warzone Defense Research And Development Centre 8th platoon company commander, Boris Diaw, tasked to escort the medical equipment from the warzone to Morris

Group! Who are you?"

Phantasma nearly passed out after listening to his introduction.

His subordinates were worse. Some had already fainted on the ground.

Most of them had already collapsed on the ground in fear.

They finally knew where Morris Group sourced out the equipment. They purchased from the Warzone Defense Research and Development Centre! No wonder there is a platoon of soldiers escorting them. Damn it! I regret taking up this job. I wouldn't have the guts to even come here if I knew where this equipment came from! Ron Bale and his crappy friends scammed me!

Phantasma was on the verge of tears. Why didn't you load these items into military vehicles? We would've fled immediately if that was the case!

"Arrest them!" Boris commanded.

Phantasma and his men were detained. They were aware of the implications following their arrests. Our lives are ruined. Completely ruined! But we must not expose our employer. Otherwise, even our family members will face trouble.

In the end, all the equipment arrived safely at Morris Group's pharmaceutical factory.

The machines were finally installed after half a day's work.

The materials procured by Iris had reached too.

They could begin their production starting that night.

Isaiah monitored the whole process as the technical advisor.

Levi tagged along with Isaiah to survey the factory.

Iris was surprised to see Levi. “Why are you here?”

“Why can’t I be here?” Levi answered with a question of his own.

Isaiah smiled awkwardly. “Ms. Anabelle, Mr. Ga... He followed me here...”

Clarity washed over Iris. “Oh, I understand now. No wonder Zoey said you found a job. Did Mr. Wade offer you a position because you are acquainted with him for so long?”

Levi beamed at her. “So what if that’s the case?”

“Fine. I’ll allow you to stay in Morris Group as one of the technical advisors for Zoey’s sake. But I am your superior from now on. You have to address me as Ms. Anabelle whenever you see me.” Iris said proudly.

Iris had always been a competitive person. She felt excited as she thought to herself. I swore to myself six years ago that I will surpass Levi Garrison when he established Levi Group. So I went abroad to further my career. I can’t help but feel a sense of achievement now that he’s my subordinate.

However, she failed to notice the odd expression on Isaiah and Elena's faces.

The person in charge of the pharmaceutical factory, Luka Parker, reported, "We've calibrated all the equipment, Ms. Anabelle. We can start our production tonight."

"Great! Ask everyone to be on standby. We will begin production at 8 o'clock tonight!"

Iris lamented after she was done with the arrangements, "Our boss is too mysterious, isn't he?"

"That's right. So is Mr. Atkinson. Both of them are often missing." Doug and the others added.

The Protector Chapter 257

Elena and Isaiah exchanged glances. They are indeed mysterious. All of you don't even recognize him when he's standing right before your eyes.

Iris said in front of everyone, "Our boss is amazing. He's capable of purchasing the equipment from the Warzone Defense Research And Development Centre. My admiration for him grows more by the day."

"Ms. Anabelle, since you're still single, you should consider pursuing the boss if he's single too." Doug and the others

teased her.

Iris nodded brazenly. “I will definitely pursue him if he’s single! I will become your lady boss in the future!”

Iris had grown accustomed to the culture abroad. She did not shy away from expressing her thoughts.

Levi frowned upon hearing her words. She’s hopeless for harboring an interest in her best friend’s husband.

Morris Group’s procurement spread like wild fire among North Hampton’s business world.

Countless were shocked to their cores, including the wealthiest man in North Hampton, Winston Gonzales. “Morris Group sure has the guts and capabilities to purchase the equipment under the Chamber’s supervision.”

The harsh reality hit the members of the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce harder than anyone else.

Ron Bale and the other councils of the Chamber were losing their minds.

They were overwhelmed by a sense of defeat after failing twice consecutively, in addition to Phantasma’s arrest. Our reputation will be dragged through the mud if the four noble families hear about this.

“Shall we cease all actions and assess their intention for now?”
Ron and the others decided to stop targeting Morris Group temporarily.

Morris Group increased the rate of their production in secret in the last few days.

Levi could finally enter Morris Group freely after Iris appointed him as one of the technical advisors. There are not many people who know my identity anyway.

Nevertheless, Levi appeared to laze around most of the time in the outsiders’ eyes.. They would always see him drinking coffee and puffing on his cigarette while waiting to get off work.

Even Iris was barely suppressing her urge to rebuke Levi’s attitude.

However, none of them knew Levi was the one actually making all the most important decisions in the company.

One day, Azure Dragon and Kirin arrived at Levi’s office while he was sipping on his tea.

“I have something to tell you, Sir. They recently appointed someone to fill in the position of commander-in-chief in the North Hampton Warzone. They will be hosting an appointment ceremony. The vice commander-in-chief, Xander Hoyles, would like to invite you to attend the ceremony.” Azure Dragon said.

Levi smiled. “Do I have to go?”

Kirin answered, “Under normal circumstances, you do not have to attend. But the newly appointed commander-in-chief is someone you’re acquainted with. He’s even one of your subordinates!”

Levi pondered briefly. Then he said, “Could the person you’re talking about be the Iron Brigade’s first platoon commander-in-chief, Percy Covington?” Percy Covington is a brilliant soldier. But he retired from the frontline after suffering an injury. He’s been recuperating in the last two years. He’s my only subordinate who I think qualifies for the commander-in-chief position.

Kirin nodded. “Yes. That’s right. That person is Percy Covington!”

“Alright. Inform the North Hampton Warzone that I will be attending the commander-in-chief’s appointment ceremony. I must witness my subordinate’s moment of glory!” Levi ordered.

“Understood, Sir!”

All the soldiers in the North Hampton Warzone were exhilarated when they received the news of Levi’s participation, especially Xander Hoyles. He was beyond excited. I was worried he would not come previously. Now I can finally rest assured.

Xander Hoyles deliberately informed members of the four noble families, who were in control of the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce, Eric Robinson, Wallace Henderson, and the others.

Eric Robinson and his friends were so enlivened they nearly forgot about the matters related to Morris Group. These matters are insignificant when compared to this ground-

shattering news.

“Has the most glorious moment of our lives arrived? We can finally meet with the protector of Erudia, the God of War, in person!”

“I can finally die in peace after having this opportunity to meet with the God of War!”

The Protector Chapter 258

“We can even disregard Winston Gonzales if we become acquainted with the God of War!”

“That’s right! How many years have we live under Winston Gonzales’s oppression?”

Eric and his gang could not forget about their dispute with Winston Gonzales after all those years.

They wanted to utilize the opportunity to target him. Winston Gonzales has been restricting the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce from expanding our authority.

We will have to eliminate him if we wish to bring the Chamber to the next level. So this commander-in-chief’s appointment ceremony is a once-in-a-lifetime opportunity because only the

God of War can overrule Winston Gonzales!

The North Hampton Chamber of Commerce decided to postpone all of its plans to prioritize the appointment ceremony. They could not care less about Morris Group's progress at that moment.

Meanwhile, at the largest and most luxurious villa in North Hampton.

Every member of the Gonzales family had gathered.

Winston Gonzales was seated on an elevated platform in an imposing manner.

His sons and daughters were seated before him, while his grandchildren stood at the back of the room.

Winston Gonzales had built his empire from scratch, attaining the title of the richest man in North Hampton with his own effort.

His descendants did not bring shame to the family as they were all outstanding and extraordinary people.

Their talents bloomed in multiple fields, including the business, military, and political circles. That was the reason behind the Gonzales family's steadfast power.

They were powerful not only because of their wealth but also because of their connections in every field that are comparable

to the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce.

The Gonzales family outshone the Chamber because they were tied together by a familial bond.

For example, Winston Gonzales's eldest son, Andy Gonzales. He was the youngest chief of staff in the warzone.

Andy said with a smile, "I have good news to tell you, father."

"Oh? Do enlighten me."

Winston Gonzales's well-being had improved significantly lately.

"My warzone's commander-in-chief position has been vacated for quite some time. They recently appointed someone to fill in the position. That man was a member of the Iron Brigade!"

The news piqued Winstone's interest at once. "Oh? That's great news!"

"Most importantly, the God of War will be attending the commander-in-chief's appointment ceremony. He did not want to attend initially, but he changed his mind after knowing his subordinate was the man selected to hold the position." Andy elaborated.

"Ah? The God of War? He will be attending?" Winston was invigorated instantaneously.

"That's right. Moreover, the ceremony will have slots open to members of the society, and you are one of them!" Andy said.

“That means I can finally meet with the God of War?”
Winston’s voice trembled agitatedly.

He had always admired the God of War. The aged man even went to the airport to welcome the God of War when he received news of his arrival at North Hampton. But alas, he was forced to return when a gun was pointed at his head.

He sent out multiple invitations to the God of War afterward but was rejected too.

“Yes. That’s right. You can even interact with him face-to-face.” Andy answered.

He was in charge of the appointment ceremony, including the attendees’ quota.

He was also responsible in arranging the flow of the event. So he knew there would be an interaction session after the ceremony.

“Oh my God! I can even talk to him? This is so exciting!”
Winston stood up excitedly.

Even Una and the other younger members of the family were eyeing Andy with anticipation. “Are we allowed to attend too, Uncle?”

They were eager to meet with the legendary God of War as well.

“It’s difficult, but I’ll see what I can do... This is definitely a worthy experience for all of you to meet with the God of War.”

Andy said.

“That’s right. I heard that the God of War is about the same age as Una and the others. He’s a very impressive man!”
Winston said cheerfully.

The news of the commander-in-chief’s appointment ceremony spread within North Hampton’s community.

It was a golden opportunity for the public to meet with the God of War.

Some were even willing to pay millions to participate in the event.

The Protector Chapter 259

Morris Group achieved great progress in that period of time. They had successfully produced the first batch of products and sent the finished products for quality control tests by the Quality Supervision Bureau.

They could market their products once they received the Bureau's approval.

Everyone could not wait to witness the impactful effect their products would create in the market. They expected the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce to be taken by surprise by that time.

However, the few council members of the Chamber kept themselves updated with news related to that matter.

Ron even invited Tom, Charlie and Sasha to join in on their discussion.

"I want to ask your opinion on this matter. Why do you think Morris Group hired Isaiah Wade?" Ron and the other council members were confused by Morris Group's intention, so they sought out the newcomers' thoughts.

"Mr. Bale, frankly speaking, Isaiah is indeed a competent person. Perhaps Morris Group is trying to explore the medical technology market. Isaiah is a suitable candidate if that's the case." Tom explained.

“Is there any possibility that Isaiah possesses all the information on the core technology?” That was Ron and the other council member’s primary concern.

“That’s not possible! Back then, Levi Garrison handed one-third of the information to each of us to keep the balance. No one, not even Levi, is in possession of all the information unless the three of us get together.” Charlie said firmly.

The other two nodded in agreement.

“Haha, that means the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce is the only party who knows all about the core technology!” Ron laughed.

“Yes. That’s right.” The trio nodded again.

“But Morris Group has been acting mysteriously lately. I don’t know what they are doing. I’ve arranged my men to investigate, but nothing came up...” Ron sighed.

“You should’ve asked for my assistance, Mr. Bale.” Sasha grinned wickedly at him.

“You?”

“That’s right. I can meet up with Isaiah! That cripple will listen to me. Even though I had a fall out with him, I am certain that he will inform me of everything if I flatter him a little. After all, I was the one who tricked him into telling me the last part of the information related to the core technology!”

“Okay. Then I will let you handle this matter. If you can obtain classified information about Morris Group this time, I will let you fill in the vice director’s position in my company’s PR department!”

“Don’t worry. I’ll show you my capabilities, Mr. Bale!”

Sasha was excited. That’s an executive-level position in Bale Group. I can finally become an official elite member of society.

Malicious intent glinted in Sasha’s eyes after she exited Bale Group’s building. “Do you think you are going to prosper in Morris Group, Isaiah Wade? Well, don’t you worry. I will report your wrongdoing to Morris Group for disclosing classified information after I trick you into telling me everything. I can guarantee your reputation will be ruined by that time. No company in the entire North Hampton will want to hire you in the future!”

They wanted to drive Isaiah to his death.

Meanwhile, Isaiah had been working hard in the factory’s frontline all this while.

He could finally breathe a sigh of relief after the finished products were sent for QC tests.

They subjected their products to two kinds of QC tests.

One batch of the products were sent to the Quality Supervision Bureau, while another batch was sent to the Warzone Defense Research And Development Centre.

Isaiah was confident in the quality of the products.

Levi found him just as he was about to work on refining the next product.

“Did you know why I forbade you from getting a divorce back then?” Levi asked all of a sudden.

Isaiah scratched and shook his head.

“We will be letting them off too easy if you divorce her just like that.” Levi smiled.

“Mr. Garrison, you’re saying...” Isaiah did not understand Levi’s intention.

“Let’s go. Come with me to a place.” Levi said.

“Okay. I’ll listen to you, Mr. Garrison.” Isaiah tagged along.

The two of them got into a car and went all the way to the suburbs.

They finally arrived at their destination after two hours.

Isaiah was terrified and dumbfounded as he looked at the buildings before his eyes.

The Protector Chapter 260

The building in question was none other than the North Hampton Warzone Defense Research And Development Centre.

The head of the logistic department, Kyrie Duncan, welcomed Levi and Isaiah in person.

“There’s no need to raise a commotion. We are only here for a visit.” Levi said in a diminished tone.

Kyrie nodded.

Then he led Levi into the Defense Research And Development Centre facilities.

Isaiah was amazed.

They went straight toward the Quality Control Department.

Kyrie introduced Isaiah to his colleagues, “This is the main designer in producing this batch of products by Morris Group.”

Kyrie’s colleagues stared at Isaiah in surprise.

“You’re so impressive! We’ve tested the quality of your products, and they’re even better than the marketed products by the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce. This medical equipment will create a significant impact if it’s introduced into the market. This will definitely benefit the public!”

Turns out the Defense Research And Development Centre had completed the quality control tests and they were in awe by the designer's prowess.

Levi brought Isaiah to interact with the technicians because he had an idea.

Levi said to Kyrie, "I think Isaiah is a suitable candidate to become the Defense Research And Development Centre's technical advisor in medical equipment. What's your opinion on this suggestion?"

Kyrie beamed at once. "That's great! We do need more talents in this field. Our country's advancement in medical technology is lagging compared to other nations. We will certainly flourish better with the addition of talents like Mr. Wade!"

"Alright. Then you will make the necessary arrangement. Also, provide him with a military rank." Levi ordered.

"Okay. No problem. I will handle this immediately."

Kyrie was done with all the arrangements in less than half an hour.

Isaiah looked at the identifications and the set of military outfit in a daze.

Feeling perplexed, he asked Levi. "Mr. Garrison, does this mean I am considered as a soldier now?"

"That's right! You are now the technical advisor here! But you

will have to work harder in the future because you will need to visit this place and guide them too.”

“I will not disappoint you!” Isaiah saluted Levi in a less professional manner.

He grasped the identification and regarded Levi with touching emotions in his heart. He is the man who provided me a second chance in life.

“Remember this. Put your knowledge to proper use. Serve the public and bring honor to our nation!” Levi patted his shoulder.

After Isaiah got off work in the night, Sasha called him unexpectedly.

“Can you spare some time to meet with me, Isaiah? I have something important to talk to you about. Let’s meet at 8 o’clock tonight at Silver Cross...”

Isaiah’s heart softened, listening to Sasha. She’s the woman I loved for over ten years, after all. Even her voice can easily sway my heart.

But Isaiah was sensible enough to seek Levi’s opinion on whether he should accept Sasha’s invitation.

“Of course! You must go. I’ll accompany you.” Levi responded.

In the end, Levi tagged along with Isaiah to Silver Cross.

Levi attached a spy camera on Isaiah and placed a recorder in his hand before entering the building.

“She’s committing extra-marital affairs. So we have to start gathering evidence. Do you know what I mean?” Levi asked.

“Understood!” Isaiah grasped the recorder in his hand. I swear to make that shameless couple pay for what they did!

Levi beamed at him. “Moreover, you’re the technical advisor at the Warzone Defense Research And Development Centre. That means you’re a soldier and her unfaithful act has disrupted a soldier’s marriage.

This offence can place them behind bars for the rest of their lives. Not to mention the other crimes they’ve committed, such as disclosing classified information, business fraud, and many more. They will suffer terribly once we collect sufficient evidence against them.”

Boom!

Isaiah was stunned.

The Protector Chapter 261

It dawned on him that he was a technical consultant for the Defense Research And Development Centre.

He was still married to Sasha.

What she was doing was sabotaging a military marriage.

Suddenly he understood why Levi would not let him get a divorce.

So this was the reason!

Yet, everything was legal as well as reasonable.

It was Sasha who was unfaithful to their marriage, was it not?

They had also been dishonest and leaked the core technology, had they not?

They deserved to face the consequences of their wrongdoing.

After regaining his composure, Isaiah came to the restaurant they had agreed upon.

What surprised him was that Sasha was not alone. Tom and Charlie were also there.

Seeing Isaiah limping in, Tom sneered, "Didn't I say that this cripple would hobble over as soon as he hears Sasha's voice?"

“Is this a dud or a man? He knows full well that his wife is sleeping around, yet he still comes the moment she calls! What a loser!” Charlie sneered.

Sasha kissed Charlie on the cheek, she laughed and said, “Why don’t you guys say it’s because I am irresistible?”

“Haha... that goes without saying!”

On purpose, Charlie grabbed Sasha right before Isaiah’s eyes.

Isaiah was shocked again.

He came to a sudden realization that this slut was not only cheating on him with Tom but was also having an affair with Charlie.

I have become a cuckold by the hands of my apprentices.

How adulterous is this woman in her private life?

She’s no different than a whore!

Isaiah suppressed his raging emotions and sat down in front of the three of them.

“You said you need to see me, right? What is it about?” Isaiah asked coldly.

“Since you’re here, I’ll be frank with you! Tell me what is going on in Morris Group? Tell me everything!”

Sasha did not even attempt to make some small talk. She went straight to the point.

Isaiah sneered, “Why would I tell you?”

“Haha, after being with Morris Group for a few days, you think you’ve grown strong? If you still love Sasha, tell us everything now!” Tom smirked.

Sasha put on a piteous look, beguiling him, “Isaiah, will you keep things from me? If you don’t tell me, I’ll get into trouble...”

“No way! These are company secrets which I cannot reveal to you. You have tricked me before but I won’t fall for your tricks again.”

Isaiah was firm, unlike before.

However, Sasha and the two adulterers merely smiled.

Evidently, they had already thought of a way to handle Isaiah’s determination.

“You won’t tell us? Don’t force us to make you do it!” Charlie said threateningly.

“Are you going to beat me up?”

Isaiah knew he had Levi backing him, so he was not the least afraid.

“You think we won’t beat you? Let me tell you this. Six years ago, I sent some men to break your leg. At that time, I was already sleeping with your wife!” Tom laughed as he said this.

Boom

The news hit Isaiah like a bolt of thunder.

“Remember the forty million in your account? We’re the ones that took it, it was not used to fill the public funds!” Charlie said with a sneer.

Isaiah clenched his fists so tight that his veins popped out.

Sasha laughed and said, "Isaiah, if you don't tell me what's Morris Group planning, I'll shame you in public!"

"Huh? What do you mean?" Isaiah asked in puzzlement.

"Isn't your dignity the most important thing to you all this while? If you don't tell me, I'll tell the crowd here that you are my husband. Then, I will kiss these two men!"

Sasha cackled.

Her plan was to do something so immoral in public before her husband's very eyes.

This was every man's worst insult.

There have been men who had jumped off tall buildings when they were insulted by their wives in this way.

Those were men like Isaiah who valued their pride above all else.

They could never accept the disgrace their wives brought to them.

The Protector Chapter 262

Sasha knew Isaiah's character and his temperament.

She knew that he valued his pride and would never allow that to happen.

So she attacked his weak point!

"You... you, slut!"

As expected, Isaiah was provoked.

He nearly jumped to his feet, clenched his fists and shouted in anger.

If everyone knew his wife was unfaithful and acted shamelessly right in front of him, he would not be able to control himself.

He just could not accept this.

"Well? Aren't you telling us?"

Seeing Isaiah struggling with himself, Sasha felt untold pleasure.

She could abuse Isaiah any time she wished.

Just when Isaiah was struggling within, Levi's voice came through the hidden earpiece in his ear, "Let her do it! Isn't that exactly the evidence we need?"

Levi had been watching the whole scene unfold before him through remote cameras.

Levi's words brought Isaiah to his senses. That's right!

Aren't I here to gather evidence?

What Sasha is threatening to do is exactly the evidence I need!

Isaiah shot daggers at her and spat angrily, "You dare to do it?"

"Why won't I dare?"

Sasha laughed.

She stood up and spoke to the people around her, "Everyone, look this way!"

The crowd did not know what was going on, but they looked anyway.

Sasha was observing Isaiah all the while.

Though Isaiah was angry, he did not try to stop her.

When she saw him unmoving, she knew she had to up her game.

"Everyone look here. This is my husband, a cripple!"

"And now he's pushing me to other men!" Sasha shouted loudly.

Everyone looked towards Isaiah.

Isaiah spoke angrily, "You are the one who has been unfaithful. Why do you say I'm pushing you to them?"

Seeing how stubborn Isaiah was, Charlie stood up, sneering, "That's right! Your wife has been cheating on you!"

Tom laughed in a perverted way, “Both of us have been sleeping with your wife for six years! You’re just a cripple! You can’t do anything!”

“We have been taking care of your wife. What can you do about it?”

They felt no shame at all, going public.

He knew with the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce backing them, this would not be reported in the news.

That was the reason why he was so reckless in order to force Isaiah to speak out.

Sasha then kissed Tom and Charlie on their faces, she laughed and said, “You cripple, I have been cheating on you. But what can you do about it?”

As Sasha and the two men flaunt their immoral acts in public, Isaiah felt his last shred of dignity left him.

Isaiah was furious to breaking point!

Yet, he suppressed his fury .

He felt emotionally unstable.

Sasha and the two men were surprised.

How can this cripple tolerate such act?

This is unbelievable!

“You cripple, you really won’t tell us? Alright, then! Divorce! We will get a divorce!”

Seeing Isaiah standing firm, Sasha changed her tactics and threatened to divorce him.

Isaiah stood up, “Hmph! Let’s do it. We’ll get a divorce as you wish!”

With that, Isaiah turned and started to leave.

Sasha and the two men were dumbfounded.

Something’s not right!

Why did Isaiah not respond to the carrot or the stick?

No! We can’t let him leave without the information we need about Morris Group.

They hurriedly caught up to him.

“Isaiah! You cripple, you can’t leave!”

The three of them were about to stop Isaiah when a man suddenly stepped out in front of them. The man was none other than Levi.

“Move aside, this is between us and Isaiah. It’s none of your business!”

Charlie and Tom tried to push Levi aside but it felt as if they were pushing at a mountain with their bare hands. Levi did not budge at all.

“Get lost!”

They were about to attack Levi.

Smack!

Slam!

Somehow, Levi landed two hard slaps on Charlie and Tom's faces.

The slap threw the men a few meters away and a few of their teeth flew out.

The Protector Chapter 263

Everyone looked at Levi in disbelief.

How is he so strong?

"Aren't you going to scam?" Levi asked coldly, glaring at the bewildered Sasha.

Sasha ran off immediately.

Levi then left with Isaiah.

"Levi, Isaiah, we won't forget this. Just watch out, we're going to get you for this."

As they watched Levi and Isaiah depart, Charlie and Tom were full of anger and hatred.

Before Sasha left, she asked the crowd if anyone had taken photos or video clips.

After confirming that no one did, only then did they leave.

After leaving the restaurant, Isaiah bawled his eyes out.

He was just an ordinary guy who wanted to live a peaceful life.

However, these scoundrels had victimized him and changed his outlook.

How cruel of them to treat him this way.

“I know you still have a glimmer of hope in your heart for Sasha before. But you can finally see the situation clearly now, don’t you?” Levi asked.

“It’s clear now!”

“Mr. Garrison, after this, I shall gather and list down all the evidence properly! I’ll make sure these three bastards stay in prison for the rest of their lives!”

Before this, Isaiah did not have the heart to punish Sasha, but now his mind was made up.

His last vestige of love for her had been completely used up!

“Hmm, good.”

Meanwhile, Charlie and Tom were not satisfied to let things be.

“No! Levi must be crippled, too. I will break Isaiah’s other leg as well!” Tom covered his face with his hand, speaking coldly.

Charlie nodded his head in agreement, “Exactly, these two must be crippled!”

Sasha said quietly, “Shall I contact the hitmen?”

“Yes, who can you get?” The two men asked in unison.

Sasha smiled, "I know some people from a gym. A few of them are Kickboxing coaches who have worked as hitmen before in the underground society of gangsters. One of them had just been released from prison. They are ruthless. If they do the job, Levi and Isaiah will never be able to use their limbs again."

"Great! You go and get these people. Tomorrow, we shall turn those wretches into cripples!" The two men said angrily.

After a night of collecting and sorting, the required evidence was complete.

Just as Isaiah was thinking about the next step, he received a call from Sasha unexpectedly.

"Isaiah, can you come over for a while? I realize I was wrong! I'm not fit to be your wife. Let's divorce, alright? I don't want to be a burden to you anymore."

Sasha sounded humble in order to trick Isaiah into walking into her trap.

"Alright, let's divorce, then!"

Isaiah agreed to her request.

"Can you also ask Levi to come along and be a witness?" Sasha asked.

Isaiah lifted his eyes to look at Levi and the latter nodded his head in agreement.

"Fine, Mr. Garrison agreed." Isaiah replied.

"Okay, we'll be waiting for you at Youth Troupe Commercial Building 2009, opposite the Civil Affairs Bureau!"

Sasha heaved a sigh of relief.

They were ready.

Several muscular fitness coaches were already on standby.

Steel pipes had been prepared.

“Isaiah, you’re really a fool to come whenever I beckon you.”

Sasha smiled, her expression full of malice and cruelty.

Levi and Isaiah were ready to leave for the meeting.

Isaiah called the relevant department, “Hello, how are you? I am reporting someone disrupting a military marriage. I’m serving in Defense Research And Development Centre. My Id is ISA-4031. Yes, that is correct. I have the evidence. The location is Youth Troupe Commercial Building 2009.”

In addition, he called the commercial crime investigation department and told them about Sasha’s commercial and other crimes.

“Come on, let’s go and watch the show!”

Levi and Isaiah arrived at the Youth Troupe Commercial Building and entered room 2009.

Bang!

The door slammed shut.

Several huge strong men appeared before them holding steel pipes...

The Protector Chapter 264

The muscles of these seven to eight people were well-developed, especially the biceps, which were as big as human heads.

The muscles lining the arms and legs bulged so much that they look like there were snakes hidden under their skin.

In addition, they were huge and looked more terrifying than normal gangsters.

These were physiques trained in the gym with the help of protein supplements. They may not be real fighters but their size were frightening enough.

The moment they appeared, Isaiah got the shock of his life.

In their presence, he felt small.

Their arms were bigger than his thighs. Just one punch would be enough to kill him, he thought.

Inside the room, Sasha, accompanied by Charlie and Tom, approached step by step.

One side of Tom's face was swollen, and the same can be said for Charlie as well. They gazed at Levi with malicious intents.

"Haha, Isaiah, are you stupid? You just come whenever I asked you to?" Sasha laughed aloud.

She looked at Isaiah as if he was a retard.

Tom sneered, “Levi, something is definitely wrong with your brain. I didn’t expect you to tag along with him without any hesitation.”

Levi laughed, “This concerns my staff, I’m going to see it through!”

Isaiah was very touched.

If not for Levi, he wondered how these three would continue to use and abuse him.

Isaiah said anxiously, “You... what are you trying to do?”

Charlie looked at Isaiah’s left leg and said with a sneer, “Isn’t it obvious? We want to cripple this leg as well!”

Sasha’s face was pure evil as she said, “That’s right, Isaiah, you dare to defy me. I guarantee for the rest of your life, you can only crawl around.”

Charlie and Tom turned their gaze towards Levi, “Rest assured, we have not forgotten about you, Mr. Garrison. You dared to attack us both, didn’t you? Apparently, you must have forgotten how your leg was broken 6 years ago!”

“Yeah, you recovered after a stint in prison, didn’t you? Today, we will cripple you so Isaiah will have company!”

“Hahaha...”

The three of them looked at each other and laughed hysterically.

In their eyes, with these ruthless fitness coaches as their henchmen, there was no escape for Levi and Isaiah.

“You people are so cruel. Aren’t you afraid of karma?” Isaiah asked.

“Karma? Is there even such a thing? We have enjoyed ourselves throughout these six years, haven’t we? So what Karma are you talking about?”

The three of them laughed gleefully again.

“You... are shameless! Beasts!”

Isaiah who was just a simple, honest and law-abiding citizen was bullied to the extent where he cursed aloud.

Sasha glanced at the two of them and guffawed, “Now, if you both kneel down and apologize, perhaps we will consider letting you off the hook!”

As she spoke, those fitness coaches took a step forward.

They waved the steel pipes held in their hands.

Isaiah was scared out of his wits.

His body was shaking continuously.

Sasha and her two adulterous partners laughed mockingly at the sight of him trembling, “What a worthless trash! Even though Levi is a good-for-nothing himself, at least he is slightly better than you.”

Levi smiled and sat down on a chair nearby.

He crossed his legs and even lit a cigarette.

He did not look even a bit anxious.

The trio were dumbfounded by his actions.

Sasha asked him, “Levi, aren’t you scared? I’m telling you. If you would kneel before me and crawl on the floor between my legs, I’ll let you off the hook this time!”

“And us, too! Mr. Garrison, if you would crawl on the floor between our legs, we will let you live!”

Tom and Charlie were eager to see Levi crawl on the floor under them.

After all, he was their former boss!

This demeaning act would really satisfy their ego!

Levi took a puff of his cigarette, he smiled and said, “If you would kneel down before me, perhaps, I’ll consider putting in a good word for you!”

The Protector Chapter 265

At that moment, Isaiah came to a full realization of the situation and he pointed his finger at Sasha, saying, “That’s right! Sasha and you two other, worthless beasts. Kneel before me and I’ll give you a lighter sentence. Otherwise, you three wretches will definitely regret it!”

At the words of Levi and Isaiah, the trio were stunned.

Have Levi and Isaiah gone crazy?

Don’t they understand the situation?

They’re the ones facing a disaster, don’t they know that?

We are not the ones stuck in a sticky situation!

At Isaiah's words, Sasha and her gang were furious.

"Are you not aware of it yet? You three are dumb asses!" Isaiah sneered.

He had never seen anyone so foolish before.

Sasha screamed, "Bash them up! Kill them! I want them to crawl out of here by the time we're done!"

The fitness coaches who were already impatient to attack rushed towards Levi and Isaiah, waving the steel pipes held in their hands.

Slam!

At that precise moment, the locked door was burst open suddenly by force.

In the next moment, a group of uniformed men rushed in.

They were patrolling police and army guards.

"Don't move! Put down your weapons!"

"Don't move!"

The group of fitness instructors did not even have the time to respond before they were all struck down onto the floor.

The sudden pain that hit them as they struck the floor finally brought them to their senses.

It turned out that their attackers were the troops and patrols.

It's over!

We're doomed.

Using her sex appeal, Sasha had lured the fitness instructors here to beat up Levi and Isaiah.

Never did the muscle men had imagine that they would get into this type of trouble!

However, it was not only them, Sasha and her two male partners were in a world of troubles as well.

Tom looked at Levi and Isaiah in disbelief and shock, he said, "You reported to the police?"

"Not exactly. They're here to see you for other reasons, but since they happened to see that you're armed, I guess they'll have to add another charge!" Levi smiled as he explained.

Sasha and her partners in crime looked on in astonishment.

If it's only a police report, only the patrolling police should be there.

Why is it that the troops are also here?

They felt puzzled!

They were confused and bewildered!

The Captain of the West Point Detachment, Timothy Lourdes led the team. He issued the arrest warrant, "According to conclusive evidence, Sasha and the three of you have committed crimes of intentional injury, commercial fraud,

embezzlement of public funds, disclosure of company secrets and so on. You are now under arrest!”

“Oh, that’s right! There’s two more charges, namely immoral activities outside of marriage and armed assault!” Timothy added.

After all, everyone had seen what they were doing moments ago.

These charges were by no means, trivial.

To make matters worse, there were more to be added!

Hearing these, the three were shocked.

It was the end for them.

All their crimes had been discovered and brought to light.

They had to confess as it was obvious.

However, what did the troops appearance mean?

Why are the troops here?

The three criminals were stupefied!

At this time, the first officer with the rank of lieutenant came to Sasha and her partners in crime. He showed them his credentials and said: “I am Kenneth Wayne from the Political Department of the North Hampton Warzone! According to conclusive evidence, the three of you are suspected of sabotaging a military marriage! The Joint Law Enforcement Agency is hereby putting you under arrest! Any objections?”

“What? Sabotaging of a military marriage?”

The three of them widened their eyes in disbelief.

No doubt, Sasha had been immoral in having extra-marital affairs.

But how does that involve any military marriage?

Isaiah is not the member of any troop!

Which military marriage did they get involved in?

“Sir, I have objections. Where did the military marriage come from? We don’t understand!”

Tom asked the question.

“Right! When did we commit any military marriage crime? Sir, have you made a mistake?”

Sasha and Charlie’s eyes were full of bewilderment and they were puzzled.

The Protector Chapter 266

Kenneth Wayne cast a glance at Isaiah and said, “He works for the National Military, so Sasha having an affair is considered as violating the military marriage law.”

“What?! He is a military personnel? No he can’t be. I’ve been with him for ten years, how can I not know if he is?”

Sasha was totally bewildered.

Tom and Charlie were both puzzled, “Yeah! What type of soldier is Isaiah?”

Kenneth sneered, “Comrade Isaiah is in the Defense Research And Development Centre Technical Team! He is of course, considered a soldier, isn’t he?”

“What? Why didn’t I know that?”

Sasha and the other two adulterers were so frightened that their hearts leapt to their throats.

Isaiah came before the three of them, took out his Identity card and waved it in front of them.

Their eyes widened in surprise as they read the information and seal on the card. Terrified, they broke out in cold sweat.

It’s real...

Isaiah is really working for the Defense Research And Development Centre!

When did this happen?

How could I not know?

Sasha's eyes opened so wide in surprise that it seemed like they would pop out anytime...

Tom suddenly came to a realization and he stared at Levi in horror, "Now I know why you didn't allow the divorce to go through last time. Was this the reason?"

Levi smiled and said, "Well, it was a coincidence! No matter what, I would not let this woman dissolve the marriage so easily. Unforeseen by us, Isaiah's performance for the Centre was outstanding and he got the offer to work for them as a technical consultant. So naturally, what you are doing now is against the military's marriage law."

"You..."

Tom was so agitated that he almost fainted while Sasha and Charlie looked at each other in desperation.

They had fallen into Levi's trap!

Even though Isaiah only commenced his job at the Centre just recently, sabotaging a military marriage was a serious crime. They would face the consequences of their heinous actions.

Seeing the three of them in this state, Isaiah felt vindicated.

He laughed, "Hahaha, never did the three of you expect this day, did you? Didn't you say that there is no karma? Now you know, karma does exist. You just have to wait for it!"

A new thought occurred to Tom and he asked, "Do you have evidence to prove that I am violating the law?"

Thought that there was hope, Sasha joined, "Yeah, show us the proof of what you accused us of."

Hearing this, Levi laughed.

He took out a USB memory disk and projected a video on the wall.

It was a video taken yesterday of the three humiliating Isaiah.

Not only did they admit to adultery, but they also confessed to embezzlement of public funds and malicious wounding.

"You bast*rd! You have a camera and microphone on you?!"

After knowing the truth, Sasha and the other two went crazy.

Yesterday, they made sure to check if the crowd had taken any videos or photos but they didn't check on Isaiah.

"So what else have you got to say?" Kenneth Wayne asked.

He exchanged glances with Timothy Lourdes.

Everything that had happened earlier was mind-blowing to the three.

They would spend years in prison!

Levi waved his hand, saying, "Please leave us for now. I want to talk to them in private."

Kenneth and Timothy left them and waited outside the door.

Looking at the three, Levi laughed, "Isaiah, I told you. They are going to regret their actions one day. How do you feel now?"

"Never better! Serves you right!" Isaiah shouted.

Sasha was so anxious that she was about to cry.

Thud!

She fell on her knees, hugging his legs. The woman wept and cried, "Isaiah, forgive me this once. I swear I'll be a good wife and mother in future. I will not mess around anymore!"

"It's true. We're wrong! Master, please forgive us!"

The Protector Chapter 267

They believed that if Isaiah spoke up for them, they would have a chance. At the very least, they could spend less time in jail.

"Slut, you are not worthy of me. Get lost!" Smack!

Isaiah fiercely slapped her on the face.

Slam! Wham! Smack!

"And you beasts! You are unworthy to be my students! Scram!"

Isaiah ferociously kicked the two men a few times.

“No... please...”

Sasha and the two men regretted.

In their whole lives, they regretted this moment the most!

In the end, Sasha, the two men, and the fitness trainers were all taken away.

What awaited them were years of imprisonment!

By afternoon, due to their social status, everyone soon heard the news about Tom and Charlie.

Ron and the others were shocked.

Could this be the end of Levi Group’s two traitors?

This showed that Morris Group was very powerful!

The four giants in the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce were still busy with the commander-in-chief at the ceremony, so they had no time to take care of them.

“Fortunately, the technologies of the Levi Group were leaked by themselves. Otherwise, we would be in trouble this time.” Ron said with relief.

“Yeah, it’s a good thing we were not involved!” Braylen Stewart added.

Wildan Saenz wondered, “We have underestimated the Morris Group. I think they are up to something really big.”

“Agree. However, the Morris Group is so secretive!” Ron said.

Not knowing what your competitors were doing could be a worrisome factor.

At this moment, Xawery Yount rushed in breathlessly.

“I know what the Morris Group is doing.”

Gulping some water, Xawery Yount continued, “They have produced a batch of medical devices, but I don’t know more details of it. Now all of it has been sent to the Quality Inspection Bureau for testing! If they pass the inspection, it will be mass-produced and listed!”

“Who gave you this information?” Wildan Saenz asked.

“A distant cousin of mine who happens to work in the Bureau told me.” Xawery Yount replied.

“It doesn’t matter what Morris Group has produced. We’ll sabotage everything they do.” Ron and the others arrived at this decision.

Xawery Yount smiled, “That’s easy! That is in my relative’s jurisdiction! Without doubt, we can undermine Morris Group’s progress!”

Ron smiled, “Good. No matter what products the Morris Group sends in for inspection, reject them will do!”

Wildan Saenz asked, “Fred, why don’t you ask that cousin of yours to join us sometime? We can’t keep asking him to run errands for us for nothing.”

“Yeah. We will be asking him for help quite often in the future.” Braylen Stewart went along.

“Well, how about dinner at Lufthansa Club tonight? My treat. Let’s invite him!”
Ron stood up and announced with a laugh.

...

The next day, at the Morris Group head office.

Everyone was waiting for the good news from the Quality Inspection Bureau, hoping to start expanding their production line.

Right on time, a vehicle drove up to the entrance and three officers came out of the car.

Iris personally went to receive the visitors.

The leader, a young man, looked at Iris and the others with disdain.

He threw the quality inspection report to Iris and sneered, “What is the Morris Group trying to do? Do you really plan to launch this kind of bad product into the market? What you have produced is a medical device! What if something happens to the users? Can you bear the consequences?”

“Oh? What is the matter? Did it fail the test?” Isaiah asked in a low voice.

“Yes, terribly!”

The Protector Chapter 268

His two companions said in confirmation, "That's right. We tested it three times and it failed all of it! Your product is of inferior quality!"

The young man Tony looked at Iris with disgust in his eyes, saying, "Morris Group, I'm warning you. If you continue to send in product like this, I will still reject them!"

"Hmph, you guys better think over it! The inspection result was way below acceptable!"

"The next test is in a week's time!"

Tony left quickly after that.

Morris Group was not given even a chance to appeal!

Iris and the others hurriedly read the quality inspection report.

Finished reading, everyone was furious.

The reason was exasperating.

Iris and the team suspected that the quality inspection department had failed the product without even examining it.

The issues they had highlighted on were totally irrelevant to their products.

It was ridiculous!

Immediately, they realized that someone had sabotaged them.

The inspectors must have failed their product on purpose.

They didn't want Morris Group's products to be launched.

At this point, Levi walked leisurely toward them.

"What happened?" He asked.

Someone walked him through the situation and Levi was shocked.

It was impossible for that procedure to go wrong.

Seems like they have someone in the Bureau.

"Alright. I'll bring the product to the Bureau personally this afternoon and insist for an inspection on the spot! Let's see who dares to fail it. After all, this has been approved by the Defense Research And Development Centre!" Levi said.

"Will this work?" Iris asked.

"Do you have other alternative?"

Iris was silenced by Levi's question.

Everyone in the Morris Group was anxious.

On the contrary, Levi was calm, sipping his tea and smoking.

In the office, he sat leaning against the back of his chair.

Then he dialed Jesse Nielsen's number, "Jesse, I'll go straight to the point. Who is in charge of Quality Inspection Bureau?"

"Cameron."

"Good. Please tell him that I'm inviting him over to Morris Group for some tea!" Levi smiled and said.

After that, he called the Logistics Minister and asked him to invite Samson, the person-in-charge for DRDC's Quality Inspection Department over to Morris Group as well.

Shortly, Samson arrived.

To him, this was definitely the highlight of his life.

Him having tea with the God of War? Man he could brag this forever!

Even the deputy commander-in-chief would envy him.

However, there's a reason why Samson was invited.

He was asked to bring the quality inspection report of the medical instrument.

Not long afterwards, Cameron arrived in a state of panic.

He left his meeting in a hurry as soon as he heard about Levi's invitation.

"Captain Cameron, don't be nervous. Take a seat!"

Levi smiled as he spoke.

The trembling man obediently sat down on Levi's sofa.

The host waved his hand and Azure Dragon poured Cameron a cup of tea.

Holding the cup in his hands, Cameron dared not take a sip.

This important man wouldn't summon me here for nothing.

"Captain Cameron, do you know why I'm looking for you? Levi asked.

Cameron stood up immediately, shook his head and replied, "Chief, please enlighten me!"

"Recently, Morris Group has produced a batch of medical devices and sent them to your department for quality inspection. Are you aware of this?" Levi asked.

Cameron shook his head, "I am not. My subordinates didn't inform me anything about it."

The Protector Chapter 269

"Oh, okay! Then let me do it. Not long ago, someone from your department delivered this, and told me that those medical devices are way below the passing grades. Not only that, but he also threatened to reject whatever products we send in for inspection!" Levi said.

"Huh? Did this really happen?"

Anxious, Cameron broke out in cold sweat.

"Shh... Let me finish. Before these devices reached the Bureau, I sent it to the Defense Research And Development Centre for quality inspection. After all, they

will be used in the medical industry, and I don't want any issues. Guess what? Not only were they qualified, but the results were also perfect in every aspect!"

Levi glanced at Samson and smiled, saying, "Let me introduce you to Samson, the head of the Quality Inspection Department from DRDC."

Samson handed the report to Cameron, "Captain Cameron, we tested this product five times, and not once did it fail the test. In fact, it is way better than all of the models available in the market."

With trembling knees, Cameron started flipping through the report.

At the same time, Levi handed another stack of document to him and said, "Captain Cameron, now this is from your department."

Finished reading everything, Cameron nearly fainted from fright.

The second report's content was obviously nonsense.

They clearly did not know what product they were analyzing, and simply rejected it.

Cameron was furious.

This was done on purpose by somebody.

How can this somebody be in my department?

Worst of all, it involves the God of War!

Isn't he courting for death?

Levi smiled, "Luckily I was careful about the inspection and sent this to Samson first. Otherwise, I'll be doomed!"

“Chief, it’s my fault! I did not discipline my staff enough!” Cameron bowed and said.

“Alright then. Now that we know where the problem lies, let’s solve it. Conduct the second inspection now and I’ll come along. I am sure it will pass, won’t it?” Said Levi while he started moving toward the door.

That tone sent chill down Cameron’s spine.

He knew that this was serious.

Immediately, he went along.

So did Samson.

Azure Dragon drove them to the Bureau.

There were several cars parked at the entrance as well.

Those senior managers from Ron’s side were spotted coming down from the vehicles.

Tony came out personally to greet them with a big smile on his face.

Levi got down from the car, but he instructed Cameron to remain inside.

When Tony saw the group, he snorted, “Hey Morris Group, what brings you here again?”

Hearing the name ‘Morris Group’, smirks were evident on Ron and his subordinates’ faces.

Morris Group wants a recheck?

Dream it!

Levi smiled, "Obviously, we are here for a second inspection."

Tony immediately replied, "Are you all deaf? Didn't I say come back in a week?"

"A week? Since when there is such regulation?"

Not losing his gentlemanly smile, Levi said again, "Besides, there is no issue with our product. Can't we appeal?"

Ron and his men laughed, "I guess you're here to cause trouble. Didn't you hear Tony? Come back after one week. As business organizations, we have to abide by regulations!"

"That's right. Guys, learn from the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce!" Tony said in agreement.

"Please enlighten me. Who made the rule for that one week timeframe?" Levi asked coldly.

Tony replied angrily, "I did. So what?"

"So your word is law in the Bureau?"

"That's right!"

The Protector Chapter 270

Tony was really arrogant, acting almighty.

“That’s true. Captain Tony is in charge of the report section. If he says you pass, you pass!”

“Exactly. If he wishes to fail any product, there you go. In the Bureau, Captain Tony’s word is law!”

In reply, Xawery Yount and Ron laughed.

Tony looked at Levi with disdain, “Today, the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce has also sent their products in for quality inspection. I don’t even need to run through any analysis, and I’ll give them a pass!”

As he spoke, his assistant who was on standby, handed Ron the quality inspection report.

Everyone present watched in disbelief...

Ridiculous!

Taking over the report, Ron looked at Levi and laughed, “Now you know who is the man in charge of the Bureau.”

Tony glared at Levi and barked angrily, “Now get lost! I’m telling you. Within these six months, I will not pass any products you send in!”

“So powerful, aren’t you? Do the Bureau Chief has to obey your word as well?”
Levi sneered in reply.

Tony was taken aback at first but he quickly recovered and laughed, “Of course! Captain Cameron is my mentor who personally brought me into this department! He listens to all my words!”

“So loser, if you have any wild wishes that I’ll pass your product, drop it!”

Levi listened to Tony’s rhetoric.

With a meaningful smile, he shouted toward his car, “Captain Cameron, did you hear that? In the Bureau, Tony’s word is law. Have you been vacated from your position?”

“Hmm? Captain Cameron?”

Tony and his group were stunned. They looked around but saw no one.

“Who are you trying to bluff? Too bad it won’t work! Even if he were here, he would obey me!”

Tony was masquerading ridiculously!

“Tony, you scoundrel! When did the Bureau come under your control?”

Suddenly, an angry voice was heard coming from the car and someone got down in a rage.

“Chief... Chief Cam... I... Yo-you...”

Looking at the person storming toward him, Tony was stupefied and his mouth trembled, unable to speak coherently.

“No, no, no, you are the Chief! I’m your subordinate! Your word is the law here!” Cameron was so furious that he felt like giving Tony a few slaps across his face.

“Chief Cameron, I-I’m sorry... I did not mean what I said!”

Tony almost knelt in front of Cameron.

“What about your arrogant attitude barely a moment ago? Aren’t you the boss here?” Cameron snorted.

“No, Chief Cameron. Master, I was wrong... I didn’t mean to overstep you! I just wanted to share your worries!” Tony spoke hurriedly.

Cameron pointed his finger at Tony’s nose, “You are fired! Never ever step into the Bureau again!”

Boom!

This was a real blow to Tony, Ron and his men.

How could Tony be fired!

Tony asked incredulously, “Master... why? What did I do wrong?”

“You deliberately abused your position to sabotage the Morris Group! Was that not enough?” Cameron shouted furiously.

“No no no. Master, their products are indeed not up to par!”

Even at this point, Tony tried to argue.

Upon hearing that, Cameron’s face became black as thunder and he spoke angrily, “Then tell me. What products did Morris Group send in?”

The Protector Chapter 271

“I...” Tony floundered, not quite knowing what to say.

Because he had no idea at all.

“How could you disqualify them when you don’t even know what they are? Aren’t you abusing your power here? Listen, Morris Group has even sent their products for quality checks at the Defense Research And Development Centre. They’re more than qualified! This is First Lieutenant Samson Yelder from the Quality Inspection Department of DRDC. He’s here to send us the quality inspection report in person!”

Thud!

Tony fell to his knees.

“Please forgive me, Master. I got carried away by lust and greed! I was wrong! I was really wrong! Please give me another chance, Master!”

Tony groveled at his master’s feet.

“I’d expect better of you as my disciple! But you’ve completely let me down!” Cameron was ruthless. “Go talk to the relevant authorities if you have something to say.”

Immediately after he spoke, the authorities arrived and Tony was taken away for investigation.

Ron and Xawery were utterly dumbfounded.

They didn't expect Morris Group to ask Cameron to come forward.

"I'll inspect Morris Group's product myself!" Cameron said.

The inspection took up the entire afternoon, and the quality inspection report showed that their products were qualified to be listed on the market.

When Levi brought back the certificate of conformity, a great cheer went up from everyone in Morris Group.

These products were put into mass production at once, and Iris had already gone to make arrangements with the distribution channels and merchants.

"Publicity must be done on the greatest scale! Hire the best publicity team and the most suitable spokesperson!" Kirin relayed Iris's words.

Now that the problem had been resolved, Levi felt a little more at ease, and he had the leisure to see how things were at Imperial Meadows Limited.

Zoey had already gone through all the procedures for the establishment of the new company, and all that was left was to find a suitable office building to set up the company.

"Have you found an office building?" Levi asked.

"Yeah! It's at Elysium Plaza. I'm going to sign the contract later. I even paid a deposit of twenty million." Zoey beamed.

"Okay, I have time to spare. I'll go with you." Levi said.

"Sure!"

At three in the afternoon, Levi and Zoey headed to the plaza in Zoey's compact car that cost tens of thousands.

“Your car needs an upgrade. You’re a big boss now.” Levi chuckled.

“It’s fine as long as it’s comfortable.” Zoey said passionlessly.

“Honey, you’re not the same now. You’re gonna meet crazy rich people everyday. Imagine how insecure they would be if they want to cooperate with you but they see this petty little car. You look just like someone who would run away after getting a sum of money.”

“Alright, I’ll spare some time to get a car.” Zoey conceded, thinking that his explanation was quite reasonable.

“I’ll buy you one!”

Although Zoey was touched, she didn’t take Levi’s words to heart.

Levi has no money. How is he going to get me a car?

They soon arrived at Elysium Plaza.

When they were waiting for the elevator to go up, they saw Henry and Shaun walking out from the inside.

“What are you guys doing here?” Zoey had a bad feeling about this.

“What a coincidence! Are you here to rent an office building as well? I’m sorry, but you don’t have a chance now. I’ve rented the one that you’re interested in, Zoey.” said Shaun, waving the tenancy agreement in his hand.

The Protector Chapter 272

It turned out that the Lopez family had been keeping a close watch on Zoey's activities.

Harry and the others were against the idea of Zoey breaking off relations with the Lopez family.

Therefore, they were one step ahead when they learned that Zoey was going to rent this office building.

The poor lady was dumbstruck when she saw the agreement in Shaun's hands.

She quickly got on the elevator with Levi and came to the office of the person-in-charge of Elysium Plaza.

"Ms. Lopez, you're here!" Barney Geller, the person responsible for the negotiation of the contract, greeted her warmly.

"I'm here to sign the contract, Mr. Geller." said Zoey. "We were on the phone, remember? I'm renting Block B for five years at thirty million."

Barney looked confused. "Didn't the Lopez family just sign the contract, Ms. Lopez? They said they had already discussed with you and even paid the remaining ten million."

Zoey and Levi exchanged glances and immediately thought of Henry and Shaun.

"Mr. Henry signed the contract on behalf of the Lopez family." Barney said, handing over the contract to Zoey.

Zoey's expression took on a drastic change after reading the contract.

The Lopez family was too evil.

The five-year tenancy agreement was signed in Zoey's name, but the purpose was for the Lopez Group to use it as an office building.

In another word, the Lopez family would be using the office building that Zoey had paid for.

How dirty!

As Zoey had negotiated the contract in her name personally and paid twenty million in advance, the Lopez family could get away with just ten million.

Zoey was on the verge of tears.

How could they be so cruel?

Aaron and Caitlyn too, were infuriated when they learned about it.

But they had no other choice unless they cut all ties with Harry.

"He doesn't think of me as his son at all! He's always been biased toward my brothers and never helped me." Aaron was furious beyond words.

The next day, Lopez Group moved in to the new office.

Harry and the others' faces were glowing.

Moving to a new office for just ten million was a great deal!

But Zoey could only watch helplessly.

“Zoey, you’ve made another contribution to the family! I’m so happy for you.” Henry chuckled.

“You did great, Zoey!” Harry added. “I’m very happy. I will commend you at the annual meeting.”

“I heard that you want to move to a new office building as well, Zoey. Is that so?” Shaun laughed. “What a bummer! Elysium Plaza is fully occupied!”

Zoey balled her fist tightly.

Not only did the Lopez family trick her, but they also even came to humiliate her!

“Imperial Meadows Limited’s office building is pretty nice, Zoey. You don’t need to change. Besides, it’s uncertain that you can move in even if you’ve signed the contract.” Fabian laughed.

“Hahaha…”

Harry and the others cracked up.

Of course Zoey understood that that was a threat.

The Lopez family was set on preventing her from setting up a new company.

No matter how much effort she put in into looking for an office building, her company could never move in.

For a moment, Zoey was aggrieved and felt very weepy.

She cared so much for the Lopez family, but they didn’t take her seriously at all.

It was absolutely impossible for her to establish a new company unless she severed all ties with them.

“Leave it to me, honey.” Said Levi, who was standing next to Zoey. “Just go back and get ready to move in to a new office tomorrow morning.”

“Huh? For real?” Zoey looked at Levi in disbelief.

“Nothing will go wrong if you listen to me.”

After leaving Elysium Plaza, Levi went to look for Chloe.

The Protector Chapter 273

“Can you help me find out if there are any commercial buildings for sale in the city center?” Levi asked.

“Huh? What are you up to?” Chloe replied with a question of her own.

“Zoey wants to set up a new company and I need to find her an office building.” Levi replied.

Chloe was green with envy.

How nice would it be if I’m the heroine?

“Okay, I’ll ask around for you.”

Chloe first reached out to her connections, then contacted the director of Bayview Garden Real Estate.

Finally, after a few hours, there was a response from an old client of Chloe.

He was the owner of Union Square around North Hampton Center, where there was a building that was vacant and could not be more suitable to be used as an office building.

Chloe brought Levi to Union Square to meet the owner, Emmett Browne, who had been waiting for a long time.

Emmett had lost hair over the crown, livid rings around his eyes, and a pale face.

It was obvious at first glance that he had been living a life of debauchery.

Chloe was decked out in a business attire and a pair of high heels that complemented her beautiful long legs that were wrapped in black stockings, looking exceptionally sexy.

Emmett couldn't help but ogle at her.

But he kept his desire under control as he brought them to tour around the building.

Levi immediately took a fancy to it.

It's definitely much better than Elysium Plaza, especially its location.

The price must also be expensive. I supposed it's about eighty million for five years.

"The price is negotiable! Why don't we take this discussion to my office?"

Emmett rubbed his hands in simulated pleasure.

He had his eyes on Chloe for some time now.

In the past, he even wanted her to submit by buying her a house, but he was rejected.

Emmett swore to sleep with her today.

At the office, Emmett chuckled, "As you guys know, Union Square is located at the prime location in North Hampton, second only to North Hampton Center. It would cost two hundred million for five years."

Hearing that figure, Levi and Chloe's complexion changed.

They were fully aware of the market price.

This old geezer is demanding an exorbitant price!

"Don't you think that's a little unreasonable, Mr. Browne?" Levi asked.

True, he had the money, but he couldn't tolerate daylight robbery.

"That is the price for this area. Why did you even look for this area if you can't afford it?" Emmett was uncompromising.

"Then let's negotiate the price. Two hundred million is too much." Levi said.

"Yeah, Mr. Browne. Is it possible to negotiate?" Chloe spoke up as well.

Emmett cast Chloe a lecherous glance. "Of course we can, but it depends on who's the one to negotiate with me."

Emmett looked at Levi. "If it's him, then end of discussion!"

"But if it's you, Ms. Macy, there will be lots of discounts. We can talk about this slowly."

Chloe glanced at Levi to get his permission before nodding, “Okay, Mr. Browne. I’ll do it!”

Emmett grinned. “I don’t like it when there are other people around when I’m talking business. So this gentleman, may I ask you to leave?”

“Wait for me outside, Levi. I’ll handle this.” Chloe said.

After Levi went out, Emmett locked the door from the inside.

Chloe’s face darkened. “What is this supposed to mean, Mr. Browne?”

Emmett smirked, “So that we won’t be interrupted, Ms. Macy.”

“Mr. Browne, please tell me the lowest price you have in mind.”

Emmett smiled lustfully, “That depends on your attitude, Ms. Macy.”

The Protector Chapter 274

Chloe looked surprised. “My attitude?”

“Yeah, your attitude will determine the price!”

Emmett put on a wicked grin. “I’ll be straightforward with you then, Ms. Macy. Just sleep with me for one night and I’ll reduce the price to eighty million.”

“What?” Chloe’s expression changed.

She immediately understood that Emmett had deliberately raised the price.

I knew it! It's only eighty million at most.

He raised the price to two hundred million just so he could coerce me into sleeping with him.

Emmett got up and walked closer to Chloe. "Think about it, Ms. Macy. You are worth one hundred and twenty million! Isn't that a great deal? You're definitely the most expensive woman in the world!"

"Emmett Browne! You did this on purpose! Do you think I'm blind? You know what, that's a big fat no!" Chloe retaliated.

"So what if I did it on purpose? If you don't agree, I swear your friend can never rent an office building in North Hampton! It's a matter of my words with my connections and reputation. Think wisely before you answer me." Emmett laughed cunningly. He couldn't hold back any longer.

Chloe fell into a daze.

Emmett definitely has the ability to do this.

As someone who took Levi's affairs more seriously than herself, she would feel sorry if she couldn't find an office building for him.

In her trance, Emmett lunged toward her.

"Come on. Just give in to me, will you? I'll be nice." Emmett laughed obscenely.

Whether Chloe was willing or not, he was determined to sleep with her today.

He had already arranged someone to take care of Levi so that no one would disturb him.

Bang!

Boom!

In the nick of time, the security door banged open and then crashed on the ground.

Levi's dramatic entrance froze Emmett and Chloe to the spot.

How did Levi kick open the security door?

Is he even human?

Levi slowly approached Emmett while smoking a cigarette.

All the security guards behind him had collapsed to the ground...

Thump!

Levi sent the pervert flying with a single kick and he slammed heavily on the table, spitting blood.

"The nerve of you to hit me! I swear you'll be in for a nasty ride and you can never rent an office building in North Hampton!" Emmett howled.

Levi puffed on his cigarette and sat down in his leather chair. "I was going to negotiate with you as an ordinary person, but I didn't expect you to be someone like this. Well, I'm going to lay my cards on the table. The entire Union Square belongs to me now!"

Emmett snorted, "Keep boasting!"

Although Chloe knew Levi's strength, she thought he was getting way ahead of himself to buy the entire Union Square.

Levi called the head of the Rogers family, Glenn, “Hello, Rogers? It’s Levi. I’ll give you ten minutes. Buy out the entire Union Square!”

Glenn was shocked at first, then he said, “The Rogers family holds the controlling share to Union Square, so it’s practically yours.”

“Okay. Come over and settle the paperwork.” Levi said.

“Buying the entire Union Square in ten minutes? You know, I may have the management right in Union Square, but the Rogers family has absolute control over it.” Emmett was still clamoring.

Five minutes later, the Rogers arrived.

Emmett quickly donned a welcoming smile when he saw them. “What brings you here, Mr. Rogers?”

Emmett’s livelihood depended on the family.

A word from them would decide his life and death.

The Protector Chapter 275

Hence, Emmett was grinning like a Cheshire cat when he saw the Rogers family.

Pow!

Anthony suddenly punched him in the face, causing blood to spurt from his wounds.

Pow! Bang! Crash!

Leo and the rest joined in in giving Emmett a violent beating.

While Chloe wore a blank, flabbergasted expression, Glenn disregarded them as he handed a contract to Levi with a smile. "Union Square belongs to you now, Mr. Garrison!"

Emmett's face lit up with surprise when he heard that.

Who on earth is this man to have the Rogers family hand over Union Square in less than ten minutes?

"Mr. Garrison," Leo said. "I swear this trash, Emmett, will have one hell of a life from here on!"

Then Emmett was thrown out of here.

"That would be nice." Levi said, picking up the contract and walked away.

Chloe looked at Levi's back view with starry-eyed infatuation. Her adoration for this man amplified.

When Levi went back, he accompanied Zoey to Galaxy Hotel. The Lopez family invited Zoey over to the special banquet they were having to commemorate their relocation to a new office.

"Dear Zoey, why do you have to go through all the trouble just to be independent? What's wrong with working side by side with the Lopez family?" Henry said.

"Yeah, unless you don't acknowledge the Lopez family anymore and you want to betray us!" Fabian said, unsparing.

Zoey's fist clenched.

Haven't I been contributing to the Lopez family?

But how have you guys treated me?

At this moment, Harry raised his wineglass, saying, "We owe a special thanks to someone today!"

"And that is Zoey, who paid for the new office building for Lopez Group!"

Everyone cheered.

But Zoey's and her parents' hearts were writhing in pain.

"Tell me, Zoey. What's your plan after this?" Melanie asked. "Hear me out. Hand over the investment money and give Grandpa a free hand to handle the project. As for you, just be a capable assistant and I promise, your career growth will be guaranteed. If Grandpa favors you in the future, who knows you'll be the next head of the Lopez family."

Shaun nodded. "Yeah, Zoey. It's hard for you to fly solo now. No one will agree to it. No matter how hard you try, your efforts will be in vain."

In another word, Zoey would end up the same as today if she sought independence again.

They would rob her off a new office building again and again...

In the end, she left in a huff and Levi immediately went after her.

"Grandpa always prefers males over females, and he never likes me!" Zoey sobbed by the roadside.

“Honey, don’t worry. I’m here.” Levi smiled, handing Zoey the tenancy agreement of Union Square that floored her.

“What?! Ten million for five years?” But how?

She thought about renting an office building in Union Square before this, where the real city center was.

While it would be a demonstration of the company’s strength, it could gain the trust of investors and business partners as well.

However, she could only give up as she had expected the rental to be one hundred million for five years.

“Okay, don’t get too worked up. Get ready and move in tomorrow morning before the Lopez family finds out.” Said Levi.

The next day at Lopez Group’s office building at Elysium Plaza, everyone was still basking in joy when Shaun came running in.

“Grandpa, Uncle Fabian, Dad, we have a problem! Imperial Meadows Limited is actually moving!”

The Protector Chapter 276

The Lopez family was blindsided by the news.

Does that mean they have found a new location?

“W-Where are they moving to?” Harry’s voice quavered.

“I’m not sure where specifically, but I think they’re moving to the city center!” Shaun said.

“Come on, let’s go take a look! We must stop them!”

Shortly after, they arrived at Union Square, which was one street away from North Hampton Center.

This place was the legit city center!

They were surprised to see that the people of Imperial Meadows Limited were actually unloading their things to Union Square with Zoey and her family in command at the entrance.

Harry and the others hurried over to them.

“Zoey, what are you guys doing here?” Harry asked.

“We’re moving.” Zoey smiled. “What’s wrong, Grandpa?”

“To Union Square? Are you sure about that? How expensive it must be!” Harry said.

Zoey's smile widened. "Grandpa, it's not. It's just ten million for five years and it's much cheaper than Elysium Plaza!"

"Ten million?! Oh my God!" Harry almost fainted over.

The Lopez family could only watch as Imperial Meadows Limited moved to a new place. It was too late to stop them.

This place was ten times more upscale than Elysium Plaza!

The Lopez family could feel nothing but regret!

"I mean, how do you guys think Zoey found Union Square?" Harry asked after leaving Union Square. "And for ten million? How is that even possible?"

"I supposed this bitch sold herself?" Henry suggested coldly.

"Huh? How do you mean?"

Harry and the others looked at him curiously.

"From what I've heard, the owner of Union Square, Emmett Browne, is a pervert who have scourged God knows how many women. He promises anything as long as you sleep with him. That bitch must have slept with him. Otherwise, why would he rent it to her for only ten million?"

"Yeah! That bitch must have slept with him!"

"What an unscrupulous bitch!"

The Lopez family cursed.

"What a disgrace to the Lopez family! How are we going to preserve our reputation if word goes out?"

Harry wished he could get it even with Zoey at this instant.

“Dad, hold your fire. Let’s go home first and we’ll come up with something to get back at them.” Fabian said.

Harry spluttered, “Hah, so that’s how it was! And here I am wondering how did she get all those investments recently.”

“Just look at how beautiful Zoey is.” Melanie said grudgingly. “Won’t all the men bow at her feet if she sleeps with them?”

“Haha, sadly that idiot Levi doesn’t know that she has cheated on him!” Shaun said.

...

In front of Union Square, Zoey and the others watched as the Lopez family left woefully.

“This feels so good.” Zoey exclaimed.

“Yeah, what a great day! Did you guys see Henry and Fabian’s faces just now? They looked like they were about to cry.”

“And Dad was totally freaking out!”

Aaron was stoked at his first time triumph against Harry.

“Dad, it’s all thanks to Levi who negotiated the deal! Otherwise, the rental would have been eighty million.” Zoey said.

“My good son-in-law! You have made us proud!”

Aaron patted Levi’s shoulders.

After Zoey took care of things there, Levi returned to Morris Group.

The Protector Chapter 277

Morris Group had been very busy these two days, so much that Iris had slept for only seven hours a day at most.

When Levi arrived at the office, Iris was still in a meeting and he was called to sit in.

The main topic of the meeting was the publicity and endorsement of the product launch.

There was definitely no problem with the reputation of the product. All they needed to work on was the advertisements.

“As for the ambassador and spokesperson, I’ve chosen a few celebrities and influencers. Lil Lacey especially, has a record of bringing in millions of sales from her broadcast. It would be great to have her to promote our products. Does anyone have any comments?” Iris said.

“Nope. With our marketing efforts, nothing will go wrong.” Someone replied.

Levi was about to doze off from listening.

“What’s the matter, Levi? Do you have something to say?” Iris purposely called him out.

Most of the people in the room scoffed at this technical advisor as they didn’t expect him, a once brilliant man, to be muddling along.

But for the sake of Iris and Isaiah, they kept a cool head.

“I disagree.” Levi yawned.

“Disagree???”

Everyone gaped at him.

“In what?”

It was because Iris wanted to listen to Levi’s opinion that she invited him to attend the meeting.

“We’re selling medical instruments! What’s the use of hiring celebrities and influencers as ambassadors?”

Iris’s face clouded with disappointment.

Six years of imprisonment has worn away his brilliance.

It’s only right to look for a popular celebrity when it comes to promoting a product. Only then will the products be made known. With the reputation of these celebrities as guarantees, partners and retailers can buy with confidence and we can ensure maximum profits.

“Okay, dismiss!”

Levi wanted to say further but Iris announced the end of the meeting straightaway.

Levi was startled. What is this woman doing?

Iris glanced at him and chastised, "Don't you ever attend any future company meetings!"

Everyone regarded Levi with disdain, thinking that he was goofing off.

Levi smiled wryly. I'll let Iris have her way first then.

After getting off from work, it flashed upon Levi that he had to get Zoey a new car.

Thus, he went to Coastal Street the next day, where all the 4S dealership stores gathered.

He had been a regular customer here six years ago, so he was familiar with this area.

For some reason, it was really crowded today.

It seemed like there was some sort of event going on, seeing how there were many filming equipment and good-looking personalities along the street.

Levi disregarded them and headed toward the Mercedes Benz 4S dealership store.

"Hold it right there, sir!"

Several salespersons at the door stopped him.

"Hmm? What's wrong?" Levi asked.

“What are you doing here, sir?” The salesperson asked.

“I’m here to buy a car, obviously.” Levi said.

“Oh, not today, sir. There’s an event going on at the moment.”

The salesperson looked askance at Levi.

As this was North Hampton’s largest Mercedes Benz 4S dealership store, customers who were serious about buying cars would have made an appointment and the store would send someone to pick them up.

Having been doing sales for seven to eight years, they could see that Levi was incapable of buying a car.

People like Levi were like those window shoppers whom they had to deal with almost every day.

Hence, fed up with it, they outright rejected him in the name of the event.

The Protector Chapter 278

Right then, a few men in suits arrived.

The salesperson immediately went up to greet him, “Mr. Olsen, you’re here?”

“Yeah, I’m here to buy a car. What’s wrong? Do I need to make an appointment for that?” One of the men asked.

The salesperson smiled obsequiously, “No, sir! Please, come in. You’re always welcomed here.”

Marshall Olsen smiled.

That’s another hundreds of thousands order there, perhaps even a million.

“Hmm? Hold up! Why are they allowed to enter?” Levi asked quizzically.

“Hmph, because they can afford to buy a car and you can’t!” Marshall said straightforwardly.

Several other salespersons looked at Levi with a mocking face as well.

Why should we waste our time on people who have no intentions to buy a car?

“I want to meet your manager!” Levi barked, his face gloomy.

“Haha, who are you to meet him?” Marshall snorted. “He’s busy.”

“What’s with the commotion outside? What’s going on?”

A woman in her thirties came out from the inside. She was dressed in business attire, looking dignified.

“Ms. Guillemine, this guy is forcing his way in when he’s not even here to buy a car!” Marshall said, pointing at Levi.

Mandy was astonished when her eyes fell on Levi. “Well, well, isn’t this the great Mr. Garrison?”

Levi could vaguely remember her as Mandy Guillemine, who was a mere salesperson six years ago.

At that time, she would be subservient and servile whenever she saw him.

He couldn't believe that she was a manager now.

"Yeah, it's me. I'm here to buy a car, but your people wouldn't let me in." Levi said.

Mandy chuckled, "I think what she did was right! Our time is precious, so why should we entertain you when you don't even have the money?"

"Who told you I don't have the money?" Levi retorted.

I can buy every single 4S dealership store on Coastal Street right now if I want to.

What do you mean I don't have the money?

"Enough with the bullshit, Levi. You think I don't know what you're capable of? You just came out of prison and you're depending on your wife for livelihood. Do you think you're worthy to buy a Mercedes Benz?"

Levi sneered, "Is that how you treat your guest?"

"I, for one, am realistic!" Mandy retaliated. "You were worth billions six years ago, and I'd served you like a slave. But now you're nothing, so why should I entertain you?"

"Get lost now! You're not welcomed here, you poor bastard!" Mandy gave him a mouthful.

It was a cathartic experience for her, and she had never felt so refreshed before.

In the past, she worked her fingers to the bone for Levi. She could almost lick his boots just to secure his deal.

Now that Levi was in dire straits, she took her chance to wipe away her own shame.

“Yeah, this is not a place for poor bastards! Just get a motorbike and scram!” Others chimed in.

Levi ignored them and turned toward the Audi 4S dealership store next door.

“Hahaha, you’re going the wrong way. The next doors are Audi and BMW, which are probably more expensive than a Mercedes Benz.” Mandy chortled.

“Ms. Guillemín, should I go take a look?” Marshall sniggered.

“It’s okay! He can’t afford to buy a car.”

Mandy reentered the store.

Levi’s entry to the Audi 4S dealership store was smooth.

“How may I assist you, sir?” Wendy, the salesperson, asked with a smile.

The Protector Chapter 279

Levi drew out a black card directly and handed it to her. “I want all the cars in your store!”

Wendy froze, asking uncertainly, “Can you repeat that, sir?”

“I want all the cars in your store! Immediately! Now!”

Wendy accepted Levi's black card with unsteady hands.

"Is this the world's limited edition American Express Black Card?"

Wendy was thunderstruck when she saw the card.

Not only did the black card have an unlimited quota, but it also came with many privileges. Wendy was completely convinced that she had met the legendary zillionaire.

She quickly informed the manager of the store who ran out shortly after with a few other employees.

"Greetings, sir! Our store has two hundred and forty-eight vehicles in stock and the total price is one hundred and eighty million." The manager faltered.

"Make it two hundred million. Swipe it." Levi said.

The manager was on the verge of tears and so were the others.

Did we just achieve half a year's performance in one day?

"Choose a car that cost over a million for me and proceed with the formalities. I want to drive it back. Send the rest to Morris Group." Levi said.

The manager personally chose a one point seven million Audi RS7.

The body of the car was red, which suited Zoey a lot.

After all the formalities were completed, he called Jace, the general manager of the Audi dealership in North Hampton.

At this moment, Jace was having tea with Corey, the general manager of the Mercedes Benz dealership.

“What’s up?” Jace asked, answering the phone.

“I have great news for you, Mr. Renner! A customer just bought all the cars in my store! He even swiped his card on the spot for two hundred million!”

Jace jolted to his feet upon hearing it.

As Audi wasn’t one of those top luxury cars that cost about tens of millions, he had never seen such a rich person before.

Receiving an order of two hundred million was indeed too good to be true.

“One more thing, Mr. Renner. This customer was kicked out from the 4S dealership store next door! Those idiots from Mercedes Benz think this zillionaire can’t afford to buy a car and won’t even let him in! Hahaha...”

Jace broke into laughter when he heard this.

Thanks to those idiots, we get to snatch this two hundred million deal.

“What’s so exciting, Jace?” Corey asked and Jace told him about the incident.

“Congrats, man! I would love to meet such zillionaire too!”

Corey was envious.

It was a two hundred million deal!

Jace chuckled, “All thanks to your staff, Corey.”

“Huh?”

Corey looked dazed.

“This zillionaire went to your store at first, but your staff stopped him outside and called him a poor bastard, thinking that he can’t afford to buy a car. So he had no choice but to come to my store. Otherwise, how else do I get this deal? Haha...”

Corey froze, his face contorted with blue veins bulging on his temples, and his eyes spelled death.

“Mandy Guillemin, you bitch! Do you know what’ve you done?!”

The Protector Chapter 280

“Okay, I’m done with you. I’m going to meet this sugar daddy.” Said Jace, rising to his feet.

Corey followed. “I’m coming with you. I need to apologize to him. If not, I wouldn’t know how I’ll die for messing with such a big shot.”

The two general managers then left for Coastal Street at full speed.

Meanwhile, Levi was enjoying tea at the VIP lounge with about seven to eight people serving him.

Someone even offered to massage his leg.

In the Mercedes Benz 4S dealership store, Mandy asked, “Is the poor bastard out yet?”

“Nope! It’s been more than half an hour.” Marshall said. “He must be here just to check out the cars.”

Mandy chuckled, "Isn't that so? I've been in this industry for so long. A genuine buyer will never stay more than ten minutes. Only those poor losers will dawdle for half a day and wind up not buying anything."

"Yeah, I knew it at first glance that he's too poor to buy a car." Marshall laughed.

Just then, several staffs of the Mercedes Benz 4S dealership store came in noisily.

"What's with the noise? How improper!" Mandy rebuked, her face ugly.

"Aren't you aware, Ms. Guillemin? Something big is happening on Coastal Street!"

"What is it?" Mandy and Marshall asked curiously.

"The entire Coastal Street is in an uproar! The Audi 4S dealership store next door actually sold two hundred and forty-eight cars in stock at once for two hundred million!"

"That's a first in history! Everyone has gone to spectate!"

Hearing that, Mandy, Marshall and the others immediately went out.

And sure enough, there was a crowd of over a hundred people outside the Audi 4S dealership store.

Everyone came to watch, wanting to get to know this zillionaire who was still sitting in the VIP lounge.

Mandy and Marshall too, joined the crowd.

"Who is this zillionaire? Why didn't he buy a Mercedes Benz from us or a BMW from you?" Mandy asked the manager of the BMW 4S dealership store.

“I don’t know.” The manager replied. “But I heard this zillionaire had been to your store before coming to Audi.”

Mandy and Marshall looked at each other. They couldn’t remember meeting such a zillionaire.

After all, they were many customers today and the only person who had given them the deepest impression was Levi.

But they were certain that he wasn’t that zillionaire that they spoke of.

For some reason, the two of them had a bad premonition.

“I heard that Mr. Renner, the general manager of Audi dealership in North Hampton, is coming to meet this zillionaire!”

“Damn, with that profit, they’re going to get at least a twenty million bonus!”

The peers looked on enviously, and so were Mandy and Marshall.

If they had been the one to secure this deal, Mandy would have gotten a bonus of tens of millions.

Just then, an Audi A8 drove by.

Coming down from the car was a middle-aged man in long sleeves who went straight into the 4S dealership store.

Many people recognized him as Jace Renner.

Following closely behind was a Mercedes Benz and coming down from the car was the general manager of Mercedes Benz, Corey Stone.

At Corey’s arrival, Mandy and Marshall hurried over to greet him.

“Mr. Stone, what brings you here?” Mandy asked with a smile.

But Corey slapped her hard on the face as soon as he saw her. “Stupid bitch!”

The Protector Chapter 281

The stinging slap across the face jolted Mandy.

She covered her face and looked at Corey incredulously. "Mr. Stone, how have I offended you?"

Slap!

Corey gave her another tight slap across the head. "You stupid b*tch, don't you know what you've done wrong?"

"W-What have I done wrong?" Mandy repeated in puzzlement.

Marshall and the others were burning with curiosity as well.

What did we do?

Slap!

Corey slapped her again.

"I really don't know what I did wrong, Mr. Stone," Mandy cried, her face swelling up.

"Do you know about the zillionaire at Audi next door?" Corey asked sternly.

"Yeah, they spent two hundred million at one go," Mandy, Marshall and the others said.

“Then let me tell you something. This zillionaire had gone to our store first!” Corey shouted madly.

“What?”

Mandy and Marshall’s faces fell.

“Huh? The zillionaire really came to our store? Then why didn’t he purchase anything?” Mandy and Marshall asked.

“Why? Aren’t you guys at fault for this? How is he going to buy a car if you guys didn’t allow him to enter?”

“Yeah, I also heard that this zillionaire was kicked out of the Mercedes Benz 4S dealership store! They even called him a poor bastard!”

...

Hearing that, Mandy and Marshall were dumbstruck with terror.

Surely they had chased away many potential customers in the name of the event today, but they didn’t expect a zillionaire to be among them.

“Fools! I’m going to kill you! Don’t you understand what you did wrong? You’ve ruined me!” Corey roared.

At this moment, there was a hubbub inside the Audi 4S dealership store, with a crowd forming around a man as they walked out.

“Here he is, the zillionaire!” someone shouted, and everyone looked over.

Corey quickly went up and bowed in greeting, catching Levi off guard. “Nice to meet you, Sir! I was wrong! I’ve failed to educate my staff!”

“Mr. Garrison, this is Corey Stone, the General Manager of Mercedes Benz,” Jace introduced.

Levi put on a straight face which almost gave Corey a heart attack.

So is this what it feels like to step off on the wrong foot?

“Dear Mr. Garrison, I just found out what happened. It’s my fault for being lax in educating my staff! I didn’t expect to have such unqualified subordinates! Please accept my apologies!” Corey bowed.

Thereupon, he dragged Mandy, Marshall, and the rest to the front.

Levi slowly shifted his gaze to them...

When Mandy and Marshall looked up, they nearly passed out in shock.

It’s Levi Garrison! Levi’s the zillionaire who had bought two hundred over cars at once!

He’s really here to buy a car and our store was his first choice!

But we drove him away...

Where did he get the money to foot a two hundred million bill at once, though?

The Protector Chapter 282

Everyone was scared silly!

Can his gaze be any more frightening?

Why is a zillionaire like him keeping such a low profile?

Why isn't he decked out in designer brands?

Who would have thought that he is the zillionaire?

Is it too late to say that we regret our actions?

Marshall and the others regarded Mandy with resentment. If it weren't for Mandy's vicious mockery towards Levi, they wouldn't have followed suit and acted so badly.

Mandy was scared out of her pants.

Right then, Levi's voice was heard. "I don't accept apologies!"

Corey panicked.

Shit! Is the end of me for offending such an invincible zillionaire?

"Mr. Garrison, I swear I'll fire Mandy, Marshall, and the eight other staff at once," he said hastily. "And any company or 4S dealership store related to Mercedes Benz will never hire them, ever again!"

Mandy and Marshall wanted to faint.

Corey had just cut off their source of income by stripping them off of their high paying job, and that was just about the biggest punishment there was.

“We at Audi shall not employ people like Mandy,” Jace seized the opportunity to announce.

“We at BMW will never hire people like these either!”

“Porsche as well!”

...

Mandy, Marshall and the other’s faces darkened.

All the car brands on Coastal Street had made their stance clear, which was akin to them being banned by the entire industry!

At the very least, they would have no other means of subsistence in North Hampton.

Levi sneered at Mandy, “And they said women have good intuition, I guess not?”

Hearing that, Mandy, Marshall and the others got on their knees, begging, “We were wrong, Mr. Garrison. Please forgive us just this once...”

Levi turned a deaf ear and left straight away, leaving Mandy and the other women a crying mess.

“Somebody get rid of these scum!” Corey yelled.

...

Something magical had happened in front of Morris Group’s office building today.

It was a stunning spectacle in which two hundred new Audi were delivered and parked on the square.

Most importantly, the higher ups of Morris Group were all kept in the dark.

The incident soon alarmed Iris as she hurried down with a group of executives.

Several trucks were still unloading the cars on the square.

“Excuse me. What’s going on here?” Iris asked in a fluster.

The truck driver replied, “The person in charge of the Audi 4S dealership store said there’s a big boss who had ordered two hundred over Audi in a single bill. I was told to send them to Morris Group, and that’s all I know.”

“A big boss? Why did he buy so many cars?”

Iris was all the more confused because she didn’t have a clue who the buyer was, and that was when Isaiah ran out.

“Ms. Anabelle, it’s the big boss who bought them!”

His words sent shock waves through the crowd.

This big boss’s style of doing things is really unfathomable.

Why did he buy so many cars?

Just then, an Audi A8 came to a halt before them.

Coming down from the car was Kirin.

“Mr. Atkinson!”

The employees went up to greet him.

“Since y’all are here, I have an announcement to make,” Kirin said, seeing that almost everyone from the upper management was around. “Morris Group will soon implement a reward system.”

“Rewards will be given according to individual performance. Regardless of whether you are an executive or an ordinary employee, there will be a reward if you perform well. You saw the rewards—cars!

We don’t hold back on rewarding our staff. The Audi parked in the square cost at least four hundred thousand each. As long as you work hard, the two million Audi R8 sports car could be yours.”

The Protector Chapter 283

“But of course, if you don’t want a car by then, it can be converted into cash.”

“I’ve also heard that the big boss has plans to reward you guys with houses and mansions in the future. As long as you make profits for the company, the company will give you a future.”

“Yes, Sir!”

The entire Morris Group seethed with excitement at Kirin’s announcement. The reward system had struck exactly the right note with the employees.

Rewarding a car that costs at least four hundred thousand is too posh! We must work harder! Only then can we enjoy a brighter future in this company!

“Not many departments have shown outstanding achievements as the company has just been established,” Kirin continued. “But we are all witnesses to the achievements of the technical department, aren’t we? With that, the big boss has decided to reward fifteen cars to the technical team!”

The technical team went wild.

Isaiah was so exhilarated that his eyes brimmed with tears.

The others looked on enviously, vowing to work even harder.

“We want to contribute to the company as well! We want a car too!”

“I’m so going to get that most expensive sports car!”

...

Seeing the employees’ spirited demeanor, Iris exclaimed inwardly. How intimidating this mysterious boss is to win over the people’s hearts with just a snap! The additional revenue the company will earn in the future will be far more than these rewards! Who on earth is this big boss?

Meanwhile, Levi was on his way to Union Square.

It wasn’t because he was angry that he bought two hundred over cars on Coastal Street in one transaction, but because he had really wanted to reward the employees.

He had sent thirty cars to the manor that Azure Dragon and the others were staying in, and ten cars to James.

In front of Union Square, Zoey was standing by the roadside glumly because her crappy car had just broken down.

The mechanics had arrived stating that the car needed a major repair that would cost about ten thousand.

As her car cost only thirty thousand, it wasn't worthwhile to repair it.

"I guess I should really get a new car," Zoey muttered to herself.

It was rush hour, and it was too difficult to catch a cab by the road.

But at that moment, a car suddenly stopped next to Zoey. The window rolled down to reveal a young man who was taking off his sunglasses, saying, "Where are you going, pretty lady? I'll give you a ride."

"No, thank you!" Zoey refused bluntly.

"Don't get me wrong, pretty lady. I'm not a bad guy! I work at Union Square too—Saturn Group, right next door to your company. Allow me to introduce myself. I'm Damian Stan, the deputy head of the procurement department of Saturn Group."

Damian came down from the car and handed Zoey a name card. This was his chance to strike up a conversation with her.

He had been observing Zoey all day today and even bragged to his colleagues that he would make Zoey his.

Out of courtesy, Zoey accepted the name card.

"Please, Ms. Lopez. Where are you going? I'll give you a ride."

Damian looked at his car and smiled, "This is my new Tesla, it cost about eight hundred thousand. It's really comfortable inside. You'll be surprised, Ms. Lopez."

"It's okay. I'll just take a cab," Zoey refused nonetheless.

“I’ll drive you,” Damian insisted. “We’re neighbors, what’s there to be afraid of?”

Just as he was about to reach out to pull Zoey, a loud honk was heard.

The Protector Chapter 284

Zoey and Damian stood frozen as they looked at the car.

It was an Audi RS7 that cost almost two million, and it was much classier than Damian’s Tesla!

The car window rolled down, revealing a face familiar to Zoey.

“Honey, get in. Don’t just stand there,” Levi said.

Zoey came back to her senses and quickly hopped on.

Damian was stunned, malice flashing in his eyes.

Just how rich is this woman’s husband to drive a car that costs two million?

And she’s married?

But it’s okay. I’m going to sleep with her no matter what!

In the car, Zoey was full of curiosity.

The interior of this car is too luxurious!

As expected of a two million luxury car!

“Where did you rent this car, Levi? I bet it’s not cheap to rent it for a day.”

Zoey didn’t even think that Levi would buy a car.

“Honey, I bought this car for you,” Levi chuckled. “Didn’t I tell you that day?”

“Are you serious?!”

“Mm, these are the contracts. Have a look.”

Levi handed a pile of documents to Zoey, who went giddy when she saw the contracts.

This car is really mine!

“Thank you, darling!” Zoey expressed her gratitude by giving Levi a kiss on his cheek.

Just as Levi was about to reciprocate, Zoey shouted, “Red light! Red light! Watch out when you’re driving!”

Levi continued driving helplessly.

It was soon known to the Lopez family that Zoey had gotten a new car.

Aaron and Caitlyn had specially come out of the house to see it.

“Mom, Dad, I bought a car for you too. I’ll have it delivered later,” Levi said.

Jeez, how could I have forgotten about them?

Thereafter, Levi called Isaiah and asked him to send over two four hundred thousand cars.

Half an hour later, two Audi were sent to Bayview Garden with the completed paperwork.

Aaron and Caitlyn couldn't be bothered to eat as they rushed downstairs to look at the cars.

They were so in love in their new cars that they could hardly tear themselves away from them.

Even Zoey was also studying her new car.

At this time, Iris had returned from work.

She couldn't help but laugh when she saw the Lopez family's behavior. "What are you guys doing?"

"My son-in-law bought cars for us!" Aaron said proudly.

Iris looked over and saw three Audi.

"Aren't these our company's cars?" she blurted.

"Your company's cars? What's going on here?" Zoey asked.

Iris told them about the reward system.

"The technical team was rewarded with a dozen of cars today, and Isaiah has the right to distribute them. He's nice to Levi, and it was he who brought Levi into the company. Otherwise, how do you think Levi could work in Morris Group?"

“So you’re saying that these cars were given to Levi by Isaiah out of friendship?” Zoey asked.

“That must be it! You guys keep this matter to yourselves. If other employees of the company find out about this, they will be disappointed. After all, Levi was rewarded with three cars for lounging around and doing nothing,” Iris enjoined.

In fact, she wasn’t satisfied either.

How is it that Levi could get three cars without even contributing to the company?

And one of them even cost two million?

If I’m already this unhappy, imagine how the employees would feel.

Aaron’s expression fell.

The Protector Chapter 285

He had thought his son-in-law had brought them glory by buying three cars at once, but they turned out to be gifts gifted out of friendship.

Even though the cars were in their hands, it wouldn’t feel pleasant to drive.

After all, Levi didn’t buy them with his own money.

How suffocating would it if they had to drive in secret and not tell anyone about this!

“Uncle, Aunt, don’t be mad. Levi did it with the best of intentions, after all. Just feel free to drive them. You have my word,” Iris said.

“Thanks, Iris.”

Aaron and Caitlyn felt much more relieved at that, but they were still dissatisfied with Levi.

How humiliating would it be if words get out!

Luckily, Iris has reminded us.

Levi, who was eating, didn’t know what had happened. When he saw them coming back, he even asked them, “Mom, Dad, don’t you guys like it?”

“Don’t you ever do such humiliating things again!” Aaron roared.

“Yeah, we appreciate your kindness, but let this be last time. I don’t want to lose face!” Caitlyn raged as well.

Levi put on a puzzled face. “What’s wrong?”

“Was it Isaiah who sent us the cars?” Zoey asked.

“Yeah, he sent them.” Levi nodded.

Because that was the truth!

“Right then.”

Zoey and her parents remained quiet, leaving Levi baffled.

The next day, Zoey drove to work early.

As Levi exited the house, he met Iris at the doors.

Iris glanced at him and smirked, "Seems like you're still a pretty decent person."

"Hmm? What do you mean?" Levi asked.

"I thought you were going to drive an Audi as well," Iris sneered, then drove off.

Levi simply smiled and jogged out the door.

He had been running to and fro work these days because he was used to it in the army.

He would feel sick all over now instead if he didn't move his body.

Bayview Garden was located in a high-class area with lots of parks, which was a treat to runners.

These parks had joined forces to set up a track several kilometers long within the perimeter.

"Move away! This place has been sealed off! Go somewhere else!"

At this moment, Levi came head-on to a team of security guards who were holding trained police dogs in their hands.

Those who were jogging or playing were forced out.

Levi saw that there were a group of people in the security guards' wake, some lifting cameras on their shoulders, some holding props such as light shields, and others holding computers...

It seemed that a celebrity has come by...

The most conspicuous thing Levi saw was that a beautiful woman was being carried by four men. It was as if she didn't want her feet to touch the ground at all.

"Slow down! You're tipping me over. What a load of idiots!"

Not only was the woman complaining, but she also even threw a banana peel on the curb...

"Isn't that the influencer, Lil Lacey?" someone who recognized her at the side said in surprise. "She seems polite on broadcast, but why is she so different in real life?"

"Yeah, she has the vibe of a girl with positive energy. How can she be so uncivilized?"

A look of bemusement spread across the crowd's faces.

"Haha, a lot of influencers are like this. They just fake it for the camera. What you see on screen is all filtered!"

Levi was slightly annoyed.

How can mere influencers have special privileges to get rid of the locals?

Isn't the park a public area?

Right then, the team of security guards stood before Levi. "Move out of the way! What are you looking at?"

The Protector Chapter 286

Levi stood still.

He had no intentions of giving way.

Who gave them the authority to seal the roads?

Just as the security guards were about to fly off the handle, Lil Lacey, the influencer behind, suddenly slapped one of the four men who carried her in the face with a crisp sound.

“Is your brain filled with shit or something? What the hell are you doing? You almost dropped me!” Lil Lacey screamed.

This particular staff quickly apologized, “I’m sorry. My foot slipped. I’m really sorry...”

But Lil Lacey slapped the staff in the face again, despite his apologies.

The people around burned with anger at her treating her staff with such brutality.

How unkind of her to slap him just because his foot slipped!

A few people even took out their phones to film as they wanted to expose what this influencer was truly like.

“What do you think you’re doing? Did I agree to let you film? Go to hell!” Lil Lacey’s anger spiked when she caught them in the act, then she turned toward her manager and said, “Amelia, look at them! Smash their phones, quick! We can’t let them post the videos online!”

Amelia immediately ordered, "Get rid of their phones now! The videos must never get out!"

A dozen of security guards rushed forward to those who were filming, snatching their phones away and smashing them to the ground into pieces.

These people choked with silent fury. They couldn't afford to mess with that influencer.

There was a tall young man, however, who was still clutching his phone to which two security guards had failed to grab it.

"What do you think you're doing? It's against the law to take my phone!" the man retorted.

"Against the law? Listen, we are the law! We call the shots!"

A few more security guards joined in to snatch his phone away before smashing it to the ground before his eyes.

"Compensate me for my phone! I demand justice, or this will not end!" The young man hit the roof.

Lil Lacey shot a glance at him and said, "Beat him up!"

The security guards charged forward at her command at once, pinning the man to the ground.

"Stop it!"

A voice sounded all of a sudden.

The security guards stopped short and looked over to where the sound came from.

It was Levi.

“Is this how a famous influencer should behave?” he asked with a sneer.

Upon hearing Levi’s words, Lil Lacey exploded, “Who the hell are you? Stay out of this!”

Levi let out a suppressed laugh. “As a man of justice, I can never turn a blind eye to injustice!”

“Fine! Since you’re a nosy retard, I’ll make an example of you!”

Lil Lacey commanded the security guards to make a move on Levi.

“I’ll give you a taste of a viscous dog bite!” the security guard snorted coldly. “Bite him!”

The dogs they were leashing started barking.

Especially after the security guards let go of the leash, they became more and more manic and were ready to rush over.

But the next moment, Levi’s eyes darkened in a slight glint, his body exuding a solemn killing aura.

To everyone’s surprise, these dogs actually prostrated themselves to the ground and their bodies were trembling.

Levi had killed countless enemies on the battlefield and was conferred with the title of ‘battlefield butcher’, ‘war machine’ and many more.

There was a murderous aura about him that had been honed on the battlefield.

The Protector Chapter 287

These animals who had heightened senses as compared to humans were petrified.

Let alone a few vicious dogs, even lions and tigers would prostrate themselves in worship at Levi's murderous aura.

"Hmm?"

The security guards and Lil Lacey gawked.

What's wrong with these dogs?

"What are you people standing there for? Get him!" Lil Lacey and Amelia chorused.

The security guards sprinted toward Levi.

Pow!

Crash!

...

With blows from Levi's fists and kicks from his feet, all the guards lay wailing on the ground thirty seconds later.

The onlookers applauded.

"Nice one, man!"

“You’re strong!”

“These scoundrels need to learn their lessons!”

Lil Lacey and Amelia were scared stiff.

Levi walked over to Lil Lacey and pulled her down in one swoop.

“Have you got no legs? Do you really need someone to carry you around?” Levi questioned.

Lil Lacey wanted to refute him, but she shut her mouth meekly when her eyes met his terrifying ones.

“Lil Lacey, was it? Apologize to them now and compensate for their phones!” Levi said in a commanding tone.

“I don’t—”

“Hmm?”

Lil Lacey was just about to refuse when she heard Levi’s voice. “I’m sorry!” she quickly bowed her head and apologized.

Amelia could only admit defeat as well. “I’m sorry!”

“Compensate them now!” Levi commanded.

Amelia compensated them in the end with the original price of their smashed phones.

“Nice!”

Everyone applauded again.

“Can we leave now, Sir?” Amelia asked softly.

“Hold up! So you’re the famous influencer, Lil Lacey, huh? Is Morris Group working with you?” Levi asked.

Amelia nodded. “Yes, that’s right! Lil Lacey has signed a contract with Morris Group as the ambassador and spokesperson for their new products.”

Lil Lacey gave Levi an inquisitive look.

What’s the meaning of this?

“Okay, I’m dissolving this cooperation between you and Morris Group,” Levi said. “Morris Group will never allow people of questionable character to be their ambassador!”

Amelia laughed, “Haha, this is a bit too much, isn’t it, Sir? Who are you to dissolve our cooperation with Morris Group?”

“I am someone from Morris Group and I am qualified to terminate your contract!”

“Don’t worry. Morris Group will never use unethical people like you!”

Amelia snickered, “Then what’s your name? What happened today will not end here.”

“Remember this, my name is Levi Garrison. You can look for me anytime at Morris Group!”

With that said, Levi left the place.

Lil Lacey and Amelia's eyes were filled with resentment as they looked at Levi's retreating back.

"Amelia, quickly send someone to identify him! I want him gone!" Lil Lacey shook with fury.

She was used to being arrogant and domineering.

Having been shamed in public for this first time, she vowed to wipe Levi off the face of the earth.

Amelia tugged her lips into an insidious smile. "Didn't you hear him, Lacey? He's from Morris Group!"

"Okay," Lil Lacey said. "Quickly inform Morris Group that I want to terminate our contract! I want Morris Group to drown in regret!"

Amelia gave her a thumbs-up. "That's a brilliant move! Even if Morris Group doesn't kill that bastard, he will be fired at the very least!"

The Protector Chapter 288

Lil Lacey's eyes were bloodshot. "I'll kill him with my own hands!"

Amelia nodded. "I'll seek help through our connections and we'll put him to death! What a disgrace today!"

Meanwhile, Iris had just arrived at the office and was having a regular meeting when her secretary suddenly came running in.

"Ms. Anabelle, we're screwed! Everest Entertainment had just called to say that Lil Lacey wants to terminate her contract with us and will no longer be the ambassador and spokesperson for our product!"

A heavy silence fell upon the room.

"Hurry up and patch me through to Lil Lacey's manager, Ms. Mackie!" Iris said instantly.

"What can I do for you, Ms. Anabelle?" Amelia sniggered once the call connected.

"Ms. Mackie, may I know why exactly are you terminating the contract with us?" Iris asked mildly. "Didn't we come to an agreement already?"

"Haven't you heard, Ms. Anabelle? Someone from Morris Group has terminated our contract! We can't work with Morris Group anymore, so we can only make it official from our side first," Amelia laughed grimly.

Iris asked through clenched teeth, "Could you tell me who it is who wanted to terminate the contract?"

“Then listen carefully, Levi Garrison!”

“Not only did he terminate our contract, but he also even beat up our security guards and insulted Lacey in public!”

“So we’re terminating our contract and we’ll never work with your company ever again! Goodbye!”

Amelia hung up directly without giving Iris the chance to speak.

After answering the phone call, Iris slumped in her chair.

“What happened, Ms. Anabelle?” everyone asked quizzically.

“Levi Garrison! He messed with Lil Lacey, and now they are terminating their contract! There’s nothing we can do now!”

Iris wore a look of despair.

“That won’t do! We’re going full blast tomorrow, and Lil Lacey is the star of the show!”

“Yeah, we’re starting with the promotion tomorrow. What should we do now?”

Iris shot up to her feet and said, “I can only go there and talk to them myself!”

At the corridor, she met Levi, who had just arrived, head-on.

“This is all thanks to you, Levi!” she snarled.

“What did I do?”

“What did you do? You messed with Lil Lacey, and now their company is terminating their contract with us! Our main ambassador is gone!”

Iris’s eyes nearly started out of her head.

Levi chuckled, “It’s better that they terminate the contract. Our company won’t stoop so low as to use her!”

“Do you know how much damage it will do to us if Lil Lacey’s contract is terminated? Not to mention the publicity effect will be greatly compromised, we’ll lose twenty million in terms of money alone!” Iris snapped.

“Listen, Lil Lacey is a person of questionable morals. Hiring someone like her to be our ambassador is an insult to our product!”

Levi told Iris about what had happened.

“I’m angry to hear that too, but those are her private affairs and we can’t control it. We only care about her image as an influencer and how much profit she will bring us,” Iris said.

Levi smiled, “You don’t understand? She has the publicity effect, but that’s just temporary!”

“Hmph, how can you do business like this?! You’re the one who doesn’t understand!” Iris huffed and left.

“Where are you going?” Levi asked.

The Protector Chapter 289

“I’m going to beg her!” Iris answered.

Levi disregarded her and went to the office of the technical department, drinking tea and smoking cigarette while Iris went to Everest Entertainment personally to negotiate with them.

However, the other party was adamant about terminating the contract.

“Unless you fire him after he kneels before me and apologizes to me or end of discussion!”

Lil Lacey gave Iris only one way out.

“Yes, that bastard must come and apologize on his knees!”

They were firm in their decision.

Iris’s face paled.

“I can make the decision to fire him, but I need to ask him about the apology. I’ll go back and figure this out!”

No sooner was Iris out of earshot than Lil Lacey and the others burst into laughter.

“You dare to challenge us, Levi Garrison? You’re dead meat!”

Lil Lacey’s eyes were loaded with hatred.

After returning to the company, Iris immediately went to look for Levi.

“Come, follow me to Everest Entertainment!”

Levi looked stunned. “For what?”

“To apologize! They said as long as you apologize to them on your knees, and then I fire you, they will overlook this matter!”

Iris bit her lips. “I can only sacrifice you for the greater good of the company. But don’t worry, I’ll compensate you once you apologize to them.”

Levi shook his head. “You’re asking me to kneel down and apologize to them? Hell no! They should be the ones on their knees apologizing and begging us to sign them!”

Iris’s temper sparked at Levi’s attitude.

He’s the one at fault. Why isn’t he trying to solve it?

“Levi Garrison, you’re the one who created this mess. Are you going to take care of this or not?” Iris asked coldly.

“Over my dead body!”

Levi was very resolute.

“Fine, I’ll get someone who can talk some sense into you!”

Iris left in a fit of pique to call Zoey, telling her the whole story.

Shortly after, Levi received a call from Zoey.

“Listen to me, Levi. Go and apologize to them. The interest of the company is more important, after all,” Zoey said.

“I won’t! How could I apologize on my knees to some trash? Besides, I didn’t do anything wrong!”

Levi stood his ground.

“Okay, even if you’re right, you have to think about the interest of the company, no? And Iris and me? A man has to take responsibility. Besides, it’s because of you that this happened,” Zoey said.

“There’s no way I will apologize! I won’t apologize even if you kill me!”

“You disappoint me so much!”

Zoey hung up the phone in anger.

Knowing that Levi wouldn’t go to apologize no matter what, the entire company was pointing fingers at Levi, including the canteen ladies and uncles.

“Look at him sitting there eating shamelessly.”

“He’s a useless piece of sh*t! Does he really think he has the power? He’s nothing without Isaiah!”

“He should have just apologized and get it over with. Does he think he can stay in the company forever?”

...

Levi felt a little aggrieved at the murmurs of dissent coming his way.

I didn’t do anything wrong.

Why do I have to bear the consequences?

Why do I have to get on my knees and apologize?

What is wrong with this world?

Levi would rather die than apologize.

Iris couldn't help it either.

On the other side, Lil Lacey had found out that Levi had turned his nose up at their demand.

“Okay, Amelia. Let's show them what we got!” she sneered. “I'm going to cut off their publicity channels, including their ambassadors. Let's see what they can do.”

The Protector Chapter 290

Iris stayed in the conference room, rubbing her temples. She was brainstorming solutions with everyone when her phone suddenly rang.

Her face changed dramatically, and her phone almost slipped out of her hand when the call ended.

We're screwed!

We're totally screwed!

It turned out that the caller was the manager of the popular star, Wanda, from Everest Entertainment, who was also one of the signed ambassadors.

The manager had called to inform Iris that they would be terminating their contract as well.

Thereafter, her phone rang again.

“Hello, Ms. Anabelle. I’m the manager of Sean Hanks from Everest Entertainment, and we are requesting to terminate our contract with your company.”

“Hello, I’m Lil Jasmine’s manager from King Entertainment and we want to cancel our contract with you.”

“Hello, nice to meet you. I’m from Star Media. We would like to dissolve our contract regarding the promotion of your product.”

...

The calls came one after another.

A total of ten celebrities and influencers that Iris had approached had called to terminate their contracts, including most of the publicity channels.

Some forum websites had also informed that they could only provide recommended advertisement space on classified pages to Morris Group instead of advertisements on their homepages.

Even the newspaper offices had informed that they would no longer publish any news about Morris Group.

After receiving a dozen of phone calls, everyone’s faces were drained of all color and animation. They came near to a breakdown.

They didn't expect that Lil Lacey's termination was just the calm before a storm, and that the worst has yet to come.

Things were already bad enough without Lil Lacey as their ambassador, and now that various publicity channels had been cut off, Morris Group was completely finished this time.

No one would show interest, no matter how good the product was, because there was no publicity at all. How on earth were they going to sell their products if no one knew anything about them?

"We've underestimated Lil Lacey's power in North Hampton. Offending her is equivalent to offending the whole entertainment industry. No one will sign with us ever again!"

Iris drew in a deep breath.

"It's all Levi's fault! Why the hell did he mess with Lil Lacey? Is she someone he can afford to mess with?" Georgia, Iris's assistant, said coldly.

"Yeah, it's all Levi's fault! Everything is ruined now!"

"I know, right? All the products can't be shipped off now!"

...

Everyone regarded Levi as the sinner of the company.

Right then, Levi swaggered into the conference room, smiling, "What are you guys worried about?"

"What do you think we're worried about? All the ambassadors have terminated their contracts and almost every publicity channel has been cut off! What are we going to do with our products?" one senior executive shouted.

“I’ve told you that those people that you hired are not suitable. It wouldn’t be effective to hire them,” Levi replied. “You guys don’t understand who are your real target audience!”

Iris sprang to her feet. “How could you say that at this point in time, Levi?”

“Our original plan was to start promoting tomorrow and officially launch the products three days later. Who are we going to sell them to now?” Iris yelled.

“Don’t worry. Everything will turn out for the best! It will sell like crazy by then,” Levi said.

“Get out of here! Now! I don’t want to see you for a while,” Iris barked.

How she wished she could fire him right there and then!

But she couldn’t say much for the sake of Isaiah.

Levi was really on a downer.

Is she really chasing me away from my own company?

Fine, I’ll just let this slide until her anger subsides.

The Protector Chapter 291

And so he left the company.

Iris had gathered her employees for a meeting again, and the theme was simple—change nothing and minimize the damage as much as possible.

She also made it a point to tell her employees to keep this matter from Neil, as she didn't want the big boss to find out. It would only reflect badly on her as an incompetent leader.

Azure Dragon had arrived to pick Levi up after he left the company.

"Did you manage to reach out to Benny Quinton?" Levi asked Azure Dragon, who had come to pick him up from the company.

Azure Dragon nodded. "Yes, Sir. Mr. Quinton was so happy to hear from you. He would love to meet you too."

Levi smiled, "Tell Mr. Quinton to come to North Hampton three days later. Just tell him that Levi Garrison needs a favor from him."

Azure Dragon guffawed, "That is wonderful! You, Sir, are the nation's God of War, and Mr. Quinton is the nation's greatest doctor! You both are the nation's greatest treasures!"

One must be living under rock if they didn't know who Benny was.

Benny Quinton was a legend, the star of the medical field who had saved more than a million people over the past few decades with his godly hands.

He would always be on the front lines before a great disaster, leading hundreds of thousands of doctors in defeating the 'enemy'.

He was a god in the hearts of thousands of people.

Coincidentally, Levi had saved Benny once before and ever since then they were as thick as thieves.

They were both defenders of the country who had greatly contributed to their respective fields.

There was no telling how many countries were envious of Erudia for having two great defenders of the country.

“And tell the Rogers family to bring me all the celebrities that they had invited to their last celebration,” Levi said.

“Roger that!”

That night when Levi returned home, Zoey had been giving him the cold shoulder.

“It’s just a small matter, honey. Is this really necessary?” Levi asked in a relaxed manner.

“Small matter? I thought it was just a small matter as well, but I didn’t expect it to snowball like that! The entire Morris Group is affected because of you, do you know that?!”

“I don’t understand. Is it so hard for you to get on your knees and apologize?”

Levi’s expression changed. “Why should I bow down to such lowlifes when I’ve never bowed down to any gods?”

“I know you’re a man of moral fiber! And I know that you’re right! But can’t you just put yourself down this once for the greater good of the company?” Zoey snapped.

Levi shook his head. “No! I will never! I will never apologize for something that I didn’t do wrong!”

“Then go away! I don’t want to see you for a while.”

In the end, Levi was kicked out of the house.

Walking in the courtyard, Levi had wanted to scrounge a free meal off Iris, but her door was tightly shut.

He had no choice but to go home and grabbed a few steamed buns before he hit the streets.

Coincidentally, Una had just finished a meeting and was on her way home when she suddenly saw a familiar figure by the road.

“Jamie, look. Is that Levi Garrison?” Una asked.

“Yeah, it is!” Jamie, Una’s assistant, replied.

“I can’t believe he’s actually eating steamed buns on the streets,” Una said in surprise. “Seems like he got kicked out.”

“Boy, I thought he had it in him! Come on, let’s go over there,” Una said.

Levi was still nibbling on a steamed bun when a Rolls-Royce Cullinan suddenly stopped beside him, honking.

“Eating steamed buns, eh?” Una snickered as she came down from the car.

The Protector Chapter 292

“Is that any of your business?” Levi looked up, a grim smile on his lips.

“No, I mean, I thought you’re doing well. How did you wind up eating steamed buns on the street?”

Una felt an irresistible urge to laugh.

In her heart, Levi was nothing but a rotten person and it felt good to see him in a wretched state.

“Did your wife kick you out of the house, Mr. Garrison?” Jamie asked.

“Hahahaha...”

Una burst out laughing. “I supposed you can survive with your salary right now if you’re still single, but you have a family to feed. Your wife is so brilliant, don’t you think you’re too far behind?”

“It’s none of your business. Get out of the way!”

Levi looked irritated.

Next second, Una took out a stack of cash from her purse and threw them at Levi. “Dinner’s on me then!”

And she left with her assistant shortly after.

Levi couldn’t believe his eyes when the stack of cash fell in front of him.

Did this woman just hit me in the face with money? This is absolutely insulting!

A god shall never be crossed!

“The Gonzales family, was it? You people have been testing my patience! Your glory days are over!”

There was a cold glint in Levi’s eyes.

The Gonzales family and the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce are finished! They must have a death wish for screwing with me!

Una couldn’t be any happier after insulting Levi.

“Did you see his face when you hit him with the money, Ms. Gonzales?” Jamie laughed.

“Hahaha...”

Una was rolling in the aisles.

As soon as she returned home, she recounted the story of meeting Levi to the Gonzales family, who all applauded, including Winston. “Well done!”

“Okay, enough about this,” Clint, the Gonzales family’s second son, interrupted. “Dad, I was just informed that the Great Doctor, Benny Quinton, would be coming to North Hampton in three days!”

“Mr. Quinton is actually coming to North Hampton? That is huge!” Winston gasped, jolting to his feet.

Winston’s health had been going downhill. He had invited Benny to North Hampton many times but was rejected nevertheless.

Regardless of how much he had offered, whether it was a billion or more, Benny was unbending.

Everyone knew that Benny was a man who did not care for social norms. He was the symbol of rectitude in Erudia who despised the bigwigs the most.

No matter how much he was offered to treat a patient, his answer was always a firm no.

He could treat them, however, on the condition that they registered themselves at the hospital that he worked at like any other ordinary patient.

In his eyes, patients were just patients, and they were all to be treated equally.

Benny had been residing in Vermond and had never left the city for decades.

Hence, it was a great shock to Winston when he found out that the Great Doctor was actually coming to North Hampton.

“Did someone invite Mr. Quinton over?” Winston asked.

“Beats me. I can’t imagine who in North Hampton or even the whole of Erudia could make Mr. Quinton come out of his shell. He’s the God of Erudia!” Clint remarked in surprise.

Winston’s eyes flickered and instructed, “Clint, invite Mr. Quinton over when the time comes. I want to host his stay in North Hampton!”

“Got it!”

“How exciting! I can’t believe I’m going to meet both the God of War and the Great Doctor of Erudia!”

Winston was already looking forward to it.

Not only the Gonzales family, but the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce had been informed of Benny's arrival in North Hampton three days later as well.

The four noble families of North Hampton were naturally excited to meet this Great Doctor.

"Haha, let's go pick him up at the airport three days later!"

The Protector Chapter 293

"I can't believe we get to meet the two great gods of Erudia!"

"Benny Quinton has unparalleled medical skills. I want him to see what's wrong with me!"

In particular, the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce accounted for a large proportion of the pharmaceutical business in North Hampton.

It would guarantee the reputation of their pharmaceutical business if they had an acquaintance in Benny.

With the many benefits that they could stand to reap, their plan was simple—they must invite Mr. Quinton for tea at the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce.

...

The next day, the news that the Great Doctor, Benny Quinton, was coming to North Hampton had spread across the entire North Hampton.

Only God knew who spread the word.

Everyone respected Benny as God, and they couldn't wait to meet him.

This only went on to prove the reputable status of Benny Quinton!

Everyone in Morris Group was also discussing this matter today.

After all, a Great Doctor like Benny was looked up to by many.

However, they weren't as excited as the public as it was the first day of the promotion of their products.

And it was an absolute disaster!

In addition to the news of Benny Quinton's arrival, all resources had been monopolized. Morris Group couldn't achieve the result that they wanted at all.

Iris was about to sink into the depths of hopelessness.

With such poor results on the first day, the second day was predictable—it would only get worse.

Iris had considered various ways, but to no avail.

Knowing that Benny would be arriving in North Hampton real soon, every publicity channel and media were reluctant to accept any other advertisements.

Iris braced herself for the worst.

If they couldn't sell their products in the first phase, they would lose at least 1.8 billion!

How Iris wished to jump off a cliff.

She had come all the way back from overseas to further her career, but only to be faced with such a gruesome reality right after she had started to see results.

How was she going to face Mr. Atkinson and the mysterious boss?

Thankfully, Levi hadn't come to the office for two days. Otherwise, he would be adding fuel to the fire.

It had been two days since Iris last saw Levi as well.

But she had no intention of seeing him again unless he apologized and got himself together.

The much anticipated third day soon arrived.

Yet, it was a cruel and unbearable day for Morris Group because there were still no results on the third day.

Iris was still mourning in her chair for the few million that went down the drain when Levi unexpectedly showed up.

"Send me a car. I need to pick up someone at the airport," Levi said.

"Huh? Who are you picking up?"

"How dare you come back, Levi?"

Iris and the others made no effort to repress their fury.

"Just send us the best car you got, Ms. Anabelle. Mr. Garrison and I will go together," Isaiah smiled.

Unable to turn him down, Iris proceeded to arrange for the company's Lincoln limousine to send them to the airport.

“Levi’s a nuisance! Who the f**k is he picking up at the airport, anyway?”

The upper management raged.

Naturally, the person Levi was going to pick up was Benny.

Although Benny’s status was incomparable to Levi’s, he was an old-timer whom Levi admired.

And since Levi had a favor to ask of him, it was only polite for him to pick up the Great Doctor in person.

When they arrived at the airport, they were shocked at the crowd.

There were just too many people.

Besides the public, the Gonzales family, the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce, and many other wealthy families had all gathered at the airport.

Even Winston was waiting with anticipation among the crowd.

When Morris Group’s car arrived, a clamor broke out.

“Hahaha, even Morris Group is here to invite Mr. Quinton? No way!” Eric sneered.

The Protector Chapter 294

Everyone was dismissive of Morris Group’s arrival, as too many influential people were present.

In their opinion, no one else was qualified to pick up Benny, but the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce and the richest man, Winston Gonzales.

But there again, who else had the power to invite Benny to North Hampton all the way from Vermont?

Una was waiting at the side with Winston when she caught sight of Levi and Isaiah.

“Hmm? Grandpa, look! Isn’t that Levi Garrison?”

The Gonzales family looked over.

“What is he doing here? Is he trying to pick up Mr. Quinton too?” Winston wondered.

“Dad,” Clint said. “Levi’s a man of no scruples when it comes to achieving his goals. He must be trying to take advantage of Mr. Quinton.”

Winston snorted, “I’m standing here. He’ll never get this chance.”

No one is more qualified than me!

“True that. He probably came along for the ride,” Una said.

At that moment, she saw Levi walking towards them.

The Gonzales family were puzzled, wondering what he was up to.

“Is he trying to blackmail us for having saved Sir before this?” the housekeeper suggested.

Una stared at Levi repulsively. “If that is true, Levi sure is rotten to the core!”

Seeing Levi, Winston greeted with a smile, "How may I help you, Levi?"

Levi looked intensely at Una instead and said coldly, "I will not pursue this matter if you bring your grandfather and your father to come and apologize to me within half a month. Otherwise, I swear the Gonzales family will have to pack their bags and to never step foot in North Hampton ever again!"

Levi's statement was mind-blowing, so much so that the room fell silent in astonishment.

What just happened?

Am I hearing things?

Did someone just provoke the Gonzales family?

And right in front of Winston Gonzales at that?

Even the heads of the four noble families of North Hampton who were standing at the side were flabbergasted.

Who the f**k has the nerve to mess with Winston Gonzales?

Even Jesse Nielsen wouldn't dare to say that!

Winston's influence is second to none in North Hampton, be it wealth or political power.

Messing with him is akin to messing with the foundation of North Hampton!

But some insolent brat actually dared to do it!

And that person was no other than Levi Garrison, who had recently got out of jail!

“Hahahaha....”

Winston was howling with laughter.

“I’ve never heard of anyone wanting to destroy the Gonzales family in my life! You’re the first to ask for me for an apology on my knees!”

“I’m warning you just this once. It’s up to you whether you choose to listen or not,” Levi said.

“Who the hell are you, Levi?” Una snarled. “So what if I hit you with money? I’m just being charitable! You’re asking me to apologize to a poor brat like you? In your dreams!”

Levi simply ignored her, and the room fell into silence again.

The Protector Chapter 295

The crowd knew that if it weren’t for Benny’s arrival today, Levi would be dead for sure.

At this time, a large group of media reporters had arrived, holding cameras while waiting in silence.

The arrival of the media reporters made it clear to everyone that Benny would be landing soon.

Levi took out his phone and made a call. “Azure Dragon, bring your men over!”

In the conference room of Everest Entertainment, Noah McCormick, the president of the company, was having a meeting with Lil Lacey, Amelia and a few others.

“How’s it going with Morris Group?” he asked.

“Sir, Morris Group’s new products are listed on the market today and there are zero sales so far,” his assistant replied.

Noah, Lil Lacey and a few other celebrities wore a surprised look on their faces.

“Zero sales?” Lil Lacey asked.

“It can’t be! Despite the impact, isn’t zero sales a little too much?” Amelia questioned.

The president’s assistant smiled, “Word has it that the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce had imposed pressure on them as well. That’s why Morris Group’s new products had zero sales.”

At that, Lil Lacey put on a proud face. “Morris Group? Hah! That is what you get for messing with me, Levi Garrison! I swear the entire Morris Group will down with you!”

“Who would dare to buy their products without Everest Entertainment’s publicity and support?” Noah sniggered. “Barely anyone will know about them.”

“I know, right? With all their publicity channels cut off, the outside world wouldn’t know about their products.”

“Besides, the news of Mr. Quinton’s arrival have taken up most of the headlines in the media recently. Morris Group doesn’t stand a chance,” Amelia said.

“Yeah, Morris Group is going to lose nearly two billion!” Noah said, his voice cracking with glee.

“Now, we shall wait for Morris Group to come and beg us,” Lil Lacey said haughtily, crossing her arms. “I’d like to wait and see if Levi will apologize to us or not!”

“He definitely will! That’s two billion lost there!”

Amelia and the others were confident that Levi would grovel at their feet.

Meanwhile, everyone at Morris Group became taciturn at their depressing sales after the products went online for two hours.

For some reason, a few clients who had agreed to purchase their products had suddenly changed their minds at the very last minute.

Iris collapsed into a heap on her chair, her face pale.

What a failure! Zero sales? What do we do now? How should I explain this to the big boss?

“Our competitors must have taken the advantage to attack us, Ms. Anabelle. Besides, with the news of Mr. Quinton’s arrival dominating all media forums, no one will pay attention to our products,” Georgia, her assistant, said.

“Actually, there is another way,” Justine, the head of the marketing department, piped up. “Why don’t we invite Mr. Quinton to help us with the promotion? Not only can we minimize the loss, but our products will definitely sell like hotcakes!”

“That’s a good idea, but it’s not practical. Even North Hampton’s richest man, Winston Gonzales, has gone to the airport to reach out to Mr. Quinton. Do you think we can still stand a chance?”

Despair washed over everyone at that realization.

“Ms. Anabelle, what we have to do now is to minimize our losses as much as possible. There is no other way.”

“Yeah, I suggest we bring Levi to Everest Entertainment to apologize. That’s our last resort,” a few senior executives proposed.

“Alright,” Iris sighed helplessly. “I’ll go and get him. He has to apologize to them no matter what!”

The Protector Chapter 296

Thousands of people had gathered outside the private passageway of North Hampton International Airport, and the numbers were still increasing.

Right then, the insiders of the airport sent news that the private jet Benny was on had landed and he would be coming out shortly.

The Gonzales family was so shaken that their eyes never left the private passageway.

Levi, on the other hand, had lit up a cigarette and was smoking, as if he could care less about the Great Doctor’s arrival.

A few minutes later, accompanied by noisy footsteps, Benny and the cabin crew came out from the VIP passageway.

Benny Quinton might be in his eighties, but he was still hale and hearty and going strong.

Not only was he the leading figure in the medical field, but he was also athletic. He was skilled in basketball, swimming, sprinting and other sports.

He was an all-rounder, and the healthier he was, the greater the blessings for Erudia.

Benny was extremely down-to-earth. He was only wearing casual clothes and had only brought along an assistant with him.

Most importantly, he was carrying his own bag and pulling his own luggage.

Could this be compared to those conceited celebrities? No.

He was a national treasure!

The whole nation looked up to this guy!

The crowd couldn't help but stand in awe at the sight of Benny.

“Nice to meet you, Mr. Quinton. I'm Winston Gonzales, a local of North Hampton, also known as the richest man of North Hampton. I've been learning to uphold your spirit, Mr. Quinton and I would like to invite you today to my humble abode for a get-together. I'm thinking of contributing to the medical community and I would like to ask for your advice.”

Eric and the others' jaws dropped at Winston's speech.

How smart is he to invite Mr. Quinton on the pretext of contributing to the medical community?

“Thank you for your kind words, Mr. Gonzales,” Benny smiled. “But I'm here this time just to catch up with an old friend.”

Benny rejected his invitation!

Benny actually rejected the richest man in North Hampton!

“Hello, Mr. Quinton. We’re from the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce and we would like to invite you for a get-together with us.” Eric took the opportunity to introduce themselves. “Half of the business of the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce is related to medicine, and we’re the ones who produced all the medical equipment of major hospitals in Vermont. We would love to listen to your advice, Mr. Quinton.”

“Thank you for your contribution to the medical community in Erudia,” Benny replied brusquely and walked past the four of them.

The next ten or so influential figures had come forward to invite Benny as well, but they were all rejected.

The Gonzales family was astonished.

Then who in the world invited Mr. Quinton to North Hampton?

Who is this old friend that he spoke of?

The mass exchanged mystified glances, wondering who would be the one to pick him up.

At this moment, a large group of media reporters had encircled Benny and were bombarding him with questions.

“Are you here in North Hampton on a mission, Mr. Quinton?”

“Mr. Quinton, who is this old friend that you were referring to?”

“Are you here on a private trip or for some other purposes, Mr. Quinton?”

...

Benny's scalp tingled in frustration and his brows bumped together in a scowl, but the reporters had no intentions of letting him leave unless he answered their questions.

Clack! Clack! Clack!

At that exact moment, the neat and unified sound of footsteps was heard with a troop of soldiers came rushing in.

"Get out of the way!"

The troop swiftly split the reporters apart and stood in two rows, guarding Benny at the center.

"Welcome, Mr. Quinton!" the soldiers saluted.

Benny was psyched, as that was the most respectful greeting one could ever receive.

Then a war officer appeared from behind them.

He had a large gold star embroidered on his shoulder, which evinced that he was a King of War!

The Gonzales family's eyes widened.

Because he was none other than Azure Dragon!

The Protector Chapter 297

Azure Dragon came before Benny and gave a military salute. "Welcome to North Hampton, Mr. Quinton!"

Benny's knitted brows became smooth again as he smiled, "Sorry for the trouble, Azure Dragon."

"No worries, Mr. Quinton," Azure Dragon smiled. "Even if it's not on the God of War's orders, I would have come to pick you up myself. You're one of the people I respect."

"Hahaha, that's my honor then!" Benny gave a chortle.

It was at the moment that everyone realized it was the God of War who had invited Benny to North Hampton, and that the old friend that he spoke of must be the God of War himself.

Upon hearing that, everyone heaved a sigh of relief.

Aside from the God of War, who else in North Hampton had the right to invite Mr. Quinton?

They were both Erudia's national treasures!

"Mr. Quinton," said Azure Dragon, suddenly remembering something. "The God of War has asked you to stay for a few more days, as he would like to invite you to attend the North Hampton Warzone commander-in-chief's appointment ceremony. The new commander-in-chief is one of the God of War's men."

"Hahaha, I can't believe I could have this opportunity! Sure, I'll be there!"

Winston, Eric and the others were excited to hear that.

Does that mean we could meet the two greatest gods of Erudia at the appointment ceremony?

Right then, Azure Dragon gave Benny a wink, who then looked in a certain direction and immediately understood his meaning.

“I’ll catch up with you later, Azure Dragon. There’s someplace I need to be. I don’t want to keep them waiting,” Benny said.

Everyone’s curiosity piqued.

Why isn’t he leaving with Azure Dragon?

Where is he going?

“Alright, Mr. Quinton. I’ll see you soon,” Azure Dragon said, then turned toward the media reporters, warning, “You can shoot all the pictures you want and report about this, but don’t let it affect Mr. Quinton or you’ll be sorry for this!”

Azure Dragon’s words made the reporters’ blood run cold.

Thank goodness he didn’t chase us away.

We can still report something newsworthy.

Under the watchful eyes of thousands of people, Benny slowly walked to the back.

Everyone was eager to know who was picking him up.

Vroom! Vroom! Vroom!

At that moment, the sound of an engine roaring filled the air.

A Porsche sports car screeched to a halt.

Iris got down from the car and stormed toward Levi. “Levi Garrison, what the hell are you doing here? Come with me now to Everest Entertainment to apologize! The company is about to be ruined because of you!”

“For what? Can’t you see I’m waiting to pick up someone?” Levi said irritably.

“Is there even anyone for you to pick up? Come with me now! There are zero sales on our new products, do you know that? We’re going to lose a lot of money! At least 1.8 billion!”

“It’s all for your fault! We wouldn’t have lost so much if it weren’t for you!”

At that, Iris grabbed Levi’s arm and was about to leave.

She had her back facing the crowd, so she didn’t know what was going on and that Benny and his assistant were walking toward them.

Levi tried to contain his rage. “Just leave! The person I’m picking up is coming soon!”

“No way! Unless I die today, Levi, you are coming with me to Everest Entertainment!”

Iris was unyielding as she tried to pull Levi away.

“Are you here to pick me up, miss?” a voice suddenly rang out from behind Iris.

When Iris looked back, her heart did a somersault.

The Protector Chapter 298

“A-Are... you M-Mr. Benny Quinton?” she stammered, her body trembling.

As his popularity was known to all in Erudia, Iris could recognize him at one glance.

“Yes, I am,” Benny smiled. “Are you here to pick me up?”

Iris noticed that there were many people looking at her and that many reporters were filming.

She faltered, “You’re mistaken, Mr. Quinton. I-I’m not here to pick you up.”

In fact, Iris wished she could just send him back to Morris Group.

He could have solved their crisis with just his presence alone.

But how was she going to do that when she had nothing to do with Benny at all?

“Aren’t you from Morris Group, miss?” Benny asked.

“Huh? Um...” What does he mean? Is he going to Morris Group?

Levi shot a look at her, then said, “Yes, we’re here to pick you up, Mr. Quinton! Let’s get going.”

Benny gave Levi a knowing smile. At Levi and Isaiah’s invitation, he got into the Lincoln limousine.

Iris watched with rounded eyes as Benny, who was a heartbeat away, got into the car.

Is Benny Quinton the person Levi came to pick up?

Oh, my God!

The rest of the crowd was just as shocked as Iris was.

Who would have thought that Morris Group would be the one to pick up the Great Doctor?

“We gotta get going to Morris Group, quick!”

“Hurry up and publish the news that Mr. Quinton’s purpose of coming to North Hampton is to meet the God of War and visit Morris Group!”

...

The media had gone crazy as they rushed toward Morris Group.

Every newspaper publisher, media, website and forum lost no time in reporting this groundbreaking news.

The eyes of the world were now on Morris Group.

Such intangible publicity effect couldn’t be bought with tens of billions!

It wasn’t only until the media reporters had all left that Iris regained her composure.

Yes, I need to get going to Morris Group now!

Iris drove off at a furious pace in her sports car.

But she couldn't help but wonder. How did Levi manage to invite Mr. Quinton?

Right!

It's the big boss!

Isaiah was there with Levi, and he's basically the big boss's right-hand man.

Levi wasn't fooling around when he said that our marketing efforts were not practical during the meeting.

He had known that the big boss would be inviting Mr. Quinton over and that's why he was so reckless in offending Lil Lacey and wouldn't apologize to them!

So that was the reason...

How exceptional is this mysterious big boss to invite Mr. Quinton to North Hampton!

We're selling medical equipment, and Mr. Quinton is the best ambassador and spokesperson!

Besides, our products are of the highest quality! It wouldn't tarnish Mr. Quinton's reputation!

Iris quickly informed the company to get ready.

In the Lincoln limousine, Levi had a good talk with Benny.

It was only then that it struck Isaiah that his boss was Benny's old friend.

“You seem stronger by the day, Mr. Quinton,” Levi chuckled.

“All thanks to you, God of War, for teaching me the unique approach to wellness. I feel younger every day! Hahaha...” Benny laughed.

The Protector Chapter 299

“Just call me Levi. It’s actually for my own selfish reasons that I called you here, Mr. Quinton. I want you to advocate for my company’s products,” Levi stated directly.

“No, don’t say that!” Benny waved his hands frantically.

“I’ve studied your company’s products with my students in the past few days. They are by far the best on the market in Erudia and are even comparable to those from overseas!

They can stop the foreigners from monopolizing our market and most of all, the price is not even a third of theirs! This is a great thing for the country and the people, and I’m honored to be your ambassador.”

Levi was a little moved.

As expected of the national treasure...

He thinks about the country and the people all the time!

“I’m ashamed of myself, Mr. Quinton,” Levi tittered. “I have selfish motives in manufacturing these products. I want to overthrow the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce.”

“Of course, I’m aware of this. The North Hampton Chamber of Commerce has completely plagiarized your core technology and monopolized certain products, selling them at sky-high prices. I’d even talked about this with some experts. But there was nothing we could do. Only the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce has such product technologies. But it’s all good now since you’re back. The products are much better than theirs and the prices are much lower.”

“Levi, you’re the one who is putting the country and the people first,” Benny praised.

As they were chatting, they had arrived at Morris Group.

The employees of Morris Group had prepared a welcome ceremony. Even the media reporters had been waiting.

As soon as Benny got down from the car, the reporters surrounded him again, eager to interview him.

He wasn’t angry this time as he faced the camera instead.

“Could you tell us why are you here at Morris Group, Mr. Quinton?” one reporter questioned.

Benny smiled, “Okay, I’ll take this opportunity to announce that I will be the ambassador of Morris Group’s medical product. This batch of Morris Group’s new product is on the market today! I, Benny Quinton, guarantee with my reputation that these products are the best on the market in Erudia! And the prices are only a third of the same models in the market!”

The atmosphere was a seething cauldron of emotion at Benny’s announcement.

Everyone at Morris Group was reeling from the shock of having the nation’s Greatest Doctor as their ambassador after losing Lil Lacey.

The media got the news out as fast as they could. Breaking news! A leading figure in the medical field is endorsing Morris Group!

Morris Group's medical equipment beat that of their competitors' hands down and even surpassed that of overseas products!

With just the cost price, Morris Group's medical products cost only one-third of their competitors'!

...

North Hampton erupted at once as all eyes zeroed in on Morris Group's product.

Morris Group had hit the jackpot!

Meanwhile, at Everest Entertainment, Lil Lacey was getting impatient from waiting.

"Why is he not here yet?"

"Just be patient," Amelia said. "He's going to kneel before us in just a bit."

Noah, who was looking at the market dynamics, smirked when he saw that sales of Morris Group were still at zero.

"Morris Group can go nowhere without the artistes from my company!"

But just then, a few secretaries came running in a panic, shouting, "Bad news! Bad news!"

"What's wrong? Why are you guys panicking?" Lil Lacey grumbled.

"Look at your phones, quick!"

The Protector Chapter 300

Noah, Lil Lacey and the others quickly turned on their phones and were petrified when they saw the news.

The Great Doctor has become the spokesperson of Morris Group's products?

"T-T-This..."

Noah blanched, Lil Lacey's blood froze, and Amelia's jaw dropped.

It was then that the market dynamics on Noah's laptop suddenly changed, showing that the first batch of Morris Group's new products was sold out!

That was a one billion order!

...

"Mr. Quinton, Ms. Anabelle, nice to meet you," a stout man greeted. "I'm Teddy Fords, the owner of Stardust Medical Equipment Corporation, and I've just purchased all of the first batch of Morris Group's products"

Iris was taken aback. Did he just buy a billion worth of products in one breath?

Benny nodded. "Thank you for your support! I can guarantee with my reputation that these are the best products you can ever get."

"Haha, don't worry, Mr. Quinton. I will definitely contribute to the medical community. I'm planning to donate some of the products to hospitals in the rural areas," Teddy said.

Levi and Benny looked at each other.

That was the outcome that they wanted to see.

At this point, Iris and Morris Group's phones were exploding with calls after calls.

"Hello, Ms. Anabelle. I'm from Sphinx Bio-Pharmaceutical. I want to place an order for five hundred million."

"Hello, is this Morris Group? I'm from Olympus Hospital Holding Company from South City. We would like to make an eight hundred million order."

"Hello, nice to meet you. I'm calling from the Ministry of Health from South City. We would like to order two batches of your company's products!"

...

Iris was scared out of her mind.

In just a short while, they had received over a hundred orders from almost every part of Erudia.

This was about seventy to eighty times more than the number of products they had planned to manufacture.

So much so that the orders of many companies had to be scheduled for the next year, and some companies had even paid the deposit.

No one had seen this coming at all!

It was mainly the effect of Benny's reputation, and various other factors such as product quality and price, that contributed to such a result.

Iris and the senior executives were lost for words.

The calls were still coming in one after another, with more and more orders being made.

At this rate, ten production plants wouldn't suffice!

Right then, the deans and leaders of various major hospitals in North Hampton had arrived.

While they were here to meet the Great Doctor in person, they also wanted to order a batch of medical equipment that they could use clinically.

Iris could only shake her head helplessly as Teddy had bought all their products.

"Hmm? Sure, you can!" Levi spoke up. "Morris Group has long prepared a batch of products for major hospitals in North Hampton for clinical use."

Iris looked dazed.

When did this happen?

Why didn't I know anything about this?

Isaiah stepped forward and explained, "The boss had asked me to produce more. He foresaw that these products wouldn't be enough."

"..." Who on earth is this boss? Is he a prophet?

Looking at Levi, who was standing next to Benny, Iris suddenly had a suspicion that Levi was the mysterious boss.

What am I thinking? How could Levi be the mysterious boss?

She shook her head and blocked the thought out of her mind.

The Protector Chapter 301

As Morris Group's representative, Isaiah made an announcement to the crowd, "We plan to donate these products to all the hospitals, in order to show our support towards the medical field!"

Clap, clap, clap...

Benny Quinton was the first to clap.

The members of the media and public soon followed suit.

Morris Group had successfully boosted its reputation, gaining the public's favor.

Even the company's share price had risen steeply. All the other businesses owned by or related to Morris Group reaped the benefits as well.

In the afternoon, over twenty famous artists declared that they would help, in publicizing all of Morris Group's products for free.

This was another impactful news that affected a lot of parties.

The support provided by the artists had contributed to increasing Morris Group's sales, and their actions also reflected well on their public images, as celebrities.

Evidently, artists and entertainment companies soon

reaped the benefits of Morris Group's prestige, as the netizens had started to applaud their charitable gestures.

Meanwhile, at Everest Entertainment.

Noah was infuriated upon seeing the news.

Slap!

He slapped Lil Lacey's face mercilessly. "Look what you've done, you b****!"

Lil Lacey covered her face in a daze.

"Do you know why Levi Garrison was reluctant to apologize? Well, it's because he couldn't care less about both of you!"

Noah slapped Amelia.

Amelia was aggrieved.

"If I hadn't listened to your plan previously, Everest Entertainment would've become a famous corporate industry, here in Erudia. Our company's market value could've been multiplied by hundredfold!"

Noah trembled in anger.

"We weren't aware that Morris Group was so formidable. We were fools to think that we were above the collaboration they'd proposed previously."

Lil Lacey sobbed.

She had regretted her decision as well. If I'd continued to help Morris Group in publicizing their product, I would've achieved a great leap in my career, making my transition from a net idol to a famous star!

“Let’s go. Let’s apologize to Morris Group. Hopefully, they’ll be willing to provide us with a second chance. They must’ve chosen us previously because we’d possessed the merits they were looking for,” Noah surmised immediately.

They were unaware that it was Iris who had made the final call. Morris Group’s decision-makers were not involved in this matter.

Soon, all the executives of Everest Entertainment led Lil Lacey and ten other artists over to Morris Group.

Iris sneered when she saw the group of people, “What’re you doing here?”

“We’re aware that we’ve made a mistake, Ms. Anabelle! We’d acted like a bunch of ignorant fools in the past! Why are you all just standing there? Kneel and apologize to Ms. Anabelle at once!”

Lil Lacey and all the other artists knelt on the floor, after receiving Noah’s order.

Iris fell into a daze.

She was reminded of something that Levi had told her previously. They should be the ones apologizing to us.

Iris could not believe that Levi’s words had come true.

“Ms. Anabelle, Everest Entertainment is willing to collaborate with your company, without asking for any remuneration. We will provide you with as many artists as you require. Feel free to utilize our publicity channel too...”

Noah was desperate for the partnership with Morris Group to fall through.

He was offering Iris all kinds of free services.

“That’s right. We were fools in the past. From the way we see it now, Morris Group’s products are the best!” Lil Lacey piped up.

Amelia pleaded with Iris, “Can you please consider our offer? We are providing free promotional services to both you and your company. This is certainly a deal that will greatly benefit Morris Group.”

Iris and the other executives were dumbfounded.

They’d been so arrogant previously. Now, they’re kneeling before us, requesting for us to accept their free services, making this collaboration possible? They’re only doing this because of Morris Group’s current influence in the industry. Nonetheless, it’s not a bad idea to have a group of artists, promoting our products at no cost...

“No! I can’t allow unethical artists, such as yourselves to taint Morris Group’s reputation!” Levi rejected their offer.

Iris frowned. “Go away, Levi Garrison! You don’t have the right to speak here.”

The Protector Chapter 302

Although Morris Group’s crisis was resolved, Iris did not think that Levi had anything to do with the matter.

We’d managed to turn the situation around because of the big boss’s strategy. Levi Garrison is merely here because of Isaiah Wade’s assistance. How dare he make the decision for us? Does he really believe that he is one of the company’s leaders?

“Let me make this clear, Levi. Although our previous discussion with Everest Entertainment ended on an unhappy note, they’ve now returned to apologize to us, with their utmost sincerity. Their offer to become our ambassador without any charge will be beneficial to the company!” pronounced Iris.

From Iris’s point of view, any free labor should be utilized by the company, regardless of their work ethics.

That was the norm she had practiced, after spending years, working abroad.

Iris prioritized only the economic growth of the company. She did not care for the other details.

“No! Their personalities are rotten. They’re only here to apologize to us because of how well we’re doing. Why didn’t they express their regrets in the last two days?” Levi glanced at Noah and the others. Then he announced coldly, “Get lost! Morris Group will never collaborate with you!”

Lil Lacey was mad.

She wanted so badly to strangle Levi to death. Iris Anabelle had already agreed to our proposal. How dare he reject our offer? Levi Garrison is indeed Everest Entertainment’s enemy!

Noah accused angrily, “Ms. Anabelle, I wasn’t aware that a mere entry-level staff in Morris Group was making all the big decisions for your company.”

Iris was angered by Noah’s mockery.

There were many reporters at the scene, after all.

I can’t let this news spread, to the public. Otherwise, Levi’s behavior will taint my reputation as Morris Group’s vice-president. “Stand aside, Levi. You’re not qualified to speak here!” Iris chided.

Then, she looked at Noah and his artists. “Mr. McCormick, believe that this collaboration is feasible.”

“That will never happen!” Levi’s voice sounded out.

“Who do you think you are? Do you think you’re the big boss?” Iris bellowed.

“That’s right. I am the big boss, and this is the big boss’s decision!” Levi stared at Iris.

Kirin’s voice reverberated inside the venue, just as Iris was about to accept Everest Entertainment as their ambassador. “Ms. Anabelle, the big boss doesn’t want Morris Group to collaborate with Everest Entertainment. We are placing their names on the blacklist!”

Kirin showed up at that moment.

“The artists from Everest Entertainment are uncivilized. They’d hit passers-by on the street and they’d even resorted to threatening their fans. The media has repeatedly exposed their despicable acts. Mr. Quinton has selected us, so how can we choose to collaborate with lowly people as such? What will happen to our company’s prestige if we do that?”

Iris’s face flushed red after listening to Kirin’s speech.

She was too profit-oriented, neglecting all the other elements in conducting a business.

However, Kirin’s words had caused her to think twice.

I have to change my business philosophy. A company requires a good reputation, to win over the public’s favor. Only then can we maximize our gain!

The media began criticizing Everest Entertainment's lowly behavior. They even exposed the news of Morris Group blacklisting Everest Entertainment to the public.

Soon after, Levi handed a USB over to the reporters.

The USB contained a video of Lil Lacey hitting a worker, throwing her rubbish onto the streets.

Levi had ordered Phoenix to repair the phone, extracting the video saved inside the device.

Lil Lacey's career was doomed, right after the videos were leaked.

Netizens flooded the Internet with their dissatisfaction and anger towards Lil Lacey's behavior.

Everest Entertainment's future became bleak, all of a sudden, as Lil Lacey and the other artists were nearing the end of their careers.

No entertainment company would dare to sign a contract with them after such an incident.

Levi walked up to Iris and chided with a smile, "I've told you, haven't I? These ambassadors aren't suitable for our medical products. Mr. Quinton is the best candidate!"

Iris put on a disdainful smile. "Why are you behaving as if you were the one who'd invited Mr. Quinton to collaborate with us?"

The Protector Chapter 303

“I did invite him!” Levi exclaimed.

“Hmph! Our big boss invited Mr. Quinton. You’ve got nothing to do with this matter,” Iris sneered.

“That’s enough. Let’s stop bickering. Focus on the work at hand! How can you waste your time arguing with me? The upcoming tasks will prove to be a challenge!” Levi smiled.

Iris recollected her thoughts. Morris Group’s workload will increase exponentially from now on. We will be busier than ever. However, this is what I’m hoping for. I can finally put my capabilities on full display with this opportunity.

Zoey visited Levi to apologize to him after she was made aware of the turn of events.

“I’m so sorry! Nonetheless, you’re awesome. You’d known of the big boss’s plan because you were following Isaiah around.” Zoey gave Levi a thumbs-up. “You’re so lucky, getting to meet Mr. Quinton. Do you know how jealous mother is? Mr. Quinton is her idol! She’s telling everyone who would listen to her in the hospital that her son-in-law drove Mr. Quinton around! She’s so proud of that.”

Levi asked her cheerfully, “Would mother and father like to meet Mr. Quinton?”

“Of course! Even I wish to meet with him. What more of my parents!” Zoey answered immediately.

“Okay. You should inform them to prepare dinner and a bottle of good wine when you’ve arrived home. I’ll invite Mr. Quinton to our house tonight, so that mother and father can meet with him!”

Zoey asked Levi with uncertainty as she thought that she had miscomprehended his words, “What? You’re inviting Mr. Quinton over to our house? Your joke isn’t funny at all!”

“I’m speaking the truth. Have I ever lied to you before?”

Zoey thought to herself, Levi did realize all of his promises due to some coincidences. Indeed, he has never lied to me.

“Okay. I’ll trust you this time. However, I cannot guarantee that my parents will share my sentiment.”

Zoey informed her parents of Levi’s intention when she returned home.

“Hmph! Nonsense. Do you know who Benny Quinton is? Do you think Levi Garrison is qualified to invite him over?” Aaron jeered.

“That’s right! I doubt Levi can achieve this. He couldn’t have achieved such a feat, even in his prime, six years ago. Today, Mr. Quinton had rejected the requests of the wealthiest man in North Hampton, along with the requests of the members of the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce!” Caitlyn shared Aaron’s point of view.

Zoey asked, “Do we have to prepare the dinner then?”

“Why do we need to prepare anything? You’re the only one who would believe in Levi’s joke.” Aaron answered.

Zoey was convinced by her parents that Levi was merely kidding. We’re talking about Benny Quinton, after all. He’s one of the most prominent figures in the medical field!

They refused to dwell any longer in that matter and continued with their tasks, afterward.

Soon enough, it was eight in the evening.

Someone knocked upon the door.

Zoey headed over, with the intention to unlock the door.

She turned around and walked back into the house without saying a word after she had seen Levi.

“Hey, where are you going, honey? You should welcome our guest. Where’s father and mother? Ask them to come to the door as well.”

Zoey was taken aback by Levi’s response.

She turned around and saw another person behind him..

Zoey was shocked to her core.

“Hello, Ms. Lopez! I’m here to visit you and your family!” Benny Quinton greeted her with a smile.

Boom!

Zoey’s vision went dark, as she nearly passed out from astonishment.

Benny Quinton! It’s Benny Quinton in person! He’s really here!

Aaron and Caitlyn marched towards the door as they heard the commotion outside.

“What’s the matter? Is there a guest?”

Aaron and Caitlyn looked in Levi’s direction.

Boom!

The two of them were astounded by the person standing before their eyes.

Thump!

Aaron slipped, slumping onto the floor.

Bam!

Caitlyn fell upon the floor, with a loud thud.

That's Benny Quinton!

The Protector Chapter 304

It's the real Benny Quinton!

Zoey and her parents rubbed their eyes in an effort to ensure that this was no dream. That person is, in fact, Benny Quinton! He's visiting our house!

Levi and Benny helped Aaron and Caitlyn to rise from the floor immediately.

The couple was taken aback by the pleasant surprise.

Benny Quinton had helped them up from the floor.

That was a story they could boast about for the rest of their lives.

The people who had helped them up were actually two of the most significant figures in Erudia.

Aaron and Caitlyn were the only people in the entire nation who had the luxury of enjoying such treatment.

"I'm here for a visit, Mr. and Mrs. Lopez!" Benny greeted.

Aaron and Caitlyn were startled.

They did not think they were worthy enough to be on the receiving end of Benny's courteous address.

Levi frowned. "Why are both of you so excited? Did I not ask Zoey to inform you in advance?"

Boom!

Aaron and Caitlyn almost knelt on the floor after listening to Levi's comment.

Indeed, Zoey had informed them. She had even told them to prepare dinner.

Unfortunately, none of them believed in Levi. They did not expect him to be able to invite Benny Quinton over for dinner.

That was an unbelievable feat in their opinion.

"Don't tell me no one prepared dinner?" Levi's frown deepened. How can I explain myself to Mr. Quinton?

Aaron, Caitlyn, and Zoey lowered their heads, remaining downcast.

Zoey was overwhelmed with guilt because she had doubted Levi too.

Levi heaved out a sigh.

Aaron and Caitlyn were embarrassed.

"Mr. Quinton, I..." Levi was unaware of what else to say.

"That's alright, Levi. I can understand this situation." Benny had guessed the reason behind the lack of preparations, made by Zoey and her parents.

"Hurry up and prepare the dinner! Do you want Mr. Quinton to stand here and wait the entire night?"

The trio regained their senses upon hearing Levi's reminder.

They invited Benny into the house and headed straight to the kitchen to prepare dinner.

Luckily, there were some vegetables and meat left in the refrigerator.

Aaron was caught in a difficult situation because there was no good wine left in the house.

“Don’t worry about that, father. I’ve brought two bottles of liquor over, from the Warzone.”

Levi was glad he had prepared the liquor, saving himself from further embarrassment.

Dinner was soon served swiftly, as Zoey received help from her parents inside the kitchen.

It all felt surreal, taking in the sight of Benny, seated around the dining table.

That man was Benny Quinton! The legendary figure in Erudia’s medical field. A person who was as important as the nation’s treasure.

I can’t believe he’s here in our house. This is incredible!

Aaron, Caitlyn, and Zoey even took pictures of Benny in secret. They never imagined the impact that those photos would create in the future.

Although Benny was a high and mighty figure, he was still a down-to-earth person. He had repeatedly praised Aaron and his family for the home-cooked meal and the pleasant wine.

Living these tranquil moments like a normal person was Benny’s favorite lifestyle.

Aaron could not contain his curiosity for long, after having his share of liquor. “Why did you accept my son-in-law’s invitation, Mr. Quinton? We’d thought that something like this would never happen!”

Zoey and Caitlyn nodded in agreement.

Benny gave Levi a meaningful look before he explained with a smile, “The first reason is that I am now acquainted with Levi since he had driven me around today. Besides, I am aware Levi is the founder of this core technology that helped create these medical apparatuses. I sincerely respect people like him.”

“I see! You’re indeed a role model to learn from in the medical field, Mr. Quinton! Cheers!” Aaron raised his glass.

In their opinion, Benny was merely humble enough to accept Levi’s invitation. Hence, they thought of Benny as a generous and great man.

Benny was about to leave after filling up his stomach.

“I’ll be sending Mr. Quinton off now.”

“Okay. Be careful! Take Zoey’s car.”

Ultimately, Levi drove Benny over to Maple Manor.

That was the place where Azure Dragon, Phoenix, and the others lived.

The Protector Chapter 305

“You don’t have to arrange for me to stay in this extravagant place. I’m alright, staying at my current place,” Benny quipped.

“I need to prioritize your safety, Mr. Quinton!”

Levi arranged for Benny and his secretary to stay in Maple Manor. Mr. Quinton’s well-being should be secured since this place is guarded by soldiers at all times.

Morris Group’s increasing fame and their products overwhelmed the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce’s influence all of a sudden.

The Chamber was slow to react to Morris Group’s success, as Morris Group had almost dominated the medical apparatus market.

Even the technicians working under the Chamber were planning to resign, from their jobs and bring their talents to Morris Group.

“Let us merely observe, during this critical moment. We’ll wait until the end of the commander-in-chief’s appointment ceremony before we make any moves.”

Eric and the others were depressed. However, they were forced to endure Morris Group’s advancement.

Even the wealthiest family in North Hampton, the Gonzales family, felt threatened by Morris Group’s rising.

The last time they had felt as such, was when Levi was still the person-in-charge, of Levi Group.

However, everyone was still focused on Benny Quinton's arrival at that moment.

Benny had to stay in North Hampton for some time because he would be attending the appointment ceremony as well.

Many people had invited Benny to their gatherings and events, but he had rejected all of their invitations.

Benny refused to stay idle in the upcoming days.

He went to work at North Hampton City First Hospital.

However, he did not join the hospital as a specialist. Rather, Benny joined as a normal doctor.

All patients would only have to pay twelve bucks to receive treatment from him.

That was a great blessing to every citizen in North Hampton.

A lot of patients who were contracted with complicated diseases went to visit Benny.

Benny even arranged for Caitlyn to become his assistant.

The appointment caused Caitlyn's position to rise in the hospital's hierarchy. It was almost certain, for her to be selected as the director of her department.

Levi smiled wryly after he was made aware of that news.

He had wanted Benny to get some rest while he stayed in North Hampton.

To his dismay, Benny went to work as usual because he was not a man who enjoyed having too much leisure time.

That was one of the reasons why Benny Quinton was one of the most significant figures in Erudia.

Benny worked as a front-liner and treated plenty of patients, for the next few days.

He treated all of his patients fairly, regardless of their family background.

North Hampton turned into a hot spot for medical tourism, all the fruits of labor, of Benny's influence.

Even Caitlyn became a small celebrity, simply working alongside him.

One day, Benny was working in his office.

Suddenly, a group of ferocious men entered the facility in an imposing manner.

They were obviously thugs who were up to no good.

Everyone inside the hallway scurried away after they noticed the thugs' menacing gazes.

The group of thugs, that consisted of no lesser than eight men, disregarded the long queue outside and barged into Benny's office.

"What are you doing? If you're here to receive treatment from Mr. Quinton, then you need to take a number and wait for your turn!" Caitlyn reminded.

Slap!

The man leading the group of thugs slapped Caitlyn's face mercilessly.

She staggered backward and slumped onto the floor, as that man's slap left a visible mark on her face.

The patients seated inside the office were frightened by the scene, so they hurriedly left the room.

Benny was unfazed as he was an experienced man in life. He questioned the group of unreasonable men angrily, "Who are you? Why have you hit an innocent person?"

The leader of the gang raised his hands and answered Benny politely, "I'm sorry to have interrupted your day, Mr. Quinton."

"What do you want?" Benny asked.

He could gather that the group of people must have hailed from a powerful background.

"There's no need for you to be nervous, Mr. Quinton. We are here because we want to invite Mr. Quinton to attend to a patient." The man smiled.

"That person should come to the hospital and wait for their turn if he or she is sick. I will be here in North Hampton in these upcoming days," Benny replied.

"No, no, no, Mr. Quinton. My young master told us to invite you to the house. It is inappropriate for someone with my young master's status to come all the way to the hospital to receive treatment."

Benny rejected him at once, "I'm sorry, but I will not follow you anywhere. I will only accept patients who visit the hospital!"

The Protector Chapter 306

The man's face darkened after listening to Benny's statement. He roared, "You are indeed a stubborn old man! Yield or face the consequences!"

Benny laughed. "What are you planning to do then?"

"I'll have to take you away by force if you are unwilling to cooperate with us! Sorry about this!" The man's eyes gleamed with malicious intent.

"That's right, Mr. Quinton! Don't force us to resort to that method. Moreover, we are only inviting you to attend to a patient. There's nothing for you to be afraid of." The others chimed in.

Benny was determined. "No. This is a matter of principle. I will reject anyone that invites me. However, I do welcome patients who come to see me in the hospital!"

"Everyone reveres you as if you are a Godlike being. But to me, you are nothing but a lowly doctor! How dare you think so highly of yourself, acting all high and mighty in front of us?"

"That's right! It's time to get off your high horse! We are inviting you to follow us politely because of your respectable reputation. However, you should really know your place!"

"You are just a dumb doctor! It is already a great honor for you to receive an invitation from our young master!"

The group's leader grabbed Benny and dragged him out of the office as he spoke.

Caitlyn quickly stopped them from leaving.

Bam!

The thugs kicked Caitlyn's abdomen. She fell onto the floor, drenched in a cold sweat, as pain washed over her.

The group of men brought Benny away from the hospital afterward.

The security guards tried to stop them, but they were swiftly defeated by the thugs.

They boarded several cars and left the hospital after a few moments.

Levi, Isaiah, and the other executives of Morris Group were discussing a matter when Levi received a call from Zoey.

"Levi, something bad has happened! A group of men went to the hospital earlier. They'd beaten mother up and had even brought Mr. Quinton away!"

Levi was upset after hanging up the phone.

"This is outrageous!"

He made a phone call and ordered harshly, "Find out Mr. Quinton's location at once, Phoenix!"

North Hampton City was formed by combining two large cities in the past, namely Hampton City and North City.

The current North Hampton City was actually a newly developed area, combining both Hampton City and North City.

There were regions from the two cities that were not included in the formation of North Hampton. The citizens living in the outskirts preferred to refer to their living area as Hampton City or North City.

At that moment, inside a manor situated in Hampton City.

That manor was overwhelmingly large, close to the size of a town.

It was rumored that the manor was home to the God of War, thus the place was named, 'War God's Mansion'.

Almost two hundred bodyguards were stationed inside every corner of the manor.

Two people were seated inside a gazebo in the middle of a man-made lake.

It was an elderly man, accompanied by a middle-aged man.

The former had appeared to be of old age, as all his hair had turned white.

The middle-aged man was holding a fan in his hand. Printed on the fan were the words, 'God of War'.

They were the owners of that manor.

There was a popular saying in North Hampton's underworld, stating, 'no one can match the cruelty and bloodlust of Jack Jr., Nueve, and the Invincible-thirteen'.

However, there was another saying that went around a long time ago as well, which stated, 'the God of War was the determiner of North Hampton's peace'.

The God of War, Liam Macy, was the true ruler of North Hampton's underworld.

Even the King of North Hampton, Jack Smith, was Liam's apprentice.

That fact alone was sufficient enough, to underline the terror, that Liam's had caused.

He was the true boss of North Hampton's underworld.

Liam had reigned over Hampton City and North City's underworld before the two cities had combined to become the current North Hampton.

He resided in the outskirts after the geographical change and had been living a low-profile and secluded life in recent years.

Hence, the God of War, Liam Macy, began fading from everyone's awareness.

Most people were only familiar with the King of North Hampton and the Invincible-thirteen, at the mention of North Hampton's underworld forces.

The newcomers who had joined any of the underworld gangs were no longer aware of the God of War's existence.

However, the God of War was the real King of North Hampton.

The God of War's influence far exceeded the King of North Hampton, Jack Smith, even at that point in time.

The Protector Chapter 307

The person seated before the God of War, Liam Macy, was his son, Nathan Macy.

Nathan Macy was different from his father. He was a domineering man who would resort to violence, in order to resolve every issue he faced.

Nathan would have taken control of the North Hampton's underworld, obliterating people such as Jack Smith, if not for Liam's restrictions.

He did not fancy staying in the outskirts, but he had to obey his father's command.

Nathan was playing chess with Liam at that moment.

A young man dressed lavishly approached Liam all of a sudden. "Are the two of you playing chess, grandpa, father?"

"You're here, Andy." Liam gazed up at his grandson, Andy Macy, with affection.

Liam had established Macy Group, a corporation involved in over a dozen industries, in recent years to legalize their family's business.

Liam cared deeply for his grandson, even going as far as to treating Andy as his heir.

That was the reason behind Andy's arrogant and self-centered personality. It had caused him to frequently stir up trouble.

Andy glanced at Liam and announced, "Grandpa, I'd noticed your deteriorating health recently. Hence, I've arranged for a surprise for you!"

Nathan and Liam gazed at Andy curiously. "Oh? What's the surprise?"

"You should be aware of Benny Quinton's arrival in North Hampton, I suppose?" Andy asked.

"Yes, we do."

"I've invited Benny Quinton over to our house so that he can examine grandpa, father, and mother's health conditions!" Andy answered with excitement.

Liam and Nathan were surprised after listening to Andy. "What? You've invited Benny Quinton? He has never accepted any invitations, as far as I'm concerned. He'd even rejected Winston Gonzales and the others!"

Andy smiled. "That's right. He's indeed a stubborn old man. I can't believe he'd wanted grandpa to visit the hospital and wait for your turn! With our status, he should be coming to us!"

Liam sensed something from Andy's words. He could not help but ask, "So?"

"I've brought him here by force since he's unwilling to cooperate with us!" Andy pronounced cheerfully.

Nathan nodded. "That's right. That old and stubborn fool is too arrogant. Your decisions are absolutely correct, son!"

However, Liam frowned. "This could be troublesome. I'm afraid that something bad will happen since we are talking about Benny Quinton, after all."

"What's there to be afraid of, father? We haven't done anything wrong anyway. We are only inviting him to attend to your sickness. We've paid our respects to him, even though we were using a rather extreme method to invite him over."

Nathan did not think that there was anything wrong with Andy's way of handling the matter because of his assertive nature. He even thought that it was a polite way of inviting Benny over to their house.

Andy nodded. "Father is right, grandpa! We are not harming Benny Quinton in any manner. I am sure that he will be delighted after we pay him a huge amount of treatment fees for his effort."

Liam was convinced. "You've got a point there. Moreover, why do I have to be afraid? It's not wrong for me to invite him over. No one has the right to reject the Macy family's invitation in this world!"

Benny was brought over to ‘the War God’s Mansion’, swiftly after.

“Hey, old man Ben! Hurry up and conduct a health checkup for my grandpa. I’ll reward you handsomely if your treatment is effective!” Andy sneered, with his hands tucked inside his pockets.

To his dismay, Benny merely regarded him with a cold stare.

“Oh my, what’s the matter? Are you unhappy because we aren’t paying you in advance? In that case, I’ll give you some money immediately. Then, I will top up the rest of the amount after you’re done with the treatment. I can even build a private hospital for you!” Andy jeered at Benny.

Nathan came to a halt in front of Benny. “I am terribly sorry to have brought you here by force, Mr. Quinton. But you will receive a lot of benefits if you attend to my father’s sickness.”

Benny shook his head. “I refuse to do so. I’m not attending to anyone’s sickness!”

Momentary silence filled the air after he spoke.

The Protector Chapter 308

“What did you say, old man? I dare you to repeat yourself!” Andy was infuriated. “Do you know who we are? My grandpa is the most formidable person in North Hampton. He’s nicknamed the God of War! You should consider it an honor, for us to bring you here!”

“That’s right! My father is Liam Macy. I am Nathan Macy. Our family is rather powerful in North Hampton. Although we are living a secluded life now, my father

used to rule North Hampton's underworld in the past!" Nathan announced with a smile.

Nathan's humble pretense in his speech did not dampen his insolence.

Benny looked at the pair of father and son in disdain. Can your family's background match up with my close friend, the God of War?

"Don't worry, Mr. Quinton. We will send you back to the hospital after you are done with my father's treatment. Not only will you receive a large amount of reward, but you will also be considered as the Macy's family's friend!" Nathan reassured.

Others would have been shocked to their cores by Nathan's offer because countless people had tried all that they could, to befriend the Macy family.

Despite Liam's current secluded lifestyle, plenty of influential figures would visit him every day.

They were putting forth their best efforts to be acquainted with him.

Unfortunately, only a selected few had truly befriended the Macy family.

Benny shook his head again. "I do not need that many friends. You should bring me back as soon as possible. Otherwise, the Macy family will be in deep trouble."

Nathan and Andy exchanged glances after receiving Benny's advice. Then, both of them laughed aloud.

There were three untouchable forces in North Hampton.

The wealthiest man, Winston Gonzales, the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce, and the God of War, Liam Macy.

It was an impossible task for anyone to defeat these three powerful forces.

“Oh? Are you a fortune teller, Mr. Quinton? When will trouble befall our family?” Liam croaked. He crossed his hands behind his back and walked up to Benny slowly.

Liam shared the appearance of an ordinary man. But he exuded a domineering and impressive aura from his body.

Benny felt Liam’s overwhelming presence at once.

Benny had met with people from all walks of life. He was certain that Liam’s imposing manner was one of the most spectacular he had ever witnessed.

“I respect you, Mr. Quinton. I’d wanted to send you back to the hospital because I did not want to cause anyone any inconvenience. But I am intrigued by what you have just said. I do wonder, who has the capabilities to inflict trouble on the Macy family?” Liam questioned coldly.

Benny persuaded him, “I advise you to send me back at once. Otherwise, you will invite trouble to yourselves. Some things are beyond my control.”

“Hahaha... I heard that no one has ever successfully invited you to any event or gathering. I shall be the first person to achieve this accomplishment! Let’s see how long I can make you stay in my house!” Liam was uncompromising.

He wanted to take the risk of going against Benny’s advice.

Nathan and Andy wore smug expressions on their faces.

Members of the Macy family were overbearing. They did as they pleased and disregarded all the rules whenever they had yearned, for things to go their way.

They did not care about the Gonzales family or the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce.

The Macy family was the family that had caused the most problems to arise for Jesse Nielsen because of their extensive influence and volatile nature, unlike the relatively docile Gonzales family and the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce.

Any unpredictable move from the Macy family would be disastrous to North Hampton, yet there was no way to restrain them.

Benny smiled. "Then we'll see what's going to happen."

Right then, the news of the incident that had happened in the hospital spread like wildfire in North Hampton.

Some people had abducted Benny Quinton from City First Hospital and had even beaten up over a dozen hospital staff, including doctors, nurses, and security guards.

All the citizens were enraged by the news.

Everyone in North Hampton began searching for Benny's whereabouts.

The Gonzales family and the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce were utilizing all of their connections to locate Benny as well because that was a golden opportunity for them.

Anyone who could rescue Benny Quinton would become acquainted with him, receiving endless bouts of benefits from that mere connection.

The Protector Chapter 309

The police did not intervene in the matter because no one had filed a report.

Unfortunately, there was actually another reason behind such a peculiar turn of events.

Levi had decided to take charge of the matter related to Benny. Hence, no one else had the right to meddle.

Half an hour later.

All the formidable forces in North Hampton received news of Benny's current location in 'the War God's Mansion', in Hampton City.

They were also made aware of the identity of the person who had kidnapped Benny. That person was the God of War, Liam Macy's, grandson, Andy Macy.

Inside the most luxurious villa in North Hampton.

Winston Gonzales put on his clothes and announced, "Let's go. We are going to the Macy family's house in the outskirts!"

The Gonzales family sped in the outskirt's direction.

Their cars arrived at 'the War God's Mansion', after a short while.

Another fleet of cars came to a halt in front of the Mansion from another direction at the same time.

Eric Robinson, Wallace Henderson, and the lot alighted their cars.

They were people from the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce.

The Gonzales family and the people from the Chamber were the first to arrive at the scene.

“Let’s head in together! We will make further discussion after rescuing Mr. Quinton!” Winston Gonzales urged.

“Alright. Let’s do this together!” Eric Robinson and his friends agreed to Winston’s suggestion.

Then, they followed him to the entrance of ‘the War God’s Mansion’.

The door to the Mansion was tightly shut, without any guards around.

Clint stepped forward and knocked on the door after Winston waved his hand.

“Please inform your master, Winston Gonzales from the Gonzales family and the four noble families from the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce, Eric Robinson, Wallace Henderson, Clifford Anderson, and Baldwin Williamson are here to meet with the God of War!” Clint demanded.

The people inside the War God’s Mansion gasped after listening to Clint’s announcement. Did we underestimate Benny Quinton’s significance? The two most formidable forces in North Hampton have arrived so swiftly? Even Winston Gonzales is here in person.

Nathan informed Liam of that news immediately after he was made aware of their arrivals.

“Hm? They’re all here?” Liam was mildly astounded.

“What should we do, father?” Nathan asked.

Liam's lips curled into a sneer. "I do not care about anyone else in North Hampton except for Jesse Nielsen. Winston Gonzales and the others are at most having the same social status as me. However, I could not care less about them, to be honest. We've got nothing to worry about!"

Nathan nodded. "Yes, father!"

Winston and the others waited for over ten minutes outside 'the War God's Mansion', before the door was finally pushed open.

A young man marched through the door. He was Andy Macy.

Andy cupped his hands and announced, "Please return, everyone. My grandpa will not be able to entertain any guests, as he is recuperating."

"Andy, will you pass along a message for us? We are here today because we have something urgent to discuss with your grandfather!" Winston was determined.

Andy's eyes gleamed with a menacing glint.

"Guards, send them away!"

Hurried footsteps closed in immediately, after he spoke.

In a split second, over a hundred guards surrounded Winston and the others.

"Leave!" All of them shouted at the same time.

Winston and the other leaders of the noble families from the Chamber exchanged glances with one another.

They knew that Liam was taking them lightly.

They were left with the single option of entering the Mansion by force, to rescue Benny. Unfortunately, Winston and the rest did not have the courage to do so.

They had no other choice but to leave depressingly because they did not want to suffer a loss by clashing forces with the Macy family.

Phoenix reported the news to Levi after he laid his hands on that piece of information.

“The God of War, Liam Macy? Is he powerful?” Levi asked.

“He’s very powerful! He’s the real ruler of North Hampton’s underworld. Even the King of North Hampton, Jack Smith, is Liam’s apprentice. His capabilities are on par with Winston Gonzales. Even Mr. Nielsen has to pay his respects to Liam Macy!” Phoenix explained.

“Someone of his caliber exists in North Hampton? This is my first time hearing his name.” Levi was astonished.

“Sir, Liam Macy has been living a secluded life in the outskirts of North Hampton. Most people in the city are no longer conscious of his presence.” Phoenix elaborated.

Azure Dragon and Kirin asked, “What shall we do now, Sir?”

The Protector Chapter 310

“Is Mr. Quinton safe?” A cold glint shone in Levi’s eyes.

“He’s considered safe at the moment. It was Liam’s grandson, Andy, who’d brought Mr. Quinton away. He’d wanted Mr. Quinton to check on his grandfather’s condition.” Phoenix explained.

Levi slammed the tabletop with his hand. “He’s ridiculous!”

“I have an idea, Sir...” Azure Dragon piped up.

“Speak...”

“I am certain that Mr. Quinton will not wish for this matter to spiral out of control. So, I think we should resolve this matter in secret. Let’s ask Jack Smith to inform Liam to release Mr. Quinton and apologize to us since Jack Smith is Liam’s apprentice.” Azure Dragon suggested.

“Okay. You’re right. Mr. Quinton is not a fan of hassle.” Levi nodded in agreement.

“Bring Jack Smith here immediately!” Kirin went out to execute Levi’s order immediately.

Jack Smith, who was hanging out with his friends at that moment, was baffled by Levi’s summon.

He was frightened after Levi enlightened him of the on-going situation. Why did Master anger Levi Garrison out of so many people in this world?

Levi took out a piece of paper and wrote a few words, The God of War, Garrison.

“Hand this piece of paper over to Liam Macy and tell him to release Mr. Quinton right now. I want him to surrender his followers who’d hit those innocent people in the hospital too!” Levi commanded.

“Understood!” Jack Smith received the piece of paper with trembling hands and swiftly left Levi’s sight.

Meanwhile, over a hundred bodyguards had been positioned outside ‘the War God’s Mansion’.

The reason was that over a dozen people with high social statuses in North Hampton visited the place, in an attempt to rescue Benny, after Winston Gonzales and the people from the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce left.

Even Liam was impressed by Benny’s influence. Benny Quinton truly lives up to his reputation. It’s like I am the one who’s at fault here for offending someone as great as him!

However, Liam ordered his bodyguards to chase their visitors away because none of them was significant in Liam’s opinion.

“Is there any news on Mr. Nielsen?” Liam asked.

“Nope, father! I did not see any police here as well. I suppose they are turning a blind eye this time!” Nathan answered.

Liam nodded. “Great. I have nothing to worry about, as long as Mr. Nielsen stays silent.”

Jack Smith arrived right after a few groups of people were chased away by the bodyguards.

He was startled by the bodyguards' formation in front of the Mansion.

"Who are you? Leave at once! Otherwise, we will not go easy on you!" One of the bodyguards bellowed, after noticing Jack Smith's advance.

"I, Jack Smith, am here to visit my Master!" Jack Smith introduced himself.

"Oh, it's you, Mr. Smith! Please, come in. My father welcomes you into the house!" Nathan welcomed Jack in person.

Inside the sitting room in 'the War God's Mansion'.

Liam was sipping on his cup of tea with Benny seated beside him.

"Why are you here, Jack?" Liam asked.

Thump!

Jack knelt before Liam before speaking a word.

Liam was taken aback by Jack's unexpected gesture.

"Why are you doing this, Jack?"

Jack lowered his head and stammered, "Master... I... I do not dare to speak..."

"There's no need to hesitate!" Liam was puzzled.

Nathan and Andy were caught in perplexity as well.

Benny's lips curved upwards into a smile as if he knew what was going on.

"Speak!"

Liam raised his tone and grimaced.

Jack was shocked. He took out the piece of paper that Levi had handed to him earlier, as his body shuddered uncontrollably.

“Master, someone wants you to have this. He commands you to release Mr. Quinton immediately and apologize to him. He also wants you to surrender the few people who’d caused trouble in the hospital,” Jack spoke through gritted teeth.

“What? Who’s this outrageous b*****? How dare he demand an apology from the Macy family? He must have a death wish!” Nathan and Andy responded.

The Protector Chapter 311

Even the Gonzales family and members of the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce had to concede to the Macy family.

Liam could not think of another person who would have the courage to challenge his family in North Hampton.

He received the piece of paper without saying a word.

“The God of War, Garrison?” Liam read the words written on the paper.

Liam understood the message immediately. The Macy family’s trouble is here.

Logically speaking, the God of War was the only person, with the family name Garrison, who’d dared to refer to himself as the God of War in North Hampton.

Most of the elites in North Hampton were aware that the God of War’s family name was Garrison, after all.

Normally, any other person would have figured out the message written on the piece of paper instantaneously. However, the members of the Macy family were oblivious to that matter.

The reason was due to their misconception of the term, ‘God of War’.

Liam Macey’s nickname was ‘God of War’, so they would naturally think of Liam at the mention of the God of War.

None of them would relate the term to the God of War in the army.

The term varied between those two individuals.

'The God of War' was referring to a military rank, in Levi's case, while that term was merely Liam's nickname.

Liam frowned. "What does this mean?"

"Master, you've offended someone very powerful this time. I think that you should quickly release Mr. Quinton," Jack suggested.

He did not reveal Levi's identity for his own selfish reasons.

Jack had never successfully surpassed his Master, Liam, no matter how hard he had tried, or how influential he became, due to Liam's constraint.

So, he wanted to seize that opportunity for Levi to eliminate Liam.

In that way, Liam's family business would fall into his possession.

Jack could finally be the one true king of North Hampton.

Jack was deliberately provoking Liam to let the latter's ego overwhelm his rationality.

"Are you warning me?"

Andy surmised, "The meaning behind this message is clear as day. You are the God of War while this person with the name Garrison desires to rescue Benny Quinton. He's trying to threaten you with a family name!"

Liam and Nathan laughed aloud after listening to Andy's analysis.

“A person with the family name Garrison in North Hampton? Could this person be from the Garrison family? That Garrison family that requires the Rogers family’s support? How dare he threaten the Macy family?” Liam roared.

“Bring me a piece of paper and pen!” Liam ordered.

Liam wrote a few more words on the back of the piece of paper, The God of War, Macy, Death.

The meaning behind the message was simple. Anyone who had the courage to defy the Macy family would have to face death.

Liam Macy was well-known in the underworld, as well as the upper-class society in North Hampton.

Anyone who was acquainted with Liam, sought out his help whenever they had faced trouble in recent years. Liam would often leave them with a piece of paper. Written on the piece of paper were the words, The God of War, Macy.

Those few words were all it took to resolve all their predicaments.

Any party that saw the message would be fearful because those words were like a direct threat coming from Liam himself.

No one had the guts to go against those who were under Liam’s protection.

Jack had relied on that matter, on multiple occasions, to instill fear in his enemies. They knelt before him once they had seen Liam Macy’s name printed on Jack’s fan.

“Return this piece of paper to that person. Now!” Liam ordered coldly.

Even Winston Gonzales and the members of the Chamber would have to yield before that message, not to mention a mere Garrison family member.

“Understood, Master. I’ll do as you say right away.” Jack received the piece of paper with shaky hands.

Jack made a swift return, to Levi.

Levi and the others were stunned as they read the few words written on the back of the paper.

“He’s so arrogant?” Levi uttered with a smile. Then he gave Jack a meaningful look.

Jack felt as though his intention was exposed, as Levi fixated his piercing gaze on him.

“What a daredevil, Liam Macy! How dare he refer to himself as the God of War?” Kirin was mad.

The Protector Chapter 312

Levi lit a cigarette and smiled. “I’d wanted to resolve this matter peacefully, but he’s not accepting my kindness! Kirin!”

“Yes, Sir!”

“Transfer your Special Operations Regiment here. Let’s go!”

“Yes, Sir!”

A bizarre scene was observed on the main streets of Hampton City swiftly after.

A convoy of tanks sped in the direction of 'the War God's Mansion'.

Many passers-by gathered around to watch, but they were unaware of what was happening.

Over a hundred bodyguards were still blocking outsiders from entering the Mansion at that moment, as they continued to chase away groups of people.

The bodyguards chuckled as they thought to themselves, These people should learn to know their place. Even the wealthiest man, Winston Gonzales, has to yield to the Macy family, not to mention, what more of people like them?

Then, the bodyguards saw Jack Smith marching toward the entrance again.

However, this time, a few people were following behind him.

"Please head back, Mr. Smith. Mr. Macey had given us some orders. You are not allowed to go into the Mansion," the leader of the bodyguards informed Jack.

Jack was wearing an odd facial expression. His voice trembled as he muttered, "No... It's not me. They are the ones who want to enter the Mansion."

The bodyguards turned to look at Levi and the others after listening to Jack.

The bodyguards' leader sneered, "Please go back. No one is allowed to enter the Macy's family house today!"

His subordinates stared at Levi and the others menacingly.

Levi beamed at him. "What if I am determined to enter?"

"Then you'll have to face death!"

Kirin met with the leader's eyes all of a sudden and took out a gun from around his waist. Then he aimed the gun at the latter's head and questioned him, "What about now? Can we enter the house now?"

Anxiety crept into the leader's chest as he did not expect Kirin to draw his weapon.

Crash!

The rest of the bodyguards shuffled anxiously while eyeing Levi and the others angrily.

The bodyguards' leader was equipped with a tough mindset. He responded with a smile, "Don't be rash. This gun does not guarantee your entry into the Macy's family house!"

The other bodyguards jeered at Kirin. What a fool. How dare he provokes us, at 'the War God's Mansion'? He's obviously tired of living. We are talking about the Macy family, after all! The most influential family in the city!

"Does that mean that we are still not allowed to enter the place?" Kirin asked.

"Of course! Winston Gonzales and the people from the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce failed to enter too!" The leader announced, mockingly.

"Okay. Advance!" Kirin waved his hand.

Deafening noises erupted from behind them all of a sudden.

Twenty tanks entered everyone's vision and rumbled forward, towards the entrance.

All the bodyguards were scared out of their wits at the sight of the tanks. They could only stare at the scene in a daze.

They hurriedly moved backward as the tanks advanced in their direction, without showing any signs of stopping.

The tanks finally came to a halt as the bodyguards had their backs stuck to the wall.

Whoosh...

A platoon of fully-armed special troops alighted the tanks. They wore custom-made masks to cover their faces.

The Special Operations Regiment consisting of three hundred members lined up in a few rows and marched toward the War God's Mansion.

The bodyguards' leader peed his pants in fear while Kirin continued to press the gunpoint against his head. I'd thought that he was a mere fool. But d*** it! I did not expect the Special Operations Regiment to be here! Is this even real?

Thump!

Thump!

Thump!

All the bodyguards groveled on the floor while covering their heads with their hands. There's no way we can fight them. He has summoned the entire Special Operations Regiment!

"Aren't you too full of yourself, Liam Macey? Why are you not welcoming the God of War when he's at your doorstep?" Azure Dragon sneered.

"Pfft! The only person who can qualify the title of the God of War in North Hampton is my grandpa! Everyone else is nothing but trash!" Andy bellowed furiously after hearing Azure Dragon's voice.

He pushed the door open and charged forward in an imposing manner as he retorted.

The Protector Chapter 313

Tap tap tap...

However, Andy was dumbfounded when he took in the Special Operations Regiment's formation outside the house, as the sound of the soldiers marching reverberated beside his ears.

"This, this, this..."

Andy could not recover from the impact he received after witnessing the Special Operations Regiment lined up before him.

His subordinates following behind him were about to shout unwelcoming speeches at the people outside the house when they were immediately pinned to the ground.

His men did not even have a second to react.

The soldiers charged into 'the War God's Mansion' and even dragged Andy along with them.

Anyone who stood in their way was dealt with and shoved aside.

Levi and the others entered the Mansion, after the Special Operations Regiment cleared away all the hindrances.

The bodyguards inside the Mansion thought that someone had barged into the house.

They wanted to counter the intruder at once.

To their misfortune, the sight of the soldiers scared the life out of the bodyguards.

In less than thirty seconds, all the bodyguards inside 'the War God's Mansion' were subdued.

Moreover, the soldiers infiltrated the Mansion without making any excessive noise. They had successfully taken control of the place without anyone else noticing.

Kirin's harsh training was effective, as he had turned the normal soldiers into an elite troop.

The soldiers lined up in two rows from the house entrance to the meeting hall after they conquered the War God's Mansion.

Levi, Azure Dragon, and Kirin marched forward.

Inside the meeting hall.

Liam sipped on his cup of tea while sitting calmly in his chair.

Nathan was slightly worried. "Could something bad be happening outside the hall?"

Liam smiled. "Don't worry. Andy is more than capable of handling everything!"

Benny merely put on a pensive smile without saying a word.

Boom!

The door to the meeting hall was knocked over, by a huge force, as soon as Liam spoke.

A dozen soldiers rushed into the meeting hall the next second.

They quickly lined up into two rows inside the hall.

Liam and Nathan were startled by that sudden scene. Why are there soldiers inside my house? Moreover, these men appear to be a well-trained army!

“Aren’t you a daredevil, Liam Macy?” A group of people entered the meeting hall, echoing a thunderous roar.

The soldiers saluted the people who had walked through the door at once.

Liam was terrified by what he had just witnessed, while Nathan’s legs almost gave way.

Members of the Macy family should have had experienced all kinds of occasions in life. Nonetheless, the sight of the soldiers was too scary and incomprehensible to them.

What on earth is happening?

Benny stood up only after he saw Levi.

Clarity washed over Liam. That’s the person whom Benny Quinton is waiting for. The person that is capable of inflicting trouble upon my family!

“I’m glad that you’re alright, Mr. Quinton!” Levi grinned.

“Yes. They did not give me any trouble,” Benny relayed.

Nathan felt his strength seeping away from his body as Azure Dragon fixated his gaze on him. No words came to Nathan at that moment. Who the hell are these people? Do people like them exist in North Hampton? Why haven't we heard anything about them?

Liam was a veteran in life. He was able to regain his composure and asked, “Who are you?”

“I am the person who'd sent you the note earlier,” Levi answered.

“The God of War, Garrison?” Liam frowned. He was bewildered. “Please forgive my foolishness. I did not know that there was someone as accomplished as you in the Garrison family from North Hampton.”

Liam and Nathan were caught in perplexity.

“Mr. Macy, why don't you let your imagination run free for a moment. A God of War with the family name of Garrison who is currently staying in North Hampton...” Benny reminded Liam.

“A God of War with the family name of Garrison? I don't know this person. God of War? Garrison? Wait...”

Liam's face turned ashen, as he was shocked to his core.

He looked at Levi and exclaimed in astonishment, “Don't tell me you're the legendary God of War?”

The Protector Chapter 314

“Yes. You’re absolutely right!” Kirin smiled.

Levi exclaimed, “No, no, no. You’re the real God of War!”

Boom!

Liam almost passed out from fear, listening to Levi’s comment. The God of War? This is just a nickname given to me by people in the underworld. This is completely different from the real God of War. I can’t believe something as melodramatic as this is actually happening today! The God of War had warned me by sending me a note, yet I did the most ridiculous thing to threaten him! Wait, something’s not right. I think Jack Smith screwed me over!

Liam glanced at Jack. He knew that his apprentice was setting him up. Jack could have explained Levi Garrison’s identity to me, but he did not. He’s trying to eliminate me by utilizing the God of War’s authority.

Thump!

Liam got down on his knees.

“Sir, everything that has happened today is just a misunderstanding! I invited Mr. Quinton to my place because I’d needed treatment.” Liam explained in a hurry.

Levi sat in Liam’s seat and responded with a smile, “Okay. Let’s put aside this matter related to Mr. Quinton. How should we address the incident that has happened in the hospital?”

Liam looked at Andy immediately. “Hurry up and summon the men whom you’d assigned to the hospital earlier!”

All eight men were brought forward after a short while. All of them knelt on the floor in fright.

“This is just a misunderstanding! We were impatient just now!” The men shivered fearfully.

Liam piped up after noticing their conditions, “Sir, I will make sure that they receive the appropriate punishments for hitting those innocent people by following the law.”

Levi’s lips curled into a sneer. “Well, I want to deal with this matter by using my way today because of a reason!”

“Reason?” Everyone was astounded.

“Do you remember hitting a female doctor?” Levi asked.

The men exchanged glances with one another.

The only person who had fitted Levi’s description was Benny Quinton’s assistant, who had tried to stop them from leaving at that time.

They nodded after a moment of consideration.

“Oh, just so you know, that person is my mother-in-law!”

Dreadful silence filled the air after Levi spoke.

Everyone was stunned.

So, they hit the God of War’s mother-in-law? Where did they find the courage to do something like that?

Liam was drenched in a nervous sweat, as his face turned pallid, after a split second.

He had never been more afraid in his entire life.

Liam and Nathan finally understood how terribly they had raised Andy, by constantly showering him with affection, fulfilling his every wish.

Andy grew up to become an arrogant, self-centered brat who would do anything as he pleased.

Now they had to suffer the consequences of their bad parenting.

Andy, soaked in a cold sweat, regretted his decision as well, for accidentally harming the God of War's mother-in-law.

"Who hit her?" Levi asked.

All eight men, groveling on the floor, shuddered. None of them dared to admit their sins.

"So, you're not confessing?" Levi's voice was heard again.

The rest of the men took a step back to expose the culprit.

The culprit, Tig, shook with fear.

"Did you hit my mother-in-law?" Levi questioned him.

Tig wanted to answer him, but he could not utter a single word.

Bam!

Levi kicked Tig in his face as the latter flew a few meters across the hall.

Tig was dragged to Levi's feet again.

Slap!

Levi slapped Tig's face forcefully and sent him flying across the room again.

Then, he was dragged to face Levi's wrath again.

The process was repeated by at least twenty times.

Tig's face had turned into a bloody mess after Levi was done. His facial features became misshapen and disfigured.

Everyone else inside the hall was petrified by Levi's ruthlessness.

Even the big boss of the underworld, Liam, was trembling.

The Protector Chapter 315

“Is that the way you should treat hospital staff? How could you have to gall harm them, when they've been working hard to rescue lives? Did they offend you? Where is your conscience?” Levi directed volleys of questions at Liam and his men.

Pin-drop silence lingered in the air inside the hall, as no one dared to make a sound.

Levi knew that he had every right and reason to punish those people for what they did.

“I want all of you who’d hurt the hospital staff to kneel and apologize to them at the hospital. Then you will fully compensate them, for the damage you’ve done!” Levi demanded.

“Okay. I will make the necessary arrangements!” Liam answered.

Levi then turned to glance at Liam. “The Macy family shall retire from now on!”

Boom!

That announcement was a bolt from the blue to the entire Macy family.

Levi had determined the Macy family’s fate with a single command.

The Macy family would cease to exist in the underworld from that moment onwards.

Jesse Nielsen may not have had the authority to uproot the Macy family’s influence, but Levi could.

No!

No!

Andy and Nathan looked absolutely miserable.

They had wanted to inherit the Macy family’s possession, ruling over North Hampton’s underworld in the future.

Levi’s order had shattered their dreams.

Liam, on the other hand, was calm and collected. He accepted the family's fate without any protest.

In his opinion, it was already a blessing for them to remain alive, after that incident.

However, he knew that the Macy family's enemies would soon target them after they lose their status. So, the chances for them to survive would be slim.

The Macy family's crisis had truly arrived.

At that moment, Jack Smith, who was hiding amongst the crowd, smirked. Everything is proceeding as I'd planned. Levi Garrison has eliminated Liam Macy as I'd expected. I can finally become the most powerful person in North Hampton's underworld. Hehe...

However, Levi turned to look at Jack, just as the smirk crept across his face.

"Do not think that I'm unaware of the scheme that you were planning, Jack Smith. You are going to retire alongside the Macy family!"

The smile on Jack's face wavered, after listening to Levi.

He stared at Levi in utter disbelief. How can this be happening?

To his misfortune, Levi did not stop there.

He had eradicated all the underworld forces in North Hampton that day.

That news shocked everyone in the whole of Quebec.

Ultimately, Benny returned to the hospital unscathed.

The wrongdoers knelt before the hospital to express their remorse, compensating the hospital staff with a large amount of money. Soon after, all of them were detained.

Nonetheless, the most important consequence following that incident was Liam Macy's downfall.

However, the reason behind his downfall was a secret.

To his dismay, members of the Gonzales family and the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce understood, that the turn of events was due to the God of War's interference.

Liam Macy had truly offended someone he should not have.

Caitlyn stayed at home to recuperate after she had suffered that terrible injury.

She felt relieved after knowing of the wrongdoers' willingness to compensate and apologize.

Caitlyn turned to look at Levi and Aaron seated beside her bed. Then she muttered coldly, "The two of you are spineless men! No one would have dared to bully me if you were slightly capable."

Levi knew that his mother-in-law was merely venting out her anger.

I can't imagine that some thugs would dare to barge into the hospital, hitting innocent passers-by, even with my status as the God of War!

Levi arranged for a few bodyguards to protect Benny at all times, after that incident.

He did not want to risk Benny's safety anymore.

Things stayed normal, as life went on afterward.

Soon enough, one day, Iris received a piece of news. There was a problem with Morris Group's product.

Their medical apparatus had caused a patient's death, while the patient was receiving treatment in a clinical setting!

The authorities had investigated the issue and determined that the apparatus was the cause of the sudden death.

Morris Group's medical devices were deemed to be faulty!

"That's impossible! All of our products were subjected to stringent quality control tests! There should not be such an issue!" Isaiah was astounded.

Iris sighed, "Perhaps someone is trying to frame us." It is not surprising for us to be targeted by business competitors since our products are monopolizing the market. Nonetheless, this is too much to cause a person's death!

The Protector Chapter 316

The matter spread to the public before Iris had time to contain the news.

The media and newspaper publishers swiftly reported Morris Group's error as a headline topic, The medical devices endorsed by the national treasure, Benny Quinton, were deemed defective. Use of the medical devices in a clinical setting had resulted in the death of a patient!

That news became an instant sensation that spread all over Erudia.

Benny's appointment as Morris Group's ambassador had boosted Morris Group's reputation and sales to the top in the business field.

The company's market value increased steeply as well.

Morris Group's exponential growth had limited the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce's control over the market.

Unexpectedly, a disaster occurred just after a few days of success.

A patient's death was a taboo in the medical field.

Unfortunately, Morris Group had to face the predicament.

At eight o'clock in the morning.

Quebec's Department of Business and Management, Department of Work Safety, Consumers' Association, Department of Commerce, Department of Commercial Products' Quality Assurance, and State Police Department joined forces to investigate that matter.

They halted Morris Group's factory production and operations at once.

All six departments had assigned a special task force to Morris Group, temporarily suspending Morris Group's business license.

The entire organization that was running smoothly before had collapsed, all of a sudden.

Iris and the other executives were discussing ways to deal with the issue when a group of people marched up to the meeting room.

The door to the meeting room was forcefully pushed open.

“Can I meet with the person-in-charge in this place? We are from the special task force established by the six main departments in Quebec. We are tasked with the investigation of the grave error found in your company’s products!”

The man leading the group of people was Keith York, the deputy director of the Quebec Police Department. He was nicknamed ‘Justice Keith’, for his righteous personality.

No one expected a special task force to be established with the sole purpose of handling that matter. So, it was clear to see the impact of the flaw in Morris Group’s medical apparatus.

Iris stood up frightfully and explained, “I am the vice-president of Morris Group, Iris Anabelle. I am the person-in-charge for now.”

Keith introduced himself in a cold tone, “I am the captain of this special task force, Keith York. Request for your company’s president and chairman of the board to show themselves at once!”

“This...”

Iris was caught in a difficult position.

All the other executives were exchanging glances, one amongst the other because even the majority of them had never seen Morris Group’s big boss.

Their president, Neil Rhodes, was not frequently seen in the company as well.

“Mr. York, I am the main handler of Morris Group at the moment. You can speak to me directly if there’s anything urgent,” Iris relayed.

Keith sneered, “A vice-president is running the entire company? Maybe Morris Group’s faulty internal management is to blame for this flaw in the company’s production! I am now suspecting Morris Group’s owner to be on the run after committing a crime!”

“No, that’s not it…” Iris hurriedly shook her head.

“Okay. Then why don’t you tell me what’s going on?” Keith stared at her.

“I…” Iris did not know how to describe Morris Group’s management style because their big boss and president, Neil Rhodes, were extraordinary men.

“So, you can’t tell me anything?” Keith jeered at Iris.

“I hereby announce all on-going processes in Morris Group to be halted and every member of the company to be subjected to inquiry. The employees related to the production department will undergo rigorous questioning. The police will now begin to inspect Morris Group. Anyone who is involved in this fatal incident will be severely punished!”

All members of the company’s upper management were anxious after listening to Keith’s speech. If the police can prove Morris Group’s negligence in this matter, the company will meet its downfall, and all of us, executives, will certainly face time in prison.

Iris and her colleagues defended themselves, “I hope you will uncover the truth, Mr. York. There is absolutely nothing wrong with our products. We’d even received multiple certifications from the Quality Control Department. Moreover, we even have Mr. Quinton to guarantee our products’ quality. There must be someone out there who’s trying to frame us!”

The Protector Chapter 317

“Is that so? But are you able to guarantee the quality of every item produced by your company? From what I’ve heard, Morris Group has been rushing the

production's progress lately. Other manufacturers took half a year to produce a similar machine, while Morris Group's production used less than a month.

I can't help but feel suspicious about your manufacturing speed. Indeed, Mr. Quinton is your company's ambassador. No one will dare to question the product's quality because of Mr. Quinton's prestige. In that case, did you manipulate his honorable reputation to bypass the quality control processes?"

Iris was rendered speechless, as she could not refute Keith's suspicions.

At that moment, the people from North Hampton Commercial Crime Investigation Section arrived as well.

"Who's the person-in-charge here? We've received an anonymous report that Morris Group plagiarized the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce's core technology. We have discovered this report to be truthful, after a series of investigations. Morris Group's products are almost identical to the Chamber's, but the Chamber has been producing these products for years!"

Boom!

Everyone was stunned after listening to the false accusation.

The North Hampton Chamber of Commerce had filed a complaint against Morris Group for plagiarism when they were the ones who had committed the crime.

Keith smiled after hearing that statement. "No wonder there is an error with the medical apparatus. You'd plagiarized the core technology from another source but had failed to produce products with the same quality!"

"Yeah. That must be it. The medical apparatus must be flawed because of that!"

Members of the special task force jeered at Iris and her colleagues.

All the media began publishing news related to that topic, The authorities have proven Morris Group to have plagiarized the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce's core technology. Plagiarism is the primary cause of the fatal incident.

Netizens flooded the Internet with angry comments after the news was spread to the public. Morris Group's market value plummeted. A huge crisis befell the company, as they faced the risk of bankruptcy.

That was not the full extent of the impact of that incident, because even Benny was dragged into the mess.

Some media sources released information of Benny receiving a huge amount of ambassador fees from Morris Group. They estimated the sum to be close to three hundred million.

The media rebuked Benny for his lack of professionalism and unethical personality, to guarantee the quality of Morris Group's products even when he was in the know of their products' subpar quality.

Some even referred to Benny as a hypocrite.

Meanwhile, Morris Group's trouble continued to snowball.

The police officers arrived after being summoned by Keith.

"Iris Anabelle, Isaiah Wade..."

The majority of Morris Group's executives were brought away by the police.

The severity of that incident was as clear as day.

At that moment, in City First Hospital.

Benny was treating patients as usual in the clinic, while Caitlyn helped him out as his assistant.

Right then, a commotion erupted in the hallway.

“What’s going on?” Benny frowned.

He was not afraid for his safety, as Levi had arranged for skilled bodyguards to protect him.

A few patients’ family members rushed into the office swiftly after.

“You’re an unethical doctor, Benny Quinton! How can you live such an unethical life?”

“How can you spend the three hundred million without any guilt or remorse?”

“Don’t you feel sorry for killing your patients?”

They pointed at Benny and reprimanded.

“You’re a beast, Benny Quinton! You’re the worst doctor in Erudia!”

“That’s right! You do not deserve to wear that white coat! All of you are terrible human beings!”

The family members were agitated. They would have physically harmed Benny if the other doctors and nurses did not stop them.

“Boohoo... you died for no reason, my hubby! Your sickness was not severe in the first place!” A middle-aged woman knelt in the office and cried hysterically.

All the other family members began thrashing the office, as they continued to curse Benny.

“What has happened?” Benny was confused.

“Mr. Quinton, a patient in the hospital used a medical apparatus produced by Morris Group last night and died because the machine had broken down. The patient was merely diagnosed with a mild sickness,” A doctor informed Benny of the truth.

Boom!

Benny slumped into the leather seat after he listened to the doctor’s explanation.

The Protector Chapter 318

Even Caitlyn, who was standing aside, turned pale. Someone’s dead! This is a huge problem! Mr. Quinton had assured the public of the product’s quality, after all. Everyone will be targeting him before Morris Group if there’s anything wrong with the medical apparatus.

“How is this possible?” Benny could not believe the turn of events.

After all, he had tested and analyzed the medical apparatus with his students. Moreover, Morris Group had received two different quality assurance certifications.

The only explanation is that someone intended to frame Morris Group. However so, this method is simply unacceptable. They’d caused a person’s death!

Benny slammed his hand upon the surface of the table. “I, Benny Quinton, will handle this matter!”

He told Caitlyn to inform the hospital to hold a press conference for him.

Benny attended the press conference that was held, soon after.

His message to the public was simple. He assured everyone he would investigate the incident, to uncover the truth. If the patient's death were truly due to the quality of the product, Benny told the media that he would be willing to end his own life, to make up for his mistake.

That issue attracted more attention after the press conference ended.

No one expected Benny to be so determined, as he was willing to give up his own life to make amends for his error.

On the other hand, in Bale Group.

Ron Bale, Xawery Yount, and the other two council members of the Chamber gathered.

"How are things now, Ron? Did you make the proper arrangements?" Wildan Saenz asked worriedly.

Ron smiled. "Don't worry. I did not leave any traces. My men had destroyed the surveillance footage in the hospital when we'd secretly changed the medical apparatus. Even the police will never recover the footage with their technology!"

"Does that mean that Morris Group will face their demise with utmost certainty this time?" Xawery was ecstatic.

"That's right. Morris Group is doomed! Moreover, the special task force assigned to investigate the matter is unmerciful in carrying out their duties. No one can help Morris Group this time, regardless of the support that they have!"

“I know about this. Even Mr. Nielsen can only keep himself updated with the investigation progress. He does not have the authority to interfere!”

Everyone laughed.

Ron’s eyes gleamed with malicious intent. “Although we hate that old fool, Benny Quinton, we do have to thank him! It is because of his prominent reputation that’d caused Morris Group’s flaw to be magnified and disseminate by the public. This matter has become so critical that even Mr. Nielsen cannot intervene.”

“Hmph! That’s what he gets for deciding to help Morris Group publicize their products!”

“Benny Quinton is just a hypocrite. He’s acting high and mighty, but who knows how much money he had received from Morris Group in secret?”

Wildan and Xawery sneered.

“Not only did we manage to eliminate Morris Group this time, but we’d also increased our sales by a large margin. So what if our products are more expensive? The consumers will still pick us because our products are safer to use!”

“Hehehe...”

The group of cunning men smirked.

They were truly evil and unprincipled businessmen who prioritized their own benefit, above all. They did not care about sacrificing others to satisfy their greed.

Ron and his friends could not care less about the patient who had passed away in the hospital. They had not even felt sorry, for his death.

They could remain nonchalant because they were already numb from committing similar crimes, one too many times.

Sacrificing innocent people to achieve their goals had become a norm to those members of the Chamber.

The public was urging for Morris Group to disband and for authorities to detain the owner of the corporation.

The reason was that Morris Group's boss had yet to show himself since the beginning of that incident. Iris was the highest-ranking executive to address the public thus far.

Aside from Morris Group, Zoey's newly-established company was facing a difficult time as well.

Her new company would dissolve, following Morris Group's disbandment.

Coincidentally, Zoey was discussing a possible collaboration with a foreign enterprise from Keera, at that moment.

The potential partnership would fall apart if Morris Group succumbed to the plight.

Benny met up with Levi immediately.

Levi was livid after he was made aware of the on-going situation.

"There's no doubt that the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce is behind this!" Levi spat out.

The Protector Chapter 319

Upon discovering that the Morris Group was expanding its businesses swiftly, it was evident that the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce would suffer the most losses.

However, it was unexpected that they would take such drastic actions!

“The most difficult thing to do right now is to uncover the truth. I’m certain that all the clues would have been destroyed by now,” Levi declared.

As of now, Phoenix was already investigating the matter.

“Sir, the CCTV footage from eleven-thirty to twelve at the City First Hospital was deleted!” Phoenix reported.

“That could only mean that someone had entered the hospital during that time period to take action,” Benny suggested.

Levi inquired, “Phoenix, can you fix it?”

“I need the video source. Even if it was corrupted on purpose, I can fix it,” Phoenix replied.

“Okay, we’ll go right now.”

Soon, Levi and Benny arrived at the hospital’s control room.

However, the door was guarded by a few men who refused to let them enter.

Benny was straightforward. "I'm Benny Quinton. I need to get last night's CCTV footage..."

"No! I don't care who you are. No one but the special task force can enter," the men insisted. They refused to let anyone in.

"Fine, let's go take a look at the devices that were affected."

Levi and Benny headed over to the room, only to be informed that the devices had been removed.

Only the special task force had access to the devices.

Upon hearing that, Levi contacted Jesse at once.

"Nielson, I need the CCTV footage from City First Hospital," he announced.

"I can't help you with this! The special task force was sent by the South Warzone in South City, Quebec. We, at North Hampton, received orders not to interfere in their investigation. I'm really sorry." Jesse seemed torn.

"By the way, my teacher, Grover Cooke, was the one who suggested it. To avoid suspicion, no one in North Hampton is to intervene. Besides, they are to come up with a conclusion in three days' time," Jesse professed.

"Okay, got it."

After hanging up, a smile appeared upon Levi's lips.

He had heard about Grover, as that man had connections with the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce.

Well played, North Hampton Chamber of Commerce.

You kicked up a fuss so the South City would send someone to deal with it. You've refused to allow anyone from North Hampton to intervene. By pinning it on us, you can take down Morris Group in the fastest way possible!

"Azure Dragon, find out who's the captain of this special task force," Levi ordered.

Soon, Azure Dragon brought back news. "Sir, the captain is Keith York, deputy director of the Quebec Police Department. York is famous for being an incorruptible police officer. He won't let anyone intervene in this case!"

"Okay. Relay my order. Tell Keith York to come and meet me!" Levi pronounced.

Shortly after, a car arrived at the manor.

Alighting the car was Keith, the captain of the special task force.

Azure Dragon led Keith to the room.

In the room, he saw both Benny and Levi.

"Greetings, God of War," Keith greeted him politely.

"Keith York? Do you know why I've summoned you here?" Levi inquired.

Keith was taken aback. Gritting his teeth, he muttered, "I know of your relationship with Mr. Quinton. I'll be frank here. You can't intervene in the Morris Group's case. I won't allow you to do as such."

"No one in North Hampton is allowed to intervene. I remember that you're the deputy of North Hampton, so please understand my plight."

"If you insist on intervening, it'll be over my dead body!"

Keith's tough demeanor stunned everyone in the room.

The Protector Chapter 320

They finally realized why this was no easy feat. Even Jesse's hands were tied.

Levi questioned, "Mr. York, how's your investigation going?"

"We only have three days' time to settle this case. From the evidence we've gathered, Morris Group's products were of inferior quality. We're almost certain that it was Morris Group's problem. So, we'll arrest those involved and stop production of the related products," Keith explained.

Although he knew that something went wrong with the CCTV, the technical department still could not fix it.

"What if I insist on intervening?" Levi asked.

"It's as I'd said earlier. If you insist on intervening, it'll be over my dead body!" Keith refused to relent.

Suddenly, Levi smiled.

"Mr. York, I believe that you aren't aware of this. My soldier, Kirin, and I are both involved in this case. We can't stay out of this."

"Ah?" Keith was confused.

"No, you're not involved in it," Keith assured.

"You're saying that without thorough investigation?" Levi demanded icily.

“Sir, I don’t understand you...” Keith lowered his head anxiously.

“Morris Group is being managed by its vice president now, right? What about its president and chairman?” Levi inquired.

Keith immediately blurted out, “That’s still under investigation. I believe that we’ll discover who they are soon!”

“No need. Kirin is the president, and I am the chairman,” Levi revealed.

Boom!

It was as if thunder had struck Keith, as he stared at Levi in shock.

He came to his senses immediately.

If it weren’t for Levi, why would Benny Quinton arrive in North Hampton and promote the products?

Furthermore, why would Levi produce inferior quality products in the first place?

Someone is framing Morris Group.

He belatedly realized what was happening.

“Allow my men to assist in your investigation,” Levi ordered.

“Got it!” Keith agreed at once.

Soon, the corrupted video source was sent to Phoenix.

Levi, Benny, and the rest went to view the affected devices themselves.

After checking the devices, a smile appeared on Levi's lips. "Mr. York, these products don't belong to Morris Group!"

"Huh?" Keith and his men were stunned.

"During production, I'd instructed the technical department to print some special codes secretly on our devices, to prevent disputes from happening. However, these devices don't have the codes! You can confirm this by checking the other products from Morris Group."

Keith told his men to validate Levi's claim instantly.

After comparing the devices, the men confirmed that Levi was speaking of the truth.

The devices manufactured by Morris Group indeed had special codes printed on them! These devices here didn't have any!

"Find out where the devices are from!" Keith ordered.

Meanwhile, Phoenix quickly recovered the CCTV footage.

Upon watching the video, everyone was shocked.

Indeed, someone had switched the medical device!

They were framed.

"Find out who's the man in the video!"

Keith flew into a howling rage.

He was an impartial, being a mere police officer.

If not for Levi's assistance, he would have certainly dealt with the case wrongly.

Hence, he blew his top.

On the other hand, Kirin handed Keith another file.

"Inside this file is the evidence and clues on how the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce stole Levi Group's core technology."

"Okay, I'll investigate this matter as well!" Keith nodded.

He was full of admiration for Levi.

Levi's really capable, solving problems easily and efficiently, he thought.

The matter had been resolved.

Even Mr. Quinton was relieved.

The Protector Chapter 321

"What a pity that we've lost two of our men. They are innocent," Mr. Quinton sighed.

Levi shook his head helplessly. "Well, the business world is akin to a battlefield. Six years ago, I'd encountered an unexpected disaster and had nearly died!"

"We need to uncover the mastermind behind this scheme. We won't let the perpetrators off easily!" Mr. Quinton bellowed out, in rage.

That night, at home, Zoey was terribly worried about Iris.

If everything were true, Iris would be sent to jail.

Right then, Harry arrived with the others.

“Haha! Zoey, you and the trash are fine? We’d heard that something had happened to Morris Group, so we’d thought that you’d been arrested.” Henry chortled.

Both Shaun and Melanie were smiling. “Seeing as how Morris Group is done for, Zoey’s company will be closed down too. Zoey, what is your plan?”

“Are you going to return to the Lopez family?” Fabian teased.

“I…” Zoey seemed helpless.

Her company was in trouble and would be acquired soon.

Harry grinned. “Zoey, calm down. I am here to strike a business deal with you.”

Zoey was confused. “Huh? What business deal?”

“About buying out your company. I plan to acquire your company at two million!” Harry replied.

“Two million?” Zoey was incredulous.

Even if Morris Group were to stop investing in my company, it’ll still be estimated at around one to two billion.

It’s impossible for someone to acquire it at a mere two million.

This is so absurd.

“Haha! Zoey, aren’t you aware of your circumstances? Once Morris Group goes bankrupt, your company will be largely affected. By then, you won’t even get two hundred grand, let alone two million.”

“Yes. Moreover, if you sell your company to Grandpa, you’ll still be able to work at Lopez Group,” Shaun and Harry sneered.

“Hey!” Zoey exclaimed furiously.

They’re merely here to add insult to the injury!

“Zoey, I’ll give you two days to consider my offer. Don’t delay it any further, or you’ll be sure to receive less than two million.”

“Besides, I’ve also heard that you’re striking a deal with a company in Keerea. Let me handle that, alright?” Harry offered icily.

After the Lopez family took their departure, Levi consoled Zoey, “Don’t worry, honey. Everything will be fine.”

Three days passed in a flash, and the special task force was about to announce the results of their investigation the next day.

That same night, Ron, Xawery, and Wildan were celebrating at the club.

“Haha! I’ve heard that Keith refused to allow anyone to see the evidence,” Ron chuckled.

“Yes. Keith’s an incorruptible police officer. He wouldn’t allow anyone to interfere with his decision!”

“We just have to wait for the results to be announced tomorrow. By then, Morris Group and their upgraded technology will belong to us! Hahaha...” Xawery was so excited that he was about to sing out loud.

He placed his arms around Wildan’s shoulders and started singing along with him.

Bang!

Momentarily, someone kicked the door to their VIP room open.

Over a dozen police officers rushed into the room.

Ron and the other men were stunned.

Someone stepped into the room, flanked by the surrounding men.

He took out his ID and announced, “Keith York, captain of the special task force!”

“What? Keith York?”

Immediately, Ron and the others turned pale.

The Protector Chapter 322

“Mr. York, your reputation precedes you!” Ron and the others smiled in greeting.

They had no idea why Keith had showed up so abruptly.

“How can you still be in the mood to sing? Don’t you know of the trouble you’re in?” Keith scoffed.

“Ah? Trouble? What trouble?” Ron and the others inquired in shock.

“You are all arrested!” Keith announced as his expression darkened.

His colleague showed them the arrest warrant.

“Huh? What? We’re arrested?” Ron and his friends asked incredulously.

“Unfortunately, the CCTV footage was recovered by an expert. We’ve found the culprit, and he’s given us your names!” Keith laughed coldly.

Boom!

They were so stunned and almost passed out.

The next day, everyone waited eagerly for the results to be announced.

However, the results shocked them.

It was now apparent. The four council members of the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce were the ones who had framed Morris Group.

All the culprits were arrested and sentenced.

Morris Group’s innocence was proved, and everyone was happy about it.

The group even compensated the victims’ families with money, receiving public praise.

Benny was glad by how the matter was resolved.

He admired how Levi had dealt with the matter. He was impressed by his attitude.

The Lopez family was dumbfounded. They wanted to buy out Zoey's new company for two million, but Morris Group had emerged unscathed in the end.

After that incident, many hospitals released the results of their clinical trials regarding Morris Group's medical devices. In conclusion, the devices were of outstanding quality and performed better than the previous versions of the device.

Soon, Morris Group's business resumed with its regular activity.

This time, the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce suffered heavy losses.

Their market value dropped by at least ten billion.

The four noble families could do nothing but watch, as their losses increased.

Their only hope was the God of War.

The North Hampton Warzone's commander-in-chief's appointment ceremony was about to happen soon. It was said that the commander-in-chief, Percy Covington, was about to arrive in North Hampton.

Eric and the others were excited.

Even the Gonzales family, who was the wealthiest family around, was eager for that day to arrive.

Meanwhile, Andy brought good news to the Gonzales family... Una and her cousins were allowed to join the ceremony.

Of course they were elated when they had learnt of the news.

The young ladies and gentlemen of the upper-class society took events like this seriously.

To them, this was a great opportunity to raise their social status and brag about how they were invited to such an event.

“Haha! Now that the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce is weakened, I only have to bootlick the God of War to gain control over it, sooner or later,” Winston announced, utterly delighted.

“Sir, a Mr. Park Guk-chang from the Kappei Corporation in Keerea is here to see you,” the housekeeper came to inform Winston.

“Okay, let him in.”

Winston had plenty of partnerships with companies in Keerea, and Kappei Corporation was something he had considered trivial.

Nonetheless, he was in a good mood today, so he agreed to see the man.

Soon, Park Guk-chang entered the hall.

His request was simple. He was going to develop his business in North Hampton, so he came to curry Winston’s favor.

The most interesting thing was that Park Guk-chang Kappei Corporation was the company from Keerea that Zoey was going to collaborate with.

“Mm, I know your teacher well. I’ll provide you help, wherever it is needed.”

Upon Winston’s agreement, Park Guk-chang was ecstatic.

The wealthiest man’s promise meant that he could gain a firm foothold in North Hampton.

The next day, Levi was in his office when he received Zoey's call.

"Levi, I'm in a middle of a discussion. Abigail needs some business data for her internship. Can you help me deliver it to her?" Zoey asked.

The Protector Chapter 323

She was currently discussing a collaboration with Kappei Corporation from Keerea.

"Okay, I'll send it over to her!"

After receiving the data, Levi headed to the University of North Hampton.

It took him a while to find Abigail.

Levi handed the file to Abigail and was about to leave when she stopped him.

"Levi, you haven't had lunch yet, right?" Abigail asked.

"Of course. I came to deliver the file to you," Levi responded.

"Come, I'll buy you a meal. Shall we eat at the canteen?" Abigail gazed at Levi expectantly.

Levi could sense his stomach grumbling upon hearing Abigail's suggestion.

He had not had a meal in his alma mater for years.

“Okay, let’s go to the canteen!”

“Let’s go!”

Abigail held Levi’s arm as they walked in the campus.

Levi did not think much about it, as she used to do the same thing when Zoey was accompanying them.

He merely thought of her as a young girl.

However, the other students did not think that way.

Abigail was popular in the university as she was pretty.

She had been single since she had arrived, and many students were curious as to when she would get a boyfriend.

Today, an unusual scenario appeared before their eyes... The pretty Abigail was holding a man’s arm in public!

Everyone who had witnessed that was stunned.

It was definitely shocking news.

Even though the man seemed to be older than her, he was good in every way.

At once, everyone was certain that he was Abigail’s boyfriend.

Soon, the news of Abigail’s boyfriend spread quickly throughout the campus.

Levi sensed that everyone was staring at him strangely, while Abigail was smirking silently.

She wanted to fool others into thinking that Levi was her boyfriend.

As she inched closer to Levi, her pursuers were about to slam their tables in rage.

“I never knew that Abigail liked older men!” the young men exclaimed in anger.

Finally, Abigail and Levi reached the canteen.

Levi chose a table which was at a corner, but everyone could not peel their eyes away from him.

When Abigail arrived with the dishes on a serving tray, Levi was exasperated. “Turns out you’re quite popular on campus, huh?”

“Of course! I’m one of the prettiest students in campus!”

Abigail leaned closer to Levi and asked in a low voice, “Levi, everyone thinks that you’re my boyfriend. What should I do? I’ll never get a boyfriend if this happens.”

Levi grinned. “Not a problem. I’ll inform the broadcast room...”

“Hey, you’re no fun!” Abigail pretended to be mad.

As the dishes were served, Levi started gobbling the food.

He did not realize that the crowd surrounding them was growing larger.

After filling up his stomach, Levi stood up to leave.

“I’ll send you off,” Abigail pronounced, trailing behind him.

She was gazing at Levi affectionately, so everyone immediately knew what was going on.

Many young men’s hearts were broken into pieces. Abigail really has a boyfriend!

As Levi and Abigail stepped out of the canteen, a group of people approached them, blocking their exit.

Levi tried to leave, but they would not allow him to do so.

These people were dressed in Taekwondo uniforms, appearing to be fierce.

“Park Heung-tae, what are you doing?” Abigail yelled angrily.

This exchange student from Keerea was skilled in Taekwondo, and he was an overbearing young man. He had punished all the boys who had tried to get to know Abigail.

Ignoring Abigail, Park Heung-tae glared at Levi, warning him in broken English, “Abigail’s mine! Stay away from her!”

The Protector Chapter 324

Upon hearing that, a smile appeared upon Levi's lips.

The exchange student's behavior made him extremely upset.

Abigail disagreed and demanded, "Park Heung-tae, stop spewing nonsense. When did I become yours?"

"You are my girlfriend, Abigail. Everyone in the University of North Hampton knows it," Park Heung-tae chirruped, smugly.

His friends from the Taekwondo Club immediately cheered for him.

The others were furious, but they had not dared to say a word.

These exchange students were arrogant, as they got to enjoy several privileges on campus.

Park Heung-tae himself had a black belt in Taekwondo, so no one dared to offend him.

"Leave Abigail now, or you'll end up in a sorry state," Park Heung-tae threatened icily.

"What's happening?"

Right then, a voice sounded, all of a sudden.

Abigail's senior, Kyle walked towards them.

He recognized Levi at once.

His father had told him that Levi Garrison was a big shot, whom he should befriend.

At that moment, Kyle knew his chance had arrived.

“You?” Park Heung-tae’s face darkened.

He had investigated Abigail’s pursuers, and his strongest contender was this man, Kyle Jarvis.

“Park Heung-tae, this is my friend. Don’t cause a scene,” Kyle announced with his hands in his pockets.

“Who the f** are you to order me around?”

No one expected that Park Heung-tae would start cursing all of a sudden.

Even Kyle was stunned.

Previously, Park Heung-tae had treated me with respect.

What’s happened to him today?

He was unaware that Park Heung-tae’s father, Park Guk-chang had gained Winston’s support, so his son had grown increasingly arrogant.

“Park Heung-tae, what do you mean? Are you being cocky right now?” Kyle bellowed in anger.

You’re embarrassing me in front of Levi!

“Ha! Do I need to show you respect? You Erudian monkey!” Park Heung-tae reached out to pat Kyle’s cheek.

“D*** it!”

Kyle’s face fell as he took off his shirt, ready to fight.

I must teach him a lesson today!

“You want to fight with me? Good, good!” Park Heung-tae was excited.

As two famous students in the university were about to fight, a massive crowd had formed around them.

I must win this fight!

Kyle roared and rushed towards his opponent like a ferocious tiger, generating a powerful force.

As Kyle charged towards him, a murderous glint flashed across Park Heung-tae’s eyes.

Thud!

He shifted slightly to avoid Kyle’s attack before giving him a forceful kick.

Kyle was immediately flung back several meters. After he landed on the ground, he groaned, unable to rise again.

“D***!” Everyone gasped.

Kyle had learned to wrestle since he was young, and he was good at it. However, he could not even handle Park Heung-tae’s punch?

How strong could Park Heung-tae be?

Elated, Park Heung-tae swept his gaze across the crowd. “Is this how Erudians fight? What a load of crap. Compared to Keerea’s Taekwondo, it’s nothing but trash!”

“Erudian wrestling is trash! I’ve heard that Kyle was an expert in wrestling, but he is useless!”

“That’s right! Erudian wrestling seems exceptional in movies, but is actually useless in reality!”

The Taekwondo Club’s members mocked continuously.

Park Heung-tae snickered, “Erudian wrestling is trash! Today, I, Park Heung-tae, welcomes anyone who disagrees to fight me. There are no rules, so if you’re hurt, it has nothing to do with me. This applies the other way around, as well.”

The Protector Chapter 325

The crowd fell silent, and no one dared to look at him.

Smiling, Park Heung-tae declared, "No one wants to take up my challenge? Does no one dare to prove your Erudian wrestling? What a bunch of losers."

He taunted the Erudians mercilessly before their faces.

Who on earth could bear with that?

However, everyone was helpless.

Even Kyle, who was an expert, was defeated, let alone, what would befall the rest of them?

Those who dared to accept his challenge were seeking death.

Right then, everyone who met Park Heung-tae's vicious grin hurriedly lowered their heads in shock.

"Hahaha! No one in Erudia is going to prove that Erudian wrestling works? How disappointing. Your country is declining!"

To show off in front of Abigail, Park Heung-tae had blatantly provoked the entire country.

In a small voice, Abigail asked, "Levi, is he that good?"

Levi replied with a smile. "He's nothing but an ant."

Five years ago, Levi had encountered many men like this on the battlefield.

The Keerean soldiers were the worst of them all.

Right then, Park Heung-tae turned his sharp gaze to Levi. “What’s wrong? Do you want to challenge me?”

As Levi was standing beside Abigail, he had wanted to teach him a lesson from the very beginning.

Levi said nothing as he walked towards Park Heung-Tae.

The young man was thrilled. “Haha! Great! Finally, someone is willing to challenge me!”

As he stared at Levi, who was making his way over, dozens of ways to torture Levi appeared in his mind.

Soon, I’ll show Abigail what a real man is like!

In a blink of an eye, Levi was less than five meters away from Park Heung-tae.

Levi extended his right fist.

“Trash. What an idiot,” Park Heung-tae scoffed.

To him, Levi’s punch was full of flaws.

He reached out to block the punch instinctively.

However, the moment he touched Levi, his expression changed drastically.

Levi’s fist was faster than he had expected and was growing bigger in his eyes.

Thud!

The forceful punch landed on Park Heung-rae's face as he flew back like a broken puppet.

A gush of blood flew through the air, along with several of his teeth.

The punch threw him dozens of meters away. Park Heung-tae crashed through two trees before he finally collapsed to the ground.

"Ugh..." Park Heung-tae yelled in agony, as he rolled on the ground in pain.

"Young man, you can't insult Erudian wrestling," Levi reprimanded him before leaving with Abigail.

Silence ensued.

No one had expected that the devil incarnate, Park Heung-tae would end up in such a situation.

Levi had simply punched him once, but he had ended up badly hurt.

Now, it seemed like Taekwondo was trashed instead!

The news spread like wildfire.

Right then, in Zoey's new company at Union Square.

Zoey was discussing her collaboration with Park Guk-chang.

After gaining a foothold in North Hampton, Park Guk-chang surveyed the market, before realizing that Zoey's company had huge potential and would be the perfect partner for him.

At this moment, he received a phone call.

“What? My son is in the hospital because someone has beaten him up?”

Park Guk-chang’s expression darkened.

“Ah? Are you okay, Mr. Park?” Zoey inquired.

“Ms. Lopez, I have to go. My son has been beaten up, and he’s in the hospital right now. I need to go to him,” Park Guk-chang explained.

“Let me come with you,” Zoey responded, as their collaboration was extremely important to her.

“Sure.”

They soon arrived at the hospital.

“Who did this to you?” Park Guk-chang urged.

“A man named Levi Garrison!”

“What? Levi Garrison?”

Zoey’s face fell.

The Protector Chapter 326

Park Guk-chang demanded, "Do you know him?"

"He's my husband," Zoey answered honestly.

"Ha! What a coincidence. Your husband did this to my son? How?" Park Guk-chang was furious.

The medical report showed that Park Heung-tae had sustained multiple fractures, including facial fractures.

The punch left him a helpless wreck. He was lucky enough to have survived.

"Think about how you should settle this matter. I demand an explanation! I'll be frank with you. The wealthiest man, Winston, is my backer! I will pursue this matter!" Park Guk-chang uttered in a stern tone.

Zoey walked to a quiet zone and called Levi at once. "Do you know you're in trouble?"

Levi was surprised. "Huh? I'm in trouble?"

"Did you punch someone?" Zoey snapped.

"Yes, I did. But it was a friendly competition. The other party said that if he got hurt, it would have nothing to do with me," Levi replied.

"Ugh. Why do you like to get into trouble? You're in deep s*** now!"

Zoey was so infuriated she hung up at once.

She returned to Park Guk-chang. “Mr. Park, we’ll take full responsibility for this. I hope that we can settle this out of court. We’ll pay for the hospital bill and compensate you.”

Park Guk-chang glared at her. “No! I won’t go easy on you!”

Zoey asked, “Then what do you want me to do?”

“Easy. Your husband should suffer twice as much as my son has. My son fractured twelve ribs, so your husband has to fracture twenty-four ribs. The same goes for the other injuries, too.”

“Then, you shall sleep with me for one night. I will stop pursuing this matter if you agree,” Park Guk-chang suggested.

The first time he saw Zoey, he was attracted by her beauty.

This was the perfect opportunity for him to score her.

“No!” Zoey declined at once.

“I insist on compensating you. We can pay any amount that you demand,” she uttered.

Park Guk-chang sneered, “Compensation? Do you think that I need money? You’ll have to play by my rules!”

“If you don’t agree, I’ll ask the Gonzales family to talk to you!”

A cold glint shone in Park Guk-chang’s eyes.

Zoey’s face darkened, as her heart lurched anxiously.

It was obvious Park Guk-chang was trying to force her to cave in by threatening her with the Gonzales family.

If the wealthiest family around intervened in this matter, they would be in deep trouble.

However, if this were brought to court, Levi would be jailed for a few years.

If they settled it out of court, the Gonzales family would ensure that Levi was punished twofold and she would be sexually assaulted as well.

Compared to the Gonzales family, they were nothing.

“I’ll give you a few hours to think about it,” Park Guk-chang snorted.

After leaving the hospital, Park Guk-chang rushed over to the Gonzales family house to ask for Winston’s help.

“Mr. Gonzales, are you the most powerful man in North Hampton?” Park Guk-chang asked.

Winston’s face fell as he admitted, “Yes, I am. Everyone fears me in North Hampton.”

“But my son was assaulted after mentioning your name. He’s now lying in the ICU,” Park Guk-chang complained.

“What? He’d mentioned my name but was assaulted?”

Winston stood up abruptly.

No one in North Hampton dared to disrespect him!

Park Guk-chang showed him the medical report and explained the incident briefly to Winston.

“How ridiculous! How dare he hurt someone under my protection?” Winston was infuriated.

The Protector Chapter 327

The other Gonzales family members reacted similarly.

Their family’s reputation was very important to them.

“Tell me. Who’s the culprit? I’ll make sure he pays for what he’s done!” Winston raged.

He had just agreed to protect Park Guk-chang, so he needed to fulfill his promise.

“The man’s name is Levi Garrison,” Park Guk-chang told him, frankly.

“What? Levi Garrison?”

Upon hearing the familiar name, Winston and the others stiffened slightly.

Park Guk-chang was astonished. “What’s wrong? Is he a difficult target?”

“No, he’s someone whom we all hate.”

Una divulged the past incidents to Park Guk-chang at once.

Park Guk-chang let out an icy laugh. “This Levi is nothing but trash. He was hugging his sister-in-law in public. My son fancies his sister-in-law. He said something to them and got assaulted. Mentioning your family didn’t work, too!”

“How dare he look down on our family?”

Winston was infuriated. “He’d even beat up your son. I’ll make sure that he pays for what he did!”

Park Guk-chang was elated.

It had turned out that so many people had hated Levi, including the Gonzales family.

That’s good news!

With the Gonzales family’s support, I’ll get to avenge my son and sleep with Zoey.

“Tell Luke to come see me,” Winston ordered sternly.

Soon, the Gonzales family’s security team leader, Luke Gonzales, showed up.

Luke was a retired mercenary, and he was a skilled fighter.

He was known as the top fighter in North Hampton!

Even the God of War, Liam Macy’s subordinates could not defeat him.

Hence, Luke was Winston’s trump card.

“Luke, accompany Mr. Park to meet Levi and tell him what he should do. Say it’s Winston Gonzales’ order!” Winston announced.

“Yes, Sir!”

A menacing glint flashed across Luke’s eyes.

At night, when Levi returned home, he got scolded by an angry Zoey.

“You’re in deep trouble. Park Guk-chang is backed by Winston. How should we fight against him? Besides, why did you beat him up? Are you crazy?” Zoey roared.

“Zoey, you’re wrong. Park Heung-tae was the one who’d kicked up a fuss. He said it was a friendly competition and that if he got hurt, it would have nothing to do with us. Besides, he had also hurt my senior!” Abigail explained to her.

“Yes, he might’ve said that, but it’s different now because he’s hurt!” Zoey still appeared to be upset.

Right then, someone knocked on the door.

When the door was opened, they saw Park Guk-chang with Luke and his men.

“You’re Zoey and Levi, right? I’m Luke Gonzales, here by the order of Mr. Gonzales. Before midnight, at twelve, if the both of you come to the Lafite Mansion to receive your punishment, he’ll let you off the hook. Otherwise, the Gonzales family will do all that we can to punish you!” Luke threatened.

“Yes, you must pay the price!” Park Guk-chang yelled.

“You’ve got it wrong. Your son was the one who’d started it. He’d said that it was a friendly competition and that it was fine to get hurt!” Abigail defended them.

Clap clap! Park Guk-chang clapped his hands.

Instantly, dozens of her friends appeared behind him.

“No! Levi was hugging Abigail on campus. Park Heung-tae saw them and wanted to stop them, but Levi beat him up!”

“Yes, Levi was the one who’d started it.”

“I’d heard it with my own ears. Levi kept insulting them, claiming that Taekwondo was trash!”

Abigail was stunned.

How dare they twist the facts?

The Protector Chapter 328

“Nonsense! Park Heung-tae started insulting Erudia first. As Erudians, where is your conscience? Did you forget how he’d insulted our country this morning?” Abigail cried.

These students stiffened, but swiftly retorted, “Ha! Did he? No, he didn’t. Park Heung-tae is a kind person. How would he insult Erudia?”

“Yes, you have an affair with your brother-in-law and had beat him up because he’d caught you in the act!”

A repeated slander made others believe it.

As so many people were condemning Levi and Abigail, even Zoey was embarrassed by their accusations.

“No! Park Heung-tae hit Kyle first! We can ask Kyle to prove our innocence!” Abigail suddenly suggested.

At the same time, Kyle revealed himself. He was standing at the back of the crowd the whole time.

“Impossible. Levi was the one who’d hit me. I was condemning him with Park Heung-tae, but he did this to me!”

Kyle was glaring at Levi viciously.

Park Guk-chang was smug. “What else do you have to say?”

“Levi and Abigail have to apologize! Levi must pay for what he’s done!” Kyle and the dozens of students shouted.

It was as if Levi was in the wrong.

Between the Gonzales family and Levi, Kyle chose the Gonzales family.

Thunderstruck, they instantly understood what was going on.

The Gonzales family and Park Guk-chang had arranged for everything to happen.

No matter how wealthy Kyle’s family was, he dared not go against the Gonzales family.

They pushed the blame to Abigail and Levi, using the Gonzales family’s influence to twist the truth!

Levi felt chills spreading across his chest upon that sight.

Where are their consciences?

Back then, when Park Heung-tae insulted Erudia, everyone was involved.

When I took action, they cheered for me.

But now, they are turning their backs to me by framing me.

Well, that's disappointing.

Abigail knew why these students were willing to commit perjury. Besides the Gonzales family and Park Guk-chang's coercion, Park Heung-tae was an exchange student, so they had no choice but to do so.

If they offended the exchange students, they'd be ostracized by other students, as exchange students enjoyed a high status on campus.

Right then, the Lopez family rushed over after hearing the news.

Even Iris who lived next door, arrived.

After hearing the claims, they started hurling out accusations.

"I was right! Levi's nothing but a beast! He's harbored indecent thoughts for my sister-in-law, and now, he's involved with his other sister-in-law!"

"He's even offended the Gonzales family. He's dead meat for sure!"

"I suggest for Zoey to divorce him as soon as possible!"

Fabian and the others spoke up.

Even Iris appeared exasperated. "Why did you beat him up with no reason? You're in deep trouble now, for offending the Gonzales family."

“Isn’t Zoey good enough for you? Why did you seduce Abigail?”

Indeed, Levi and Abigail were rendered speechless.

This time, Park Guk-chang and the Gonzales family had an absolute advantage.

“From what I know, Park Heung-tae holds a black belt in Taekwondo. You must be good at fighting, huh? Why don’t we fight?” Luke stared at Levi, seemingly interested in him.

“What? You’re Luke Gonzales, the top fighter in North Hampton?”

Harry and the others’ expressions changed abruptly.

They had heard about this man. Normally, he would stay out of minor matters. However, if he took action, he would often cripple or kill his opponent.

Levi was done for!

He was screwed.

“Remember, come to Mr. Park before twelve, at midnight. If you don’t show up, everyone here should prepare to suffer from the Gonzales family’s wrath!”

The Protector Chapter 329

Luke left right after warning them.

Before Park Guk-chang left, he shot Zoey a smirk.

I must sleep with her no matter what.

After Luke and his men left, the Lopez family started cursing.

Levi had brought them into this mess by offending the wealthiest Gonzales family!

No one could afford to offend them.

“Quick, go see him now!” the Lopez’s urged.

Caitlyn was sobbing profusely. “Why won’t you stop inviting trouble? We’re finally living well, but you had to do this to us!”

Aaron sighed, “Why did you offend the Gonzales family out of a sudden?”

“You must go for Zoey’s sake!” Iris told him.

However, Zoey refused to let Levi leave. “No! If you go, they’ll beat you up!”

“Levi, if you’re a man, you should bear the responsibility for your own actions!” Iris, Harry, and the others reprimanded.

“Okay, I’ll go,” Levi agreed.

“I’ll come with you.” Zoey stood up.

“There’s no need for that. I can handle it myself.”

Meanwhile, Park Guk-chang was waiting at Lafite Mansion.

Luke had left earlier on, as the Gonzales family was only used to intimidate them.

Finally, at twelve, Levi arrived`.

“Mm? You’re here alone? Zoey must be here, too!” Park Guk-chang chortled.

With the Gonzales family’s support, he was certain that he would get Zoey soon.

Upon seeing Levi, Park Guk-chang’s men surrounded him immediately.

To their astonishment, Levi was not nervous at all. He plopped down onto the sofa and lit a cigarette.

His calm demeanor caught Park Guk-chang by surprise.

What is he doing?

“Winston Gonzales is your backer right?” Levi inquired.

“How dare you address Mr. Gonzales in such a manner!” Park Guk-chang roared.

Smiling, Levi replied, “Winston Gonzales? He’s a mere prey to me.”

“What? How dare you insult him?”

Park Guk-chang and his men were incredulous.

“So what if I’d insulted him? I can beat him up too!” Levi smoked as he told them calmly.

“What? The nerve of you! Today, I’ll help Mr. Gonzales punish you! Beat the crap out of him!” Park Guk-chang demanded furiously.

Dozens of men rushed to Levi at once.

Bang!

However, right then, the door crashed open with a huge bang.

Dozens of mercenaries with different skin colors rushed into the mansion.

Crackle, crackle...

The team of mercenaries led by James was so skilled, that Park Guk-chang's men were defeated in no time.

"Him, too!"

Levi pointed at Park Guk-chang.

James strode over to Park Guk-chang and grabbed his collar as though he was a little chick.

Thump!

He punched Park Guk-chang so forcefully that blood spurted out from him.

Park Guk-chang was stunned.

Thump!

Thump!

James continued punching Park Guk-chang until he fainted, his blood pooling on the ground.

In the end, Levi finished his cigarette before leaving the scene.

When Levi returned home uninjured, everyone was shocked.

“Huh? What happened? Didn’t they find fault with you?”

They stared at Levi, utterly confused.

“No. I’ve solved the matter. It’s fine, you can go home now!” Levi answered.

Meanwhile, Winston was asking Una, “How did it go? Did Park Guk-chang cripple Levi?”

“Grandpa, let me ask them.”

Una wanted to see Levi getting beaten up too.

“What? Park Guk-chang is in the hospital because someone had beaten him up? He’s faring worse than his son?”

Una was dumbfounded to hear that, after she made the phone call.

The Protector Chapter 330

It was late at night, but Winston, Una, and the others rushed to the City First Hospital.

Park Guk-chang had survived, but he was still unconscious.

Upon seeing Park Guk-chang wrapped up like a tortilla in the ICU, Winston could feel his anger boiling up.

Park Guk-chang was small fry, but he was backed by Winston.

As he had gotten beaten up, it had harmed the Gonzales family's reputation.

Winston could not allow that to happen.

"Levi Garrison! I can't take this anymore! Since you keep provoking me, I won't let you off the hook!" Winston howled angrily.

"Levi knew that Park Guk-chang was backed by us, but he'd hurt him nonetheless. He paid no heed to us and has insulted us!"

The other members of the Gonzales family were infuriated.

"We must cripple Levi! Otherwise, it'll be detrimental to our reputation!"

Soon, news about Park Guk-chang's injuries spread to the Lopez family.

They were shocked to hear such news.

It was revealed that Levi had handled the matter by beating him up.

"B*****! I'll kill him now!" Harry was enraged.

Zoey received his phone call and immediately woke Levi up.

"What did you do? Did you hurt another person? Do you want to ruin my life?" Zoey almost burst into tears in anger.

How can Levi court disaster so easily?

"Don't worry, the Gonzales family will apologize to me in no time," Levi replied confidently.

“You’re beyond saving.”

Zoey could not sleep and went to Iris for help, while Levi resumed in his nap.

The next day.

News spread around North Hampton swiftly that someone had provoked the wealthiest man around... Winston Gonzales, in public.

Beating Park Guk-chang was akin to humiliating Winston.

In the morning, the Gonzales family’s fleet of cars was lined up outside.

Winston wanted to teach Levi a lesson to show the entire North Hampton that he was still as influential as he had been, previously.

Before they left, Winston’s son, Andy ran towards him.

“Dad, what are you doing?” Andy inquired curiously.

“We’re going to teach Levi a lesson!” Winston replied.

“You can’t go now. The new commander-in-chief, Percy Covington, is about to arrive in North Hampton. The North Hampton Chamber of Commerce will find out about his arrival soon. We must pick him up before they do!” Andy seemed anxious.

“So soon?” Winston was surprised.

“Yes, I have no idea why Commander-in-Chief Covington arrived in North Hampton earlier than expected. After receiving the news, I came over at once,” Andy responded.

“Hurry! Let’s go and pick him up now. We can’t let the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce get ahead of us!” Winston urged.

“Grandpa, what about Levi?”

As Una wanted to humiliate Levi as soon as possible, she was impatient.

Winston thought about it and consoled her, “We’ll have plenty of chances to punish him in the future. Besides, Commander-in-Chief Covington has just arrived. We shouldn’t leave a poor impression on him now.”

“Grandpa, you can go and pick Percy up while I bring Luke over, to teach Levi a lesson. He’s just a commoner, so it won’t leave a bad impression,” Una suggested, refusing to give up.

“Sure. You can take care of Levi.”

Winston turned to order Luke, “Protect her well!”

Luke nodded. “Don’t worry, Sir. I’ll be right by her side!”

Luke was confident that he could cripple an ordinary man like Levi in no time.

He thought that he was overqualified for the job, actually.

The Protector Chapter 331

“Let’s go, Luke.”

After Winston had left, Una led Luke and his men to Levi.

Soon, the Gonzales family arrived at the airport.

“Dad, this is Percy’s personal trip. He took a commercial flight. I can’t go to meet him, because even Xander won’t be here,” Andy professed.

Winston grinned. “Don’t worry, I’ll handle this. Today, I’ll bring Commander-in-Chief Covington... No, Mr. Covington around!”

Percy’s flight landed after a while.

Once Winston and the others had spotted Percy, who was dressed in a plain outfit, they immediately went over, to welcome him.

“Hello, Mr. Covington. I’m Winston Gonzales from North Hampton. After hearing news of your arrival, I am here to welcome you,” Winston smiled and greeted.

Percy was taken aback. Greeting Winston in return, he spoke, “Mr. Gonzales, I’ve heard of you.”

“Mr. Covington, I was wondering if you’d come over to my place?” Winston offered.

Percy grinned and rejected his invitation, “Mr. Gonzales, I am here in North Hampton to visit my relative. Sorry!”

Percy and the others were stunned. "Mr. Covington, you have a relative in North Hampton?"

"Yes, I regard him as my relative. He's the third most important person in my life, other than my parents. He's given me a second chance in life, so he's a close relative to me!" Percy chuckled.

"Let me give you a ride."

Percy was about to say no, but Winston hurriedly added, "Mr. Covington, please don't refuse. Others will find out about your arrival in North Hampton and come to you. If you don't want them to disturb you, I can arrange for your trip to be a smooth one."

On second thought, Percy realized that Winston was right.

He could send him away, but others with the same intention would come to disturb him.

"Thank you, Mr. Gonzales."

In the end, Percy got into Winston's car.

"Where are you heading, Mr. Covington?" Winston inquired.

"Bayview Garden," Percy answered with a smile.

Indeed, he came to North Hampton earlier so that he could meet Levi.

If he arrived in North Hampton just in time for his appointment ceremony, he would be busy with work.

The reason he arrived earlier was so that he could spend some time with Levi.

“Bayview Garden? Sounds familiar,” Winston mused. However, he thought little about it.

Meanwhile, Una arrived with her convoy of cars.

Hundreds of men alighted from the cars and strode towards Levi’s house menacingly.

Everyone who saw them hurriedly stayed out of their way, and the security guard had already disappeared.

Zoey and Iris were next door, when the men had arrived. Zoey instinctively wanted to head out, but Iris stopped her from doing so.

“You can’t go! The Gonzales family sent these men, so Levi has to handle them himself!” Iris urged.

Thump, thump, thump...

The Gonzales family’s security team knocked on the door continuously.

Their incessant knocks woke Levi up. He came to the door, utterly annoyed.

“You’re so noisy!” he roared once he opened the door.

“How insolent! Levi Garrison, do you know what you’ve done wrong?” Luke demanded.

“What did I do wrong?” Levi retorted.

“You knew that Park Guk-chang was backed by the Gonzales family, yet you’d harmed him repeatedly. Are you paying no heed to us?” Una questioned angrily.

“How dare a lowly family like yours act up in front of me? You have a death wish!”
Levi was furious.

“Levi Garrison, d*** you!” Una glared at him.

The Protector Chapter 332

Even Una was cursing angrily.

Right then, Winston’s convoy arrived at Bayview Garden’s entrance.

The security guard at the entrance was wondering, why has another convoy arrived? Is something going on?

“Thank you, Mr. Gonzales. I don’t think that you should come, as he dislikes strangers,” Percy smiled and thanked Winston.

“Okay, see you later, Mr. Covington!”

Winston and the others watched, as Percy walked into Bayview Garden.

However, they did not leave at once.

“Find out who’s the relative that Percy was talking about. I want details about that man!” Winston ordered.

“Yes, Sir!”

Winston summoned two of his men. "Come, let's find out which building Mr. Covington is heading to."

Meanwhile, Levi and Una were still glaring at each other.

Luke stepped forward with a mocking smile on his face. "I normally wouldn't have to deal with nobodies like you, but as you've insulted the Gonzales family one too many times, I'm here to teach you a lesson!"

Una sneered, "If you're willing to grovel at my feet, I might consider letting you off the hook."

Levi fixated his gaze on Una.

Suddenly, he slapped Una across her face without warning.

Slap!

That was a crisp and loud slap. Everyone who saw that happened was stunned, let alone Una herself.

As Una felt a stinging pain on her cheek, she belatedly realized that he had slapped her.

"You... How dare you slap me?" Una held her cheek as she stared at Levi in disbelief.

"B*****! Luke, get him!" she yelled in fury.

Upon receiving her order, Luke took action at once.

Boom!

He struck his fist out, which was accompanied by a blast of air.

The force generated from his punch caused everyone to take a step back.

His punch was so powerful!

It was no wonder that he was the top fighter in North Hampton!

Levi stood rooted to the spot as if he were dumbfounded, so Luke was certain that his powerful and swift punch would wound Levi badly.

Thud!

When Luke's punch was about to land on Levi's face, someone suddenly appeared in front of him and took his punch.

Luke immediately sensed a powerful energy attacking him.

He stumbled six steps back before he came to a stop.

His gaze was filled with shock as he stared at Percy, standing right before him.

Levi did not expect him to show up in person.

Percy might have retired because of his injury, but he was still a skillful soldier.

He was once a courageous soldier on the battlefield who had protected Erudia.

There were no wimps in the Iron Brigade!

"How dare you gather in public? Have you no respect for the law?" Percy inquired icily.

Una defended herself, “Ha! The Gonzales family is the law in North Hampton! You seem skillful. Do you want to work for us? We are going to beat this man up today. Get out of our way!”

Luke was still staring at Percy. It had been ages since he had encountered someone as skillful as him.

“I hate bullies, so I’ll intervene in this matter today!”

Levi might be the God of War, but he would also intervene, even if Levi was an ordinary citizen.

“Do you want to die?” Luke exclaimed in fury.

“Stop!”

When he was about to take action, someone reprimanded him.

Everyone looked back to see Winston approaching them.

“Grandpa, I thought that you’d gone to pick Mr. Covington up from the airport? Why are you here?”

The Protector Chapter 333

Una was curious.

Winston was close to exploding in anger.

Fools! Commander-in-Chief Covington is standing right in front of you!

“Grandpa, we were about to teach Levi a lesson when this fool had showed up. Luke, deal with him!” Una ordered.

Before Luke could take action, Winston strode up to her, slapping her, hard.

Una’s right cheek swelled up at once, and her pretty face was swollen like a pufferfish.

Una was dumbfounded.

She did not expect to be slapped twice in such a short time.

The others including Percy were astounded, too.

“Grandpa, why did you slap me?” Una wailed.

Luke questioned curiously, “Sir, what’s going on?”

Winston barked angrily, “Do you know who he is? He’s the commander-in-chief of the North Hampton Warzone, Percy Covington!”

Everyone gasped in shock upon hearing his words.

They were utterly flabbergasted!

It turned out that the man was a warzone's commander-in-chief.

What a huge misunderstanding it was!

Luke belatedly realized what he had done.

He instantly broke out into a cold sweat.

Even Una was rendered speechless as she gazed at Percy.

She had never imagined that he would be the commander-in-chief.

S***, I'd even insulted him and claimed that the Gonzales family was the law in North Hampton!

After Percy figured out what was going on, he scoffed, "So you're from the Gonzales family. You're so different from Mr. Gonzales. He's kind, yet you've acted like a tyrant, claiming that the Gonzales family was the law in North Hampton!"

Even Winston was shocked by Percy's words.

Commander-in-Chief Covington is holding us accountable!

"Commander-in-Chief Covington, the ignorant are not guilty. It was a slip of the tongue. Please don't take it to heart," Winston apologized at once.

"Yes, Commander-in-Chief Covington, we're sorry. Please forgive us!" Una and the others hurriedly apologized.

Luke was so frightened that he was about to grovel at Percy's feet.

“Ha! You should be apologizing to him instead of me! How dare you bring so many people to disturb him in the morning?” Percy uttered in a wintry voice.

“Mr. Garrison, we’re sorry for disturbing you. Let’s call it even!”

Winston was a sly fox and hinted that he would stop finding fault with Levi over Park Guk-chang’s matter.

It was a show, for Percy’s sake.

“Yes, yes. Park Guk-chang and his son deserve to be beaten up!” Una chimed in.

“We’re sorry, Mr. Garrison!” Luke led his men to apologize to Levi.

Upon seeing their actions, Percy nodded in satisfaction.

“This is much better. Mr. Gonzales, I won’t pursue this matter again. Think of it as me returning your favor, as you’ve given me a ride here,” Percy announced.

If we were elsewhere, these people should die, for insulting my God of War!

Percy decided not to pursue the matter further as he did not want to make a big deal out of it.

“Err...” Winston seemed stumped.

It will be hard to bootlick Covington after what has happened.

“I will bring these fools away. See you later, Commander-in-Chief Covington!”

Winston was about to leave with the others when someone spoke up.

“Wait. Did I tell you to leave?”

It was Levi. He was glowering at Winston and the others.

The Protector Chapter 334

Percy won't pursue the matter, but I will!

"What?" Winston and the others were incredulous.

Percy allowed us to leave, but Levi won't?

Is he a leech? Who does he think he is? How dare he provoke our family?

"You've disturbed me this early in the morning. Do you think I am an easy target?" Levi uttered icily.

Winston and the others remained indifferent, but Percy was terrified.

He knew that Levi was mad.

Winston tried to suppress his anger as he inquired, "Mr. Garrison, then what should we do?"

"If you want me to let you off the hook, everyone in the Gonzales family should come and kneel in front of me for one day! Otherwise, you'll suffer from the same ending as the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce by disappearing from North Hampton!"

Levi's voice was like a sharp knife.

Percy was certain that Levi really meant it.

North Hampton is crumbling, and the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce will be taken down as well, he thought.

“Hahaha!” Una burst out laughing.

“Levi, do you think you’re an influential man? Are you using Commander-in-Chief Covington’s influence to threaten us? You’re nothing but a leech! Dream on!”

Winston was infuriated too. “Commander-in-Chief Covington and us, hold no grudges against each other. Don’t use him to threaten us!”

Levi merely sneered, “I’ve warned you the last time, but you’d refused to pay heed to my warning. Fine, go down together with the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce!”

Levi’s statement sent Winston and his men into fits of laughter.

It turned out that Levi was an ambitious man who’d wanted to take down both the Gonzales family and the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce!

“Haha! What a joke. No one in North Hampton can take down our family and the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce! Not even Mr. Nielsen can do so!”

“Yes, no one is capable enough of doing so!”

Winston and his entourage were full of pride.

Messing with them was akin to messing with North Hampton’s foundation!

Who was capable enough of doing so?

“Just wait and see how I’ll deal with your family,” Levi announced coldly.

“Alright. We’ll soon see about that,” Winston and his entourage chortled.

After bidding Percy goodbye, they left immediately.

They were unafraid of Levi. Instead, they were afraid of offending Percy.

“God of War, I am here to see you.”

Percy gazed at Levi excitedly and he was about to kneel.

Three years ago, before he retired, if Levi had not saved him on the battlefield, he would have been dead by now.

Levi was the one who had given him a new life.

“Covington, why are you here earlier than expected?” Levi asked.

“God of War, I am here to see both you and your wife,” Percy smiled and replied.

“Come on in!”

Levi brought him into the house.

Meanwhile, Zoey’s movements were still restricted by Iris.

“Hmm? Why is it so quiet out there?”

Iris went to the window, but realized that everyone was gone.

She ran out together with Zoey. Those people had already left.

“Is Levi in trouble?”

Zoey and Iris entered the house at once.

The moment they entered the house, they were stunned by what they saw.

Levi was talking to a stranger.

Percy spotted Zoey and stood up at once.

“This is?” Zoey asked curiously.

“Covington, this is my wife. That’s her best friend,” Levi introduced.

“Honey, this is my good friend, Percy Covington. He has just arrived from Vermont.”

Zoey greeted Percy warmly upon hearing Levi’s introduction, but Iris folded her arms arrogantly.

She was looking at Percy, her gaze full of disdain.

Levi’s friend? How good can his friend be?

The Protector Chapter 335

She had met plenty of people and thought that she saw right through Percy.

Percy might seem imposing, but he has lost his edge.

Judging from his outfit, he must be in dire straits.

Hence, she was uninterested in him.

“By the way, where’re the Gonzales family’s men? I’d thought that they were here to take revenge on you? Why are they gone?” Iris questioned.

“They’d scuttled away in fear. Just wait and see. They’ll come to apologize to me soon,” Levi declared.

“Ha! The Gonzales family? Apologizing to you? Dream on!” Iris refused to believe him.

Zoey was not going to believe him either.

Percy merely grinned, “I bumped into them, so I talked to Mr. Gonzales and he’d agreed to call it even.”

Iris scoffed, “Who do you think you are? Why would Winston listen to you?”

At once, Zoey made a call to confirm Percy’s claims.

“Iris, it’s true! The Gonzales family agreed to call it even!” Zoey exclaimed happily.

“What? Did that really happen?”

On second thought, Iris proclaimed, “Ha! Mr. Gonzales was kind enough to forgive you guys.”

Percy smiled and kept silent.

Meanwhile, at the largest and most luxurious villa in North Hampton.

“Sir, I’ve asked around, but no one knows who Commander-in-Chief Covington’s relative is,” the housekeeper reported in disappointment.

Winston answered, "That's within my expectations. We would've found out about it if someone else had known about it."

"We'll send someone to spy on Commander-in-Chief Covington to find out who his relative is."

"No, Sir!" Luke hurriedly cut in.

"Mm? Why?" Winston questioned.

"Commander-in-Chief Covington is someone who I had yet to grasp the depths of his abilities. He's almost comparable to me! If you send someone to spy on him, he'll discover for sure," Luke explained.

"What? The commander-in-chief is that strong?" Clint drew in a sharp breath.

"I've heard that everyone in the Iron Brigade is horrifyingly strong. Looks like the rumor is true!"

"We should wait to attend the appointment ceremony."

Winston shot a look at Una. "Una, dress up nicely. You must attend the event in your best attire!"

"Why so, Grandpa?" Una did not know what her grandfather was planning.

"I've heard that the God of War is in his twenties, and he's still single. What if he fancies you?"

Winston's words scratched at Una's heart.

The God of War was the biggest hero in Erudia.

Every woman dreamt of marrying him.

Now that she was given a huge opportunity to meet him, of course, she was elated.

“Yes, we’ll set you up with him. You’ll be a perfect match for him. You can be the God of War’s wife!” Clint exclaimed in delight.

Winston stroked his chin. “Yes, now that we’ve gotten to know Commander-in-Chief Covington, we can ask for his help. That’s very likely to happen.”

Their words immediately stirred Una’s imagination.

She wished that the ceremony would start immediately, so she would get to see the God of War!

The Gonzales family’s plan was to marry Una to the God of War.

“What if the God of War doesn’t fancy her?” someone questioned.

Everyone was rendered speechless by that question.

That was highly likely, too.

Luke suggested, “I have an idea. We can trick the God of War to sleep with Ms. Una. He cannot undo his actions, so he would have to marry her after that!”

Winston’s eyes gleamed. “That is a brilliant plan!”

The Gonzales family was scheming so that Levi would end up marrying Una.

The Protector Chapter 336

While the Gonzales family schemed, the members of the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce were also busy making plans of their own.

After all, Morris Group was finally becoming a threat that they could no longer ignore. Things were getting out of their control, and they were running out of ideas for what to do.

The only plan they had was to somehow find a way to associate themselves with the God of War and Commander-in-Chief Covington.

That was why they had invited Grover Cooke over tonight. They hoped that he would be able to help them come up with an idea.

“Morris Group has been developing at a rapid pace recently. A lot of companies are offering them all sorts of preferential treatment! I guess since it’s helping the economy of North Hampton, that’s a good thing,” Grover mused.

“But at this rate, they’ll soon be taking over our market, which leaves us in a very precarious situation!”

“They’re so ambitious that they’re even going after the Gonzales family businesses! It’s only a matter of time before they come after us next.”

Eric and the others fretted.

“Do you have any ideas, Mr. Cooke?” Clifford asked.

The man in question shook his head helplessly. “Nothing much will come of working from the shadows. You have seen for yourselves their ability to resolve

all problems thrown their way.” He paused before suggesting, “Maybe you should try forcefully buying over Morris Group?”

“That might just work!” Eric and the other men’s eyes gleamed viciously.

Baldwin seemed doubtful as he stated, “I don’t think it’s going to be that easy. I’ve heard about how mysterious the boss of Morris Group is. Nobody knows who he or she is.”

Shaking his head, Wallace rebutted, “It’s not that hard. Have you forgotten how we used to buy over the other companies?”

The men exchanged sly looks.

“Alright then, you guys should probably focus on preparing for the ceremony. I’ll have Jesse introduce you to the God of War and Commander-in-Chief Covington when the time comes. With those two supporting you, you’ll still be fine even if you dance a little too close to the illegal side of things,” Grover finished with a smile.

“Thank you so much, Mr. Cooke! The North Hampton Chamber of Commerce shall forever be grateful to you!” the men fervently expressed.

After the incident at the hospital, Morris Group had been flourishing at a quick pace.

The celebrities endorsing their products were also reaping the benefits of this with a huge upsurge of advertisement invitations.

By contrast, business for Everest Entertainment had been getting increasingly worse. It was only a matter of time before they went bankrupt.

Lil Lacey and her manager, Amelia, had it even worse. They had been blacklisted by the entire industry and had not been able to find a single way around the ban.

Their only options left were to either leave the country or change professions.

But there was no way they would just let this go. To them, this was all Levi Garrison's fault. He had destroyed everything of theirs, and he had to pay!

He had to die!

They had been searching for an assassin to hire for several days now. Strangely enough, the underworld of North Hampton had been incredibly quiet, and they failed to find anyone.

In the end, they finally managed to locate a reliable killer who hailed from South City.

Presently, they were lounging on a luxuriously large bed in a five-star hotel. Both were stark naked as they cuddled against a man with a devil tattooed on his chest.

He was Quentin Lane, an underground boxer who they had only been able to hire through some connections.

Notorious in the illegal fighting rings for being ruthless, he had once killed forty-eight men in a single year.

Currently ranked number five in underground boxing, he was nicknamed 'Devil'.

Other than boxing, he was also known for taking on contract jobs like killing or maiming someone. Whatever his mission was, he had never once failed.

Most people would not have been able to hire him. It was only because Lil Lacey and Amelia were willing to sleep with him that he had agreed to come. Of course, they still had to pay for his services.

The Protector Chapter 337

“Mr. Quentin, the underground in North Hampton has been strangely quiet recently. I couldn’t even find an assassin...” Lil Lacey pouted.

Quentin snorted and replied, “That’s because the God of War, Liam Macy, and the King of North Hampton, Jack Smith, have been taken out. Someone cleaned up the underworld, so that’s why nobody took up your contract.”

A worried look crossed her face, “Then are you sure you’ll be okay?”

“Hmph! The North Hampton rules can’t stop me. As long as I kill off the man and immediately return to South City, nobody can do anything to me!” Quentin said confidently.

In the past few years, a lot of rich people hired him to assassinate someone or another. It did not matter if it was within the nation or out; he had never once been caught after killing someone.

This time was no different to him, and he did not think much of his target.

With that, he pinned Lil Lacey beneath him...

One hour later, he got up to put on his clothes.

“Give me his photo. I’ll leave after I’m done with him,” he ordered.

Lil Lacey hastily handed a photo of Levi over to him.

Accepting it, he scrutinized the photo closely, memorizing the man’s features.

From beside him, Amelia piped up, “The money has already been transferred. Please check your account!”

“Alright. Wait for my good news; this shouldn’t take me more than an hour!”

Tossing that over his shoulder, Quentin left.

The two women exchanged gleeful expressions, their eyes shining coldly. “Levi Garrison, you dare to ruin us? Well, you can go to hell! This day next year would be the anniversary of your death!”

Quentin had not actually come alone. He had brought four men with him, each an excellent fighter themselves.

Stabbing a dagger through Levi’s photo to pin it to the table, he commanded, “Find out where he is!”

On the other side of things.

Levi was eating BBQ with Benny and Percy at the aptly named BBQ Street.

With his carefree personality, it was no surprise that Percy got along with Ben perfectly.

The three of them chatted happily about anything and everything under the sun, taking hearty gulps from their cups as they toasted each other.

Being a street that mostly sold food, the appearance of Quentin and his men did not attract too much attention.

However, the menacing aura they gave off had passers-by subconsciously backing away.

They stood just around the corner, spying on the three men drinking and eating BBQ.

One of the men Quentin had sent out came back to report, "Mr. Quentin, it's confirmed. That man is Levi Garrison!"

Quentin nodded. "Okay. Everyone, wait for my signal!"

One of his subordinates queried, "What about the other two men?"

"Kill them too!" A bloodthirsty look entered Quentin's eyes. Right now, Levi was nothing but another dead body in his mind.

"Three!"

"Two!"

"One!"

The group of five dashed toward Levi, with their hands tightly gripping the weapons hidden underneath their suit jackets.

Within seconds, they were upon the three unsuspecting men.

Or so they thought.

In truth, Levi and Percy had detected their presence long ago. They abruptly turned around, taking the five killers by surprise.

"Levi Garrison? Someone badly wants you dead. Now, die!"

Quentin pulled out a dagger from underneath his suit, the glade glinting coldly as he swung it toward Levi.

His four subordinates did the same, attacking Benny and Percy.

Their movements were as quick as lightning and as fluid as water. No wonder they were experts!

All Benny could see was the steel blade flying toward him as he froze to the spot in shock.

The speed was just too fast!

The Protector Chapter 338

A chill wrapped around Benny's body, and he swore his blood was freezing in his veins.

At that moment, it was almost like his spirit had already left his body behind.

So this is what approaching death feels like!

Excitement coursed through Quentin at that moment. His weapon was less than one centimeter away from Levi's neck now. All he had to do was stick it in, and his mission would be complete.

Ding!

The next instant, there was a ringing sound, and he could feel pressure being applied to the blade.

To his shock, Levi had halted the dagger by clenching it between two fingers.

Crack!

Unbelievably, all it took was a deft twist of his fingers, and the blade broke into two.

Squelch!

The broken dagger stabbed into Quentin's body.

How terrifying!

Quentin had been underground boxing for twenty years, yet he had never seen a more terrifying man than Levi.

Thump! Thump!

...

Quentin stared in disbelief as his men were sent flying by Percy, blood spraying out of their mouths.

What kind of f***ing monsters are these two?

The five of them were some of the best fighters in the underworld, yet before these two men, they were practically trash!

Realizing there was no way they would win, he quickly called out, "Retreat!"

The five men scrambled to get out of there as fast as they could.

Before they could go far, a huge group of men came into sight at the end of the street ahead of them. There were at least a hundred men or more.

The veritable army of men charged toward Quentin and his ilk.

These were Nueve and Trey's men. They had come to help the moment they caught wind of Levi being in trouble.

The assassins' faces fell, and they turned around to head back in the other direction.

They had barely taken a few steps when another throng of men appeared before them.

These strongly-built men were different in that they had varying skin tones and were clearly foreigners.

Leading the group was none other than James.

"Holy c**p!"

Quentin could have torn his hair out with frustration as a cold sweat broke out all over his body.

Just who the hell did we piss off? If I had known this man would be so powerful, I wouldn't have come! Now I'm in deep sh**! Will I even survive this?!

"Lil Lacey, Amelia Mackie, you b**ches! You set me up!"

"Brothers, these men actually dared to attack Mr. Garrison! Get them!" James yelled.

Immediately, the two big groups of men swarmed the killers.

Even with their fighting prowess, Quentin and his men were already suffered injuries beforehand. There was also the fact that they were severely

outnumbered. In no time at all, they were beaten till they were close to death. Countless bones had been broken, and their own blood stained them crimson.

To add insult to injury, they were tossed into dumpsters at the end.

Shortly after, Levi received a message and departed.

It was from Azure Dragon, who said he had already found out who sent the assassins.

At Hilton Hotel.

Lil Lacey and Amelia were growing more and more anxious as they waited in their hotel room.

One hour passed, and still, there was no news from Quentin.

Needless to say, they were more than a little worried.

“Why isn’t he reporting in?” Lil Lacey gripped her phone and stared at it intensely. It was as if by doing so, it would miraculously chime with a message or phone call.

Certain something was wrong, Amelia urged, “We should leave North Hampton right this instant! I keep getting the feeling like something bad is going to happen.”

“Alright!”

They quickly packed their bags before Amelia went to open the door.

Boom!

The door was slammed open with a kick from the outside.

Crash!

The force behind the kick was so much that Amelia was knocked unconscious by the door.

Azure Dragon and Levi appeared in the doorway.

“And where do you two think you’re going?” Levi asked with a smirk.

“What? How are you still alive?” Shock and fear shone in Lil Lacey’s eyes.

With a smile playing on his lips, he answered casually, “Hahaha, that’s because the men you sent to kill me are trash! I’m pretty sure they’re dead by now!”

“What? No, that’s impossible! He’s Quentin Lane, the Devil of the underground boxing ring. He’s supposed to be one of the best killers out there! There’s no way you could have survived him!” she shrieked madly.

The Protector Chapter 339

“You have been proven guilty of attempted murder. Men, take her away!”

At Levi’s words, Xavier Fields came into the room with a squad of police behind him. Within moments, Lil Lacey and the unconscious Amelia were arrested and dragged away.

Levi was not impressed by this so-called ‘Devil’.

The impudent fool thought he could kill him? Hah! He bit off more than he could chew.

Within the night, news of how the Devil of South City, Quentin Lane, had come to kill Levi but had been killed instead spread like wildfire.

“Hahaha! Does Garrison know no fear? Quentin Lane is the godson of Sebastian Lopez! Killing Lane is basically asking for death!” Winston Gonzales roared with laughter.

Una had an excited look on her face. “Grandpa, does this mean Garrison won’t be able to escape death this time?”

“Of course! Mr. Lopez doesn’t have any children of his own, so Lane was basically his everything. Garrison has really done it this time!” Winston stroked his beard as he chuckled.

“Hah! How dare he threatened our family? This is really karma coming to bite him in the ass!”

Una could already imagine what fate would befall Levi, and she just could not wait.

The appointment ceremony was three days away. Percy had gone back to North Hampton Warzone to prepare, so Levi also went back to work at the company.

Iris, who had just come out of a meeting, received a phone call. A few seconds later, she hung up with her face pale.

Everyone around her could tell something was off about her. One concerned staff asked, “Ms. Annabelle, is everything okay?”

She shook her head and replied, “I’m fine. Casey, could you prepare a car for me, please? I need to go out for a bit. Remember, no driver!”

After that, she left alone to head toward North Hampton International Airport.

When she arrived, a bespectacled man in a suit got in the car when he caught sight of her.

“Louis Lont, get out of my car! I never said you could come in. You’re going to dirty my seats!” she hissed furiously.

Louis took off his glasses and wiped his lens. A smile played on his lips as he said, “Iris, I’m your ex-boyfriend. You should be a little courteous at the very least, don’t you think? Why the sour attitude?”

Rage twisted her pretty face as she growled, “Hmph! Who would want to be courteous to a scumbag like you?”

When she went overseas, she had had a brief relationship with this man. To her disgust, it did not take her long to discover that he was a true scumbag. He had been with eight other women while they were still dating. Eight!

She had instantly demanded to break up and treated this incident as a matter of personal shame.

Proud as she was, she refused to let anyone know about her brief lapse in judgment. Hence, even Zoey did not know about him.

“Why did you come to pick me up at the airport if you didn’t still have any feelings toward me?” Louis chuckled.

He even had the audacity to try and grab Iris’ hand!

“Go away!”

She shoved him away violently and spat, “I didn’t come to pick you up. Just tell me what I have to do before you’ll hand over those things?”

“What’s the hurry? I’m a trustworthy person, really! I’ve helped you keep them secret for so many years and have never once shown them to anyone!”

“You – !” Iris gritted her teeth so hard her jaw ached.

Ever since they broke up, he had been holding a very personal secret of hers over her head and used it to blackmail her.

She had already given him several million in the past few years.

“Speak! How much before you’ll give them back to me?” she asked.

“What I want this time might be a little difficult for you, but you still have to agree. If you don’t, I can assure you that I’ll immediately release your secret to the public. You can be certain that your reputation will be ruined then!” he threatened.

The Protector Chapter 340

“You...” Iris was furious, yet there was nothing she could do about it.

She had thought she would be able to escape him by coming to North Hampton, yet here he was.

He was like a nightmare that she could never shake!

In a chilly tone, she queried, “What are your conditions? How much do you want this time?”

Snickering, he answered, “I don’t want money.”

Money was not something he was currently lacking. The North Hampton Chamber of Commerce had already paid him ten million to come here and had promised him forty million once he got the job done.

Indeed, they were going to use him to buy over Morris Group.

They had searched far and wide before they finally discovered him and his history with Iris. Realizing he held valuable blackmail material over her head, they had hired him to do their bidding.

This was one of the methods they loved to use to obtain other companies. They would either dig for blackmail material on the opposing company's upper management or find the weakest link and use them to attack from within.

Another more ruthless method would be to threaten the upper management staff with their families' lives.

When it came to forcefully buying over a company, loss of life was inevitable.

After all, the business world was like a battlefield.

Lives were lost and blood was shed.

...

This was why the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce was so confident in its ability to obtain Morris Group.

A confused expression crossed Iris' face. "Huh? Then what do you want?"

Chuckling slyly, Louis stated, "I heard you're some bigshot who controls Morris Group now. Your current net worth is probably more than one billion, right? You seem to be doing much better here than when you were overseas!"

A fissure of unease shot through the woman. In a cautious tone, she asked, "What do you want?"

"You're in charge of Morris Group, aren't you?"

"I'm only the vice president, but most of the decision-making power is in my hands."

"So that would mean the president actually leaves you to deal with running the company?"

She nodded. "Yes, that's right."

"Great! Then you can make the decision right now if I want to buy over Morris Group, right?"

His words had the color draining from her face.

She shouted, "What? Are you crazy?! You want to buy over Morris Group? Do you have any idea how much the company is worth? Close to twenty billion! Where are you going to get that much money?"

"Well, not me per se, but my boss!" he amended.

The uneasy feeling in her grew, and she sensed there was something else going on here.

"Who's your boss?"

"The North Hampton Chamber of Commerce! They deliberately sent me here to negotiate with you," he declared as his eyes scrutinized her closely.

"What? The North Hampton Chamber of Commerce?" she repeated dumbly in shock.

The next second, realization dawned, and she could have slapped herself.

They were purposely using Louis to threaten her exactly because he held something of hers!

He uttered, "You have two options. One, Morris Group joins the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce and becomes one of their members. Two, they outright buy over Morris Group."

Immediately, she shook her head. "No way! Morris Group and the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce are business competitors! Our company will never agree to join them."

"They knew you wouldn't agree. That's why I'm here. You said you were in charge of Morris Group, didn't you? Then I would suggest you seriously consider joining them. It would be better for you in the long run." That infuriating smile was still curling his lips.

"Never! We'll never join them no matter what! You can forget about it!" she refused.

The Protector Chapter 341

Tsking, Louis crooned, "Iris, do you seriously think you have a choice? If you don't agree, I'll share what I know with the public. I wonder what they'll think about this rising star of the business world being such a s***ty woman in private?"

He casually glanced down at the magazine he held in his hands, where a picture of Iris smiled back at him.

It was the cover photo taken when the media had interviewed her previously.

Presently, she was probably even more popular than some other celebrities!

She knew if word got out about her secret, she would be ruined for life.

Thus, there was no way she could allow that to happen!

Foregoing her previous stubborn and hard attitude, she weakly protested, "No matter which option it is, I can't make this decision for the company!"

He spoke up in a confident voice, "Who are you trying to fool? The North Hampton Chamber of Commerce is well-aware you call the shots in the company. All it takes is one sentence from you, and the company is sold!"

Iris felt her mind go blank. They had come after her specifically, which meant they had already planned out everything.

More importantly, she really did have the power to sell the company.

It would not be illegal either. She could just walk off without having to look over her back all the time.

Having given her the stick earlier, Louis thought he would give her the carrot now. “Think about it; even if you offend someone in the process of doing this, the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce will still back you up. They can also promise you the job position you want!”

“Oh yes, by the way, this offer only lasts for today. If you still can’t make up your mind, I’m going to release your secret!”

Face ashen, Iris asked, “One day is too short! Can’t you give me more time?”

“Sure! You just have to meet me at Wonder Hotel tonight. Also, remember to bring ten million with you. Otherwise, no dice!”

With that said, Louis exited the car without waiting for Iris to say anything.

As he walked off, he called Eric’s son, Phineas, “Mr. Robinson, it’s done! That b***h Iris will definitely sell off Morris Group within three days!”

“Good job. Have another ten million for your efforts!”

“Thank you, Mr. Robinson!”

Hanging up, he was beyond ecstatic.

“Looks like Lady Luck is smiling on me! At this rate, I’ll be able to earn 60 million AND sleep with Iris! What a wonderful day!”

Although he had Iris’ most personal secret as blackmail, the two of them had not actually slept together before she found out about him dating eight women simultaneously.

That was probably one of his biggest regrets, but it would seem he would finally have the chance.

Iris was slumped in her car seat with a look of absolute despair on her face.

If only she had not been so stupid as to allow him to find her secret...

But hindsight was twenty-twenty, and there was nothing she could do to change the past.

If she were being honest with herself, she felt like that secret of hers was more important than even her life.

She really would kill herself if that got out.

“What do I do? Should I really sell off Morris Group?”

She had no idea what she was supposed to do now.

“Either way, I should head back to the company first.”

She knew what Louis meant by tonight. He was forcing her to sleep with him to extend the time limit he gave.

Lost in a daze, she did not know how she managed to drive back to the company.

Screech! Bang!

Just in front of the company building, she rammed right into another car.

The Protector Chapter 342

The other driver got out of his car, yelling furiously, “What the hell? Are you blind or something? My signal lights were clearly on, yet why did you continue forward and crash into me? You – Eh? Iris?”

It took Levi several moments to register that the other driver was Iris.

To think he had just been cursing how the driver was swerving around the road like a drunken person!

Levi’s loud voice snapped Iris back to her senses. “Huh? What happened?”

His voice was cold as he demanded, “What the heck, you were out of it the whole time? You hit my car!”

He got the feeling something was not quite right with the woman today. She seemed incredibly distracted.

Had something happened?

“Oh. Sorry?” she apologized sheepishly.

After that, she called the garage, and the two cars were towed away.

Frowning slightly, he queried, “Hey, are you okay?”

“I’m fine!” she murmured vaguely.

Levi suddenly said, “Your bra strap is showing!”

“What? Where?” She turned her head to check over herself. It was several beats later before it occurred to her that he was lying.

Pushing this incident to the back of his mind, Levi made his way to his office in the technical department. As usual, he settled down to have some tea and a smoke.

Isaiah approached him, saying, "Mr. Garrison, we don't have enough technicians in the department, so I wish to cultivate some more men."

"Okay. Go ahead!" Levi answered.

Isaiah continued hesitantly, "But we would need a huge sum of money for that..."

"Money isn't a problem. You can cultivate whoever you wish; just let me know, and I'll arrange it!"

"Got it, Mr. Garrison!" Isaiah replied in a delighted tone.

He really enjoyed working with Levi.

Everybody could tell Iris had something on her mind as she seemed incredibly absent-minded today.

She had not reviewed a single document and had basically sat there in her chair dumbly for many hours.

Everyone who worked with her closely on a daily basis was worried about their boss. She used to be so passionate and energetic, nothing at all like the zombie she was today.

"Maybe she's on her period?"

This was the only explanation anyone could come up with.

On the other side of things.

Having suddenly obtained twenty million in a day, Louis was currently enjoying himself at a nightclub.

There were more than a dozen beauties in the small private room he was in, and he had his arms wrapped around the closest two.

“Lont, you little sh**, you’ve really hit the jackpot this time!”

The voice who had spoken belonged to a bald man sitting near him. This was Zack, the boss of Bar Street. Some of the biggest bars in North Hampton were under his protection.

Around Zack were several of his most capable men, each built like an ox.

Last time, Louis used to lead an adulterous life and could often be found spending his nights in nightclubs. That was how he grew so familiar with all these thugs.

In the end, it was because of his gambling addiction that he had borrowed more than one million from Zack. Unable to pay the thug back, he ran off overseas to escape his clutches.

Now that he was back and had obtained such a huge sum of money, he wanted to return the money he borrowed.

“Zack, give me your account number, and I’ll transfer you the money immediately!”

One million was practically nothing to Louis now. He had plans to remain in North Hampton for the foreseeable future and would need to maintain a good relationship with Zack if he wanted to run a business here.

Zack puffed on a cigarette, a sleazy smirk on his lips. “By the way, I heard you’re planning on sleeping with Iris Annabelle from Morris Group tonight?”

“That’s right! I hold her deepest, darkest secret in my hands, so she has to spend the night with me!” Louis answered smugly.

The Protector Chapter 343

Zack chuckled and responded, “Just the thought of that b***h has me hungry!”

One of his subordinates piped up, “Yeah! She has a smoking hot body. With how cold and innocent she acts all the time, imagine how she would be like in bed!”

Ever since they saw Iris on the front of the magazine, they lost all interest in other women.

It did not matter that there were more than a dozen other beautiful women in the room with them now, all Zack wanted was her.

Compared to her, these women were nothing.

Zack smacked a meaty hand down on Louis’ shoulder. “How about this, Lont. You let us get a turn at her tonight, and I’ll forget all about the money you owe me! Also, from here on out, you’ll be my brother, and I’ll protect you from everything!”

Louis instantly agreed, “Sure! You can have first dibs, Zack, and I’ll go second. The rest of your men should come too! Let’s all see for ourselves how good she can be in bed, shall we? Hehehe...”

“Hahaha, good man!” Zack could not wait!

One of his men asked, “Boss, do we need to prepare some equipment?”

A wicked smile twisted Zack’s face in response. “But of course!”

...

In her office, Iris was staring off into space when her phone rang.

It was Louis.

“Iris, it’s nearly time for you to get off of work. Have you made up your mind yet?”

Clenching her teeth, she squeezed out, “I-I...I have...”

“Okay, then head to Wonder Hotel after you get off work. I’ll come down to personally escort you to my room.”

After he hung up, Louis told Zack and the rest about the good news.

They were absolutely delighted and anticipation had them hurrying to the hotel as quick as they could.

At last, it was time to get off work.

Iris transferred one million to a bank card and stuffed a pair of scissors into her bag before she left her office.

Her actions had the staff feeling puzzled.

Before, she would always work overtime till eleven or even twelve midnight. Yet today she’s leaving at six?

How strange...

But they were just her subordinates, so they did not bother themselves too much with her personal life.

At that moment, Levi finally woke up from his long nap. Stretching out the kinks in his back, he got ready to head back home.

“Don’t you guys think Ms. Annabelle has been acting so oddly today? She hasn’t gotten any work done at all and seemed strangely preoccupied with something.”

“I know, right? It’s so abnormal to see her like this. I’m sure she isn’t on her period either. It’s so weird!”

“I think it started this morning after she got that phone call...”

...

As Levi walked through the company, he overheard some women gossiping about Iris.

Their words had him freezing as a bad feeling rose in his gut.

“Oh no, I think she’s in trouble!” he muttered to himself.

He thought the car accident earlier this morning was a random event.

But it was starting to seem like there was really something strange going on here.

He hurriedly called Phoenix. “I need you to find out where Iris has been and who she’s talked to today!”

“Understood, Sir!”

...

At this time, Iris had arrived at Wonder Hotel.

Louis was already waiting for her in the lobby.

Taking a deep breath to steel herself, she headed toward him.

“We’re not in any hurry, so let me check the money first.”

Despite his eagerness to sleep with her, he still had his head on straight.

He had to get the ten million first before he would indulge himself.

Satisfied he had the money, he lead the way upstairs.

Clutching her handbag tighter, Iris followed along behind him meekly.

A few minutes later, they entered the presidential suite he booked.

Before she could say anything, five men walked out from the depths of the suite.

The baldheaded man at the front was watching her with a greedy smile on his lips...

The Protector Chapter 344

Sensing a bad vibe from these men, Iris backed away warily.

“Who are you guys? What do you want?”

Rubbing his hands together, Zack replied, "Babe, no need to be scared. I just wanna be friends with you! Hehehe..."

The rest of the men chortled as they neared her. "Yeah, baby! We all just want to be friends."

"Louis Lont, you bastard! I'm leaving!"

Spinning around, Iris made to leave but was too slow.

In a flash, Zack had moved between her and the door. Locking it, he turned to step closer to her.

"Why the hurry to leave, babe? I promise I'll be gentle!" he leered as his eyes seemed to be undressing her.

Louis sniggered and stated, "Iris, meet Zack. Don't worry... He just wants to get to know you better!"

Feeling trapped, she shouted, "Louis, what the hell is the meaning of this? What are you trying to do? Have you already forgotten about the deal with the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce?"

Louis twitched slightly as he was reminded of his primary reason for being back in the country.

"Well, didn't you say you wanted more time? Fine, I'll make a deal with you! If you sleep with all of us tonight, I can give you three more days. Decline, and I'll let the whole world see those photos of yours! Oh wait, I have a better idea. Zack, you guys wanna see her private photos? I can show them to you!"

Clearly impatient, Zack was quick to agree, "Of course! Hurry up and let me see them!"

“Wait!” Iris yelled in frustration and anger, “Louis Lont, you’re a devil!”

“Thank you for the compliment!” Louis laughed.

She insisted firmly, “I’ll pay you twenty million, but I’m not doing anything else with you.”

“Zack, just do it! This woman is very conservative and proud. She values her reputation above all else. So as long as we record everything, she’ll definitely listen to us from now on!” Louis revealed.

“Hell yeah! I’ve been waiting a long while for this!”

Zack was about to pounce on her when she pulled out the scissors from her bag.

“Don’t come any closer!” she threatened as she swiped at them with the weapon.

Zack took one step forward before he swiftly punched her wrist. The pain had her yelping and dropping the scissors.

Instantly, she was swarmed by the men, and they dragged her to the bedroom.

Thump!

Zack tossed her unceremoniously on the bed.

Tears of shame and fear dripped down her face.

Despair!

Utter despair!

She had underestimated how heartless Louis could be.

Now there was no one to help her.

All kinds of recording equipment had been set up in the room as well.

She was doomed!

Just the thought of what was about to happen had her wishing to commit suicide.

Eager to get started, Zack hastily undressed and swallowed some pills.

“Let’s begin, eh, boys?”

Just as he was about to crawl on the bed, a voice drawled from behind them.

“What fun this looks like. Do you guys mind if I join the party?”

Louis, Zack, and the other men whipped around in shock, only to see Levi standing there smoking.

“Who are you? What are you doing in my room?” Louis demanded.

A savage expression crossed Zack’s face, and he snarled, “Get him, boys! Beat him up good! I absolutely loathe it when people interrupt me just as I’m getting down to business!”

The Protector Chapter 345

At Zack’s order, his four subordinates lunged toward Levi.

A bloodthirsty look flashed through his eyes. His hand came up in a fist, and he punched the first thug.

Thump!

The thug sailed back a dozen meters before crashing against the wall heavily. When he fell to the floor, he did not move to get up again.

Wham!

Another punch sent another thug flying back.

The last two had it the worst.

Two vicious kicks to the crotch downed them like two sacks of potatoes.

They rolled around on the floor, clutching their lower bodies while letting out pained howls.

Everyone present was dumbfounded.

Who knew that Levi would be so brutal in his attacks?

Schick!

Zack yanked out a dagger from nowhere and stabbed it toward Levi, who dodged it with ease.

Wanting to have another ago, Zack abruptly found his wrist squeezed in a pincer-like grip.

Snatching the dagger from the thug's hand, Levi threw it aside before punching the man.

Agony exploded through Zack's body, and he screamed in pain.

All the blood had drained from Louis' face, and he was as pale as a ghost.

Huge beads of sweat dripped down the sides of his face, wetting his already soaked shirt.

How frightening!

Levi's deadly gaze slowly moved to land on him.

"I-I...It wasn't me...I d-didn't...T-this has nothing to do with m-me..."

He was so terrified that he was babbling.

Levi questioned, "You have some personal secret of Iris', don't you?"

Louis shook his head furiously. "N-no, I-I don't..."

Levi did not speak, merely cracked his knuckles menacingly.

"Y-yeah, I d-do..."

Stretching his hand out, Levi wiggled his fingers. "Give it here."

"Well..." Louis hesitated.

"Pfft!" Levi's fist smashed into Louis, causing the man to scream in pain.

"Give it to me," Levi repeated.

Knowing the consequences of his hesitation, Louis handed his briefcase over to Levi.

“They’re in my briefcase!”

Accepting it, Levi opened it up to reveal a stack of photos and a USB drive.

“Do you have any more copies?” He punched the other man for added measure.

Wailing in pain, Louis truthfully replied, “No! I already planned on giving her everything! With her strong personality, I knew she would kill herself if I pushed any further!”

“That’s good.” A cold glint appeared in his eyes, and his leg lashed out.

“AHHHH!” At that moment, Louis experienced what all men dreaded the most as excruciating pain flared in his body. His whole body was flushed red as he cradled his family jewels, rolling around on the floor.

Struggling to look at Levi, he gasped out, “Y-y-you went back o-on your w-word!”

An innocent smile curled Levi’s lips. “Did I ever say I wouldn’t touch you after you gave me the items?”

“I...” By then, the pain was getting too much, and Louis was close to passing out.

The last thing he heard was Levi saying, “Since you guys can’t seem to control your desires, I’ll help you!”

Lighting up a cigarette, he watched the moaning men on the floor with a grin tugging at his lips.

Just then, the unconscious Iris woke up.

The first person she saw was Levi, standing there calmly as he smoked.

The Protector Chapter 346

Then, Iris saw how Louis and the rest of the men were holding their crotches and whimpering in pain.

Scared and confused, she scurried to Levi's side.

She asked, "D-did you save me?"

Smiling, he nodded and replied, "Yeah. Of course I was the one who saved you."

Glancing around, she could not help disbelieving him. "Impossible! There's no way you're my savior!"

He frowned at her words.

Is there something wrong with this woman? Does she see anyone else around here?

"It must be the big boss! Yes, he must have rescued me!" she cried out in agitation.

Speechless and annoyed, he muttered, "Yeah, that's right. He was the one who saved you."

Technically, he was the big boss, so what she said was true.

"Is he here?" she asked eagerly while scanning the room.

“Nope. The men he sent here have already left. He told me to take you back home.”

“Alright then, let’s go!”

As Iris moved to take a step forward, her knees buckled, and she couldn’t walk an inch. Then, she turned to look at Levi helplessly.

Shaking his head wryly, he mumbled, “How troublesome.”

In the end, he had no choice but to carry her on his back.

Before he left, he made sure to confiscate Louis’ phone.

Sprawled against his back, she felt oddly warm and safe.

Maybe he’s not such a bad person after all.

Even though the person who had saved her was the big boss, the one who was bringing her away from this hell was still Levi.

She burst into tears when she recalled how her secret was still in Louis’ hands.

As if realizing what she was crying about, he handed her a briefcase.

When she saw the contents of the bag, her tears stopped.

“You didn’t sneak a peek, did you?” she asked suspiciously.

“I’m not interested in you at all!” was his reply.

She seethed furiously, “You...”

But what was more important was that she had finally gotten these items back.

These were actually photos of her in revealing clothing or other more explicit photos.

For someone as conservative and proud as her, she did not want her image ruined by having these leaked out.

Louis had copied these from her computer without her knowing when they had still been dating.

Ever since then, he used these as blackmail material for all these years to ransom money from her.

“By the way, don’t tell Zoey about this matter!” she suddenly uttered.

Getting a little annoyed with her, he said impatiently, “I don’t have time to gossip about you.”

She fell silent, pressing her face against his back.

While she felt like Levi was a useless person and did not have many praiseworthy traits, it was incredibly hard to find a man as reliable as him nowadays.

No wonder Zoey refused to let him go no matter what.

After sending Iris back home, Levi went back as well.

“Hmm? Why do I smell a woman’s perfume on you? And blood?” Zoey’s sharp nose immediately detected these unusual smells.

“Huh? Really?” He did not smell anything.

“You even have a woman’s hair on you!” she accused as she plucked a long hair from his shirt.

He hurriedly explained, “It belongs to Iris!”

“Why were you two so close?” She puffed her cheeks up in anger and glared at him. Jealousy flashed in her eyes.

She did not care that it was her best friend; nobody was allowed to be in such close contact with him!

“I-I...”

He did not know what to say. He wanted to explain what had happened, but Iris had insisted he keep her secret.

“I see. Can’t explain it, can you? Well, since you two are so intimate with each other, we should get a divorce! You can go live with her then!”

The Protector Chapter 347

Levi was dumbstruck at the extent of Zoey’s jealousy.

She was even packing her stuff and getting ready to leave!

Fortunately for him, Iris arrived at that moment.

She was traumatized by her earlier experience and was scared to sleep alone tonight. That was why she had come to find Zoey.

Seems like the two of them are arguing over me.

Hastily fabricating a lie, she explained, “Zoey, please don’t misunderstand! I twisted my ankle, and it took me a lot of effort to convince him to carry me back home.”

Zoey relaxed. “Oh. Darling, I’m so sorry for wrongfully blaming you!”

Smiling, he replied, “Honey, you never have to worry. I’m not interested in this woman at all!”

“As if I would be interested in you!” Iris retorted.

Yet somehow, those words seemed wrong the moment they left her lips.

That night, the two women shared a bed while Levi slept in another room.

At the same time.

At Emperor Hotel, Phineas Robinson was busy hosting a very esteemed guest.

This guest came from the Lopez family and held a venerable position in the family.

Only someone from the main Robinson family had the rights to host this person.

It was none other than Wesley. He was here on behalf of the Lopez family for an event.

“Phineas, do you know who Nueve, Trey, and Levi are?” he asked curiously.

The other man replied, “Of course! Levi is currently the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce’s enemy number one!”

“How powerful are they?” Wesley pressed.

“Not that weak, but nothing compared to the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce. Why the sudden interest in these insignificant men?” Phineas wondered.

Wesley sighed. “Well, you know how my second uncle’s godson was killed here in North Hampton two days ago? These three are the culprits.”

Phineas nearly jumped out of his seat in shock. “What? Mr. Lopez’s godson was killed here in North Hampton? I thought his godson was Quentin Lane, the Devil of the underground boxing ring!”

Wesley sighed again. “Yeah. Quentin was supposed to be one of the best fighters out there, yet he still croaked. That’s why I’m asking you about those three men.”

“Well, I would say there’s nothing extraordinary about them. They probably used some sly tricks to kill off Lane. Does Mr. Lopez want revenge? I can help him!”

Wesley shook his head. “No! Quentin is Uncle’s favorite, and now that he’s dead, Uncle is way beyond furious. He vows to get revenge personally! I’m only here as a scout to find out some things for him. As for how we’re going to get revenge on Garrison, that will have to wait for Uncle’s arrival.”

“Mr. Lopez is coming to North Hampton? That would really shake things up!”

Just the thought of it had Phineas shuddering in fear.

Garrison has really done it this time! Of all the men he could have pissed off, he had to piss off the one with the title of Hades!

“Oh, by the way, Wesley, I’m not sure if you know this, but Levi Garrison is part of Morris Group. I’m guessing this incident has something to do with them. Otherwise, why else would he have dared to touch a hair on Lane’s head?”

Phineas deliberately brought Morris Group into the mix, wanting to shift the other man's ire toward the company.

There was a frosty look in Wesley's eyes when he answered, "I know. Someone must be backing Garrison up, or he wouldn't have had the guts to make such huge waves. I don't care who it is; we'll deal with them as well!"

Phineas chuckled.

After Wesley left, Phineas abruptly thought of Louis.

"I wonder how things are going on his side? We're in a hurry here!"

He dialed the other man's number. Before the latter had a chance to speak, he queried, "How are things, Louis?"

"I'm afraid Louis has been, ah, crippled."

The voice coming from the other side of the phone had Phineas tensing.

The Protector Chapter 348

In a terrified voice, Phineas demanded, "Who are you?"

"Levi Garrison!"

"What? You're Levi Garrison?" The shock he was feeling bled into his voice.

Speak of the devil indeed.

“W-what did you do to Louis?”

“I already told you. I crippled him,” Levi said with a chuckle.

Just then, one of Phineas’s men came hurrying over with a box. “Mr. Robinson, somebody sent this to you.”

Curious, he ordered, “What is it? Open it!”

When he saw the bloody contents of the box, he turned as white as a sheet.

“This is...”

Levi’s voice spoke up from the phone, “Louis’ manhood, of course.”

Sucking in a breath, Phineas felt sick. “Garrison, you sick man!”

Levi laughed before saying, “He couldn’t control his lower body, so I took the liberty of controlling it for him.”

A thought occurred to Phineas, and he questioned, “Does this mean Iris’ secrets are with you now?”

“Yup. You should give up on trying to buy over Morris Group.”

“Damn you, what the hell does this have to do with you? You’re just an insignificant staff member!”

Phineas was infuriated. Things had been going so well until that damned Garrison had come along to mess it up!

“You went after my wife’s best friend. Enough said. Besides, I’m a part of this company too! Who do you think got them all those medical supplies?”

A look of confusion descended on Phineas' face. "What? I was wondering how Morris Group managed to obtain all those technologies. It was you!"

In the next instant, he understood.

It was not Neil Atkinson who had dipped his finger in the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce's pie, nor was it the mysterious boss of Morris Group.

It was Levi Garrison!

He had somehow gotten his hands on all those technologies!

This guy has to die!

"I'll say this again. You better not have any ideas about Morris Group!" Levi warned.

"Fine! I'll admit defeat this time. But this isn't the end of this matter!"

After Phineas hung up, he knitted his brows deeply.

There was no way he could let Levi go just like that.

But with the appointment ceremony coming up, this would be a bad time for the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce to be involved in any shady business.

"That's right! Wesley!"

That night, he rushed to meet with Wesley.

"Wesley, I know you said you were only here to find out more information on Levi Garrison, but I think you should just get rid of them once and for all. That way, you could take credit for their deaths. I'm sure Mr. Lopez will be incredibly grateful to you for that!" Phineas suggested.

Wesley's eyes gleamed. Although Sebastian Lopez was not the head of the Lopez family, his words still carried a lot of weight. Other than the head of the family, he did not respect anyone else.

If he, Wesley, really did resolve this matter, then Mr. Lopez would definitely hold him in high regard. When that happened, the chances of him becoming the man's heir would be very high.

"You have any ideas, Phineas?" he asked.

Phineas chuckled slyly. "I'm sure you've heard about what's been going on with the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce recently, so you should also know that now is a bad time for us to do anything. I can lend you my men to deal with Garrison."

Still uncertain, Wesley asked worriedly, "But they must be pretty strong if they can kill Lane."

"Relax! The men I'm loaning you are all top-notch fighters. The Robinson family went to great lengths and spent a lot of money on cultivating these killers. All thirty of them have been raised since young to be the perfect killers and have learned all kinds of fighting skills. I bet you even the elites of the military are no match for them!"

The Protector Chapter 349

"These men are stone-cold killers. As long as you pay them, they'll be willing to kill anyone you want! Nueve and Trey are nothing compared to them!"

Phineas snapped his fingers, and thirty men filed into the room.

Each was solidly built with bulging muscles, not a hint of fat on any of them. Their faces were blank, but a murderous look was apparent in their eyes.

Even Wesley was taken aback at the intense and menacing aura they projected.

Never had he ever seen such malicious-looking men, even in the South Warzone.

Excitement coursed through him and he exclaimed, "Alright! If this mission succeeds, I promise I'll make it up to you in the future!"

For the rest of the night, he was so excited that he could hardly sleep.

The next day.

Levi, Zoey, and Iris left the house together to head to work.

"I'll make an exception today and take you to work," Iris offered as she opened the car door and gestured for the man to get in.

Zoey nodded in permission, asking him to get in as well.

At that moment, in a private villa somewhere.

Nueve was lying on a bed with two women snuggled up on each side.

Crash!

The window was smashed open before ten men charged inside aggressively.

Nueve leaped to his feet, shouting, "Who are you?"

Wham!

The man in the lead, an expert in Muay Thai, knocked Nueve unconscious with one blow.

Meanwhile, in another private condominium apartment.

Trey had just gotten out of bed when someone knocked on his front door.

He had barely opened the door when several men barged inside. Before he could react, they knocked him out cold.

Back at Bayview Garden, Iris had only just started up the car and driven a few meters when –

Screech!

A van suddenly blocked her way, causing her to slam on the brakes.

Ten men exited the van before making their way to her car.

“Roll down the windows, now!”

Terrified, Iris did as ordered with trembling hands.

By contrast, Levi seemed completely unfazed. He still had an arm hanging out the window lazily.

The man in charge took out a photo and glanced between it and Levi. “You’re Levi Garrison?”

Levi nodded. “That’s me. What’s up?”

“Come with us quietly, or suffer the consequences!”

“Why should I?” Levi retorted.

“Because you pissed off someone!”

Frowning, Levi mused, “Who did I offend?”

Getting impatient, the man growled, “Hurry up and come with us! Don’t force our hands!”

“I can go with you, but at the very least tell me who it is?”

“Listen closely! You pissed off Sebastian Lopez of the South City Lopez family. Thus, you have to die today!”

The man directly yanked open the car door and dragged Levi out.

Levi did not resist, allowing himself to be taken to the van. He wanted to get a look at who was after him this time.

Slam!

The van door slammed shut before departing swiftly.

Iris could only stare off into space in shock.

Just then, Zoey came driving past.

Iris quickly hailed her. In a teary voice, she cried out, “Zoey! Something terrible has happened; Levi has been kidnapped!”

Zoey paled rapidly. “What? Levi was abducted?”

She felt herself grow faint at the thought.

Anxiety swamped her as she demanded, “Who did it? We have to save him!”

Iris repeated what she had heard earlier, “I think they said it was Sebastian Lopez of the South City Lopez family. I wonder who he is? The man also said that Levi had to die today!”

Zoey’s eyes brightened at the name. “The South City Lopez family? I have to find Grandpa; he’ll know what’s going on!”

Equally worried, Iris insisted, “Let me come too! Nothing must happen to Levi!”

Ever since he had saved her last night, she had changed her views on the man.

The Protector Chapter 350

The moment Levi was pushed into the van, his captors had blindfolded him to prevent him from seeing where they were going.

He took this chance to rest his eyes as his posture slowly relaxed.

Soon, the van drove through the gates of a private villa.

This was the personal property of the Lopez family in North Hampton, and nearly no one knew about it.

Levi was pulled out of the car before being taken to the basement.

When his blindfold was taken off, he saw Nueve and Trey kneeling beside him. Their faces were swollen badly, showing they had taken a beating before he had arrived.

The two men were clearly surprised to see him. “Mr. Garrison, you too?”

Levi shot them a smile but did not speak.

Though, the sight of him served to relax the two men.

They had been worried about whether they would survive this, but now that he was here, there was nothing to worry about anymore.

Nueve bellowed, “Who are you? Do you have any idea who we are?”

The thirty men remained silent, merely staring at them with killer intent in their eyes.

At that moment, the door swung open, and several men walked inside.

The middle-aged man walking at the front was dressed in a black suit, with a pair of golden-rimmed glasses perched on his nose.

He sneered, “Levi Garrison, Trey, and Nueve, right?”

“Who the f*** are you?” Trey demanded.

“Let me introduce myself. I am Wesley Lopez of the South City Lopez family!”

“What? The South City Lopez family?” Nueve and Trey exchanged glances with grim expressions.

Comparing the Robinsons to the Lopez family was like comparing a kitten to a tiger. The latter was the biggest family in South City.

While North Hampton took the lead in economic development, South City was just better in general for everything else.

“You know the guy you killed, Quentin Lane? He’s my uncle’s godson.”

Nueve and Trey nodded. “Yeah, we did. However, we only retaliated because he tried to kill Mr. Garrison first!”

Wesley’s expression darkened at their words. “The way you phrase it makes it sound like you both answer to him?”

The two men snickered before Trey spoke up, “But of course! We live to serve Mr. Garrison!”

“It doesn’t matter what you do to us, but your biggest mistake was going after Mr. Garrison!” Nueve added meaningfully.

“Hmm? Why?” A sliver of unease rose in Wesley.

...

Zoey and Iris got to the Lopez family residence as fast as they could.

When Harry caught sight of Zoey, he snorted. “Why have you decided to grace us with your presence so early in the morning?”

“Grandpa, I need your help!” Zoey said tearfully.

At her words, Harry and the rest of the family guffawed.

“To think a day would come where you come asking us for help! You’re the great president, Ms. Lopez, aren’t you?” Henry mocked.

If she had to, Zoey would get down on her knees and beg. As it was, she pleaded, “Grandpa, Levi has been kidnapped! Please save him!”

“Hahaha! Isn’t this just perfect? He pissed off someone he shouldn’t have and is going to get killed for it!”

“Yeah! Good riddance, I say! Rather than leave such trash lying around in the family, might as well get rid of him as soon as possible!”

...

Everyone was chortling merrily at the news of Levi’s misfortune.

Harry took this chance to suggest, “Zoey, Grandpa thinks what has happened to Levi is a good thing as well. You can use this opportunity to divorce him and marry someone else.”

“Grandpa, I won’t divorce him, ever! All I want to do now is save him. Only you can help him now! Please, help us!”

With a thump, Zoey fell to her knees before Harry.

“Zoey Lopez! Have you gone mad? You’re actually kneeling for a rapist?”

The Protector Chapter 351

“Yeah! What’s so great about that little weasel? Is it really worth it for you to resort to this?” Everyone muttered angrily.

Harry furrowed his brow and asked, “Did you say I was the only one who could save him? What did you mean by that?”

“Grandpa snatched a member of the South City Lopez Family! He got on the bad side of someone named Sebastian!” Zoey truthfully reported.

“What? The South City Lopez family? Sebastian?”

Fear struck Harry like a bolt of lightning, turning his legs to jelly.

“What’s wrong with the South City Lopez family. Grandpa?” Shaun asked, puzzled.

“You may be unaware, but we are distantly related to the South City Lopez family. We’re part of the massive Lopez clan. Let me put it this way. We, the South Hampton family, are still leagues away from the South City Lopez family. They would not even grace us with a second look, much less permit us to recognize them as blood relatives! This Sebastian character is even more frightening. His nickname is Hades, and he’s notorious for slaughtering people without mercy! Offending him is the equivalent of earning a ticket to hell!”

After Harry’s elucidation of the situation set in, chills ran up Zoey’s spine.

Levi pissed off such a demon?

This is even more terrifying than the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce!

What do we do now?

“Grandpa, you’re familiar with the South City Lopez Family. You have to know of a way to save Levi!” Zoey burst out, her voice tinged with anxiety.

Harry only shook his head. “Impossible! I’m but a mere bug in the eyes of the South City Lopez Family! I have no right to vouch for Levi at all!”

“I’m begging you, Grandpa! I can’t let anything happen to Levi! Please!” Zoey pleaded desperately, tears raining down her cheeks.

“It’s too difficult! It might end up causing trouble for our family!” Harry shook his head helplessly.

“Grandpa, please help me out just this once! I want to give it our best shot at the very least!” Zoey was out of options.

Harry was unconvinced.

“Please try Grandpa! I’ll agree to anything!” Zoey’s tears gushed out of her eyes.

At her words, Harry’s eyes lit up. “Okay. You said it yourself. You’ll really agree to anything I say?”

Zoey nodded vigorously. “Yes. I will. Grandpa, as long as you save Levi, I swear I’ll do anything you want!”

“Okay then. I’ll see what I can do! If Levi makes it out, you are to transfer the entire company to me and back out of your own accord!” Harry announced.

Zoey froze. Sadness crept over her heart.

Even at a time like this.

Grandpa still chose to plot against her.

“Fine. You have my word!”

She was ready to sacrifice everything in order to save Levi.

“Your word isn’t enough. We’ll sign a contract to seal the deal!” Harry said.

Henry immediately typed out a contract.

After reading through the terms, Zoey signed it.

The Lopezes were delighted.

All of Zoey’s inheritance was finally theirs.

It had been a long and arduous wait for this day.

They trusted Harry inexplicably.

Since he had given his word, success was guaranteed.

Harry was extremely confident.

Decades ago, he had attended one of the Lopez family’s annual meetings. He was granted assurance that the South City Lopez family would support all the family branches.

The South City Lopez family promised to help them with one instance.

Harry had been holding on to this chip for years.

He was wisely biding his time in order to wait for the perfect opportunity.

A window of opportunity had finally shown itself.

After all, Zoey's inheritance was worth close to a billion.

"Okay, let me call and try!" Harry grabbed the receiver of the landline.

"Hello Sir, I am Harry from North Hampton. Unfortunately, I'm calling to trouble you. I would like to activate the promise given to me at the annual meeting!"

The Protector Chapter 352

"Are you certain you want to use it now, Harry? You only get one chance!" The voice on the other end of the call coldly warned.

"Yes, I'm sure!" Harry nodded enthusiastically.

"Okay then. What do you need?"

Harry recounted Levi's situation to the Lopez family.

A moment later, a call was returned.

"The matter has been settled. Sebastian agreed to let him go!"

The South City Lopez family was unaware of Wesley's scheme. Sebastian only agreed to let the matter regarding Levi rest.

Harry was absolutely overwhelmed by this result.

Both Zoey and Iris let out sighs of relief.

Levi was safe.

“Someone print the final contract for the transfer! Once Levi shows his face, we’re signing it!” Harry could not be more eager.

Although bitterness pricked her, Zoey had no regrets.

If Levi’s safe, losing him for the company is worth it!

Meanwhile, in the underground cellar of the Lopez family’s private manor.

Wesley glared daggers at Levi and the rest. “I don’t care who you are! No matter what it takes, I’m taking your decapitated heads to my uncle! Someone come and chop their heads down now!”

After issuing his order, Wesley turned to avoid the imminently gruesome scene.

Thirty men lunged forward, poised to strike Levi and the rest.

With a loud bang, Levi managed to escape his bonds and struck his attacker.

His victim was sent flying across the room.

Another loud bang resonated. This time, he had launched a spinning kick which propelled another attacker backwards.

Levi was taking on the battle by himself.

He weaved into the crowd, throwing a series of rapid attacks. Each extension of his limb resulted in the collapse of at least one of his opponents.

Within thirty seconds, all thirty mercenaries were sprawled over the ground.

All of them had at least seven or eight broken bones.

Nueve and Trey were frozen in shock.

They had never seen Levi in action and assumed he was a regular man.

Neither expected him to be a master of combat!

Wesley sensed that something was wrong and slowly turned around.

The moment he turned, terror seized him.

All the trained experts were defeated?

It's insanely impressive!

“Sebastian was it? Send him a gift on my behalf!” Levi stalked over and came to a stop right in front of Wesley.

Wesley spluttered, “What gift?”

Bang!

One swift kick to the shin and a horrible cracking sound echoed through the room.

Crack!

Crack!

Crack!

Three more kicks followed in succession. All of Wesley's limbs had been broken.

With a strangled howl of agony, Wesley finally understood what Levi meant by 'gift'.

He succumbed to the darkness shortly after.

"Dig into the identities of these people! They were no ordinary men!" Levi instructed Nueve and Trey.

Once they departed the manor, Levi started on his journey back to Zoey.

In the Lopez family residence.

"Grandpa, is Levi out of danger yet?" Zoey urgently pressed.

"I'm sure he's fine, Sebastian gave his word that he would drop the matter!" Harry muttered dismissively.

"Let's give it a while more. As a last resort, we'll just call the police!" Iris did not trust the Lopez family at all.

Just then, Levi strolled in.

"See? I told you he was fine!" Harry grinned triumphantly.

The rest of the family gazed at Harry with unadulterated admiration.

Grandpa is amazing. He managed to convince the South City Lopez family to release Levi after a single phone call.

Even Iris had to admit Harry was impressive.

The moment Zoey laid eyes on Levi, she leapt into his arms, pulling him close.

The Protector Chapter 353

Zoey had never been more fraught with worry in her life.

“I’m fine! There’s no need to cry! Let’s go back!” Levi murmured comfortingly.

“Why don’t you head to work with Iris? I have some business to discuss with Grandpa.” Zoey said.

“Okay.”

Iris led Levi out and they made their way to the office.

Zoey signed the transfer papers and Harry insisted on taking them to a lawyer’s office for verification.

“From now on, Ms. Lopez will have nothing to do with Imperial Meadows.” The lawyer declared.

“Yes, yes, I know.” Zoey could not stop the tears which surged and overflowed.

“Wait, you’re so capable Zoey. Why don’t you come work for my company?” Harry offered facetiously.

“No thanks!” Zoey resolutely turned him down and left the family residence, her cheeks wet with tears.

“Hahaha...”

Uproarious laughter erupted from the rest of the family.

Only a few months till Zoey’s inheritance becomes all ours!

At long last, the day has finally come!

“Tonight, we’re celebrating at the best hotel in town!” Harry was at peak jubilation.

“Father, should we invite Aaron?” Harry giggled smugly.

“Of course! We need to let the unfilial maggot see for himself how I’ve gained control of his family’s properties! Hahaha...” Harry guffawed gleefully.

Zoey scurried back to Bayview Garden.

She had lost everything.

She would most likely be unable to afford the rent from then on.

But she had no regrets.

Levi was safe, and that was all that mattered to her.

Iris neglected to inform Levi of this development, hence he was none the wiser.

“Mr. Garrison, we’ve found the information you requested! Those people were trained assassins who belong to the Robinson family!” Nueve reported.

Things instantly clicked for Levi. The Robinsons were the ones pulling the strings.

“Good. Once the swearing-in ceremony is over, you guys will be the first to go!” A flash of steely hostility crossed Levi’s gaze.

After work, Iris brought Levi back.

Before she exited the car, Iris issued an austere remark, “Treat Zoey well. The burden of the family rests on your shoulders from now on!”

Levi found her words strange.

I’ve always been good to Zoey!

Back home.

Zoey looked like she had been crying.

“What’s wrong, honey? Why the tears?” Levi asked with curious concern.

“It’s nothing. I just felt like crying for some reason...” Zoey dried her eyes.

“You have a weird hobby...” Levi smiled.

Suddenly, someone pounded on their door.

When Levi opened the door, Aaron and Caitlyn bolted past him straight towards Zoey.

“What’s wrong with you, Zoey?” They asked in surprise.

Zoey’s voice caught in her throat and she struggled to come up with a reply.

“What’s wrong? Did something happen to Zoey?” Levi was bewildered by their reactions.

Aaron shot Levi a glare. "Don't you know what happened? Because of you, Zoey gave her entire inheritance to the Lopez family!"

"Exactly! She's now penniless!" Caitlyn roared.

"Wait. What?" Levi was floored.

"You were captured by the South City Lopez family so, in order to save you, Zoey agreed to Father's terms. Your safe return in exchange for her entire inheritance!"

"Since you were saved, Zoey had to make good on her word!"

"It's all your fault! We were beginning to see the light at the end of the tunnel, but you wrecked it! Why did you have to offend the Lopez family?"

Aaron and Caitlyn were ready to unleash their fury on Levi.

The Protector Chapter 354

"I admit to pissing off the South City Lopez family. But Harry was not the one who saved me. I managed it by myself! It had nothing to do with him!" Levi explained in frustration.

He turned his attention to Zoey. "You've been tricked. It really wasn't Harry who saved me. Why didn't you just ask me?"

Zoey was stunned.

She believed Levi.

“As if! Don’t you know who Sebastian is? They’re on par with the most elite family from North Hampton. How would you be able to make it out on your own after incurring their wrath?”

“Exactly! We all saw Father make the call to Sebastian, who promised to let you off!” Aaron and Caitlyn snapped.

Zoey was also looking at Levi suspiciously.

None of them would believe his claims.

Levi did not bother to explain himself any further.

After all, regardless of what he said, his words would not be taken seriously.

Harry had chosen the perfect opportunity to wrap everyone around his finger.

Further elaboration was futile.

“Levi, please reflect on yourself! Zoey made the ultimate sacrifice all for your sake! She lost a multi-million company!” Aaron was close to tears in distress.

Levi was visibly touched by Zoey’s sacrifice.

She really loves me.

After all, a few million is more than enough to test one’s loyalty.

Yet, she chose to save me even if it meant losing a few billion.

“Since the company has already been transferred, there’s no point in crying over spilt milk! I’ll help Zoey start up a whole new company, one which will take the world by storm!” Levi asserted.

It aligned perfectly with the plan he was about to execute.

Soon, he would be purging North Hampton.

When the time came, there would be a surplus of resources in the market.

It would be the perfect opportunity for Zoey to step in.

She would also be helping Morris Group to share the load.

Then, no one would care about the crummy company the Lopez family stole.

“You’re all talk. Luckily, you work for Morris Group, else I would beat you to a pulp!” Aaron and Caitlyn smiled wryly as they exited.

Zoey beamed. “Stop teasing me, honey! As if I would be able to take the world by storm!”

“I’m serious! North Hampton is about to undergo a big shift! Just wait and see!” Levi announced.

He’s just trying to comfort me. I need to smile for his benefit.

“The Lopez family better watch their backs! I won’t let them get away with it so easily!” Levi’s eye glinted menacingly.

As the sun slowly disappeared below the horizon, the Lopez family was enjoying a stupendously lavish banquet.

“They didn’t even bother to show up!” Henry and a few other people screeched.

“Father, I suggest we scratch their names entirely off the family register! They’re as poor as church mice now!” Henry suggested.

Fabian nodded in agreement. “Yes, that’s right. We’ve milked them for all they’re worth! What’s the point in keeping them around!”

“Yes yes! The Lopez family is now worth over a billion! How could we accommodate people like Aaron? How humiliating!”

“They’ll definitely come crawling back for help in the future. How bothersome!”

The rest of the people jabbered and brayed.

Harry was slightly tipsy and he nodded excitedly. “Okay! We’ll remove them from the family register at the family meeting tomorrow! From then on, we won’t have anything to do with them!”

“Hahaha. That’s great!” Henry and the rest applauded delightedly.

The next day.

Zoey and Levi were still slumbering.

An urgent call woke them abruptly and tore them from away Morpheus’ realm.

The call was from Aaron, who told them to hurry down to the Lopez family ancestral home.

The Protector Chapter 355

By the time Levi and Zoey rushed to the scene, Aaron and Caitlyn had already arrived.

The location had been intentionally picked to be the family ancestral halls.

“Dad, Mum, what’s wrong? What’s the rush?” Levi asked, puzzled.

“We don’t have a clue either! We were just told to meet at the ancestral halls. I think they’re announcing something big!” Caitlyn answered.

Aaron knitted his brows. “My right eyelid won’t stop twitching!”

Shortly later, Harry arrived with the rest of the Lopez family party at the ancestral halls.

Henry and the rest smirked sinisterly.

An uneasy feeling settled in the stomachs of Levi and the other three.

But they were certain of one thing. Nothing good could come out of this.

Harry seated himself on the wooden chair in front of the shrine and the rest took their seats according to seniority.

Harry quickly scanned the scene and sternly boomed, “Is everyone here?”

Fabian nodded in response. “Everyone is here Father!”

Harry was the first to offer up a joss stick.

“It’s been some time since we had a family meeting at the ancestral hall! Today’s meeting was called to announce...” Harry’s gaze fell on Aaron.

“After a long discussion with the family, I, of the North Hampton Lopez family, have decided to expel Aaron and his family from our clan!” He stated plainly.

Once the last word left his lips, every person present gaped in astonishment.

Levi and his family's faces fell.

“What? Kicked out?”

The news was earth-shattering for the three of them. They could almost see their world crumbling around them.

We're being removed from the family register!

What could be worse?

Such a blow threatened to push them off the cliff into the chasm of insanity.

Aaron looked at Harry in utter disbelief.

Caitlyn immediately dissolved into tears.

Tears were brimming in the rims of Zoey's eyes.

Grandpa just robbed me of my assets worth close to a billion. How could he go so as far as to burn all our bridges? How could he force us out of the family?

She could only sigh in resignation.

“All in favor, raise your hands!” Aaron yelled.

In a flurry of movement, the hands of Fabian and many others shot into the air.

“It's settled! The move to remove Aaron and his family has the majority vote!” Henry chuckled.

He was completely indifferent to the feelings of the four people in question.

“Good luck to you guys. From now on, the North Hampton Lopez family shall have absolutely nothing to do with you! Please do not involve us in your matters from here on out!”

“I, Harry Lopez, are henceforth severing all ties with you! We shall be no better than strangers from now on!”

“Get out!” Harry ordered cruelly.

“Get out of the family! Get out of the family! Get out of the family!” The rest of the people chanted with ruthless determination.

“Might I suggest you change your last names? You’re undeserving of the Lopez name!” Henry sneered.

Zoey’s body was shaking with the force of her wails.

She was indignant!

She had never been wronged to such an extent in her life.

I don’t even deserve the Lopez family name now.

This is even worse than losing all my assets.

My own grandfather wants nothing to do with me.

Right after he snatched away close to a billion from me!

Caitlyn was not doing any better.

But neither of them was in worse shape than Aaron.

His birth father had cut ties with him and he was erased from the family register.

What more could be worse?

Seized by rage, Aaron spat out blood.

“Father, Aaron...”

Zoey and Caitlyn rushed to catch the teetering Aaron.

Aaron did not speak. He only glared directly at Harry.

“What? Haven’t given up?” Harry leered.

“Right. It’s not over!” Levi exclaimed.

The Protector Chapter 356

“What does useless scum like you have to be upset about? You’re grossly unfit to be part of the Lopez family!”

“Exactly! Get out of the Lopez family! You useless scum!”

“You have no right to be here! Get out and stay away!”

Levi opened his mouth and the room fell silent.

“Harry, would you believe me if I said you’ll live to regret this?” Levi hissed, his lips curled upwards in a malevolent smirk.

“Haha. Me? Regret? Impossible! I hold all of Zoey’s assets. What do I have to regret?” Harry retorted with an equally hostile smirk of his own.

The rest of the people stared at Levi like he was an idiot.

Aaron wiped away the blood at the corner of his mouth and fixed his eyes on Harry incredulously. “Father, must you go this far? What did I do wrong that you insist on kicking me out from the family?”

“Yes! The Lopez family has always had strict rules. Erasing anyone’s name from the family register can only be a punishment for something egregious. What did Aaron and I do?” Caitlyn asked, choking back sobs.

Zoey’s gaze was also boring into Harry.

Harry exchanged a look with Henry before coldly replying, “Don’t you even know what you did? I worked to raise you and even opened a company for you. What about you guys? You contributed nothing to the family! You even committed deplorable acts! But you want to leave the Lopez family! It’s the equivalent of betraying your ancestors!”

“Yes! Zoey’s company leaving the Lopez family is the equivalent of betraying the ancestors!”

“The punishment for betraying your ancestors is expulsion form the family!”

“Get out of the Lopez family!”

Henry and the rest chided and raged. They even shoved the four of them.

Aaron gazed at Harry despondently and asked, "Father, I'll ask you one last time. Must you take it this far?"

"Leave! Never call me Father ever again! You're no longer part of the Lopez family!" Harry rebuffed heartlessly.

He struck off the names of Aaron and the rest from the family register.

Aaron was no longer a member of the Lopez family. It was official.

At that moment, despite being a picture of masculinity, Aaron broke down into bawls of agony.

"Dad, Mum, Zoey. Let's go!" Levi dragged the three of them out.

Despite trying to saunter away, their figures appeared forlorn.

"Hahaha..."

The Lopez family guffawed and laughter resonated throughout the room.

We've finally got rid those burdens!

"From this day onwards, our family shall prosper!" Harry bellowed.

In the car.

Aaron and his family huddled together, sobbing.

This was the darkest hour of their existence.

They never would have imagined that the day would come where their names were erased from the family register.

They no longer belonged to the Lopez family.

Levi could only offer warm words. “The three of you are too nice! You’ve suffered silently at their hands for ages! All this time, you prioritized family, and allowed them to step all over you! If you think about it, they’re the ones who aren’t fit to be related to you! Look at how they treated you. After leaving you with nothing, they even kicked you out of the family! But this might be a good thing. From now on, you can focus on working hard without anything holding you back! I’ll make them pay! You can just sit back and wait for the day when I make them kneel before you and beg for forgiveness!”

The trio was in the throes of despair and merely took Levi’s words and passing remarks of comfort.

The Lopez family did not stop there.

The news spread like wildfire through the North Hampton media outlets.

‘Aaron Lopez and family betrayed the Lopez family and plotted to get ahold of all the Lopez family estates.’

‘Harry Lopez had no choice but to harden his heart and expel them from the family.’

Countless savage condemnations fell upon them.

Page after page depicted Aaron as a callous fiend, an ungrateful bastard.

The Protector Chapter 357

“Such scum should just be sentenced to death! Why keep him around?”

“Yes! He even betrayed his family. He’s no better than a traitor!”

Aaron and Caitlyn did nothing to defend themselves.

Any attempt to do so would just result in more rebuttal and insults.

They were slandered!

Such malignance!

After getting wind of the news, Una could not hold back her broad grin.

“Who would’ve thought even Levi would come to this? Even your wife has fallen from her grace. Let’s see how you crawl out of this hole.” She sniggered spitefully.

Even Winston was elated to receive the news.

A man of Levi’s position would normally never have caught Winston’s eye.

But he caused trouble one too many times and Winston was practically boiling with rage.

“All I had to do was dangle some meat in front of the mutts and they took the bait” Winston grinned widely.

Oh, I can’t imagine there exists joy greater than this!

Not only was he attending the next day's swearing-in ceremony for the commander-in-chief, but to receive such news as well, he was bursting with happiness.

"Now everyone, focus on preparations for tomorrow's swearing-in ceremony!"

That night, these powerful figures of North Hampton struggled to get some shut-eye.

In a luxurious mountain villa somewhere.

The kingpin behind the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce, Eric Robinson, who also stood at the head of four noble families, invited Grover Cooke and Xander Hoyles over.

"Mr. Cooke, Mr. Hoyles, I ask for your assistance tomorrow!" Eric appealed.

"How do you want us to help?" Xander asked warily.

"Tomorrow you are to arrange a meeting between us, the God of War and Mr. Quinton. Winston Gonzales cannot, under no circumstances, know about it! I'll leave this matter in your hands! The North Hampton Chamber of Commerce is in grave danger!"

The faces of the men in front of him soured.

"Okay, leave it to us! I'll also have Jesse come up with a plan to help the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce!" Grover replied calmly.

"That's great!" Eric and the rest were thrilled.

Their fates rested on the shoulders of Xander and Grover.

“Hehe. When the time comes, we’ll have both Morris Group and the Gonzales family under our thumb!”

They could not wait for the next day to arrive.

The next day.

The North Hampton Warzone had completed all preparations and were more than ready. The commander-in-chief’s swearing-in ceremony would begin at exactly 9 o’clock.

Andy, who was in charge of the event, bustled about incessantly.

The last step was to ensure the God of War would be making an appearance to formally introduce Percy as the new commander-in-chief.

Andy was overwrought with emotion.

Even the God of War had to follow the schedule he set out.

How wonderful was that!

In the morning.

Levi addressed the family before him, “Dad, Mum, Zoey, let’s go out and have some fun!”

The trio did not protest and obediently climbed aboard the car.

Soon, Levi had driven them out of the suburbs.

Zoey did not pay much mind. She assumed Levi was taking them to the countryside or to a scenic location.

But as the ride went on, she sensed something was off.

There were many cars on the road, most of which were of high-end brands like Maybach and Rolls-Royce.

They were all moving in the same direction as Levi.

Is there an event going on?

“Honey, where are you taking us?” Zoey enquired.

“I’m bringing you to see the world, and enjoy yourselves while we’re at it!” Levi grinned.

After about two hours, they were almost out of North Hampton.

They had finally arrived at their destination.

When they took in the surroundings, the three Lopezes were stunned.

They were at an army camp!

We’re actually at an army camp!

The car had only just halted when soldiers came marching over for inspection.

The soldiers were all armed to the teeth. Zoey and her parents could not help but feel on edge.

The Protector Chapter 358

“Sir, as this car is not sanctioned by the Warzone, you are to park there, on the left. You may enter afterwards!” The soldier informed Levi.

“Sure!” Levi drove the car to an empty slot and parked.

After they got out of the car, Zoey and Aaron scanned their surroundings with fascination.

How are we allowed to be in such a solemn and sacred place?

What are we doing here?

They were burning with curiosity and fear as they held the military in high regard.

Zoey also spotted the luxury cars which they passed on the road, parked around them.

Something’s definitely going on!

“Levi?”

At this moment, a shocked voice called out.

Levi turned to see the Gonzales family making their way over to him.

There were a large number of members present, ten of them to be exact.

Una walked right up to Levi and asked with a smile plastered on her face, “What are you doing here? Is this a place you’re allowed to be at?”

Winston broke out into a smile as well.

After all, it was no easy task getting an invitation to the ceremony.

It had posed somewhat of an issue even for an elite such as Winston, much less for commoners.

Yet, Levi came?

What kind of joke is this?

Levi replicated their expressions. "I'm here for the swearing-in ceremony of course!"

"Hahaha..."

The Gonzales erupted into peals of laughter.

There were 'regular' people who were given invitations to the event, but they were gentries such as Winston and the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce.

The Rogers family, who were worth five billion, might stand a chance.

But Levi was far from being included in the realm of possibilities.

He had nothing to his name and was even kicked out of the Lopez family.

"You seem to be in a good mood Mr. Gonzales! Why are you laughing?"

The heads of the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce appeared.

Winston smiled. "Do you know Levi, Robinson?"

Eric and his three companions froze momentarily before regaining his gait. “Of course I know him!”

Phineas Robinson kept his eyes trained on Levi.

The lucky bastard. Wesley was this close to ending his life.

Who would have expected Sebastian to drop the case?

Thanks to him, my thirty masters are gone.

Wesley must have brought them back to South City.

“Levi is also here to attend the swearing-in ceremony.”

After Winston’s revelation, the Robinsons dissolved into cackles.

“Who gave him the right to show his face here? Ha!”

The Robinsons scoffed before departing.

Levi was worth nothing in their eyes.

Before the Robinsons left, they made a slicing gesture across their necks.

“Sooner or later, your head will roll, Levi Garrison.”

They sauntered off.

Aaron and the rest were breathing raggedly.

The tension from the interaction with North Hampton’s elite had been too overwhelming. They felt almost suffocated.

They could not believe Levi had made enemies of such people.

The last few seemed to bear intense hatred for Levi as well.

Just how much trouble did he cause?

“I have to say, hats off to you! You managed to piss off so many big-shots with one swing!” Aaron smiled wryly as he did not know how to react to this.

“Dad, Mum, it’s fine. After today, those people will all fall!” Levi chuckled confidently.

“Moving on, can you take us in? To the swearing-in ceremony?” Zoey asked.

“No problem!”

Levi led them into the camp with no problems.

A representative from the camp greeted them and gave them a tour.

The Protector Chapter 359

Levi decided that he didn’t want them to attend the Grand Opening Ceremony in the end.

He felt that it wasn’t worth going, and they might as well have a tour around.

Winston and his group made their way into the hall of the barracks. He started to interrogate his son, Andy when he finally sat down.

“Is Levi or Aaron on the guests’ list?”

Andy shook his head, “Nope. The list had long been ready. But Levi’s name is nowhere to be found.”

“Hahahaha...”

Winston and a few others laughed.

“Besides, Levi and the others aren’t even here in the hall. How is he supposed to attend the Grand Opening?” asked Andy.

Winston grinned brightly.

Levi was just a clown in their eyes.

Besides sheer luck, that clown had nothing else.

When the Gonzales family was dealing with Levi, Percy happened to be there to resolve the crisis.

And Harry was there when the Lopez family from South City intended to deal with Levi.

.....

“Your good luck is going to be used up one day!” Una sneered.

Inside the hall arranged by the North Hampton Warzone, guests who were there for the ceremony flocked to their pre-arranged seats.

Winston and the other upper-class members of the society were seated in the first row.

Governor Jesse Nielsen and his men were also in the front seats. Even though Grover had stepped down, he was still more than qualified to be seated in the first row.

Xander Hoyles and Benny Quinton had also arrived and were seated.

Soon, most of the seats were filled up.

But there were still six empty seats in the first row.

Everyone knew what this meant.

These six seats were reserved for the God of War and his subordinates, the Five Great Wars Regiment.

Any one of them alone was enough to make the North Hampton tremble in fear.

Not to mention the God of War.

This is exciting!

This is really, really exciting!

Winston had never been so excited in his life. He was about to meet the legendary God of War!

Oh, how long have I waited for this day to come...

And it finally came!

There was a different meaning to it today.

The God of War and Benny Quinton were going to make their appearance together.

The commander-in-chief in charge was also the famed general of the Iron Brigade.

This would be quite a historic moment to witness.

Winston kept glancing towards the passageway. The anticipation he was feeling was overwhelming.

The younger generations of the Gonzales family were feeling honored and prideful from the bottom of their hearts.

Among all those from the younger generation of the North Hampton, who else was fortunate enough to attend such a ceremony?

This was the power of the resources they had.

The experience and networking they had accumulated were definitely enough to crush their competitors.

The billionaires of the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce were of no exception.

Compared to Winston, the God of War was relatively more like their last hope.

Because the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce was in distress and the markets were disintegrating.

They would suffer if there wasn't anyone to back them up.

The attendees quietened down after a short while.

Not long after, Percy marched into the venue with his military uniform on.

The attendees slowly stood up and welcomed Percy.

After all, he was going to be the commander-in-chief of the North Hampton Warzone after today.

But Percy didn't walk over to the stage. He waited at the passageway instead.

Soon, Azure Dragon, Kirin and Phoenix arrived.

They were the Five Great Wars Regiment!

Their intimidating aura overwhelmed the audience in the hall.

This was the first time the famous Five Great Wars Regiment were onstage together.

Even Xander felt his blood boiling with anticipation.

Just the five of them was enough to kill an army of a thousand men.

Azure Dragon and the others stopped at the passageway too. Six of them including Percy stood in two rows as they waited.

Everyone knew what this meant.

They're waiting for the arrival of the God of War!

Everyone stood up as they held their breaths and paid full attention to the passageway.

Tap...tap...tap...

Sounds of footsteps could be heard shortly after.

A mighty silhouette had appeared at the passageway!

The Protector Chapter 360

“Salute!” Percy yelled and gave a standard military salute.

All the soldiers followed suit.

Once the figure returned the salute, he began to walk into the hall with Percy and the others flanked beside him protectively.

Everyone’s hearts were pounding as it wasn’t an exaggeration that the seven people in front of them could save the world.

This is exciting!

He’s the God of War!

He’s Erudia’s one and only 5-star rated God of War!

Una’s heart thumped as she watched the tall figure from afar.

Now that’s a true hero!

He’s the man of every woman’s dream!

Una fell in love with the man just by the sight of him.

The Gonzales family had also planned to do whatever it took to get Una to sleep with the God of War that night.

Una was very confident that she was going to be the God of War's wife soon.

I'm going to be the wife of Erudia's most respectable God of War.

Una could already see the bright future she was going to have.

The faces of Winston and his group were glowing. After today, I, Winston Gonzales, am going to be the Grandpa of the God of War!

The Gonzales family is going to prosper and become Erudia's most powerful aristocratic family!

Before long, Levi and his group were finally in the hall and got to their reserved seats.

The attendees in the hall could only see the back of the God of War. He sat in a tall and upright manner, like the backbone of the nation; the Great Wall of Erudia.

The five stars on his shoulder shined brightly.

Right now, he was the biggest focus of the audience.

"One should have a son like the God of War!" exclaimed Winston.

"Don't you think the God of War looks familiar?"

Winston and his group who were sitting a bit further behind couldn't see quite as clearly.

So Winston, Eric, and the others started to put on their glasses.

“His back seems really familiar... I feel like I've seen him somewhere before!” said Winston.

“That's right! He looks familiar to me too, but I just can't remember who he is...” said Una.

Meanwhile, Xander and Andy, who were sitting in the first row, broke out in cold sweat just after a glance at the God of War.

They had seen photographs of Levi before.

But they didn't expect Levi to be the God of War.

Thud!

Andy didn't sit tight and fell onto the ground, attracting the attention of everyone in the room.

“What's wrong with Andy? How can he make such a rudimentary mistake?” said Winston angrily.

The Gonzales family wore an unsightly expression on.

The ceremony finally began.

Almost an hour had passed since the ceremony started and Percy stood on the stage as he waited.

“Lastly, let's welcome the God of War!” announced Xander.

Xander stood up and shouted to the audience, “Salute to the God of War!”

“To the God of War!”

Thousands of officers and soldiers shouted in unison.

Levi got on the stage in the midst of the shouts and stood facing everybody.

The attendees went crazy when they saw the face of the God of War as their dream finally came true.

All these years, the God of War was the military spirit of the soldiers.

They could die without any regrets now that they finally saw the God of War in person.

“I want to take a good look at how the God of War really looks like.”

Una and those who were younger immediately paled as they were shocked to see who the God of War really was.

Boom!

Everyone was shocked at the revelation. It was like a bolt that came out of the blue sky.

Levi Garrison!

No one had expected Levi to be the God of War.

It was beyond their wildest imagination.

It's actually Levi!

Una was dumbfounded.

Clint was dumbfounded.

Robinson was dumbfounded.

.....

“Huh? What’s wrong with you guys? Are you shocked?”

The Protector Chapter 361

Winston and the rest were confused as to why the younger ones were so shocked.

“We should take a look too!”

They turned.

Winston, Eric, and the others almost fainted when they saw Levi’s face.

“Levi? It’s Levi?”

“No way! How could it be Levi?”

“I don’t believe it! I must’ve seen it wrongly.”

Winston and the others couldn’t accept the reality. They just couldn’t believe it even though they saw it with their own eyes.

Even North Hampton’s highest leader, Grover Cooke, paled upon seeing Levi.

“This- Isn’t this Levi Garrison? Levi is the God of War? I’m not dreaming, am I?”

Those who knew Levi felt as though their life was about to collapse soon.

The young man who had once been imprisoned had transformed into an unparalleled general in a blink of an eye!

He was a capable and powerful person now!

It was unimaginable!

The scene before their eyes was just too shocking.

The upperclassmen were absolutely dumbfounded, it was as if they had been struck by lightning.

Levi, who was still on stage, said with a smile, "Sorry to disappoint you! But I am indeed the God of War!"

Boom!

The audience from the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce was about to go crazy when they heard Levi admitting it.

They finally understood why Morris Group's progress had skyrocketed.

The Morris Group had the God of War backing them up all along!

Who the hell would be able to stand against them? And there was Neil Atkinson too. They saw Neil's name on the guests' list.

Neil is Kirin!

Pfft!

Winston couldn't stand it anymore and coughed out a mouthful of fresh blood.

The God of War was the one who saved him from his sudden heart attack previously.

Winston tried to repay the God of War by offering him money so that the latter could live a new and better life, but Winston was rejected which led to the Gonzales family thinking that Levi was a scoundrel and a hypocritical clown.

The Gonzales family thought that Levi was going to use the incident to gain more money.

So the Gonzales family had constantly been targeting Levi. They even tried to kill him!

Winston was about to suffer from a brain hemorrhage due to the shock and fear he was feeling.

So the person I've been targeting constantly has been the God of War all along!

He really didn't care about my repayment at all! After all, the God of War wouldn't be lacking any money! Of course he wouldn't need me to give him a new life!

The Gonzales family is finished!

Winston suddenly recalled all those times Levi had warned him.

Besides someone with a status like Levi, no one else would be brave enough to force the Gonzales family to kneel in front of him and apologize.

Back then, when commander-in-chief Covington said that he was going to visit his relative, he must be referring to Levi!

I'm such a fool!

I should've figure it all out earlier!

Pfft!

Pfft!

.....

Winston continuously coughed out a few more mouthfuls of blood.

The truth hit Una harder than anyone else.

She had always been in contact with Levi and had the greatest conflict with him.

Una had even hit Levi with money previously!

It was an act of impiety!

What have I done?

I've been humiliating the God of War all this time?

Una immediately burst into tears.

She had single-handedly ruined the Gonzales family!

Up on stage, Levi held the Decree of Appointment and announced, "I hereby appoint Percy Covington as the commander-in-chief of the North Hampton Warzone!"

Percy accepted the Decree of Appointment while the attendees clapped.

It was the most glorious moment of his life!

I thought I had left the Iron Brigade, but I didn't expect that I would be personally appointed by the person I respect the most!

Levi didn't get down from the stage immediately. Instead, he scanned through the audience and said with a smile, "I'm going to use this opportunity to say a few words to some of you."

Boom!

The attendees were stunned by Levi's words, especially Winston and his group.

Their expressions had changed drastically.

They realized that something bad was about to happen soon.

Sh*t!

The Protector Chapter 362

Percy and the higher-ups of the North Hampton Warzone looked at Levi with curious eyes.

They knew nothing of the upheavals of the North Hampton.

But Xander, Grover, and a few others already knew that something was up.

They broke into cold sweat.

"Winston is here, right?" Levi asked suddenly.

Boom!

Winston was about to have a heart attack at that moment.

He coughed out another mouthful of blood!

“Is Winston here?” Levi increased his volume into a thunderous roar.

Everyone in the room felt the powerful aura Levi exuded.

“H-here... I’m here...”

Winston almost fell on his knees out of fear.

“How did you treat me when I saved your life the other day?”

Thud!

Both Winston and Una fell onto their knees.

“How dare you repay my kindness with enmity? Your granddaughter threw money at me to humiliate me. She kept provoking me and even tried to kill me!”

The attendees were shell-shocked upon hearing what Levi had said.

The leaders of North Hampton looked at the Gonzales family in disbelief.

Where did they find the courage to do that?

They actually tried to kill the God of War?

Who on earth could bear with that?

It seems like even Xander Hoyles would have to destroy them!

“Will the Gonzales family retreat on your own, or do you need me to use my powers to make you disappear?” Levi asked coldly.

Levi said the words as though he was on a trial.

Crap!

We’re really doomed!

North Hampton would never have stories about Winston the billionaire anymore!

“There’s also a personal grudge with the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce. Six years ago when my business start-up became successful, you coveted my skills and techniques. So you purposely set me up. You crippled me and sent me to jail. You coveted what I had so you took everything away from me!”

“What kind of punishment do you think you deserve?” asked Levi.

Thud!

Eric Robinson and the others fell on their knees one after another.

At this very moment, they finally knew why Levi didn’t go against them right away.

He wanted to slowly replace North Hampton with Morris Group!

“You’re all the same as the Gonzales family!”

Levi looked at Jesse, “Nielson, arrest all those who are in the wrong!”

Boom!

Eric and the others paled and they started to break into cold sweat.

They had done many things that violated the regulations in the years of expanding their business to its current state.

It was enough to get them all locked up!

Not to mention that there was solid evidence of them making a move against Levi Group. They couldn't escape from evidence.

The group of people quickly looked towards Xander and Grover, hoping that they could save the day.

However, both of them lowered their heads.

They could at least have a say if it was the North Hampton.

But this is the freaking God of War!

He could stand his ground simply based on his strength and the law!

Grover quickly said, "The North Hampton Chamber of Commerce is problematic!"

Jesse nodded as he said, "God of War, I'll definitely get it done!"

"Alright, dismissed!"

No one had expected the Appointment Ceremony of the new commander-in-chief to end in this way.

The world of North Hampton had changed after an hour.

The most powerful North Hampton Chamber of Commerce and the Gonzales family are ruined!

After they left the hall, Levi changed into casual clothes while Percy followed by his side.

The duo found Zoey and her group.

“Today has really been an eye opener!”

Aaron was in a great mood after a tour around the military camp. All the sorrow he felt earlier was gone.

“Mom, Dad, let me introduce you to my friend. This is Percy Covington. It’s all because of him that I’m able to get here today.” Levi said as he introduced Percy to the elderly.

Aaron shook Percy’s hands excitedly.

They were shocked.

Levi has friends like this too?

“May I know what your position is, Covington?” asked Aaron curiously.

The Protector Chapter 363

“I’m just a lowly commander. It’s not worth mentioning,” said Percy with a smile.

Caitlyn nudged Aaron and said, “That’s classified information! Why are you asking that?”

“Haha. That was rude of me!”

Aaron laughed.

The few of them enjoyed their dinner together afterward.

Aaron still had questions on the way out, “I think a new commander-in-chief was appointed today!”

“That’s right!”

“Well, we don’t need to think about people like him. But you did really well today, Levi. We’re really happy for you!”

Aaron grinned as he spoke.

“Let us have good fortune and happy events happening one after another after today!”

Levi smiled at that.

Zoey was swiping through her phone as they spoke. Suddenly, an alarmed look appeared on her face and she almost dropped her phone onto the floor.

“What’s wrong, sweetie?”

Everyone looked at her curiously.

“Something big happened! North Hampton is crumbling!”

Zoey took a deep breath.

“Winston Gonzales and all from the Gonzales family opted to quit Gonzales Group! North Hampton Chamber of Commerce announcing dissolution! Eric Robinson of the four noble families from the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce and dozens of higherups have been arrested due to commercial crimes!”

.....

The eye-catching headlines were shown on the phone.

Zoey, Aaron, and the others were about to go insane.

This was definitely the biggest news of North Hampton!

Both the Gonzales family and the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce had crumbled at the same time.

This is unbelievable!

Zoey’s puzzled eyes landed on Levi. There was something mysterious about this man.

Can he predict the future?

He even told me that the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce and the Gonzales family were doomed!

It came true in a blink of an eye!

“Levi, is there anything that you know of?” asked Aaron.

“I heard from Percy that the God of War got back at them at the Appointment Ceremony earlier.”

Levi smiled.

“Oh, I see! They offended the God of War. I told you so. No one else in North Hampton would be able to destroy them!”

Aaron felt a sense of relief.

The news of North Hampton’s powerful figures crumbling had quickly spread all over Quebec.

Two mighty mountains had collapsed in an instant.

This meant that the North Hampton market was currently vacant. Anyone would want a share of the pie.

In just a blink of an eye, South City and multiple other places were preying on that pie.

In the meantime, Morris Group, which had received orders from their boss, expanded their business and took up the market share.

North Hampton was too big. It wasn’t possible for them to take over it completely in a short period of time.

In any case, Levi’s plan was simple. It was to quickly restore North Hampton’s order without shaking up its economy.

Rogers Group had also gotten the order from Levi and had joined in as well.

All of a sudden, Rogers Group became the richest aristocratic family in North Hampton.

Glenn had never expected all these to happen.

Levi did it out of respect for Abigail. It was also because he wanted to stabilize North Hampton as soon as possible.

“Zoey, do you still remember what I said previously? I’m going to help you rise to the top again. Just you wait!” Levi said with a smile.

Zoey was actually looking forward to it when she saw how mysterious Levi was acting.

The Lopez family was also really excited at this particular moment.

They had earned so much money and properties recently. Now that the North Hampton market was empty...their opportunity was finally here!

As long as the Lopez family worked hard, having a corporate with a hundred million of net worth wouldn't be a dream anymore.

“As expected, once we chased Aaron out of the family, our luck has been good!” Henry said while laughing.

Harry looked up to the sky and cried out, “God bless the Lopez family!”

“We’re in big trouble! Something bad has happened!”

The Protector Chapter 364

Shaun and Melanie Lopez shouted.

“What are you up to? Why are the both of you so frantic? Didn’t I tell you to move the company?” said Harry as he frowned, obviously displeased.

After he took over Zoey’s company, the first thing he did was to move his company to Union Square.

After all, Union Square was at the center of the city.

It feels good to have a company building in the middle of the city.

“Grandpa, the company has been moved. But there’s some other stuff...”

“Grandpa, we don’t know what happened but... Just this morning, large numbers of the Company’s workers resigned. What’s more, it was none other than the executives who led them to resign! It’s a huge loss to the company!”

Shaun panted.

Melanie’s face was extremely sullen.

“What? Did all these really happen?”

Harry and the others’ expressions changed.

It wouldn’t matter much if it were only low-ranking workers who left.

But it would be a huge problem if the executives left.

Melanie's phone rang.

"What? Seven more executives left?"

Melanie was stunned.

Henry's phone rang too.

"What? The construction team of the West City Ecological Park Project canceled the contract and all of the workers left? Even the security and the guard dog left?"

Henry's eyeballs were about to pop out upon hearing the news.

The West City Ecological Park Project had become a complete mess.

Shaun received a text message. He was immediately left dumbfounded after he read the text.

"What? The company is insolvent? The funds have long been used up in the development and now the company doesn't have any cash flow?"

Shaun was about to have a breakdown soon.

The person in charge of the project from Morris Group called Harry right at this moment.

"Hello Mr. Lopez, why is the project we're collaborating with Imperial Meadows Limited halted?" Morris Group asked.

"Uh... Due to some recent internal affairs of the company, there has been a delay in the progress. It'll be back to normal soon!" Harry said and smiled awkwardly.

Morris Group was like the God of Wealth to the Lopez family now.

“Mr. Lopez, please take a good look at the contract. There’s still two days’ time. If the project invested can’t resume, you’ll have to compensate us due to breach of contract! According to the contract, you’ll have to pay one billion if that happens.”

Harry almost peed himself upon hearing what the person in charge from Morris Group had said.

Harry was trembling when the call ended.

“What’s happened? Have the collaboration projects with Morris Group been halted?” asked Harry.

Fabian quickly went to check.

Fabian was sweating buckets when he was done checking.

“Father, the collaboration project with Morris Group is just too big! If we want to continue, we’ll have to dump in more money!” said Fabian.

“What happened? Didn’t Zoey’s company get a big investment fund? How did this happen?”

Harry was about to vomit blood.

“The treasury department of Zoey’s company is currently empty. Not only have the funds been cut off, it seems like the company is also in debt...”

What Shaun said made the Lopez family tremble in fear.

“Huh? That’s not possible! Zoey’s company had been growing so well! Her company even moved to the Union Square!”

“That’s right! The company’s market value of almost a billion isn’t fake!”

The faces of Harry's and the rest were full of disbelief.

"I understand now! It's all an illusion made by Zoey! She deliberately made a good financial report and crafted a perfect company image just to attract investments and collaborations!"

"Yes! There have been quite a few companies looking to invest and collaborate with us. It must be because they were attracted by the financial report made by Zoey!" analyzed Fabian.

The Protector Chapter 365

"God damn it! I thought we actually had a billion in our hands. But who knew all we got is this mess?" said Harry furiously.

In the meantime, a car stopped in front of the Lopez family's residence.

There were a few men and women in suits.

"Which one of you is Mr. Harry Lopez?"

"That's me. And you are?"

Harry had an unsettling feeling.

"Hi, we are the person in charge of Union Square. We're here to inform you that the lease contract of the company is a temporary contract. This is the official contract. Naturally, the prices will be revised accordingly.

It will be revised from the previous ten million every five years to a hundred million every five years. Please pay as soon as possible or you will be ordered to excavate within three days!" One of the persons in charge from Union Square said coldly.

Boom!

A wave of shock washed over Harry and he almost lost his balance.

Shaun took the new contract with trembling hands and read through it.

The more he read, the darker his face got.

The Lopez family was at the verge of going mad.

Isn't this just too unlucky?

Zoey's lease was only ten million, yet it became a hundred million for them.

"Hurry up and settle this!"

With that, those from the Union Square left.

But this was only the beginning.

Someone came again.

"Hello, I'm Hailey, the general manager of the North Hampton Bank. Imperial Meadows Limited had previously loaned eighty million from us.

Now the total amount is a hundred and ten million including interest. Lopez Group will have to settle everything within seven days! Otherwise, you'll have to go through judicial processes!" said Hailey relentlessly.

Thud!

Harry was shocked and fell onto the ground.

We owe the bank more than a hundred million?

Is Zoey crazy?

More importantly, the Lopez family has to clean up this mess!

Hailey left soon after.

But someone else came again.

They were a dozen other companies who came at once.

“Hi, Mr. Harry Lopez. I’m from Harper Investment. I’m here to collect your debt of twenty million!”

“Hi Mr. Harry Lopez, I’m from Allison Corporation. I’m here to collect your debt of fifteen million!”

“Hi Mr. Harry Lopez, I’m from Hilton Group. I’m here to collect your debt of thirty million!”

.....

Thirteen companies, all without exception, were here to recover the debts.

Together with Union Square and the bank, the Lopez family had a debt amounting to a total of four hundred and eighty million!

Everyone from the Lopez family was about to faint.

They didn't gain a single cent, yet they have to settle a debt of approximately five hundred million now?

Pfft!

Everyone was about to cough up blood soon.

"Hang on. Zoey's Imperial Meadows Limited is the one that owes you the money. It's none of Lopez Group's business!" Shaun immediately tried to justify themselves.

"Hmmp! Why are you still trying to come up with excuses? Lopez Group officially bought over Imperial Meadows Limited. So naturally, the debt of Imperial Meadows Limited will have to be settled by you!"

"That's right. What does this have to do with Ms. Lopez?"

"Hurry up and pay us back! Or you'll have to go through the judicial process. Everyone from the Lopez family will have to go to jail by then!"

The representatives from all thirteen companies were tough. They didn't even give the Lopez family a chance to breathe.

"Seven days! We'll only give you seven days!"

When all representatives from the thirteen companies left, everyone in the Lopez family were deathly silent.

Everyone was soaked in cold sweat and was breathing heavily.

Tap...tap...tap...

Suddenly, footsteps could be heard from the outside.

A group of workers wearing safety helmets rushed into the Lopez family's residence.

They were contractors from Imperial Meadows Limited. It was payday.

When the workers heard that the company was in a crisis, they had rushed to the Lopez family to get their pay.

“Harry Lopez! Pay us immediately!”

“Right! Quickly pay us, or you won't be able to handle the consequences!”

The Protector Chapter 366

A hundred men or more had the Lopez family completely surrounded.

They made a big ruckus out of it.

The Lopez family were completely stunned.

Did a bunch of workers come out to protest?

Previously Zoey had arranged for the contractors to be paid at the end of the month and it just so happened that today was the payday.

The Lopez family might have to foot the bill in her stead.

“Zoey is the one who had your money! Find her if you must but it has nothing to do with us!” yelled Shaun angrily.

“What nonsense is this? Shouldn’t it be the opposite? Ms. Lopez has nothing to do with the company anymore!”

“That’s right! Ms. Lopez has already been disowned by the Lopez Group. How could she be a part of this?”

“We won’t leave until we receive what we were owed!”

The workers were starting to be unreasonable.

“You are trespassing on private property. Get out of my sight or I’ll have the cops arrest you!” warned Shaun.

“Even better. I’ll have them know that our wages are due!”

The contractors did not seem to mind at all.

“Fine, I’ll do just that!”

Shaun believed that the contractors were only putting on a facade.

“Wait! Don’t be rash and think this through. Should you get the police involved, things might just blow out of proportion. Wouldn’t it be bad if the media finds out about this?” said Fabian as he attempted to stop Shaun.

Shaun came to his senses immediately.

Indeed. If such a scandal were to reach the ears of the media, the Lopez Group would be in deep trouble.

“Then what should we do?” asked Shaun.

“Settle it!” said Fabian unambiguously.

“But uncle...”

Shaun was unwilling to give these people money, especially not on behalf of Zoey.

“My word is final,” responded Fabian coldly.

Shaun, Melanie and the CFO of the company wasted no time in auditing the accounts.

There were a total of seven contractors, they would have to fork out at least 5.7 million this month.

It wasn't until both parties had agreed to settle things cordially that the contractors finally left with their workers.

The Lopez family could finally take a breather.

More than five million gone in the blink of an eye.

Oh, how much it hurt!

The main thing was that this wasn't a business investment, so they wouldn't be able to get a single cent out of it.

The Lopez family slumped helplessly on the floor, drenched in cold sweat ever since this morning.

This was the biggest predicament they have ever faced.

A debt of five hundred million!

Even if they had Harry sold, would they even be able to pay off this debt?

How did things turn out this way?

They just couldn't fathom what happened.

"How did this happen? Are you guys stupid? Why did you investigate Zoey's company beforehand?" yelled Harry.

"Well...The Imperial Meadows appeared to be doing great. They had a few billions of highly liquid assets and some big-name investors backing them up. There was no doubt that the company had a bright future ahead," whimpered Shaun.

"How would you explain this then?" asked Harry.

Everyone had their heads lowered, no one seemed to have an apparent answer to that question.

They did not expect this to happen at all!

"So what are we going to do now?" Harry shouted.

"I knew it, this is the doing of Zoey! Ten billion in exchange for Levi's life, it isn't that hard of a choice for her to make, is it?"

"That's right, knowing how despicable this little harlot is, she would definitely have made that choice! In order to climb the ranks of society, she was even willing to sleep with countless older men!"

"If she were given the choice between Levi and five million, she would have undoubtedly chosen the latter. Not to mention this is ten billion that we are talking about right now. It is definitely intentional!"

As Shaun and Melanie were busy badmouthing Zoey, Harry's eyes gleamed and appeared to be in dismay.

“Are you saying that Zoey was searching for a scapegoat as she could no longer keep up with the operations of the company, and we just so happened to be there?”

“That is certainly the case! A wicked woman like her would be all too glad to witness our downfall!”

The Protector Chapter 367

“I swear I’m going to kill this harlot!”

“Pfft!”

Harry was seething with anger.

“Zoey you little b*tch! You tricked me?”

At this moment, the Lopez family were all sold with the idea that Zoey was having them clean up her mess.

But she had no idea at all.

When she was at the helm of Imperial Meadows, things were doing well. The business was growing and the company had sufficient capital.

Little did they know that Levi was actually the one behind it.

Within the span of a night, he had changed the fate of Imperial Meadows for the worse.

“Grandpa, I think it would only be reasonable for Zoey to return and clean up her own mess!” suggested Henry.

“Yes, we should do just that! We’ll let her solve her own problems!” responded the crowd angrily as they agreed to Henry’s proposition.

Zoey was currently at the Morris Group.

Even though she had lost her company, her abilities were . She planned to put her skills to good use at the Morris Group.

However she was stopped by Levi.

Levi had plans for her to start her own company.

Zoey was sulking at Levi for not letting her to do what she wanted.

At that very moment, she received a call from Harry.

“Zoey you goddamn harlot! How dare you trick me! Don’t you dare tell anyone that you are related to Lopez family!”

Just as the call was connected, Harry was blasting at Zoey with full force.

“What happened, grandpa?”

Zoey seemed to be puzzled.

“What happened you say? Imperial Meadows of yours a debt of four billion! Your company’s senior management have collectively resigned. This is such a huge matter, don’t you dare pretend that you don’t know about that!”

“Huh? How did it end up like this? I don’t have the tiniest inkling about that!”

Zoey was stunned, that wasn't surprising as she did not know what had unfolded behind the scenes.

"You are driving me crazy!"

Harry was on the verge of exploding in rage as he thought that Zoey was feigning ignorance at such a point in time.

"There were times where I had restless nights, feeling guilty for exiling you from our family. Who would have thought that you were actually plotting against us the whole time. A pox on my pity!" yelled Harry from the other side of the phone.

"Grandpa, what are you talking about? I really don't know anything about that."

Her company was doing well, how could it incur such a huge amount of debt?

Impossible!

"Zoey you little harlot, how dare you play me for a fool! If only I could slap the hell out of you!"

Harry was boiling with rage.

"Also stop calling me your grandpa, I don't have a vile granddaughter like you!"

Zoey was in a bind, she did not know what to do.

"However I'll give you a chance to redeem yourself! Reinstate yourself as the director of Imperial Meadows and clean up your own mess. I'll welcome you and your family back if you do so!"

Harry was employing the stick and carrot method.

He knew Zoey's and Aaron's personality like the back of his hand. They perceived the honor of the family being more important than their own lives.

When they had their names removed from the family registry, Aaron cried in agony.

To them, there are things that worth more than their own lives.

Harry firmly believed that if he were to mention the reinstating them back into the family, they would immediately seize the opportunity.

“As long as you agree to return and solve your company's issues, I'll have your family reinstated right now. I'll even promise that I won't interfere with your company's affairs from now on!”

“Grandpa might have overreacted for a bit, but I hope you will understand my circumstances as your company is currently in deep trouble.”

Harry had gone to great lengths to manipulate his granddaughter.

And indeed, Zoey was moved by his words.

Not only would she be able to get her company back, but she would also be reinstated to the Lopez family.

That would be killing two birds with one stone!

Zoey bit her lips, she couldn't resist agreeing on such a good deal.

The Protector Chapter 368

“Zoey should you agree to it you may now come to the Lopez family residence and I’ll personally reinstate your family!”

Harry had foreseen that it wouldn’t take long for her to agree, she just needed a little push.

“Grandpa, I...”

Just as Zoey was about to agree on it, Levi snatched her phone away from her hands.

“Who the hell are you? It would be best for you to stop harassing my wife or I’ll beat you up!” said Levi angrily.

“Levi, it’s me! Did you not recognize your grandpa?”

Harry was furious but he had no choice other than to hold it in.

“Grandpa? Never heard of him. Now scram!” shouted Levi before he hung up the phone.

He even blocked all the contacts of the Lopez family.

Harry tried to call her again, but to no avail.

The others tried but they had the same result.

“Zoey has blocked us all!”

“It was Levi! That man had berated me!” said Harry.

His complexion was eerily pale.

“What is the meaning of this, Levi? Why did you scold grandpa?” asked Zoey.

There was a tinge of discontent in her tone.

“What did I just tell you that day? Are you going to just let them walk all over you?” said Levi angrily.

Zoey bit her lips, before stuttering for a bit. “But...It seems that the company...”

“Is that even your company in the first place? What does it have to do with you now? Or are you a member of the Lopez family? If my memory serves me right you have already been exiled from the Lopez family!”

“But grandpa said that he will reinstate us...”

“Are you really that dumb? He only agreed to reinstate you back to the family because he wanted you to clean up his mess. After you are done, he’ll get rid of you without hesitation!

Zoey bit her lips a little harder this time. It took her a while before she came back to her senses.

“Fine, I’ll go along with what you had in mind,” responded Zoey.

Levi immediately ordered Aaron and Caitlyn to block the contacts of the Lopez family.

Not only that, but Levi had also even arranged a holiday trip for Caitlyn and Aaron.

It won't be so easy for you Harry!

"People will only take advantage of your kindness. You need to know that the Lopez family has nothing to do with you right now." ranted Levi as he shook his head.

When will Zoey realize she's too kind for her own good?

Or else she would be bullied by the Lopez family for the rest of her life!

The Lopez family was in a state of panic as they couldn't contact Zoey or her family at all.

"Grandpa, no matter where I looked I just couldn't find Zoey's whereabouts. Not to mention Caitlyn and Aaron are on a vacation to god knows where. It would take them at least ten days to come back!" said Shaun who was panting heavily.

"The heavens want us dead!"

Harry was on the verge of tears.

"Curse that bastard Levi! Zoey was about to agree to it!"

"Why am I not at all surprised that Levi was backing Aaron and his family?"

"I really want Levi dead!"

Just when the Lopez family was about to descend into madness, a few cars came to the family residence.

"Allow us to make a brief introduction. We are the co-developers for West City Ecological Park. What happened to the construction of Ecological Park? I've heard that the construction workers and even the security guards had all left.

What is the meaning of this? Did you intend to run away with our money?” asked one of the co-developers.

Their pressure was overwhelming, there were at least twenty brawny brutes behind them.

“Huh? No, that has nothing to do with us!”

Shaun could feel his sanity slipping away.

“What do you mean it has nothing to do with you? The contract says that the Lopez Group is now fully in charge of the West City Ecological Park!”

That rendered Shaun speechless.

The Protector Chapter 369

“With the project coming to a halt, the construction workers gone and your company facing cash flow issues, we would like to terminate the contract. Of course, it goes without saying that you will have to pay us back the amount that we have invested!”

“We have already appointed our lawyers, why don’t you have a nice long talk with them?”

It seems that the co-developers had already made their preparations.

“Why would you involve the lawyer at such an early stage? Did we say that we disagree to it?”

Shaun was about to lose himself.

“Thump!”

A brute had stepped forward and threw a punch at Shaun’s nose, causing blood to spew everywhere.

“How dare you hit me!” said Shaun angrily.

“Just you wait, I’ll call the cops!”

The brute gave Shaun a cold sneer before saying, “Call the cops if you wish, but I’m just a passerby. I just couldn’t bear to look at you.”

“You...”

Needless to say the Lopez family was enraged by this, but there was nothing that they could do.

A phone call cut the tension that was starting to build up.

It was Mr. Jennings from the Ministry of Construction. “Mr. Lopez what’s the matter? What in the world happened to the West City Ecological Park? If I were you I would refund the money to the co-developers, or else there would be a hell of a price to pay!”

It was an order from the Ministry of Construction.

“Shaun, give the money back to them!” said Harry as he did not dare to defy orders.

“Alright, grandpa!”

They had no choice but to give them their refund.

Fortunately, the payable amount was slightly lower than the previous one, totaling up to 12 million.

Just today they had already given out at least 20 million and this wasn't even a major part of the debt.

If this goes on, the Lopez family would inevitably fall.

They thought they could rise higher by forcefully acquiring the company, but who would have thought that things would end in tragedy.

Tears were flowing out of the rim of Harry's eyes.

Greed!

Greed was the main cause of their downfall!

Or else why would this even happen in the first place?

Harry started to sob.

The others followed him soon after.

If this goes on, not only would their future be ruined, but they might also even end up in jail.

It was at this moment Henry ran in with long strides while panting heavily. "Dad, I've found out where Zoey and Levi are! They are at Morris Group!"

"Great, we'll meet them at once! Zoey is our last hope!"

Harry brought along the other members of Lopez family as they headed towards Morris Group.

As Zoey and Levi looked out of the window of their office, they could see a bunch of unexpected visitors right at the gate.

“Why are they here?” asked Zoey puzzledly.

“Of course it is to make you the scapegoat! Why else would they be here? The burden of the failing Imperial Meadows could only be thrown to you!” explained Levi as he let out a few laughs.

It wasn't until now they Zoey understood the situation of the Lopez family. “Why did all sorts of problems occur once I had left the Imperial Meadows? It is as if someone is behind this!”

“You know you are not as slow-witted as you have led me to believe! Yes, I was the one behind this.” answered Levi as he laughed.

Levi seemed to be having a little too much fun.

“You? That's impossible! If you were capable of this you wouldn't be spending all day sipping tea over here!” said Zoey as she shook her head in exasperation.

Meanwhile, Harry was leading his family hurriedly towards the Morris Group's front building. As they attempted to trespass, they were met with several shouts.

“Hold it, hold it! Do you think you own this place? Coming in as you please?” yelled the security guards as they attempted to block the trespassers.

“Mate, I'm here to see Zoey” said Harry as he gave out a few fake laughs.

“Zoey? Have you mistaken? There's no one with that name over here! What are you all here for?” yelled the captain of the security angrily.

“Oh no, we are actually looking for Levi. Could you please tell him that we are here?” said Harry as he rephrased his words.

He even slipped in an envelope to the security guard, it was full of cash.

“Did you say Levi? I’ll help you ask.”

Levi and Seth had a close relationship, and so he was able to dial his number directly.

“Mr. Garrison, there is someone looking for you!”

“Tell him that I’m busy!”

The Protector Chapter 370

As Seth had his phone on speaker mode, Harry and his family members could hear it clearly.

What? He is not going to meet us?

“Hey Levi, it’s me! Your grandpa!” said Harry immediately.

“Who the hell do you think you are? Why don’t you call me grandpa instead!”

And with that, Levi hung up immediately.

“This...”

The Lopez family were dumbfounded.

It was a force of habit that these words had slipped from his mouth.

Seth stared at Harry and the people behind him before saying, "You all are not here to seek for trouble, are you? I can't believe you just called yourself Mr. Garrison's grandfather."

The other guards were also staring at them.

While Levy was given the cold shoulder by Iris and the upper management inside the company, he could get along well with the security guards and also the janitors.

They were always seen hanging around smoking or chatting during tea breaks.

So naturally, Levi had a good reputation among them.

To be hearing someone calling himself as Levi's grandfather, the security guards immediately turned hostile.

"That's right! They don't look like people with good intentions!"

The other guards also chimed in.

Shaun was in a bad mood before arriving here, and to be picked on by the security guards, he could no longer hold it in. "Did you mistake yourself for someone important? You are just some lowly guards! Now scram!"

"That's right, who the hell do you think you are! It would be in your best interest to summon Levi right now or I'll see to it that you lose your jobs!" said Henry.

After all, the Lopez family had a net worth of around ten billion.

How could they stomach the humiliation of being ridiculed by security guards?

Anger stirred within Seth when those words reached his ears.

“These thugs are trying to mess around, throw them out!”

Seth had given the order.

A number of guards gladly obeyed the orders of their captain and threw them out of the compound.

Shaun had been beaten up once before, and now again.

Harry was exasperated. He had never experienced something like this in his entire life.

“Slap! Slap! Slap!”

The slaps landed perfectly on the face of Shaun and Henry.

“What did you come here for? We came to ask for a favor! Not to act like a gangster!”

Harry was so close to losing it.

He went forward and filled the captain’s pocket with a lot of cash.

Seth happily accepted it.

He gave Levi a call once again.

“Tell them that if they wanted to meet me, it would only be right for them to show some sincerity by prostrating themselves on the ground,” said Levi from the other side of the phone.

“Did you hear that? If you really wanted to ask Mr. Garrison for a favor, then prostrate on the ground right now!”

“Levi you piece of shit!”

Just when Shaun and Harry were about to burst from rage, their father stopped them.

“What are you doing? Have you not come back to your senses yet? On your knees!”

Under the instruction of the head of the household, Fabian, Shaun, Harry and the rest all knelt before the building.

How humiliating!

Words can't describe such humiliation!

To think that there would be a day where they would have to kneel before Levi.

The passers-by were amused by such a scene and some even took pictures of them.

This made the Lopez family feel even more humiliated!

Their pride and honor were being trampled on publicly.

Each and every one of them swore to take vengeance on Levi.

They would give it back to him tenfold!

Harry felt humiliated despite not being the one kneeling down.

The Lopez family's honor was tarnished.

But in order to meet Zoey, he could only endure the pain.

Zoey and Levi were watching from the window of their office, they had the best front-row seat all to themselves.

Looking upon the scene of her arrogant uncles kneeling before her, Zoey found it especially entertaining.

But she also felt bad for them.

“Levi, don’t you think that we have gone too far? They might not be able to recover from this mental anguish after all!”

The Protector Chapter 371

Zoey was just too kind for her own good.

“Are you actually feeling sorry for them? Don’t you know what the Lopez family meant by kicking you out of the family? They wanted you out of their sight!” Levi chided.

Zoey slowly nodded.

That was not false...

“Hey, Seth? Why is he still standing? Tell him to kneel!”

Levi was visibly annoyed while Zoey began to panic.

“W-what are you doing? He’s my Grandpa! How can you tell him to do that?”

Zoey's breaths quickened as her heart was gripped by horror.

"He has never thought of you as a granddaughter, has he? Don't get yourself involved. Leave it to me!"

There was a tone of finality in Levi's voice.

Meanwhile, on the plaza, Seth approached Harry slowly.

"Can they see me?" Harry asked.

"Of course! Why aren't you kneeling? Get down now!" Seth demanded.

"Me?"

Harry shot him a look of confusion.

He had not expected to be forced to kneel as well.

He had thought that getting Fabian to kneel before Zoey was already sincere enough.

Why are they after me now? He thought.

Are the two of them crazy?

Do they even care about their seniors?

Such unfilial children!

"Hey! Did you hear me? Stop acting like you're so special! You're here to plead someone to do your bidding, for goodness' sake!"

Seth was visibly enraged.

Harry began to tremble uncontrollably. "A-are you telling us to get on our knees?"

"Obviously! Kneel now or scram!"

Seth glared at Harry impatiently.

Crash!

As the Lopez family looked on in horror, Harry fell to his knees in front of Seth.

The pride of the Lopez family fell with him.

What a shame!

Levi Garrison! We're going to kill you!

That was the thought coursing through every Lopez family member's minds.

Even Harry felt utterly humiliated when he knelt in front of Seth.

He had admitted defeat to Levi Garrison!

Harry could feel his self-confidence crumbling into the ground when he noticed the passersby's curious looks.

He wished he could bang his head against a wall and kill himself.

However, he had to stay strong for the sake of the Lopez family.

Zoey, who had been sitting in her office, was shocked by the sight before her.

Harry Lopez was on his knees!

She began to feel guilty but could not help but look at Levi curiously.

This man seems different after coming out of jail... She thought.

He had become a literal fortune teller.

He had predicted the fall of the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce and the Gonzales family.

He had speculated Harry Lopez to show up, kneel before them, and plead for their help.

...

Is he God?

Is he a prophet?

She started to wonder if the whole thing had been orchestrated by Levi and the entire Lopez family.

However, that seemed almost impossible.

“What are we going to do now?” Zoey asked.

“Leave them there.”

By the end of the workday, Harry and company had been kneeling outside the office for a good three hours.

Levi told Zoey to get in Iris' car and leave the scene.

Meanwhile, he waltzed out of the entrance to the office.

Everyone in the Lopez family grinned from ear to ear when they saw him.

Their last lifeline had arrived!

Levi headed straight for Harry and smiled at him. “Well, old man, you’re an obedient one, aren’t you?”

“Weren’t you and Zoey the ones who told us to kneel here? Where is she? Has she agreed to our requests?” Harry hurriedly asked.

“That’s right! We’re still waiting for her to come back and deal with the situation!”

The others began to panic as well.

Levi simply smiled. “I’m sorry, but I think you’ve misunderstood us. This has nothing to do with Zoey.”

The Protector Chapter 372

“What? Are you saying she doesn’t know a thing about this?”

Harry was dumbfounded.

“That’s right. What requests did you have, by the way?” Levi asked.

The entire Lopez family froze for a moment.

Indeed, they had been kneeling for three hours without mentioning their requests.

“Are you messing with us right now?”

Harry glared at Levi, disbelief evident in his eyes.

The members of the Lopez family felt as though they could go crazy any moment.

“What? No, of course not! It’s not like you told me anything before you kneeled!” Levi sneered.

The Lopez family looked like they were about to burst into tears at any moment.

“Alright then. If there’s nothing else, I shall take my leave,” Levi declared, before turning around to walk away.

“Wait! Where’s Zoey!” Shaun yelled after him, rushing forward to stop him.

“Why should I tell you? Go away!”

“I’m not letting you leave until you spit it out!” Shaun yelled.

“Get out! Are you tired of living?”

Seth and his army of security guards soon rushed to the scene.

Within seconds, Shaun and his subordinates were lying face-down on the floor with their hands behind their backs.

That was the third beating he had received that day.

The Lopez family could only watch in despair as Levi left the scene.

The people of Morris Group had been overworked recently, the lights in their office staying on even in the wee hours of the morning.

That was because the market was no longer saturated after the collapse of the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce and the Gonzales family.

Morris Group needed to expand as quickly as possible to snatch the newly-available market shares.

Recently, companies from South City and Quebec have flocked to North Hampton in an attempt to get a slice of the cake.

At that moment, Levi received a call from Aidan Wright, his former subordinate.

“Mr. Garrison, I’ve just come across a promising company that might be of interest to Ms. Lopez.”

“Tell me about it,” Levi said.

“It’s the Oriental Star. Its biggest shareholder used to be the Gonzales family, and it has several different projects under its management, including its recent ventures into the entertainment industry. The collapse of the Gonzales family has left it with close to no sponsors. They’ll be auctioning off the company tomorrow at the suburb resorts. Do you need me to buy it over?” Aidan asked.

“No need. I’ll go there myself,” Levi answered, smiling.

He wanted to take Zoey on a vacation to escape from her unreasonable family members anyway.

Zoey was still fretting over the matter when she got home.

“Pack your things!” Levi exclaimed suddenly.

“What? Why?” Zoey asked, widening her eyes in surprise.

“We’re going on a vacation!”

“Why are we going now?” Zoey questioned doubtfully.

She was worried about her job, her future and her family.

Going on vacation was the last thing on her mind.

Even so, Levi insisted on taking her along to the Clear Sky Resort, where the auction would take place.

She was still in the dark about his true intentions.

By the time they arrived at the resort, it was already late at night.

Even so, the parking space outside the resort was packed with luxury cars, making even Zoey’s Audi RS7 look cheap.

“Wow! Isn’t that Cloudscape’s chairperson? Why is he here too?”

“That’s Fortune Source’s CEO...”

Zoey looked excited to see so many tycoons gathered in one place.

At the same time, she could not help but wonder why they were all there.

She finally got the answers to her questions after the registration.

Oriental Star Group was going to hold an auction at that venue the next day.

Those tycoons were there to compete for its ownership.

“Looks like I’ve underestimated the number of conglomerates that fell with the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce and the Gonzales family!” Zoey sighed.

The Protector Chapter 373

“What do you think of the Oriental Star Group?” Levi asked.

“It’s an extraordinary corporation! I’m just amazed at how they managed to break into both the property and the entertainment industry. Look at how well their artistes were doing!” Zoey exclaimed happily.

Levi stroked her head lightly. “Alright then, it will belong to you tomorrow!”

“Hahaha!” Zoey laughed loudly.

“Stop joking! It’ll cost you at least two billion to even stand a chance!”

Levi had indeed promised to help her rise to the top, but buying the entire Oriental Star would be impossible.

She figured he was just trying to comfort her.

“Let’s just treat the auction as a learning opportunity, shall we?” She smiled.

Just as the two of them were about to take the lift to their hotel room, a voice rang from behind them. “Are you Zoey?”

They turned around to see a young man dressed impeccably in a suit. Despite looking like he was in his thirties, he gave off the aura of a business veteran.

“Hm? Terence Gibson?”

Zoey recognized him immediately.

He was the son of one of Aaron’s classmates.

Aaron’s classmate had once tried to matchmake Terence with Zoey, but she had rejected him outright.

“It’s really you! I thought I might have gotten the wrong person.”

Terence smiled and glanced at Levi scornfully.

“Are you working here, Terence?” Zoey asked.

Terence stood upright and put on a proud expression. “That’s right! I’m the general manager of the Clear Sky Resort. Here’s my name card.”

He proceeded to hand over a copy of his name card to both Zoey and Levi.

“Wow, Terence! You seem to be doing great!” Zoey said politely.

“A few million a year, perhaps? I can’t compare with you,” Terence said arrogantly.

“Oh, that reminds me. I heard your company has been taken over by the Lopez family a few days ago, and that your name has been crossed out from the genealogy book. My sincere condolences!”

He glanced at Levi once again and continued, “Besides, your husband is pretty useless this whole time. Didn’t he just come out of prison?”

Seeing that both of them were silent, Terence continued his speech, “Bro, aren’t you embarrassed that you’re living off a woman’s salary? Just divorce her already. You’re dragging her down!”

“What makes you think you’re a better husband than me?” Levi retorted.

Perfect! Terence thought.

It looks like he knows he doesn’t deserve her...

Terence’s gaze was deep as he looked at Zoey with starry eyes. “Zoey, I’m thirty-two this year but I’m still single. I’ve been waiting for you this whole time! If you’re willing to marry me, I can take you back to one of my mansions immediately. I have all the money you will ever need, and a Porsche at home!”

Zoey felt her cheeks heat up in embarrassment.

In Terence’s eyes, her flushed cheeks were a sign that she was moved by his show of wealth. He began to fantasize about their future adventures in bed.

“You can take over Clear Sky Resort once you marry me! I’ll establish another resort for myself,” Terence promised, smiling.

He was sure Zoey would not be able to resist such a lucrative offer.

“How much is this resort worth?” Levi asked while smiling.

“Two hundred million!” Terence answered proudly.

Levi took out his phone and dialed a number. “Hello? It’s me, Levi Garrison. We’re buying Clear Sky Resort!”

The Protector Chapter 374

Levi's straightforward words came as a shock to Zoey and Terence.

However, Terence started to chuckle after a few moments.

"Bro, have you been watching too many movies? Are you sure you can afford to buy my resort?" Terence scoffed.

Hahaha! What a maniac! Who does he think he is? A millionaire or something? He's just an attention-seeking jerk!"

The group of resort employees standing nearby began to poke fun at Levi.

He's being ridiculous! Zoey thought.

She did not care about her own dignity in front of Terence, but Levi just had to make a massive joke out of the two of them...

"We're heading to our room, Terence! See you around!"

At that moment, Zoey wanted nothing more but to escape from the hellhole she was in.

She dragged Levi away by the arm.

"Zoey! Keep my name card on you! Come and look for me if you need anything. I'll be keeping my promises!" Terence yelled after them.

Afterwards, he turned around and told his employees, "Find out which room they're in and give me a spare room card."

A lewd smile appeared on Terence's face.

That was not the first time he had fantasized about getting intimate with her.

The chance had come, and he was not going to miss it.

"Hmph! Just you wait, Zoey!" He snickered inwardly as the flame of desire inside of him began to burn unbearably bright.

Meanwhile, Levi and Zoey had arrived at their room.

Levi received a call from someone just moments later.

"Hello? Is it done? Alright, send me the contract tomorrow. I'll deal with it then," He said into the phone.

Zoey rolled her eyes. "There's no one here but me. Can you stop with your acts?"

She was still convinced Levi was making things up.

However, what she did not know was that the Rogers family had already done Levi's bidding. They had purchased the entire Clear Sky Resort on his behalf.

Afterwards, they went to a restaurant to have dinner.

The employees that had been stalking the two of them ran back to report their movements to Terence.

This is my chance! He thought gleefully.

He walked into the kitchen.

"Where are the orders from Table 8?" He asked casually.

“They’re here!” the chef answered, pointing to a tray of food sitting on the table by the side.

Terence took out a packet of powder and emptied it into a couple of dishes discreetly.

That was from his stash of sleeping drugs.

He had used it several times over the years.

Every time a pretty girl came to his resort, he would spike her food with that drug and sneak into her room at night.

None of them would remember anything the next day.

Terence walked over to Table 8 with one of the waiters.

“Zoey, here’s a gift from me to you. Enjoy!”

“Thank you!” Zoey said.

Levi was still skeptical of Terence.

He bent down to take a whiff of the food and the wine, and lo and behold, both the food and the wine had been spiked.

However, he did not say anything about it.

He dug in with Zoey as though nothing had happened.

Terence watched everything unfold before his eyes from the other end of the restaurant.

Time to have some fun tonight! He thought.

The sleeping drug would take effect in about an hour, and Zoey would be his in no time.

...

Still ignorant of her precarious situation, Zoey poked Levi's arm and gestured for him to look to the side.

After Levi took one look at the table next to them, he almost spit his food out.

There were three men sitting by the neighboring table.

The three of them were tall and muscular, but their faces were caked with makeup.

To Levi's bewilderment, the men sounded and acted like women.

They would even kiss each other from time to time...

They're gay!

That was the only thing Levi could think of as he watched those men go about their business.

The Protector Chapter 375

Not only were the young, handsome guys coming out as gay, but even the most manly-looking men might also surprise everyone with their sexual identity.

The contrast between their appearance and their demeanor was astonishing.

The more Levi looked at the three men flirting with one another, the more uneasy he felt.

Zoey could feel goosebumps appearing on her arm.

“Let’s finish our food and leave, darling!” Zoey whispered.

“Alright,” Levi answered.

They stuffed the rest of their food into their mouths and left afterwards.

Zoey began to feel drowsy soon after the meal, and she collapsed onto the bed in their room as soon as they returned.

The sleeping drug had, without a doubt, taken effect.

However, Levi seemed immune to its effects, and he decided to sit on the sofa to wait for his prey.

Meanwhile, Terence was getting jittery as he sat waiting in his office.

He had waited for an additional half an hour to make sure that the drug had taken effect.

Walking on his tiptoes, he slowly made his way to Levi and Zoey's room.

He pressed the doorbell a couple of times, only to receive no reply.

He proceeded to bang on the door loudly – still no response.

Relieved, he took out his spare keycard and let himself in.

He turned on the lights to see Zoey lying on the bed, fast asleep.

Lustful thoughts overtook his mind, but not before he noticed Levi's absence.

“Wait...where's Levi?”

He began to search for the man.

Bam!

Suddenly, someone popped out from behind his back and smacked a heavy object onto his head, knocking him out cold.

Levi stood behind his limp body, taking his own sweet time to smoke a cigarette.

Afterwards, he dragged Terence by the arm to the door of another room.

He pressed the doorbell lightly.

That room had belonged to the three gay men they had encountered earlier.

The door flew open in seconds.

To the three men's surprise, there was no one outside, except for a young man stripped to his birthday suit.

It was none other than Terence, still out cold from the blow that Levi gave him.

The three men exchanged dirty grins.

In a flash, they picked Terence up and disappeared into their room.

For the rest of the night, everyone in the vicinity could hear terrified screams coming from the three men's room.

The other guests assumed they had been watching horror movies and decided to ignore them.

Meanwhile, the employees of the resort were huddled together in a gossip circle. "Is Mr. Gibson up to something again?" One of them asked.

"Yeah! Haven't you heard? It's his dad's classmate's daughter this time around! She's gorgeous!"

"I bet he's having a whale of a time right now. I saw him slip into her room just moments ago!"

However, the reality was far from what they had thought. Rather than bliss, Terence was in a state of confusion.

He could not tell if he had been dreaming or not.

He vaguely registered getting manhandled by three muscular men.

His entire body was throbbing in pain.

The next morning, he woke up to white-hot streaks of pain coming from his backside. He slowly opened his eyes to find himself lying on a large bed.

Did I succeed last night?

Terence was overcome by joy for just a second.

Did I finally get to spend a night with my goddess?

I don't seem to remember anything about it though...

Terence rubbed his throbbing head.

Afterwards, a wave of fatigue washed over him like a tsunami.

He could feel stabs of pain from every part of his body; his lips, his neck, his arm, and even his backside. He felt as though he had been torn open from the inside.

What even happened last night?

Was Zoey crazier than I thought?

Terence could not figure out why he was feeling that way.

He blinked to clear his vision before reaching out to check if there was anyone next to him.

The flesh his fingers came into contact with was as hard as a rock.

He froze when he realized who had been sharing a bed with him.

The Protector Chapter 376

“Ahhhhh!”

Terence let out a piercing scream that could almost tear the roof of the building.

He began to wonder how he had gotten himself into that situation.

Where did my clothes go?

What happened here?

Who can tell me what's going on?

Terence felt like breaking down there and then.

His scream jolted the three men awake.

They looked at him flirtatiously and cooed, “Oh, baby, you're awake?”

“Urgh...”

Terence almost puked his dinner out when he heard those words.

Disgusting!

Terence stumbled off the bed and glared at the three men warily. “Who are you? Why are you here?”

“Baby, you came here yourself! You were completely naked!”

“Are you running away after enjoying yourself? Ew! What a jerk!”

...

Terence could feel his sanity slipping away as he stared at the three men.

What in the world happened between us?

He knew he had to get out of there.

Terence wrapped a blanket around himself and made a run for the door, but before he could get there, the three men formed a line and blocked his way.

“Did we say you could go, baby?”

“What the hell are you doing? I’m going to kick the three of you out later on!” Terence threatened as bolts of pain continued to shoot through his flesh.

“Why don’t you take a look at what happened last night yourself, baby?”

One of them handed a camera over to Terence.

The more he watched the sinful action unfold, the more he wanted to wither into the ground.

He had indeed been manhandled by the three men!

“Argh! I can’t stand it anymore!

He was going crazy from anger.

“Levi Garrison! He must have tricked me! I’m going to kill him!” He yelled the moment he put two and two together.

I have to leave this place!

Terence knew he had to get out no matter what.

“Baby, don’t leave! If you leave, we’ll put this video online!” The three men threatened.

Terence was scared out of his wits when he heard them.

If that video ended up online, he might just be left with no choice but to disappear from the face of the earth.

His parents would die of embarrassment!

Crash!

Just like that, the three men threw Terence onto their bed again and resumed their roughhousing.

Terence gripped the sheets tightly as angry tears flowed down his cheeks.

It was the most shameful moment of his life.

No man would be able to stand being humiliated like that!

When Terence was finally released from that prison, he could not even walk straight. He had no clothes to wear, so he ended up borrowing one of the men’s clothes before he could go out.

His tears never stopped flowing, and he felt numb all over.

He wished he could just end it all.

How could this happen to me? He thought sorrowfully.

“Hm? Terence? Why are you limping around? Are you crying?”

Zoey’s voice rang down the hallway all of a sudden.

Terence looked up, only to jump in shock as Zoey and Levi appeared before him.

Levi piped up as well. “Yeah, bro! Why are you crying? What happened?”

“Why are your lips bleeding? And what’s with the hickeys, lipstick marks and perfume...” Levi asked, frowning.

Every word of Levi’s was like a grain of salt on Terence’s wounds, reminding him of the suffering he had gone through.

All those markings were remnants of the three men’s crimes towards him!

“Where were you last night? Are these clothes even yours?”

More tears spilled out of Terence’s eyes when he heard that.

His chagrin grew when he noticed Zoey’s revolted expression.

This is it.

This is the end!

She’s going to hate me forever!

Levi suddenly leaned forward and sniffed Terence’s body before turning to Zoey, saying, “Honey, can you smell that? Doesn’t he smell like those three gay men we saw yesterday?”

The Protector Chapter 377

Boom!

Terence could feel his head exploding.

Levi, you're going too far!

Why are you rubbing salt on my wounds?

If anyone hears about the tragedy he had gone through, death might just be the only option left for him.

In particular, his dignity would be reduced to naught if Zoey found out.

Zoey breathed in deeply and said, "Yeah! It smells familiar! I remember that scent!"

"Oh dear, bro! Don't tell me you slept with those three men last night? Gosh, I didn't know you had such a kink. No wonder you aren't married yet!"

Levi's exaggerated tone attracted the attention of everyone around them.

"Yeah! I remember those clothes as well. It belongs to one of them! Don't tell me you're..."

Zoey looked at Terence quizzically.

Terence's dignity was in shambles; he decided to make a run for it.

Pitter patter...

He scampered down the hallway with his head down.

Tears of despair ran down his cheeks as he ran off.

“Ew! I didn’t know he was interested in that! Hubby, I don’t want to see him ever again,” Zoey snarled.

“I know, right? I almost puked my guts out when I saw him!” Levi chuckled while smiling.

Terence ran back to his room and burnt the clothes on his body.

He dived into the shower room and used up a whole bottle of body wash to scrub every inch of his skin down after that.

He finally got out of the shower after a long, long time.

He had been trying to wash the marks of humiliation the men had imprinted on his skin.

He put on a fresh set of clothes and showered himself in perfume in an attempt to mask the scent of those three men.

“It must have been you, Levi Garrison!” He snarled to himself.

His mind was clearer than it had ever been.

From Levi’s reaction just moments ago, Terence could tell that he had been the mastermind behind all this.

After all, he had passed out just moments after entering Levi and Zoey’s room.

It must have been him!

He ran over to the security room and pulled out the CCTV footage from last night.

When he saw Levi dragging his limp body to the three men's room, he banged his fist on the table in a fit of anger.

"I'm going to kill you, Levi Garrison!" He growled loudly.

He could almost explode on the spot.

He deleted the footage immediately afterwards.

The security guards in charge of the CCTV footage began to snicker amongst themselves. "Boss, how was last night? Why don't you tell us about her? We heard she's as pretty as a goddess!" One of them quipped.

Slap!

"Shut up!"

Terence slapped the person who had just spoken across the face.

He had just been violated by three men!

There was no way he was going to tell them about such a thing!

Afterwards, Terence rushed to Levi and Zoey's room with a group of security guards behind him.

"Zoey Lopez! Your husband is a thief! We caught him stealing the belongings of other customers on camera!" Terence bellowed.

He did not care about his image anymore.

All he wanted to do was to beat Levi into a pulp.

Even so, he needed an excuse to do so.

“Huh? That’s impossible. He was with me all along!” Zoey argued.

“Move aside! Take Levi Garrison away!” Terence yelled.

The guards rushed forward to tackle Levi.

“Terence! What are you doing?”

A loud voice boomed down the hallway, followed by hurried footsteps.

“Hm? Mr. Zielger? Why are you here?”

Terence turned around, utterly confused.

The boss of the resort strode down the hallway and stopped in front of him.

“Someone has bought over the resort. I’m here to settle the paperwork,” Mr. Ziegler said.

The Protector Chapter 378

“What? Someone bought the resort?”

Terence froze in his tracks.

Zoey was shocked as well.

Could this be a coincidence?

Did Levi actually buy the resort last night with that phone call?

“That’s right. The paperwork was done last night, but he only requested to see it today.”

Mr. Ziegler’s words hit Zoey like a train.

She tossed Levi a quizzical look. Was it you? She questioned with her eyes.

“M-Mr. Ziegler, w-who bought the resort?”

Terence began to stammer as the scary truth dawned upon him.

“He’s right in front of you!” Mr. Ziegler said, smiling.

Mr. Ziegler took one step forward and bowed low to Levi. “Mr. Garrison, the ownership of the Clear Sky Resort has now been transferred to you. Here is the contract for your reference.”

Boom!

It was as though a meteorite had landed upon Terence when Mr. Ziegler spoke those words.

He felt as though he had been cracked open from the head down.

It was him all along!

He actually bought the resort last night!

He had thrown out two hundred million in exchange for the resort with just one phone call!

Terence was utterly dumbfounded.

Wasn't he just an imbecile who leeches off his wife's fortune?

Even Zoey could not believe her ears.

Did he actually buy the resort?

She stared at Levi, absolutely stupefied.

Levi simply smiled. "Never mind with the paperwork. The resort belongs to me now, doesn't it?"

"That's right!"

"They answer to me now, right?" Levi asked, pointing at the group of security guards behind Terence.

"Of course!"

Levi suddenly raised his voice and hollered, "Well then, why don't you tell me what valuables were lost last night?"

The security guards and Terence felt as if they could suffocate on the spot.

The security guards exchanged looks before glancing at Levi and Terence.

Noticing something was amiss, Mr. Ziegler began to grow agitated. "Say something! Spill the truth!"

The leader of the security team was the first to speak up. "Nothing of such sort happened Sir! Terence told us to use this as an excuse to beat you up, Sir!"

Flop!

Terence collapsed onto the ground.

"I'm sorry! Mr. Garrison, Zoey, please forgive me! I won't do it ever again!"
Terence cried.

Levi smirked. "Can someone send him to room 1409 for me?"

Terence began to panic the moment he heard the room number.

His eyes were swollen as his body began to tremble like a leaf.

"No...no, no! No!"

"Please! Let me go!"

"Send him there now!" Levi snarled.

"No!"

Terence turned around to run away, but his unstable gait made it difficult for him to do so.

Within seconds, he was tackled onto the floor by the security guards.

That room was hell to him.

As he struggled against his restraints, the security guards dragged him to room 1409 and threw him inside.

“Um...what’s with room 1409?” Zoey asked curiously.

“Remember the three men? That’s their room!” Levi whispered.

“Huh?”

Zoey decided not to ask any further.

Levi’s eyes held a dangerous glint.

That was the least he could do to punish Terence for drugging his wife.

Soon, the time came for the auction of the Oriental Star Group.

The participants filed into the venue as soon as the doors opened.

Zoey and Levi headed in as well.

Just as they had expected, the room was filled with the tycoons of the city.

Not only were the prominent businessmen of the local economy present, but Zoey also caught sight of several foreign investors in the crowd.

The Oriental Star Group was a lucrative business that anyone would long to have a piece of.

“Hey, beautiful! Care to be my friend?”

Suddenly, a group of people rushed towards Levi and Zoey.

The Protector Chapter 379

The man leading the group smiled brightly at Zoey while completely ignoring Levi.

Zoey returned a smile. “Apologies. I’m already married.”

“Well, that doesn’t mean we can’t get to know each other! I’m Zayn Suarez of the South City Suarez family!”

The man handed Zoey a copy of his name card.

Everyone was shocked to hear his name.

“What? Zayn Suarez? The third Young Master of the South City Suarez family? Why is he here? They’re just as affluent as the Rogers family! Were they after the Oriental Star as well?”

“What’s the point of competing with them? We should just give up.”

The tycoons around them looked defeated.

They knew that many tycoons from South City have come to North Hampton to snatch a portion of the Oriental's shares.

However, they had not expected to meet someone from the Suarez family in person.

Zayn seemed satisfied with this reaction.

The prominent families of South City were treated like royalty in North Hampton. It was as though they were visiting monarchs from faraway kingdoms.

"Do you think I'm good enough for you?" Zayn asked proudly.

The young masters of South City have long been looking forward to paying a visit to North Hampton, where there was a large population of beautiful women.

Zayn had fallen for Zoey the moment he saw her.

She was prettier than any movie star he had ever seen!

He did not care if she was married or not, as he just wanted a taste of her sweetness.

"No!"

Levi spat a single word of rejection into Zayn's face and pulled Zoey over to their designated seats.

Zayn watched them leave with an evil grin on his face. "Fine then, wait till the auction's over! You can't escape from me, woman!"

Soon, the seats were filled, and the Oriental Star Group representatives filed into the room.

After a brief introduction of the Oriental Star Group, the auction officially began.

“The starting bid is one and a half billion. Bidding starts now!” The auctioneer announced.

“1.53 billion!” The Cloudscape chairperson yelled, raising his paddle.

“1.55 billion!” The Fortune Source CEO hollered, raising his paddle as well.

...

Soon, the bid rose to 1.7 billion.

Everyone raised their bids tentatively, each bid only a little higher than the previous one.

“Is this a joke? Why are they increasing their bids by only ten million at a time?” Levi growled, visibly annoyed.

Zoey grinned. “We’re just here on a learning journey. There’s no need for us to get involved.”

After that, she glanced in the direction of Zayn and his party. “Besides, I think it’s pretty obvious that he’s going to win the auction in the end!”

“Oh, really?” Levi said, smirking.

“Two billion!”

Zayn, who had been silent the whole time, raised his paddle and shouted his bid without warning.

The sudden addition of three hundred million shook everyone to the core.

More than half of the participants could no longer afford to go any higher.

Zayn glanced at the crowd, warning them to stay back with his piercing gaze.

“2.1 billion!” Someone yelled, refusing to back down.

“2.2 billion!”

...

The tycoons decided to give up if the price went over two and a half billion.

“Three billion!”

Zayn yelled out an astronomical sum yet again.

The crowd roared, and everyone turned to stare at Zayn in shock.

“The Suarez family really is scary!”

“I knew we wouldn’t be able to win the moment I saw him!”

...

The crowd chattered amongst themselves fearfully.

Even the Oriental Star Group representatives were getting excited.

They had not expected the bid to go so high.

Zoey smiled bitterly and looked at Levi. “I knew it. They’re going to win.”

However, her face fell the very next second.

Levi had raised his paddle!

Is he going to bid?

The Protector Chapter 380

Zoey had wanted to stop him, but it was too late.

Everyone's eyes were trained on him the moment he raised his paddle.

“Three billion, one!”

The entire crowd froze for a moment when they heard that.

By the time Zayn had given his three billion bid, most of the tycoons had already given up.

They were ready to accept the reality that the Oriental Star Group was going to belong to Zayn.

To their surprise, however, someone was still going!

He had increased the bid by just one!

It was obviously a move to provoke Zayn Suarez.

The Oriental Star Group representatives began to panic.

Who even does that?

Besides, there was an unspoken agreement amongst the bidders to increase the price by ten million with each bid.

Everyone from Zayn's party stared at Levi in anguish.

How dare they provoke us?

Zayn, however, merely kept his evil grin on his face.

You dare threaten me?

You're asking for trouble!

"3.1 billion!"

Zayn raised the bid by another hundred million and glared at Levi.

Let's see how long you can keep up!

"3.1 billion, one!"

Levi did not give up.

"You..."

Zayn was about to explode from anger.

This man is definitely messing around with me!

Everyone else could only stare at Levi in shock.

Where did he get the guts to mess around with the Young Master of the Suarez family?

He's dead meat for sure...

Zoey was concerned as well.

She knew exactly how powerful the Suarez family was, and she did not want to get into their bad books.

Levi was playing with fire!

However, it was too late for her to stop him.

"3.2 billion!"

Zayn continued to increase the bid.

His family had budgeted for a three million bid, but Levi's appearance had forced him to scrap their plan.

He had no choice but to add another two hundred million.

I'm going to kill you and sleep with your wife once this is over! He snarled inwardly.

Levi remained unfazed. "3.2 billion, one!"

"You...you b*****d!"

Zayn stomped his foot on the floor while the rest of his party fumed in silence.

Hasn't he had enough?

Meanwhile, everyone else in the crowd looked on with frowns on their faces.

This boy is doing it to the extreme!

“Fine then. Let’s see if you can take this!”

Zayn raised his paddle again and yelled, “3.5 billion!”

“Woah...”

The crowd drew in a collective gasp when he announced his bid.

The Oriental Star Group representatives were ecstatic.

That was way more than they had expected!

Zayn glared at Levi again arrogantly.

3.5 billion was the most he could afford as there were other expenses the Suarez family had to take care of.

All he wanted to see was if Levi had the guts to increase the bid any further. If he did not, Zayn would get the Oriental Star Group like he was supposed to.

If Levi were stupid enough to bid any higher, Zayn would step aside and watch his desperate attempts to produce 3.5 billion worth of cash.

All eyes were trained on Levi at that moment.

Zoey held her breath anxiously.

To everyone’s surprise, Levi raised his paddle slowly and yelled, “Four billion!”

“What?”

“Four billion?”

The room went deathly silent after Levi announced his bid.

Everyone had been expecting him to increase the bid by just one.

Who knew he would add another five hundred million instead?

Boom!

Zayn and his party could only gawk at Levi.

Looks like he had not been messing around after all...

Zoey, on the other hand, began to panic.

Is he crazy?

Four billion?

Where is going to get the money from?

Is he joking?

“Going once...going twice...sold! Oriental Star Group has been purchased by Mr. Levi Garrison for 4 billion!”

The Protector Chapter 381

The auction ended as quickly as it started.

The Oriental Star Group representatives had reaped almost twice the amount they had planned for.

It made them jittery with excitement.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Zayn slammed his fist against the chairs over and over again.

Veins began to appear on his neck as his face contorted into an ugly scowl.

The Suarez family had planned to take over the Oriental Star Group as a crucial first step to break into the North Hampton market.

He had failed his entire family.

Zayn raised his head and glared at Levi coldly. "Well, Sir, may I ask how you're going to produce the four billion you promised?"

Everyone snapped out of their shocked trance when they heard that.

It's four billion!

Does he really have that much money?

Even Zoey was not convinced.

Since when did he have four billion?

A few members of the staff walked up to Levi. “Sir, you need to prove your assets to take part in the bidding. You are the only one here who has yet to do so. We hope you understand,” They explained with a smile.

Levi took out a black card and said, “I’m paying by card.”

No one believed him.

It’s four billion, for goodness’ sake!

What kind of credit card could hold so much money?

All of their expenses came directly from their companies’ reserves.

Five minutes later, a huge group of staff members rushed over to Levi’s side.

They looked as though they were ready to kowtow to him.

“Mr. Garrison! The transaction was successful! Oriental Star Group now belongs to you!”

“Here is your card.”

The manager bowed deeply and handed the bank card to Levi with two hands.

The crowd let out a collective gasp.

“It...It went through?”

“He paid four billion by card?!”

Zayn and his party's eyeballs looked as though they were going to pop out of their sockets.

They had not expected to meet such a plutocrat on their first trip to North Hampton.

However, no one could compare to Zoey in terms of how bewildered she was.

She was still reeling from the shock of witnessing Levi buy over the entire resort that morning.

She could not believe her eyes when he had thrown out another four billion to buy the Oriental Star Group.

Where did he even get that money?

He was completely broke six years ago!

"Mr. Garrison, please come with us to settle the paperwork," The manager said politely.

"Oh, before I forget, I bought Oriental for my wife. Let her sign the paperwork," Levi said.

"What? It's all for his wife?"

"She's so lucky! Who even gifts a whole company to their wife?"

Everyone at the scene were shocked.

"I..."

Zoey covered her mouth with hands, unable to make a sound.

She was touched and moved to tears by this gift.

He had promised to help her rise to the top ever since she had been chased out of the Lopez family.

She had not expected anything like this.

Zoey stared at Levi lovingly, tears spilling from her eyes onto her porcelain cheeks.

“Let’s go, honey! Time to sign the paperwork!”

Levi took Zoey’s hand and followed the staff backstage.

Zayn watched as they left the scene with a gloomy expression.

“No, I can’t just let him go so easily! I have to secure the Oriental Star for my family! I want that woman for myself too...”

“What should we do, Young Master?” His subordinate Harold Walker asked.

“How many people did we bring this time round?” Zayn asked.

“Thirty fighters!” Harold replied.

“Alright. Tell them to get ready and intercept Levi and Zoey when they’re about to leave. I’m not going to let them get back to the city!” Zayn ordered.

A bloodthirsty glint flashed across Zayn’s eyes.

The Protector Chapter 382

Backstage...

It took them half an hour to settle the paperwork.

Zoey Lopez had officially become the owner of the Oriental Star Group.

Her hands could not stop shaking even after she signed her name on the contract.

It was unbelievable.

She felt as though she had been living in a fantasy all along.

Zoey stroked Levi's face lightly. "Hubby, are we still asleep?"

"Are you confused?" Levi asked.

"Does it hurt if I pinch you?" Zoey asked before pinching Levi's skin with all her strength.

"Ow! It hurts! You should have tested it on yourself..."

Levi took a step to the side to avoid her fingers.

My wife is so silly!

It took a while, but Zoey finally registered the situation.

Everything had been real!

“Did you just buy an entire corporation for me? You’re too nice...” Zoey sobbed, hugging Levi tightly.

“Where did you get so much money from? Are you hiding something from me?”

Zoey furrowed her eyebrows and stared at him with much doubt in her eyes.

“I...” Levi began. But he was cut off by the ringing of Zoey’s phone.

It was a call from Iris.

“You’re really happy now, aren’t you Zoey?” Iris asked, smiling.

“Huh? How did you know I’m happy now? Are you at the resort too?” Zoey asked, puzzled.

“Haha...our mysterious boss took notice of your exceptional talent and bought the Oriental Star Group for you! He needs your help urgently, so do your best!”

Upon hearing Iris’ explanation, Zoey’s face fell.

She looked at Levi with a grim expression.

She had thought he had a stash of cash somewhere that he used to be her hero.

The last thing she expected to hear was that the person who had secured the deal was the boss of the Morris Group.

Levi took advantage of the Morris Group to accomplish all this!

Despite her disappointment, she was touched by his sheer determination.

Instead of exposing him outright, she smiled and said, “Levi, you’re amazing! You should work hard so you can climb the ranks at Morris Group!”

Levi was utterly befuddled by her words.

I’m already the boss of Morris Group...

Why do I still need to climb the ranks?

The couple took their leave after signing the contract.

They passed by a group of people carrying Terence on a stretcher headed for the hospital as they exited the resort.

Levi scoffed. I could have killed you for plotting against my wife, so be grateful that I let you live.

As soon as Levi and Zoey got onto their car, Zayn appeared behind them.

“What? They already left? Kill the man and bring me the woman! I want to force them to hand over the Oriental to the Suarez family!”

A cruel grin appeared on Zayn’s face.

Even his companions shuddered at the sound of that. “Third Young Master, are you suggesting we take over the Oriental Star Group without spending anything?”

“Why not? We’ve only just started our conquest of North Hampton. We have to be as dominating as we can! We need everyone in North Hampton to fear the Suarez family!” Zayn declared.

“Let’s get going!”

Meanwhile, Zoey was nodding off in the car.

The effects of the sleeping drug had long worn off, but she still felt very sleepy after getting on the car.

Levi glanced at the vehicles following them through the rearview window and grinned.

Are they looking for trouble?

After a short while, a car appeared right in front of Levi's car and stopped him in his tracks.

The cars behind them also picked up speed and had their Audi surrounded within seconds.

The Protector Chapter 383

A few dozen people gushed out of the cars.

All of them were armed with metal sticks as they charged towards Levi and Zoey's car.

Levi slipped out of the car quietly to avoid waking Zoey up.

Harold stormed over to Levi and snarled, "You're a brave one, aren't you? Didn't expect you to get out and face us rather than running away!"

Levi calmly lit a cigarette and breathed out a ring of smoke before replying, "My wife is sleeping. Get out of my face, or else."

“Hahaha!”

Harold and his group of fighters burst into raucous laughter.

“That’s enough! Let’s beat him up!”

The group of fighters charged forward at Harold’s command.

Bam!

Levi sent a flying kick at the first person.

Pow!

The person launched into the air before crashing onto the ground with a loud thud. His limbs spasmed for a few seconds before he went limp.

Everyone froze for a second after witnessing Levi’s strength.

“Beat him up!” Harold yelled, enraged.

At the same time, Levi began to fight back.

With two mighty punches, he sent another two people flying.

Within seconds, he had appeared right in front of Harold and grabbed him by the shoulders.

Bang!

Levi raised his knee and knocked it against Harold’s face.

“ARGH!” Harold screamed.

Blood and gore smeared all over his face by the time he fell to the ground, making him almost unrecognizable.

Afterwards, Levi went into full battle mode.

Within a minute, the dozens of men Harold had brought along were all lying on the ground, unable to move.

Their limbs had all been broken and rendered useless.

He's strong!

He's way too strong!

Harold and his fighters had grossly underestimated his strength; Levi was unbelievably skilled.

Although Harold and his fighters were masters of underhanded tactics, they had been defeated in minutes.

They watched in horror as Levi dragged the cars they had used to block his path away with nothing but his bare hands.

Those cars weigh several tons!

Is he even human?

Harold's eyeballs were going to pop out from their sockets the more he stared at Levi.

His gaze was filled with fear.

The last thing he had expected to meet in North Hampton was a superhuman!

Suddenly, James rushed over to Levi's side with a few of his men.

"I'm sorry for coming late, Mr. Garrison!" He apologized.

"Don't worry. They were just a bunch of thugs," Levi said.

"Stay here and beat up anyone they send as reinforcements. Oh, and remember to spare one of them to act as a messenger," Levi stated before getting on his car and leaving the scene.

Zoey had been fast asleep the whole time.

An affectionate smile appeared on Levi's face at the sight of her.

He would have buried those people alive if they woke his wife up!

Meanwhile, Zayn was getting anxious.

He felt starved whenever he thought of her beautiful features, as well as his failure to obtain the Oriental Star Group for his family.

"Hurry up! I'm sure Harold and his men have already settled things!"

Zayn gave Harold a call, but it went unanswered.

"He must be beating that scumbag up," He snickered.

Zayn arrived at the scene five minutes later.

He grinned evilly when he saw the wreckages of cars strewn about the road.

"Get ready to die, Levi Garrison!"

Zayn rushed into the fray, only to be horrified by the sight that appeared before him.

The broken forms of Harold and his thirty fighters were all lying lifelessly on the ground.

“What happened?”

Zayn could not believe his eyes.

He could not see Levi’s car anywhere.

Bang!

Suddenly, the door to the car right next to him opened.

Several foreigners alighted from the car, their huge bodies making them look like mountains of flesh.

The leader, James, stared at him in mild interest.

The Protector Chapter 384

“Who are you? Where are Levi and Zoey?” Zayn asked.

“Well, Mr. Garrison told me to take care of you,” James answered, baring his teeth in a cruel grin.

“W-what do you want?”

Zayn began to panic as the muscular guys began to close in on him.

He was tiny compared to them...

Slap!

James slapped Zayn across his face without warning.

That slap almost knocked him out cold.

A buzzing sound ensued as he struggled to recover from it.

Crack!

The slap was not the end of it.

James stomped his foot into Zayn's leg, breaking it into pieces with a loud snap.

Crack!

His other leg was broken as well.

Crack!

Crack!

His arms were gone in seconds.

Zayn could do nothing but scream at the top of his lungs.

Not only did he lose an entire company to someone else, but he also got crippled by some foreign jerk.

Within minutes, all of Zayn's men were lying on the floor and writhing in pain.

Only one person remained.

"Let me remind you that North Hampton isn't a place you can just waltz into and call yourself the king!" James spat before turning around and taking his leave.

After just a few hours, word spread far and wide amongst the Quebec nobility. Not only did the Suarez family fail to snatch even a portion of the Oriental shares, but its Third Young Master and his men had also been beaten severely and thrown out of North Hampton.

It was the breaking news of the day.

Many people had considered going to North Hampton to vie for its market shares, but that incident had scared them off.

North Hampton had no shortage of leaders despite the collapse of the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce and the Gonzales family.

The Morris Group, for one, was a rising star.

It was rumored that someone from the Morris Group had crippled the Third Young Master of the Suarez family.

For a long time after, the Suarez family disappeared from public view, as though they had retreated to observe the situation from the sidelines.

The other families followed suit.

...

Meanwhile, Levi and Zoey made their way to the Oriental Star Group as quickly as they could.

The higher-ups of the Oriental rushed out of the building to welcome their new boss.

The media was contacted, and a press conference was held.

When Zoey arrived, a succession ceremony was being held, followed by the press conference.

On the other hand, the Lopez family continued to suffer.

“All of you! Get out!”

The manager of Union Square kicked the Lopez Group out of the office building.

They even went as far as throwing their things out of the door.

The Morris Group continued to bombard them with phone calls, reminding them that they only had one day left.

If they failed to evict themselves by the deadline, they would have to pay a fine of one billion.

The companies the Lopez Group had taken loans from continued to pester them for their repayment.

The Lopez family spent the night trying to contact Zoey to no avail.

By the next morning, Harry’s hair had turned snowy white.

“What are we going to do? Are we going to jail for this?” Harry muttered.

Everyone else looked as though they had not slept in days, with their dark eye bags and tired expressions.

They were running out of ideas.

Suddenly, a piece of news on the TV caught their attention.

“Hey! Isn’t that Zoey?” Melanie exclaimed.

“What? Zoey?”

Everyone looked towards the TV to see Zoey sitting behind the desk at the Oriental Star Group press conference.

The channel was reporting about the Oriental Star Group’s transfer of ownership to Zoey, as well as her appointment as the chairperson and CEO of the company.

“According to estimations, the Oriental Star Group is worth around five to six billion. Ms. Lopez’s spectacular leadership skills would help the Oriental grow and flourish even more!” The reporter said, smiling.

“What? She’s the chairperson of the Oriental Star Group now?”

“How can it be? Wasn’t it worth at least five billion?”

The Protector Chapter 385

“How did she do it? Am I dreaming?”

...

The members of the Lopez family could feel themselves going crazy.

They had not expected to be caught in this situation.

They had envisioned Zoey begging in the streets after being thrown out of the family, yet she had defied their expectations. She had become the chairperson of a huge company worth billions!

They regretted it immensely.

Harry, in particular, wished he could turn back time and right his wrongs.

Slap!

Slap!

He slapped Henry and Fabian across the face roughly.

“How dare you suggest that I cut Aaron’s family out of our lives? Look at Zoey now! We’re never going to be able to bask in her glory now! I bet buying the company was easy for her!” Harry yelled.

Henry and Fabian fell silent.

Weren’t you the one who made the decision?

Why are you pushing the blame onto us now?

What were you doing before that?

“How did she even do it?” Melanie asked, confused.

“I bet she got in bed with some tycoon! I can’t think of any other way she would be able to accomplish that!” Henry huffed.

“Yeah! That’s disgusting!”

“Luckily, she isn’t part of our family anymore! We would’ve been so embarrassed by her!”

“She’s so shameless!”

...

The Lopez family continued to rant about Zoey.

Harry nodded. “We all know what underhanded methods she used, but she’s the boss of the Oriental Star Group now. What can anyone do about it?”

“There’s only one way left, and that is to beg her for help!”

They made their way to the Oriental Star Group immediately.

They managed to bump into Zoey the moment they arrived at the office.

Though the members of the Lopez family despised her, they still plastered a smile on their faces as they approached her. “Oh Zoey, we’ve finally found you!” Harry exclaimed. “I’m sorry for everything that’s happened to you before. It was all your uncles’ fault! I’ve punished them severely.”

“As long as you’re willing to come back, you’ll be a part of our family again! Can you help us out, for my sake? Look at how crippled I look now!” He continued pleadingly.

Harry indeed looked about ten years older after just a couple days of separation.

“Zoey, you’re the boss of the Oriental Star Group now, so you have the power to help us out! It’ll be good for you in the future too!” Harry pleaded as the rest of the family looked on pitifully.

Zoey genuinely felt sorry for them.

“Hey, honey, what are you doing? Let’s go home!”

Just as she was wondering if she should help them, Levi appeared behind her.

The Lopez family fumed in silence when they saw him.

He’s up to no good again!

“Zoey, let’s talk about this in private. This has nothing to do with Levi,” Harry said hurriedly.

Levi quickly took Zoey’s hand and led her away. “Didn’t I tell you to ignore these people? Have you forgotten what I said?”

“I…”

Zoey bit her lip, unsure of what to say.

“You’re no longer a member of the Lopez family. Why care about their matters?”

When will she realize she’s too kind for her own good?

“What the hell do you mean, Levi Garrison?” Shaun yelled in a panicked voice as Zoey was dragged further away from them by Levi.

“Get out! We won’t help you!” Levi declared.

“Fine then! Do you want to know how Zoey got hold of her position at Oriental Star?” Shaun snickered.

“How?”

“She slept with another man!”

The Protector Chapter 386

Shaun pointed a finger at Levi as he scoffed, “You don’t know about it, do you? How do you think Zoey managed to convince those investors? How do you think she paid for that office in Union Square? She did all that by sleeping with other older men! You have been cheated on!”

“Hahaha! That’s right! Levi Garrison, you idiot. Did you really think Zoey would wait six years for you? In your dreams! She’s slept with countless men during that period.”

“Yeah, that’s right! Zoey is a hooker who brings shame to the Lopez family!”

“You disgusting b****! Do your parents know you are a slut?”

The situation had already turned sour, so the Lopez family could not care less anymore. They jumped in and kept insulting Zoey.

Sob! Sob!

Zoey teared up immediately after being ridiculed by her family.

Shaun scoffed, “What are you crying for? You don’t actually feel wronged, do you? Don’t think we don’t know about all the vile things you’ve done! We only kept quiet because it’s embarrassing, idiot.”

Shaun felt a chill run down his spine as soon as he finished speaking.

It felt as if he had been kicked into icy water.

When Shaun turned and saw Levi’s gaze, the former got so frightened that he almost fainted.

What the hell is that?

A monster?

A murderer?

That kind of gaze could puncture anyone’s heart, and one look was sufficient to trigger nightmares.

Boom!

Levi was standing in front of Shaun at the very next second.

The former kicked a leg out forcefully.

Spat!

Shaun spat blood after crushing into the wall and falling.

He hadn't even stood up before Levi showed up right in front of him.

Levi lifted Shaun, pressing him against the wall.

Levi's right hand was on Shaun's neck; it was becoming tighter and tighter...

"Urgh.. Argh..."

Shaun's face turned purple soon after, and his eyes turned white as his legs kicked around aimlessly.

He was suffocating!

Levi is going to kill him!

The Lopez family came around quickly. They hurried over to stop Levi.

Unfortunately, Levi kicked every single one of them away before they could stop him.

It was hopeless.

Levi was intent on killing Shaun.

Shaun's face was turning dark...

"Levi, no! You'll get in trouble for that!"

Zoey rushed over and pried Levi away.

Thump!

Shaun fell onto the floor after Levi loosened his grip. Unfortunately, Shaun fainted as he had been out of air for too long.

“Hurry and take him to the hospital!”

The Lopez family quickly carried Shaun and rushed him to the hospital.

Harry and the others wanted to threaten Levi, but when they saw Levi’s murderous gaze, they became so frightened that they couldn’t speak.

That’s a lunatic. We can’t mess with him.

Zoey shouted angrily, “I will no longer be a part of the Lopez family! Don’t come looking for me again because I won’t help any of you!”

Zoey and Levi left the place after.

If Zoey hadn’t stopped Levi, he would’ve killed them for what they said.

How could he let anyone insult his wife like that?

The Lopez family were utterly hopeless.

Zoey had mercilessly rejected them; their last shred of hope was gone.

They were on their own. They would have to pay a debt of one hundred million and a legal damage claim of one billion...

That was enough to land all of them in jail.

Harry gave up and readied himself to be taken into custody.

Still, he was angry because the other members of the Lopez family were still too young.

Shaun and the others were still in their twenties!

That was one of the most torturous nights for the Lopez family.

Many of them had aged a decade within that one night.

Everyone sat together the next day as they waited for the inevitable.

A few cars drove up to the house.

When the Lopez family heard those cars coming, they turned devastated.

The Protector Chapter 387

A group of people entered the house soon after.

Harry looked up and realized that he did not know any of the intruders.

The middle-aged man who looked like he was the boss came in and saw everyone looking devastated.

He yelled furiously, "What is the meaning of this? Why is the Lopez family of North Hampton in such a terrible state? You lot bring shame to our family!"

"Huh?"

Harry and the others were stunned.

Were those men not here to demand payment?

“Excuse me, but who are you?” inquired Harry.

“You don’t even recognize me, Harry Lopez? I am Dustin Lopez from South City!”
Dustin barked.

“What? The Lopez family from South City?”

Harry stood up immediately; he would’ve gone on his knees out of respect if that was appropriate.

Henry and the others stood up politely too.

It was a member of the Lopez family from South City!

As far as Harry and the others were concerned, that family were like royalty.

It was as if the kings and queens were visiting when members of the Lopez family from South City came to visit.

“What happened?” asked Dustin cruelly.

Harry quickly shared everything with him.

After learning everything, Dustin scoffed, “Fine, the Lopez family from South City will deal with it.”

“Huh?”

Harry and the others were flabbergasted.

The Lopez family from South City will deal with everything?

Is this a gift from heaven?

“We want to expand our business into North Hampton. You lot will play an important role, so your troubles must be solved,” Dustin clarified.

That made the others even happier.

The Lopez family from South City is coming to North Hampton? Does that mean we would benefit from their expansion too?

The Lopez family of North Hampton would play an important role in South City’s Lopez family’s development into North Hampton.

North Hampton’s Lopez family had great connections in the city. That would help the South City’s Lopez family build a strong foundation when they came.

Hence, it didn’t matter if Harry owed over a billion. The South City’s Lopez would help anyway because they would be earning hundreds of billions in the future with Harry’s help.

A mere billion didn’t mean much under those circumstances.

It took Dustin less than a day to solve all of Lopez Group’s troubles.

Harry and his family’s net worth also grew exponentially because the Lopez family of South City would be heading over soon.

With an ally that powerful, they didn’t need to care about Zoey anymore.

“What? Zoey is that unfilial?” Dustin growled in fury after hearing exaggerated and misleading stories from Harry and the others.

“Yeah, but this is all my fault. I did not guide her well, and that brought shame to the Lopez family.”

Harry looked like he was about to cry.

“Why didn’t you demand her to renounce her family name? Women like that have no right to use our surname!” said Dustin.

Harry complained in tears, “I have no right to do so. I could only remove her from our family tree. She would not agree to change her surname, and that bitch has risen to be a CEO by sleeping with others. We have no choice.”

Slam!

Dustin slammed his hand on the desk and growled, “Damn it! That woman brings shame to our entire family. I must force her and her family to change their surname. I will personally go after her since you lot can’t do it!”

“Also, my uncle, Sebastian, will be here soon. I want this matter solved before he reaches, so that minor issues like these don’t bother him,” added Dustin.

“What? Sebastian is coming? Thank heavens,” said Harry excitedly.

Dustin’s eyes shone with cruelty when he instructed, “You will come with me tomorrow, and we will solve this issue with Zoey together.”

The Protector Chapter 388

The Lopez family never thought they would see the day when they reached a new level.

They were under the protection of the Lopez family from South City.

That night, they were so excited that they could barely sleep.

They were all looking forward to hurting Zoey the next day.

They could finally their revenge.

The next day.

The Lopez family's fleet of cars marched proudly to Oriental Star Group.

"Excuse me, do you have a reservation?" asked the receptionist immediately when she saw the group of people coming.

"I am here to talk to Zoey Lopez!" scoffed Dustin, who was leading the way.

"Oh, you're here for Ms. Lopez? Have you made an appointment? Ms. Lopez just joined us, so she is extremely busy now," replied the receptionist with a smile.

They had seen Zoey clocking in before 7 a.m. that day.

Dustin scoffed, "As if I need an appointment to talk to her?"

“Wait, sir. You must call ahead if you want to talk to Ms. Lopez. I just looked into the system. Ms. Lopez doesn’t have any appointments with anyone today. Please do leave,” the receptionist said politely.

Slap!

Dustin suddenly slapped the receptionist.

That slap was so hard that the receptionist fell onto the floor and teared up...

Everyone was surprised.

No one thought Dustin would be that cruel.

“Security. Someone call security!”

Some spectators shouted instantly.

A group of security guards showed up soon after.

“Who’s the troublemaker?”

Dustin scoffed and instructed, “Take them down.”

The four muscular men standing behind him attacked.

Moments later, over twenty security guards were lying on the floor and groaning in pain.

Harry and the others were delighted to see that sight.

The Lopez family from South City truly was something else.

They were too cool!

They were so powerful that they didn't need to care about anything!

Dustin demanded cruelly, "Have Zoey Lopez come see me right away!"

More and more people gathered around the living room, and they stared at Dustin with their guard up.

Everyone saw just how powerful the four men with him were.

The situation became so dire that Zoey was alerted, and she and a few top managers went over.

Zoey's expression changed when she saw Harry and the others there.

"That's Zoey! That's the unfilial woman who has been tarnishing and destroying our family name."

Shaun and Melanie informed right away.

Dustin's domineering gaze turned to Zoey. "You're Zoey Lopez?"

"And you are?" asked Zoey curiously.

Shaun scoffed, "Listen up, Zoey. This is Mr. Dustin Lopez from South City, and by right, you should refer to him as grandpa. However, you are not worthy of doing so!"

"Huh? The Lopez family from South City?"

Zoey's expression changed, and her eyes shone as she had her guard up.

“Zoey Lopez, you will change your surname today. You are not allowed to keep it because your claim has been revoked!”

Dustin glared evilly at Zoey.

“Excuse me? My surname is revoked?”

Zoey refuted, “Well, it’s true that I have been removed from the family tree, but my name is Zoey Lopez, and no one can change that. The law accepts my name, and the name on my identity card and account will remain as Zoey Lopez!”

“No one can change that!”

Henry and the others stoked the fire by adding, “See? She has always been that unreasonable!”

Zoey’s attitude infuriated Dustin, and he shouted, “This is not up to you! The country has its laws, but the family has rules too! I represent the Lopez family from South City, and I say that you are changing your surname!”

The Protector Chapter 389

Zoey was angry too, and she insisted, "And I say that it will not happen! My name is Zoey Lopez, and no one can change that!"

"Fine, you forced me to do this. Guys, take her away! She will change her surname one way or another!" commanded Dustin.

The four men who had come with Dustin took Zoey away forcefully.

Oriental Star Group was in a mess.

Still, their opponent was a powerful figure from South City, so what could they do?

"This is our family's internal matter, and if anyone dares to butt in, the Lopez family from South City will show no mercy!" threatened Dustin before he left.

That frightened everyone even more.

In the end, Zoey was dragged back to the family's home.

They forced Zoey to kneel in front of the Lopez family's' ancestral hall.

"Sir, we have talked to the related departments, and Zoey's surname can be changed at any time."

Upon hearing that report, Dustin turned to Zoey and scoffed, "Pick any other surname. You are not worthy to be called a Lopez."

Zoey shook her head. "That will never happen! My name is Zoey Lopez, and I will not stand idly by even if you have the departments legally change my name. I will just change it back."

Everyone was shocked by Zoey's persistence.

"Damn you, Zoey Lopez. How dare you disregard the family rules?"

Dustin could feel his authority being challenged, and that infuriated him.

"Sir, that is how she has always been. She has never respected the Lopez family in North Hampton or in South City."

Shaun and the others kept stoking the fire from the side.

"I will order you one last time. Change your freaking surname!"

Dustin growled as he forced his anger down.

Zoey remained stubborn and ignored her safety then.

"No freaking way! You can demand a hundred times, but my answer will remain the same."

Dustin didn't look angry. Instead, he laughed and commented, "Fine then, you're being stubborn! Guys, prepare the whips in accordance with the family rules. I will hit her until she bows down!"

Dustin had just finished speaking when two of his subordinates approached with a long whip.

The more powerful a family was, the crazier and stricter their rules were.

Those in the family who disobeyed the rules would inevitably be whipped.

The whip would be so strong and harsh that its victim would need at least ten days of bed rest to recover.

Even Harry trembled at the sound of it.

He had seen the consequences of being whipped before.

One whip was sufficient to break its victim's skin and tear its victim's flesh.

Harry had seen a man suffer ten whips; he had taken a month to recover.

Harry never thought Dustin would do that to Zoey.

Zoey's stubbornness had obviously triggered Dustin, and the latter said, "I will carry that punishment out!"

Dustin took the whip and grinned like a cruel demon when he turned to Zoey.

"Zoey Lopez, you are an unfilial member of the Lopez family and have ignored our rules. You even abandoned our ancestral teaching, and as such, you will be punished."

"You will be removed from the family tree and will change your surname!" commanded Dustin cruelly.

"We will start with ten whips!"

Dustin could already see how horribly Zoey would bleed after being whipped.

Harry grew nervous then.

It didn't matter how angry or disappointed he was at Zoey.

She was still his granddaughter, and he had seen just how terrible the whips were.

Zoey would have trouble surviving if she were to be whipped ten times!

“Hang on. Let me talk to her first.”

Harry then walked to Zoey and advised, “Zoey, listen to me. Just agree to his terms. It’s just a surname, isn’t it? It’s not a big deal. You won’t be able to handle the whips.”

Zoey’s expression remained dark, and she scoffed, “Thanks, grandpa, but I will never agree to it. Come at me! I’m not afraid.”

“Then so be it!”

Dustin was extremely furious as he lifted his whip to attack Zoey.

The Protector Chapter 390

Harry was so scared that he closed his eyes.

Zoey closed her eyes too and felt hopeless as she readied to suffer through everything.

Boom!

Bang!

A surprising incident happened at that moment.

The heavy living room door had been kicked down, causing dust to fly everywhere.

Dustin was so surprised that he paused and stared stupidly.

When the dust settled, a figure walked out slowly.

“Huh? Levi?”

Shaun blurted in surprise.

When Zoey saw Levi there, she quickly broke free and rushed to him.

Sob! Sob!

Despite Zoey standing her ground earlier, she had been terrified.

Levi didn't say anything. He simply narrowed his eyes and glared at the Lopez family.

Anyone who knew Levi would be frightened because Levi was looking absolutely terrifying and cruel at that moment.

If they were on a battlefield, Levi's enemy would meet their end.

There was a saying about Levi that went, “When the God of War is angry, a million hidden soldiers will rise!”

“Are you the one who was going to hit my wife?” demanded Levi.

“Yes, that's me. You're Levi Garrison? How convenient! My uncle is coming after you too, so I will destroy you in advance. That would make an excellent gift for my uncle,” sneered Dustin.

The Lopez family from South City knew all about the notorious Levi Garrison.

That man was partially responsible for killing Quentin Lane.

He had also been there when Wesley became a cripple.

“Take him down,” ordered Dustin.

Dustin’s four subordinates walked towards Levi slowly.

“Step aside for now, honey. I’ll deal with this.”

Levi led Zoey aside.

Boom!

Levi saw one man coming at him, so he rushed forward too and punched the man’s face. That punch broke over ten of the man’s teeth and distorted half of his face.

Boom!

Another left hook swept across another man’s face.

Pfft!

The man fell down and fainted from that one punch.

Boom!

Boom!

The two remaining men were punched too and would need at least one month of bed rest.

“What? He’s that strong?”

Levi’s strength surprised everyone.

He’s that good of a fighter?

The one who was most afraid was none other than Dustin Lopez.

He knew just how powerful the four men he had brought with him were.

Dustin felt a little scared when he saw Levi approaching him.

“Do you even realize what you’re doing?”

Dustin had the whip in his hand when he warned, “Levi Garrison, you are dead because you kept challenging the Lopez family of South City! My uncle is coming all the way over just to defeat you. If you go down on your knee and beg for my forgiveness now, I might think about letting you go.”

Levi sneered.

He snatched the whip away from Dustin the very next second.

Levi checked the whip out and chuckled, “So this is the whip for carrying out the punishment? It’s quite sturdy.”

Dustin couldn’t help but sweat in fear as he scolded, “I’m warning you, Levi Garrison! Calm down! Don’t act impulsively or you and your wife will suffer dire consequences.”

Levi grinned, “I heard that you were going to whip my wife ten times. Is that right?”

“Huh? No, I...”

Whip!

Levi suddenly slashed the whip at Dustin.

One whip was all it took to tear through Dustin’s clothes and leave a deep and bloody wound.

“Ahhh!”

Dustin screamed in agony.

That painful shout got Harry and the others to back away.

Whip!

Levi whipped Dustin once more.

That second whip got Dustin’s clothes to fall from his body, and the second bloody mark on his fat body gave everybody goosebumps.

The Protector Chapter 391

“Ahhhhh!”

Dustin was rolling on the floor and screaming in pain.

Whip!

The third whip landed.

Dustin was dying of pain at that moment.

All he could feel was agony, and he had shouted so much that he lost his voice.

He felt as if his soul had left his body.

Whip!

Whip!

.....

Levi kept whipping until all ten whips had been delivered.

Dustin soon stopped screaming. His body had been so mercilessly whipped he stopped moving. He curled up in agony.

He didn't die, but everyone could tell that Dustin was basically crippled.

Those ten whips had kicked the life out of him, and he would be on bed rest for at least a year!

“How weak,” Levi scoffed before he tossed the whip aside and left.

“Quick, call the ambulance and take him to the hospital!”

Harry got nervous.

Things had gotten out of control.

Dustin was the next in line to inherit the Lopez family’s estate in South City!

Yet, he had been gravely injured in North Hampton, and Harry and the others will likely be punished harshly for what had happened.

“That Levi is too freaking stupid and brave. How dare he attack a member of the Lopez family from South City?” Shaun gaped as he grinned.

“You know, you’re right. Under these circumstances, there is no way the Lopez family from South City will let him live!”

“Right. Isn’t the famous Sebastian coming to destroy him?”

Melanie and the others were anticipating the future fight excitedly.

In the end, Dustin survived the incident, but the hospital reported that he would have a lot of complications in the future.

For example, Dustin might go into a coma and never wake up.

It was also likely Dustin would become a lunatic.

.....

Neither situation was what the Lopez family of South City wanted.

That was their next commander.

It would be a total joke if he turned into a lunatic!

The Lopez family could not accept a humiliation like that.

When the Lopez family in South City learned of what had happened, they got angry.

They announced they would avenge Dustin, even if it meant toppling the entire North Hampton.

Three men were in line to succeed and lead the next generation of the Lopez family.

Quentin had been killed.

Wesley was crippled.

And Dustin might be comatose!

Who would be okay with something like that?

The famous Sebastian was going to head to North Hampton in the following week, but he showed up the following day after hearing about what had happened.

In a backyard of a mansion in South City.

An elderly man in an old-fashioned outfit was sitting by the table, enjoying his tea.

That man was the renowned Sebastian.

There was a saying in South City that went, 'One would rather face the devil than go against Sebastian'.

That proved just how powerful and terrifying Sebastian truly was.

His title as the man who could overthrow the devil was not unfounded.

He had been cruel and bloodthirsty when he was younger, and his hands had taken countless lives.

They say that the number of people he killed was equivalent to the number of stars in the sky.

Sebastian later stepped back to settle into retirement. He would drink tea, do some gardening every day, and would go to the temple on some occasions.

He did that to be Zen and to change his violent life.

Unfortunately, he overdid it.

The incident with his godson, Quentin Lane, had turned him back to his former self.

He was even angrier after his two nephews got hurt.

"Everything is ready, sir. We can head to North Hampton tomorrow," reported Sebastian's servant, Simon.

Simon was actually a skilled fighter, too.

Sebastian sipped some tea before instructing calmly, "Go get the Black and White Guards out from prison."

"Huh? Are you sure you want to do that?" Simon trembled.

The Black and White Guards were simply too terrifying.

“Yes!”

“Okay. I will arrange for that right away,” replied Simon.

After that, Simon took a deep breath and left.

Sebastian’s fame and the fear he inspired was partially owed to the Black and White Guards.

Those two men were crueler than him; they were cannibals.

The two of them had gotten into a battle with two hundred men and won. That battle made them famous.

The Protector Chapter 392

Sebastian’s notoriety was immeasurable.

The cruel part of that notoriety was linked to the Black and White Guards.

Those were the masters of cruelty. Rumor had it that they grew up with wolves and ate raw meat every day.

They had single-handedly defeated an army of two hundred and rose to fame.

They later joined an underground boxing tournament, but they were so cruel that they were disqualified.

There was a story about how, during a match, one of them tore his opponent's rib out and used that rib to stab the guy to death.

They later joined Sebastian's team and raised hell everywhere.

They had killed so many people that there were many powerful figures and families who didn't even dare look them in the eye.

The mere mention of the Black and White Guards got people to tremble in fear.

The Black and White Guards had gotten too violent and caused a lot of trouble, so Sebastian has locked them up.

Sebastian taking the Black and White Guards to North Hampton meant that he was getting serious.

When the citizens of South City learned that the Black and White Guards were being released from prison, everyone grew nervous.

Those two being released meant that someone was definitely going to die.

The citizens sighed a breath of relief when they learned that Sebastian was taking those killers to North Hampton.

However, they started praying for North Hampton.

They wondered which unlucky bastard had angered Sebastian so much that he released the Black and White Guards.

Everyone knew that anyone who offended Sebastian would face dire consequences.

Death would've been a better option because the Black and White Guards' inhumane methods had always terrified everyone.

.....

The network in North Hampton was still pretty good.

When Glenn heard the news, he immediately went to look for Levi.

“Mr. Garrison, something bad is about to happen. Sebastian will come to North Hampton tomorrow with the Black and White Guards!”

Glenn wiped his sweat off.

“So what if they come? Why are you so scared?” chuckled Levi.

“Mr. Garrison, maybe you don’t know it, but those three are nuts! They are like a time bomb that would go off at any moment!”

“You know Liam, don’t you? He is strong and undisciplined... The ones who defeated him were Sebastian and the Black and White Guards! Liam had to go on his knees and beg them for mercy. His life was spared because of that, but they still crippled all his limbs!”

Glen took a deep breath before he continued, “The Black and White Guards are especially brutal. They killed everyone in the orphanage when they were ten, and their violent tendencies only worsen as they age. They have killed countless men, and rumor has it that they are cannibals! They’re basically demons.”

Levi laughed.

He had seen all kinds of lunatics during his time in the army.

Many places had similar ‘demons’ who had murdered thousands before, but he had defeated them all.

“Be careful, Mr. Garrison. They are here to destroy you,” Glen warned.

“Well, since they’re coming to North Hampton, then we’ll trap them here,” said Levi cruelly.

“Huh?” Glen blurted, stunned.

Isn’t this dude a little too full of it?

Trapping Sebastian and the Black and White Guards?

Glen didn’t think it was plausible, but he wasn’t in a position to say anything.

The news of how Sebastian was heading to North Hampton with the Black and White Guards had spread.

Everyone started avoiding the place, simply staying home.

Some powerful families, however, got ready to welcome the three men.

It seemed that Sebastian wasn’t just there to seek vengeance. He was also there because he was expanding into North Hampton.

The powerful families thought that if they left a good impression on Sebastian, they might benefit from it in the future.

Harry and the others stood guard at the hospital.

They were excited but also scared to hear that Sebastian was heading over.

With Sebastian there, North Hampton would practically be dominated by the Lopez family.

As such, they would benefit from it as well.

They were also afraid, though, because Sebastian might blame them for what had happened.

The Protector Chapter 393

“It’d be great if Dustin could wake up before Sebastian gets here,” sighed Shaun.

When the doctor heard that, he blurted, “I have an idea that might help with that...”

“What is it? Tell us. If it works, we will reward you handsomely,” Harry said, whose eyes lit up immediately.

The doctor replied, “A medical expert I know might be able to cure this patient, and there’s a good chance that he knows how to wake the patient up.”

“Really?” asked Harry, whose eyes shone with hope just like his family’s eyes were.

“Yes, he is definitely the top in the medical field in Erudia. However, I heard that he will be catching a plane and leaving North Hampton tomorrow,” said the doctor.

“Are you talking about Benny Quinton?” asked Fabian.

“Yeah. Who else would be that skilled?” The doctor nodded.

Harry looked troubled as he said, “But I heard that Benny Quinton no longer takes patients in. He will definitely reject our request if we ask.”

“We have to try! Sebastian will be here tomorrow.”

Harry and his family soon got to the place where Azure Dragon and Benny Quinton lived. They asked Benny to help cure Dustin, but as expected, Benny rejected their offers.

Harry and the others kept trying to come up with another solution after that.

The next day rolled by soon after.

A bunch of cars showed up in North Hampton.

The last few cars had about a dozen men in black outfits. They got out and stood at the side.

Simon drove the Rolls-Royce in the lead. He got out and circled around to open the door for Sebastian.

Sebastian was wearing a black, old-fashioned outfit, and was holding a walking cane with a dragon’s head carved on it.

He oozed a domineering aura as he scanned the place.

After that, he walked to the black luxurious car at the end.

The car seeped a chilling aura, and it shook so violently that it seemed that it might topple itself over.

“Stay in the car and do not leave until I give the say so,” instructed Sebastian. Only then did the car stop shaking.

Simon was trembling in fear because that was the car the Black and White Guards took.

If those two showed up on the street, the entire place would definitely turn upside down.

Simon later led Sebastian into the hospital, and they headed into Dustin's room.

Thump!

Harry and the others got down on their knees in front of Sebastian.

"This is all our fault, Sebastian. We did not keep Dustin safe. We were wrong, so please punish us as you see fit," cried Harry.

Sebastian scanned everyone and replied cruelly, "Get up. This has nothing to do with you. Those people are not easy to deal with, or Quentin and Wesley would not have been defeated."

Harry replied softly, "I don't dare to. Levi is my grandson-in-law, yet I did not teach him the rules. I didn't know he was that strong."

"I said, stand up!" Sebastian suddenly raised his voice.

That made Harry and the others jump up in fright.

They stopped bullshitting then.

Sebastian went to check on Dustin.

"What did the doctor say?" He asked.

"It's not good. He will not be able to wake up for the time being and might stay in a persistent vegetative state," answered Harry.

Sebastian looked devastated then.

“However, there is still hope. Benny Quinton is in North Hampton, and he is the best expert in the medical field. We asked him to come over yesterday, but he rejected our offer. His plane will be taking off today, and he should be boarding in two hours.”

Sebastian’s eyes shone with a cruel glint upon hearing that. “Simon, go get Benny Quinton over! Do not let him board that airplane.”

The Protector Chapter 394

Harry then added, “Still, you shouldn’t hold out so much hope because Benny has a rule about how he doesn’t do private calls. The God of War, Liam Macy, dragged Benny over once. Things did not end well.”

Sebastian’s eyes burned with untamed fury as he roared, “That puny Liam Macy is nothing compared to me!”

“I can hire anyone he can hire, and I am capable of convincing people he can’t convince.”

“Go get Benny Quinton over right away. He must cure my nephew!”

Simon nodded, “Understood. There isn’t a person on Earth who wouldn’t come at your command.”

“That’s right. Those who disobey me will meet an untimely end,” scoffed Sebastian.

Harry and the others trembled as they stood at Sebastian’s side.

Sebastian's aura was too strong.

Everyone felt the weight of mountains crushing on them when they heard him speak.

As such, they were all sweating then.

Simon departed immediately to get Benny Quinton.

Henry and the others started saying, "Sebastian, this is all Levi's and Zoey's fault. They are close with Nueve and Trey, and they thought they can do whatever they want because of that. They don't respect the Lopez family from South City."

"Freaking Levi Garrison. I am here just to deal with him. I don't care who he has supporting him; I will not forgive him!"

"Also, I will be staying here permanently. My plan is simple. I will make it so that everyone in North Hampton trembles in fear when they hear our name," declared Sebastian.

Harry and the others were ridiculously excited.

Was it finally their chance to shine?

It didn't matter how useless they were. Being a member of the Lopez family would be sufficient.

North Hampton would soon belong to Sebastian.

Liam Macy, Winston Gonzales, and the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce would all fall.

No one could beat Sebastian!

At that moment, Harry and the others had started fantasizing about their future.

Simon hurried over to the airport with about ten men.

Levi had personally driven the car to take Benny Quinton and his assistant to the airport.

At first, Levi wanted to use a military plane to take Benny straight to Vermont, but Benny rejected that offer.

That was how Benny Quinton was.

He was an ordinary doctor with a pure soul.

Levi kept them company until they went into the waiting lounge.

Unfortunately, a van stopped at the airport after Levi had left.

Simon and over ten men rushed into the airport.

Benny and his assistant had just gotten their boarding passes and were heading towards the gate.

However, over ten men showed up in front of them.

“Mr. Benny Quinton, please come with us!”

Simon was swift.

He never gave Benny a chance to talk before he grabbed them.

When Benny and his assistant finally came around, they were already in the van.

“Let’s go!” instructed Simon before the car departed.

At the hospital.

Benny Quinton and his assistant were forcefully dragged into the patient’s room.

Everyone turned serious and polite when they saw Benny Quinton there.

Sebastian, however, glared in disdain and scoffed, “I hate educated people like you. So pretentious.”

Benny grinned, “Then why do you insist on bringing me here?”

“Because you are a doctor who can cure patients. That is all you are worthy of!”

Sebastian pointed at Dustin, then ordered cruelly, “Treat my nephew right now! If you succeed, I will give you a total of one billion. If not... You can choose if you’d like to keep your arms or your legs.”

Sebastian’s barbaric style stunned Benny.

Liam Macy had been a powerful bully too, but even that man had shown a little respect to Benny.

The man in front of Benny was utterly despicable and unrestrained.

He looked like a madman.

The Protector Chapter 395

“No. You have your rules, but so do I,” refuted Benny.

“As I said, educated people like you are horrible. Isn’t your job to cure the sick? Why aren’t you treating him? Where is your so-called moral?” scoffed Sebastian.

“You were immoral and kidnapped me, so I have no obligations to help you,” persisted Benny.

Sebastian laughed aloud. “There are just too many ways to force your hand. Simon?”

Simon received the message immediately.

Slam!

Simon kicked Benny’s assistant to the floor.

“Arg...” The assistant cried.

“What the hell are you doing?” demanded Benny in a worried tone.

“I will cripple him if you refuse to treat the man,” said Simon as he increased the pressure on the assistant’s ankle. That prompted the assistant to shout even more.

Harry and the others were horrified when they saw that.

Sebastian was too cruel.

All he knew was to tap into his violence to solve his problems.

Benny had no choice but to nod and said, "Okay, fine. I'll treat him."

"Wouldn't it have been much better if you had just agreed to do so early on?" gloated Sebastian.

There were simply too many ways to force Benny's hand.

The cruelest among them was to lock Benny and his assistant in with the Black and White Guards.

Benny probably would've raised the white flag in under thirty seconds.

Benny and his assistant quickly dove in to treat Dustin.

"You better treat him well, or you will end up just like him!" threatened Sebastian.

After taking Benny and his assistant to the airport, Levi returned to Morris Group.

Morris Group had just expanded once more and would soon be the top enterprise in North Hampton.

Hence, many people had their eyes on them.

A tv show had even done a special interview.

Iris found Levi and scoffed, "You love to show off, don't you? Well, then here's your chance."

"Huh? Me? Showing off?" blurted Levi suspiciously.

“The North Hampton Television Network wants to do a special on Morris Group in three days. I’ve already helped you accept the invitation, so you may not bail on it.”

“These are the interview questions and other materials. Don’t embarrass me!”

Iris left after tossing a stack of documents to him.

Urk!

Levi almost vomited blood.

She is making me do an interview and show my face to everyone?

Is she f*****g kidding?

Still, he had no choice but to participate because Iris had already accepted it.

“Well, it’s for my own company, anyway,” murmured Levi before he started studying the materials.

His phone rang up at that moment.

The call was from Azure Dragon.

“I think something bad happened. The airport called and said that Mr. Quinton never boarded the plane, and we can’t find him at the airport either,” said Azure Dragon, whose voice was obviously quivering.

“What? He’s missing?” said Levi, whose expression took a sharp turn.

He had not gotten a private plane for Benny, but Levi had talked to the managers at the airport and asked them to keep an eye on him.

Benny was missing, and that meant that something must've happened.

"Investigate it immediately! Mr. Quinton must not get hurt," instructed Levi.

"According to the CCTV at the airport, someone dragged Mr. Quinton into a van," reported Azure Dragon soon after.

"Call Xavier and the people responsible for the traffic. Find out where that van went!" said Levi anxiously.

He would not let anyone go off that easily if Benny had a hair off his head!

"Got it! The van went to the hospital, and there were witnesses that claimed they saw Benny there!"

Levi stood up and announced evilly, "Okay, got it. I will personally head over to the hospital."

The Protector Chapter 396

Inside the hospital.

Benny and his assistant examined the patient thoroughly, and Benny's conclusion was that it would take Dustin a long time to recover. The treatment would go on for at least four months.

"How about this? I will take this patient with me to Vermont and will personally treat him there," suggested Benny.

Benny had a lot of work to tend to in Vermont; he couldn't stay in North Hampton.

Simon, Harry, and everyone else grinned when they heard that there was hope.

Sebastian, however, frowned and asked, "Why can't you treat him here in North Hampton?"

"Because I work in Vermont, and a lot of patients are waiting for me there," explained Benny.

Sebastian shook his head. "No! You must stay here and treat my nephew. You are not to leave or treat anyone else during this period. Focus only on my nephew, and you may leave when he is back on his feet."

"You may reject my offer, but he will have to stay, and who knows how long he'll survive?"

Sebastian was staring at Benny's assistant at that moment.

The assistant trembled in fear.

If he stayed, he would definitely be killed.

Sebastian had always been that barbaric, and he didn't give Benny a chance to say anything else.

"You..."

Benny was so frustrated that he felt as if he would explode.

He couldn't stay in North Hampton because he simply had too much to do in Vermont.

"Sir, I promise I'll revive him in Vermont. Can I please take him there?" asked Benny.

"No! There will be no further discussion. You will stay right here in North Hampton, and you will treat my nephew."

Sebastian's eyes shone with fury.

"Oh right, I just remembered that North Hampton has a private hospital. Transfer him over right away. Benny Quinton, you will come with us!" ordered Sebastian.

"I'll get started on the paperwork right away," replied Simon.

Benny was nervous then.

Is this Sebastian guy going to imprison me and force me to treat his nephew?

.....

Levi arrived at the hospital at that moment.

He paused when he saw the cars there.

However, he had not stopped because there were over ten similar cars parked in a straight line. He had stopped because he had sensed two dangerous auras seeping out of one of the cars.

There were a number of good fighters in North Hampton. Some examples would be Jack Smith's Invincible-13 who were all amazing fighters.

However, compared to the two men inside the car, all thirteen men seemed puny.

Despite all that, the aura only made Levi take one look.

He had been on the battlefield for five years, so he had seen all kinds of outstanding fighters before.

He was simply curious as to why someone like that would show up in North Hampton.

Levi was about to enter the hospital when he bumped into a group of men.

Simon had made the arrangements to transfer Dustin Lopez, and Benny was there with them.

"Mr. Quinton?" blurted Levi.

Benny sighed a breath of relief as soon as he saw Levi there.

I'll be fine with him here.

Simon looked displeased as he asked, "What's going on?"

Harry rushed over immediately and complained, "That is Levi Garrison! He whipped Dustin ten times and put Dustin in that state. He was also involved in the incidents that hurt Quentin and Wesley."

"That's right. He's Levi Garrison! You should kick his ass right away!"

"He has always been disrespectful to the Lopez family and often insulted Sebastian."

.....

Shaun and the others started bullshitting once more.

Simon became furious when he heard that. "You're responsible for this?"

The Lopez family's bodyguards all turned and glared at Levi right away.

"Yeah, I did that. You guys want Mr. Quinton to treat him? Nope, no one is allowed to treat him!"

Levi's voice sounded even, but his tone was evil.

The Protector Chapter 397

Even Simon was stunned.

There are people brave enough to be that disrespectful to the Lopez family of South City?

That was basically asking the devil himself to come to collect one's soul.

Simon and the others didn't buy it when Harry and his family bullshitted.

Meeting Levi in person showed Simon that the brat was even more arrogant than how Harry described.

"Let's go, Mr. Quinton!" said Levi.

"No one is leaving! Take them down," ordered Simon angrily.

The handful of men following his lead attacked instantly.

However, those men were no match against Levi.

It only took him a moment to knock all of them out.

"Quick, get the others over!"

Simon hurried to get more help.

However, Levi left with Benny and his assistant before Simon returned.

Levi was more than capable of defeating Sebastian, but they were at a hospital, after all. It would be bad if things escalated.

That was why Levi had taken Benny away first. Levi would deal with the other issues afterwards.

Sebastian exited the hospital with a bunch of men soon after.

Simon also returned after asking over ten men to follow him to the entrance.

“Where is he? Where is Levi Garrison?” demanded Simon.

Sebastian came as soon as he heard the news that Levi was there to rescue Benny, but he didn’t meet the man.

“Huh? That is not possible. He was here just a second ago!”

There were too many people at the entrance of the hospital, so Harry and the others couldn’t even tell when Levi had slipped away with Benny and his assistant.

“You can’t even keep an eye on one man?” reprimanded Simon.

Sebastian turned even angrier; he was on the verge of exploding.

Levi Garrison, the man who had crippled three of his successors, had taken Benny Quinton away from right under his nose!

That was an insult to Sebastian.

It embarrassed him!

He had been in North Hampton for less than a day but something that embarrassing had already happened!

Sebastian was so angry that he was going crazy.

He had always viewed his notoriety as something crucial.

Most people in Quebec would tremble in fear when they heard his name.

Yet, someone had utterly disregarded him!

He would not stand by it!

“Send our people out right away and bring me Levi Garrison and Benny Quinton!”

“If you can’t manage that, I will have the Black and White Guards take over!”

Sebastian’s eyes were burning with fury then.

Boom!

Simon’ entire body trembled.

Letting the Black and White Guards out of their cages when we have just arrived in North Hampton?

If those two monsters were released, North Hampton would be drenched in blood.

Simon was scared of it.

The others were even more terrified.

“I will send our people out right away, sir. Let’s not let the Black and White Guards loose unless it is absolutely necessary,” said Simon.

Harry got curious and asked, "Who are these Black and White Guards?"

"I'll teach you all about them if I have the time," puffed Sebastian.

For some reason, Harry could feel a chill running down his spine.

.....

On the other side.

After Levi got Benny into the car, the former got a private plane to take Benny to Vermont immediately.

Azure Dragon followed behind Levi and asked, "What do we do? Sebastian is too powerful; even Liam is not a match against him."

"Moreover, the powerful families in South City and other remarkable places are going insane and trying to get to North Hampton, too. They want to profit off of Sebastian's arrival."

"Nielson is one of those men, and he wants me to ask you if that's okay."

Levi's eyes were cruel when he answered, "Welcome anyone who is here to contribute. If they are only here to cause trouble and steal resources, then tell them to f*** off!"

Azure Dragon trembled. "Understood."

Levi lit up a cigarette and looked into the distance before he instructed nonchalantly, "As for Sebastian... I will deal with him myself!"

Azure Dragon shivered even more.

That man was truly unlucky to have inspired Levi to personally deal with the matter.

The Protector Chapter 398

Inside the Lopez family home.

Sebastian was waiting for the news.

Simon soon rushed over and reported, “Sebastian, something bad had happened. Benny Quinton has left North Hampton and has reached Vermont!”

“What?”

Sebastian jumped up.

“Those people are too much! They showed no regard for me at all,” roared Sebastian.

Simon nodded. “Levi Garrison really is freaking arrogant. He even publicly announced that he will not let anyone treat Dustin’s condition.”

“That asshole! He’s making it personal!” shouted Sebastian. He was holding a cup at the time, and a single squeeze shattered it.

Harry and the others were flabbergasted.

Sebastian is that strong? He really is an expert!

Simon looked troubled as he said, "Now that Benny Quinton is back in Vermont, there is no way we can get him back here."

"I know! There are too many experts in Vermont, and even I can't break them."

Sebastian added, "But I must make Levi Garrison pay!"

Simon quickly said, "I've looked into the matter. Levi Garrison may look like he has Nueve and Trey supporting him, but the truth was that all three of them are being supported by the mysterious man behind Morris Group."

"Morris Group? I've heard of that company. They say that aside from the Rogers family, the Morris Group is the most powerful enterprise," said Sebastian.

"What should we do?" asked Simon.

Sebastian thought about it and replied, "Host a party tonight and invite everybody who is anybody in North Hampton. I want the whole of North Hampton to know that I am here!"

"We'll have the party right here in the Lopez family's mansion in North Hampton!"

"Understood," replied Simon as he nodded.

That got Harry and the others excited.

It was their moment to shine, and that was all thanks to Sebastian.

No one in North Hampton would ever look down on them again.

The elites in North Hampton soon received their invitation.

Winston Gonzales, the four representatives of North Hampton Chamber of Commerce...

Glenn Rogers of the Rogers family, and all other wealthy families were also invited.

Even Liam Macy and the others got their invitation.

Inside the office of Morris Group.

A secretary came in and reported, "Ms. Annabelle, someone from South City has dropped by."

"What do they want?" asked Iris.

"They are here to send us an invitation card," the secretary spoke as she handed an invitation card over.

"Oh, and the man said that the invitation card must be handed to the boss," added the secretary.

Iris opened the invitation card, and it said that the invitation was from Sebastian Lopez.

The content of the invitation, however, sounded barbaric; it felt more like a royal decree than an invitation.

"Sebastian of the South City? Isn't he related to Zoey?" Iris said suspiciously.

After that, she contacted Neil to tell him about the invitation.

Neil, in turn, brought the invitation card to Levi.

"Sebastian is hosting a party today, and he has actually invited you over. Are you going?" asked Neil with a grin.

Levi smiled mysteriously and read the invitation card as he planned his next move.

.....

Everyone in North Hampton was nervous at that moment.

They knew Sebastian Lopez had suddenly travelled to North Hampton.

Worse still, there were rumors about how he had brought the gods of assassinations known as the Black and White Guards over.

It seemed that a bloody storm was inevitable in North Hampton.

What worried everyone, even more, was the fact that Sebastian seemed interested in extending his business to North Hampton.

To some, that news was devastating.

Sebastian could single-handedly force everyone in North Hampton to bow down to him, and his cruel methods horrified everyone.

He had thrown a party that night, and it seemed that his intention wasn't pure.

The Protector Chapter 399

Sebastian had thrown the party for two reasons. The first was to tell all of North Hampton that he, Sebastian Lopez, was there.

The second was to have everyone pick a side. Those who stood with him would be fine, and those who chose otherwise would die before they know it.

Harry personally looked into all the details of the party and quickly decorated the place.

When evening rolled by, many luxurious cars drove to the Lopez family's house.

Everyone who was anyone in North Hampton had shown up.

All their net worth was over ten billion, and they used to treat Harry and the others like they were nothing.

However, those same people had been bowing down to Harry and greeting him politely that day.

Harry was delighted.

He had never enjoyed a treatment like that before.

It seemed that having someone strong supporting them had made all the differences.

Shaun Lopez was having fun too. Back in the days, he was the one who had to bow down to the other wealthy kids and appease them.

Even Melanie was benefitting from all that. Many young and powerful men had approached her to chat and flirt with her.

That put Melanie on cloud nine.

“Zoey Lopez is not so great. She is nothing now!”

Henry laughed, “Yes, that’s right. I am so proud to be a member of the Lopez family.”

“Hello, Mr. Lopez.”

Winston, Eric, and a number of other elites greeted Harry.

Harry was so excited that he almost fainted.

He hadn’t even dared to fantasize about such a thing in the past.

The most powerful men in North Hampton had come to greet him!

Even one of the most popular guys in North Hampton, Glenn Rogers, had approached Harry.

When eight o’clock rolled by, almost everyone who had been invited had shown up.

Everyone sat in their seats as they waited patiently for Sebastian to show up.

Sebastian got out of a locked room inside the Lopez family’s house at that moment.

The locked room rang up with roars.

The men making those noises sounded grouchy and scary.

The cold aura spewing out of that room made everyone shiver in fear.

Simon warned Fabian, “Remember to keep an eye on this door. Do not open it, or you’ll die before you know it.”

“Understood,” replied Fabian.

He had no idea what was locked in there, but given how Simon had warned him, he was certain that whatever’s inside was horrifying.

Unfortunately, the more scared Simon was, the more curious Fabian got.

Fabian stood nervously by the door, and he peeped through the small window.

One look was all it took.

“Ah!”

Fabian was so scared that he fell backwards.

No one knew what he saw through that window, but he shouted fearfully, and he turned pale while dripping with sweat.

After that, he hurried out of there...

That night, everyone waited in the party hall.

“Sebastian Lopez is here.”

Everyone stood up to welcome him.

Sebastian exuded an extremely powerful aura and his gaze was enough to get everyone trembling.

If the legendary Black and White Guards were to show up too, everyone would be even more frightened.

Everyone knew Sebastian being there meant that North Hampton was pretty much his.

It would be extremely difficult to live with him because he would not share any of his resources with anyone.

“Sebastian,” greeted Winston and the other men who were sitting at the front.

Sebastian swept his gaze across them before he scoffed and asked, “Who’s the head of Morris Group?”

The entire place turned quiet after Sebastian spoke.

Everyone looked to one another, but no one dared to answer.

“So? Where are the people from Morris Group?” asked Sebastian with a smile.

“Sebastian, um, the people from Morris Group never showed up,” someone piped up.

Sebastian narrowed his eyes, and a terrifyingly cruel glint shimmered past his eyes.

“Who said that the people from Morris Group aren’t here?”

A voice suddenly rang out.

The Protector Chapter 400

Everyone turned around.

All they saw was a team of uniformed security guards walking in.

The one leading them over was Seth, the head of security.

He had a rolled-up scroll with him.

“Huh?”

Everyone was stunned.

All other companies and family had sent their best and brightest as their representatives, but Morris Group had sent a group of security guards instead.

That was such an arrogant move.

It seemed like they weren't afraid of Sebastian at all.

“Interesting.” grinned Simon.

Sebastian narrowed his eyes, but he laughed, “Morris Group really is something else for sending their security guard over.”

Seth stood forward and grinned before he said, “Sebastian, please allow me to introduce myself. I am Seth Wilson and am the head of security for Morris Group. My employer has asked me to send you a scroll with some words on it.”

Everyone gasped in shock when they heard that.

Morris Group's arrogance was ridiculous!

They had sent the head of the security guards as if someone of that rank was all Sebastian's invitation was worth?

They were blatantly challenging Sebastian!

No one, not even the ones with inside knowledge, knew what game Morris Group was playing.

Glenn, for example, was totally clueless.

He was a little worried about Levi's challenge going over the board and things spiraling out of control.

Sebastian and the Black and White Guards were lunatics, after all, and if they were cornered, they would do something crazy.

"You are nothing but a freaking security guard, yet you dare to talk to Sebastian? Drop-dead, asshole."

Shaun already hated Seth, so the former wanted to use Sebastian's power to destroy the latter.

"Guards! Come and cripple these idiots!" shouted Henry angrily.

"Hang on...."

Sebastian spoke up, "I'm curious and would like to see what the head of Morris Group has gotten for me."

"Go get it."

Upon hearing that, Simon walked forward to take the scroll from Seth.

“We will take out leave now,” replied Seth before he turned around to leave.

Shaun wanted to stop Seth, but Simon glared at him.

The Lopezes had no choice but to watch as Seth and the other security guards walked away.

Simon brought the scroll to Sebastian.

“Open it and see what’s inside,” instructed Sebastian, who was curious.

Simon’s long arm held the scroll as it rolled down.

Boom!

Everyone was stunned when they saw the content of the scroll.

A pin-drop silence fell over the room.

Their jaws dropped because the content was simply that surprising.

Sebastian sensed that something was off, so he walked around to look at the scroll.

Sebastian almost died of high blood pressure and anger when he saw it.

The scroll read, “F*****g Leave North Hampton!”

That was absolutely barbaric!

Turned out, sending the security guards over wasn’t the only arrogant act they had prepared.

The true display of arrogance was what happened next.

No one had ever blatantly demanded Sebastian to leave a place before.

In fact, Sebastian had been in that industry for several decades, but he had never been treated that way before.

“Destroy Morris Group!”

Simon and the Lopez family’s security guards could not hold it in anymore.

They wanted to crush Morris Group then and there.

Simon suddenly realized why Levi had acted so freaking arrogantly.

How could he not be arrogant when he had a boss who acted like that supporting him?

Everyone sitting opposite the stage had their heads down. They were waiting for the inevitable storm.

Infuriating Sebastian Lopez was a terrifying thing to do.

The river would run red with blood, and mountains of bones would rise...

It seemed that a bloody storm was heading for North Hampton.

Sebastian turned to everyone else and asked, “What do you guys know about the head of Morris Group?”

“He’s very mysterious and has never shown his face before. Even his subordinate, Neil, rarely shows up.”

“However, he is probably extremely powerful because he was able to compete against the North Hampton Chamber of Commerce and the Gonzales family.”

.....

Everyone chimed in.

“And what do you think, Mr. Gonzales?” asked Sebastian.

The Protector Chapter 401

“I suggest Sir to retreat out of North Hampton immediately. Your safety is of utmost importance. That man is not someone you can afford to cross.”

The moment Winston finished speaking, everyone froze, including Sebastian.

What? You’re asking me to leave North Hampton?

“Yes. The North Hampton Chamber of Commerce agrees with Winston. North Hampton is vastly different from what you’ve imagined. You might die here,” Robinson and the other three said.

In the end, even Liam chimed in, “That’s right. You can’t afford to cross that man!”

The three powerful men of North Hampton were persuading him not to stay.

Their words were shocking.

Winston and the rest would not have said something like this in the past.

However, after seeing the contents of the painting Seth had shown them, they realized what that man's intentions were.

If Sebastian insisted on attacking North Hampton, he was doomed for death.

Sebastian and the rest were staring at the speakers in shock.

I can't afford to cross the Morris Group?

Is this a joke?

Other than one man in Quebec, there was no one Sebastian could not afford to cross.

Moreover, that man was now in South City, not North Hampton.

"Oh, I see."

Abruptly, Sebastian laughed.

He finally understood why the people of North Hampton did not want him to stay; he was intruding upon their territory.

That was why these people were using the boss of Morris Group to pressure him to leave.

However, he refused to do as they say.

The more he could not afford to cross him, the more he wanted to try.

This piece of cake in North Hampton had to be his.

He was going to destroy the Morris Group and kill Levi Garrison.

Not even God could stop what Sebastian wanted to do.

Looking at the crowd, Sebastian sneered, “The theme for this banquet is simple. I’ll expand my territory into North Hampton along with everyone. If you trust me, give me a sign. From now on, your business is my business.”

Sebastian’s words were simple to understand.

He wanted everyone present to pick sides.

The time had come.

Everyone’s hearts skipped a beat.

Liam, Winston and Eric were the first to express their stances. “We’ve retired. We no longer participate with any disputes in North Hampton.”

“Very well. And the others?”

Sebastian looked at the rest.

“I choose to follow Mr. Lopez.”

“Me too!”

.....

Everyone was quick and in a hurry to stand on Sebastian’s side.

“I choose to be neutral.”

“Same!”

.....

A portion of the men decided to pick no sides.

In the end, the three wealthy families that had the same standing as the Rogers family—Jenkins, Welch and the Hardy family had chosen to be neutral.

After all, their families had tens of billions. They could expand their territories by themselves.

Upon hearing these three men's choices, Sebastian became upset.

His expression frightened the rest.

Sebastian might not go against them, but their happy days would be numbered.

Soon, each family had expressed their stances.

Half had chosen to follow after Sebastian, and most chose to be neutral.

"Who's next?" Sebastian asked.

Everyone turned to look at Glenn.

The only one who had not expressed their stance was him.

"Mr. Glenn Rogers, what is your answer? I know you're powerful now. Please pick your decision wisely," Sebastian laughed.

Glenn knew what he meant.

No matter which decision he made, he would remain as Sebastian's ultimate archenemy.

Now, the decision he would make was important.

It was time for him to pick sides.

If he chose to be neutral, Sebastian would not target him.

However, he would not pick neutral, and neither would he choose to follow after Sebastian.

“I choose to stand on Morris Group’s side.”

The Protector Chapter 402

A chorus of gasps sounded out.

The moment Glenn’s words left his mouth, the crowd fell silent.

Next were the sounds of people drawing in their breaths.

Their eyes were close to popping out of the sockets as they stared at Glenn in shock.

Everyone could barely believe their ears. A third choice had been voiced out.

They could not believe that someone had chosen to side with the Morris Group, which was Sebastian’s archenemy.

It was as if Glenn was courting for death.

Sebastian's terrifying gaze landed on Glenn, and it sent a shudder down his spine.

Now, terror had gripped tight onto him.

"I'll ask you one more time. What is your choice?" Sebastian repeated his question in a deep voice.

Anyone who was not blind nor deaf would realize that Sebastian was angry.

The continuous provocation had made Sebastian furious.

The trembling of Glenn's body was evident.

However, he would not change his decision.

That was because standing on Morris Group's side meant that he was standing on Levi's troops' side.

Levi's the God of War!

No matter how impressive you are, Sebastian, you can never surpass the God of War.

The reason behind him being number one in North Hampton was because he was a follower of Levi.

If not for him, the Rogers family would have been bankrupted long ago.

This was the time for him to express his loyalty to Levi.

"I repeat my answer. I choose to stand with the Morris Group. Whoever is the enemy of the Morris Group will be the Rogers family's enemy," Glenn declared.

No one could understand Glenn's decision.

They thought, Even if you don't want to follow after Sebastian, you can choose to be neutral.

Why do you have to go against Sebastian?

Do you have a death wish?

"Alright, alright," Sebastian said.

Even he was stunned by Glenn's answer.

He thought that everyone in North Hampton would bow to him the moment he commanded them to.

Yet, it was only his first day here and he was already provoked several times.

Levi had humiliated him.

The Morris Group had forced him.

The Rogers family had chosen to go against him.

.....

This was humiliating!

Sebastian's pride was destroyed in a blink of an eye.

Fury!

It was an unrestrainable fury!

Sebastian laughed, “Has everyone forgotten about me because I haven’t come here for a long time?”

“We wouldn’t dare!”

The crowd was shocked.

Sebastian said to Simon, “Simon, it seems like we need to do something to remind them that I hold the title of Hades.”

Simon nodded, “Sir, I’ll arrange for it immediately.”

Their conversation scared the living daylights out of the crowd.

Sebastian was about to make his move.

Even Glenn was afraid.

He doubted he would be able to leave the Lopez family’s estate alive tonight.

Henry and Shaun took the opportunity to sneer, “You have no fear of death! Did you have to force him to do this?”

Sebastian walked towards Glenn and patted his shoulders. “Don’t be scared. I won’t kill you tonight. In near future, I’ll show you why your choice is a mistake.”

At the end, when Glenn left the Lopez family’s estate, his clothes were soaked with cold sweat.

The remaining left with pounding hearts.

Everyone knew that for North Hampton, tonight was destined to be a sleepless night.

After the people had left, Sebastian narrowed his eyes and announced, "We'll deal with Nueve and Trey tonight!"

"Assign Black and White Guards on it," Sebastian added.

Simon drew a sharp breath.

He knew that Sebastian was serious about it this time.

Harry and the rest exchanged a look. They knew what the Black and White Guards were.

They must be what was kept in the forbidden room.

Fabian, who had seen them personally, started perspiring in fear.

The Protector Chapter 403

When he thought back of that scene, his knees went weak.

.....

Levi knew what had happened at the Lopez family's estate.

"That coward Glenn actually stood on Morris Group's side!" Levi laughed.

"No matter how cowardly he is, he knows how powerful the God of War is," Azure Dragon chuckled.

Kirin added, "I'm afraid Sebastian will be exacting his revenge maniacally now. That man is a lunatic!"

"The faster he makes his move, the earlier he dies," Levi chortled.

Sebastian Lopez was not worth his attention.

Recently, Nueve and Trey were giddy with delight.

They had abandoned the terrible things in their past.

Now, they were focused on their businesses, hoping to contribute to North Hampton.

Moreover, they were in collaboration with several other successful businessmen. They frequently had discussions on methods of business expansion.

Most of their businesses were involved with bars and karaoke clubs.

Tonight, at Crown Karaoke, Nueve, Trey, and five other businessmen were in a meeting.

Right then, screams traveled into their ears from the corridor.

Nueve and Trey's men were lying scattered across the corridor.

As the karaoke room was soundproofed, Nueve and the rest did not hear the screams.

Bang!

Right then, the door to the room was kicked open.

A group of people entered.

"Who are you?"

When Nueve and the rest recognized none of the intruders, they became wary and stood up defensively.

"Neuve? Trey?" The leading man asked.

"That's right. Who are you? What are you doing here?" Neuve hissed.

No one in North Hampton dared to provoke him.

"There are two people who wish to meet you," the man replied as he laughed.

"Who wants to meet us?"

Nueve's curiosity grew.

Just then, the dozens of men by the door moved to the sides, leaving a space in the middle.

With the sounds of footsteps, two men came in.

One in black, and the other in white.

When Nueve saw them, the color drained from his face. His voice trembled.
“What? B- Black and White Guards...”

Nueve had lived a life in the underground society for decades.

He had heard of the Black and White Guards.

However, he did not expect these two gods of death to look for him.

“Black and White Guards?” Trey shrieked.

The Black and White Guards were taboos.

There was no good ending for those who encountered them.

“Let’s fight till the end. We have no other way!” Nueve hissed.

Sebastian’s guards went out, leaving the Black and White Guards in the room.
When they left the room, they locked the door.

“Ugh!”

“Argh!”

Agonizing wails traveled out of the karaoke room.

Even Sebastian’s men had cold sweat beading on their foreheads when they heard the screams.

They could not imagine the bloodbath that was going on in the room.

They could not imagine what torture Nueve and Trey was experiencing.

Indeed, the room had turned into hell.

The screams continued for half an hour.

Finally, the Black and White Guards exited.

Both men's hands were covered in blood, and they were sucking it as if they did not want to waste even a drop.

That night, that place in North Hampton had gone through its worst history.

In one night, Sebastian had shown the people of North Hampton the definition of cruelty and the weight of Hades' arrival.

It was an act too cruel.

Excluding the countless deaths and injuries, many had their bones simply removed from their bodies.

“Levi, bad news. Sebastian went to settle off Nueve and his gang last night. Countless are dead and severely injured. Even Nueve and Trey are on the verge of death!”

Early in the morning, Azure Dragon came with horrible news.

“What? They actually dared to make a move?”

Levi was stunned.

The Protector Chapter 404

“Yes. Sebastian is a madman!”

Azure Dragon sighed, “Apparently, he has two terrifying subordinates who are ruthless. Many were bitten to death. Although Nueve and Trey had many men with them, they were no match for those two.”

“They must be the Black and White Guards that Glenn mentioned,” Levi mumbled.

“Do you remember Chopper?”

Levi nodded.

Chopper had been a great help to him.

“Chopper died from blood loss after the Black and White Guards sucked out his blood while he was alive,” Azure Dragon told him the terrifying truth.

“Hm.”

Levi looked calm, but on the inside, anger was boiling.

“Let’s visit Nueve.”

When they reached the hospital, they saw Neuve and Trey swaddled in bandages.

With one glance, Levi knew how terrible last night had been for them.

“Neuve has 87 broken bones and 105 cuts on him. Trey has 76 broken bones, and he has 88 cuts.”

Azure Dragon informed Levi of their injuries.

“It seems like it’s a miracle that they survived. They can only live as a cripple from now on,” the doctor explained.

Azure Dragon whispered to Levi, “Sir, I think the Black and White Guards intentionally left Nueve and Trey alive. It’s a warning for us.”

Levi nodded. “Yes, I’ve noticed. They have more than a hundred wounds, but each cut avoided the vital points. It seems like those two are quite impressive.”

“How cruel,” Azure Dragon gritted out.

“If we don’t deal with them, they might end up hurting Ms. Lopez. That’s a consequence we don’t want to think about.”

Kirin suggested, “Let me deal with this.”

Levi shook his head. “No need. It’s time for White Tiger to exercise a little.”

“Huh? White Tiger?”

Azure Dragon and Kirin were bewildered.

He was a man with a great reputation and influence.

White Tiger, the King of War, had a nickname on the battlefield— War Machine.

That title was the nightmare of many enemies.

That was because White Tiger was a maniac and also the devil of the battlefield.

In the Five Great Wars Regiment, he was the best fighter.

Once, White Tiger had fought his way out of tens of thousands of enemies without a scratch on him.

In that battle, he had killed over six thousand people all by himself. That battle was the one where his reputation was established.

However, he was the cruelest and most controversial one.

As long as White Tiger made a move, his opponent will die. There were no other options for them.

Once, he murdered tens of thousands of prisoners, and he nearly went to the military court.

Hence, that was why Levi had made him stay low for such a long time.

Every time White Tiger made a move, a disaster ensued.

“Yes. It’s time for him to act.”

Levi was determined.

.....

Sebastian’s act of sending out the Black and White Guards to create a bloodbath in the underground world frightened everyone.

Sebastian’s title as the Hades had returned overnight.

People from all corners of North Hampton were trembling in terror.

They were scared that they would be his next target.

After all, the enemy was in the shadows.

Glenn was distressed.

The entire Rogers family was feeling dreadful.

Last night, it had been Nueve and Trey.

The next in line would definitely be the Rogers family.

Glenn started sobbing.

He could not cross both sides.

Crossing either side would result in death.

They thought that the Rogers family had finally reached their prime, but now they were facing an impossible obstacle.

At the Lopez family's estate.

Sebastian was satisfied with the reactions of the people in North Hampton.

"Violence is needed for them to feel fear. If not, there's always someone who's trying to provoke me," Sebastian sneered.

"Who should I deal with next?" Sebastian contemplated.

The Protector Chapter 405

Henry stepped forward and uttered, "Sir, I have a suggestion. It's a plan that will kill two birds with one stone."

"Speak your mind. If it's satisfactory, I'll reward you for it," Sebastian said.

"Glenn Rogers has a granddaughter named Abigail Rogers. Moreover, Abigail Rogers is Levi's sister-in-law, and they're close to each other," Henry cackled.

Upon hearing this, Sebastian's eyes gleamed.

"Wonderful! Simon, bring Abigail to me," he instructed.

"Yes, Sir."

Sebastian then turned toward Henry. "You have quite a lot of ideas. Follow me from now on."

"Thank you, Sir, for this honor."

Henry immediately got to his knees and kneeled to Sebastian.

If he followed Sebastian, his life in North Hampton would be easy.

Abigail was currently doing an internship in market research.

In the evening, when she and her classmates were about to return home, several large men came towards them.

"Ms. Rogers, please come with us."

Instantly, one of the women started dragging her away.

“What? I don’t know you.”

Abigail had a displeased look on her face.

Among Abigail’s classmates were her admirers. They swiftly intervened.

“What are you all trying to do?”

A few tall classmates stepped in front of Abigail to protect her.

Smack!

Smack!

.....

Their answers were in the form of a punch. Instantly, their faces were bloodied and their noses were broken.

Abigail was taken away as the others watched.

Levi was drinking tea in the Morris Group’s office.

Right then, Seth Wilson, the leader of the security team, called.

“Levi, bad news! The Lopez family said that your sister-in-law is in their hands. If you don’t reach the Lopez family’s estate by twelve, Abigail will be handed to the Black and White Guards,” reported Seth anxiously.

“What? Abigail’s been caught? They must have a death wish!” Levi fumed.

He had sent his men to protect Zoey, but he had not thought the possibility of Abigail being caught.

It would be horrendous if Abigail ended up in the Black and White Guards' hands.

From what he heard, the Black and White Guards were not only cruel executioners, but they were also perverts.

On the other side, Glenn Rogers had also received news of Abigail's capture.

Glenn was in a panic; this was his beloved granddaughter.

In the evening, at the Lopez family's estate, Abigail was locked in a room.

However, there were sounds and movements from the other side of the room. It was as if there were two pacing beasts breathing heavily.

Fortunately, there was a window between the two rooms, and both sides could see each other.

When Abigail looked through the window and saw the two beasts, she shrieked in horror.

One was dressed in black, and the other was dressed in white. Both men had far too much hair on them to look human.

Not only were their arms and legs covered in thick hair, but their faces were also hairy.

They looked like savages.

The two men had grown up in a pack of wolves. Their habits and behaviors were similar to those of a wolf.

The two were baring their teeth at Abigail, and she could smell the pungent scent of blood.

Their eyes were the eyes of beasts. One look and Abigail was crying out of horror.

Sebastian went to the forbidden room and smiled. "This girl is your reward. After you've enjoyed her thoroughly, help me kill her later."

"Hmm."

The Black and White Guards nodded as they eagerly looked at Abigail.

"No! Don't!"

Abigail knew what was coming next, but Sebastian was already gone.

Before he left, he threw the keys to the two men.

Clang!

The Black and White Guards swiftly unlocked the door.

The Protector Chapter 406

The two beasts quickly opened Abigail's door and rushed in.

She closed her eyes in despair.

"Levi, save me, please..."

Levi's face emerged in Abigail's mind.

Just as the Black and White Guards were about to pounce on Abigail, they suddenly stopped.

Slowly, they turned their heads to look.

Nearby, there was a man in green military attire. His cap blocked his face.

The only thing they could see was that he had a cigarette between his lips, and he was taking a long drag.

He beckoned the Black and White Guards.

Cracking sounds came from the joints of the Black and White Guards.

Both were looking at that man in excitement.

Their eyes were an eerie green, and it was as if they had turned into wolves.

The sense of danger which that man exuded made them interested.

That man was White Tiger.

He had finally stepped into the sun after arriving in North Hampton a few months earlier.

Whoosh!

In the next second, the Black and White Guards charged.

They struck out as swift as lightning.

It was as if two wolves were charging towards White Tiger.

Like claws, Black Guard swung his hands at White Tiger.

However, White Tiger was as quick as them; he dodged it easily.

He then grabbed Black Guard's waist and slammed his knee onto the other man's body.

Crack!

A blow from his knee broke Black Guard's back.

"Ow—"

Black Guard howled like a beast as he collapsed on the floor, unmoving.

His spine was broken.

It was now impossible for him to muster any strength at all.

Instantly, White Guard's attack came too. Swiftly, White Tiger tilted to the side to dodge it. Before White Guard could attack again, White Tiger had already restrained his arms and in one move, he bent them.

Crack!

Crack!

.....

Both of White Guard's arms were torn out from their sockets by White Tiger. He threw the arms onto the floor, where they still wiggled.

Abigail was terrified by the scene, but she could not tear her eyes off it.

"Close your eyes!"

A voice traveled into her ears and made her feel at ease.

"Levi, you're finally here!"

Abigail jumped into Levi's arms and hugged him.

The Black and White Guards were looking at White Tiger in disbelief.

Never in their life had they encountered a man as skilled as him.

It was incredulous!

White Tiger looked at the two and shook his head in disappointment.

To him, these two were too easy of an opponent.

He had thought that a skilled fighter was waiting for him, but he ended up meeting two pieces of trash.

Instead of leaving immediately, White Tiger kept stepping from left to right and vice versa.

When the Black and White Guards noticed it, they wailed.

They saw thin threads encircling every part of their body.

These thin threads were deadly and sharp. A gentle touch of them would make the fingers bleed.

No!

What he's about to do is...

When the Black and White Guards realized what White Tiger was doing, they were terrified.

This was the first time they had felt fear in their lives.

This was the first time they had met someone who was stronger and crueler than them.

White Tiger walked forward as both of his hands held onto a thin thread each.

Pft!

He tugged his hands back. The threads straightened and glided through the Black and White Guards' bodies.

Without another sound, the Black and White Guards were dead.

Moreover, their bodies were sliced into multiple pieces.

In the end, when they left, Levi carried Abigail on his back as White Tiger followed behind them. On his face was a look of dissatisfaction.

In the Lopez family's living room.

Sebastian was still sipping on his tea and waiting for the news.

"Is Levi too scared to come now?" Simon questioned.

Henry laughed, "He must be. Levi would not risk his life to save someone like Abigail."

The Protector Chapter 407

"Hahaha! Isn't Levi a cocky man? What's wrong? He's afraid now?"

Even Sebastian was laughing.

Simon chuckled along, "Sir, it's mostly because what happened last night was too terrifying. Now, the entire North Hampton is afraid of you. How does Levi dare to come?"

Just then, Glenn brought the Rogers family to the Lopez family's estate.

"Hahaha! It's the grandfather. He's here. Levi is indeed a coward!" Sebastian guffawed.

Trembling, Glenn said, “Mr. Lopez, come at me if you dare. You’re just a coward if you take my granddaughter.”

“That’s right. We’ll agree with anything you want. Let Abigail go,” Anthony and Leo said.

“I only have one principle—I will not let anyone who’s related to you go,” Sebastian uttered.

As if realizing something, Glenn paled. “Y- You didn’t do anything to Abigail, did you?”

“Hahaha! I don’t know. I left her with the Black and White Guards.”

A cruel smile grew upon Sebastian’s lips.

“Y- You’re an animal!”

Glenn was infuriated.

“Take us there now!” Anthony urged.

“Yes. Let’s go and take a look. What a shame the cowardly Levi isn’t here.”

Sebastian felt somewhat regretful about it.

The group came to the spot behind the Lopez family’s estate.

“If everything’s going smoothly, the Black and White Guards must be playing with Abigail right now,” Sebastian crowed.

However, they had only taken a few steps before they stopped.

When Sebastian saw the pieces of Black and White Guards strewn across the bloody floor, he was stupefied.

“Is this... the Black and White Guards?”

Despite their separated states, Sebastian recognized them.

After all, their attires were distinguishable from the others.

Boom!

The scene was a bolt out of the blue for Simon and the rest.

The Black and White Guards are dead?

How can this be?

They're powerful beings!

There is barely anyone in South City who's a match for them.

How can they die in North Hampton?

And in a cruel way like this too!

Glenn and his party did not care about the Black and White Guards. They rushed into the room, but Abigail was long gone.

They let out sighs of relief.

Evidently, Abigail had been rescued by someone.

In the next second, the call they received from Abigail reassured them completely.

Outside, the Lopez family was silent.

It was some news too shocking for them.

There's someone in North Hampton that can wipe out the Black and White Guards?

Sebastian and Simon exchanged a look.

The person they immediately thought of was the mysterious boss of Morris Group.

Glenn sneered, "Do you know how powerful the North Hampton is now? That man is someone you can't afford to cross."

Upon hearing Glenn's words, Sebastian shuddered.

A look of disbelief flashed past his eyes.

No wonder Winston and Liam were persuading him the other day; he really could not afford to cross him.

At the very least, while he was on North Hampton soil, he could not cross him.

Glenn gleefully said, "Mr. Lopez, I'll give you a chance now. Kneel at the Morris Group's office for the entire night. Perhaps that man will let you off the hook."

"Impossible! How could I bow to him?"

Sebastian immediately instructed, "Simon, take your things. We're returning to South City. Any later, and we won't be able to go back."

No one expected the situation to end up like this. Sebastian had come to North Hampton with a grand entrance but now he was leaving in a such flurry.

He knew what the consequences of his prolonged stay were, so he was swift to leave.

The news of Sebastian's departure reached Levi's ears.

“Ha. Does he think he can come and go as he pleases? If he's here, he'll have to stay in North Hampton forever.”

The Protector Chapter 408

“Understood.”

Azure Dragon and Kirin shared a look.

By now, Sebastian, Simon and the rest of his gang were already out of the metropolitan area of North Hampton.

They were rushing their way towards South City.

“We’re finally out of North Hampton,” Sebastian heaved a sigh of relief.

He was fearful of actually dying in North Hampton.

That man is too ruthless.

He managed to deal with tough opponents like the Black and White Guards.

Sebastian knew that if he continued his stay, only death awaited him.

Since his opponent was so strong, he chose to avoid him.

“I’ll remember what Morris Group has done. I’m coming back after I get help from South City!”

It was impossible for Sebastian to let this matter go.

“Sir, I think something’s wrong.”

Simon's instincts were sounding the alarms in his mind. It felt as if something bad was going to happen anytime soon.

"Don't worry. No one can come after us here," Sebastian sneered.

Fwoosh!

Right then, the driver pulled the brakes abruptly and nearly threw Sebastian and the rest out of the car.

The road in front of them was blocked.

Sebastian's fleet of cars was forced to come to a stop.

"What's going on?" Sebastian urgently asked.

Right then, a group of shadows appeared from behind the roadblocks.

The man in lead was James.

They had been waiting in this spot for a long time.

"Mr. Sebastian Lopez, since you're here, why don't you stay forever? Why are you leaving?" James said with an accent.

"Get rid of them!"

The look in Sebastian's eyes turned cold.

The bodyguards of the Lopez family charged forward.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

However, they were worlds apart in skills from mercenaries like James.

Soon, the bodyguards of the Lopez family were all on the ground.

Sebastian and Simon looked at James and his men in shock.

Knowing that he was disadvantageous in the situation, Sebastian surrendered instantly.

“Take them with us!”

In the end, James brought the escaping Sebastian back to North Hampton.

They came to a villa in North Hampton.

In the villa, a group of people was staring at him.

Shakily, Sebastian asked, “What are you trying to do? I want to meet with the boss of Morris Group.”

Kirin laughed, “You want to meet my boss? You have no right!”

“W- Who are you?”

Sebastian warily looked at Levi.

“Neil Atkinson.”

“What? Neil Atkinson?”

Sebastian was stunned after hearing his words.

Neil Atkinson was only a step away from the most mysterious figure he had ever heard.

“What are you going to do to me?”

Sebastian panicked.

Neil laughed, “I’m going to give you a chance...”

“What chance?”

Neil’s smile widened. “A chance for you to stay alive. How much do you think your life is worth?”

Wham!

Comprehension crashed into Sebastian’s mind.

The worth of his life was now calculable in money.

Neil had the intention to get a large sum of money from him.

Sebastian knew that if he refused, he would not live to see the next morning.

“A...”

Sebastian was about to say a hundred million when Neil interrupted, “I heard that you’re a prominent figure in South City, aren’t you? I’m sure you’re worth at least billions.”

Bastard!

Sebastian’s fists were clenched tight as he cursed in his heart.

Neil is outrageously greedy!

“What about this? Ten billion. An amount fitting for someone like you. I’m sure that won’t be a problem, will it?”

The smile on Neil’s face was as sly as a fox.

“You-”

Sebastian was close to exploding in anger.

Ten billion!

He wants ten billion!

The Morris Group is too greedy!

Simon was shaking in rage, but he could not do anything about it.

“Hm? Do you think your life isn’t worth ten billion?”

Neil’s expression changed as a murderous aura began to exude from him.

It made the hair on the back of Sebastian’s neck stand up. He felt as if he was a rabbit watched by a fox.

The Protector Chapter 409

He knew Neil was warning him that if he could not fork out ten billion, he was as good as dead.

After looking at Simon for a moment, Sebastian relented.

“Alright. I’ll give you ten billion, but you have to let me go.”

Neil nodded. “No problem. As long as you give us exactly ten billion, it won’t be worth it for us to take your crappy life.”

“Pft-”

Sebastian nearly spat blood in the midst of his fury.

Not only was he blackmailed of ten billion, but he also had to endure humiliation.

“Simon, transfer the money to them now.”

Swiftly, Simon and Elena transferred ten billion to the Morris Group.

Neil chuckled, “Mr. Lopez, you’re welcome to visit us at North Hampton again. Thank you for your contribution.”

Crash!

Sebastian stumbled and fell onto the floor.

He was at the worst moment of his life.

Sebastian had come to North Hampton with such grandeur and he left in three days.

The Black and White Guards were permanently left behind in North Hampton, and so was his ten billion.

The news quickly spread.

People from all parts of Quebec were shocked when they received the news.

Even Sebastian Lopez, Hades, was kicked out in such a sorry state?

Is North Hampton that horrifying of a place?

Haven't the three prominent figures in North Hampton collapse?

Is there another frightening presence in North Hampton?

More and more powerful families started observing in silence.

They had slowly come to realize that North Hampton, as great as it was, was not an easy piece of cake to get.

No one was capable of rising in North Hampton unless they were obedient to the rules and sincere in contributing to North Hampton. Otherwise, they would all end up like Sebastian Lopez.

This was Sebastian's greatest humiliation in life.

Everyone knew that Sebastian would not let the matter go.

One day, he would return to North Hampton to take his revenge.

.....

The one who had planned to take ten billion from Sebastian was naturally Levi.

“Sir, we have ten billion now. What do we do with it?” Kirin and Elena queried.

“Invest it all into North Hampton’s development. Firstly, set up a foundation to allocate the funds to help those in need. Secondly, build more nursing homes, orphanages and free schools. Thirdly, invest the money in the poorer areas of North Hampton for its development, like their agricultural products,” Levi instructed.

After listening, Kirin and Elena’s eyes lit up.

Levi’s mind was at a level that they could not dream of reaching.

They had thought that Levi would use the ten billion for the development of Morris Group.

Elena worriedly said, “Mr. Garrison, Sebastian would definitely come back. He’s not one to take such losses quietly.”

Levi huffed in laughter as he held onto his cigarette.

“That’s great. It won’t only be ten billion next time. Honestly, I hope idiots like Sebastian come more often. It’s a great help for North Hampton’s development.”

“Pft-”

Kirin and Elena nearly spat blood when they heard his words.

If his words were heard by the prominent figures in South City, they might just die from a heart attack.

No one in North Hampton had thought that Sebastian would leave the place as disheveled as he was.

The one who benefited most from his departure was the Rogers family.

That night when they went against Sebastian, everyone had thought that it was the end for the Rogers family.

However, the loser turned out to be Sebastian.

After defeating Sebastian, the Rogers family and Morris Group's shares soared.

Now, both of them were the pillars of North Hampton.

On this day, Levi had just arrived in the company when Iris came to him.

"Quick. Prepare yourself. You have a press conference in a moment. Tidy yourself up to look livelier later."

Iris handed him a suit.

However, Levi did not wear it.

He did not see the need to.

Soon, the reporters arrived.

"Huh? Why is it you? Levi?"

The Protector Chapter 410

The pretty reporter was stunned as she blurted out her question.

Levi rubbed his eyes and took a good look at her.

Now, he remembered.

The pretty reporter in front of him was the young intern that joined North Hampton Television Network six years ago.

Back then, she had interviewed Morris and him.

Levi remembered that this young reporter was no honest woman.

Her attempts to seduce him had failed. She then tried to seduce Morris, but failed as well.

In the end, Levi reported her to her superior.

She was penalized, and her internship was canceled. From then on, she was blacklisted from the television station.

Yet, unexpectedly, she was still working in the station. It seemed like she was one of the older and experienced reporters in her company.

Indeed.

Back then, Margaret had been fired by the station after Levi's complaint.

However, Margaret slept with one of the persons-in-charge in the station, and managed to return to her post.

From then on, her career was smooth. Now, she was the golden child of the station and the most vital reporter there.

Furthermore, she was pretty and elegant. She was well-respected among her peers, and she was the ace of her company.

As Morris Group's development had been going fantastically, the television station assigned their ace to interview them.

Before coming, Margaret had been anxious.

After all, Morris Group was the main support of North Hampton.

She was worried about interviewing a company as large as the Morris Group.

At the same time, she wanted to become acquaintances with them.

It would be best if she could be acquaintances with Neil or the mysterious boss behind Morris Group.

Margaret had prepared stockings and some other items in her purse; she was ready to use her body to achieve her goal at any time.

Yet, she did not expect the interviewee to be Levi.

"Ms. Ward, this man is Levi Garrison. He's our company's representative for this interview," Iris' secretary introduced.

Margaret frowned and asked curiously, "Would you please tell me who Mr. Garrison is?"

“Oh, he’s the technical adviser. I don’t know why Ms. Anabelle assigned him as the representative for the interview. Honestly, I think he’s the least qualified. If it were up to me, I’d rather send a security guard or a janitor,” Iris’ secretary whispered her complaints into Margaret’s ears.

“If Ms. Ward isn’t happy about the situation, I can suggest to Ms. Anabelle to have someone more important to come for the interview,” the secretary suggested.

Margaret smiled. “No need. I’m alright with him.”

“Very well. Please begin, Ms. Ward. You can look for me if there are any problems.”

After the secretary left, Margaret looked at Levi from head to toe.

“Levi, you must not have thought of a day that we’ll meet again like this, have you? I didn’t think you’ll still be in the Levi Group,” Margaret mocked.

Levi chuckled, “And I didn’t think you’ll still be working at North Hampton Television Station. Weren’t you fired?”

The cameraman at the side sneered, “Please be mindful of your words. Ms. Ward is the ace of our station. She’s the best reporter we’ve got.”

Margaret gleefully smiled at Levi.

“How did you do that? Did you...”

A look of surprise emerged on Levi’s face.

“You-”

Knowing what Levi was about to say, Margaret trembled in rage.

“I got to where I am with my own talents. I’m not like a certain someone, who I’ve heard was earning a living by pulling a little strings here and there. Apparently, he’s much more useless than the guards and the janitors. That’s true. After all, you were just released from prison. It’s a miracle that you even have a job,” Margaret ridiculed.

The other staff on sight could not help but say, “Ms. Ward, isn’t the Morris Group too much? They sent an ex-convict for us to interview. They’re obviously looking down on us!”

The Protector Chapter 411

“That’s right. We won’t conduct an interview like this. Let’s go back.”

An evil thought popped in Margaret’s mind, and she laughed, “No, no. We have to continue the interview. The Morris Group is North Hampton’s top company. They’re not looking down on us.”

“Get ready, Levi. We’re starting the interview now,” Margaret announced.

“Sure.”

Although he despised this woman, he had to continue with the interview.

Otherwise, he would not know how to explain to Iris.

When the camera started rolling, Margaret presented herself in the perfect way she always did. That was the professionalism she had honed throughout the years.

After introducing the interview while facing the camera, she started interviewing Levi.

“Mr. Levi Garrison, I heard that you were jailed on the charges of adultery. Is that true?”

Without any changes in expression, Levi nodded.

“Yes.”

“Was your jail term six years?”

“That’s right.”

“When were you released from jail?”

“Three months ago.”

“I heard that you entered the Morris Group by pulling strings after your release?”

“Who was the one who got you into the company?”

“As Levi Group’s ex-president, how do you feel working in the company that used to be yours?”

“I heard that your private life is a mess, and you were interested in your sister-in-law. Is that true?”

.....

The staff at the station was dumbfounded just after the interview started.

The questions that Margaret was asking Levi were not the same as the ones in the script.

Originally, the interview would be about Morris Group's future developments, but every question Margaret asked was in relation to Levi.

Moreover, every question was ruthless and a personal attack on him.

Margaret's sinister intentions were obvious to Levi.

However, if he did not take the interview obediently, Iris would definitely complain about him again.

Therefore, he answered every question Margaret asked.

Half an hour later, the interview ended.

Margaret immediately dropped the professional smile from her face.

"Levi, are you pleasantly surprised? After all, you'll be on television soon," Margaret asked with a smile.

Then, she asked the others to leave the room.

"Levi, you never expected this, did you? Not only was I not fired, but I'm also doing well at North Hampton Television Station. Are you angry? Let me tell you this- Morris and you are insolent fools. I was kind to give you a chance back then, but you were ungrateful, and you even reported me to my superior! Did it do anything? Crushing you now is simple for someone of my status. It's easy to ruin your reputation."

Margaret stared at Levi with gloating eyes.

Levi chuckled, "The road you're on is a short one. Karma is around the corner."

He knew with a glance that Margaret must have climbed the ranks by sleeping with the superiors.

“Hmph. Is that so? It’s been years, and I’m still doing fine. Also, I’ll be going to South City Television Station next.”

The gloating look was still in Margaret’s eyes.

Levi gave her a meaningful smile. “Is that so? You won’t be able to go there.”

“Levi, I still remember you reporting me six years ago. Now, let me tell you this. I’ll definitely take my revenge. Just you wait!”

At that, Margaret left the conference room.

However, she did not leave the building.

In the name of collecting materials for the interview, she started wandering around the Morris Group’s office.

She handed her contact number whenever she met male executives.

In the end, she went to Iris.

“Ms. Anabelle, will I get the chance to meet the Morris Group’s boss or Mr. Atkinson today?” Margaret inquired.

The Protector Chapter 412

Margaret's eyes were gleaming.

She was involved with the upper-class society in North Hampton, and she knew about every recent big event.

For example, she knew everything about Sebastian Lopez's failure in North Hampton.

She also knew that the one who defeated Sebastian was Morris Group's boss.

If she were able to win over the boss or Neil Atkinson, her bright future would be guaranteed.

Margaret was a beautiful and elegant woman. She was the beauty of the station.

Margaret was confident of her charms.

She was sure that she would be able to win the mysterious boss and Neil's heart when she met them.

Once they went up on her bed, she was confident none would be able to come back down.

This was her survival skill.

Otherwise, a young intern with no background like her would not be able to have tens of millions, eight properties and a villa in North Hampton.

These were not gifts that fell from the sky.

“Unfortunately, they’re not in the office today,” Iris replied with a polite smile.

Even I haven’t seen the boss yet. What gives you the courage to ask this?

“Ms. Annabelle, I’ll apply for an exclusive interview with the Morris Group’s boss and Mr. Atkinson when I get back to the station. This will be advantageous for the Morris Group. I’m sure I don’t need to elaborate on why.”

A bright smile hung on Margaret’s lips.

“Sure. I’ll try my best to make arrangements for it,” Iris answered.

It was mostly because she wanted to meet the mysterious boss too.

After that, Margaret left.

On her way out, she winked at the numerous passing men.

In the corridor, she even encountered Levi.

She sneered, “You tried to destroy me back then. Now, just watch as I destroy you.”

Levi ignored her words; she was not even a threat to him.

Even someone like Sebastian had to pay up ten billion in the end.

At that moment, Jesse called.

“What’s wrong, Nielson?” Levi asked.

“Sir, I’ll be straightforward with you. We’ve discussed the recent matters and the changes in North Hampton’s market. We’ve decided on holding an investment

promotion conference. The main purpose of it is to attract foreign individuals and companies to invest. It'll stabilize North Hampton's market, and it'll also help with the development. What do you think about it?" Jesse queried.

Levi brightened up. "Not bad, Nielson. That sounds great! Everyone's been wanting a piece of North Hampton recently. The earlier we deal with this, the better it'll be. It's a fantastic idea. You have my approval!"

Jesse hesitated before saying, "But I need to go to Vermont for a meeting soon. I'll be there for about a month. You'll have to take the full responsibility for the investment promotion conference this time. After all, you're the deputy of North Hampton."

"That's fine. Leave it to me."

"Great!"

Levi, too, felt that it was an outstanding plan.

He welcomed everyone to the market as long as they were contributing to North Hampton.

After establishing this rule, North Hampton was running smoother than before.

After getting Levi's approval, North Hampton promulgated the policy, and the investment promotion conference was swiftly declared to take place in three days.

The host of the conference would be Deputy Garrison.

The moment the North Hampton Television Station received the news, they started reporting and promoting it.

Soon, the head of the station came to look for Margaret.

“Margaret, you’ll be doing full-day interviews at the exhibition center these few days. We’ll be depending on you for it!”

After hearing his words, Margaret’s eyes lit up.

An investment promotion conference as large-scale as this meant that she would be able to socialize with more prominent figures and expand her social network.

Margaret was more than willing to do this.

“Also, the host for the conference is the new deputy of North Hampton. You have to find a way to get an exclusive interview with him. If you do this, you’re definitely getting the promotion next month!”

The Protector Chapter 413

The head of the station was confident in her skills.

Margaret reassured, "Sir, I guarantee I'll do it well!"

"Yes. After all, you're our ace. Hehe..."

The man's eyes started wandering across Margaret's body.

"Thank you for giving me this chance," she giggled as she intentionally made herself slip and fall into his arms.

Soon, an explicit scene took place in the office.

.....

After the interview, Iris came to Levi.

"How was the interview?"

"It should be fine."

Levi nodded.

Iris said to him solemnly, "Levi, you have to understand that I'm trying to give you a chance. This is a way for you to make yourself more important in the company. Otherwise, Zoey will leave you far behind."

Iris' arrangement this time was a selfish decision.

She wanted Levi to have more chances to become a more impressive person.

“Alright, thank you, Ms. Anabelle.”

Levi smiled wryly.

“Sure. All we need to do now is to wait for the interview to be broadcasted.”

Iris was sure that Levi would become more reputable once the interview was out.

That way, she would be able to arrange a better position in the company for him.

On that day, Levi left work earlier to pick Aaron and his wife with Zoey.

When the couple found out that Zoey was now the chairman of the Oriental Star Group, they were overjoyed.

Zoey laughed, “Dad, Mom, Levi’s doing not bad too. Iris has assigned him to an interview with North Hampton Television Station. It’ll be broadcasted tonight. When that happens, Levi will be well known in North Hampton too.”

“That’s great!”

Aaron sneered, “That old man shouldn’t have been only nice to Fabian and Henry. Look at how well we’re doing. Hmph!”

Caitlyn was also proud of them.

After all, they had gone through much suffering in the Lopez family.

The ones that the head of the Lopez family looked down on most were them.

Now, they had finally made a name for themselves.

In the evening, Levi and the other three sat in front of the television and waited for his interview to come on.

“Here it comes!”

Instantly, everyone’s gazes were fixed on the television.

The first to appear was Margaret. She gave a detailed explanation of the Morris Group.

“This reporter’s great. She’s a well-known reporter in North Hampton. I always see her on TV,” Aaron praised.

Caitlyn nodded. “That’s right. She’s the best reporter in North Hampton. She has even interviewed the director of the hospital!”

“The reason behind Morris Group’s success was the hard work of their brilliant employees. I took a trip around the Morris Group, and I’ve realized that the talented ones are all here.”

Then, Margaret changed the topic. “However, after a long while, I’ve finally found an employee who doesn’t fit into the Morris Group. His presence in the Morris Group is a disgrace to them.”

In the beginning, Margaret had used several minutes to pour praises on the Morris Group.

Now, she was pinpointing on a single employee. It was easy to understand what she was trying to tell the audience—the next section she was going to talk about was only directed to a specific person instead of the Morris Group.

However, the audience in front of their television held their breaths in shock at the turn of events.

Besides Levi, the rest of the family was looking at each other.

A sense of unease shot through them.

“I shouldn’t point out who that employee is, but the Morris Group is the hope of North Hampton. I can’t possibly allow a douchebag like him to taint Morris Group. It’s quite an interesting matter, actually. This employee is Levi Garrison, the founder of Levi Group, which was the company before Morris Group.”

The Protector Chapter 414

Hiss!

The moment Margaret said his name, the audience gasped.

“What? Levi?”

Aaron, Caitlyn and Zoey all turned to look at Levi.

Didn't they say that if Levi takes the interview, he'll become a reputable figure?

Why did he become a douchebag employee?

What's going on?

Levi was silently watching the interview.

What a daring reporter.

The interview continued.

Margaret laughed, “Maybe you think that he's someone talented to be able to join the Morris Group, but I've done my investigation. Levi has joined the company by pulling strings, and he hasn't been doing much every day. At work, he only drinks his tea, smokes his cigarette, and sleeps at his desk. He does nothing. His reputation in the company is terrible. More than 80 percent of his colleagues hate him, but because he's associates with the executives, they can't do anything about him. Only some old staff from Levi Group has a better impression of him. But as an outsider, I can't bear to watch it continue. A cancerous tumor like him will end up ruining the Morris Group. Morris Group is the hope of North Hampton

now. They're our hope! I can't allow a poisonous person like him to remain in the company! Furthermore, Levi has a poor character, and his private life is a mess. He was once interested in his sister-in-law, and even now, he's still in an ambiguous relationship with her. These aren't my guesses; these are the results of my investigation. I've also interviewed him, and he has admitted to what he's done."

Soon, the interview with Levi was played.

Margaret asked, "I heard that your private life is a mess, and you were interested in your sister-in-law. Is that true?"

Levi answered, "Yes, that's true."

Margaret continued, "Did you embezzle public funds when you were in Levi Group?"

Levi admitted, "Yes, it did happen."

.....

The questions Margaret asked Levi in the interview were all sensitive topics.

However, Levi said yes to all her questions.

The interview was a bolt from the blue.

Zoey and the rest were stunned after watching the interview.

They looked at him in shock and asked, "Levi, are you stupid? Why did you answer everything she asked? Why did you admit to things you haven't done?"

"That's right. Have you gone mad? How can you say such ridiculous things?"

Zoey had a look of disbelief on her face.

On the other hand, Levi was calm.

What a cunning woman.

She's really trying to destroy me.

There had been no problems with the questions she asked.

However, the interview that was broadcasted had been edited.

She had intentionally edited Levi's answers for the other questions.

It made it look as if he had admitted to having a relationship with his sister-in-law.

Generally, no one would believe in an interview like this.

Anyone with a hint of analytical skills would realize that it was an edited video.

However, this was broadcasted by a television station. That meant it was official, and there was a sense of authority about it.

If it was released to the public, that meant the video was reviewed, and that the contents were true.

Even those who had doubts would have to believe in it.

This was what Margaret could do.

This edited video made Levi seem like the cancerous tumor of the Morris Group.

It was that simple to ruin a person in nowadays' society.

From now on, there was no place for Levi in the Morris Group.

No major companies in North Hampton would dare to take in Levi either.

In fact, some restaurants and public spaces would refuse Levi's patronage.

If it were someone else, if it had been someone average, this would be the end of them.

The Protector Chapter 415

However, the one Margaret was trying to set up was Levi Garrison.

On-screen, Margaret raised her right hand high. “So, I’m raising a petition. I hope the Morris Group will fire Levi Garrison. Also, I hope that everyone can stand with me and boycott this toxic man. Restrict his right to purchase, and restrict his traveling...”

Many responded positively to Margaret’s petition.

Major media companies started boycotting Levi.

Furthermore, executives in the Morris Group agreed to the petition and announced that they were going to fire Levi.

Many restaurants and public spaces also announced their stance to boycott him.

Soon, Levi had become the sinner of North Hampton.

Once again, he became a street rat that disgusted everyone.

It was the same situation as six years ago, except that he had not gone to jail this time.

It was the times of advanced communication, and news spread swiftly.

Levi’s troubles were piling up.

Right then, Iris, who was living next door, came to knock on his door.

“Levi, what’s gotten into you? How can you just say anything you want to? Are you out of your mind?” Iris roared.

However, Levi lit up his cigarette and muttered, “Iris, do you think I’m that stupid?”

Iris’ furious expression turned into shock. “Did she edit the interview to target you?”

“Yes. Didn’t you notice that the interview had nothing to do with the Morris Group? She’s clearly coming after me,” Levi answered.

It was only then realization struck everyone.

“But are you at odds with her?” Zoey queried.

“Back when she was an intern, she tried to seduce Morris and I when she was interviewing us. I reported her behavior to her superior, so she has hated me since then. Now that she has the chance to take revenge on me, she wouldn’t let it slip past her,” Levi explained.

Iris furrowed her brows.

“But the interview has already been broadcasted. We have no evidence of her tampering it. She’s a representative of the TV station; she’s the authority. I don’t know how we’re getting you out of this. Moreover, there are lots of people agreeing with her petition. Even the executives in the company are calling me and asking me to fire you. If this matter gets out of hand, it won’t be good for the Morris Group.”

When Zoey and the rest heard Iris’ words, they panicked.

“Iris, think of something! You can’t let her ruin Levi like this!”

Iris was at a loss as well. "I want to help him too, but I can't think of anything right now. Everyone's talking about this interview at this moment. If I insist on keeping Levi, the Morris Group would be forced into a corner. Let me go back and think of a way. I need to come up with the perfect plan."

Levi chuckled, "You can leave this to me. I'll deal with it myself."

"You?"

The four people stared at Levi with a frown.

It was not that they did not believe in Levi's capability, but this matter was gradually getting out of hand.

He would not be able to get the situation under control alone.

Not unless he was the most powerful figure in North Hampton.

Not unless he could change North Hampton Television Station's stance with just a sentence.

The only way out for him now was for the television station's director to clear up the situation by telling the truth in public.

Otherwise, he was doomed.

After all, this woman's plan was flawless.

They ignored Levi and started coming up with plans by themselves.

"I'll ask Mr. Atkinson about this. Let me see what he thinks about it."

Later in the evening, the situation worsened.

Many were asking Levi to get out of North Hampton.

They did not want a toxic person like him to remain in North Hampton.

The Protector Chapter 416

Levi ignored it and went on with whatever he did, much to Zoey's disappointment. If it were in the past, he would have come up with a way to settle the matter on the spot instead of dragging it out.

However, he lost that part of him now, and he was smoking even at a time like this.

Margaret called him before he slept just to mock him. "How do you feel now, Mr. Garrison?" She chuckled.

Levi smiled. "Is that all that you've got? It doesn't hurt that much. No, scratch it. I don't feel a thing."

"Yeah, keep acting and maybe you can start a career that way. Don't you know the situation you're in right now?" She sneered, "Just you wait. Tomorrow is going to be even worse for you. But if you want to settle this, just grovel before me, and I might just let you go.

If you don't, then you can kiss North Hampton goodbye." Margaret cackled. Oh, destroying someone's life is so much fun! Especially when the guy is someone I hate! Dragging him down to hell. Mmm...

Levi smiled. "We'll see who has the last laugh."

Margaret veered away from the topic, "It's a shame Morris has died, otherwise I would have done the same thing to him too.

Levi's eyes revealed a hint of viciousness. How dare she disrespect the dead.

Levi went to Morris Group as usual the next day, but everyone looked at him weirdly the moment he came in.

Seth came up to him and whispered, "Are you sabotaged, Levi?"

"I can handle this." Levi gave a nod as he chuckled.

Not everyone saw things as clearly as Seth did though, and most of them thought everything Margaret said on the interview was real.

All the top management now looked at Levi in disgust. They could ignore most of the little transgressions he did in the past, but things have been different since that interview.

"How dare you come here, Levi? Scram! Don't make this hard for everyone."

"Yeah. Morris Group might be a new company, but we will never allow a disgusting man like you here!"

...

Iris was troubled, for all the top management requested for her to fire Levi. Left with no choice, she called for a meeting to vote on Levi's fate. There was no question about the result as most people wanted him to leave.

It was hard on her, but still, she came to tell Levi that he was sacked. "I have no choice, Levi. I'll think of some ways to salvage this though." Iris felt guilty.

"It's fine." He left the company in the end. Levi was going to work on getting new funds, so he couldn't work at the company anyway. Well, just as I planned.

When the news of his sacking was announced, the whole company cheered in joy, but Elena and Isaiah smiled bitterly. Have fun while you still can. Once he comes back, you're the ones who're getting sacked.

Levi went to North Hampton's exhibition center to monitor the decorations, and the person in charge was shocked to find that he was here.

"Mr. Garrison! So far, we've received 74 registrations, and all of them are big companies! The registrations are still piling on, and here's the list so far! Please have a look!"

The Protector Chapter 417

Levi skimmed through it and noticed the name of many big companies on it. “Mr. Garrison, North Hampton’s news channel and media outlets are planning on filming the venue for publicity. Is that fine by you?” The person in charge asked.

“Of course. Do it as much as possible. It will do good for us. Oh right. Who’s the reporter for this session?” Levi asked.

“Let me check. Oh, it’s someone called Margaret,” he replied.

Levi smirked. Well, what are the odds?

At the same time, Margaret and the other reporters were waiting outside the hall. She had just gotten the news about Levi’s sacking, and it delighted her.

Yeah, so this is how it feels! She sneered. “This is just the beginning, Levi. It’s going to get harder for you. You might even starve to death because you’d be out of cash to buy even a grain of rice!” Margaret suddenly laughed.

“What happened to her?” Some reporters asked.

“Nothing. I just destroyed my old enemy and got him fired.” Margaret grinned.

“That’s good news,” everyone buttered her up.

“Thanks. I’ll treat you guys to a meal after this.” Margaret was elated.

“OK, you guys may head in now. Some things must be kept secret, so don’t go doing anything you shouldn’t. You know the rules,” the staff told them.

“Of course.” Everyone picked up their gear and entered the hall, while Margaret went up to the staff and asked, “Mister, who is this boss you’ve been talking about?”

“Keep this a secret. The boss came here today to monitor on the progress of the event. He’s such a responsible guy.

Everyone calls him Mr. Garrison and he is the second-in-command of this event. I saw him just now, and he doesn’t look a day older than twenty-eight,” the staff replied.

Margaret’s eyes shone. That’s the job the channel asked me to do! The mysterious Mr. Garrison is here today? Great! I must interview him.

Apart from getting an interview, Margaret hoped sparks would fly between them, since he was young and successful. Little did she know that the spark she had anticipated turn out to be the exact opposite of her imagination.

Everyone got on to their work after entering the hall. Margaret was a true professional, and she beat everyone else by finishing her job first. Even so, she kept strolling around in the hall.

She had been looking around ever since she came in to catch a glimpse of Mr. Garrison, but none of the guys she saw fitted the bill. He might be in the backstage.

After a while, she went to the backstage, but there were many rooms there, so she searched them one by one.

After searching a few dozen rooms, she finally came into one that was crowded with a young man in the center.

Judging by the vibe he was giving off, she was sure this was Mr. Garrison. He looks familiar though. Where have I seen him before?

Trepidation and excitement swirled within her. Now that I found him, I'm not going to let this chance go to waste. Time for an interview!

The Protector Chapter 418

"What are you doing tiptoeing around?" When she was about to move forward, someone boomed from behind, shocking her.

She turned around and saw a few guards boring their eyes into her. "Don't take this the wrong way. I'm Margaret, a reporter. Here's my ID." She quickly handed her ID over for confirmation. "I want to interview the leader in there for a bit," she told them what she had in mind.

"No. He doesn't accept any interviews. Everything they talk about is top secret, so please leave." She was chased out of the backstage abruptly. It wasn't easy for her to meet Mr. Garrison, so she wouldn't give up now.

"We should leave now, Margaret. Everyone else has already left," her partner urged.

"You guys go ahead. I'll wait for him at the passage." Margaret came to the hall's secret passage. Few people knew about this, for this was exclusively for leaders. Even so, Margaret easily found it and waited here.

She believed Mr. Garrison would leave via this passage, so she would take the chance to interview him then. Margaret staked out at this place, but she almost fell asleep after waiting for god knew how long. Unbeknownst to her, Levi would be staying here for a couple of days because he would be making the plans here.

Meantime, Levi was already taking a nap on the sofa. Margaret thought he would come out in the end, so she waited until dusk, but still he didn't appear. "I can't give up! This chance is too important for me," she cheered herself up.

When it was time to get off work, Levi checked around and left from the front gate, since he didn't know where the secret passage was.

It wasn't until almost nine in the evening did someone come out from the secret passage, and Margaret's legs were already numb. She quickly went up and asked, "Is Mr. Garrison coming out soon?"

"Huh? He left a long while ago," the staff replied.

Margaret almost exploded. "What? He left? When? I've been waiting right here all the time!"

"You waited here? No wonder you missed him! He left through the front gate. It's been almost two hours."

Margaret almost went mad. "What!?" I've been waiting at the wrong spot all this while!? It's alright, I have no regrets. I'd come back again tomorrow.

Margaret's whole body was sore after going back, and she felt angry. "Oh yeah, I can vent this on Levi." She fished out her phone and punched in the latter's number soon after.

His case was still spreading like wildfire, so everyone was still talking about it. At the same time, someone anonymously exposed Levi's wife, his parents-in-law, their working places, and their house address.

Suddenly, Zoey and her family were dragged into this. She was the boss of Oriental Star Group, so many people started boycotting the company, resulting in a significant loss overnight.

The medical staff called and asked Caitlyn to refrain from coming to work for a few days, or else it would look bad on the hospital.

Aaron's department also suspended him for the time being, putting his salary on hold. Everyone didn't want this matter to affect them, and nobody could see the matter snowballing to this degree.

"Didn't Levi say he can handle this? Then why is this matter getting more serious?"

The Protector Chapter 419

Aaron was fuming, and Caitlyn was vexed. Initially, the company had released the documents officiating her promotion to department head, but now it was delayed. If the matter was not resolved, someone else might take her place. To make matters worse, she couldn't even return to work now.

Zoey called Iris over to ask for her opinion. "Let me talk to Margaret. This can only die down if she clears things up herself." Iris called Margaret.

"Hey, Miss Iris. Is there anything I can do for you?"

Iris replied, "Margaret, I hope you can stop what you're doing right now. Don't make it worse for Levi. He's already having it hard."

Margaret sneered, "Hard? The people he destroyed had it harder. Has he ever thought of that? No. Besides, why are you interfering in this matter? Isn't it great that I helped you get rid of a canker?"

Iris was slightly annoyed. “You did help the Morris Group, so technically speaking, I should thank you. But on a personal level, Levi is my best friend’s husband. So, I want to talk to you about this. What are your terms?”

Margaret said, “I can stop this if you want to, and my terms are simple. Arrange an interview for me tomorrow, and I want the interviewees to be Neil and the boss behind Morris Group. If you can do it, I’ll take everything back and lay off Levi’s back.”

“Very well then. I’ll try.” Iris hung up and called Neil, “I have something to trouble you...”

Kirin listened to what she had to say before replying, “Let her come to the company tomorrow then we’ll see.”

That must mean Neil agreed to the interview... At least that was what iris thought and she conveyed the message to Margaret.

Margaret guaranteed that she would take back all the accusations she made against Levi after the interviews were done.

“Thank you, Iris. Levi should be here bowing to you. You saved him!” Aaron told her, and he was struck by the impulse to have Levi kowtow to her.

Iris came to the company early next morning, but Neil was already there. “Oh, Mr. Neil, you’re here. Is the boss here yet?” Iris looked around and blushed, for she was about to meet the man of her dreams.

She never did any makeup in the past, and even if she did, it was a light touch up at best. However, she took two hours to do her makeup today. “Take it slow. The boss knows everything, and you’ll know who he is soon enough.” Kirin smiled.

When the clock struck nine, in came Margaret with a group of people. She dolled herself up for the occasion, and her goal was simple: get the scoop on Neil and the mysterious boss no matter what.

“Let me do the introduction. Miss Ward, this is Mr. Neil,” Iris introduced.

Margaret took one look, and she was dumbfounded. He’s so young, and so handsome! Probably the most handsome out of all the guys I’ve seen!

“Hello, Mr. Neil. I’m Margaret from the TV channel. It’s an honor to interview you today.” Margaret came up and extended her hand while winking at him.

“Scram! A trash like you have no right to interview me!” Kirin bellowed, much to everyone’s shock.

The Protector Chapter 420

Even Iris was shocked by the roar, while the smiles were wiped off of Margaret and her partners' faces. They looked at Kirin, dumbfounded.

“Guards! Throw these people out! Do they hire trash to be reporters now? What a disgrace!” Kirin looked displeased, and Seth came in with the security guards, ready to chase Margaret and her team out.

“What? I thought Mr. Neil agreed to the interview today. What happened?” Margaret looked at Iris.

Neil laughed. “Let me explain. I don't mind interviews, but not if you're the reporter.”

Iris looked down, her face ashen. She didn't know why Neil disliked Margaret, since this was just their first time meeting. If he refused Margaret's interview, Levi's matter wouldn't die down.

It took everything Iris had to get Margaret's agreement, but the former couldn't do anything now, so it was hard for Iris.

Since she was in Morris Group, Margaret didn't fly into a rage. “It's fine if you detest me, Mr. Neil, but you don't call the shots here. Maybe the boss will agree to my interview,” she answered with a lovely smile.

Kirin said nothing and called Levi to tell him about what happened. “Tell her to f*ck off! I don't take interviews from trash!”

Iris and Margaret were equally shocked to hear the roar, and Margaret left without saying a word. However, before she left, she sneered at Iris, “Looks like I won't be letting Levi off the hook then.”

This was troublesome news for Iris. “Mr. Neil, why do the both of you...” Iris wanted to know the reason.

“This is the boss’ idea.” That stopped Iris from asking further.

After going back, Margaret took it out on Levi by exposing his and Iris’ address.

All of a sudden, the crowd graffitied the walls with insults and smeared it with rotten food.

Aaron and his wife stayed indoors, for there were many strangers here who were keeping an eye on them. They couldn’t go out; even their delivery would be snatched away.

For the time being, Aaron and the others were stressed out by the situation. If this kept up, they would be driven mad.

At this crucial time, no one knew where Levi had gone to.

Levi, of course, was in the exhibition hall.

“Mr. Garrison, we added three hundred more companies to the roster in one day! And seven of them are giants in South City!” The person in charge was excited, for this would benefit North Hampton greatly.

Levi flipped through the list, and he saw the Suarez Family as well as the other big names from South City. “If you’re here to mess North Hampton up, I will make you pay dearly.” His eyes gleamed coldly.

A staff member approached him and asked, “Mr. Garrison, a reporter from North Hampton Television Network plans to interview you. Do you want to go ahead with it?”

“She’s Margaret, isn’t she?” Levi didn’t even look up.

“Huh? How do you know? Will you accept it?” The staff asked carefully.

Another staff member came and asked softly, “Mr. Garrison, North Hampton Cultural Channel wants to have an interview too.”

“And the reporters from the economic section wants one too.”

The Protector Chapter 421

The news outlet came for interviews after knowing Mr. Garrison was the host of the event. It didn't take long for Levi to make up his mind on which interviewer he chose, "Well, we're short on time, so I can only take one interview. Hmm, let's go with Margaret from North Hampton Television Network."

"What? Mr. Garrison only accepts my interview?" Margaret was delighted after knowing that. I'm so lucky! There are a lot of reporters here, and I am the lucky one who gets chosen?

"Alright. Please tell Mr. Garrison that I won't let him down," she guaranteed.

The event would start soon and representatives from corporations elsewhere arrived earlier to survey the market.

Powerful corporation like the Morris Group and the Rogers family had a lot of people asking for collaboration, and many were looking for potential ones like Oriental Star Group that was helmed by Zoey.

More than thirty corporations talked about collaboration with her, and after some careful review, Zoey chose four from South City to work with. There were four representatives to talk with, so they agreed to talk about this over dinner one night.

Zoey was cautious of her dinner meetings now. She would bring some males from top management with her. This time, she brought Levi together just in case.

The four representatives from South City sat in Wyvern Hotel's room, and the oldest one, who went by the name of Draco, was on his phone, "Don't worry, Mr. Shorts. I'll make Zoey pay tonight. Just wait and see how I torture her," he snickered.

The four corporations were backed by the Suarez family, and they were going to set Zoey up tonight. Before Zoey came, they and their lackeys took some sobering pills.

After that, Zoey came in with her entourage. "Oh, what's the meaning of this, Ms. Lopez? Are you worried we might do something to you?" Draco looked displeased.

One of the top management quickly explained, "Mr. Johannes, Ms. Lopez almost got into trouble back then, so she must bring us along whenever she goes for negotiations.

We can hold it if you're okay with us here, but if it's impossible, then we can stop it here."

Draco and his group looked at one another, and they knew it would be hard to get them away. "Oh, of course we can. We're here to negotiate, so this won't be any trouble." He grinned.

A moment later, everyone sat down and had small talk before cutting to the chase. Collaboration wasn't a problem, but the agreement on profit sharing was. Zoey wanted to have ten percent more, but they didn't want to budge on this.

Draco raised his glass. "You should know that us southerners can be... fierce. We have our own rules here."

"Of course. I've experienced it myself," one of the top management replied.

"Great, so the rules here are simple. We'll have a drinking competition. If we lose, then the ten percent is yours, but if you lose, then that's it," Draco suggested.

"Sure, no problem," Levi agreed.

Zoey glared at him, for she knew Draco and his gang must have the confidence in winning the bet, or else they wouldn't propose this. Levi is too rash.

“Great. Including the driver and our assistants, there’s a dozen of us here, so pick any number you want from your side,” Draco said. They had taken sobering pills beforehand, and they were heavy drinkers, so they were confident this would be a landslide win.

Levi smiled. “Very well then. Ms. Lopez and I will take the challenge on our own.”

“The hell?” That shocked Zoey. Is he mad? Two against twelve?

The Protector Chapter 422

If she knew that they had popped the pills before the dinner, Zoey would have been horrified at Levi's announcement. Levi must be mad!

Zoey's subordinates were flabbergasted. Hey, they said we can call anyone we want! At least call two dozen here before going ahead with it. Two against twelve? Is he stupid?

"Very well then! If that is what you say, then we'll start right now!" Draco mocked Levi silently and made the decision for them, worrying that Zoey would go back on her word.

"No. I—"

Zoey was about to say something, but Draco smiled. "Ms. Lopez, you can't go back on your word, can you? That would be an insult to us. If that's the case then there's no point in continuing the negotiation."

"No! Let's do it!" Zoey had no choice but to accept it.

Draco and his gang smirked, for they thought this was victory for them. They grinned at the thought of them ravaging Zoey. Is this guy on our side? Man, this is a big help. What a dumba**!

Levi grinned at them. "You'll have to get past me to drink with Ms. Lopez."

"Challenge accepted!" Draco and his gang were raring to go, for they thought Levi couldn't win against all of them, especially not after they had taken the sobering pills.

“Oh, right. We only allow those who participates in the drinking game to stay during the competition. It’s a southerner rule.” Draco looked at the top management. He had to chase these guys away, otherwise they couldn’t do anything to Zoey.

“Why you...” The staff glared at Levi, blaming him for ruining this negotiation. They were fairly confident about taking the ten percent profit, but now Levi botched it.

The competition went under way after they had left. “Hey bro, if we go by the rules, you have to take a shot for every shot we take.” Draco grinned.

“Yeah, sure. I’ll take twelve shots for every shot you guys take. Let’s begin.”

“I like you!” Draco thought Levi was an idiot now. A moment later, twelve glasses of wine sat before Levi, and Zoey was concerned. How long can he last? A round?

Draco and his gang finished their wine in no time. “Your turn, buddy.” He smirked.

They thought Levi would lose out after taking all twelve shots, but what happened next shocked everyone. Levi, always the showy guy, took two shots at once, and he finished all twelve in less than a minute.

“He’s fine?” Draco and his gang were taken aback. He’s a good drinker too. Well, that explains his impulsive behavior, but he can’t win against all of us, not when we took the sobering pills.

“Get on with it.” The second round started, and Levi downed twelve shots like it was soda, shocking everyone.

“On with it!” The third round came, then the fourth, the fifth, and finally, the tenth round came. A hundred and twenty shots later, anyone would fall, but not Levi.

Him still standing not only shocked Draco, but Zoey as well. They thought Levi was acting tough, but now they knew he wasn't. Even though Draco and the gang had taken sobering pills, ten shots still made their stomach churn.

"Well, go on. Are you guys scared?" Levi provoked them, and the competition resumed.

Draco and his gang refused to believe they would fail, so they wanted to see how much longer Levi could go on. Another ten rounds came, but Levi was still fine. On the other hand, the alcohol started kicking in for Draco and his gang, torturing them.

The Protector Chapter 423

The competition ensued, and cartons after cartons of wine were served. At this point, Draco and his gang started worrying about the bill. How much can one guy drink? Is he Dionysus or something?

“Mr. Johannes, let’s put in another rule: no toilet breaks!” Levi suggested.

Draco couldn’t hold it in anymore, but he could only agree at this point. Another bout started, and the more Levi drank, the clearer his head became. Wine usually makes people drunk, but Levi was an anomaly.

Apparently, Levi was the only anomaly here. Draco and his gang felt like their stomachs were going to explode, as well as their bladder.

The competition had dragged on for too long, so the sobering pill’s effects had expired. Now they felt the alcohol kicking in, and the group couldn’t hold on any longer.

They couldn’t understand how Levi managed to take so many shots. He must have drunk more than a thousand shots now, but surprisingly, he looked fine. This guy must be Dionysus himself!

“Carry on!” Levi shouted.

“G-Give me a minute! I can’t hold my pee in any longer!” Draco sat on the chair, not even moving an inch, but before he could react, Levi force fed him one shot of wine.

Shhhhh.... They could hear the sound of water flowing, then hot air came up from below, while a rancid smell spread.

Zoey quickly covered her nose and stayed far, far away. Draco peed in his pants!

This was the most embarrassing thing Draco had done in his life.

“March!” Levi took twelve more shots, forcing them to continue.

“No! We can’t!”

“Just do it!” Levi pressed another guy down and forced another shot down his throat.

That made him puke, and he fell down on his barf. “Your turn!” He forced another guy to drink, and that made him roll on the floor in pain, for his stomach bled.

The other guys couldn’t hold it anymore, so they peed in their pants. It made the whole room rancid, then they heard something explode. Everyone looked in the sound’s direction, and what greeted them was their comrade in agony, for his bladder exploded.

Zoey screamed in terror. Terrible fates befell all twelve of them. Shame, embarrassment, and grievous injuries swam among them, and these people took sobering pills beforehand. If they didn’t, they would have been in worse condition.

“Carry on, Mr. Johannes! I’m just getting started!” Levi came up to Draco with a few bottles of wine.

Is he even human?! That’s not how a human works! He’s fine even after drinking that boatload of wine?! ”I-I can’t keep this up anymore!” Draco shook his head.

“Oh, no can do. The fight’s just getting started.” Levi grinned.

“I’ll sign it! I’ll sign it, okay?” pleaded Draco.

“You should have done that in the beginning.” Levi smiled.

Worrying that Levi might force him to drink more wine, Draco quickly signed the contract and let Oriental take ten more percent in profit.

“Let’s go, honey. We got the contract.” Levi grinned toothily, while Zoey looked at him, stunned. For some reason, Levi was shining. Wow, he’s awesome! He got the contract through drinking?

Who would have thought? Ten percent of profit is huge! A few hundred million at that!

After they came out, Zoey looked at Levi. “Are you fine, honey?” Levi said nothing, but then he fell against her groggily.

The Protector Chapter 424

“What’s wrong, darling? Are you alright!?” Zoey held him tightly, feeling frightened. It took her a moment, but now she realized Levi took a few thousand shots, and it could kill him.

She started sweating in fear, but then she felt electrified. Realizing Levi was feeling her up, Zoey blushed and let him go. “Did you just scare me for nothing?!” She looked away.

“Hey, I just got us the contract, and now I don’t even get a thank you?” Levi asked.

Zoey glared at him. “Stop messing around. How do you feel? Do you need to go to the hospital? You drank a lot.”

Levi smiled. “Do I look hurt to you? No? There’s that then. But...”

“But what?” She looked at him curiously.

“But well, you know, drinking always leads to something else. Here, give me some sugar.” He tried to kiss her, but she ran away.

“You pervert!”

That night, as they lay in bed, Levi quickly hugged her. Zoey was shocked, but she also looked forward to what would happen next.

She might be Levi’s wife, but Zoey was still a virgin. She wanted to consummate the marriage, but now that they were about to do it, Zoey was nervous. If he’s going for it, should I accept him? Or should I say no?

Zoey only wanted Levi as her husband. When he took all the drinking for her earlier, Zoey saw him as her knight in shining armor. If he wanted it tonight, Zoey would give it to him, but...

She was still in a dilemma when a snoring sound snapped her out of it. He's asleep. For some reason, she felt disappointed, so she turned around and glared at him. "Is sleeping all you know! Go away!" Zoey shoved him away.

"Why did you push me, honey?" Levi asked.

"Just turn around!" Zoey said angrily.

"Why are you mad?" A perplexed Levi asked, and he thought women were weird. They get angry for no reason every time. At least now we know that behind every angry woman lay a man who didn't know what he did wrong. Levi was an example of that.

When morning came, Oriental was hit with the shocking news of Zoey snagging a contract that gave them an extra ten percent of profit, much to the top management's disbelief.

At the same time, Draco and his gang were in the hospital. "Trash, all of you! You can't even handle one woman, and all of you got hospitalized! Trash, trash, trash!" Tristan was livid.

Draco and the others shivered in fear. They thought they would win, but Levi was an unexpected variable. They thought nobody could drink that much, but Levi proved them wrong. Is that guy a God?

"Resign, you trash. I'm already in North Hampton, so I'll take care of this matter myself," Tristan said coldly.

"Young master Tristan, please—" Before they could even explain, Tristan had hung up. Never did he imagine that all it took for him to lose hundreds of millions and his future was a drinking session.

North Hampton was in high spirits today, for scores of merchants came today. Everyone was shocked, for the number of participating companies in this event was twice their projected estimate. They weren't complaining though, for this was great for North Hampton.

The Protector Chapter 425

In North Hampton Television Network's office, Margaret and her colleagues were going through the scripts for the next day's interview. This was a great chance for her, so she wouldn't let it go. She wasn't Elsa.

"You're awesome, Margaret! There are 38 outlets that want to interview Mr. Garrison, but he only gives that chance to us!"

"Yeah, and he specifically asked for Margaret! He obviously thinks highly of her!"

"He must have only chosen us because of Margaret! Treat us to something good after this, Margaret!"

Margaret felt smug listening to all the praises, but she pretended to be calm. She was a famous person in the channel as well as the industry. Now, with the mysterious Mr. Garrison giving her the chance to interview him, it would consolidate her place in this world.

Now, everyone in the channel listened to her, including her boss.

"Tell us whatever you need, Margaret. We'll do anything for you," her boss kept telling her that.

"Margaret, I heard Mr. Garrison is single. If you guys can be a couple, it'd be sweet!"

"Yeah! He's a leader, while you're the best employee of the channel. It's a good match!"

Margaret was riled up by this, for she was planning to do that. Intelligence was her forte, and with experience on her side, she knew Mr. Garrison had a bright future, for Jesse handed such a big event to him.

He might be a deputy now, but this was only the beginning, so Mr. Garrison would climb to mayhap the top spot.

If she could snag him, Margaret would be set for life, and the idea made her chuckle. This must be divine providence. There are more than three dozen outlets, but he chose me! "This chance has always been mine to begin with." Margaret looked confident.

"Margaret, Levi is in a bad situation. I heard their place got splashed with paint and sewage! His parents-in-law can't work, and his wife's company is affected!" Margaret's lackey reported.

Margaret bellowed happily, for she thought Lady Luck was on her side. First, she could interview Mr. Garrison; Secondly, she would be promoted after finishing her job; and finally, she managed to back Levi into a corner.

"I have already told you never to cross a woman, Levi. But you just wouldn't listen. So, this is what happens." Margaret's eyes gleamed coldly.

"Of course he's dead if he offends you, Margaret. You're so much more powerful than he is." Her colleagues laughed.

Then, someone came for Margaret. When she walked out, a Rolls-Royce was waiting for her, much to her surprise. After getting into the car, she saw a man in his thirties, looking dignified and elegant.

"Hello, Ms. Ward. I'm Zachary, from South City's Suarez family." Zachary puffed his cigar.

Margaret was shaken to her core as she looked at him and stuttered, “T-the Suarez family? You’re young master Zachary?! I know you! I’ve interviewed your family!”

“It’s good that you do.” Zachary nodded.

The Protector Chapter 426

“Is there anything I can help you with, Mr. Shorts?” Margaret asked with a flirtatious wink.

“Are you after Levi and Zoey recently?” Zachary asked.

“Yes, yes, yes. That’s right! Are you related to Levi?” Margaret looked at Zachary cautiously.

Zachary shook his head, “No, he is my enemy. My brother had all his limbs amputated by him! If it weren’t for fear of the Morris Group that was behind his back, I would’ve killed him ages ago!

You are doing a good job for now. To think that you can subdue Levi’s family to this point! I’m able to kill him right away as soon as he is forced to leave North Hampton! There’s nothing Morris Group can do about it!”

Margaret was smart and immediately replied, “Mr. Shorts, should I step up the game a little?”

“Yeah, you’re perceptive and a fast-learner!” Zachary beckoned to his assistant, and he brought a suitcase. After opening it, a big load of cash could be seen contained in it.

“Here’s an advanced five million! I’ll pay you another five million after the job is completed!” Zachary said.

Margaret’s eyeballs were about to pop out from their sockets when she saw the money.

Five million!!! Who could've expected that I could be paid for settling my personal feud? Ten million in total? Is this my lucky day? This is quadruple happiness!

"Wait for my good news, Mr. Shorts. Let me add fuel to the fire. I can assure you that Levi will leave tomorrow!" After Margaret put away the money, her smiling eyes turned into crescent shape.

"Very well! You'll be rewarded in the future when the Suarez family begins its development in North Hampton," Zachary said.

Margaret replied with a lovely smile, "I'm honored to devote myself to the Suarez family. Everything I have belongs to the Suarez family!"

Margaret was feeling ecstatic.

Now that I'm acquainted with the Suarez family's young master and had turned to them as my backing. Isn't it safe to say that my future is pretty bright?

At this time, Levi and Zoey were standing in front of Bayview Garden.

Levi looked calm, but Zoey was infuriated.

"These people are such a bully! It's too much!" Zoey sobbed in a soft voice.

The house's door was splashed with different colors of paints, and it gave off a pungent smell.

The wall next to it was splashed with manure, emitting a horrible stench.

Levi had no doubt that these people might pour dung water into the room next time.

"Dad, mom. Are you facing this situation as well?" Zoey became infuriated after receiving the call.

Despite Levi's calm appearance, he was actually extremely furious.

He paid no attention to a small-time reporter like Margaret because he figured she couldn't do anything to him.

But he found out that he was wrong. It was now evident that this person could affect him in his daily life.

"Levi, why don't we move out of here? I don't think this is gonna work. I got a strong hunch that things are gonna become worse."

Zoey was afraid because things were seriously affecting her life.

Caitlyn and Aaron could only hide in their room every day.

They didn't dare to step out of the house.

There were only two days' worth of food supply left in the house.

She began to worry about the safety of her parent's lives.

"We should pick up dad and mom secretly at night. If something were to happen, we'd be in trouble," Zoey cautioned.

"We'll not move out!"

Levi took out his phone and made a call to Margaret.

"Hey, Levi? Hahaha! Was it too unbearable that you've decided to call me?" Margaret laughed arrogantly on the other end of the phone.

"Are these your handiwork?" Levi asked.

“You bet! There’s nothing you can do about it. Hit me if you dare!” Margaret sneered.

Levi warned with a deep voice, “I’ll give you one more chance to explain your previous interview!”

The Protector Chapter 427

“Levi, don’t you understand the current situation? You’re at my mercy now. Why does it sound like the opposite? Are you stupid? Hahaha...”

“Okay. I’ve given you a chance, but it seems like you don’t appreciate it,” Levi replied coldly.

Margaret became angry and said in a cold tone, “Then let me tell you something as well. Even if you lick my shoes and drink my foot-washing water, I won’t give you another chance. Just you wait!”

After hanging up the call, a murderous intent flashed across Levi’s eyes.

“Honey, give me one more day. I’ll be sure to settle it,” Levi declared.

“Huh? How are you gonna solve it?” Zoey found his words hard to believe.

“Anyway, just wait until tomorrow afternoon. It should be done by then.”

In the evening, there was another breaking news from the TV station. Six years ago, Levi Group expanded its business by way of replacing human labor with machines. This has disrupted the market and caused many to go unemployed. It was believed that at least thirty thousand people were unemployed because of Levi Group. The main culprit was Levi Garrison!

Zoey and the rest were going crazy after the news came out.

The situation is worsening! First and foremost, this news was taken out of context! It was just a normal industrial development. How can they blame it on Levi? Besides, the amount of revenue generated by Levi Group’s advanced technology was incomparable to those of the outdated technology.

But after such news was reported, those who were unemployed thought that Levi was the cause of their misery.

Levi had become the sinner of North Hampton!

Many people formed an alliance to protest against Levi and drive him out of North Hampton.

Some even began to foresee that Levi's life would be in danger.

Due to the investment promotion fair, there had been a higher degree of attention to hot news lately.

As a result, Levi and the others were under more pressure.

"Darling, why don't we leave North Hampton for a while? We can't continue living like this." Zoey was afraid.

Levi remained level-headed and said with a calm face, "Don't worry, honey. Everything is gonna be alright. It will be settled by tomorrow afternoon."

At this moment, Zachary and Margaret were relaxing on a big bed in a five-star hotel, and they were paying attention to the news.

"Hahaha! Good job, babe. Levi will have no choice but to leave North Hampton tomorrow." Zachary was satisfied.

"Yeah, the authorities can't even intervene when it was the laid-off workers who force Levi to leave!" Margaret smirked while lying in Zachary's arms.

Zachary made a call and ordered, "Pay attention to Levi's whereabouts. Cut off his limbs immediately as soon as he leaves North Hampton."

“Hahaha... Take me there with you when the time comes, Mr. Shorts. I want to see his miserable looks with my own eyes.” Margaret laughed and sneaked under the covers.

There she goes again!

Zachary was reeling from fear as the thought crossed his mind. He dared not think of what would become of him if he were to defy her.

This woman is something else. I'm no match for her at all!

The following day, North Hampton's exhibition center was bustling.

Thousands of companies were gathered in the largest investment promotion fair known in North Hampton.

Margaret and her colleagues had arrived in the exhibition center early in the morning.

“Margaret, you have a major role to play in handling the content of the forum and interview Mr. Garrison today!” The head of the station showed his concern to her.

“Haha! Rest assured. I'll get it done nicely.”

Margaret began to put on makeup and prepared herself to be in her best form while everyone looked at her enviously.

After all, she was the only person who had the chance to interview Mr. Garrison.

The Protector Chapter 428

“Margaret, I’m so jealous of you! It great that you have the privilege to interview Mr. Garrison.”

“I know, right? What incredible luck! But to be honest, Margaret is the best in North Hampton.”

“Ain’t it the truth? Isn’t Margaret the best in professionalism, beauty, and temperament?”

...

Margaret was basking in the compliments from her colleagues.

What an exciting day. I’ll get to interview Mr. Garrison soon and receive another five million. Will the time go faster please?

Representatives of major companies arrived one after another to the exhibition hall.

The prominent families and leading corporations in South City had also shown up one after another.

Zachary and his group of people were one of them.

In fact, the Lopez family of South City had sent their representative. But he was here to exchange views on behalf of Harry.

Soon, the investment promotion fair started after the officials of North Hampton made a speech.

The exhibition center was divided into many areas, covering every sector of businesses.

Among them, Rogers Group and Morris Group had the most merchants in front of their booths.

Everyone knew that these two companies had great prospects and were eager to cooperate with them.

However, those leading corporations had their sights set on other things. They wanted to grab as many deals as possible and dominate a larger share in the North Hampton market.

However, every deal signed on this occasion was legal and beneficial to North Hampton's development.

Levi watched every movement in the exhibition hall from backstage.

The person behind him was Aurora Newt, a personal secretary arranged by Jesse Nielsen.

"Mr. Garrison, it's true that the policy enforced by the officials in the Investment Promotion Fair was in North Hampton's best interest. Otherwise, those corporations and influential families will flock into North Hampton lawlessly, causing bad competition and negative effects," Aurora said with a smile.

Levi nodded, "I have to commend Nielsen's great insight!"

Aurora smiled bitterly. He is the only person who dares to address the governor like that.

"By the way, Mr. Garrison, it's time for the TV station's interview session. Shall we?" Aurora glanced at the time and said.

Levi replied, "Alright. Let them in."

Following that, Levi and several other leaders waited in a conference room.

Outside the conference room.

"Thanks, Ms. Newt. I owe you a meal," Margaret said with a smile.

Aurora smiled in response, "Ms. Ward, please."

Everyone came to the conference room under the guidance of Aurora.

Even though Margaret had done this kind of interview before, she couldn't help but feel a little nervous today because there wasn't much information about Mr. Garrison.

About ten officials were sitting in the conference room.

Margaret panicked a little when she caught a glimpse of it.

"Hmm?"

She became stunned the moment she caught sight of the official's faces. One of them looked particularly familiar.

In order to confirm her sight, Margaret took a few steps forward.

It's Levi! He's sitting in the middle alongside the other leaders.

Margaret was puzzled by what she saw. What is Levi doing here?

Her colleagues were equally confused.

No wonder Mr. Shorts said he couldn't locate Levi. Because he was here!

Margaret said instinctively, "Levi, what are you doing here? You don't belong in this place!"

The entire conference room fell silent after her speech.

Margaret was taken aback when she noticed everyone staring at her strangely.

"What are you talking about, Ms. Ward? This person is Mr. Garrison," Aurora said in confusio

The Protector Chapter 429

“Huh? Mr. Garrison? It can’t be! Isn’t he Levi? The target of disdain who is a hot topic in North Hampton these few days.”

“That’s right. A malignant tumor like Levi should be driven out of North Hampton forever!”

Margaret and her colleagues commented.

“Know your place!”

“How dare you insult the name of the leader?”

At this time, the Minister of Commerce became furious.

“That’s right! Where did this reporter come from? Who is she to insult Mr. Garrison like that? What’s the meaning of this?”

“You’re from the North Hampton Television Network, right? Call Director Charles Yorke here!”

...

The other leaders also voiced out one after another.

The remarks of Margaret and her colleagues completely angered them.

After hearing the scolding, Margaret and her colleagues finally understood that they’ve gotten into deep trouble.

“What is the meaning of this, Ms. Ward? The person sitting in front of you is the Deputy Leader of North Hampton, Mr. Levi Garrison. Besides, he is also known as the one and only 5-Star God of War in Erudia,” Aurora stated the facts.

Boom!

Margaret and her colleagues were frozen instantaneously as if a thunderbolt had hit them from the sky.

Deputy Leader of North Hampton? The God of War? Levi Garrison? NO! It can't be! This isn't real!

Margaret and her colleagues remained rooted in a state of trance as their minds went blank completely.

Bang!

At this moment, the door of the conference room was opened.

A plump middle-aged man came running in while panting heavily.

This man was the director of North Hampton Television Network, Charles Yorke.

He looked at all the leaders present while gasping heavily.

He noticed a familiar face when his gaze landed on Levi.

Isn't he the brat that Margaret was after? Why is he sitting here?

“What's going on?” Charles looked at the crowd and asked curiously.

“What's going on?’ How ignorant can you be?”

The person speaking was the leader of Uptown District, Draco Simmons.

Bang!

The man slammed the table hard.

“Huh?”

Charles became increasingly baffled, and his body was trembling.

“Do you know that a reporter from your station had insulted Mr. Garrison for no reason when she saw him?” The other leaders chided in anger.

At this moment, a secretary distributed a few tablets to Draco and the other leaders.

The content was about the details of Margaret framing Levi.

Everyone burst into anger after reading the contents.

“Look at what you’ve done, Charles Yorke! Your good days are over!” Draco said and threw the tablet to Charles.

“It seems like you have no idea. So let me tell you, the person who your station slandered is the Deputy Leader of North Hampton, Mr. Levi Garrison! He is also the God of War! Figure it out yourself!”

Thump!

After hearing this, Charles fell to the ground in horror.

His face was covered with cold sweat, and he was terrified.

Oh my god! How much trouble did I get myself into? This person is the God of War!

Levi smiled and said, "The director of the TV station? Is that how the content review works? How dare you release edited content? What's going on?"

Charles almost wet his pants at Levi's question.

"No... Mr. Garrison, I-I don't know how this happened... It was Margaret who released it..."

"Margaret, how dare you set me up?"

Slap!

Charles gave Margaret a hard slap across her face.

The Protector Chapter 430

Margaret finally regained her senses after being slapped.

Thud!

Her body went limp, and she fell to the ground.

It never crossed her mind that Levi would have such an identity.

Otherwise, she would never even dream of doing such a thing.

“Margaret, do you still remember the call I made?” Levi had a menacing smile on his face.

Boom!

Margaret was in a state of shock after the epiphany.

How could I forget? Levi even called to give me a chance. But I was too foolish to realize my mistake.

“I-I was wrong... It’s all my fault, Mr. Garrison... Please forgive me...” Margaret immediately kneeled on the ground and begged for mercy.

Thud!

Thud!

Charles punched and kicked Margaret.

“You have the nerve to ask for forgiveness?”

He wanted to kill her there and then.

“What a vicious woman you are, Margaret! You drive people to their death by abusing your power. If it wasn’t for my identity, do you think I can still stand here?” Levi asked with a smile.

Everyone in the conference room felt a chill down their spine.

Levi is angry!

“What are you standing here for, Charles? Hurry and expose the wrongdoings of Margaret and clear the name of Mr. Garrison!” A few leaders bellowed.

Charles reacted and replied, “Okay. I’ll do it right away!”

Soon, an urgent news update was released on North Hampton Television Network. Exposed! Reporter Margaret deliberately framed Levi Garrison with edited content.

Margaret’s reputation was ruined after a series of evidence was presented, and the previous negative remarks about Levi and his family dissipated eventually.

...

“Charles, you’re responsible for this matter. Therefore, you’ll be relieved of your position!” Draco announced.

Charles nodded immediately, “Got it.”

“All the people involved in this matter must be penalized. Any individual that had dealings with Margaret should be arrested or punished!” A few leaders ordered at once.

Margaret laid on the ground, became paralyzed, and felt like her body was no longer hers.

Levi glanced at Margaret and said, "Falsity will never prevail. You know the things you did to get to your current position today. The truth will be uncovered eventually!"

Margaret felt regretful and penitent.

None of these would have happened if she didn't offend Levi.

It was not known how Margaret managed to leave the exhibition hall.

"This is the bi*ch that lied to us and made us blamed the wrong person!"

"Yeah. If it weren't for the discovery, we would've driven an innocent person to death!"

...

There was a huge crowd gathering outside the exhibition hall.

The crowd started pouring buckets of foul-smelling dung water all over her as soon as she appeared.

"Ughhhhhh..." Margaret puked immediately.

But the manure continued to splash on her again and again...

This was how a vicious person would always end up being.

After the matter was resolved, Zoey immediately called, "Darling, that was awesome! How did you do that?"

Levi smiled and said, "Justice always prevails."

After Zachary got the news, he found Margaret as soon as he could.

Zachary clutched his nose and stayed far away from Margaret because there was a horrible stench on her.

"What happened?"

Margaret cast a glance at him with a miserable smirk, "I advise the Suarez family to give up, leave North Hampton and stay in South City."

"Why?" Zachary looked baffled.

"Because he is someone you can't afford to provoke! If you insist on pushing your luck, the Suarez family will be wiped out from the face of the earth," Margaret warned.

The Protector Chapter 431

“Hahaha! What a joke! Do you really think we, the Suarez family would be afraid of anyone? Just wait and see. Soon enough, we’ll have our own territory in North Hampton.”

Zachary didn’t give a second thought to what Margaret had said.

Thus, the week-long investment promotion fair ended on a fulfilling note.

Many businesses from overseas had given their all into investing in North Hampton’s developments.

That was exactly the results Levi wanted to achieve.

However, he had heard of a few larger families forcing a few small and medium-sized corporations into handing over their companies. Within just a few days, many of those corporations had already been bought over.

“Mr. Garrison, what should we do? Should we start taking action?” The Rogers family asked.

Levi shook his head. “We’ll just observe for now. It wouldn’t be too late for us to take action only after they’ve succeeded. After all, it’s only fair for them to make contributions to the North Hampton’s economy first.”

When everyone caught sight of the smirk hanging off Levi’s lips, they understood what his true motives were.

Levi was planning to fatten them up slowly and surely. The moment they were ripe and plump enough, only then would he sink his teeth into them.

Back in the Lopez family mansion, Sebastian was looking frazzled.

He'd aged quite a bit under the stress from the recent events.

Staying put without taking revenge wasn't his style of confrontation at all.

"What happened? Did he agree to it?" Sebastian asked.

"Yes, he did, but he asked for you to go and invite him personally," Simon said.

"Yes, of course I will!"

"Sebastian, I never would have thought that you'd call on him." Simon's eyes trembled in fear.

Sebastian scoffed, "If it weren't that urgent, would I have gone for this option?"

"It's not a bad thing. In fact, if he takes action, then the boss behind the Morris Group has nowhere left to run!"

Murderous intent glazed over Sebastian's gaze. "That's right. That man is the one and only person I've ever feared of. If he didn't go into hiding, would I even have the chance to be where I am today in South City? He's the real head of Quebec!"

"That's right. The Morris Group has been playing games for far too long. It's high time this man appeared to stop them."

The Suarez family had been gobbling up businesses left and right in North Hampton. So far, they've gotten themselves quite the collection.

"No! I can't just let the injury my brother suffered go that easily. The Oriental Star Group must be ours." Zachary's gaze was chilly.

That very afternoon, Zachary brought a group of his men to the Oriental Star Group.

Zoey had no choice but to meet them.

“It’s Zoey, isn’t it? I’ll keep things short. I’m here to take over the Oriental Star Group,” Zachary said instantly.

Zoey, however, refused just as quickly. “That’s impossible. I’ve just taken over the company, and we’re developing pretty well. Why would I ever sell the company to you?”

“That’s right! Mr. Suarez, did you hear any false rumors? The Oriental Star Group isn’t up for sale. Were you expecting to buy us over?”

The other higher-ups looked at Zachary questioningly.

Zachary just chuckled. “Well, the Suarez family wishes to take over your company, so you have to sell it to us.”

“What kind of twisted reason is that? Aren’t you just forcing us to give it up to you?”

“What kind of society are we living in? I didn’t know such hegemony existed.”

The higher-ups of the Oriental Star Group all disagreed with his outlandish request.

“That’s right. The Suarez family is simply used to such methods. I’ll give you 24 hours to clean up before I come back here to take what’s mine. If you turn me down, trust me, you’ll regret it,” Zachary said coldly.

Three loud bangs resounded as one of Zachary's men tossed three throwing knives and landed them each on the words, 'Oriental Star Group' that was printed on the wall behind them.

The Protector Chapter 432

That was a threat.

It was a threat; plain and simple as that; laid bare for all of them to see.

That was a warning to everyone in Oriental Star Group that if they dared to go against him, they'd regret that decision for the rest of their lives.

"Remember, none of you have the right to retaliate against the Suarez family, so don't even try," Zachary said coldly before leaving.

In the end, the higher-ups were left staring after him in disbelief.

Was the Oriental Star Group about to get bought over right after they'd just begun developing?

"Ms. Lopez, I think it'd be for the best if we let them buy the company."

"That's right. The Suarez family has been buying companies left and right. The ones who tried to retaliate ended up defending themselves to death."

"The Suarez family has way too much power in South City. We don't have the power to fight back against them. In fact, we might end up dead, too."

The higher-ups of the Oriental Star Group had given up completely.

Zoey, however, remained silent.

Deep within, her heart was crumbling in hopelessness.

Why did they have to get on the Suarez family's bad side?

Zoey was ready to give up.

Based on everything that had happened recently, the Suarez family would stop at nothing to get what they wanted.

In order to force the hands of those business owners, they had used all kinds of twisted methods.

Zoey was especially terrified that her parents or her husband would get into trouble because of her.

Recently, Levi had been rather satisfied with how North Hampton was coming along.

There were a couple of obstacles along the way, but overall, everything was going smoothly.

Once he reached home, however, the first thing he saw was Zoey's unhappy face.

"What happened, honey? Did something happen at work?" Levi asked, concerned.

Zoey shook her head. "I'm just frustrated because of the recent developments with the company."

The next day, Zoey had just stepped foot into the company when she caught sight of Zachary strolling in with a bunch of his underlings.

Everyone else shivered at the sight of the man from the other day who had used the throwing knives with such ease.

“So, Ms. Lopez, what’s your final decision?” Zachary asked with a smirk on his face.

“You could at least try to be a little more sincere with your request. What’s your price?” Zoey asked.

Zachary was taken aback for a second before replied, “One billion!”

Everyone inhaled sharply at the sound of Zachary’s price.

The Suarez family was truly overbearing!

How dare they try to buy a company with a net worth of six billion for only one billion?

Zoey scoffed coldly, “Mr. Suarez, are you insane? How could I possibly sell it to you for a mere one billion?”

Zachary burst out laughing.

Coldly, he jabbed, “Ms. Lopez, I don’t think you know what’s going on right now. You’re in no position to make any negotiations. I named my price to save you some face. If you piss me off, you’re not going to get even a cent from me.”

Ridiculous!

How could the Suarez family be this ridiculously overbearing?!

Sadly, they could only seethe in silence.

Two days ago, someone tried to retaliate against the Suarez family. They ended up with four broken limbs and their family got dragged into it too.

Who wouldn’t be afraid of such a force?

“This is the contract. Sign it now, and the money will be transferred to you instantly.” Zachary tossed the contract to Zoey.

“If you refuse to sign this, Aaron Lopez and Caitlyn Black will be joining me for dinner tonight.” Zachary laughed chillingly as he laid his threats down.

His meaning was clear enough. If Zoey refused, he’d find a way to get rid of Aaron and Caitlyn, and it didn’t matter whether they were dead or alive.

“You’re being unreasonable!” Zoey shouted in anger.

Even after so long, she had never met such an overbearing person.

Sadly, she couldn’t do anything about it.

“Ms. Lopez, just sign it!” The other higher-ups started clamoring.

“I don’t think so.”

Right at that moment, a voice called out.

Levi was here.

He had noticed Zoey’s worrisome expression during dinner the other day. He did some investigations of his own to find out what was wrong.

To think that it was caused by the Suarez family!

“Levi Garrison? What are you doing here?”

Zachary had seen Levi in pictures before, and the very moment he laid his eyes on him, he knew he hated his guts.

The Protector Chapter 433

It's normal for enemies to want to finish off each other upon meeting. Zachary couldn't help but want to kill Levi on sight.

With a deep frown on his face, Levi asked, "Who are you? Have we met?"

"I'm Zachary of the Suarez family. Zayn Suarez is my brother."

Levi nodded. "Oh, that cripple!"

"You-!"

The moment he heard of the way Levi referred his brother, Zachary's anger flared up.

"You should have stayed in South City. What are you doing here in North Hampton? Are you asking to be killed here?" Levi asked.

Zachary laughed coldly. "Don't go thinking you're safe with the Morris Group behind you. I'm warning you, the Suarez family is not going to stop until we've conquered a good part of North Hampton! You'd better sign the contract before you regret it."

"Just screw off already." Levi shoved Zachary away.

"You asked for it!"

Zachary's subordinates started moving toward Levi.

Zachary stopped them.

“There’s no need for that.”

Zachary smiled at Zoey and asked, “Ms. Lopez, I hope you’ve thought about this properly. You’ll regret it if you make the wrong move.”

“I told you to leave, didn’t I?” Levi yelled.

“Okay, okay. Just you wait and see.” Zachary smiled menacingly.

“Mr. Shorts, why didn’t you just get rid of that guy?” After they exited the area, Will Brown asked Zachary in confusion. Will was the strongest fighter on Zachary’s team.

Zachary looked pissed. “You think I didn’t want to? That man has the Morris Group backing him up. Even Sebastian Lopez faced a hard time with them.”

“Then, what should we do? Just take it?” Will said in anger.

Zachary, on the other hand, smirked mysteriously. “Of course not! We’ll settle the Oriental Star Group first.”

“What about Levi Garrison?” Will Brown asked.

“I heard about Sebastian Lopez wanting to make a comeback.”

“Huh? Even the Black and White Guards suffered greatly. What could Sebastian do?”

Zachary smirked. “It will be a whole different story when Sebastian managed to call on him.”

“Him? Wait... could it be?”

Will suddenly looked terrified at the thought of someone and inhaled sharply.

“Sebastian Lopez is truly putting in his all. How’d he manage to call upon someone who’s been in hiding for the past thirty years?!”

The others were just as amazed.

“That’s right! That’s the real boss of Quebec and the one Sebastian is scared of the most.”

“The Morris Group is really something. They managed to drag him out of hiding,” Zachary said.

Will figured something out and smiled. “Mr. Shorts, you’re waiting for Sebastian Lopez and that man to get rid of the Morris Group before getting rid of Levi, right?”

“Yes. Without the Morris Group behind his back, how is Levi going to act all high and mighty?”

In South City, there was a small, rundown temple in the corner of Mount Amethyst.

Anyone in the upper class of South City knew that this temple was off-limits. That was because it was the home to the most terrifying figure in South City, and even all of Quebec.

He had once ruled over Quebec.

Thirty years ago, he retreated back here and became a vegetarian. Apart from that, he started reciting Buddhist mantras everyday.

Highly skilled professionals surrounded the temple and no one was allowed to go near it.

However, today, the Lopez family approached the temple.

Sebastian knelt in front of the temple personally, waiting for him to appear.

“Sir, the Lopez family is in trouble. Quentin Lane has been killed; Wesley Lane and James Lane have been crippled, and the Black and White Guards have been spliced into pieces. I, Sebastian Lopez, beg you to get rid of them. In exchange, I will give everything I have.”

Sebastian begged with all his sincerity and kowtowed three times.

The Protector Chapter 434

Everyone present at the temple instantly held their breaths at that sentence.

They stared at Sebastian in disbelief.

What could possibly have pushed Sebastian to make such a daring exchange?

He was even willing to give up his fortune in order to beat this mysterious person, or force.

Sebastian continued kneeling as he waited for an answer to come from within the temple.

Finally, after about ten minutes, the rundown wooden door of the temple creaked open.

A man dressed in a suit walked out of the temple. Everyone looked on in shock and fear as the godson of the ex-ruler of the underworld walked toward them.

Even Sebastian looked terrified.

The young man said simply, "Sebastian, please return. My godfather will handle this."

"What?"

"Thank you, sir!" Sebastian yelled in glee.

He agreed!

That meant the Morris Group was done for.

To Sebastian, this man was practically on the same level as God himself.

There was nothing in Quebec that he couldn't get his hands on if he were willing to step up.

Right after that, the news of this man finally returning to society started spreading around South City like wildfire.

Once, he had been the ruler of Quebec. He had locked himself away for thirty years, but he was finally emerging once more.

Everyone could tell that North Hampton was about to undergo great changes.

The fact that this man was willing to show himself once more meant that Quebec was about to go through a massive transformation.

All the other forces and families in South City started preparing for this man's arrival.

Early on the next day, the ten most powerful families of South City gathered along the twisting and turning roads of Mount Amethyst in two lines as they waited for this person's arrival.

Sebastian stood among them.

There was finally some people coming from the end of the road.

They had come down the mountain on foot.

This group of people surrounded an old man with white hair and a ruddy complexion who looked full of spirit.

Even though he was already 80 years old, his steps were steady and he was clearly of good health.

He was once the ruler of Quebec, Scott Yates.

Everyone in Quebec called him by 'sir' and 'sir' only.

At first sight, he looked like any other esteemed figure, perhaps a well-read professor or master.

No one would have connected him to the role of an underworld ruler.

Apart from Fernand Yates, Scott's godson, there were four other people walking next to him. They were also known as the Four Mighty Generals.

The first one was all skin and bones, and resembled a walking skeleton. His skin stretched taut over the angular frame of his skull. He was known simply as Bones.

The second stood at around 2 meters tall and looked like a human mountain. He was named Golem.

The third was as bulked up as a bull and his head was completely bald. There were six scars on the thin skin of his scalp. His name was Titan, and he was a priest.

The last one appeared completely normal, and nothing stood out about him. However, he was the most fearsome among all.

The Black and White Guards were an indestructible force in South City.

But in the face of these four, they were mere ants.

In South City's extensive underworld, the Black and White Guards would only be the fifth or sixth most powerful forces.

The first four places belonged to these four generals.

These four taking action was just as terrifying as any natural disaster.

They were much too scary.

They were rumored to be able to beat an army of thousands.

"Congratulations Sir, on your return!"

When the families saw Scott Yates and his lineup, they welcomed him enthusiastically.

So what if they had countless riches?

So what if they had enough money to overthrow the country?

All that could disappear at any second with just a word from Scott Yates.

As compared to Liam Macy and Sebastian Lopez, Scott Yates had experienced much more. He had made his breakthrough during the peak of Quebec's underworld, so he had a much stronger background.

There was nothing he could say that Quebec wouldn't obey to instantly.

Sebastian stepped up. "Sir, now that you are back, there's a favor I have to ask from you."

The Protector Chapter 435

“Sebastian’s reputation has been completely ruined!”

“The Morris Group? Is that a new corporation?” Scott Yates asked.

Sebastian nodded. “Yes, sir. The Morris Group appeared only recently. They appear to be run by the Rogers family. The collapse of the three main pillars of North Hampton have a lot to do with the Morris Group.”

Scott Yates stayed silent at that.

His godson, Fernand Yates, piped up, “Yes, I’ve taken notice of that as well. The reason that this Morris Group managed to gain so much power in such a short time is due to someone extremely powerful working behind the scenes. Furthermore, it’s next to impossible to find any information about their mysterious boss or Neil Atkinson.”

Fernand also held a lot of power. Despite Scott Yates lived in seclusion away in the mountains for the last thirty years, the family business had continued under Fernand’s management. However, he had chosen to stay subtle about it and only worked in the background.

Anyone in South City knew that Scott Yates was number one when it came to accumulated wealth.

“How dare they act like this in North Hampton? There must be a powerful figure behind the scenes.” Scott Yate’s expression changed abruptly. “Investigate! No matter who that person is, I will chase him out of Quebec regardless.”

“Understood. I’ll begin investigations right away,” Fernand replied.

The citizens of South City let out a sigh of relief.

With Scott Yates helping them out, the Morris Group would definitely be done for.

They could finally gobble up North Hampton with ease.

Every time anyone tried to take over North Hampton's businesses, they either got held back by the law or got targeted by the Morris Group and the Rogers family.

The people of South City had been holding back their frustrations for a long time. The Suarez family and the Lopez family were especially bothered by that.

Despite that, all of them were more than aware of the fact that the Morris Group would be done for the moment 'Sir' left the mountain.

It didn't matter how strong and powerful the Morris Group was.

It didn't matter what their reputation was in South City.

In Quebec, Scott Yates' word was the law.

Even a dragon would find it hard to control a snake in its old haunt.

North Hampton wasn't as closely updated, so they had no clue of the imminent danger.

Zachary had caught wind of Scott Yates' return.

He couldn't be more ecstatic at the news.

"The end of the Morris Group is near! We should quickly wrap up our deal with the Oriental Star Group."

The Oriental Star Group was an essential component of the Suarez family's battle plan.

The entertainment department of the Oriental Star Group was something the Suarez family urgently needed.

"Mr. Suarez, the Oriental Star Group has recently been shooting seven blockbuster online-only movies. This was all produced by Zoey Lopez. Around fifty million was invested into each production. They'll probably increase as time goes by. The final cost has to be around five hundred million at least!" Will Brown reported.

"Hmph! Zoey Lopez, I bet you were trying to make a real profit, weren't you? Well, not a chance!" Zachary murmured as he chuckled darkly.

Zoey Lopez was definitely eager to make some achievements.

The property arm had already been established.

Naturally, she had to pay more attention to the entertainment segment.

Today, Zoey decided to visit the set personally.

This set belonged to the movie that they had invested the highest amount of money in, which was around seventy million.

They didn't spend that much money on special effects or the plot. Most of the money had been invested into casting the male and female leads, who were both top-notch actors in the industry.

Casting the both of them would cost around fifty million at the very least.

The actual cost of the production itself was only about twenty million.

However, she believed that the movie would become a hit and generate a sizeable return given the actors' fame.

The crew was currently preparing for filming while the actors were going through their lines.

Niall, the male lead, spotted Zoey once he lifted his head.

"Who is that?" he asked his assistant.

"This is the new boss of the Oriental Star Group, Zoey Lopez."

Niall's eyes lit up as he smiled. "I have to get to know her well then."

The Protector Chapter 436

So far, Niall was the most famous actor in the Oriental Star Group. He was extremely popular and had a ton of fans.

However, anyone who knew him personally knew how messy his private life was.

He slept around with fans and other female celebrities alike.

He had even had a fling or two with his assistants and makeup artists.

He had no problems hooking up with female higher-ups of various companies that had their eyes on him.

From just his appearance alone, Niall had risen from a barely-there social media influencer to a highest-paid actor within just three years.

Every time he took on a new job with a new company, he would immediately flirt with the female higher-ups as long as they were decent enough.

Even if the female boss in question was old and ugly, he'd still say yes if she was willing to pay a huge amount of money or benefits.

Niall was entranced the very moment he laid his eyes on Zoey.

How could there be such a beautiful and young boss in the industry?

The appearance and figure of all the other celebrities he had met so far paled in comparison to Zoey.

On top of all that, she was the boss of a multimillion company.

Zoey was watching the crew do their work when a scented breeze suddenly blew past her.

She lifted her head to see a tall and handsome man looking at her.

“Hi, nice to meet you. My name is Niall Xander!” Niall reached out his hand for a handshake.

“Niall Xander?” Of course Zoey knew who he was.

“I’m sorry, my husband doesn’t allow me to have physical contact with other men,” she turned him down.

Niall lowered his hand awkwardly.

He hadn’t considered the fact that Zoey was a married woman.

Despite that, a glint of ecstasy flashed in his eyes.

He loved married woman.

They were on an entirely different level from immature young girls.

He had already set his sights on Zoey as his next target.

“Wow, I can’t believe how young you are, Ms. Lopez. The fact that you managed to pull off filming seven movies at the same time is really impressive,” Niall complimented.

Zoey smiled. “It’s also thanks to your contributions as an actor. Hopefully, it’ll bring us good results.”

“Of course it will! I’ll put my everything into this movie,” Niall promised.

Gerry Wade, who was in charge of the entertainment department, reported, "Ms. Lopez, we've officially started advertising on the seven movies to the public. So far, the ones with Niall in the cast are the most well received. Based on our early calculations, we can earn up to four hundred million. In fact, it might end up being even more."

Zoey smiled in excitement and said, "Mr. Xander, you are truly the hope of Oriental. Please, if you need anything at all, just let us know."

Zoey understood what was going on.

In order to gain the most out of the movie, they had to treat Niall and their female lead like royalty.

"Of course! In fact, I wanted to ask if you are free tonight. I have something I need to discuss with you. It has to do with the future developments of Oriental Star Group," Niall said with a smile.

Gerry whispered to Zoey, "Ms. Lopez, Niall's management team is pretty impressive. They're the ones we hired for a huge sum last time. In my opinion, you should say yes."

Zoey agreed. "Alright. Since I'm new to the entertainment industry, it'll be great to have a light to shine my way."

Niall exchanged glances with his assistant and he smiled.

The fish had taken the bait, and he would be enjoying it tonight.

"Niall, what are you doing here? We were going through our lines just now," Yvonne, the female lead, asked unhappily.

She had always liked Niall.

The company was also desperate to sell Yvonne and Niall as a couple, to which she was more than happy to oblige.

All along, Yvonne had seen the girls Niall took interest in as enemies.

When she saw the way Niall looked at Zoey, she was instantly furious.

“Who are you? Why are you interrupting our practice?” Yvonne asked frostily.

The Protector Chapter 437

Niall yelled, "What are you doing? This is our new boss, Ms. Lopez!"

"So what if she's our boss? She shouldn't disrupt our practice!"

Yvonne was the star of Oriental Star Group, so she was haughty and did not care about others.

"Alright then, I shan't be disturbing you! Mr. Xander, please don't forget about tonight!" Zoey reminded in good nature.

Niall was excited and nodded immediately, "Don't worry, I'll make the necessary arrangements!"

Yvonne was enraged by this. She knew what Niall was up to.

For the entire shoot today, both Niall and Yvonne were distracted.

To begin with, both of their acting skills were mediocre.

The quality of the shoot was especially bad that day, but the directors had to call it a good take.

After all, they could not afford to offend either of them.

Yet, the two of them were involved in five major movies that day.

"Nevermind if the quality is bad. They have a large fanbase. We'll get our money's worth from their fanbase alone!" the directors, scriptwriters, and other crew members consoled themselves.

That day, Levi returned to the Morris Group once again.

Iris did not let him slack off and arranged for him to be an interviewer.

Even though she felt that Levi was incapable, he had a good eye for talent.

Hence, Levi spent the entire day conducting interviews.

A few young men came for an interview.

Levi glanced at the contract and was puzzled. He inquired, "You're from the North Hampton Film Academy? You're trained as an actor? Why are you applying for a job in sales?"

"To be honest, Sir, the entertainment industry is too stressful and competitive. Without a good background or funding, it's difficult to make a name for yourself! We're all from the countryside and have neither of them, so we're struggling to make ends meet. We wanted to find a job to survive." The youngsters hung their heads in disappointment.

That was not an uncommon sight. There were only so many successful artistes. Most artistes did not even find success as internet celebrities and had to find another job, even if they were talented actors and actresses.

When he heard about the entertainment industry, Levi immediately thought of his wife's firm.

He recalled that they were expanding the scale of their entertainment business and were lacking manpower.

"In that case, you guys have a minute to perform something for me. You have a minute each. Feel free to exercise your creativity!" Levi smiled.

The interviewees were confused, but Levi was the interviewer after all. They did as he asked.

“Not bad. You really have talent!” Levi commended sincerely.

These men were all skilled actors, but their talents were not appreciated.

Sadly, there were many talented actors who did not get a chance to act. The movies were all filled with famous stars with poor acting skills, resulting in low-quality films.

“Please show me any other skills you have!”

Some of them showcased their dancing, singing, and other skills.

“All of you are great! Sign this, please!” Levi smiled.

“I beg your pardon?” they were all bewildered. You can get a sales job just by singing and dancing?

They had no idea that Levi was giving them the opportunity of a lifetime, transforming them from people barely making ends meet to superstars.

Meanwhile, at night, after work.

Zoey made a trip to the drama department.

“Hi Ms. Lopez, Mr. Xander is too busy and has returned to his residence. After that, he has to attend a dinner. Time is tight, so if you’re looking for him, please head to his home!” his assistant said.

“Alright, please lead the way,” Zoey replied. She did not dwell too much into it and followed the assistant to the artistes’ lodging.

She did not have any stray thoughts.

For one, the place was crowded.

For another, Niall was a star and would not do anything to harm his reputation.

The Protector Chapter 438

But Zoey was wrong.

His management team had long known about him and he did not care about his reputation at all.

Zoey headed to Niall's room. He had just finished taking a bath and walked out in a bathrobe, showing off his muscular body.

Zoey immediately turned to leave.

"Ms. Lopez, why are you leaving? It's fine!" Niall hurriedly blocked Zoey.

Zoey turned around and smiled embarrassedly, "Sorry for coming all of a sudden. I didn't expect you to be in the shower."

"I'm a simple man. Ms. Lopez, please, have a seat!" Niall offered.

Zoey questioned him, "Mr. Xander, you said earlier that you had something important to discuss. What is it?"

"Winnie, help me get something!"

Niall waved her off. Winnie, his manager, left with a knowing look.

Zoey had no idea that Winnie would not be returning.

Before Winnie left, she closed the door behind her.

Zoey became alert the moment the door closed.

After all, she was alone with another man in a room.

Niall smiled and enquired, “Ms. Lopez, how do you feel about me?”

“You’re a great star who has a large fan base!”

“No, I meant about my looks. How’s my figure? Did I get your heart racing?” Niall flirted directly.

“Huh? What do you mean?” Zoey felt something was amiss.

Niall closed in and explained, “Ms. Lopez, I decided to give you a chance – a chance to have me for one night!”

In the past, when Niall said this, those rich lady bosses would have pounced on him.

However, Zoey’s reaction was far from what he had expected.

She was not tempted by the offer and was even filled with an icy rage.

“Mr. Xander, please show some self-respect! I’ll be off!” Zoey spat.

“Wait, hold on. Let’s talk things through!”

How could Niall allow her to escape?

“Let me go! If you try anything funny, I will be sure to persecute you!” Zoey roared.

Niall scoffed, “Woman, I looked for you because I felt you were worth it. Stop being so full of yourself. Do you think you’re the boss here? I’ll tell you honestly. In the Oriental Star Group, I’m the real boss! You have to listen to me!”

“You...” Zoey was fuming.

She did not expect to meet an artiste like that!

Niall sneered, “Zoey Lopez, you’d better obey my every command. I’ll guarantee that all of your movies sell well and Oriental Star Group’s business excels! Otherwise, I’ll cripple your company!”

Zoey bit her lip and glared at Niall.

“Come, as long as you listen to me, we will both benefit from it!”

Niall was about to pounce upon Zoey.

Bam!

The door slammed opened and Yvonne entered.

Whew! Zoey heaved a sigh of relief.

Meanwhile, Niall was enraged.

This stupid woman is at it again! Why does she have to ruin everything?

“Zoey Lopez, you wench! As the owner of the Company, you’ve overstepped the boundaries and seduced your own artistes! How shameless!” Yvonne accused her.

Zoey was bewildered. Niall was the one who tried to seduce me. Why am I in the wrong now?

“Zoey, you’re so shameless! I’ve heard that you were even married for six years! How could you even do that!”

“You slut!”

Niall fell silent and acknowledged Yvonne’s actions.

The Protector Chapter 439

He wanted to maintain the stance that he was not in the wrong and that it was all Zoey's fault.

Zoey flared up, "Niall, you'd better explain what's going on here!"

At this point, Niall's manager and a few assistants had arrived.

"I'll explain alright! Zoey here seduced me and was refused by me, simple as that!" Niall sneered.

When she heard Niall twisting the facts, Zoey was about to burst with rage.

"Bullshit! You were the one who tried to rape me!" Zoey screamed.

Yvonne pushed Zoey and spat, "Stop pretending to be innocent! I saw everything earlier. You were clearly seducing him!"

Yvonne loved Niall, so even if Niall were in the wrong, she would protect him and push the blame to someone else. This was one such example.

"You two..." Zoey nearly fainted from the rage.

Winnie sided with them as well, "Ms. Lopez, you can't do that! Even though you're the boss, there are limits! Niall is an actor. If word got out, his career would be destroyed and your company would suffer as well!"

"That's right! A woman like you can get any man you want. Let Niall off!"

"That's right, Ms. Lopez, don't make life difficult for him!"

...

Niall's manager and team started to defend him anxiously.

"You... I... It wasn't me..."

Zoey was livid but she did not know how to explain herself.

She was framed and everyone present were on his side.

She would not be able to defend herself even with concrete evidence.

"Ms. Lopez, please leave. We will pretend this never happened and won't pursue this matter!" Winnie said as she dragged Zoey off.

Zoey was flabbergasted. I'm the victim here! Why did I suddenly become the villain and even get blackmailed by them?

Zoey's first reaction was to fire all of them.

She dialed Wade's number and informed him of this.

"You can't do that, Ms. Lopez. Oriental Star Group's entertainment business depends on Niall and Yvonne. We can't possibly fire them. Calm down and hear me out, Ms. Lopez! This will not benefit the company in any way!"

"I...!" Zoey clenched her teeth angrily.

I am the victim here! Yet, there's nothing I can do about it!

...

In Niall's room, Yvonne scorned, "How could you do something so reckless? This woman isn't any ordinary person. The moment she gets ahold of your weakness, you're toast!"

"Hmph! I'll get this woman someday!" Niall spat. He was still angered by Yvonne for ruining his opportunity. Otherwise, Zoey would not have been able to escape back then.

"Alright, Ms. Wren. Calm down. Niall is still young and reckless. It's okay," Winnie persuaded her.

At this point in time, Winnie received a call.

"Huh? What? Mr. Suarez from South City wants to meet Niall?"

Meanwhile, Yvonne's manager also received a call.

The contents of the call were the same.

"I'm not meeting anyone tonight! I don't feel like it!" Niall declared angrily.

"But you just have to meet this man! He's from the Suarez family in South City. No one can afford to offend him!" Winnie explained.

Soon, a car came to pick Niall, Yvonne, and a few other artistes up.

These ten people were all the pillars of Oriental Star Group.

The Protector Chapter 440

Zoey was fuming with rage but there was nothing she could do about it.

She had to wait for the movies to finish filming.

“Honey, is your company’s entertainment side short on manpower?” Levi queried.

Zoey nodded, “Yep, we’ve always been understaffed and were on the lookout for new talents!”

“Well, it happens that I’ve signed all of them for you during the interview yesterday. I’ve interviewed them all myself. Their acting skills are superb, but they don’t have a chance to showcase their talents!”

Levi told her about what happened during the interview earlier.

“What a pity. They were trained in acting and singing but had to find work elsewhere,” Zoey sighed.

“I’ll get them to look for you tomorrow!”

“Sure.”

The following day, shortly after Zoey arrived at her office, the four men hired by Levi appeared.

A man and a woman caught her attention immediately.

The man was Maurice Lorraine while the woman was Helena Engler.

At least, they had the looks.

Normally, they would both have an opportunity to become famous. However, they did not have the background since they were from rural areas, and at the same time, they were unwilling to play by the unspoken rules.

Hence, they ended up in this state.

Zoey got professionals from the entertainment department to interview them and they all passed.

After signing the contract, they officially became artistes under the Oriental Star Group. Even if they had to start from the bottom, the four of them were excited.

They also knew that with Oriental Star Group's reputation in North Hampton, this would not have been possible without Levi's help.

Helena immediately sent a message to Levi to treat him to a meal.

At the drama department, Niall, Yvonne, and the other top artistes were usually lazy and treated work lightly.

However, that day, they were slacking even more than usual.

Forgetting or memorizing the wrong lines were common.

At times, Niall's expression even wandered and did not look at the camera at all.

The stage crew was furious, but there was nothing they could do about it.

After all, they were famous stars that no one could afford to offend.

They could only take scene by scene and hope for the best during editing.

Niall and Yvonne exchanged knowing looks and had an elated expression.

This had happened because of what occurred the previous night.

Both of them were angry at Zoey and wanted to get their revenge. At this point in time, Zachary called them up and strengthened their resolve. They were bent on getting revenge on the Oriental Star Group.

“Let me introduce everyone. These are artistes newly signed by the company. They graduated from North Hampton Film Academy and are very talented. That’ll reduce the burden on the drama department!” Gerry announced as he brought the four over.

Many were disgusted by the four daft-looking individuals. Most people disliked newcomers.

“Can we treat them as we like?” Niall asked.

Gerry responded, “Of course. Niall, you’re their senior. Ordering them around is a privilege to them!”

Helena and the others recognized stars like Niall and Yvonne. They were eager to be of help to them.

If they could establish a good relationship with them, their career would be set!

“Alright then! You, go get me some water!” Niall pointed towards Helena.

“Me? Sure!” Helena felt privileged by this gesture.

She immediately went to pour him a cup of water and carefully brought it in front of Niall.

“Senior, please have some water!” Helena offered him with a smile.

Niall scrutinized Helena carefully. This lass has got the looks. She isn't inferior to Yvonne in any way.

"Ahem," Yvonne cleared her throat. Only then did Niall take the glass of water.

The Protector Chapter 441

“Pfft!”

“Argh!” Niall screamed and spat the water out on Helena.

“What the hell?”

Splash!

Niall splashed the remaining water in the cup towards Helena.

“The water is so hot! Were you trying to burn me?” Niall roared.

“Huh?” Helena covered the parts of her body which were wet and was taken aback.

“Newcomer, what’s up with you? Did you do this on purpose? What’s with the hot water?”

“Yeah! What’s up with this? Do you not want to act anymore?”

“Are you looking for trouble?”

Several people started accusing Helena.

Several dozens of people ganged up on a young lady.

Helena was frightened and started sobbing.

“Heh, see? Zoey is here to make life difficult for us!” Yvonne started fanning the flames.

“That’s right! The timing was too coincidental! The newcomers came right after what happened last night!”

“She’s sent them to deal with us!”

They quickly pushed the blame to Zoey.

Niall cast his gaze upon Helena and demanded, “Hey! Kneel down and apologize! Otherwise, I won’t let you off!”

“That’s right! Kneel!” the others chanted.

Helena was frightened out of her wits.

It was her first day and something so major had happened.

If she had known earlier, she would have stuck to sales.

Just as Helena was about to kneel down, Maurice stopped her.

“Apologize? What for?” Maurice demanded.

“She gave me a cup of boiling water on purpose! She’s clearly trying to scald me,” Niall burst out in rage.

Maurice argued, “You only said to get you some water. You didn’t specify if you wanted it hot or cold! That’s your own problem.”

Niall scoffed, “You could have asked! That’s common sense. God gave you a mouth for a reason. If you don’t even have this much common sense, you shouldn’t be an actor!”

“I...” Maurice was speechless when faced with the unreasonable Niall.

“Is this the way you should be talking to a senior? I didn’t offend you, did I? Do you really take me for granted?” Niall continued ferociously.

Maurice was scared as well.

Offending a famous star like him would mean the end of his career.

They were just some commoners from rural areas, to begin with. They were no match for these people.

“W-we’ll apologize...” the other two stammered.

They were worried that things would blow up.

Niall sneered at Maurice and pointed at the water on the ground. He demanded, “You’ll kneel down to apologize to me as well and lick the water on the ground clean. If you do that, I’ll forgive you!”

Maurice was a hot-blooded youth and got angered by Niall.

“Don’t push your luck. I’ve got nothing to lose here!” he spat as he glared at Niall.

Slap!

Niall slapped Maurice hard on the face.

Maurice was bewildered.

“You’re a few years too young to talk back to me like that!” Niall scoffed.

“I’ll kill you!”

Maurice was about to pounce on him, but several people held him down.

At this point in time Niall, Yvonne, as well as the other actors Zachary had assembled exchanged glances.

They would carry out the plan the Suarez family had requested.

Bam!

Niall kicked a camera aside and yelled, "Damn it! I'll quit! This is taking things too far!"

The Protector Chapter 442

Crash!

Niall went berserk and smashed anything he could see.

“Right! We’ll stop acting! This is just bullying us! They got a few newcomers to come and pick on us!”

Wham!

Yvonne kicked the equipment aside as well.

“Zoey is trying to force us to quit by using these newcomers! Why bother acting? I won’t work for her!”

“Exactly! What’s the point?”

The other artistes and managers were livid and started destroying the equipment.

The other filming crew was scared out of their wits. Have the actors gone mad? Surely being offended by two newcomers won’t warrant such a reaction! What’s going on?

The ones who were most confused were the four newcomers.

Their illustrious career had ended the moment it started, just because they had offended a few top actors.

They had no way to take responsibility. Even the men started crying out loud.

Unbeknownst to them, Niall and Yvonne had planned this from the start. They were bribed by the Suarez to destroy Oriental Star Group.

They were simply being used as an excuse. Even if they had not shown up, Niall would have found trouble with someone else!

Not only that, but the top artistes from other groups had gone on strike as well! The part that was affected the worst was that Niall and Yvonne had co-starred in five movies.

Several filming sets worth of artistes had gone on strike.

...

“Ms. Lopez! Something terrible happened! Actors and actresses from seven different sets have gone on strike! They even started smashing the equipment and the scene is in a mess! Follow me and have a look yourself!”

Zoey was shocked when she received Gerry’s call.

However, she quickly calmed down.

There must be a reason for the strike. First, I offended Niall Xander. Second, Zachary Suarez might be behind this.

Zoey rushed to the scene as soon as possible.

When she saw the set in such a mess, Zoey’s heart sank. Why do things like this happen all the time?

Gerry had arrived at the same time. He inquired, “What happened? What’s going on?”

Winnie scorned, “Mr. Wade, Ms. Lopez is trying to make life difficult for us!”

“Huh? What’s wrong?”

“The four newbies you just brought in were here to make life difficult for us! One of them tried to scald Niall with boiling water while the other tried to hit him! If you want to fire us, just say it outright! Why does it in such a roundabout manner?” Winnie demanded.

“That’s right! Just fire us! We’ll be welcome everywhere else!” Yvonne and the other artistes burst out in rage.

Gerry took a look around and questioned, “Is that so?”

The others agreed, “It’s true! These newcomers were clumsy and making life difficult for Niall!”

“That’s right! Ms. Lopez, Mr. Wade, I’ll have to discuss things with you two. There’s nothing wrong with getting new members, but you’ll have to train them first before sending them here. How could you just send them here?” Shaw Timmons, the director with a neutral stance, grumbled as well.

He did not care about who was in the right and who was in the wrong. All he was concerned about was that these newbies had affected his shoot.

“You guys? You’ll be the death of me!” Gerry was furious. However, since they were brought here by Zoey, he did not dare to comment too much.

Zoey bit her lip. She knew that this was no simple matter and these newcomers were simply unlucky.

Niall and the others used Helena as an excuse to vent their frustration.

She had to admit that that was a powerful move. It was the perfect excuse!

The Protector Chapter 443

“Mr. Wade, we’re going on strike. This isn’t fair at all!” Niall protested.

Gerry consoled him, “Niall, please calm down. This is a small matter!”

“How can we calm down? You’ve already pushed us so far. If you’re unhappy, just fire us!” Yvonne snarled.

Zoey asked, “What are your terms?”

Niall smirked, “Someone’s quick on the uptake. Winnie, tell them our terms!”

Winnie looked Zoey in the eye and began, “Ms. Lopez, if you want us to continue to work, you have to be sincere about it!”

“Well? How much do you want?” Zoey had seen this coming. They will definitely ask for an increase in pay.

Winnie held up three fingers and demanded, “We want triple the pay for all seven films with the ten actors involved! Otherwise, we will continue going on strike!”

Boom!

Gerry was stunned. Triple the pay! That’s fifty million! The budget for the seven movies combined was fifty million already. Yet, they were demanding for all fifty million to go to the cast! Have they gone mad?

Director Timmons inhaled sharply. That’s outrageous!

However, they were in no position to bargain. The Oriental Star Group's entertainment business only survived because of these ten actors and actresses! If they left, the entertainment business would crumble. They were severely disadvantaged and had nothing to bargain with.

"Wait, can we..." Gerry tried to negotiate.

Niall interrupted him, "Triple. I won't be taking a cent less!"

Helena and the others were perplexed. Because of them, Oriental Star Group was now in a crisis.

"Zoey, you're new to this place, so you don't know how important we are! Oriental Star Group only made it to the top of North Hampton because of us! Why else will Gerry listen to our every demand?" Yvonne declared fearlessly.

Gerry hung his head and did not say anything in response. They're right! These ten people are our source of income! We need to take good care of them!

Niall sneered, "Not only that. If you want this matter to be resolved, I want the rights to deal with the two of them as well!"

He then pointed at Helena and Maurice.

Helena was a beauty that he had set his sights upon.

Meanwhile, Maurice had attempted to defy him. He would not let him off easily.

Gerry pleaded softly, "Ms. Lopez, please agree to their terms! Even if we make a loss here, we need to keep them!"

Niall looked at Zoey smugly.

"Give us a day to reconsider. I'll give you a reply tomorrow!" Zoey decided.

“Alright! A day off today then!”

With that, Niall and the others left.

Maurice, Helena, and the others ran towards Zoey and apologized, “Ms. Lopez, we’re sorry. This all happened because of us!”

“It’s not your fault. This would have happened anyway,” Zoey assured them.

Meanwhile, Levi, who was in the office, heard of this matter from Helena.

He immediately looked Zoey up.

“Why are you hesitating? Fire them all! How hard is it to hire a new star?” Levi scorned.

Under Levi’s encouragement, Zoey called Niall and the other actors’ managers and said, “Let me inform you that you’ve been fired!”

The Protector Chapter 444

When they received the call from Zoey, Winnie and the other managers had a smug look on their faces.

They had not expected Zoey to fire them.

Impossible!

“What did you say? Repeat yourself!” Winnie nearly dropped her phone onto the floor.

“Let me repeat myself then. Niall, Yvonne, and the other eight actors have been fired by the company!” Zoey roared.

“Tch, don’t regret this, Zoey!” Winnie had an icy expression.

“I won’t regret it! Get the paperwork done and leave. Oriental Star Group doesn’t welcome you!”

When Zoey finally hung up, she felt immense satisfaction.

She had finally gotten a weight off her chest.

“What? Zoey actually fired us? That’s impossible!” Niall and the others were fuming when they heard this.

How dare Zoey fire us?

In the past, they had acted arrogantly because they were the Oriental Star Group's pillars of support. They were sure that Zoey would not dare to fire them. Yet, the result was not as they had expected.

"Tell that to Gerry! I'll make sure she regrets it!" Niall instructed with his eyes narrowed.

Yvonne smiled, "Just wait. Sooner or later, Zoey will beg us to return!"

When Gerry and the upper management of the company found out about this, they confronted Zoey.

"Ms. Lopez, you can't do this!"

Zoey was adamant, "Give up. I've already made my decision!"

"Please rethink your decision! Without these ten people, Oriental Star Group's entertainment business is a goner! We owe our viewership to them!" Gerry pleaded between tears.

"That's right! The loss is too great! The moment they leave, the seven movies we've planned are toast! We'll lose fifty million!"

"That's right! We'll lose all of our contracts in the entertainment business!"

The others tried to highlight the severity of the issue.

At this point in time, Levi laughed, "What do you mean? The show must go on! We'll just get another actor!"

"You're not from the industry, so you wouldn't understand! The advertising had already been done and the movies will only earn money because of their popularity! If you change the cast, you'll still lose money!" Gerry spat angrily.

“Hehe, perhaps I’m not from this industry, but from the point of view of the audience, the quality of the movie matters the most. If the movie is entertaining, it will spread through word of mouth and definitely sell well! In fact, movies that star famous actors have been losing a lot of money!” Levi defended himself.

Gerry and the others were speechless. That is indeed the case! Nowadays, the movies to be screened in cinemas no longer hired actors who had a large fanbase. The poor quality of the movies often resulted in losses. Most of the movies that starred these internet celebrities were online movies which targeted fans with a hit-and-run policy.

“You’ll definitely earn money from the fans by hiring celebrities to act, but your reputation will only get worse! Without good reviews, it’ll eventually be toast!” Levi continued.

Gerry sighed.

Levi was right.

The first movie would earn the greatest revenue, but the rest will have diminishing profits.

There would be an increase in the number of complaints online as well.

In essence, if the quality of the movie were bad, the fans would no longer watch them to support their idols.

The Protector Chapter 445

03/05/2021 by [Chapter Novel](#)

“How about this? Zoey, the four people I’ve recommended have good acting skills. Get a few good actors and let them be the lead actors instead!”

That way, we’ll be saving a lot since we’re not paying the celebrities. We can spend that money on special effects and other scenes! Other than that, we’ll increase the commission for the directors, scriptwriters, and editors. If we focus on quality for these seven movies, I don’t believe that they won’t sell!” Levi declared.

Zoey felt that it made sense and agreed, “Alright, we’ll do it as you say!”

Gerry agreed with Levi’s proposal but hesitated, “We’ve already announced the cast for these movies. If we change the cast at the last minute, there’ll be a lot of protests!”

“That’s a good opportunity! The fact that there’s protests would mean that many people pay attention to this. We’re using new actors without any fame, so this will pique the attention of the audience!”

The advertising team can just create some hype for this movie. When the movie airs, we’ll become popular through word of mouth and the movie will definitely sell!” Levi explained.

Gerry’s eyes lit up, “Mr. Garrison, you’re a sharp man! Although Niall and the others left, we can use their popularity to hype up our new movies!”

Levi nodded, “Just go ahead and do it! Nurture a few new stars and I’ll try my best to advertise the movie when it screens!”

Meanwhile, Niall and the others were still waiting for Zoey to apologize.

When Gerry arrived, he declared sternly, "This is the official statement. All of you are fired. Leave now!"

"Huh?" Niall was perplexed.

Gerry came to fire us? What's wrong with him?

"Gerry, have you gone mad? If we leave, what will happen to the seven movies? What will happen to Oriental Star Group?" Niall and the others spat furiously.

Gerry was livid as well. After all, he had let these people lord over him for such a long time.

He scoffed, "All of you are cancer to Oriental! If you stay, then we truly are finished! As for these seven movies, we've already found replacements for all of you!"

Gerry glanced at Helena and Maurice, who were trembling with fear.

"Maurice, Helena, you'll be the main lead!"

Helena and the others were bewildered. What a roller coaster ride! Earlier, we just got ourselves in trouble! Moments later, we're suddenly the lead of a movie with a budget of fifty million!

"Hahaha..." Niall, Yvonne, and the others burst out in laughter.

"Gerry, have you gone mad? You're getting these newbies to act in a fifty-million movie? How will you secure your box office? You'll definitely lose everything! Idiot!"

To these artistes, getting newbies to act in such a movie is absolutely impossible!

Without our fame and fanbase, they'll definitely make a loss!

“Haha, let’s leave! We’ll just watch them struggle! Don’t beg us to come back when that happens!”

With that, Niall, Yvonne, and the other eight artistes left promptly.

Gerry was nervous as well. After all, no one had dared to try such a plan before. The road ahead was full of unknowns, and if they had made the wrong bet, Oriental Star Group would be a goner.

After leaving Oriental Star Group, the ten artistes immediately got a contract under Shanks Entertainment under the Suarez family.

The news quickly spread across the entire North Hampton.

They regretted it!

Gerry and the others had regretted it after all. Even Zoey started to wonder if she had made the wrong call.

They had essentially sent their aces to their competitors for free.

They would use them to deal a huge blow to Oriental Star Group!

“Oriental is full of idiots! Especially Zoey! Oriental Star Group will be mine sooner or later!” Zachary was unbelievably excited.

He suddenly felt that he had overestimated Zoey this whole time.

The Protector Chapter 446

“Hahaha, next, we’ll create seven online films to air at the same time as their movies! I’ll have them wallowing in regret!”

“Sure, no problem! We’ll put in our best effort and destroy Oriental Star Group!”

Niall and the others looked forward to it.

“How about this? We know their script, so let’s create seven movies with similar content as well!”

Zachary was bent on destroying Oriental Star Group.

“Good idea, President Suarez! If the content is similar, we’ll take up all the viewership! Their films are full of newbies, so no one will watch them! Their fifty million will go down the drain!”

“After that, we can sue them for copyright! They’ll be a goner!” Yvonne suggested.

Zachary smiled, “You’re more devious than I am! We copied their ideas and are even suing them for copyright!”

“Hahaha... We’ll wait for the downfall of Oriental Star Group!” All of them laughed maniacally.

...

That was no time for regrets.

Since she had already made such a decision, Zoey would have to do her best to make it happen.

She assembled the cast, directors, screenwriters, and producers for a meeting.

“I’ll triple your pay for these seven movies! If the film succeeds, I’ll give you a bonus as well!” Levi suggested. Shawn and the others were extremely motivated by that.

It was useless to give a motivational speech or anything like that. Money was the most reliable motivator.

If you paid them well, they would help you earn more revenue.

“Ms. Lopez, Mr. Garrison, relax! We will take this seriously! Furthermore, I’ve decided to change these seven movies into two! We will release the best quality films in the shortest time frame possible,” Shawn declared.

To begin with, these seven movies had never focused on quality. There were seven of them so that they could scam the fans of seven times the money.

They focused on quantity rather than quality.

However, this was different. With sufficient funds and support, they could produce a film of good quality.

The screenwriter, Sylvester Zoldyck, nodded, “Alright, I’ll improve the script to keep the audience hooked throughout.”

“Alright, we can guarantee the special effects. Back then, the funds were all spent on the cast and we barely got enough money to do it well. Now that we have sufficient funds, this is no problem!”

The special effects team nearly burst out in laughter. That was the first time in decades they had so many funds.

Several millions worth of funds on special effects; that was something they had previously never dreamed of having.

“I will make sure everything runs smoothly, so don’t worry, Ms. Lopez!” the producer assured her.

The young cast knew that this was a rare opportunity, so it was a given that they would do their best.

The production of the movie was set.

The only problem left would be advertising.

The advertising team had already started to work on promoting the movie, but Helena and the others were completely new actors. It would be hard to maintain the hype.

“Nevermind, let’s focus on finishing the movie first!” Levi smiled.

He had predicted that Zachary would steal their content as well, so he had recommended for the drama team to lock up all information such that he would have no idea what they were filming.

After Zoey heeded his suggestions, there was no news from Zachary.

“Hmph! So what if they film in secret? We already know the script of all seven movies!” Zachary scoffed.

Shanks Entertainment continued to film the seven movies as they had previously planned.

The Protector Chapter 447

At this point in time, Shanks Entertainment was gaining popularity in North Hampton.

The change of company by Niall and the others was a hot topic.

The audience and fans looked forward to the movies produced by Niall and the others for Shanks Entertainment.

As the days passed, the Morris Group and Rogers Family progressed greatly as usual.

However, the business in the city was not doing badly either.

In the short time span of one month, they've bought over several enterprises and finally got a taste of profit.

Business in North Hampton was great. It was the top economy in Quebec after all.

This was coupled with the fact that there was no regulation on their extreme measures. Hence, they decided to take things up a notch.

More and more people moved into North Hampton to get a piece of this pie.

The Suarez family was a notable example. Zachary had entered to test the waters and lead the way for his father and uncles.

The Lopez family was progressing in secret as well, taking advantage of Harry's influence.

In this month, Scott had been checking on the background of the Morris Group.

It was no easy task, so it took an entire month.

“Godfather, as of now, we aren’t able to find out who is backing them. Moving forward, we’ll have to wait for the search results from the dark web. After that, we can make a move on the Morris Group.” Fernand reported.

The so-called dark web referred to sites which specialized in intelligence in the dark web.

These websites had a membership system, and there were less than a hundred members in the entire Erudia.

In the entire Quebec, only Scott was a member. Other than him, no one else could gain intel from the dark web.

“Alright. Tell Lopez to be prepared. I’m ready to take down the Morris Group!” Scott replied plainly while fiddling with the prayer beads in his hand.

Throughout the course of the month, the Oriental Star Group worked overtime to finish the two high-quality films.

Helena and the others did not disappoint and displayed all their skills.

They were truly skilled actors and actresses!

“These are the two most perfect movies I’ve filmed!” Shawn sighed.

The other crew members were excited as well due to the sheer quality of these movies.

No other movies could compare.

On the other hand, the Suarez family's Shanks Entertainment filmed all seven movies in that one month.

The content was shabby and the quality was mediocre. However, Niall, Yvonne, and other famous actors were starring in them. There were a lot of pre-booked tickets from fans, amounting to a total of four hundred thousand in revenue.

Coupled with the fact that they had done their advertising in full force, they expected the total number of pre-bookings to total one million!

Niall and Yvonne scoffed, "Let's destroy the entire Oriental Star Group!"

Both movies had already been sent to the National Radio and Television Administration for screening.

As long as they passed the screening, they would be able to start airing immediately.

Shanks Entertainment had bought over all the main pages of major streaming sites. To them, the cost was no issue. They simply wanted to drive Oriental Star Group out of business.

"What should we do about advertising? All these proposals are no good!" Zoey expressed her dissatisfaction with the proposals given to her.

That was why there was no hype for the two movies up to that point.

The only news about those movies was how Niall and the others had flamed Oriental Star Group.

"Let me handle it!" Levi requested. He had plans for advertising.

"I'll leave it to you, then!"

Zoey had a fair amount of confidence when it came to Levi.

The following day, the headlines read: Oriental Star Group's seven newest movies had copied content from Shanks Entertainment!

The news spread across the entire North Hampton.

The Protector Chapter 448

For the past month, Oriental Star Group and Shanks Entertainment had been exchanging blows.

Now that such a thing had happened, everyone was shocked.

These seven movies were copied? Has Oriental Star Group gone mad?

The one who reported such news had even listed evidence.

He did a side-by-side comparison of the plots of the seven movies.

Anyone could tell that it had been copied.

To the fans, the screenwriters used were Yvonne and Niall's private screenwriters and did not belong to Oriental Star Group. After they were fired, they had become a part of Shanks Entertainment. Hence, to them, the Oriental Star Group's seven movies were all copied!

The net was suddenly bustling with people criticizing the Oriental Star Group.

This was especially so for the fans of the ten artistes who had left Oriental Star Group. Some fans had already organized protests on the internet attacking Oriental Star Group. They were prepared to stop at nothing to drive Oriental Star Group's entertainment business out of business.

The relevant departments had even formed an investigation team and prepared to look into this.

The Oriental Star Group was shocked by this.

“That’s playing dirty!” Gerry slammed the table.

“I know, right! They copied our script and now they’re accusing us? How despicable!” the other executives spat. They were enraged as well.

Zoey laughed, “Levi, you’re so smart! You predicted their moves up to this point. Do they honestly think that they can sue us for copyright? How naïve. We’re airing two movies instead of seven, and the content is greatly different!”

Gerry was excited, “I can’t wait to see their faces when they see our movies!”

Levi had a glint in his eyes, “And here we were worrying about advertising! Let’s leave the internet be about the copyright issue. The more they attack us, the better! This will be free advertising for our movie!”

Zoey’s eyes lit up. Levi is a genius in finance and business!

“Alright, I’ll get straight to it!”

Levi added, “Release the news that Oriental Star Group’s movies will be airing soon. Don’t give away any titles or information! Just keep it as mysterious as possible!”

“Alright, got it!”

...

The news of Oriental Star Group’s film being aired in all major streaming sites had spread soon.

For some unknown reason, the media started attacking them more heavily.

All major mass media, blogs, and news channels were filled with criticisms.

It was as though they were going to force Oriental Star Group out of business entirely.

“That was brutal of them! That’s a few dozen times worse than what we had expected! Have we stirred up a public outrage?”

Niall, Zachary, and the others were excited.

Oriental Star Group would soon crumble and Zachary would be able to purchase it at a low price.

Yvonne analyzed this calmly and felt skeptical, “Why do I feel that something is amiss? The attacks on Oriental Star Group seemed to have increased tenfold, as though someone was behind it.”

“You worry too much. It’s just because the Oriental Star Group was accused of copyright. Soon, the investigation group will take action!” Niall replied.

Yvonne bit her lip, “I sure hope I’m overthinking things.”

“You definitely are. It must have been the people I’ve planted to attack the Oriental Star Group!”

“Furthermore, I’ve talked to the leader of the investigation team. They’ll be able to delay the release of Oriental Star Group’s screening by a week,” Zachary added.

The Protector Chapter 449

“Haha, our movie will be airing in three days! By the time their movie airs, we’d have already stolen the entire market! They won’t get a single cent!” Niall quipped excitedly.

The others looked forward to it as well.

...

The following day, the National Radio and Television Administration and related agencies formed an investigation team and headed to Oriental Star Group.

“We’re the investigation team! We’ve received a public complaint that the movie you’re about to air has copyright issues! Get your boss here!” Johnny Lerner, the head of the investigation team, demanded emotionlessly.

In the meeting room, Zoey, Gerry, and the others had arrived shortly.

“Zoey Lopez, was it? Your movie was accused of copyright infringement and we have sufficient evidence! How would you like to defend yourself?” Johnny demanded as he passed a thick stack of evidence over.

Zoey did not bother looking at that so-called evidence.

The others were calm as well, as though nothing had happened.

This made Johnny infuriated.

Bam!

Johnny slammed the table and got up.

“Why? Are you proud of the fact that your work is copied? Are you happy that you’ve violated copyright laws? No wonder everyone says the Oriental Star Group is a lousy enterprise! I’ve finally seen it for myself!” Johnny bellowed.

Deep inside, he was laughing.

Before this, Zachary had instructed him to stir up as much trouble as possible.

This made things a lot easier for him.

“Oriental East Group! What’s the meaning of this? Can’t you see that we’re angry? Why are you laughing?” the other members of the investigation team were fuming as well.

Johnny pointed at Zoey and demanded, “I order you to pass me a copy of your film now! I’ll investigate it!”

Zoey chuckled, “I’m sorry, the film has been sent to the National Radio and Television Administration for screening. Now, the film is top-secret and no one has the right to order me to give it away!”

“Bullshit!”

“I’m the leader of the investigation team. How dare you ignore me?” Johnny spat.

“Tell the related departments to delay the screening of Oriental Star Group’s movie by at least two weeks!” Johnny instructed.

“Got it!”

Johnny then turned to Zoey, “Zoey Lopez, I’ll ask you this one last time. Will you cooperate with the investigation? Otherwise, I’ll decide that you’re guilty of

copyright! When that happens, you'll be blacklisted, your reputation will be ruined, and you'll have to pay the penalty!"

Zoey laughed, "I didn't copy anything. Do whatever you want!"

"You..." Johnny was bursting with rage.

How can the Oriental Star Group be so calm? It's like they don't care at all. Have they given up?

"Very well then," Johnny sneered. "Since you refuse to cooperate with the investigation, I'll hereby conclude the investigation!"

"Oriental Star Group is charged with infringement of copyright! Below are the penalties. Firstly, the entertainment business of Oriental Star Group shall be shut down for half a month. Secondly, the movie shall be modified and its airing delayed. Third, a fine of ten million! Finally, the person in charge will have to make a public apology!"

Gerry and the others' faces fell. They did not expect the investigation team to deem them guilty of infringement of copyright directly.

Even if they had not copied anything, they would not be able to screen those two movies. At this point in time, Levi dialed a number, "Hello? Aurora, I need you to contact the person in charge of the National Radio and Television Administration in North Hampton!"

The Protector Chapter 450

Now that Levi had a personal secretary, Aurora, his work became a lot smoother.

Aurora immediately contacted the man in charge of the National Radio and Television Administration in North Hampton, Colin Shanks.

She then told him everything.

Colin got the shock of his life. He set aside all of his work and brought his men to the Oriental Star Group.

The Oriental Star Group conference room was filled with dead silence.

Many had a worried expression while Johnny was smug.

“How’s that? Do you still refuse to cooperate? To tell you the truth, I decide whether your movie gets to air or not! If you have a better attitude, perhaps I’ll reconsider my decision,” Johnny kept dropping hints.

He had already received a bribe from Zachary, so he wanted to get some benefits from the Oriental Star Group as well.

Everyone in the National Radio and Television Administration knew that this was a part of the competition between two companies.

It was not necessarily the case that Oriental Star Group was copying them.

Johnny was no exception. He knew that this investigation team was just a sham. Since he could get some benefits out of it, he would try to milk them as much as possible.

He would side with whoever paid him more.

“Sir, what do you mean by that? I’m a little slow, so you need to explain it in simpler terms,” Levi requested.

Johnny smiled, “Stop feigning ignorance. Well then, let me make this clear. I alone decide whether you guys are copying or not. As long as you guys make me happy, I can choose the fate of your movie.”

“Johnny Lerna, how dare you!”

The door to the conference was slammed open.

Colin and the other executives of the National Radio and Television Administration burst in.

“Huh? Sir, why are you here? I can’t possibly trouble you for such a trivial affair,” Johnny and the rest of the investigation team said.

“If I didn’t come, you’d be a disgrace to the entire National Radio and Television Administration!” Colin spat.

“What do you mean by that?” Johnny was perplexed.

“I’ve heard everything you said earlier!” Colin roared.

Johnny hurriedly attempted to cover it up, “That was a misunderstanding! I was scaring the Oriental Star Group. I had no choice since they refused to cooperate with the investigations!”

“Wrong! You’re completely wrong!” Colin glared at him.

“Huh? Who’s in the wrong, sir? What’s wrong?” Johnny and the others were perplexed.

“Why should the Oriental Star Group cooperate with you if they haven’t copied anything? This entire matter is absurd!”

“Sir, please be clearer. I don’t understand at all!”

Colin threw the script at Johnny and bellowed, “Take a look at this! Copyright? Shanks Entertainment made seven movies, but Oriental Star Group only made two! Can you even count? Look at the content! It’s completely different and it’s much better than Shanks Entertainment’s movies!”

Johnny immediately understood after seeing the scripts.

Zachary didn’t get the situation clear at all! He didn’t know what Oriental Star Group was filming and accused them of copyright infringement! So that’s why Oriental Star Group filmed in secret! They didn’t want others to know what they were filming!

“Johnny Lerner, you and your investigation team did not investigate based on facts and carelessly believed others, causing misjudgment. All of you are suspended for three months without pay! We’ll settle things based on your future performance!”

The Protector Chapter 451

Colin Shanks immediately doled out the punishment.

“What?”

Johnny Lerna and his gang grew infuriated.

We didn't get a single cent, but we still need to be suspended without pay for three months?

Isn't this a huge loss to us?

But this guy is someone powerful... so what can we do?

“Additionally, two movies from the Oriental Star Group have passed the audit. We'll start showing them after three days!” Colin announced.

Meanwhile, the higher-ups from the audit department exclaimed, “We've never seen such a well-produced movie! This will be a huge hit!”

Zoey and her colleagues breathed a sigh of relief.

The person in charge of the National Radio and Television Administration grinned and said, “Ms. Lopez, are you happy with this result?”

However, Colin stared at Levi, who stood by the side.

“I'm pretty satisfied! Mr. Shanks really is amazing!” Zoey smiled and said.

“It's alright!” Levi answered.

“Phew!” Colin breathed a sigh of relief.

It doesn't matter if anyone else isn't pleased with the results; only her opinion matters.

Shanks Entertainment received the news in no time.

Meanwhile, Johnny's investigation came to a dead-end because he couldn't delay the release of the Oriental Star Group's films.

They needed to release their movies three days later.

“Useless! You can't even do a simple task like this!” Zachary Suarez was irate.

Niall Xander grinned. “It's fine, Mr. Suarez. We already achieved the effect we wanted. They will definitely lose to us when our movies are released concurrently!”

“That's right. The movies' contents are identical, so they will definitely watch ours instead. Besides that, I already bought a lot of spots on the recommendations list on streaming websites. On the other hand, the viewers can't find their movies even if they wanted to. How can they possibly compete with us?” Zachary was confident.

Their promotions undoubtedly completely overshadowed Oriental Star Group's efforts.

Besides that, the plagiarism accusations plaguing the Oriental Star Group doomed them.

That was what Zoey and the gang were the most worried about.

“We contacted most of the streaming websites just now. They said that there weren't any spots left in the recommendations list on the main page and even the

subpages, because they have all been bought by Shanks Entertainment. It will spell disaster for us if this continues. Our movie qualities are good, but the viewers can't even find it." Zoey sounded frustrated as she spoke.

Levi stroked her hair. "Honey, forget about the promotions for now. Things will get better as time passes. When they compare our movies with theirs, our movies' reputations will soar. Besides that, we are still popular from the plagiarism accusations! Everyone is waiting to compare our movies to see if we copied them!"

"Hahaha! You're right. Our haters are our fans as well. They'll probably turn into real fans when they watch our movies!" Zoey chuckled.

Levi flashed an indecipherable smile. "Besides that, I still have some tricks up my sleeve I can use after the movies get released!"

The day everyone was waiting for finally arrived.

It was eight p.m.

Seven movies from Shanks Entertainment were released at the same time on four major streaming sites.

They hogged all the spots on the recommendations list on the main pages; the first thing one would see if they opened the streaming website was advertisements about their movies.

As their popularity soared, a few million people were waiting expectantly for their release. They all rushed to watch it when they came out.

The reviews quickly came pouring in.

Terrible!

All seven movies are terrible!

The acting, special effects, and plot are terrible. Everything's terrible! There's nothing redeemable about it!

Apart from a few good reviews by some fans, the rest of the viewers gave bad reviews.

The average score for all seven movies was only six point seven.

“Oh, right. Isn't the Oriental Star Group's movie plagiarized from somewhere? I think it got released today too. Let's go watch it!”

Everyone started to search for the Oriental Star Group's movies.

The Protector Chapter 452

In the Shanks Entertainment's president's office.

Niall, Zachary, and a few other people were present. They all looked displeased as they watched the real-time box office results.

Niall snorted. "It seems like the audience isn't that gullible anymore!"

The manager, Winnie said, "That's right. Viewers nowadays tend to care more about the content of the movie. Movies rarely cast young, handsome men now! Focusing on production quality is important!"

Niall chuckled. "Yes. That is why we need to take this opportunity to scam the dumbass fans' money!"

Yvonne Wren agreed with that statement. "That's right! The fans are stupid and easy to scam. We need to hurry up and make more movies of this kind! Once the dumbasses realize what's going on, they won't be so easy to scam anymore!"

If their fans heard what they said, they would probably blow up in rage.

"Oh, aren't the Oriental Star Group's movies being released as well? How are they doing?" Zachary couldn't help but ask.

Niall chuckled. "I tried searching them in the streaming websites just now, but I still can't find them."

"They're destined to fail! Even though our movies are trash, we are hogging all the spots in the recommendations lists! They can't possibly succeed!" Yvonne chuckled coldly.

“President Shorts said he found their movies. They only have two of them, not seven!” The assistant showed Niall the tablet.

“Haha! Are they afraid of cutting a loss? They only filmed two movies, and who the f*** are the main actors? I haven’t even heard of them! They should be prepared that their movies will become a box office bomb!” Zachary guffawed as he played the movie.

After about three years, the netizens finished watching the two Oriental Star Group’s movies.

“Can those who already watched the movies tell us if it’s good or not?” Some netizens were eager but afraid to watch the movies. They were scared the movies might turn out horrible.

“It’s amazing! It really is super good!”

“This is the most well-produced movie I’ve ever watched!”

“The plot is well-thought-out, the art is tasteful, the pacing is appropriate, the special effects are perfect, and the acting was superb! I give five stars out of five!”

“This movie is showing in the cinemas! It’s so amazing! I need to watch it again!”

Good reviews started to appear all over the internet.

The netizens regarded the Oriental Star Group’s two movies as masterpieces!

Furthermore, the ones who gave good reviews weren’t fans. They were the ones who had lambasted Oriental Star Group before for plagiarism. They had watched the movies just because of the scandal.

When the higher-ups in the Oriental Star Group saw the good reviews and the rising popularity of the two movies, they breathed a sigh of relief.

“Well done! Levi, you’re amazing!”

Zoey hugged Levi.

Cough cough... Levi coughed out of embarrassment.

Zoey’s face immediately flushed red because Gerry Wade and the others were in the office. She had been so excited she forgot that they weren’t alone.

Levi chuckled. “Let’s officially start our promotions! Try to generate as much public attention as possible, including doing what Niall did before. In short, do everything you can to promote the movies!”

“Alright!”

The higher-ups were excited. Judging by how things were progressing, the two movies might generate more revenue than they have ever imagined!

“I still have a trump card. I’ll use it tonight!” Levi chuckled.

“I’ll be looking forward to it!”

Levi grinned. “Besides that, the people in charge of those streaming websites will start knocking on our doors soon enough!”

The Protector Chapter 453

“What? I can’t believe their movies are this good! Even I was engrossed!”
Zachary seemed genuinely entertained after they finished watching the movies.

Niall, Yvonne, and the rest were anxious.

“How are their movies so good? Look at how their popularity is booming! I can’t find a single bad review!”

“Even though they’re not on the recommendations list, they’re one of the top ten most popular movies right now! Their popularity is still rising too!”

“What now? Should we do something about it?”

The artists were as anxious and as nervous as cats.

The fact that the Oriental Star Group’s movies were spectacular was a huge embarrassment to them.

More importantly, the main actors were the rookies that they’ve seen before.

How are they so good at acting?

This made them feel indignant.

Their manager, Winnie sighed.

She was good at judging the current consumers’ needs.

People like Niall are more suited to join variety shows or just become a public figure.

Acting in movies requires actual acting skills, which they lack.

Oriental Star Group's two movies' popularity was rising in streaming websites.

"I get it now. The fact that Shanks Entertainment said that Oriental Star plagiarized their movies is a whole ruse to sabotage them! You have seven movies and they only have two, how dare you accuse them of plagiarism?"

"Yeah! Can your seven terrible movies be compared to their two masterpieces? How shameless can they get?"

"Everyone listen to me. Don't watch those terrible movies anymore. Go and watch the Oriental Star Group's two movies instead! They really are good!"

An intense discussion sparked in the comments section of the seven movies starred by Niall and the rest.

While everyone was lambasting the seven movies, everyone went to watch Oriental Star Group's two movies instead.

Furthermore, the Oriental Star Group's publicity team reignited the discussion about the plagiarism accusations to hype the movie up even more.

They then brought up the incident where Niall and his gang had acted all high and mighty and quit their jobs.

There was even video proof about how Niall had splashed Horace Engler with water, and how he had beaten Maurice Lorraine up.

The netizens were enraged when they caught hold of the news, and they started to lambast artists like Niall and Yvonne.

Even their fans started to attack them.

“Niall Xander, you b*****d! Give me back my f***ing money!”

“This bastard only knows how to scam people! He can’t even act! What a piece of trash!”

“Helena Engler is my idol from now on! Yvonne Wren can get lost!”

“Pigs like Niall Xander don’t deserve to be artists. I’m gonna be Maurice Lorraine’s fan from now on. He’s so handsome and so good at acting!”

After that incident, Shanks Entertainment not only suffered a major loss, Niall and the other actors’ and actresses’ reputations were tarnished as well.

In no time, everyone knew that Shanks Entertainment’s seven movies were horrible; no one bothered to watch them anymore.

The only ones watching them right now were the ones who wanted to lambast them.

On the other hand, Oriental Star Group’s two movies rose in popularity even though they weren’t on the recommendations list.

They quickly took the first and second spot in the popularity rankings.

Bang!

Crack!

Zachary was so furious that he smashed the tablet on the floor.

Niall and his colleagues had thunderous expressions as they fell silent.

At that moment, Zachary received a phone call.

“Hello, President Shorts, I am a representative from Penguin Films. I’m here to inform you that your films have been kicked off the recommendations list!”

“Hello, President Shorts, I am a representative of Kiwi Films. I’m here to inform you that your company’s seven movies’ reviews were too bad, so we took it off the recommendations list!”

“Hello, President Shorts, I am a representative from U-Cool. Your movies are not gaining enough revenue, so we’re planning to take them off the recommendations list!”

The Protector Chapter 454

Zachary felt despondent when he received the calls.

He had never thought the major streaming sites would call him one after another to inform them that they would remove the seven movies from the recommendations lists.

Eventually, none of the movies they produced were left on the recommendation lists.

All seven movies were replaced by the two movies from the Oriental Star Group; those two movies dominated the main page of the streaming websites.

Furthermore, Zachary had spent about fifty million to buy the spots on the recommendation lists, while the major streaming sites had offered the same thing to the two movies from the Oriental Star Group of their own volition without requesting any form of payment.

The popularity of the two movies continued to rise!

Zoey beamed brightly when she saw the real-time box office results.

The production costs of the movie were two hundred million; they gained that much revenue in just six hours.

This broke the box office records of all the major streaming sites.

It was originally estimated that it would take about one week for the movie to offset the costs.

“It’s time to use the trump card!” Levi chuckled.

Not long after, the superstars from Erudia, Zak Copland and Yelda Zamora started their promotions at the same time.

“Up next, I would like to recommend two movies... they are absolutely awesome! I guarantee that with my honor!”

“If you don’t like it, I can refund you your membership fees! I, Zak Copland, promise you that!”

Twenty of the country’s A-list stars stated to promote the Oriental Star Group’s movies together, and its popularity boomed once again.

The members they gained exceeded fifty million, and they were about to reach the one hundred million members milestone.

Furthermore, all the major media companies started to give coverage to those movies as well.

The two movies were considered the pinnacle of the film industry.

The industry experts were excited as well. Everyone started to guess how much the movies would gain in revenue in a month.

One billion is probably a piece of cake. Can they reach two billion?

A box office result like that used to be reserved for movies traditionally shown in cinemas. But movies streaming online managed to achieve such a spectacular result! It’s unbelievable!

However, while some rejoiced, some suffered.

For example, Shanks Entertainment was one of those who were in a tough spot.

The negative influence from the public opinion about the movie itself was overwhelming. That caused a lot of investors to revoke their funding.

Their artists started to terminate their contracts as well.

In no time, a crisis befell the company, something Zachary had not been expecting.

After all, the Shank family's venture into the entertainment industry was their most successful one. Yet now, everything was crumbling apart in just one month!

Zachary's father, uncle, and grandfather all called to berate him.

"Useless pieces of trash! You can't even act! Why are you even acting? What were you f***ing doing?" Zachary vented his rage at Niall, Yvonne, and the rest of the actors.

Slap!

Slap!

He slapped them forcefully; they didn't dare to say anything.

"Get lost! Get the hell away from here! Give me back your salaries. I'll kill whoever wants to keep the money!"

Zachary flailed around furiously and chased all the people out.

When the actors stepped outside, Niall discussed something with his team and manager.

"We never thought something like this would happen! We can't stay in Shanks Entertainment anymore!"

The manager, Winnie, replied, "Yeah. Your reputations are heavily tarnished! We can't keep doing this anymore! How about we go back to Oriental Star Group?"

Yvonne asked anxiously, "Can we really do that?"

"Sigh. They will definitely be angry, but no matter what happens, we can still bring profits to them. I don't think they won't take us back!" Winnie said.

Niall nodded. "That's right. After all, we were the most important artists there! They don't even have anyone else except for us! And those rookies? They are not even experienced!"

The Protector Chapter 455

“We shouldn’t have left. We would’ve executed the direction of those films much better. Our wealth and reputation would’ve increased as well. Let’s go back and get those guys to plan something for us,” Yvonne said coldly.

She had a feeling Helena and Maurice were popular only because the movie itself was good.

The next morning.

“Ms. Lopez, Niall Xander’s and Yvonne Wren’s managers want to meet you!” Gerry Wade approached her and said.

“Alright. Let them in!”

A posse of people showed up in the office in no time.

“Ms. Lopez, we were foolish. We’ve made a mistake. Please forgive us!” The manager, Winnie, said.

Zoey smiled. “It’s alright. You all just wanted to go to a better company. They really are stronger than us!”

“We really made a mistake! We hope to rejoin your company now. After all, we were once a team, and we know each other well!” Winnie smiled.

At that moment, Levi suddenly appeared and mocked, “How shameless can you get? Didn’t you say we will regret our actions? What happened then? Are you here to get a taste of our wealth now that our movies became popular?”

Niall and the rest felt indignant, but they still needed to keep their tempers in check. After all, they were the ones asking for a favor.

Niall stared at Zoey and asked, “Ms. Lopez, can you tell us what we should do to rejoin your company?”

Zoey was about to say something when Levi interrupted her. “Rejoining Oriental Star is a piece of cake. You just need to show us how sincere you are.

How about kneeling here for six hours? It shouldn’t be that tough, right?”

“You...”

Niall was about to lose his temper before Winnie stopped him.

“Alright. We agree with that. I hope you keep your promise as well!”

“Yeah. I promise!” Levi guaranteed.

Thud!

Thud!

Niall and the rest kneeled on the ground; that pleased everyone.

After all, Niall and his gang had bullied them for the longest time.

They kneeled for six whole hours, and Niall was utterly embarrassed.

Phew!

He exhaled sharply and smiled coldly. “Alright, we’ve kneeled for six hours already. I hope you keep your end of the promise!”

“What promise?” Zoey asked.

“Didn’t you say that if we kneeled down for six hours you would let us rejoin the Oriental Star Group?” Niall almost shouted.

Zoey smiled. “Go and look for the one who promised you that!”

“The man beside you just now promised us that. Why are you eating your words right now?” Niall tried his best to suppress his anger.

“I’m so sorry. That guy isn’t even an employee from our company. Did you really just do whatever he said?” Gerry chuckled.

“Hahaha...” Everyone else laughed too.

“D-Did you trick us?” Niall and his team soon realized that they had been fooled.

“We are not responsible for that. You haven’t seen that guy before, have you?”

Niall exchanged a horrified glance with his team because they knew she made sense.

They had indeed never seen him before.

“I’ll kill you!” Niall finally lost his temper.

“Security, chase them out!”

The security guards kicked Niall and his team out of the building.

Zachary hit a stump. He started to ask about what was happening in South City.

At the same time, there were some news on the dark web today.

“Stepdad, the Morris Group’s boss doesn’t have an interesting background, but he’s very sly and methodical! That was how he managed to devastate Winston Gonzales and his allies!” Fernand Yates said.

Scott stopped turning the prayer beads in his hand as he slowly opened his eyes and said coldly, “Alright. Let us begin now!”

The most prominent character in Quebec was about to make his move.

The Protector Chapter 456

“Stepdad, I’ll bring someone there!” Fernand Yates volunteered himself.

“Alright! Bring Bones, Titan, and Golem with you! The fact that they can handle the Black and White Guards signifies that they are pretty powerful!” Scott Yates ordered.

His Four Mighty Generals were individually stronger than the Black and White Guards, so the fact that Scott dispatched three of them was a testament to his resolve.

Fernand hesitated for a while before saying, “Stepdad...”

“Bringing Typhoon along is out of the question! He’s way too intent on killing! It took a lot of effort over the past few decades trying to tame him, so we can’t afford to let him massacre everyone in North Hampton!” Scott said.

The Four Mighty Generals under Scott all had their own individual strengths.

Bones was ruthless and apathetic. During a underground boxing battle where he had to face a few hundred opponents at once, he pulled someone’s ribs out and used it as a weapon to kill everyone.

Titan was exceptionally skilled in wrestling ever since he was young.

Golem was like a beast because his body was as tough as steel. Normal weapons couldn’t dent him.

However, the strongest of them all was Typhoon.

He had been raised by an assassin's organization ever since he was young.

The organization adopted one hundred orphans and made them fight and kill each other after a few years of training. Only the final child left standing had the right to enter the organization.

Typhoon was the one who had killed all of his comrades and made it out alive.

His murderous intent was overwhelming, and at least seven hundred people have been killed by him.

Once his bloodlust was triggered, he couldn't be stopped.

Scott was once captured during a war in Quebec's underground scene, and Typhoon had killed a few thousand people just to rescue him.

He derived pleasure from murder, and he was quite literally the harbinger of death.

That was why Scott wouldn't request his service unless it was necessary because Typhoon would cause a whole flurry of catastrophes.

"Besides, the three of them will be enough to handle the Morris Group! I can't take responsibility for the consequences that might arise if we use Typhoon this time!" Scott sighed.

Fernand was incredulous. "What? Stepdad, why do you have something you can't responsibility for? How is that possible?"

"Have you forgotten who's in North Hampton right now?" Scott asked.

Fernand's expression changed as he said in horror, "Are you referring to the God of War?"

“Yes. He will definitely turn a blind eye to the melee in North Hampton, but if Typhoon went there and stirred up trouble, he might step out personally to deal with it...”

Scott was afraid of the God of War.

“Wow, stepdad, you really are prudent. I never thought of that! I’ll go to North Hampton now in that case!”

“Go and take care of that issue quickly. Keep a low profile. If things spiral out of control, I won’t be able to help you anymore,” Scott reminded him.

When Fernand took his leave, a casually dressed, average-looking man appeared.

He was the Harbinger of Death, Typhoon.

He said, “I heard the God of War has a team called the Five Great Wars Regiment, and they are all exceptional. I want to challenge them...”

“Hahaha. Typhoon, what are you saying? We can’t possibly offend them! Regardless of how strong we are, we are still mortals, and they are gods! They can kill us with just a snap of their fingers!”

When Sebastian found out about Fernand’s plans, he headed to North Hampton with Fernand.

“Three Mighty Generals are here! I thought Mr. Yates would only send one of them with us!”

Sebastian was excited when he saw that Bones and the other two mighty generals were embarking on the same mission.

He had thought only one of them was required to solve the problem; he had never expected Scott to send out three of them at once.

This is a piece of cake. Morris Group will definitely be obliterated.

“North Hampton, just you wait for the South City’s ire!”

The Protector Chapter 457

Sebastian was excited when they arrived at North Hampton.

Zachary and his friends, who had received the news of their arrival beforehand, waited for them at the highway.

“Mr. Yates, Sebastian, we are being oppressed by them ever since we came from South City! The people in North Hampton kept bullying us because we didn’t have anyone around, so it’s great now that you’re here! They can go screw themselves!” Zachary said.

Everyone started to exaggerate about what happened to them during their stay in North Hampton, and that infuriated Sebastian and Fernand.

On the surface, Fernand seemed poised and methodical, just like a sly fox. However, he was actually a ruffian!

He had committed a lot of crimes and was cocky and arrogant.

He just never showed that side of himself because Scott loomed over him at all times.

Now that he came to North Hampton and no one was here to control him anymore, he wanted to unleash his wild side.

“Hmph! Underestimating the South City? They’re digging their own graves!” Fernand exclaimed furiously.

“Mr. Yates, what should we do next?” Sebastian asked.

“Didn’t the Rogers family publicly support the Morris Group? We’ll go to the Rogers family’s residences in that case!”

A menacing glint flashed in Fernand’s eyes.

Meanwhile, in the Rogers family’s house.

The Rogers family was having dinner together.

The Rogers family’s wealth had boomed lately; their assets had already exceeded a hundred billion in value.

Even though they were just taking care of the money on behalf of Levi, they were still overjoyed by it.

Bang!

A loud bang could suddenly be heard as the dining room’s door was kicked open.

A large horde of men barged inside with menacing expressions on their faces.

Glenn Rogers recognized a few of them. Sebastian and Simon among the others.

However, Sebastian wasn’t the main character today.

They stood aside as a young man stepped forward.

The young man looked docile and polite, yet the three people standing behind him were terrifying.

Golem was two meters tall; he towered over everyone and everything.

Moreover, Bones was emaciated to the point where his bones could be seen. His face was deathly pale.

Titan's bald head was shiny, and he had a murderous expression on his face.

The three of them had an oppressing aura, and the atmosphere was suddenly suffocating to everyone.

Glenn knew Sebastian would never forgive him. That prospect seemed even more unlikely now.

"Glenn Rogers, let me introduce them to you. This is the stepson of Scott Yates from the South City, Fernand Yates!" Sebastian grinned.

"Scott Yates?" Glenn gaped in shock.

Isn't that the person rumored to oppress the entire Quebec area?

Scott Yates!

The most powerful figure in Quebec!

Even people as powerful as Sebastian need to show that man respect.

"Hm? Didn't you say he's retired for thirty years already?" Glenn asked.

Fernand smiled. "Thanks to the Morris Group, my stepfather came out of his retirement."

"What? He came out of his retirement?" Glenn was so shocked he almost shrieked.

"Yeah! My stepfather said the Morris Group should be exterminated!"

Fernand then approached the dining table, sat down and smiled, "It looks delicious! Make me an extra portion!"

He was being cocky and rude.

One of the younger people from the Rogers family snorted. "Get up! Who do you think you are? How dare you come to the Rogers family's territory and make a scene! Are you looking for trouble?"

The Rogers family have been doing very well lately, and they were a powerful presence in North Hampton.

That was why they looked down on everyone, especially people who taunted them.

Glenn was about to warn him, but it was already too late.

Of course he doesn't know who Scott Yates is!

Fernand didn't speak. Instead, he just glared at Franklin Rogers.

"What are you staring at? Are you gonna beat me up?" Franklin shouted angrily.

Bang!

In the next moment, Titan suddenly swung a punch at Franklin's head.

The Protector Chapter 458

Poof!

Franklin was sent flying, and when he landed on the floor, blood flowed out of all of his orifices.

He was undoubtedly, dead!

One punch from Titan was enough to make someone bleed profusely.

Suddenly, the room was as silent as the dead.

“Who are you? How dare you kill my son! B*****ds!” Franklin’s father, Alexander was furious. Something like this shouldn’t happen in the Rogers family’s territory!

Alexander and his wife, Snow Wahlberg, pounced at them.

Thud!

Golem landed a kick on Alexander’s head, causing everyone to be dumbstruck.

On the other hand, Bones swung a punch as fast as lightning and felled Snow.

At that moment, the Rogers family was petrified, and they didn’t dare say anything anymore.

Zachary and his friends, who had come along with Fernand, were mortified by the gory scene as well.

They tried to stop themselves from puking when they saw that, and they finally understood how Scott Yates could rule over Quebec.

They are absolutely merciless!

Snow squirmed on the floor in pain, her shrieks lasting for a few minutes.

“They are Mr. Yate’s Three Mighty Generals – Bones, Titan, and Golem. Don’t move!” Glenn soon recognized who they were, and he started to perspire out of horror.

“Happy now?” Fernand smiled and asked.

The room immediately fell silent. No one dared to speak or doubt their power because they were the kind of people who killed without hesitation.

Crossing them would only mean certain death.

“Where’s my cutlery?” Fernand asked.

“Go and get it!” Glenn instructed.

In no time, the cutlery was prepared.

Everyone stood and watched. They trembled while Fernand ate.

“Come, eat! What are you doing?” Fernand smirked.

Glenn forced a smile. “We already ate. We won’t be joining you. Mr. Yates, please enjoy your meal!”

Fernand looked up and scanned through the people present in the room, his gaze lingering on the women.

“Eating alone is so boring. Come and eat with me!” Fernand stared at the women in the Rogers family and said.

Sebastian and Simon knew Fernand was a pervert and that his tastes were very varied.

He fancied all types of women, from ten-year-old girls to forty-year-old ladies.

The women in the Rogers family were quite attractive, so they suited Fernand’s taste.

“Hm? Mr. Yates, do you want us to accompany you?” Glenn’s voice wavered.

Fernand’s expression changed abruptly. “Get lost! Do I look like I need a man to eat with me? Are you playing dumb or are you actually dumb?”

The Rogers family exchanged glances of apprehension because Fernand made it very clear what he wanted.

He doesn’t want a man, so that means he wants women, right?

The Rogers family’s women trembled out of fear.

They realized Fernand probably didn’t just want them to eat with him!

He wanted to sleep with them as well!

Anthony immediately said, “Mr. Yates, you like pretty ladies, don’t you? I’ll arrange a few for you. You can have anyone you want, from celebrities to models! North Hampton is famous for its ladies!”

Leo added, “Yeah. We can get any woman you fancy for you!”

The Protector Chapter 459

Fernand glared at both of them. "I don't want any other woman because the women I want are right here. You... you, you, you, and you..."

Fernand pointed at seven or eight women present in the room.

Anthony's and Leo's wives, as well as their cousins' wives, were included in Fernand's list.

Besides that, the wives of the younger people in the Rogers family were included as well.

"No! We can't do this! Mr. Yates, please find someone else! They are ordinary ladies!" Anthony's cousin, Silas Rogers, said.

Smack!

Zachary slapped Silas forcefully.

"How f***ing shameless can you get! Mr. Yates wants those ladies! How dare you talk back to him!" Zachary shouted.

Silas rubbed his face and said pitifully, "But that is my wife! No, means no!"

Rumble...

Golem, who was as tall as a large boulder, approached him and picked him up.

Wham!

He then slammed Silas forcefully on the floor.

Crack!

The cracking sound signified that Silas' waist had been broken.

"Ahhhh..."

Everyone felt numb when they heard Silas' screams, and they could feel their blood run cold.

"Hm? Keep talking!" Zachary laughed.

"What are you doing? Go to Mr. Yates!" Zachary commanded.

Silas' wife and the other ladies approached Fernand.

"Ahhh!"

Fernand pulled two women into his arms, and they screamed while the other women surrounded them.

Fernand groped and kissed them from time to time.

"What are you two doing?"

Zachary stared at Anthony's and Leo's wives, Fiona and Marybelle.

He then stepped forwards and forcibly pulled them towards Fernand.

Fiona and Marybelle urgently shot Anthony and Leo looks of desperation.

"No!"

“Yeah! Not in your wildest dreams! How can our wives be humiliated like this?”

The brothers Anthony and Leo protested vigorously and they were about to pounce on Fernand.

However, Bones and Titan approached them as well.

Anthony and Leo felt their chests constrict because they could feel a menacing aura.

“No, no!” Glenn immediately stopped Anthony and Leo in their tracks because he didn’t want his sons to die.

“Anthony... Leo...” Fiona and Marybelle cried out helplessly.

They were then trapped in Fernand’s arms and molested.

The men in the Rogers family watched as their wives, daughters, and sisters get violated, yet they couldn’t do anything even though they were furious.

They could only stare as the scene unfolded.

This is so utterly humiliating!

When Anthony and Leo saw their wives getting groped in front of them, they clenched their fists so hard that their fingernails dug into their flesh and bled.

They felt so despondent that tears started to stream down their face.

“Get out! Or do you want to stay and watch the show?” Fernand chuckled.

The men in the Rogers family were so angry they almost lost their marbles because they knew what Fernand was about to do.

How could they tolerate the fact that Fernand harassed their women in their own territory?

However, they couldn't fight back because death awaited them if they did so.

They were all chased out of the dining room. The three mighty generals guarded the entrance so they couldn't get in.

Shrieks of horror were heard from the dining room.

Thud!

Anthony and Leo kneeled on the floor and exclaimed, "Revenge! We must have our revenge. Let's go and look for Mr. Garrison!"

The two brothers exchanged a glance.

The Protector Chapter 460

Glenn had that thought too. Only Levi could stand up against Scott.

He was the only hope the Rogers family had!

However, Sebastian stopped them in their tracks.

“Are you about to ask the boss of the Morris Group for help? It doesn’t matter anyway because Mr. Yates is here to deal with him too! It’ll be great if you asked him to come over!”

Glenn had a despondent expression because they didn’t even get the chance to ask for reinforcements.

An hour passed, and Fernand soon stepped out of the room with a tired expression.

In the dining room, the women’s clothes were tattered, and they huddled together and wept softly.

“Ah!”

Leo and Anthony bellowed in rage.

They wanted to kill Fernand right there and then, but they fell silent when they saw Bones, Titan, and Golem.

Pouncing on him would only mean death for them!

“From now on, we will be staying here!”

Fernand really took it too far; not only did he humiliate the Rogers family, but he now wanted to live in their house.

The Rogers family's women were horrified when they heard that because this meant they would fall victim to him again.

Glenn had a sudden realization that Fernand was forcing them to call Levi over!

If they didn't call Levi, Fernand would never leave.

"Hm? Are you not happy with Mr. Yates staying here?" Golem asked in a low voice.

The Rogers family didn't dare protest.

"It's an honor to the Rogers family that Mr. Yates is staying here!" Glenn immediately answered.

The news that Fernand Yates was staying in the Rogers family's house quickly spread across North Hampton.

Everyone in North Hampton soon knew Scott's stepson was here along with three of The Four Mighty Generals.

The Mighty Generals were way more powerful than Sebastian, so everyone in North Hampton felt terrified.

The Mighty Generals were the ones who had oppressed Quebec, and their arrival meant that the person who had retired for thirty years had come out of his retirement!

Besides that, Fernand Yates' behavior was absolutely abhorrent.

He headed straight to the Rogers family after he arrived at North Hampton, killed a few of their men, and raped their women.

He was even living in the Rogers family's house now!

Furthermore, Glenn Yates was forced to extend his warmest welcome to Fernand and satisfy his every need!

He was willing to go that low to protect the Rogers family.

Glenn knew that if they angered the three Mighty Generals, they would probably massacre the entire Rogers family.

Meanwhile, at night, Fernand was visited seven or eight times in the Rogers family's house.

He wore a bathrobe and swirled his glass of wine as he chuckled and said, "My stepfather suppressed me so much back in the day! This is how I'm supposed to be living! I think I need to extend my stay in North Hampton."

Being in North Hampton meant that he could do whatever he liked.

"These two movies are pretty popular these days. I can see them everywhere! The main actress is pretty good. I heard that she's a rookie," Fernand said in amusement.

Zachary, who stood by his side, immediately said, "Mr. Yates, I know who the main actress is. Her name is Helena Engler, and she's under the Oriental Star Group."

"Oh? You know her?" Fernand looked up and asked.

"I'll bring her to you if you're interested!" Zachary chuckled.

Fernand patted Zachary and exclaimed, "Good. You know your place. The Suarez family is blessed to have someone like you!"

"I'll bring her over right now! Um... but..." Zachary hesitated.

A hint of frustration could be seen on Fernand's face. "What's wrong? Why are you stuttering?"

"The Oriental Star Group's female president, Zoey Lopez, is a stunning beauty as well! Let me show you some pictures of her!"

Zachary wanted someone else to do the dirty work for him.

The Protector Chapter 461

Since Levi isn't that easy to sabotage, I'll let Fernand do the dirty work for me.

Fernand's eyes sparkled when he saw the pictures.

"How is she so beautiful? It's the first time I've seen someone as pretty as her!" Fernand exclaimed in surprised.

Zachary grinned. "Mr. Yates, I guarantee that she's even prettier in real life!"

"Alright! I'll leave this to you! Bring Helena and her to me!"

Lust started to overwhelm Fernand's senses.

Sebastian joined their conversation. "Mr. Yates, I'll recommend someone to you as well. The vice president of the Morris Group, Iris Annabelle, is a beauty as well! She might not be as pretty as Zoey Lopez, but I assure you that she's a looker!"

"Hahaha... I don't care if this Iris is pretty or not! I only want her just because she's the vice president of the Morris Group!" A crazed expression appeared on Fernand's face.

Zachary hesitated a little before saying awkwardly, "Mr. Yates, I can bring Helena Engler here, but I don't dare to do the same to Zoey Lopez and Iris Annabelle because something bad has happened to me before!"

"What a loser! Bones, go with him!"

Fernand waved his hands.

“Alright, I promise to bring them to you!” Zachary guaranteed as a smug smile appeared on his face.

Helena was the talk of the town lately; she had amassed a following of a few million fans.

Despite that, she still stayed humble and honed her craft every night.

Bang!

Suddenly, the door was opened, and an extremely skinny, deathly pale man appeared.

Helena trembled in fright. “W-What do you want?”

“Come with me. Someone wants to have a drink with you!”

Right as he said that he appeared in front of her, and she lost consciousness.

“Zoey Lopez and Iris Annabelle are next! They’re neighbors!” Zachary chuckled

In no time, they appeared at Bayview Garden.

Iris had just finished her bath and was reading through some finance news with a tablet.

At that moment, a gust of wind blew from the balcony, lifting the curtains.

“Didn’t I close the window...”

Iris stood up and went to close the window when a pair of emaciated, pale hands suddenly appeared from behind the curtain.

“Ah!” She shrieked in terror.

Soon after, Zachary and his colleagues appeared.

“Nice to meet you, Ms. Annabelle. Mr. Yates extends an invitation to you!” Bones said coldly.

“Who’s Mr. Yates? I don’t even know him! Besides, you’re trespassing in my property, and that’s illegal!” Iris bellowed furiously.

“I guess we have to do it the hard way!” Bones approached Iris in an instant and knocked her out cold.

“Zoey Lopez is next!” A maniacal smile rose from Zachary’s lips.

As compared to the Morris Group, his biggest enemies right now were Levi and Zoey.

Zoey needs to be captured, and Levi needs to be killed!

This is the best opportunity I have!

I’ll have Bones kill Levi for me to avenge my brother!

“Mr. Bones, things might be a little dangerous from now on,” Zachary said suddenly with a tinge of fear in his voice.

Bones was puzzled. “Dangerous?”

“You might not know this, but Zoey Lopez’s husband, Levi Garrison is someone skilled in combat! The Suarez family has suffered a huge loss because of him. I’m scared to come in contact with him!” Zachary trembled as he spoke.

“Hmph! What a piece of garbage! You can’t even handle a small fry!” Bones scoffed.

He then walked towards Levi’s house.

Zachary flashed a bright smile.

Got him!

Levi, be prepared to face your death!

He then caught up to Bones quickly.

The Protector Chapter 462

When they entered Levi's house, they realized that no one was there.

"Huh? Is she not here?"

Zachary took a look around and he couldn't spot anyone.

"Where did she go? Go and look for her!" Zachary commanded his subordinates.

Bones waved his hand and said, "No need for that. We'll send the two people back because Mr. Yates is waiting!"

"Alright. I'll bring Zoey with me once I find out where she is!"

Afterwards, Helena and Iris were sent to the Rogers family's house.

Fernand's eyes sparkled with ecstasy when he saw how pretty they were. He thought they were worth his wait.

However, he had already come because he couldn't help himself just now.

That was why he needed to wait a while longer to be able to rape the two ladies.

"Mr. Yates, should we go look for Zoey Lopez now?" Zachary asked.

Fernand replied, "Go quickly. We still have time!"

Incidentally, Levi and Zoey had gone to their parents' place tonight and returned to their house afterwards.

“Huh? Why did Iris sleep so early tonight?” Zoey exclaimed when she saw that the lights in Iris’ room were turned off.

Iris would usually keep her lights on until one or two in the morning because she was a workaholic.

“Something’s amiss!” Levi had a bad feeling because he had received news from Nueve that Fernand Yates had come to North Hampton.

Originally, he didn’t dwell on the matter. However, he sensed something was wrong with Iris, so he immediately recalled this piece of information.

“Honey, go home first. I have something I need to do!”

After Levi asked Zoey to head back, he arranged for someone to protect her.

Azure Dragon immediately drove to pick them up when they stepped out from the Bayview Garden.

“God of War, Ms. Anabelle has been abducted along with Helena Engler! Fernand Yates is in the Rogers family’s mansion right now, and he is committing all kinds of brutalities!” Azure Dragon said.

“Is he powerful?” Levi asked.

“Fernand’s father, Scott Yates, is the top figure in Quebec, and The Four Mighty Generals under his command can wipe out a whole army by themselves!”

Levi listened in amusement and instructed, “Alright. Ask White Tiger to come here. Tell him he’s about to square off against powerful opponents! The Black and White Guards were too weak for him, and he’s been complaining about that ever since!”

“Alright. Got it!”

In the Rogers family's manor.

Everyone in the Rogers family was kneeling on the ground while Fernand was patiently waiting as the three Mighty Generals stood by his side.

"Who are you? What do you want?" Helena and Iris had woken up, and they stared around in horror.

"Haha! Let me introduce myself. I am Fernand Yates from South City! I invited both of you to have a drink with me!" Fernand chuckled.

Helena was afraid, so she hid behind and Iris.

Iris, on the other hand, was poised. "I don't even know you. Why should I drink with you?"

"You know me now, don't you? Besides that, Morris Group is about to be ruined, so isn't being with me a better choice now?" Fernand grinned.

"What? The Morris Group is about to be ruined?"

Iris knew there was bad blood between South City and the Morris Group, so she immediately realized they were seeking revenge on them.

"Is this the Rogers family's manor?" Iris exclaimed in surprise when she saw the people kneeling.

How strong can this guy be to bring the entire Rogers family down?

"You're Iris Annabelle, aren't you? Let me tell you something..."

Iris was dumbstruck when Sebastian told her what had happened to the Rogers family.

This Fernand guy is terrible!

How dare he humiliate the Rogers family like this!

When Fernand saw how shy Helena was and how coy Iris was, he became excited again.

He waved his hands to chase everyone out.

“No... what are you doing?” Iris had a sudden realization as she stepped back instinctively.

The Protector Chapter 463

Thump!

Fernand threw Helena and Iris on the bed.

He was skilled in martial arts; the ladies couldn't fight back.

Helplessness flashed in the Rogers family's eyes as they watched the scene unfold.

What an impudent person!

Is he really gonna do the deed when so many people are around?

I feel so miserable for the two ladies targeted by Fernand!

Bang!

Crash!

At that moment, the manor's door collapsed, and all the windows shattered.

The loud noise startled everyone. It caused them to stop in their tracks.

Even Fernand, who was about to pounce on the ladies, stopped as he stared at the door.

Four people stood by the entrance.

Kirin and White Tiger stood beside Levi, who was smoking a cigar.

“Huh? Levi? From the Morris Group?”

“Are you Neil Atkinson?”

Zachary and Sebastian Lopez exclaimed with an expression of horror.

“Huh? What? Someone from the Morris Group?” Fernand put on his bathrobe and approached them eagerly.

At the same time, Bones, Titan, and Golem were excited as well.

“Haha, you really are digging your own grave!” Fernand chuckled.

Zachary and Sebastian were agitated as well. The people from the Morris Group finally arrived, but the only fate that awaited them was death.

We can finally avenge the Suarez family and the Lopez family!

“Levi, be prepared to die!” Zachary guffawed.

“Kill them!”

Fernand waved his hands, and the three Mighty Generals stepped forward, glaring at Levi and his posse menacingly.

White Tiger took a step forwards and beckoned them to come over by wagging his finger.

“Come at me, all at once!”

White Tiger’s smugness shocked everyone.

How dare he act so boastfully when facing Fernand and the three Mighty Generals!

“Die!”

Titan had the hottest temper out of the bunch, so he roared and pounced on White Tiger like a ferocious beast first.

He was skilled in martial arts, and he had enough strength to kill a tiger with just one punch.

Screech!

His punch made a very jarring noise.

Titan could kill someone with a punch, but White Tiger responded with a punch of his own instead of dodging it.

White Tiger’s punch seemed weak, but maniacal murderous intent and immense power were infused in it.

When the punch reached Titan, his expression changed drastically.

It’s so powerful!

Wham!

Their fists crashed into each other and made a dull noise.

Pfft!

Blood spurted out of Titan’s mouth as his right arm exploded from the impact.

Screech!

Besides that, he was sent flying by the punch. When he landed on the ground, blood gushed out from his orifices, and he died on the spot.

Killed with just one punch!

Everyone was dumbfounded.

“I’ll kill you!”

Bones was the next one who pounced on White Tiger.

He moved as fast as lightning, and one’s eyes could barely make out his silhouette from the speed he was travelling at.

Whack!

However, White Tiger was even faster. He grabbed Bones’ wrist.

Crack!

White Tiger twisted his hand gently and snapped Bones’ wrist.

“Ugh!” Bones shrieked.

Crack!

Afterwards, White Tiger shattered Bones’ arms, ankles, and legs. He left Bones lying limply on the ground like a skeleton.

Bones looked absolutely miserable.

“Die!”

In the next moment, Golem’s bulky stature loomed over White Dragon as he came crashing down.

Bang!

White Tiger gripped Golem’s head and smashed it onto the ground.

Bang!

Bang!

Bang!

After eight consecutive punches, Golem’s head was a bloody mess, and a huge dent was imprinted on it.

Thump!

Golem’s colossal body fell on the ground with a resounding Thud.

White Tiger had defeated Fernand Yate’s three out of Four Mighty Generals all by himself!

The Protector Chapter 464

After White Tiger defeated the three people, he took out a clean handkerchief and wiped his hands.

He chuckled. "The last guy was pretty sturdy. It took me eight whole punches to kill him!"

Everyone held their breaths and fell silent because this wasn't what anyone was expecting!

After all, those were the infamous killing machines from Quebec!

They were even feared by The Black and White Guards, but they had been defeated by a single man!

Sebastian finally realized he was mistaken.

He originally thought The Black and White Guards had a drawn-out battle against White Tiger, but now he realized they hadn't even stood a chance against him.

On the other hand, Zachary was so terrified he almost peed his pants.

Fernand trembled in fear as he stared at White Tiger.

"No! This is impossible!"

To Fernand, the Four Mighty Generals were the strongest fighters around; they could never be defeated.

However, they had been defeated in an instant by one man!

Fernand's assumptions were completely destroyed.

"You're Fernand Yates, aren't you? Since you came to North Hampton, stay here forever!"

White Tiger suddenly kicked Fernand's chest.

Pfft!

Fernand flew a very long distance and slammed against the wall forcefully.

A wide streak of blood formed on the wall, signifying Fernand's demise.

"Gasp!"

Everyone was driven insane when they saw the numerous cracks on the wall.

Is he even human?

This is madness!

Total madness!

White Tiger smiled, and it seemed like he was pleased by his opponents tonight.

"He has a stepfather, doesn't he? I hope he's stronger than this!" White Tiger had an expectant expression.

Everyone in the Rogers family was stunned.

He's so powerful!

Kirin stared at Sebastian and Zachary and asked, "Didn't we tell you that since you came to North Hampton, you should stay forever?"

Kirin's question was a death sentence for Sebastian and Zachary.

No one expected Scott's stepson and the three Mighty Generals to only enjoy their stay here for half a day.

They were all dead except for Bones; even he was on the verge of demise because a few dozen of his bones had been broken!

In the end, Bones couldn't make it to South City alive because he couldn't bear the pain anymore.

This was the worst defeat Scott had faced in ten years.

On the other hand, Levi brought Helena and Iris along with him.

Helena stared at Levi with an expression of gratitude because he turned her from jobless to a superstar.

Besides that, not only did he change her life, but he had also saved her today too.

Because of that, the way Helena looked at Levi was a little different now...

"How did you know I was here?" Iris asked.

This was the second time Levi had saved her, even though he didn't necessarily do the dirty work.

"Zoey saw that the lights in your room were turned off, so I thought something bad happened to you," Levi explained.

Iris said somewhat shyly, "Thank you for saving me again."

She now blushed furiously whenever she saw him.

"If you want to thank someone, thank Zoey instead!"

After that, Levi sent Helena home first. When she got out of the car, she said shyly to Levi, "Levi, I'll repay you soon for saving me today!"

Meanwhile, in the Rose Gold Manor, South City.

Scott was making some tea while Typhoon sat opposite him and remained silent.

"A monk gave me this packet of tea. I'm reluctant to drink it!" Scott grinned.

However, not only did Typhoon not talk, but his expression also remained stoic as well because nothing could ever faze him anymore.

"Master, we're in trouble! Something really bad has happened!" An uproar could be heard from outside at that moment.

Scott was displeased. "Why the hell are you making so much noise!"

On the other hand, Typhoon still sat motionless despite the uproar.

"Master, something bad has happened!" Theo, one of Scott's old butlers, exclaimed in shock.

Share

The Protector Chapter 465

He had served under Scott for fifty years, so he resembled Scott in demeanor and personality.

Theo was never this anxious before, which meant that they were in very big trouble!

Scott stood up and asked, "Theo, what happened?"

"Master, just take a look for yourself... I-I don't know how to say this..."

Theo wiped his tears away.

Scott soon realized something terrible must've happened, so he rushed out the door.

A lot of South City's powerful figures crowded in the opening in the middle of the manor.

Corpses were placed in the opening, and they were covered with white cloths.

"What happened?"

Everyone automatically made way for Scott when he arrived.

"Sir, please be strong!" The head of the Suarez family and the Lopez family said while they sobbed uncontrollably.

Scott shut his eyes helplessly when he heard that.

His body trembled, and his outstretched hands hovered around the cloth, reluctant to uncover it.

Typhoon, who stood behind him, stepped forwards and uncovered all seven corpses.

The corpses of Fernand, the three Mighty Generals, Sebastian, and Zachary were revealed.

The Suarez family and the Lopez family had already wept for quite some time, but that wasn't the case for Scott.

Thud!

Scott felt as if his head were about to explode when he saw the body of his stepson's and his subordinates.

He broke down completely at that moment.

That was the saddest day in the fifty years of his life.

He hadn't killed anyone for thirty years already, but now a pang of bloodlust struck him.

When Typhoon saw his three partners' bodies, he squinted and exuded an overwhelming menacing aura.

Everyone could feel the temperature dropping sharply, and they unwittingly shuddered.

Everyone knew something terrible was about to happen!

From this day onwards, peace will not visit Quebec again.

Even God can't save the people who did this to Scott!

Scott never expected that the three Mighty Generals, along with his beloved stepson, to die.

Scott didn't have any children, and his best friend had died to save Fernand, so Scott had always treated Fernand like his own son.

His heart ached now that Fernand was dead.

"My brother, I couldn't protect your son! It's all my fault!" Scott screamed to the heavens.

"Master, what should we do now? You need to take charge. If not, the Morris Group will rule over Quebec!"

Scott bellowed in rage, "Theo, tell this to everyone. Prepare the funerals in three days because I want to send my son and my brothers off with honor! I want everyone in Quebec to know about this funeral!"

"Understood, Master!"

"Secondly, gather all our former subordinates and reinstate them in three days! Thirdly, inform my twenty-four disciples to come to South City with all their men!"

Everyone shuddered when they heard Scott's commands.

There were thirteen cities in Quebec, and all except North Hampton were under Scott's rule.

The remaining twelve cities were ruled by Scott's former subordinates or disciples, but they had gone on their own ways since his retirement thirty years ago.

Despite that, Scott commanded them to gather within three days to head towards North Hampton and ravage the Morris Group.

No one could imagine what kind of chaos would unfold, but they knew Morris Group was doomed for sure!

The Protector Chapter 466

As soon as the news broke, everyone in Quebec went into a frenzy.

Everyone from the upper class society to the underworld were shocked!

Mr. Yates is already causing great commotion the moment he came out of retirement after thirty years.

Gathering his former troops and his disciples?

The guy must be out of his mind!

Something big happened at Quebec!

Mr. Yates had been angered!

Everyone from the underworld from all thirteen cities in Quebec gathered up their men and headed towards South City as soon as the news broke.

It was a terrifying scene to see busloads of men being sent to South City.

Not only that, but Scott's disciples also were scattered throughout the thirteen cities, and were engaged in various types of occupations.

They gathered their forces to prepare for the funeral in three days.

Someone estimated that they would be able to gather at least tens of thousands of people in three days!

Once again, everyone was shocked!

Scott Yates is the real king of Quebec!

Even after retiring for thirty years, he barely had to lift a finger to gather an army!

Everyone in Quebec was aware of his actions.

Even if South City turned a blind eye, it would be hard to deal with Mr. Yates if he is provoked.

As long as they don't cause any civil unrest, they were free to organize the funeral however they want.

At Mount Amethyst.

Scott and Typhoon sat opposite of each other.

Typhoon looked calm and collected as usual, as if he had ceased to concern himself with worldly affairs.

As for Scott, his hair turned white overnight, making him look old and aged.

"Master, people from all thirteen cities in Quebec have gathered. We have eleven thousand people thus far. Not only that, your disciples from several provinces nearby are also on their way. I estimate we will have thirteen thousand people in all," Theo reported.

Scott nodded in acknowledgement.

His gaze landed on Typhoon and said, "In the past, I've always tried to quell your bloodthirstiness because I didn't want you to be inhumane and ended up like a beast!"

Typhoon kept quiet. His bloodthirstiness had indeed toned down over the past thirty years.

“But now, someone is forcing our hand. Typhoon, it’s time to pick up your sword again. I want you to start killing! As many as possible!” Scott said viciously.

Theo, who was at the side shuddered at his tone.

This was the first time Scott had asked Typhoon to go on a killing spree.

In the past, he was worried that Typhoon would kill too many people. However, he was asking Typhoon to kill as many as he could now.

This was enough indication to show Scott’s fury.

The death of Fernand and the others had struck a nerve within him.

Typhoon lifted his eyes and said hoarsely, “I will make everyone in North Hampton join them! Boom!”

Theo was scared out of his wits that he started to break out in cold sweat.

No one could stop Typhoon if he were to go all out.

This time round, the city streets would surely be bathed in blood!

The number one mass murderer of Quebec will stop at nothing.

God knows how many people would perish by his hands this time round.

Meanwhile, Levi who was in North Hampton flashed a thin smile when he received the news. “Hah, someone dares to gather an army right under my nose? Are they trying to die?”

Azure Dragon and Kirin gave each other a look and exclaimed, “God of War, it didn’t occur to us that Scott would be so powerful. He managed to gather so many people in three days, and the numbers are still growing!”

“He certainly is Quebec’s number one. Compared to him, Jack and Liam seemed too weak! This is what a real boss looked like!” Levi smiled and said.

On the flip side, White Tiger was looking forward to it. He smiled and said, “I heard there’ll be a lot of professionals coming! I can’t wait!”

Others would think that White Tiger was out of his mind if they heard him.

The Protector Chapter 467

However, everyone who knew him well enough knew that he was a total psycho, not to mention a killing machine.

It's not like he had never faced tens of thousands of people by himself before.

At that moment, Glenn hastily rushed over.

"Mr. Garrison, this will be tricky. No matter how powerful you are, things will still be dangerous if these people unleash their madness. Tens of thousands of people coming right at us all at once, it feels scary just to think about it."

Glenn shivered at the thought.

Nonetheless, Levi said in a relaxed manner, "Glenn, prepare a coffin to be sent to the funeral."

"Huh? What do you mean, Mr. Garrison?"

Glenn was confused.

Wouldn't sending a coffin to Scott be provoking him?

"What is it? Are you questioning me?" Levi said.

"I wouldn't dare. I will arrange for it immediately!"

Cold sweat broke out on Glenn's forehead.

After Glenn left, Levi asked, "Where is the Cavalry Regiment?"

“They’re currently located at the Northwest Great Desert, sir!” Phoenix said.

“I hereby summon the Cavalry Regiment to come to North Hampton tomorrow!” Levi said coldly.

It was at that moment, Azure Dragon and Kirin knew Levi was serious about it this time.

Everyone knew that Levi’s personal army is the invincible Iron Brigade.

However, few were aware that Levi had personally built several small troops which were invincible as well.

For example, the Cavalry Regiment was formed of 18 powerful professionals.

They were the embodiment of destruction.

Once, Levi led the Cavalry Regiment to war. They annihilated twenty thousand people in one night and destroyed a small country with a mere troop of nineteen people.

These eighteen psychos were like a steel knife stabbing right into their enemy’s heart.

It was a taboo to even mention the names of these soldiers in the battlefield.

Because one will not even be aware when their entire barracks got destroyed...

“Also, tell Alfie to start moving! He must be out of shape now after having rested for so long in the South Warzone,” Levi said.

The Dragon Legion and Iron Brigade troops stationed at the South Warzone got really excited as soon as news broke.

They could finally let off steam after holding it in for two or three months!

Alfie quickly gathered everyone.

“Listen up! We have an important mission in three days! Moreover, we will be fighting alongside the God of War!” Alfie shouted.

Boom!

Upon hearing that they would be fighting alongside the supreme God of War, everyone went into a frenzy of excitement.

They were so excited that every single one of them teared up.

This is such a rare opportunity!

“Please don’t embarrass me on the battlefield. I hope we will be able to settle everything without having the God of War and his guards lift a finger!” Alfie yelled at the top of his voice.

“Can you promise me that?”

“Yes!” everyone shouted at the top of their lungs.

“Can we do it?”

“Yes, we can!”

“Let’s all do well in this mission! Show them the Dragon Legion’s wrath! We must let the God of War know we can still be at our best even when we’re out of our element!” Alfie shouted enthusiastically, so much that his voice turned hoarse.

“The Dragon Legion is invincible!”

“The Dragon Legion is invincible!”

...

The outcry of these soldiers shook the heavens and earth!

Everyone in the South Warzone were stunned!

Their ruthlessness is terrifying!

Is something going on since they have been assigned a mission?

Everyone in the South Warzone were trying to find out what was happening.

The Iron Brigade were supposed to be on break. It must be something big since they're being mobilized!

The Protector Chapter 468

Inside South Warzone's commander-in-chief's office.

The commander-in-chief, vice commanders-in-chief, and a few higher-ups each sat on their seats with their brows tightened.

"Commander-in-chief has no idea what is going on. There're no battles in Quebec or in the nearby provinces."

"Yeah. I've tried asking Alfie but he said it's top secret, and instructed personally by the God of War!"

"I wonder what the commotion is about..."

...

A few of them reported.

South Warzone's commander-in-chief, Mike Pence, sighed, "I'm just worried that the problem is within our territory. I wouldn't want the God of War to settle it for us when we're not even aware of it."

"Report, sir, I think I've figured it out!" Captain Mortimer said.

"Well, what is it?"

"Scott Yates from South City has been the talk of the town lately. He has been gathering his old troops and his disciples. I heard that he is planning to invade North Hampton!" said Mortimer.

“Oh, I got it. Scott’s godson and the Mighty Generals have stationed themselves at North Hampton. Now that I think about it, who else in North Hampton can stand against Scott aside from the God of War?” one of the vice commander-in-chief jumped in.

“Do you mean that Scott is going to fight the God of War head on?” Mike asked in surprise.

“Exactly! Scott has gathered his old troops and disciples for the sole reason of having his revenge!”

“I bet he doesn’t know that he will be facing the God of War!” someone else chimed in.

“How presumptuous! How dare he disrespect the God of War?”

“Mortimer, bring your troops to destroy Scott Yates!” The hot-tempered Mike said angrily.

“You must not do that, commander-in-chief! The Dragon Legion are already in the midst of preparation. This means that the God of War wants to deal with Scott personally. We must not overstep our boundaries!” someone else advised.

“That makes sense, but keep an eye out on the situation. Resolve the matter immediately if anything unusual occurs! First division, eighty-ninth division, and the rest of the legions should be prepared for what is to come!” Mike commanded.

“Yes, sir!”

...

There was only one day left before the funeral.

Approximately eight thousand people had gathered at Mount Amethyst, and the numbers were still growing.

Meanwhile, at the meeting hall stood a group of people.

This group of people consisted of the thirteen leaders from Scott's former troops and about ten of his disciples.

One of them was a guy wearing a gold-rimmed glasses called Garfield Perkins. Not only was he very highly regarded by Scott, but he was also the strongest among Scott's disciples, the leader of Quebec's third city, Edge City, and the leader of the underworld.

Moreover, he had been doing business for the past couple of years, increasing his net worth to tens of billions.

"Don't worry teacher. I will make them pay with their life regardless of their backgrounds or their capabilities!" Garfield said angrily.

"It's payback time!"

...

A thousand people shouted at the top of their lungs.

Upon seeing that, Scott nodded, pleased.

"Theo, relay my orders. Tell all twenty eight members of the senior management from Morris Group to attend the funeral at Mount Amethyst tomorrow. They are to act as pallbearers, carry out the burial, and kneel at the cemetery for three days and three nights to repent for their sins! Kill anyone who is absent!" Scott instructed.

News soon traveled to Morris Group.

Iris and the rest of the higher-ups were shocked, especially those who had heard the rumor that they were about to be invaded by ten thousand people.

All of a sudden, everyone in Morris Group flew into a panic.

They had gone through many life-threatening situations through years of doing business, but this was the first time someone had threatened them so arrogantly.

The Protector Chapter 469

“Focus on your work, guys. This has nothing to do with all of you,” Levi couldn’t help but said angrily.

“You’re right. Let’s all just focus on our work!”

Iris immediately felt reassured at the thought of the impressive individual who had rescued her that night.

The next day.

Mount Amethyst was decorated in black and white as rows of flower wreaths were placed by the wall.

The funeral of the century had attracted a lot of attention, where even the sky was gloomy and the atmosphere was tense.

Two man stood in front of the mourning hall.

One of them was Typhoon, looking cold and indifferent.

The other man was Scott, with his bent back and grayish-white hair that made him looked older.

Nevertheless, his eyes shone bright.

He had been in retirement for thirty years now, he was like a ferocious lion who had fallen into a deep slumber.

However, today shall be the day that said ferocious lion awakens.

A lot of people will perish as a consequence of the lion's awakening.

Inside Mount Amethyst's vast space stood South City's elites who came to pay their respect with thirteen thousand people gathered behind them.

Everyone was dressed in a black suit with a white flower pinned to their lapel, and a white headband.

It was a majestic sight.

No one else in the entire of Quebec could gather a crowd this big.

To gather thirteen thousand people in three days.

That was the power of Scott Yates.

Everyone in Quebec called him 'sir'.

Angering him was equivalent to angering the heavens.

All the powerful families in South City were afraid of him.

A lot of people thought that Scott had lost his touch during his retirement period.

Some even thought he could be replaced by Sebastian Lopez.

But now, it looked like the joke's on them.

For who could stand against the omnipotent Scott Yates now?

And who could replace him?

Scott straightened the white flower on his lapel and said, "Heh, I didn't think I'd be meeting all of you in such an occasion. I'd like to thank everyone who came to send my three brothers and my godson off! Thank you!"

Scott bowed.

Seeing their leader bow down agitated all thirteen thousand people as anger rose in their hearts.

"Sir...Sir..." everyone shouted emotionally.

"I'm supposed to be retired, but some outsiders provoked Quebec repeatedly, took over our territory and our property, and even massacred our people. They're robbing our lives!"

"Today, I, Scott Yates, hereby declare that I will strike down Morris Group with everything I have!" Scott exclaimed in a loud voice.

"Strike them down! Strike them down!"

"An eye for an eye! An eye for an eye!"

The battle cries of these people shook the heavens.

Surely this was enough to make everyone in Quebec tremble in fear!

He was too strong!

Anyone who stood in Scott Yates' way shall be eliminated!

"Sir, we have ten more minutes before the funeral starts, all that's left now is Morris Group." Theo reminded.

Scott nodded.

“Teacher, what shall we do if the people from Morris Group is absent?” Garfield asked.

A gleam flashed through Scott’s eyes as he replied, “Then we will mow Morris Group to the ground and drag the whole of North Hampton down to hell!”

“Understood, teacher. I’d be willing to join the vanguard forces!” Garfield took the initiative to volunteer.

“Excellent!” Scott was pleased. He loved this side of Garfield.

“The people from Morris Group has arrived!”

At this moment, a loud voice sounded.

Crash!

Everyone turned to look at the entrance and were dumbfounded with what they saw.

The Protector Chapter 470

What they saw were four men marching in carrying a coffin.

Clearly, they were trying to provoke Scott by attending the funeral with a coffin in tow.

Everyone felt fury pulsed through their veins!

All they wanted at that moment was to shred these four men into pieces.

Scott calmed everyone down with a wave of his hand.

They watched on in anger as the four men marched to the vast land in front.

Bang!

The coffin landed heavily on the ground.

“Greetings, Mr. Yates, I’m here to relay a message from the Master of Morris Group!” the leader of the four men said.

“Who do you think you are?” Garfield said angrily.

Since when can some nobody speak to my Godfather directly?

“Never mind, let him speak!” Scott said.

“He hopes Mr. Yates can experience this moment every year from now on!”

“Gasp!”

Silence filled the air the moment those words left his lips as everyone held their breath.

This is unbelievable!

To say something like that at a funeral is the worst curse of all!

“Godfather, I will lead a troop of people to North Hampton right this instance and dye the streets in blood! I want to tear everyone from Morris Group into pieces!”

Garfield was furious.

Scott’s former troops and his disciples were also boiling with anger.

“Tear them into pieces!”

Everyone below could not contain their anger as well. Their actions mimicked a beast who had been freed from its cage.

“Hahaha...” Scott burst into laughter instead.

Even Typhoon smiled.

And it was the rarest of sight.

The reason behind Scott’s laughter was because it was the first time he had met such an impudent fool after ruling for so many years.

I have really seen it all now!

“The younger generation these days sure is cocky!” Scott chuckled.

“Mr. Yates, this coffin is for you! He said you’ll need it sooner or later!” one of the pallbearer spoke up.

Boom!

Garfield and the rest of the guests were furious. Their fists were balled tight as their eyes filled with rage.

They couldn’t stand the incessant provocations from Morris Group anymore!

Their actions were enough to have anyone and everyone to have the urge to tear Morris Group into pieces!

“Damn it! Damn it all to hell!” Theo said through gritted teeth.

How could they be so cruel?

“Morris Group is pushing it too far! How dare they provoke us like that? They showed no respect to Sir at all!”

Garfield balled his fists tightly. He could no longer hold back his murderous intent.

Swoosh!

Someone from the crowd couldn’t hold it in anymore. He rushed forward with his sword pointed at the four pallbearers.

“I’m going to kill all of you!”

He swung his sword at them.

Bang!

However, a huge force knocked the sword out of his hand and broke it in half.

“Stand down! Let them leave!” Scott said coldly.

Typhoon was the one who had broken the sword in half with just a small stone.

It was a terrifying display of his capability.

In the end, the four pallbearers left.

Scott tried to suppress his anger as he said, “Let’s proceed with the funeral! Send my brother and my son off on their final journey!”

“Rest in peace!”

“Rest in peace”

...

Everyone emptied the glass of wine they had on hand.

Crack!

Crack!

...

After that, everyone smashed the wine glass on the floor. It was a spectacular sight to see thousands of people doing it together.

“Sir, should we lower the casket now?” Theo asked.

“No, the leader of Morris Group must be the one to carry and lower the casket!”

“Let’s head to North Hampton right this instance. I’m going to turn North Hampton into a living hell!” Scott cried out.

The Protector Chapter 471

“To war with North Hampton! To war with North Hampton! To war with North Hampton!” Over ten thousand men chanted fervidly. Every one of them filled with anger and itching to vent their fury.

Equipped with swords, they each also had a white flower pinned on their chests and a white band tied around their heads.

And they were all ready to march.

The Suarez family, the Lopez family, and all the other famous families knew that Scott was going all out this time.

However, it would not achieve anything other than Scott’s death.

Before it came to that, Scott may have flattened North Hampton and taken revenge on the Morris Group.

“Split into ten groups and head for North Hampton! Men, carry the coffins of my brothers and my sons! And don’t forget the one that he sent us. Let’s march!” Scott commanded.

Ten thousand men spread out into ten groups and marched zealously towards North Hampton.

Scott and Typhoon personally led a group. Together with Theo and Garfield, they formed the vanguard.

Five coffins followed them with another three thousand men behind.

They were all marching towards North Hampton.

The scene was a magnificent yet terrifying one. They were prepared to kill anyone who stood in their way.

It would be wise for anyone who ran into them to hide.

Even South City didn't dare stand in their way despite being aware of their plans.

Simply because this was a group of fanatics, and there was no stopping them.

Whoever that tried would have to pay a heavy price.

Furthermore, they didn't receive any communications from North Hampton. Hence, it would be unwise to take any action on their own.

The other nine groups went in vehicles, forming a large convoy towards North Hampton.

Their mission was simple. Before Scott arrived, they would need to take North Hampton.

Ideally, that would include defeating the Morris Group and presenting Scott with the head of their leader.

Everyone in Quebec was aware of Scott's massive action.

All the powerful families in South City began to hide, afraid of being dragged into the fight.

There were thirteen thousand men, and the situation was extremely chaotic.

The other cities in Quebec trembled in fear, anxious that war would spread to their territories.

No one knew how it was going to turn out.

Everyone prayed for the safety of North Hampton as it would soon become hell on earth.

This group of madmen would unleash maximum bloodshed.

Whoever that was related to the Morris Group would not escape their clutches.

By now, North Hampton had heard the news.

Nueve, Trey, and the others were terrified.

Compared to what Scott had, they were defenseless.

Scott is being ruthless!

Is he really going all out?

When Jesse heard the news, he quickly checked with Percy to see if they needed to take any countermeasures.

Yet, Percy's answer was simple. As long as that person was around, they should just do whatever was required.

Only then was Jesse's mind put at ease.

Or else they wouldn't even be able to have the meeting.

If the matter escalated, there was no way he could hide.

As Scott led his troops through the narrow roads, the three thousand men in the funeral garb scared everyone they passed by.

No one spoke the whole journey there.

Even when they traversed through the hills, the troop maintained its formation.

After all, they were Scott's elite soldiers.

"Sir, we are an hour away from North Hampton," Theo reported.

"Alright, press on!" Scott coldly commanded.

After marching some time, Typhoon noticed something immediately.

Stopping in his tracks, he scouted ahead.

There was an SUV parked not far from where they were.

A man was sitting inside.

"Scott, I have been waiting for you a long time!" the man declared with a smile.

It was Levi!

The Protector Chapter 472

Beside him stood three men – Kirin, Azure Dragon, and White Tiger.

White Tiger looked at the three thousand men in front of him in anticipation.

Seeing them, Scott waved for his troop to stop.

“Have you been waiting for me?” Scott asked.

“That’s right,” Levi replied, puffing his cigarette.

“Are you the leader of the Morris Group?”

“Of course.”

Scott was shocked to see how young Levi was.

“This is unexpected. I thought you would be a lot older,” Scott lamented.

When Levi caught a glimpse of the coffin they were carrying, he laughed. “It appears you are well aware of the current situation. You even brought your own coffin to prepare for your death.”

“Hmph, I prepared it for you!” Scott snorted.

Levi chuckled. “I’m sorry, I’m still young. Unlike you, it’s going to be a long time before I became dust.”

“You...”

Scott was no match for Levi when it came to taunting opponents.

The next moment, he changed the subject. As his eyes sparkled, he exclaimed, "Who is the one who killed my brothers and godson? Step out now!"

White Tiger acknowledged with a smile, "It's me, but you don't deserve to know my name!"

White Tiger was right.

Despite how high Scott's position was, White Tiger only cared about actual fighting strength. Therefore, Scott had no right to know who he was.

"Very well, do the four of you plan to stand against three thousands of us?" Scott sneered.

White Tiger chuckled in reply, "I'm sorry, it will only be me alone."

"How dare you!"

Boom!

Suddenly, Garfield and his ten best men charged forward in unison.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Eleven swords glistened in the sun as they were thrust at White Tiger's vital organs.

Meanwhile, White Tiger calmly tore off a piece of clothing and covered his mouth.

He wanted to protect his mouth from the blood that was going to be splattered.

“Enough of your tricks!”

With a quick dash, Garfield thrust his sword towards White Tiger’s throat.

Clang!

However, White Tiger’s reflexes were as fast as lightning. He grabbed Garfield’s wrist and turned the sword in Garfield’s direction.

“Ugh!”

In a blink of an eye, the sword pierced through Garfield’s body.

He collapsed to the ground with disbelief written all over his face.

The next moment, the ten elite warriors attacked simultaneously.

But White Tiger managed to use his clothes to bind all ten blades together.

Jumping into the air, he kicked four to five of them away while finishing the rest with a single punch each.

Blood splattered everywhere.

In less than ten seconds, all ten men had fallen.

It was a spectacular sight!

Scott was impressed by what he saw.

This man is really strong!

Everyone knew the reason Garfield was the top dog at Edge City was due to his unrivaled strength. Even his ten subordinates were equally invincible.

However, no one expected them to be disposed of in mere seconds.

Scott and Theo now understood why Bones and Golem died.

They were no match for their enemy.

“No matter how strong you are, can you withstand the force of the three thousand men behind me?” Scott scowled.

Typhoon stopped him and declared, “Let me have a go at him first!”

They were shocked to see Typhoon’s expression.

He looked like a beast that had not seen any victims in a long time. Both his eyes gleamed in a terrifying manner as if he were eyeing his prey.

Boom!

Just then, Typhoon emitted a frightening burst of energy that blasted the dust and leaves around him away.

At that moment, everyone noticed the stench of blood that permeated the air.

They knew the butcher within Typhoon was back, who enjoyed killing for pleasure and sport.

Despite retiring for thirty years, his strength continued to grow.

Licking his lips, Typhoon glared at White Tiger as if he was his prey.

The Protector Chapter 473

He began to approach White Tiger slowly.

Despite his slow steps, every stride covered tens of meters in distance.

He managed to close the distance of over a hundred meters in a blink of an eye.

“My brothers-in-arms! Listen to me! Tear the other three men limb by limb!” Scott commanded.

Owoooooo...

At that moment, the howl of wolves broke the silence of the forest.

Everyone looked around in shock as they saw wolves emerge from both sides of the forest.

Their bodies were much bigger than that of ordinary wolves.

There were nine on the left and another nine on the right.

What made the sight more terrifying was that each wolf had a man riding on top. They were dressed in black with a mask covering their faces. All that could be seen were their bloodthirsty eyes.

These eighteen men had crossbows and guns slung behind their backs. In their hands, were grenades, military blades, daggers, and other types of advanced weaponry.

They formed the Cavalry Regiment of the God of War and were the nightmare of enemies on the battlefield.

Every single one of them could defeat a thousand men.

At the sight of all eighteen men, the morale of the three thousand men was sapped.

Confusion started to reign among them as they looked towards their sides.

Since when do men ride on wolves? We have never heard of it before.

“What are you panicking for? Attack!” Scott bellowed.

“Remember, kill everyone who stands in your way!”

Scott’s encouragement managed to set alight the flames of his men’s fighting spirit.

With three thousand men, there’s no need for them to be afraid.

Could this eighteen men really stop them?

Owoooooo...

At that moment, all the wolves let out a long howl before commencing their attack.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

As all eighteen wolves charged down the hills, the ground rumbled with a thunderous roar.

Smashing into the three thousand troops, the wolves easily mowed down many of them, throwing the troops into disarray.

“Argh!” Cries of agony were heard throughout.

Meanwhile, the other nine groups of Scott’s men were fast approaching North Hampton.

Screech!

Suddenly, the lead car jammed its brakes and caused the whole convoy to stop.

There was a group of men standing right in front, they were all dressed in the same uniform.

They wore military green tank tops, similarly colored pants, and black battle boots.

However, they were all unarmed and were obviously the Dragon Legion under Alfie’s command.

They, too, were split into nine battalions to stop the enemy.

Alfie’s orders to them were simple – it was to complete the mission with their bare hands.

It caused the beast-like group to cheer fervently as they had not battled in months.

Despite seeing Alfie’s troops, Scott’s men were not deterred.

“How dare they block our way unarmed. Brother-in-arms, let’s kill them all!”

As Scott’s men drew their swords, they marched towards Alfie and his troops.

From their perspective, it didn't matter how well Alfie's men could fight. Bare fists could never beat cold steel.

Today, they were about to be chopped into minced meat. It would be the same for all the other eight groups.

As all of Alfie's men attacked, both sides quickly clashed.

Soon, cries of anguish filled the air.

Meanwhile, Typhoon had reached within five meters of White Tiger.

Boom!

Suddenly, Typhoon picked up speed and charged forward, generating a blast of air behind him.

The leaves on the ground were blown back while two deep-set footprints could be seen where he just stood.

Swoosh!

Coming out of nowhere, a black and gold dagger emerged in his hands.

Boom!

The moment the dagger appeared, it set off a strong gale. The wind would sting anyone it came into contact with, as it could cut like a blade.

Typhoon's form was perfect in terms of its angle, power, and speed when he thrust his dagger forward.

He resolutely wanted his strike to draw blood.

The Protector Chapter 474

Meanwhile, White Tiger's blood boiled with excitement when he saw how fearsome his enemy's attack was.

He didn't expect the underworld to have someone so powerful left.

The attack came in a flash.

White Tiger bent backward so much that he almost touched the ground. With that, he was able to avoid the strike.

Swoosh!

Crack!

Typhoon's knife missed and pierced the tree trunk behind him that was as thick as a man's waist.

Suddenly, the tree cracked from the top to the bottom before exploding into smithereens, sending pieces of tree bark flying everywhere.

It was an extremely terrifying sight!

No wonder he was known as the greatest warrior in Quebec!

However, White Tiger only responded with a smile. "That's pretty impressive. Now it's my turn!"

With that, he lunged forward with a single punch.

At the same moment, Typhoon countered with his dagger.

Crack!

Somehow, White Tiger caught the dagger between his fingers and smashed his fist into Typhoon's body.

Boom!

Upon impact, Typhoon was sent flying backward and crashed into a large tree.

Before he could pick himself up, White Tiger was upon him.

Bang!

He smashed another punch into Typhoon's face.

Ooof!

Blood started to ooze out of Typhoon's mouth.

He tried to counter but was held down by White Tiger, who gave him no room to maneuver.

Bang!

With Typhoon pinned, White Tiger pounded his fists repeatedly, just like a piledriver.

After more than twenty consecutive punches, Typhoon was covered in blood and no longer breathing.

It was a gruesome sight.

Scott and Theo's eyes widened so wide as if they could pop out anytime.

Was the gap in strength so big that Typhoon had no chance to defend himself?

Typhoon was the best warrior in Quebec. What sort of madness is this?

It simply didn't make any sense!

They were now aware of why the Morris Group acted with such impudence.

With so many formidable characters among them, they definitely deserved to behave that way.

If only Scott had as many powerful subordinates as possible under his command, all the surrounding territories would be his. He wouldn't just be ruling over Quebec.

When they turned to check on the battle behind them, Scott and Theo gaped.

They had expected an easy victory given the overwhelming odds of three thousand men against eighteen.

However, they were not prepared for what they saw. The ground was strewn with their men.

The three thousand men were slaughtered into disarray by the eighteen wolf riders, who were unstoppable.

All their men were fleeing, as no one had any courage left to fight.

The Cavalry Regiment's attack was so devastating that it felt like the Gods were punishing man.

No ordinary man was able to withstand God's judgment.

The Cavalry Regiment was the equivalent of nuclear weapons on the battlefield.

Against such a weak enemy, they seemed to be in excessive use of power.

Three thousand men were simply too few to provide a challenge. Thirty thousand men would have stood a better chance.

Back to the other nine groups.

When Scott's subordinates clashed with Alfie's men, they realized they had misjudged the enemy.

These people are mad! They're too strong for us!

In their twenty years of fighting, they had never met such a formidable foe.

In a blink of an eye, the formations of the other nine groups were broken up. All of Scott's subordinates collapsed on the ground while grimacing in pain.

All it took was two minutes to finish them off.

Thirteen thousand men were routed in a very short duration.

No one had expected such an outcome.

In their eyes, Scott was invincible. However, in the face of true strength, they couldn't even last more than three minutes.

At that moment, Scott was dumbfounded when he realized Typhoon was dead and all three thousand of his elite troops had been routed.

What else did he have left? Nothing at all.

“Sir, the other nine groups have reported that they have been defeated! We’re finished. Everything is lost!” Even Theo was almost in tears.

The Protector Chapter 475

Scott closed his eyes in despair.

It's all gone!

They had not expected such a swift ending.

The coffin they carried was indeed meant for him.

"Your biggest mistake was to attack North Hampton, or else you would still be able to live."

Scott was jolted when he heard Levi's voice.

Opening his eyes, he asked Levi, "Before I die, can you tell me your identity?"

Suddenly, Theo interrupted with a trembling voice, "Sir... I know who they are!"

"What?" Scott asked.

"It's North Hampton! Who can't we afford to offend in North Hampton?" Theo reminded.

When Scott saw the wolf riders, he exclaimed, "Are those the infamous Cavalry Regiment? Does that mean he's... the God of War!"

Scott caught his breath as he mentioned the name of the supreme warrior.

He had not expected it at all.

It was no wonder that the head of the Morris Group was a mystery, and no information could be found about him.

The only rumor they heard was that no one knew where he was from.

It didn't matter, since he was the legend himself.

Instantly, Scott was filled with regret.

He despised the fact that Sebastian had provoked him to lead his army out.

Finally, the incident that had caused so much panic dissipated just like that, and no one was the wiser.

There were many rumors that perceived the incident as a fabrication. Scott had never gathered ten thousand men in the first place.

No such thing ever happened.

Nevertheless, one rumor was absolutely true. Scott had disappeared.

Overnight, Quebec's underworld was wiped out.

Something that couldn't be done over more than ten years was accomplished within one night.

The masses were cheering in joy.

After all, Scott and his men were like parasites, and they had continuously terrorized the populace.

When Levi had men investigate Scott's assets, it came up to over a hundred billion.

He ordered all the money to be used for charity. Whoever dared to abuse it, he would personally hold them accountable.

With that, the populace cheered the decision.

Such a popular decision would certainly increase the cohesion within the city's residents.

Now, the Morris Group's objective was to continue developing North Hampton and spend the funds for the benefit of the populace.

Meanwhile, Jesse asked Levi if he was interested to go to South City and develop Quebec.

However, Levi rejected him for the time being as he still wanted to stay by Zoey's side.

He had told his wife that he wished to give her the future she wanted.

Therefore, he would only move to South City if that were what Zoey longed for.

After the battle, South City and all the other cities' family-run industries operated in peace.

Everyone was aware that North Hampton was untouchable, and therefore no one dared to attack it.

If they did go there, it would be to develop North Hampton first while profits were secondary.

Hence, the development of North Hampton accelerated very quickly.

One day, Azure Dragon went to see Levi.

“Do you still remember Scott’s hundred billion worth in assets?” Azure Dragon asked.

“I do. What about it? Did someone abuse the funds?” Levi frowned as he asked.

Azure Dragon shook his head, “It’s actually worse. Someone discreetly acquired the company’s assets. The eighty billion that was meant to be invested in public charities are all gone!”

“What? How did that happen? Did someone secretly siphon the money out?” Levi exclaimed in shock.

How could the funds I had specifically earmarked encounter such a problem?

“Have you investigated it thoroughly?” Levi inquired.

“More or less. The one responsible is the largest company in Quebec, the Triple Group from Keerea. They acquired the company and accessed the eighty billion!” Azure Dragon explained.

The Protector Chapter 476

“How dare they do something like that right under my nose? Are they looking for trouble?” Levi fumed.

Levi realized that these foreigners were accorded many special benefits in Erudia.

Meanwhile, his own countrymen didn't get any special privileges.

“It's not going to be easy. The Triple Group contributes a significant portion of Quebec's GDP and creates a lot of job opportunities. Therefore, they are allowed to act with impunity as the local government turns a blind eye to their actions. In fact, the government is going to introduce many policies that favor their business.” Azure Dragon explained.

“What does South City have to say about it?” Levi inquired.

“South City is not keen on pursuing the matter and has agreed with their actions. They said that the Triple Group has promised to increase their contributions towards public welfare and charity.” Azure Dragon sighed.

Bang!

Suddenly, Levi slammed the table forcefully.

“This is unacceptable! How can the great Erudia be manipulated by a foreign company? Why do we allow them to dictate what we do?” Levi thundered.

Azure Dragon was caught by surprise at how angry Levi was.

“Tell South City to deal with this immediately!” Levi barked.

“Alright, I understand.”

Levi was aware that Scott’s assets were very valuable, and many parties had their eye on it ever since Scott’s demise.

The Suarez family and the Lopez family knew the truth about what happened, so they stayed away.

However, the Triple Group didn’t and did whatever they wanted due to their powerful position as a foreign company.

They used about a billion to acquire an asset worth a hundred billion.

That came up to a profit of eighty billion!

Perhaps South City could tolerate the issue, but it was unacceptable to Levi.

The funds were supposed to be used for good; hence, whoever dared touch it would feel his wrath.

With that, Azure Dragon was sent to South City to deal with the problem.

Meanwhile, Levi arrived at Oriental Star Group to meet with Zoey and was told that Zoey was in the midst of discussing a collaboration.

Outside the meeting room, Gerry related to Levi in delight, “Mr. Garrison, the stars, which we have groomed – Helena and Maurice, are now wildly popular. The Triple Group invites us to form a collaboration today. They want Helena to be their product spokesperson, and I heard her fee would go up to a billion! Also, this is only the beginning. There are plans for a series of projects later on.”

The more Gerry shared, the more excited he became.

When Levi heard that the Triple Group was involved, he frowned.

“Did you mean the Triple Group from South City?” He asked.

“That’s right!”

After a short while, the negotiations for the partnership were complete.

The groundwork for the collaboration had been laid. What came next was the discussion on price and the signing of the contract.

Zoey was all smiles.

Ever since their two blockbuster movies, the number of companies who wanted Helena to be their spokesperson or attend their commercial events increased significantly.

Even the contract with the Triple Group was worth more than a hundred million.

The Oriental group had opened the door for them to make it big in the entertainment industry.

Helena and the other stars’ value jumped many-fold.

“Ms. Lopez, If there aren’t any unforeseen issues, we will sign the contract tomorrow. I have run this through our big boss, and he has agreed to all your conditions.” Horace confirmed with a smile.

Horace from Triple Group was responsible for the negotiations.

“Alright, no problem!” Zoey nodded in agreement.

When she returned to her office, Levi asked, “Are they signing a spokeswoman to showcase their electronic products?”

Everyone knew that the Triple Group's electronic products were top-notch.

Zoey shook her head. "No, the electronic products will come later. They are signing Helena now for a charity event."

"What? A charity event?" Levi furrowed his eyebrows and could feel something wasn't right.

The Protector Chapter 477

“That’s right. The Triple Group plans to organize a charity event in South City. They have invited many celebrities and prominent figures to the event. In fact, if Helena participates in it, she will receive a handsome appearance fee.”

“The Triple Group is being very generous this time. I hear that they will be donating ten billion to charity, and it’s an impressive amount of money. It’s rare to find companies that do good now.” Zoey couldn’t help but sigh.

“It’s all a sham! How shameless can they be!” Levi fumed as soon as he understood what was going on.

Zoey was shocked at his reaction.

The Triple Group was devious. They took away eight hundred billion initially earmarked for charity and only used about ten billion from it to placate South City by organizing a charity event.

What was even more infuriating was the fact that they organized it under the Triple Group’s name and invited A-list celebrities to further bolster their reputation.

They were just promoting the Triple Group’s brand under the pretext of charity.

The benefits they stood to gain were worth more than ten billion.

It was simply despicable.

“Honey, don’t sign the contract tomorrow!” Levi demanded.

Zoey was puzzled. "Huh? Why?"

"Honey, do you know why Triple Group wants to donate to charity?" Levi asked.

"To elevate their image in society as a caring organization?" Zoey replied.

"No! The Triple Group needs to fulfill the requirement that South City has set for them. Before this, they had gained access to a hundred billion worth of charity funds..." Levi related the whole incident to Zoey.

"Why don't you get it back instead?" Zoey questioned.

Levi smiled wryly. "Firstly, the Triple Group acted swiftly. Even though the funds were earmarked for public welfare, they managed to acquire the company discreetly. Secondly, South City turns a blind eye to their actions as long as they continue expanding there."

"They're really despicable. These bloodsuckers pretend to be a company that cares despite having stolen the hard-earned money from the poor. It's just a charade, damn them!"

"In that case, I won't sign the contract. I don't want their dirty money!" Zoey raged.

Although she usually tolerated common business practices, this was something too big for her to ignore. Therefore, she was firm in her decision.

"Mm, that's my wife for you!" Levi complimented Zoey with a thumbs-up.

On his way out of the company, Levi bumped into Helena and the others.

They were polite with Levi as they acknowledged him as their benefactor.

Without him, they would still be making two to three thousand a month and living in a dark basement.

They would definitely not have the opportunity to live a life that allowed them to sign a contract worth tens of millions.

However, Maurice's attitude seemed to have changed. He reminded Levi, "Mr. Garrison, now that the four of us are famous, I hope that you won't share with others the fact that we used to work in sales. To us, that was a shameful part of our lives."

Meanwhile, Helena tried to push him away, but Maurice was adamant. He added, "We will definitely give you an incentive fee. Why don't you tell us how much you want, and I'll get someone to pay you? After that, we will pretend that we don't know one another. If you let our secret out, I will definitely make you pay!"

It was common knowledge in the company that Maurice was full of himself ever since he became successful. He did not respect anyone else anymore.

"Incentive fee? Fine, give me ten billion then!" Levi replied.

The Protector Chapter 478

Everyone was stunned to hear Levi's demands.

Maurice looked at Levi in disbelief. "You're really greedy! I'm warning you not to go overboard!"

Levi ignored him and left.

"Why is he like that?" Maurice fumed.

Helena admonished him, "Maurice, how can you speak to him so rudely? Mr. Garrison is our benefactor!"

"Hmph, I admit we do owe him. But the reason I'm popular now is because of my own efforts and acting skills. He probably contributed about ten percent of our success. That's why I wanted to give him some money to repay his kindness. Instead, he wanted to take advantage of me!" Maurice sneered.

Helena glared at him before she left, fuming.

In life, there were many people who became famous or rich overnight.

It was hard to stay grounded as most people couldn't help but let success get to their heads.

After Maurice became famous overnight, his attitude changed significantly.

He didn't care for his old friends and broke up with his girlfriend of seven years.

In the office, he would always put on airs. Other than Zoey, he would not treat anyone else with respect.

To the extent that he accepted private jobs for additional income.

Rumor had it that his personal life was also in a mess.

Zoey was now aware of his behavior.

“Are you not going to do something about him?” Levi asked.

“Given that the two movies are doing very well. We can only turn a blind eye for now,” Zoey replied with a helpless expression.

Suddenly, her tone changed. “However, he has gone overboard. He and Helena were supposed to be paid a few hundred thousand for acting in the films. But, when he saw how popular the movie became, he demanded a bonus of at least ten million. Or a salary of at least twenty million for his next film.”

“To be honest, he really is very popular and well worth the money. By the way, what about Helena?” Levi asked.

Zoey responded with a smile. “Helena and the rest are really grateful and have left all the decisions to the company. Their attitude hasn’t changed much despite their success.”

“That’s very good!” Levi laughed.

The next day, Triple Group’s representative, Horace, came to continue the negotiations.

Maurice and Helena were also present.

Being the spokesperson, Maurice was feeling excited. Once the contract was signed, he would receive over ten million as spokesperson fees.

He had planned to buy a mansion and luxury car with the money.

Everyone waited in the meeting room until Zoey arrived.

“Ms. Lopez, if you don’t have any issues, please sign the contract,” Horace suggested with a smile.

Smiling back at him knowingly, Zoey replied, “I’m sorry Mr. Waller, I won’t be signing it today.”

What!

Zoey’s decision was as shocking as being struck by lightning. Everyone in the room was stunned as they looked at her in disbelief.

Didn’t everything go well yesterday?

The Triple Group is being very generous with a hundred million worth of spokesperson fees.

Why did she change her mind?

Before Gerry and the others could respond, Maurice couldn’t sit still anymore.

“Ms. Lopez, why? Where else can we find a collaboration like that? Of all the recent offers we received from other companies, the Triple Group has given us the best terms.” Maurice stared at Zoey in disbelief.

Levi, who was sitting beside, sneered, “The management has decided not to sign it. Are you doubting the management’s decision?”

“You... I...”

Maurice was dumbfounded at Levi’s challenge.

No matter how arrogant he got, he realized that he was still dependent on Zoey.

“Why don’t you keep quiet as Ms. Lopez has her reasons!” Helena and her colleagues held Maurice back.

The Protector Chapter 479

Maurice was now becoming increasingly arrogant. During the management meeting, he insisted on interrupting.

He was upset but forced himself to suppress his anger.

Meanwhile, Gerry questioned, "Ms. Lopez, what happened? We didn't hold a meeting to discuss this, so why are we rejecting the contract now?"

All the other members of management were puzzled.

Horace too inquired with a smile, "Ms. Lopez, may I know what the problem is? Weren't we clearly on the same page yesterday? Why are you going back on your word today?"

Just then, Maurice couldn't help but interrupt, "That's right. Ms. Lopez, your decision shows that you are untrustworthy. You can't let your personal agenda affect how you run the company. As actors, credibility is important to us too. Even if you are the boss, you can't diss us like that!"

"Know your place!" Zoey bellowed suddenly, shocking everyone present.

"The company management is having a meeting. Since when do you have the right to speak? You are becoming increasingly presumptuous!" Zoey snarled as she couldn't tolerate Maurice's behavior anymore.

Meanwhile, Levi was secretly gloating.

Despite his wife's gentle demeanor, she would snap back when cornered.

“I’m sorry, Ms. Lopez.” Maurice apologized and hung his head in silence.

He was utterly embarrassed after being admonished by Zoey in front of everyone.

As it was the most humiliating moment of his life, all he felt was anger.

Clenching both his fists tightly, he promised himself, “Zoey and Levi, just you wait. I’ll have my revenge!”

Zoey explained to Horace, “Mr. Waller, I did some research last night and realized that your company is not being honest. The charity gala you are organizing is a sham!”

Hearing that, Horace’s expression darkened.

Does Zoey know the truth?

“Therefore, I won’t participate in an event that goes against my conscience. I also won’t allow my employees to do the same too. Hence, I won’t sign the contract because I’m worried such a despicable matter would negatively impact Oriental’s reputation!” Zoey scoffed.

Horace sniggered, “Very well, it’s just a bunch of celebrities. It’s a joke that you think I can’t find them elsewhere. Next time, don’t expect to ever work with the Triple Group again!”

Fuming, Horace prepared to leave.

“I would like to give your company some advice. If you keep taking advantage of other people, karma will come for you! Especially when it involves a hundred billion. Do you know how many people that hard-earned money belongs to?” Zoey warned.

“You...”

Further infuriated, Horace slammed the door as he left.

Meanwhile, there was silence in the meeting room.

Everyone looked at Zoey with a puzzled expression.

“Alright, all those who are the management, please stay back. The rest, you are dismissed.” Zoey instructed.

She wanted to explain to the rest of the management the reason she didn’t sign the contract.

Since it involved the secrets of the Triple Group, she didn’t want too many people to know as it might put their lives in danger.

Maurice then left with dissatisfaction written all over his face.

Once outside, Helena asked in a low voice, “What do you think the reason was for Ms. Lopez to reject the contract?”

“I’m sure she has her reasons. I think it’s a good idea we didn’t sign it,” someone remarked.

“Haha, I know the reason why Zoey doesn’t want to sign the contract!” Maurice exclaimed.

“What is it then?” Everyone looked at him curiously.

“It’s because I offended her husband! She wants to make things difficult for me on purpose. Didn’t you see how she singled me out during the meeting? My guess is that she doesn’t want me to sign any spokesperson contracts or take

any advertisements. She plans to blacklist me instead!” Maurice declared viciously.

“Maurice, your imagination is running wild. Ms. Lopez isn’t someone like that.” Helena defended.

“Hmph! I’m sure about it. She’s definitely biased against me!”

The Protector Chapter 480

In the meeting room, the management board agreed with Zoey's decision after she explained herself.

"These bloodsuckers are despicable for using the public's money to do charity work!"

"That's right. If the Oriental Star Group is involved with them, it would be devastating for our reputation when the truth is discovered." Gerry and the other members of management were outraged.

"I'm worried that the Triple Group would seek revenge against us. In terms of both financial capability and influence, aren't we weaker compared to them?" someone asked.

"Definitely. The Triple Group's financial prowess is the strongest among all, and no one can stand in their way!"

Zoey laughed in response. "Let them take their revenge. Don't forget we still have the Morris Group supporting us."

Meanwhile, Horace didn't leave North Hampton. Instead, he went to look for a different entertainment company, given that North Hampton had the most developed entertainment industry within the region.

There were many good drama schools there that naturally led to better entertainment companies.

At night.

Horace was inside a five-star hotel.

Standing in front of him was Maurice, Helena, and other new stars from Oriental Star Group's stable.

Horace didn't want to give up on them as their new film had been a blockbuster recently.

Hence, they were too popular to be ignored.

Smoking a cigar, Horace grinned. "I'm sure all of you know why I have asked you to come."

Helena and the others felt uneasy.

However, Maurice was direct. "Do you plan to sign us as spokespersons?"

"That's right, you're a smart one!" Horace laughed.

Helena interjected, "But we can't do this, Mr. Waller. You have to go through our company first. Furthermore, Ms. Lopez has rejected you earlier in the day."

Taking a puff from his cigar, Horace beamed. "I've seen the contract you signed with Oriental. The restrictions they placed on you are rather lax."

Everyone including Helena was aware of that.

Zoey valued freedom, so she didn't impose upon them the draconian terms that would limit their options.

Their contracts allowed them to take on freelance work.

Other entertainment companies would impose rigid contracts upon their artistes to tie them down to the company.

The terms would be so draconian that the company would even determine what food they ate.

Horace continued, "Therefore, you don't have to worry about accepting freelance work. The company has no legal basis to take action against you."

With a wave of his hand, Horace's assistant brought out a set of contracts.

"You will get fifteen million each. After that, our company will sign you on as spokespersons for our electronic products. We will offer you a salary of at least eighty million annually." Horace declared.

At that moment, Maurice's eyes sparkled as he replied, "Fantastic! I'll sign it. The money isn't important as long as I can have the opportunity to work with a company as big as the Triple Group!"

"Wonderful! You do know what's good for you, I'm impressed!" Horace remarked.

Maurice signed the contract in front of Helena and the others.

Ding!

In less than ten minutes, fifteen million arrived in his account. Maurice was ecstatic.

After slogging through two movies for Oriental, all he received was five hundred thousand.

Now, he received fifteen million just for participating in a charity event.

A mansion? Luxury car? Beautiful women? He was able to buy anything he wanted now.

Everyone else looked on in envy as no one could deny the temptation of fifteen million.

“Helena, what are you still waiting for? Sign it! It’s fifteen million! You don’t have to feel bad for the company as their contract doesn’t restrict us from carrying out freelance work.” Maurice persuaded the others.

“So what if they find out? We should do whatever we want!”

The Protector Chapter 481

Helena throat moved as she gulped.

She came from a poor village and naturally wanted the money too. Fifteen million was undeniably a lot.

At that moment, she was stuck between the temptation of money and maintaining her principles.

“Mr. Waller, thank you for the kind offer, but I have to decline,” Helena rejected the contract.

“I won’t sign it too!” Helena’s other two companions followed suit.

“We’ll sign it!” Another three supporting actors couldn’t resist the temptation and agreed to accept the contract.

Before Helena and the other two left, Horace openly threatened, “Ms. Helena, despite how popular you are now, you have just limited your own options by rejecting the Triple Group’s offer. Haha...”

After Helena and the others left, Horace patted Maurice on his shoulders and smiled. “I think Zoey has something against you and wants to destroy your career.”

Then, Maurice told Horace about the incident with Levi.

“Haha, so you did offend her husband! What a joke! Besides, her husband isn’t much of a benefactor anyway. All he did was to use you as cheap labor by only offering you five hundred thousand. Do you know how much both movies made so far? Six billion!” Horace burst into laughter.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Maurice slammed his fist on the wall repeatedly and hissed, "Damn you, Zoey! I made six billion for you, and all I got was five hundred thousand?"

"So, why don't you join me. I will guarantee that we will make you a superstar! I'm sure you are aware how powerful the Triple Group is." Horace offered.

Maurice smiled in response. "Mr. Waller, My sentiments exactly! I can no longer stay with Oriental."

"Alright, but you have to stay with them for now. When the time comes, I'll sign you over. By the way, I heard that their directors and screenwriters are very capable too. I have a job for you. Get them to join us, and I'll pay you a million for every single person you convince!" Horace smiled diabolically.

He planned to recruit the core members of the Oriental Star Group.

When he heard that he would be compensated for his efforts, Maurice readily agreed.

In fact, he volunteered, "If you are interested in Zoey, I would try my best to get her in bed with you."

At the thought of Zoey, Horace licked his lips. "That would be wonderful!"

Maurice, too, fantasized about Zoey. He smiled slyly. "By then, don't forget to share her with me. She's someone that's just irresistible. It's just that I don't dare express myself to her in the company. If she weren't the boss, I would already have taken her."

Meanwhile, Horace stood up with a grin. "Maurice, I have prepared a surprise for you. Enjoy!"

After Horace left the room, Maurice's eyes gleamed when two pretty girls entered.

They're more gorgeous than my girlfriend!

I'm not going to let that ugly country bumpkin tie me down my whole life.

With that thought in mind, Maurice pulled both women into his embrace and stepped into the tub with them.

Little did he know that the room was filled with pinhole cameras, and all his actions were captured from every imaginable angle.

The cameras did not miss a single detail.

The next day.

Maurice came into the office looking exhausted.

"Maurice, come quickly! The Union Square has an event that requires your presence." A member of the staff informed him.

"How much are they paying?" Maurice asked.

"The appearance fee is five hundred thousand. It's the highest we have received recently." The staff replied.

"Five hundred thousand? That's peanuts! I'm not going."

The Protector Chapter 482

Everyone present was shocked at Maurice's remarks.

In their eyes, Maurice was someone so ambitious to the point that he would accept work for fifty to a hundred thousand.

So why did he turn down a job worth five hundred thousand?

"Maurice, the appearance fee is five hundred thousand. Did you mishear it as fifty thousand?" The staff clarified with him.

"I didn't get it wrong. Is five hundred thousand a lot? Do they think I'm that desperate?" Raising his voice, Maurice caused the staff to tremble in fear.

"Are you aware that the two movies I acted in grossed seven billion? That means I'm worth at least tens of millions. So, are they looking down on me by just offering five hundred thousand?"

With fifteen million in hand, five hundred thousand was peanuts to Maurice now.

"Maurice, are you crazy?" The staff couldn't help but retort.

"Of course, the movies made the company a lot of money. But don't forget that you are just a newcomer. The company not only provided you the opportunity but also gave you five hundred thousand. Furthermore, they spent a lot of resources on promoting you. Isn't that fair enough?"

"Besides, you were the one that signed the contract willingly." The other members of staff added.

Maurice scoffed, “The fact is I made them seven billion, but they only gave me five hundred thousand. Why don’t we make it public and let our peers decide whether they are taking advantage of newcomers?”

“Maurice! What are you doing? Come with me now!” Helena pulled Maurice aside to somewhere private.

“Maurice, as your long-time classmate, I would advise you to stop going down this route. In life, we should have a conscience when making choices, or else we would end up with a bad reputation.” Helena cautioned him.

Meanwhile, Maurice brought out a set of car keys and swung it around his fingers. It was obvious those keys were for a Ferrari.

“I don’t think it’s such big a deal. I’m driving a luxury car and staying in a mansion now. Isn’t it wonderful? Why do I have to stay back here and suffer?” “Helena, my advice to you is to sign the contract with Mr. Waller. I remember that your parents are seriously ill and need surgery immediately. Also, your siblings still have to attend school, and you were worried you couldn’t afford their school fees. Don’t you want them to live a comfortable life? All you need to do is to say yes. Your parents could live a life free of pain, and they would be happy. Isn’t that what you want?”

Helena was dumbfounded at Maurice’s words.

“Helena, listen to me. Sign the contract with the Triple Group. With the one-off buyout worth tens of millions, your family’s fortunes will be changed forever!” Maurice continued to tempt her.

After struggling within herself, Helena was adamant. “No! I’ll still stick with Ms. Lopez. I don’t mind making less money as long as I can sleep at night.”

Seeing Helena leave, Maurice berated her, “You’re a fool! Stupid girl!”

The next few days, Maurice acted with impunity within the company. He would scold the staff and other newcomers without reason.

However, due to the popularity of the movie, everyone had no choice but to endure.

Meanwhile, Zoey had begun to notice that Maurice was wearing clothes that cost hundreds of thousands and wearing watches that cost more than a million. On top of that, he drove a luxury car. It was obvious something wasn't right.

Not only that, but a few of the other up-and-coming stars were also visibly less motivated in their work.

They rejected most of the projects offered and simply lounged around the office while putting on airs.

As they largely didn't break any rules, Zoey had no basis to intervene.

Finally, the Triple Group managed to organize their charity gala in South City, and it was a resounding success. Both the media and public came away praising how the Triple Group was a socially responsible organization.

After that, the Triple Group planned to organize a charity gala in North Hampton.

The Protector Chapter 483

As the Triple Group continued to expand, South City was no longer enough to satisfy it.

They wanted to penetrate the city with the largest economy in the region, which was North Hampton.

Soon, the list of guests for the charity gala was announced.

“Ms. Lopez, take a look at the guest list quickly!”

Gerry and his staff brought over the list hastily.

“Morris!, Wilford, Trisha...” Zoey read out their names solemnly.

There were ten in total, and they were all new stars who the Oriental Star Group was promoting.

They had surreptitiously signed a spokesperson’s contract with the Triple Group without the company’s knowledge.

Zoey was infuriated. “Didn’t I say that we would decline to work with the Triple Group? Why did some of them still sign a contract still? Go and get all of them here!”

Meanwhile, Gerry replied, “Ms. Lopez, please calm down. Our contracts with them do not contain any clauses that bar them from freelance work. Hence, what they’re doing is not illegal and neither does it breach the contract terms. If there’s any conflict with them, it would not benefit us at all. Given how well received the two movies are currently, it would damage both our reputation and financials if we offended the lead actors.”

“Are you suggesting that we just bear with it?” Zoey fumed.

“For now, that’s our only choice. We have to pretend that we don’t know anything about it,” Gerry concluded reluctantly.

He did not expect to have been promoting such an ingrate. Maurice was even more difficult to deal with than Niall.

“Ms. Lopez, Maurice wants to see you.”

At that moment, Maurice arrived and threw a set of accounts onto the table.

“Zoey, the movie has grossed ten billion now!”

Zoey picked up the accounts and took a look.

Aren’t these the respective accounts for the two movies?

The accounts were supposed to be confidential. Other than the company and large broadcasting websites, no one had access to them.

“Where did you get the accounts from?” Zoey demanded.

Meanwhile, Maurice sat down and sneered, “It doesn’t matter where I got it from. I just want to know – how much are you going to pay me now that you made ten billion?”

“Maurice, stop being rude! You’re speaking to Ms. Lopez!” Gerry reprimanded him.

Maurice scoffed, “So what if she is? She’s still human. What’s wrong with my question?”

Zoey smiled in response. "Five hundred thousand. Your pay for both movies is simply five hundred thousand!"

"It has been decided in the very beginning that all the actors' salaries combined would not exceed ten million. The company still needs to spend on special effects and pay the scriptwriters. Everyone knows that."

Maurice nodded. "I understand that. But it's obvious that the movies have made a profit of ten billion. Are you serious in just paying me five hundred thousand?"

Zoey's lips widened into a broad smile. "That's right. It's because the contract states that your fee is five hundred thousand. Whether the film is a success or a failure, it has nothing to do with you."

"Hahaha, didn't you always emphasize that Oriental is a people-centric company? In the end, you still choose profits over ethics. How could you only pay the male lead five hundred thousand when the movie has made ten billion. Isn't that simply unfair?" Maurice challenged.

Zoey remained expressionless. "I speak based on my principles and will follow the contract to the letter. No more, no less."

"Fine, shall I expose this issue and let the public decide who is in the right?"

Maurice was smart to use the film's popularity to blackmail the company.

"No, don't! Maurice, please calm down. Everything is open for discussion," Gerry interjected.

If the matter got out, it would be very damaging to both the company's reputation and financial position, regardless of who was in the wrong.

"Maurice, name your price!" Gerry demanded.

“Three billion!”

The Protector Chapter 484

Gasp!

When Maurice stated his price, everyone present caught their breath.

Three billion, is he crazy?

Maurice laughed. "What is it? Do you think I'm being greedy? Both the movies are expected to earn eighteen billion in the end. Even after you paid me three billion, you still have fifteen billion in profits left. More importantly, if word gets out, the reputational damage would be devastating. Taking that into account, three billion isn't too much to ask for." Maurice explained confidently.

Gerry and the others exchanged glances as they weighed their options.

If Maurice blew the matter up, the controversy would easily cost the company more than three billion.

More importantly, the loss in credibility would be beyond repair.

"Maurice, let's discuss it further. Could you lower your demands? In return, we will pay you more for your next film," Gerry asked, trying his best to negotiate.

"No! It's three billion. Take it or leave it!"

Since Maurice had planned to sign a contract with the Triple Group, he didn't care about the next movie.

Gerry and the others were running out of ideas. All they could do now was look to Zoey for her decision.

“Ms. Lopez, what do you think?”

By now, Maurice no longer respected Zoey.

Looking at him, Zoey scoffed, “No way. We won’t give you anything, so stop dreaming!”

“Uh...”

Gerry and the others were stunned as they expected Zoey to continue negotiations.

Instead, she rejected Maurice outright.

Maurice, too, was caught off guard as Zoey didn’t even bother to negotiate.

“Very well. What an unethical boss!” Maurice sneered as he left.

“Ms. Lopez, are you sure that’s alright? The impact will be huge if it blows up.” Gerry was feeling doubtful.

Zoey replied firmly. “If we compromise, it will open the floodgates for others to do the same.”

At night at North Hampton’s Grand Manor, the Triple Group held their charity gala there.

It was a massive event.

Everyone who was somebody in North Hampton was invited. Even Grover attended the event.

Many of them were the rich and famous of North Hampton who came from all industries.

Actors and actresses were definitely included.

Meanwhile, the media broadcasted Maurice's arrival live as he was the most popular actor then.

Everyone's attention was focused on him as the viewers who tuned in exceeded ten million.

The gala was hosted by Horace.

"The Triple Group has decided to make a one-off donation of ten billion to North Hampton's charity and public welfare organizations. It would be used to build retirement homes, orphanages, schools, etc." Horace announced at the end of the night.

At the same time, he handed a cheque of ten billion to the President of North Hampton Charity Association, Sanford Collins.

All the media were focused on reporting and showcasing that particular moment.

"The Triple Group is a socially responsible company. Not only did they donate ten billion to South City, but they also donated ten billion to North Hampton."

"That's right! Although they are a Keerean company, they have contributed significantly to the development of Quebec."

"From now on, I will only buy Triple Group's electronic products!"

When the broadcast of the charity gala was over, the internet cheered.

Perception towards the Triple Group improved significantly soon after that. In just over ten minutes, the online sales of Triple Group products in Erudia increased by a few billion.

Most of its electronic products were sold out.

Meanwhile, Levi was watching the broadcast and was infuriated.

The trust fund that he had painstakingly set up had not only been usurped by the Triple Group but used to further their commercial interests.

At that moment, Azure Dragon informed him that South City sent their apologies.

They did not expect the Triple Group to have extended their claws over North Hampton.

“Hmph, don’t blame me after coming here to taunt me!” A frosty glint flashed across Levi’s eye

The Protector Chapter 485

With her fist tightly clenched, Zoey, too, was trembling out of anger.

“This really is a capitalistic society. Power and influence can not only cover up the truth but also whitewash sins into virtues!”

Meanwhile, the charity gala was still being broadcasted.

The Triple Group had lined up ten poor kids in front of the cameras. Horace declared, “The Triple Group will take care of these ten kids up until they graduate from university!”

“That’s great!”

Many in the audience were clapping and cheering.

Thunderous applause rumbled throughout as the atmosphere there was ecstatic.

The Triple Group had won a decisive victory in both reputation and financial gains.

They were now known as a socially responsible organization.

“Ladies and gentlemen, our next segment may not be aligned with tonight’s theme. But I feel it’s an opportunity to help someone redress an injustice.” Horace changed the topic of the night.

“Oh? Does someone want to expose an injustice done?”

Everyone was curious to know what it was about.

At that moment, Maurice, Wilford, Trisha, and the rest stood on the stage.

“Let me introduce to you the most popular male actor currently, Maurice. Followed by supporting actor and actress, Wilford and Trisha respectively...” Horace presented.

Given how popular their movie was, everyone recognized who they were.

“What’s going on? Were Maurice and the rest treated unjustly?”

Everyone was puzzled.

Horace then passed the microphone to Maurice.

Looking at the crowd in the eyes, Maurice explained, “Everyone knows that I’m the male lead in the two recent blockbuster movies. Up till now, the Oriental Star Group had made more than twenty billion in profits. However, do you know how much I am paid for the films? Please take a guess!”

“Fifty million!”

“No, that’s too much. Guess lower!” Maurice yelled.

“Ten million!”

“No!”

“It can’t be less than five million, can it? Even if they paid five billion, it would still be reasonable.” Someone questioned

“Fine, let me tell you the answer! I, alone, am paid with a meager sum of five hundred thousand!”

When Maurice exposed the answer, there was an immediate uproar.

Everyone's face was filled with disbelief.

"What? They only paid the lead five hundred thousand after making twenty billion? Is that even possible?"

"This is outright absurd! Oriental Star Group is practically abusing the rights of their employees! Five hundred thousand... are they kidding me?"

"The Oriental Star Group is a malignant tumor that must be removed from the industry! How can they lowball their actors like that?"

Everyone present was angered by the injustice that they had just heard about.

Meanwhile, Maurice was satisfied with the impact he made.

"This is not something I made up myself. I have proof as I even kept the receipt!"

Changing the subject, Maurice asked again, "Do you want to know how much my friend was paid?"

Taking over the mic, Trisha reported her salary, "I was paid three hundred thousand!"

Then it was Wilford's turn. "I was also paid three hundred thousand!"

"I was paid even less, two hundred thousand!"

"I, too, received two hundred thousand only!"

"I'm the lowest at a hundred and fifty thousand!"

When the supporting cast exposed their salaries, the outcries from the audience were deafening.

Many of them were cursing and swearing at Oriental.

“This is a joke! A movie that garnered twenty billion in profit only paid less than three million in salaries to their cast?”

“The management of Oriental are bloodsuckers! How could they do such a thing?”

“How can we have such an unethical company in North Hampton? They should be blacklisted!”

Just like that, public opinion turned against Oriental.

It wasn't only those in attendance that were angry, but even those online were berating Oriental.

There were calls to boycott Oriental. In fact, some even urged revenge!

“How could they shamelessly twist the facts!” At that moment, Zoey was so furious that she almost smashed the TV.

The Protector Chapter 486

Zoey knew that Maurice would take revenge, but she didn't expect him to do it by defaming Oriental Star Group on the night of the charity gala.

Horace took the microphone and spoke into it. "I'd like to make an announcement. Maurice Lorraine and the ten directors here had been personally invited to attend this event. Their presence here tonight has nothing to do with Oriental Star Group."

"Huh? How is that so?"

Some were confused.

"That's right. It was a private invitation!" Horace explained with a smile. "I once proposed to Oriental to invite a few directors to the event, but the president turned me down.

She doubted my kind initiative and thought we were planning to use the charity gala's reputation to earn blood money, so she refused to cooperate with us! Sigh... Triple Group sure has it rough. We get flamed when we don't take part in charity, but when we finally involved ourselves, our motives end up being questioned. This is just cruel!"

"What? Oriental is that despicable? Why would they question someone else's kindness?"

"How shameless can they be? Triple Group has really been doing charity work; they've already donated over two billion to South City and North Hampton! Is that not charity?"

“Oriental is a joke. A company like this deserves to fail. Let’s join forces and bring them down!”

...

With Horace adding fuel to the flame, the crowd became enraged.

They now utterly despised Oriental Star Group and wanted the company to fall into ruin.

The situation was even worse online.

Thousands of netizens began to boycott Oriental Star Group.

Let’s flood their movies with horrible ratings!

Within an hour, two major films received tens of thousands of bad reviews.

The films suffered greatly in regard to sales and reputation.

Oriental Star Group was now in a mess.

Horace continued, “I’d like to attest to Maurice Lorraine and the rest of the directors here. Even though it isn’t a huge amount, they had offered their contributions.

They disregarded the company regulations and are risking their jobs just to be a part of this charity gala! Therefore, I’d like to request for a round of applause for these youngsters!”

“Wonderful!”

“I’ll invest in any movie you make in the future!”

“Yeah! Maurice Lorraine should become North Hampton’s charity ambassador!”

Many big shots gave their responses.

A thunderous applause ensued.

The Internet was filled with positive comments about Maurice and the rest of the directors.

The ten directors were now regarded as powerful and fearless charity heroes.

Upon seeing this, Maurice curled his lips into a smile.

He didn’t expect things to turn out so well.

All the fame and fortune are now mine!

Then, he thought of Helena Engler.

“You must have a few screws loose! Now that Oriental is finished, so are you!”

Maurice announced to the crowd, “I refuse to work under such a despicable company! Is there anyone who’s willing to take me in?”

Wilford Boyd and the others chimed in, “Same goes for us! We don’t want to remain in Oriental anymore. We’ve had it with this trashy business!”

“Come work for us!”

Many bigshots were more than happy to hire Maurice and the others.

Horace smiled. “I’d be willing to give you guys a chance if you’re interested.”

“Please! Working for Triple Group is all we could ever ask for!” Maurice and the rest responded, immediately accepting the offer.

However, Maurice added, “But I’m still under contract with Oriental. They might refuse to let me go.”

“Don’t worry about that, Mr. Lorraine. You have the support of everyone here!” the audience exclaimed.

“In that case, I’d like to sign with Triple Group!” said Maurice and the others.

And just like that, all of them joined Triple Group.

The Protector Chapter 487

Zoey shook with rage in front of the television.

She was on the verge of tears.

She didn't think that Horace and Maurice would pull such a trick.

Oriental Star Group has become public enemy number one.

Just the public's opinion is enough to put the pressure on Oriental, not to mention if all the huge corporations decides to close in on us.

"Don't be mad anymore, honey," Levi assured her as he pulled her into his arms. "Let him sit on that high horse of his for now. I'll make it clear to them that it's just as easy for them to hit rock bottom as it is to be loved by everyone!"

"Do you have a plan in mind, Darling?" asked Zoey.

"Not at the moment, but remember the saying, the heavens are always watching!" Levi replied with a smile.

The charity gala was a success.

Horace achieved two of his goals.

One, to bring fame and fortune to Triple Group.

Two, to send Oriental Star Group into chaos.

The next day, Zoey arrived at work and noticed how gloomy the atmosphere was.

Gerry Wade and the others hadn't slept all night, so their eyes were extremely puffy.

Everyone turned to Zoey for help.

Evidently, the current situation was beyond their control. There was no way they could handle what was happening.

"Mr. Shawn Timmons and a few screenwriters are here to see you, Ms. Lopez," the assistant said to Zoey.

"Let them in."

Zoey knew what was about to happen.

Shawn Timmons walked into the office with over thirty other people following closely behind.

"Sorry, Ms. Lopez. We'd like to resign. We can't carry on working for Oriental Star Group after what happened," he explained.

Everyone else lowered their heads, feeling rather awkward.

Zoey smiled. "It's fine. You have every right to leave. I accept your resignation."

Shawn and the others were stunned.

They didn't think she would let them go so easily.

Over thirty directors, screenwriters and producers had just given in their resignation notice.

These individuals were the foundation of Oriental Star Group.

Aside from actors, they were the most important crew members when it came to making a film.

That was right.

Shawn and the rest had been bought over by Maurice Lorraine.

In fact, Horace had offered Shawn thirty million to get everyone else to leave the company.

Shawn stopped by the special effects studio before leaving.

“Come with us, James. There’s no point staying here with Oriental Star!”

Shawn tried to convince the special effects team to join him.

The head of the special effects department, James Wood, responded with a smile, “I’m good. You guys go on ahead! I’m indebted to Oriental. I’ve worked for many companies, but this is the only one that has ever treated the special effects team with respect and taken us seriously. I’ll never leave, no matter what.”

“You’re just a stubborn old fart who refuses to change!” Shawn raged at him. “You won’t have it easy!”

He then walked away with his group.

“Come join us, Helena. You’re famous now, so you shouldn’t stay here anymore!”

The man tried to recruit Helena Engler too.

With this, Horace would have to give me at least three million.

However, Helena turned him down. “I won’t leave. I’ll always stay with Ms. Lopez!”

“Fine. You can keep giving yourself airs then. You’ll only starve if you keep up with that attitude!” Shawn sneered.

Zoey was touched to see everyone who stayed.

“This crisis will be over real soon. Please trust me on this!” she declared.

She believed in Levi.

If Levi said he could solve this, there was no doubt he could.

After all, he had the mysterious owner of Morris Group backing him.

He’s omnipotent!

If the man could easily deal with Scott Yates and Sebastian Lopez of South City, whatever Oriental Star Group was facing right now would be a piece of cake.

The Protector Chapter 488

Maurice Lorraine was giddy with delight.

The more viral he became, the higher his net worth got. Even his assets grew exponentially.

Today, he and Shawn Timmons, along with several others, had come to Triple Group to sign their new contracts.

Maurice immediately signed his contract without even going through it.

Everyone else did the same, simply because joining Triple Group meant receiving money and fame.

Shawn and his group received a settlement fee of several hundred thousand just from joining the company.

They, too, signed their contracts without even taking a look at the details.

Horace couldn't help but laugh as he glanced at his several dozen new employees. "Incredible! All of you are practically the foundation of Oriental Star Group. You'll certainly go far by joining me."

He then left with a smile.

Maurice gathered everyone to discuss their future.

"Huh? There's something weird about this contract!" exclaimed Steve White, a screenwriter.

“What’s wrong?” asked Shawn and the others.

“Take a look at your own contracts! Something doesn’t add up here,” Steve urged.

Everyone began to flip through their own contracts.

Very quickly, a few screenwriters exclaimed, “We’ve been tricked!”

“This is like a slave contract! All of our reputation and copyrights will belong to Triple. We’re practically their slaves now! And what’s with the pay? I only get a fixed salary of three thousand a month!?”

Steve nearly passed out.

He was the one who had written the script for the two major films from before, and Zoey Lopez rewarded him five million for that.

Yet, he was going to be paid a mere three thousand a month while working for Triple Group?

Who could ever accept such a difference?

“Sh*t, mine’s a slave contract too. They’ve deprived me of all my rights! And I’m only paid eight thousand a month?”

Shawn was about to lose it.

He had earned eight million from directing the two previous films.

Now, he was going to receive eight thousand instead.

The other screenwriters shared the same contracts.

They were all subject to become Triple Group's slaves—for life.

“Hurry up and take a look at my contract!”

Even Maurice had started to panic.

Steve went through Maurice's contract and remarked, “Yours is pretty much a slave contract too, but it's slightly better than ours. However, you'll only get a payment of at most a hundred thousand for each movie though.”

“What? A hundred thousand!?”

Maurice was about to go insane.

Only a hundred thousand for each movie?

This is madness!

Everyone quickly realized that they had been duped.

Triple Group had offered them benefits at the start and allowed them to sign their contracts while their guard was down.

“Let's terminate our contracts! How can we ever agree to this?”

Maurice trembled in anger.

Steve delivered a cold, hard truth. “We'll need to cough up a hundred million as penalty for breaching our contracts, as for yours, it will be a billion.”

Boom!

Maurice slumped to the floor.

One billion?

I only have a few million at most. Where will I ever get a billion?

Shawn was hopping mad. "F*ck! Why'd you do this to us, Maurice? You son of a b*tch! We were doing so well at Oriental. I've never made more money anywhere else than when I was working for them!"

"He's right," Steve chimed in. "A screenwriter never earns more than five hundred thousand for writing a script, but Oriental paid me five million!" He began to sob.

Everyone else followed suit.

What they felt at that moment was regret.

They truly regretted.

Wasn't it great working for Oriental?

Why did we have to join Triple?

Now look at us.

We're doomed.

We're going to be Triple Group's slaves for the rest of our lives.

The Protector Chapter 489

Just a while ago, they had even laughed at Helena for being stubborn. Thinking about it now, the woman certainly made the right choice.

Shawn whacked his own forehead. "I should've known! Triple Group is ruthless and greedy. They've had their dark past dug up in recent years. There's no way we'd ever get a single cent out of them. We were too naive."

Steve dashed their hopes even further. "Most importantly, we can't reveal any of this. The contract says we'll end up in jail if we expose what's happening."

Everyone gasped.

"Horace Waller, you're an abomination!"

Maurice kicked the door as tears streamed down his face.

At that moment, the door opened and Horace walked in.

Behind him were about a dozen bodyguards watching over his safety.

"So, you've read your contracts, I presume?"

Horace smirked insidiously.

"I'm taking you down with me, Waller!"

Maurice rushed toward him, only to be held back by the guards.

Shawn scoffed, "You're being way too underhanded, don't you think, Mr. Waller? This isn't an agreement at all. It's clearly a slave contract."

Even though this was commercial hegemony on Triple Group's part, it would always be difficult to protect one's rights when contracts were involved.

One could go to court for years, and it still wouldn't necessarily guarantee their victory.

Especially when one was up against the almighty Triple Group. There was practically zero chance of winning a lawsuit against them.

"If you didn't like the contract, you could've chosen not to sign it. Did I ever coerce you into signing it?" Horace remarked.

"I..."

Everyone suddenly fell silent.

What he said was true, Horace didn't force them into signing their agreements at all.

"But I wouldn't have signed it had I known what kind of contract it was! You tricked us!" Shawn raged.

Horace smiled. "Did I not let you read your contracts? You could've chosen not to sign them if you didn't agree, but did you even read the terms? I certainly gave you ample time to go through the details."

Shawn was so exasperated that he felt like coughing up blood.

They had all signed the contracts without going through the details, simply because they believed in Triple Group's power and wealth.

Who would have thought that it was all a trap?

“Of course, you can leave if you want! Just pay your penalties and I promise you’ll be free,” Horace chuckled.

Silence ensued.

Who would ever have that much money?

Horace smirked triumphantly. “If you can’t pay up, you’d better obey me and serve Triple Group well!”

Maurice was livid. “Do you think that we’re your dogs!?”

“Are you not? Remember, you’re Triple Group’s dogs now. Do your jobs well and maybe you’ll get to eat some bones! Hahaha!”

Horace was beyond delighted.

Spending just a few million to obtain a group of slaves who would rake in billions for the company was a genius idea.

He had practically bought over an entire entertainment company.

Ba-thump!

Everyone fell to the floor after Horace left.

“What should we do now? Are we really going to be their dogs until the day we die?” Steve asked in misery.

No one would accept such an outcome.

Everyone was now at the peak of their careers; why would they ever allow themselves to work like dogs?

“I’ve got it!” Maurice suddenly exclaimed.

Everyone turned toward him.

“We can ask Oriental for help! Let’s get Zoey Lopez to pay for our penalties and hire us again!”

“You’re right. That’s a great idea. There’s a high chance she’ll help us, since we can make money. The benefits outweigh the costs of breaching our contracts, after all. Besides, the company’s in danger now that we’ve all left. She’ll definitely agree to help us if we ask her to!”

The group headed toward Oriental Star Group under Shawn’s lead.

The Protector Chapter 490

The staff of Oriental Star Group were puzzled.

Just this morning, Shawn had left haughtily with a bunch of other people. So what is he doing back here now?

Are they here to show off?

It doesn't seem like it though.

They look so tense, as though something bad has happened.

Zoey's assistant immediately informed her about Shawn's return.

"Hold them off. Don't let them come in," Zoey ordered.

Levi had just texted her about what Maurice and the others had gone through.

Shawn and his group were stopped at the entrance.

"What's going on? Let us in! Don't you know who I am, Zane?" Shawn bellowed at the security guard.

Maurice chimed in, "You're just a bloody security guard! What right do you have to stop us?"

He despised those who worked as security guards and janitors.

A few guards responded angrily, "You're no longer an employee of Oriental Star Group, so you can't enter however you please!"

“You...”

Shawn froze.

He had submitted his resignation letter earlier this morning, so he was indeed no longer a company staff.

However, Maurice scoffed arrogantly. “Let me tell you this, you stinkin’ guards. I’m here to discuss a project that’s worth a few billion with Ms. Lopez. Do you think you can afford to waste my time?”

“That’s right,” Shawn and the others added. “Who do you think you are? How dare you try to stop us!”

To think that these well-known directors were being held back by a few lowly security guards, their prides won’t allow it.

The guards refused to budge. “You can’t enter!”

Zoey had personally instructed them not to let anyone in.

Thus, they had nothing to fear!

“So is it money that you want? Here! Take it.”

Infuriated, Maurice took out a stack of cash and slapped the guards across the face with it.

“You’re nothing but some lowly security guards, and that’s all you get to be your whole lives!”

The security guards fumed in anger but remained silent.

It wasn’t unusual for them to be treated this way.

In the eyes of these white-collar elites, being a security guard was an inferior job.

The men could only suppress their rage and do nothing.

This was simply a common occurrence.

“What’s going on?”

A voice suddenly rang out.

It was Levi.

“Mr. Garrison...”

The guards’ eyes lit up when they saw him.

Their pillar of support was here.

Levi got along well with all the security guards, whether they were from Morris Group or Oriental Star Group.

“You’re looking down on these guys? What’s wrong with being a security guard? Are they inferior to you?” Levi asked coldly as he stared at Shawn and the others.

“I...”

Shawn was at a loss for words.

They knew how powerful Levi was. He was also Zoey’s husband, so they dared not tick him off.

Even Maurice was holding himself back.

We still need Zoey Lopez's help. We can't piss him off.

"Apologize," Levi demanded.

Everyone in the group exchanged glances.

Did we hear wrongly?

Apologize to these lowly guards?

Who do you think we are!?

"I said apologize to them, or get out of here!" Levi ordered.

Fine! Just bear with it!

Shawn gritted his teeth and said with a bow, "I'm sorry!"

"Sorry!"

Steve and the others apologized too.

Maurice did the same. "I'm sorry. I shouldn't have disrespected you."

The security guards were pleasantly surprised.

These famous stars and directors are actually apologizing to us?

"It's fine! It's fine..."

They quickly waved their hands.

Levi turned to the security guard called Zane. "Go give him a slap in the face."

“Huh?”

Zane was taken aback.

“He hit you with his cash, didn’t he? It’s not that different if you were to give him a slap now,” Levi pointed out.

The Protector Chapter 491

“Don’t push your luck, Garrison!” Maurice roared.

Levi merely raised his voice. “Go. Slap him in the face!”

Zane broodingly walked toward Maurice.

Maurice was filled with rage.

How am I going to hold my head up high after being slapped by a security guard!?

Shawn and Steve held onto Maurice while giving him glances, signaling him not to move.

“Hit him!” Levi ordered.

With that, Zane violently slapped Maurice across the face.

In an instant, Maurice’s head spun as his vision blurred, and half of his face turned numb.

The sensation was quickly followed by pain. It felt as though he was being pricked by needles continuously.

Everyone was dumbfounded.

The huge celebrity, Maurice Lorraine, had just been struck by a security guard.

Maurice glared at Zane and Levi ferociously, as though he wanted to eat them alive.

What a disgrace.

This is way too humiliating!

Levi asked coldly, "Do you accept what just happened?"

"I-I do. I hit him with my money and he slapped me in the face. It's a fair trade!" Maurice replied while clenching his teeth.

"Alright, so what do you guys want?" Levi asked. "Haven't you quit already? Why are you here again?"

Shawn quickly explained, "We have something important to discuss with Ms. Lopez, Mr. Garrison. Please let us in!"

"And what is it about?"

"We'll talk about it when we see Ms. Lopez," Shawn answered with a smile. "It's something that will benefit the company!"

Levi returned a smile. "I'm sure you know how busy Ms. Lopez is. Not any Tom, Dick and Harry gets to meet her. You should leave."

"What are you talking about, Garrison? I just got slapped and you're chasing us away now? Who the hell do you think you are?"

Maurice just about had it.

"He's right, Mr. Garrison. Be reasonable!" Shawn chimed in. "We stopped picking on the security guards out of respect for you. Shouldn't you show us some respect too?"

In other words, they had apologized not because they knew they were wrong; they only did it to make Levi happy.

Levi was furious. "Who the hell do you think you are? Why should I show you any respect?"

Maurice had lost all his patience. "And who the hell do you think you are, Garrison? You're just a nobody if you weren't Ms. Lopez's husband."

Slap!

Levi sent two of Maurice's teeth flying with just one slap across the face.

A bright red handprint immediately appeared on the latter's cheek.

Maurice was completely taken aback.

Just one slap was almost enough to kill him.

"You dare hit me, Levi Garrison?"

Maurice was so livid that he could kill someone.

"What's wrong with that? A foul mouth deserves a slap, no?" Levi asked.

"I dare you to hit me again!" Maurice roared.

Levi was amused.

"Guys, have you ever seen someone ask to be hit?"

"Hahahah!"

The security guards burst into laughter.

Levi instantly delivered another slap across Maurice's face.

The left side of Maurice's face instantly swelled up and the slap marks looked especially distinct.

The man was utterly floored.

Everyone else couldn't believe their eyes.

"You're the one who told me to hit you," Levi said with a grin. "I was just granting your wish."

"Maurice Lorraine is being attacked! Come and watch!"

"Hurry over and witness this! Someone's attacking the superstar, Maurice Lorraine!"

"Isn't there anyone here who stands with justice!?"

Trisha Sullivan and Wilford Boyd suddenly began to cry out.

Passersby swarmed over upon hearing it was Maurice Lorraine and glared at Levi.

"How dare you attack my idol? Someone call the cops!"

The Protector Chapter 492

Over a hundred people showed up in a blink of an eye.

Everyone immediately assumed Maurice was the victim after seeing the piteous state he was in.

They began to confront Levi.

At this very moment, Zoey walked outside.

“What’s going on?”

“We wanted to talk to you, Ms. Lopez, but your husband kept stopping us and he even attacked Maurice! Your security guard also slapped Maurice in the face.”

Shifting the blame onto the innocent now, huh?

Zoey smiled. “And?”

“You know what could happen, Ms. Lopez,” said Shawn. “Your husband’s going to be in a world of trouble if word gets out. He had struck a celebrity, for God’s sake! He might even end up in jail!”

“What should I do then?” Zoey asked.

“To be completely honest with you, Ms. Lopez, we’ve been tricked into signing a slave contract with Triple Group. We want to leave, but there’s a huge penalty to pay...”

Shawn trailed off.

Zoey chuckled. "So you're saying you want me to pay for the penalty and buy you guys over?"

The entire group nodded fervently. "That's right, Ms. Lopez! We did some calculations. All the penalties add up to exactly two billion. It's actually not a lot! Think about it; wouldn't it be a breeze to gain back the two billion if you had such a great team like us and a brilliant actor like Maurice?"

"He's right! I believe we'll be able to earn you two billion in just a year!"

They were full of confidence thanks to the two films that had been released.

Maurice walked over to Zoey while covering his face. "The company is now in chaos after we left, isn't it, Ms. Lopez?" he said with a smile. "Without us, it'd be tough for you to form a new team so quickly. I'm presenting you with an opportunity right now; we'll come back if you agree to pay for our penalties. With us back, we'll bring your company profits beyond your imagination! Not only that, but I'll also even let go of the fact that your husband attacked me."

Maurice was full of conceit.

They had originally come over to beg Zoey for help, but now he made it seem like Zoey was the one having to do the pleading.

Trisha and Wilford chimed in, "It's a win-win situation. We're giving you a chance. The only question now is, are you going to take it?"

Gerry Wade and the others wanted to throw up upon hearing that.

You're the ones who'd racked your brains trying to find a way to come back, but now you're talking about giving Ms. Lopez a chance?

Could you all be any more shameless?

Everyone's eyes were on Zoey, waiting for her answer.

To Maurice and the group, Zoey would definitely agree to their proposal.

It wasn't just because Oriental Star Group couldn't do without them.

She also had to say yes for Levi's sake.

"I refuse! You're no longer part of my firm, so your problems have nothing to do with me. Besides, we have a rule of not working with traitors. Have a good day!"

With that, Zoey turned and walked away.

Job well done!

Levi nodded in approval.

Zoey had changed rather drastically throughout this period.

She was now much firmer in terms of her work and personality.

"What? Did she just turned us down?"

Maurice and the rest of them were flabbergasted.

Shawn was filled with disbelief.

"Do you not care if your husband's fate, Zoey Lopez!?" Maurice yelled. "Just you wait and see how I'm going to make your husband suffer!"

Shawn and Steve quickly stopped him. "Don't do anything rash, Maurice! Remember what we're here for!"

“Yeah! We should behave ourselves. We’re here to ask for Ms. Lopez’s help, not to threaten her!” said the others.

The Protector Chapter 493

Maurice glanced at Levi, who was standing nearby, and said, "Then we'll give it another try. If she turns us down again, I'm going to send Levi Garrison behind bars!"

Levi calmly took out his phone and dialed a number. "It's about time to destroy Maurice Lorraine."

"Hahahaha!"

The people next to Maurice burst into laughter when they heard Levi's words.

Is he an idiot?

Does he really think he can ruin a celebrity with just a phone call?

Who's he trying to kid?

Maurice glared at Levi coldly and smirked. "I'd like to see how you plan to do that."

Very quickly, all the major media outlets fought to report the following news: Famous celeb Maurice Lorrain's private life exposed, spotted sharing hotel room with two women.

Horace Waller had arranged for someone to secretly follow Maurice that very night.

Pictures and videos of the incident immediately surfaced.

Netizens were in complete shock.

Maurice's dark past surfaced as quickly as he shot to fame.

Another heavyweight news article made headlines: Maurice Lorraine dumped girlfriend of seven years, was abusive and made her sign an agreement to keep relationship secret.

...

More scandals began to surface, such as news of Maurice fooling around with multiple women at nightclubs.

The media outlets also released articles clarifying that Maurice was once taken in by Oriental Star Group while job hunting; the company had offered him a contract worth five hundred thousand.

Everyone now understood Maurice's true character.

"So he betrayed Oriental after everything they've done for him? Despicable."

"What an ingrate. He dumped his girlfriend after becoming famous and bit the hand that fed him!"

"I wondered why this guy kept trying to make Oriental look bad. Now I get it."

...

The Internet was now filled with comments antagonizing Maurice.

The man's reputation as a celebrity instantly hit rock bottom.

It's over.

It's all over.

Maurice was completely dumbstruck once he found out what just happened.

"How could this happen!?" he looked up and yelled at the top of his lungs.

His phone rang at the same time. It was the banks calling to tell him that all of his accounts had been frozen.

This was also Horace Waller's doing.

Maurice Lorraine was completely finished.

The only choice he had left now was to serve Triple Group as a slave for the rest of his life.

Levi walked over with a smile. "It's as easy to tear you down as it is to raise you up."

Thump!

Maurice flopped to the ground and stared at Levi in disbelief.

He really did it with one phone call.

For the very first time, Shawn and the others realized how frightening Levi was.

This is too much.

"We're sorry, Mr. Garrison."

Shawn, Steve and the rest of the group knelt on the ground.

“We promise to serve Oriental Star Group for the rest of our lives if you and Ms. Lopez redeem us, Mr. Garrison.”

They bowed with their heads directly touching the floor.

Levi scoffed. “Didn’t you hear what my wife said? She never works with traitors.”

Boom!

Levi’s response struck them like lightning.

Their lives were over.

Taking care of Maurice indirectly restored Oriental Star Group to its glory.

Levi returned to Morris Group.

“Where have you been, Mr. Garrison? You’ve been away for so long!” Seth Wilson and the other security guards greeted him with a smile.

Iris Annabelle happened to spot Levi at the same time. “Where’d you disappear to? You didn’t even ask for a leave of absence.”

Iris looked rather upset, as though something had happened.

Levi asked immediately, “Is something wrong?”

Iris hesitated for a moment before nodding. “Yeah.”

The Protector Chapter 494

“What happened?” Levi asked.

Iris rubbed her temples. “Didn’t the big boss tell us to organize a one billion charity program recently? We built the Hope Elementary School, Old Folk’s Home and Orphanage. We funded many poor students too. Yet, after pumping in our money and doing all this, someone else ended up taking all the credit.”

Levi was stunned.

How could such a thing happen?

Someone actually made an issue out of charity money?

He frowned. “Who did it? They sure have some nerve.”

“It was Triple Group! They organized that one billion charity gala two nights ago and not a single cent came out of their own pockets. They took the money we contributed for the charity program and made it theirs. All the charity certificates, documents and processes ended up becoming theirs!”

Iris was utterly furious.

And so was Levi. “So we paid for the charity event but they get all the credit!? And now everyone thinks that Triple Group is the one being charitable and that it has nothing to do with us?”

“Exactly! Triple Group is getting so much positive feedback from it. All the students and old people we’ve helped are sending them appreciation banners. The school, orphanage and old folks’ home are now hanging posters on the wall, thanking Triple Group for their kindness. Nobody knows that we’re the ones who

actually came up with the money! Most importantly, we asked the Charity Association why this was happening, but they refused to acknowledge our contributions. They said everything about the charity program was done by Triple!”

The woman fumed in anger.

Bang!

Levi landed a fist on the wall.

Iris jumped in fright.

“This is unacceptable! They’re even trying to interfere with a charity program. How shameless can they be?” Levi raged.

The fact that Triple Group could do all this had to be because everything was agreed upon with the Charity Association.

“That’s not all. I know that Triple’s general manager’s been involved with a few 14-year-old girls! Urgh! How I want that scumbag gone!” Iris added.

A cold look flashed in Levi’s eyes. “Now that he’s pissed me off, I’m going to make him pay.”

Iris glanced at the man’s stance.

Does he think he’s some boss?

“I’m about to personally head over to the Charity Association and find out what’s going on.”

The more she thought about this, the more exasperated she felt.

“Okay. I’ll come with you,” Levi responded.

They soon arrived at the North Hampton Charity Association building.

“Hello, do you have an appointment?”

“Yes. It’s under Iris Anabelle of Morris Group.”

Aware of Iris’ status, the Charity Association assigned a high-ranking director, Jon Harvey, to attend to her.

“Hello, Ms. Anabelle. How may I help you?” Jon asked with a smile.

Iris got straight to the point. “I’m here for just one thing today, and that is to look into the donations made by Morris Group for the charity program!”

“Oh? Has Morris Group contributed to the program recently?” Jon asked, perplexed.

Levi chuckled.

They’re all playing dumb.

Iris suppressed her anger and remarked coldly, “Morris Group has made a one-billion contribution to your association eight days ago. How could you, as a director, not know about this?”

Jon Harvey merely smiled. “Sorry about that, Ms. Anabelle. I’ve been abroad for a while so I really have no idea about this. Give me a moment to look into this matter.”

The Protector Chapter 495

After making a phone call, Jon turned to them. “Have you perhaps been mistaken, Ms. Anabelle?” he asked with a smile on his face. “The only one-billion donation we’ve received is from Triple Group. There are no records of any contributions made by your company.”

“What the—what on earth are you talking about? That one billion came from Morris Group, but you wrote it off as Triple’s? What the hell is going on?”

Iris was so livid that she nearly cussed.

“Please calm down, Ms. Anabelle. We really have no records of any donation you’ve made.” Jon replied with a pretentious smile.

“Then tell me what this is!”

Iris slammed some documents of the donation made in front of Jon, along with the company’s proof of having set up the charity program.

Jon went through the documents and said in confusion. “This can’t be. How could these records be exactly the same as Triple Group’s? Even the charity program is completely identical! You wrote your own company’s name over Triple’s, didn’t you, Ms. Anabelle?”

Iris was about to go insane.

How shameless can they be?

Now they’re making it seem like we’re the guilty ones.

“Besides, Triple Group really did host the charity gala recently and donated one billion during the conference. It was their money; what does it have to do with Morris Group? Even I’m starting to wonder if you’re harboring any ill intentions, Ms. Anabelle.”

Jon appeared confident that the money belonged to Triple Group.

“Hah! Well then, since we have all the bank transaction records, how about we use them to find out who donated the money?” Iris suggested with a smirk. “Let’s head to the bank right away, Mr. Harvey. Then we can make some comparisons with your finance department.”

Jon’s expression took a turn at the mention of the bank.

He began to ask, “Before that, may I ask why you donated the money in the first place, Ms. Anabelle?”

“To help people in need, of course,” Iris answered.

“That’s right. The purpose of the Charity Association is to help others, and since we’ve achieved this goal, does it really matter who was the one who helped?”

The man proceeded to poison the well in an attempt to make Iris look bad. “Don’t people show acts of kindness in anonymity nowadays? Are you donating money just for the fame, or for an award or certificate? I’m really starting to question your motives now, Ms. Anabelle! Since it’s all about charity, does anything else matter as long as our goals are met? So what if the money came from Morris Group? If you insist on taking the credit that much, fine! I’ll send you a pile of certificates.”

“You…”

Iris felt rage flowed through her like lava.

Yes, the goals have been met.

We don't care about the fame either.

But there's no way I'd allow Triple Group to take the credit!

Clap, clap, clap.

Levi couldn't help but clap his hands.

"You sure have a way with words! Claiming the moral high ground now, are you?" Levi said, smirking.

Jon scoffed, "What do you mean by claiming the moral high ground? This is how charity has always been; if everyone only contributes for the fame, they're better off not contributing at all. Honestly, it doesn't really matter who donated!"

Levi raised his voice. "Does that mean you can write someone else's donation off as Triple Group's? Who gave you the right to do that?"

"I—"

Jon wanted to say more, but Levi cut him off. "If the credit doesn't matter, why does Triple Group need it then? They announced the news everywhere and even hosted a charity gala."

"That's not the same. Triple Group needs the credit!" Jon replied with a smile.

The Protector Chapter 496

“So Morris Group doesn’t need it, but Triple Group does? Such double standards,” Levi scoffed.

“Triple—”

Levi cut Jon off again. “I want to know who gave you the right to write Morris Group’s contribution off as Triple Group’s. That’s some serious power right there, changing a one-billion project just like that.”

Levi arrived at the root of the problem with his sharp words.

Jon was overwhelmed.

“Who is this man, Ms. Anabelle? Are you both here just to stir up some ruckus? So you want to look into the internal affairs of the Charity Association that badly?” he raged.

“Sure. Why don’t we investigate?” Levi replied coldly.

“Get them out of here!”

Jon wasn’t having it anymore and immediately ordered someone to take them away.

But Levi persisted. “No! I have to find out exactly what’s going on! How did Morris’ charity program end up becoming Triple’s?”

Jon was beyond livid. “So what if I don’t admit it was Morris’? What can you do about that, even if I say it’s been written off as Triple’s?”

Levi's lips curled into a profound smile. "Fine. Don't regret it then!"

"Me? Regret? Hah! I'm going to say this one more time. Triple Group's the one who donated the money and it has nothing to do with you! Send them out!"

Iris and Levi left the building. "You see that? I can't believe that's how the Charity Association behaves!" Iris lamented with a wave of her hand. "I have to go back and ask Mr. Atkinson what to do. We can't just leave things this way."

The two returned to Morris Group.

Levi headed to his own office and contacted his secretary, Aurora Newt.

"Aurora, who's the person in charge of the North Hampton Charity Association?" he asked.

"The president is Mr. Sanford Collins, Sir."

"Alright. Tell him to come over. I have something to discuss with him."

Levi sounded as cold as frost.

It didn't take long for Sanford Collins to arrive at Morris Group with several other high-ranking associates.

The five of them stood inside the office with their heads lowered and covered in cold sweat.

They didn't even dare to wipe at their foreheads.

The man sitting before them was way too intimidating.

He's not just the deputy of North Hampton, he's the God of War!

How did Scott Yates die?

It was thanks to this man!

And why has Triple Group suddenly appeared out of nowhere to do whatever they please in Quebec?

It's mainly because Scott Yates, the man who had been keeping a tight rein on Triple Group, is no more.

This is the man who had single-handedly gotten rid of Scott Yates!

"Do you know why I've called you over?" asked Levi.

Sanford Collins and his men exchanged glances before shaking their heads. "No we don't, Mr. Garrison."

"You don't? Then do you know where you are right now?"

Levi tapped his desk with his knuckles.

"We're inside Morris Group. Ah! Is this perhaps about Morris Group's charity program?"

Being the smart man that he was, Sanford quickly grasped the situation.

"So, you do know why you're here," Levi said coldly.

"Tell me what's going on," he said with a smirk. "How did the money Morris Group donated for the program end up as Triple Group's?"

Suddenly, his expression took a sharp turn. "I was just at the Charity Association to ask about this, but they insisted the money came from Triple and even chased me out of the building!"

Boom!

Levi's words struck them like lightning, instantly petrifying them.

Thump!

Sanford lost his balance and staggered to the floor.

Seriously?

This man got kicked out of the Charity Association?

Who had such nerve to do that?

The Protector Chapter 497

This is blasphemy!

It's over.

The shit's about to hit the fan now.

Sanford breathed deeply and said, "We had no idea such a thing happened, Mr. Garrison."

Levi tapped on his desk again. "That's the second issue. Let's talk about the first. If I don't get a good answer from you, I'm going to start looking into it on my own!"

The men nearly coughed blood out of fear.

Look into it on his own?

Jesse Nielsen's going to ruin us before that happens.

"I'll talk! I'll tell you everything!"

Sanford jumped in and explained himself clearly.

"It was the general manager of Triple Group from Erudia, Horace Waller, who came looking for me. He told me to put Morris Group's one-billion donation under Triple Group for the charity program! I did it only because he promised to donate two billion to North Hampton in the future!"

Levi smirked. “He promised to donate two billion? Did you sign an agreement with him?”

“No. It was a verbal agreement,” Sanford answered. “But he’s the general manager of Triple Group, so I believe he’s a man of his word.”

Bang!

Levi slammed his hand onto the desk.

Sanford and his team nearly wet themselves.

“So you’d believe whatever people tell you? Are you a f*cking elementary school student!?” he roared.

“I’m sorry, Mr. Garrison. I was wrong. I shouldn’t have believed him!”

Sanford immediately got down on his knees.

“Let’s go! We’re going to check the Charity Association’s records!” Levi demanded.

Sanford immediately agreed. “Understood, Sir. We’ll head over at once!”

Iris saw Levi bringing a group of men over to her just as she hung up a call with Kirin.

Sanford said to her, “Hello, Ms. Anabelle. Allow me to introduce myself. I’m Sanford Collins, president of the Charity Association. I’m here to apologize and request you to come with us to the Association to settle some matters.”

Iris was dumbfounded.

I just called Mr. Atkinson half an hour ago to ask for help, and the president of the Charity Association is here apologizing to me already?

Just how powerful is this mysterious boss?

Incredible!

Iris admired this unknown man so much that she was now thinking of him as a lover.

Everyone quickly headed toward the Charity Association once again.

“Get Jon Harvey to attend to me!” Levi ordered the front desk receptionist.

It didn't take long for Jon to angrily show up with a group of bodyguards.

“What? Must you insist on causing trouble, Morris Group? I kicked you out just a while ago!” Jon raged.

Levi scoffed. “What's this? Is this how you attend to a guest?”

“Who the f*ck do you think you are that I have to attend to you? You wanna die?” Jon bellowed at him.

“What's your problem? Why are you acting like such a tyrant?” Iris argued. “Am I not allowed to check your accounts? My company gave you a one-billion donation, for crying out loud!”

“No!” Jon turned her down right away. “From now on, no one from Morris Group gets to step into this building. We won't accept your donations either!”

“What a bold statement. You must think you're so formidable,” Iris remarked.

“That’s right,” the other directors began to speak out. “We’re the ones who have the final say in North Hampton’s charity industry! If you have a problem with that, that’s too bad!”

Levi shook his head in frustration as he glanced at these men.

So this is how the Charity Association normally behaves.

And it looks like these directors really gain a lot from their work.

With one glance, Levi easily noticed that quite a few of these men wore luxury watches that was worth millions.

“How dare you!”

An explosive roar erupted in the lobby.

It was Sanford Collins, president of the Charity Association.

The Protector Chapter 498

“You f*cking—it’s you, Mr. Collins?”

Jon immediately paled in fright as he gazed at the group of men in disbelief.

“Mr. Jung? Mr. Yeager? What are you all doing here?”

Jon and the other directors were beyond horrified.

“Hmph! The company would’ve been shut down if I weren’t here!” Sanford said with fury.

“Huh? That can’t be, Mr. Collins. Why would the Charity Association be shut down?”

Jon smiled sheepishly, not realizing that the man standing right in front of him was capable of tearing the entire company down if he wanted to.

“You’re all fired. You’d better prepare for all the investigations you’ll all be going through!” Sanford said coldly.

Boom!

“What!?”

Jon and the other directors felt as though they had just been struck by lightning.

Sanford then turned to the four vice presidents behind him. “When this is all over, we’ll have to resign and go through the investigations too.”

“We understand!” the vice presidents immediately agreed.

This was the best way for them to save themselves.

Jon and his team were even more astounded.

Who on earth is behind Morris Group that our president is voluntarily resigning?

“Alright, let’s go check the records! Stop dilly-dallying,” said Levi.

“Yes, Chief!”

Sanford and his men immediately lead the way.

Iris stared intensely at Levi.

He’s actually acting all tough.

The only reason why he got to put on such a show was because of Mr. Atkinson.

And they’re calling him Chief?

What a pretentious guy you are, Levi!

The truth unveiled itself not long after everyone arrived at the Charity Association.

The one billion donation was indeed from Morris Group. It had nothing to do with Triple Group at all.

“I believe I don’t have to tell you what to do next,” Levi remarked.

“Not at all, Chief! I’ll take care of everything!”

Sanford instantly arranged for an announcement to be made, confirming that it was Morris Group that had donated the money.

Then, he contacted all the publishers and large media outlets to report Morris Group's acts of charity.

He also presented Morris its rightful award and certificate.

"I don't actually need these things, but you'll have to prepare them. They're all part of the legal process."

Levi glared at Sanford, causing the latter to tremble in fear.

"By the way, let the world know that Triple Group never donated a single cent during the charity gala," the man instructed.

Triple Group's thinking of gaining without even doing anything?

Like that'll happen.

"Uhh..."

Sanford hesitated for a moment.

After all, Triple Group was a powerful foreign corporation.

This was certainly a tough matter to deal with.

"Hmm?" Levi hummed coldly.

"I'll take care of it right away!"

Triple Group was nothing compared to this man, after all.

Very quickly, all the large media outlets began to ask the following: When will Triple Group donate to the charity program?

Is it really for charity, or are they doing it just for clout?

Even the Charity Association confirmed what was going on.

Hence, the news quickly spread across North Hampton.

“So Triple Group is nothing but a scam? Didn’t they donate a billion during the charity gala?”

“The guys from Triple Group are nothing but leeches! It was Morris Group’s money and it ended up becoming theirs!”

“How shameless! They even slandered Oriental Star Group that night. What a bunch of dogs.”

...

The tide quickly turned. Triple Group was now in crisis after having its reputation destroyed.

Meanwhile, inside the office of Triple Group in North Hampton.

Horace Waller was smoking on a cigar while looking extremely grim.

“Something’s fishy. I discussed everything with Sanford Collins and bought over a few of his vice presidents and directors. Why is this happening?”

Horace was puzzled.

At this very moment, someone from the Charity Association asked to meet him.

The Protector Chapter 499

“Hello, Mr. Waller. We won’t force you to pay the one-billion donation, but you’ve already made your decision that night at the charity gala, so I think it’s best if you don’t go back on your words. It’d be bad publicity for Triple Group otherwise.”

Horace gritted his teeth and paid up.

He was fuming with anger.

Triple Group never had any intention of paying such an amount. This was simply a loss resulting from not carrying out his tasks well.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Horae hit his desk in fury.

“Damn you, Morris Group!”

At that very moment, he received a phone call.

The person on the line proceeded to chastise him.

With a gloomy face, Horace silently listened to everything that was being said to him.

“Mr. Park Hae-Jin will arrive in North Hampton soon. You’ll be in charge of welcoming him! Leave all of North Hampton’s matters to Mr. Park from now on. All you need to do is assist him.”

Horace’s expression instantly took a turn upon the mention of the name.

Park Hae-Jin was the son of Park Cheon-shin, the regional manager of Triple Group in Erudia.

They were the direct descendants of the family that ruled Keerea's Triple Group, and had control over all affairs in Erudia.

It was this father-and-son duo who caused Scott Yates to lose all his affiliations.

Park Cheon-shin was someone who could go up against Scott Yates.

His son was even more terrifying.

Horace knew what Park Hae-Jin was coming to North Hampton for.

That man was a complete deviant!

At four o'clock in the afternoon.

Horace waited at a highway intersection with a large group.

A row of cars arrived shortly after.

The second vehicle was a LaFerrari worth forty million.

The door opened and out came a young man in a suit. He had blue hair and his ears were pierced.

A corner of his lips curled slightly as he stood in front of Horace.

"Welcome to North Hampton, Mr. Park!" Horace bowed and said with a smile.

Yet, the Keerean man suddenly grabbed Horace by the hair, pulling him forward.

Horace cried out in pain.

Pow!

Hae-Jin punched Horace in the face, blood immediately spurted everywhere.

Pow!

Bam!

...

He continued his vicious assault on Horace.

The poor man now looked like a complete mess.

Wham!

Finally, Hae-Jin kicked Horace in the stomach, sending him flying eight meters backwards.

The latter clutched his stomach and writhed in pain.

This was exactly why Horace was afraid of Park Hae-Jin.

Fortunately, he was the general manager in Erudia, and thus still of value to Triple Group.

Otherwise, Hae-Jin would have already sent him to meet with his maker!

“Trash! You’re all trash!” Hae-Jin raged.

“What’s the point of looking after trash like you? We lost one billion just like that, not to mention Triple’s reputation was tarnished!”

The man was so livid that he brought a few of Horace’s men forward and proceeded to beat them up.

“It’s all my fault, Mr. Park Hae-Jin! I swear I’ll gain back what we’ve lost!” Horace promised while kneeling in front of Hae-Jin.

Then, he continued, “I’ve also prepared a few lovely ladies for you, Mr. Park. They’re all actresses who have recently made it big, such as Trisha Sullivan and Hazel Levine. Please enjoy your time with them!”

This was the only way to protect his own life.

Park Hae-Jin’s temper died down slightly. “Now that’s what I’m talking about!”

Perhaps, not even Trisha Sullivan would have expected something like this to happen to her after betraying Oriental Star Group.

Hae-Jin suddenly remembered something. “I heard that the most popular actress right now is Helena Engler. Her boss is a real beauty too.”

“Uhh... I don’t think I can do anything about that, Mr. Park...”

Horace began to tremble.

Hae-Jin scoffed. “Then forget it. I’ll take care of it myself! Remember this. North Hampton is at the mercy of Triple Group. That’s exactly why I’m here!”

The Protector Chapter 500

Park Hae-Jin was extremely full of himself.

However, Horace didn't question him at all.

Because he knew what Triple Group was capable of.

What Park Cheon-shin and his son were capable of.

In fact, Park Cheon-shin and his son indistinctively held more power than Scott Yates did.

But why did they never confront each other head on?

The main reason was that the losses were too huge, even if they would have won.

It would be akin to killing a thousand of Scott's men but losing eight hundred of their own.

Now that Scott's faction had collapsed, Triple Group stood alone and firm in Quebec.

They could now do whatever they pleased!

Triple Group had no issues taking over South City and ten other areas.

The toughest nut to crack was North Hampton.

Park Cheon-shin had immediately sent his son over after Horace's screw-up.

That night, Trisha Sullivan and the other women who had signed Triple Group's slave contracts were given hell.

The next day, they were carried straight into the hospital.

Horace shuddered at the news.

Park Hae-Jin was an absolute pervert who treated women like playthings.

Many of them died.

Those who didn't either ended up with depression or remained in the hospital...

Maurice was petrified too.

Hae-Jin walked out and bumped into him.

"I heard you made it pretty big, but you're nothing but a street rat now. How are you even going to make me money?" Hae-Jin asked coldly.

"I can act," Maurice answered while trembling. "I can shoot lots of movies!"

Slap, slap.

Hae-Jin patted the man's cheeks. "Do you think anyone's going to watch your movies?"

"I..."

Maurice froze on the spot.

ptooey!

Hae-Jin spat on the ground.

“Lick it up. I’m a guy who spits wherever I like. From now on, your job is to lick up all of my spit,” he said with a laugh.

“No... No...”

Maurice instantly paled.

How could a celebrity like him do such a thing?

“Now!”

Hae-Jin kicked Maurice to the ground.

Maurice had no choice but to lick it clean.

Hae-Jin ended up spitting on the floor all day.

Despair.

Endless despair!

Maurice would have remained a trending celebrity had he stuck with Oriental Star Group.

His future would have been full of riches, glory and splendor.

Sadly, he could only go through such suffering now.

...

At Bayview Garden.

Iris picked Levi up for work in her Porsche.

Zoey smiled helplessly.

Her snobbish best friend was actually driving Levi to work.

It must be because he's that charming.

Zoey smiled.

While driving, she suddenly spotted a Ferrari speeding recklessly on the left lane, disregarding all traffic rules.

All the surrounding vehicles tried to evade it.

Those who didn't make it in time ended up crashing into other cars or the guard rails.

"What!?"

Zoey's eyes widened in disbelief.

The Ferrari suddenly turned to the right lane and began zooming toward her.

Zoey wasn't driving slowly, but it was already too late to switch lanes.

Crash!

The two cars violently collided.

The airbag was instantly deployed, protecting Zoey.

No one was injured.

However, the vehicles were a different story. The Ferrari's head had completely caved in, and Zoey's Audi RS7 was severely damaged too.

Slam!

The owner of the Ferrari got down. He looked extremely menacing with his blue hair and pierced ears.

Behind the Ferrari were several other vehicles. Dozens of men in black began to exit and walk over.

“How the hell do you even drive!?”

Park Hae-Jin's attendant, Park Chang-wook, ferociously gave Zoey's Audi a few kicks.

The Protector Chapter 501

Getting out of her car, Zoey yelled furiously, "I'm not the one to blame here! You guys were the ones who were going in the opposite direction! How is that my fault?"

She was not the slightest bit afraid of them as she was certain that she was in the right.

After all, they had been driving in the opposite direction first. A fact that could be proven easily, since this entire stretch of road had multiple surveillance cameras.

Chang-wook sneered and replied, "Heh! I come from Keerea so I'm not familiar with the traffic laws in your country. All I know is that you've rammed into Mr. Park's car, a Ferrari that costs more than forty million! Look how badly damaged it is! We expect you to take full responsibility for this!"

"You-!" Zoey was so mad that she could have screamed. She had never met such a shameless person in her many years of life!

You come from Keerea so you don't know our traffic laws? What kind of logic is that?

"How could you talk in such a manner to such a beautiful woman?"

A powerful voice rang out before Park Hae-jin appeared.

Chang-wook moved aside quickly, to allow his boss a clear path towards Zoey.

Hae-jin swept a lecherous gaze across the woman's body, desire and possessiveness gleaming in his eyes.

“I have long heard about how North Hampton is a city filled with all kinds of pretty women. Seems like the rumors are true! You’re a gorgeous woman indeed!” Hae-jin praised with a smile.

Zoey raised an eyebrow at him before asking coldly, “Were you the one driving just now?”

“Yeah. What’s wrong?”

“Why didn’t you obey the traffic laws? You’re just lucky that nothing serious had happened this time and that nobody was injured. Would you have been willing to bear responsibility if anything happened?” Her chest was heaving with the fury that was currently coursing through her body.

Hae-jin chuckled and replied arrogantly, “You probably don’t know this, but I’ve been in Erudia for a very long time now. I have never once bothered myself with traffic laws. The only laws I obey are my own! Is it so wrong for me to want to go a little faster when it’s so congested on the roads? My business deals are worth billions, or even tens of billions. Every second that I waste is a major loss of profits. Who will reimburse me for that? Besides, all those pesky rules and regulations are created for poor people. Why should I, a person who drives a car worth more than forty million, obey them?”

Hearing him spout such nonsense made her itch, wanting to slap some sense into him.

“Firstly, it doesn’t matter where you come from. As long as you’re here in Erudia, you’ll have to follow the rules. Secondly, everyone is equal here in this country. It doesn’t matter if you’re royalty or a commoner- The punishments are the same! Violating the law is violating the law. Nobody cares how much your car is worth!” she tried to reason with him while staring him down, straight in the eyes.

Her strong personality surprised Hae-jin as well, as he soon felt his intrigue grow.

Feisty and pretty. How rare!

Scoffing, he responded in a haughty tone, "I don't care! I've always done things my way, following my own rules and no one else's. You've damaged my car so you'll have to pay me back for it! How about this? I'm feeling a little generous today. All you need to do is pay me back forty million, nothing more!"

Zoey was immediately astounded, as she had grown spitting mad at the audacity of the man.

The nerve of this man! This collision happened because of him, yet he dares to ask me for compensation? And forty million as well!

"Are you crazy? I'm going to call the police!"

She took her phone out and was just about to do that when a dozen men in black clothing surrounded her. One of them snatched her phone from her hands before she could stop him.

"Hey! Give me back my phone!" she yelled.

The crowd that had formed at the first sign of a traffic accident stirred slightly, but the presence of the burly men deterred them from actually doing anything to help.

Hae-jin toyed with Zoey's phone, a smirk curling upon his lips. "Pay up if you want your phone back!"

"As if I would actually pay you forty million! Dream on!"

She would rather die than pay him any money!

Her response had his smirk widening, as he started to take on a perverted edge. He took two steps forward so he was closer to her. "You don't want to pay me? Fine! Sleep with me for a week and you won't need to give me anything else. That's seven million a night. Quite profitable, wouldn't you agree? I'm pretty sure

that there's nothing else you can do that will earn you that much in a single night."

"Hehehe..." The rest of his men sniggered and leered at her.

The Protector Chapter 502

Hae-jin was already being pretty polite and respectful by giving Zoey a choice. Previously, he would not have wasted so much time and effort on any woman that had caught his interest. He would have simply dragged the woman away without a care for her protests.

Of course, this was most likely because she truly was a beautiful woman.

“You’ll have to compensate me one way or the other. The choice is yours to make! You have one minute.”

Zoey was starting to panic at her current predicament. She was alone and she could not even use her phone to call for help. The serious expressions on the aggressive-looking men’s faces told her that they were not playing around.

“What’s going on here?”

Just then, a familiar and welcomed voice rang out.

Levi!

She spun around and threw herself into his arms, crying out, “Darling, they’re bullying me!”

Tears pricked at the corner of her eyes as frustration and helplessness threatened to overwhelm her.

She had seen her fair share of unreasonable people, yet, this was the first time she had ever met someone so outrageous.

Thankfully, Levi had arranged for some people to keep an eye on his wife, from afar.

Those men had instantly informed him when they had received the first signs of trouble, whereupon he instantly told Iris to turn around and head back.

Iris was notorious for her short temper, which had come into play now. “You were driving in the wrong direction! Why should we have to pay you back? Shouldn’t it be the other way around!”

“That’s right! That man really was driving against the flow of traffic! I saw it with my own eyes!”

“That Ferrari driver is the one who’s at fault here! He did not obey the traffic laws!”

...

Finally getting an opportunity to speak, the crowd began to point their fingers at Hae-jin as they spoke up against the injustice happening.

“You felt that the road was too narrow to show off your shitty car, so you had to drive over into the opposite lane, is that it?” Levi sniped in a cold tone.

“I don’t care! I’m from Keerea; the traffic laws in your country don’t apply to me! Besides, I’ll do what I want! She collided with my car so she’ll either have to cough up forty million or she can choose to spend a week with me!” Hae-jin insisted cockily.

He had always done as he had pleased in South City and nobody had dared to do anything to stop him. As long as nothing incredibly serious happened, everyone would typically turn a blind eye to what he had done.

Here in North Hampton, he thought that he could do the same.

“What? So what if he’s a foreigner? That doesn’t give him the right to be so impudent! It’s not like that makes him smarter than us either!”

“You’re in Erudia now, not your own country. Either obey our laws or get the hell out of this country!”

“Yeah, exactly! Having money and status doesn’t give you the right to act so willfully!”

...

The crowd buzzed like a hive of angry bees at Hae-jin’s arrogance.

“Shut up, you commoners! You have no right to speak here! Do you have any idea who I am? My father is the regional manager of Triple Group in Erudia! Why else do you think that nobody has come to settle this matter yet? That’s because nobody dares to do so!” Hae-jin stated smugly.

It was only then that everybody realized that there was some truth to his words.

Indeed, it had been a while since the accident had happened, yet no one had appeared to handle the matter. The only explanation for that was that nobody wanted to offend him!

Even Levi had not foreseen that he would run into the son of the regional manager of Triple Group.

Grinning triumphantly, Hae-jin continued, “Now, which option will you choose? Pay me back the money or spend the week with me? Make your decision now or don’t even think about leaving!”

His men swiftly surrounded Levi and the others, their posture threatening.

Fear coursed through Iris and Zoey as they wondered how they would be getting out of this situation.

Levi did not appear to be afraid as he chuckled and answered, “We won’t leave. At least not without settling this issue first!”

Digging out his phone, he dialed a number. “Xavier, come here this instance, to handle this problem! I don’t care who he is or what connections he has! Either you deal with this, or I will!”

On the other side of the phone, the captain of the Patrol Squad paled dramatically.

A short while later, the loud wailing of sirens gradually grew louder.

A row of patrol cars came speeding towards Levi and the others, before screeching to a halt nearby. Xavier exited the lead vehicle, followed by the chief and deputy chief of the traffic police.

The Protector Chapter 503

At this point, they had already checked the surveillance tapes and had a rough idea of what had happened.

Now, all they needed was to interrogate the crowd for their accounts of the event.

The arrival of Xavier seemed to dampen the spirits of Hae-jin and his men. Despite that, they still had an arrogant air around them and were not particularly respectful towards the policemen who had questioned them.

According to Hae-jin, Triple Group was an incredibly important company that would greatly aid the development of North Hampton in the future. Since he would be the successor someday, that meant that he was not someone whom they could touch.

In no time at all, Xavier had reached his verdict.

“After a thorough investigation, I hereby pronounce Park Hae-jin guilty of wrong-way driving! He is to bear full responsibility for the reparation costs of the accident, both for himself and for Ms. Zoey Lopez. At the same time, his driver’s license shall be revoked and he is not allowed to sit for the driver’s license test in Erudia, for the next five years. In addition to that, he is to be detained for the next fifteen days.”

After he was done with that announcement, he quickly snuck a glance at Levi.

Zoey nodded, “Captain Fields, there’s no need for Mr. Park to reimburse me. I’m already insured so I just need to talk to my insurance company. Thank you for serving me justice!”

The crowd cheered and applauded as well, evidently happy with his decision.

Xavier could feel his blood pounding in his ears as he flushed in pleasure.

Who knew that serving the people would feel so good? What a sense of accomplishment!

“What!” Hae-jin was stunned at what he was hearing.

Previously, he had done something even worse than this at South City, and yet, he had not even gotten a single demerit point.

Now, his driver’s license was being revoked and he had to be detained?

Infuriated, he yelled, “Do you know who I am? Retract your punishment immediately or you’ll be sorry!”

Xavier glared at him coldly and ordered his men, “Take him away! Arrest whoever dares to interfere too!”

With that, Hae-jin was dragged away by the policemen.

Chang-wook and the others wanted to stop his arrest, but unfortunately, they were too helpless to do anything. All they could do was stare, as their boss was shoved inside one of the police cars.

Before he entered, Hae-jin snarled at Levi, “Rest assured that I’ll be out soon enough. Just you wait!”

Completely ignoring the threat, Levi instructed the captain, “Set the bail money for... at least five million. Use that money on the development of North Hampton.”

“Okay, understood!” Xavier nodded. Respect and admiration shone in his eyes as he looked at Levi.

Even now, all he can think about is the future of North Hampton!

“Honey, I’ll drop you off at work first before getting you another car.”

Zoey and Iris were shooting Levi curious glances.

All it took was one phone call from him, and this entire matter was settled.

The two women exchanged glances, seeming to understand what the other was thinking.

The boss of Morris Group must have been the one to resolve this issue. There’s no way that it was Levi!

Meanwhile, inside the office of Triple Group in North Hampton.

“What! Mr. Hae-jin was arrested?” Horace’s tone was disbelieving, matching the shocked expression on his face.

He demanded, “Who has actually dared to do that? Don’t they know who he is?”

“It was Xavier Fields himself!”

Horace’s face fell before he uttered, “He personally arrested Mr. Hae-jin? Come with me, quickly! We have to bail Mr. Hae-jin out!”

It did not take him long to arrive at the police station.

Upon hearing that the bail was set at five million, he was taken aback.

“Mr. Waller, you have to understand that wrong-way driving is quite a serious crime.”

Horace did not hesitate in paying the bail. Regardless of whether it was ten million, or even one hundred million, it was not like he had any other choice but to pay.

Thus, Hae-jin was released from jail.

Gritting his teeth, he bit out, "I want you to conduct a background check on a few people for me. I won't let them go for doing this to me!"

"No worries, Sir. I'll see to it immediately!" Horace assured.

"Give me the car keys!" Hae-jin demanded with his hand held out.

"Ah, I can't do that, Sir! Your driver's license is still revoked, so you're not allowed to drive in Erudia for the next five years!"

Disregarding the other man's protests, Hae-jin snatched the keys from him. His lips pulled up into a sneer and he boasted, "So what if I'm driving without a license? As if anybody would have the guts to do anything about it!"

The Protector Chapter 504

“It was just a stroke of bad luck that I was arrested this time. But who in the entire city of North Hampton would dare touch me a second time?”

Hae-jin was visibly enraged.

He had been in Erudia for many years, yet never once had he suffered such humiliation before.

With a loud roar, the car sped off into the distance.

Horace sighed in exasperation and annoyance, not knowing whether it was a good thing or not that he had allowed Hae-jin to drive off.

Just then, Park Cheon-shin called him. The moment he accepted the call, the furious voice of his boss blared out, through the speakers, “How useless can you be, you piece of trash? Why can’t you do anything right? Do you have no power in North Hampton?”

“N-no, that’s not it. Boss, I-”

Cheon-sin interrupted him, “I don’t want to hear any more excuses! This is the second mistake you’ve made. You know the consequences of a third!”

A cold sweat broke out across Horace’s body. He was well aware that Park Cheon-sin was not a man to be trifled with.

For all of that, Scott Yates was truly a terrifying man; he was still someone who had valued loyalty and righteousness.

Unfortunately, Park Cheon-shin was Keerean. He was ruthless, cruel, and he did not abide by any rules other than his own.

Anyone who had a brain would know why they had to be scared of him!

Horace hastily dialed a number. "Gather all the men that we have in North Hampton and protect Park Hae-jin at all costs! Nothing must happen to him!"

In an instant, all of the men that he had scattered across the city began to mobilize.

If anything happened to Hae-jin, thousands of men would be able to rush to his aid in less than ten minutes.

Back at Oriental Star Group, Zoey was saying, "Darling, leave the matter of my car to the insurance company, okay? They'll know what to do to reimburse me. Don't involve yourself in this anymore."

Levi shook his head, insisting, "No way! Whoever ruined your car has to pay!"

"Huh? There's no need for that, is there? He's already been punished!" she mumbled with a small frown.

She was mainly worried that Levi would create more trouble than it was worth.

Grinning, he reassured her, "I never said that I would let him off the hook so easily! Relax. A new car will be waiting for you before you finish work for the day. Just you wait and see!"

Besides, that minor punishment was administered by Xavier, not him. He still needed to get his revenge on Hae-jin for what he had tried to do.

After he returned to Morris Group, he sent Phoenix off to locate Hae-jin.

“Sir, Park Hae-jin is at Ocean Villa!”

“Okay, I’ve got it.”

He headed downstairs and went looking for Seth.

“Seth, I need you to take me somewhere.”

“No problem, Mr. Garrison!”

Being an observant man, Seth could instantly tell that Levi was going out to handle a ‘problem.’ He smiled as he queried, “Shall I bring more men, Sir?”

“There’s no need for that. The two of us should be enough.”

At Ocean Villa.

Hae-jin was currently in the gym, venting out his frustration.

He was standing in an arena, dressed in only a singlet that had boasted his muscular figure.

Six men surrounded him in a loose circle, each bloodier than the last.

“C’mon then! Come at me, you useless trash!” he bellowed before bursting into motion.

He was a master at Taekwondo and he was one of the strongest fighters in the world.

The six men were soon sprawled on the floor, moaning in pain.

Yet, that was simply not enough to appease Hae-jin. In a few swift moves, he proceeded to break all of their limbs with several horrible cracking sounds.

“Ahhhh!”

The agonized cries of the crippled men reverberated in the gym, causing Hae-jin’s men to shiver.

Hae-jin was incredibly cruel and aggressive, a true psychopath. Anyone that had sparred with him had always ended up with some grievous injuries.

“Sir, I’ve found out the information that you’d wanted!” Chang-wook yelled as he dashed into the gym.

Wiping away the blood on his hands, Hae-jin snapped, “And?”

“The woman involved in the accident with you is the chairwoman of Oriental Star Group, Zoey Lopez. The man who’d helped her is her husband, Levi Garrison, while the other woman is the vice-president of Morris Group, Iris Anabelle,” his assistant reported.

Hae-jin’s eyes brightened at the information and he exclaimed gleefully, “Hahaha, what a coincidence! Those are exactly the people that I’m here to deal with!”

“What shall we do now, Sir?” Chang-wook questioned.

The Protector Chapter 505

“There’s no way I’ll let them go free now.” A wicked smirk played upon Hae-jin’s lips.

Bang!

The doors to the gym were kicked wide open, banging loudly as the two halves slammed into the wall.

“Where is Park Hae-jin?” A deep voice boomed out.

Everyone in the gym whipped their heads around in the direction of the noise, only to see Levi and Seth striding inside.

“Sir, isn’t that Levi Garrison?” Chang-wook pointed out.

Upon realizing that it was indeed Levi, Hae-jin smiled cruelly. “Shut the doors! Don’t let them escape!”

His men did as they were ordered before moving so that they had Levi and Seth completely trapped.

“You have some serious guts to deliver yourselves to my doorstep! Even better, now, I don’t have to go looking for you!” he thundered.

Levi lit a cigarette calmly as if he were not currently surrounded by more than a dozen enemies.

“Listen up, punk! The only way for me to let you off the hook is if you hand over your wife to me for some fun. Hahaha!” Hae-jin guffawed loudly, his men joining in soon after.

Through it all, Levi remained silent, as he merely stared at the chortling men.

The menacing look in his eyes caused fear to course through Hae-jin.

“W-what are you doing here?” Hae-jin found himself asking.

Levi’s voice was placid but there was an undercurrent of steel to it. “You’d rammed into my wife’s car and ruined it, so now, you have to pay up!”

Once again, Hae-jin and his men roared with laughter.

The expressions on their faces clearly showed that they had thought that Levi was a fool.

To dare ask Park Hae-jin for compensation, he really must be an idiot!

“You want me to pay up?” Hae-jin asked for confirmation.

“That’s right! Her car costs at least two million, you know. Now, pay up!”

“Let me tell you a cold, hard fact: I have never reimbursed anyone for anything before! I never have and never will. You’ve said that you want my money? Only in your dreams!”

Taking a puff of his cigarette, Levi stated indifferently, “What if I insist on receiving compensation from you?”

Raucous laughter greeted his words.

Hae-jin had even thrown his head back, his stomach aching with the force of his chortling.

Being so bold while the police captain was around one matter.

It was another matter entirely to demand compensation from him while on his turf.

This guy must have a death wish!

“Hahaha... Oh, my aching sides...Urgh!”

Hae-jin’s mocking laughter was abruptly cut off when Levi suddenly stabbed his still burning cigarette into the other man’s open mouth.

“Argh!” Hae-jin screamed in agony.

His men were dumbfounded at what had just happened.

Levi had moved so fast that even Hae-jin had been unable to react in time.

A deathly silence descended upon them.

Nobody had expected Levi to attack so suddenly.

Even Seth was amazed at the speed of his movement.

“Is it really that funny?” Levi asked with a frown.

Face scrunched up and red with pain, Hae-jin roared, “Beat them up! I don’t want to see them standing after this or else!”

Acknowledging his orders, his men prepared to rush forward, at Levi.

“Are all you f***ers bored of living already? C’mon then, make a move! I dare you!”

Whipping out two batons, Seth stared the men down without a hint of fear on his face.

He was a retired military scout who had seen more than his fair share of wars. Facing down these normal men was nothing compared to what he had faced on the battlefields.

This was the reason that Levi had hired him on, as the head of security.

“Do you regret coming with me, Seth?” Levi wondered aloud.

“Hah, as if! Since you treat me as a brother, I’m more than happy to do the same!” came Seth’s proud reply.

Smiling, Levi answered, “That’s good to know.”

Enraged, Hae-jin snarled at his men, “What the hell are you guys still standing around for? Get them!”

The Protector Chapter 506

“Charge!” Hae-jin’s men gave out a battle cry as they rushed at Levi and Seth.

Thud! Thud!

...

Armed with his batons, Seth showed that just because he was retired did not mean that he had lost his combat abilities. Nobody could get close to him at all as they were swatted down like flies.

Levi’s side of things was even scarier.

Thud!

One punch from him would send his opponent flying back more than ten meters.

...

“Ugh...”

A short while later, all of Hae-jin’s men were collapsed on the ground, groaning and whimpering in pain.

Hae-jin and Chang-wook were utterly dumbstruck, as they stared at the other two men with wide-eyed disbelief.

How can they be so powerful?

Despite being a Taekwondo master, Hae-jin could tell he was no match for Seth, let alone Levi.

Wham!

With a harsh smack from Seth's baton, Chang-wook was soon sent sprawling to the ground.

Before Hae-jin could retaliate, the ex-military scout kicked him and he was swift, to crumple to the floor.

At long last, he was dragged forward and tossed at Levi's feet.

"Well then. Are you going to pay up now?" Levi patted the defeated man's cheek gently.

Hae-jin may have been domineering and arrogant, but he was no fool. He knew that it was better to back down now to lick his wounds. Revenge could come later.

With that thought in mind, he nodded. "Yes, I will as you want."

"Great! Let's go and select a brand new car, shall we?"

And that was how Levi came to choose a McLaren 720s for Zoey, a car that had cost more than four million.

Humiliation!

Complete and utter humiliation!

Hae-jin's face was flushed with shame as he seethed in impotent anger.

Not only had he been beaten up, rather, he was also being forced to pay compensation as well!

Before he left, Levi gave him one last parting warning, “Your driver’s license has been revoked, so don’t ever let me see you driving on the road again. Otherwise, I won’t have mercy on you, the next time around!”

“You-” Hae-jin was sorely tempted to retort that it was none of his business if he drove without a license. However, he knew that all that would bring him was another round of beating.

Gritting his teeth, he replied, “I-I... understand...”

When Zoey got off work and spotted the brand new McLaren waiting for her, she was stunned.

“T-this... W-where did you get this from?”

“It’s compensation!” was Levi’s cheerful reply.

“Huh? Compensation? Why would he buy me a car as compensation?”

“I convinced him with virtue and managed to make him see sense. Of course, he would make it up to you somehow.”

She shot him a suspicious look, certain that things were not as simple as he had made it out to be.

After Levi and Seth left, Hae-jin practically exploded with rage.

“Useless pieces of trash! I wasted millions on you and you can’t even defeat a single security guard!”

He did not hold back as he lashed out at his men, each blow breaking their skins and causing their blood to splatter to the ground.

His bodyguards bore their punishment silently, feeling as though they deserved it since they had lost to a security guard, even with their advantage in numbers.

Right then, Horace finally arrived at the scene.

Sweat dotted his forehead and dripped down his face.

Cheon-shin's warning about making the third mistake echoed in his ears. How could he have known something would happen to Hae-jin yet again, even after all the efforts he had put in?

With a thump, he fell to his knees before Hae-jin.

"Sir, this is all my fault! I did not handle this matter properly. Please punish me!"

Wham!

Hae-jin's foot darted out in a hard kick, sending Horace flying back several meters.

"All of you are worthless!" the infuriated man bellowed.

Crawling back to Hae-jin, Horace pleaded, "Sir, please give me another chance! I promise that I'll deal with this matter properly this time!"

"Where were you when I was getting beaten up? I thought you'd said that you had everything in control, here in North Hampton?" Hae-jin demanded.

Crack!

"Ahhhh!"

Horace rolled on the ground in agony as the other man snapped his arm in two.

“S-sir, w-what would you have me do? I-I’ll do anything that you tell me to!” he wheezed through his pain.

The Protector Chapter 507

Hae-jin took out his phone and dialed his father's number. "Dad, I was beaten up by someone. I hope that you can send Lee Da-jong and Lee Da-yong over to aid me. Please!"

"Okay, no problem."

A crazy smile spread across his face at his father's easy agreement. "With the two of them by my side, I won't have to be afraid of anyone in North Hampton!"

Lee Da-jong and Lee Da-yong were two of his father's personal bodyguards. Together, they were on par with Typhoon, in terms of combat ability.

The two men, brothers, were two of Keerea's best Taekwondo masters. In fact, they were the disciples of Lee Jae-shik, the chief coach of Keerea's soldiers.

In Keerea, Lee Jae-shik was like a god to the people.

Having perfected his form over the years, his Taekwondo skills were second to none, in the entire world.

Not only that, but he had also trained Keerea's Special Operations Regiment. All of the men that underwent his training were powerful individuals in their own right.

It was rumored that two of his beloved disciples had inherited fifty percent of his skills. They, too, used to be part of the Special Operations Regiment and had killed hundreds of enemies on the battlefield by themselves.

For the past few years, they had been by Park Cheon-shin's side as he carved a territory for himself in Erudia.

The recent events had pushed Hae-jin over the edge and he had had no choice but to ask for their help.

With a cold laugh, Hae-jin exclaimed, "Someone had once told me that I would be unable to act out without a driver's license. Well, I'm not entirely convinced about that!"

Knowing that Hae-jin was beyond reason now, all Horace could do was select two hundred of his best men to protect the other man.

That night, Azure Dragon brought news to Levi.

"Sir, South City is saying that they can't do anything about Triple Group stealing those hundreds of billions from Scott Yates. Not unless they outrightly confront them about it. They are rather reluctant to do that, as Triple Group and South City are working together on a lot of projects."

Levi snorted and replied, "Seeing as they're so hesitant about this, I'll handle this matter myself! I've already said that nobody is allowed to touch that money!"

If Triple Group had only been satisfied with confining themselves to South City, he would not have minded them. Yet, now they were getting greedy and extending their reach into North Hampton.

Levi was having none of that. This was just giving him more reason, to want to deal with them.

Meanwhile, Hae-jin was as excited as a child on Christmas morning.

The reason for his high spirits? Lee Da-yong and Lee Da-jong had arrived.

The two men stood there like tigers, waiting to pounce, muscles coiled and ready to strike. The menacing aura they had exuded sent shivers racing down Horace's spine. Suddenly, he felt his body turn cold, all over.

“Who in North Hampton would dare to touch me now?” Hae-jin stated arrogantly with a mad cackle.

The next day, Hae-jin was still doing as he had pleased, racing down the roads in a luxury sports car.

Following closely behind him was a black sedan with the two brothers inside.

All around them were two hundred of Horace’s men, everybody dutifully following Hae-jin as he weaved and darted through the traffic.

He was completely ignoring any and all traffic laws.

Wrong-way driving was only a minor crime amongst the list of other rules that he was currently breaking.

When he saw a zebra crossing, he would accelerate, watching gleefully as the pedestrians threw themselves to the side, to avoid him.

One of the main roads of the city was even suffering from heavy congestion, due to his rampant driving. He had caused quite a few cases of traffic accidents at several intersections.

The strange happenings at that main road soon caught the attention of the staff at the Traffic Bureau.

Using the surveillance cameras, they were able to quickly locate the source of all the trouble- Hae-jin’s sports car.

“I thought that his license was revoked and I believe that he’s not allowed to sit for another test within the next five years? Why is he still driving on the roads?”

Shocked and puzzled, they quickly reported this incident to their superiors.

Hae-jin was feeling particularly satisfied, upon looking at what he had caused, at that main road.

“Yeah, I’m driving without a license! So what? Come and arrest me if you can!” he shouted at one of the surveillance cameras before pointing his middle finger towards it, in an obscene gesture.

The camera perfectly captured the smug and haughty expression on his face.

“Levi Garrison, I’m driving without a license! What are you going to do about it?”

The Protector Chapter 508

The record of the list of laws that Hae-jin had flouted had swiftly found its way over to Xavier's desk.

He did not immediately resolve the issue, instead, he decided to inform Levi about it.

"Sir, what do you think we should do?"

Xavier was trembling slightly from where he was standing in front of Levi. He could clearly sense that the other man was furious.

Hae-jin's actions were not only a snub at the God of War himself, but rather, it was also directed to the laws of Erudia!

"I'll see to this matter personally!" Levi bit out harshly.

"Understood!"

In truth, Xavier was also incredibly pissed off at what Hae-jin had done. However, he was in a difficult bind, and so, he could only turn a blind eye to the situation. He knew that quite a few people were in the same boat as him. Thus, he was quite relieved that the God of War was going to handle this matter himself.

Finally, someone is going to teach that arrogant brat a lesson!

Levi stated, "I'll head over there now."

He was honestly surprised that such an egoistic person even existed in this day and age.

“Seth, I need you to drop me off somewhere.”

Once again, he headed to his destination with Seth as his only backup.

At that moment, Hae-jin had moved on to one of the coastal roads. He was driving in the opposite direction again, going against the flow of traffic.

The Traffic Bureau’s hotline was ringing incessantly as reports of his wrongdoings poured in endlessly.

Horace, who was observing everything from a distance, was extremely worried at the actions of the younger man.

He’s pissing off way too many people in one go! How stupid can he be? Provoking the government of North Hampton by driving without a license is a phenomenally dumb idea! At this rate, he’s going to doom Triple Group!

However, Horace knew that this was all part of Cheon-shin’s plan.

Cheon-shin was allowing his son to do this, even encouraging him!

The reason for that was simple- to exert pressure on North Hampton.

He wanted Jesse Nielsen, the governor of North Hampton, to understand Triple Group’s intentions. They were going to break into the North Hampton market, one way or the other.

Hae-jin abruptly stopped his car.

“Aw, c’mon! I’ve been doing this for so long yet not a single person dares to confront me about it? How boring!”

Vroom!

In the next second, an Audi screeched to a halt before him, as two men soon exited the car.

Hae-jin's face darkened, the moment he had laid eyes on them. Soon enough, his blood began to boil in his veins.

It was his most hated enemy, the man who had humiliated him time and time again- Levi!

Upon getting out of the car, the first thing Levi did was lunge towards Hae-jin.

He grabbed Hae-jin by the collar before the other man could react.

“Didn’t I remind you not to drive without a license?” Levi growled in a chilly tone. There was a dangerous gleam in his eyes.

“I-I-I...” Fear had Hae-jin stuttering and he could not even finish his sentence.

Bang!

A sedan charged towards them and stopped before two men stepped out of the car.

It was Da-yong and Da-jong.

The atmosphere changed at their appearance, becoming tense as the temperature seemed to drop, by several degrees.

Unease curled in Seth as he watched them warily.

What a terrifying aura!

The two men locked their gazes on him and Seth's Adam's apple bobbed as he swallowed. It was like having a deadly viper targeting you.

Horace's men arrived soon after, swiftly encircling Levi and Seth and blocking them from escaping.

Seth could feel himself tensing at how dangerous the situation was turning out to be.

Despite that, he was still not unafraid!

Levi paid no mind to the men around him, his attention focused on Hae-jin alone. "Well? Haven't I warned you before?"

"Such insolence! Let go of Mr. Park!" Da-jong's low voice warned.

Dismissing the man's warning, Levi patted Hae-jin's cheek condescendingly. "Still not willing to answer me? That's just asking for a slap from me, you know."

Da-jong thundered, "You dare?"

Scoffing, Levi raised his hand and gave Hae-jin a hard smack across the cheek.

Slap!

"Hmm? What are you going to do about it?" he mocked with a grin.

Da-jong's face purpled with rage at how the other man had blatantly ignored his warning and hit Hae-jin.

The Protector Chapter 509

“You b*****d, what did you do!” Da-yong cried out in shocked anger.

Levi smiled and uttered in an innocent tone, “Oh, you didn’t see? Okay, let me show you one more time!”

Smack!

Another ringing slap landed on Hae-jin’s face.

Within seconds, his face swelled up badly, as Levi had not held back his strength when hitting him.

There was a loud intake of breath from everyone present before their jaws dropped open in astonishment.

The Lee brothers were utterly stupefied.

Someone had actually dared to hit Hae-jin right in front of them, in a deliberate act of provocation.

How humiliating!

How were they going to explain this to their boss, Cheon-shin?

No, they simply could not endure this anymore!

They could not stand by and keep still, as the situation had escalated!

Hae-jin was beyond furious as he shrieked, “Kill him! Kill them both!”

Da-jong sprang into action, pouncing forward in Levi's direction.

In the blink of an eye, he had crossed the ten meters separating both him and Levi. He raised his leg up high, sweeping at the latter's head.

Whoosh!

The speed and force behind his kick caused it to whistle through the air.

A wave of hot air slammed into Seth and his face felt like it was burning.

What was even more terrifying was the killing intent, that was emanating from Da-jong. It was the kind of aura that could only be honed out on the raging battlefields, amongst a sea of corpses.

He's strong. Incredibly strong!

The wave of pressurized air left behind in the wake of Da-jong's kick was enough to force Seth back several steps, a fact that had worry for Levi springing up in him.

Levi will definitely die if this kick lands on his head!

However, it was too late for him to do anything about it now.

Right before Da-jong's foot was about to connect with Levi's head, the latter moved.

Da-jong's eyes widened when his instincts screamed at him that danger was coming.

Levi's leg snapped out, his speed a lot faster than Da-jong.

Wham!

Like a sledgehammer, his kick landed on Da-jong's abdomen and sent the man soaring back.

Thud!

Da-jong crashed to the ground hard, his face pale and twisted with agony.

Nobody but him would know that Levi's single kick had injured his internal organs badly.

Everyone was speechless upon witnessing what had just happened.

If even a skilled fighter like Da-jong was no match for Levi, then just how powerful could he be?

"Die!" Da-yong roared before disappearing from view.

He appeared behind Levi and there was a silvery glint, as something slid into his hand from his sleeve.

Schnick!

Brandishing the dagger in his hand, he stabbed it towards Levi's neck.

He had done all of this in one fluid movement, not a single motion wasting any more energy than necessary. It was perfection, honed from hundreds of battles and kills!

As expected of the famous Lee Jae-shik's disciples, one was a master at the art of Taekwondo, while the other had trained his body into the perfect weapon.

His move was simple and direct, yet incredibly fast, deadly and accurate.

Seth and Hae-jin, the two men standing closest to him other than Levi, could feel a coldness seeping into them. The hairs all over their bodies stood on end and they froze, unable to even twitch a muscle. It was almost as though they had been plunged into icy waters.

At that moment, it was like death itself was breathing down their necks.

Seth squeezed his eyes shut, unable to bring himself to see what would happen next.

Mr. Garrison has met his match this time. If he can't dodge this attack, there's no way he'll survive!

Excitement overwhelmed the fear that Hae-jin was feeling.

This time, Levi Garrison is a dead man for sure!

The dagger neared Levi's neck. The closer it got, the more exhilarated Da-yong felt.

Once it slides into his neck, he's dead!

The Protector Chapter 510

Within the next second, the smile on Da-yong's face vanished.

Something black flashed in his vision and his dagger seemed to have stabbed into stone, unable to move forward at all.

When he realized what he was seeing, shock and horror crossed his face.

Levi had actually pinched the blade between two fingers, halting it in its tracks.

The force exerted on the weapon from those two fingers was tremendous.

Since when did North Hampton have such a terrifying man?

Crack!

Da-yong's eyes nearly popped out of his head.

The blade was broken.

The blade was broken with two fingers.

What kind of a crazy psycho is he?

This dagger was part of the equipment given to him when he had been in the Special Operations Regiment. It was made from a special material that was said to be nearly indestructible. Even a bullet would not have dented the metal.

Now, someone had actually broken it with two fingers!

Thud!

Before he could regain his senses, Levi lashed out with a vicious kick that sent him flying backward.

“Ahhh!” he howled in agony as he crashed to the floor.

More than a dozen of his bones were broken from that one kick.

Hae-jin was filled with utter shock, as he was suddenly feeling incredibly faint.

Who is Levi Garrison, truly? Even the Lee brothers aren't his equals!

The remaining two hundred men were shaking in their shoes, absolutely terrified. No one dared to even take a step forward.

After all, they were not suicidal.

Levi locked his gaze on Hae-jin's figure, repeating his earlier question, “Did I warn you about driving without a license?”

“Y-yes... You d-did...” Hae-jin nodded vigorously, his previous arrogance nowhere to be seen.

“Then why hadn't you listened to me?”

“I-I...” was the stammered response. Hae-jin did not know what to say.

“Since you can't seem to control yourself, I'll help you!”

Wham! Crack!

Levi kicked at one of Hae-jin's legs, breaking it immediately.

“Ahhhh!”

Crack! Crack! Crack!

Three more strikes from Levi and the rest of Hae-jin’s limbs were summarily broken as well.

The crippled man crumpled to the floor, rolling around as he screamed in pain.

A smug smirk tugged at the edges of Levi’s lips. “Okay! Now you won’t be able to leave your house and drive around without a license! Every time I see you behind the wheel, I’ll snap your limbs all over again!”

“You monster! You devil!”

This was the first time that Hae-jin had come to meet someone even crazier than he!

Despite being on the same side as Levi, Seth was rather fearful as well.

What a vicious man!

When Levi moved, two hundred pairs of eyes were fixed on him, with terror shining in them. They parted like the Red Sea before Moses, allowing him to walk away unhindered.

By the time Horace arrived and saw the scene before him, he knew that he was doomed.

Hae-jin had been beaten up and had become crippled on his territory, so this would be his responsibility.

“What the hell were you guys doing! You f***ing useless pieces of trash!”

Slap! Slap!

The enraged man began to slap his underlings.

“Sir, it’s not our fault! That guy was simply too powerful! Look, even Lee Da-yong and Lee Da-jong were no match for him!” they cried out pitifully.

“Then what are you still waiting around for? Send them to the hospital!”

Just then, Hae-jin spoke up in a weak voice, refusing, “No! Take us back to South City!”

Horace could do little else but obey.

He called Cheon-shin and reported to him about everything that had happened.

“Mr. Park, please punish me! I would be willing to die for my crimes!”

Horace was already steeling himself for his inevitable death.

The hard tone of Cheon-shin answered, “I understand that what had happened this time had nothing to do with you. This matter is not something that you’ll be able to resolve. I’m personally coming to North Hampton!”

Horace’s heart skipped a beat at his boss’ words.

Things were about to get serious.

The Protector Chapter 511

Park Cheon-shin was coming down to North Hampton.

At Noblesse Villa in South City.

This was the residence of Park Cheon-shin.

Presently, he was watching, as several men carefully unloaded his injured son from a car.

He was absolutely incensed!

His precious son was crippled and two of his best bodyguards were barely clinging on to life.

This was a huge slap in the face for Triple Group!

Not even Scott Yates had dared to do this!

In fact, the leaders of South City would not have dared to do so either!

Yet a puny little city had had the audacity to go up against the might of Triple Group?

How outrageous!

However, upon looking at the condition that the Lee brothers were in now, he knew that the opposition was no weakling. It was likely they had more power than Scott Yates.

The only way to resolve this matter was if his own men were even more powerful.

“Dad, you have to avenge me! North Hampton has some psychopath protecting it!” Hae-jin shouted.

Cheon-shin pondered his next course of action carefully before calling the Keerea headquarters of Triple Group. He quickly explained the situation, ending with, “Please send Master Lee Jae-shik to Erudia to oversee this matter!”

Since he was in charge of making sure that Triple Group had dominated the extremely profitable Quebec market, he would do whatever it took to accomplish his mission. Certain sacrifices would have to be made if he had wanted to have the chief coach of Keerea’s help; sacrifices that he was more than happy to make, as he did not want to give up just yet.

“Yes, okay. As long as Mr. Lee agrees, he can come immediately. I’ll arrange for everything.”

On a small island somewhere in Keerea.

An elderly man with snowy hair was fishing.

Sitting incredibly still, he exuded a calm aura, almost unnaturally so.

As if he had some sort of power, the waters beneath his fishing rod were teeming with fish. The swarm only seemed to grow larger, as time passed, and more and more gathered around.

It was a strange and unexplainable phenomenon.

Right then, hurried footsteps sounded from behind him.

“Master, something bad has happened! Mistery Lee Da-yong and Lee Da-jong were beaten up by someone in Erudia! They’re badly injured and whether they’ll survive is unknown!”

A man reported in a panicked tone before he kneeled on the ground in front of the old man.

Boom!

The old man suddenly yanked on his fishing rod and a loud rumbling sound could be heard. The waters began to spin rapidly, forming into a huge vortex.

Several seconds later, massive waves reaching tens of meters high rose up.

Thousands of fish flopped on the beach, tossed out by the churning waves.

Everybody present was stunned at the majestic sight, wondering if the old man had some sort of superpower.

“Mr. Park Cheon-shin is hoping that you will head to Erudia to aid him. Firstly, to assist in Triple Group’s expansion into the country, and secondly, to get revenge for Mistery Lee Da-jong and Lee Da-yong!” the man kneeling on the floor continued pleadingly.

Behind him, more than a hundred men got down on their knees as well, shouting, “Triple Group wishes to call upon Master Lee Jae-shik to assist it in dealing with some matters! Please come out of retirement, Master!”

Their voices merged into a cacophonous roar, echoing up into the skies.

It had been many years since Jae-shik had retired from the Keerea military and he had originally planned on never involving himself with the outside world again.

However... A gleam entered his eyes and he spoke up, "Fine. I would like to see the hometown of the God of War anyway!"

As he said this, a tiny bit of fear curled up inside him.

He was well aware of how terrifying the God of War of Erudia was!

There was a loud roar of approval from the men, as they took his words as agreement.

After ten years of hiding himself from the world, Keerea's number one Taekwondo master was finally coming out of retirement. He was heading for Erudia to aid Triple Group in taking over Quebec.

Cheon-shin was ecstatic when he heard the news and came close to dancing in glee.

With someone as powerful as Jae-shik on their side, taking over Quebec would be child's play.

After that, they would move on to the surrounding cities.

The Protector Chapter 512

Levi had just gotten off from work when an unexpected visitor came for him.

It was one of Scott's old subordinates, Theo.

Since he was not directly involved in the incident last time, Levi had not killed him.

Curious at the other man's sudden appearance, Levi asked, "You were looking for me?"

"I'll be frank with you, Mr. Garrison. I'm sure that you know that my boss has accumulated hundreds of billions in wealth in the past decade or so. He is also an avid collector of priceless artifacts. Amongst his collection, three are unique and incredibly rare pieces. You could say that they represent the very culture of Erudia itself!"

At this point, realization dawned upon Levi as he blurted out, "Don't tell me that Triple Group has stolen them?"

"Thankfully, no. When my boss had retired, he deliberately entrusted ten of his most precious artifacts to the North Hampton Chrisler Foundation. Now that Mr. Yates is gone, the foundation is actually claiming the artifacts for themselves! What's even more infuriating is that they are going to have an auction for these treasures! I have heard rumors that Triple Group is intent on bidding for those items. These are practically the national treasures of Erudia and I don't want them to land into the hands of some other country, a sentiment that I'm certain that Mr. Yates would agree with! Please help me, Mr. Garrison! Mr. Yates went through a lot of trouble to buy back those three artifacts from an auction at another country."

Theo crashed to the floor on his knees as he begged Levi for his help.

Even though Scott and his ilk had used to bully anyone that they could, as they had gone around committing many horrible crimes, they were still extremely loyal to their country

Chuckling grimly, Levi replied, "I'm quite certain that the auction is merely a front. Triple Group and the Chrisler Foundation have probably already come to an agreement that these artifacts are to be theirs. They're just putting on a show for everyone else so that it would appear as though Triple Group had obtained the artifacts through legal means."

Theo blinked in surprise before exclaiming, "T-that's right! Since those artifacts are national treasures, Triple Group would not be able to take them that easily. Thus, they had probably conspired with the Chrisler Foundation to have this auction. Triple Group is truly shameless! Not only did they steal hundreds of billions from Mr. Yates, now, they even want to snatch away his most precious treasures! How despicable!"

"Alright. Tell me the location and the time. I'll deal with it!" Levi assured with a dark look on his face.

Is there any end to Triple Group's greed?

"Eight o'clock tomorrow night at Lakeside Villa!"

Color was slowly returning to Theo's pale face.

Now that he had passed this matter off for Levi to handle, he could finally relax.

Jae-shik had insisted that the news of his coming to Erudia should be kept secret.

Anyone who had fought in a war knew that Erudia was basically off-limits because the God of War himself protected it.

Who had dared to attack Erudia with such a legendary figure guarding it?

Even Jae-shik, who had retired from the military for ten years, was still wary of outrightly invading the country.

It was a bone-deep sort of fear that could never truly be forgotten.

In the past five years, the God of War had single-handedly defeated the eighteen nations.

Hence, Jae-shik wanted his arrival to happen with as little fanfare as possible. He did not want the God of War to find out about it, or that would spell great trouble for him.

After successfully entering Erudia, he threw all caution to the winds.

From now on, nobody would be able to stop him from doing what he wanted.

As long as I stay away from the God of War, I should be free to do as I wish.

At the airport in Quebec, South City.

Cheon-shin had arranged for half the airport to be sealed off to welcome Jae-shik.

More than a dozen black cars were parked on the tarmac, with hundreds of men in black clothing standing there, waiting in neat lines.

Upon exiting the plane, Jae-shik was taken aback at the sight before him.

How extravagant!

This was practically announcing to the world his arrival!

“Welcome to Erudia, Master!” hundreds of voices chorused.

In the eyes of these men, Lee Jae-shik was like a god!

His Taekwondo skills were undefeatable!

Who would dare to challenge him?

The Protector Chapter 513

Park Cheon-shin was already fantasizing about taking over the seven southern regions, with the assistance of this powerful figure.

Lee Jae-shik patted Park Cheon-shin on the shoulder and gave him a piece of advice, saying, "Don't do anything so extreme again in the future. Come straight to me if you're facing any problems and I'll help you in dealing with them!"

"I... I understand..." Park Cheon-shin's voice trembled slightly.

"By the way, Master, I'd heard that you like to collect antiques! There will be an auction tomorrow night and I'm planning to bid for an original piece of Erudian artwork, an ancient Erudian porcelain vase, and also Quebec's Legendary Pearls. I'll be sure to gift them to you!" Park Cheon-shin offered earnestly, trying to curry favor with him.

"Oh? What a delight."

Indeed, Lee Jae-shik enjoyed collecting antique artwork.

He had a collection of antiques from every country in the world.

All except for Erudia.

This was one of his greatest regrets!

Now that an opportunity had arisen, he, a Taekwondo master of his generation, could barely contain his excitement.

“Very well! As long as you bring me those things that you’ve just mentioned, I’ll get rid of all the obstacles that you might face in Erudia!” Lee Jae-shik vowed.

“Yes, master! I won’t let you down!”

This was exactly what Park Cheon-shin had been waiting to hear.

With Lee Jae-shik backing him up, all his worries would be erased.

He could probably even do as he had pleased, without fearing the repercussions.

After the auction, no one will be able to stop me from avenging my son!

“Come. Let’s go see how those two students of mine are faring.”

As usual, Lee Jae-shik was devoted to his students.

The next day.

After getting off from work, Levi met up with Zoey.

“Honey, there’s somewhere that I want to take you to!” Levi announced with a bright grin.

Zoey eyed him suspiciously and asked, “You wouldn’t be thinking of causing trouble again, would you?”

“What the hell! Am I really just a troublemaker in your eyes?” Levi retorted accusingly.

“Yep.”

Zoey nodded solemnly.

Half an hour later, Levi's car pulled up at Lakeside Villa.

"It seems like there's an auction here. Are you participating in it?" Zoey asked.

"Yeah. I'm thinking of buying a few antiques, as gifts for both Mom and Dad!" Levi grinned.

Zoey pinched him on the shoulder and chided him, "Stop joking around! The items being auctioned off tonight are worth more than a few hundred thousand. They can easily go up to millions! But here you are, joking about wanting to give them to Mom and Dad?"

Meanwhile, in Lakeside Villa.

Horace held his phone to his ear, listening to Park Cheon-shin's instructions.

"Remember, Horace. This is your last chance! All of Scott Yates' ten artifacts must be delivered to me as well! I'm sure that you're aware of the consequences that will befall you if you fail!"

Horace was so fearful, to the point where he had broken out in cold sweat.

If he failed, death was the consequence!

"Don't worry, boss. I have made all the necessary arrangements at the auction! All the bidders have been briefed. They'll raise the bid a couple of times each round, just for formalities sake!"

"I'll assure you that tonight, no one would dare to bid against us!" Horace spoke with conviction.

He had spread the word just a while ago, informing everyone that Triple Group was determined to get all of the artifacts put up for auction, meaning that no one should stand in their way.

Triple Group would consider those who had done as such to be their sworn enemies!

Horace had also invited many media reporters to display a live broadcast of the auction.

They wanted to let the whole of South City and Erudia know that these priceless artifacts were obtained by Triple Group through proper means; not by robbing!

Triple Group was dealt a good hand, and they would win if they had played it well.

All they needed to do was be patient!

The best part was that they didn't need to spend a single penny to acquire the ten artifacts.

After Levi presented his entry ticket, he entered the auction event with Zoey, without any mishaps.

Their seats were at the far back.

To put it bluntly, they were merely here as extras for the sake of livening the atmosphere.

After all, the auction tonight was rigged.

Before the auction began, Horace ran through everything, one final time, with the person in charge of the Chrysler Foundation.

The Protector Chapter 514

“Don’t worry, Mr. Waller. Everything is ready!” Kenneth West, the person in charge of Chrisler Foundation, reassured him.

“Good. If all goes well, you and your foundation will be richer, by 3 billion,” Horace guaranteed.

“That’s great news!”

Kenneth could barely contain his joy.

All the guests were seated in the auction room.

Horace’s seat was in the center of the first row.

Before taking his seat, he swept his gaze over the crowd, the warning in his sharp and menacing eyes apparent for all to see.

He was warning everyone that all the artifacts tonight belonged to Triple Group. Not a single one of them was allowed to touch them!

The crowd immediately received his silent message and became too afraid to even think about bidding.

Soon, the auction officially began.

“The first item for tonight’s auction is an ancient manuscript, known as Lantingji Xu! The starting bid is ten million and each bid must be increased by at least one million!” the host announced excitedly.

“The bidding starts now!”

“Hold on!” Horace abruptly stopped the host.

“Mr. Waller, is there a problem?” the host questioned curiously.

Horace glanced at the crowd and announced, “All of North Hampton’s elites have gathered here for this auction! Everyone’s time is precious! I think that it’s better to put all the auction items out at once!”

“Uh...”

The host hesitated upon hearing Horace’s suggestion and looked at Kenneth who was amongst the audience.

The latter made an ‘okay’ sign with his fingers.

“Very well. We will present all of the auction items at once!” the host declared.

Horace addressed the crowd this time, “Does anyone object to this?”

“We’ll go with your suggestion, Mr. Waller!”

“Yes! May the highest bidder win!”

...

Everyone echoed their agreements.

Who would dare to go against Triple Group?

“I agree!”

Levi also raised his hands in full support.

An all-at-once auction? Count me in!

It's definitely more time-saving, compared to bidding for each item one by one.

Zoey rolled her eyes at him. "Why are you so excited? This auction is clearly rigged! Triple Group is going to bid for the artifacts all at once! What are you applauding for?"

"Then I can bid for all the artifacts all at once too!"

The edges of Levi's mouth lifted upwards.

"All ten items have been presented now. These are antiques collected by Scott Yates throughout his entire lifetime! This is an original piece of Erudian artwork by a well-known figure during ancient times! This is an ancient porcelain vase, and this here is Quebec's Legendary Pearls. These three artifacts are Erudia's national treasures and the pride of the nation!"

"The starting bid for all ten items is five hundred million, with an increase in the bid of no less than ten million!"

"The bidding starts now!" the host shouted.

"Five hundred and ten million!"

"Five hundred and twenty million!"

...

The paid bidders arranged by Triple Group began to bid.

The bid increase was very slight, each time.

“I bid...”

North Hampton’s real estate tycoon, Jaxon Franklin raised his bid paddle.

“Huh?”

Horace whipped around to glare at him.

“Forget it! I’m out!”

Jaxon was frightened by the threat in Horace’s gaze, instantly forfeiting his bid.

The other tycoons who had the ability to bid gradually gave up as well.

These antique treasures were tempting, but they couldn’t afford to get on Triple Group’s bad side!

Everyone was all aware of Triple Group’s ruthless methods.

They were truly merciless people, who would cut down anyone and everyone who stood in their way!

“Mm. Good,” Horace muttered under his breath.

A satisfied smile appeared on Horace’s face when he saw that everyone giving up.

Only death awaited those who had challenged Triple Group!

When the bidding price had reached a certain amount, Horace raised his paddle and shouted, “Six hundred million by Triple Group!”

When he revealed his identity, the scene quietened, as everyone held their breaths.

No one dared to bid anymore.

The paid bidders also withdrew, one after another, since they had already fulfilled their purpose.

The Protector Chapter 515

All the media reporters were watching Horace closely.

Faced only with utter silence at the scene, Horace and Kenneth exchanged glances and wore matching victorious grins on their faces.

The host cast his glance at the audience. “Six hundred million going once!”

“Going twice!”

...

Horace was already grinning from ear to ear.

It’s a mission success!

And my position as the general manager in Erudia is still secure!

“One billion!” Right before the third and final call, a loud voice suddenly rang out.

The host immediately swallowed back the words at the tip of his tongue.

Kenneth and Horace were both stunned, and so was everyone else.

...

Everyone looked behind them simultaneously.

Zoey timidly tugged on Levi's arm because he was the one who had raised the bid!

"What? It's them?"

Horace recognized Levi and Zoey with only a single glance.

This was something that he had never expected to happen.

He had given strict orders to Kenneth, instructing him to control the guestlist for tonight's auction event. Hence, he never thought that these two people would be allowed in.

Horace panicked slightly and countered, "Isn't this a little too inappropriate? I'd obviously bid six hundred million first!"

"Pfft! Haven't you been at an auction before? The final call hasn't been made yet!" Levi spat in return.

"You..."

His words instantly caused Horace to silence himself.

"Does anyone want to bid higher than one billion?" Levi asked.

The host reluctantly repeated Levi's question as well.

"1.1 billion!" Horace forced the words through his lips.

"1.5 billion!" Levi yelled, determined to be the last bidder.

"You..."

Horace's anger skyrocketed.

This guy is obviously here for me!

"1.6 billion!" Horace reluctantly raised the bid.

He had to complete the mission given to him by Park Cheon-shin.

"2 billion!"

Levi raised his paddle once again.

Gasps filled the room as everyone drew in sharp breaths.

The crowd gaped at Levi in disbelief.

This is absolute madness!

Is he going to fight Triple Group to the death?

He must be crazy!

He's blatantly disrespecting Triple Group!

"You... You..."

Horace was going mad with fury.

Originally, he could have gotten the artifacts with a budget of six hundred million, but Levi had raised the bid up to 2 billion.

He had to top it by at least a few million if he had wanted to win.

“F*** it! 2.5 billion!” he stammered out.

Horace was giving it his all, to complete his mission.

“3 billion!” Levi shouted, with a disdainful look on his face.

“Pft!”

Horace’s blood pressure spiked.

3 billion exceeded his budget by 2.4 billion in total!

He had to cough up the money, out of his own pocket if he had wanted to outbid Levi!

Moreover, Levi had arrived fully prepared, so he would continue to raise the bid.

“I withdraw...” Horace stated in defeat.

However, he shot Kenneth a look and the latter discreetly gave him an ‘okay’ gesture in response.

Levi couldn’t be allowed to get his hands on those artifacts!

Even if they had to kill him to make sure that he didn’t get them, they would commit as such.

This was Park Cheon-shin’s orders.

Otherwise, it would be the end for Horace.

...

“3 billion, sold!”

“These ten items now belong to Levi Garrison!”

“Mr. Garrison and Ms. Lopez, please come backstage to settle the payment!”

The staff led Levi and Zoey to the backstage.

However, before leaving, Levi discreetly brought with him a copy of the auction’s catalog.

“Congratulations, Mr. Garrison for becoming the owner of these ten priceless artifacts. You’ll have to pay a total of 20 billion! How would you like to make the payment?” Kenneth smiled politely.

“Wait...”

Levi frowned and asked, “Shouldn’t it be 3 billion? Why has it become 20 billion?”

“Sir, I think that you’re unaware that all the items tonight aren’t auctioned off in the local currency! So, after converting and including the handling fees, the 3 billion you’d bid would come to a total of 20 billion!”

The Protector Chapter 516

Kenneth explained it with a straight face.

Boom!

Zoey was beyond stunned.

This is clearly a scam!

After the auction has commenced, they're suddenly saying that it's not in the local currency?

I've seen swindlers, but never ones that are as shameless as these people.

This is an act of fraudulence!

There's really no limit to how far Triple Group is willing to go, to get what they want!

Realization dawned upon Zoey once again.

On the contrary, Levi remained unfazed.

He had already guessed that things wouldn't progress smoothly.

"Not in the local currency? Who said that?" Levi challenged.

"Me, of course! As you know, the organizer has the final say!" Kenneth sneered.

He had promised to assist Horace in acquiring all of these ancient treasures. Hence, he deliberately changed the currency, so as to force Levi into withdrawing.

“Is everyone else aware of that?” Levi continued asking.

“Of course! If you don’t believe me, follow me and I’ll show you!”

When they returned to the auction room, Kenneth asked the crowd of people, “Was everyone aware that tonight’s auction wasn’t in the local currency?”

“Yes, of course! That’s why no one dared to raise the bid! Triple Group’s bid of six hundred million would be two billion after conversion! Who would dare to bid against that?”

“Yeah! Everyone knew about the foreign currency!”

...

These people who claimed to be aware of the currency conversion were all pre-arranged by Triple Group.

Levi also noticed that they had taken away everyone’s auction catalog.

The catalog was given to each person upon entry. It stated all the details regarding tonight’s auction, including the price of each auction item.

Just then, Horace walked over with a smile and queried, “What’s wrong Mr. West?”

“Mr. Waller, I’d appreciate it if you could help me out. Is tonight’s auction in a local or foreign currency?” Kenneth asked.

“Foreign, of course. That’s why I’d given up because 3 billion would be equivalent to 20 billion!”

Horace and Kenneth sang the same tune.

“What? Don’t tell me that Mr. Garrison and Ms. Lopez weren’t aware of this?” Horace feigned surprise.

“That’s right. The moment these two realized that it came to 20 billion after conversion, they refused to pay up!” Kenneth complained.

Horace’s smile deepened as he replied, “I suggest that the two of you give up! Paying 20 billion for these antiques is really not worth it!”

Zoey lightly elbowed Levi, implying that he should back down.

They would only end up getting their a**es handed to them, by competing against Triple Group.

Horace couldn’t stop smiling upon seeing this.

It seems like the issue has been resolved.

“If it’s 20 billion, then 20 billion it is. No problem at all!” Levi broke out into a smile of his own.

“What? You’re alright with paying 20 billion?”

Horace and Kenneth were so shocked that their eyes had almost popped out of their sockets.

They had planned to scare Levi away with this 20 billion.

To their utter shock, he had agreed to pay such an amount.

“I can pay 20 billion. The question is whether you’ll be able to spend it all!” Levi smiled mysteriously.

“Let’s settle the payment now.”

Boom!

Kenneth and Horace were completely caught off guard.

He’s really going to pay?

All of them went backstage.

Levi took out his black card and directly transferred 20 billion.

Kenneth and Horace felt as though they were trapped in a daze, rejecting the possibility that this could be real.

“Done. Send all the artifacts to my home; all ten of them!” Levi demanded.

Before leaving, Levi smiled and muttered, “I hope that you’ll be able to finish spending it as soon as possible!”

Kenneth didn’t understand what Levi had meant by that and could only watch as Levi left.

On their way back.

Zoey stared at him agape. “Honey, I know that you participated in the auction tonight for Morris Group’s big boss, but that 20 billion was obviously a scam! Why did you agree to it?”

“Haha! Don’t worry, honey. They won’t be able to spend that money!” Levi snickered.

Everything had been in the palm of his hands since the very beginning.

The Protector Chapter 517

At Lakeside Villa.

Horace and Kenneth finally arrived at their senses after a long while.

“He had really transferred 20 billion?” Horace was skeptical.

“Yes! It has already been transferred into the account!” Kenneth confirmed.

“You must transfer all 20 billion to me now so that I can at least offer Mr. Park an explanation!” Horace urged him.

Kenneth immediately instructed his staff to make the transfer.

“Mr. West, something’s wrong! The 20 billion has been frozen! It says here that a fraudulent transfer was detected, and thus, our bank account has been frozen!” the staff exclaimed in horror.

“What are you waiting for? Call the bank now!”

Suddenly, Levi’s earlier words rang in Kenneth’s mind.

He told them to spend the money as soon as possible.

“Mr. West, the bank has said that the Bank Regulatory Bureau intervened and that they were the ones who had frozen the account!”

Horace and Kenneth’s expressions morphed drastically upon hearing this.

“What? The Bank Regulatory Bureau did this?”

Beep beep beep...

All of a sudden, ear-splitting police sirens could be heard, coming from outside the villa.

Several police cars came to a stop at the entrance.

There were also cars from the Ministry of Commerce, the Bank Regulatory Bureau, as well as the Bureau of Labor Statistics.

“Good evening, we are a joint law enforcement team, comprised of four major departments. We received a report just a moment ago regarding the suspicious activity at the auction organized by Chrisler Foundation!”

“Firstly, you are suspected of consumer fraud, for demanding 20 billion when 3 billion was the agreed price!”

“Secondly, you are suspected of violating the law by engaging in acts, such as unfair competition!”

...

“Most importantly, all the items put up for auction belong to Mr. Scott Yates, and thus, they should be handled by the successor appointed by Mr. Scott Yates. You had no right to auction them off!”

Kenneth was already panicking, by the time the third offense was being stated.

They knew that they had brought this disaster upon themselves when they had switched the currency all just to dispel Levi.

Just then, Xavier Fields scoffed derisively as he held a copy of the auction catalog in his hand. “It’s clearly stated here that the bidding would be done in local currency, so how did 3 billion suddenly become 20 billion?”

“Ah?” Kenneth paled instantly.

Didn't we settle the matter regarding the catalogs?

How did they get their hands on one?

Never in a million years did he expect Levi to be a step ahead of them, handing a copy over to Xavier.

“We've conducted an investigation and have discovered that the successor appointed by Scott Yates before his death was his butler, Mr. Theo Kirby, who had agreed to give all of the artifacts to Mr. Garrison, without any conditions! Hence, you shall immediately return the 20 billion to Mr. Garrison!”

“From this moment onwards, Kenneth and all who were involved are suspected of fraud, along with the previously listed crimes. All of you will be arrested and brought in for investigation! Chrisler Foundation will also be shut down temporarily for a thorough inspection!”

“Additionally, Triple Group will receive a fine of ten million for suspected market share violations, and the person in charge will be suspended under further notice!” Xavier declared sternly.

Boom!

Horace and Kenneth almost passed out from everything that was going on.

Upon realizing that these artifacts were being given to Levi for free and that Chrisler Foundation was implicated as well, Horace began to fume.

He could not accept how things had turned out!

Since most of the reporters were still present at the scene, word of this spread like wildfire.

North Hampton and even the whole of Quebec had heard about it.

Park Cheon-shin was no exception either.

Triple Group has once again been humiliated in North Hampton?

Being slapped a fine is a small matter, but our image will be utterly ruined because of it!

Park Cheon-shin immediately contacted Horace.

“Horace, look what you’ve done! I gave you one last chance, didn’t I? It was such a simple task, but you couldn’t even do a proper job!” Park Cheon-shin was infuriated.

“Mr. Park, I...”

Horace was on the verge of tears.

“Come to South City to receive your death sentence! If you don’t, your wife and daughter will take your place!” Park Cheon-shin growled into the phone.

“What’s wrong? What’s gotten you so worked up, Mr. Park?”

Lee Jae-shik, who happened to be beside him, questioned him, with a smile.

“Master, the antique artifacts that I’d planned to give you were robbed from us. This is the same person who had injured your disciple, along with my son!”

The Protector Chapter 518

“Master, I specially arranged for those artifacts to be ours, but someone just had to get in my way! He didn’t just rob us of those ten artifacts, rather, he had even humiliated Triple Group and had us fined!”

Park Cheon-shin’s breathing had turned erratic due to anger.

Lee Jae-shik’s expression changed subtly as he asked, “Is he difficult to deal with? It seems like this isn’t the first time he’s caused you trouble!”

“Well, yes. He’s a rather slippery fellow. But if we want to execute Triple Group’s plan, North Hampton must be tackled! This is the key to moving forward! So, I hope that you can help us in dealing with this issue, master!” Park Cheon-shin explained with a cold glint in his eyes.

Lee Jae-shik conducted a brief analysis before replying, “So, at the end of the day, Morris Group is the one pulling the strings?”

“Yes! I’ve received news that has confirmed that even the Rogers family from North Hampton is under Morris Group’s control! The owner of Morris Group is very mysterious and has powerful forces behind him! It was he who had taken down, Scott Yates, the former ruler of Quebec!”

Just speaking about it made fear creep up along Park Cheon-shin’s insides.

“Alright. Then send out an invitation to Morris Group in the name of Triple Group and request for a negotiation! A buy-over or a collaboration; it doesn’t matter. If they refuse, I will use force to get rid of all the obstacles. So you do what you have to do!” Lee Jae-shik affirmed coldly.

Park Cheon-shin’s eyes lit up.

“Thank you, master! I was just thinking of a way to cause a stir in Morris Group that would give us a chance to eliminate them. Negotiation is the perfect solution!”

If the negotiation were a success, Morris Group would concede defeat.

If the negotiation failed, he would have an excuse to get rid of Morris Group.

With the top Taekwondo master on his side, he feared no one.

“When it comes to negotiations, kindness and severity go hand-in-hand. Choi Hong-man, follow him to the negotiation!”

Lee Jae-shik gave his orders to the man standing next to him, who was close to two meters in height, bearing a weight of more than two hundred pounds.

“Yes, Master!” Choi Hong-man nodded.

He was the champion of Keerea’s free fighting competition, and not once did he lose, in all the years he had participated.

More than half the opponents he defeated had lost their lives, while the rest were either crippled or had spiraled into depression.

He was known as the ‘human-sized weapon’.

Later on, his already impressive fighting skills improved when Lee Jae-shik took him under his wing.

Since then, Choi Hong-man was practically invincible.

Lee Da-yong and Lee Da-jong combined were not even a match for him!

He was also rumored to be bulletproof.

Park Cheon-shin was overjoyed. “Okay. No problem! I’ll send my most capable subordinate to lead the negotiation. Over the years, she has never failed when discussing a collaboration! With Choi Hong-man backing her, this matter can be resolved, without the need for you to personally step in.”

The next day, the general manager of Triple Group in Erudia was switched out for someone else.

A woman took over Horace’s position.

No one knew about Horace’s whereabouts.

The woman was from a rather unique background. Firstly, she was an Erudian.

Secondly, she was Park Cheon-shin’s nephew, Lee Jung-jin’s fiancée, and the two of them would be marrying in five days.

According to the rules and regulations set by Triple Group headquarters, it was compulsory, for the general manager to be an Erudian.

Park Cheon-shin planned to control all the assets under Triple Group through this arrangement.

As of recent, Triple Group had been thrown into the center of public scrutiny, with the people possessing contradicting opinions about them. Nonetheless, their reputation suffered a great hit and they were currently being torn apart by various markets in North Hampton.

Under the oppression from many parties, Triple Group was losing its footing in North Hampton.

At Morris Group.

“Ms. Anabelle, just a while ago Triple Group had sent someone over, to invite us to a negotiation. It will be held in a conference room in Dynasty Hotel this afternoon! They had wanted to discuss the future development in North Hampton!”

Iris’ assistant relayed the message to her.

“What is Triple Group up to this time?”

Displeasure lined Iris’ features.

Triple Group had been doing many shady things recently.

They had even sent headhunters to target Morris Group’s executives, to convince them to jump ships.

Besides that, they had also been causing small disturbances to the distribution channels and merchants, disrupting Morris Group’s normal operations.

Although it did not harm the company’s substantive interests, their little ploys were getting increasingly unbearable, day by day.

Many employees at the company were beginning to complain, with all of them sending in requests for Iris to settle the matter.

The Protector Chapter 519

“I think that Triple Group wants to solve the problem once and for all! If we don’t attend the negotiation, I’m afraid that those shameless b*****s will resort to playing dirty!”

“I think that we should go too! Allowing them to continue harassing us like this just won’t do!”

“Yeah, it’s fine even if they propose a collaboration! We can all make money and work together in North Hampton’s development!”

...

Iris contacted Neil after receiving everyone’s opinions on the matter.

Kirin replied that the big boss had also agreed to negotiate.

“But this time, we are the ones who have the upper hand, so we have to take the high road for it to stay that way. I don’t think that the executives should go. Send Levi instead!” Iris had a pensive look on her face.

If we’d agreed to negotiate, still sending them an insignificant person to do it, it shows that we don’t fear them.

This would no doubt put pressure on Triple Group!

Even if we end up collaborating, Morris Group will still benefit from it.

“Huh? You want to send Levi?”

“We know where you’re coming from, but sending him would only make things worse, don’t you think so?”

Everyone was confused.

“No, no. You don’t understand. Levi is an expert when it comes to these things! So, it’s settled then!” Iris stated.

In truth, she had personal motives.

She had wanted to promote Levi, but convincing the others was a real headache.

The only way was to help him improve on his performance.

She believed that letting him attend the negotiation with Triple Group would do the trick.

“What? Me?” Levi was stunned as much as the others.

“I’ll write down the points to be put forward during the negotiation, so all you have to do is follow them!”

Iris even made all the necessary preparations for Levi.

She was doing everything in her power to give Levi that promotion!

Little did she know that Levi was the boss of Morris Group.

“Mm, fine. Just get Seth to send me there.” Levi seemed slightly irked.

As for the negotiation details Iris had written down, Levi did not even spare it a glance.

Does Triple Group want to negotiate?

Fat chance!

Even getting down on their knees wouldn't suffice!

Levi was curious to know just what Triple Group was up to.

At three in the afternoon.

In a conference room at Dynasty Hotel.

The representatives of Triple Group were already present.

A sophisticated and career-driven woman, who was clad in professional attire was surrounded by a group of people.

The moment she arrived, the other women present were overshadowed by her, paling in comparison.

Her aura was too powerful!

She was the newly appointed general manager of Triple Group, Lauren Fletcher.

Lauren was a capable woman who had successfully made it into South Hampton University and thereafter, went abroad to further her studies.

After working for several years, she worked for a headhunting company under Triple Group.

Her expertise was scouting talents from other companies for Triple Group.

In the past five years, Lauren had broken the record by personally recruiting more than 370 talented individuals for Triple Group.

Especially during times when Triple Group had implemented their corporate strategies on other companies, they would first release their headhunters to recruit those companies' talented and experienced individuals.

Headhunting companies sounded fancy, but in the industry, they were considered to be insidious and loathsome occupations.

All they did was steal employees from other companies.

Besides being an expert headhunter, Lauren was an even better negotiator.

As long as she was the one who was leading the negotiation, the deal would be closed.

Park Cheon-shin had complete trust in her and since she was also a local in North Hampton, he decided to offer her the position as general manager in Triple Group.

He had also arranged for the marriage between his nephew and her.

Lauren trailed behind Choi Hong-man's gigantic figure. Everyone that he had passed shook in fear upon seeing him.

Seth drove Levi to the meeting location and they arrived shortly after.

"Levi Garrison? What are you doing here?"

Lauren's face showed surprise when she saw Levi.

The Protector Chapter 520

“Lauren Fletcher?”

Levi immediately recognized her as well.

He had been matchmade with this woman, even before his high school years.

It was because when they were both children, his adoptive parents had arranged for her to be his betrothed.

Lauren’s father, Isaac Fletcher, was good friends with Levi’s adoptive father.

The Fletchers were considered to be a prominent family, but they weren’t up to the Garrison family’s level.

Not long after they had adopted Levi, Lauren was born. Hence, Isaac had put forth the idea of a childhood betrothal, with the intention of sinking his claws into the Garrison family.

Although Levi’s adoptive parents didn’t quite approve of the Fletchers’ status, they agreed to it anyway, since Levi was adopted.

When Levi prospered, the Fletcher family was over the moon.

After all, if Levi became a force to be reckoned with, it would prove that the Fletchers had bet on the right horse.

Lauren had become infatuated with Levi, following him everywhere like a lovesick puppy.

Ultimately, the Fletcher family had only agreed to sever all ties, upon seeing that Levi and Zoey had gotten together. Thereafter, they had cancelled the betrothal, spitting out threats that Levi would come to regret his decision.

Since then, Lauren wasn't mentioned again and he had only heard that she had gone to study abroad.

On the day of Levi's imprisonment, Isaac had even visited him to add insult to his injury.

Lauren was also thrilled to know that Levi had been imprisoned, taking great pleasure in his misfortune.

This was especially apparent when she found out that Zoey had been living a widow's life. Her heart had almost burst with elation.

She had always held Zoey responsible for taking away what should have been hers.

The title of lady boss of Levi Group should have been hers!

"Hehe! You can still recognize me? Consider me impressed!" Lauren smiled sweetly.

Immediately after, the smile fell from her lips. "What? You can't possibly be the one whom Morris Group has sent to negotiate on their behalf, right?"

"I am! And you're representing Triple Group?" Levi threw back a question at her.

"I'm guessing that you still don't know who I really am," Lauren smirked, while announcing in a mocking manner.

"Enlighten me." Levi raised his brows.

“Listen up. Standing before you is the general manager of Triple Group!” someone beside her immediately introduced.

The man continued asking, “And who might you be? How dare Morris Group send you to negotiate?”

Before Levi had the chance to speak, Lauren’s assistant came over with a tablet stating, “Ms. Fletcher, Levi Garrison is a technical consultant at Morris Group. In fact, he doesn’t have a proper position; it’s merely an empty title! Besides, it was the supervisor of the technical department, Isaiah Wade, who had brought him in!”

“In short, Levi Garrison was hired through connections!”

Lauren’s smile grew upon hearing this.

The headhunting company was the best at digging up information.

They had already found out about Levi and his involvement with Morris Group, including those who had hated him. She knew everything that she had needed to know.

According to the information that they had retrieved, most of the people at Morris Group were very dissatisfied about Levi getting hired through connections.

He had been fired before, but later on, he had entered once again, through the backdoor.

Morris Group had conducted a questionnaire with ‘most hated employee’ as one of its questions.

Eighty percent of the employees wrote down Levi’s name because all of them relied on their own abilities to earn a place in the company.

Levi was the only one who got in, through the easy way!

“Levi, I thought that after you were released from prison, you would return to your former glory. I didn’t expect you to be finished for good! I see that you’re fooling around every day! How did you become this way?” Lauren asked with a smile laced with venom.

When she heard that Levi had come on behalf of Morris Group, her first thought was that he was the boss of Morris Group.

After she read the detailed information on him, her heart finally eased.

It turned out that Levi’s imprisonment had taken a toll on him and that he was now completely useless.

The Protector Chapter 521

“I must say, I’m quite disappointed in you, Levi! You used to be a dark horse! Now, you’ve resorted to relying on your connections!”

“Logically speaking, Morris Group should be yours. How did you end up as a small-time technical consultant?” Lauren let out a derisive laugh.

She was in a particularly good mood now.

She was initially prepared to fight a hard battle.

But in the end, it was her ex-fiancé from during her childhood, Levi Garrison, who had turned up!

Not to mention, a completely ruined version of him.

She was ecstatic and felt fully confident about the negotiation that was about to begin.

“Wait, Ms. Fletcher! Something’s wrong. If Morris Group sent a useless person like him here, it means that they’re not taking this negotiation seriously at all!” her assistant exclaimed.

The smug smile on Lauren’s face immediately vanished.

She had actually thought about this too.

Did Morris Group deliberately send a useless person here?

Doesn’t that directly reflect their thoughts about this negotiation?

Even if they're the ones who have the upper hand, they're blatantly disrespecting Triple Group!

"What is Morris Group trying to do? Did they send a piece of trash over, to humiliate us?" Lauren threw the question to her assistant.

She purposely raised her voice so that Levi could hear her.

Her assistant replied, "Ms. Fletcher, I've just received the confirmation! Levi Garrison is the person they had sent to negotiate on the company's behalf! He is authorized to make any decision!"

"In that case, let's begin!" Lauren ordered in a cold tone.

While everyone was setting up the venue, Lauren approached Levi with a sneer. "Levi, I really never expected us to meet again like this! I had never believed the statement that people had said, stating that everything in life is temporary until I had seen you once again. Oh, how things have changed!"

Levi nodded. "Yeah! You've grown so much since the last time I saw you."

"I know, right?" You've changed even more though! The Garrisons were clearly billionaires who had successfully listed their company. What happened in less than a month to make them fall so low? Now, all of the Garrisons are barely scraping by! They're all just a pathetic bunch!

They used to be so high and mighty. Even though your father and mine were good friends, I knew that your father looked down on my family and saw us as peasants!

"But now, my family has a market value of two billion! I'm also the general manager of Triple Group in Erudia! We are the ones looking down on your family now! Including you! All of you are merely fit to lick the dirt from our boots!"

Lauren abruptly changed the topic. “Of course, you’re not doing too bad. At least you can still fulfill your basic needs, but you’re still considered a low-life!”

Levi who remained silent the entire time sighed softly when she was done.

Reality is simply too cruel.

A pure and kind little girl had turned into this kind of person...

One side of Lauren’s mouth lifted. “You can sigh all you want, but the reality is a b****! Don’t look down on others, because you’ll never know when they would rise and walk all over you! That’s what we Fletchers are doing right now; walking all over the Garrisons!”

Levi wasn’t angered by her words, but Seth on the other hand, couldn’t continue listening to her insults anymore.

When Lauren noticed that, she announced with a smile, “Alright, enough talk about this. My wedding is in five days! I’m marrying Lee Jung-jin, the nephew of Triple Group’s regional general manager, Park Cheon-shin! You must come, yes? Here’s the invitation!”

Levi accepted the invitation from her hand, with surprise sprawled across his face. “A Keerean?”

“Yeah! He’s a greatly valued executive of Triple Group and owns company shares too! Even the old you can’t compare to him!” Lauren flaunted arrogantly.

Levi smiled in response. “Sure. I’ll be there.”

The Protector Chapter 522

When Levi ignored her jab at him, Lauren immediately softened her tone, changing tactics. “Oh well, no matter what, we grew up together Levi. I’m like a sister to you, am I not? You’ll come for my wedding no matter what, right?”

Lauren had wanted Levi to attend her wedding so that he would realize that choosing Zoey over her was the biggest mistake of his life!

“Mm, alright. I’ll definitely attend your wedding!”

Although he felt nauseated by the current Lauren, she was still his childhood betrothed, and he had regarded her as a younger sister.

Since she was going to get married, he would attend her wedding just for the sake of it.

Lauren nodded in satisfaction. “Don’t forget to dress up nicely too!”

“Mm. I wish you happiness!” Levi offered her a bland smile.

“I...” Lauren hesitated for a brief moment.

Truth be told, she didn’t have any feelings for Lee Jung-jin.

Nonetheless, because of his status as Park Cheon-shin’s nephew, as well as his competency, Lauren had agreed to marry him.

She wanted to gain more power for herself, as well as for her family so that they could become a noble family.

Park Cheon-shin suggested a marriage between her and his nephew because he saw her potential.

Once Lauren became his daughter-in-law, all of Triple Group's assets would be his to control.

In fact, he had wanted to kick Horace out of Triple Group a long time ago.

However, the higher-ups from the headquarters did not allow that, because the position could only be occupied by a capable Erudian.

Coincidentally, Horace had been showing poor work performance as of recently. Thus, Park Cheon-shin successfully had him sacked and allowed Lauren to replace him.

Lauren was currently so excited that she had immediately called her father, Isaac. "Dad, guess what? I ran into Levi Garrison! He has promised to attend my wedding!"

"Hahaha! Really? That's wonderful! We'll show him exactly who the Fletchers are, along with how outstanding my daughter is! He's the one who isn't worthy of you! Damn that piece of trash!"

Isaac shared his daughter's excitement.

He wanted Levi to witness Lauren's monumental wedding and regret his choice back then!

"Ms. Fletcher, everything is ready! Please, have a seat," informed her assistant.

At the same time, Levi moved to take his seat, across from hers.

Lauren glanced at Levi with disdain gleaming in her eyes and proclaimed, “The negotiation has officially begun! I’m sure that you know the current situation. I want to hear your take on it...”

“Sure. Then, I’ll go ahead first!”

With that, Levi got down to business. “Firstly, Triple Group must pay back the 80 billion that they’ve stolen from Scott Yates’ faction. This huge sum of money is supposed to be for the development of Quebec! Triple Group isn’t allowed to do anything until the money has been paid.”

Before anyone could react, he continued, “Secondly, make a public apology and confess to all the crimes that Triple Group has committed over these past few years.”

“Thirdly, Triple Group must either get lost from Erudia, or follow its laws.”

“These three points are what I want to bring across.”

After Levi was done saying his piece, silence blanketed the room.

Lauren was dumbfounded.

Everyone had varying expressions on their faces.

Even Seth was wearing a look of utter disbelief on his face.

Aren’t you going a little overboard, Mr. Garrison?

Everyone knows that Quebec is dominated by Triple Group now.

Nonetheless, he spoke such arrogant words!

Did he just tell Triple Group to get lost?

Has he gone mad?

Who in Quebec has the balls to do what he has just done?

It took Lauren a whole minute to return to her senses.

“Levi, what nonsense are you spouting? When did Triple Group steal 80 billion from Scott Yates? Where did you hear that rumor?” Lauren angrily rebuked.

She was, in fact, shocked on the inside.

How did he know?

“Rumor? Hahaha...” Levi burst out laughing.

Has Lauren become as shameless as Triple Group too?

“The truth will always come to light. Triple Group shouldn’t assume that their shady dealings will remain hidden forever! That money was specially gathered to support the construction and development of Quebec! Unfortunately, Triple Group had the guts to take that money. How preposterous!”

The Protector Chapter 523

The moment he proclaimed as such, even Lauren was taken aback.

Her anxiety spiked because Triple Group was actually still losing sleep over that money.

Firstly, the amount involved was simply too enormous.

Secondly, that sum of money was specially funded by South City.

Hence, they had tried their best to do charity, in order to clear their guilty conscience.

Mentioning that sum of money was a direct hit on Triple Group's weakness.

Levi repeated in a chilly tone, "Today's negotiation will revolve around the three points that I had stated. Number one, return the money; number two, make a public apology; number three, either get lost or obey the law!"

His words were simply too cool!

Seth was so awestruck that he had almost cried!

Mr. Garrison is a real man!

Lauren was beyond stunned.

The negotiation wasn't supposed to go like this...

Even so, what the hell is this?

“Didn’t you say that you were getting married? Triple Group has five days! Don’t blame me for being merciless if you fail!”

Levi gave them a deadline.

“Levi, the points I was going to bring up today were-”

Lauren was cut off mid-sentence.

“I’m sorry to say this, but you have no right to do so! Since you’ve asked for a negotiation, everything is up to me!” Levi left no room for discussion.

“Fine. So, you mean that everything you say is equivalent to Morris Group’s decision?” Lauren scoffed.

“Of course! Since I’m here, it means that I represent the entire Morris Group!” Levi nodded.

“Are you sure that this is how you want today’s negotiation to go?”

“Yes.”

Lauren’s lips curled in disdain. “Then, can you bear the consequences?”

“Bear the consequences? I think that I should be the one asking Triple Group this question. I’m only giving you five days! If you don’t do what I have asked, I will personally take everything back and drive Triple Group out of Erudia!”

Levi sounded impassive as though he was talking about the weather.

“Hahaha...”

Everyone, including Lauren, erupted into fits of laughter.

Drive Triple Group out of Erudia?

He must be crazy to be able to say something like this, right?

Even the leaders of South City have turned a blind eye to this matter.

Who in Quebec would dare to go head to head with Triple Group?

A measly company like Morris Group?

They're indeed a tough nut to crack, but they're still nothing, compared to Triple Group.

“Levi, do you really think that you possess authority just because they had sent you here to negotiate? They clearly did that as a mere formality, but you've seriously thought that you were some kind of important person?” Lauren snickered.

“Oh and what about you? Stop dwelling over unimportant matters and just relay my message to your superior!” Levi retorted.

“Who dares to speak so arrogantly?”

Just then, a voice sounded, as a voice sounded out, speaking in imperfect English.

Lee Jung-jin appeared in a suit.

“Honey, this is the guy who I was betrothed to when I was a child! Now, he's just a piece of trash!” Lauren whispered.

Lee Jung-jin glanced at Levi, with a surprise filling his eyes before sneering. “My dear, he isn't worthy of you!”

“So, you’re the one who wants to drive Triple Group out of Erudia?”

Lee Jung-jin sized Levi up with a contemptuous look.

Boom, boom, boom.

The sound of thunderous footsteps shook the ground as Choi Hong-man, who was two meters tall, bearing a weight of more than two hundred pounds, appeared.

He resembled a God, as he looked down his nose at Levi and Seth.

Seth could feel the dangerous aura that Choi Hong-man was emanating, immediately explaining, “Don’t get the wrong idea. We have only come to relay the message! This is our boss’ decision!”

Seth didn’t want to cause a conflict.

He felt that Levi was no match for Choi Hong-man, so he chose to retreat for now.

“Yes. I was the one who had said that! So why don’t you try and see what would happen if you failed to deliver, on the three points I’ve just stated, within five days?”

Levi stared straight at Lee Jung-jin, answering his question.

Oh no!

Seth gave himself a mental slap.

Levi was stepping forth, full throttle.

Choi Hong-man took a menacing stride forward as he announced in a frosty tone, "Try and see?"

The Protector Chapter 524

Choi Hong-man's gigantic body resembled that of a beast's.

His booming voice sounded like thunder, and he gave off an extremely intimidating aura.

Everyone retreated out of fear, including Lauren, leaving Levi and Choi Hong-man in the middle.

Choi Hong-man glared at Levi, as though he were a predator, with Levi being his sole prey.

Seth looked on anxiously, knowing full well that he would be beaten to a pulp if he had faced off against Choi Hong-man.

He's an amazing fighter!

Levi's in deep trouble this time...

"You'll know the consequences in five days!" Levi declared with a smug grin.
"Let's go!"

Levi turned around to leave, with Seth following him closely.

Boom!

Without warning, Choi Hong-man dragged Seth over and pinned him down, against a chair.

Seth froze up, his reflexes as an ex-military scout failing to kick in.

He could only stare at Choi Hong-man in shock as he was held hostage, in a tight grip against the chair.

Seth was utterly shocked.

He's too powerful!

He's stronger than I had thought!

Levi won't stand a chance against him!

We're done for...

"Who has given you permission to leave? The negotiations are not over yet!" Choi Hong-man bellowed, making the ground shake.

Lauren and her party roared in excitement.

Levi's manipulative tactics had made them hesitant to put forward their terms, and Choi Hong-man had proved that violence was the only way to get them out of this sticky situation.

"That's right!" Lauren jeered. "We haven't even put forward our terms yet! Why are you leaving?"

Lee Jung-jin scoffed. "That's really rude of you. Do you really think that we're going to back down so easily?"

"Yeah! You shouldn't be walking out just like that!"

The party from Triple Group started to grow cocky.

Choi Hong-man pointed at Levi and yelled in broken English, "You! Come! Sit!"

Levi grinned. "Can't you just let me leave?"

"Hahaha!"

Lee Jung-jin and Lauren exchanged looks and burst into laughter.

They glanced at Choi Hong-man to put across a signal to Levi that he would have to get past Choi Hong-man first before he could leave.

Lauren left the room after that.

Park Cheon-shin had given her two schemes for the negotiations and had instructed her to let Choi Hong-man threaten the Morris Group party if things went south.

In fact, the second scheme was to mobilize Choi Hong-man.

What was to follow after that was none of her business.

"Be gentle, Mr. Choi..." she had announced earlier on with a grin. "I need him to show up at my wedding."

Lee Jung-jin left after shooting Levi a look.

It was time for Choi Hong-man to shine.

The party from Triple Group filed out of the room and closed the door behind them.

"Did you hear me?" Choi Hong-man bellowed, glaring at Levi.

Levi merely stared at him. "Let that person go. This is not your country, and you have no right to act like you own the place!"

Levi's voice was calm yet authoritative, as though he was leading an army of a million men.

It could make anyone who was listening to him cower in fear.

Even Choi Hong-man was startled for a second, but he soon regained his footing quickly. "Hmph! I do not let people go easily! You too!"

He charged forward upon uttering those words.

Despite possessing a burly body, he moved at what seemed to be lightning speed. Before anyone could react, he had already grabbed Levi by the shoulders, ready to throw him onto a chair.

Levi was close to two meters tall, but that was nothing compared to the two-hundred-pound wall of muscle before him.

Seth and his allies closed their eyes in defeat.

The Protector Chapter 525

However, to Choi Hong-man's horror, Levi did not even move a single inch.

He was shocked...very shocked.

He could throw an elephant into the air with ease, yet Levi stood rooted to the ground, no matter how hard he had tried to lift him.

"Get out!" Levi shouted all of a sudden, his booming voice echoing across the room.

Boom!

To everyone's shock, Choi Hong-man staggered backward, due to the sheer force of Levi's voice, only stopping after crashing into the table in the middle of the room.

His eyes were filled with fear, yet, he refused to back down.

"You're asking for trouble!" Choi Hong-man hollered like a feral beast before charging forward once again.

Boom!

He leaped into the air like a cannonball before crashing down onto the tables and chairs explosively.

Everyone staggered backwards from the shockwave that he had created, its searing heat almost burning through their skins.

Crack!

The tables and chairs crumbled into a pile of debris under his weight.

Choi Hong-man had gone all out!

Seth hissed in fear.

He's simply too strong!

A single kick from Choi Hong-man could break a stone apart!

Choi Hong-man howled, as the veins on his legs popped.

Boom!

Levi's bangs fluttered in the air, as the vibrations that Choi Hong-man was creating had soon shaken the room, around them.

Choi Hong-man focused all his energy on his right leg, ready to deal a fatal strike.

He was confident that he could shatter the thickest walls in the world with one kick, let alone a scrawny man like Levi Garrison!

Levi has become dead meat...

Seth had lost all hope.

He's too strong!

Simply too strong!

He's a one-man army!

No wonder he's the best fighter in Keerea! He's like a battle-weathered sword!

No wonder everyone calls him a 'human-sized weapon'!

Levi stood rooted to the ground, as though he was frightened out of his wits as well.

However, just seconds before Choi Hong-man's leg made contact with his head, his fist flew out like a released spring.

He punched Choi Hong-man squarely in the leg, creating a deafening boom that had almost caused everyone's eardrums to burst.

It's over...

There's no way that Levi has survived that...

However, much to everyone's surprise, Choi Hong-man was launched into the air, as though he had been rammed into, by a car. His right leg was bent at a weird angle.

Crack!

Crack!

Crack!

...

Choi Hong-man's body reduced a dozen tables into dust and shattered the glass door, yet his momentum did not diminish by a single bit.

He flew outwards for another few seconds and crashed through the railings of the second floor, hurtling towards the first floor.

Meanwhile, Lauren and Lee Jung-jin walked in, side-by-side towards the first-floor lobby.

“What do you think Choi Hong-man is planning to do to Levi, honey?” Lauren asked with a wide smile.

Lee Jung-jin scoffed. “That man is a beast! There is simply no way that Levi Garrison could survive all of that!”

“That’s great!” Lauren chirped happily.

Levi’s arrogant attitude had angered her immensely, and she was more than willing when it came to witnessing Levi getting himself crushed by Choi Hong-man.

“Alright! I think it’s about time we head back.”

The two of them returned to the meeting room, only to be greeted by a loud crash.

“W-what’s that?” Lee Jung-jin exclaimed in terror.

A huge figure plummeted down from the second floor...

The Protector Chapter 526

Lauren froze in her tracks and Lee Jung-jin started to tremble in fear.

Crash!

The figure landed heavily, with a thud, making the ground shake as though an earthquake had just occurred.

Choi Hong-man's body spasmed, as he frothed at the mouth, spewing out a mixture of blood and teeth all over his face.

"W-what in the world is going on?" Lauren stammered.

"Are my eyes playing tricks on me? Did a person just fly out?" Lee Jung-jin asked perplexedly, seeming as though he had been utterly confused.

"Let's go in and take a look!" Lauren exclaimed, setting off into a run.

"Yeah! Maybe it's Levi!" Lee Jung-jin added.

Soon, they arrived at the spot where the person had landed, only to see Choi Hong-man having a seizure on the ground.

"What?" they exclaimed in unison. "Choi...Hong-man? Why are you here? Where is Levi Garrison?"

The two of them stared at Choi Hong-man, dumbfounded.

This is outrageous!

After a while, Choi Hong-man stopped moving completely. It was almost as though his soul had left his body.

Why would a champion fighter get thrown out of his arena so easily?

How did he end up on the first floor?

How is this even possible?

“T-T-This...” Lee Jung-jin was at a loss for words.

He would never be able to forget the scene that he had just witnessed.

As a Keerean, he knew just how strong Choi Hong-man was.

To Keereans, Choi Hong-man was an undefeatable force, with rumors stating that his body was immune to all types of weapons.

Once, he had managed to wipe out an entire cult, despite being shot in the chest seven times.

The bullets had merely pierced through his skin, leaving both his organs and bones unharmed.

His body was impenetrable!

What in the world happened just now?

This is unbelievable!

“What are you waiting for? Send him to the hospital!” Lee Jung-jin screeched.

“I’m going to find Levi Garrison!” Lauren yelled back, as she bounded up the stairs.

To her horror, there was no one in the meeting room.

Levi was long gone!

“I’m certain that someone from Morris Group had swooped in to save him!” Lauren muttered to herself in anguish. “Who could be stronger than Choi Hong-man?”

Meanwhile, in South City, Park Cheon-shin received a call from his nephew Lee Jung-jin.

“Huh? What happened?” Park Cheon-shin exclaimed, dumbfounded.

“Levi Garrison beat Choi Hong-man up... He’s in the hospital now, and we don’t know if he’ll survive...” Lee Jung-jin stammered nervously.

Park Cheon-shin’s phone fell to the ground with a loud thud, as he stared off into the distance, with a shocked look upon his face.

“What’s wrong? Were you actually convinced that Choi Hong-man was undefeatable?” Lee Jae-shik asked calmly as he sipped on his tea.

Park Cheon-shin glanced at him in disbelief. “Did you see this coming, Master?”

“Of course I did!” Lee Jae-shik answered. “Even a random security guard from Morris Group can defeat Lee Da-yong and Lee Da-jong. What makes you think that Choi Hong-man is any stronger?”

“Are you sure, Master?” Park Cheon-shin asked.

“Haha! Only strong ones are worthy of my attention! It’ll be pretty disappointing if Choi Hong-man had wiped him out with one strike,” Lee Jae-shik announced, smiling.

Park Cheon-shin grinned as well. “I should ask them about the negotiations!”

Taking out his phone, he soon began to dial a string of numbers.

The Protector Chapter 527

“What? You’re only giving us five days’ time?” Park Cheon-shin yelled, with his fists clenched.

After hanging up, he relayed Levi’s three warnings to Lee Jae-shik.

Bang!

Lee Jae-shik slammed his palm against the table. “How dare they threaten to kick us out of Erudia? It’s simply ridiculous!”

“Master, please calm down!” Park Cheon-shin pleaded. “We need your help!”

“Of course I’ll help you!” Lee Jae-shik exclaimed, his eyes alight with a furious flame.

All three of his disciples had been beaten up, becoming utterly humiliated, and he could no longer tolerate it.

“Master, my nephew’s wedding is in five days’ time,” Park Cheon-shin reminded him. “Can we settle this after his wedding?”

“Sure!”

“I would also like to invite you to his wedding, Master. I’m sure that it’ll make the wedding unforgettable for everyone there!” Park Cheon-shin pleaded.

“Of course! We’ll head straight to North Hampton after the wedding to settle the score with Morris Group!”

...

Lee Jung-jin relayed the message to Lauren immediately after he had received it.

“What? Master Lee is going to attend our wedding?” Lauren exclaimed excitedly, her gloominess from earlier completely gone.

“My uncle told me to focus on the wedding and to ignore Morris Group for the time being!” Lee Jung-jin relayed. “We need to get the media’s attention too!”

The wedding was not just a wedding- It was a publicity stunt by Triple Group.

Soon, news of their wedding spread to every corner of North Hampton, with headlines such as, ‘The General Manager of Triple Group Erudia Branch, Lauren Fletcher, To Get Married To The Nephew of The Chief Manager of Triple Group Erudia Branch, At Bayfront Manor In Five Days’ Time’, taking over the front page of every local newspaper.

In addition to that, the residents of North Hampton were shocked to find out that the renowned master of Taekwondo, Lee Jae-shik, also known as the chief instructor of the Keerean Army, was going to be one of the witnesses at the wedding.

The news shook everyone in North Hampton, along with the entire Quebec region to its core.

The public had been eyeing the wedding for a long time, but they had not expected someone as well-known as Lee Jae-shik to grace the wedding with his presence.

The sheer publicity the wedding was getting was unbelievable.

Everyone looked forward to the day of the wedding with much excitement.

Meanwhile, in the Fletcher family mansion...

“That’s amazing! We should thank the Gods for this!” Isaac Fletcher exclaimed in high spirits.

Lauren’s grandfather Jenson hobbled over on his walking stick, trembling in excitement. “What? Master Lee is going to attend the wedding as well?”

“That’s right, Dad!” Isaac announced, his voice trembling. “His presence is worth more than any other celebrity! Only someone like Benny Quinton will be able to compare to him!”

He respected a foreigner more than his own countrymen.

“Hahaha! We truly have been blessed by God!” Jenson exclaimed, with a hearty laugh as he gazed at Lauren lovingly.

“That’s right!” Sam affirmed as happy tears rolled down her face. “My daughter has become a general manager and is now getting married to a Keerean. Furthermore, a well-respected Master is attending her wedding too! I’m so happy for you, Lauren!”

“Wow, imagine what would have happened if she had chosen to marry Levi instead...” Isaac sighed.

“That would be terrible! That scumbag doesn’t deserve my granddaughter!” Jenson growled out loud.

When Levi chose to marry Zoey all those years back, Jenson had taken it upon himself to beg, in front of Joseph Garrison, only to be humiliated by the entire Garrison family.

He would never forget the shame that he had felt that day.

The Protector Chapter 528

“Before I forget, please ensure that you have invited Joseph Garrison to the wedding! I need him to know what my granddaughter deserves!” Jenson added.

I need to get my revenge!

“Of course! I’ll pay a visit to the Garrison family right now!” Isaac agreed, as he got into his car and made his way to the Garrison family’s home.

The Garrison family had lost all of their assets to Levi, all except the house they had stayed in.

They were basically a bunch of forgotten souls.

The luxury cars that had used to line their yard were all gone, now replaced by motorcycles and a Mercedes Benz.

Isaac felt thoroughly refreshed, looking at such a gloomy sight.

Oh, how the tables have turned!

Don’t you remember how you had used to humiliate us as though we were your slaves?

Everything is different now!

You’ve fallen from grace, while the Fletchers have risen up to the top!

Isaac laughed at the thought of that.

Doesn't it sound ridiculous?

"Hm? Isaac? Why are you here?" a voice ran out.

Isaac looked up to see Levi's adoptive parents, Ben and Winnie, walking towards him with confused expressions on their faces.

They approached him with much trepidation.

"Where's Joseph Garrison?" Isaac scoffed, with his hands in his pockets.

He could not bear to look at Joseph in the eyes for the longest time, but everything was different now.

He no longer saw Joseph Garrison as a threat.

Soon, the entire Garrison family gathered themselves in the yard.

"What's wrong, Mr. Fletcher?" Joseph asked apprehensively.

Ever since their reputation had gone down the drain, the Garrison family's self-confidence had spiraled downhill.

Joseph kept his head down as much as possible, as a result.

"I'm here to announce that my daughter's wedding is in five days' time! All of you must ensure that you are present on that day!" Isaac ordered.

"Congratulations! We'll definitely be there! Thank you for the invite," Joseph thanked with a smile.

Isaac's grin grew wider. "Do you know how capable my daughter is? Her year-end bonuses, as the general manager of the Erudia Branch of Triple Group, could be as high as two hundred million! Her fiancé is a member of the Lee

family, the founders of Triple Group! He holds at least ten billion worth of shares! Even you couldn't compare to them at your peak!"

"That's amazing!" Joseph exclaimed. "Ms. Lauren is a genius!"

"Glad to see that you've acknowledged it!" Isaac proclaimed smugly as he glanced at the other members of the Garrison family. "Don't you remember how arrogant you had looked when we had begged you not to void the marriage agreement?"

Joseph could feel his cheeks heating up in shame.

He's striking back...

"Oh, by the way, didn't you say that Levi deserves better than my daughter? Look what has happened since then! Hahaha!" Isaac continued forth with a laugh.

However, his smile melted off his face swiftly, as he had yet to receive an answer from the Garrisons.

They had been replying enthusiastically to his every statement, yet they fell silent the moment he had mentioned Levi.

Their faces began to darken as they glared at Isaac.

Isaac began to get annoyed. "What? Are you still skeptical of my daughter?"

Ben and Winnie exchanged looks and nodded. "That's right! Levi deserves better!" they cried out in unison.

The others remained silent, but their stand was clear.

Lauren Fletcher is no match for Levi!

He's the God of War, for goodness' sake!

Your daughter doesn't deserve a man like him!

The Protector Chapter 529

“What?”

Isaac flew into a rage the moment he had heard those words.

“What makes you think that Levi is better than my daughter?” he demanded, jabbing his finger into Ben’s face. “So what if he had used to be a tycoon in the city? My daughter leads the Triple Group! Don’t you know how powerful Triple Group is? Don’t you know who my daughter is getting married to? Levi Garrison is nothing compared to my daughter, and that’s a hard fact!”

“Hahaha!” Ben jeered. “Oh, Isaac, why are you so proud of the fact that your daughter is getting married to a foreigner, and is sucking up to foreign executives? Is it really something to boast about? Besides, it doesn’t matter what position she holds in her company. She’ll never be good enough for my son,” he added with a cold grin.

“That’s right! What’s there to be proud of, about working for a Keerean company? Dream on!”

The crowd buzzed around Isaac, as they continued to hurl insults at him.

Despite all the despicable things that they had done, along with the questionable morals that some of the members had, the Garrisons were die-hard patriots.

They did not see marrying a Keerean as something to be proud of.

Isaac, on the other hand, stomped his foot in anger.

“How dare you! Things are different now! Stop being so arrogant!” he hollered.

“Isaac, we’re more than happy to be able to attend your daughter’s wedding,” Ben announced. “However, Levi can’t be there. You’ll regret it if he shows up.”

“That’s right!” Winnie agreed. “You’ll be the one who will come to regret your actions, rather than him!”

“He’ll outshine everyone at the wedding! He’ll make your entire family regret everything!” Joseph added.

However, Isaac refused to believe them.

“I don’t care! He’d better show up at the wedding!” he yelled. “Just how is he going to outshine my future son-in-law?”

He did not believe in superstitions or prophecies.

After he had departed, Ben sighed and muttered, “What an idiot! He’s making the same mistakes as we had!”

That night, at Bayview Garden...

“Levi, look! The girl that you had gotten set up with is getting married to that handsome Keerean boy!” Zoey exclaimed with a smile.

“I know that. Everyone’s talking about it,” Levi announced, with a slight hint of annoyance in his voice.

“Are you regretting everything now? Lauren’s so pretty and talented!” Zoey asked, staring into his eyes.

“Since when did you learn how to get on my nerves?” Levi quipped as he reached out to tickle her.

Zoey evaded his tickle attacks and pleaded for mercy. "I'm sorry, darling! By the way, did you get an invite to her wedding?"

"That's right. I've already confirmed our attendance," he answered.

Zoey clenched her fists. "We need to take this seriously. I'll buy you a set of clothes tomorrow."

"There's no need for that!" Levi uttered with a smile. "I already have the perfect outfit for the occasion."

He had decided to show up at Lauren's wedding, donning his God of War attire.

The Protector Chapter 530

“That’s great!” Zoey exclaimed, nodding profusely. “I think that I’ll decide to stay out of this. The Fletchers aren’t particularly fond of me.”

“Haha!” Levi laughed. “She’s like a sister to me. She’s not someone whom I’ll marry.”

Zoey grinned. “Oh, darling, you’re so ignorant! She doesn’t see you as a big brother! Why don’t you make it up to her with a gift? Here, take this!”

She handed him a credit card, earning her a few affectionate head rubs from Levi.

Only Zoey could be this kind...

Any other woman would have barred me from attending any wedding, let alone the wedding of someone whom my parents had set me up with, all those years ago!

I won’t even receive an allowance to buy gifts with!

Levi smiled. “Why didn’t I think of that? Thanks for the money! I’ll make sure to buy the best gift that I can find.”

Afterward, he told Azure Dragon to prepare a gift for Lauren at the wedding.

Meanwhile, Triple Group began to infiltrate every sector of the North Hampton economy, prior to the wedding so as to wriggle their way back into the market.

The wedding was nothing more than a tool to establish their footing in North Hampton.

Everything that they had been doing was nothing more than the prelude to absolute control!

On the other hand, Levi told his forces to hold still and leave them alone.

Four days passed in a blink, and it was soon the day before Lauren and Lee Jung-jin's wedding.

The Fletcher family was ready for the wedding, and Bayfront Manor was transformed into a wedding venue.

"I bet that no one would want to miss out on my daughter's wedding!" Isaac joked, with a proud laugh. "Take a seat, everyone!"

"You'll officially belong to the Lee family tomorrow, Lauren," Jenson congratulated her happily. "You're making us proud!"

The Fletchers beamed at one another.

Meanwhile, Lauren stood before the mirror, trying out gown after gown as she tried to pick one that would bring out her beauty the most.

I'll be the star of the show tomorrow!

I'll show them how irreplaceable I truly am!

I'll make them regret every insult that they've uttered!

"Who would you like to see the most tomorrow, Lauren?" Sam asked.

"Levi Garrison!" Lauren answered, a cold glint flashing across her eyes.

The Fletchers knew how hurt Lauren had been when Levi had chosen Zoey over her, hence, her love for him had turned into hatred, as time went by.

She despised him.

She told herself that she would work hard to outshine everyone, in order to prove herself worthy.

She had been waiting for the day where she would rise above Zoey and Levi and be able to look down upon them.

I'll make him regret everything!

I'll walk down the aisle with a man a hundred times better than you right before your eyes!

You don't deserve to be my husband!

Just you wait!

Lauren wished that time could pass faster.

She longed to see the looks of remorse on Levi's and his family members' faces.

The Fletchers continued their lighthearted banter as Jenson turned on the TV.

"According to an overseas sources, a necklace named the 'Love of the World' was sold at an auction for eight hundred million. The buyer was rumored to be an Erudian, as the necklace is currently being shipped towards Erudia."

"I heard that the necklace is used as a wedding gift! It's represented pure and innocent love for centuries. I wonder which lucky Erudian bride it's going to?"

The news piqued the interest of the Fletchers, particularly Lauren.

Lee Jung-jin had prepared a limited edition necklace, as a token of love, which had cost him millions.

All her friends had been awestruck by its beauty.

The Protector Chapter 531

Her face fell, the moment she saw the necklace onscreen.

I wish it belonged to me...

I'll be the prettiest bride on Earth if I wore that to my wedding!

"Whatever. I won't be the one who is getting that necklace," she uttered, sighing dejectedly.

Before breaktime, Lauren gave Levi a call to remind him about the wedding.

"Don't worry, I won't forget about it!" he assured her. "I've even gotten a gift for you!"

"Gift?" Lauren scoffed. What gift can you even afford?

"You'll see tomorrow!" Levi proclaimed with a grin.

The next day...

The wedding of Lauren and Lee Jung-jin was in full swing, and Bayfront Manor was filled with excited guests.

Luxury car after luxury car pulled up in front of the entrance as hordes of guests alighted from them, carrying mountains of gifts in their arms.

"The Yalemans of North Hampton wishes the bride and groom all the best for their future endeavors!"

“We are the Jeffersons of North Hampton...”

“Greetings! I am Dylan Hunt, CEO of Skyward Group...”

...

To the Fletchers’ surprise, none of their own contacts showed up at the wedding.

“Hahaha! It looks like we’re finally getting noticed by the nobility!” Jenson announced, with a wide grin.

“Glenn Rogers, master of the Rogers family!”

“Eric Robinson, master of the Robinson family!”

“Wallace Henderson, master of the Henderson family!”

...

The Fletchers stared in shock, as more guests arrived at the manor.

All of them were the masters of the most prominent families of North Hampton!

They represented the cream of the crop in North Hampton.

In particular, the Fletchers rejoiced, when Glenn Rogers had appeared at the entrance of the manor.

Glenn was the richest man in North Hampton, and the Fletchers had not expected him to show up at Lauren and Lee Jung-jin’s wedding.

“Haha! Since when did we become so popular?” Jenson queried, his breath quickening.

The Fletchers looked on, with their hearts thumping against their chests.

Isaac grinned. "Calm down, everyone! I'm sure that they're here because of Triple Group!"

"That's right! I bet Triple Group had invited them!"

Everyone relaxed upon hearing Isaac's words.

As time went on, more prominent figures of North Hampton joined the party, making the grin on Lauren's face grow wider.

I would never have guessed that my wedding would be such an important occasion to these North Hampton tycoons!

"Do you see that, Levi Garrison?" Lauren muttered to herself gleefully. "This is how my wedding looks like! Even people like Winston Gonzales and Glenn Rogers are here. You will never be good enough for me!"

She searched the crowd for him, but unfortunately, it was to no avail.

However, the Garrison family had already arrived.

"Hahaha! Look who's here? The once-glorious Garrison family!" Isaac sneered.

The crowd turned around to face the Garrisons.

"Why are they so shameless? Weren't they the ones who had voided the marriage agreement between Levi Garrison and Lauren Fletcher?"

"Oh, how the tables have turned! How embarrassing!"

"I wouldn't have dared to come if I had been one of them!"

...

Joseph pretended not to hear the various insults hurled their way.

“Congratulations, Ms. Fletcher! I hope that you have no regrets about this,” Joseph uttered, with a smile.

“What do you mean ‘no regrets about this’? Are you trying to say that she’ll regret not marrying Levi? How ridiculous!” the crowd scoffed.

“Don’t worry. I won’t regret this,” Lauren affirmed with a grin, before changing the subject. “By the way, where is Levi?”

The Protector Chapter 532

Ben smiled. "He'll be here soon."

He's the VIP of this wedding, after all!

"You should get ready for what's going to happen next. I don't want you to faint on the altar," Winnie added.

"Not just you, Ms. Fletcher. Tell your family to prepare themselves too," Joseph proclaimed. "Especially you, Mr. Jensen Fletcher! I hope that your heart can handle it!"

The Fletchers flew into a rage almost immediately.

"What the hell do you mean, Joseph Garrison? Are you cursing my dad?" Isaac yelled, jabbing his finger into Joseph's face. "We aren't the same as we were before! My son-in-law is a shareholder of Triple Group, and my daughter is in charge of the Erudian branch of Triple Group! What about you? You're nothing but a bunch of dogs!"

"What makes you think that Levi is better than Lauren? Ridiculous!"

The Fletchers jeered at the Garrisons relentlessly.

Lauren scoffed. "Thank you for your well wishes. In fact, I think that Levi should be the one preparing himself for the shock he's about to receive. My husband is a million times better than him, so shouldn't he be the one who's regretting everything?"

Ben burst into laughter. "Oh, trust me! You're going to be the one who will regret everything," he murmured flippantly. "Besides, our sole fate depends on Levi. He

can make us the richest family of Quebec if he'd wanted to, let alone North Hampton!"

The Garrisons looked at the Fletchers smugly.

Despite everything Levi had claimed, the Garrisons still regarded him as one of them.

They were proud of him!

"Hahaha!"

The crowd burst into raucous laughter.

"What's wrong with them? What makes them think that we don't know how Levi Garrison's doing?"

"He's just a useless scumbag that goes around beating up security guards!"

The jeering continued, as Lauren crossed her arms across her chest and stared at the Garrisons, mockingly.

Levi is nothing when compared to me!

"What's wrong, darling?" Lee Jung-jin asked, walking over to join her.

Dressed smartly in a suit, he outshone every other man in the manor, the moment he had stepped in.

"Wow! He's so handsome! Isn't he a shareholder of Triple Group and a descendent of Triple Group's founder?"

"I'm so envious of Lauren!"

...

The crowd buzzed in excitement and surprise, and it began to further inflate Lauren's ego.

Do you see that?

Everyone admires my husband!

You'll never compare to him, Levi Garrison!

Several tycoons of North Hampton, some of them no less affluent than Joseph Garrison at his peak, crowded around Lee Jung-jin, in an attempt to offer him their name cards.

Lee Jung-jin caught everyone's attention, the moment he had appeared.

"Lauren Fletcher is so lucky! How did she manage to find someone like him, after getting dumped by Levi Garrison?"

"I bet Joseph Garrison regrets voiding the agreement all those years ago!"

The Protector Chapter 533

“Look at how the Garrisons are doing now! How shameless of them!”

The crowd smirked at them.

“They said that I’ll regret everything once I had seen Levi!” Lauren whispered to Lee Jung-jin, who soon burst into laughter.

“You’re so funny! Even the son of the richest man in North Hampton won’t compare to me, let alone someone as insignificant as Levi Garrison!” he announced, glancing at the Garrisons. “Just ignore them, darling. Those pieces of trash aren’t worth your attention!”

He did not even regard the Garrisons as people, as he believed that they were nothing, compared to Triple Group, even while at their peak.

Lauren looked at the Garrisons smugly, although their stony expressions had succeeded in causing her annoyance.

Wait... something feels amiss.

Shouldn’t they be wallowing in sorrow, now that they’ve witnessed everything?

Why aren’t they saying anything?

The Fletchers were confused as well.

Meanwhile, a motorcade was journeying on its way, from South City to North Hampton, carrying the VIPs of the wedding- Park Cheon-shin and Lee Jae-shik.

They were headed for the wedding, but their ultimate goal was to claim the entire North Hampton market as their own.

However, their convoy was stopped, the moment they had entered North Hampton.

Seth Wilson approached their car warily.

“What’s going on?” Park Cheon-shin asked, with a displeased expression upon his face.

They had a bad feeling about this.

“May I ask who is the leader of Triple Group?” Seth queried.

“It’s me. What’s wrong?” Park Cheon-shin asked, as he alighted from his car.

“Did you receive the warnings issued during the negotiations?” Seth asked.

“Yes, I did,” Park Cheon-shin answered, as he stared straight into Seth’s eyes.

“So? What is the decision? Are you here to apologize?” Seth questioned with a smile.

“Shut up!” Park Cheon-shin yelled. “I refuse to be intimidated by your fearmongering!”

“That’s right! No one has ever dared to threaten us!” the others added angrily.

Seth shook his head, appearing exasperated. “It looks as though you’re not going to apologize... I’m pretty sure that my boss has made it very clear that this is the last chance that you’re going to get before he kicks you out of the country!”

“Hahaha!” the party from Triple Group laughed.

They stared at Seth as though he was a lunatic.

He's telling us to get out of Erudia?

That simply won't happen!

"Hahaha! Tell your boss to watch out for us! There's no way he'll be able to kick us out of Erudia!" Park Cheon-shin scoffed.

What's there to fear, with Lee Jae-shik around?

I'll get rid of Morris Group once and for all!

When the motorcade finally arrived at Bayfront Manor, the crowd erupted in a loud applause.

That's the Chief Manager of the Triple Group Erudia Branch!

The net worth of Triple Group in South City was around a hundred billion, which was more than any corporation in South City.

Factoring in the extra hundred billion from the Yates, Triple Group was worth around two hundred billion in total.

In layman terms, Park Cheon-shin was the richest man in Quebec.

The Fletcher family held him in great respects, and was proud of the fact that he was going to become Lauren's uncle-in-law.

We're going to be rich!

Everyone's going to respect us!

“May we welcome Mr. Lee Jae-shik, Master of Taekwondo and the chief instructor of the Keerean army!” someone shouted, as Lee Jae-shik stepped into the manor.

The excitement in the manor was at its peak, and tears were streaming down Lauren’s face, out of pure happiness.

Even someone as well-respected as Lee Jae-shik is here to attend my wedding...

You don’t deserve me, Levi Garrison!

The Protector Chapter 534

Even the noble ones like Glenn Rogers and Winston Gonzales stood up, to welcome Lee Jae-shik to the venue.

Someone like him was superior to all of them, even if he was not an Erudian.

They had to be as polite as possible.

Even the Garrisons started to grow worried.

If Levi had not been the God of War, people might actually trample over him to get to Lee Jae-shik.

The Fletchers have certainly found themselves a powerful ally!

Meanwhile, the Fletchers were elated to witness the standing ovation that was made for Lee Jae-shik.

In particular, Lauren was feeling proud of herself.

How much better could a wedding get?

I'm the luckiest woman in the world!

"You're going to become part of the Triple Group family from today onwards, Lauren!" Lee Jae-shik praised. "Remember your status and try not to entangle yourself in trivial matters!"

His words were a confirmation of Lauren's new title.

He had meant to remind her that as part of the nobility, she was not to interact with people from the lower ranks, as they were not worthy of her attention.

“As for the Fletchers, we’ll be more than happy to provide you with any assistance that you may require in the future!” Lee Jae-shik announced, turning over to the Fletchers.

Boom!

It was as though a meteorite made out of pure luck and prosperity had descended upon the Fletchers, almost making them pass out in happiness.

Jenson turned to Joseph and yelled, “Didn’t you say that we’ll never be worthy of your attention? Look at us now! Look at how much we’ve changed since then!”

The Fletchers finally received the sweet revenge that they had craved.

Who knew that we would be able to rise above you one day?

“Thank you for ditching me, Levi! If not for you, I wouldn’t have been able to find myself such an amazing husband to spend the rest of my life with!” Lauren cried, happy tears streaming down her face.

She turned to the Garrisons and continued, “Thank you too, for voiding the agreement and for setting me free of that nonsense! Thank you so much!”

...

The Garrisons glared at her.

‘Thank you’?

You’re merely insulting us!

“Where’s Levi?” Lauren asked.

She had long imagined him kneeling on the ground and begging for her to change her mind, while bawling his eyes out.

Soon, it was time for the wedding ceremony, and the guests took their seats to watch.

The Garrisons picked a corner and settled down, but the Fletchers forcibly pushed them to the front to humiliate them.

To make matters worse, Park Cheon-shin and Lee Jae-shik were right next to them.

“Five more minutes! Please stand by, Mr. Lee and Ms. Fletcher!” the emcee announced.

Lauren peered off into the distance, hoping to catch a glimpse of Levi, when he was to arrive.

He has to be here!

I must humiliate him!

He can’t just skip the wedding!

Suddenly, the butler ran over and proclaimed, “Ms. Fletcher, someone has arrived with a gift for you!”

“Huh? Just accept it then. Why are you panicking?” she asked, frowning.

“The person insists that you head over to receive it in person,” the butler replied.

“Alright then. Tell them to come in,” she agreed.

Soon, a private helicopter appeared in the skies above the lawn, attracting the attention of every guest.

Lauren's jaw dropped open, out of shock.

What kind of gift requires a helicopter to deliver it?

The Protector Chapter 535

The six men in suits got off the helicopter; one of them was holding an exquisite gift box.

The others cautiously surrounded him as if they were afraid the box would fall.

Looking at how careful they were with the gift box, it seemed like it contained something priceless.

The crowd was puzzled.

What gift is it?

Everyone's eyes zeroed in on these men.

"I know them! They're from the internationally renowned Skywolf Security Company, which only escorts items worth hundreds of millions. They even escorted this item via helicopter. Looks like it's at least five hundred million!" exclaimed Park Cheon-shin in shock when he noticed the wolf logo on the men's clothes.

"Wow!"

Everyone gasped when they heard him.

A five hundred-million gift?

What kind of treasure is this?

Lauren was exhilarated yet nervous.

I'm not so influential that my friends and classmates would give me something so expensive, right?

The most expensive gift I received today is only a million.

Soon, the six men escorting the gift box approached Lauren.

"Ms. Fletcher, please open this!"

The man holding the gift box presented it to Lauren.

"Open it and see what's inside," urged the crowd.

With trembling hands, Lauren carefully lifted the top of the exquisitely designed box.

"Thud!"

Everyone was dumbfounded.

Holding their breath, they all fixed their eyes on the box.

There was a necklace lying in the box, with a huge dazzling sapphire encrusting it.

It sparkled so brightly that everyone could barely open their eyes.

"What?"

"My goodness!"

After taking a closer look at the necklace, her eyes bulged. Lauren was so shocked; she felt like she had been electrocuted.

The reason was that the gift was the famed Love of the World, which had recently been auctioned off overseas for eight hundred million.

The necklace, made ten centuries ago, symbolized the purity of love.

It was the greatest testimony of love!

“Ms. Fletcher, let me introduce to you: This is the legendary treasure——Love of the World. It was bought for eight hundred million by an esteemed guest during the auction. It is definitely authentic! Here are the certifications of authenticity from various international organizations.”

As he spoke, someone passed her a huge pile of certifications.

Lauren was so excited that tears streamed down her cheeks.

“Who is it?” asked Lauren emotionally.

“He doesn’t want to reveal his name. However, he’ll be coming to the wedding ceremony later. Here, he wishes in advance that you, Ms. Fletcher, will be blessed with love. This necklace represents his well-wishes for you.”

After passing her the gift, the men left instantly.

“Who could it be?”

This was the question lingering in everyone’s mind.

Lauren was even more curious.

Amongst her friends and family, who would give her such an expensive gift?

After thinking about it, she still could not identify anyone that fit the criterion.

Forget it.

Isn't he going to appear later?

I'll just wait for him.

The Fletchers were overjoyed for the ultra-luxurious gift that Lauren received.

"Looks like the rise of the Fletcher family is unstoppable, huh?"

"Never in my dreams would I expect someone to give an eight hundred-million gift at my daughter's wedding."

The Fletchers were all smiles.

"But who is this person? Is it someone with a crush on my daughter?" mumbled Isaac to himself.

"Perhaps. I can't figure out who it is, either."

Despite racking their brains, no one could figure out who had sent the gift.

At that moment, the Garrison family exchanged glances with one another and laughed.

"What are you laughing about? You look like you know the mystery sender!" grumbled Isaac furiously.

"Yeah, we know who sent it!" admitted Joseph.

The Protector Chapter 536

Before Isaac could say something, Jenson scoffed coldly, “Cut the crap! If the Garrisons know such a person, why would you fall to such a miserable state?”

The Fletchers decided to ignore the Garrisons.

To them, the Garrisons were like clowns.

We only invited the Garrison family to the wedding to humiliate them. They wouldn't be here if not for that reason.

Naturally, they don't have the right to speak here.

Everyone eagerly anticipated the arrival of the person who gave the Love of the World, especially the Fletchers.

Next, it was time for the guests to give their cash gifts for the wedding.

After the Fletcher family's status rose, many of the cash gifts they received amounted to tens or hundreds of thousands.

An example was Glenn Rogers, who gifted a hundred thousand.

Park Cheon-shin even gave a cash gift of ten million, causing Jenson and the rest to laugh in delight.

They earned twenty to thirty million just by organizing a wedding.

Not to forget, there was even the eight hundred-million necklace, too.

They profited so much from today!

After everyone finished giving their gifts, Hailey, the supervisor of the North Hampton Bank headquarters, walked over.

“Ms. Stinson, why are you here?”

Many people present recognized Hailey.

The Fletcher family greeted her respectfully as they would be interacting a lot with the headquarters in the future.

“Are you here to attend my daughter’s wedding, too, Ms. Stinson?” asked Isaac with a smile.

Hailey shook her head. “Hello, Ms. Lauren. I’m here to pass a guest’s wedding gift to you. As it’s very expensive, I came here myself.”

“Huh?”

Lauren was shocked yet delighted.

How expensive must the gift be that warranted such a high-ranking supervisor from the headquarters to make an in-person visit?

“You’ve received the Love of the World, right?” asked Hailey with a smile.

“Huh? Yes, I’ve received it...”

Lauren was astounded, not expecting the person who gave her the necklace to give a cash gift, too.

“He already sent me a gift. Is he still giving me a cash gift?”

Lauren felt a little embarrassed.

“Of course. They’re separate matters, anyway.”

Hailey took out a cheque and read, “The person will be giving you a cash gift of 888888888!”

When Lauren saw the long string of numbers on the cheque, she almost fainted from the shock.

The cash gift is more than eight hundred eighty million?

What a grand spectacle!

What kind of person is he?

“Here’s the cheque. My task is complete!”

Hailey and a fellow bank staff then left.

Lauren held the cheque with trembling hands, confirming over and over again that there were nine “8”s written on it.

Hailey had delivered the cheque to her personally, so it was definitely not forged!

Oh my!

Who is it?

He gave me an eight hundred-million necklace and a cash gift of an even greater amount.

The Fletchers were over the moon.

With such a friend, they felt extremely proud of themselves.

The Fletcher family would be the most powerful family in North Hampton in the future!

This time, even Park Cheon-shin and Lee Jae-shik were stunned.

This person is so extravagant, having spent nearly two billion in one go.

His gifts indicate that he must be extremely wealthy.

Wait, something's not right!

Park Cheon-shin frowned.

He had investigated the Fletchers' background thoroughly. They were not associated with anyone so powerful!

He had even investigated their distant relatives, but no such person popped out.

Who is it?

Lauren felt that everything was like a dream.

Do I have a friend like that, who would give such grand gifts at my wedding?

She urgently wanted to know the identity of that mysterious person.

"Ma'am, it's time for the wedding. Do we start now?" asked the host.

"Wait for a while! He hasn't arrived yet," replied Lauren.

Although she did not know who it was, the wedding could only begin after he arrived.

Oh, right.

Why hasn't Levi come?

The Protector Chapter 537

“Does Levi still dare to come here and cause a ruckus? He probably returned after being intimidated by the many luxurious cars parked at the entrance.”

“That’s right! Levi is a smart guy. He knows that if he attends the wedding, he’ll definitely be humiliated. How would he still dare to come?”

“What a pity! I cannot witness the scene of Levi bawling his eyes out in regret.”

Isaac and the rest shook their heads helplessly.

This was a pity to Lauren, too.

Why isn’t Levi coming?

I want to show him the necklace and the cheque.

Then, I’ll tell him personally that this is my wedding!

When Ben heard them, he scoffed coldly, “Don’t worry, Levi will come. He’ll definitely not miss this wedding! However, you should mentally prepare yourselves. I’m afraid that you won’t be able to bear the shock!”

“Shut up! Don’t say anything.”

When Isaac heard his words, he became furious and wanted to beat Ben up.

At that moment, a few ordinary cars arrived at the entrance of the villa.

The receptionist at the entrance saw the cars and laughed coldly. “How could someone with a car like this dare to attend such a grand wedding?”

However, his expression froze upon seeing the people getting off the car.

It was a group of extremely prestigious people—the leaders of North Hampton.

When they arrived at the wedding, a huge commotion erupted amongst the crowd.

Other than Park Cheon-shin and a few others who did not know what was going on, everyone else stood up.

“Mr. Nielsen, why are you here?”

“Even the three deputy captains are here, too. Secretary Davies, Captain Fields, Director Evans...”

Jenson almost staggered to the floor after seeing the arrival of Jesse Nielsen and the major leaders of North Hampton.

Do such prominent people attend weddings, too?

Isaac and the others widened their eyes in disbelief.

“Congratulations on your nuptials, Ms. Fletcher! We’re here today on personal account. You don’t have to be nervous,” explained Jesse with a smile.

Lauren had to pinch her cheeks to confirm that she was not dreaming.

Even the leaders of North Hampton came to attend my wedding?

What a huge honor!

Jesse Nielsen and the rest greeted Lee Jung-jin and congratulated the groom.

“We’ve heard of you, Mr. Park...”

Jesse and the rest then greeted Park Cheon-shin.

The Fletchers exchanged glances; they now understood what was happening.

Jesse and the others came for the wedding because of the Triple Group.

With this new understanding, Lauren instantly wondered if the person who gave her the necklace was also related to the Triple Group.

Did the Triple Group send him here?

And why hasn’t Levi arrived yet?

He’s missing out on so much.

When Lauren thought of him, she called Levi instantly.

“Are you here yet?” asked Lauren.

“I’m reaching. There’s a traffic jam on the roads. I’m reaching soon!” explained Levi.

“It’s great that you’re coming!” said Lauren with a grin.

“I’ll definitely make a grand entrance at your wedding and treat it with utmost importance!”

Levi really treated her like a younger sister. After all, she always stuck to him when they were children.

After being reminded by Zoey, Levi treated this wedding with great importance.

Soon, a few tanks stopped at the entrance of the villa.

Two rows of soldiers dashed into the wedding venue, lining the two sides of the red carpet.

This sudden scene shocked everyone. Lauren also stared at the entrance in surprise.

After that, some people wearing military uniforms appeared at the entrance.

A towering figure appeared, surrounded by a few people.

He was wearing a green military uniform, with five golden stars embroidered on his shoulder!

The Protector Chapter 538

When the two rows of soldiers entered the venue, everyone held their breath and stared in silence.

Even Lee Jae-shik and Park Cheon-shin's expressions froze, their eyes widened in shock.

Why did soldiers suddenly barge into the wedding venue?

Everyone, including Jesse and the rest, stood up and focused their attention on the entrance.

They knew who the person was.

The gloomy expressions on the Garrisons' faces had disappeared; they were now grinning brightly.

"He's finally here!"

One after another, men in military uniforms appeared. All had stars embroidered on their shoulder pads.

Other than Percy who had two stars, there were five men with one star on their shoulders. The Kings of War!

This was an extremely shocking sight.

Lee Jae-shik understood what this meant.

“Are they here to congratulate my daughter for her wedding?” exclaimed Isaac in surprise, so overjoyed that his eyes were almost popping out of their sockets.

This was the first thought in the Fletchers’ minds, too.

Everyone thought that the person who gave Lauren then Love of the World and the eight hundred and eighty million cash gift finally appeared.

“Wow, I never expected the person to be a high-ranking military officer!”

“This is the most honorable moment of the Fletcher family!” yelled Isaac, so delighted that he burst into tears.

The most prominent people in the military, government, and business had all gathered at Lauren’s wedding.

As the Fletchers were all wiping their tears away emotionally... a question surfaced. Who was the one who sent the gifts?

Lauren stood there in a daze, still unable to figure it out. After all, she had no connections with the military...

Lee Jae-shik kept trembling as cold sweat formed on his palms.

He feared meeting Erudia soldiers the most...

He never thought he would be confronted by the five Kings of War!

Park Cheon-shin and Lee Jung-jin were stunned.

A mere Fletcher family managed to mobilize the top leaders of North Hampton. And now, even a few Kings of War have arrived.

Are they really the Fletchers?

They had investigated the Fletchers thoroughly. However, the Fletchers they knew had a clean history with no powerful forces backing them.

This made the Fletchers easier to control.

However, it now seemed like they were the most powerful family in the city!

Jesse, Xavier, and the rest walked towards the newly arrived guests instantly.

Taking a deep breath, Jenson wiped his tears away and hurriedly rushed towards them. Meanwhile, the Fletcher family followed behind him.

Even Lauren was extremely excited and nervous.

“Oh, right. Isn’t Levi coming? He mustn’t come at this juncture! If he offends these people, he’ll be doomed.”

While Lauren followed the rest, she made a call quickly.

Although the call went through, no one picked up!

“Pick it up quickly! What are you doing, Levi?” muttered Lauren anxiously.

What made her even more nervous was that a ringing tone sounded somewhere in front of her.

“It can’t be that coincidental, can it? Did he really arrive at this moment?”

Lauren was almost frozen to the spot.

“Levi, pick it up quickly!”

She was so anxious that she could barely think straight.

Lauren soon arrived in front of everyone else and could clearly see the faces of Percy, Azure Dragon, and the rest.

It was really the five Kings of War!

Lee Jae-shik took a deep breath, wishing for nothing more than to hide in a hole.

At that moment, someone strode in, accompanied by a ringing tone on his phone.

Lauren closed her eyes in despair...

Why did Levi come at this moment?

Damn it!

“Oh right! I should turn off my phone quickly!”

Lauren responded in time and hung up the call instantly.

However, when she raised her head, she saw an extremely familiar face.

Levi has come!

The Protector Chapter 539

“Le...”

The Fletchers and everyone else saw Levi, too. However, when they were about to call him, they realized that something was amiss.

The Kings of War all parted and formed a path for Levi.

The scariest part was that Levi was not wearing a suit!

Instead...

What?

He's wearing military uniform?

When Lauren and the rest saw Levi in military uniform, their jaws dropped in shock.

They widened their eyes to take a closer look, repeatedly trying to confirm that they were not dreaming.

Levi was really wearing a military uniform.

Then, the hundreds of people present turned their attention to Levi's shoulder pads to check out his military rank.

One...

Two...

Three...

Four...

What?

Five?

Five stars?

Five whole stars?

A five-star God of War?

There's only one five-star God of War in the entire Erudia—the protector of the nation!

What?

Is Levi the God of War of Erudia?

This... This...

By the time everyone figured out what all this meant, their expressions changed drastically and they stood stupefied on the spot.

Lee Jae-shik glanced at Levi, then at Kirin and the rest.

The God of War was always accompanied by his Kings of War, who were brigadier generals in their own right.

There was no doubt that Levi was the God of War!

He was the God of War who defeated the Eighteen-Nation Alliance with his unparalleled wit and power. He was the one feared by all nations in the world!

The God of War, the nightmare of mercenaries all over the world, the most terrifying presence known to foreign countries—and the very person Lee Jae-shik feared the most!

Oh my, how could I meet the God of War here?

Thud!

When Lee Jae-shik met Levi's gaze, he could not hold himself back anymore and dropped to his knees.

He looked nothing like the most powerful Taekwondo fighter.

Even Park Cheon-shin was utterly terrified.

Levi is actually the God of War?

The only five-star God of War in Erudia?

I understand now!

I understand everything!

The Morris Group had the God of War backing them all along!

Otherwise, why couldn't I find out the backer's identity?

That also explains how the Morris Group could conquer the entire North Hampton in such a short time...

...and why Scott failed so terribly?

It's all because of the God of War...

No wonder he dares to threaten the Triple Group like that!

We're doomed.

This is the end of us.

Park Cheon-shin's legs weakened and he fell to his knees with a loud thump.

His entire body was drenched in cold sweat.

Everyone was flabbergasted.

What's going on?

Why are the two prominent members of Triple group kneeling in fear?

Jesse and the rest walked towards Levi and addressed him simultaneously,
"Greetings, God of War, Sir!"

This was a blatant announcement to everyone that he was really the God of War!

"God of War? Seriously?"

"I actually met the God of War in my lifetime?"

A huge commotion erupted amongst the crowd with everyone staring at Levi in utter admiration.

He's Erudia's God of War!

He's everyone's faith!

The Garrison family felt extremely proud when they saw this scene.

No matter what, Levi was still from the Garrison family, and was once part of the Garrisons!

Joseph and the rest glanced at the Fletchers.

As if they had been struck by lightning, the Fletchers stood there paralyzed. They were lost in their thoughts and their minds became a complete blank.

Tap, tap, tap...

With his military boots, Levi walked slowly towards Lauren and Lee Jung-jin.

He said with a smile, "Congratulations on your wedding, Lauren! I hope you'll be blissful forever. You're like a little sister to me."

Lauren raised her head slowly and met Levi's gaze; her mind was still blank.

Tears streamed down her cheeks as she was unable to hold back her emotions anymore.

The Protector Chapter 540

Levi then glanced at Lee Jung-jin and said, “Since she has chosen you, you must treat her nicely!”

“I... I...”

Lee Jung-jin was still traumatized that his body quivered and his teeth chattered.

What should I say?

With Levi standing in front of me, I feel extremely intimidated.

Lee Jung-jin could barely breathe from the pressure.

In fact, he wanted so badly to kneel in front of Levi.

On the other hand, Lauren had already burst into tears.

The venue was so quiet that everyone could even hear a pin drop.

Only Lauren’s sobs echoed across the hall, sounding extremely miserable and pitiful.

The more one listened to it, the more chills one would feel running down the spine.

“Mr. Fletcher, Mrs. Fletcher. Long time no see!”

With a grin, Levi greeted everyone in the Fletcher family.

“Argh...”

Thud!

When Jenson took a closer look at Levi’s face, he screamed. But before he could finish his sentence he had already fainted.

Isaac, Sam, and the rest could barely walk anymore. Their legs were trembling.

Sweat started to form on their foreheads as they were consumed by astonishment.

How could this be?

How is this even possible?

How can Levi be the God of War?

Didn’t he go to jail?

How did he become the unparalleled God of War?

This news was too much of a shock for them and they could barely accept the fact for the time being.

They were on the verge of a mental breakdown.

If they could not bear it anymore, they might even die of heart attack!

Now, they finally understood why the Garrison family said that they would regret it...

They already knew Levi’s identity!

Hence, they had warned the Fletchers to not feel any regret and be mentally prepared.

The old Mr. Fletcher was too overwhelmed by the revelation that he fainted.

In the eyes of the Garrison family, the Fletchers had been acting like clowns!

Immense regret engulfed each and every one of the Fletchers.

The Fletchers now felt empty inside, as if they had lost something terribly important.

This mistake would be an eternal pity for them.

The Garrisons were right.

Levi had no regrets. The only ones feeling that way would be the Fletchers!

In the face of the God of War, Lee Jung-jin was a nobody.

So what if he's from the Triple Group?

How deserving is he?

He's not even worthy enough to stand beside Levi!

The Fletchers collapsed onto the ground one by one. As if all their strength had been sapped from their body, they could barely even raise their arms.

This is just too alarming!

Today will forever be a tormenting and unforgettable event to us.

On the other hand, Joseph and the rest thrust their chests out proudly.

To them, Levi was the pride of the Garrison family!

By then, Lauren had been sobbing for a long time.

The person I like is already a mighty general, the legend of the entire nation.

The person I like is the most powerful person in the world, unparalleled in all fields.

My judgment was never wrong. The person I like is a hero!

Zoey, whom I always despised, is actually the happiest woman on Earth.

Oh! How I regret it!

Lauren wailed loudly as tears streamed down her cheeks.

She knew what she had missed out on.

She also understood that she would never be worthy of this man.

No matter how much effort she spent or how accomplished she became, she would never be on par with him, let alone cause him to regret!

That would be something she would never achieve in her lifetime.

“You received the gift, right? I’m happy that you can find love.”

Levi smiled, taking out a handkerchief and wiping Lauren’s tears away.

Naturally, the gift he was referring to was the Love of the Century.

“When I was younger, I did not handle that incident well! I’m sorry for that. However, now that you’re married, I’m really relieved.”

The Protector Chapter 541

“For your marriage, I must make a grand entrance and treat it with utmost importance. You must be happy, okay?”

With that, Levi spun around and left.

“No... No... I’m not going to marry anymore.”

Suddenly, Lauren sprinted towards him like she had gone mad.

With the sound of fabric tearing, she ripped apart the outer layer of her wedding gown and tossed her hair accessories away.

Running towards Levi, she wrapped her arms tightly around him.

Thud!

The bouquet in Lee Jung-jin’s hands fell onto the ground.

He, and everyone else present, were dumbfounded.

She’s not marrying anymore?

No one expected this outcome.

In such a circumstance, however, no one dared to stop her or say anything.

“I’m not going to marry! I’m not going to marry!” cried Lauren, sounding like she was choking up.

Levi was about to break free from her sudden embrace when Lauren whispered, "Can I just hug you for a while? Just a while!"

Levi nodded.

Lauren pressed closely against Levi's back, enjoying this moment.

She understood that Levi would only belong to her for this brief moment.

Afterward, he would have nothing to do with her anymore.

Hence, all she cared about was this exact moment.

At the very least, she could feel like she had Levi to herself for the briefest moment...

Everyone stared at both of them silently.

After a minute, Lauren released her arms reluctantly as tears gushed out of her eyes again.

She was about to miss the love of her life.

"I don't want you to abandon the wedding for my sake," said Levi with his back facing her.

"No! I figured it out earlier. I don't want a marriage like this, marrying a person whom I don't even like! If I were to marry, I want to do so for love. Pure love without anything else corrupting it!" exclaimed Lauren.

Then, she looked at Lee Jung-jin. "I'm sorry, but I never liked you. I only married you for my self-interest."

"I... respect your decision. We'll call off this wedding."

With much difficulty, Lee Jung-jin reached a decision, too.

Yet another commotion immediately broke out amongst the crowd.

This wedding, which has been publicized as the wedding of the century, is being called off?

But Levi's appearance made everyone realize that the wedding had indeed been derailed.

It was the right choice to call it off!

"Okay. As long as it's your own choice."

With that, Levi left the venue.

Looking at Levi walking away into the distance, Lauren suddenly yelled, "Other than you, I'll never marry anyone else!"

Thud!

After shouting her heart out, Lauren collapsed onto the floor.

She had decided that she would not marry for life.

Now that things had progressed to this stage, it was clear that the Fletchers were doomed.

Everyone left gradually.

Before the Garrisons took their leave, they scoffed coldly, "We told you to be mentally prepared, but you ignored our advice!"

“We’re leaving, too!”

Lee Jae-shik, Park Cheon-shin and their group left in fear.

They only wanted to return to South City as soon as possible!

If they knew what was going to happen, they would not have come to North Hampton.

Suddenly, they remembered the warning Seth gave them when they got off the train.

“Oh no! Today’s the deadline!”

Cold sweat dotted Park Cheon-shin’s forehead.

However, the most terrified person was still Lee Jae-shik.

After all, the God of War was their ultimate enemy. How could they not be frightened?

Members of the Triple Group scurried away in their cars.

When they had just left the road outside the villa, their path was blocked by an olive green SUV.

Levi was sitting on the top of the car with the Kings of War all standing beside him. They all stared coldly at the cars in front of them.

“Why are you so eager to leave? Well, it’s simple to enter North Hampton, but not so easy to leave,” drawled Levi with a smirk.

The Protector Chapter 542

Park Cheon-shin, Lee Jae-shik and the rest stepped out of their car and shuffled towards Levi. Their heads drooped downward, making them look like children who had done something wrong.

Levi scanned them, his gaze landing on Lee Jae-shik.

“You escaped to Erudia?” asked Levi.

“Huh?”

Lee Jae-shik froze in fear.

He actually knows me?

“I know you. The losers from Keerea are your students, right? You’re the chief coach of the millions of Keerea’s soldiers. Instead of staying in your country, why did you come to Erudia?”

Levi suddenly raised his voice, causing Lee Jae-shik to feel so scared that his knees gave way.

“I’m wrong, God of War! I’m wrong! I shouldn’t have entered Erudia! It’s my mistake...”

Kneeling on the floor, Lee Jae-shik groveled at Levi’s feet.

His clothes were drenched in cold sweat, which dripped down his hair.

It was not because the weather was hot, but because he was utterly terrified.

The other members of Triple Group were astounded.

No one expected the nation's ultimate Taekwondo master to be so fearful!

White Tiger licked his lips. Sounding interested, he said, "I heard that he is the best Taekwondo master. I want to have a match with him!"

"King of War, White Tiger?"

Lee Jae-shik's face turned pale as he immediately identified the speaker correctly.

"I wouldn't dare! I wouldn't dare! I don't dare to do anything in Erudia..."

Lee Jae-shik was overcome with regret.

Oh, how I regret it!

Knowing the God of War is in Erudia, why did I still come?

"That's not going to happen! You shouldn't have come to Erudia. If you want to leave, you'll have to accept my punch!"

White Tiger strode towards him.

"Remember, you can only leave if you remain standing after receiving my punch," added White Tiger.

Lee Jae-shik understood that because of his identity, death was certain once he set foot in Erudia.

If he wanted to leave the country alive, he must accept this punch and put in his best effort.

“Come at me!” yelled Lee Jae-shik furiously as he stomped on the ground with a booming thud.

As expected of a master, his moves were extremely powerful.

He stood there motionlessly like an unmovable mountain.

As White Tiger came close, he suddenly accelerated and threw a punch at Lee Jae-shik.

Lee Jae-shik’s eyes sparkled. He moved as quickly as lightning.

Boom!

With a sweeping kick, the most classic move in Taekwondo, he attacked White Tiger.

Although it was an ordinary move, it was fatal when deployed by Lee Jae-shik.

The kick was so powerful that it felt like a hurricane that was demolishing everything in its path!

Boom!

A ferocious wind blew across the surroundings, causing tree branches and pebbles to fly into the sky. Everyone around them was forced to stagger a few meters backward.

Thud!

Thud!

The dozens of trees around them exploded!

Compared to this kick, White Tiger's punch looked extremely ordinary.

A deafening bang sounded when the kick and punch collided.

Lee Jae-shik was instantly sent flying backward for ten meters. After crashing into a large tree with a huge thud and splitting it into halves, he did not stand up anymore.

White Tiger stroked his bloodied fist and smiled in satisfaction. "I've finally met someone who can take up a fight!"

As Lee Jae-shik did not survive this punch, he could never leave Erudia anymore.

When everyone saw how easily the Taekwondo master was defeated, they froze in fear.

Even Park Cheon-shin pissed his pants...

"You're Park Cheon-shin, right? Did you hear my three warnings?" asked Levi as he turned his gaze to him.

"Yes! I completely understood them and will carry them out instantly!" promised Park Cheon-shin.

"It's too late. Crawl out of Erudia! I'll give you one day. If I still see anything related to Triple Group in Erudia, I'll go looking for you."

Levi sounded assertive, leaving absolutely no room for negotiation.

The Protector Chapter 543

Park Cheon-shin fainted in fear.

I'm doomed!

It's all over!

The Triple Group's ambitious plan to dominate the Erudia market has been ruined.

"We'll leave right away, God of War!" said Lee Jung-jin, quivering.

"I said, crawl out of Erudia!"

Levi's gaze was sharp and ruthless.

Alarmingly, the high-ranking officials of Triple Group were then seen sprawling across the ground as they slowly crawled out of North Hampton.

It would be an understatement to describe the crawling men as "pathetic".

After a few hours, Triple Group suddenly announced that they would return the donations worth eighty billion.

After another hour, Triple Group organized a press conference. They apologized to Erudia for the crimes they had committed, promised to return the money they had scammed and laundered, and made a promise to compensate the victims.

Everyone following the event online erupted into cheers.

The Triple Group headquarters then declared the company would withdraw from the Erudia market: they would remove all of their products in Erudia within a day.

This was breaking news!

Everyone was astounded.

The Triple Group, which has been climbing up the ranks, is suddenly leaving Erudia?

What's going on?

On the other hand, the companies and individuals who had been oppressed by Triple Group cheered in delight.

The Triple Group was like a cancerous tumor in the business world.

They did all sorts of evil things and exploited countless people.

Yet, many of the victims did not dare to expose the company and merely hope the company would fail.

Now that their wish was fulfilled, they were so overjoyed that they wanted to hold a big celebration!

As Triple Group mainly sold electronic products and there were many similar companies in the market, its departure did not create a huge impact.

That day, Levi told Iris, the person in charge of Morris Group, to add another basket of goods to the company's portfolio: electronic products.

They would strive to create the most cost-effective electronic products to crush other immoral companies!

By creating products that could benefit the masses, they could promote healthy market development while doing good to the people.

This was what the Morris Group had always done.

Whether it was medical apparatus or other products, they always strived to sell the best quality products at the cheapest prices.

Their motto was to promote the city's development and wellbeing of the people.

Hence, the employees of Morris Group all gave their work their best effort.

Aside from being able to reap the financial benefits, they would feel honored, too!

The young people in North Hampton were proud of working at Morris Group.

Morris Group had already been manufacturing electronic products. Now, they were simply increasing the scale of their production.

As Triple Group left the market, other companies were able to tap into its market share.

Iris even gave a part of the electronics business to the Oriental Star Group.

Zoey was very capable, too. Within a short period of time, the Oriental Star Group's profits skyrocketed under her management, a role she had gladly accepted.

When she reached home, she asked, "Darling, how did the wedding go?"

Levi smiled helplessly. "Well, I made up for my regret and she made the choice she wanted."

“That’s good, then! But it’s a pity how her wedding went. The Triple Group withdrew so unexpectedly just as she became the general manager of their Erudia branch.

She sighed. “The wedding is only memorable because of the regrets it left.”

Levi knew that Zoey was thinking about their wedding six years ago.

It was not a fruitful wedding, and it became his and Zoey’s regret.

“Honey, I’ve decided to re-organize a wedding for you! By then, I’ll tell you some things.”

Levi decided to organize another wedding for Zoey.

At that time, he would reveal his true identity to her.

The Protector Chapter 544

Zoey's eyes curved into tiny crescents as she smiled. "Okay! I'll wait for you to give me a fruitful wedding!"

"Alright. Let's pick a suitable date!"

Levi nodded.

Zoey thought that Levi was joking. She was not expecting him to be serious.

That wedding was later named the grandest wedding of the century.

Of course, all these were in retrospect!

Life would return to normal afterward.

Sitting in his office, Levi smoked and had some alcohol.

He then received a call from Azure Dragon, saying chaos had broken out in South City.

After the fall of the Triple Group and Scott's faction, the other prominent families started to frantically claim control of the available territories.

Even some external forces became involved.

In short, the entire South City had descended into chaos.

Levi did not expect this to happen.

Initially, he thought that after eliminating Scott and Triple Group, Quebec would become peaceful again and that everyone would behave properly.

Yet, instead of warning them, his actions caused these people to descend into madness.

To them, after the collapse of the two major forces, they now had more territory and businesses to seize!

“It’s hard to control South City...” said Azure Dragon hesitantly.

“Okay, I’ll personally make a trip to South City. As all these happened because of me, I need to set things straight.”

A cold glint appeared in Levi’s eyes.

At night, he told Zoey that he was going to South City.

Zoey’s eyes lit up. “That’s just right! Abigail was telling me that she wants to return to South City as something urgent has happened in the family. The Black family did not say what exactly was so urgent, so my parents are very worried. Go back with Abigail and see what happened to the Black family.”

“Sure, no problem,” agreed Levi.

The next day arrived.

After Abigail entered the car, she instantly wrapped her arms around Levi’s neck.

“Levi, you’re so cruel. Why didn’t you visit me for such a long time?”

A resentful look appeared in Abigail’s eyes as if she was his wife.

Levi pushed her aside quickly.

“Just speak normally. Don’t touch me!”

Abigail glared at him and said, “Are you seeing someone recently?”

Levi frowned. “Huh?”

“I heard that you attended your childhood friend’s wedding and flirted with girls. Even my sister’s best friend started liking you. Helena, the new celebrity in my sister’s company, is obsessed with you, too! Am I right?” complained Abigail as she pouted.

“What are you talking about?”

Levi frowned.

“Let me tell you this. I’ll only like your sister. The other women are none of my business! Even if I’m involved with them, it’s because of your sister. You’re one of them...”

When Abigail heard his words, her expression fell immediately.

Tears of indignance brimmed in her eyes as she tried to hold them back.

So Levi is only nice to me because of Zoey!

“What’s wrong, Abigail? Why are you crying?”

Levi suddenly realized that Abigail had burst into tears.

“It’s nothing...”

She wiped her tears away and stayed silent for the entire ride.

Levi had no clue how he offended Abigail, so he remained quiet, too.

Soon, they reached South City.

When they entered the city, Levi called Alfie from the Dragon Legion.

“Tell the South City leaders that I’ve arrived,” instructed Levi.

When he attended the Black family’s birthday banquet, he had promised he would definitely inform the city management the next time he arrived.

“Understood, Sir!” replied Alfie instantly.

Alfie then contacted the commander-in-chief of the South Warzone and the major leaders of the city.

The Protector Chapter 545

Instantly, the entire of South City was in a frenzy.

The God of the War is coming.

The fact that no one knows why he's coming is even more terrifying!

When the Triple Group committed their outrageous acts, the God of War didn't even come.

Yet, he's coming now?

This means that something major has happened!

After exiting the highway, Levi drove to the Black family home.

His car zoomed along the roads when suddenly he caught sight of two luxurious cars from the rearview mirror.

One was a Lamborghini, while the other was a Ferrari 458.

Vroom! Vroom! Vroom!

The two luxurious cars sped past Levi's Mercedes, deliberately cutting his path.

There were two people sitting in each of the cars.

They were the wealthy bachelors of South City.

The most famous of them was Derek, who came from the wealthy Davies family.

Recently, the Davies family had been flourishing, having snatched control of multiple territories and reaped a lot of benefits.

“She’s Abigail, right? I recognized her with just a single glance!” exclaimed Derek with a grin.

“Yeah, she’s Abigail,” agreed the rest.

When they were at the intersection earlier, they noticed Abigail sitting in the car. Hence, they instantly chased after her to confirm.

“I heard that the Black family arranged a marriage for Abigail, right?” Derek asked his underling, Zachary.

“Yeah, but I want to tease Abigail today. She’s so pretty. I’ve actually been lusting after her for a long time. Haha...”

When Derek thought of Abigail, he could not hold himself back anymore.

Initially, as the Black family was much more powerful than the Davies family, he did not dare to do anything.

However, in the recent shakeup of territories, the Black family had chosen to keep a distance while the Davies family participated aggressively.

Now, the Davies family was in a much more powerful position than the Blacks.

Naturally, Derek became braver and wanted to toy around with Abigail.

After cutting in front of the Mercedes, the two cars slowed down gradually.

In the end, they were only driving at a slow speed of 20km/h.

It was obvious that they were doing it on purpose!

Fury appeared in Abigail's eyes.

“Levi, they're doing this on purpose! Hmph!”

However, Levi did not respond.

Suddenly, he spun the steering wheel to the right and accelerated.

At the speed of lightning, he surpassed the two luxurious cars instantly and sped off.

Vroom!

When Derek and the rest saw the car zooming past them, they were stunned.

What the heck is this?

It's driving so quickly that I can't even react in time!

“Quick! Chase after that car!” yelled Derek.

The Ferrari and Lamborghini accelerated, speeding up so quickly that they looked like two streaks of lightning on the road.

A Mercedes could never accelerate faster than sports cars on a straight road.

Soon, Levi realized that the two cars were about to reach them.

However, instead of being flustered, he continued accelerating.

Although there was a sharp curve in front, Levi ignored it and kept increasing the speed.

“Huh? Levi, slow down!”

Abigail was so scared that she almost closed her eyes.

However, a calm expression remained on Levi’s face while the car continued speeding up.

When Derek and the rest saw that, they were so shocked that cold sweat started to dot their foreheads.

“Damn it! Is this guy crazy? There’s such a sharp curve ahead with a few slopes. Yet, he still dares to accelerate?” exclaimed Derek in surprise.

“Yeah! Curves like these are the most accident-prone. Does he still dare to accelerate? He must be a madman!”

“It might be safer if a sports car zoomed across the curve. But a mere sedan? That’s crazy!”

The Lamborghini and Ferrari started to slow down, wanting to drive past the curve steadily.

However, the Mercedes in front dashed onto the curved road as it accelerated.

“They’re doomed! The car will be destroyed and the passengers will definitely die.”

“Poor Abigail. She’s so pretty!”

Even Derek closed his eyes in despair.

The Protector Chapter 546

“Hah!”

However, everyone seemed to be in hysterics in the next second.

The Audi drifted in a controlled arc as it swept along the sharp bend in the road with a screech.

“What?”

“How’s that impossible?”

Everyone’s eyes were bulging out of their sockets.

In the Audi.

Levi smirked. “You can open your eyes now, Abigail.”

After Abigail opened her eyes, she found that the car was advancing steadily along a straight road.

We’ve passed that deadly turn already?

Abigail had a look of shock on her face.

There were many sharp bends along this road, but Levi did not slow down at all.

No matter how good the performance of an Audi was, on a straight road, its speed could not compare to that of the other two sports cars.

Despite that disadvantage, Levi managed to overtake the other two sports cars very quickly because he did not slow down at any of the sharp bends along the road.

They tried to catch up, but it was to no avail; the Audi had already completely disappeared from their sight.

“Holy f***!”

Derek was completely floored.

He had joined many well-known racing clubs before, but he had never once seen such a skilled racer.

“Bring him to me! I want him found this instance!” Derek bellowed.

Soon after that, Levi and Abigail quickly arrived at the Black family’s residence.

As soon as the Blacks saw Abigail, they were elated.

However, their expressions changed the moment they laid eyes on Levi.

Both Robert and Meredith acknowledged Levi only because of the special cigarettes and liquors he had gifted them previously.

“Mr. and Mrs. Black, do you still have enough of the special cigarettes and liquors?” Levi asked with a smile.

“Yes! It can probably last us a few years!” Robert replied.

Meanwhile, Bailey and the others were glaring at Levi.

Pamela, on the other hand, scoffed and went so far as to say, “Do you think Russell would’ve brought us anything less than he did?”

“Yeah. Russell was the one who brought it for us. What does it have to do with you?”

The others sneered at him.

Upon seeing this, Abigail quickly changed the subject. “Grandpa, Grandma, why did you call me back so suddenly? I was scared out of my mind when you said something serious happened.”

Hearing that, Levi perked up his ears as well.

After all, Zoey had tasked him with this job.

He would only feel relieved after making sure the Black family was safe and well.

At that moment, Bailey and Pamela exchanged an excited glance.

Robert also had a similar look on his face.

“I’ll do the honors! Someone has come forward with a marriage proposal!” Meredith announced.

Abigail was taken aback and pointed to herself in surprise. “Huh? To me?”

“Yes, that’s right! Your Grandpa’s chief and I will personally accompany his grandson to come here tomorrow for the official proposal. He’s taken a fancy to you!”

“Your Grandpa and I approve of this marriage! We have met that boy, and he’s very outstanding!” Meredith beamed.

Robert nodded as well. “Yes, I completely agree! That boy is probably the most outstanding person I’ve ever seen!”

“I refuse!”

Abigail rejected it without even thinking it over.

“What are you talking about, Abby? How can you reject the proposal just like that? You haven’t even met him yet,” Pamela countered unhappily.

Bailey backed her up as well. “Do you know who he is? He’s Timothy Caesar, the heir of the Caesar family from South Hampton! The Caesar family is practically royalty!”

When wealthy families from all over Erudia transcended a certain level of influence, they weren’t only judged by their economical standing but more often than so by their physical might and the presence of a martial arts master in the family.

Those kinds of families weren’t addressed the usual way.

In the event of surpassing the Gonzales family from North Hampton as well as other influential families such as the Robinsons, the status of royalty would be bestowed.

Families regarded as royalty were by no means built from scratch just a couple of decades ago.

Most of the royalties had a history of more than a century and were prominent families passed down from generation to generation.

The Protector Chapter 547

These families could be traced back to a couple of centuries.

In simpler terms, the royal family was established by the hard work of several generations over the span of centuries!

It wasn't a level a normal person could single-handedly reach in just a few decades.

This was the difference between a wealthy family and a royal family!

There were only a handful of families in Erudia who were of royal status.

South Hampton, for instance, was the economic center of Erudia.

That was where a true royal family resided.

Quebec, on the other hand, never had the privilege of having a royal family.

And the man arranged to be Abigail's betrothed, Timothy Caesar, was from a quasi-royal clan.

A quasi-royal clan was slightly more powerful than a regular wealthy family but a few decades away from becoming true royals.

Despite that, the Caesar family managed to crush all the families in Quebec!

Even Scott Yates and his family were no match for them!

Timothy's grandfather, Richard Caesar, was a formidable general in the army when he was young, and no one dared to underestimate his family.

Thus, when Richard suggested a marriage proposal to the Black family, Robert and Meredith were so excited that they didn't get a wink of sleep.

If Abigail were to marry Timothy, firstly, the Blacks would be able to fortify their standing.

Secondly, Abigail would want for nothing.

Meredith spoke up, "Abigail, aren't you going to change your mind? Marrying into the Caesar family will help the Blacks reach unimaginable heights! Luck has chosen you, so cherish it!"

Robert nodded in agreement. "Your grandmother's right! We are nothing but an ant beneath their boot! Do you have any idea how lucky you'd be if you marry into the Caesar family, Abigail?"

"What are you waiting for? Quickly thank your Grandpa and Grandma for giving you such a good opportunity!" Bailey and Pamela prompted Abigail.

"That's right! Not only are the Caesars powerful, but Timothy Caesar is a fine young man too. He was trained to become the head of the Caesar family from a young age, so he's definitely the best of the best! Marrying him would be the smartest choice you ever made in your life, Abigail!"

Keane and Quintus both chimed in, "Yeah. You'd be the lady of the Caesar household from then on. With such a prominent title, the whole of South City would envy you!"

"Exactly! Now that mayhem has descended upon South City, all the influential families are fighting for rulership, and they're all searching for strong backers! Even though we're currently staying out of it, we would inevitably be affected; it's

only a matter of when. But if you marry into the Caesar family, no one would dare to touch our family!”

...

Everyone listed out the benefits of this arranged marriage, one by one.

More than anything, they wanted to overcome the obstacle looming over them.

With all hell broke loose on South City, the Black family was too weak to fend for themselves.

Their entire family could be crushed if they didn't find a backer soon!

Fortunately for them, it just so happened that the Caesar family proposed a union by marriage.

And the Blacks accepted their proposal right off the bat.

Abigail felt helpless.

She originally thought that she could escape the fate of marrying into a powerful family against her will.

But alas, it turned out that her fate was sealed from the very beginning.

“No! I refuse to! I don't care how outstanding he is; I'm just not interested!”

Abigail was on the verge of tears, and she sent Levi a pleading gaze.

“What do you mean by you refuse to? You should at least meet the boy first, don't you think so?” Robert urged.

Abigail shook her head vigorously. “No. I don’t want to!”

“Insolence!” Meredith bellowed all of a sudden.

Her loud roar of anger startled everyone.

“You’re getting more disobedient nowadays, Abigail! I’ve pampered you all these years, but here you are, rebelling against me!” Meredith yelled angrily.

“But I don’t want to, Grandma...”

Tears were rolling down Abigail’s cheeks.

“Tomorrow, the Caesar family will be coming to make the marriage proposal, and you will join us, whether you like it or not.”

Meredith was so tyrannical that no one dared to refute her.

And Abigail fell into despair.

“You can’t force Abigail to do anything. Not on my watch.” A commanding voice abruptly broke through the silence.

Everyone turned to stare at Levi with wide-eyed disbelief.

The Protector Chapter 548

Levi's authoritative statement immediately brought Abigail back to her senses.

That's right!

So what if they're from a powerful background?

Can they be more powerful than my brother-in-law?

Abigail instantly sidled closer to Levi. "I'll only listen to you, Levi!"

Swoosh!

As one, all of the Blacks transferred their gazes back to Levi again.

"Excuse me, but who do you think you are? What gives you the right to speak here?" Jonathan was visibly enraged.

At the same time, Leonard pushed his glasses higher up his nose bridge, seemingly irked as well. "Exactly. How dare you speak to your elders in such a way? Have you lost your mind?"

Even the youngsters, Keane and Quintus, were infuriated.

They wanted so badly to give him a few tight slaps!

As for Bailey and Pamela, they were livid as well.

"Since when have my daughter's affairs become your business?" Bailey literally roared out the words.

Robert was glaring daggers at Levi, whereas Meredith couldn't stand the sight of him.

"Get out of our house this instant! You're not welcome here!"

"Of all the youngsters I've raised since young, none of them ever dared to speak to me that way!" Meredith pointed a finger at Levi as she berated him.

She was right – everyone in the Black family had an extremely strict upbringing.

The youngsters never dared to raise their voices in front of Meredith or Robert.

Hence, Levi outright provoking them was an atrocity through and through!

Levi's eyes flashed with a hint of anger.

I won't allow anyone to force Abigail into doing something she doesn't want to do!

"Why are you looking at me like that? Get out right now!" Meredith yelled.

Abigail was afraid that the matter would blow up into something serious, so she quickly interjected, "Why don't you go first, Levi? I'll just check things out tomorrow. It's not like I have to agree to it anyway!"

With that, Levi finally left under Abigail's mild urging.

"Grandpa, Grandma, don't blame Levi. I'll go tomorrow, okay?" Abigail promised.

"Now that's more like it!"

Only then did Meredith promise to refrain from taking action against Levi for his disrespectful behavior.

Not long after Levi left, Russell sped back home in his car.

He had recently been promoted to the Deputy Chief of the Special Security Unit.

He was the busiest during this period of time due to the chaos across the entire South City.

Even so, when he heard that Levi was visiting, he immediately put everything down and rushed over.

“Grandpa, Grandma! I heard that Levi and Abigail are back!”

Russell jogged into the villa.

“Yes, they came back. Why?”

Confusion lined Meredith’s features.

“Hey, Abigail. Wow, you’re even prettier than the last time I saw you.”

After Russell gave Abigail a perfunctory greeting, he immediately cast his gaze around. “Where’s Levi?”

“You mean that b*****, Levi? He was just driven away by Grandma!” Jonathan stated with displeasure.

Thud!

Russell staggered backwards, almost falling to the ground.

His face was drained of color and as white as a sheet.

His Adam's apple bobbed as he swallowed hard before asking with mortification sprawled across his face, "What? Levi was driven out of the house?"

T-T-This...

Russell felt his head spin.

They actually drove away the God of War?

Where in the world did they find the courage to do that?

Why, oh why, didn't I arrive sooner?

"Yeah! He talked back to Grandpa and Grandma! He was lucky he was only driven out. If it were up to me, I'd give him a good beating and teach him a lesson!" Keane gritted out.

What?

Russell felt his blood pressure shoot up.

He wants to teach who a lesson?

What are his balls made out of? Steel?

"Let me go find Levi..."

Russell bolted out immediately after.

"Huh? What's up with Russell?"

Jonathan was perplexed, wondering why his son was acting so out of character.

“Yeah, I noticed something off about Russell too. He’s acting all strange when we mention Levi as if Levi is some kind of powerful figure,” Robert added in.

The others were equally baffled as they nodded in agreement.

The Protector Chapter 549

To everyone's surprise, Meredith laughed. "You're all too emotionally driven! Russell is the opposite of that, and it's something none of you have the ability to understand!"

"What do you mean, Grandma?" Keane queried.

"Russell is a humble and polished man. He sets aside his emotions and treats everyone equally. So, even though Levi is a b*****, he still treats him as his family. His ability to remain rational in every situation is the reason for his success!"

Meredith admired Russell because of that.

"Yeah. We can't compare to Russell in this aspect! There's a lot we need to learn from him!"

...

Everyone showered Russell with praises.

Meanwhile, Abigail's shoulders slumped helplessly.

It's because Russell knows Levi's true identity...

If Russell knew about the situation here right now, he'd definitely laugh and say something along the lines of 'My ability to remain rational? He's the damn God of War, for heaven's sake!'

At the same time, Alfie came to personally pick Levi up from the Black family's residence.

He always obeyed Levi without a single question or protest.

Alfie was dressed in casual wear and drove an ordinary car.

They were keeping an extremely low profile.

"Sir, the officials in South City are all keeping a low profile as per your command. Tonight, they wish to have you join them for a simple meal, and they promise that it won't be anything too over the top!" Alfie reported in a low voice.

"Sure. I'll join them for dinner tonight," Levi replied.

Then, Alfie drove Levi to the South Warzone first.

Besides Zoey, the only place that felt like home to Levi was the military base.

Meanwhile, Russell was combing through the whole of South City searching for Levi.

Halfway through his search, he got a call from Meredith. "Russell, I just received news that the Caesar family from South Hampton has arrived! Could you please pick them up and arrange for them to stay at our Tropical Villa?"

"Alright, Grandma. Just leave it to me."

After that, Russell quickly went to meet the Caesar family.

They had three cars in total.

A Rolls-Royce was trailing behind an ordinary car that was charged with clearing the path ahead, while a Toyota Elfa brought up the rear.

An elderly man and a young man were seated in the backseat of the Rolls-Royce.

The elderly man had a head of white hair and was dressed in traditional clothing.

People were often deceived by his age, but a closer glance showed that his eyes had a dangerous glint to them.

The head of the Caesar family, Richard Caesar, was a fierce general in the army during his early years, never showing mercy to those who crossed him.

After stepping down, he remained untouchable in South Hampton.

He leaned on his cane, while beside him sat a fair-skinned young man with a pair of gold-rimmed glasses.

He wasn't here for a vacation, though.

He was here because he was Abigail's potential suitor, Timothy Caesar.

Besides being the number one bachelor heir in South Hampton, he was also a member of the South Hampton Prince Gang!

The purpose of his visit wasn't as simple as everyone thought.

And his marriage proposal to Abigail was just a ruse.

He wanted to take over South City through the Black family and make a huge fortune out of it!

The Caesar family planned to invade South City and expand their power.

All of them had ulterior motives.

Just then, Richard explained to Timothy the matter of his marriage proposal to the Black family.

“Yes, Grandpa. I understand! Women are only tools! I’ll marry Abigail as you wish!”

A cold glint streaked across Timothy’s eyes.

Richard nodded in satisfaction. “Yes, you’re right! After we establish our position in South City, you can deal with Abigail however you please!”

“Yes, Grandpa!”

The corners of Timothy’s mouth lifted.

What he had in mind was simple. He was going to use the marriage as a cover and treat Abigail as his plaything.

Russell arrived soon to guide Richard and his entourage to Tropical Villa, letting them settle down there.

A group of people arrived not long after Russell left.

The Protector Chapter 550

These people were young and rich heirs, all of whom were from the most prominent families in South City.

Melvin Jacobs, Silas Ferguson, Channing Jakeman, as well as Derek Davies were all present.

Their families had all actively participated in the recent battle of territories raging all over South City, reaping an abundance of benefits in the process.

All of them were seeking powerful backers from South Hampton.

As soon as they caught wind that the Caesar family from South Hampton was visiting, they rushed over to curry favor with them.

When Richard saw how eager they were to please, he blandly said to Timothy, "Establishing a good relationship with South City's local families could be beneficial to us in the long run. Go ahead and see to our guests, Timothy."

Timothy nodded. "I understand, Grandpa."

"Mr. Caesar, since this is your first time in South City, welcoming you is the least we could do!" Melvin from the Jacobs family was the first to speak.

No matter how much they flaunted their power in South City, they were nothing compared to South Hampton's number one heir.

Adding on the fact that he was a member of the South Hampton Prince Gang, the entire southern region of the nation was aware of the amount of power he held.

The Prince Gang was an organization similar to a club formed by South Hampton's most powerful heirs.

Every member of the organization was either from a quasi-royal clan or a royal family.

The Prince Gang members were an untamed bunch who did as they pleased.

They answered to no one!

Besides frolicking, they created a reputation for themselves.

No one would dare to mess with those who associated themselves with the Prince Gang.

The ultimate goal of the young heirs residing in South City was to replicate the South Hampton Prince Gang, and they did so by establishing a club of their own.

Unfortunately, their club was too far behind the Prince Gang in every aspect.

Hence, they went green with envy upon meeting a member of the South Hampton Prince Gang.

When Derek found out that a member of the Prince Gang was arranged to be Abigail's betrothed, he almost wet his pants.

Meanwhile, Timothy was busy enjoying being flattered by so many people, basking in their compliments.

Just then, Derek approached Timothy and spoke under his breath, "Mr. Caesar, I have some bad news for you..."

Timothy's face showed displeasure as he inquired, "What is it?"

“I met Abigail by coincidence yesterday!”

“And?”

“She was sitting in a car with a man, and they seemed really intimate with each other. They look like a couple!”

Derek was a simple man. Since he couldn't have Abigail, he thought that he might as well teach Levi a lesson.

Upon hearing this information, Timothy's expression changed drastically.

They weren't officially engaged yet, but to him, Abigail was already his.

She was sitting in a car with another man?

F*** that!

“Yeah! That man had some mad driving skills too! Our sports cars couldn't even catch up with his Audi!” Some of the others piped in.

Timothy almost popped a vein after hearing that.

His woman had been touched by another man.

How could he not be infuriated?

“Who is he?” Timothy asked in a frosty voice.

“I'm still investigating, Mr. Caesar. I'll let you know the moment I find out!”

Derek shuddered slightly from the insidious look on Timothy's face.

At the same time, Melvin, Silas, and the rest tried to diffuse the tension. “Let’s put all of these upsetting matters aside for now, Mr. Caesar. We’re here to celebrate your arrival. Plus, we’ve prepared a little something for you that we hope you’ll enjoy!”

The men chuckled meaningfully.

Of course Timothy knew what they had in mind.

Women. What else?

“I’m bored of low-grade women, so I’ll pass,” Timothy coldly rejected.

As a man of his status, all kinds of women threw themselves at him.

“Hear me out first, Mr. Caesar. I hand-picked these girls from North Hampton’s drama academy. But most importantly, they’re all virgins!” Channing said with a chuckle.

The crease between Timothy’s brows slowly loosened.

“Indeed, North Hampton’s drama academy is known for its campus beauties!” Timothy chuckled along.

The Protector Chapter 551

The mood took a sharp turn as a somber expression appeared on Timothy's face. "But this must be kept a secret! I'm meeting Abigail tomorrow, so a prickly matter such as this must never be disclosed to anyone."

"Don't worry, Mr. Caesar. The place we arranged is very discreet!"

Timothy shook his head. "That's not enough! It must be completely hidden. I want to make sure that nothing will go wrong!"

Derek immediately chimed in, "I have an idea, Mr. Caesar. I think I know just the place. It's a club called The Abyss. That club can be said to be the most hidden place in the whole of South City, and we can only gain entry through special connections! Not just anybody can enter!"

Seeing Timothy's interest perked, Derek continued, "Many big figures in Quebec choose to discuss matters there because everything stays within those walls! No one outside will ever hear a whisper of what goes on inside."

"Then, The Abyss it is!" Timothy nodded in approval.

"No problem, Mr. Caesar. We all have connections in The Abyss! Let's book the entire club tonight, shall we?" Melvin and the others were all smiles.

In the South Warzone.

"Sir, it's time to leave," Alfie said as he opened the car door for Levi to get in. "All the arrangements in South City have been made."

There were several people standing behind Levi.

The Captain, Mortimer Lambert, was of course among those people.

The rest comprised of Mike Pence – the commander-in-chief of the South Warzone, two deputy commanders-in-chief – Hank Damon and William Stewart, as well as several chiefs of staff.

Everyone was dressed in casual wear, obeying Levi's order to keep a low profile.

Otherwise, the sight of a group of men in military uniform eating in public would scare the living lights out of people.

"Has the meeting point been set?" Levi asked.

"Yes, it's at a club called The Abyss, sir! This club is known for its secrecy. Because it's located in a remote area in the suburbs, many people choose to have their secret meetings there, so we won't have to worry about anyone spying on us."

"South City's authorities realized the sensitivity of this matter, so they chose The Abyss. But the food will be self-prepared, and nothing too extravagant! Besides, everyone will go Dutch, so there won't be any unwanted problems," Alfie clarified.

"Mm, good. I see that they were quite thorough in their planning!" Levi nodded, impressed.

Meanwhile, the leaders of South City were all gathered in The Abyss located on the outskirts of the city.

However, everyone was dressed in a very low-key manner. In fact, their attire was so casual that it made them stick out like a sore thumb in the club.

Tim Cronan, the leader of Quebec, asked, "Has the God of War, I mean, Mr. Garrison, arrived?"

The mayor of South City, Stephen McKay, nodded in response. “Yes, sir. Alfie just called and said that they’re on their way. They should be here soon!”

“That’s good!”

Tim wiped the sweat off his brow.

“Why do I feel nervous?” he mused.

“We’re all nervous too, sir! We’ve been sweating way before we even arrived!”

All of South City’s officials took in deep breaths, fretting over the God of War’s imminent arrival.

They had gone to Jesse Nielsen for advice earlier due to his experience with the God of War.

Yet, Jesse had only given them two words – Stay calm.

However, it was easier said than done.

They were literally drenched in cold sweat due to the level of anxiety they were feeling!

Before long, Levi and his party of people arrived at the entrance of The Abyss.

Vroom, vroom, vroom.

Just then, the sounds of engines revving disrupted the silence.

More than ten sports cars sped towards their direction, all coming to a sudden stop in front of The Abyss.

It was Timothy and the other young heirs.

“Mr. Caesar, welcome to The Abyss!”

After alighting their respective cars, everyone crowded around Timothy and ushered him towards The Abyss.

“Hey! It’s that guy, Mr. Caesar!” Derek exclaimed the moment he spotted Levi.

The Protector Chapter 552

Immediately, everyone fixed their gazes on Levi.

“Is that really him?” Timothy asked, frowning.

“That’s him, Mr. Caesar. That’s the guy with really good driving skills!” A few of Derek’s followers said hastily.

In a split second, Timothy’s expression changed abruptly. “I don’t give a damn who he is, but as long as he has any kind of contact with Abigail, get him out of my sight!”

As a member of the Prince Gang, this was how Timothy normally handled things – in the most arrogantly self-assured way possible.

Derek exchanged a look with his followers before immediately saying, “As you wish, Mr. Caesar!”

Striding forward quickly, Derek caught up with Levi and his group to intercept them.

“Hey, where are you going? Stop right there!”

However, Levi and his group just ignored Derek’s shouts.

“Hey, hey! Are you all deaf? Didn’t you hear what I just said? Hold it right there!”

Derek suddenly raised his voice loudly, throwing his hands open to block Levi and his group from moving further.

Displeased expressions appeared on Alfie and Mike's faces, as well as the other military officials present.

South City was their territory. Thus, they could not believe that there were people here who still dared to block their path, especially when the God of War was traveling with them.

How embarrassing!

Mike and the others were visibly annoyed.

If the fool were lucky, he would only embarrass himself in front of the God of War.

But in the worst-case scenario, this same fool might end up losing his job over charges of negligence.

Mike and the others were raring to reveal their actual identity to this hapless fool, but Alfie stilled their protests with a wave of his hand.

"What's your business?" Alfie asked in his deep voice.

Derek ignored Alfie, looking directly at Levi instead. He pointed his finger at him. "You, come over. I have something to tell you."

His tone of voice was an unmistakable order.

Completely thunderstruck, Mike and the other eight personnel in charge of the South Warzone could only stare dumbly. More than a little fear filled their hearts.

Does this fool have a death wish?

He's literally hollering at the God of War!

Not only was Derek shouting and ordering the God of War around, but he was doing that in front of all the highest-ranked commanders of the South Warzone.

Right then, Mike could not hold himself back any longer. His voice burst out in an angry shout. "Do you know who he is?"

"I don't care who he is! The only important thing is that Mr. Caesar of the Caesar family wants to see him right now, and he's going to do just that," Derek said while smiling coldly.

While it was true that Derek did not know who Levi was, but he still had Timothy Caesar to back him up.

Hence, Derek was confident that no matter how prestigious Levi's societal standing was, there was no way he could be more powerful than Mr. Caesar

Mike, Alfie, and the other officers just exchanged disbelieving glances.

The entire situation was ludicrously embarrassing to the point of being hilarious.

They would not have any dignity left after allowing something unthinkable like this to happen in front of the God of War.

But the jarringly comical side of the entire affair was that these rich heirs had somehow managed to offend the God of War himself.

"And why should I listen to you?" Levi's smile was equally as cold as Derek's.

"Y-you... this is Mr. Caesar we're talking about! The Caesar family practically controls South Hampton, and if you know what's good for you, you'll come with me!" Derek found his embarrassment turn into sputtering anger.

Suddenly, Timothy spoke from somewhere behind Derek. "What's happening, Derek? Can't you handle even something as minor as this?"

Timothy's taunting jabs just made Derek angrier. "You have three seconds to come with me! One, two – I said stop! Don't leave!"

Before Derek could make it to three, Levi and his group just shoved past him to enter The Abyss directly.

"Hey, are you all deaf? Hold it right there!"

Derek could shout himself hoarse, but Levi and his group did not have any intention to acknowledge him.

Seething angrily, Derek looked like he was going to charge into the club after Levi.

"Wait!" Timothy walked over slowly, followed by his people.

"Ah, Derek, aren't you supposed to be quite influential in South City?" Timothy's face was a mask of disappointment when he looked at Derek.

At that moment, Derek just felt his anger spike to new heights.

He clenched his fists tightly, vowing that he would make Levi regret the day he was born.

After they entered The Abyss, the anxiously waiting leaders of South City immediately stepped up to welcome Levi and his group.

But upon actually seeing Levi, everyone looked at each other in disbelief.

They did not expect the mighty God of War, who made the world tremble with his very existence, to be a young man.

However, that disbelief quickly turned into respect.

The Protector Chapter 553

Levi was both agreeable and approachable, setting all of them at ease.

It was no wonder that Jesse Nielsen, the leader of North Hampton, just told them to treat the God of War as they would any other normal young man.

Even the boss of The Abyss, Orion Sinclair, followed behind them in awe.

He was genuinely both excited and on edge at the same time. These were definitely the biggest shots his club had welcomed ever since he started operating it.

These people arrived in a group of more than twenty. Even the God of War was here, a fact that still made Orion rub his eyes in disbelief.

Outside The Abyss, Derek faced a dilemma.

“So, they entered the club. Aren’t you and your men supposed to be the heavy hitters of South City? Just surround this place and force them out, now!” Timothy said coldly, lighting up a cigarette.

“At once, Mr. Caesar,” Derek said hastily. “Watch this!”

At this moment, Channing, Melvin, and the other rich heirs just laughed unkindly.

Then, they approached the entrance of The Abyss.

“Mr. Jacobs!” The manager of The Abyss came out to welcome them personally, immediately greeting them respectfully. He recognized these rich heirs as regulars at The Abyss.

Melvin took a look into the interior of the club. “I need you to do two things. First, get your boss out here. We’re reserving the entire place tonight, and I don’t want anyone else coming in. Two, kick out all those who went in just now!”

In addition to that, Silas did not even bother to pretend to be respectful as he roared, “Get going, now!”

Usually, if the rich heirs visited the club, the staff of The Abyss would scramble to comply with their orders immediately.

However, the manager actually hesitated today.

“I’m sorry, Mr. Jacobs, but we’re unable to arrange that for you and your friends tonight,” the manager said carefully, feeling backed into a tight spot.

“Oh? What’s the matter?” Melvin demanded as his expression changed abruptly.

If he did not get his way, it was akin to being humiliated in front of Mr. Caesar.

“Someone else already booked The Abyss today, Mr. Jacobs. I’m sorry, but you didn’t notify us earlier, so our hands are tied. The only thing we can offer you now is a waive on you and your friends’ bill the next time you come to our club,” the manager apologized in a low voice because he did not want to offend the various rich heirs.

But when Melvin heard that the club was fully booked by someone else, he immediately flew into a temper.

He kicked the door of the club forcefully, making a loud crash. “Do I look like I’m broke and need you to waive my bill?”

“Yeah, get out of here! We don’t need your charity!” The other rich heirs shouted angrily.

“I’m telling you – we don’t care who reserved the place tonight. Kick him out and tell him to get lost! We’re booking The Abyss today. You better do it now, or don’t blame us if things get unpleasant,” Melvin snarled.

“I’m sorry, sirs, but we really can’t do that! The other party already booked the club in advance. We have to follow procedure,” the manager said helplessly, looking miserable.

Right then, a ringing slap resounded through the air. In a flash, the manager held his face in shock as Melvin slapped him.

“Useless scum! In South City, you play by our rules. Now get your boss out here and kick them out!”

To add insult to injury, Silas sent the manager crashing onto the ground with a single kick.

“Do you know who that is? That’s Mr. Caesar, the oldest son of the Caesar family, the quasi-royal clan of South Hampton! I’m interested to see how you’re going to continue operating your club if you’re planning on offending him,” Channing said while pointing at Timothy, who was standing nearby.

Still holding his face, the manager gritted his teeth tightly. “With all due respect, sirs, no matter what you do, we still won’t allow you to do that.”

“I’ve been too effing nice, apparently. Beat him up!”

With that said, Melvin and the others proceeded to thrash the manager, giving him a vicious beating. Not even the few security guards present were spared. All of them were beaten black and blue by the rich heirs.

the resulting commotion was loud enough to the point where even the patrons inside the club could hear it.

At the same time, Levi and the others had just taken their seats.

Listening to the praise of the various big shots about his club, Orion was in a good mood.

“Boss, there’s trouble at the door! Big trouble!” One of his staff shouted breathlessly as he ran up to him.

“What’s wrong?” Orion demanded immediately.

“A few of the rich heirs are beating up our people outside,” the staff member clarified quickly.

As soon as the words left the staff member’s mouth, Tim suddenly stood up.

The leader of Quebec slammed his palms onto the table loudly and growled. “I can’t believe something like this is happening under our noses! I’m going to take a look.”

The Protector Chapter 554

“What do they want?” Orion hurriedly asked the staff member.

“They seem to have something against this gentleman here, boss.” The staff member shot a trembling glance at Levi.

“What?”

Orion’s shocked exclamation perfectly encapsulated the unbelievable bombshell that was just dropped on all of them.

Hearing the staff member’s words, the crowd descended into a furor. Everyone had a look of disbelief on their faces.

Who in South City has the guts to do something like this?

Who dares to pick on the God of War?

This is madness!

Challenging the God of War?

“It’s true! Just now, when we were outside they already came for the General – erm, Mr. Garrison,” Mortimer said quietly.

“Yeah, that’s right! They challenged Mr. Garrison without any reason.” The other people from the South Warzone all started to pipe up.

Levi remained silent, but anyone who knew him knew that he was slightly angry.

“How dare they!” Tim was beyond furious.

The other leaders of South City, such as Stephen, were infuriated as well. Their eyeballs fairly bulged from their sockets in outraged surprise when they heard that.

It was just outrageous – an unscrupulous case of bullying like this happened right under their noses as soon as the God of War arrived.

How would the God of War regard us after this incident?

How are we going to live down this embarrassment?

It was infuriating, and the thought alone made their anger skyrocket.

“Uh, boss, it’s not only that. They also want you to... kick everyone out of here,” the staff member added, cringing slightly.

The gathered crowd was now thunderstruck in addition to their shock. Their tempers flared even further.

“Come on, let’s go have a look at this! We’ll handle this matter seriously,” Tim barked.

Stephen and the other leaders followed behind Tim with dark expressions clouding their faces. Their anger was palpable.

It was their first meeting with the God of War. Hence, they were determined to make a good impression, and yet something like this happened.

Their reputation was going to be shot to pieces – it was utterly humiliating.

Outside The Abyss, the brutal beatdown was still in full swing. Melvin and the others already drew blood from the managers and the security guards they were beating up, but they showed no signs of stopping.

At this rate, the manager and the others were going to be beaten to death soon.

Flanked by the crowd of rich heirs, Timothy watched the sickening violence without a single change in his expression.

He said coldly, "Let me be clear that this situation doesn't exist in South Hampton. I'll destroy anyone who dares to challenge me back there."

It was obvious that Timothy was reprimanding the various rich heirs of South City for doing a poor job.

Wham!

Without warning, Melvin's fist sank into the manager's face, causing bright red blood to splatter everywhere. "Get Orion Sinclair out here right now!"

"Mr. Jacobs! Why are you doing this? Let's have a reasonable discussion, shall we? It's no good for anyone if we continue like this," Orion said hurriedly as he ran out to mediate the situation.

Only when Orion came out, Melvin stopped whatever ruckus he was causing, then he looked at Orion coolly and said, "I said – we're booking the entire club today! So get rid of the people inside now, or I'll tear your club down."

Nevertheless, Orion remained calm. "Sirs, as my manager already explained earlier, someone had booked the club before you, so please come back another day! I promise you that everything's on the house on your next visit. Let's not antagonize each other now, eh?"

“Piss off!” Melvin roared. “We’ll be reserving this club today, one way or another! Mr. Caesar came here personally today. Are you going to disrespect him just like that?”

“The Caesar family?” Orion took a step back in surprise, expression changing abruptly.

He never expected the leader of South Hampton’s Prince Gang to come in person. On a normal day, The Abyss would have rolled out the red carpet to welcome him.

But today was no ordinary day.

The patrons currently inside his club were in an entire league entirely. As a matter of fact, they were so powerful that he shuddered just thinking about them.

Channing patted Orion’s face mockingly with an icy smile on his face. “I’m asking you this one last time. Are you going to disrespect Mr. Caesar?”

Everyone turned expectant eyes on Orion. If the man remained silent, they were dead set on tearing down his club tonight.

“I’m sorry, but not today,” Orion said firmly, schooling his expression back into an implacably calm mask.

“Fine! You’ve said it yourself!” Melvin bellowed furiously. “Then the Abyss doesn’t need to exist any longer!”

Grinning twistedly, Channing made a call immediately. “Hello, I’m Channing Jakeman. I want you to bring more men to demolish The Abyss now. Do you hear me? Right now!”

The Protector Chapter 555

Orion retorted immediately, “Hah! I’d like to see which one of you has the balls to tear down my club! Who gave you the right to do this?”

However, Melvin, Silas, and the other rich heirs just laughed uproariously. “Listen up, old man, we’re the kings in South City! We call the shots!”

“Well, that’s some spine you’ve got. Since when are any of you the highest authority in South City?” A cold voice rang out from the interior of the club.

“Look, someone’s got a death wish!” Melvin sneered coldly. “You’ve got the guts to stand against us?”

I’d really like to see which idiot is still challenging us.

Seeing the sudden situation, Orion immediately said, “Sirs, please just leave! None of you can afford to cross the people inside the club.”

“Forget Mr. Caesar of South Hampton; I’m pretty sure nobody else can afford to provoke them,” one of Orion’s staff members added helpfully.

Naturally, the staff of The Abyss hoped that the situation could be resolved peacefully without any conflict.

But the more they tried to defuse the situation, the more Melvin and the others grew furious.

“You’re kidding us, right? What do you mean by we can’t cross them? I couldn’t care less about who is inside that club! We’re kicking them out today.”

Evidently, Melvin and the others had made up their minds.

The sudden sound of fast-moving footsteps filled the air.

Following the chorus of footsteps, a crowd of people appeared at the entrance of the crowd.

“Who’s making trouble here?” Tim’s expression was a thunderously dark cloud.

“We are! You got a problem with that?” Melvin and the others challenged insolently.

Seeing how rude and arrogant the rich heirs were, Tim and the other leaders were practically shaking with anger.

“Since when did South City allow bullying riffraff like this to exist?” Tim growled at Stephen.

Stephen hung his head. “It was my fault.”

“There’s only one thing to do about tumors like this. Remove them immediately!” Tim bellowed loudly.

“Such bravado. Who are you, anyway?” Timothy smiled coldly and slowly walked forward.

He turned that frosty smile on Melvin and the other rich heirs. “All of you are rather useless as well, aren’t you? None of you can even handle ordinary people like these?”

Feeling their faces burning at Timothy’s accusations, Melvin and the others wished fervently just to vanish on the spot.

“Who are you?” Stephen asked icily.

“You might get a heart attack if you know his identity, old man. Listen carefully – this is Timothy Caesar, the heir of the Caesar family, the quasi-royal clan of South Hampton!” Derek said loudly.

“Scared now?” Derek added nastily as an afterthought.

However, a moment later, Timothy belatedly realized that the people facing him did not even bother to react to Derek’s statement.

And that made his blood boil.

How can they still ignore me after they know who I am?

“Alright, but do you know who we are?” Stephen asked suddenly.

Caught off guard, Derek and the others could only frown. “You? You do look a little familiar...”

The big shots of South City made appearances on the big screen or in the news regularly enough. However, Tim and the others were dressed casually today, like any other normal civilian.

Although they could not put a name to them, Derek and the others still found them annoyingly familiar.

Timothy’s frosty smile did not change. “Very well, then. Do tell us who you are, gentlemen. Let’s see if you can shock me with your identity.”

“Yeah! I’d like to see just who you are. Tell us your names if you have the guts to!” Melvin and the other rich heirs urged tauntingly.

Is there anyone in South City that can still scare Timothy Caesar?

Of course not!

A few years ago, perhaps Scott Yates and the Triple Group could still put up some form of resistance.

But anyone else aside from them could not be even considered an annoyance, much less an actual threat.

“Listen up, then. My name is Tim Cronan!” Tim said angrily, taking care to articulate each word clearly.

“Tim Cronan? Who the hell is he? I’ve never heard of him.”

“You’re right. What nonsense is Tim Cronan anyway?”

Melvin and the others exchanged confused glances. They truly did not have any idea of Tim’s identity.

“Tim Cronan is the leader of Quebec,” Orion supplied. He was fighting the urge to cover his face with his hand.

It was at that moment, all of Melvin’s thoughts were interrupted abruptly.

Orion’s words left them all thunderstruck, shocking everyone present.

The Protector Chapter 556

Melvin gaped soundlessly.

Derek was stunned.

And Silas, well, he was staring in shock.

Everyone was rendered speechless with their eyes bulging out of their socket while frozen in place.

Even Timothy found himself struck dumb. The cigar he was smoking dropped to the ground from his limply gaping mouth.

Tim Cronan?

This is The Tim Cronan – the Leader of Quebec?

“I’m the Deputy Leader of Quebec, Woodie Emil!”

“And I’m the head of the Police Department, Wright Hector!”

“I’m Stephen McKay, the mayor of South City.”

“I’m the Deputy Leader of the South City, Korey Madisen.”

“My name is Thorn Keene, and I’m the Captain of City Patrol Unit for South City.”

One by one, the gathered crowd stepped forward to proclaim their identities loudly.

Sh*t!

When Timothy and his group heard them announce their various titles, they almost lost their minds. Derek and his cronies were even more terrified, shaking like a leaf in the wind as cold sweat beaded on their forehead.

Just then, another crowd appeared at the entrance of the club.

Timothy and his group recognized them as the entourage that accompanied Levi earlier when they entered the club.

“Hey, we couldn’t let you all have all the fun when there’s a commotion out here. We’re here to join in.”

“Guess what? I’m Mike Pence, commander-in-chief of the three hundred thousand troops stationed in South Warzone!”

The sound of people choking in horror grew louder.

“I’m his deputy commander-in-chief, Rex Hanson!”

“I’m the military strategist of the South Warzone, Hector Christensen.”

“I’m Mortimer Lambert, captain of the South Warzone regiment!”

“And I’m Alfie Steele, commanding officer of the Iron Brigade Dragon Legion!”

What the...

Silence descended over the crowd of people.

Suddenly, a few loud crashes were heard.

After Alfie and the other military officers had made their identities and titles known, Timothy and his friends just sat weakly onto the ground in their shock.

Their legs trembled as their bodies went limp, making them fall onto the ground in a very undignified way.

Humiliatingly, most of them even wet their pants.

Dark stains spread across the front of their pants and felt warm in the cold air. The rank stench of urine started to assault the noses of everyone present.

N-no... T-this can't be happening.

Never in their wildest dreams did Timothy and the other rich heirs ever expect that they were crossing paths with the top leaders of Quebec. Not one, not two, but more than ten of those leaders.

All of those leaders were gathered here, with not a single person missing from their ranks.

It was definitely a huge taboo that Timothy and his friends just broke. They were in serious trouble now.

A high, thin sound was coming from Derek's throat. He was out of his mind with fear, frothing at the mouth and convulsing periodically.

It's too goddamned scary!

Faced with such powerful opposition, no one sane would choose to take their opponents head-on.

But we met them and did just that!

How could we be so stupid?

The rich heirs here did not just stand their ground stupidly, but they arrogantly challenged those big shots as well. Every one of their cocky words just became a death warrant that they signed willingly.

Too late to do anything now, the sudden realization dawned on them as to why Orion and the manager would rather risk offending them than bow to their demands.

It turned out that they really could not afford to cross the people reserving the club today.

Simply put, they were in deep sh*t now.

Right then, someone started bawling their eyes out in a very undignified manner.

Even on a good day, the rich heirs here were not exactly strong-willed men. Now, faced with this situation, most of them were terrified out of their wits.

Melvin and the others just burst into tears, sobbing grossly.

If they had pissed off anyone else, they could probably still salvage the situation. But now that they crossed these high-level VIPs, even their families could be in danger.

If the elders at home ever got wind of this incident, they would probably beat them to death to teach them a lesson.

Timothy was fairly petrified as well.

He was so scared that his entire body was clammy with cold sweat.

If he was involved in an incident like this just as soon as he arrived at South City, his standing in the Caesar family back in South Hampton was also in danger.

At that moment, Timothy could already imagine how his grandfather, Richard, was going to tear him to pieces.

Nobody would reasonably expect the rich heirs of South City to be lying on the ground wetting their pants.

If the people of South City were around to witness the sight, they would need to pick up their jaws from the ground. It wasn't every day in which one could see the rich heirs of South City have the living daylights terrified out of them, after all.

But unfortunately for these rich heirs, they had the misfortune of meeting people even more powerful than them.

"Do you have any idea who the people inside the club are?" Tim continued bellowing at the terrified heirs. "The man inside is—"

Alfie interrupted Tim smoothly before he could reveal anything. "Someone you really can't afford to offend."

"Yes! None of you should offend him, one way or another," Tim said calmly after realizing his slip.

Hearing Alfie's cryptic statement, Timothy and the other rich heirs quickly concluded that the man inside the club was on the same level as Tim and the rest.

In short, it was yet another man who could make their lives a living hell if they offended him.

The Protector Chapter 557

None of them expected the mysterious man inside the club to be the God of War himself!

This was the man who intimidated the rest of the world into toeing the line with his presence alone.

If only they knew the man they just insulted was the God of War.

Some people would literally be scared to death just knowing that.

“A peaceful resolution, Mr. Cronan,” Alfie reminded him.

Despite everything else, Levi wanted to stay incognito.

With that, Tim acknowledged the statement with a nod.

He turned to face Timothy and the rest again with a warning look. “All of you can leave now, but rest assured if I ever see any one of you acting out of line again, I’ll deal with it personally!”

However, the Warzone commander-in-chief snorted disapprovingly. “No, I don’t think so. We can’t let them off so easily. Get their parents to come and pick them up!”

Stephen agreed, “That’s a good idea. It’s normal for the parents to apologize on behalf of their children’s wrongdoings.”

“What?” Once again, Derek and his gang were scared out of their wits.

If our family knows the trouble we just landed ourselves in, we're gonna be dead meat.

Right then, Stephen's secretary promptly started contacting their parents.

"No one leaves without my permission!" Tim warned before going back into the club.

Sprawled on the ground, Timothy and the other rich heirs could only stare blankly, waiting for tears that refused to come.

Nobody expected things to take such a turn for the worse. It was beyond horrifying.

Soon, a few luxury cars arrived on the scene.

These respective cars were from the Jacobs family, the Jakeman family, the Ferguson family, and the Davies family. The heads of all the rich families had arrived, and all of them were angry at the trouble their unruly children had unwittingly brought on them.

Stephen's secretary had already explained the process of the entire incident to them, sparing no detail.

Aside from being thunderously angry at their progeny, the heads of the families were terrified out of their wits as well.

"Of all the people to offend, these rascals offended these people?"

"They could ruin our families with just one word!"

As soon as they got down from their cars, the heads of the families made a beeline for Derek and his gang.

Thump!

Mr. Davies sent Derek flying a few meters backward with one kick.

Thump!

Yelps pierced the air as the other rich heirs were promptly taught a lesson by their respective parents.

Soon, they were shrieking in agony as their parents beat them mercilessly. The anguished shrieks almost sounded like pigs being sent to the slaughter.

All the heads of the families present were aiming for the kill. Once they got their hands on any of their sons, nothing else mattered except for a vicious beating. They did not show any mercy at all.

When Timothy saw blood splattering across the ground as the rich heirs of South City got their behinds kicked thoroughly by their parents, he felt fear squeezing his heart tight.

If his grandfather, Richard, ever found out about this incident, Timothy would be spending at least a month in bed after being on the receiving end of that volatile temper.

“Let’s get out of here,” Timothy said quickly, slinking away discreetly with his followers.

In the end, the rich heirs of South City left the scene being pulled away in ambulances.

The humiliating incident made waves in the social circles of South City. Everybody and their mother were wildly guessing about what could cause all of the rich heirs to be sent to the hospital after a vicious ass-kicking.

When Timothy slunk back to the Tropical Villa, Richard was waiting for him with a suspicious look on his face. “Back so soon?”

“The others were too high profile, Grandpa, so I thought it was better if I returned home first. I still have to meet Abigail for the engagement ceremony tomorrow. Thus, it would be bad if someone got an angle on me now.” Timothy rubbed his nose uneasily.

Hearing that, Richard’s frown eased into a satisfied smile. “That’s my boy, the future of the Caesar family! Fooling around is okay, so long you can grasp the timing.”

“I’m going to go rest now, Grandpa. I promise I’ll be in my best condition for tomorrow.” Timothy hurriedly spun an excuse.

He was still scared out of his mind, feeling every fiber of his body being strung tightly. There was no way he could admit to his grandfather that he was in huge trouble.

Hence, Timothy already decided that the best course of action was to keep concealing the truth from his grandfather as long as he could. The alternative was too terrifying to think about.

Panicking, he quickly made his escape.

As soon as Timothy left, the butler spoke up, “Mr. Caesar, don’t you think there’s something wrong with Timothy? He usually never looks that pale unless there’s some trouble.”

Richard shook his head vehemently. “No, there can’t be. Who could give our family trouble in South City?”

“Ah, that’s true. Who can dare to offend the mighty Caesar family anyway?” The butler laughed.

The Protector Chapter 558

Richard stroked his beard thoughtfully before breaking into a smile. “You know, seeing Timothy growing into a sensible young man does make me feel rather proud. By the way, tell the Black family to prepare for our visit properly. I’ll personally bring Timothy to ask for Abigail’s hand tomorrow.”

“Will do, Mr. Caesar!”

Back in his room, an anxious Timothy paced about uncontrollably.

Now that the higher-ups of Quebec recognize me already, there’s no way the Caesar family can still expand into Quebec. If we still try, I just know we’re going to die painfully.

Cold sweat beaded on Timothy’s forehead again. He stroked his chin, unconsciously mirroring his grandfather’s pose as he racked his brain. I need to find a way to make Grandpa give up the fight to control Quebec.

Back inside The Abyss, Levi was talking to Tim and the others.

After exchanging the customary pleasantries, Levi went straight to the point. “I had indirectly caused most of the problems that the Triple Group and Scott Yates stirred up, so I’m planning on cleaning up this mess once and for all.”

“Ah? It’ll be more than enough if you help us tidy up the loose ends, Mr. Garrison. How can we ask for more than that?” Tim and the others were genuinely fearful.

“Don’t be too kind. I caused the problem in the first place, so it’s only natural if I solve it!” Levi said determinedly.

He continued speaking, “Besides, I’m planning on a large-scale development in Quebec with Morris Group as a starting point. You’ve seen our achievements in North Hampton. I’m confident my company can do the same good for the people of Quebec as well!”

“I understand now, Mr. Garrison! Please, if you have anything at all that you need, we’ll provide it to you immediately,” Tim said emotionally.

When he and the other leaders heard about Levi’s plans of developing Quebec, they were all excited beyond belief.

At the same time, their respect for him increased enormously as well.

Levi was a hero who swore to fight on the battlefield, killing their enemies and protecting Erudia.

And yet, this war-weary man could still think about the people of Erudia, doing his best to develop and modernize his country.

This God of War was truly one in a million.

That night, Levi graciously refused any special treatment and went to the South Warzone to room with the soldiers there instead.

Early in the next morning, he received a call from Abigail.

“Levi, I’m getting matchmade today. Can you please come over later? I don’t really feel secure if you aren’t here,” Abigail pleaded sincerely.

“Relax, Abigail. With me around, no one is going to force you to do anything you don’t want to,” Levi said calmly.

“You’re literally the best brother-in-law I could’ve asked for. I bet you’re reluctant to see me get married off too, huh?” Abigail teased, sounding far happier now.

“Of course! You’re Zoey’s little sister. There’s no way I’m going to let anyone bully you,” Levi said seriously.

“Oh, so it’s all because of Zoey?” Abigail sounded slightly disappointed, but she was still cheerful for the most part. “That’s okay, Levi. I’m happy so long you’re willing to take care of me.”

By eleven o’clock, the Caesar family were finished with all their preparations in Tropical Villa.

Two luxury sedans were lined up by the gate. The security car that followed behind the sedan was filled with numerous chests of valuable treasures like gold, silver, and even a vaunted Legendary Pearl.

“As the Caesar family, we can’t hold back when we go to ask for someone’s hand,” Richard said as he stroked his beard.

He turned around to face Timothy, a sudden look of astoundment crossing his face. “Timothy, what happened to you? Didn’t you sleep well last night? The dark circles under your eyes are darker than the abyss. You look like a car ran you over, boy.”

Timothy smiled awkwardly. “Yes, I couldn’t get used to the bed, so I didn’t sleep well.”

That was a lie. In reality, Timothy had been too terrified of his grandfather to rest, much less sleep.

For the entire month, he lay awake the entire night in fear.

“Oh, that’s all? Don’t worry, my boy, after the Caesar family has a reliable base in South City, you’ll have plenty of time to get used to your room here.”

Richard stroked his beard and smiled, a grand blueprint of the Caesar family’s planned expansion flashing across his mind.

In his view, the Caesar family was just a few days away from completely conquering South City.

On the other hand, Timothy tried not to let his utter terror bleed into his expression.

He wants me to stay in South City long-term?

Ever since that incident, Timothy was petrified of even going out of the house.

“Grandpa, can I discuss something with you?” Timothy rubbed his head ruefully.

“What is it, my boy?” Richard asked.

“Let’s just pull out of South City, Grandpa! Forget the proposal. It’s meaningless!” Timothy blurted, unable to contain his words any longer. They fell out in a tangled rush.

Listening to Timothy’s desperate exclamation, Richard’s eyes narrowed into slits.

The Protector Chapter 559

“What’s the matter? Explain it to me right now!” Richard demanded with fury.

“Grandpa, I think that Quebec is pretty much a red ocean, and the developments there are not worthy of the Caesar family’s resources. Moreover, there’s nothing impressive about Abigail’s background, so I don’t think she’s a good match for me!” Timothy explained.

“What the hell do you know?” Richard bellowed. “After the fall of Scott Yates and the Triple Group, the turf there is now wide open!” The Caesar family could only take up about half of the resources, and yet you’re telling me that it’s not worth your time and effort?

In order to keep our foothold in the South City, we need to cultivate a puppet. Who better than the Blacks? It has to be Abigail!

“Grandpa, are you aware that the South City is basically in chaos at the moment? We’re only going to burn more than half the resources that we invest into it if we set foot in South City right now!”

Timothy was terrified at the notion, because he did not wish to stay a second longer in South City.

“Bullsh*t! Why don’t you have any confidence in yourself? What are we afraid of in the South City? Who could have threatened us?” Richard was incensed at this point.

“Grandpa, I...”

“That’s enough!”

Richard's roar made Timothy shudder.

After a moment, they arrived at the Black family manor.

Robert, Meredith, and all the Blacks were out at the entrance to greet them.

"Greetings, Chief! It's been a long time..."

Meredith and her husband were excited at the sight of the Caesars.

Bailey and Pamela were all smiles at the sight of Timothy too.

They were very satisfied with their future son-in-law.

Abigail, however, snorted at the sight of Timothy, "He's so lacking compared to Levi! Look at those dark eye circles. I bet he must've been doing illegal businesses at night!"

Initially, Timothy was indifferent toward this marriage proposal today.

However, his eyes glinted at the sight of Abigail.

She's so pretty!

There are a lot of pretty girls at South Hampton, but wow! I don't think anyone could compare to her!

Besides, I heard that she still goes to college.

At the sight of her, Timothy changed his mind right then and there.

I'm going to win over Abigail first.

Whether I'm staying in South City or not, that's a problem for another day.

The Black family was quite content with the marriage arrangement this time.

Especially after seeing their future son-in-law in person.

"Abigail, you're so lucky. He looks like a decent man."

The Blacks could not help but praise Timothy.

After that, Richard and Meredith exchanged pleasantries at the entrance of the Black family manor.

"Even though we're very close, we still have to observe the necessary formalities! Here are my wedding gifts," Richard ordered his bodyguards to present his wedding gifts to the Blacks.

The Caesar family's bodyguards carried boxes of wedding gifts into the Black family manor.

Abigail wanted to interject but was stopped by Pamela.

Meredith and Robert were both grinning from ear to ear.

The Caesar family is only taking the formalities seriously because they have immense respect for us, Blacks, and Abigail.

"Welcome!"

Richard and his people were welcomed warmly into the Black family manor, where the two families engaged in jovial exchanges.

All of a sudden, Richard signaled for everyone to keep quiet.

“Now, I would like to listen to how the two betrothed really think. Timothy, how’s your impression toward Abigail?”

Richard cast a glance toward Timothy.

Timothy grinned, “Grandpa, very good. I’m willing to marry Abigail!”

“Wow!” The Blacks were excited to hear him.

That’s great!

Abigail is going to marry into the Caesar family.

The Black family is going up the social status totem pole.

Richard glanced at Abigail next, “What do you think, Abigail?”

All eyes were on Abigail, anticipating her answer.

“Well, sucks for you, cause I’m not!”

She made herself loud and clear.

Murmurs and whispers filled the air, astonished at her blatant rejection.

The Protector Chapter 560

All of them cast looks of disbelief at Abigail.

They thought the marriage proposal was going to be moot since it was near impossible for Abigail to reject a man as perfect as Timothy.

In spite of it all, things did not take an expectant turn.

Nobody would have imagined that Abigail would slap the Caesars with an outright refusal.

The more shocking point was that the quasi-royal clan of South Hampton, the Caesar family, was brutally rejected. It was even humiliating when the head of household, Richard, was the one who led the marriage proposal on behalf of Timothy!

This piece of news would bring great dishonor to the Caesar family.

The dynamic of the relationship between the Blacks and the Caesars changed drastically the moment Abigail rejected the marriage proposal.

She was not merely saying no to her marriage with Timothy. Instead, she was essentially putting the relationships between the Blacks and the Caesars at stake.

The Black family would pay a great price for her audacity.

Richard and Timothy widened their eyes in disbelief at Abigail as her rejection was beyond their expectations.

“What did you just say?” Richard demanded.

“I said, I don’t want to marry him!”

Abigail repeated with a resolute tone.

“What? How dare you, Abigail! What the hell are you saying?” Meredith and Robert were taken aback by their daughter’s rebellion and bellowed at her.

They hurriedly added, “Abigail! What are you doing? You should just agree to it!”

Leonard and Jonathan chimed in, “Exactly! Abigail, how could you have possibly rejected this offer? We can’t afford it!”

“Abigail, you have to agree to this! Don’t be rash!”

The Blacks all pressured her into agreeing to the marriage.

Because they knew they would be done for if they had indeed caused embarrassment to the Caesars.

Hence, Abigail must agree to it – at all cost!

Tears rolled down her cheeks as she looked at the others. “Don’t I get to choose who I’m marrying? It’s already the 21st century, so why are you people still practicing the archaic arranged marriage culture? Are you all fossils, for crying out loud...”

Richard’s face sank at her remarks.

Is she calling me a fossil?

It was apparent to everyone that Richard was displeased.

We're really finished this time.

In the meantime, Meredith was incensed at Abigail's remarks as well. She reprimanded her granddaughter openly, "Abigail, I could have accommodated to your usual whims, but I will not tolerate it today! You know what? You're right – you don't get a say in your own marriage!"

Robert sighed and chimed in, "Abigail, you have to agree to this today. You have to put yourself in our shoes!"

Baily and Pamela hurriedly added, "Mr. Caesar, we agree to his marriage proposal on behalf of our daughter! We're sure she will agree to it eventually."

However, Richard waved his hand to dismiss them, "No, I want to hear her saying it!"

Timothy was enraged as well, "That's right, we have to hear it from her!"

No woman has ever rejected me.

After the both of them said that, all eyes were on Abigail again.

"What are you waiting for? Say yes!"

All of them egged her on.

In her entire life, Abigail had never been so torn in making a decision before.

Just then, a silhouette flashed across Russell's mind.

"Wait a minute, grandma and grandpa. Why do we have to force Abigail when she's reluctant to marry? We are quite an established family as well. There's no need to stoop so low as to beg at others." Russell spoke up all of a sudden.

He knew about Levi. Hence, it was only natural for him to stand by Abigail and be the only one in the Black family to support Abigail's decision.

Moreover, he knew that everyone would come buttering up to the Black family if they had Levi.

There wouldn't be a chance for the Caesar family to even make a sound.

"Ah... It seems like the Blacks don't think much of my family. Tsk tsk..." Richard mocked after that.

Feeling displeased, Timothy chimed in as well, "It seems like the Blacks are not satisfied with you, grandpa."

"Chief, that's not what we meant! Nobody dares to disrespect you and the Caesar family!" Meredith and Robert hurriedly explained.

The Protector Chapter 561

“Slap him!” Bob, the butler, was infuriated.

“Russell, slap yourself!” Meredith said in a stern tone as a response to Bob’s suggestion.

She was infuriated at Russell’s brash comment.

All this while, Russell was one of the younger members of the Blacks whom she had no need of worrying.

However, she did not expect Russell to go against them at this critical point.

“I’m so disappointed in you, Russell! Slap yourself!”

Robert also felt disheartened at Russell’s rebellious attitude.

Yet, Russell shook his head stubbornly, “I don’t think I’ve done anything wrong, grandpa and grandma. I will not apologize!”

“You’re wrong for refuting Mr. Caesar!” Meredith roared at him.

“Who proposes in such a tyrannical manner? What does he take Abigail for? A toy?” Russell asked. Clearly, he was not giving in either.

Abigail agreed, “Yes! That’s right! Why do we have to cater to the Caesar family’s every whim?”

Richard laughed as he listened to their exchanges.

“You may be right, but the Caesar family is indeed stronger than the Blacks. If I say you’re wrong, then you’re definitely wrong!” Richard said condescendingly.

Meredith relented, “Yes, it’s survival of the fittest. We are indeed weaker than the Caesars. So, we could only listen!”

She was an iron lady herself, so she knew better than any of them.

Thus, she could only give in when life demanded her so.

“So we are wrong simply because we’re weaker?” Russell asked.

“That’s right. You are wrong, so slap yourself, and I will drop the matter!” Richard shouted.

Then he looked at Russell like Russell was no more than an ant in front of him.

But Russell stood his ground and shook his head, “No, I will not surrender. I’ve done nothing wrong!”

“Yes, Russell did nothing wrong. Why does he have to slap himself?” Abigail supported him.

They insisted because they knew Levi was going to back them up.

Nonetheless, she would not agree to this arranged marriage even if there was no Levi.

“Meredith, Robert, you really amuse me with how you discipline your younger generation...” Richard sneered at them.

When Richard said that, Meredith and Robert could not help but feel offended.

Then, she took a step forward and slapped Russell across his face.

For a brief heartbeat, drop-dead silence ensued.

Russell looked at Meredith with disbelief.

Ever since young, Meredith had never slapped him before.

But now she's slapping me because of the Caesar family? How absurd!

The Blacks sighed.

Who would want to stoop so low if it weren't for our deteriorating family status?

"Russell, you have to understand my position..." Meredith whispered to Russell.

Then, she turned over and ordered Abigail, "Say yes, Abigail! You have to agree to it today, no matter what!"

Robert said angrily, "Yes. You don't have the right to reject!"

Richard would really be enraged if we keep this up, and we would suffer because of it.

Richard and Timothy regarded the Blacks with great interest, anticipating their next move.

They enjoyed toying with people with their power and influence.

"Abigail, what say you?" Timothy sneered as he looked at her.

"I will not marry you!"

A sound could be heard right then and there, and along came Levi.

Russell and Abigail's eyes glinted with delight at Levi's appearance.

"Levi, you're here!"

Abigail rushed to his side at once.

All of them were stunned at the sight.

Levi is here?

Timothy's face contorted after he saw Levi coming in.

Even though Timothy had no idea who Levi was, he presumed that Levi wasn't just a nobody. After all, he had unrestricted access to that place.

Levi glanced at Richard, "I heard that you want to beat up someone?"

The Protector Chapter 562

Meanwhile, Richard did not take heed of Levi and glanced in the direction of Robert and Meredith instead, “Who is this? Is he one of the younger members of your family too?”

Meredith and Robert sighed and lowered their heads.

They were indirectly saying yes to Richard’s query.

“Hah! Do all the younger members of the Blacks disrespect their elders?”

Richard deliberately mocked in a louder voice. As a matter of fact, he was almost roaring.

Meredith and Robert were terrified at the sight.

Richard is really mad right now.

They were well aware of the Chief’s temper.

He never lets people off the hook easily when he’s enraged.

The Black family would soon face an unparalleled crisis.

They glared at Levi angrily.

Russell has already pissed off Richard enough. Why does Levi have to appear and anger him too?

Haven’t we done that enough?

Levi laughed and glanced at Russell, “Did he ask you to slap yourself? Go, slap him back!”

“I...”

Russell hesitated.

My family would never agree to me slapping Richard Caesar.

On the other hand, this is an order from the God of War himself.

Russell was on the fence about his next course of action.

At the same time, the others widened their eyes in disbelief at Levi’s brazen suggestion.

What? Did he just ask Russell to slap Richard Caesar? Is he crazy?

Even Richard was stumped at Levi’s audacity.

Nobody had dared to disrespect him. Not in South Hampton, let alone in Quebec.

Not to mention a youngster like Levi.

“Russell, what are you waiting for? Slap him! This is an order!” Levi’s tone was determined.

Russell straightened his back unconsciously at Levi’s orders.

I’m doing it!

If anything should happen, I have the God of War backing me up anyway.

Moreover, Russell thought it was impossible for them to be bullied by an outsider in his own manor.

With that thought in mind, Russell dashed toward Richard, his right hand was already in mid-air, ready to slap Richard across the face.

Richard froze on the ground, baffled at Russell's brazen move.

This bastard dares to hit me?

"Russell, what are you doing?"

Meredith and Robert panicked at the sight.

They tried to stop Russell from advancing.

"Get away! All of you!"

Richard bellowed all of a sudden.

"Huh?"

The Blacks were taken aback.

"Go away. I want to see who dares to lay a finger on me today," Richard shouted.

He did not believe that Russell would really slap him.

Yet, the Blacks did not move a muscle.

What if Russell really slaps Richard across the face if we do not stop him?

The Black family will be wiped off the surface of the earth.

“I’ll say it one last time. Go away!” Richard roared.

He ordered his bodyguards as well, “Do not stop him. I want to see if this bastard really dares to hit me!”

The Blacks were terrified to see Richard all red from fury and finally decided to stay out of Russell’s way.

As for the bodyguards of the Caesar family, they had to stand aside too.

They were certain that Russell would not really hit Richard.

Unless... he’s crazy or an idiot!

At that moment, Richard beckoned at Russell.

The Caesars looked at Russell with wry smiles on their faces, positive that he wouldn’t strike.

“I will make sure that the Black family suffers if you don’t hit me today!” Richard said in an attempt to challenge him.

“I...”

Russell was torn, yet again.

“Slap him!”

Levi’s voice could be heard loud and clear.

Hearing that, Russell seemed enlightened by Levi’s orders.

He stepped forward and slapped Richard across the face, hard.

Whack!

The crisp sound shook everyone to their core.

Pin-drop silence ensued, once again.

Everyone held their breaths at the unexpected turn of events.

Richard was stunned.

Not knowing how to respond, he froze on the ground.

The Protector Chapter 563

Richard let out a cry in pain after some time.

Everyone gasped in shock, their eyes widened in bewilderment.

A youngster from the Black family had slapped the quasi royal household head from South Hampton!

How dare he?!

Talking back to someone his station was already disrespectful enough, but a slap across the face was a whole new level of disgrace.

At the same time, Meredith and Robert were about to faint at the sight.

Is Russell freaking crazy? He really hit Richard!

Russell had always been the most capable and obedient child among the youngsters of the Black family.

However, he defied everyone's expectations of him today. It was as if he had gone cuckoo.

Why did he do everything that Levi asked him to do?

The Caesars were equally surprised at Russell's bold strike.

What a lunatic!

They were under the impression that Robert wouldn't even dream of berating Richard, even if he were given the permission to do so.

Let alone slapping Richard across the face!

But Russell had done the unthinkable.

Richard cupped his slightly swollen cheeks and gave Russell an incredulous look.

The pain emanating from his cheeks made him grimace.

"Looks like we have a ballsy one here, eh?" Richard was oddly calm.

But everyone knew he was livid with fury.

Richard Caesar was someone who would not let anyone who enraged him off the hook.

In fact, he would fight till the point of life and death.

Otherwise, there wouldn't be an end to it.

But how could a powerless family like the Blacks fight against the Caesar family?

It would be like an egg dashing itself against a rock.

Hence, Russell knew things had gone to the point of no return.

It was either the Blacks or the Caesars who would survive.

He felt extremely apprehensive as well.

When he was trying to come up with an answer, Levi did him a favor by replying, "Yes, he is. So what?"

"You..."

Richard was about to speak when Levi interjected him.

"You asked for Russell to be slapped, and he slapped you back. It was fair and square," Levi grinned.

Timothy, who was used to act with impunity, held himself back from striking Levi because he did not know Levi's true identity. Otherwise, he would have slapped Levi across the face right then and there.

He was afraid of Richard knowing the incident from the night before as well.

Thinking that Levi was ridiculous, Richard burst into a derisive laugh, "Fair and square, you say?!"

He looked over at Meredith and Robert, "You guys have done such a good job in educating your younger generation! Hahaha!"

It was clear as day that Richard was mocking them.

Then he added, "We are all players of the survival of the fittest game. Weaker players like you are doomed to be trampled all over! Robert Black, I came all the way from South Hampton to Quebec for this marriage proposal, observing every formality required to honor your family, and this is how you repay me?"

Richard then proclaimed, "From now on, I am cutting off all ties between the Blacks and the Caesars! I will stop at nothing till only one of us remains standing!"

The Blacks were in an uproar at the proclamation.

All of them shuddered at hearing it.

Are the Caesars and the Blacks fighting to the death?

Doomsday for the Black family is approaching.

The Blacks paled at the proclamation.

We are all going to die just because of these two idiots!

Turning over to Levi, Richard sneered and said, "Young man, did you know you are the culprit for the wipeout of the Black family?"

The Caesars burst into a laugh.

The Blacks are so naïve to think that they could fight against us.

The Protector Chapter 564

This moment was akin to doomsday for the Black family.

They would not be able to fend against the Caesars.

Levi grinned, "You had the audacity to say that you're going to wipe out the Black family!"

Russell was visibly relaxed to hear Levi.

The Blacks cast puzzled looks at Russell.

Has he gone nuts for real? How could he still smile in face of the possible crisis of a wipeout?

Meredith and Robert were about to stop Levi from degrading Richard further. However, Richard waved his hands to dismiss them, "Everybody stop talking!"

"Young man, do you think I am not capable of wiping out the Blacks?" Richard bellowed at Levi.

Levi smirked enigmatically, "From now on, I will be right here waiting. You could ask however many people you want to come here. I will succumb to defeat if I could not handle anything that you throw at me!"

Richard was not enraged by Levi's frivolous remarks. On the contrary, he burst into a chuckle.

"I am so impressed that the Blacks manage to cultivate such overconfident youngsters!"

And then, Richard's eyes burned with rage.

"Excellent! We will accept the challenge. I will give you one week to contact every possible connection that you could find. You guys better be well prepared, and don't ever accuse me of bullying the Blacks!"

Levi and Richard had agreed to a fight... All this had transpired without the head of the Black family uttering a single word.

"Let's go!" Richard left with his bodyguards and took the wedding gifts with him.

In the car.

Richard was fuming with rage.

This was the first time a youngster had provoked him.

"Grandpa, is it really okay for us to burn the bridges with the Black family this way?" Timothy couldn't help but ask his grandfather.

He was still apprehensive about Levi's true identity.

"What is there to worry about? It's impossible for us to cultivate a puppet from the Blacks right now. We are only left with the option of marching right into the South City to grab our portion of the market! Seven days later, I will let everyone in the South City know the Caesar family's wrath! All of them have to give way to us Caesars then!" Richard snorted.

Meanwhile, drop-dead silence stretched between the Blacks.

Meredith and Robert had slumped to the floor, spent from the confrontation just now.

Despair was written all over other family members' faces.

We are essentially committing suicide for offending people like the Caesar family!

On the other hand, Levi looked calm and composed. He ruffled through Abigail's hair, "Don't worry, I'm here. Nobody could force you into doing anything you refuse to do."

Russell was overjoyed, grateful for Levi's presence.

Otherwise, the Blacks would be trampled all over by the Caesar family.

He was not at all worried about the upcoming fight between Levi and Richard.

The Caesar family has a death wish!

However, the Blacks could not understand this.

After regaining their composure, Bailey and Pamela approached Levi and reprimanded him, "Garrison, who do you think you are? Who are you to intervene in our family matters? You don't have the right to interfere with my daughter's marriage!"

"Yes, that's right! Who do you think you are? Did you do it on purpose?"

"That is the Caesar family from South Hampton! They're from the quasi-royal clan! How dare you offend them?"

Leonard and the others were infuriated at Levi's recklessness too.

All of them cast death glares at him, wanting to skin him alive for them putting them in such a dire situation.

Meredith and Robert, however, did not confront Levi first. Instead, they turned to Russell.

“Russell, would you mind explaining why you did such a thing today?”

“That’s right. You’re usually the calm and composed one. Why are you behaving like a lunatic today? Don’t you know how strong the Caesar family is?”

They were immensely disappointed in Russell.

Their disappointment was a mirror of their high hopes in Russell since they had plans to cultivate him to become the next head of the Black household.

Having said that, it seemed near impossible that they would keep up with the plan.

The Protector Chapter 565

“You have to give us a viable explanation!”

Russell spoke up with his head held high, “My reasons are simple. First of all, I will not stand idly by as the Caesars bully us. Second of all, their intention to marry Abigail was clear as day. They’re obviously planning to exploit our network here to get their foothold in the South City. I could never let these things happen!”

“Nonsense! You are so blind to your own errors!”

Just then, Robert could not hold it in any longer and slapped Russell across his face.

Despite being slapped across the face, Russell still stood his ground.

“I’ve done nothing wrong!” Russell insisted, “I will never admit that I’m wrong, even if you guys beat me to death!”

Meredith sighed aloud, and her knees almost buckled from her fury. All the others hurriedly steadied her when they noticed it.

Robert then explained his stand, “Do you think we are really oblivious to the intentions of the Caesar family? Do you think we have no idea that they’re oppressing us?”

“But what choice did we have? We are specks of dust compared to the Caesar family! Frankly speaking, the Caesar family only needs to move a single finger to annihilate us all!”

Meredith said furiously, “Exactly, Russell. When have you ever seen me stooping so low? Do you think I’m really happy to marry off Abigail just like that? That we

are so happy to cater to the Caesars' every whim? We just don't have any other option. The Caesar family's far-reaching influence is beyond our imagination... If we were stronger than the Caesars, why would I have to bear with them? I would have chased them out our door! You're dooming us, Russell! Richard Caesar will pulverize us all, and we will suffer a fate worse than death! This is all thanks to you and Levi!"

Meredith looked at Russell in utter disbelief, "Why did you do what Levi told you to do?"

"I..." Russell was at a loss. He did not know how to explain it all.

Levi chimed in at this moment.

"I don't think he went overboard when he returned Richard Caesar's slap."

Everyone turned their attention toward Levi.

"Levi Garrison, did you know you've made a grave mistake?"

Meredith could not help but question him.

"Who gave you the right to invite the Caesar family to a fight? You're just an outsider. What does anything from the Black family have to do with you?" Quintus and Keane roared at him.

"Do you even understand the consequences of your actions toward the Black family? We're going to be ruined for sure, and it's even possible for us to lose our lives!"

Bailey felt the urge to slap Levi.

"Anything to do with Zoey is my business, so don't worry. I will handle this on my own!" Levi was confident.

Crossed by his delusional remarks, Meredith spat at him, “I’m going to get someone to talk some sense into you!”

Meredith then called Caitlyn and Aaron. She recounted everything that happened to the two.

It was not even two hours before Aaron and Caitlyn rushed to the Black family manor together with Zoey.

“Is it true?”

Aaron and Caitlyn were about to faint when they knew about the incident.

Especially, Caitlyn – she was very agitated, “Garrison, did you know you’ve stirred up huge trouble? Why did you have to cause us trouble as soon as you reached South City? Do you wish to see us all die?”

She broke into an uncontrollable sob.

Aaron’s face sank.

Even Zoey had a despondent look on her face as she glanced at Levi.

She thought he was finally going to make himself useful after coming to the South City. However, she did not expect him to bring such a disaster to the Blacks.

“You’d better come up with a good explanation for this...”

Zoey gave Levi a death glare.

The Protector Chapter 566

Nevertheless, Levi was all relaxed in his manner, “Don’t worry, I will take care of this!”

“And how exactly do you plan to do so?” Aaron challenged him right away.

Caitlyn was still sobbing, “Didn’t you see that the Blacks are all reduced to tears already? How are you going to deal with this? With that smart mouth of yours?”

“Why did you have to do this? Why can’t you just stay at North Hampton? And what are we going to do with this trouble that you’ve caused?” Zoey cried out of despair.

Not long after, Jennie and Logan reached the Black family manor as well.

“What happened? What’s wrong with you, Levi? Do you know you’ve offended the Caesar family? They’re the quasi royals of the North Hampton!” Logan could not help but bellow at Levi.

Jennie looked at Zoey and her parents in contempt, “I’ve long said that nothing good could come out of you guys coming here!”

“Logan, do you have any idea how to deal with this?”

Keane and the others rushed to Logan’s side, hoping that he would have a solution to their woes.

However, Logan’s face sank, “I’ve just heard the news that the Caesar family is going to go all out on this. What could we do anyway? The Zachs family still has some influence in the South City, but we will not be of much help here either. Why did you guys have to offend the quasi-royal clan of South Hampton?”

The Blacks were devastated to hear Logan's reply, to say the least.

They had always depended on Logan.

If even Logan couldn't do anything about their predicament, then they were truly doomed.

"Russell, what's the matter with you today? You always seem like you know what you're doing, but why did you do something so stupid today? Don't you know who Richard Caesar is? Why did you slap him? Huh?" Logan chided Russell as well.

It was futile to play the blame game since the incident had been blown out of proportion. The piece of sensational news had traveled far and wide.

Hence, it was impossible for Richard to keep quiet on this matter that concerned his dignity.

There was no doubt that he was going to take action against the Black family.

"I don't think I've done anything wrong! The Caesar family is obviously being the bully here, so I can't just turn a blind eye to that!"

Then, he glanced at Levi, "Moreover, we have Levi here. We will surely get this settled!"

Levi admired Russell's firm stance.

This is what the Black family lacks.

"Right, keep bluffing! Yes, you have a bright future ahead. But this is the Caesar family from South Hampton that we're talking about here. I don't think even Scott Yates and his Triple Group could have dealt with this mess! The two of you really

went cuckoo to have attempted a fight with the Caesar family. How are you going to fight against them?"

Logan was exasperated at their nonchalant attitude.

Russell was getting irritated at their ignorance as well. "Why don't you guys believe in me? Don't worry. This matter will be resolved!"

Logan glared at him, "You want us to believe in you?"

Then, Logan approached Meredith and Robert, "Grandma, grandpa. I swear to handle this crisis with all my resources. Leave this to me!"

"Alright, we have to depend on you to deal with this mess. There's nothing much we could do!" Meredith replied.

"But please don't get your hopes too high on this since the Caesar family is quite powerful. I will try my best to minimize the losses, though. Even though the Blacks would be spared in the end, you guys still would have to make some sacrifices..."

Logan meant that the Black family could only keep their essential members.

People like Russell and Levi might have to be sacrificed.

"Great! We don't expect to come out of this unscathed. We just hope that we could minimize the damages!"

Logan sighed, "Grandma and grandpa, you guys could only depend on me during this critical time!"

Meredith nodded her head, "Yes, Logan! The rest are useless trash!"

The Protector Chapter 567

Logan was exasperated as he cast a glance at his grandparents, “I’ve told you both that they had gone out of touch with the Black family matters. They would only cause trouble if permitted to come back. And voilà, look at what happens as soon as they’re back...”

Meredith glared at Caitlyn and her family, “You’re right, Logan. We regret not listening to you! We shouldn’t have asked them to come back...”

At the same time, Caitlyn was almost drowning in her own tears.

She was finally accepted by the Black family after such a long time.

And now, Levi had ruined it all...

“Garrison, what did we owe you? Why did you have to avenge us so?”

Aaron couldn’t help but shed a tear.

“Mom and dad, don’t be too sad. Maybe I could try asking Iris to seek help from the Morris Group!”

“Right, Levi also works for the Morris Group. He wouldn’t stand idly by!” Zoey added.

Aaron’s eyes glinted with delight, “Correct! Morris Group’s boss is very capable. I’m sure he would be able to help.”

With that, Aaron then approached Meredith and Robert, “Mom and dad, don’t be mad. Zoey knows someone really capable. He would be able to settle this...”

Logan questioned him right then and there, “Could you guarantee that you would solve this?”

“I...” Aaron hesitated.

“Hah! What kind of capable people would you guys know? What a joke! Nobody could compete with the Caesar family in the whole of Quebec!” Aaron retorted.

“What? Is the Caesar family really that powerful?” Aaron gulped.

Meredith then dismissed Aaron and his family, “Get out! You guys are an embarrassment!”

She did not wish to see them for a second longer.

Then, she added after recalling something, “Right, not one of you should leave the Black family manor this week! Keane, keep a close watch on them!”

“Understood!” Keane and the others exclaimed.

“Huh?” Zoey and her family paled.

Grandma is grounding us.

We could only leave after settling this.

They were going to be the scapegoats.

What do we do?

Zoey was worried about her work.

“Zoey, I’m sorry to say this, but you have to work from home in the meantime.”

In the end, Zoey and her family were grounded at the Black family manor.

“Levi, look at what you’ve done! How would you explain yourself this time?”

Aaron and Caitlyn glared at Levi.

“Mom and dad, why don’t you guys think of this as your holiday? We would head back to the North Hampton with our heads held high.”

Levi sounded casual. It was as if he was really here for a vacation.

“Levi Garrison, how do you still have the heart to joke around at this hour?” Zoey shouted at him.

Zoey was fierce toward Levi when her mother and father were around.

But as soon as her parents left, Zoey said to her husband, “Darling, I understand that you did it all for Abigail!”

“Good, at least you get me.” Levi smiled.

He was not afraid of not being able to solve the problem.

Actually, Levi was more apprehensive about having nobody to understand him.

“But this has been blown so out of proportion that you couldn’t solve it.” Zoey furrowed her brows.

“Don’t worry. Just leave this to me.” Levi grinned.

“How are you going to deal with this when we can’t even get out of here?” Zoey was stumped.

Levi, however, was all smiles, “Don’t worry. I could get out of the Black family whenever I want. I’d like to see who would dare to stop me.”

The Protector Chapter 568

The Blacks had imprisoned Levi and his family in another heavily guarded villa.

Levi walked over to the entrance of the villa, and the security guards swamped him.

“You can’t leave! You’ve got to stay right here!”

The head of the security guards bellowed at Levi.

“What if I insist?” Levi grinned cheekily.

“You could try!” All of them glared at Levi. They would stop at nothing to prevent him from leaving this villa.

“Who gave you the right to restrict other people’s freedom?” Levi challenged them.

“We are at the Black family manor, and we play by their rules. You cannot go anywhere! Do you understand?” One of the security guards warned him.

Upon hearing that, Levi’s lips curved into a smile, “There is nowhere that I, Levi Garrison, cannot go.”

“Get out of my way!”

But the security guards did not move away and inched closer to him instead.

Then, Levi made his move and turned into a shadow, slithering his way out of the group of security.

With a few plops, all of them slumped to the floor.

They were all exorbitantly-priced security guards employed by the Black family.

However, Levi was the God of War – the undefeatable legend on the battlefields.

These security guards were mere mole crickets and ants to him.

When Zoey sensed that something was wrong and dashed outside, she was greeted by the sight of the security guards tumbling on the ground while wailing in pain.

As for Levi, he was already nowhere to be seen.

“Did he do all these?”

Zoey widened her eyes in disbelief, stumped by the sight before her.

The Blacks knew the news of Levi’s escape not long after.

Meredith and Robert rushed to the scene.

“You guys did a good job in educating your children!” Meredith and Robert mocked as they glared at Aaron and Caitlyn.

“Mom and dad, we have no idea that Levi escaped...”

Caitlyn and Aaron were indignant at the accusation.

Meredith scorned, “What do we do now? I don’t suppose he’s going to be back to deal with his own mess!”

Bailey and Leonard added, “He must have escaped and left this huge mess for us to follow up!”

“So despicable of him to leave right after he’s stirred up such a huge trouble!”

“He wouldn’t run away!” Zoey, Abigail, and Russell exclaimed at the same time.

Abigail and Russell knew about Levi’s true identity.

As for Zoey, she had faith in Levi’s personality. She believed that he wouldn’t leave her alone to face all this trouble.

“I will never understand why you guys defend him so.” Meredith and the Blacks looked at the three of them incredulously.

“I…” Abigail and Russell exchanged glances with each other.

However, they bit their tongue and did not say anything further.

It was a top military secret that they would be divulging after all.

Just then, Zoey held her head high and declared, “Because he’s my husband!”

At the same time, Levi left the villa and came to the Abyss.

Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Kirin, and Phoenix had all arrived at the South City.

“God of War, upon investigation, we have found out that the families that are recently snatching turfs are all backed up by certain forces. To conclude our findings, external forces are coveting to make South City theirs!”

“The Caesar family is here for the very same purpose as well. They want to make the Blacks their puppets to put a foothold in South City.”

Phoenix had obtained first-hand information.

Levi smoked on his cigarette and smiled thinly, "They're going to make the commoners suffer because of their battle for territories. I will not let innocent people sacrifice for their selfish gains!"

The Protector Chapter 569

“Understood!”

The four of them nodded.

“Give me a list of all the forces that are stirring up trouble in South City recently. I want to get rid of them once and for all!” Levi ordered.

“Yes, sir. I will get to the bottom of this,” Phoenix replied.

“After Phoenix has identified them all, Kirin, please organize a banquet and invite them all under the name of Neil Atkinson. Let them decide the venue.” Levi said to Kirin.

Kirin nodded in acknowledgement.

Meanwhile, two breaking news spread like wildfire in the South City.

The first one was: The Black family and the Caesar family will engage in a life-and-death fight one week later.

The second one: Neil Atkinson from the Morris Group had arrived at the South City and had invited all the influential forces in the city to a banquet.

The piece of news on the fight between the Caesar family and the Black family did not have any suspense to it.

There was no doubt that the Black family would be wiped out of the South City a week later!

However, nobody had expected the second-in-command of the Morris Group would come to the South City.

Nobody knew what was going on.

The influential forces, who were invited to the banquet, were puzzled as well.

They did not know what was up Morris Group's sleeves and started to engage in discussions with each other.

After a while, they came to a conclusion – that the Morris Group was here at South City for a foothold as well.

“Impossible! We will not tolerate such a thing!”

“We have not touched the North Hampton as well. How could they mark their territory here?”

This time, the forces were oddly allied on this front.

It was mainly because Yates's departure had cleared off quite some space for the emergence of a new dominating force.

The local forces did not wish for others to make a mark on their very own piece of land.

The outsiders would have to step over their dead bodies.

“The Morris Group is really naïve to let us decide the venue. Do they have a death wish?”

“What kind of idiot he is to leave this to us?”

“What if we set the venue at Jagged Club?”

All of the leaders burst into a laugh.

They found it amusing because Jagged Club was actually the largest underground boxing arena in South City.

It was full of the finest underground boxers in the East.

They planned to make it a trap for the Morris Group.

All of them agreed on triumphing over the Morris Group at the Jagged Club three days later, and that included beating Neil Atkinson to death.

“Brothers, let us show our trump card and let them witness the locals’ power!”

“Sure, we can’t let them leave South City well and alive. How dare they think of taking over the South City?”

They were anticipating the sight of Morris Group swarmed by thousands three days later.

On the other hand, the Black family was still shrouded in gloom.

They were so disheartened that they skipped dinner altogether.

The Blacks pinned all their hopes on Logan. Even then, they knew their chances were slim.

Since Logan’s grandfather had retired, his words did not carry much weight as they used to.

Even though the Zachs family indeed had a great network, they would probably not risk offending the Caesar family just because of the Blacks.

All of a sudden, Meredith turned to glance at Zoey and Abigail, “Didn’t the two of you say that he would come back? Where is he?”

“Um...” Abigail was at a loss for words.

“Grandma, don’t worry! Levi will be back after resolving the trouble he caused,” Zoey replied in a determined tone.

She had just gotten news from Iris saying that Neil from the Morris Group was coming to the South City, and she planned to contact him for help.

Hence, she seemed confident in her reply just now.

“Zoey, why won’t you believe that he’s escaped? Let me be frank with you, I’ve asked for people to track him down, and there’s no sign of him in South City...”

The Protector Chapter 570

The Black family had already done a round of search, but there was no trace of Levi. At all.

“He must have already left South City. Stop waiting for him foolishly!” Keane said coldly.

Aaron and Kaitlyn agreed as they said, “Sweetie, why are you still holding on to hope? He must have run away!”

“Yeah, why else would he disappear suddenly?”

In her defense, Zoey replied, “Dad, Mom, you know how Levi is as a person...”

“This time, the situation is not the same! We are talking about the Caesar family. If I were him, I would also run!”

“That’s right! If you don’t believe us, just wait and see if he shows up!” Caitlyn added angrily.

The couple was already determined that Levi had run away.

However, Zoey was conflicted.

Indeed, the opponent this time was too strong.

No one could be certain of the situation.

After all, the Caesar family was a quasi-royal clan, and they were at a different level from them.

However, she believed that Levi would never leave just because of the power of the Caesar family.

Darling, where are you? Come back quickly to clear up everyone's misunderstanding!

Zoey desperately wanted Levi to appear now.

If only he could descend like a god and settle the matter directly.

Yet, on the following day, Levi had not appeared.

On the third day, he did not appear as well.

There was no news of him for the past few days. Whenever Zoey called him, his phone would be switched off.

Now, even Zoey was panicking.

Did he really run away?

But in her heart, she still firmly believed that Levi did not run away. She believed in his character more than anything else.

"Look, here you are, still foolishly waiting. How about Levi? He hasn't appeared yet!"

"Now that he turned his phone off, what else is it if he did not run away?"
Everyone in the Black family ridiculed her aggressively.

Bailey sneered, "I just asked someone to search in North Hampton, but they couldn't locate him at all. I guess he really ran away!"

At this time, Russell said, "Everyone should return to doing what they usually do! Levi will definitely show up and resolve this matter!"

Everyone got stumped by his words.

Meredith stared at Russell incredulously and asked, "Are you implying that we are worrying for nothing?"

Russell shook his head and said, "Grandma, I'm just saying that Levi will come back. Rather than these useless chatter, it's better to go on with our lives."

Slap!

Meredith slapped Russell's face all of a sudden.

The slap sounded crisp and loud, shocking everyone.

The last time Meredith gave a slap was due to the Caesar family and not her own intention.

But that day, she intentionally slapped the junior she valued the most.

"Grandma, you..." Russell covered his face and looked at Meredith, baffled.

"How could you say that? If it weren't for you and Levi, would the Black family end up this way? You caused big trouble and are still speaking such nonsense. Are you able to solve this matter?" Meredith trembled violently with anger.

Russell stared at her seriously and said, "Yes, I can!"

"How are you going to solve it?" Meredith asked.

"As long as Levi is here, the matter will definitely be resolved..." Russell stated stubbornly.

“He’s not even here now, and you still expect him to solve the problem? How ridiculous! Are you still in your right mind?” Meredith scolded.

“You guys don’t have a clue. Actually, Levi is...” Forced into a corner, Russell wanted to reveal Levi’s identity.

“What?” Everyone looked at Russell curiously.

Even Zoey was getting suspicious.

Did Levi have an identity unknown to them that Russell knew and supported him so surely?

The Protector Chapter 571

“I...”

Russell then remembered the confidentiality agreement and stopped abruptly.

“What? Say it!” Meredith urged.

“In short, I believe in Levi. Since he dared to declare a battle, he must have had confidence!” Russell stated with tightly clenched fists.

His face was contorted, and his veins bulged as he decided to endure the grievance.

I have to endure!

I must!

A few days later, everyone will find out what is going on.

“Hah, how naive!” Meredith scoffed.

“Russell, we are so disappointed in you!”

As everyone looked at him with a downcast expression, he couldn't help but feel upset about it.

“Sooner or later, you will know the truth!” Russell bit his lip fiercely.

Soon, it was three days later.

In the Jagged Club, more than two dozen forces were gathered.

The strongest of them were the Cayman family, the Herman family, and the Oliver family.

These three, plus the Lopez family, were the giants in South City.

The Lopez family was not involved in the battle because they were still recovering from their previous loss.

Therefore, these three families became fearless in South City. They robbed wherever and whatever they went.

After all, the ones who held them down before had fallen.

In addition to the three families, there were seven or eight big clans.

Of course, there were also several big names from the underworld.

Apart from Scott Yates and Sebastian Lopez, the Grandmaster was in control of the underworld of South City.

Once a follower of Scott, he later formed his own clan and grew his clan in secret over the years.

Many experts came under his following, and he was invincible in South City.

After Scott and Sebastian fell, he stepped forward and took over everything.

Of course, there was another formidable character, who was the owner of the Jagged Club – the Stone Buddha, Brock Green.

He owned the largest underground boxing arena in South City and had more boxing experts than those ranked in the East.

Everyone was afraid of him!

That night, Jagged Club was fully prepared.

In the huge banquet hall, there sat more than twenty big bosses from South City.

Just then, Brock announced, "I have arranged 100 boxing experts in my underground boxing ring. We're just waiting for them to come."

"Haha, that's really great. Morris Group will not be able to set a foot out once they step in!" Exclamations came from the crowd. Everyone was ecstatic upon hearing that.

They knew that Brock had the strongest underground boxers in the city.

"Stone Buddha, can you tell us what experts are there?" Someone asked.

"They include the Beast of Death, the Wolf King, and Hades, who were undefeated in the Eastern Deathmatches for a consecutive of ninety-nine, a hundred, and one hundred and eighty-eight matches, respectively," Brock answered, and everyone trembled in fear.

"What? These three are here?" The crowd exclaimed.

The Beast of Death was from W City and was undefeated in ninety-nine consecutive deathmatches.

Meanwhile, The Wolf King was from the grasslands, and he was undefeated in a hundred consecutive deathmatches.

Lastly, the identity of Hades was unknown, and his record was the most terrifying. He broke the record of the Eastern Deathmatches – a total of a hundred and eighty-eight consecutive deathmatches undefeated.

There were rumors in South City that these powerful men under Brock could easily crush and kill the Four Mighty Generals under Scott.

Everyone was aware that Brock was, in fact, the most mysterious figure in South City.

Hence, when Scott's faction fell, Brock immediately invited dozens of Eastern fighters to South City.

His motive was clear – to take over South City.

“Hades is here too?” Hein Cayman, the head of the Cayman family, gulped nervously and asked.

Hades was also known as “the Thousand Slayer” because he once slaughtered thousands of pirates alone, shocking the East...

The Protector Chapter 572

Everyone was surprised and ecstatic.

They had originally heard that Brock had dozens of underground boxing experts who could top the ranks in the east.

Little did they know that these three legends were here!

With that, everyone broke out in cold sweat.

If there was anyone who wanted to have a go at Brock, they didn't dare to now.

Without mentioning anything else, Brock could sweep everything in South City with only these three people.

They looked at Brock in astonishment and drew in their breaths.

He must have spent much money even to invite Hades.

Brock nodded his head and said, "Yes, he's here too."

The crowd let out a collective gasp.

"Then things are set in stone today!" The crowd chattered excitedly.

They all had the same target today – they must chase out Morris Group.

In addition, they made a mental note that Brock Green was not to be provoked.

Who would have thought that he would invite these three masters!

“We are also prepared. We have gathered thousands of combat experts. No matter the motive of Morris Group, leaving is not one of their options!” The Grandmaster said gleefully.

Brock took a sip of his tea and said, “Well, it’s up to us on how to deal with our problems within South City. It’s not appropriate for an outsider to intervene!”

“That’s right!” The crowd voiced their agreement one by one.

The Grandmaster smiled and asked, “Stone Buddha, I’m very curious. What is Hades’s background?”

“Yes, we’re all very curious. Perhaps you could enlighten us?” Questions came from the crowd, and everyone looked expectantly at Brock.

They had heard the legend of Hades many times.

He was the strongest fighter in the East in the past two years, and anyone who challenged him ended up dead.

Yet, they had no clue about his background at all.

Brock smiled and said, “Do you know how much I spent by inviting him?”

Everyone shook their heads.

“One billion for a year!” Brock answered.

Everyone took a deep breath.

Big bosses like them would usually hire some combat experts to be their bodyguards, so they had a good idea of the market price.

Generally, those costing over five million a year were the pros in their league.

They did not expect that Hades cost him a billion for a year.

It was crazy.

“He’s definitely worth the price!” Brock said firmly.

“Hades was actually a guard...”

As Brock said that, everyone was shocked.

“However, he was not simply just a guard. He was once the most powerful God of War in L Nation and was invincible on the battlefield. He was known as Hades, the God of Military.” Brock finished.

“Oh? He’s the God of War of a country? Aside from the fact that L Nation is a small country, his identity is then equivalent to that of Erudia’s God of War!” the Grandmaster exclaimed.

Brock nodded, “Yes, that’s right. Otherwise, how could he be so scary?”

“Stone Buddha, there’s something I can’t figure out. Why would a God of War come to participate in the battle?” Hein Cayman voiced his doubts.

Everyone also turned their gaze to Brock with curiosity.

“The reason is simple. Erudia’s God of War destroyed L Nation, and he had kept a low profile since. In order to survive, it’s normal for him to do so.” Brock replied.

The crowd exchanged gazes and inhaled sharply. “Still, Erudia’s God of War is more terrifying!”

“There are so many things you all don’t know. Back then, Erudia’s God of War only sent his subordinate – the White Tiger, along with the Cavalry Regiment and in total nineteen of them to destroy a country!” Brock recounted emotionally, as though he had been part of it.

“Haha, with Hades, Morris Group can give up on leaving this place!” The crowd became excited as they looked forward to it.

Who could defeat Hades?

The Protector Chapter 573

Brock glanced at the vacant chair and said coldly, "Someone move this chair away!"

"If Neil is eating with us, he has to stand! This is South City. This is the rule!"

"Yes!" Everyone clapped their hands in agreement with Brock's decision.

The chair was moved away soon after.

Shortly after, Levi and his party arrived at the Jagged Club.

White Tiger smiled and said, "I hope there are skilled experts today..."

"They will certainly not disappoint you," Levi said with a smile as he lit a cigarette.

Several waitresses came out to the entrance of the Jagged Club and led his party into the banquet hall.

As they entered the banquet hall, everyone in the room looked shocked upon seeing Levi and the young faces in his party.

Everyone was surprised.

They wondered if everyone from the Morris Group were as young as them.

"You're here with only four people?" Someone sneered from the crowd.

"Why not? Unless this is a trap?" Levi answered with a smile.

“It is a trap. Anyone with a working brain knows that. Is that Neil Atkinson?” Hein asked with a sneer.

Kirin replied with a grin, “It’s me. But the one in charge today is my boss, not me.” He finished and looked at Levi.

Everyone was shocked again.

They had expected the second-in-command, Neil, to come that day, but they never expected that the mysterious boss of Morris Group would come in person.

Everyone in South City knew that the boss of Morris Group was mysterious and powerful, and even Scott Yates and Triple Group had suffered losses in his hands.

Due to the mysterious force he had behind North Hampton, North Hampton was now a forbidden place, and no one dared to covet the area.

Almost everyone in Quebec was speculating the identity of the boss behind Morris Group.

No one had ever expected him to come that day.

They scrutinized Levi with doubtful gazes as they had never seen him before.

Before this, some people suspected that he might be a member of the South Hampton Prince Gang.

However, they dispelled this doubt after seeing him in person.

He was not one of them.

Levi scanned the room and immediately understood that these guys did not leave a seat for him.

“What’s wrong? Are there any doubts?”

The Grandmaster held a folding fan in his hands and asked leisurely with a smile.

Levi asked in a cold tone, “Where is my seat?”

Everyone laughed at his words.

“Seat? Do you have a right to sit?” Hein Cayman argued.

The Grandmaster laughed and added, “No, you should say, would you like to risk your life sitting?”

Brock stated, “In South City, you only deserve to stand!”

Levi took a puff of his cigarette, then he smiled and said, “But I insist on sitting today!”

“How arrogant! This is South City and not North Hampton! Your words don’t count, so just bear with it!” Next to Levi, Draco Herman – a member of the Herman family, said angrily.

Hearing that, Levi’s gaze slowly fell on Draco Herman.

Draco raised his head and looked at him proudly. “What are you going to do? Straighten up!”

Wham!

Draco was sent flying with a kick by Azure Dragon in a flash.

Everyone was stunned.

Kirin then moved Draco's chair behind Levi, and Levi took a seat.

Everyone present was shocked and looked at Levi in shock.

They did not expect that Levi would make a move so easily in such an aggressive and domineering manner.

Everyone was flabbergasted with their mouths gaping wide open.

Draco got up from the floor and roared, "How dare you touch me? You're seeking death!"

"What's with the noise? I'm trying to have a meal here." Levi frowned.

The Protector Chapter 574

Kirin stepped forward, pulled Draco in front of him, and slapped him.

“You...” Draco was just about to speak, when Kirin gave him a slap again.

Slap!

Slap! Slap! Slap!

Draco’s mouth and cheeks were swollen after several consecutive slaps, and he could not speak another word.

Of course, he dared not speak anymore even if he was given a chance.

He would only be asking for trouble.

“Boss, it’s quiet now. He can’t talk anymore.” Kirin came forward to Levi and said.

Levi nodded in response, picked up his fork, and tasted the food.

Everyone present was dumbfounded.

He had slapped Draco in front of all the big bosses from South City.

In short, it was equivalent to slapping all of them!

He did not have any respect for them at all.

Morris Group really was as domineering as the rumors had said!

“You guys are courting death!” Someone in the crowd couldn’t bear it any longer and got up to say.

“Quiet! What’s all of this noise over a meal?” Brock immediately stopped the commotion, and everyone calmed down.

However, he glared at Levi angrily. This man was eating the dishes nonchalantly and enjoyably, as though he really came for a banquet.

The Grandmaster also said, “Let’s eat peacefully!”

With that, everyone picked up their forks.

However, no one was in the mood for food except for Levi.

He looked as though he really came for the food, and everyone stared at him, getting angrier as he ate.

All this while, no one had ever dared to disregard them!

Only after an hour did Levi finish eating. After he wiped the corners of his mouth, he looked at everyone and smiled, “Why didn’t you all eat?”

“This is the last meal. Who would dare to eat?” Someone sneered from the crowd.

He was implying the fate of Levi.

Brock smiled and said, “Your invitation can’t be as simple as inviting us to a meal, right?”

Levi explained directly, “Okay, then I will explain why I came to South City. My purpose is straightforward. I want to quell the unrest! You are all on my list, so listen. If it’s not your territory, don’t snatch it. If it’s not your money, don’t take it!”

Everyone inhaled sharply.

How domineering!

He came to quell the unrest in South City?

No one had this right in the whole of Quebec.

Besides, he asked us to listen?

Hah! He's delusional!

"You guys are too much!"

Bang!

Hein couldn't help but slam the table.

Meanwhile, the others glared at Levi with anger.

How dare he come to our turf and be this domineering!

He's asking for death!

Brock slammed the table too and raised his head to look at Levi. "How dare you speak in that kind of tone! And you want all of us to listen to you?"

Levi nodded and said, "Yes. You have no choice!"

Upon hearing that, Brock laughed, and everyone joined in the laughter.

Is he out of his mind?

Saying something like that in front of all the big bosses from South City!

The Grandmaster released his folding fan in a swift move and said with a smile, “What is your trump card? How are you so sure that we will listen to you?”

Levi smiled, and behind him, his three men also smiled.

Immediately, everyone understood.

The three men behind him were his trump card.

How ridiculously arrogant of him – to dare to come and make demands with only three men!

Just when everyone was in a state of shock, White Tiger said, “I’m sorry, but three’s a crowd. I can take on everyone alone!”

In addition to being shocked, everyone was stunned.

“Three’s a crowd”?

“I can take on everyone alone”?

This is madness! This guy is as delusional as his boss!

Levi added, “That’s right. My friend here is enough to deal with you mere people!”

The Protector Chapter 575

Even Brock Green, who had the nickname of Stone Buddha, felt that they were going overboard with their bullying.

“I am aware of all your actions these days. Many innocent people have been implicated, and many people have died because of all of you. Do you all enjoy lives built on their misery?” Levi turned to question them.

However, he did not get any reaction from them at all.

Perhaps, it was more fitting to say that they were all numbed to the deaths of innocent people.

Therefore, his words could not trigger them at all.

Moreover, during that period of time, they were snatching territories in South City, and as a result, there were many casualties.

Many people lost their jobs and homes.

However, these big bosses were indifferent to their predicament.

“Does it have anything to do with you? Besides, so what if people died? So what if people are injured? What a f*cking busybody! If you dare stop what we are doing, then be prepared to face our wraths!” Everyone was totally unmoved and scoffed at Levi.

They were dumbfounded that he was even bringing such a matter up to them.

“This is the reason I came today. You lot are not going to cause turmoil in South City anymore! Period!” Levi said harshly.

“In that case, you have to show us your true capability!” Brock exclaimed and smashed his cup on the ground.

Bang!

Bang!

In an instant, all six doors of the banquet hall opened simultaneously, and a large group of people poured in from the outside.

All of them were armed with weapons and were all skilled experts.

At least three hundred men filled the originally spacious banquet room to the maximum capacity.

Not only that but the corridors outside were also crowded with people.

Thousands of fighters had surrounded this place.

All of them were awaiting just one order, and they would chop Levi into pieces.

The big bosses from South City smiled and straightened their backs with newfound arrogance.

They have revealed their trump card now and believed that Levi could no longer remain arrogant.

“Now, what else do you wanna say?” Hein asked triumphantly.

Levi smiled brightly and replied, “I’ll still say the same thing – Listen!”

“Hahaha, are you blind? Can’t you see the masses? Are you still in a daydream?”
Someone from the crowd scoffed.

The Grandmaster showed little but contempt as he said, “Young man, it’s fine to be a little arrogant. Now we will give you a chance. As long as you kneel and kowtow three times, we will consider letting you go!”

In the eyes of the Grandmaster, Levi had no chance of escape.

Even if Levi’s men were very skilled and defeated the thousands of combat experts present, there were still more than a hundred skilled fighters in Brock’s underground boxing arena.

Not to mention the three legends, one of whom was the L Nation’s Hades!

They stood absolutely no chance against them.

Levi didn’t speak.

Instead, White Tiger smiled – he was excited.

“Well... Are there anymore?”

White Tiger licked the corner of his mouth eagerly.

“Huh?”

Everyone was taken aback at his bold statement.

Was he complaining that there were too few opponents?

Even in this dire situation, he is that arrogant?

Is he daft? Or crazy?

“Since you want us to listen to you, then we should play by the rules!” Brock said.

“Go on, please enlighten me!” Levi said in response.

Brock explained, “We will only listen to you once you defeated us. Otherwise, you shall listen to us and turn Morris Group over to us!”

Brock Green was a wily old fox.

He would never give up the chance to turn the situation into something favorable to him.

Immediately, Levi nodded and agreed, “Okay!”

“We will send out only one person from our side...”

Levi pointed at White Tiger.

Then he dropped the shocking remark, “As for yours, it doesn’t really matter how many you send over...”

Having heard that, the big bosses glared at Levi and his party angrily.

The Protector Chapter 576

Excuse me! This is South City, for Pete's sake – our territory! How dare he humiliate us in OUR city!

“Okay. I hope you get to keep your arrogance later!” Brock said coldly.

He added, “Let's change a venue!”

Soon after that, they moved to the underground boxing arena, where it could hold the thousands of people, and all of them surrounded the arena.

The big bosses had all flashed their trump cards.

The Grandmaster looked at Levi with a sneer and said, “You said it yourself that you are sending out only one person, so don't blame us for the one-man fight!”

With that, the Grandmaster gave an order, and immediately hundreds of experts rushed towards White Tiger.

The long swords in their hands dazzled chillingly, overflowing with murderous intent.

Looking at his attackers, White Tiger's smile gradually became cheekier.

Boom!

He punched the first striker head-on and sent him flying several tens of meters away.

Then he landed on the ground and remained still instantly.

Boom!

Boom!

Bang! Crash!

Hundreds of people attacked simultaneously, and it was an awe-struck scene.

Even if White Tiger could fight all of them, the onlookers were sure that the never-ending attacks would tire him out.

Looking on as hundreds of people drown out White Tiger, smiles burst out from the corners of everyone's lips.

White Tiger is sure to lose!

But after only a few seconds, everyone's faces changed.

More and more of their men were sent out flying by White Tiger...

A minute later, everyone's faces became solemn.

Three minutes later, everyone's faces were full of disbelief.

Five minutes later, everyone's eyeballs were about to fall out of their sockets from the sight.

They were all shocked to the core from seeing hundreds of people falling to the ground and screaming in pain.

Meanwhile, on the boxing arena, only White Tiger remained standing.

He was too good of a fighter!

He only used five minutes to defeat four to five hundred people with his bare hands!

Everyone exchanged glances as they gradually realized why Levi only sent out White Tiger.

He was strong enough to defeat them all!

“Is that all? Send everyone out! I will beat all of them!” White Tiger couldn’t get enough of it.

“Atrocious!” Brock said angrily.

There was no room for outsiders to act brazenly on his turf.

Very quickly, he gave an order, and hundreds of boxing experts under him appeared one by one.

Of course, the three strongest players have not yet appeared.

He didn’t think it was necessary for them to appear.

“Attack! Attack him one by one! I don’t believe he will keep it up!” Brock roared.

Hundreds of top-ranked boxing experts rushed up to challenge White Tiger one by one.

Boom!

“One!”

“Two!”

“Three!”

...

“Eighty-eight!”

“Ninety-nine!”

White Tiger became more spirited as he fought, and he did not look tired at all, much less exhausted.

The boxing experts from South City were knocked down by him one after another.

In the end, Brock’s face darkened.

The talents of his underground boxing arena were all completely defeated.

White Tiger was too good of a fighter...

He was not even defeated after being challenged by hundreds of combat experts!

“This is thrilling, but there is no real master at all! Don’t you have anyone stronger?” White Tiger shouted.

The big bosses looked at each other.

How arrogant!

How could they tolerate such arrogance in South City, much less on Brock’s territory?

“Stone Buddha, you must show your last card! This b*stard is too strong!”
Everyone pleaded with him one after another.

Brock squinted his eyes with a glint and said coldly, “Let the Beast of Death and Wolf King out!”

Soon, the Beast of Death and the Wolf King appeared.

Immediately, the two emitted extremely dangerous auras, which filled the place.

The atmosphere became so tense that everyone felt a numbing sensation on their scalps, and their blood seemed to have coagulated.

The Protector Chapter 577

Originating from W City was the Beast of Death. He was only about five-foot-six, but his skin was a golden bronze, like cast metal, giving people a sense of strength.

He studied and practiced ancient Thai boxing for thirty years and took down each of his opponents in ninety-nine deathmatches within thirty seconds previously.

As for the Wolf King, dense hair covered his face, and his eyes glowed, resembling a real wolf.

When he was a child, the Wolf King grew up with a pack of wolves. His fighting skills blended with that of the wolves and were so strong that they were unimaginable to a normal person.

As soon as the two appeared, they threatened the onlookers with their imposing auras, making it difficult for them to breathe.

The most powerful fighters always brought the threat of death at first sight.

“Whatever you do, just don’t kill him!” Brock gave the order.

The Wolf King stood aside and didn’t move. Meanwhile, the Beast of Death nodded and stepped forward.

He wanted a one-on-one with White Tiger.

However, White Tiger beckoned with his finger and said, “Come at me together and save me some time!”

The Beast of Death and the Wolf King exchanged glances, and their eyes were filled with disbelief.

They seemed to be surprised by White Tiger's stupidly cocky behavior.

"Since he said so, then you should both go!" Brock shouted. His eyes were filled with murderous intent.

The Beast of Death and the Wolf King exchanged looks again, and the Beast of Death made his move first.

With every step he took, the floor formed cracks.

Boom!

Crack!

After he took three steps forward, the underground boxing arena blew apart.

That scene was simply shocking.

Everyone knew that the underground boxing arena was made of special materials. Yet, he crushed it with only a few steps.

Just how much power did he possess to be able to do that?

Soon after, the Beast of Death was in front of White Tiger, and he charged towards with his knee up.

That move was definitely comparable to being rammed by a car, and the impact was absolutely not less than that of a sports car speeding at a few hundred yards and crashing into a train...

Almost at the same instant, the Wolf King also made his move.

Whoosh!

He possessed the agility and speed of a wild wolf. When he leaped forward, he swept towards White Tiger with a swift attack at a distance of tens of meters.

It didn't matter if it were the Beast of Death or the Wolf King, any one of them would definitely split White Tiger into pieces with their killer moves.

Over the years, they had long become killing machines.

They would dedicate their time every day in their lives to find out ways to kill more effectively.

What they had been doing was just terrifying!

White Tiger smiled as he felt Wolf King and the Beast of Death close at hand.

Boom!

He struck his left fist towards the knee of the Beast of Death and his right fist towards the claws of Wolf King.

“He is courting death!”

“Isn't this a futile endeavor?”

The onlookers exclaimed. All of them thought that White Tiger was over-confident in himself.

Boom!

His left fist landed on the knees of the Beast of Death.

Crack!

The Beast of Death's knee, which was as hard as diamonds, cracked open at once, and he was sent flying out from the impact.

Boom!

White Tiger smashed and distorted the Wolf King's entire arm with a fist, and the Wolf King fell on his knees directly in front of him.

At that instant, everyone was sent into a state of shock, and they looked on with their eyes wide open.

The two legendary fighters, who were undefeated in ninety-nine and a hundred deathmatches respectively, were beaten even though they had teamed up?

The Beast of Death and the Wolf King let out cries of agony, and their cries brought everyone back to reality.

Both of them were defeated by White Tiger.

At that moment, Brock could no longer sit still, so he stood up.

He was more formidable than anyone expected.

On the other hand, Levi had a smile on his face.

With his buddies around, there was no need for him to make a move.

Oh, how lonely it is for me to be invincible.

"However many of you are left, go up all at once! Stop wasting time!" Levi called out.

Hearing Levi's words, Brock was completely riled up with anger.

He roared, "Call out Hades!"

Hein, the Grandmaster, and the rest were beyond excited.

Finally, the strongest fighter is coming!

Suddenly, a black shadow was cast on the arena, and an oppressive aura gradually filled the place.

The Protector Chapter 578

Hades was here.

He was not only the record holder of the deathmatches, but he was also L Nation's God of War.

The former details were not that important.

However, the latter, his identity as a nation's God of War, certainly was.

In ancient times, he would be an invincible God of War.

In the past, everyone only regarded him as a fighting machine. However, after realizing his identity as L Nation's God of War, everyone's impression of him had changed.

In the secular world, he was a god-like existence among ordinary people.

The God of War wore a simple black sweater and a hat. What was terrifying was that he wore half of a wolf mask.

As soon as he appeared, the focus of the whole audience was on him.

Hades came to the middle of the arena step by step, and the temperature dropped sharply.

An overwhelming murderous aura engulfed the place.

As soon as those ordinary onlookers felt his suffocating aura, it became difficult for them to breathe. Their faces turned pale, and they looked as if they were at death's door.

This was a true imposing aura!

Since he was the God of War, Hades must have at least slaughtered a thousand people.

His murderous aura was honed out on the battlefield and was not something an ordinary fighter could compare to.

Brock and the others immediately got excited when they saw Hades appear.

Even if the White Tiger could fight very well, they presumed that he was not Hades's opponent.

"Kill him, and I will reward you ten billion!" Brock shouted.

"I'd add another billion!"

"And I, three billion!"

...

Everyone started to add motivation, and the reward rose gradually.

As long as Hades killed the White Tiger, he would be rewarded twenty billion!

It was an amount that many people dreamt of, and Hades was no exception.

His eyes lit up fiercely.

For that amount of money, he would kill anyone in his way.

“Where is the person?” Hades asked in a low voice.

Everyone pointed to White Tiger.

Then, he walked towards White Tiger step by step as he exuded a dangerous air around him.

It was as if the actual Hades himself was reborn from hell.

If he unleashed his wrath, there was no doubt that there would be at least a million corpses with blood flowing into a river...

It was absolutely terrifying!

Hades stood in front of White Tiger and looked up at him.

When their eyes met, Hades's face changed drastically.

It's him!

This can't be!

H-he...

His lips twitched, but he could not say a word for a long time as he watched White Tiger.

He could never forget this person!

Hades could never forget the night, where a total of nineteen people destroyed tens of thousands of his men in L nation head-on! It was him and the Cavalry Regiment!

Subsequently, nineteen of them killed their way into L Nation. They were invincible and wiped out the nation right then.

In just one night, L Nation was utterly destroyed.

As L Nation's God of War, he was also defeated, and he could only watch as they annihilated the country.

By far, Erudia's God of War was the most terrifying existence he had ever seen.

His men were brave and good at fighting, and they were invincible in the world.

This person in front of him, especially, brought him the trauma of a lifetime.

It was the lingering nightmare that would haunt him all his life!

Every night, he was haunted by the recurring dream of L Nation's destruction, and every time, White Tiger's ruthless face appeared in the dream.

And every time, he was always jolted awake from the nightmare without fail.

That person is simply too strong!

He would never forget how he broke into the camp of ten thousand people and killed his way back and forth.

Today, he actually saw it again here.

He realized that Erudia's God of War and his faction were too strong.

Even if he had a hundred years to prepare, he wouldn't be able to take revenge.

Now he could only continue to participate in fighting competitions to vent his emotions and grind away the trauma that Erudia's God of War had brought unto him.

Never in his wildest dreams did he think that he would meet White Tiger again.

Suddenly, he recalled that Erudia's Five Great Wars Regiment were almost inseparable from Erudia's God of War.

If White Tiger is here, that means that Erudia's God of War should also be here...

The Protector Chapter 579

Sweeping his eyes across the place, he saw Levi sitting at the back.

Suddenly, Hades became dizzy and almost passed out.

Meeting Levi's gaze, he felt as if he was suffocating.

In an instant, his whole body was drenched in a cold sweat, and he couldn't stop trembling.

His legs had a mind of their own as he knelt in front of White Tiger with a loud thud.

The sound was loud enough for everyone to hear, giving everyone a huge shock.

No one had expected it.

Even Levi was shocked.

He wondered what was the matter with Hades.

He was supposed to fight White Tiger, but he knelt in front of him as soon as they met.

Brock and the others also couldn't understand it.

What's with Hades? Is this all a joke?

Why is he kneeling in front of the enemy?

Everyone rubbed their eyes, wondering if they were mistaken with what they saw.

This was the strongest fighter in the Eastern Deathmatches, who was undefeated in one hundred and eighty-eight consecutive matches!

He was invincible!

Why did he kneel as soon as he sees White Tiger?

They didn't understand, but White Tiger gradually gained realization.

Even though Hades was wearing half a wolf mask, but White Tiger still recognized him from his eyes and his aura.

"You... Are you L Nation's God of War – Hades?" White Tiger asked tentatively.

Hades nodded and shouted, "The defeated warrior of L Nation pays his respects to Erudia's God of War and White Tiger!"

Everyone inhaled sharply upon hearing his address.

Erudia's God of War?

White Tiger?

What was that all about?

Everyone couldn't react to the turn of events for a while.

After hearing the address from Hades, Levi rubbed his temples helplessly.

He had planned not to reveal his identity on this trip to South City, so he resorted to using force to solve the mess.

But lo and behold, he did not expect to encounter the defeated warrior of L Nation.

Wouldn't my cover be blown?

Levi smiled helplessly.

"Hades! What are you doing? Quickly kill him for me!" Brock shouted anxiously.

"Yeah, why are you kneeling to him?" Everyone couldn't understand it and looked on in disbelief.

Hades did not speak. He looked at the crowd and slowly took off his mask.

Now, everyone could clearly see what the other half of his face looks like.

There were multiple crisscrossed scars, and his face looked extremely terrifying.

Hades then said in a low voice, "Do you know who left these scars on me?"

Brock and the rest looked at him with puzzled faces.

"It's White Tiger, who left them to me during the destruction of L Nation!" He finished.

"What? In the destruction of L Nation?"

"Could it be that Erudia's God of War..."

Everyone's faces changed drastically.

Then, they returned to their senses one by one.

Hades had addressed Erudia's God of War and White Tiger earlier.

"You guys are so bold to dare to make a move on just about anyone!"

Hades suddenly raised his tone as he continued, "Listen! Standing in front of me is the White Tiger – one of the Five Great Wars Regiments of Erudia! Back then, he destroyed my L Nation single-handedly!"

Then, he turned to look at Levi, who was sitting not far away from him.

"And he is the world's most invincible, the nightmare of all countries, the greatest devil in the eyes of all guards – Erudia's God of War!" Hades said with jealousy.

As soon as his words settled, pin-drop silence fell.

The Protector Chapter 580

That moment was too shocking for Brock and the others.

They couldn't believe that the person they were going to deal with turned out to be Erudia's God of War.

Now they understood why Scott's faction fell, why Triple Group withdrew from Erudia, and why Morris Group was invincible.

All of that was due to Erudia's God of War!

Otherwise, who else could move the two forces?

Besides, South City authorities were more than eager to offer various preferential policies to Triple Group. Thus, it was impossible that the city's authorities would chase them out of the city.

Judging by how Erudia's God of War returned to North Hampton just a few days ago, the timing was right.

In an instant, they all understood.

Thump!

Thump!

...

Everyone knelt down one after another.

No wonder they dared to take on thousands of them with just one person.

It was White Tiger, the King of War, who destroyed a country with only nineteen people in his troop!

Sure enough, they had no choice but to obey.

“We were wrong! Please spare our lives!” Brock cried out loud.

Everyone kowtowed their foreheads on the ground.

Levi stood up, walked to the front of Hades and said, “You will follow me from now on!”

“Understood,” Hades answered with a nod of his head.

Levi then looked at Brock and the rest.

“Why would I want your lives? Now, what you all should be doing is to listen to what I’ve been saying! You can’t take things that are not your own. I don’t care who has your back. If you are not satisfied, you can take me on.” When Levi said that, everyone was almost frightened to death.

Who would be so courageous to take on Erudia’s God of War?

No one would dare to even if we have nine lives!

“God of War, we dare not!” Brock and the others said in embarrassment.

“Also, do not spread the news. I would like to see who dares to covet South City.” Levi said coldly.

When Levi said that, Brock and the rest broke out in a cold sweat.

Erudia's God of War was going to take the opportunity to attack whoever was coming for South City.

At that instant, they immediately thought of a person – Richard Caesar.

A few days later, he would be attacking the Black family and even more forcefully into South City.

“In addition to that, make compensations to those whom you have hurt! Make sure everyone is taken care of, and I will send someone to keep tabs!” Levi said.

“Understood, God of War!” Everyone answered and nodded their heads fervently.

“God of War, I am willing to spend two billion for charity!” Brock offered.

Others also spoke, “I would like to devote one billion to charity!”

Soon, tens of billions of charity funds were being offered.

The leaders of South City were all stunned.

As expected of Erudia's God of War, he solved the turmoil in South City easily with his intervention.

He even raised tens of billions of charity funds in a flash.

“Sure enough, ruthless people need to be treated with ruthlessness, huh?” Levi lamented.

Everyone laughed.

Another day passed.

Levi never appeared and was still out of contact.

To be honest, Zoey was a little anxious.

She wasn't worried about Levi running away. In fact, she was mainly afraid that something bad had happened to him.

Just then, Logan arrived at the Black family where they were still at a loss over the situation.

"Logan, how is it?" Meredith asked agitatedly.

"Grandma, I have disappointed you. I tried my best!" Logan said helplessly, his head drooping.

"What?"

The news was tantamount to a huge blow to the Black family.

Logan was their only hope!

"What happened, Logan?" Meredith asked nervously as her body trembled.

The Protector Chapter 581

Logan sighed and said, “Grandma, during this period of time, my father, grandfather, and I have used all the connections we can find and asked them to persuade the Caesar family to let the matter go. However, they are unyielding in their stand, and it didn’t matter who went.

They are determined to deal with the Black family! Russell’s slap had made Richard very angry, and he vowed to use all the resources of the Caesar family to deal with us!” Logan explained.

“What?”

“The Black family will then cease to exist!”

Everyone in the Black family panicked.

“Grandma, there is no other solution. The Caesar Family has set their hearts to be ruthless this time! Their target is not only the Black Family but the entire South City!” Logan pointed out the facts.

The Black family was just a sacrifice.

“I can’t accept this!” Meredith cried out, on the verge of tears.

“Grandma, there is only one way now...” Logan said.

“What is it?” Everyone in the Black family looked over to him.

“Surrender to the Caesar family and give up everything to them!” Logan then glanced at them and whispered, “In addition to that, hand over Russell, Levi, and Zoey to them!”

“Only by compromising in this way will the Caesar family let us go! Otherwise, we will end up exterminated!” Logan’s proposal resonated among the members of the Black family.

Bailey and the others agreed one after another, “Yes, that’s right. Where there’s life, there’s hope. We can always rise again!”

Meredith and Robert exchanged glances, and they said helplessly, “Well, it can only be so.”

“Grandpa, Grandma, don’t be stressed out! First of all, Russell is just an adopted son. Secondly, Aunt Caitlyn’s family was already expelled from the Black family. So, these people are not essential. It’s okay to give them up.” Logan said.

Everyone looked at each other.

What he said was true.

They were not the direct bloodline of the Black family.

Hence, it would make more sense to give these people up to preserve the Black family’s direct lineage.

“Okay, let’s do it!” Meredith gritted her teeth and decided.

Although Zoey and her family were a distance away from them and could not hear what everyone was discussing, they were all smart enough to understand what was going on.

“Looks like Grandpa and Grandma are going to abandon us...” Zoey said.

Caitlyn was already sobbing uncontrollably, and Aaron was visibly stressed.

Zoey understood through this incident that the Black family still didn't accept them.

At that moment, all she could feel were grievances and grief.

Darling, where are you?

Zoey missed Levi very much.

Later on, a few days passed by quickly.

Yet, Levi still did not appear.

In a blink of an eye, the day where the Black family and the Caesar family were due for a battle had finally arrived.

"Haha, are you still waiting foolishly? He already ran away!" Logan sneered.

Zoey stubbornly shook her head, "No! My husband will show up!"

Caitlyn and Aaron roared with anger, "You still believe him at this time? It's over for us! Why don't you ask him to show up now?"

"I..." Zoey muttered under her breath worriedly.

Where's Levi?

"The biggest regret in my life is marrying my daughter to this scumbag!" Aaron shouted and threw a fist at the wall violently.

Caitlyn added helplessly, “Me too! The worst thing that happened in my life was meeting Levi.”

In their opinion, this incident happened all because of Levi.

On the other hand, both Abigail and Russell said in unison, “Don’t worry. He will show up!”

Soon afterward, there was a noise outside the Black family’s manor.

The Caesar family was here...

The Protector Chapter 582

It was a shocking scene outside the manor.

The guards of the Black family were so scared that they almost knelt on the ground.

Cars arrived one after another.

Soon after that, more than two hundred black sedans surrounded the entire manor.

Clack!

Clack!

Clack!

The doors of the cars opened one by one, and burly men dressed in white alighted from them.

Everyone had the word “Caesar” embroidered in front of their chests on their white clothes.

The men stood neatly in formation around the manor, completely locking down the area.

The Caesar family was serious about this.

They even dispatched their family’s skilled experts!

There must be at least seven to eight hundred skilled experts present!

This was the consequence for whoever dared to provoke Richard or slap him.

There were several cars surrounding a Lincoln limousine.

The door of the Lincoln opened, and Richard Caesar alighted from the car.

He glanced at the Black family's manor and sneered, "I shall see how the Black family escapes from my clutches!"

Beside him, Thomas Caesar, the top expert in charge of the Caesar family's security, sneered and said, "Master, today, our eight hundred men will flatten the Black family and take down South City!"

Hearing his words, the Caesar family's eight hundred white-robed men shouted together, "Today, eight hundred men of the Caesar family will flatten this place!"

The impact of the sound and the great momentum sounded like thunder in the sky, terrifying everyone in the manor.

"Gosh, how many of them are here?"

Meredith and Robert hugged each other as they and the rest of the Black family trembled in fear.

"This is bad! We're all surrounded!"

Right at that moment, their guard ran in in a panic, staggering to the ground in fright.

"Yes, they are everywhere! They are dressed in white clothes with the word "Caesar" written on them. The guards outside said that there were at least eight hundred of them. They have surrounded us!"

Having heard that, the color drained out of Meredith's face.

We're doomed.

The Caesar family is too terrifying.

They were serious about this!

"What should we do?" Robert panicked.

"Is Logan not here yet?" Meredith asked.

At that moment, Logan became her only support.

"I can't reach him. I called Jennie too, but she didn't pick up either." Keane and Quintus replied.

Meredith just clenched her fists and said, "I'm afraid that Logan's method will not work now. The Caesar family has prepared too large of a scale for the battle!"

"It seems that Logan won't be coming. We can solve it ourselves." Although they were currently in a bad situation, Russell looked relaxed as he said that.

Everyone couldn't refute Russell's words.

They knew very well that Logan had run away since he surely wouldn't let the Zachs family be implicated.

"It's only right for Logan to protect himself and not come. After all, he contributed much to the Black family!" Meredith said, then she looked at Zoey and her parents with a sneer and added, "What about her husband, Levi? He caused the trouble, yet he ran away and couldn't be contacted..."

When Abigail and Russell heard that, they really wanted to curse.

However, Meredith was their grandmother, so they could do nothing about their frustration over her words.

Meredith glanced at Robert and said softly, "You may lose a lot today, so please be mentally prepared!"

"I am! I just hope the young ones will be safe!" Robert looked at Quintus and the rest with a conflicted expression.

He was ready to sacrifice himself.

Boom!

Right at that moment, the door of the Black family's manor was blasted open with a kick, and it fell to the ground with a loud thud.

The Protector Chapter 583

The Caesar family launched their first attack by sending eight hundred men from their White Army.

They swarmed and completely overwhelmed the few dozen guards from the Black family as they continued their onslaught.

After that, they quickly arrived at the main hall and surrounded it completely.

At that moment, the Black family was scared out of their wits by the sudden incursion.

This never happened before!

Even Meredith and Robert gaped in shock as it was a sight that could only be seen in the military.

Only then, Zoey and her family came to realize how powerful the Caesar family was when they saw the formidable regiment.

No wonder they all say that they are unmatched in Quebec!

They really are the most powerful family in South Hampton!

To think Levi got himself into so much trouble!

Zoey gaped in shock while Caitlyn was on the verge of tears.

“Levi, you good-for-nothing scoundrel! You got all of us in trouble, but you ran away first! I will skin you alive!” Caitlyn yelled.

Aaron took a deep breath and deduced, “He must’ve escaped because he saw how powerful the Caesar family is!”

Very quickly, the Black family was forced to a corner as they awaited the Caesar family’s punishment.

Thump! Thump!

The chaotic sound of footsteps boomed through the entire room, and everyone knew that signified the arrival of the head of the family.

The White Army automatically made way for a group of people, and the person leading the posse was Richard.

A few dozen men, including Timothy, followed behind him, and they were the Caesar family’s experts in combat.

The moment he stepped into the room, he started to look for Levi, and he breathed a sigh of relief when he realized Levi wasn’t there.

Our intelligence is reliable – Levi really did run away.

Now that he’s gone, nothing can scare me anymore!

As long as the powerful people in the South City don’t interfere in this, we, the Caesars, can do as we please.

After all, who can even match us in strength?

Definitely not the puny Black family!

Richard walked to the middle of the room and scoffed, “What happened? Didn’t you ask for reinforcements? Don’t tell me that the Black family didn’t even try to find a single ally? How dare you disrespect the Caesar family like this?”

The Black family was petrified when they heard that.

“You must be mistaken! We have a lot of respect for your family!”

Meredith and Robert almost kneeled down.

“Hmph. If that’s so, why did one of your youngins slap me?”

Ignoring Meredith and Robert’s pleas, he chuckled. “Since you challenged us to battle, don’t blame us if we go all out! Let me introduce my companions to you. These four are former Navies; these three are commanders from the army; these seven are some of the best from King Cobra Assassin Organization. Besides that, these ten are bodyguards that we hired from all over the globe, and they all served under the rulers of their country before. Meanwhile, this is Black Panther from South Hampton’s underworld. We also alerted all our allies about this war. If for some reason we cannot handle this ourselves, we can summon the powerful figures in South Hampton with just one call! Don’t blame us for going full force. After all, you started it first!”

The Black family gaped in shock when they heard Richard listing out all his connections.

How do we even stand a chance against them?

I bet even the most powerful families in the South City aren’t their match as well!

Even if the eight hundred members of the White Army weren’t involved, the few dozen experts around Richard could plow through us with no trouble!

The Protector Chapter 584

“By the way, where’s the person who slapped my father?” Patrick Caesar, Richard’s son, asked in a cold voice.

When he and his siblings heard that their father was slapped in the face, they almost launched their attack that very day.

After all, this was something completely unacceptable to the Caesar family.

This is absolutely preposterous!

How dare someone slap the Richard Caesar?

Simply unbelievable.

“I did it!”

Russell stepped forward and stared at Patrick bravely.

“Hah! Very well then! An insolent fool like you dares to slap my father?!” Patrick bellowed.

“Indeed, I was the one who slapped him! He asked someone to slap me, so I slapped him back to return the favor! An eye for an eye.”

Russell stared at Patrick fearlessly.

Russell’s words enraged the entire Caesar family as the eight hundred White Army soldiers glared at him menacingly.

This was a matter of honor, so slapping Richard was akin to showing the Caesar family the utmost disrespect.

They definitely wouldn't take that lying down.

All they needed was a command for them to rip Russell into pieces.

This time, Russell really messed up by stepping over the Caesar family's bottom line.

Patrick laughed maniacally. "I heard that the Black family's younger generation are all boastful little brats, and I got to see that for myself today! By the way, where's that girl, Abigail? Who does she think she is to reject my son?"

He bragged before that no lady in Quebec would ever reject his son's advances, so imagine the irony he felt when Abigail rejected Timothy!

That was why the entire Caesar family was curious to see how Abigail was like.

Upon hearing that, the Black family panicked.

It's fine if Russell gets into trouble, but Abigail mustn't get involved in all this!

After all, she's a direct descendant of the Black family!

Despite their concerns, Abigail stepped towards Patrick fearlessly and smiled. "I'm Abigail. I'm sorry, but I'm really not interested in your son!"

Patrick scrutinized her before saying, "Not bad! However, you're not worthy of my son. Brilliant ladies are hard to find, but pretty ladies are littered all over the city. My son can get a pretty lady any time he wants, so of course, there's no way you're fit for him!"

"That's right! Does she even look in the mirror? How dare she reject him?"

“Apart from her pretty face, does she even have anything else?”

The Caesar family lambasted her at that instant.

Abigail’s expression turned into a contemptuous one as she snorted, “You’re right! I am not worthy of Timothy, so why are you are looking for me now?”

“What I heard was true then – Youngsters from the Black family really are cocky!” Patrick sneered.

“Oh, there’s also that person... the one that challenged us, Caesars, to battle! Where is he?” Patrick changed the subject.

In an instant, the hall fell silent as everyone exchanged glances of apprehension because they didn’t know how to answer his question.

Patrick was stunned for a moment before he burst into a chuckle. “Don’t tell me he’s not even here?”

Everyone lowered their heads in shame when they heard that.

However, at that moment, Zoey stepped forward.

“I am Levi Garrison’s wife! I will take responsibility for my husband’s actions!” she declared.

At that, Caitlyn, Aaron, and the entire Black family froze in shock because they never expected Zoey to make such a declaration.

Meanwhile, Abigail stared at Zoey in admiration.

Originally, Abigail thought that Zoey didn’t like Levi that much, but now she realized they both respected and adored each other.

“Hahaha...” Patrick chortled.

“What a joke this is! A man actually ditched his wife and forced her to bear the brunt of his actions!”

“Who said I ditched her?”

The Protector Chapter 585

At that moment, a resonant voice echoed across the hall.

“Levi!!”

“Darling!!”

“Is that Levi Garrison?”

Abigail, Zoey, and Russell immediately squealed in joy when they heard the familiar voice.

At the same time, the Black family looked in the direction of the voice as well and saw an unmistakable figure.

Levi had an imposing aura that commanded attention, and everyone’s gazes were drawn to him as he strode towards the center of the hall.

Timothy’s heart sank to a bottomless pit when he made eye contact with Levi, and his right eye inexplicably started to twitch.

He had a very bad feeling about it.

Meanwhile, Richard’s temper flared when he saw how Levi was as smug as usual.

The person that slapped me was Russell, but Levi was the mastermind behind all this!

Besides that, he was the one who challenged us to battle as well!

“Honey, what’s wrong? Why the tears?”

Levi pulled Zoey into his arms and wiped her tears away with a piece of tissue while everyone was watching.

“You’re here at last! I waited for you for seven whole days! Where did you go? They all said that you ran away and left me behind...” Zoey sobbed uncontrollably.

“I told you that I will handle this, so of course, I will come back here. I just went to take care of some other issue over the past few days.”

After Levi calmed the unrest in the South City, he donated tens of billions of charity funds to help everyone in need.

Not only that, but he also established the Morris Group in the South City’s market ahead of schedule.

By doing that, he managed to expand the Morris Group’s operations to serve the general public better.

On the other hand, Abigail and Russell were getting emotional as well. “Levi, we waited for you for so long! A lot of terrible things happened while you were gone...”

“Don’t worry. As long as I’m still here, I will make sure that no one dares to trespass into our territory!” Levi announced coldly.

At that, the Black family was utterly shocked.

Are you kidding me, Levi? Why are you so freakin’ cocky?

Meanwhile, while they spoke, they completely ignored the Caesar family.

It was as if the Caesar family was invisible to them.

When the Caesar family realized that, they were infuriated.

Thud!

Patrick kicked the door violently, and the loud bang shocked everyone.

Zoey, who was in Levi's arms, was visibly startled as well.

Meanwhile, Levi's expression contorted into a menacing one as he turned around slowly and glared at Patrick.

"How dare you startle my wife. You will face the consequences of that!"

While he said that, he had remembered every single mole and feature that Patrick had. Patrick's face was strongly imprinted in Levi's mind.

I'll make sure he pays the price for his actions!

Patrick sneered, "Really? That is such a joke! Didn't you say you'd admit defeat if you can withstand our attack regardless of how many reinforcements we call for?"

Levi nodded in acknowledgment. "Yeah, I did say that. You can call all the reinforcements you want! I'll admit our loss if you defeat us!"

"Haha..."

At that, everyone in the Caesar family chortled.

What a foolishly cocky man he is!

Patrick smiled and asked, "Are you gonna ask for reinforcements too? Are you thinking about going into battle without any reinforcements?"

"Well, that's not really the case. After all, you're not powerful enough to warrant my involvement!" Levi pronounced.

But even if Levi really did want to get into battle, Kirin and Azure Dragon wouldn't let him.

Patrick bellowed furiously. "Where are your reinforcements then? Ask them to hurry up, or we'll launch our attack first!"

The Black family trembled in fear when they heard that.

The Caesar family is getting serious this time!

What should we do now?

Damn it, Levi!

Did you really think that you can oppose the Caesar family?

Meanwhile, Levi took out his phone and called someone. "You can all come now!"

The Protector Chapter 586

“Haha...”

The Caesar family burst into laughter when they saw Levi making a call because they thought that it was an act of pure stupidity.

Just imagine the Black family’s embarrassment right now!

We know Levi way too well!

So what if he calls every single powerful figure in North Hampton?

The Caesar family can crush them with just a flick of the finger.

Besides, Levi isn’t powerful enough to do any of that!

On the other hand, Abigail breathed a sigh of relief because Levi finally retaliated.

Meanwhile, Russell felt excited at the prospect of battle.

Richard sat on the chair and mocked, “I am curious to see what kind of reinforcements you called!”

Following that, Patrick commanded, “Tell our brothers outside to let everyone in no matter who they are.”

In a matter of a few minutes, numerous luxury vehicles filled the streets.

The few Black family's guards who were apprehended were shocked when they saw that.

"Did they all come?"

They watched as swathes of men entered the manor.

"Have they arrived?"

The Caesar family was excited when they heard the commotion outside.

"Who's there? Announce who you are!" Patrick demanded.

The Black family was dumbfounded when they saw the guests because they were all powerful figures from the South City.

"I'm the head of the Goldson family, Hunter Goldson."

However, Patrick wagged his finger and said, "Nope, you don't make the cut. Next!"

"I'm the head of the Johnson family, Tommy Johnson."

"Nope!"

After a few rounds, Patrick replied while smirking, "None of you make the cut! Gosh, no one here interests me at all!"

The ten families that arrived were some of the most powerful families in the South City, yet they were still miles behind the Caesar family.

"I'm the head of the Cayman family, Hein Cayman."

Everyone, including Richard and Patrick, was stunned when that name was uttered.

The Caesar family was a quasi-royal clan, but one of the four most powerful families in the South City, the Cayman family, showed up, and they had the power to threaten the Caesar family.

“I’m the head of the Herman family, Draco Herman.”

That name reverberated through the entire hall like a sonic boom.

“I’m the head of the Oliver family, Stanley Oliver.”

Like an atomic bomb, that name blew everyone’s minds!

Three out of the four noble families in South City had arrived!

The Caesar family started to panic at the prospect of facing them and the other ten powerful families.

“Is that enough for you? Am I, Alexander Stark, invited to the party?”

A middle-aged man wielding a staff appeared at that moment.

“Are you the Master of South City’s underworld?” Patrick’s voice started to tremble.

The Caesar family was now officially panicking because they knew how powerful they were!

“Can I join too? The Stone Buddha – Brock Green, reporting for duty!” an orotund voice spoke.

Brock Green had arrived with a hundred experts from the underground boxing scene, some of which were like caged beasts waiting to wreak havoc.

Upon their arrival, the Caesar family's White Army sensed danger in the air.

"Is... the Stone Buddha here too?"

Richard and Patrick were absolutely dumbstruck.

They knew that they couldn't possibly afford to cross Brock because he might be even more powerful than Scott Yates.

That was why the Caesar family was determined to avoid Brock at all costs when they came to the South City to assert their dominance.

He really is here!

This spells nothing but disaster to us!

"Let me introduce three more friends to you!"

With a clap of the hands, three figures appeared behind Brock.

"This is the Beast of Death, who scored 99 victories the Eastern Deathmatches!"

Gasp!

Everyone drew in a sharp breath.

The Protector Chapter 587

All of Richard's troops' expressions darkened instantly when they heard that, so it was obvious that they heard about the vicious reputation of the Beast of Death before.

"Next up, we have the Wolf King, who had 100 consecutive victories in the Eastern Deathmatches!"

The Wolf King emitted a dangerous aura that made a chill run down everyone's spines.

"I know who he is! He came too?" The bodyguards beside Richard were scared out of their wits.

It wasn't an exaggeration to say that the Beast of Death and the Wolf King could deal with a few dozen of them at once.

"Finally, we have Hades, who broke the record of the Eastern Deathmatches by having a total of 188 consecutive deathmatches undefeated."

When Brock said that, the hall went deathly silent.

The Caesar family had been searching for powerful fighters on the local and international scale over the past few years, so they were familiar with internationally famous combatants like Hades.

They received some news a few days ago saying that Hades was hired by someone else with an astronomical price, but they never expected that Brock was the one who hired him.

Hades emanated a cold and murderous aura honed through countless battles when he stepped into the hall.

In his presence, everyone felt their extremities tingling from the cold as a chill permeated their entire body.

Just his presence was enough to intimidate everyone there!

However, it was not unexpected as he was the strongest fighter from the Eastern Deathmatches.

“It... really is him...” Richard’s men started to tremble in fear as they gave Hades a cautious look.

They say that he kills without even blinking his eye!

Even with the help from the eight hundred people from the White Army, he’ll cut through all of us like butter!

It was evident now that the Caesar family didn’t have the home advantage in the South City.

Hades gave Levi a courteous bow before scanning through the Caesar family menacingly.

“Those who want to challenge the Black family must get through me first!”

The Caesar family was shocked when they heard that, and they fell silent afterward.

We really can’t afford to cross him!

The Caesar family was between a rock and a hard place now because they couldn’t attack or retreat.

Even though Richard seemed like he was sitting down calmly on the chair, his fingers were trembling anxiously.

This was the biggest obstacle the Caesar family had ever faced.

Meanwhile, the Black family stared at Levi in disbelief.

How did he even do that?

Even the Zachs family isn't able to ask all the powerful figures in the South City for help!

But now, the all-mighty Brock and Alexander are both here.

And not to mention Hades! Goodness, gracious! That guy intimidated the entire Caesar family with just his presence!

Bailey, Pamela, Meredith, and Robert were all dumbfounded.

Just who the heck is this Levi?

How is he able to ask so many powerful figures for help?

Meanwhile, Abigail and Russell felt an overwhelming sense of pride.

On the other hand, Caitlyn and Aaron could feel the nuances in the atmosphere because the Caesar family seemed more subdued now.

What is Levi's identity actually?

Zoey was, too, curious as she wondered how her husband managed to pull it off.

Does he have a secret identity of some sorts?

The Protector Chapter 588

The piece of news was just like a bolt from the blue to the Caesar family.

Is someone else coming?

Is this just the start of a nightmare?

Timothy's pupils suddenly constricted as he realized something.

He almost fainted at that realization.

Coming to the South City was a very bad decision!

That person is no ordinary man!

The Black family was taken aback as well.

Is someone else coming?

A few more cars arrived shortly, and their license plates indicated that they were powerful figures from the South City.

After that, a group of people dressed in suits rushed towards the main hall of the manor.

Even the White Army standing guard outside the manor was frightened when they saw those people. The guards could tell that from their auras that their power was overwhelming.

Tap tap tap...

Both the Caesar family and the Black family was shocked when they heard the sound of footsteps.

Someone else is here!

When Meredith and Robert saw those people, they almost fainted.

“What? Oh my God!”

The rest of the Black family were astonished beyond belief as well.

The most powerful figures in the South City are all here!

Levi actually managed to accomplish something that Logan and his entire family couldn't?

That's insane!

Richard didn't recognize those people, but he could tell that they weren't the usual next-door neighbors.

Meanwhile, Timothy was absolutely terrified when he saw Stephen, Tim, and the rest.

It's them again? Weren't they at The Abyss that night?

Timothy's body trembled violently out of fear.

We're screwed!

Regardless of how powerful the Caesar family is, we still are no match for them!

“I am Tim Cronan from Quebec. I heard that someone was causing trouble to the Black family, so I decided to see for myself what’s happening.”

Richard and Patrick almost passed out when Tim revealed who he was.

He’s the governor of Quebec!

If he’s here, that means that the people behind him are...

“I am the South City’s mayor, Stephen McKay. Who are you? Why are there so many people outside?”

“I’m the Deputy Leader of Quebec, Woodie Emil.”

“I’m the head of the Police Department, Wright Hector.”

“I’m the Deputy Leader of the South City, Korey Madisen.”

They all introduced themselves one by one and made the Caesar family tremble in fear.

Richard panted heavily as if he was out of breath, and Patrick’s face turned paper white.

Meanwhile, Timothy’s legs gave way as he lost balance and stumbled.

He really asked all of the most powerful figures in the South City for help!

How is it possible for the Caesar family to even match that?

It’s impossible!

The Caesar family was stuck in a very difficult position right now, and they didn't know what to do anymore.

They couldn't afford to cross anyone present in the hall.

Hades is powerful enough to take on our entire army, and Tim has more authority than all of us combined!

We have no leverage at all!

We are so screwed now.

On the other hand, Abigail and Russell gave Levi a gaze of admiration.

They knew that this was only a small taste of Levi's abilities because he was powerful enough to rule the entire world if he got serious.

Similarly, Zoey was very proud too because her husband turned the tables and saved the Black family.

In the meantime, Aaron stood up straight and Caitlyn wiped away her tears as their expressions seemed to say – "As expected of our son-in-law!"

However, Levi wasn't finished yet. He asked, "Are you already afraid now? Don't worry. We still have more to come!"

The Protector Chapter 589

The implications of his words were visible in the shocked expressions of the Caesar family.

What?

Someone else is coming?

Is this not the end yet?

Oh my God!

How can we even handle this?

Thump!

Timothy seemed to have realized something at that moment. In just a split second, his vision blurred as he fainted and fell to the ground.

However, the other members of the Caesar family were busy worrying about their own safety, so they didn't even pay any attention to him.

Meanwhile, outside the Black family's manor.

There were about four hundred of the Caesar family's men standing on guard here to prevent anyone from the Black family from leaving.

Thud! Thud!

Suddenly, the rhythmic pulsing of a marching army was heard amongst the crowd.

The earth trembled between their feet and made everyone dizzy as dust clouds formed in the air.

“Is there an earthquake?”

Everyone’s first thought was that an earthquake was happening.

“No, it’s not an earthquake. I can hear the sound of footsteps!”

“It’s coming closer by the minute!”

As the stomping grew louder, everyone started to panic.

“Look!”

“Oh my God!”

Someone screamed and directed everyone’s attention outside.

They saw squads of fully armed soldiers running towards them from all directions.

There were four columns for each squad from every direction – north, south, east, and west.

“I-I...”

The White Army was scared senseless.

They thought that they would reign victorious in their onslaught today, but that was before the arrival of that platoon!

Everyone noticed that there was something unusual about the uniforms the platoon was wearing; there were some special symbols and certain words on them that were uncommon.

At that moment, their flag-bearer raised a flag that was adorned with a dragon, and everyone was struck with a realization.

“I... I see it now! This is the Dragon Legion from the Iron Brigade under the God of War’s rule!”

“That’s right! I saw them on the news before! They managed to overcome an enemy a few times their size!”

“Oh my God! Is that really the Iron Brigade?”

They watched as the Iron Brigade closed in on them while gaping in shock. It was as if a tsunami was threatening to swallow them whole.

Thump!

Thump!

Everyone kneeled to the ground as they were drenched in cold sweat because of fear.

Once the Dragon Legion got into their formation, Alfie appeared from behind the platoon.

“Charge!”

As soon as his command was given, the Dragon Legion marched onwards from all directions.

The few hundred members of the White Army were caught off guard as they saw nimble figures climbing across the walls.

Before they could react to the sudden attack, they were all subdued in an instant.

It took less than twenty seconds to defeat the few hundred men, and when everyone realized that, they peed their pants out of fear.

What the f*ck is this?

If we had known that the Black family would ask the Iron Brigade for help, we wouldn't have dared to come here!

Meanwhile, the people in the main hall remained blissfully ignorant of the commotion outside because the onslaught happened too quickly.

They couldn't even hear any signs of the few hundred men outside being subdued by the foreign army.

Levi smiled as he counted down with his fingers. "Three, two, one..."

As soon as the countdown ended, a loud rumbling could be heard from outside.

Thump! Thump!

The footsteps of a thousand men made it seem like the earth was a drum as the bass vibrated in everyone's chest.

In the next moment, Alfie barged inside with his soldiers.

When Richard saw that, he grunted in shock and fainted right away.

Right then, the Caesar family had officially suffered an overwhelming defeat.

The Protector Chapter 590

Patrick kneeled on the ground.

Thump!

Thump!

At the same time, the few hundred members of the Caesar family kneeled down as well.

Even the military is here!

We're screwed!

Wait, no!

They are the Iron Brigade, for f*ck's sake!

To the people of Erudia, the Iron Brigade was even more powerful, and their responsibilities were even more sacred than that of the military.

They are the true guardians of our country!

How unlucky can we get...

Meanwhile, Meredith and Robert exchanged a glance and broke into a huge grin because they were overjoyed.

They recognized that from this point onwards, the Black family's standing in the South City was secured, and no one would dare to hurt them anymore.

“Captain Steele, you’re here! The Black family extends our heartfelt thanks to you.”

“I thank you, on behalf of the entire Black family!”

Meredith and Robert cried tears of joy as they almost kneeled in gratitude.

“Haha, no worries! We were marching in the wilderness when we heard that the Black family is in trouble, so we decided to come and check it out.” Alfie smiled and said.

Hearing that, the Caesar family almost lost their minds.

Who are you kidding?

Who even marches when they’re fully armed?

It’s so obvious that they have their targets on us!

At that moment, Russell stepped forward and saluted Alfie. “Captain Steele!”

Alfie patted Russell’s shoulders and chuckled. “I heard about what you did, and I must say that I’m impressed. You defied the Caesar family just to stand up for yourself!”

Russell smiled awkwardly and replied, “I can’t really offer any help, so I need to thank you for lending a helping hand to the Black family!”

Russell then saluted him once again.

The Black family thought that Alfie was just being polite, but later on, they realized that Alfie genuinely admired Russell.

That means Alfie helped us out of respect to Russell!

Maybe they really were just marching, but Russell must've been their driving force to come here nonetheless.

Meredith immediately explained, "Captain Steele, we have misunderstood Russell! We thought that he was just being reckless when he slapped the head of the Caesar family in a fit of rage. But we realize now that he's a very sensible and thoughtful person. Of course, he wasn't scared of the Caesar family because he has the support from a well-respected man like you!"

Robert chimed in. "That's right! Russell, we misunderstood you. You were right all along. The Caesar family can't oppress us just because they're more powerful than us! We need to stand up for ourselves!"

Meredith bowed down. "Russell, I apologize for slapping you for no legitimate reason!"

"Grandma, um..."

Russell had an awkward expression.

That incident has nothing to do with this, right?

Alfie was dumbfounded as well.

That incident isn't even related to Russell!

What are you even talking about?

Meredith suddenly thought of something.

Russel is now the Deputy Chief, so does that mean that Tim, Stephen, and the rest came just for him?

“Mr. Cronan, Mr. McKay, thank you for helping out the Black family! Please take care of Russell too!” Meredith smiled and said.

Robert grinned too. “Mr. Cronan, Mr. McKay, you must’ve come here for Russell’s sake, and it seems like you value him a lot. We will teach him well and make sure he doesn’t disappoint you!”

Bailey was on the verge of tears as well. “Russell really is the hope of the Black family! All the powerful figures in the South City came just for him!”

“Russell really is amazing! All the leaders came just for his sake!”

“Russell is so cool! No wonder he slapped the head of the Caesar family, yet he still seemed unfazed; who knew that he had it all planned out!”

The Protector Chapter 591

However, the South City's leaders' expressions darkened when they heard that.

Tim, Stephen, and the other leaders were rendered speechless.

What's happening here?

Didn't we come because the God of War asked us to?

What does that have to do with that Russell guy?

We don't even know him, so naturally, we wouldn't offer him any help!

What is the Black family even thinking?

They must've misunderstood something.

As the Black family expressed their gratitude, Tim and the rest looked embarrassed.

They stared at Levi, and he just nodded understandingly.

At that, Tim declared, "That's right! I admire Russell a lot, and the Black family represents excellence in the South City by contributing to society tirelessly. I definitely felt the need to step up when you are in trouble!"

Stephen chimed in. "Well said. Russell really is an amazing young man! We like him a lot!"

After they sung their praises, Russell blushed furiously out of embarrassment.

I didn't even do anything, but my family keeps thinking otherwise!

He snuck a look at Levi and saw that Levi didn't seem to be angry, so he breathed a sigh of relief.

On the other hand, the Black family was excited beyond belief.

Firstly, the Caesar family's onslaught is successfully thwarted.

Secondly, all the powerful figures are praising our boy, Russell!

This is such a blessing to the Black family!

"Long live the Black family! With Russell here, the Black family will stand tall for years to come! I now formally declare Russell as the next head of the family!"

Right then and there, Meredith appointed Russell as the new head of the Black family in front of everyone without any regard for Bailey and the rest.

Even so, Bailey and the rest didn't complain about it.

With Russell's capabilities, he will bring the Black family to greater heights, and we'll all benefit from that.

"Mr. Cronan, what do you think about that?" Meredith asked.

Tim smiled and replied, "That works! He's competent enough to take on that role!"

The Black family cheered excitedly, but Caitlyn and Aaron couldn't bring themselves to feel happy about it.

They only managed to stand up for themselves when Hades and Tim arrived, both of whom had intimidated the Caesar family.

Naturally, they thought that Levi was the one who planned this, so a sense of pride overwhelmed them as they wanted to brag about their son-in-law to everyone.

However, in the end, Levi had nothing to do with it, and instead, Russell was the one who took the credit.

It was only natural they couldn't accept that "fact".

Levi came in and turned the tide of battle, but in the end, it had nothing to do with him!

I-I don't know what to say about this...

Zoey felt the same way as them.

She thought that Levi led them all to victory, but the credit was forcefully snatched away from him.

Meanwhile, Abigail couldn't take it anymore.

Levi was the mastermind behind this! Russell had nothing to do with it!

"Grandma, Levi was the one who called them. Undeniably, Russell deserves some credit, but Levi should be the one recognized for it," Abigail said to everyone in a huff and shocked everyone.

It did seem like Levi was the one calling the shots back then.

In hindsight, Russell had nothing to do with it...

Bailey retorted out of displeasure, "Abigail, what are you talking about? Mr. Cronan and Mr. McKay admitted that they came for Russell's sake, so what does it have to do with Levi?"

Abigail snickered. “Uncle, tell me then, why did Levi make the call earlier?”

The Protector Chapter 592

Bailey smiled and said, “The answer is simple! Since Russell is unwilling to show off, I attributed everything to Levi’s efforts. Can’t you tell?”

“Yes, that’s right! Given how Russell normally keeps a low profile, he’ll definitely not be interested in something so showy. Leaving to Levi was only natural.”

Meredith and Robert nodded in agreement before responding with, “That’s right, Abigail. Russell is normally quite circumspect, so he just let Levi have the limelight this time.”

Everyone else murmured in agreement.

“You guys!” exclaimed Abigail in exasperation. She was pissed off as this was obviously Levi’s doing.

However, not only did the Black family refuse all good intentions, but they also even insisted that Russell did this while deliberately letting Levi take the limelight.

“Do you have any idea...” retorted Abigail, but before she could complete her sentence, she was interrupted by Levi. “Abigail, let it go. It doesn’t matter who did it,” he said before continuing. “The Black family crisis has been averted, and we should now focus on the Caesar family.”

Hearing Levi’s reminder, everyone bristled. The Caesar family was their main concern, after all.

“What?” stammered Patrick. Now that all eyes were on him, he was afraid.

“You may set foot in South City, but don’t think of getting away so easily,” responded Levi with a smile.

“Yes, that’s right,” piped Alfie. “Nobody will let you!”

“I... I... I’m leaving it all up to you!” stammered Patrick once more. He lay on the ground and dared not lift his head.

“I’ve heard that the Caesar family wishes to contribute to the development of South City? How about this then – give us half of your family fortune to be invested in the city’s growth!”

“What?” There was a collective roar of disbelief from the Caesar family the moment Levi uttered those words. They looked at him like he was crazy.

Half of the family fortune? Were they trying to ruin the Caesar family?

“Don’t worry. I’m not done yet. I did say it was easy to come here but hard to leave, no? If you want to leave, we want ten million each in payment. Surely this is reasonable?” Levi smirked as he uttered this.

“What? One million per person?” Patrick balked at the figure, feeling like his eyes were about to pop.

There were nine hundred people in total, which added up to ten million each. It was a whopping nine billion!

Yet, Levi was far from done. “Wait, there’s even more! The Black family had suffered a lot of mental distress. Let’s put that to about one billion then!”

Patrick huffed, feeling his blood boil.

Ten billion and half of the family fortune, they might as well ask for our lives!

“By the way, couldn’t you at least bring some gifts to South City for charity? I hear that some projects could use your help, so why don’t you take up some of those?”

Levi smiled again, after saying his piece.

Patrick felt like his soul was about to leave his body out of anger. This is preposterous!

A few of Tim Cronan's associates responded immediately, saying, "That's right! There are seven of such projects, and they're short of about seven hundred million!"

Smiling still, Levi said, "This amount shouldn't be of any trouble to you, right?"

"N-no, it's no problem," replied Patrick, stuttering. Right now, he truly wished to die.

In this dispute, the Black family emerged victorious, while the Caesar family suffered a crushing defeat.

This was a massive blow to the Caesar family.

"My word, look at your son-in-law in action! It's like he's truly in charge here," came Pamela's disdainful remark, directed at Caitlyn.

"Yes, this was clearly Russell's decision, so why is Levi showing off here?"

"Isn't it so? He's here pushing his luck, so I'm really not used to seeing this!"

"He has his uses, I guess. If Russell had solved it, he probably wouldn't have even raised the issue of mental distress and that hefty sum. Only Levi would be that shameless!"

The Black family ridiculed him, one after the other. However, since Levi did have his merits, they did not give him that much flack.

After everyone left, Meredith and Robert embraced Russell. “Oh Russell,” they cried, “you truly are the greatest pride of the Black family!”

The Protector Chapter 593

The two cried with joy, and shed tears of happiness.

“Our family is so lucky to have someone like Russell!”

Everyone looked at Russell with adoration and admiration.

From today onwards, Russell became the most important member of the Black family. He would be the cornerstone of the Black family’s development in the future.

Meredith directed her gaze at Levi and remarked, “Well, you deserve some credit as well since you were at the forefront with Russell.”

Of course, some credit had to be given to Russell’s upstanding character. He was approachable and treated everyone in the family justly. Even though we saw you as just average, Levi, Russell convinced us to treat you well and value your presence, she thought.

“In the future, Levi, you should learn more from Russell. He was very optimistic about having you around. Follow him, and you’ll turn out fine.”

While she was obviously praising some of Levi’s merits, it became mostly praise for Russell as well.

Meanwhile, Russell felt embarrassed and lowered his head. He had not dared to look at Levi.

His fists were tightly clenched, and he secretly wished the ground would swallow him whole.

Even Abigail felt slightly ashamed.

Russell was being praised to high heaven, but only if they knew he had nothing to do with it.

Meredith then turned to address both Caitlyn and Aaron. "I know you have been wronged in the last few days," she said, "but Russell values the both of you. You can always call on the Black family if you need us in the future."

"Thank you, Mom and Dad!" replied Caitlyn and Aaron.

"If you want to thank someone, thank Russell," said Meredith haughtily.

With that, Aaron and Caitlyn made their way to Russell, thanking their nephew profusely.

"Aunt, Uncle, really, there's no need," said Russell, putting a stop to the display immediately.

If he made Levi angry, there would be hell to pay.

Just then, a car drove into the compound.

Logan and Jennie had arrived.

Earlier, when the Black family was facing trouble, they disappeared without a trace. But when the problem had been resolved, they appeared out of nowhere.

"Remember that issue involving Grandpa and Grandma? I summoned all those important people! My father and the rest had to plead with them so hard before they relented!" said Logan, without any shame.

"Huh? That was you?" Meredith was stunned.

“Wasn’t it Russell?” Murmurs came from everyone in the room.

Russell immediately jumped in and clarified, saying, “That really had nothing to do with me!”

“You heard him!” replied Logan smugly.

Meredith tried to recall the earlier scene. True enough, when she brought up Russell to Cronan and the others, something was odd about the way they looked.

How embarrassing!

Come to think of it, it was not because of Russell.

Except for the Zachs family, who had a political background, nobody could have convinced these other bigwigs to act.

“Oh Logan, you truly were a savior at our most dire moments!” exclaimed Meredith as she hugged Logan.

The others also thanked Logan, eyeing him enviously.

Oh, to have had such power!

Logan felt a little embarrassed. “Actually, the credit doesn’t belong to me alone,” he said. “Russell also had a hand in this, from bringing in Captain Steele and everyone else. That’s all his doing!”

Russell was about to protest, but seeing the look in Levi’s eyes, he could only hold his tongue.

However, he and Abigail looked at Logan, feeling upset.

When the Black family was in distress, he kept his distance. Now that the danger had passed, he came to steal the credit.

What the f*ck did this have to do with him at all?

But this was a world where people like these existed. They ignored those in hardship but only showed up to receive the credit when work was done, though obviously not by them.

“Well then, you and Russell are the biggest heroes of the Black family!” said Meridith as she laughed gaily.

The Protector Chapter 594

Logan was enjoying the moment, but Russell was embarrassed.

There was a sharp contrast between the two men.

Suddenly, Logan spotted Levi and could not help but smile. “Levi, you have to have some credit as well!” said Logan. “Were it not for you fighting against the Caesar family, we would not be able to have this show of strength!”

“Yes, if it weren’t for you picking a fight, how would Grandma and Grandpa know that my Logan was so great?” tittered Jennie unabashedly. She decided to capitalize on this as well.

Abigail, on the other hand, could no longer take this.

“I’m not here to rain on anyone’s parade, but what does this have to do with either of you, Jennie and Logan?” questioned Abigail.

If credit were being given to Russell, she could tolerate it. But seeing how Jennie and Russell came to steal all the credit was beyond her capacity to tolerate.

Logan looked unhappy. “Abigail, what is the meaning of this? How is this not related to me?” asked Logan. “Did I not bring in Mr. Cronan and Mr. McKay? Without them, how would this crisis be resolved?”

Jennie also sneered at her, “What do you mean, Abigail?”

“What do I mean? You know exactly what I mean,” Abigail snickered and continued, “Where were you earlier? Are you only here now that the matter is resolved to steal all the credit?”

Abigail had always had a sharp tongue, so she would say whatever needed to be said.

“Abigail, are you implying that the leaders we invited had nothing to do with us?” roared Logan, raising his voice at her.

“Yes, you can’t just make blatant accusations like that, Abigail!” yelled Jennie. “What do you mean by us stealing all the credit?”

The corners of Abigail’s lips were raised in a mocking smile. “Didn’t you say that you invited all the leaders? In that case, why don’t we call them to verify this?”

“Well...” Both Jennie and Logan were taken aback. They both swallowed audibly and had a nervous expression on their faces.

“Alright, Abigail, think about it for a moment. Russell may have been amazing, but Mr. Cronan needn’t have shown up in person. Logan’s father and grandfather fought on the front lines with him, so it must have been no easy feat to ask!”

Meredith’s timely intervention made Jennie and Logan breathe a sigh of relief.

If Abigail had insisted on making that call, they would have been exposed.

But thank goodness Meredith was here.

“Grandma and Grandpa, I’ve booked us a table at the Wonder Hotel to celebrate this victory. Why don’t we all go and make merry?” asked Logan.

Meredith nodded and replied, “Splendid, I was just thinking about it! Who knew you had this arranged already! I’m so pleased that to have both of you in the family – Logan and Jennie. All of you youngsters, learn from this!”

“Yes, especially your son-in-law, Caitlyn. See to it that he learns to be less harsh!”

Abigail snorted coldly.

Meanwhile, Caitlyn and Aaron looked at each other, their expressions dark.

As always, their status in the Black family was still low. They could no longer rely on Levi.

It was up to Zoey now.

In the evening, the Black family arrived at the Wonder Hotel.

At the dinner table, Caitlyn and Aaron practically did not exist.

The two wanted so badly to be acknowledged by the old couple.

Finally, Meredith's gaze fell on Zoey.

"How have you been doing lately?" asked Meredith gently.

Caitlyn knew the opportunity had arrived and was prepared to seize it. "Mother, don't you know how well she's doing? She's the director of the Oriental Star Group. The market value of the company is worth almost five billion! Have you seen the two very popular movies recently? The ones starring Helena?"

"Yes, I know the ones by Helena. Zoey's company produced those movies?"

"Zoey, I love Helena! Can you please help me get an autographed photo?"

Everyone showered envious praise on Zoey.

The Protector Chapter 595

“What? A market value of five billion?” Meredith and Robert were even more surprised.

The Blacks were considered a large family, but their portfolios only added up to about ten billion altogether.

Is Zoey’s net worth going to surpass the Blacks?

“That’s not all, Zoey’s company is also trying to penetrate the electronics market!” Aaron carried on joyfully. “What the upper echelons of North Hampton actually intend is for Morris and Oriental Star to make up for the need in the electronics market. Since the departure of Triple Group, that is. Zoey’s future is potentially limitless!”

She could finally hold her head up high in the Black family.

“That’s great!” remarked Meredith and the others, their eyes fiercely lit.

She immediately gave Zoey recognition. After all, she was also a member of the Black family.

Russell’s foresight was correct after all – it was necessary to treat Zoey’s family a little better.

“Zoey, if you need anything, just let us know! The Black family is your strongest backing!” promised Meredith.

Zoey smiled and said, “Grandpa and Grandma, the company is going to take its business to South City. When that happens, I might have to call in a few favors.”

The distribution of the Morris Group in North Hampton had been completed. Thus, the next step was to enter South City.

Oriental Star Group was the vanguard of this operation!

“Really? That’s wonderful!” Robert and Meredith looked at each other in awe.

If Zoey owned such a large company that was interested in penetrating South City’s market, it would really benefit the Black family.

Unlike the Lopez family, they were not trying to claim Zoey for themselves. What they wanted was a mutually beneficial relationship.

The Black family could support Zoey, and Zoey could support the Black family in return.

“Don’t worry, Zoey! Rest assured, when you come to South City, we will pave the way for you. Russell will be able to quell other troubles in your path as well. Since Logan is with the Ministry of Commerce, he will be able to help you. Your sister is also the vice president of the New Alliance Bank. Many problems can be resolved with ease,” promised Meredith.

“Thank you very much, everyone.”

Initially, Zoey was worried about how the subject matter should be broached.

But now, it was much better since Meredith took the initiative to propose.

“Come on, let me propose a toast to our double happiness – The Black family is no longer in distress, and Zoey will be expanding to South City! “

Robert raised his glass.

After finishing a glass, Levi turned to Zoey and said, "You're coming here to grow, so who would dare stop you? I doubt you need anyone's help."

Levi desperately wanted to protect Zoey, so he felt that they didn't need anyone else.

Bailey, who happened to overhear this, sneered, "What's this? Dismissing the Black family's help?"

"What's going on?" inquired Meredith.

"Mom and Dad, Levi just said he didn't need our help," remarked Bailey as he gave Levi a cold stare.

Aaron and Caitlyn's expressions shifted immediately. It was not easy to get the Black family to help Zoey.

Was this supposed to be bad? On what grounds did he have to refuse their help?

Meredith and Robert looked at Levi unhappily. "You said that?"

"Yes, I did. My wife does not need any help because she is perfectly capable. If you need help from Zoey, just say so. But we don't need your assistance," answered Levi in all seriousness.

As he said this, Caitlyn and Robert huffed. They were seething with anger.

Meredith and Robert's expressions had turned dark.

What is the meaning of this? Are you looking down on us? Are you implying that we, the Black family, need to curry favor with Zoey instead?

There was a loud bang. It was Meredith who slammed her fist on the table, shocking everyone.

The Protector Chapter 596

Meredith hissed. Immediately, silence befell the room.

Everyone was frightened and dared not even breathe.

Right then, Meredith did not stop the barrage of questions she had for Levi.

“What does Zoey’s company have to do with you? Are you in any position to decide for her? You really think you’re all that, don’t you?”

Others had also chimed in angrily, “Yes, she owns the company. How does that concern you? What charade are you trying to pull here?”

“You’re obviously underqualified here, so shut the hell up. At best, you’re a kept man!”

Levi’s words had drawn the Black family’s ire.

Zoey, hearing the commotion, tried to pour oil over troubled waters. “Alright, Grandma and Grandpa. Don’t mind him,” she soothed. “He meant well and just did not wish to trouble you, that’s all.”

Meredith stopped but retorted sarcastically, “Well, I’m sure he thinks that way!”

Logan then looked at Levi and smirked, “Have you ever considered how unworthy you are of Zoey?”

Jennie echoed her husband’s words immediately, “That’s right! Zoey’s company has a market value of five billion and is backed by the Morris Group! What do you have?”

“Yeah, it’s obvious! In the Black family, the both of you are not equal in status!”

The dinner was very unpleasant, with Meredith looking sour the entire time.

“Zoey, stay for a moment, alone. I have something to ask you,” said Meredith.

After the event, Zoey went up to Meredith alone, nervously. “What’s wrong, grandma?”

“Zoey, I have a personal question to ask,” said Meredith, as she gently stroked Zoey’s hair.

“Oh? What is it?” replied Zoey, puzzled.

“All this time, have you not planned to have kids with Levi?” queried Meredith.

Upon hearing the question, a hint of bashfulness flitted across Zoey’s features. “Not yet, grandma. For now, we’re focusing on our careers.”

“No, I think you’ve misunderstood. I’m asking you in all honesty – have you slept with Levi yet?” asked Meredith again, more directly this time.

“W-what?” stammered Zoey. She was stunned, and her face was a deep shade of red.

Out of everyone, she did not expect her grandmother to ask such questions.

“Be honest. What is the situation like between the both of you?” questioned Meredith.

Zoey felt her breath quicken.

“Grandma, he hasn’t touched me yet,” came Zoey’s truthful answer.

“Alright, I understand,” nodded Meredith.

After Zoey left, Meredith summoned Robert, Bailey, and some of the others.

“I just found out Zoey and Levi are only man and wife in name but are neither in reality,” said Meredith.

“Mom, you can’t possibly mean that...” Bailey trailed off. Everyone understood what she meant.

“Yes, that’s right! I want them to divorce and for Zoey to remarry!” exclaimed Meredith truthfully.

Bailey, Pamela, and everyone else present raised their hands in agreement.

“They should have divorced ages ago. Levi is obviously unworthy of Zoey! What a joke!”

“Yeah, we don’t like Levi. He’s incompetent and has a fiery temper!”

Meredith nodded and continued, “Well, I don’t like him either. Before this, I couldn’t interfere because she wasn’t a member of the family. But things are different now. She’s an important part of the Black family, and I can’t let this slide. She needs to divorce him, and I will find her suitable in-laws!”

“Yes, Zoey is growing as a person, and Levi will only hold her back,” echoed Robert.

“How about this? To prove that Zoey is still untouched, you will need to take her to the hospital for a comprehensive check-up tomorrow. I won’t be at ease until I see the report!” ordered Meredith.

The Protector Chapter 597

Meredith was still a bit anxious over what Zoey said.

She needs to go for an examination, only then will I be relieved.

Later on, she could arrange a suitor for Zoey after the report proved her virginity.

That way, the groom's family would not have any concern in regards to this.

"Mom, Dad, there might be a problem," said Pamela hesitantly.

"What would that be?" asked Meredith, looking over at her.

"If you get a divorce, will Levi agree to it?" Pamela asked.

Everyone immediately spoke up, echoing the sentiment. "Levi will definitely not agree! Why would he give her up?"

Robert snickered and retorted, "Who said we need his consent for the divorce? Just hand in the cert after it's done! This matter needn't involve him at all!"

Everyone laughed.

With the reach of the Black family, quietly arranging a divorce was a walk in the park.

Until then, Levi would only realize he was divorced when he received his divorce certificate.

“Mom, shouldn’t we inform Caitlyn and Aaron about this?” asked Jeremy worriedly.

“You can go ahead and bring them here.”

Soon, Aaron and his wife arrived at a complete loss.

Then Meredith filled them in on the details.

When Meredith finished, the couple looked at each other, dumbfounded.

“I’d suggest you listen to me regarding this matter. Soon, Zoey’s net worth will be tens of billions, and Levi will become her weakness. All unsavory incidents like going to prison or bullying her sister-in-law will be exposed. This will destroy Zoey!”

After hearing what Meredith had to say, the couple sighed. They had never considered this problem.

With Zoey’s personal development becoming better and better, her momentum was strong, impeccably so.

Levi, on the other hand, was a ticking time bomb waiting to explode. The one who would be hurt the most was Zoey.

Furthermore, Levi was far from worthy of Zoey.

“Just listen to me,” urged Meredith. “I’ll tell you the truth. Their divorce will be good for Zoey and the Black family. To prove our sincerity, if they divorce, we will immediately invest two billion in Zoey!” said Meredith sincerely.

The couple looked at each other again before deciding. “Alright, mom and dad. We’ll listen to you.”

They could not see the harm in this. Receiving the approval of the Black family and helping Zoey be rid of Levi was something they dared not even think about.

“As for Levi, I will give him a settlement sum,” said Meredith decisively.

The next day, the Black family collectively went to the hospital for Zoey’s examination. Levi attended as well.

By the afternoon, the results were out.

Meredith looked at Zoey’s report with joy.

“The girl was right – Levi had not touched her at all! This is splendid!” she exclaimed with excitement.

“Bailey, arrange for their divorce at once!” urged Meredith.

“I’ve already made the necessary arrangements, Mom and Dad. The Civil Affairs Bureau did not even require the marriage certificate or household registration,” said Bailey gleefully.

“Perfect.”

An hour later, Bailey produced the two divorce certificates.

“Haha, this is wonderful!” Robert and Meredith smiled.

Everyone in the Black family was happy. After all, this was very beneficial to them.

“This matter is finally resolved!” said Caitlyn and Aaron as they collectively breathed a sigh of relief.

But the pair did feel sorry for Levi since he did not perform too badly throughout this period.

After that, Meredith gathered everyone around her.

“Go and bring Levi to me. I have something to announce. But keep Zoey away for now!” ordered Meredith.

She would not announce this in front of Zoey.

The Protector Chapter 598

When Levi arrived at the Black family's foyer, he noticed that something felt off.

"Did you ask for me?" queried Levi.

Meredith and Robert shared a look before announcing, "Yes, to tell you something. You and Zoey are now divorced!"

As soon as the news came out, Levi was stunned.

Abigail and Russell, who did not know of the plot, were also shocked.

What? Divorced? When did this happen?

Levi quickly regained his composure. "I divorced Zoey? That's funny, but how was I unaware of this?" he asked as a matter-of-factly.

With that, Bailey tossed the divorce certificate at Levi.

Levi picked it up and had a look.

There was no doubting the authenticity of the certificate as it was also stamped with an official seal.

This is hilarious. How can the couple involved not know about this?

"It's clear now, right? You and Zoey are divorced, so stop pestering her in the future. She no longer has anything to do with you," said Meredith smugly.

After a while, Levi burst into peal after peal of wild laughter.

Meredith and the others were surprised. What was he laughing at?

Levi held the certificate and snickered, "I have a question to ask. Shouldn't a divorce only occur with the consent of both parties? When was my marriage controlled by other people?"

As he said this, a violent, domineering aura filled the space.

Suddenly, the hall was filled with the sounds of people gasping for air, as if an immense pressure had entered the room.

The air was heavy, in fact, suffocating.

Levi was furious.

Fortunately, he had restraint.

But with his murderous aura, no one in the room would remain unscathed!

Meredith and Robert were both shocked as they were rooted to the ground like corpses, unable to move.

At this moment, they felt like they were in a trance.

For some reason, it was as if they were on the battlefield.

Standing in front of them was an invincible, unchallenged, and furious God of War.

He had the aura of someone who felled thousands of enemy troops alone.

Who dares challenge me? I am the God of War!

“What? Why can’t we decide? You are unworthy of Zoey, so naturally, we had to take charge!” retorted Bailey, squaring up to Levi.

Meredith and Robert eventually came to their senses and responded as well.

“We are Zoey’s elders,” said Meredith. “Who’s to say that we can’t decide for her?”

“Of course, we knew you wouldn’t divorce her, Levi. You wouldn’t leave even if it meant death, so we had to pull a few strings!”

“Divorce or not, we want you gone!”

Pamela and the others also joined in.

In this marriage, Levi was only a tool to be manipulated, with no decision-making power to be held.

“What’s more, Zoey’s parents are here. They consented to this too. If you don’t believe me, go ahead and ask them!”

At the mention of them, Aaron and Caitlyn shifted uncomfortably. After all, what they did was wrong.

Hence, they felt guilty towards Levi.

Upon hearing this, Levi looked at the two of them and sneered, “Mom, Dad, did you both agree to it then?”

The couple looked uneasy and did not dare look Levi in the eye.

However, they did nod and reply, “Yes, we did.”

“Alright then, I know now,” said Levi.

Meredith snickered, “I told you – everyone agrees that you’re both divorced!”

“Yes, you are not good enough for her! Get a divorce now!” echoed the junior members of the Black family.

Abigail and Russell, however, took Levi’s side. “No, we do not agree to this!”

Levi waved a hand and said, “I don’t care for your opinions. The question is, did Zoey agree to this?”

Saying that, Levi surveyed the room and asked, “Where is Zoey?”

The Protector Chapter 599

Meredith shook her head and said, "Let me tell you, Zoey did agree to this! She merely didn't have the heart to tell you. That's why she isn't here right now!"

"Yes, she agreed! How could you get the certificate otherwise?" echoed everyone else.

"No, I refuse to believe this! Tell Zoey to tell me this in person!" yelled Levi, his eyes turning red.

"LEVI GARRISON!" roared Logan. "Don't think for a second that we're unaware of your schemes! You're unwilling to divorce, and you want to beg for her back!"

"Don't even bother coming here to see Zoey!" said Logan firmly.

"Yes, that's right! With us here, don't even think about seeing her!" sneered Meredith.

"Now that the divorce certificate has been issued, and you're fully aware of the situation, leave! And stop being delusional, but Zoey is out of your league!" said Robert mercilessly.

Meredith shot a look, and Pamela stepped forward to present Levi with a check.

"The Black family will not let you divorce in vain, of course. Here is your compensation of ten million!"

Again, Levi was stunned.

Damn, I thought the Lopez family was heartless enough, but the Black family is even worse!

Ten million to buy back his marriage to Zoey? This is complete bullsh*t!

Seeing Levi's expression, Pamela thought he was faking it. "Stop pretending and take it!" she urged. "Ten million is enough to last you a lifetime!"

Abruptly, Pamela stuffed the check into Levi's hand.

The onlookers laughed, seeing how Levi accepted the check.

He was a plebeian, for sure. Ten million was enough to win him over.

"I told you he wasn't worthy of Zoey!" sneered Logan.

Abigail and Russell watched the scene unfurling in front of them, completely dumbfounded.

What was the Black family thinking, letting Levi divorce Zoey?

Did they not know what they've missed? Did they also have no brains?

Levi, who did so much for them, and yet they did not notice anything at all?

Without him, the Black family could've been destroyed!

Why were they all so confused?

Abigail and Russell were both so anxious they could cry.

They're all idiots!

“Hurry up and leave already! Don’t even think of setting foot beyond these doors!” urged Logan.

Levi snickered and replied, “Very well.”

With that, he turned around and left.

“Wait, Levi! Don’t go!” Abigail and Russell tried to chase after him, but they were stopped.

“Don’t you dare!”

Pamela and Jennie laughed. “Here I was, thinking that this kid had something in him! I didn’t expect him to just take the check and leave!”

“Indeed. I was expecting him to tear up the check,” said Logan scornfully. “Who knew he would be that spineless!”

“Can you blame him? It’s ten million! How could he possibly give up that sum?”

Laughter was heard coming from the Black family.

Their impression of Levi had truly hit rock bottom.

Unbeknownst to them, however, Levi threw the check into a nearby bin after he left the residence.

Did they think he would be swayed by money?

This scene was discovered by a servant of the family, who quietly ran forward and fished out the check from the bin.

In the foyer, Abigail was questioning Meredith. “Grandma, Grandpa, does Zoey know about all this?”

Meredith smiled and replied, "It wouldn't matter even if she did. Levi had already taken his copy of the certificate."

"You have to ask for Zoey's consent at least," cried Abigail, close to tears.

"By the way, Abigail, you are forbidden from telling Zoey about this for now. I'll tell her later!" asserted Meredith.

In the meantime, Russell was already sneaking away.

"No, Zoey must know about this," he muttered and ran off to tell Zoey.

The Protector Chapter 600

At this time, Zoey had already started working.

She was making preparations for Oriental Star's entry into South City.

Little did she know that all these happened in that short amount of time.

Now, the Black family would have everything sorted out for her. She would never be allowed to leave, let alone see Levi.

There were ten people guarding the door.

The moment they saw Russell heading towards them, they held him back.

"Get out of my way. I want to see Zoey!" said Russell coldly.

Having noticed that it was Russell Black, they had no choice but to let him in.

"Russell, why are you here?"

Zoey looked up and saw Russell standing there. She could not help but be surprised.

"Zoey, something terrible happened!" said Russell urgently. "Grandpa and Grandma went through divorce proceedings for you and Levi!"

Russell recounted all that happened in her absence.

The news struck Zoey like a bolt from the blue.

“What? I divorced Levi? How did I not know of this?”

Zoey slumped to the ground.

She then understood why Meredith had asked her such personal questions and even asked her to go for an examination at the hospital.

“Now they have notified Levi and driven him away,” announced Russell.

Zoey shook her head, “Impossible! As long as I don’t consent, there is no divorce!”

“Zoey, while it is true that this is your marriage, but after you’re married, your families become a part of the deal,” said Russell helplessly. “Their opinions hold equal weight, unfortunately. Plus, I think Levi is very upset.”

Zoey burst into tears as she could only think about how sad Levi would be right now.

“No! I wanna find Levi!” cried Zoey.

“Okay, I’ll take you!”

With that, Russell successfully whisked her away.

Zoey managed to reach Levi on his phone. Upon seeing him, she rushed into his arms, crying bitterly.

“Why did you agree? This is between the both of us. What does it have to do with them?” asked Zoey, choking back tears.

Levi stroked her hair in silence.

“I’m sorry! My family keeps hurting you again and again. I’m truly sorry!”

Zoey was even apologizing to him.

Levi smiled and replied, "It's alright. Knowing that you care about me is enough!"

"Then why did you agree to a divorce and even took the certificate with you? We'll remarry right away! I'll get rid of this right now," said Zoey, ripping the certificate apart.

Levi smiled meaningfully, "Do you remember when I said I wanted to reorganize a wedding ceremony for you?"

"Of course, I remember. I never forgot!" said Zoey tearfully.

"Well, it just so happen that now, I can court you again. And then we can get married again!" replied Levi with a grin.

Immediately, Zoey understood why he left.

He wanted to marry her all over again, to follow through on that promise he made her.

Zoey wiped away her tears. "Well, you can court me again, but promise me you won't go after other women!"

Zoey loved Levi very much. She already loved him then, but it would only grow deeper now.

Even if Levi could not bear the brunt of her love, she had made her choice.

What she chose was for a lifetime, and nobody could stop them!

"I promise! That wedding will tell everyone that you are the most beautiful woman in the world!" exclaimed Levi, hugging her.

Seeing this scene, Russell smiled. The Black family could still be salvaged.

Just then, the sound of screeching tires was heard as cars stopped in front of them, one by one.

“LEVI GARRISON! What are you doing, still pestering Zoey?” roared Logan.

In mere seconds, the Black family members rushed out of the cars in rapid succession.

The Protector Chapter 601

Meredith pulled Levi away from Zoey.

“Since both of you know the truth, then I will be straightforward. Zoey, from now on, you will treat Levi as nothing more than a stranger. Understand?” Meredith ordered sternly.

Zoey nodded obediently. “Understood.”

Her face was still full of smiles.

Everyone was confused.

Is it so easy to talk Zoey into something?

Or perhaps she’s always wanted to divorce Levi?

“Levi, let me warn you. If you ever harass Zoey again, I’ll skin you alive!” Logan threatened Levi in a menacing tone.

Both Caitlyn and Aaron exclaimed, “Since you’ve accepted the ten million, you must do as we say and leave Zoey alone from now on.”

Levi sneered, “Why must I stay away from Zoey? I have returned the money to you!”

“Bah! Don’t lie to us! Since when have you returned the money to us, huh? What nonsense!”

The Blacks were now boiling in rage, as they have seen clearly with their own eyes that Levi had the check in his hand earlier.

How dare he say he's returned the money to us?

This kid really is full of lies!

"Okay, why don't you tell us who have you returned the money to?"

Everyone in the Black family was now glaring at Levi questioningly.

"I've thrown it into the trash can on the right side of the manor's gates."

With that said, Levi left the place.

Everyone at the scene hurriedly returned to the Black family's manor.

Once they got off the car, they immediately rushed to the trash can Levi mentioned earlier.

"Someone come and empty the trash can for us!" Logan ordered anxiously.

A few servants showed up at once and poured the contents of the trash can onto the ground.

With his nose pinched, Logan rummaged through the trash scattered on the ground for the ten-million cheque.

After half an hour of digging and poking around, Logan still did not manage to find the cheque.

Quintus and Keane also joined the search, but to no avail.

“That brat must have lied to us!” Logan howled in rage.

Zoey commented in a hurry, “That’s not possible! If Levi said the cheque is in the trash, then it must be in the trash!”

She didn’t believe that Levi would lie just to get his hands on the ten million the Black family had offered him.

“Zoey, you just can’t accept the truth that he lied, right?”

“Let’s search the other trash cans!” Logan sniggered.

With the servants’ help, the Blacks dug into the other trash cans, but they still could not locate it after much hustle.

“It’s not possible! It must be in one of the trash cans around the house! Someone must have gotten ahold of the cheque!”

Zoey was starting to feel panicky.

I can’t let Levi take the blame here!

I won’t allow that to happen!

In the first place, the Black family was the one who bullied Levi.

If the same thing happened again, Zoey would not forgive herself.

“Why don’t you ask around? Perhaps someone picked it up from the trash can!”

Zoey was panicking.

Meredith ordered all the servants to gather in front of her and bellowed at them, “Did anyone see a cheque lying around? The lot of you better be honest! If I catch any of you holding on to the cheque, the punishment will be severe!”

Nonetheless, all of the servants shook their heads. “We didn’t see anything at all!”

“Also, if we find anything valuable, we’ll definitely report it to you!”

However, one of the servants had a streak of fear in his eyes.

He clenched onto the side of his shirt with his sweaty palms, but no one noticed.

Boom!

Zoey’s mind went blank.

Is this how things will turn out?

Levi will be framed for something he hasn’t done again?

Logan snickered, “What do you have to say now, Zoey?”

“How could Levi pass up so much money? Perhaps he already knows the two of you are not fated to be with each other, so why not take the cheque? That way, he could at least gain something out of this whole drama? “

Jennie also jeered at Zoey, “That’s right, Zoey. I think he doesn’t even love you at all! If he really loves you, then he would have torn the cheque right in our faces!”

“How dare that rascal cheat us! No, I can’t let him get away with this!”

Meredith’s blood was boiling.

“I need an explanation from him!”

The Protector Chapter 602

Robert shook his head profusely. "It's alright. We can leave him alone now. He's nothing to do with our family anymore! Just let him be!"

"Yeah, Grandma! Just don't mess with him anymore! Who knows, he might have other tricks up his sleeves?"

It took all the Blacks to convince Meredith that it was not worth her time to hound Levi down.

Meredith then exclaimed to Zoey, "Although it costs us ten million, I think it's all worth it now that you've seen his true colors."

"No, Grandma! Levi's a good person, believe me!"

Zoey had complete faith in Levi when he said he threw the cheque into the trash can at the Back family's residence.

There was a high chance that someone had seen it and picked it up.

Right now, Zoey wanted nothing but to prove that Levi was innocent.

Robert added, "My dear, that man has nothing to do with us from now on. Whether if he's a good person or not, we don't care."

"Yeah, it doesn't matter to us anymore whether he lie!"

The rest of the Blacks also chimed in.

Even though everyone in the Black family said they could not care more about Levi, Zoey knew they would bring the incident up from time to time to shame him in the days to come.

Alas, there was nothing she could do.

Now that Zoey was officially out of her marriage, Meredith wanted to set her up with another man right away.

With Zoey's current achievements and the powerful Black family at her back, she would be a woman sought after by many.

"The two of you just relax. I will definitely find Zoey a husband that stands out from the rest. You two just have to wait and watch her walk down the aisle!"

Having heard Meredith's words, Caitlyn and Aaron could now picture in their head their daughter's wedding and how they would be all tearful yet excited for her.

Once again, Meredith called for a meeting with the rest of the family.

"Zoey, you remember how Grandpa and Grandma promised you to invest two billion into your company if you part ways with Levi? Now that you have broken off from him, we will honor our promise!" Meredith proclaimed to the family.

Zoey was surprised. "Really, Grandma? That's so awesome!"

"You still have any problems on your side? Tell us," Meredith asked her granddaughter in a caring tone.

Zoey paused to think for a while before replying, "Grandma, I'm afraid I do have a problem."

"Just tell me, my dear."

“We’re about to enter the electronics market in the South City, but my company still doesn’t have a suitable place for our office. Also, we still lack production centers and our technical team is underdeveloped,” Zoey hurriedly added.

“That’s simple! I’ll settle it for you.”

Logan let out a hearty laugh.

Zoey’s problem was a piece of cake to Logan.

“Logan, I don’t think things are simple at all. Morris Group has already handed to us all of its e-commerce business. As of this moment, our target is Triple Group before they pulled out of the market. I think it’s a bit too much for us. Our initial target is set at around fifty billion.”

Gasp!

Everyone in the room took a sharp breath.

Their initial target is fifty billion?

How is that even attainable?

It’s true that the two billion Meredith had promised Zoey was already a hefty sum.

But in comparison to Zoey’s current target of fifty billion, it was a speck of dust.

“This is what I’m worried about. Morris Group said that they will provide us with the funding, but we still haven’t settled the logistics and manpower. I really have to own everything that Triple Group had before I could embark on my mission.”

Zoey had a gloomy expression on her face.

This mission is impossible!

The affluent families in South City have already laid their claims on parts of Triple Group's old playground!

Zoey had no idea on how to reach her target.

Robert queried in an astonished tone, "Zoey, you mean we have to reclaim every property of Triple Group?"

"Yep, that's right! And let's not talk about the issues with finding an office. The demand for electronics in South City can only be met if we have Triple Group's enormous production capacity! Everything they owned was bundled together, which made it cost-effective for them to operate on such a large scale."

Zoey's words left everyone in the room speechless.

Everyone knew that in the previous feud between all the great families in South City, Triple Group's properties were split up into many fragments, each of which was now under a different family.

They also knew that the Black family did not have enough power to reclaim everything.

The Protector Chapter 603

Out of puzzlement, Pamela questioned Zoey, “Zoey, Morris Group really have such high hopes for you?”

“Pamela, I have no idea why Morris Group sees me as their superstar too! This task is insurmountable!”

Zoey herself was flummoxed.

She could understand if Iris were trying to help her out.

But there was no reason for the head of Morris Group to have so much faith in her capabilities.

Why? I just can't find an answer to it!

Pamela now viewed Zoey in a different light.

She was a Rogers, and naturally, she knew that the Rogers family was the most influential family in North Hampton.

However, it was Morris Group that bestowed that much power upon the Rogers family.

Thus, she knew better than anyone in the room that Morris Group was indeed a force not to be reckoned with.

“Mom, Dad, Zoey's net worth is sure going to boom in the future! Morris Group holds her with so much regard. Mark my words, she can easily become a billionaire in the future!” Pamela uttered matter-of-factly.

“A billionaire? Gasp!”

Even Meredith and Robert both had their jaws dropped to the ground.

If Zoey were really that terrific, the Black family could emerge as one of the noble families in South City.

“Since Zoey is the rising star in Morris Group, we have to help her tackle her problems at all costs!” Meredith declared to everyone.

“With that said, I need all of you to pull whatever strings you can to aid Zoey in her conquest to reclaim Triple Group’s markets,” Robert chimed in.

If Logan and Russell were the guardians of the Black family, then Zoey was the fertilizer of their growth.

Her success was crucial in determining the future of the Black family. If she managed to come through, the Black family would be geared up to climb onto the upper echelons in South City.

As such, Zoey’s mission was also the Black family’s mission.

After a lengthy discussion, they split off to negotiate with the other prominent families in South City about renting their production facilities and offices.

Jennie and Logan came to the house of the Oliver family, one of the four noble families in South City.

The head of the family, Mark Oliver, welcomed the two of them into their manor.

“Sir Oliver, I shall cut to the chase. The Black family would like to rent three of the office buildings originally under Triple Group. We are willing to pay you handsomely for it, so please, just give us a number!” Logan said with a deferential smile.

“Bah! The Black family has no right to make use of our assets! Please leave!” Mark sneered with derision.

Right away, Logan and Jennie were ushered out of the house.

The two of them then visited the Cayman family and the Herman family, but were also turned down by them.

Back at the Black family, the air around the place was heavy and suffocating.

Everyone was down in the dumps.

Literally, all of them were turned down in their attempts to request favors from the prominent families in the South City.

Right now, they had no means to tackle the current issue they had at hand.

Zoey could only sigh when she received the unfortunate news her family members brought home.

“Zoey, I’m afraid you’ll have to take the matters into your own hands. Still, do not let your spirits be dampened, everyone! At least, we have successfully pried Levi away from Zoey. Now that he is not around her anymore, Zoey can soar high without any burden tying her down!” Meredith exclaimed gladly.

At that moment, Levi was contacting the Rogers family of North Hampton on the phone.

“I need you guys to start on the construction of the Royal Villa as soon as possible. It will be my future home. I will send you the blueprints right away!”

Six years ago, Levi designed and built a mansion for his future family, but it was demolished as he did not want anyone to tarnish his home before his family could move in there.

Right now, Levi was trying to have the Royal Villa rebuilt so that Zoey's wish could be granted.

From now on, he would devote all of himself to the preparations for a wedding of the century.

"You want me to stay away from Zoey? Over my dead body!"

Levi's lips curled up into a wicked smile.

At the Morris Group's office in North Hampton.

Iris Isabelle received orders from her boss to send a team to South City to assist the Oriental Star Group in making a head start in the markets over there.

In the name list of the people to be dispatched, Levi was included.

He was responsible for the team's safety on this mission.

The office, the production factories, as well as the research center of Triple Group were recovered at an earlier date. All of them were ready to start operations anytime now.

The team only had to show up and get the production line moving.

Their current objective was to fill in the gap that Triple Group left behind.

The Protector Chapter 604

For the past two days, Zoey was flustered because of two things.

First, she had to settle her divorce papers with Levi.

Second, her work was haunting her in her dreams every night.

The Morris Group handed the mission to her in hopes that she would perform well, but Zoey made little progress.

She was so stressed that her nights were sleepless.

Little did she know, the Black family was aware of the state she was in.

Late in the night, Meredith and Robert were pacing in their house.

They seemed to be more anxious than Zoey herself.

After all, Zoey's mission would rule the future of the Black family.

"What should we do?"

Even Logan was sighing.

"We have already tried everything we could. The issue at hand is that the Black family does not have the power to request anything from the noble families whatsoever," Bailey spoke in disappointment.

Zoey also sighed, “If we are already at the end of our wits, how about I just turn in the mission for someone else at Morris Group to take over? It’s indeed a difficult task that I don’t think we can conquer.”

“No!”

Zoey’s decision received the disapproval of everyone in the Black family.

“Where can we ever find such a good opportunity again? How can we just give up?”

“That’s right! Zoey, you must complete the mission at all costs!”

“We’ll help you with any obstacles you face on your way!”

The Black family was in an upheaval.

“We can surely find a way ourselves to secure us an office, but as for the production factories and the research center as well as the equipment required, we will have to beg for it! I volunteer myself!” Robert uttered determinedly.

The research center was the centerpiece of Triple Group’s operations. Now, it was in the possession of Brock Green.

Brock was a smart and insightful person.

Even though he wasn’t producing any electronics himself, he knew to get his hands on Triple Group’s research center ahead of all of his competitors.

He even recruited the original researchers at that particular research center at the first chance he got.

He knew the research center would be most valuable in the future. By then, many would be dying to have it.

His goal was actually very simple. He wanted to sell it at a sky-high price and earn a lot from it.

As of this moment, he had been visited by over twenty prospect buyers of the research center.

He was just waiting for someone to show up with the highest price.

He was dead certain that he could profit at least five billion from the research center.

However, Brock suddenly received an order from the God of War to surrender the research center unconditionally.

Without any hesitation, he transferred both the research center and his priced team of researchers to the God of War right away.

“The Black family has split Zoey and Levi up. How foolish they are!”

Brock’s subordinate informed Brock of Zoey and Levi’s divorce.

“What?”

Brock leaped to his feet.

“Are they crazy? They want Zoey to divorce the God of War?”

Brock was beyond shocked. His eyes were almost flying out of his eye sockets.

“Can you believe it? Mr. Garrison was chased out of their household!”

Even Brock’s subordinate was in disbelief.

Brock growled in rage, "The Black family are fools!"

Coincidentally, Robert and Bailey showed up at Brock's doorstep at that instant.

"It's our utmost pleasure to meet you, Stone Buddha!"

Robert greeted Brock in a careful yet servile tone.

However, he noticed there was something wrong with the latter's expression.

It was as if Brock was watching two clowns at the biggest circus in town.

"So you're from the Black family?" Brock replied with a sneer.

Tsk, I really want to see what's inside your head!

Is it full of garbage?

How foolish the bunch of you are for making Zoey break up with Levi! The fact that you even chased him out of your house is even more embarrassing!

Who in the right mind would do any of this?

"We have a request, Stone Buddha."

Robert was on pins and needles

"Alright, just tell me what you're here for."

Brock was straightforward.

"We are here on behalf of the Black family to request your permission to rent the research center in your possession, which once belonged to Triple Group. I

believe my son-in-law, Logan Zachs, has paid you a visit before too,” Robert responded politely.

“Oh, about that...”

Brock answered wryly with a smile. But before he could finish, Robert interrupted in a desperate tone.

“The Black family is willing to pay you an annual fee of one billion!”

The Protector Chapter 605

Indeed, Robert Black offered a handsome sum of money.

The Black family was very determined in renting the research center currently under Brock, even if that meant shelling out a large portion of their savings.

The benefit that this transaction would bring them was definitely more than fifty billion.

Brock stroked his chin and laughed. "One billion for a year is indeed quite a lot."

However, his tone changed in a snap. "But who do you think I am? You think one billion is anything to me?"

"No! That was not what we meant!"

Robert was desperately trying to defend himself.

Flop!

He knelt on the ground.

In all sincerity, Robert pleaded, "I beg you, Stone Buddha! Please let us rent the research center! The Black family will forever be indebted to you!"

Brock scoffed disdainfully when he saw Robert on his knees.

What a fool!

Who asked you to chase away Levi?

Pfft! With him around, you can have every research center in the world!

“My, my, I am touched by your sincerity. However, I have bad news for you. Someone has taken away the research center from me. I advise you to forget about it,” Brock said with a straight face.

“What? Someone else has gotten ahead of us?”

Robert’s mind exploded at the unexpected piece of news from Brock.

Crap! We have no hope now!

“Yep, that’s right! Everything once owned by Triple Group is now under another person’s possession. You guys have to accept your fate.”

“What? Someone has taken away everything?”

Robert was dumbfounded.

“C-Could you tell me who’s that person?” Robert inquired with his voice shaking.

“Fine, I’ll let you in on a small tip. This person is so powerful that not a single soul in Quebec would dare to offend him.”

Robert could feel all embers of hope inside his heart stomped out by Brock’s words.

Now that the Black family could not lay their hands on any of Triple Group’s past properties, Zoey’s mission was basically done for.

With her failure to deliver, Morris Group might give up on her.

It’s a 50-billion project! There’s no way Morris Group will allow this project to fail!

I cannot accept this!

This is so unfair!

But what can we do?

Even Brock said that person is dangerous. Will the Black family dare confront that person?

When Robert told his family about the current state of the research center, everyone in the room fell dead silent.

They were in total despair.

The sole reason why the properties of the Triple Group were able to survive until today was because they were collectively well-established as an effective system for product development and production.

If any part of the system were to be replaced, the efficiency would definitely be lowered.

It's time.

To call the time of death on this mission.

Zoey let out a long sigh.

Of course, she was disappointed, as it was her long-awaited chance to shine.

She did not think it would turn out like this.

However, Meredith was even more bummed out than her.

To Zoey, this might be only just a challenge she had failed.

Yet to Meredith, it was a big loss, as the Black family had spent several billions to get things going.

The loss was most probably unrecoverable in the near future.

“Do we really have no other solutions?”

Meredith’s breathing was heavy as she spoke.

“I’m afraid in such a short period of time, we might not find any replacements! This project is too much for us to handle!”

Jennie Black also shook her head helplessly.

Meredith gazed forlornly at the night sky. “Perhaps, the Black family was fated to be ordinary.”

“Alright, Grandpa, Grandma. I will let Morris Group know that I will be getting off this project tomorrow.”

Zoey had totally surrendered to her fate.

It was mission impossible.

No matter how much hard work she put into it, she was bound to fail.

“I failed.”

“Zoey, don’t be sad! You’ll definitely get another chance to prove that you’re capable!”

Meredith consoled her granddaughter.

Regardless of everything, Zoey was still the hope of the Black family.

The Morris Group was not the only channel through which the Black family could prosper.

For instance, Zoey could also marry a powerful man to strengthen the Black family's influence in the South City.

“I can solve this problem if you let me!”

Out of the blue, a familiar voice came from outside.

“Levi Garrison?”

The Protector Chapter 606

Zoey Lopez was stunned for a second before she was overcome with joy.

“Levi is here?”

The next moment, Levi appeared in front of the Black family.

Everyone was flummoxed.

What is he here for?

“Levi Garrison, what’s your purpose in showing up at our household? I don’t think our business is any of yours.”

Logan questioned Levi in an unfriendly tone.

“Yeah! From the moment you left the gates of our manor, you have no right to set foot in this place ever again! Get out of our sight now!”

Everyone in the Black family was spitting threats at Levi.

A few of the Blacks’ security personnel stood in the path of Levi to block him from approaching.

They were just waiting for their master’s order to throw him out.

“What’s up with you now? Are you regretting your actions? Oh, I know! You don’t want a divorce!” Logan snickered in mockery.

“Logan, why are you still wasting your time talking to him? Let’s throw him out now!”

The younger ones in the family were about to chase Levi out when Meredith bellowed, “Hold your horses, people!”

She strode forward and asked Levi, “You said you can help us with our problem?”

“That’s right!” Levi responded with much confidence.

“Do you even know what problem we are facing?”

Meredith wanted to test Levi’s knowledge of their situation.

Levi grinned perfunctorily. “What problem are you facing? Pfft! Doesn’t your problem only concern Zoey? Anyway, I know you guys are trying to get your hands on the production system left behind by Triple Group.”

“Huh?”

Everyone was again shocked, as they had no idea that Levi would know.

“Are you sure you can solve it?”

Meredith followed on with another question.

“Of course I can!”

“Hehehe!”

Logan broke up into a scornful fit of laughter. “Levi, do you really take us for fools? Perhaps you don’t know about it, but the news has it that Triple Group is now taken over by a powerful mogul!”

Levi nodded. "Yeah, you're right. In fact, you're looking at that mogul now."

"Pfft!"

"Hahahaha!"

In an instant, everyone in the Black family was laughing uncontrollably.

They stared at Levi as if he were the dumbest person to have ever lived on this planet.

"Levi, you are actually nuts!"

"Do you think we will buy your nonsense?"

However, Levi had no time for them.

He went straight to Zoey and told her, "There's nothing to worry about now. I've already settled everything for you."

Zoey smiled beautifully in response.

She still had total faith in Levi.

"Alright, then I will see you first thing tomorrow morning. By then, everything should be settled."

Having said what he needed to say to Zoey, Levi turned to leave.

"Wait! Did we say you can go?"

Logan and a few of the younger ones in the Black family halted Levi in his steps.

“Do you think you can come and go as you please? Is the Black family a public park to you?”

Jennie scoffed, “Oh right, didn’t you say you can help us with our problem? Show us what you’ve done. You think you can fool us?”

“This guy’s really got issues with his personality. He took ten million, but lied and said he threw it into the trash can!”

“Yeah! I hate this kind of person the most!”

Everyone in the Black family was expressing their dislike for Levi.

“I threw the cheque into the trash can by the gate! I’m not going to repeat myself!”

Levi had a dour expression on his face.

“You’re lying! We looked through not one, but all the trash cans near the gate. Still, we couldn’t find the cheque!”

“Yeah, let’s see how much longer are you going to lie to us!”

“Huh?”

Levi was bemused.

Did someone pick it up?

Never mind. I’ll have someone to track down the flow of the money from the cheque later.

“Let’s get him out of here! I don’t want to let him ruin my day.”

Meredith glared at Levi with abhorrence.

Again, Levi was kicked out of the Black family's manor.

"Let's see if our problem will magically be solved by tomorrow morning," Meredith scoffed.

"Haha! Meredith, you don't have to expect anything out of that brat! He must be lying again!" Logan guffawed in a demeaning tone.

The next morning, the Black family was roused awake by a commotion in front of their house.

Someone was shouting in the front yard. "Oh, no! Brock Green is here! Wait, aren't those people from the Cayman family and the Oliver family? Oh crap! Are we in trouble?"

The Protector Chapter 607

The commotion in the front yard awakened everyone in the Black family's household.

They gathered in the living room.

"What's going on?"

"I think those people are here for the matters regarding Triple Group."

Everyone in the Black family was shocked. "What?"

Was Levi actually not lying when he said he will solve the problems we are facing?

Are our problems actually solved?

Very soon, Brock and the rest showed up.

Meredith and Robert were about to greet Brock and the others when they walked past without even glancing at them.

It was as if Meredith and Robert were transparent to them.

"May I know which one of you is Zoey Lopez?"

Brock stood in front of the Blacks and sized up the lot of them.

"It's me!" Zoey answered in a hurry.

She had a hunch about what was going to happen.

“Ms. Lopez, it’s a pleasure to make your acquaintance. From now onward, both the research center owned by Triple Group and its team of researchers belong to you. Please look through this contract on the transfer of ownership.”

Brock was straight to the point. He then handed the said contract to Zoey.

Pfft!

Robert almost passed out when he saw what was rolling out ahead of him.

Brock Green actually brought the contract to us himself?

Could it be that the mogul Brock has mentioned has something to do with Zoey?

“Hi, Ms. Lopez! Here is the contract for the original production factories of Triple Group! Everything in the production factories, including the materials belongs to you now.”

“Nice to meet you, Ms. Lopez! This is the lease for the office buildings once owned by Triple Group! They are all yours now!”

One by one, the head honchos from the prominent families in the South City passed Zoey the contracts to the properties of Triple Group they held on to.

Right now, Zoey had the complete set of the production system that kept Triple Group running.

What on Earth just happened?

This is not a dream, right?

Our problem is solved!

“Oh my, so our problem is actually solved?”

Caitlyn and Aaron exchanged a joyful glance with each other.

Meredith was so overjoyed that she was tearing up.

Robert was also on cloud nine.

The bearer of the 50-billion mission, Zoey, could not contain her elation.

Now that Zoey was successful in completing her task, the future of the Black family was filled with hope and light.

The Black family would surely prosper in the very near future.

“We did it! The Black family is going to join the ranks of the noble families in South City soon!”

Logan Zachs and Jennie Black were leaping in excitement.

The entire Black family was in a hurrah.

“This has nothing to do with Levi, right?” One of the Blacks asked.

Everyone in the Black family was taken aback by the question.

If Levi is the person behind all of this, then how are we going to face him ever again?

Will he make us pay for our mistakes for rejecting him?

Everyone feared the consequences for throwing Levi out of the house now that he had offered so much to the Black family.

Zoey asked politely, “Mr. Green, could you tell us who’s made all of this happen?”

All of the Blacks wanted to know the answer to Zoey’s question.

They were staring at Brock with so much curiosity in their eyes.

“Hahaha, I’m afraid you have to find out the answer yourself, Ms. Lopez! You can start with the office buildings of Triple Group,” Brock answered amusedly.

“Alright! Thank you so much!”

Right afterward, Zoey took off.

Almost everyone from the Black family went with her.

They wanted to know which saint had saved them from their troubles.

When the lot of them arrived at the building that used to be the headquarters of Triple Group, they were astounded.

The 50-storey tower looming ahead of them in such a magnificent splendor.

The Black family was reduced to nothing in front of what represented the wealth of Triple Group.

However, from that day on, the tower belonged to Zoey.

In other words, the tower was in the possession of the Black family.

The crowd was super excited.

By the time the Blacks sauntered to the entrance, there was already someone waiting for their arrival.

“Ms. Lopez, this way, please!”

The person at the door was given specific instructions to welcome Zoey on her first day there.

He took Zoey and the rest to the CEO’s office.

“Ms. Lopez, he’s waiting inside for you! All of you can enter this room whenever you like.”

All of a sudden, the Blacks were on tenterhooks.

Who’s the person inside?

It can’t be Levi, right?

What if it’s actually Levi?

We just forced him to divorce Zoey!

If he’s actually as powerful as everything so far has suggested, we are so screwed!

Meredith and Robert were both covered in a cold sweat.

The two of them awkwardly wiped the sweat off their foreheads.

An anxious Logan was hiding behind everyone else.

Zoey had a feeling that Levi was waiting for them inside the room.

After all, he said to her the day before that they would meet the next morning.

As the door was opened, everyone froze in their places.

The Protector Chapter 608

A stranger was in the office, and it was not Levi.

“Nice to meet you, Ms. Lopez, I’m Neil Atkinson.”

It turned out that this man was Kirin.

“Oh, nice to meet you too, Mr. Atkinson!”

Zoey was pleasantly surprised.

Neil was only a step away from the most mysterious figure in the Morris Group.

Even Iris could barely see him.

Yet, he actually came here personally!

The Black family had also heard of Neil.

They were shocked as Neil being here showed how much he valued Zoey.

At the same time, they breathed a sigh of relief as well.

Luckily, it’s not Levi!

They were scared out of their wits earlier.

“Ms. Lopez, you’ll pioneer our entry into the electronics market! The boss believes in you and has specifically sent a team to assist you!” announced Kirin.

“That’s great!” Zoey replied with a smile.

Having Morris Group as her backing filled her with more confidence.

“Well, the team will meet with you later! I’m taking my leave!”

Soon, Neil left.

“Hahaha. I was wondering who is this person who we can’t mess with? It turns out it’s the boss of Morris Group!”

“You have to work hard, Zoey. We fully support you! Looking at it now, we’ve underestimated your potential.”

“In the future, you’ll definitely be the most powerful person in Quebec!”

The Black family was thrilled.

Meredith thumped her chest and said, “Fortunately, I asked you to divorce Levi! Considering your future achievements, he will be a drag if he’s with you! It’ll be troublesome over time!”

“Grandma, you’re so clever!”

“Mom, you’re so clever!”

Everyone in the Black family could not help but praise Meredith for her judgment.

Meanwhile, Aaron and Caitlyn exclaimed in excitement, “Getting a divorce is the right choice!”

“Levi doesn’t deserve to be Zoey’s husband! By the way, didn’t he claim that he’s the one that solves this matter? Where’s he now?”

Logan suddenly thought of Levi.

“Yeah, he’s nothing but a liar! How can he be so shameless that he actually claimed to solve this matter?”

Before long, the team sent by Morris Group arrived.

Everyone was surprised to see Levi on the team.

The Black family was struck dumb when they found out that Levi was also a member of the team.

They realized why Levi went to their house last night and left them in suspense.

The matter’s really solved, but does it have anything to do with you?

It’s solved by the owner of Morris Group!

Another problem also plagued the Black family.

Wouldn’t this give Levi a chance to be in contact with Zoey?

“We object to this! Levi can never come into contact with Zoey!” Meredith protested.

“Sorry, Ma’am, you don’t have the right to do so! Levi Garrison is appointed by the company! Even Ms. Lopez has no right to reject!”

“Umm...”

Meredith was stunned.

She dared not to go against Morris Group.

“Well, I’d like to know what Levi’s job is,” she asked.

“He’s in charge of our logistical support and our safety!”

Logan gave a cold snort. “So he’s a security guard?”

“Pretty much, yeah.”

“Hahaha...”

Everyone burst out laughing.

They initially thought that Levi had an important position in the team.

Unexpectedly, his position was similar to that of a security guard and chef.

This kind of trash would never be good enough for Zoey.

No matter how hard he worked, he was only a low-ranking employee of Morris Group, whereas Zoey would be at the top in the whole of Quebec in the future.

They were from two worlds so different that there could be no comparison between them!

Fortunately, Levi and Zoey had divorced!

Meredith warned Levi, “Listen, don’t ever get close to Zoey! It won’t end well for you if I find out!”

Everyone in the Black family threatened Levi and also told Zoey not to interact with him.

The Protector Chapter 609

With the help of Morris Group, Oriental Star Group successfully settled in South City.

In just a few days, the preparation works were done, and the project kicked off.

With the strong support of funds and talents, the prototype of their electronic products had taken shape.

The Blacks were also basking in the reflected glory.

Feeling proud, Meredith and the others were in a good mood every day.

The younger generation of the Black family, like Russell and Zoey, was so successful.

“I’ll look for a good husband for Zoey. You guys can ask around too. He must be a perfect and outstanding man, otherwise, he’s unworthy of her!” Meredith announced with a smile.

She was also treating Aaron and Caitlyn better.

This made the two of them very excited.

Everything had indeed become better after Zoey left Levi.

They were once again glad that they had divorced.

People in other places noticed a strange phenomenon in South City.

There was actually no powerful figure and family in the city that sought to assert control over the many territories left by Triple Group and Scott's faction.

Oriental Star Group was left gnawing at the huge piece of the pie.

Many external forces and families in other provinces began to look into the background of Oriental Star Group.

They utilized all their resources, only to find out that Oriental Star Group did not have any impressive connection except for Morris Group, with which they were cooperating.

Morris Group was well-known by now.

"I know Morris Group is very powerful, but it can't be so overbearing that it wants to lord over everyone."

"That's right. Isn't it good for everyone to get a share of the huge pie?"

"Humph, I don't believe that I can't get my hand on it."

It turned out that the external forces were all watching from the sidelines during the previous tussle in South City.

Now that peace had descended, everyone was eager to act.

The Davies family in South City.

Ever since the incident that night, Derek had been staying at home and did not go out for a long time.

Bang!

The gate of the Davies' residence suddenly blasted open.

A dozen people in black rushed inside, taking everyone in the Davies family by surprise.

“Who are you?” questioned Leslie, Derek’s father, coldly.

There was no response from them.

A Rolls-Royce Phantom drove into the front yard and pulled up.

A young man got off the car.

Dressed in a blue suit, he was holding a prayer garland, and had a pair of sunglasses over his eyes.

Standing next to him were two men, one in black and the other in white.

Both of them were wearing a gruesome mask, exuding a presence that was as cold as ice.

Those near to them could even feel the chill brushing against their faces.

“Who are you?” a bodyguard of the Davies family asked.

The masked man in white shot him a cold look.

Swoosh!

What happened next was horrific.

The severed head of the bodyguard suddenly fell to the ground, and blood spurted out from the big wound.

Silence ensued.

Everyone in the Davies family was petrified.

All color was drained from the faces of Derek and Leslie.

Plop!

One after another, they fell to their knees in fright.

Who is he?

How can he kill others with just one glare?

How terrifying!

The blue-suited man in the middle stepped forward and patted Leslie on the face. “Don’t be afraid! You’re all of value to me, so I won’t kill any of you!”

“T-Tell me what you need. I won’t I-let you down!” Leslie, who had long drenched in his cold sweat, replied tremblingly.

“Very well. I’m here for a very simple purpose—I want to be the boss of South City!”

The man in blue sounded extremely domineering.

The Protector Chapter 610

“Boss of South City?”

The eyes of Leslie and Derek were popping out of their heads with astonishment.

Does he know what he’s talking about?

Never has anyone been so pompous!

Not even the quasi royals of South Hampton, the Caesar family.

How big of an appetite must he have to take over South City?

But this group of people was far more vicious than anyone they had ever met.

It was terrifying to see that one glare could decapitate someone.

But of course, one glare could not literally kill someone.

It was mainly because that man attacked so fast that the human eye could not catch the movement, resulting in such an illusion.

He was definitely the best of the best, whom even Scott and Typhoon were no match for.

The man in blue took off his sunglasses, revealing an evil face.

He said with a smile, “Why are you all on your knees? Get up.”

After the man talked, only then did Leslie and his family feel relieved.

But their knees were still weak, so they could not stand up at all.

The man in blue pulled a chair over and sat down. With his eyes on the Davies family, he asked, "Who is the boss in South City now?"

"The Grandmaster controls the underworld, but the strongest man in South City is actually Brock Green, the Stone Buddha. He owns the largest and most underground boxing arenas, with hundreds of top fighters around him. No one dares to cross him! I heard that he even keeps the Caesar family from South Hampton in check!" Leslie gasped.

"Great. I'll visit the Grandmaster and Stone Buddha tonight then!"

An evil smile appeared on the face of the man in blue.

"Huh? Are you sure you want to go and meet them, Sir?" Leslie asked in surprise.

"Can't I?" The man in blue smiled.

The two masked men behind him shot Leslie a warning glance.

He immediately lowered his head in fright.

Their glare will kill me!

The masked man in black suddenly placed his hand on the stone table.

Thump!

There was a rumbling sound.

Crack!

The stone table cracked from the top to the bottom, and was blown to smithereens, filling the air with dust.

The Davies family was struck dumb.

The masked man in white killed with a single glare earlier, and now, the one in black shattered a stone table.

Are they even human?

How horrifying!

Leslie, who was about to stand up, fell back to his knees, whereas Derek wet himself.

Life was fragile in the face of these two experts.

One would be killed in an instant if they were offended in the slightest.

Leslie and Derek no longer questioned their capability anymore.

They were not pompous or reckless!

They were totally capable!

Delighted, the man in blue asked with a smile, "Do you have doubts about my identity?"

"No, we wouldn't dare to!" replied Leslie with his head down.

No matter who the man was, the Davies family could not mess with him!

“Well, let me tell you who I am! My name is Jacky Lawson!”

“Huh?”

Leslie and the others had a look of incomprehension on their faces.

We’ve never heard of this name.

Jacky leaned in and whispered in Leslie’s ear, “I come from...”

After listening to what Jacky had whispered into his ear, the look on Leslie’s face changed drastically.

His face was instantly drained of all color, looking white as a sheet.

Intense horror could be seen from his eyes.

It was a horror that came from the depth of his heart.

“Oh, you’re Jacky. My warmest welcome! I apologize for the delay.”

After Jacky revealed his identity, Leslie knelt and touched the ground with his forehead so hard that it started to bleed.

The Protector Chapter 611

The Davies family and the other family members were dumbfounded.

What kind of identity does he hold that can make Leslie so afraid?

What exactly is his background?

The Davies were all trembling with fear.

Leslie wasn't as afraid even when the two masked men pulled the earlier godlike tricks, but he got so scared after the man's identity is revealed.

Why is that?

Jacky must be someone very powerful!

At this moment, Leslie had no more doubt about Jacky's desire to take over South City.

He did not think there was any sort of exaggeration as Jacky could totally achieve it in his capacity!

Jacky smiled and said, "As long as you obey me and do what I ask, I promise that the Davies family will prosper. In the future, you can replace whoever you want in South City!"

"Thank you, Jacky! The Davies family will do anything you ask of come hell or high water!"

Leslie was overjoyed.

Despite the earlier fright, the Davies family could see a complete change in its fate and prosper by following Jacky.

Leslie immediately patted Derek on the shoulder, and said, "Make a dinner reservation for tonight at the best restaurant in South City to welcome Jacky!"

"Okay! I promise it won't be a let-down!"

Derek sprang into action right away.

Meanwhile, Jacky readily accepted their arrangement, and stayed at the Davies family's residence.

Afterward, Leslie went to Jacky's bedroom with a few beautiful women.

"You may go in, but these women need to get lost!" the two masked men said coldly at the door of the bedroom.

Shocked, Leslie simpered and said, "You've misunderstood. I've got them here for Jacky!"

"Master isn't a promiscuous man. He particularly dislikes this type of ordinary woman!" replied the masked man in white indifferently.

"That's right. If you want to pledge your allegiance, it must at least be the most beautiful woman in South City, so that it may interest him!" the other man echoed.

"Oh, I see."

Leslie was floored.

Every single man from the prominent families and major forces he met was lecherous.

So it was the first time he met one so chaste and virtuous like Jacky!

Those who had such a strong ability to resist a temptation were the ones who really did great things.

On second thought, he came from that particular force, so of course, he could resist temptations.

Training from an early age allowed Jacky to turn it into a habit.

Therefore, he would never waste his time on alcohol and women!

After a short while, Derek returned and went to Leslie.

“Dad, who exactly is Jacky?”

He was not the only curious one, as the other members of the Davies family were curious as well after having seen how frightened Leslie was following the revelation of Jacky’s identity.

Leslie took a deep breath and said, “Listen up, then...”

“What?”

Upon hearing it, everyone’s eyes were popping out of their heads.

Plop!

Derek even fell to the ground with fear.

“Let me warn all of you, we must ensure that nothing goes wrong while helping Jacky out, lest we’ll be doomed!”

“Understood!”

Everyone in the Davies family nodded their heads in unison.

In the evening, the Davies host a welcome dinner for Jacky at the most luxurious restaurant in South City.

After the dinner, Jacky announced with a grin, “Let’s go find Stone Buddha!”

Both Leslie and Derek froze for a moment.

Is he going to take it out on Stone Buddha so soon?

This is way too fast, isn’t it?

“Let’s go. Are you afraid?”

Jacky’s lips curled into a smile.

“No, Jacky. This way, please!”

Leslie bit the bullet and showed him the way.

Soon, they came to Jagged Club.

“Tonight’s the time to change the owner here!” declared Jacky as he looked at the plaque of Jagged Club and laughed arrogantly.

The Protector Chapter 612

As soon as Jacky finished speaking, a bodyguard behind him suddenly rushed forward.

Crack!

He halved the plaque of Jagged Club with a single kick!

The sight sent fear coursing through the Davies.

How impudent!

No one in South City had ever dared to challenge Brock like this!

Jacky was seemingly set to create havoc in South City!

However, as someone in his capacity, he absolutely had the right to do so!

The loud noise from damaging the plaque of Jagged Club attracted a lot of attention.

Swish.

Hundreds of people rushed out of the underground boxing arena and surrounded Jacky and his party.

The man leading the group asked coldly, "Did you damage the plaque?"

"Yes, I did!" Jacky grinned.

“Insolent fool! How dare you! Do you know what this place is?”

The group lashed out at them.

They did not understand why someone actually had the nerve to cause a scene here.

With the prayer beads in his hand, Jacky replied with a smile, “Yes, I do! I just wanted to give this place a new owner!”

“What?”

His words baffled everyone.

Give this place a new owner?

Doesn't that mean he wants to drive Brock away?

Who does he think he is?

How dare he even think of doing so!

“Guys, take down this group of shameless brats!”

Under the command of the leader, hundreds of people rushed over.

Derek and Leslie were so scared that they hid behind Jacky's party.

Considering that Jacky had only brought twelve men over, they could not help but wonder if he and his men could handle the group of hundreds.

Not to mention that Brock also had hundreds of top fighters.

Seeing hundreds of people charging at him, Jacky remained calm without even batting an eyelash.

Other than the two masked experts behind him, the other ten bodyguards stepped forward to fight.

What happened next left Leslie and the others in shock.

These ten men are actually so strong that they are on the winning side, even though there are hundreds of opponents.

Very soon, the hundreds of people were defeated and hid in the underground boxing arena.

“Let’s go in!”

Jacky led everyone into the underground boxing arena.

At this moment, there was a boxing match going on with a large audience.

But everyone’s attention was attracted by the ruckus in the arena.

Thump! Thump! Thump!

The security guards of the underground boxing arena were seen flying through the air from outside.

Then a group of people emerged.

Everyone looked over.

“What happened?”

“Oh no, someone’s here to cause a scene! Inform Stone Buddha now!”

Before long, Stone Buddha was made aware of the situation, and went to the arena with all his experts.

“How dare you come to make trouble at my place, Leslie Davies!” shouted Brock coldly after he recognized Leslie at a glance.

“I...”

Terrified, Leslie was stumped.

He could not have a conversation with Brock.

Meanwhile, Jacky spoke, “I made him come here! Look over here!”

“Huh?”

Brock was stunned.

Everyone started to scrutinize Jacky.

No one had expected that he was the head.

Besides, he did not look like he was from South City as he did not look familiar.

“Stone Buddha, they’ve damaged the plaque and claimed that they want to give this place a new owner!” a subordinate immediately told Brock what happened.

Brock took a look at Jacky.

“That’s right, I did it. You’re Brock Green, right? You’ve occupied this place for a long time. It’s time for this place to get a new owner!” he said calmly, but his words were domineering.

There were really no young people in South City who had the nerve to provoke Brock.

He was taken aback.

This is the first time I meet such an arrogant young man.

Other than the God of War, of course.

He’s a God, and not a man!

Brock asked, feeling curious, “Forgive me, but may I know who you are?”

The Protector Chapter 613

Jacky suddenly stopped turning the prayer beads as he sneered, "You're not worthy of knowing it!"

Such arrogance!

He's pure arrogance!

Brock chuckled. "Young man, don't be too arrogant. More than ten young people have died by my hands over the years!"

Jacky's eyes suddenly turned bright with a gleam of menace. "You have two options now, Brock Green. The first one being you kneel before me and call me 'Master'; the second, your death!"

Whoa!

Everyone gasped after listening to his words.

Isn't he afraid of death by challenging Brock like this?

Brock laughed.

A man next to him immediately shouted in anger, "Who do you think you are? How dare you be so arrogant in front of Master?"

Right after he finished speaking, the masked master in white next to Jacky suddenly glared at him.

In an instant, he turned into a blur of motion and appeared in front of that man, raising and swinging his knife.

By the time he put away his knife, he had already returned to Jacky's side.

His movement was too fast to be captured by the naked eye.

Everyone thought he had been standing at the same spot and never moved at all while merely glaring at the man.

Thud!

A severed head fell to the ground, while blood spewed all over the place, splattering the faces of everyone around the man.

Such a gruesome sight scared them out of their wits.

How can he kill someone with just one look?

Having seen it for the second time, Leslie and Derek were still thunderstruck.

The expression on Brock turned solemn as he said, "What lightning speed he has!"

He was one of the few people at the scene to have really seen what happened.

"Kneel or death?" prompted Jacky.

"Humph! Over our dead bodies!"

The Beast of Death and the Wolf King showed up at that moment.

Although Hades had become Levi's subordinate, Brock was still the strongest having these two experts by his side.

"Kill them!"

As soon as Jacky gave the order, the two masked experts rushed over.

Wolf King and the Beast of Death also made their moves.

The masked expert in white was much faster than the Wolf King.

After they passed each other on the path, there was a slit on the latter's neck.

Thud!

The Wolf King collapsed to the ground and died.

Meanwhile, the masked expert in black was going head-to-head with the Beast of Death.

He got punched in the chest while he landed a punch on the Beast of Death.

He was fine, but the latter was not as his chest suddenly exploded.

Brock's two strongest experts died in an instant.

The two experts who had never suffered any loss in the Eastern Deathmatches were as fragile as glass.

Gasp!

At this moment, everyone was struck dumb, including the hundreds of experts behind Brock.

Since the two of them can't defeat them, it's even more impossible for us to defeat them!

Brock was shocked to the core.

I can't afford to cross this man!

"May I know why do you come to South City?" Brock asked calmly.

A devilish smile appeared on Jacky's face. "I want to be the boss of South City! I heard that you're the strongest here, so I came to you first!"

Gasp!

Brock's breathing turned heavy.

Although this man is arrogant, he has the ability to do so!

"I admit that I'm no match for you! But it's impossible that I'll allow you to swallow the entire South City up!"

"Oh?"

Jacky was intrigued.

"Because South City isn't a place where you can simply cause troubles! I advise you to leave as soon as possible, or you will die!" urged Brock.

"Hahaha..."

Jacky burst into laughter.

His men followed suit.

“What I said is true! There’s a very powerful man here in South City. Regardless of who you are, you’re no match for him!”

The Protector Chapter 614

Brock knew about Levi.

No matter what powerful background Jacky had, he would be doomed after crossing Levi!

Moreover, Jacky was targeting the territory in South City, which was a behavior that the God of War hated most.

They would definitely meet, and Jacky would die!

“Alright. Who’s that man? Tell me, so that I can go to him!” Jacky asked with a smile.

He believed no one in South City could stop him.

“It’s better you not know! Take my advice, leave South City now!” Brock urged again.

“Kill him!”

As a man of action, Jacky gave the order to his man, and the masked expert in white instantly turned into a blur of motion.

Swoosh!

With a flash of the blade, Brock slowly slumped to the ground.

Before he died, he pointed at Jacky and uttered, “So you’re…”

Thud. Brock's body fell stiffly on the ground.

Apparently, he recognized who Jacky was the moment before he died.

The entire underground boxing arena was in chaos.

"Calm down, everyone! From now on, I'll take over here! Those who join me won't be mistreated!" Jacky shouted.

"At your service, Sir!" hundreds of people shouted at the top of their lungs as they got down on their knees.

After taking over Jagged Club, Jacky looked at Leslie and asked, "Who's that man Brock Green said?"

"I don't know. I've never heard of such a person in South City! I think he made it up to scare you away!" replied Leslie.

One of Jacky's men also said, "We've checked before coming, Sir. There's no such a person!"

"Alright, then. Let's go to our next stop—the Grandmaster!"

Jacky's eyes were glinting with cold malice.

It was definitely a night where South City was left to twist in the wind!

A force that suddenly appeared first killed the Stone Buddha and then beheaded the Grandmaster in a whirlwind!

More than a dozen forces were instantly destroyed in a row!

Twenty-seven underground boxing arenas and hundreds of territories were all taken over by Jacky.

What happened this time was far more damaging than the fall of Scott's faction and Triple Group.

At least, the two previous events did not affect anyone else.

This time, not only were many affected, but Jacky and his party were also extremely cruel!

Anyone who did not submit would be killed mercilessly!

Within a short period of time, everyone was consumed by panic and fear.

All the powerful families grew anxious as they were worried that troubles would come to them, and they might be the next one to die.

The fact that both the big shots, Brock and the Grandmaster, were killed showed just how terrifyingly strong Jacky was.

Most importantly, they did not know the real identity of this force as they could not find out anything about them!

Leslie and Derek were more in shock than anyone else because they followed Jacky the entire time he quelled more than a dozen forces.

They even witnessed how Jacky killed Brock and the Grandmaster.

He's so strong!

Unbelievably strong!

They grew pleasantly surprised.

It's such a stroke of luck that our family actually gets selected randomly by Jacky.

Jacky asked the Davies to take care of the territories he had taken over, which was a huge leap forward for them in every aspect.

Jacky was satisfied with his accomplishments tonight, but he was not proud, as if he had done something commonplace.

Upon return, Jacky made a phone call, and respectfully said, "Master, I've wiped out the underworld of South City according to your instructions! Please give me your further instructions!"

"Very well. You have free rein to do whatever you want next. Just wait for me to go to South City myself!" an old voice was heard saying from the other end of the line.

The Protector Chapter 615

“Understood, Master! I’ll definitely not let you down!”

Jacky was thrilled.

Meanwhile, Leslie and Derek lowered their heads as if they had done something wrong, feeling horrified deep down.

Someone else’s coming, and it’s even Jacky’s master?

Considering that Jacky is so strong himself, his master must be really powerful!

News about what happened quickly spread the next day.

Russell deliberately went to the Black family and reminded them, “Recently, a group of mysterious force has come to South City. Even Brock Green and the Grandmaster have been killed. Be extra careful, everyone!”

While shocked, they made a mental note of what Russell had said.

Thinking of something, Meredith could not help but say, “I have to get Zoey a bodyguard! It’s so dangerous recently! I must make sure nothing happens to her!”

After a short pause, she added, “Moreover, having a bodyguard can also keep Levi away from Zoey!”

Robert smiled. “That would be killing two birds with one stone!”

Hesitating, Meredith said, “We can’t take this matter lightly. The bodyguard must be the best in all aspects, and preferably a woman. Jennie, Logan, since the two of you know a lot of people, can you look for a suitable candidate?”

Jennie flashed her a smile. “You’re in good hands, Grandma. There just happened to be a good fit in our social circle recently!”

“Oh, really?”

Meredith was taken aback.

“Recently, I met a woman, who used to be a soldier and has just retired from the front line of the West! She’s nicknamed Female Hades, and is said to defeat a hundred opponents alone!” said Jennie.

“She’s the one then! Hurry up and get her here!”

It came as a pleasant surprise for Meredith.

Jennie hesitated before she replied, “The price may be a little too high, Grandma. It’s a ten million annual salary, a car, and a house. Is that alright?”

Meredith cared about Zoey a lot, so she was willing to pay any price.

“No problem!”

Shortly after, Jennie brought the female soldier over.

Standing at a height of 1.8 meters, she gave off a strong murderous vibe.

“Nice to meet you, Mr. Black, Mdm. Westbrook. My name is Syllas Whitfield! I used to serve in the Special Force of Tiger Squad of the West Warzone! I’ve killed 277 opponents on the battlefield! Being a bodyguard is not much of a problem for me!”

With a sharp look on her face, Syllas exuded an intimidating presence.

The Blacks instantly took a fancy to her.

“Alright, Syllas, you’re hired! We have two requirements—first, keep my granddaughter safe, and second, don’t let Levi Garrison get near her. Here’s a photo of his!” Meredith said.

Syllas took the photo and glanced at it before replying, “Okay, no problem. This is an easy task. I’ll definitely get the job done!”

A look of confidence and relaxation was apparent on Syllas’ face.

Compared to killing enemies on the battlefield, this was almost like she was taking a vacation.

Although Zoey did not want to have a bodyguard, she could not do anything as Meredith had made the arrangement.

The worst part was that Syllas had to be with her round-the-clock.

In other words, she would not have the chance to meet Levi.

As usual, when Levi came to Zoey’s office and was about to open the door to enter, he noticed a tall person who was a few centimeters shy of his height standing outside the door.

The surprising bit was that it was a woman.

“You’re not allowed to enter!” Syllas stopped him with a cold voice.

“Who are you?” Levi asked in surprise.

He had never seen this woman.

“I’m Ms. Lopez’s bodyguard!” replied Sylas.

Levi was stunned.

Since when did Zoey get a bodyguard?

“I’m her husband! You may move aside now!”

Then Levi proceeded to walk inside.

“No! I have another duty, which is to keep you away from Ms. Lopez!”

Sylas stopped him right in his tracks.

The Protector Chapter 616

Levi instantly understood what was going on.

This was a bodyguard that the Black family had hired to keep him from interacting with Zoey.

“Are you sure you can stop me?” He chuckled.

Sylas simply glared coldly. “I’m not even scared of fighting to the death on the battlefield, much less someone like you.”

She had already thought of 34 ways to get Levi under control.

To her, a commoner like him had no chance against her.

It was kind of a waste of her talent to send her after someone as plain as this.

Levi was taken aback for a second before grinning as he asked, “Oh, you served in the army before?”

“Yes.” Sylas nodded.

“In which warzone?”

He looked at Sylas a little more closely and noticed the soldier-like rage that seemed to surround her like an aura.

It was almost murderous.

She had definitely killed enemies on the battlefield before.

She must be a pro!

Sylas would normally not pay attention to someone like Levi.

However, Meredith had commanded for her to keep him away from Zoey at all costs.

Sylas decided to get rid of him once and for all so she could worry about one less thing.

“Well, I just defeated the Tiger Squad of the West warzone about a month ago! In my three years as a soldier, I’ve killed 277 people.”

As Sylas bragged about her body count, her eyes glinted murderously.

She wanted to scare the wits out of Levi.

She hadn’t expected for him to be completely undeterred.

Levi asked, “Oh, you’re one of that little punk Ezra’s soldiers?”

When Sylas heard him say Chief Williamson’s name, she was surprised.

He knows Chief Williamson?

Chief Williamson was the commander-in-chief of the West warzone!

He was an idol to many soldiers of the West, second only to the God of War.

But most commoners wouldn’t even know of Chief Williamson’s power.

The West warzone was on the frontlines, after all.

How could someone in South City know about him?

Wait, what did he just call Chief Williamson? Little punk?

Once she finally came to her senses, Sylas was practically radiating anger.

She was pissed.

How could he call Chief Williamson a 'little punk' so casually?

How rude!

Sylas glared at Levi as if she wanted to wring the life from him. "What did you just call Chief Williamson?"

"A little punk. Why?" Levi answered nonchalantly.

He had been the one to personally train Ezra and send the latter to the West after all.

Is it wrong for me to call him a little punk?

To Sylas, however, it became extremely disrespectful.

How dare Levi insult the invincible war god of the west?

He had to die!

"How dare you treat him with such disrespect! Apologize immediately!" Sylas roared.

Levi frowned. "What did I do? Why should I apologize?"

“You insulted Chief Williamson! You have no right to call someone like him a little punk! Apologize now!” Sylas pressed on.

Levi scoffed coldly. “Even if Ezra were right in front of me, I’d still call him a little punk! In fact, he’d be perfectly happy about it, so who are you to stop me?”

Levi was practically Ezra’s master and role model.

With just one word, Ezra would destroy entire villages and burn down forests for Levi.

If he called Ezra a little punk to his face, the latter would be happy for the rest of the week, probably.

Sylas was just getting angrier and angrier.

“I’ve already left the army and no longer wish to have any blood on my hands, so don’t push me. Are you going to apologize?” Sylas asked in a low voice.

Levi was already dead in her eyes.

Levi just chuckled. “I did nothing wrong, so no. I won’t.”

He was feeling speechless.

Ezra was pretty good if he could create such an amazing female soldier.

She’d have been even more amazing if she could use her brain properly, though.

Since he dared to call Ezra a ‘little punk’, shouldn’t she have figured out his relationship with Ezra?

The Protector Chapter 617

“Okay. You’ve brought this upon yourself,” Sylas said coldly.

She wasn’t going to hold back anymore.

Despite the small space they were in, Sylas suddenly raised her slender right leg swiftly.

At a speed like lightning and with the force of thunder, she aimed at Levi’s face.

Everything Sylas had trained for in the army was to kill.

If she acted, then it was to kill.

With this one kick, Levi would probably suffer at least a broken nose, if not a completely ruined face.

He’d definitely have to lie in the hospital for a couple months.

“You’re asking for it!” Levi roared.

He was angry too.

Right as the kick was about to land, Zoey’s voice suddenly cried out, “No!”

Zoey had opened the door.

Sylas’ foot stopped in midair, barely a centimeter away from the tip of Levi’s nose.

Levi looked unruffled.

“Sylas, he’s my husband! I forbid you from hurting him!”

Zoey was trembling in fear.

Sylas put her leg down and looked at Levi, her expression icy. “I’ll forgive you just this once. If this happens again, I won’t hold back.”

Levi grinned. “Zoey! You saved her!”

Levi was really about to fight back just now.

Sadly, Zoey had appeared in the nick of time.

“You...” Sylas was furious.

You were the one in danger just now! How dare you say she saved me?

I hate you!

No wonder everyone in the Black family hated him and wanted to keep him away from Zoey.

“You’re not allowed to meet Ms. Lopez anymore. If you do, I’ll kill you on sight,” Sylas warned.

Zoey gestured for Levi to leave, indicating that she’d take care of Sylas.

After Levi left, Sylas finally calmed down. She suddenly thought of something.

How did he know about Chief Williamson?

Why did he have the guts to call Chief Williamson a 'little punk'?

He didn't seem like he was doing it spitefully either.

In fact, it seemed like he was simply doing it out of habit.

Could he be someone important?

That's impossible!

Why would someone with the power to call Chief Williamson a 'little punk' be working in a plain old company?

As a guard, no less.

That was truly impossible!

He was probably just some military nerd.

It wasn't hard for someone like that to know so much about the military.

"Levi, was it? I won't forget you. One day, I'll really teach you a lesson!"

Sylas was as short-tempered as they come, and she really couldn't stand Levi.

Of course, Levi couldn't care less about someone like Sylas.

She was strong, but she wouldn't have expected for Levi to plant a bodyguard by Zoey's side.

He had let Hades go at first so that he could use the man to protect Zoey.

Hades was practically the perfect candidate for it.

After all, he was almost a god of war himself.

Sylas had never guessed that there was a pair of eyes in the shadows, watching her every move.

She didn't feel a single thing.

Levi was just logistics support, so he didn't have much to do.

He went to Kirin and Azure Dragon's residence.

"Did you hear about what happened yesterday?" Azure Dragon asked.

"What?" Levi asked, genuinely confused.

"Brock Green and the Grandmaster are dead! Some crazy powerful group just arrived in South City and killed the Beast of Death and the Wolf King in mere seconds! They've already taken care of most of the underworld and the underground boxing rings, who have been lying low since then," Azure Dragon answered.

"What?"

Levi's eyes flashed coldly at the news.

"Who dares act so brashly on my territory?"

"Whoever they are, they're probably after South City. They might be after Oriental Star Group next. Do you think Ms. Lopez needs guards to protect her?" Azure Dragon asked.

"I'd like to see who dares to even touch a hair on her head!" Levi bellowed.

The Protector Chapter 618

Azure Dragon automatically offered, "Should I go and protect Ms. Lopez?"

"There's no need to worry about her safety," Levi answered.

With Hades protecting her, she was as safe as she could be.

Even though L Nation was destroyed, Hades was still as powerful.

He wasn't someone to mess with.

"Who could it be? Wasn't what happened to the Caesar family bad enough? Who would dare to come after that?" Levi asked.

Azure Dragon shrugged. "I've already sent someone to investigate. They're unidentified as of now, but we know for sure that they're the strongest people that have ever challenged us. The fact that they could destroy South City's underground in one night is enough proof."

"I don't care who they are. As long as they're a threat to this city, I won't let them go," Levi announced coldly.

Since Levi was there, Tim and the others didn't care too much about this new group of threats.

They knew no one could cause any trouble with him around.

While the other well-known families of South City investigated Jacky Lawson's identity, the Davies family was having a field day.

Naturally, they'd be in charge of all the businesses that had been affected.

They could earn a pretty penny from all that.

This left a smile on Leslie's face for the rest of the week.

He had sworn allegiance to Jacky till death.

Jacky asked, "The Oriental Star Group is doing pretty well these days, huh?"

"I've done some research on them. Their boss's name is Zoey Lopez. Apart from having the Black family behind her, there's nothing else to her name. Why does the whole of South City just watch her gobble up the market like it's no big deal?" Leslie wondered.

"It's all thanks to Morris Group. The families of South City are mostly terrified of Morris Group, who have her back at all times." Jacky chuckled.

Even though they weren't from Quebec, he knew more than Leslie did.

Through their research, it was highly likely Morris Group destroyed Scott Yates and Triple Group.

"Is Morris Group really that powerful?" Leslie asked.

"Of course! Not only is their boss completely mysterious, but there are also a bunch of hidden talents in there! They have a super powerful professional among their guards who defeated Scott Yates' Four Mighty Generals," Jacky said.

"You know my master came to South City just to get rid of Morris Group, right? Quebec is simply too irresistible!" Jacky said, his face full of greed.

Leslie inhaled sharply at that.

Wasn't that a bit too greedy?

Jacky wanted South City, but his Master wanted the whole of Quebec!

Leslie asked, "What do we need to do to help? The Davies will definitely give their all to help!"

"I won't touch Morris Group for now. As for Oriental Star Group and the other big families of South City, I want them all!"

A cold glint flashed across Jacky's eyes.

Leslie asked in a shaky voice, "A-Are we also gonna kill our way to the top like we did last night?"

Jacky suddenly laughed. "Nope! These are a completely different breed of people we're talking about here. We could defeat the likes of Brock Green and the underworld clubs through brute force, but these are all high-class wolves in suits. If we kill even just one or two of them, there'll be an uproar. South City will really go after me then."

"Then what should be our course of action?" Leslie asked.

Jacky smiled sinisterly. "We fight fire with fire. I'd love to meet the boss of Oriental Star Group. Let's invite her over! In fact, let's do it tonight."

Leslie couldn't help but ask, "What if she doesn't want to come?"

Right as the words left his mouth, Leslie regretted speaking.

He felt a cold glare sweep across him, freezing him to the spot.

The Protector Chapter 619

As expected, Jacky was already staring at him with icy eyes. "That's your problem! I want to see her tonight, that'll be my problem."

"Understood! I'm sorry, I promise I'll do exactly as you asked!" Leslie said, hurriedly pressing his forehead to the floor in a deep bow.

Jacky's meaning was clear enough. No matter how, he wanted to meet Zoey that very night.

"If you can't even get this done, then you'd better start thinking of your last words," Jacky said mildly.

The moment he left, Leslie wiped off his cold sweat with the back of his hand.

He nearly died in there.

He couldn't risk making that mistake again.

"You, get this done."

Leslie passed the baton to Derek.

To him, it was way too embarrassing for him to personally invite someone over.

"Of course! Don't worry, Father, I'll be sure to prove myself to Jacky." Derek smiled.

The Triple Group's building had been renamed under Oriental Star Group.

In Zoey's office, the secretary reported, "Ms. Lopez, someone who claims to be Derek Davies is asking to see you."

"Bring him in." Zoey nodded.

Recently, a number of South City's family business representatives visited her. She hadn't turned anyone down yet.

Soon enough, Derek and the others reached the reception area.

"You're Ms. Zoey Lopez?" Derek asked snidely.

To Derek, there was no one in South City who he couldn't afford to mess with.

He had always been straightforward and cocky.

"Yes. May I know what you're here for?"

Zoey already didn't like his tone very much.

"My master wants you to join us for dinner tonight! I'm just here to pass on the message. I'll send someone over to pick you up later tonight."

Derek clearly didn't care about whether Zoey agreed or disagreed.

"Get ready. I'll be back to pick you up in a while."

After that, he turned to leave.

"Hold it right there," Zoey said in a crisp voice.

"What?"

“Who is this master you’re speaking of?” Zoey asked.

“You’ll know tonight. Either way, he’s way more respectable than you can even imagine. Just listen to whatever he says.”

Derek had just finished speaking when Zoey called out, “Send him off.”

“What’s that supposed to mean?” he asked in disbelief.

“Sorry. I don’t accept invitations from strangers,” Zoey declined.

Derek laughed. “Zoey Lopez, I’ll have you know that you may turn down everyone else in South City, but this will be the one person you aren’t allowed to decline! In fact, there’s no reason for you to do so.”

Jacky had already killed Brock Green.

Who would dare to turn him down?

“Then why don’t you tell me who he is?”

Zoey was already clearly furious.

“His identity is to be kept secret, so you’ll only know when you see him! If you turn him down, you’ll really regret it. Do you know how Brock Green and the Grandmaster died last night? My master killed both of them!” Derek announced proudly.

“That’s not a reason. Send him away!” Zoey commanded.

The guards forced Derek out of Oriental Star Group.

“I wasn’t done!” Derek screeched urgently.

“What do we do now? That woman clearly isn’t willing to do this the nice way!” one of his subordinates asked.

“If she won’t play nice, we won’t either! Once she gets off work, we’ll bring her back by force.” Derek chuckled. “Jacky already told us he wanted to see her no matter what!”

“Understood. We’ll keep watch right here,” his subordinates replied.

The Protector Chapter 620

Zoey got off work right at 7 p.m..

She dragged her exhausted body out of the building.

She was supposed to work overtime, but the Black family was worried about her safety and demanded that she work at home.

Not far off, two of Derek's subordinates were preparing to attack after spotting her walking out of the building.

"Slow down! It's not a good idea to attack her here. We'll wait until she's almost home!" Derek said.

They had no idea that their every move was under someone else's control right now.

Levi knew everything that was going on.

Despite that, he wasn't the least bit worried.

Very soon, the chauffeur drove out.

Sylas followed Zoey into the car.

Derek instantly followed them.

The Black family manor was in a rather secluded area, so there weren't many cars on the way to the manor.

Suddenly, the driver stepped on the brakes.

The road before them was blocked by a few cars.

A few people stepped out of the cars.

Derek knocked on the window with a wide grin. "Ms. Lopez, would you so kindly follow me? I'd like if you could follow me willingly. If not, I'll have to use force."

There were over ten people behind him.

With just one command, they would kick the door down and drag her away.

Zoey simply frowned stubbornly. "No. I don't accept invitations from strangers!"

"Okay, I see how it is! Do you really think you're some big shot now? Jacky asked me to invite you because he respects you! Don't let that get to your head, you b*tch! I'll ask you one last time, are you going or not?" Derek roared.

"No. I won't go." Zoey turned him down firmly once again.

"Okay, you asked for it!"

Derek was just about to bark a command.

Bang!

The other door suddenly swung open.

A six-foot-tall woman got off the car, surrounded by a strong aura.

Slam!

Sylas's face remained emotionless as she swung a kick toward Derek's head.

He immediately got thrown backward, slamming into one of their cars.

"Kill that b*tch!" Derek roared.

All of his subordinates rushed toward them, roaring.

Slam! Slap! Bang!

In less than a minute, everyone was lying on the floor and moaning in pain.

All of his subordinates were skilled fighters, but they had unfortunately met a soldier who had just left the squad.

They couldn't even compete with her.

"Screw off! If anyone else comes to mess with Ms. Lopez again, I'll kill them!" Sylas warned coldly.

Derek was on the verge of tears.

How is this woman so good at fighting?

At the other side of town, in the Davies family's restaurant, Jacky sat down at a prepared table as the family members crowded around him.

He lazily asked, "It's already 8 p.m.. Is she here yet?"

Leslie started to panic.

Where is Derek? He'd been gone for half the day now!

Is he unable to do even such a simple thing?

“What are you doing here? I asked you to bring her over, didn’t I?” Jacky asked coldly at the sight of Leslie, who practically wet himself after being called out.

“I-I sent my son to do it! I had t-to stay behind and make... sure all your demands were met, right? In case anything happened...” Leslie stammered.

“I said 8 p.m., didn’t I? She’s three minutes late. What’s up with that? Do you just not give a sh*t about whatever I told you?” Jacky started raising his voice, causing Leslie to fall to his knees.

“I’ll immediately ask for their whereabouts!” Leslie instantly placed the call.

“You piece of trash, where are you? Where is Zoey Lopez?” Leslie bellowed.

“Things aren’t looking good! Zoey has a super strong female bodyguard that beat all of us!”

“What? She beat all of you?” Leslie said in shock.

“What’s the problem?” Jacky asked coldly.

The Protector Chapter 621

“Zoey turned you down, Jacky! She even let her bodyguard beat them up!” Leslie replied.

“How dare she?” Jacky roared, his eyes glinting murderously.

“No one should have the guts to turn me down! Whoever turns me down is already a dead person in my book!” Jacky said furiously.

At that very moment, Derek returned with his subordinates.

They all sported black eyes, split lips and a multitude of bruises and injuries.

Derek instantly collapsed in a bow in front of Jacky and cried out, “You have to help us!”

“Tell me everything that happened!” Jacky’s face was as dark as coal.

“We went to invite Zoey over on your behalf, but she was incredibly disrespectful! When I brought up your name, she even swore at you! We were about to use force when her bodyguard beat us all up!” Derek took some liberties with his storytelling.

Jacky couldn’t care less about how true the story was.

From that, he understood Zoey had turned him down and beat his subordinates up.

This was a clear slap to his face!

“You’re all garbage! You can’t even bring one person to me! What do I keep you all around for?” Jacky roared in anger.

He hadn’t thought that he’d need to personally step out for something like this.

Leslie was terrified.

Jacky changed the topic. “Still, there’s no one on earth that I can’t invite!”

He looked at Leslie. “Go and tell Zoey Lopez that she has to come bow before me before tonight ends. If not, they’ll all end up like Brock Green!”

“Understood!”

Soon enough, Leslie arrived at the Black family manor.

By now, everyone knew Leslie was one of the puppets of the mysterious force that had taken over South City.

They were terrified at the mere sight of him.

“What are you here for, Mr. Davies?” Bailey asked respectfully.

“Bring Zoey Lopez out right now!” Leslie commanded in a cold voice.

Very quickly, Zoey walked out of the house with Syllas by her side.

“Zoey, this is your last warning! Jacky demanded for you to go and kneel before him by tonight, or else all of you will suffer the same fate as Brock Green!”

After that, Leslie left.

“Who’s Jacky? In fact, what happened to Brock?” Zoey asked, confused.

“Zoey, you’re in big trouble!”

After Meredith and the others told Zoey what was going on, her expression changed to one of terror.

She hadn’t known that her mysterious inviter was such a terrifying person.

The Blacks were all incredibly worried.

They had purposely invited Sylas to be Zoey’s bodyguard so they could prevent her from getting in danger.

They hadn’t expected her to really cause trouble!

“What should we do?” Bailey asked.

Zoey said firmly, “I’m not going. I don’t even know him! Why would I go?”

Sylas nodded. “That’s right. I’m on Ms. Lopez’s side. With me here, no one can hurt her, anyway.”

Bailey instantly rebutted, “It’s no longer about whether you go. You have to go! Jacky is much too strong. He killed people as strong as Brock and the Grandmaster! If you don’t go, we’ll all be in big trouble.”

Russell asked, “If she goes, won’t she be in danger?”

“No, of course not. Jacky purposely invited her. If he really wanted to harm her, he wouldn’t have sent someone over to invite her. He would have just snatched and killed her,” Pamela mused.

They all saw sense in that.

Meredith said, "Zoey, you should go! Do it for the sake of the family. Don't worry, nothing will happen to you!"

"Grandma, I-" Zoey was finally wavering.

"She's not going!" A voice suddenly rang out.

The Protector Chapter 622

Levi had arrived.

He scoffed coldly, "If he wants to invite her, then he should come to beg for himself!"

They became outraged at his comment.

"What are you saying, Levi?"

"You better not let Jacky hear you! If not, you'll die a really painful death!"

"What are you even here for? You and Zoey are already divorced. You have no right to boss her around!"

The Black family members glared at Levi, their gaze full of hatred.

Levi smirked, "I have no right? Have you forgotten that we're still business partners? Since this has to do with Zoey's safety, of course I have to butt in!"

When she saw Levi, Zoey became much more at ease.

However, Meredith glared at Syllas. "Didn't I tell you not to let Levi near Zoey? Get rid of him! While you're at it, you can really prove yourself to us."

Meredith just wanted to use Syllas to teach Levi a lesson.

She wanted him to stay far away from her granddaughter.

"Grandma, I'll go, alright? Don't bother Levi."

Zoey finally agreed.

Only then did Meredith relax.

“Okay. Go, quickly. Sylas, follow her. If anything happens, let me know!”

After they walked outside, Levi called out, “You’re not going.”

Sylas looked at Levi before saying, “Ms. Lopez, I might hate his guts, but he’s right. You can’t go.”

“Okay, I’ll listen to you two,” Zoey said with a nod.

The three of them booked a hotel room to stay in for the night.

Back at the Davies family, Jacky and the others were still working.

“Jacky, I’ve already told her to come! Even if she doesn’t want to come, the Black family will still force her to come. In fact, they just called to say that she’s on her way!” Leslie reported with a smile.

Jacky nodded, satisfied. “Looks like the Black family knows their stuff.”

Leslie and some others chuckled. “You really broke records with what you did last night! Now, the entire South City is scared of you!”

“Is that so? Now we wait.”

Jacky closed his eyes to rest them for a bit.

At 10 p.m., the doors remained closed.

It stayed the same at 11 p.m..

At midnight, Jacky's eyes shot open.

"Where is she?" he asked coldly.

"She has yet to arrive," Leslie reported, bowing his head.

He had set up some people on watch nearby, but they hadn't spotted Zoey at all.

"Would you like me to ask the Black family?" Leslie asked cautiously.

"There's no need. She's not coming," Jacky said with a chuckle.

Leslie, Derek and the others waited with bated breath around him.

Despite his chuckle, he was actually furious.

This was already two huge slaps to the face.

He couldn't just take that lying down.

"She clearly doesn't give a sh*t about me. Oh, well, I still refuse to believe that I can't force her to come!" Jacky said with a sinister smile.

"I'll slowly force you out of your little hiding spot!"

Jacky continued chuckling darkly to himself.

Clearly, he already had a plan.

Besides, his master wasn't here yet, so he could take his time.

Nothing happened the whole night.

The Black family were under the impression that Zoey had really gone to Jacky.

The next day, she arrived at her office and spotted a gift box on her desk.

“Who is this from?” Zoey asked.

“I don’t know, Ms. Lopez. It’s been here since just now,” her secretary replied, just as confused.

“Open it and check,” Zoey said.

The secretary seemed a little nervous, not daring to open it up.

“I’ll do it!”

Sylas stepped forward and opened the box.

“Oh!”

The moment the box opened, Zoey and Sylas immediately went pale in terror.

Thump.

The secretary, who was in no way as brave as the others, collapsed on the ground in a dead faint.

The Protector Chapter 623

The reason behind that was simple. The box contained ten fingers that had been chopped off, and they were still oozing blood at the time.

If Zoey wasn't mentally strong, she would've passed out right then and there.

Sylas, on the other hand, remained calm.

"I'll go deal with this. Don't worry," promised Sylas before she took the box away and took the secretary to the infirmary.

"Ms. Lopez, this is obviously their doing!" claimed Sylas with a grim expression on.

She had thought that her job as a security guard would be simple, never would she expected to encounter something that serious on her first day.

That was fine for her, though, because it would've been too boring otherwise.

"Ms. Lopez, should I go deal with the perpetrator?" asked Sylas.

Sylas was a warrior, so she was fearless.

"No, you can't go!"

The phone in the office rang at that moment, and Zoey went to pick it up.

The unfamiliar voice of a man came through, "Is this Ms. Zoey Lopez?"

"Yes, and who are you?" asked Zoey.

“Ms. Lopez is so forgetful. I sent an invitation twice yesterday, and you’ve already forgotten about me. I am Jacky Lawson. Remember that.”

“You!” growled Zoey as an icy expression settled on her face.

“By the way, Ms. Lopez, have you received my gift? Do you like it?” asked Jacky before he chuckled aloud.

“Are you threatening me? Well, too bad, because I am not afraid!” replied Zoey coolly.

“Ms. Lopez is so imposing. You are the first person who ever dared reject my request, and I admire that. However, I will be giving you a gift every day from now on. Please look forward to it.”

Beep! Beep! Beep!

Jacky hung up immediately after.

Zoey sighed a long breath of relief.

She was eerily pale at the time, and she’d be lying if she said that she wasn’t afraid.

A gift every day? I got bloody fingers today, so what’s next? An arm? A leg? Or maybe even a human head?

When Zoey thought about that, her breathing became uneven, and she was so terrified that all the color drained from her face.

It seemed that she had gotten herself into a heap of trouble.

“Sylas, should I just go to him? We can’t let this go on.”

Zoey was already starting to raise her white flag.

She was worried about making a bigger mess if she persisted.

“Ms. Lopez, something terrible happened,” said an employee suddenly as he rushed in nervously.

“What’s wrong?” asked Zoey.

“Someone just discovered Barry from the sanitization department on the washroom floor. All ten of his fingers were chopped off...”

“What?”

Boom!

Zoey’s mind went blank, and even Sylas looked affected.

So the “gift” I just received...

Seems like they had already looked into everyone close to me, and they might target anyone.

Barry of the sanitization department is the victim of the day. My secretary might be the next victim, and members of the Black family might be targeted as well.

Zoey was devastated when she thought about that possibility.

She felt out of breath.

That was when Meredith called her suddenly.

“Zoey, did you not go to the Davies family residence yesterday?” asked Meredith anxiously.

“No, I didn’t, grandma,” replied Zoey honestly.

“Ah, you’ve made a huge mess this time, young lady. A handful of the Black family’s maids went missing today, and we still can’t reach them,” informed Meredith, who sounded worried.

“You know what? Find a way and go clean up the mess you’ve made, or we might be the ones who go missing next!” urged Meredith.

Boom!

Zoey was on the verge of breaking down.

That was just the first day, and her family might be the ones getting hurt in the following days.

What do I do?

Two streams of tears rolled down Zoey’s cheeks silently.

The Protector Chapter 624

“Ms. Lopez, I will go deal with them right away,” growled Sylas angrily.

Zoey shook her head and replied, “That won’t do. They are operating from the shadows while we are wide open.”

Sylas was stumped.

She could deal with anything if it were all laid out in plain sight, but she was not good at dealing with schemes and hidden traps.

“Then what should we do?” asked Sylas, who felt a headache coming.

That was only their first day!

Zoey calmed her employees down and sent the injured to the hospital, but she was getting more and more worried.

An invisible threat was looming over her head, and she was in a position where she couldn’t do anything even though she knew that she was in danger...

“I should’ve listened to grandma last night and drop by the Davies family residence,” murmured Zoey, who was starting to regret her decision.

She didn’t realize that rejecting a simple invitation would bring about a problem that big.

Even Sylas couldn’t help but bite her lip a little.

I shouldn’t have acted so impulsively and caused such a mess.

At the Davies family's residence.

"The Black family is in a mess now, Jacky, and the people at Oriental Star Group are terrified as well," informed Derek with a smile.

Jacky grinned evilly. "That's what I was aiming for. Zoey Lopez rejected my offer, in return, I shall make her live in fear for the rest of her life!"

Leslie laughed aloud and said, "Hah, rejecting Jacky Lawson. That woman doesn't know what's good for her."

Jacky laughed as well. "Honestly though, I am curious about the kind of woman who dares to go against me."

"I have a photo of her, Jacky. Here," said Derek as he showed Jacky a few photos of Zoey.

"Huh?"

Jacky's eyes glowed when he saw Zoey's photos.

He grinned as he examined the photo closely, and it seemed like he was extremely excited about it.

Jacky's reaction surprised even the two fighting experts standing beside him. One of the fighters wore a black mask while the other wore a white mask.

Master has never been lustful, nor has he ever been attracted by any women. Why is he acting strange this time? Did he see someone exotic?

"She is stunning," murmured Jacky.

Ever since Jacky was a kid, his master had been telling him that women and gambling were things that he cannot get close to. His master claimed that they would affect his future and that Jacky was destined to be great.

That was why Jacky had always been strict with his private life, and he had only ever been with a few women.

He would only be with those who truly captivated him and would ignore the rest.

It was obvious that Zoey had captivated Jacky.

He instantly changed his plan and decided that he wouldn't keep threatening or scaring Zoey.

Instead, he would make her become his!

One look at Jacky's expression, and Leslie knew just what the former was thinking.

Leslie immediately said, "Don't worry, Jacky. I will have that woman delivered to your bed tonight."

Jacky shifted his gaze to Leslie and glared, "I have lost faith in you two, so you will not carry out this mission!"

"I..."

Leslie and Derek both have their heads down.

"Spread the news in the underworld. Anyone who can deliver Zoey Lopez over to me tonight will receive ten territories and two underground gambling centers," ordered Jacky.

"Understood."

The entire underworld of South City stirred upon receiving that news.

Ten territories and two underground gambling centers?

For people of underworld, the offer was simply too alluring.

Whoever gets their hands on the reward would be turned into a major player in the underworld of South City, and they would be entitled to receive Jacky's protection.

That was the kind of privilege that would tempt others to kill even the Grandmaster and Brock Green.

The entire underworld was plunged into chaos.

Over thousands of people were persuaded, and everyone wanted to personally hand Zoey over to Jacky.

Naturally, Zoey was unaware of the fact that every criminal in South City had their eyes on her.

The Protector Chapter 625

The building where Zoey's office was located, in particular, had a lot of random strangers showing up.

Everything about Zoey was learned and shared in real-time.

Over a thousand men had their eyes on her.

Leslie couldn't help but admire Jacky's strategy.

Jacky got the entire underworld to work for him, so neither he nor his subordinate needed to show up.

That kept Jacky's identity a secret.

He's good, really good.

"I've also learned that Zoey is still a virgin, even though she has been married for over six years. Her husband never slept with her," shared Derek.

Jacky tapped on Derek's shoulder in appreciation after hearing that. "Good, that is great news. I wouldn't have minded if she is married, but it's even better if she's a virgin. Tonight is destined to be a beautiful night. Derek, go get the room ready," said Jacky.

Leslie immediately chimed in, "Jacky, I promise that you will have a great time tonight."

"Hahaha..."

The men all laughed aloud.

Night fell soon after, and the entire city fell into darkness.

Zoey and Sylas realized that the parking lot was empty when they walked out of the elevator. A chill ambushed them and made them shiver.

Sylas had her guard up as she scanned her surroundings. She sensed that something was off.

“Ms. Lopez, please get in the car before me,” instructed Sylas sternly.

Her instinct told her that they were not alone.

Zoey got into the car obediently and urged, “Sylas, hurry and get into the car too. Let’s leave as quickly as possible.”

“It’s too late for that,” replied Sylas.

She had just finished speaking when shadows jumped out of every corner of the parking lot.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

A number of cars stopped simultaneously, and a handful of men got out of each car.

There were at least a few hundred men, and they surrounded the two women.

“What is going on?” blurted Zoey, who was scared witless.

She had never seen anything like that before, so she fished out her phone to ask for help.

However, she soon realized that her phone couldn't receive any signals.

A fierce-looking hooligan rushed over at that moment.

Sylas stood her ground, like a mountain of cold steel.

"F*ck off! We only want Zoey Lopez, and bystanders can leave," barked the leader cruelly.

"You will have to get through me to get to Ms. Lopez," scoffed Sylas, whose eyes shone with determination.

"Attack!"

Over hundreds of men rushed over, and they seemed as overwhelming as a tsunami.

Sylas growled and faced them head on.

Sylas was a female warrior who had fought on the battlefield, after all, so she was ridiculously powerful.

Her skilled battle techniques shone through as soon as she started fighting.

She was so good that she knocked over a dozen men down with a single hit.

Sylas was ruthless, and she showed no mercy, so the experts from the underworld couldn't even get close to her.

A few minutes later, Sylas knocked over fifty men down.

Seeing that got the others to fear her a little.

“Boys, we will be rewarded with ten territories and two gambling centers if we capture Zoey Lopez! Attack now. She is but a woman, and she can’t keep up no matter how strong she is.”

Someone had shouted from the crowd and that inspired the men to push forward as if they had been drugged with a serum that gave them courage.

Sylas was the obstacle in their quest to getting rich, and everyone wanted to destroy her.

Even though Syllas was strong, there were simply too many against her.

With hundreds of men attacking simultaneously, she was slowly but surely pushed back.

Bang!

Someone finally landed a kick on Syllas.

Syllas forced herself to stand up, despite having over a dozen cuts on her.

“Kill her!”

A few men had a dagger with them, and they rushed over.

Syllas’ life was on the line...

Zoey wanted to get out of the car and save Syllas, but she didn’t even have the time to do so. All she could do was watch.

The Protector Chapter 626

Boom!

At that crucial moment, a force that could rival that of an insanely aggressive tornado flew over, and the men who were about to kill Syllas were forced to back away.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

A series of pained moans could be heard after that.

Over a dozen men lost their ability to fight within those few nanoseconds.

All Zoey and Syllas saw was a dark shadow showing up in front of them.

The shadow was none other than Hades.

Levi's order for Hades was that he must protect Zoey, even if it meant sacrificing his own life.

As such, his mission was to destroy every single person in front of him.

Hades attacked.

He was like a leopard dashing towards his prey.

Hades had a reputation of having killed over a thousand men, and he was a country's God of War.

Compared to the soldiers in the army, the underworld hooligans were nothing but sniveling babies.

When Hades fought, he made others feel as if they had somehow fallen into the cruelest and deepest pit of hell.

It only took him about ten minutes to crush everyone and get them to moan in pain on the floor.

No one was left standing.

Both Zoey and Syllas were stupefied.

He is too powerful. H-he just crushed over a hundred men in mere minutes?

After dealing with the men, Hades walked over to Syllas and spoke in pieces. It was like he was a foreigner who was struggling to speak their language. "I here, no one hurt Ms. Lopez."

Hades left after saying his piece with a heavy accent and terrible grammar.

Brock Green's old comrades and over a hundred other experts had surrendered as soon as they saw Hades.

They didn't realize that Zoey was protected by a man that powerful.

In short, anyone who knew Hades had backed away out of fear.

Hades had, in effect, destroyed the entire underworld all on his own.

That was precisely why Levi had assigned the task of keeping Zoey safe to Hades.

Both Zoey and Syllas were surprised.

Zoey, in particular, was utterly speechless.

Someone else is protecting me? Someone that powerful, no less. His accent... He has to be from a foreign country.

“What?” shouted Jacky, who soon received the news.

“Zoey Lopez’s bodyguard crushed over hundreds of men on his own? And everyone who went was defeated?”

Jacky’s eyes bulged so much that it seemed like they were about to pop out of his sockets.

Everyone was in shock.

They knew that the man had, in effect, destroyed the underworld of South City.

Derek immediately added, “Zoey’s personal bodyguard is too powerful, Jacky.”

“Looks like I’ve underestimated her. No wonder she dared to reject my offer. Turns out she had something up her sleeves,” mused Jacky.

“Seems like my investigation on Zoey isn’t detailed enough. How about I look into her bodyguard as well?” asked Leslie.

“That won’t be necessary. I refuse to believe that there is someone out there that I can’t get my hands on,” replied Jacky as he shook his head. After that, he added, “Hey, you two.”

Jacky turned to the two men wearing masks.

“We’re listening, master,” replied the two men while standing up straight.

“Go and get Zoey over for me and kill anyone who gets in your way,” barked Jacky coldly.

“We promise to accomplish our mission, master.”

Leslie and the others drew a sharp breath.

They’re both going? Isn’t that a little too much?

Leslie and the others had only ever witnessed those two masked men working twice.

The men were weird, and they moved like they were performing a magic show.

One glare could literally kill someone, and a single touch could pulverize their victims.

No one can stop them.

Jacky laughed aloud. “Who would’ve thought that I’d find someone that powerful in South City?”

“Jacky, isn’t it a little too over-the-top to send both men in?” asked Leslie, who thought that sending in one of them was sufficient.

“That is why you can’t get anything done right! I want to be a hundred percent sure that this is done right,” shouted Jacky as he glared over.

“Understood. Thank you for teaching me a lesson, Jacky,” replied Leslie.

Meanwhile, the two fighting experts with their masks on had arrived at the Black family’s manor.

“Let’s just kill everyone in there,” suggested the man in the white mask as his eyes shimmered with cruelty.

The Protector Chapter 627

“Sure.”

Just as the two experts were about to walk in, a shadow suddenly appeared in front of them.

Or, to be more accurate, two shadows showed up.

One of the men was hiding behind the other guy and was taking his time to reveal himself.

He had a cigarette between his lips, and the glow at the end of his cigarette was especially bright in the dark.

That man was none other than Levi Garrison.

“Barging into my territory, are we? Seems to me you have a death wish!” said Levi softly.

The two masked experts turned to one another before they attacked.

The one with the white mask specialized in speed, and he could kill without anyone seeing. His speed was so incredible that he could trick the naked eye.

Zip!

The man showed up in front of Levi in an instance, and the sharp dagger he had with him exuded a horrifying aura.

The white-masked man was simply too fast.

If anyone else was around, they would see that he was still standing in his original position.

The fact, however, was that he was already standing in front of Levi.

Swish!

The dagger seemed to be engulfed in a murderous aura.

The white-masked man was confident that he could kill Levi, but another man suddenly showed up in front of him. A huge shadow loomed over the white-masked man and blurred his vision.

“What the hell?” blurted the white-masked man as his expression changed sharply.

He couldn't believe that someone could actually keep up with him.

A sense of danger encompassed the white-masked man at the very next second.

Bang!

His chest was punched hard, and his organs were instantly crushed. His bones also shattered.

He was flying wildly like a kite with a broken string as he flew backward.

Naturally, the one who attacked was Hades.

The other expert, the black-masked man, was stunned.

He immediately rushed over and threw a merciless punch at Hades.

The black-masked man was strong, and his strength had never met its match before.

The black-masked man had once crushed a marble table and the Beast of Death with a single touch.

He could do that because he mastered the Ancient Arts of Qi, which was a traditional fighting technique thought to be mythical.

The Ancient Arts of Qi could shatter anything the hand touched, and a human body would crumble when hit.

Despite that, Hades never avoided or backed away from that attack. Instead, he used the same technique and threw his punch at a similar angle.

Bang!

The two fists met, and the booming sound of thunder was heard.

“Urk!”

The black-masked man fell backward. He spat blood at the very next second.

Crack!

Half of his mask even broke off.

Levi clapped his hand when he saw that. He praised, “Not bad, not bad at all. I made the right decision keeping you around all those years ago. White Tiger and the others no longer need to come all the way over to solve the issue.”

“I am glad to be of service,” replied Hades, who looked like he was truly glad to have received the compliment.

Levi and Hades walked forward.

Hades tore the white mask off of the other expert as well.

That was when they saw that the masked men had the word “slave” carved on both their faces.

At that moment, both men were trembling in fear.

Turned out, Brock Green was right. There was a being in South City that they could not afford to offend.

At the Davies family’s residence.

“Hmm... The two of them had been gone for so long. Nothing bad could’ve happened to them, could it?” murmured Leslie, who seemed a little nervous and worried.

“Pfft, that is not possible. Those two are my master’s slaves. One of them has been learning the Ancient Arts of Qi ever since he was a kid, while the other trained his speed with a leopard. They have reached a level that you cannot even imagine, so they couldn’t have possibly failed,” bragged Jacky as he grinned proudly.

That was why he brought those two to South City. He was confident that they were strong enough to deal with anything.

“I’m glad to hear that,” said Leslie, even though his heart was still thumping with anxiety.

“My guess is that they are busy killing everyone. Given their style, it is likely that the Black family will go extinct tonight,” said Jacky as he smiled.

His eyes burned with a hint of lust, and it seemed like he couldn't wait to meet Zoey.

Leslie gasped upon hearing that.

"Is that so?" asked a voice that suddenly rang from the other side of the door.

Bang!

Bang!

Two corpses were tossed into the room at the same time.

The Protector Chapter 628

Jacky, Leslie, and the others were stunned when their gaze fell upon the two corpses.

A-aren't these my master's slaves? H-how did they die?

Jacky's eyes shone with surprise and confusion, while Leslie's jaw dropped so far that an egg could hatch between his lips.

Both experts were annihilated? How is that possible?

Both men were the ones who crushed Brock Green's illegal boxing match and had the entire underworld of South City on its knees!

Their strengths were practically god-like, and their techniques were like magic.

How did they die?

"N-no, tell me this isn't true," demanded Jacky with a look of mania in his eyes.

He couldn't believe what he was seeing.

Those two slaves had been with him ever since they were kids, and they had killed countless experts.

They had never been defeated before, but they died that day.

Jacky simply couldn't believe it.

What kind of monster is capable of killing them?

Tap! Tap! Tap!

A series of footsteps sounded, and Levi and Hades showed up.

“W-who are you?” asked Jacky in surprise.

“We’re the ones who have come to kill you,” answered Levi calmly.

Zip!

Ten men, all of which were Jacky’s bodyguards, hurried over to protect him.

“Die!”

Hades attacked.

All ten men fell to the floor soon after, and the other men were utterly flabbergasted.

Leslie and Derek had become so terrified that they knelt on the ground.

They realized that they had offended someone they should never have bothered.

Jacky, however, couldn’t adapt to the new situation. He stared blankly at Levi and asked, “Who are you?”

“Fine, let me help you understand why you must die. Zoey Lopez is my wife, and South City is under my protection. Anything I say goes. You killed in my territory, and that is nothing less than an invitation to death,” replied Levi.

Boom!

Jacky felt like he had been struck by lightning after hearing what Levi said.

Jacky remembered what Brock said just before he died. Brock talked about a being in South City that could not be defeated and warned Jacky to flee as quickly as possible or he would die.

Looks like this is the guy Brock warned me about... And he is Zoey Lopez's husband!

Jacky had calmed down by then, and he looked serene when he grinned. "You truly are strong. My useless subordinates must've made a fool of themselves in front of you. May I know more about your identity?" asked Jacky.

Levi grinned.

Looks like this man is skilled in his own way. He can stay calm despite having death looming over him. No wonder Brock and the others are no match against him.

Hades scoffed, "You are not worthy of learning who he is."

"Sir, why don't we be friends instead? We haven't had any direct conflicts, and this is all just a misunderstanding. I hereby apologize for it. Moreover, my subordinates had been killed, so how about we call it even?" suggested Jacky, who tried to settle the issue.

"Oh, calling it even just like that, huh? Who do you think you are?" sneered Levi.

Jacky smiled and replied, "You don't know this, but my identity is not something an ordinary guy can handle. Settling this matter peacefully benefits you as well."

"Too bad I don't believe in any of your words. Kill him!"

Levi's eyes shot two sharp glares over.

Hades walked towards Jacky upon receiving his orders.

Jacky panicked.

“W-what do you think you’re doing? Do you know who I am? Don’t do something you’ll regret!”

Leslie chimed in and advised as well, “Let’s calm down for a moment, sirs. He truly isn’t just a regular guy. We’ll all be in trouble if you hurt him.”

“It’s true. The power supporting Jacky is not something anyone can handle,” added Derek.

Jacky calmed down a lot upon hearing that.

Levi, however, simply roared cruelly, “Kill him!”

Hades continued moving forward upon hearing that.

“I am He-” shouted Jacky as loudly as he could.

The Protector Chapter 629

Zip!

Like an arrow that flew out of a bow, Hades shot forward and killed Jacky with a single touch.

Thump!

Jacky's body fell straight onto the floor.

In the end, his evil deed caused him to pay the ultimate price.

The Davies family was in shock.

They actually killed Jacky? Before he even told them who he is?

"I know you are powerful, sir, but Jacky honestly was someone who was protected. His true identity is simply too scary," said Leslie

"I don't care who he is," said Levi as he glared coldly at him.

Hades' eyes shone with mockery.

Seriously? They're talking about true identities and protections? With this guy? Almost everyone trembles in fear when they hear this guy's title, so it's just stupid to think that he can't handle whoever's coming.

Levi and Hades left after that.

They left the Davies alone because as far as Levi was concerned, those people were nothing more than maggots that didn't deserve his attention.

The news about the demise of Jacky and his subordinates was spread throughout the underworld in South City.

Everyone was surprised to hear that.

That man was defeated?

"Our investigation finally bore fruit. The murderer is Hades, who used to be Brock's subordinate!"

"Hades truly is powerful, but he definitely bit more than he can chew this time."

"Right? I heard that Jacky's identity is feared throughout the Southern region of Erudia!"

The underworld went wild.

Everyone knew that the person protecting Jacky would be there soon, and the war had just begun.

The Davies family was particularly nervous because they knew who Jacky really was.

They understood that Jacky was just the vanguard. The rest of the army would be there soon, and that was when everything would truly change.

The news of Jacky's death was shared quickly.

Somewhere in South Hampton.

“What? My student died in South City?! Such insolence! I will have every single one of their heads for this!”

Meanwhile, Levi and Hades were at the Black family’s front yard.

“Let them know that the matter has been settled,” instructed Levi.

He didn’t want anyone to know about his identity just yet.

Instead, he wanted to tell Zoey the truth on their wedding day.

There’s no point in telling her everything now. I’ll surprise her when we have the wedding of the century!

“Understood,” replied Hades.

He walked into the Black family’s residence and went to Zoey’s place.

Sylas was injured earlier, but those were just minor injuries. Hence, she was fine after some simple treatments.

She guarded outside the door and was surprised when she saw Hades walking over.

Isn’t this the guy who rescued us earlier?

“Ms. Lopez, the man who rescued us earlier is here,” informed Sylas immediately.

Zoey rushed out upon hearing that.

“Ms. Lopez, I’ve dealt with the troublemaker, and everything is fine now,” reported Hades before he turned around to leave.

“Wait, Um, thank you for your help. May I know who you are?” asked Zoey as she chased after him.

However, Hades simply left without even turning back.

“Sylas, hurry after him and find out who he is,” requested Zoey.

“Okay,” replied Sylas.

She was curious about Hades’ true identity as well.

Something about Hades felt familiar, and Sylas was certain that she had met him before, even though she never saw his face.

The Protector Chapter 630

Sylas later saw someone she definitely knew... Levi Garrison!

Isn't he Ms. Lopez's ex? I almost beat him up two days ago. Huh... Who would've thought that he was the one keeping Ms. Lopez safe? Wait, why is the expert following him around? Didn't the Blacks say that he is useless?

He is just a security guard from Morris Group, isn't he? So how did he pull all that off? Hold on, he also knows Ezra, from the Western Warzone... perhaps it isn't a coincidence that they met?

Countless questions were swirling inside Sylas' mind when she heard Hades asking Levi, "God of War, should I drag her out?"

Levi grinned and called out, "Come on out. You've already crouched and hidden for so long."

Upon hearing that, Sylas was startled.

She had always been proud of her skills to stay hidden.

She was at the top of her squad in that field.

Darn it, they caught me.

Sylas had no choice but to show herself. She asked curiously, "H-how long have you known?"

"I knew you were following me the second you left the house," replied Hades as he glared grouchily at Sylas.

Sylas finally saw Hades' face, and she gasped, "Y-you are Hades from L Nation. Y-you...."

Sylas remembered how, a few years ago, Ezra led the army from the Western Warzone to fight against the army from L Nation.

Hades was so strong that he defeated the Western warriors over a dozen times.

In the end, the God of War had to step up and personally lead the army to defeat the L Nation's army.

The L Nation army was pulverized.

However, Hades had already left a lasting impression on the Western warriors, and that was why Sylas recognized Hades.

She was practically traumatized.

Her expression turned, and she stared at Levi with astonishment shining in her eyes.

Who the hell is he? How did he get Hades to protect Ms. Lopez? Is he someone of importance? Or perhaps a rich guy?

Levi chuckled when he saw her reaction. "You actually recognize him. Well, that is understandable. After all, you've battled against Hades when you were serving under that punk, Ezra," commented Levi.

Boom!

Levi's words blew Sylas' mind.

How does Levi Garrison know about all that? Who the hell is he?

“W-who are you?” asked Sylas.

Levi took a puff from his cigarette and grinned before instructing, “You tell her.”

Hades turned to Sylas and answered, “The man standing in front of you is the nightmare of every soldier in every other country. He is the weapon of mass destruction and the devil of the battlefield, and his title is the God of War of Erudia!”

Boom!

Sylas’ legs instinctively gave way upon hearing the answer and she slumped onto the ground.

The God of War? Holy cr*p! It’s the legendary God of War. No wonder he knew all about the battle at the Western Warzone and got Hades as his personal guard, he even called the head of the Western border chief, Ezra, a punk...

Sylas was horrified when she learned everything.

She knew that she had made a grave mistake.

I can’t believe that I actually attacked the God of War!

Sylas stood up unsteadily before she bowed to Levi. “I, Sylas, an ex-warrior of the Western Warzone, am honored to meet you, God of War.”

As far as the soldiers of Erudia were concerned, meeting the God of War was a great privilege.

Sylas was proud of herself.

She didn’t realize that her job was protecting the God of War’s wife.

Levi greeted politely as well.

“Please punish me for my mistakes, Chief!” said Sylas.

“Punish you? Why?” asked Levi as he frowned.

Sylas felt a little embarrassed as she reminded him, “I was rude to you the other day and almost attacked you. Please punish me for it.”

Levi suddenly burst out laughing, and that got Sylas curious.

The Protector Chapter 631

“It’s true that if my wife didn’t show up that day, I would’ve taught you a lesson, but you almost died protecting my wife. That deserves a reward, so I will ignore the previous incident. Just continue keeping my wife safe,” informed Levi.

It’d save Levi a lot of trouble if someone as capable as Sylas was protecting Zoey.

“Understood. I promise I will protect Zoey with all I’ve got.”

Sylas had already retired from the battlefield, but she still had the heart of a warrior.

From that moment on, she vowed to protect Zoey with her entire being.

After Sylas returned, Zoey asked, “How is it? Did you find out who he is?”

Sylas shook her head and replied, “I was discovered as soon as I left, Ms. Lopez, so let’s not talk about it anymore. Still, you should know that the person protecting you has to be someone who cares deeply about you.”

The first person that Zoey thought of was Levi, but she quickly dismissed that idea because the man seemed too powerful to be Levi.

South City turned quiet after Jacky met his demise.

However, those in the inner circle understood that the silence was just the calm before the storm.

A bloodbath was on the horizon.

The Black family knew nothing about that, of course. They simply thought that their troubles were over.

Meredith even pushed Zoey to go on blind dates.

The former had looked through a lot of profiles, but none caught her eyes.

“I feel like no one in Quebec is good enough for Zoey,” claimed Meredith proudly.

“Indeed. At first, I thought that it would be a piece of cake to find Zoey a suitor. Now that we’ve looked, I see that there are none good enough for her, and if we aren’t satisfied with these men, there is no way that Zoey would be interested in them either,” said Robert who looked troubled as he sighed.

Logan and Jennie entered the room at that moment.

“Grandma, grandpa, we looked into the matter like you asked and found the perfect candidate. He meets all of your requirements, and I am certain that Zoey would love him too!” bragged Jennie.

“Tell us.”

Both Meredith and Robert were excited.

“The guy is incredible. He is of mixed-blood with the perfect genes, and he is a legitimate heir. His mother is royalty from a foreign country,” shared Jennie.

“Huh? A mixed-blood? That’s perfect! They’re tall and handsome, and have good genes,” said the Blacks, who were satisfied so far.

That was a time when mixed-bloods were popular.

“What’s his family like?” asked Meredith.

“Oh, his family is ridiculously powerful. His grandpa is the major shareholder at the place I work in, New Alliance Bank. In other words, his grandpa is the renowned Kurt Gates of South Hampton.”

“What? Kurt Gates?”

Both Meredith and Robert were stunned.

Kurt was a reputable and respectable man in South Hampton and the president of the South Hampton Chamber of Commerce.

The fact that South Hampton was the economic district of Erudia would mean that the president of the Chamber of Commerce in that district had to be extremely powerful.

The man was probably so powerful that even an overview of his power would scare most to death.

He was one of the leading men in South Hampton’s economic circles, and his wealth was comparable to that of a country.

He managed over a hundred private banks and had a great reputation in South Hampton.

He also had countless disciples and was regarded as a God among men.

In fact, he was like a mythical dragon roaming in the sky.

His grandson has got to be perfect as well.

“It was a coincidence, but his grandson, Landyn, came to New Alliance Bank to participate in an event, and I bumped into him,” informed Jennie as she grinned.

“But would he agree to the marriage? Zoey’s net worth is fifty billion, but that is not a lot.”

The Blacks’ worries had shifted. Now, they felt like they weren’t good enough for him.

Jennie chuckled and replied, “You guys probably don’t know about this, but Landyn was Zoey’s senior when she studied overseas. He was the one who came to me, and he was delighted when he heard that Zoey got a divorce. I think he will definitely agree to a wedding. Moreover, I heard that Landyn tried to court Zoey back in the days...”

“That is great news!”

The Blacks were all excited and happy to hear it.

They could finally merge with a powerful family!

The Protector Chapter 632

Oriental Star Group.

In the CEO's office.

"Ms. Lopez, something bad seems to have happened," said Sylas all of a sudden.

Zoey was stunned, "Huh? Something happened?"

"Check it out. There are a lot of cars parked on the ground floor," informed Sylas, who was staring out the window.

Zoey walked over to take a look.

As promised, ten Rolls-Royce were parked at the entrance of Oriental Star Group's building.

Multiple men in tuxedos got out of the cars and stood at the side.

After that, a tall guy in a white tuxedo got out of one of the cars.

He looked like a mixed-blood, and his mere appearance got the spectators to praise his beauty.

He brought his men and walked right into Oriental Star Group.

When asked, the man's subordinate showed the receptionist and the security guard his identity card. They were let in immediately after.

“Please take me to Ms. Lopez,” requested the man.

The man was brought to Zoey’s office soon after.

“Huh? Landyn?” blurted Zoey, who recognized the man.

That was the senior who courted her when she was an exchange student in a foreign country.

The guy even gave her an extravagant gift when she got married.

“You remembered me?” asked Landyn as he grinned.

“How could I forget? You helped me out a lot back in the days,” replied Zoey with a smile.

Sylas had her guard up as she stared at Landyn.

She had been paying attention to the men around Zoey ever since she received her orders from Levi.

Sylas didn’t like the guy standing in front of her. Not. One. Bit!

“Aren’t you working overseas, Landyn? What brought you here?” asked Zoey curiously.

Landyn chuckled. “Aww, that proves that you have never paid any attention to me. I am actually a citizen of Erudia.”

“Huh? I know that you’re a mixed-blood, but I never realized that you’re from Erudia,” blurted Zoey in surprise.

“Yeah, my grandpa and dad are from South Hampton while my mom is from a foreign country.”

“Oh, I see.”

Landyn had his eyes on Zoey when he asked, “By the way, Zoey, I heard that you got divorced.”

“I...” said Zoey, who didn’t quite know how to explain the situation.

A piece of paper couldn’t change the love she shared with Levi.

Moreover, Levi planned on throwing another wedding, so...

“Hahaha, yeah, I know all about it,” said Landyn, who then added, “Do I have a shot with you now?”

Zoey was stunned to hear that question all of a sudden.

She couldn’t turn him down even if she wanted to.

After all, she and Levi had signed the papers and were officially divorced.

Hence, Landyn had every right to court her.

“Let’s not joke about that, Landyn. I am focused on my career and have no plan to worry about my personal life for the time being,” replied Zoey politely with a smile.

“You need a man to keep you safe. Hasn’t the past two days taught you anything? Your business is growing exponentially, and the danger you’ll face will only become worse,” reminded Landyn as he grinned.

Given his influence, it was easy for him to learn all about what Zoey had been through.

Zoey was surprised. She turned to him and asked, "Wait, were you the one who rescued me?"

Zoey suddenly recalled how the expert who saved her couldn't speak the language well and sounded like a foreigner.

Thinking back, that man could be Landyn's subordinate.

"I just remembered that the guy who rescued me has a heavy accent," blurted Zoey happily.

Sylas stood nervously at the side.

She wanted to voice up, but she was not in a position to do so.

The one who saved you was Hades, and he was there on Levi's orders!

Sylas turned to Landyn. She was curious about how he would reply.

Landyn was also stunned when he heard what Zoey said.

"Aww, you guessed it. That takes all the fun and mystery out of it. Yeah, you're right. I'm the one who sent the guy to keep you safe, and I am the one who personally dealt with the matter," claimed Landyn with a straight face on.

Upon hearing that, Sylas felt like vomiting blood.

The Protector Chapter 633

Just how shameless is this guy? How dare you claim all the merit? The God of War was the one responsible for it, and it has nothing to do with you! Besides, what makes you think you can get Hades to work for you? L Nation might be a small country, but he is still a God of War!

“Huh? So it really is you, Landyn? Thank you so much!” replied Zoey with a smile.

“I wasn’t going to tell you anything, but you guessed it all,” said Landyn as he grinned.

Landyn shamelessly admitted to it because he didn’t see any issue arising from his lies.

All he had to do was get someone to contact Hades and get the guy under his payroll.

“Thank you for rescuing me and my family while we were in grave danger,” said Zoey appreciatively.

“I will keep you safe for the rest of your life,” promised Landyn before he added, “Alright, I’ll take my leave now so I don’t disrupt you working.”

Landyn could tell that Zoey felt awkward, so he left immediately.

After all, he was a smart man, and he knew how to take advantage without overstepping.

After leaving Oriental Star Group.

One subordinate asked, "Given your background, you can have any woman you want, so why her? Zoey Lopez seems pretty ordinary."

"It's true. There are tons of women just like her out there," chimed in another subordinate.

Landyn replied with a smile, "To tell you boys the truth, I have had hundreds of women, and no one had ever rejected my advances before. She was the first, and I feel like she is special. There is no reason I can't conquer that woman."

The others grinned mischievously. They finally understood what Landyn was aiming for.

"Besides, grandpa is gravely ill, and the fortune teller said that I can repel all bad luck if I marry that woman. Only then would grandpa's illness be cured. The wedding would also bring good fortune to the Gates family. In short, she is nothing but a tool to bring good luck and cure grandpa. It just so happens that I want to conquer her as well, so there's that. Why else would I marry a divorcee?" informed Landyn as he smiled.

Everyone instantly understood that marrying Zoey was primarily to bring good fortune.

That night.

Everyone was smiling when Zoey got home, and that got Zoey suspicious.

"Zoey, I found a great suitor for you," informed Meredith with a smile.

"What?" blurted Zoey, who was stunned.

"Zoey, this suitor is really something else. His grandfather is the president of the South Hampton Chamber of Commerce, his father is the head of the New Alliance Bank in Erudia, and his mother is the president of the Association of Foreign Enterprises.

To top it off, his maternal grandfather is also royalty in a foreign country! His family owns hundreds of banks, and anyone who wanted to do business in South Hampton would need his family's permission first," informed Jennie.

It sounded exaggerated, but it was true.

"Given his family background, the actual guy doesn't seem so important, but Zoey, he is amazing as well! He owns over a dozen racecar clubs and about ten electronic companies. His influence is everywhere! He is also tall, handsome, and is a mixed-blood. He basically doesn't have any shortcomings."

Everyone had praised Landyn so much that it sounded like he was an angel from heaven.

Realization dawned on Zoey soon after.

They're probably talking about Landyn.

"Oh, and you actually know this guy, Zoey," added Jennie.

That confirmed Zoey's suspicion.

"Thank you for all the effort you put in, grandma, but I won't be dealing with my personal life at the moment. I have my eyes set on my career, and this is a crucial moment, so I don't want anyone to distract me," replied Zoey politely.

"Hahaha..."

Meredith laughed aloud.

"Zoey, if this is just an ordinary guy like Levi Garrison, I definitely wouldn't let him get in the way of your career. However, we are talking about the heir of the Gates family! Marrying him would not negatively affect your career. In fact, it would give your career a tremendous boost!"

The others chimed in as well. "It's true. All it takes is one word from him, and you will be raised to the top."

"I've also looked into the matter and know that he used to court you. He has been in love with you this entire time, Zoey," said Jennie as she grinned.

Meredith also insisted, "Zoey, this wedding must happen, and I will be planning for it."

The Protector Chapter 634

The Black family was overjoyed.

Meredith and Robert had already made their decisions.

They were only informing Zoey about it.

“Grandpa, Grandma, I...”

Zoey was about to speak when Robert interrupted, “Zoey, you have no reason not to like him. My decision is final.”

“Dad, Mom, Mr. Gates is here!”

Instantly, Jennie rushed outside to welcome him in.

Landyn Gates had arrived with ten Rolls-Royce.

His subordinates were the ones to carry his many gifts.

They slowly moved them into the Black family’s home.

Robert and the rest were grinning from ear to ear.

It was then Zoey realized that she had been sold by her family.

They had made their decision on this matter a long time ago.

All she needed to do was to marry Landyn.

“Here are some small gifts. I hope you’ll accept it,” Landyn uttered politely.

The “small gifts” he mentioned were expensive and rare supplements.

The smiles on the Blacks widened.

Even Graham and Felix had come.

After all, Kurt Gates was the President of the South Hampton Chamber of Commerce.

He was wealthier than many countries, and he had a certain amount of control over the economy.

His status in the society was much higher than them.

Graham and Felix praised, “This is amazing. He’s reputable yet friendly! God must favor Zoey for her to be able to marry a man like him!”

Meanwhile, Aaron and Caitlyn had returned from North Hampton. When they saw Landyn, they were thrilled.

Someone as great as him is interested in Zoey?

“Zoey, look at how many capable young men you have missed out on because of Levi,” Caitlyn grumbled.

Aaron laughed boisterously. “I like this son-in-law!”

Caitlyn urged, “Dad, Mom, you’ll be the ones to decide. Hurry up and settle their marriage.”

They left no room for Zoey to pitch in her opinion.

In fact, she was even chased out of the conversation.

“Don’t meddle in this. We’ll decide this for you. We’re only doing this for your own good,” Caitlyn fumed.

At the manor.

The Blacks, the Zachses, Landyn, and Zoey’s parents were having a discussion about Zoey’s marriage.

“What we’re hoping for is to let the two of you engage and marry as quickly as possible. What about you? What are your parents’ thoughts?” Meredith asked.

Landyn smiled. “My grandpa and parents told me it’s up to me. How about this? Let’s pick a date for the engagement first.”

Meredith and the others were ecstatic to hear Landyn’s agreement on it.

“I’ve looked at the dates. The day after tomorrow is an auspicious day. Why don’t we set the engagement on that day?” Robert suggested.

“Sure. No problem. My grandpa and parents will be there too,” Landyn laughed.

Everyone in the Gates family knew about it.

Recently, Kurt had fallen ill, and the doctors had said that he might not have long left.

A fortune-teller had told them that Landyn had to marry Zoey to change his fate. That way, Kurt would recover from his illness.

Furthermore, their marriage would bring fortune to Landyn.

Marrying Zoey brought no disadvantages to the Gates family.

In other words, Zoey was but a tool for them.

The Gates family had only chosen her because Landyn liked her and because she was a virgin.

Otherwise, Kurt would never let his grandson marry a divorced woman.

Their marriage was only for the sake of Kurt's illness.

In different circumstances, the Gates family would have been humiliated by their choice.

"Now that all of you have agreed to it, what about Zoey? I'm afraid that she won't agree to this marriage," Landyn said.

The crowd stiffened before they shared a look.

Caitlyn smiled. "Don't worry, Mr. Gates. Zoey is beyond delighted. Why wouldn't she agree with it?"

The Protector Chapter 635

Aaron added, "That's right. If Zoey didn't agree to it, she'll already be kicking up a fuss. But look. She's nowhere to be found, so that means she agrees to it."

The Black family were lying through their teeth.

Jennie was keeping an eye on Zoey and making sure that the latter could not even get a chance to speak.

"Is that so? I'm relieved then. We'll have the engagement on the day after tomorrow at Stardust Hotel. My family will come too," Landyn replied.

"Of course. We'll meet again on the day after next."

Meredith and the others could not keep their smiles off their faces.

Soon, the shocking news spread across South City.

The grandson of Kurt, Landyn, was marrying the granddaughter of the Black family.

As Kurt's grandson, Landyn was instantly placed under the spotlight.

After all, Kurt was a prominent figure in the South Hampton corporate world.

Every neighboring country had heard of his name.

He was the president of the South Hampton Chamber of Commerce.

He was the man who ruled over the economy.

The Gates family were like royals.

They owned hundreds of private banks.

Zoey, too, was in the spotlight.

She was married for six years before she divorced, and her ex-husband had been in jail for six years.

Essentially, it was as if she had never married.

Furthermore, the Blacks had intentionally slandered Levi's reputation. They told the public that Levi was a horrible man who had left her after receiving ten million from them. Not to mention, Levi had refused to admit that he had taken the bribery from the Blacks.

With that, many were cursing at Levi.

Soon, the entire South City found out about Zoey and Landyn's engagement.

Even the citizens of South Hampton had found out about it.

A commotion broke out in the upper echelon society in South City.

The reason being Kurt would be attending his grandson's engagement the day after the next.

For a man like him to come to South City was as though God himself was arriving.

Anyone who managed to build a relationship with Kurt would have a bright future secured.

Many upper-class families began to envy the Black family. They could barely believe their good luck in having a union marriage with the Gates family.

The Black family was destined to be a powerful family in South City. In fact, it was likely that they would rise to become the wealthiest family there.

In the course of just one afternoon, dozens of significant figures came to visit the Black family.

Once upon a time, these people looked down on the Black family.

Both Meredith and Robert were beyond excited.

From now on, the Blacks would have connections with people in the military, corporate, and political world.

They had Russell in the military world, Logan in the political world, and Zoey in the corporate world.

The Black family was about to rise to the top.

Even Caitlyn and Aaron were sighing in disbelief at the consequences of Zoey and Levi's divorce.

The fact that they were going to be Landyn's future parents-in-law stunned them.

From now on, they were free to do anything in Quebec and even South Hampton.

They dared not imagine this in the past.

"You're still too inexperienced. If Zoey had been by my side earlier, this would have happened long ago," Meredith lamented.

Aaron flashed her an embarrassed smile. “Mom, you’re definitely much better at planning than us.”

“Hahaha! Of course!”

Meredith and Robert were proud of how things had turned out.

Just then, Zoey ran over to them.

She had just found out about her engagement with Landyn; the Black family had never told her about it.

She could not believe that the entire South City had heard about it but her.

“Grandpa, Grandma, why did you arrange a marriage for me without asking for my opinion? Why did everyone find out about the engagement before I did?” Zoey seethed.

“Zoey, your marriage has been decided. This is all for your own good.” Meredith waved her hands dismissively.

“No! I don’t agree with this marriage. I don’t even love him!” Zoey rejected.

“Then who do you love?” Meredith asked in a grave tone.

“The one I love is Levi Garrison!”

The Protector Chapter 636

Her words made everyone present stop in their tracks.

She still loves Levi?

Everyone had thought that Zoey had given up on Levi.

“I’ll be honest with all of you. I won’t marry again. Even if I do, the only husband that I’ll accept is Levi,” Zoey announced with a look of resolve in her eyes.

“You...”

Meredith jumped to her feet, furious. At that moment, she was tempted to slap Zoey.

“You don’t have a choice. You must marry Landyn, and you must attend the engagement ceremony tomorrow,” Meredith hissed.

“Sylas, keep an eye on her,” Robert ordered.

It was then Sylas argued, “Although it’s not my place to say anything, I still want to say my piece. It’s inappropriate for Ms. Lopez to marry into the Gates family. It’s rumored that the Gates family agreed to Landyn’s marriage with Ms. Lopez because they need her to change Kurt’s fate. If she marries into the Gates family, she won’t be happy. She’s nothing but a tool for them!”

“Nonsense!”

Meredith slammed her hand onto the table.

“Are you telling me that you believe in those baseless rumors?”

Meredith raged, “Furthermore, Mr. Gates truly loves Zoey. He used to court her, and that is a fact. Zoey will only be happier after her marriage. She won’t have a hard time there.”

“Mrs. Black, I’ve done my investigation. Mr. Gates has a chaotic private life. He has been with more than hundreds of women. He’s a black hole, and you’re pushing Ms. Lopez into it!” Sylas argued.

“Stop with your nonsense! You’re slandering Mr. Gates. If you don’t want to do your job, you can quit it!” Meredith roared.

“I-”

Sylas wanted to do as Meredith said.

However, when she thought about how Levi had tasked her with protecting Zoey, she decided to stay.

“I won’t marry him. Grandma, you’d better give up.”

Zoey was uncompromising.

Meredith scoffed, “Are you still hoping to marry that horrible man, Levi?”

“Your Grandma’s right. After all, he’s someone that took ten million but lied and said he threw it into the trash can,” Robert added.

“Exactly. He refused to admit it despite us exposing him on the spot. That man is nothing but a shameless piece of trash.”

By now, the others were furious too.

“You...”

Zoey was about to refute them, but she realized she did not have any evidence to back herself up.

Left with no other choices, she silently endured their words.

“Sylas, take her back to her room to rest. She will attend the engagement ceremony tomorrow and that’s final,” Meredith commanded.

Thus, Sylas could only bring Zoey away.

If they stayed, they would only become more infuriated.

“Look at your daughter. Is she blind? Why is she still longing for Levi?” Meredith spat.

Robert was solemn as he muttered, “If things don’t work out, I’ll chase Levi away. If he doesn’t appear in her line of sight, she won’t think about him.”

“That’s a good idea. Let’s just chase Levi away once and for all,” the others gave their approvals.

They were sick of Levi since forever.

Now that Levi was stopping the Black family from becoming one of the wealthiest, they would not stand aside and do nothing.

“Once she’s engaged tomorrow, he wouldn’t dare to harass her anymore. The Gates family will surely destroy him if he dares to pester Zoey again,” Meredith chortled.

Right then, Russell rushed toward them, dragging a servant of the Black family, Zeek along with him.

“What’s going on?”

Everyone turned to look at Russell, curious.

Russell shot a glare at Zeek before he sneered, “He’s the one who picked up the ten million check. We’ve wronged Levi. He really did throw the check into the trash can.”

The Protector Chapter 637

Russell was glad that he could expose the injustice done to Levi.

“From the beginning, I’ve suspected someone had picked up the check. Therefore, I asked my friend who works in an IT department to look into it. Finally, I found out that our servant, Zeek, was the one who had taken it,” Russell explained.

Meredith and Robert gave Zeek a stern look. “Did you take it?”

Thump!

Zeek collapsed onto the ground as he begged, “Mr. Black, Mrs. Westbrook, indeed, I was the one who had taken it. That day, I saw Levi throw it into the trash can, so I took it without telling anyone about it. Please don’t call the police. I’ve only used a hundred thousand. I’ll return you the rest!”

After realizing what had happened, Meredith and Robert huffed in rage.

They were not angry that Zeek had been the one who had taken the check, rather, they were angry that he had been found out.

After all, Levi was meant to be the one who had taken it.

Everyone had accused Levi of taking the ten million for himself.

They had never thought that someone would investigate the matter.

Now that it was revealed Levi was not the one who took the money, they felt humiliated.

Russell laughed, "Grandpa, Grandma, I was right. Levi wouldn't do something like that. Let's tell Zoey about it and clear his name!"

"Hold on." Meredith stopped him before instructing, "Russell, you don't need to bother yourself with this matter anymore. Go back and pretend as if you knew nothing."

She then turned to instruct Zeek, "I can forgive you for this, Zeek, and I can turn a blind eye to the amount you've spent. But you'll need to agree to my terms."

"I'll agree to anything!"

"Good. From now on, no matter who asks you about it, you'll say that Levi didn't throw the check into the trash can. You'll tell them that you witness him leaving with the check in his hands!" Meredith ordered.

"I-I understand! I'll definitely do that," replied Zeek immediately.

"Good. Now leave. Pretend you've never taken the check for yourself. Levi's the one who had taken the ten million," Meredith repeated.

Russell stared at Meredith in disbelief. "Grandma, how can you twist the facts? Levi didn't do it. Why must you pin the blame on him?"

Russell did not approve of the Black family's methods.

"Russell, you must keep your lips sealed about this. Never tell anyone, especially Zoey!" Meredith snapped.

"Why, Grandma? Give me a reason!" Russell exclaimed.

"Ha. You know full well that the rumors of Levi taking the ten million for himself have spread across the city. The Black family was the one who slandered his

reputation. If you tell the public the truth, you'll be humiliating the Black family. What will happen to our family then?" Meredith questioned.

Russell gave a solemn smile, "Does that mean we can destroy Levi's life for the Black family's reputation?"

Robert hissed, "That's right. Who is he in comparison with the Black family's reputation?"

Russell breathed out a trembling laugh. "Fine. Very well. Do as you please then. Sooner or later, you'll understand what the Black family has done wrong. You'll have missed an opportunity you'll regret for the rest of your life."

"Hahaha! It's just Levi. What will we truly miss?" The crowd disagreed.

With that, Russell left, huffing furiously.

His grandparents who he thought were righteous people, were the ones to orchestrate this.

He was thoroughly disappointed.

He immediately called Levi.

Meanwhile, Levi was at North Hampton designing his new family home when his phone rang.

"What's wrong, Russell?"

"Bad news, Levi. Zoey is going to be engaged tomorrow!"

The Protector Chapter 638

Boom!

The news struck Levi like a bolt from the blue.

Zoey is getting engage?

But I'm still at North Hampton. Who is Zoey going to get engaged to?

After Russell walked him through the situation, rage nearly consumed Levi.

He once had a good impression of Meredith and Robert, at the very least, they left a better impression on him than Harry did.

However, now it seemed like no one could stick to their morals when power and money were involved.

"Time and place," Levi demanded.

"Stardust Hotel at ten," Russell replied.

"Got it."

The next day.

At the Black family's manor.

Meredith and Caitlyn forced Zoey to dress herself up for the ceremony.

Right then, a fleet of cars arrived outside the manor.

Harry, Henry, and the others had arrived.

Even the Lopez family of the South City was here.

When Harry heard Zoey was about to marry a rich man of South Hampton, he had hurried to South City overnight.

As for the Lopez family, they once refused to acknowledge Harry's family as a part of the Lopez family. However, when they heard Zoey was marrying Landyn, they came instantly.

Now, they were all claiming Zoey as one of the Lopez family.

"One of us is engaging today. Obviously, the Lopez family has to be here," Harry said.

At the same time, the Lopez family of South City added, "We're proud that someone like you is in the Lopez family."

As the Lopez family of South City was reputable, the Black family was more than happy to welcome them despite knowing that the former was only here to butter up the Gates family.

Zoey was exasperated.

Do they think of anyone else but themselves?

Do they feel anything for others?

"Congratulations, Zoey! I told you shouldn't stick to Levi. He's but a burden for you. Look at how great you are now. You're about to marry into a genuine, wealthy family!" Shaun, Melanie, and the others muttered as they laughed.

“Levi is the worst of the worst. He gave up Zoey for ten million!”

“I know, right. I even heard he insisted that he had thrown the check into the trash can despite taking the money for himself.”

Everyone chattered away.

At the side, Russell was displeased to hear their words.

Why does Levi have to endure these slanders silently?

At the same time, Zeek had an ashen face.

It was as though he was afraid someone would ask him about the matter.

Russell could not help but mumble, “No...”

Meredith stopped him immediately. “Russell, what are you trying to do? Are you trying to humiliate the Black family?”

“I...”

And so, Russell could only swallow his words.

Soon, everyone headed to Stardust Hotel.

Many of them were keeping an eye on Zoey, fearing that she would escape.

A fleet of luxurious cars was parked right outside the Stardust Hotel.

People from the upper-class society were all gathered here today.

Although they were unable to join the engagement banquet without an invitation, they were here in hopes of meeting Kurt.

Meanwhile, the Gates family had long arrived.

Like Landyn, his father, Fred, looked like a capable man, exuding an imposing aura.

After all, he was the man who had control over hundreds of private banks.

He had the nickname of the God of Wealth within the corporate world.

In other words, he was rich.

Beside him was Landyn's mother, a foreign woman. She exuded a noble aura that attracted the people's gazes yet kept them at a distance.

She was the president of the Association of Foreign Enterprises; she had a say in every foreign enterprise that entered the local market.

After Fred and his wife gave Zoey a once-over, they nodded in satisfaction.

"This way."

With that, Meredith and the others entered Stardust Hotel.

The Protector Chapter 639

Everyone was anxious.

They were about to meet the legendary Kurt Gates.

In the hotel, an old man in his wheelchair was coughing quietly.

When they saw Kurt, the crowd was dumbfounded.

They thought Kurt would be an imposing and healthy man; they had not expected to see a sickly-looking frail man sitting in a wheelchair.

For some reason, the rumors of Zoey marrying into the family to change Kurt's luck surfaced in their minds.

Zoey was all but a tool.

Caitlyn and Aaron were the ones that suffered the most shock.

They felt as though they had really sent Zoey to hell.

Kurt slowly opened his unfocused eyes and asked, "They're here?"

"Grandpa, this is Zoey."

Landyn pointed to the woman.

Kurt straightened his back and started sizing her up.

Beside him was a middle-aged man in a suit. He whispered, "Mr. Gates, she is the one."

That man was none other than the fortune-teller who told them that Kurt would recover from his illness after Zoey married into the family.

"Very well. It's her then. Pick a date quickly and get married soon," Kurt urged.

His impatience was audible to everyone present.

The fortune-teller murmured, "Mr. Gates, five days later will be the perfect date for the wedding."

After sweeping his gaze across the crowd, Kurt nodded. "All right then. Let's get the engagement ceremony done as soon as possible. We'll hold the wedding in five days' time."

"W-What?"

His words stupefied Meredith and Robert.

That's hasty!

It's as though the wedding isn't of any importance to them.

All Kurt needed was a word from the fortune-teller before the marriage date was set.

By now, Meredith and the others were starting to wonder if the rumors had been true.

That Zoey was but a tool for Kurt's illness.

And that the Gates family was uninterested in having Zoey as their daughter-in-law.

But that did not matter to them.

Regardless of whether she was a tool or genuine feelings were involved, Zoey was going to become Landyn's legal wife.

This was something everyone knew—that Zoey Lopez was destined to become the daughter-in-law of the Gates family.

Moreover, Landyn's love for Zoey was genuine.

Since Kurt was here in South City despite the severity of his illness, that meant this marriage was important to him.

Hence, this marriage had to continue.

Both the Black family and the Lopez family shared the same thought, Zoey must marry into the Gates family.

"I hope you don't mind that my father is in poor health. Let us begin the engagement ceremony now," Fred announced.

"Sounds good to me. Let's start the engagement ceremony. As for the wedding date, the Gates family will be the one to arrange it," Meredith answered with a smile.

Fred returned the smile. "From now on, we're a family. The wedding will be something both families shall discuss together."

Just as the engagement ceremony was about to begin, Zoey abruptly voiced out loud, "I'm sorry, Landyn. I can't get engage with you, nor can I marry you."

Boom!

Zoey's words struck like lightning to everyone present.

Even Landyn was stunned.

He had thought that Zoey was here because she had agreed to it.

Anxious, Meredith shouted, "Zoey, what are you saying? Shut up now!"

Fred's expression turned darker than night. He stared at Zoey and queried, "You don't want to marry my son?"

Zoey shook her head. "That's right, I don't want to marry your son."

"Hahaha!"

Suddenly, Fred burst into laughter.

She's obviously disrespecting the Gates family.

I have never heard of anyone saying no during the engagement ceremony.

"Zoey, what are you talking about? You have to marry him!" Meredith bellowed.

She was not going to give Zoey any chance to protest.

Fred sneered, "That's right. We're already holding the engagement ceremony. Even if you say no, you still have to do it."

"Zoey, it's not like you have a choice," Landyn laughed.

Right then, a roar echoed in the hall. “Let me take a look at who are the ones trying to put my wife in a tough spot. Do you have a death wish?”

The Protector Chapter 640

Bang!

A group of men rushed in from outside as a man of tall stature emerged.

That man was none other than Levi.

The crowd gasped in shock at the sight of him.

“Darling,” Zoey called out softly.

Despite receiving the divorce certificate, Levi would always be her husband.

“Honey, with me here, no one is going to harm you anymore.”

Levi pulled Zoey into his embrace.

Boom!

The crowd was stunned and stared at them in disbelief, especially the Gates family whose faces were all red in anger.

For a stranger to gatecrash their engagement banquet and embrace their future daughter-in-law, it was a grievous insult.

Furthermore, Levi rubbed salt in their wounds by claiming Zoey as his wife, utterly humiliating the Gates family.

Landyn closed his eyes and took a deep breath.

For the Gates family, it was just a matter of pride.

But for him, he was being blatantly cheated on.

How was he going to face the world after that?

Meanwhile, the Black and the Lopez families were stupefied.

No one expected Levi and Zoey to put on such a spectacle, which was a direct provocation aimed at the Gates family.

By declaring that the lady Landyn was engaged to was his wife, Levi humiliated Landyn outright.

Meanwhile, Meredith's heart sank as she knew something disastrous was going to happen.

Fred Gates let out a long sigh.

This is unacceptable. I cannot tolerate any of this!

No matter what, the Gates family's reputation needs to be safeguarded.

This matter has to be kept a secret even if everyone has to die.

He turned to look at Meredith and the others.

"Did you arrange this?" Fred demanded.

Despite his calm tone, it was obvious that he was suppressing his anger.

“Mr. Gates, you misunderstand. This has nothing to do with us. Furthermore, they are divorced and we even have the documents to prove it,” Meredith explained with a panicked look.

The Black and the Lopez families were frightened of offending the Gates family.

At this point, they might as well prepare themselves to be destroyed.

Aaron and Caitlyn were infuriated as Levi foiled their plans yet again.

Is he out to throw a spanner in our works every time?

“Grandma, we told you long ago that if Levi doesn’t repent, we should have kicked him out. But now, the matter has already escalated,” Jennie roared furiously.

Meredith, Robert, and Harry were all trembling with rage as they couldn’t wait to kill Levi.

He was responsible for causing the Black and Lopez families a lot of grief.

Hence, he deserved to be nailed on the pillar of shame.

“Mr. Gates, this is all Levi’s own doing. It has nothing to do with the Black and Lopez families.”

Everyone at the scene pointed their fingers at Levi.

Fred and Landyn then looked towards him.

“Don’t you know Zoey is getting engaged to my son today?” Fred asked coldly.

Levi replied, “I do.”

“In that case, how dare you come here and even call her your wife. What’s the meaning of this? Are you here to cause trouble on purpose?”

Fred raised his voice into a loud roar, terrifying everyone present.

“I would like to know have you ever asked Zoey for her opinion on the engagement?” Levi asked.

“Of course we asked her. Zoey herself agreed to it,” Landyn replied.

Meredith and Robert quickly added, “That’s right. We’ve asked her. Or else, she wouldn’t be willing to come here.”

Levi sneered.

He turned towards Zoey and asked, “In that case, in front of everyone, let me ask you. Are you willing to marry Landyn? Are you willing to get engaged with him?”

At that moment, everyone waited for her answer with bated breath.

The Protector Chapter 641

All of them stared at Zoey intently as suspense filled the air.

Just when Meredith was about to comment, Fred cut her off. “Let her speak for herself.”

When she saw that everyone’s attention was focused on her, Zoey took a deep breath and exclaimed, “No! I’m unwilling to do so.”

Turning to Landyn, Zoey apologized. “Landyn, I’m sorry to have disappointed you. But Levi is the one I love.”

“If you were unwilling, why did you come?” someone yelled.

“The Black family forced Ms. Lopez to do so,” Sylas explained.

Boom!

Meredith and Robert closed their eyes in despair.

It’s over! It’s truly over.

The Gates family was a lot more powerful than the Caesar family.

Just a word from Kurt alone could close all doors on the Black family, destroying them as a result.

The atmosphere became silent as everyone awaited the incoming storm.

Finally, Fred exclaimed, “You’re unwilling? Just like that?”

Immediately, he changed the subject. Lowering his voice, he growled, "Tell me then, what should the Gates family do now?"

"We have publicized the engagement banquet throughout South City and South Hampton. Even now, there are tons of people outside. Tell me, how is the Gates family going to walk away from this without being humiliated?"

The other members of the Gates family joined in and yelled, "Tell us! Give us an answer!"

"I..." Zoey was stupefied by the amount of pressure being piled onto her.

She did consider the possibility of the current scenario occurring but didn't have a solution for it.

Landyn sneered, "Zoey, what a shame that I wasted my feelings on you. This is how you repay me?"

"If you disagree, why didn't you say so earlier? Why must you wait until now to regret your decision?"

"Your ex-husband barged in on my engagement banquet, embraced you, and called you his wife. If this gets out, how am I to face the world? Do you know how humiliated I'll be? And what about the disgrace this will bring to the Gates family?"

"You owe me an explanation. Or else, don't blame me for being cruel. Despite my good nature, I'm willing to do anything to protect my family's honor."

Amidst Landyn's barrage of questions, Meredith's heart sank to its lowest depths when she saw how furious the Gates family were.

In the face of the Gates family's questions, Zoey was at a loss.

“You want an answer? Hahaha.” Levi burst out in sudden laughter.

“What are you laughing at?”

Landyn felt insulted by Levi’s response.

“What am I laughing at? The reason you wanted to marry Zoey is just to complete your charade. Your Grandpa, Kurt, is dying. The only reason you’re marrying Zoey is because a fortune-teller said so,” Levi replied coldly.

“Nonsense! There’s no such thing,” Landyn bellowed as Levi exposed his hypocrisy.

“I really love Zoey. Therefore, I never married because I was waiting for her. When I heard she got divorced, I went to see her immediately. Can you tell me how many men can do what I did?” Landyn roared.

“That’s right, Landyn is very loyal when it comes to love. It’s surprising someone of his status is willing to marry a divorcee.”

“Mr. Gates is such a good man!”

The crowd began to praise him.

However, Levi sneered, “Landyn, all these years, you have philandered with at least seven to eight hundred women if not in the thousands. Putting that aside, just on the third of last month, you even slept with a high school girl. While on the seventh, you forced yourself onto a married woman...”

“You b*stard! Kill him!” Landyn roared furiously.

It was obvious Levi had found Landyn’s weakness.

The Protector Chapter 642

Levi smiled. "What's the hurry? I haven't even finished."

"You're slandering me! I have been celibate for many years," Landyn retorted angrily.

However, everyone stared at Landyn suspiciously.

The more agitated he was, the more guilty he made himself out to be.

Even his men hesitated as to whether they should take action.

Despite being filled with rage as he glared angrily at Levi, Landyn was at a loss as to what to do.

Just then, Fred stepped forward and pushed Landyn aside. He shouted at Levi, "Who do you think you are? Since when does my son's personal life need to be scrutinized by you?"

He continued, "Based on the Gates family rules, you have committed four crimes and will be punished accordingly."

"Firstly, you've trespassed on and disrupted my son's engagement banquet. Secondly, you claimed my son's fiancée as your wife. Thirdly, you slandered my son. And lastly, you disrespected the Gates family!"

"The punishment for breaking the four rules is to have your four limbs broken on the spot."

The moment Fred passed the sentence, the elite warriors of the Gates family guarded the exits to prevent Levi from fleeing.

Fred then looked towards the Lopez and Black families. “The Gates family is not one to be messed with. Anyone from South City that challenged us will also be punished.”

Both the Lopez and Black families trembled when they heard his words as they knew it was directed at them.

Landyn’s mother was even more furious. She glared at Levi and barked, “Kneel before me!”

She was royalty from a foreign country and had always looked down upon commoners.

In her eyes, Levi and Zoey were just society’s scum.

How dare they disrupt my son’s engagement banquet?

They’re asking to be killed!

Two foreign bodyguards approached to try and take Levi down.

Meanwhile, Levi clapped his hands and let out a sarcastic smile. “These are serious crimes. I’m impressed.”

However, he changed his tone immediately. “Does the Gates family not respect the country’s laws? Since when do you have the authority to pass judgment on others?” Levi smiled smugly.

When Fred listed out the four crimes, it was obvious that the Gates family was used to throwing their weight around all the time.

They had indirectly declared hegemony over their territory.

Within their sphere of influence, the Gates family was the law. They exercised their authority over all who lived there.

Therefore, they were the ones to decide the fate of others, including life and death.

Levi was furious.

He had been fighting hard outside against the nation's enemies, to protect the country's sovereignty and its people.

And yet, prominent families such as the Gates acted with such impunity within the nation itself.

Hence, he felt disillusioned.

Fred scoffed, "Today is my son's engagement banquet, hence I only charged you with four crimes. If it were any other time, going against the Gates family is punishable by death. I would have sentenced you to death on the spot."

Such shocking dominance!

The Black and Lopez families were astounded at how powerful the Gates family was.

No wonder they were considered South Hampton's topmost prominent family.

Meanwhile, all the other members of the Gates family looked cold when they heard Fred's words as if they were accustomed to it.

It was clear that that the Gates family did as they please and killed as they willed.

Meanwhile, Zoey was unnerved by the Gates family's show of strength.

She was especially worried when she heard about the four crimes which required Levi's limbs to be broken.

"In the eyes of the Gates family, does Erudia still matter? Do the laws of the country still apply?" Levi asked.

"Let me make it clear to you. Wherever the Gates family is, that's where we are the law and everything we say, counts. Do you understand?" Fred replied in an assertive tone.

He wasn't stupid. It was just that their family was simply too powerful.

All these years, he had always dealt with everything the same way.

Hence, in the eyes of the Gates family, they were the law.

That was all there was to it.

Suddenly, Levi burst into laughter, to the extent that everyone became curious.

His laughter also caused the Gates family to feel offended.

The Protector Chapter 643

“You... what are you laughing about?” Fred demanded coldly.

The way everyone saw it, Levi’s laughter was extremely annoying.

“I’m laughing because the Gates family is about to be destroyed. No matter how powerful a person or family is, they cannot override the sovereignty of the country.” Levi smiled.

How dare they claim to be the law in front of the God of War.

Are they not afraid of death? As that is the equivalent of challenging Erudia’s sovereignty.

Without a doubt, they need to be taken down.

“Hahaha, the Gates family is finished? What a joke! Who can touch us? Who even dares to touch us? You?” Fred broke into a haughty laugh, followed by the rest of the Gates family.

With our family’s influence, we are untouchable, let alone within South City itself where we are second to none.

“That’s right, me!” Levi grinned.

“I don’t want to see him still standing. He needs to kneel, now!” Landyn’s mother bellowed.

In response, Fred glowered. “Men, punish him for the four crimes now. Break his limbs so that he can feel the wrath of the Gates family.”

Upon his orders, four elite warriors emerged and headed towards Levi.

Zoey was terrified as she knew that they were helpless in front of the powerful Gates family.

Even if Russell and Logan went to get reinforcements it would still be too late.

Furthermore, the reinforcements might not even be enough as the Gates family was just too strong.

At the crucial moment, Zoey stepped in front of Levi and declared, "Whoever wants to hurt him will have to get through me first."

When he saw the petite figure in front protecting him, Levi chuckled.

My honey is so adorable.

But this is no longer six years ago. Now, I am the God of War, a Five-star God of War in fact.

With me here, no one can harm you.

"Break both their limbs!" Fred ordered.

The Black and Lopez families wanted to stop them but were restrained by the Gates family elite warriors.

By then, Zoey closed her eyes and resigned herself to fate. Even if her limbs were broken, she was at least together with Levi.

However, Levi was calm.

If the Gates family laid a finger on them, they would immediately be destroyed.

“Wait!” At that moment, an old gravelly voice was heard.

Kurt was pushed towards the front on his wheelchair as he coughed continuously.

“Don’t touch the girl! She must be married into the Gates family,” Kurt declared.

He desperately wanted to survive.

The fortune-teller told him that she could cure him if she was married into the Gates family. Therefore, he couldn’t let the opportunity slip by.

Landyn must marry Zoey.

By hook or by crook, Zoey had to be married to a member of the Gates family even if they needed to kidnap her.

In response, Fred offered, “Zoey, as long as you agree to marry my son, I will guarantee that I won’t hurt Levi. Or else, he will definitely end up a cripple.”

Hearing that, Meredith and Robert finally realized that Landyn wasn’t really serious about marrying Zoey.

The Gates family’s main objective was to cure Kurt based on what the fortune-teller said.

Therefore, it wasn’t what Meredith and Robert wanted for Zoey, and they realized now that it was a trap.

However, they had already pushed Zoey into it and there seemed to be no way to escape.

It was impossible to renege on the wedding now.

Meanwhile, Fred turned towards Meredith. “As long as Zoey is married to my son, I will guarantee the Black and Lopez families will become the topmost families in South City.”

Tempted by Fred’s offer of power, Meredith and the others second-guessed themselves.

Even Zoey considered it. To her, Levi’s safety was her top priority.

“Honey, let’s go. I’m curious to see who is going to stop me.”

At that moment, Levi grabbed Zoey’s hand and wanted to leave.

“Stop them!” Landyn yelled immediately.

The Protector Chapter 644

Fred grew desperate too. If they let Levi go, the reputation of the Gates family would be in tatters.

Their family would no longer be able to face the world and they would also lose all authority.

Therefore, Levi must not be allowed to leave.

At that moment, a group of elite warriors of the Gates family approached Levi and Zoey to seize them.

“How dare you leave after all the trouble you have caused?”

Fred ordered, “I want him dead! And she must marry my son!”

The Gates family’s desperation and intimidation caused the Black and Lopez families’ hearts to sink.

Levi would die today while Zoey would be forced into marriage.

In fact, the whole matter had doomed both the Lopez and Black families as well.

As everyone trembled in fear, no one dared to say a word.

In the face of the elite warriors, Levi sneered, “Are you sure you want to challenge me?”

“Why? Do you think I don’t dare to touch you?” Fred laughed deviously.

“Why don’t you take a look outside first?” Levi laughed in response.

“What’s going on outside?” Fred was curious and so was everyone else.

Meredith and the others stared at Levi in disbelief.

Does he have some powerful backup? Or else how would he have dared to come alone to rescue Zoey?

“Oh no! Mr. Gates, there’s trouble!”

At that moment, the Gates family’s bodyguards rushed in.

However, Fred was furious at them for panicking in public as it wasn’t good for their reputation.

Wouldn’t this made us a joke to outsiders?

“Hasn’t there always been a lot of people outside? All of South City’s socialites have gathered here,” Fred retorted.

“Mr. Gates, it’s not them. There are others. You have to see for yourself,” The bodyguard replied anxiously.

With that, Fred could no longer remain seated.

He got up and went to the hotel entrance to take a look.

When he saw what was outside, he was shocked.

A large group of men had filled the plaza outside Stardust Hotel and they were all dressed in black suits.

They numbered two to three thousand men and every single one of them looked intimidating.

There was a man standing right in front. He exuded a terrifying vibe as if he had just walked out of hell itself.

The man was Hades.

Behind him were three thousand men. They were all former members of the underworld and Brock Green's former followers.

Now, they were all under Hades' command.

When everyone saw the magnificent formation of men, they were all shell shocked.

The Gates family especially was caught by surprise.

Since when did so many men gather outside?

The Black family, Lopez family, and other guests gaped in disbelief as they wondered the same thing.

"See that? Do you still dare to stop me now?" Levi smiled.

With one word, Levi brought Fred back to reality.

"What do you plan to do? Do you think you can challenge the Gates family with this rabble? If so, you're being too naive!" Fred sneered.

In the face of the great Gates family, these men were considered nothing.

"That's right! Anyone who dares to go against us will die," Landyn threatened.

Levi's lips curled into a smirk. "In that case, I'll leave with my wife now. You can try and stop me."

With that, Levi walked to the hotel's main door with Zoey in tow.

“Stop them!”

The moment Fred gave the order, a roar was heard outside.

It was so loud that it caused the ground to tremble.

“The three thousand men of South City are here to escort the men of Morris Group home!”

“Whoever gets in the way will be killed!”

Hades yelled together with the three thousand men and it sounded like a thundering roar.

The Protector Chapter 645

At that moment, the elite warriors of the Gates family were stunned.

No matter how strong they were, they were still no match for three thousand men.

What are we going to do?

Fear flashed across Fred and Landyn's eyes as there were simply too many men outside.

In fact, every single one of them looked like a formidable fighter, and they were definitely not a bunch of rabbles.

Despite that, the Gates family's honor was at stake.

If Levi stepped out of the door, their reputation would be destroyed.

Therefore, they had to defend their honor to the death.

"Stop them!" Fred insisted.

On his cue, more than ten elite warriors charged at Levi to kill him.

However, Levi and Zoey walked on and ignored everything around them, as if nothing happened.

Their enemies suddenly appeared behind them.

At the same moment, Hades made his move and his figure turned into a blur. In the blink of an eye, he appeared in front of Levi and Zoey.

Bam! Bam! Bam!

Hades dished out his attacks with the speed of light, leaving afterimages wherever he struck.

Boom!

Boom!

Boom!

One by one, the Gates family's warriors were thrown back.

Thump!

All of them crashed at Fred's feet.

After struggling a moment, they either lost consciousness or died on the spot.

It was a magnificent sight.

"If you're not afraid to die, you can try coming at me," Hades declared coldly.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

The three thousand men moved forward a few steps and were about to enter the hotel.

Their movements caused the ground to tremble and struck fear into every member of the Gates family.

At that moment, Fred was overwhelmed by terror.

Although the Gates family was powerful, their base was still in South Hampton.

However, they were now in South City.

If anything untoward happened, reinforcements would definitely not arrive in time.

That being said, their pride still had to be defended.

“Have you thought it through properly? Do you really want to make enemies of the Gates family of South Hampton?” Fred asked again.

He swore to himself that once he gathered his men back at South Hampton, he would definitely destroy everyone in front of him now.

Hades replied with a sneer, “I don’t care if you are from the Gates family or not. But these two are under my protection.”

“That’s right. On the orders of the Morris Group’s head, we are here to escort Mr. Garrison and Ms. Lopez. Anyone who stands in our way will die!” the three thousand men outside yelled.

Hades looked at the Gates family again and warned, “Whoever wants a quick death can try and stop us!”

At that moment, the Gates family including Fred fell silent.

All of them could only watch as Levi led Zoey away.

This was the most humiliating event ever to happen to them in their family’s history.

Someone had stolen their future daughter-in-law and they were powerless to stop them.

However, Kurt who was behind them didn't give up. "Cough, cough... stop them. They cannot leave... the Gates family's reputation..."

As for Fred, he was almost in tears.

"Dad, let's just bear with it. These men are fanatics. If we fight them, we might all die here."

Meanwhile, tears of humiliation were already flowing down Landyn's cheeks.

Ever since he was young, he had never been insulted to this extent.

With that, Levi left with Zoey together with the three thousand men.

The Gates family of South Hampton was utterly disgraced in South City.

Fred ordered immediately. "Once we return to South Hampton, we must gather all our forces. I will make sure there is a bloodbath in South City. Every one of the three thousand men just now must die!"

"I agree! We must wash away the shame that we experienced today. Or else I swear I will die!" Landyn bellowed in anger as he too was infuriated.

Furious at what just happened, Kurt roared, "Send out the order in my name!"

The Protector Chapter 646

Even after they left, Zoey couldn't shake the feeling that it was all a dream.

What had just unfolded was simply too shocking.

She did not expect that Levi would be able to rescue her from the clutches of the Gates family.

"By the way, Darling, did they say they were acting on the orders of Morris Group boss just now?" Zoey asked in curiosity.

"Yep, that's right. Other than him, I don't think anyone else can mobilize so many people," Levi replied.

"Both of us are considered members of the Morris Group. For him to rescue us does make sense. I wonder what's the boss like?" Zoey was very curious.

"He's probably like me!" Levi laughed.

"Stop blowing your own trumpet."

Back at the hotel, the Gates family quickly left South City while the Lopez and Black families went home disappointed.

When they returned to the Black family manor, they were surprised to find Levi there.

They moment they saw Levi, they were all enraged.

“Levi, you are the death of us. I’m going to kill you!” Meredith bellowed.

The other members of the Black family shared the same sentiment.

Ever since Levi came to South City, he caused a lot of trouble.

Before this, he offended the Caesar family, and now, he insulted the more powerful Gates family.

As a result, the danger they were facing now was more serious than ever before.

As Levi had utterly humiliated the Gates family, they were definitely going to gather their strength and seek out revenge.

To wash the shame off, the Gates family would likely attack with all their might.

“Levi is just a troublemaker. Look at the devastation he wrecked when he was in North Hampton,” Harry mocked.

“That’s right. He has been an orphan since he was little. That itself is a sign that he is cursed. Look at how the mighty Garrison family has fallen because of him. And now, he is here to curse your family!” Henry added.

Aaron and Caitlyn glared at Levi and questioned, “Alright, explain to us what is going on? You have divorced Zoey, what else do you want?”

“Levi smiled, “Divorced? Did you even ask us for our opinion? You abused your authority to have a divorce certificate issued, how is that considered a real divorce?”

“Haha, Levi, aren’t you being shameless? Didn’t you agree in the end? We gave you ten million to divorce Zoey.”

“Yeah! You accepted the ten million, so that means you agreed. Are you denying that now?”

“Are you still a f***ing man?”

The Black family berated Levi and had the urge to violently beat him up.

Robert bellowed, “How can you say we didn’t ask for your opinion? Didn’t you accept the check for ten million?”

Pamela sneered, “That’s right! I handed the check to you myself!”

Levi replied with resignation, “I told you I threw the check into the trash can.”

“Preposterous!”

“Liar!”

“I looked through all the garbage bins at home and never found the check. You’re such a liar!” Logan yelled back.

“Then someone else must have taken it. I did throw it away,” Levi insisted.

“Who could have taken it? We’ve asked everyone in the Black family and no one saw it. Why do you insist on lying?” Logan retorted angrily.

At that moment, one of the servants outside, Zeek, suddenly turned pale when he heard their argument.

“Stop lying! Just admit that you’ve taken the check,” Meredith demanded unabashedly despite knowing the truth.

Just then, Russell suddenly spoke up, “I can vouch for Levi. He did throw the check in the dustbin, however, one of the servants, Zeek, picked it up.”

His words shocked everyone.

The Protector Chapter 647

“What?”

Zoey’s eyes suddenly sparkled as she always wanted to clear Levi’s name.

As expected, it was picked up by someone else.

Meredith and Robert looked at Russell in disbelief as they didn’t expect him to expose the truth.

“Russell, what are you babbling about? What’s this about Zeek taking the check?”

Logan desperately winked at Russell for him to keep quiet.

“I have proof! Zeek even spent tens of thousands from the check.” Russell ignored all the signals the members of the Black family gave him.

“I don’t believe it. All of the Black family’s servants are of the highest integrity,” Bailey insisted.

“If you don’t believe it, you can get Zeek here to ask him yourself,” Russell suggested.

Pamela and the others protested, but Meredith agreed. “Alright, bring Zeek in for questioning.”

In a brief moment, Zeek arrived, trembling.

He was terrified and didn’t dare to look Levi in the eye.

“Very well, Zeek, I have a question for you and you have to answer truthfully,” Russell instructed.

“A-alright, Mr. Black... please go ahead and ask,” Zeek replied with his head lowered.

“Did you see Levi throw the check into the dustbin the other day?” Russell asked.

Both the Lopez and Black families waited with bated breath for his answer.

Even Levi and Zoey’s gaze were fixated on him.

Trembling violently, Zeek was extremely nervous. He lifted his gaze to give Meredith a glance and answered, “Mr. Black, I didn’t see Levi throw the check in the dustbin.”

Boom!

The moment he replied, Russell and Zoey were stunned.

As for Meredith and the others, they smiled triumphantly.

“Zeek, you’re lying! You’re the one who pick up the check and now you’re denying it in front of everyone,” Russell bellowed in desperation.

“Mr. Black, I’m innocent! I really didn’t pick up the check. On that day itself, I saw Levi leave the manor with the check. Everyone else saw the same thing,” Zeek continued his lie without even batting an eyelid.

“That’s right, we saw him leaving with the check, it was never in the rubbish bin,” the rest added.

Russell almost burst a blood vessel hearing that.

Why do such people even exist?

He looked towards Meredith in disbelief.

She must have planned everything.

Nevertheless, I must prove that Levi is innocent!

“Russell, you’d better keep quiet and not throw unfounded accusations around,” Meredith yelled.

“I...” Russell stopped himself mid-sentence.

But how can I win against the whole Black family?

Meredith looked towards Levi, “What else do you have to say?”

Levi smiled, “There’s nothing more to say. I just feel that all of you are scum.”

Levi had already investigated the check’s record and was disappointed at how manipulative the Black family was.

“You b*stard, who are you calling scum?” Everyone was infuriated.

Levi’s words were obviously directed at everyone present.

“You don’t deserve to enjoy the cigarettes and wine!” Levi remarked coldly.

“Sheesh! Those cigarettes and wine were brought in by Russell, what have they got to do with you?” Robert retorted while the others piled on the insults.

Suddenly, Meredith stopped them.

Looking towards Levi, she asked, "Let me ask you, what do you want to do?"

Levi glanced at Zoey and said, "Six years ago, I was framed. The wedding wasn't perfect and caused too many regrets for Zoey and me. Therefore, I want a fresh start with Zoey, to propose to her again and have another wedding to make up for the regrets we have."

Zoey replied with a choking voice, "I will marry you!"

"Impossible! Zoey must be married to the Gates family," Meredith quipped.

The Protector Chapter 648

Previously, they wanted to marry Zoey out to improve the family's future prospects.

But now, it was simply to placate the Gates family.

Since Kurt needed Zoey to fulfill the fortune teller's prophecy, they hoped the Gates family would not seek revenge on them.

Therefore, after some discussions within the family, Meredith decided to marry Zoey off to the Gates to mollify their anger.

Levi wants to marry Zoey?

No f****ing way!

Besides, he will be a dead man soon enough for offending the Gates family.

"It's not up to you. As long as Zoey is willing, I will marry her!" Levi exclaimed.

"Haha, you plan to marry Zoey? You will be better off worrying about how to protect yourself. The Gates family's army will soon be here to kill you," Logan burst into demented laughter.

"If the Gates does come, I will destroy them." Levi's eyes gleamed with menace.

This family has long acted with impunity and challenged the sovereignty of the nation. There's no way I'm letting them off easy.

“You’re being ridiculous. I hope when the Gates are here, your words can still be as sharp!” Everyone sneered at Levi.

“Russell, Sylas, protect Zoey. I’m going to deal with the Gates family,” Levi ordered.

“Yes...”

Both Russell and Sylas were about to acknowledge his instructions instinctively but decided otherwise when they saw everyone looking at them with strange expressions.

With that, Levi left.

He was confident that Zoey was in safe hands. Even if the two of them failed to protect her, Hades would be watching over her from the shadows.

“Hahaha, isn’t this just Levi trying to flee?” Logan laughed smugly.

“Of course he’s trying to flee, or else why wouldn’t he bring Zoey along?”

All of them scoffed at Levi’s behavior.

From what Zoey could see, Levi must have gone to gather reinforcements and request help from the Morris group’s boss.

It seemed their debt to that man kept increasing.

However, she began to grow suspicious as to why the leader of the Morris Group treated her and Iris so well.

He helped her buy the Oriental Star Group at the auction and gave her full authority to run the business at the electronics mall.

Furthermore, he had saved her and Levi on many occasions.

Who is he?

After leaving Russell, Levi arrived at a large mansion, which was Azure Dragon's residence in South City.

The mansion was known as Guardian Mansion but was abandoned long ago.

Ever since Azure Dragon and the others arrived, they had been staying there.

That day at the Mansion, Levi noticed that it was crowded. There were even military dogs guarding the entrance.

Once they saw Levi, everyone gathered outside.

There were about sixty of them which gave Levi a shock.

Why are there so many people here?

"Good day, Chief!" All sixty of them saluted Levi.

"Good day, comrades!" Levi returned the salute.

"God of War, let me introduce you. These are the captains of the reconnaissance troops from the South Warzone. They have come to practice their skills," Azure Dragon explained with a smile.

Ever since he arrived at Guardian Mansion, he had guests visiting every day.

Most of them were there to learn and improve their technique.

As of now, half of them were drenched in sweat in their tank tops. They had obviously been sparring with Kirin.

“Chief, some of our comrades had the illusion that they could take on White Tiger just now. However, they got their asses handed to them instead,” someone reported.

When Levi saw a group of men who were badly bruised and beaten sitting in a corner, he laughed.

Go toe to toe with White Tiger? That’s just suicide.

Given that they were all comrades, White Tiger let them off easily.

“Sir, is something wrong?”

Azure Dragon could sense that something was amiss.

“I expect someone to come for me soon,” Levi explained with a smug grin.

The Protector Chapter 649

Just as Levi spoke, the sixty odd officers were incensed.

Who dares come for the God of War? Do they have a death wish?

How is this even possible?

The God of War is the military paragon of all the soldiers from the Nine Warzones of Erudia.

Whoever dares to even disrespect the God of War cannot be forgiven!

All of us will defend the symbol of the army with our lives.

“Who dares to come for the Chief? Are they nuts? I, Macfay, will be the first to strike them down!”

“I, Macdonald, will never allow it!”

“I, Mackenzie, forbid it!”

One by one, the captains of the reconnaissance troops roared angrily with a ferocious look on their faces.

“Very well, we will stay. I want to see with my own eyes who dares to challenge the Chief’s authority.”

“That’s right. Don’t worry, Chief. Let us deal with this for you.”

“Damn it, it’s time to teach this bunch of rabble a lesson.”

Everyone was outraged.

Levi smiled in response. “Very well, I won’t fight over them with you. You can be my guest!”

He had a different plan to deal with the matter but didn’t expect the mansion to be filled with so many people.

It was just a wonderful coincidence that they could help resolve it.

As a result, his mind was also put at ease.

Once they received Levi’s permission, everyone was filled with anticipation.

They wished that the enemy would arrive sooner so that they could demonstrate their capabilities to the God of War.

“Come, let’s continue with our practice. So that we can thrash them straight later.”

All the men were wild with excitement.

Meanwhile, at the Gates family residence.

The plaza in front of their villa was filled with men.

All of them were tall and strong. Standing at attention, they exuded a terrifying vibe.

They were men of different races but they all had one common trait – they were insanely powerful.

“Dad, I have gathered the Five Hundred Dragon Guards of the Gates family,” Landyn reported.

The Gates family was as wealthy as a nation and no one was their equal in terms of financial power.

All these years, Kurt had spent a lot of money amassing and maintaining a private army that would later be known as the Dragon Guards.

Every one of them was an elite warrior in their own right.

They were either famous mercenaries from overseas, top-ranked assassins, and retired members of black ops from major countries. Furthermore, there were also martial artists skilled in the ancient arts of Qi, Thai boxers, and etcetera.

Every year, the Gates family spent two billion maintaining the Dragon Guards.

This was something unattainable by any other prominent family.

Although there were only five hundred of them, their fighting strength was more important than their numbers.

These were extremely powerful men and would strike fear in anyone who came across them.

Even the Caesar family's eight hundred White Robes were no match for them.

The Dragon Guards were fearsome warriors and wherever they went, blood would flow like rivers.

In their minds, Levi's three thousand men from South City were nothing but a bunch of rabbles.

They would not last more than ten minutes in front of the Dragon Guards.

They were confident that no one would be able to protect Levi. With Levi out of the way, Zoey would then be captured and brought back to marry Landyn.

“Alright, let’s head out!” Fred ordered.

Aside from the Dragon Guards, they had also recruited a hundred additional warriors using Kurt’s name.

As a result, the army of around six hundred men headed towards South City in high spirits.

One by one, their cars formed a long snake-like convoy which was a magnificent sight to behold.

By evening, the convoy arrived in South City.

The whole city trembled upon their arrival, especially the Lopez and Black families who prayed hard that they would escape the Gates family’s wrath.

“Father, where shall we go first? I have the address of the place where Levi is holed up in,” Landyn inquired.

“We will look for Levi first and then clean out the South City’s underworld. Finally, we will seize Zoey so that both of you can get married,” Fred barked his orders.

“Understood, Father. Let’s roll out!”

With that, the Gates family army headed towards Guardian Mansion.

The Protector Chapter 650

Half an hour later, the large convoy arrived outside of Guardian Mansion.

Thud!

Thud!

One by one, the men got out of the cars.

In a blink of an eye, the five hundred Dragon Guards and one hundred warriors assembled.

“Surround the place and don’t let anyone escape!” Landyn barked.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

The six hundred men spread out and sealed off all escape routes from the mansion.

The encirclement was six man thick. Even a bird couldn’t escape, let alone a man.

The Dragon Guards alone were stronger than the force of five thousand men combined.

After that, Fred and Kurt got out of the car.

“Let’s enter from the front,” Fred ordered.

A group of men arrived at the front door.

Bark! Bark! Bark!

A group of military dogs barked ferociously at them.

Crack!

Landyn pushed the metal gate forcefully and bellowed, "Levi, come out this instant!"

After waiting for half a day, the captains of the reconnaissance troops finally got their wish.

They were all filled with excitement.

However, they didn't go out until after Landyn shook the gate for a few minutes.

Finally, Macfay, Macdonald, and Mackenzie emerged.

The three of them were wearing green tank tops, showcasing their rippling muscles.

"Why are you causing a ruckus? Who are you looking for?" Macfay questioned as the three of them walked towards the gate.

When Landyn saw how intimidating the three men were, he couldn't help but feel a shiver of fear run down his spine.

Realization dawned on him that these were not ordinary men.

Nevertheless, with five hundred Dragon Guards behind him, he was afraid of no one.

"Is Levi Garrison inside?" Landyn demanded arrogantly.

“So what if he is? Who are you people?” Macfay inquired.

“Listen well, we are the Gates family of South Hampton and are here to seek revenge on Levi. He must die today!”

“Behind me are five hundred Dragon Guards. I’m warning you, even if you have three thousand men, you won’t be able to protect Levi,” Landyn sneered.

Everyone on the Gates family’s side assumed that Macfay and his men were in the same group of underworld members that escorted Levi away in South City.

They had no idea that these were military veterans.

Hearing Landyn’s answer, Macfay and the others furrowed their eyebrows.

Did our ears deceive us?

These men want to kill the Chief?

How dare they!

“Insolence! What gave you the gall to do such a thing? Do the nation’s laws mean nothing to you?” Macfay barked.

“Haha, I have always said that the Gates family is the law! Wherever we go, our word is final!” Fred declared arrogantly.

His words gave Macfay and his companions a shock as it was rare to encounter anyone who acted with such impunity nowadays.

Setting aside their blatant disregard for the nation’s laws, they even wanted to kill the God of War!

What sort of madness is this?

“Get Levi out now to kneel and accept his execution. Don’t force us to drag him out ourselves,” Fred threatened.

“You are asking for the impossible as it is our duty to protect him.”

Macfay and the other two captains were resolute in their stand.

“Hahaha, with just the three of you? Don’t you think you’re overestimating yourselves?”

In the eyes of the Gates family, the trio were already dead men.

“What if you include us?”

The moment the voice was heard, a group of men in army green tank tops emerged.

There were sixty of them in total who assembled in a neat formation, giving off a strong and magnificent vibe.

“This...”

Fred and his men were perplexed when they noticed the group in front of them came off differently from what they expected.

They didn’t look like men of the underworld, but Fred couldn’t put his finger on who they were yet.

Macfay scanned his gaze around and sneered, “You are forbidden to enter. Whoever tries to trespass will only meet with death!”

The Protector Chapter 651

The moment Macfay spoke, everyone was stunned.

Is that a challenge?

Is he challenging us not to barge in?

Who can resist such a challenge?

“Break down that door!” Landyn couldn’t resist the taunt.

Crack!

Crack!

Boom!

Upon his orders, a few warriors approached and tore down the giant metal gate by force.

“How dare you tear down the door! Do you know what this place is?” Macfay bellowed in rage.

Woof! Woof! Woof!

The military dogs barked ferociously as they tried to lunge forward but were held back by their restraints.

Fred’s expression darkened as he barked, “Men, breach and secure Levi! Kill whoever that gets in your way.”

Thud! Thud! Thud!

At that moment, the Dragon Guards tried to barge in.

“Stop! How dare you!” Macfay bellowed.

The other captains also warned the Dragon Guards to back off.

“Why don’t I dare? Charge!” Fred ignored their warnings.

“Do you even know what this place is?”

Macfay roared, “This is the Warzone compound and is considered a restricted military area. You are all trespassing and have violated the forbidden zones!”

Upon hearing Macfay’s words, the attacking Dragon Guards stopped in their tracks and stared at him in shock. In fact, they seemed to even be a little fearful.

Boom!

The news was so shocking that Fred and his men thought they were hit by lightning.

“I think I understand what’s going on...”

Fred and his men suddenly understood one thing.

From the beginning, they could feel Macfay and his men were different but couldn’t quite put their fingers on the reason.

Given that they were wearing army green tank tops, it became clear who they were.

They are all soldiers!

Even the dogs looks different.

Those are f***ing military dogs!

At that moment, Fred and Landyn panicked.

If this really were a restricted military zone, they would be in very big trouble.

It would be worse if all these men were also soldiers.

What should we do?

Should we charge in or leave?

But leaving is impossible as the Gates family cannot be humiliated again!

Fred sneered, "Do you think just because you claim this is a military zone makes it so? Are you trying to scare us away?"

"I'll repeat myself. Get Levi out here to kneel before me. Or else, I will tear this place down and kill everyone!" Fred declared furiously.

Meanwhile, the Dragon Guards were all ready for action. Upon receiving their orders, they would tear into the building.

"This is your last warning!" Macfay declared.

"Men, charge in and capture Levi!" Fred wasn't the least bit appreciative of the offer.

His words infuriated Macfay and all the other captains.

“Damn you b*stard, how dare you cause trouble within my territory!”

Whipping out his phone, Macfay quickly dialed a number. “Hello, it’s Macfay! Pass down my orders. Gather the troops in full battle gear and come to the Guardian Mansion at the outskirts of the city. We have to protect the God of War!”

After that, Macdonald barked into his phone. “Hello, it’s Macdonald. Assemble the men and have them head to the Guardian Mansion armed to the teeth. We are to defend the God of War!”

Lastly, Mackenzie ordered, “Hello, it’s Mackenzie. Get the team to head for the Guardian Mansion now! We have an important battle to fight!”

This continued on with the other captains.

The Protector Chapter 652

One by one, the captains ordered their respective teams to head for Guardian Mansion.

At a single moment, thirty regiments were mobilized which was an impressive display of strength.

Meanwhile, the Gates family and their strong army of six hundred were all stunned.

One by one, they could be heard gasping.

Even Landyn and Fred were stupefied while Kurt couldn't stop coughing.

Regardless of whether they were lying or not, Macfay and his men definitely made it look intimidating.

Are all sixty men army captains?

In that case, is this place really a restricted military area?

Who is the person inside?

How highly positioned is he to have more than sixty officers protecting him?

The Gates family were stumped.

The Dragon Guards, who were at the vanguard, started to tremble and grew weak in their knees.

What if what they claim is true?

They knew what the consequences would be.

In that situation, ten Gates family combined wouldn't even stand a chance, let alone one.

If it came to that, the Gates family would be in an extremely precarious situation.

Should we attack?

But we don't dare to.

Should we not attack?

But the Gates family will be humiliated.

At that moment, Levi, Azure Dragon, and a few others emerged.

Boom!

At the sight of Levi, the Gates family stared daggers at him.

After all, he was the man who brought their family their greatest humiliation.

Meanwhile, Landyn couldn't help but have the urge to kill Levi because Levi had snatched his fiancée away in front of everyone in South City.

His hatred for Levi was simply overwhelming.

As for Fred and Kurt, they were equally incensed.

At the sight of Levi, their animosity towards him grew exponentially.

We must kill him!

Just when Fred was about to give the order, he hesitated when his gaze fell upon Macfay and the other captains.

But what if their calls were real? If so, the Gates family will be done for!

Levi smiled at the Gates family when he saw them. "I heard you are looking for me?"

"Levi, you..." Landyn almost exploded in anger.

"Well, I'm standing right here now. Come on then!" Levi smirked at the Gates family.

When they saw Levi's mocking expression, both father and son almost burst a vessel.

"Come on? What's wrong? Are you afraid? Isn't the Gates family fearsome? Aren't you the law wherever you go? What is it now? You don't even have the guts to enter this door?"

In the face of Levi's taunts, the Gates family was outraged.

However, all of them were breathing rapidly as they tried to keep their anger in check.

Even the machetes in their hands were raised.

Fred was struggling with himself.

To attack or not to attack. What a dilemma!

Everyone else felt the same.

If Macfay was a real army officer, they would be in big trouble.

When he noticed that the Gates family was hesitating, Levi sneered, “What are you afraid of? Isn’t the Gates family the law itself? Don’t you also rule over this piece of land?”

“Doesn’t your authority override that of Erudia’s? What’s wrong now? Why don’t you dare set foot in here?”

“Come on, don’t disappoint me, you wimps!”

In the face of Levi’s provocations, Fred breathe heavily and was drenched in cold sweat. As his whole body trembled, his eyes almost popped out of their sockets, especially when he saw Levi’s haughty expression.

He couldn’t resist the urge and finally exploded.

“Men, attack! Levi must be captured alive!” Fred roared with all his might.

“Charge!”

The Dragon Guards no longer held back as all of them dashed forward.

“Let them come!” Macfay got into his fighting stance and prepared for battle.

Boom!

At that moment, the sound of a loud engine rumbled across the sky.

It was so loud that it caused the ground to tremble.

There was a combat helicopter circling in the air.

The Protector Chapter 653

Just that scene alone caused everyone to stop what they were doing and looked into the sky, dumbfounded.

As it was already nightfall, the helicopter shone a spotlight on the Gates family's men.

All of the Dragon Guards surrounding the mansion were caught in the light.

As the light was extremely bright, everyone had to shield their eyes from being blinded.

The Gates family were all stunned.

"This is a restricted military area, who are you?"

"We are the South Warzone's airborne unit. What are you planning to do?"

A voice from the helicopter blared out through its speakers which shocked the Gates family.

So it's true!

They were telling the truth!

These men are really army officers.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

In the next moment, the Gates family could hear the rumble of footsteps marching behind them.

Whirr...

It wasn't just footsteps, there was also the sound of vehicles and a lot of other noises all mixed together.

It sounded as if an entire army itself was approaching.

"One, two, three, four!"

Along with the commands being shouted out, groups and groups of soldiers emerged behind the Dragon Guards.

The Gates family was shocked to their core while the Dragon Guards were struck with fear.

It's really true!

They really mobilized thirty regiments.

What are we going to do? This really is a restricted military zone.

We're doomed!

Thud! Thud! Thud!

Despite their fame and the two billion spent on them, the Dragon Guards dropped to their knees one by one with their hands over their heads.

The only ones left standing were Fred and a few others.

However, it was more because Fred's mind drew a blank. His face was all pale and cold sweat broke out profusely.

"Dad, I can't stand any longer." Landyn's knees buckled and he too dropped to the ground.

Finally, Fred also did the same as he lost all strength in his body and could hardly move.

Trembling violently, he couldn't even say a word.

When Levi saw how they looked, he sneered, "What's wrong? Have you given up? Isn't the Gates family above the law? Why are you on your knees?"

"Y-Y-You..." Fred stammered in a frantic voice and didn't dare continue.

Cough! Hack! Cough!

In the midst of his hacking cough, Kurt barely forced out a question. "You... who are you really?"

Prior to this, when Hades led three thousand men to protect him, it didn't pique their curiosity as to who Levi was.

However, there were thirty regiments of soldiers from the South Warzone protecting him now.

It indicated that Levi was someone a lot more important than they had imagined.

"To be honest, the Gates family have no right to know my identity."

Levi shot them a cold glare.

“Men, capture all of them. Since no one dares to touch the Gates family, I’ll be the one to do it!”

“I want to see for myself how capable is a prominent family that declared themselves to be the law of the land,” Levi bellowed.

Boom!

Kurt and his men closed their eyes in despair.

The Gates family are finished!

Meanwhile, back at the Black family manor.

“Grandpa, Grandma, I have bad news. The Gates family have brought five hundred Dragon Guards to South City,” Logan reported while being out of breath.

“What? So soon?”

Meredith and the others’ expressions changed as they were struck by fear.

“This really means trouble!”

“Do you know where they’re headed?” Meredith asked.

“They are looking for Levi as of now. I heard they want to kill him and wipe out South City’s underworld,” Logan replied.

Meredith began to pray. “I hope when Levi is killed, the Gates family would be appeased.”

“Grandma, what are you saying?” Zoey fumed.

The Protector Chapter 654

Meredith and everyone else stared at her. “Zoey, don’t tell me you really believe Levi can deal with this issue?”

“The Gates family are going to kill him. Even the three thousand men who protected you will die tragically,” Logan explained the reality of the situation.

“Huh?”

At that moment, Zoey finally understood the gravity of the matter.

“Oh? Is that so? Then why am I still alive?”

At that moment, a voice emanated through the room, causing Logan to drop to his knees in horror.

“It’s a ghost!”

“What f***king ghost are you talking about? I’m still alive and well,” Levi grunted in exasperation.

“Are you really alright?”

Meredith and the others stood up and looked towards Levi.

“What can happen to me?”

“What about the Gates family? Weren’t they looking for you?” Meredith inquired in disbelief.

“Oh, I destroyed them. They no longer exist,” Levi replied casually.

“What? How is that possible?”

Meredith and the other looked at him doubtfully.

At the same time, Logan quickly checked on the latest news with his contacts.

After that, his expression changed drastically.

“It’s true... the Gates family has disappeared from South City and no one knows where they have gone. I-I-Its...” Logan was so bewildered that he was stumped for words.

“So it’s true?”

Meredith, Robert, and everyone else looked on in disbelief.

At that moment, Russell let out a relaxed smile.

For the Gates family to challenge Levi, isn’t it the same as having a death wish?

Zoey grabbed Levi’s hand and murmured, “Was it the mysterious boss of the Morris Group that did it again?”

Levi was stunned for a second before nodding.

As he was the boss of the Morris Group, what Zoey said wasn’t wrong.

“We owe him yet another debt of gratitude. By now, I don’t even know how we’re going to repay it,” Zoey remarked with a smile.

Grinning, Levi replied, “Worse comes to worst, I’ll sell myself to them.”

“That’s unacceptable! Anything else but that.”

Zoey shook her head as her love for Levi was now rooted deep in her bones.

All this while, her expectation of a husband was that he would be a respectable, mature man with a heart of gold.

But as of now, no matter what Levi was doing, she would love him for it because she knew that he had always been protecting her.

“Grandpa, Grandma, and everyone else. Today, I declare that I will be the one who’ll have the final word on my marriage. I will still marry Levi and will wait for him to organize the perfect wedding for us.”

In front of both the Black and Lopez families, Zoey made her stand clear.

Hearing her declaration, Levi was touched. All he cared for was Zoey’s trust in him.

Both families sighed in response.

Why can’t we escape from Levi! Karma is a b****!

In the end, Meredith had no choice but to give up her plans.

After being taught a harsh lesson, she had enough.

South Hampton.

It was Erudia’s economic capital, hence was also known as the Devil’s Capital.

South Hampton was at an even higher level than the first-tier cities of North Hampton and South City.

The reason being a few royal families had established themselves there and their economic power was immense.

However, South Hampton's high society was shaken today because Kurt Gates, president of the South Hampton chamber of commerce had been decimated, along with the entire Gates family.

Although the Gates family was not as powerful as the royal families, they still controlled a significant portion of South Hampton's economy.

For them to disappear without a trace struck fear into many.

What's going on?

Wasn't the Gates family supposed to have a wedding in South City? How can they disappear just like that?

Within a short period of time, the citizens of South Hampton began to grow anxious.

Meanwhile, within the deep forests outside South Hampton, there was a luxurious villa.

Outside the villa, there were hundreds of men kneeling at the door.

"Master, please avenge Jacky for us!"

The Protector Chapter 655

24/05/2021 by [Chapter Novel](#)

As hundreds of men were shouting, they were all slamming their heads onto the ground, to the extent that blood was oozing out of their foreheads.

What made it more shocking was that they had been kneeling there for three whole days.

Ever since the news of Jacky Lawson's death spread, the men began to gather in front of the villa.

They were all Jacky's fellow disciples of the same master.

Their master does have the intention to head for South City, but it just wasn't the right time yet as he was still in the midst of his solitary meditation.

But now that Jacky was dead, his fellow disciples could wait no longer.

Hence, they were pleading with their master to end his mediation earlier.

Sigh!

Suddenly a loud sigh was heard from within the villa.

The hundreds of disciples who heard it began to feel excited.

Their faces which were previously pale with despair were now glowing brilliantly.

Creak!

In the next moment, the villa's door slowly opened.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

Suddenly, two rows of bodyguards dressed in red marched out.

Upon their clothes, the word "Heimler" was embroidered onto it.

After that, an old man surrounded by a group of six bodyguards emerged.

All six of them were wearing masks and were dressed exactly like the two men Jacky had brought with him.

The old man was wearing a white robe and did not look any different from any other men of his age. His eyes were cloudy and he had an unsteady gait, as if the wind could cause him to fall anytime.

"All hail the master!"

The hundreds of disciples chanted.

All of their faces were filled with respect and admiration.

"Is Jacky really done for?" The old man asked in a trembling voice.

"Master, Jacky will be staying in South City forever and is never coming back," his disciples answered.

Upon hearing the news, the old man looked up and heaved a long sigh.

Throughout his life, his disciples numbered in the hundreds if not the thousands.

Even for many of his current students, he didn't even remember their names.

However, amongst all of them, Jacky was his favorite.

In fact, he was training Jacky to be his heir given that he had no sons.

Or else, he wouldn't have sent Jacky on such an important assignment such as taking over South City.

Two days ago, he had just spoken to Jacky who reassured him that everything was going well and that South City's underworld had been wiped out.

However, not long after that, he received the news of Jacky's death.

"Who killed him?" The old man demanded.

"Master, it was the current leader of South City's underworld, Hades. He is the current champion and record holder of the Deathmatch championships."

"Therefore, we have not taken any action yet and have been waiting for you to finish your meditation," the students replied.

"I can't believe that South City has such a formidable warrior. Jacky has died in vain indeed!" the old man lamented.

"Master, don't worry, once we combine all our strength, we can seek revenge for Jacky."

"Yeah! we shall not rest until we have avenge Jacky!" the hundreds of disciples chanted in unison.

"Where is his body?" The old man looked toward the crowd.

At that, the crowd fell silent as no one showed any concern as to what befell the body after his death, to the extent it was likely still left in South City.

Witnessing their silence, the old man was infuriated.

“You keep harping on about revenge and yet you didn’t even bother to bring his body back!”

The old man’s voice thundered through the crowd and was a big contrast to his feeble demeanor.

The next moment, the hundreds of disciples trembled in fear and bowed their heads on the ground.

They were so terrified that every one of them was drenched in cold sweat.

Their master was furious. They knew what would follow will be earth-shattering due to his terrifying identity.

Once his identity was revealed, the whole of southern Erudia would be quaking in their boots.

The Protector Chapter 656

The old and seemingly feeble man was none other than the leader of the Southern Union, Grover Cooke.

Most of the Southern Union's branches were based along the coast where the economy thrived with many different industries.

There were innumerable martial art experts within the Southern Union. In fact, all of the experts in the south itself originated from the Southern Union.

They were so powerful that the underworlds of all major cities would tremble at the mere mention of the Southern Union.

Even Scott Yates came from the Southern Union but hardly anyone knew about it.

Every year, he had to pay a tribute of five billion to the Southern Union.

No one really knew why he had to live the life of a recluse for thirty years.

The real reason was that his influence had expanded too quickly and clashed with that of the Southern Union.

Hence, if he continued to expand any further, the Southern Union would have to take him down.

Therefore, Scott had no choice but to shun the world to prevent the Southern Union from taking action against him.

Ever since then, the tribute Scott had to pay the Southern Union increased to ten billion.

Only then could he ensure his own safety.

Furthermore, even the Triple Group had to pay billions in tribute to the Southern Union.

The fact that an international conglomerate such as the Triple Group had to bow down to its knees to the Southern Union demonstrated how domineering they were.

In summary, anyone with any sort of influence in the south had to pay their respects to the Southern Union.

Nevertheless, the Southern Union was not obligated to help them out in return.

This showed just how powerful the Southern Union was.

In fact, all the underworlds within southern Erudia were controlled by the Southern Union.

As long as they gave the word, any of the groups could be wiped out.

However, things happened differently in South City.

Firstly, Scott's faction was destroyed, followed by the collapse of the Triple Group.

When the tributes from both groups stopped, the Southern Union realized something had happened in South City.

Hence, Jacky was sent to resolve the matter.

As South City formed a huge part of their business, the head of the Southern Union, Grover, had to personally deal with it.

Every single disciple of Grover's was an elite within their own industry.

Anyone who was weak would not even qualify to be one.

Over the last few decades, Grover, who loved receiving students only accepted seven to eight hundred of them.

Therefore, it was safe to say that every single one of them was a genius in their own right.

Not only did he have a lot of students, but he also had an army of subordinates and a massive network of contacts.

In fact, just a word from Grover and the whole of south Erudia would acknowledge it.

That was how powerful the head of the Southern Union was.

"Master, it is our fault! We should have brought Jacky's body back immediately."

"Master, please give us a chance. We will definitely reclaim Jacky's body."

One by one, his disciples pleaded.

Meanwhile, Grover shot a quick glance around and exclaimed, "You have disappointed me enough! I will avenge my disciple myself!"

"Johnny Lawrence?" Grover called out.

"Master, Johnny at your service," A middle-aged man stepped forward and said.

“I order you to head over to South City. Before the Southern Union army arrives, you must reclaim Jacky’s body,” Grover instructed.

“Yes, Master!”

With that, Johnny left.

Johnny was an integral member of the Southern Union as he was among the Southern Union’s best warriors. Of the Four Kings and Eight Slaves, he was one of the Four Kings.

Other than the head of the Southern Union, the Four Kings were next in line in terms of the chain of command.

The Four Kings of the Southern Union were so strong that they could easily defeat Scott Yates.

“Jacky died a tragic death. Prior to this, I was even planning to declare him as my heir at the upcoming Union conference.”

As he spoke, Tears rolled down Grover’s eyes.

The Protector Chapter 657

“Johnny is on his way to South City. Once Jacky’s body is brought back, I want to hold a funeral for him there,” Grover declared.

“Yes, Master. We will definitely give Jacky a grand funeral.”

Turning towards the crowd, Grover ordered, “Next, you will need to investigate and find out who was involved in Jacky’s death. After that, we will bury all of them alive together with Jacky!”

At that moment, Grover’s whole being exuded an icy cold aura, overwhelming the surroundings with a chilly pressure.

Everyone suddenly shivered as the cold spell engulfed them, it felt as if they had fallen into an icy lake.

They could feel the surrounding temperature drop by seven to eight degrees.

It was real and wasn’t an exaggeration at all.

Grover was an elite martial artist who practiced the Ancient Arts of Qi.

The reason he was in solitary meditation was to further enhance the power of his Qi.

“Understood, Master. We will proceed to investigate and leave no stone unturned,” his disciples answered.

All of them trembled at the idea that Grover was going to bury alive a bunch of men together with Jacky.

It was such a terrifying notion to them.

However, that was the consequence of offending the head of the Southern Union.

Meanwhile, in South City, Levi and Zoey had no inkling of the looming crisis.

In fact, Levi had even forgotten about Jacky, let alone expected someone seeking to avenge him.

The last thing he was interested in was to find out who Jacky really was.

In recent days, the Davies family felt a sense of dread.

Leslie and his son didn't eat nor sleep well as they were constantly worried.

The reason being they knew Jacky Lawson was part of the Southern Union and was the Union leader's disciple.

Therefore, ever since Jacky had died, they grew increasingly anxious as they knew the Southern Union would not rest until Jacky was avenged.

In fact, they expected themselves to be dragged into the matter.

Left with no choice, they could only wait. It wasn't until one afternoon that a group of men finally arrived.

It was one of the Southern Union's Four Kings, Johnny, and his men.

As Leslie's eyes brightened, he approached them quickly. "We have been expecting you, dear sirs."

"We, the Davies family, are of no use at all. We weren't able to protect Jacky," Leslie confessed.

“There’s no need for that, I know you’re not to blame,” Johnny remarked impatiently.

“Tell me, where is Jacky’s body?” Johnny asked.

“Huh?”

Stunned for a moment, Leslie quickly replied, “Sir, Jacky’s body was taken away by Hades’ men and I don’t know where they threw it.”

“What? Threw?” Johnny exclaimed in anger, blasting an intimidating pressure across the room.

It left Leslie and the others breathless.

Both Leslie and Derek were shocked when they realized Johnny was more powerful than the Slaves that Jacky had brought with him.

Who is he really?

“That’s right, sir. They said they wanted to throw Jacky’s body into the garbage dump.”

“I reckon his body must have rotted off away at a dump somewhere.”

Upon hearing Leslie’s words, Johnny was utterly furious.

Bam!

He slammed his fist on one of the walls in frustration, causing the wall to collapse into rubble.

“Damn it!”

“If I can’t find Jacky’s body, I will make sure the whole of South City will be buried together with him,” Johnny declared with a terrifying expression on his face.

At the same time, Leslie and Derek could feel an immense pressure that forced them to their knees.

Such strength!

Such immense power!

He is stronger than anyone we’ve seen before.

“You will take me to see Hades!” Johnny ordered in a frosty tone.

In a short while, a group of men appeared at the entrance of the Jagged Club.

Leslie felt more confident this time around because he knew Johnny was one of the powerful Four Kings.

The Protector Chapter 658

“What do you want?” The moment the guard at the entrance asked, two lightning-fast slashes made quick work of him.

After that, Johnny and his men entered the club.

Inside, the club was as lively as usual.

Johnny went straight to the club’s DJ booth, turned down the music, and switched on all the lights.

Every corner of the club was illuminated as if it was broad daylight.

At that moment, the hundreds of patrons in the club stopped dancing and turned to stare at the DJ booth.

The atmosphere became boisterous as the club’s staff rushed towards the booth.

Picking up the mic, Johnny instructed, “Silence! I have something to say.”

Upon his orders, everyone kept quiet and gave him their attention.

“Let me introduce myself. I am Johnny Lawrence.”

“Huh? Johnny Lawrence? That name sounds familiar.”

“That’s right, where did I hear it before?”

Everyone in the club felt the name sounded familiar.

Johnny continued, "I am from the Southern Union and a subordinate of Grover Cooke."

Boom!

When Johnny revealed his identity, everyone went ballistic and looked at him in disbelief.

"My God! It's one of the Four Kings of the Southern Union."

"It's really Johnny of the Southern Union. This is unbelievable!"

"Johnny is really here in South City! Something big must have happened!"

The club was in an uproar. When everyone heard that it was the Southern Union, they were filled with excitement.

As gangsters in the underworld, their dream was to join the legendary Southern Union.

To them, it was as good as their religion and was an achievement that would bring honor to the family.

In short, they considered it their Holy Land.

At the same time, it was also the most frightening of places.

Anyone who offended the Southern Union would be hunted down and killed.

There would be no escape even if one fled to the ends of the earth.

For the gangsters, it was an unbelievable sight that one of the legendary Four Kings of the Southern Union, Johnny, was standing before them as many of them worshipped him.

In fact, some even had his face tattooed on their bodies.

As Johnny was courageous and battle-hardened, there was an air of invincibility around him.

“Today, I’m here to look for the body of my master’s disciple, Jacky Lawson.”

The moment Johnny changed the topic, everyone was stunned.

Johnny’s master?

Isn’t that Grover Cooke of the Southern Union?

Grover’s disciple’s body?

Suddenly, everyone thought of the same haughty person, Jacky, from a few days ago.

He’s actually one of the Southern Union’s disciples?

This means big trouble as it now involves the Southern Union.

No matter how strong Hades is, it’s not going to be of much help.

“Johnny, this has nothing to do with us, it’s all Hades’ doing!”

“That’s right, we were not involved at all.”

At that moment, everyone present disavowed their involvement while only a few were hesitating.

They were former followers of Brock Green who had switched their allegiance to Hades.

As the rest of the crowd moved aside, they were left standing in the center.

Johnny instantly understood what was going on.

He asked them, "Were you the ones that took Jacky's body?"

His tone was calm but so domineering that it felt suffocating.

"Yes, so what if we were?" one of them replied.

"Where is the body now?" Johnny demanded word by word.

At the moment, an immense pressure filled the club and everyone felt their hearts racing.

"We threw it away at a garbage dump," the man replied.

"Well done! All of you will have to die!" Johnny roared.

"Who are you? How dare you cause trouble in my territory?"

The Protector Chapter 659

Just then, a voice boomed from behind.

A man with a mask covering half his face appeared.

It was Hades.

As Levi was with Zoey today, Hades didn't need to watch over her and therefore came back early.

What he didn't expect was to find a ruckus in his club.

"Who are you?" Johnny bellowed.

"Johnny, he's Hades! He is the one who killed Jacky and the two Slaves. I saw it with my own eyes!" Leslie reported.

"That's right, he killed them!" Derek and the others chimed in.

When Johnny realized that the man was his enemy, Hades, he felt especially invigorated and his eyes gleamed with murderous intent.

"Seize him!" Johnny ordered.

More than ten of his men scrambled down from the DJ booth and charged towards Hades.

All of them were formidable warriors who used all kinds of weapons.

Some used chain whips and spears while others wielded giant cleavers.

The group of fighters were extremely well-coordinated and were able to put Hades on the defensive.

It was a sight that shocked many as everyone knew how formidable Hades was as a fighter.

Hades is being beaten back!

The Southern Union does live up to its reputation!

Every member of the Union is indeed an elite warrior.

“Argh!”

However, in the next moment, Hades exploded in rage as he hurled his invincible fists forward.

Bam!

Bam!

Bam!

One by one, the Southern Union warriors were sent flying back.

Johnny’s eyes narrowed as he felt a chill down his spine.

No wonder he was able to kill Master’s Slaves. What a formidable warrior indeed!

Perhaps I should wait for Master to arrive before deciding on the next step. My mission today is just to locate Jacky’s body.

As for Hades and his men, Johnny decided not to take them down as he remembered Grover wanted to bury them alive with Jacky.

“Stop!” At the wave of his hand, all his warriors stopped their attacks.

“You must be Hades. I will let you off today! So tell me, where have you thrown Jacky’s body?” Johnny asked.

“It’s at Far East Road, you can look for him there,” someone shouted.

“Very well, I look forward to our next encounter, Hades!” Johnny sneered.

“Haha, fine. I’ll be waiting for you.” Hades burst into laughter.

If it were the old days, he would have been worried.

But now with Levi backing him, there was nothing for him to be afraid of.

With that, Johnny left.

His followers were left puzzled, “Johnny, why didn’t you allow us to kill him?”

“He’s really strong and you’re no match for him. Even for me, we might just be evenly matched. If he has further support, we will be at a disadvantage. Therefore, it’s better to wait for Master’s arrival before we decide on our next course of action,” Johnny explained his concerns.

“We understand now,” Johnny’s followers replied.

Arriving at Far East Road, they searched around the whole night.

Finally, they managed to locate Jacky’s body in the garbage dump. It was surrounded by flies and had long since decomposed.

Enduring the stench, Johnny brought Jacky's body back.

At the same time, Leslie ordered a crystal coffin so that Jacky's body can be frozen inside.

After Grover heard what happened, he was absolutely livid.

"I will personally deal with them!" he thundered.

Back in South City, Hades related what happened to Levi.

"The Southern Union? I know of them," Levi remarked.

"The overseas branches of the Southern Union are even more terrifying as they are packed with formidable warriors. Many countries have suffered under their hands."

Levi's eyes sparkled with excitement. "This is really interesting. White Tiger, you have an opportunity to go all out now."

The Protector Chapter 660

White Tiger squinted his eyes and smiled, "I have also heard that the Southern Union is filled with capable warriors. I had the honor of fighting some of them overseas and they have proved themselves to be very skilled. I hope I will meet someone who I can fight without any reservations."

Azure Dragon sighed, "Isn't there a saying? All the best warriors originate from the Southern Union."

Kirin's eyes glistened, "Unfortunately, they have offended the wrong people. The audacity of them to act with such impunity in front of us is just pure insolence!"

However, Levi smiled to himself deviously as he had a different plan.

Meanwhile.

"He was killed just because he courted a lady?" Johnny asked curiously.

"That's correct. Jacky had repeatedly tried to ask a lady out but was rejected every time. Finally, he was killed instead," Leslie related.

"Who is she?" Johnny's expression darkened immensely.

"Her name is Zoey Lopez, she's the boss of Oriental Star Group. She has the support of the Morris Group."

Johnny sneered coldly, "Damn that Morris Group! We will annihilate them this time!"

Once Master arrives in South City, Morris Group will be eliminated regardless of who they are and who their boss is.

The next day, Grover personally led the other three Kings and other six Slaves to South City.

They were not alone as a massive number of Southern Union members accompanied them.

With a wave of his hand, Grover was able to gather tens of thousands of Union members easily.

That was the influence the Master of the Southern Union wielded.

The Davies family residence was to become their base.

Both Derek and his son had never in their wildest dreams expected to meet the legendary Master of the Southern Union in person.

“Where’s Jacky?”

The moment Grover arrived at the Davies residence, he made a beeline towards Jacky’s corpse.

“Master, please follow me.” Johnny quickly led the way.

When Grover saw Jacky inside the crystal coffin, he could no longer contain his emotions.

Jacky was his favorite student whom he treated like a son.

After brooding in front of the coffin for a long time, he called out to his men.

“Master, your orders?” the Four Kings and Six Slaves answered.

“In three days’ time, we will hold a funeral of the highest honor for Jacky based on the Southern Union’s ceremonial rites. The leaders of every Southern Union branch must attend,” Grover ordered.

“Understood!” the men replied in acknowledgment.

“As for all those who were involved in Jacky’s death, capture them so that I can bury all of them together with him,” Grover roared.

“Master, from our investigations, we have narrowed down the main suspects to eleven people. The four main figures are Hades, Levi Garrison, Zoey Lopez, and Syllas Whitfield.”

At that, Grover released his aura of intense pressure that seemed to be able to move mountains.

“As for the rest, they include both the father and son of the Davies family.”

The man gave Derek and Leslie a cold stare.

The father and son duo fainted in shock upon realizing that they still had to be buried alive in the end.

“Very well, before the funeral begins, those responsible must all stand before me,” Grover insisted angrily.

“Yes, Master!” the Four Kings shouted in unison.

“I heard that Jacky died because of a woman?” Grover asked.

The crowd hesitated but nodded in the end. “Yes, that’s right.”

“Master, the lady is a daughter of the Lopez family which is one of South City’s four noble families,” someone explained.

“Very well. In that case, the funeral will be held at the Lopez family residence. Their whole family will be held accountable for the actions of their young,” Grover said coldly.

Johnny requested, “Master, I volunteer to be the vanguard to take down the Lopez family.”

The other three Kings followed and requested the same.

“As you wish, now let’s head out!”

The Protector Chapter 661

The Lopez family in South City did not expect the Southern Union to come after their blood.

The most important thing was that they had nothing to do with that matter.

And now, the Southern Union's army was at the Lopez residence, quickly defeating the guards stationed at the Lopez mansion were quickly defeated.

Patriarch Leon Lopez, the eldest brother of Sebastian Lopez, hurriedly brought the entire Lopez family outside.

The outside of the luxurious manor was densely packed with members of the Southern Union, and they were all dressed in red.

Six masked men, who stood in front of the crowd, were carrying a crystal coffin.

The first four brave men standing in front glanced at everyone in the Lopez family with a domineering look. They were preventing the Lopez family members from running away.

Behind the huge crowd, a car was heading towards them. The word "Heimler" was engraved on the car.

The Lopez family fell into a frightened silence.

They were completely bewildered.

Who could these people be?

Since the fall of Sebastian Lopez, the Lopez family had laid low and stayed away from unwanted attention.

They had never encountered any enemies thereafter.

Why then was there such a powerful adversary at their doorstep?

“Who...who are you people?” Leon Lopez asked, trembling with fear.

“Johnny Lawrence, of Southern Union.”

“Jael Ellison, of Southern Union.”

“Yadriel Larson, of Southern Union.”

“Connor Hill, of Southern Union.”

After the four men reported their names, there was a loud thud.

Crash!

The old patriarch, Leon Lopez, had fallen onto the ground in fright.

Other elderly members of the Lopez family were also frightened, their faces drained of all color.

As for the younger members of the Lopez family, they were stupefied, and they had no idea what was happening.

“T-T-This...”

Leon Lopez was almost foaming at the mouth.

This is too frightening!

The Four Kings of the Southern Union were all here together.

What kind of trouble had we, the Lopez family, gotten ourselves into?

And what had brought the legendary Four Kings to be here as one?

T-This...

“Who are you people?”

The youngsters of the Lopez family had an incredulous look on their faces.

“These are the Four Kings of the Southern Union!”

When the elderly uttered the truth, the entire Lopez family was absolutely shocked and turned pale in fright.

Everyone had heard much about the legendary Southern Union.

Especially about the head of the Southern Union, the Four Kings, and their god-like existence.

“Everyone get out of the way. Whoever gets in the way will be killed with no mercy.” Johnny Lawrence said coldly.

When the Lopez family heard that, they quickly gave way.

With the Four Kings in the lead, the Six Slaves carried the crystal coffin into the Lopez family manor.

Behind them, the mighty members of Southern Union entered one after another.

And lastly, Grover entered.

When the Lopez family realized that Grover was here in person, they fell to their knees in terror.

Everyone was petrified.

They had no idea what was going on.

“Listen up! Master’s favorite student died because of Zoey Lopez. The entire Lopez family will have to take the blame for the trouble caused by Zoey. You will all be buried together with Jacky.” Johnny said coldly.

Everyone in the Lopez family nearly passed out from shock.

What kind of trouble had Zoey gotten us into?

Why should we take the blame for it?

They wanted to flee, but they were closely watched and heavily surrounded; they were trapped.

Soon afterward, words about Jacky’s funeral spread far and wide.

The head of the Southern Union and the Four Kings would personally conduct the funeral rites.

All of a sudden, the entire South was shocked.

Disciples of the Southern Union from various places came rushing to South City.

Even big bosses of the underworlds of all major cities were also on their way.

They had to come and pay their last respects.

The funeral was to be held three days from now, and it was bound to cause a huge commotion in the South.

Instantly, South City came to know about the earth-shattering news.

Even the head of Southern Union came in person.

Hence, it was impossible for them to not know.

The news of the upcoming funeral in three days reached Levi's ears.

“What? They want to capture me and bury me alive? Together with Jacky?”

Levi looked surprised.

The Protector Chapter 662

Hades chuckled, “God of War, you and your wife are on the list. By then, you will all be buried alive.”

“How bold of them to threaten to bury me,” Levi sneered.

Azure Dragon and Kirin laughed. “God of War, the Southern Union is indeed powerful. They are completely different from the Gates family and the Caesar family.”

“That’s right. They are more organized.”

“Grover can gather the disciples of Southern Union from all places, with just a wave of his hand.”

White Tiger smiled insolently. “Very well. The funeral is in three days? Then, I will fight them all the way to the end. Oh, and this time, you can’t transfer your men to do your bidding.” White Tiger pleaded.

“Yes, I won’t. I have a plan in mind. We’ll talk about that later.”

Levi had earlier on mapped out a strategy for a situation such as this.

“Hades, I’m assigning you to protect my wife. She has finally settled down in her work, so I don’t want her to know anything about this or to be disturbed,” Levi ordered.

“Understood. I will risk my life to protect her.”

On the other side, after the Southern Union had taken over the Lopez family, they were about to make their next move.

“Master, how are you going to deal with Morris Group this time around?” Johnny asked curiously. “I’ve heard that many people who were gotten rid of earlier on did not even have the chance to meet the Morris Group’s boss in person.”

Grover thought deeply and said, “Find the boss and drive him out.”

“Understood.”

Subsequently, the Southern Union made their move.

One by one, they captured those who were involved in Jacky’s death.

In the end, the only people left to be captured were Levi, Hades, Zoey, and Syllas.

But then, the Southern Union hesitated to make the move.

Except for Levi, the other three were always together.

In order to capture Zoey, they had to get past Hades.

“Hades killed the Two Slaves single-handedly. He’s just too powerful.”

“I’ve personally seen it with my own eyes too. At the very least, he has a fifty percent chance of beating me,” Johnny said.

“Master, I’ve managed to check Hades’ identity. He was once the L Nation’s God of War. After he was being defeated by Erudia’s God of War, he went incognito and appeared in Eastern Deathmatches.”

Among Grover’s hundreds of students, few of them were good at digging up information. Thus, very quickly, Hades’ true identity was revealed.

“So he’s L Nation’s God of War. No wonder he’s so powerful.”

It was only then realization struck everyone.

“If that is the case, then the four of you should go together. Show him how powerful the Southern Union can be. If Euradia’s God of War can defeat him, then so can I,” Grover ordered.

“Understood!”

Johnny Lawrence and the three Kings obeyed.

That day, Zoey went to work as usual, and Sylas came to pick her up.

Halfway to work, Hades showed up in front of them.

He handed Sylas a note that read, “Go to the destination written above. Leave immediately.”

Sylas read the note, immediately started the car, and sped off.

Hades, who had been guarding them from a distance, sensed danger in the air all of a sudden.

This time, he actually feared the worst was going to happen.

And he wasn’t sure if he could handle it.

Immediately, he asked Sylas to take Zoey to the Warzone compound to look for Levi for protection.

“Phew!” Hades breathed a sigh of relief when the car left.

He slowly walked to the other side of the road.

Just then, four silhouettes appeared in the dark alley.

Johnny Lawrence and the three Kings appeared together and glared at Hades with their ferocious eyes.

Seeing Hades walking towards them step by step, Johnny said coldly, "You're a dead man."

The Protector Chapter 663

In the narrow and dark alley.

Hades and the Southern Union's Four Kings attacked one another.

Southern Union had always prided themselves to be a homage of strength.

There were three ways to obtain a high position.

First, martial arts.

Second, financial resources.

Third, brains.

To possess one of the criteria was frightening enough. What more if someone possessed all three criteria.

There was a way of saying in the Southern Union about the Four Kings and the Eight Slaves that represented the three most powerful echelons.

The strength of the Four Kings was unmatched, and that was the key to the Southern Union's expeditions, resulting in countless territories being claimed.

Thump! Thump! Thump!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

In the long and narrow alley, an earth-shaking battle was going on.

Both sides of the alley walls collapsed from the fight. Even the surrounding buildings, one after another, were extensively damaged.

At first, Hades was able to fight off the Four Kings. But gradually, he was at the losing end.

Each of the Four Kings fought him with similar strengths. With the four of them combined, he was certainly of no match against them.

Thud!

Ten minutes later, Hades was kicked forcefully by Johnny.

Just when Hades was about to get back on his feet, three violent blows slammed on his body.

Crack!

More than a dozen of his bones shattered, and he lost his mobility.

“Don’t kill him!”

A cold glint flashed across Johnny’s eyes as he took out a small knife. Very swiftly, he severed Hades’ tendons in his arms and legs.

The defeated Hades fainted from the unbearable pain.

At last, Hades was carried away. He was going to be buried together with Jacky Lawson’s body.

“What about those two women?” Yadriel asked.

“Hades has fallen, so where else are they going to run to? Send someone to catch them,” Johnny smiled.

To him, Hades was the biggest obstacle.

As for Zoey and Syllas, he was not in the least worried. Thus, ordering his men to capture them.

At the same time, Syllas sped towards the destination written on the note.

Soon, they arrived at Levi's base – Warzone compound.

Both women rushed into the basecamp in a panic, colliding with Levi.

“What's wrong?” Levi asked.

“I don't know. The man protecting Ms. Lopez handed me a note and asked me to bring Zoey here,” Syllas said anxiously.

Levi was taken aback.

He could only blame his own carelessness by underestimating the Southern Union.

He thought that since the unrivaled L Nation's God of War was on his side, no one from the Southern Union was good enough to be an opponent.

Right now, it seemed like he was wrong.

Hades must have realized he was not going to be able to hold back the powerful Southern Union. And that's why he asked Syllas to come here.

Sure enough, the saying was true – all the best warriors originated from the Southern Union.

It appeared that there were a few strong fighters in Southern Union who were able to defeat Hades.

“You can sleep here for tonight.” Levi said.

Zoey was unsure about the place but stayed anyway.

She was filled with curiosity about Levi’s identity.

The bodyguard, who was guarding them from a distance, sensed something was about to go wrong and urged them to come here.

He’s a man of mystery.

Meanwhile, twenty martial arts masters sent by Johnny had actually made their way here.

It was easy to see how highly efficient the Southern Union was.

“Probably it’s around this location. Let’s search around, and I’m sure we’ll find them here,” the martial arts masters coordinated.

When they were about to enter the area, an old man in a green shirt came running out from the pavilion and said, “Leave! You’re not supposed to be here.”

“Ha! Is there such a place that we are not supposed to be?” they remonstrated.

“This is the forbidden area in South City.”

The Protector Chapter 664

The disciples of the Southern Union burst into laughter from what the old man had said.

“Forbidden? For people like us in Southern Union, there is no place where we can’t set foot in.”

“Young men, listen to me. You have no right to enter this area,” the old man persuaded.

The old man was not only a gatekeeper but a veteran as well.

“We are going in. So what are you going to do about it?”

The Southern Union’s martial arts masters stepped further in brazenly.

“This lot has a death wish.” The old man sighed in exasperation as he watched the men’s retreating shadows.

As the men went further in the area, people along the way persuaded them to leave, emphasizing that this was the forbidden area.

This puzzled the Southern Union’s martial arts masters.

Very quickly, they reached the Warzone compound.

“Look, it’s Zoey’s car. They are here.”

After seeing a car that was parked at the entrance, one of the martial arts masters exclaimed.

Just when they were about to rush in, a man suddenly appeared in front of them. He was casually dressed and holding a cigarette between his lips.

White Tiger!

At that moment, Levi and his men were watching from the rooftop. They were all guessing how many seconds it would take White Tiger to get rid of these pieces of trash.

Levi guessed White Tiger only needed a second.

White Tiger glanced at the twenty men and asked, “Who sent you lot to come here? Don’t you know that you guys are not allowed to enter this place?”

The Southern Union’s martial arts masters were taken aback.

Why do we keep hearing that this place was forbidden to us?

What is it about this place?

It seemed ratty and shabby, more like a slum than anything else.

How could such a place be the forbidden area in South City?

“Ha! There is no place we can’t set foot in. Now, get out of the way!” the leader of the martial arts experts shouted.

White Tiger chuckled and said, “Let me take a puff first.”

After White Tiger took a pull at his cigarette, he made his move.

He was like a bolt of lightning passing through those men.

Their visions went black, and all of them lost consciousness.

When they woke up, they found themselves lying in a pile of garbage.

They had been thrown out of the street and were terrified of what had happened to them.

For starters, they didn't even know how they were attacked in the first place.

This was really a forbidden area and not a place that anyone could break in to.

Retreat!

The group of men quickly fled.

In Lopez Villa.

The Four Kings had personally captured Hades, and everyone was in a hurrah.

"Master, don't worry. Soon, we'll be able to capture that woman," Johnny said.

He had sent a few men to capture Levi, Zoey, and Sylas. It was going to be an easy job.

At that moment, the twenty martial arts masters came running back, looking disconcerted.

"Master, Four Kings... Something really bad has happened..."

The men were badly battered, clearly injured.

"What happened?" Johnny's expression turned sour and asked angrily.

“Zoey and Syllas are hiding in a compound in South City. That place is so weird. Whoever we came across kept telling us it’s a forbidden area, asking us to leave. We also met a strange man, and he knocked us out before we even saw it coming.”

When the martial arts experts recounted the event, Johnny and the others were taken aback.

These twenty men were all martial arts experts, so how were they overpowered by a man?

And they didn’t even get to take a good look at the man’s face?

He must be really powerful.

“What? Is there such a place in South City?”

“Why didn’t I know about this? Scott and Brock are the strongest men in South City, am I right?”

A tremor went through them.

He questioned Leon Lopez and the rest, but no one knew that there was such a forbidden area.

Although Grover’s students went digging for information, nobody was able to explain why it was so.

Because that place was a restricted military area, it was highly confidential.

Hence, it wasn’t possible for them to find any information regarding that.

“No way. Bring them back to me.”

The Protector Chapter 665

Grover was fuming mad. “I don’t care if it’s a forbidden area. Bring them back to me!”

The Southern Union was known to be arrogant and self-confident about themselves.

Thus, it wouldn’t make sense for them not to enter a small city like South City.

To them, this was all just a joke.

With that, the Four Kings said, “Master, we promise to bring them back here.”

Immediately, Johnny and Yadriel of the Four Kings led hundreds of martial arts experts to that particular block.

“Attack!”

Johnny’s eyes flashed, and with a wave of his hand, he sent hundreds of martial arts experts into that block.

The men approached closer to the Warzone compound swiftly, preparing to infiltrate.

It was a spectacular sight.

Soon, the men came to a crossroad.

“Left, left, left, right, left...”

But at that moment, they heard loud commands being shouted out.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

It was accompanied by the sound of a uniformed pace.

“Halt!”

Johnny waved his hand, and all the men stopped at the crossroad.

They quietly observed the surroundings for any movements.

The footsteps were getting closer, and the commands being shouted out were getting louder.

They saw army officers marching at the left, right, and front of the crossroad intersection. The army officers were undergoing field training by marching.

There were at least a few hundred army officers with the size of two or three battalions.

“Stand still!”

Upon seeing Johnny, the commander of the army officers shouted out the command. They halted their steps and stared at Johnny and his troops.

At that time, Johnny and his men were dumbfounded.

Everyone exchanged glances and didn't know what to do.

Why were there army officers having their drill in this place?

Johnny was astonished.

He supposed these army officers were also astonished.

Why were these people gathered at the restricted military area?

Were these people here to cause trouble?

The army officers knew they could not let Johnny and his men infiltrate the compound.

A sharp glint flashed across the commander's eyes, and he commanded, "Move forward!"

Clack! Clack! Clack!

Army officers from all three directions continued to advance and pressed towards Johnny and his men.

The footsteps of the army officers were loud like beating drums, and the bass of it vibrated in everyone's chest. At that moment, Johnny and his men felt like their hearts would explode.

Tap tap tap...

Everyone instinctively went backwards.

As the army officers marched forward, they stepped backward.

Johnny and his men broke out in cold sweat.

No matter how powerful they were, they still felt afraid and apprehensive in facing the army officers.

"Retreat!"

At the orders of the Four Kings, the men fled and quickly disappeared.

Once they were out of the block, Johnny heaved a sigh of relief and said, "We almost got into trouble just now."

"Phew!"

Yadriel Larson and the rest also shared the same expression.

If they had taken a step further, it would have been a disaster.

The Southern Union may be strong, but could they possibly be stronger than these people?

Alas, no matter how skilled one was in martial arts, it was useless against military arms.

Just then, Connor, one of the Four Kings, exclaimed, "So that's what forbidden area meant. That place is the restricted military area."

"Phew! I have to say, Zoey found a good place to hide," Jael replied.

Yadriel sighed and asked, "So what should we do now? Do you want to ask Master for advice?"

"It's useless to ask Master. It's not like we can send someone here to abduct her," Johnny said helplessly.

"What should we do then? Are we just going to let this woman go?"

Yadriel and others were obviously heavy-hearted.

Johnny thought for a while and said, "I have an idea."

The Protector Chapter 666

“What idea? Spit it out.”

The other three Kings immediately turned to look at him and asked anxiously.

“I don’t believe she will hide here forever. We’ll just wait here until she comes out,” Johnny said.

“Sounds like a plan. That’s all we can do for now then.”

Yadriel ordered his men, “All of you stay undercover here, and keep an eye at all times. Notify me immediately once she comes out from hiding.”

Soon after that, the Four Kings returned to the Lopez residence and updated Grover on what happened.

Grover was furious. “What? Hiding in the Warzone compound? That’s outrageous! You ordered your men to be undercover near the Warzone compound without consulting me. Did you think that I couldn’t think of any other way?”

“Master, if we were to fight with them, we’re as good as dead,” his students immediately consoled him.

They were actually afraid that Grover would charge over without thinking.

“Master, we can’t be too impulsive.”

“The only option now is to wait. Sooner or later, she’s bound to come out from hiding,” Johnny said.

Grover sighed heavily, his face contorted in anger.

The next morning.

The Four Kings received news that Zoey had come out from hiding.

Hearing that, they headed towards the hideout as soon as they could.

But they fell into a deathly silence when they saw the scene before them.

Zoey had indeed come out from hiding. However, she was escorted by four military cars.

The average person wouldn't be able to tell.

But to Johnny and his men, they knew that these four military cars were in an escort formation.

At that moment, Johnny was in despair as Zoey was well-protected.

As powerful as the Southern Union was, they did not dare to confront the army.

Meanwhile, Zoey had no idea what was going on and went to work as usual.

Everything was as arranged by Levi, and no one was to disrupt Zoey's normal life.

Just when Johnny was in deep thoughts on what to do, a little boy walked up to him and said, "Mr., someone asked me to pass you this note."

Johnny took the note and read it. The note read: I will be at the funeral – Levi

So, Levi knew about the funeral.

This man who killed Jacky alongside with Hades.

“Very well. How daring of you to decide to show up.”

A sneer appeared on Johnny’s lips.

After returning to the Lopez residence, he filled in Grover on the whole situation.

“What? The military is protecting that woman?” Grover gritted his teeth and roared.

However, he was helpless.

“But her husband, Levi, said he would come to the funeral. He’s probably trying to appease us,” Johnny said.

“After all, we are hiding in the dark. This is our chance to kill them,” Yadriel Larson said.

“Good. Then I’ll wait for him to show up. He must be buried together with my disciple,” Grover said angrily.

On the second day, Jacky’s funeral was officially held.

Everyone who was anyone in Southern Union came to attend the funeral.

It was safe to say that these men who were gathered here were the foundation of Southern Union.

In fact, these people were very angry.

At the day of the funeral procession.

Thousands of Southern Union disciples came to pay their respects, and they were all dressed in black, with white flowers pinned on their chests.

Everyone looked solemn.

The coffin was placed in the middle of the mourning hall.

At the side of the coffin, Hades and others were bound and gagged, unable to cry for help.

Later on, they would be buried alive together with Jacky.

“The first batch of the Southern Union is here to see Master Jacky off.”

“The ninth batch of the Southern Union is here to see Master Jacky off.”

“The twenty-third batch of the Southern Union is here to see Master Jacky off.”

The Protector Chapter 667

The Southern Union had a total of thirty-nine branches scattered around the southern region of the country.

On that very day, all members of the union gathered to attend Jacky Lawson's funeral.

"I'm Walter Holton from Bellwater, and I'm here to see Mr. Lawson off! Mr. Cooke, I'm sorry for your loss."

"I'm Frank Carson from Faircrest, here to see Mr. Lawson off! Mr. Cooke, please accept my sincere condolences!"

"I'm Tommy Johnson from Dawnfrost, and I'm here to see Mr. Lawson off! Mr. Cooke, please don't be too sad and take care!"

...

Not only the members of the Southern Union were there, but even all the big shots from the southern region of the country were also there to attend the funeral too.

In comparison to them, the families from Quebec did not even have the right to be there.

This showed how huge and respectable an organization the Southern Union was.

But if the funeral were held in South Hampton, the event would be several times more crowded.

Meanwhile, Grover had been looking ominous throughout the whole process.

He had been much bothered by his failure to capture Levi, Zoey, and Syllas here himself.

“Grover, all the guests are here,” Johnny whispered next to his ear.

“Okay!”

After giving all the guests a scan, Grover started his speech by saying, “First of all, I would like to express my utmost gratitude for everyone to be here to attend my disciple’s funeral.”

In an instant, the entire mourning hall plunged into silence as all eyes were on him.

“To be honest, Jacky had always been the one I preferred the most out of my eight hundred disciples. In fact, I was intending to make him my successor, the next leader of Southern Union, and announce my decision during the Union Conference this year. But unfortunately...”

When he reached that part, his voice became slightly croaky. “It was totally out of my expectation that he would be killed so mercilessly in South City!”

“Revenge! Revenge! Revenge...”

“Whoever did that must be killed for his sin!”

“Whoever did that must be killed for his sin!”

...

At that moment, all the members of both Southern Union and Northern Union were chanting vehemently as they demanded to avenge Jacky’s death.

Their roaring voices was so thundering that it could be heard from afar.

The moment Grover lifted his hand in the air, they immediately stopped chanting, and the place fell silent in an instant.

“Now, I’ve captured everyone who was involved in Jacky’s death and broken all tendons in the limbs of Hades, who mercilessly took Jacky’s life! They are all kept at one place waiting to be buried together with Jacky in his tomb!”

Immediately, he changed the topic by adding, “Yet, we still have three culprits who are on the loose right now! I can’t do anything to them at the moment because they are being protected by some powerful figure. I’m so frustrated at myself for not being able to kill them on Jacky’s behalf!”

His voice was croaky as tears started streaming down his face.

“Kill them!”

“Kill them no matter who’s protecting them!”

“We have to pursue them no matter where they’re hiding, and we have to kill them!”

“They have to die!”

All the members of the union were shouting in unison.

Their faces were laden with fury.

By hook or by crook, they vowed to track them down and butcher them for having done something so humiliating to Southern Union.

Having taken a deep breath, Grover announced, "As the leader of the Southern Union, I hereby issue an order for all members to hunt them down and kill them! All branches of the union have to carry out the mission at all costs!"

Looking furious, Grover issued the order.

"Yes, sir!"

"Yes, sir!"

...

Up to a thousand members of the unions shouted their response with a burning desire to kill in their eyes.

That was how efficient things got done in Southern Union!

The members were all ready to get their hands dirty as soon as they received his instruction.

It was only then did Grover feel better.

After all, he believed it was only a matter of time before Levi and the other two were killed.

"By the way, is the guy named Levi Garrison here?" he asked.

"I suppose he must be too scared to be here because he knows he's gonna get killed as soon as he arrives!" Johnny replied.

"Who told you that I'm too scared to be here?"

At that moment, a voice was heard.

The Protector Chapter 668

The voice was loud and clear enough to be heard by everyone.

In an instant, it caught the attention of all members present there.

Right then, two figures emerged at the door of Lopez Villa.

It was Levi and White Tiger.

Even Grover appeared genuinely surprised to see them there because he didn't expect Levi would actually be here.

"They've got some guts! Johnny sneered.

"I suppose he's trying to bear the responsibility himself so that his wife won't get implicated," Yadriel opined.

"That seems to be the case because I can't see any other reason for him to be here."

Under the watchful gazes of nearly two thousand people, Levi and White Tiger made their way into the mourning hall one step at a time.

At last, they stopped around ten meters away from Grover.

Levi questioned, "Are you Grover Cooke, the leader of Southern Union?"

"Yes, I am!" Grover nodded at him before he bellowed, "Don't you think you should get on your knees now?"

“Why should I do that?” Levi countered.

“You killed my disciple as well as my other subordinates! Now, you must kneel in front of him to repent your mistakes. He shouldn’t have died!” Grover yelled at the top of his lungs.

“Kneel down and repent your mistake!”

“Do that now!”

...

Up to two thousand members of Southern Union shouted at the same time; their booming voices sounded powerful and magnificent.

Upon hearing them, Levi sneered, “Shouldn’t have died? Haha, I think he deserved it more than anyone else!”

Levi made a shocking remark that silenced the entire mourning hall.

Everyone was glaring at him resentfully.

How dare he say something like that in front of all the members of the Southern Union?

It was an outright provocation!

“You’re risking your neck!”

The Four Kings and the Six Slaves were enraged.

A look of utter disbelief appeared on Grover’s face.

“W-What did you just say? Did you say Jacky deserves to be killed?”

“That’s right! Jacky deserves to die for killing other people recklessly!” Levi said firmly.

“How dare you say things like that after killing one of us! It seems like you don’t take us seriously at all!”

Instead of looking furious, Grover laughed out loud.

It had been years since he came across someone as arrogant as Levi.

To his utter surprise, Levi nodded his head and replied, “Yes, Southern Union is indeed too small for me to take it seriously.”

Boom!

His remark sent the people in the mourning hall uproarious at once.

A babble of voices soon broke out among them as they all freaked out.

He was not allowed to say something like that!

There was no way he was allowed to make such a rude comment about them!

In fact, they could deal with Jacky’s death albeit begrudgingly, but humiliating Southern Union was a total taboo.

They had to do their best to salvage the dignity of their organization even if they had to risk their lives!

Therefore, when Levi showed how he looked down upon Southern Union, all hell broke loose.

“Kill him!”

“Bury him together with Jacky!”

“Bury him now!”

“Bury him alive!”

...

With their eyes reddened with fury, the members of the Southern Union yelled.

If it weren't because Grover had yet to instruct them to do anything, they would not hesitate to slaughter Levi on the spot.

“Hahaha... throughout the fifty years I've been with Southern Union, I've never come across anyone who didn't take it seriously. You're the first!”

“What gives you the confidence to harbor that kind of opinion?” Grover queried.

Levi chuckled as he slowly lifted both fists in the air. “It's because I have these!”

Everyone was stunned by his cocky attitude.

How arrogant was he to have the guts to do something as provocative as that in front of all the martial arts masters of Southern Union!

Indeed, he was trying to challenge the entire Southern Union, and he was clearly asking for trouble.

“Do you think you can fight all of us here with only your fists?” Grover chortled.

At that moment, White Tiger spoke, "You guys aren't worth getting his hands dirty. Let me clean up the mess!"

The Protector Chapter 669

Everyone gasped in shock when they heard him.

Most of the martial arts masters of Southern Union were a bunch of cocky men themselves, but even they had not come across someone as arrogant as the two.

Did White Tiger just threaten to kill them all on his own?

How prominent his martial arts skill must be to be so full of confidence?

“Today, I’ll leave my buddy here to handle you guys. His failure will be deemed as mine!” Levi declared with a smile.

“Very well. I must say your attitude is admirable, young man!”

Shortly later, Grover waved his hands at his men and shouted, “Guys, kill him!”

“Joshua, the Iron Fist, from the thirty-sixth branch of Southern Union volunteering for this mission!”

“Gregory, the Golden Sword, from the seventeenth branch of Southern Union reporting for duty!”

“Finnley, the Crippled Man, from the twenty-eighth branch of Southern Union volunteering for this mission!”

...

Immediately all the martial arts masters of the union were fervently asking to be assigned the mission.

Meanwhile, White Tiger beckoned them over and barked, “You guys may fight me together!”

“He’s clearly tired of living!”

Soon, around ten martial arts masters of the union charged toward him.

They were the top martial arts masters of the union who were considered better fighters than Scott Yates’s Four Mighty Generals.

Therefore, their joined force would be an invincible one!

Thump! Thump! Thump!

Yet, it only took White Tiger a short time to send those prominent martial arts masters flying away.

Everyone gaped at the scene in utter disbelief.

“He’s indeed something! Let’s go and take him!”

The rest of the martial arts masters of the union immediately advanced upon White Tiger, but none of them was his match.

One after another, they were flung some distance away by him.

Hundreds of them were soon defeated.

This time, the entire Southern Union was left flabbergasted.

Their eyes were filled with astonishment seeing how incredibly powerful White Tiger was.

None of them in the union was his match.

How scary is that?

“Six Slaves, go on and teach him a lesson!”

Looking ominous, Grover waved his hand and commanded.

The Six Slaves then complied with his instruction by attacking White Tiger at the same time.

At last, it turned out that they were only slightly better than the last batch because they lasted just a bit longer. However, they were, too, sent flying away.

“Let’s deal with him together!”

Icy glint shone in the eyes of the Four Kings.

Every single one of them was strong enough to take on the God of War independently.

Therefore, it meant White Tiger was going to fight four equivalents of the God of War at the same time.

The five of them soon embroiled in an intense fight.

Explosions occurred in the air continuously, and the tiles on the floor started cracking because of the intensity of the battle.

Every single attack they executed was powerful enough to blast anything into halves.

Bang!

Bang!

Bang!

Bang!

In the end, White Tiger successfully tamed the four of them.

Slumping on the floor, the four of them appeared nonplussed.

Needless to say, they were great martial arts masters as they had started training since they were little.

But since White Tiger was someone who had defeated the God of War of L Nation before, they had failed to handle the he who was standing in front of them.

Who is he?

Why is he so incredibly strong?

Thus far, he was the strongest fighter they had ever encountered.

All the members of Southern Union, both onstage and offstage, were staring at White Tiger alarmingly.

Surprisingly, they were scared!

They actually feared the presence of White Tiger!

Just like what he had said earlier, he really managed to handle all of them on his own.

The people of Southern Union were curious about where this person was from as they had never seen anyone as strong as him before.

At that moment, White Tiger let out a howl in relish.

Ever since he retired from the frontline, he had never had such a great time sparring with other people.

Levi, too, broke into a grin.

Being the most combative among the Five Great Wars Regiment, Levi knew the peaceful days lately must have bored him badly.

Therefore, this came as the best opportunity for him to get a kick out of it.

At that moment, Grover looked stupefied as he eyed both White Tiger and Levi with disbelief.

White Tiger lay his eyes upon him and shouted, "I was told that you're the best fighter of Southern Union. Now, come and battle me!"

Yet, Grover remained motionless.

After staring at the two of them dazedly for a moment, he asked, "Are you guys from the army?"

The Protector Chapter 670

Being the leader of the Southern Union, Grover managed to detect some issues after observing the battle the whole time.

In fact, martial arts skills were learned to kill instead of to perform.

Therefore, all the martial arts masters of Southern Union were taught only moves that were lethal enough to kill.

Yet, he found that White Tiger's moves were simpler yet more efficient.

None of his moves were redundant, and every movement of his was capable to kill.

Anyone who was attacked by him would end up either getting injured or dying.

Also, he noticed that White Tiger's movements were more inclined to practicality.

Anyone who knew enough about martial arts could discern that White Tiger's moves were honed to be both efficient and practical through countless battles.

In short, only someone from the army could have such a straightforward combat style.

Immediately, Grover realized that Levi and White Tiger must be two prominent fighters from the army.

At first, he only assumed Levi and Zoey were protected by the army, but little did he know, Levi turned out to be from the military himself.

The rest of the members of Southern Union took a sharp intake of breath when the truth struck them.

“You’re really observant!” White Tiger complimented in astonishment.

Although his speculation was verified, Grover suddenly became edgy.

What kind of status could they have in the army having such powerful combative skills?

“A-Are... A-Are you guys working for the God of War?” Grover asked them in a trembling voice.

It went without saying that he knew that the God of War had gone into seclusion in North Hampton at the moment.

At this moment, he could only associate White Tiger and Levi to the God of War judging from how great they were in martial arts.

White Tiger commented with a smile, “Levi, he’s spot-on!”

“Your guess’s right! I’m White Tiger, one of the Five Great Wars Regiment, who works for the God of War!”

“Say what?”

“Goodness gracious, he’s White Tiger – the King of War!”

Everyone within the Southern Union went wild when they heard that.

White Tiger was well-known for his mercilessness on the battlefield.

He was famous worldwide for his effort in wiping out the entire L Nation together with the Cavalry Regiment.

Many of them in the Southern Union worshiped him like a deity because he achieved greatness in wars.

Tap, tap, tap...

When White Tiger's identity came to light, Grover stumbled a few steps backward and almost collapsed onto the floor.

At that moment, he was seized by an urge to kill himself on the spot knowing that he was dealing with White Tiger.

How about this guy over here?

When a horrendous thought popped up in his mind, he slumped to the floor immediately.

He dreaded to even look up at Levi.

"I guess all of you here must be able to see who my boss really is. Yes, he's indeed the God of War – Levi Garrison!"

The moment White Tiger made that announcement, it was as though the world just stopped spinning.

Time halted, and everything went still.

Everyone thought the scene looked too surreal as though they were in a dream.

"Now I realize why the Gates family and the Caesar family collapsed..."

At the moment, Grover's eyes looked hollow and blank.

Also, it dawned upon him that the woman Jacky had tried to invite over here before this was actually the God of War's wife...

Upon that, he realized he would not be able to redeem himself for offending the God of War so terribly.

“It’s my honor to meet you, God of War!”

“It’s my honor to meet you, God of War!”

Grover, who finally figured everything out, cued the entire Southern Union to kneel in front of Levi and greeted him respectfully.

“We were wrong! We made a grave mistake, and we are willing to receive any punishment for that! Also, I’ll bear the responsibility for what Jacky had done!” Grover pleaded.

As powerful as Southern Union was, it was nothing in the presence of the God of War.

On top of that, White Tiger had made everyone well aware of his capability just now.

He was able to finish them off on his own!

Therefore, Grover was certain that all of them would be doomed if they refused to show Levi the white flag.

At a steady pace, Levi made his way toward Grover and said, “In fact, I already thought of the punishment for y’all several days ago!”

“What?!”

The Protector Chapter 671

Everyone was stunned beyond words.

As it turned out, the God of War did not take them seriously at all, to begin with, and he had long had a plan ready to deal with them.

“God of War, we’re ready to receive your punishment!” Grover responded.

“Very well. From now on you guys are only allowed to carry out legal business!”

“We can do that!”

“You guys are not allowed to kill recklessly!”

“We can do that!”

“On the other hand, I want a share of your business profit to fund the military expense, and you have to do that every year from now on. Are you okay with that?”

“I’m okay!”

Grover agreed without hesitation.

Levi glanced at the martial arts masters of the union and commented, “All of you here are abusing your talents by using it to bully people who aren’t physically trained. Don’t you guys feel ashamed of that? You guys should’ve just joined the frontline to defend the country! It will be a waste of your talent to stay here doing nothing!”

“All men in Erudia should be men of indomitable spirits whose priority is contributing to the country. This applies even more so for all of you here who possess immense talent!”

Everyone glanced at one another dazedly as they slowly began to understand what Levi’s plan was all about.

Firstly, he wanted them to surrender all the dirty money they had earned over the years to fund the army.

Secondly, he wanted all of the martial arts masters to join the army and contribute to the country.

“Are you guys not willing to do that?” Levi questioned them with a smile.

“We’re willing to join the army!”

“In fact, I’m getting tired of this quiet life I’ve been leading! I should have joined the army sooner to defend my country!”

“Yes, I should use my talent at the right place!”

Levi’s words received a positive response from them.

In fact, some among them did not think that joining the army a great idea, but in the presence of the God of War, they had no choice but to agree.

Excitement was surging in Levi’s blood when he stared at the crowd of martial arts masters in front of him.

He started picturing a troop formed by them and what sort of effect that would have.

He was sure they would be invincible!

They would be undefeatable especially in carrying out ambushes and invasions.

Since every single one of them possessed their own unique skill, he believed they would be able to dominate the battlefield.

Right at that moment, the war at the country's south border happened to be in a critical situation.

If he dispatched a troop consisting of the members of the Southern Union there, he was sure they would be able to make a huge difference.

This had been his plan all along.

“Since every one of you has agreed to join the army, I'll start briefing you guys about what's next!” “I'll line you guys up and form a troop with the name of 'Beasts', and I'll be the direct commander of it.”

“You guys are to gather at the South Warzone tomorrow where each and every one of you will go through a special training!” “During the training, you guys will be helped to get rid of your bad habits and will gain military knowledge to become a better soldier!” Levi announced.

Although these guys were talented, they were still amateurish.

Hence, he would entrust Kirin with the duty of transforming them into an invincible troop.

“Understood!” all of them shouted in unison.

The thought of becoming soldiers directly under the command of the God of War had never occurred to any of them.

Even those who were unwilling to join the army just now started counting themselves lucky because they had landed the dream job for many of the male population within the country.

On the other hand, Levi did not compel the Four Kings and the Six Slaves into joining him, because after all, they worked directly for Grover.

At the same time, he needed to count on them to generate more profit to fund his army.

Just like that, Southern Union was tamed by Levi in the most unexpected fashion.

After getting it done, Levi returned to the office appearing as though nothing much had taken place.

To his surprise, Zoey came to visit him.

“Can we talk?”

It was only reasonable for her to be suspicious of the things that had happened so fast lately.

Hence, she saw the need to ask for an explanation from Levi.

When she arrived at his room, she confronted him, “Levi Garrison, how many more secrets are you hiding from me?”

The air was charged with tension in an instant.

The Protector Chapter 672

Levi answered her with a smile, "I'm not hiding anything from you."

"You aren't being truthful to me. What happened last night? Why did the man who protected me ask Syllas to meet you?"

"There's something very suspicious with the things that happened lately because you seemed to be able to resolve all problems that came your way."

"I reckon you must have got something to do with everything." Zoey suddenly raised her voice at him.

"Did you really spend the past few years in jail? Why do I find it so unconvincing?" she pressed on.

In fact, Levi had left enough traces behind after doing things for Zoey to discern if she paid enough attention to it.

Things had become especially obvious after Hades revealed plenty of stuff the previous night when he accidentally blurted out the location of the headquarter.

"Zoey, what're the two of you discussing?"

At that juncture, Iris suddenly pushed the door open and interrupted their conversation.

"Huh? Nothing too important. What's up, Iris?" Zoey asked, looking surprised by her visit.

“Oh... I was just thinking – since I’ve finished with the task at North Hampton, I’ll move here where all the important work will be done,” Iris explained.

“By the way, there’s something important that I have to share with you, Zoey. The boss of the Morris Group will reveal himself by making a public appearance soon!”

Upon hearing what she said, Zoey started getting excited about it too. She was very curious to see how that mysterious man actually looked. Not only that, but she also wanted to learn about the reason he had been so willing to help Levi and her on so many occasions before.

“Levi, have you met him before? He told everyone that he is going to make a public appearance at your wedding ceremony!” Iris asked.

“Say what?!”

Zoey, too, eyed Levi with astonishment right after Iris posed him that question.

In fact, she had been suspecting Levi of having a close relationship with the boss of the Morris Group.

Now, what Iris said just cemented her speculation.

Levi nodded at her and replied, “Yes, we kinda know each other.”

“Please tell me what kind of a man he’s like!” Iris requested.

“I think I should keep it a secret for the time being. You will be able to make a judgment yourself on the day of our wedding ceremony!” Levi responded.

Iris went speechless; Zoey and she both glared at him resentfully.

Morris Group had officially ventured its business in South City. Besides, with the help of Oriental Star Group, the company managed to build a solid foundation in the city, which made work easier for Iris.

Therefore, she was able to enjoy the leisure days to follow.

At the same time, the preparation for Levi and Zoey's wedding ceremony had been ongoing in an orderly manner.

The preparation mainly centered on the renovation and construction of their family home.

In the meantime, the business of Morris Group was heading on the right track to slowly replace the electrical products produced by Triple Group in the market with their own.

Products like smartphones and laptops produced by the company were ready to be released to the market.

On the other hand, two movies and a drama produced exquisitely by Oriental Star Group were about to be aired soon, too.

Helena Engler, as well as other celebrities, were hired to be the ambassadors for the electrical products of Morris Group.

The future looked bright as the businesses in different fields were benefitting one another.

In the meantime, Levi had been spending every single day enjoying tea and smoking because he knew all he had to do was to reveal his identity at the wedding ceremony.

As for Zoey and Iris, they preferred to focus their attention on the business instead of making the effort to care about what he did.

With the two hardcore businesswomen around, Levi would have a comfortable life without the need to do anything.

One day, Abigail visited him all of a sudden.

“What are you doing here?” Levi asked her in consternation.

“I’m going to start my internship soon!” Abigail replied with excitement.

“Why don’t you just intern in North Hampton? There are so many more companies there than in South City,” Levi said.

Abigail glimpsed at him and countered, “Of course, I have to come here because you’re not staying in North Hampton.”

“Eh? What has it got to do with me?” Levi looked puzzled and resigned.

“Someone at school told me that you’ve divorced Zoey. Is that true?”

“Yes, it is.”

“If that’s the case, can I start dating you now?”

Levi went speechless in response.

The Protector Chapter 673

Pfft!

As soon as he heard Abigail's answer, Levi spurted out the entire mouthful of tea he just drank.

"What's wrong with that? Why can't I date you now that you're single after the divorce?"

Abigail stared at him confusedly.

Levi responded with a smile, "I'm indeed single, but I think you should get Zoey's permission first before asking me out."

"Well, I'll do that now!"

Abigail left after that.

When she was in North Hampton, she was so thrilled to hear about Levi's divorce that she actually lost some sleep for several nights because of that.

She couldn't wait to make her way over to South City so she could start dating Levi!

Finally, her golden opportunity came.

She immediately visited Levi when it was time for her to do her internship.

Zoey was having a business discussion with Iris when Abigail visited her room.

“Abigail, how come you’re here? What’s the matter?” she questioned with a trace of astonishment in her voice.

“Yes, I have a question for you!”

Abigail spoke with a poker-faced expression.

“Let me give you girls some space.” With that, Iris prepared to leave the room.

“Iris, you may stay.”

Then, Abigail looked at Zoey and asked, “Zoey, are you and Levi divorced?”

“Yes. I even received the certificate of it.”

“Since both of you are single now, may I ask him out?”

Her question came as such a shock for both Zoey and Iris that their eyes widened in disbelief.

Is this girl crazy? I can’t believe she’s going to ask Levi out.

That was what both of them were secretly thinking at that time.

“Abigail, are you serious?”

Zoey staggered backward as she asked Abigail in a quivering voice.

Abigail nodded at her and affirmed, “I’m serious! I think he’s a nice guy who fits most of the requirements of my ideal man. Since he’s single now, I’m going to ask him out!”

Iris bit her lips in anxiety.

At that moment, she found herself resonating with Abigail because she, too, thought Levi was a nice guy.

Ever since he had saved her life that night, she had changed her views on him.

Yet, Zoey snapped with a crease on her forehead, “No, you can’t do that!”

“Huh?” Abigail appeared puzzled.

“Zoey, why can’t I? I mean, he’s single now!”

“Even though we’ve divorced, he’s still your brother-in-law! It’s inappropriate of you to date him, and it’s weird! Also, you should really focus on your studies since you’re still a student,” Zoey spoke sternly.

“I’m no longer a kid because I’m graduating soon. Besides, I have the right to ask him out as long as he’s single. Now that you are no longer his wife, you have no authority to stop me from dating him!”

Abigail looked determined.

No one could stop her from doing things that she had set her mind to!

Seeing how resolute she appeared, Zoey let out a sigh.

Why didn’t I notice Abby had a thing for Levi back then?

How on earth did she fall in love with him?

“Zoey, I’ll ask him out if you can’t give me any valid reason,” Abigail vowed.

“I…”

Zoey struggled to come up with an answer.

Fortunately, Iris came to her rescue. “Abigail, the truth is, someone else from your family filed for the divorce on their behalf. In fact, Zoey and Levi are still together now, and they will remarry each other soon. In fact, Levi’s been busy organizing a wedding ceremony for your sister lately! That’s to say they aren’t divorcing each other!”

“Say what?”

The moment Abigail learned about the truth, she fixed an incredulous gaze at Zoey.

Things went so tense and awkward that Zoey dreaded to even meet her eyes.

Bang!

Abigail stormed out of the door with tears dribbling down her face.

Because of the misunderstanding, things went rather awkward between the three of them.

After the incident, both Zoey and Levi decided not to go out and search for her.

However, a mishap befell Abigail when the night fell.

The Protector Chapter 674

After their awkward encounter, Levi and Zoey didn't go out and search for Abigail, preferring to give her some space.

However, when night fell, there was still no news from Abigail.

She hadn't gone back to her house, and the people at her usual haunts reported that they hadn't seen her all day.

She seemed to have disappeared without a trace.

The Black family was thrown into chaos.

"Abigail told us she's coming back today. Why isn't she answering her phone, and why is there no trace of her anywhere? Did something happen to her?"

Bailey and Pamela were so frightened that they burst into tears.

Beside them, Meredith and Robert broke out in cold sweat.

Zoey was so anxious that she was nearly crying.

"This is all my fault..." she murmured, silently castigating herself.

She would never forgive herself if something had really happened to Abigail.

Iris tried to calm her down. "This has nothing to do with you. Nobody would have thought that Abigail's crush on Levi was real..."

Zoey let out a series of miserable sighs.

When Levi caught wind of the fact that Abigail was missing, he immediately sent his men out on a city-wide search for her.

The whole city was on the lookout for the missing girl.

Levi felt extremely guilty. This would never have happened if he hadn't sent Abigail to look for Zoey.

How was he to know that Abigail was truly in love with himself?

She was really in love with him...

If something had happened to Abigail, he would never be able to forgive himself.

Unknown to everyone, Abigail was currently drinking herself silly in a private bar.

After the sadness of the day's events, she had gathered a few of her friends from high school and headed to the bar to drink her woes away.

After drinking the entire night away, Abigail was completely drunk.

If it hadn't been for her friends who had held her back, she would have been wasted a long time ago.

At that moment, however, a few more ex-classmates arrived to join their little group. They were all muscular and built, and the average height between them seemed to be roughly 1.9 meters.

They had been in the same class as Abigail in high school and were now studying in sports schools.

Upon hearing that Abigail had drunk herself silly in a bar, they quickly came over.

Their leader was a man named Drake Lindon. He had developed a huge crush on Abigail in high school.

He had been the school bully back then and had used to force himself upon whichever girl he happened to fancy.

However, he had never dared to lay his hands on Abigail, the Black family's precious daughter.

When it came to Abigail, he could only try to woo her like a respectable suitor.

However, she had rejected him in the end.

It had been many years since, but Drake still hadn't gotten over the idea of luring her into his bed.

When he found out that Abigail was drinking in a bar, he had took off for the bar immediately.

Seeing her lovely, intoxicated figure, Drake felt a strong rush of excitement.

Abigail, you won't be able to escape from me tonight!

Drake knew that, for all her scandalous drinking habits, Abigail was an exceedingly conservative person.

If he got her to sleep with him, Abigail would have no choice but to marry him.

When that happened, Drake would become the son-in-law of the Rogers, the most prestigious family in North Hampton, and the Blacks.

Thinking about this drove him nearly crazy with desire.

Turning to Abigail, he said, "Abigail, let's drink until we're drunk tonight!"

He poured her a drink.

Try as they might, the girls couldn't hold him back.

What Abigail needed most now was wine to drown her sorrows in. Drake managed to convince her to down a few more glasses of wine until she passed out completely.

Drake had already booked the hotel room in advance. Now, all he needed to do was to find a way to bring her there.

While that was going on in the bar, a manhunt for Abigail Rogers was happening in South City.

The disciples of the underworld and the Southern Union were combing the entire city for any sign of the missing girl.

Phoenix and Russell had joined the search, too.

At that moment, Levi received a lead from Derek. "Mr. Garrison, my men have found her. She's currently at Majesty Private Bar."

Hearing this, Levi made his way to Majesty Private Bar immediately.

At the bar, Drake had grown tired of waiting. Trying to get everyone to leave, he announced, "We've all been drinking too much. Everyone, take your friends home first. I'll send Abigail back to her house."

A few of the girls tried to protest. "No, we'll send her back home!"

Drake glowered angrily at them. "Trying to go up against me, aren't you? I already said I'll send her home!"

The girls could only watch helplessly as Drake led a drunk Abigail towards the exit.

Bang!

Just as Drake was about to drag her out of the door, someone gave the door a kick, and it flew open with a loud crash.

The Protector Chapter 675

A man walked into the room, a stormy expression on his face.

Without a single word, Levi walked over to Abigail and picked her up in his arms before leaving the room.

Levi had acted so quickly that Drake and his cronies had no time to react until he had already disappeared out of the door.

When they recovered from their shock, they immediately dashed out of the room and caught up to Levi and Abigail.

Accosting them in the front yard of the bar, Drake and his men surrounded them to stop them from leaving.

Drake bellowed, "Who the hell are you? Where do you think you're going with this girl?"

He was very angry indeed. He had already arranged for a hotel room beforehand and had successfully managed to make Abigail drink herself drunk after a great deal of effort.

However, this stranger had thrown a wrench in his plans by whisking Abigail away right under his nose.

To Drake, this was intolerable.

Levi was undeterred. "Don't test my patience," he warned. "I'm not in a very good mood right now."

He didn't want to start a fight with these kids.

Drake refused to back down. "Tell me who you are! And put that girl down—she's my ex-classmate!"

His cronies glared at Levi, preparing to strike.

"I'm her brother-in-law, and I'm here to pick her up," Levi replied, completely nonplussed.

"Huh?" Drake was so shocked that he felt rather dazed.

This man was Abigail's family member?

If that was true, there was no way Drake's plans were going to succeed!

However, he wasn't about to let go of this golden opportunity so easily.

He had to succeed in getting Abigail into bed with him!

Foolishly, Drake bellowed, "Abigail's brother-in-law? I've never heard of you! Put her down right now and get out of my sight immediately!"

Levi scoffed. "Get out of my way! I don't want to hurt you guys."

Hearing this, Drake burst into laughter.

He was specially trained in mixed martial arts and wrestling at school.

There was nobody he couldn't beat in a fight.

Did this man seriously think that he was going to be able to defeat him?

How laughable!

Drake tried again. "Put her down immediately! We have to guarantee her safety."

To his chagrin, Levi simply ignored him and walked away with Abigail still in his arms.

Thoroughly annoyed by now, Drake roared at his men, "After him!"

Because Drake and his cronies were all from sports schools, they were pretty confident that they would be able to take down Levi in a fight. They rushed towards him, preparing to strike him down.

At that moment, a loud bang sounded as the gates of the main entrance collapsed.

A crowd of people rushed into the yard. All of them looked tall and threatening, and some of them were even armed with weapons.

Very quickly, the entire yard filled up as hundreds more people flooded in through the broken gates.

The number of people in the yard continued increasing without any sign of stopping. More reinforcements were waiting to enter outside.

This flurry of activity sent Drake into a panic.

Had these people been summoned by Abigail's brother-in-law?

Levi announced coldly, "Take care not to kill them."

"Beat them up now!"

A few hundred people dashed up to Drake and his men and surrounded them. The people in the innermost ring of the circle started beating them up without mercy.

Levi carried Abigail all the way home, where he and Zoey watched over her the entire night.

The next morning, Zoey left before Abigail woke up. Before she stepped out of the room, however, she instructed Levi to stay behind.

“You must make your intentions clear to her!” she said.

She didn’t want Abigail to do anything so silly again.

When Abigail finally woke up, the first thing she saw was Levi’s face.

“Levi, you...” Her words trailed off awkwardly as she didn’t know what to say.

Levi asked gently, “Do you know what happened to you yesterday night?”

“I think I drank a little too much...” Abigail replied sheepishly, massaging her throbbing head.

Levi pretended to be angry and said, “In the future, you’re not allowed to drink outside, or have your phone switched off! Even if you wanted to drink your sorrows away, there was no reason for you to behave like that. Do you know how worried the whole family was? You put yourself in so much danger yesterday night!”

Abigail laughed to hide her awkwardness. “Drinking my sorrows away? I hope you and Zoey didn’t take yesterday’s matter too seriously. I was just joking! I can’t believe the both of you actually believed me.”

“Good. In the future, listen to us and keep yourself out of trouble!” Levi said, smiling.

Abigail nodded.

The next moment, however, there was a swoosh of blankets, and Abigail had thrown her arms around him.

Levi froze and looked at her in disbelief.

:

The Protector Chapter 676

Too afraid to move, he remained completely still. “What—what are you doing?”

“Stop talking! Let me hug you for just ten minutes. For these few minutes, you belong to me.”

Hearing this, Levi stopped himself from breaking free of her grasp. He simply stood still and let her hug him silently.

After ten minutes, Abigail let go of him.

That very day, Abigail left South City for her internship in South Hampton.

Both South City or North Hampton contained her memories of Levi, and she needed to leave them behind for a while.

In the end, the three parties involved wrapped up the incident with a laugh.

However, all of them knew exactly what had gone on in Abigail’s heart.

With the help of the Black family, Abigail arrived at her lodgings in one of the five-star hotels of South Hampton.

When she walked into the lobby, however, she immediately heard someone mention Levi’s name.

Immediately, she stopped in her tracks and listened to their conversation intently.

A few people were chatting on the sofas nearby.

“Are you sure? Is he really called Levi Garrison?”

“Yes! This man was adopted by the Garrison family of North Hampton. He was an orphan before that.”

“He has been missing since he was a kid. I can’t believe they finally found him in North Hampton! They actually found the kid!”

“Exactly! I only heard about this recently because the Gates and the Caesars have gone down to South City to make trouble again...”

...

Hearing this, a rush of excitement coursed through Abigail’s veins.

What?

Are they talking about my brother-in-law’s birth family?

Are Levi’s birth parents and family in South Hampton?

Although Abigail had known for a long time that Levi was an orphan, nobody had ever mentioned his birth family to her.

She couldn’t believe that she had discovered such an important piece of information about him in South Hampton.

She wondered if she should call Levi and inform him.

However, after deliberating on it for a long time, she decided not to tell him.

After all, she had already made up her mind to forget him. It would be best if she refrained from contacting Levi for the time being.

The Edburg Manor in South Hampton had been built in an architectural style that was distinctly German. Within it, stately villas stood like trees in a forest.

This was the family home of the Joneses, who were one of the royal families in South Hampton.

The Joneses were one of the few clans that had actually earned their position. They were much more powerful than the average aristocratic family.

Even members of the Gates family had to humble themselves before the Joneses.

Their enormous wealth alone wasn't enough to illustrate the massive scale of their achievements and power.

Like the other royal families, the Joneses understood the importance of having family members in every sector of society ranging from the business world to politics to the military.

Only by extending the sphere of their influence in society could they maintain their powerful position for generations to come.

When it came to their offspring, things became even more complicated. Determined to ensure the proliferation of their clan, the Joneses men left their seed everywhere they went.

At that moment, someone dashed into Edburg Manor, yelling as he went. "Bad news, Mr. Jones, bad news!"

The head of the Jones family, Michael Jones, was seated in the drawing room, his legs crossed like a Turk. He was sipping tea slowly, his brows furrowed in deep thought.

Recently, the Joneses had encountered a difficult issue. As powerful as he was, even Michael was unable to find a solution for it.

A dark cloud hung over the entire Jones family as everyone wondered how the matter was going to be resolved.

Hearing the loud yells of the man, Michael frowned in disapproval.

The housekeeper beside him hissed angrily, "Who's that making such a racket? How utterly disgraceful!"

Very quickly, the person had arrived in the drawing room. Kneeling before Michael, he said, "Mr. Jones, I've discovered something of utmost importance!"

Michael looked up from his teacup and gazed directly at the man. "Well, what have you discovered?"

"Do you still remember Miss Emma's son? The one who was called Levi!"

Hearing this, Michael shot up from his seat. His bulging eyes were full of disbelief.

Utterly shocked, he demanded, "What do you mean by Emma's son? Didn't he die of exposure on the streets a long time ago? How is he still alive?"

The man replied, "He's still alive! After he was abandoned in the streets of North Hampton, the Garrison family took him in and raised him as their own. When I went down to South City to investigate the conflict between the Gates and the Caesars, I coincidentally discovered that he's still living there. He's still alive, Sir!"

"So my grandson is still alive?" Michael asked, bewildered.

Levi Garrison was the son of Emma Jones.

That made Michael his maternal grandfather!

"Send our men down to fetch him back quickly!"

The Protector Chapter 677

Hearing Michael's urgent demand, the man replied immediately, "Got it, Mr. Jones. I'll send our men to find him now!"

After he left, the housekeeper walked up to Michael and said, "Mr. Jones, if Levi Garrison is truly Miss Emma's son, there's an idea I'd like to propose."

Michael understood her words immediately. Rather nonplussed, he said, "Do you mean that Levi can help resolve our family's problem?"

The housekeeper smiled and said, "Exactly! If he comes back and claims his place among us, we can simply make him accept the punishment on our behalf. That's one big problem resolved for us!"

Hearing this, Michael smiled as well. "There is a God, after all!"

"What a coincidence that Miss Emma's son showed up just as our family was facing this problem! The gods must have sent him to help us!"

In South City, life returned to normal for Levi and Zoey after Abigail left.

However, there was a feeling of unease in the air.

One day, the head of the security detail, Seth Wilson, gave Levi a call. "Mr. Garrison, there's someone looking for you downstairs!"

"Looking for me?" Levi felt a little startled.

When he arrived at the plaza in front of his office, Levi found a Rolls-Royce waiting for him.

Seth pointed at the car and said, "That's them, Mr. Garrison!"

At that moment, a few people got off the car and walked towards them.

The leader, a middle-aged man, looked at Levi and exclaimed in surprise, "Are you Mr. Levi Garrison?"

"Yes, that's me." Levi was very confused. He didn't know any of these people at all.

"Would you happen to be the orphan taken in by the Garrison family?"

Levi asked, "Yes, is something the matter?"

Clasping Levi's hands warmly, the middle-aged man shed a few tears of happiness. "Mr. Levi Garrison, we've finally found you!"

"You might not know this, but after you went missing as a child, our family spared no effort in searching for you! We finally found you today..."

The middle-aged man's expression did not change even as he lied straight to Levi's face.

Actually, they had found out about his location by a mere coincidence.

The Jones family had never bothered to search for him at all.

Given how powerful they were, they could've found him in a jiffy if they wanted to.

Besides, Levi was very famous in North Hampton.

He looked at the men and frowned. "Who are you guys?"

“Mr. Garrison, we’re from the Jones family in South Hampton. My name is Julian Jones. The current head of the family is Mr. Michael Jones, your biological grandfather!”

Hearing this, Levi froze in shock.

That unfamiliar word sent shock waves rippling through his body.

When Levi was old enough to start remembering things, he was already an orphan.

At that time, he had sworn to himself that he would never go looking for his biological family!

If they were cruel enough to have abandoned him, why should he bother to strike up a relationship with them now?

There was no need for him to search for them.

He was fighting for the glory of the Garrison family, and living for the sake of Zoey Lopez.

As far as Levi was concerned, he had no biological parents or family.

Actually, considering his status in South Hampton now, it would be the easiest thing in the world for Levi to find out who his biological parents were.

However, he had never done it.

They had abandoned him, and he was determined to steer clear of them for the rest of his life.

Hearing Julian mention the word ‘grandfather’, Levi was extremely stunned.

Julian smiled. “Mr. Garrison, please pack your things and return to South Hampton with us to claim your position as the young master of the Jones family! The Jones family is one of the royal families of South Hampton. Once you enter our family, you’ll have the whole of Quebec under your thumb!”

These weren’t empty words.

Rather, it was a promise that only a royal family like the Joneses could make.

They were quite different from the Gates and the Caesars.

The Jones family had no interest in Quebec. To them, it was too small of an enterprise to be worthy of their attention.

Julian handed Levi a credit card. “To prove that we’re really from the Jones family, here’s a bank card from Mr. Michael Jones. Treat this as your pocket money—there’s one hundred million in it!”

He swiped it on a nearby card reader, and found that it really did contain one hundred million.

Julian was quite confident that Levi wouldn’t turn down their offer.

The Protector Chapter 678

He refused to believe that anyone would reject an offer like this.

Which ordinary person would refuse an offer to become the young master of one of the royal families overnight?

From then on, they would have unapparelled power. Backed by the status of the Jones family, they would be able to lord it over everyone else.

They could have as much money, women and power as they wanted.

Their every need would be satisfied.

Who would reject such an opportunity?

To Julian's surprise, Levi turned him down without so much as glancing at the bank card.

Coldly, he snapped, "Please go back. I have no relation to the Joneses. In fact, I have no parents or relatives from that family!"

Huh?

His answer stunned Julian and the other men into silence.

They all looked at him in shock.

How could he have rejected their offer?

It was a once-in-a-lifetime opportunity for him to get his hands on one hundred million, and he had turned it down?

Was there something wrong with his brain?

“Remember this. Forget this ever happened, and don’t ever come back to find me in the future!”

With that, Levi turned around and left.

“...” Julian looked extremely chagrined.

He had really turned them down!

Turning to his subordinates, he demanded in confusion, “What’s going on?”

“He won’t turn us down! In fact, he’s just playing hard to get. If he had simply accepted our offer, he would come across as weak-willed and greedy. He probably really wanted to say yes!”

“Exactly! He’s a smart person. He knew we were going to come and look for him one day, so he purposely put on airs and acted as though he didn’t care about our offer.”

His subordinates analyzed the situation, suddenly feeling more confident.

Julian nodded. “That’s what I think, too. Nobody has ever been able to resist the temptation of becoming the young master of the Jones family!”

Someone butted in, “Perhaps he thinks the entire Jones family is beneath him!”

“How’s that possible? It takes someone of incredible power to demean us like this. How could he have that sort of courage?”

“Right? He might have Quebec in the palm of his hands, but that’s nothing compared to the Jones family! What a joke.”

“Besides, we’ve investigated his background thoroughly. All he does is sit around and make merry all day!”

Hearing this, they all burst into laughter.

Very quickly, news of Levi’s rejection came back to Michael Jones.

“What? He pretended that we’re beneath him and turned down our offer?” Michael asked in disbelief.

With their offer of money, Michael had thought they had Levi Garrison in the bag.

The housekeeper laughed, “Mr. Jones, he’s just acting coy. He probably wants us to invite him a few more times!”

“Alright, let’s satisfy that desire of his! After all, he has finally become useful to us!”

With that, he announced, “Tell all the males of this family to gather up for a meeting!”

Quickly, three generations of the Jones family’s males filed into the drawing room.

Only Michael and a few of the elders were seated comfortably in chairs. The rest of them remained standing.

Everyone had a downcast expression of their face. It was evident that they were all worrying about the Jones family’s recent troubles.

“I have something to announce to all of you. We’ve finally found Emma’s long-lost son!”

A murmur rang through the crowd.

Everyone looked up at Michael in shock.

“The boy who was abandoned by the Garrisons has been found?” asked Michael’s oldest son, Daniel Jones.

The housekeeper replied, “Yes! Mr. Jones has already sent his men to fetch him back.”

The younger boys giggled mirthfully. “What’s the point of bringing a homeless man back into our family? He can’t contribute anything to this family.”

Michael thundered, “That’s rubbish! If we accept him back into our family, he’ll be my biological grandson! Won’t he be considered a legitimate heir to the Jones family then?”

Everyone concurred. “Yes!”

Michael continued, “Since he’ll be a legitimate heir to our family, we can send him to bear the punishment on our behalf! No one can say anything about that!”

“Oh my gosh, is that true?”

The Protector Chapter 679

Everyone in the Jones family was ecstatic.

The problem that had been pestering them for so long was finally going to be resolved.

As people always say – when there's a will, there's a way. In this case, they've found Michael Jones' grandson.

The younger ones were especially excited, so much so that they almost screamed out loud.

At last, they've managed to find a scapegoat.

Recently, the Jones family had gotten involved in a deadly feud during their business trip to Quebec. They had provoked a certain warlord in Quebec and were severely punished by the local military.

The compensation was fifty billion. Not only did they have to expend profits from multiple projects, but they also had to send 10 people from the Jones family to prison for a sentence of 30 years.

Those who would be sent to prison were basically giving up their lives.

The living conditions in the prison were hellish. The prisoners there were tortured every day and usually died a few months after imprisonment.

Besides having to send 10 members of the family to prison, another condition they had to fulfill was that among the 10 members, two of them had to be a male and a female who were direct descendants of the main family.

This was to appease the warlord.

The people who had to suffer needed to be from the main branch of the Jones family, so other branches of said family couldn't substitute them.

Michael wasn't willing to let his sons and grandsons suffer.

He didn't want them to die in vain.

Each one of them were the Jones family's future.

They were his precious sons and grandsons.

Patriarchal thinking was deeply ingrained within the Jones family.

The female descendant had already been decided. Even though it was Michael's own granddaughter, he had no qualms sending her over.

However, he was reluctant when it came to the male descendants.

The Joneses have been struggling with this matter for the past few days.

Now that another grandson has appeared, he could replace them as a scapegoat.

They were finally able to work out a solution.

They hurriedly asked, "Grandpa, where is this person? We need to bring him over immediately."

Michael smiled and replied, "You all won't need to worry about this. I've already sent some people to pick him up."

The eldest son, Daniel Jones, had questions of his own. "Dad, I don't think it's a good idea to use Levi as a scapegoat recklessly. If the Garrison family finds out, the blame is...."

"Don't worry about it. He's been abandoned by the Garrison family. Otherwise, why has the Garrison family not searched for him even once in the past 20 years? There's no such person in the Garrison family tree! We don't have to worry about anything."

Everyone was relieved when they heard Michael's definitive answer.

The Jones family problem was finally resolved.

No one could say anything if Michael's grandson, Levi, was sent to prison.

"Dad, you must have been doing a lot of good deeds to receive God's blessing like this," Daniel stated with a smile.

"That's right. Did you think such a grandson would appear out of nowhere?"

Everyone cachinnated.

The younger generations, in particular, were exceptionally joyful.

Some of them were performing badly, so they were constantly worried about getting chosen to become the scapegoat.

With the appearance of Levi, nothing was going to happen to them anymore.

Michael stroke his beard and laughed. "Since this kid is going to take the fall for the Jones family, we shouldn't let him go in vain. We will fulfill all his wishes until then."

"Dad, don't worry. We'll take care of it!"

Everyone in the room was excited.

The entire Jones family was waiting for Levi Garrison's arrival.

He had no idea that he was already selected to become the Jones family's scapegoat.

The situation was far worse than he had imagined.

The sudden appearance of his grandfather caught Levi off guard.

Parents? Family? Relatives? Are they related to me? If they really did care about me, would they have abandoned me? If they really regretted leaving me behind, they should have found me a long time ago!

The Protector Chapter 680

It has been almost 30 years, and no one has ever come looking for me. Yet now this so-called grandfather decides to make a sudden appearance? From the looks of it, the Jones family is up to something.

Levi was an old-timer, so he knew something was up with the Jones family instantly.

Soon, Phoenix's call came.

"Sir, the Jones family of South Hampton really aren't what they seem. They've offended the Quebec warlord Elijah. Now, they require a male and a female descendant from the main family branch to go to prison for 30 years. The Jones family most likely selected you as the male descendant, sir."

"Heheh..." Levi laughed as soon as Phoenix finished speaking.

I knew it wasn't a coincidence. Everything happens for a reason.

He knew one had to differentiate between familial love and business when it came to big families such as the Joneses.

This was especially true for a homeless man who had been abandoned by his family for almost 30 years and was of no use to them.

Why would they want someone like that back? They even offered money and power. It's not like they're sick or anything.

The only reason he could think of was that such a man was of use to the family.

In this case, the family wanted Levi to become their scapegoat.

“Hahahaha....”

Levi laughed out loud.

How ironic.

So this is what 30 years' worth of familial love is like.

Having such cruel intentions even though they're my grandfather and uncles.

They're no different from the Garrison family of North Hampton.

On the other end of the call, Phoenix could clearly hear Levi's breathing change.

He was angry.

This man was angry.

Phoenix asked tentatively, “Sir, the Warlord Elijah was almost wiped out by us three years ago. Should we send White Tiger to finish the job?”

Levi shook his head. “No need for that since they aren't messing with us. This is the Jones family's business. It has nothing to do with me.”

“Remember this – the land Erudia is my only family. The rest have nothing to do with me,” Levi declared.

“Yes, sir!”

Phoenix and the rest of them were all orphans, so they understood how Levi was feeling.

No one would be fine if a relative emerged out of the blue and demanded to be treated like that.

“Levi, what’s wrong? You seem unhappy.”

Levi had an unusual look on his face when Zoey came visiting him.

She had never seen him this way before.

“I’m fine,” Levi replied with a smile.

“I heard somebody came looking for you early this morning. Is everything alright?” Zoey was a little worried.

“I’m fine. I would definitely tell you if something happened!”

“Alright then. We’ll have dinner tonight, so wait for me.”

Levi and Zoey walked side by side as they got off from work. This was when Julian Jones and his men intercepted them.

“Honey, wait here. Let me take care of something quickly.”

Facing the Joneses, Levi stated impassively, “Didn’t I tell you all to leave? Why are you here again?”

Julian laughed and answered, “Young Master Garrison, we’re here to escort you back to South Hampton! You’ve been wandering around for almost 30 years. It’s about time you reaffirm your identity. You have the blood of a noble, so you shouldn’t be in a place like this.”

Julian had orders to bring Levi back to South Hampton regardless of what it took.

This was why Julian tried his best to convince Levi to return. If it didn't work, he would have to resort to some extreme measures.

Levi retorted with a smirk, "Leave! I couldn't care less about becoming a young master of the Jones family. I wouldn't do it even if the Master of the Jones family begged me."

With a wave of his hand, Levi left the scene.

Julian and his men fell deep into thought as they watched Levi's figure fade away in the distance.

After some time, Julian spoke up. "If this doesn't work, we'll just have to capture him."

The Protector Chapter 681

Naturally, Zoey wanted to know what happened.

Levi told her everything, excluding the part where the Jones family plotted to turn him into a scapegoat.

“That’s right! How dare they! Where were they before?” Zoey was furious.

She hugged Levi tightly and said, “Darling, no matter what you choose, I’ll always be by your side.”

“You’re all I need. I’ve never treated them as family before!” Levi stated.

Julian waved his hand. “Follow him and see where he lives. We’ll kidnap him at night!”

Levi knew he was being shadowed when he and Zoey had dinner. However, he didn’t care.

After sending Zoey back to the Black family, Levi returned to the Warzone compound as usual.

Julian, together with several men, surrounded the Warzone compound soon after.

“He’s telling me that he doesn’t care about becoming a young master of the Jones family when he’s living in such a shabby place? What a farce,” Julian exclaimed in a satirical manner.

The Warzone compound was in a dilapidated state. Its walls were peeling off and the main door was demolished by the Gates family two days ago.

It appeared horrendous.

“Move out. Leave as soon as you capture him,” Julian instructed.

Four men jumped into the compound nimbly and headed to where Levi was.

Ten seconds later.

Wham!

Thump!

...

The four men flew out of the compound.

A shirtless man came walking out. He sneered, “What? Are you trying to steal something?”

The shirtless man spotted the van parked in front of the compound. With a thrust of his fist, the entire front of the car was crushed.

Julian and his men were dumbfounded.

How was there an expert in such a place?

Before they were able to react, the car door was ripped apart by force.

Julian and his men were forcibly dragged out.

“Stealing? Or kidnapping?” Alfie questioned.

He was just about to do some physical training when he was interrupted by four brats.

This infuriated Alfie.

With the blaring of police sirens, Russell arrived swiftly with the special police force.

Julian and his men were taken into custody...

In the Edburg Manor of South Hampton.

“What? Julian was arrested? How incompetent can he be? He’s making more problems instead of solving them!” Michael roared.

The butler added, “Yes, that’s right! Julian invited Levi twice but was rejected both times. He wanted to kidnap him in desperation but was met with this!”

“What an idiot!” Michael was enraged.

He can’t even bring one person back. Doesn’t that make him an incompetent idiot?

“However, it seems Levi has stated that he wouldn’t come even if you begged,” the butler continued speaking.

“I understand. This kid is blaming me for not inviting him personally. Haha! Tell Daniel to invite him personally. Try to invite him over as politely as possible. After all, he’s a valuable asset to us.”

Michael sent his eldest son to extend an invitation to Levi.

Daniel Jones arrived in South City that night. The first thing he did was bail Julian out of prison.

On the second day, Daniel got up early in the morning and personally waited at the company.

As soon as Levi turned up, Daniel immediately stepped forward to greet him.

“Another member of the Jones family?”

With a glance, Levi instantly recognized Julian and his men standing behind.

“Levi, my poor nephew. Your uncle is finally able to meet you!”

With tears in his eyes, Daniel tried to rush forward and give Levi a bear hug.

Levi dodged it quickly.

“Levi, I’m your uncle! Your mother, Emma’s eldest brother, Daniel Jones!”

Levi stared at him blankly.

The word mother moved him slightly.

The Protector Chapter 682

I'm still her son, whether I admit it or not.

I can never erase this identity of mine.

He felt moved when he heard the endearment.

So her name is Emma Jones.

Despite feeling repulsed, her name was etched into Levi's memory instinctively.

“Levi, it's all our fault that you've been orphaned for years. Supposedly, grandpa should come and bring you home personally, but he's unwell now. That's why uncle is here to take you home. Don't worry, Levi. I've prepared a grand reception to welcome you back. Twenty Rolls-Royce and ten limousines are waiting outside to pick you up.”

“Other than that, I'll make you the boss of a large conglomerate and transfer ten billion to your bank card. You'll be staying in a luxurious villa in South Hampton. In order to make amends to you, we'll make you the head and heir of the Jones family as well, and you'll have the final say in all our family affairs,” Daniel babbled on.

He was trying to sweet-talk Levi into returning to the Jones family by offering him the best of everything that the Jones family had, even the entire Jones family.

I would have been so touched if I hadn't known what happened to the Jones family recently.

Daniel seems to yearn for my return wholeheartedly by making these offers.

How touching that he's willing to give the entire Jones family away!

Nevertheless, making me the heir of the Jones family is in fact a trap.

They want me to take the blame and go to jail in place of the Jones family.

Daniel's promises left Julian dumbfounded.

The Jones family put in so much effort into getting Levi to return home.

When Daniel saw Levi's expression soften, his lips curled up in a smile, and he was on the verge of laughing out loud.

He's only an innocent child, after all.

I can easily lure him into saying yes with wealth and power.

No one can resist this kind of temptation.

After that, Daniel cast a look of disdain at Julian.

Look, I've settled this matter with only a few words. You're a useless piece of junk.

In the next second, Levi's voice came to them. "I'm sorry, Mr. Jones. I'm not interested in the Jones family at all. And we're unrelated, so please don't address yourself as my uncle."

Boom!

Hearing Levi's rejection, Daniel gawked at him with mouth agape.

How could he reject my offer?

Is he really not into the Jones family?

“Seth, escort our guests out,” Levi commanded.

Immediately, Seth sent Daniel and his men out the door.

Standing outside, Julian said helplessly to Daniel, “He’s really stubborn. He refuses to come home even when you come personally to pick him up.”

Daniel was fuming with rage.

He was second only to Michael Jones in terms of influence and status in the Jones family.

How dare Levi reject me!

He has no respect for me at all.

“How shameless of him! He’s only a tool to the Jones family,” Daniel yelled angrily.

“Maybe he wants Sir to come personally to bring him back?” Julian analyzed the situation and said.

“How insolent! As an unwanted orphan, he doesn’t deserve to have my father to come over and pick him up. He’s pushing his luck!” Daniel replied in anger.

“What else can we do since he refuses to go back? We can’t be taking him back home by force.”

I tried this approach once, and it didn’t end well.

This is the most extreme method we can use.

Suddenly, Daniel seemed to have thought about something. “Hah! We’ll get it done using the hard way then. He’s so wrong to think that I can’t deal with him. I’ll make sure that he’ll kneel and beg me to take him home.”

Daniel’s face was grim as a conspiracy gradually formed in his mind.

The Protector Chapter 683

Levi knew that this was not the end, as the Jones family was desperate to make him take the fall.

Hence, they definitely had some alternative plans.

But Levi couldn't care less about it.

So what if the Jones family is royalty?

Why should I care?

Even the Warlord Elijah, whom the Jones family fear, almost died at my hands.

If I wanted to, I can wipe the Jones family out without breaking a sweat.

In the tower opposite the Morris Group.

Daniel asked coldly with a stern face, "Is everything ready?"

"Yes, everything is ready."

In the afternoon, Zoey went out for a business appointment together with Syllas.

At that time, Hades was away for medical treatment.

But they had no rival against them now, as the entire South City was under Levi's control.

The two pulled over in front of their business partner's office tower.

Just when Zoey was about to get out of the car, Sylas discerned that something was wrong.

There was a light reflected from the top of a building faraway, which was likely the reflection from a sniper scope.

“Get down!”

Sylas promptly pushed Zoey down in her seat.

Pfft!

Bang!

In the blink of an eye, their car was under attack.

The front right tire was punctured, and the whole car jerked violently.

The sudden blow startled Sylas.

Is someone trying to kill Zoey?

“Head to the office now!”

Sylas took cover while bringing Zoey into the office tower.

When they stepped in, a man in a sweater and a ski mask was walking toward them, and his eyes glinted with malice.

Screech!

He took out a dagger and lunged at Zoey.

Sylas hurriedly shoved her away while tossing her phone in front of them to block the stab. Her phone was smashed into pieces at once.

After a failed attempt to kill Zoey, the man retreated and disappeared in no time.

With a face as pale as a sheet, Zoey broke out in a cold sweat, while Sylas was terrified.

It's not safe here!

Immediately, Sylas took Zoey's hand and ran to the basement carpark.

Then she skillfully stole a car and drove Zoey away.

While she was driving, she saw a few men sprinting toward them through the rearview mirror.

This frightened Sylas, and she was drenched in sweat.

She promptly stepped on the gas and sped away.

After driving some distance away, the two heaved a sigh of relief.

But the next moment, Sylas' expression changed, as a car came out of nowhere right in front of them.

Bang!

The two cars collided head-on, then Sylas and Zoey passed out on the spot.

When the two regained their consciousness, Levi and Seth were already here.

Fortunately, both Sylas and Zoey were uninjured but petrified.

Looking at the two women, Levi's face turned frigid as a man's face popped into his mind.

Godd***it!

Then Sylas reported to Levi, "Mr. Garrison, something just doesn't sit right with me. We went through four attacks, and it felt as if someone was controlling it behind the scenes."

"During the first attack, for some reason, the sniper missed us and shot the car tire instead. This makes no sense."

"After that, the man with a dagger could have tried stabbing Zoey again after the first failed attempt."

"At the basement carpark, some people waited in ambush before we arrived. They could have attacked us earlier, but they only did it when we drove away."

"In the accident, it seemed like the driver only wanted to bang our car. He had no intention to kill us."

"I feel that the person behind the scene is trying to intimidate us instead of killing us," Sylas said conclusively.

Levi remained silent with a sullen face.

The Jones family did this to warn me.

When Levi went back to his office, he bumped into Daniel at the entrance.

Daniel sneered, "How was it, Levi? Is your wife alright? How lucky."

Then his tone turned aggressive as he added, "But she may not be as lucky next time."

This is a threat.

He's threatening me so blatantly!

The Protector Chapter 684

He's here to hint at me that he has directed those attacks, and he can kill Zoey anytime he wants.

In other words, Zoey's life is in his hands!

Levi sniggered at his words.

Who does he think he is to threaten me?

He's messing with the wrong man.

Daniel continued saying, "Next time, the bullet and the knife won't miss their target. Oh, there'll be a deadly ambush and car accident as well."

"How fragile human life is. Sometimes, you're bound to lose your loved ones no matter how well you protect them."

Daniel's tone was threatening.

He's saying that Syllas won't be able to protect Zoey.

And Zoey will probably lose her life the next time he attacks her again.

"I wonder if she has offended anyone that she has been attacked four times in such a short time. I'm sure no one will dare touch her if she's a part of the Jones family."

While talking, Daniel handed Levi a note with a contact number on it.

His message was very clear.

Zoey would be safe as long as Levi returned to the Jones family.

Daniel was having fun threatening Levi.

If Levi truly cares about Zoey, he will beg me to take him back to the Jones family.

After Daniel went back home, he laughed out loud. "I've won. He can't stand against me this time."

"Mr. Jones, now we shall wait for Levi to come and beg us to take him back."

Everyone else let out a menacing laugh.

Meanwhile, with a grim expression, Levi was giving off a vicious vibe.

How dare he harm Zoey!

He had crossed the line.

I won't tolerate Zoey getting frightened, let alone getting hurt.

The four attacks in a row had traumatized Zoey, and she was now on the brink of losing her mind.

As a result, Levi was smoldering with fury.

The Jones family were getting on his last nerve!

Now he was about to make a move against the Jones family.

Levi had never admitted the kinship between him and the Joneses.

Besides, even if his so-called grandpa came to bring him back, he was only a scapegoat in their eyes.

So what if I lay a hand on the Jones family?

To me, they're only outsiders.

In the meantime, Zoey felt much better after coming back to the office.

As smart as she was, she already figured out that the Jones family was behind those attacks.

"Levi, if there's no other choice, would you like to go home and take a look?" Zoey asked.

"No way, I'll never go back! I'll make them pay for this," Levi said with a scowl on his face.

Standing outside the office, Sylas said apologetically, "I'm so sorry. I didn't keep Ms. Lopez safe."

"No worries, Sylas. You've done your best. Just leave it to me from now on."

On the other hand, Daniel and his people were waiting for his phone to ring.

Julian asked, "What's going on? Why hasn't he called us after so long?"

The others followed and said, "Yes, he should be here by now."

Daniel felt puzzled too. "Maybe I didn't scare them enough. I should've let that woman get injured."

“I think so. Perhaps he thinks that we dare not hurt them because he’s Emma’s son,” Julian told of his assumption.

Daniel let out a loud snort. “Damn it! As the heir of the Jones family, I personally went to him to bring him back, but he brushed me aside. Who does he think he is? He’s just a son of a bitch! Well, since he’s not afraid of me, I’ll chop his wife’s limbs off. Then he’ll come and beg me for mercy. Ask all the assassins to strike them now. This time, there’ll be bloodshed!”

On Daniel’s command, a dozen of assassins who attacked Zoey this morning went after her again simultaneously.

The Protector Chapter 685

Lurking in the dark where Zoey might show up, the assassins were ready to pounce on her. These assassins were highly skilled that any of them could take Zoey's life effortlessly.

However, Daniel had only instructed them to injure her.

At the office's basement carpark, a figure appeared. Within a few seconds, he had pried open Zoey's car door and secretly gotten in the car.

The moment Zoey comes in, I'll be able to hurt her in a split second.

Just as the assassin was feeling smug, he suddenly realized that there was a man in the front seat who was gradually turning his head around to look at him.

And it almost scared the daylights out of him.

Before he could escape, the man got hold of him with one hand.

Bang!

The man slapped him with another hand, and blood spurted all over the car.

"Who's next?"

Levi wiped his hand and lit a cigarette before walking away.

Subsequently, the other assassins who were hiding inside the office and around the building were taken down one after another.

Soon after, all the assassins had been annihilated.

“What’s going on? It’s already noon, but none of the assassins are back yet.”

After waiting for a few hours, Daniel became restless.

None of the assassins came back, and there’s no news from them as well.

Something must’ve happened.

“This doesn’t make sense to me. Can’t those top assassins take down an ordinary woman?” Julian said in bewilderment.

“Contact the assassins now and find out what they’re doing.”

Daniel paced up and down in distress.

Julian tried to call each of the assassins, but not one of them picked up his call.

“Has something gone wrong? But what can happen to all our top assassins?”

Daniel did not believe that there was anyone capable enough to deal with so many assassins single-handedly.

Just then, there was a knock on the door.

“Sir, here is your parcel.”

A delivery man came in and handed Julian a box.

“A parcel?” Julian asked with a quizzical look.

Then he suddenly caught a whiff of a weird smell.

“What? Why is there a parcel? Does anyone else know that I’m in South City?” Daniel asked in astonishment.

“Open it and see what’s in it.”

Hiss!

When the box was opened, everyone gasped in shock.

There were fingers soaked in blood inside the box.

Immediately, Daniel’s face turned ghastly pale, while the others looked equally terrified.

“Are these... Are these the assassins’ fingers?” Daniel asked in a trembling voice.

Boom!

Suddenly, the door was kicked open, and a large group of people marched in.

“Hit them!” the leader commanded, then the group of fighters darted toward them.

Although Daniel had bodyguards with him, these fighters pounced on his bodyguards aggressively and took them down in no time.

Only Daniel and Julian were left untouched.

“Who are you people? Do you know who we are?” Daniel shouted hurriedly.

“How dare you cause trouble in my territory in South City without asking me? You’ve gone overboard!” the leader snickered at them.

It suddenly dawned on Daniel that these people were members of the South City underworld.

It's true that we should've greeted and informed them before doing anything in their territory.

This is an unspoken rule.

After all, we are from South Hampton.

But do I need to follow this rule?

I don't think so, because I'm the eldest son of the Jones family in South Hampton.

Why should I be afraid of these people?

"Hah! Do you know who I am? I'm Daniel from the Jones family in South Hampton. Do you still think that you deserve my greetings?" Daniel was all puffed up while sneering.

In his eyes, the people from South City were of a lower class than him, as he was superior and royal.

However, these people had no regard for his identity. "Beat him to death!"

"Hey, didn't you hear me? I'm from the Jones family in South Hampton!"

The Protector Chapter 686

Daniel shrieked furiously.

Usually, no one would dare lay a finger on him after knowing his identity.

Back then, the Caesar family alone was enough to oppress everyone in South City when they were only a quasi-royal clan.

But the Jones family was the true royalty.

Anyone who dared mess with the eldest son of the Jones family was only digging his or her own grave.

“I don’t care who you are. Anyone who breaks the rules has to be punished. Go get him!”

Yet, these people couldn’t care less and darted forward to beat him recklessly.

In the end, they broke all his limbs, and Daniel sprawled on the floor like a dog with an appalled expression.

Did I just get beaten up by a bunch of gangsters?

This is outrageous!

“This is only a warning from us. Bear in mind that there’s no place for any monkey business for an outsider like you in South City. If you ever repeat it, you’ll be dead.”

After reprimanding him, the group of people left.

In fact, they came here on someone's command.

They had quite a few powerful individuals backing them up, so the Jones family was nothing in their eyes.

In fact, Levi was the one who orchestrated this.

He had handed over the South City underworld to the head of the Southern Union, Grover.

As a result, those gangsters no longer committed any heinous crimes, but all of them had proper jobs now.

As soon as Levi gave his order, Grover sent his people over.

Breaking Daniel's limbs was only a minor punishment.

Otherwise, he would not make it out of South City alive.

The next morning at the manor in South Hampton.

Daniel, Julian and a dozen of the Joneses were laid in an orderly manner in front of the door.

All of them were paralyzed, groaning in agony.

"What?"

When Michael and his people came out and saw this scene, they were completely dumbfounded.

"Who did this? Who broke my son's hands and legs?" consumed by rage, Michael bellowed with a surly face.

The others were filled with anger too.

It wasn't only about their people getting beaten up, but it was also about the Jones family's reputation.

They could not believe that this happened in the seemingly insignificant South City.

How embarrassing for the Jones family!

And they might lose their foothold in South Hampton.

"Someone... Someone from the South City did this to us..." Daniel stuttered with his head facing the floor and dared not look at anyone.

Tears of agony escaped Daniel's eyes as he felt overwhelmed with humiliation and sorrow.

How embarrassing! I can't face my family anymore.

Getting my limbs broken in the small city is a shame that I'll bear for the rest of my life.

"The gangsters from the South City underworld crippled us because we broke the rule and messed around in their territory," Julian whined.

"What? A group of gangsters beat you up?" Michael said in disbelief.

I'll be so embarrassed if this news gets about.

The people in South Hampton will probably look down our family as well.

"Why didn't you tell them your identity?" Michael asked in frustration.

These Joneses are worthless pieces of junk!

“We did, and that’s why they broke our limbs!” Daniel said indignantly and started weeping.

“What? This is ridiculous!” Michael shouted.

How dare these gangsters from South City challenge the Jones family! Do they have a death wish?

“Father, it’s all Levi’s fault! He’s so haughty. He disrespects me and insists on having you go to him and bring him back yourself.”

Though Daniel didn’t know that Levi was the mastermind behind this incident, he still put all the blame on Levi.

The Protector Chapter 687

“What? He wants me to pick him up myself? Who the hell does he think he is?” Michael yelled at the top of his lungs.

The others were enraged. “How dare a nobody like him behave as if he’s a big shot?”

“You’re right. In fact, not a single person in Quebec is qualified for grandpa to bring him back himself.”

“I guess Levi is as useless as his parents!”

Despite feeling furious, the butler said, “Anyway, we still have to bear with him. We still need him, don’t we?”

“Let’s just abduct him back here. I really can’t stand his arrogance!”

“Grandpa, please hurry up. It’s only five days away from the deadline Elijah set for us.”

“We must get it done as soon as possible, lest Elijah demand for more from us.”

Everyone voiced out their opinions one by one.

Then Michael’s eyes glinted with malice as he said, “Alright, let’s abduct Levi, and I want everyone from the South City underworld dead!”

Suddenly, the brightest man in the third generation of the Jones family, Tyler said, “Grandpa, could Levi be the one who sent the gangsters to cripple uncle?”

Perhaps he did this as a counterattack since uncle hired assassins to attack his wife.”

It was obvious to him that Levi did this.

His words shed light on the matter and make everyone ponder this possibility.

This can't be a coincidence.

“Does he have any hidden capability and background connections?”

Even Michael became suspicious.

“Maybe he has some backup? Is that why he ignored our offer?” one of the Joneses asked.

“It'll be frightening if he indeed has some hidden capabilities.”

Just then, Michael's phone rang.

It was a call from Grover, the head of Southern Union.

“Good day, Mr. Cooke. How may I assist you?”

Michael's attitude became courteous immediately.

Even though The Jones family was royalty, they were not as powerful as Grover, who held a major influence in the South.

“I heard that your son caused trouble on my turf and got his limbs broken.”
Grover asked.

“What? Is South City your territory?”

Michael was baffled by his words.

“You’re right, I’m now in charge of South City. Your son hired assassins and caused trouble on my turf without my permission. He broke the rule, so I broke his limbs. Do you have any objections?” Grover asked with a dignified expression.

“No, no objection. Mr. Cooke, I apologize to you on behalf of my son,” Michael hurriedly said.

On the other hand, Michael actually felt slightly thrilled in his heart.

Now I’m certain that Daniel’s injury has nothing to do with Levi.

So Levi is still an ordinary man, as shown in his biography.

And that makes me feel relieved.

“Alright, let’s drop this subject. You’re a royal family. How could you not know about this rule? You didn’t even know that South City is my territory,” Grover rebuked him.

“I’m sorry, Mr. Cooke. It’s all our fault.”

After a brief pause, Michael added, “By the way, Mr. Cooke, we have something to attend to in South City. I hope you will allow us.”

“What else do the Joneses want to do in South City?” Grover asked.

He didn’t know about the history between Levi and the Jones family, because he dared not ask Levi about it.

Michael chuckled. “It’s kind of embarrassing. I have an unfilial grandson in South City, and I’m going to abduct him back home.”

“What’s his name?” Grover asked.

“His name is Levi Garrison,” Michael answered honestly.

“How dare you!”

The Protector Chapter 688

Grover's sudden roar startled Michael that he jolted and almost flung the phone away.

What's wrong?

Why does Mr. Cooke react this way when I mention Levi's name?

Is Levi some kind of taboo to him?

Meanwhile, anger was stirring within Grover.

Last night, Levi instructed me to send my people to beat someone up, so I did.

I only realize today that the person is Daniel Jones.

Though the Southern Union is more superior compared to the Jones family, I still have to confront them about this matter.

Now I discover that Michael is actually Levi's grandpa...

"Mr. Cooke, what... what's wrong?" Michael asked in a shaky voice.

"Okay, it's up to you what you want to do in South City. But I have to warn you, it's better that you avoid coming to South City now. You'll probably lose your life here."

Grover dared not get involved in this matter.

No matter how their relationship is, they are family, and I shouldn't meddle in their family affairs.

Michael was perplexed.

What's so scary about South City that I'll probably lose my life there?

Why did Mr. Cooke get so edgy just now?

"Father, what's going on?"

"What happened, grandpa?" Everyone turned to look at Michael.

"I've found out the truth. Daniel's injury has nothing to do with Levi. The Southern Union did it because South City is their turf," Michael explained.

"Oh, I see. No wonder the gangsters are not afraid of the Jones family."

"So Levi is only a loser."

Everyone felt relieved.

Then Michael urged them, "I've asked for Grover's permission, so we can do whatever we want in South City. But he advises me not to go to South City too. Maybe there's someone important over there. Therefore, we'll have to keep a low profile when we go to South City."

"Yes, we got it."

After that, Michael gathered his people and headed to South City.

The deadline was approaching, so they had no time to spare.

“Oh, bring Mia along too. After dealing with Levi, we’ll send him to the Oriental together with Mia,” Michael commanded.

Soon, an adorable girl in a long dress came into sight.

She was Mia Jones, who was a direct descendant of the Jones family. She had been selected to be presented to Elijah.

Sob...

Mia’s parents were sobbing uncontrollably because they know that Mia would be tortured once she was sent to the Oriental, if not dead.

They wished to stop this, but they had no power or influence, so they could only watch her go.

Mia was the most brilliant one among the girls in the Jones family. She was an all-rounder who had mastered seventeen languages and held six master’s degrees.

At the same time, she was quiet, gentle and docile.

During the selection, all the other girls in the Jones family conspired among themselves and voted Mia, so that none of them would have to go through such torment.

Yet, Mia still appeared calm and fearless.

She glanced at her parents and said, “Dad, Mom, I’m willing to go for our family’s sake.”

In the meantime, Levi took Zoey to the hospital for a medical checkup.

After being counselled by a psychologist, Zoey had recovered completely.

“I’m fine, so don’t worry.”

Zoey gave Levi a comforting smile.

“Levi, maybe you should go back. After all, he’s your grandpa. I believe your grandma, uncles and aunts miss you very much and want you to go home as well.”

Zoey tried to persuade him using familial love.

Then Levi laughed all of a sudden.

I’ve seen the Joneses’ true colors.

There’s no way that I’m going back!

“Levi, why are you laughing? Let me ask you, what will you do if one day, your parents show up and stand in front of you?”

The Protector Chapter 689

Levi was rendered speechless by Zoey's question.

He could hardly imagine how it felt to have his own parents.

Even his adoptive parents treated him like an outsider and had never shown him love.

Nonetheless, he felt moved on the inside when he heard about his parents, although he refused to admit it.

"I... I don't know..." Levi answered.

"Just listen to me and go home. They're your family, after all," Zoey said with a smile.

"Maybe they'll come to me before I go home."

Levi knew that the deadline given by Elijah was only days away.

The Jones family must be extremely anxious about it, so they would surely come looking for him.

But Zoey misunderstood him and said in surprise, "Is your grandpa coming to pick you up himself? He's so good to you. The head of such a prominent family is coming to bring you back home himself. He must be sincere then."

I guess Michael truly loves Levi, and that's why he's coming to take Levi home himself.

I feel envious.

In the afternoon, Michael and his people arrived in South City.

Thinking of Grover's advice, Michael kept a low profile and discreetly checked in to the Sapphire Villa in South City.

"Well, I'm here in South City already. Bring him to the hotel to see me. As the head of a royal family, I'll never go to him myself!" Michael made a fuss and tried to lord it over Levi.

Suddenly, someone shouted, "Oh no, Mia ran away!"

"What? Mia ran away? Why didn't you watch over her? Hurry, find her now!" Michael yelled angrily.

I'll be in trouble if she goes missing.

Who am I going to present to Elijah if both Mia and Levi are gone?

The Joneses started looking around for Mia.

Meanwhile, in Levi's office.

"Mr. Garrison, someone is here to meet you," Seth said over the phone.

"Is it an old man?"

"No, it's a girl, She's as beautiful as Ms. Lopez."

Seth's words made Levi felt curious.

Why does the girl want to see me?

When Levi came to the hall, he saw an unfamiliar face.

The girl seemed quiet and sweet, and she carried a vibe like that of a girl from a respectable family.

“Are you looking for me?” Levi asked.

“Are you Levi?” Mia asked him with a surprised look.

“Yes, it’s me. Who are you?”

“I’m your cousin, Mia Jones. Levi, hurry and run away now! Grandpa and uncle want to take you back to our family, only to make you take the fall and go to jail on their behalf. And you’ll probably die in there,” Mia said anxiously.

Levi was stunned at her words.

Why would someone from the Jones family come to warn me that I’m in danger?

A warm and fuzzy feelings overflowed in Levi’s heart.

Other than his military partners and Zoey, no one had ever cared about him.

Then Mia went on to tell Levi every detail about the Joneses’ scheme.

“Levi, run now, or else it’ll be too late,” Mia urged him.

She’s kind-hearted, and she couldn’t bear to see Levi become a scapegoat, so she came to warn him.

“Are you the other one?” Levi asked.

“Yes,” Mia lowered her head.

“Alright. I’m here now, so no one can send you to jail,” Levi declared.

I’ll save this girl since she came all the way to warn me.

“What? Stop kidding, Levi. I’ve been chosen, so I have no choice.”

Just then, a large group of men ran over to them.

“Mia, what are you doing? Why did you look for Levi? Did you tell him everything?”

The man leading the group raised his hand, wanting to slap Mia’s face.

The Protector Chapter 690

“Ah!”

Mia shut her eyes in fear, but the slap never landed on her face.

It turned out that Levi had held the man’s wrist.

“Let go! Let go of me now!” Wales demanded furiously.

He yanked his hand forcefully to break free, but Levi clutched his wrist tightly in a vice-like grip.

“Are you trying to hit her?” Levi asked.

“I’m only disciplining my own family members. What does that have to do with you?” Wales scolded him.

“Ouch...” in the next second, Wales shrieked in agony.

The pain in his wrist made him slowly collapse on the floor.

Everyone present could hear the sound of bones cracking.

Mia couldn’t stand it and hurriedly said, “Levi, please forgive him.”

Then Levi let go of Wales, who then bent down and gasped for breath.

Shortly after, a bunch of the Joneses came over and surrounded them.

Mia bowed her head and kept silent, looking like a child who was caught red-handed.

“Mia, you’re a traitor to our family!”

“How could you tell him about it?”

“You’ve brought shame upon the Jones family!.”

The Joneses reprimanded her out of rage.

Levi had already refused to come back before. Now that he knows about our plan, surely he will never come back.

All the Joneses wished they could choke Mia to death.

While they hurled insults at Mia, she broke down and started weeping softly.

“Come here! Why are you standing beside an outsider?” Wales shouted.

Mia instinctively walked over, but Levi stopped her in her tracks.

“You’ve called me your cousin, so you’re my family now. No one can bully you!” Levi said coldly.

“You? What can you do to us? Hahaha!”

Wales and the others let out a few sarcastic laughs.

What can a loser who has been homeless for about thirty years due to the royal Jones family?

He has totally overestimated himself.

“Mia, just to let you know, you’ve made a huge mistake! Are you still on his side? Do you want to betray your own family?”

Mia flinched at every rebuke with tears streaming down her cheeks. “No, I didn’t... I didn’t betray my family... No...”

Since birth, Mia had been taught to put her family first, and her family’s reputation was more important than her own life.

That was why she became agitated the moment she was called a traitor to the Jones family.

“Then why haven’t you come to our side?” Wales shouted at her in an icy tone.

Mia darted a pleading glance at Levi before running across the hall to the Joneses.

Staring straight at the Joneses, Levi declared coldly, “From now on, I, Levi Garrison, will protect my sister, Mia Jones. Anyone who lay a finger on her shall die!”

Whoosh!

Immediately, a gust of ice-cold air came out of nowhere and sent shivers up everyone’s spine.

What an intimidating gaze.

As everyone looked at Levi, a sense of crippling fear overwhelmed them.

After a while, Wales mustered up the courage to ask Levi, “Who do you think you are? Mia belongs to the Jones family, and our family affairs are none of your business!”

“Yes, it’s none of your concern!”

“By the way, let me tell you this since you already know the truth. A man like you is not worthy of being a part of the Jones family. We want you back only to make you a scapegoat!”

Levi sneered. “You’re such shameless jerks!”

“Don’t even try to run away. You won’t be able to escape being sent to the Oriental and get tormented by the Warlord.”

“Hahaha! What makes you think that grandpa will come and bring you home himself? You’re so full of yourself!”

Levi gave them a half-smile. “I won’t run, and I’ll be waiting for you to seize me.”

“How impudent! Just you wait!”

After saying that, the Joneses stomped away in fury.

The Protector Chapter 691

With a wave of his hand, a subordinate went to Levi.

He ordered, "Monitor that woman closely. If anything happens to her, report it to me right away."

He did not expect Mia to warn him about his situation.

It is rare to have someone so kind within an emotionless family like the Joneses.

She deserves my acknowledgement.

Back at the villa, Wales dragged Mia into the living room.

Plop!

Mia cried in pain when Wales kicked her knees. They buckled, and she fell to her knees in front of Michael.

Then, Wales asked, "Grandpa, do you know who she ran out to meet?"

Curiously, Michael responded, "Who did she go to?"

"She went to Levi and told him everything," Wales complained.

"What? Are you telling me that Levi knows that we are going to make him a scapegoat and send him to jail?" Michael stood up immediately and shouted.

Wales confirmed, "Exactly!"

“This is absurd! You are a piece of shit!” Michael was livid that he almost had a fit.

The rest of the Jones family also looked at Mia with hatred and started to chatter about her.

“She is a betrayer! How dare she rat out on our family?”

“By turning your back against Grandpa, do you know how big a mistake you have made?”

“You are throwing the entire family in a ditch! If Levi does not go to jail, we will be doomed!”

Mia was still on her knees with her head hung so low that it was about to kiss the floor.

She knew that she had committed a grave sin.

Michael yelled furiously, “Do you know your actions will destroy every single one of us here?”

“Grandpa, I’m sorry. It is my mistake...” Mia cried.

“Mistake? You aren’t even the scapegoat we chose to send to jail! Why do you seem to have a grudge against us that you wish to harm us in this way? Huh?” Michael roared.

At a loss, Mia continued to weep. “No, Grandpa. It’s nothing like that! I do not hate the Jones family nor do I want to see any of you get hurt.”

“You are clearly trying to bring us down! I won’t be surprised if you already planned to betray us in the first place.”

The rest of the Joneses viciously scolded her.

“Father, this won’t do. Mia committed a serious offense that concerns the survival of our family. She has broken our family rules, and we have to enforce the rules. Otherwise, they will mean nothing if we do not punish her,” Wallace suggested.

“Yes! She has to be punished!”

“Mia has violated several family rules, and she has to take responsibility for them. Otherwise, more people will take those rules for granted, and there will be more who will do the same in the future.”

Persuaded by the rest, Michael nodded in agreement. “Alright, we shall punish her based on our rules then. Please hand me the ferule.”

Then, he glanced at the butler and asked, “How many strokes should she receive for such an offense?”

“Based on the rules, she should receive a hundred strokes. However, since she is a female, she will be spared and will have to take sixty.”

The rest of the family gasped in surprise at what the butler said.

They had seen family members being punished in the past.

There was a man from the Jones family who received twenty strokes. At the end of the punishment, his skin was split open, and there was blood everywhere. Besides, he could not even leave his bed for three months.

In this case, Mia had to take sixty strokes, three times what that man received. With such soft and tender skin, she might die from the punishment.

“We will not show mercy to those who break the family rules. Mia, the fifty-third generation of the Jones family, has made a mistake and is responsible for putting

the family in danger. She will receive sixty strokes, and it is a lesson to never mess with the Jones family rules,” Michael announced his decision coldly.

“Father, please spare her! Mia is still a child,” Mia’s parents begged.

Heartlessly, Michael immediately responded, “Whoever pleads for Mia’s leniency will receive the punishment with her!”

The Protector Chapter 692

Instantly, everyone who thought about pleading for Mia backed away.

“Both of you shall receive ten strokes each! I will increase the number if you continue to beg,” Michael cruelly snapped.

With that, Mia’s parents did not dare to continue.

On the other hand, Michael did not feel sorry that Mia had to receive such brutal punishment.

He would not care even if she were beaten to death.

After all, she is a woman.

If she dies, I can easily replace her with another one.

Only the men’s lives matter to me!

All the males in this family are precious to me, and I will hate to lose any of them.

Deeply rooted within this family was the patriarchal thinking, where they preferred males over females.

Even in this age and era, the perception was still ingrained in their minds.

“Go to South Hampton and bring me the ferule now!” Michael ordered.

Since it was a family punishment, he thought they should use the Jones’ ancestral ferule.

He left no room for discussion.

“Dad, since Levi knows everything, what should we do now?”

Everyone was curious.

Michael coldly replied, “It’s simple. Since he is aware, we only have to capture him. Doesn’t he have a wife? I believe he will agree to come with us if we promise to take care of her and the rest of his family on his behalf.”

Then, he continued, “After we are done with Mia’s punishment, we shall send someone to go after him. Of course, please don’t let him get away!”

Wales chuckled. “Don’t worry, Grandpa. I always have my men monitoring him, so there is no way for him to escape.”

It did not take long for Levi to find out that Mia had to receive the family punishment.

“Sixty strokes on a small girl? Aren’t they afraid that she will die from it? The Joneses are heartless. We live in a new era, and I can’t believe they still have such traditional family rules in place. What a joke!” Levi spat.

“I will not let anyone touch Mia in my presence.”

He was furious. Deadly daggers were shooting from his eyes, which scared Seth and the rest.

At the Sapphire Villa, Mia and her parents were kneeling in the middle of the living room.

They were surrounded by the other Joneses who watched on expressionlessly but seemed to be mocking them.

Sitting at the front was Michael, who had a domineering aura around him.

The butler beside him said, "Today, Mia was unfilial and broke the family rules. According to the book, she will receive sixty strokes. Give me the ferule!"

With that, a man brought a plate covered by a red cloth to the living room.

The butler removed the cloth to unveil the ferule.

"We shall carry out the punishment now!" Michael commanded.

A fierce-looking man walked towards Mia, with the ferule in his hand.

Mia had long given up hope and knelt there, soaking the floor with her tears.

Her parents were wailing as well.

They had no power within the Jones family and could not even save their daughter.

"Hmph! Just the sight of them makes me angry!"

"It is an honor if you are chosen to go to jail. That is a sacrifice for the family."

"What is there to complain about?"

The crowd made various sarcastic remarks.

They made it seem like one should be proud to be the sacrificial lamb for the family.

"The first stroke!" The butler called out. Obediently, the burly man lifted the ferule and was about to bring it down onto her.

Mia was terrified and started shaking.

With one stroke, it would probably shorten half her lifespan.

Bang!

At that moment, a brick, thrown from outside into the living room, flew towards the burly man's face.

Immediately, he tried to dodge and failed to land the first stroke on Mia.

A loud sound was heard when the brick landed on the ground, startling everyone.

Next, a man walked in.

The Protector Chapter 693

“Have I ever warned you that Mia is under my protection?” Levi spoke as he walked into the room.

He scanned the crowd and continued, “I will kill anyone who touches her.”

It took a few seconds before everyone could react.

“What? He is Levi?”

Many people present had never seen him before and were startled.

In particular, Michael was surprised too and he scanned Levi from head to toe.

Then, he responded, “You have certainly inherited your parent’s values.”

Mia was also shocked to see Levi. She anxiously said, “Levi, what are you doing here? You should be hiding now!”

Like Zoey, she was kind and was worried that something might happen to Levi because of her.

“Mia, don’t worry. No one can bully you as long as I am here.” Levi smiled.

“Look at this! Even up to now, Mia is still helping this outsider. She is clearly a traitor!”

“Yes! She is a bi*ch!”

Slap! After one of the Joneses commented, Levi gave her a tight slap.

It left her dumbstruck, while the rest of the family were equally shocked.

Who is this guy, Levi? How dare he slapped one of our family members in front of everyone else?

Levi scowled at the woman and sneered, “Who taught you this horrible habit of insulting your family members?”

In response, Michael roared, “Levi, how dare you lay hand on one of the Joneses?”

“I will hit anyone who speaks unfavorably of Mia. This is the result of the poor upbringing in your family. I can’t believe you brought up such trashy people,” Levi scoffed.

“Levi, you must be courting your death! How can you act so presumptuously in my residence?”

As though Levi had caught hold of their weakness, the Joneses started to curse at him, one by one.

They looked like they wanted to kill him.

Sternly, Levi questioned, “In my eyes, your family is just a bunch of gangsters. Who is in charge here?”

“You are so gutsy. Why are you not kneeling in front of your grandpa?” Michael stood up and scolded him with a dark expression on his face.

Judging from Levi’s actions, he clearly does not respect me.

Levi replied harshly, “I have no grandpa. Besides, even if I did, he would not set me up and want to send me to jail.”

“You...” Michael stuttered in embarrassment.

Levi had found his Achilles heel.

If others find out about the truth, it will tarnish our family’s reputation.

Besides, I still need Levi to go to jail.

“I will not argue with you anymore. Since you are here, it makes everything easier, and I will suck it up.”

Michael tried to suppress his anger and continued, “So what are you doing here? Are you trying to save Mia?” barked Wales.

“Of course! I told you that I would protect her. I will kill anyone who lays a finger on her,” Levi announced.

Michael ignored his words and said, “Mind your own business. I will deal with you later, but for now, we are going to carry out the punishment.”

Then, he glanced at the burly man and instructed, “Carry out the punishment now!”

Once again, the ferule was lifted, and the burly man was about to strike Mia with it.

In a flash, Levi appeared in front of him and caught the ferule.

Bang!

Levi snatched it from him.

Crack!

With a flick of his wrist, he broke it into two.

Hiss!

The whole room went silent.

This ferule was a symbol of the Joneses' dignity with a three-hundred-year history behind it.

Now, it is broken...

It was as though he was stepping on the entire Jones family.

The Protector Chapter 694

The Joneses were stunned and couldn't believe it.

This ferule was passed down three hundred years ago and represented the family's supremacy.

In other words, it was the embodiment of the Jones family spirit.

Now, their 'spirit' was destroyed today.

Every single one of them was in a stage of shock.

Boom!

Mia's eyes widened.

This is the end.

When standing in front of the ferule, the Joneses would be in fear.

To go against it would mean one was challenging the Joneses power and was a signal of betrayal.

However, Levi had the guts to break it.

It was as good as provoking the Joneses and declaring war on them.

Bam!

Levi threw the broken ferule aside and chuckled. "Forget about your patriarchal rules. I will reinvent the rules for you instead. The first step is to break this dumb ferule and abolish the family rules!"

Levi's words brought everyone back to their senses, and they started to chatter among themselves.

"What the hell did you just do?"

"He broke our ancestral ferule?"

"Is he courting death?"

Everyone babbled and sounded like they were out to get Levi.

"Do you know what you have done? You will never be able to redeem yourself for the offense you committed today! How dare you break the ferule? You are obviously trying to declare war on us!" Michael raged.

"What's wrong with that? Can't I go against the Jones family? Does all of you think that your family is the most powerful one out there?" Levi ridiculed.

Previously, he got rid of the Gates family, who proclaimed themselves to be the most powerful.

"You are very daring...to challenge my family. We have to kill you. Get him!" Michael exploded.

"Sir, we can't do that! We still have to keep him as our scapegoat!" The butler tried to stop him.

The others wished that they could kill him there and then too.

However, they had no other choice.

They had to make him take the fall for them.

Therefore, no matter what mistakes he made, the Joneses could not kill him.

Michael shook in anger. "Alright, count yourself lucky! Instead, I will send you outside of Quebec to be imprisoned by the Warlord. You will suffer there."

He had a death glare, and his expression was contorted.

He wanted Levi dead as the latter had offended the entire Jones family.

"Since you are here, you can forget about leaving. Just be good until we send you to the prison outside Quebec in a few days."

"Haha..."

Every one of the Jones family began to laugh.

The most important thing was he came here himself, regardless of whether he broke the ferule.

Thud!

Then, the strongest few from the Jones family closed the living room door.

There is no way Levi could escape now.

"Aren't you very close to Mia? Both of you can suffer together then!" Wales laughed.

Mia could not help but sigh.

Though she was touched that Levi came to rescue her, she could not bear to see anything happen to him.

“Levi, since you know what our plan is, let me add in a word here then. It is not because I’m heartless, but you are just like your parents who were born to be a sacrificial lamb. You should be honored that you are doing something for the family!

Besides, you broke our ancestral ferule and went against our family rules. Therefore, it is only fair for you to pay us back by going to jail.” Michael stated.

“You should pay for your offense!” Everyone else chanted in unison.

This time, there was a valid reason for them to send Levi to jail.

Levi snickered, “Who will dare to stop me if I walk out of here?”

The Protector Chapter 695

The Joneses were appalled by Levi's atrocious tone.

"How dare you use such an arrogant tone when you speak to us? We are one of the royal families! What makes you think you can defy us?" Wallace snorted.

Laughter erupted among the Joneses.

We are invincible in South City! Even the Gates family and the Caesar family have to obey us!

Ignoring the Joneses, he grabbed Mia's hand and said, "I promised to protect you, Mia. Come with me!"

"What?" It took a moment for Mia to recover from the daze. "I can't, Levi. I have to go to jail!"

Levi scoffed, "I won't allow that to happen! Why don't they go to prison themselves?"

"What the hell do you mean, Levi Garrison? Since when do you have the audacity to question our decisions?"

"We have cast our votes for Mia to go to prison as her punishment. Serves her right for going against our family rules!" The Joneses tried to make the decision sound reasonable.

"Firstly, your family rule doesn't apply to me because I'm not one of you. Secondly, I won't allow any of you to hurt Mia! She is a sister to me!" Levi grabbed hold of Mia and walked away.

“Stop them!” As soon as Wallace gave the order, several men moved forwards to block Levi.

Within minutes, Levi sent all the men flying across the room with his powerful slap.

The Joneses gasped collectively in horror. “He is a martial arts expert?”

Recalling his previous encounter with Levi, Wales yelled, “Grandpa, he’s well-trained! Don’t let him get away!”

“Seize him!” Michael ordered.

A group of martial arts experts leaped out of nowhere and surrounded Levi. They were the secret weapon of royal families and that was not something that other prominent families could contend to.

“Let’s see if he can still run away with his limbs broken!” Wallace scoffed.

“Yes! He won’t be able to escape after that!” Michael agreed to it.

All of a sudden, a man in gold-rimmed glasses yelled, “Father, no!”

The man, Dustin Jones, was one of Levi’s uncles. He was on good terms with Emma, Levi’s mother.

“Father, we already owe Emma so much! We can’t be so cruel to her son now!” Dustin persuaded.

“He’s right, father. We can use him as the scapegoat instead of disabling him!” Ella Jones, Levi’s aunt chimed in.

Michael hesitated. “Well...”

“Punish him, father! An arrogant imbecile like him doesn’t deserve to be spared!”
Wallace and a few others hollered.

Michael’s butler whispered in his ear, “Sir, I don’t think this will look good on us if words go out. We don’t have to go as far as to keep them confined. It might destroy our reputation!”

“Grandpa, I think he’s right! Why do we have to be afraid of the two of them when we are so powerful? We will become a laughing stock if anyone hears of this!”
Tyler added.

At last, Michael gave the order for his men to retreat.

“Count yourself lucky today, Levi!” Michael spat, “We are only letting you off because you mean nothing to us. Try anything funny and I will imprison you for real.”

After Levi left, Michael commanded, “Shadow, keep an eye on them!”

The Protector Chapter 696

A person's silhouette streaked across the room as soon as Michael gave his order.

He was none other than Shadow, the most powerful martial arts expert in Jones family.

An expert in assassination and stealth, no one would have the time to defend themselves when he struck.

Not even a bullet could harm him if he moved fast enough.

Wallace felt rest assured with Shadow in charge of monitoring Levi's actions.

"Shadow can appear anywhere without anyone noticing him! Levi and Mia won't be able to get far when he's out spying on them!" The Joneses exclaimed confidently.

When Levi and Mia were halfway on the road, Levi noticed someone following them.

He chuckled under his breath, "Huh! They think I'm stupid."

Even the most skillful martial art expert of the Jones family couldn't trick him.

Shadow? What a joke!

Levi arranged for Mia to stay at Morris Group with Zoey for the time being.

Knowing that Mia was the only relative who was on good terms with Levi, Zoey was very fond of her.

“Mia, Zoey will take care of you from now onwards.”

Although Mia was treated kindly by Zoey, she couldn't muster up any joy knowing that she and Levi could not escape their fate. They would still be sent to prison in Orientana in a few days.

Meanwhile, the Joneses were cursing Levi in Jones Residence when Michael got a phone call from the Warlord, Elijah.

Michael switched to a polite tone, “How can I help you, my lord?”

“Have you prepared the money?” Elijah asked.

“Yes, the fifty billion is ready!”

“And have you chosen who to go to prison on behalf of your family? I hope you don't try anything funny with me. I've made it clear that your punishment for breaking my rules is to send at least two of your direct descendants to jail!” Elijah demanded sternly.

“As you wish, my lord!”

“Good. I'll come to Erudia personally to get the money and take two of your descendants.”

“Oh? You'll come? Then... Then we'll be waiting for your arrival!”

...

After Elijah hung up, Michael sighed heavily.

“What is it?” everyone asked.

Michael’s face turned pale before he finally announced, “Elijah, the Warlord is coming to Erudia personally!”

Elijah’s arrival meant that the fate of the Joneses was subjected to more variables. What if Elijah changed his mind and demanded harsher punishments?

Besides that, they would have to ensure that Levi and Mia did not escape.

“What? The Demon King is coming?”

Everyone turned pale from horror at the thought of the merciless warlord’s upcoming presence in Erudia because he was not someone that can be messed with.

Anyone who dared to challenge him would either end up with their whole families massacred or the women in their families sold off as slaves and prostitutes.

Not even the Jones family, one of the greatest royal families, could escape Elijah’s wrath.

They made the mistake of offending Elijah during their business trip to Orientana earlier.

If they decided to fight back, they would only end up with a failed business and the warlord’s revenge, which was probably a massacre that consisted of hundreds of assassins.

The Joneses could not afford the dire consequences of defying Elijah again.

“Then we must keep an eye on Levi and Mia! We can’t let them get away!”

With that said, the Joneses commanded three more martial arts experts to monitor Levi and Mia. It would be easier to capture them by the time Elijah arrived.

The Protector Chapter 697

While Mia spent the next few days in agony, Levi was quite relaxed because he couldn't care less about the Joneses.

Four days later, Elijah arrived at South City with a fleet of cars armed with loaded weapons.

Although he was the warlord of Orientana, he tried to keep a low profile because he was in another territory, Erudia.

When the fleet of cars reached Sapphire Villa, Michael led his family members to welcome Elijah at the front door.

Deep down, everyone was nervous when they saw the merciless warlord in front of them.

Michael immediately ordered, "Tell Shadow to bring Mia here now! Tell her if she refuses, I will send her parents to jail instead!"

Soon, Elijah arrived with two hundred armed bodyguards surrounding him.

He had multiple scars that enhanced his ferocious look and a cigar in his mouth.

Elijah's immense wealth enabled him to acquire an army of a hundred thousand soldiers well-equipped with the most formidable weapons.

One wrong word from the Joneses and they would find themselves at the mercy of those weapons.

Elijah's imposing manner was intimidating enough for the Joneses to cower.

As he swept his gaze across the Joneses, Michael stepped up and greeted, "Welcome to Erudia, my lord!"

Elijah's adjutant reported, "Sir, this is Michael Jones, head of the Jones family."

"You," Elijah bellowed in his deep voice, "You are the one who intruded my territory with that filthy business of yours! How dare you defy me and hurt my soldiers?"

Everyone froze in place.

"My lord, I'm afraid it's all a misunderstanding..." Michael fumbled for words hastily.

"Well, since you're willing to apologize, I'll let this matter rest if you add another fifty billion," Elijah concluded.

"What?" Everyone gasped collectively.

This is totally a daylight robbery! That's a hundred billion in total! Our family may never recover from this blow!

In fact, the Joneses had prepared themselves for more daunting news, but they never expected Elijah to be so ruthless and cunning.

Elijah smirked, "Is that a problem?"

"I have thirty thousand men on standby not far from South Hampton. Believe me, they are very impulsive. I cannot assure you of your safety once they know that you defy me again..." He threatened menacingly.

The Joneses turned pale when they realized that Elijah was threatening to destroy their family if they didn't agree to his conditions.

Knowing that they wouldn't stand a chance against Elijah, Michael finally gave in. "There's no way we will defy you, my lord!"

As Michael showed Elijah into Sapphire Villa, the rest of the Joneses completed the 100-billion transaction.

"Get the ten prisoners ready. I'm leaving soon!" Elijah ordered.

Despite being tyrannical, he dared not prolong his stay at Erudia.

He planned to return to his territory once he got what he came for.

"No problem!" Michael commanded his subordinates to capture Levi and Mia.

Not long after, Levi and Mia were surrounded by Michael's men.

"Please come with us, Ms. Jones. The warlord is already here. Your parents will have to go to jail if you don't show up!"

Mia panicked. "Levi, I have to go now!"

Levi stroked her head lightly. "Alright, I'll come with you!"

The Protector Chapter 698

Levi couldn't have cared less previously. However, when he heard that Elijah was in South City, he became angry.

*How can we allow this mad warlord to wreak havoc as he pleases in Erudia?
Does he have a death wish?*

“What?” Mia exclaimed.

The bodyguards appeared to be astounded as well because none of them thought Levi would go with Mia.

Meanwhile, in Sapphire Villa, Elijah appeared to be beaming at the successful transfer of 100 billion to his account, but he was actually worried because Erudia was a dangerous place for mercenaries like him.

He would be in trouble if the military discovered his presence in South City.

However, he was willing to take the risk to get an extra fifty billion.

“Where are they? Bring them to me quickly!” He urged.

Soon enough, Levi, Mia, and eight other Joneses were sent to Elijah.

Michael and a few others smirked at the sight of Levi surrendering himself.

He must have come to his senses finally! He will never be able to fight our men anyway.

Lust glinted in Elijah's eyes when he laid eyes on Mia. Once he made sure of Levi and Mia's identity, he nodded satisfactorily.

"Good. Seize them!"

Michael and the others only dared heave a sigh of relief after Elijah and his soldiers left Sapphire Villa. "We may have lost fifty billion today, but at least we are finally free from more trouble!"

The only thing the Joneses were upset about was the money. Except for Mia's parents, none of them cared the least about the fate of the Joneses who were taken by Elijah as captives.

Mia's parents were the only ones weeping.

"How can you be so ruthless, dad? They're your grandchildren!" Mia's parents wailed at the thought of never seeing Mia again.

"Don't be such a crybaby! They should be proud to be able to contribute to the family! It's a glory of a lifetime!" Michael stated as if his decision of sending Levi and Mia away was an honorable one.

On the other hand, Elijah ordered his men to speed up.

Leaving Erudia immediately was the only way to avoid the possible dangers and ease his tension.

Positioning himself in front of the captives, he scoffed, "All of you belong to me from today onwards!"

Mia and the others cowered and avoided Elijah's gaze except for Levi. He was the only one that stared right into the warlord's eyes bravely.

Elijah was puzzled by Levi's calmness. "You... You're not afraid of me?" he inquired curiously.

A laugh escaped from Levi's mouth. "Why should I be afraid of you?"

"Of course you should be! The Joneses always cower when they're around me! Look at them!" He pointed at Mia and the others who were shivering in fright.

"Are you really not afraid of me?" Elijah asked again.

"I'm never afraid of anyone else. Instead, everyone should be afraid of me," Levi chuckled.

"Ha! Are you saying that I should be afraid of you?" Elijah snorted.

The Protector Chapter 699

Levi nodded seriously. “You might pee your pants in fright if I reveal my identity.”

“Hahahaha...”

Elijah was laughing out the loudest among everyone who burst into waves of laughter because he thought the notion was too ridiculous. What could Levi be capable of when he was merely someone that the Joneses presented as captives? Even the formidable Michael Jones had to obey him and give him a hundred billion.

This is outrageous!

Mia tugged on Levi’s sleeves to signal him to stop talking because she didn’t want him to get into trouble with Elijah.

Smiling, Levi remarked, “Your swift departure shows that you’re afraid.”

“What?” Elijah was thrown off momentarily because he didn’t expect Levi to read his fear.

How does he know? He must be no ordinary person!

“I’m afraid? That’s impossible!” Elijah denied.

“You sneaked into Erudia when you clearly know that mercenaries are banned here, didn’t you? Aren’t you scared that the military get words of this?” Levi bombarded Elijah on his weak spots.

It turned out that the warlord was terrified of the soldiers of Erudia because he nearly died in their hands years ago.

“That’s impossible! I wouldn’t go to Erudia if I’m afraid. Mind you, I have a hundred thousand soldiers in my command! If anyone should be afraid, it should be the soldiers of Erudia!” Elijah boasted.

Levi taunted, “Have you ever thought of the possibility that the military knows about your intrusion?”

Elijah felt his mind go blank when he heard Levi. Slowly realizing that he overlooked a serious problem, it was his turn to turn pale and shiver.

I must have underestimated Erudia! I should have found it suspicious when nobody stopped my fleet of cars!

“That’s ridiculous! We won’t be discovered because all of my men are skilled in stealth!” Elijah made another attempt to cover up his fear.

After giving Levi one last glare, he strode to the front and ordered his driver to hit the accelerator and stay alert of the surroundings.

“I’ll let you off for now. Once we reach Orientana, I’ll see if you can still spout nonsense when I try the cruelest tortures on you!” Elijah threatened Levi.

“I’ll be looking forward to it,” Levi replied calmly.

They had a smooth journey for the first three hours.

When they finally reached a hidden landing in the woods, Elijah felt the weight lift off his shoulders. There were dozens of helicopters waiting in the landing to take off.

“I must be worrying for nothing all because of that stupid guy! Erudia’s soldiers didn’t notice us at all!” Relieved, Elijah laughed.

However, Levi’s voice sounded from the back of the car. “I’m giving you a final chance to surrender yourself, Elijah! You won’t be able to beg for mercy later!”

“What the hell are you blabbering about? I will rip your mouth if you continue your nonsense!” Elijah snapped furiously.

Just as they got off the cars and moved towards the helicopters, something unforeseen happened.

“Ow-”

Elijah looked around frantically in horror as the sound of wolves howling echoed through the woods. Eighteen wolves with riders appeared on top of the hill opposite them.

It was the Cavalry Regiment!

The Protector Chapter 700

“What the...”

Elijah’s men were appalled by the scene.

They had never seen such enormous wolves with pure white fur that emitted dangerous auras. Nor had they seen riders on wolves who were equipped with traditional bows, modern guns, and grenades at the same time.

The Cavalry Regiment that was once the nightmare of almost all enemies on the battlefield reappeared in the forest.

Although Elijah outnumbered the Cavalry Regiment by hundreds of men, they were frozen by their commanding aura.

“All mercenaries who come to Erudia without permission shall die!”

Elijah almost fell to the ground because his knees gave way when one of the cavalry members bellowed.

When he spotted five other men emerging from the corner of his eyes, he broke into a cold sweat as realization dawned on him.

“Ow-”

The Cavalry Regiment started their attack and rushed down from the hills at top speed.

In a blink of an eye, they closed the distance of over a few hundred meters.

Plop!

Bang!

Argh!

Where their paths crossed, Elijah's men dropped to the ground dead.

The Cavalry Regiment fought ferociously. Soon, most of Elijah's few hundred well-trained soldiers were reduced to piles of corpses.

The rest of them tried to run away, but it was only a matter of seconds before the Cavalry Regiment caught up with them.

Elijah and his men were absolutely crushed by the invincible Cavalry Regiment in no more than two minutes.

Now, the remaining was kneeling on the ground and surrendering themselves.

It was the most terrifying battle they ever encountered because the Cavalry Regiment seemed to be immune to bullets.

Meanwhile, Elijah fell to his knees when the five men he saw from the corner of his eyes two minutes ago stood before him.

Just as Levi predicted, Elijah wetted himself.

He would never forget these men in front of him who almost wiped out his troops three years ago.

The other eleven mercenary troops were destroyed on the same fated night because they came across the undefeatable Iron Brigade in Erudia.

Elijah never expected to find himself at the mercy of the Five Great Wars Regiment, who were the leaders of the Iron Brigade again.

Could the eighteen riders be the legendary Cavalry Regiment?

“I... I...” Elijah could only manage to stutter because he was too scared.

“How dare you come to Erudia? Are you tired of living, Elijah?” Azure Dragon scoffed coldly.

White Tiger chuckled, “Shall I destroy your army in Orientana now?”

“No... Please don't! It's all a misunderstanding...” It was ironic to see the previously arrogant warlord sobbing like a child.

“I assure you, it's all a misunderstanding!”

“We're only here to settle personal matters! We didn't do any harm to Erudia!” Being the only man who wasn't cowering in fear, Elijah's adjutant explained hastily.

“Yes, you've mistaken! We didn't stir up any trouble in Erudia! We wouldn't dream of doing that!” Elijah wailed.

Azure Dragon merely scoffed, “Are you sure? Do you know who have you captured?” His tone suddenly became stern.

Elijah felt his mind being blown into pieces as he thought of someone.

The Protector Chapter 701

Levi! He told me a lot of things earlier. He said that everyone else was afraid of him and that if I had not gotten on my knees then, I wouldn't even have a chance in the future! He also said that I'd be begging for my life when I learned about his identity! Don't tell me... No, it can't be this much of a coincidence!

Elijah felt like his head was going to explode from the overload of information.

If he really is that man, then I'm toast! I'd have lost my life for a mere fifty billion. It's not worth it! Not worth it at all!

Levi hopped off the car, even though Mia had advised him against it as it was dangerous.

The moment Levi arrived, Azure Dragon and the rest of the Five Great Wars Regiment had a solemn expression.

Even the eighteen White Wolves of the Calvary Regiment had prostrated themselves in front of Levi.

"Greetings, God of War!" dozens of men echoed in unison.

...

Elijah nearly passed out when he heard this. *This is the one time I wish I hadn't guessed correctly! Levi really is that man after all! He was right when he said that I would be scared out of my wits. Anyone in the world would!*

Slap!

Azure Dragon slapped Elijah across the face, bringing him back to his senses.

Bam! Bam! Bam!

Elijah got onto his knees and bowed his head onto the ground repetitively in reverence.

His forehead was bleeding from hitting the ground too hard, but he would not stop.

“That’s enough for now! Firstly, how dare you set foot in Erudia!” Levi scoffed.

“I-I...” Elijah was trembling and lost for words.

“I can give you a second chance. However, you’ll have to pay a hefty sum so I can make sure that you’ve learned your lesson!” Levi offered.

“Really?” Hope rekindled in Elijah’s eyes.

“Give me three hundred billion! I’ll spare your life for that amount!” Levi declared as he extended three fingers.

“Huh?” Elijah was taken aback.

Including the one hundred billion the Jones family paid him, his net worth was but four hundred billion in total.

Yet, he had to throw three hundred billion away! This was akin to destroying him financially, but he had no choice.

As long as he was alive, he would have a chance to amass another three hundred billion someday.

“Thank you for sparing my life, God of War!” Elijah exclaimed with his head bowed low.

With the help of Phoenix, the three hundred billion was transferred from Elijah’s account to Levi in a flash.

“Alright then, we’ve been doing quite a lot of charity in Quebec recently. Let’s use this three hundred billion for business and investment instead! I’m sure Quebec will welcome increased investment!”

Levi then instructed Tim to use the three hundred billion to invest in the redevelopment of Quebec.

“Send the rest of them back to the Jones family and leave!” Levi commanded.

Elijah hurriedly followed his orders and brought the survivors, as well as Mia and the other hostages, back to the Jones family.

Argh, I shouldn’t have come after all. The entire floor is lava here at Erudia! This trip nearly cost me my life, and I had to pay an entire three hundred billion for this! What a waste!

Meanwhile, in Sapphire Villa.

Just as the Jones family had packed up and was about to return to South Hampton, several cars arrived at the gate.

“Bad news! Elijah is back!” someone alerted the entire Jones family, sending them into a state of panic.

Michael nearly passed out when he heard this.

The fact that Elijah had returned meant that he had come to make more unreasonable demands.

What a greedy fellow!

Unfortunately, the Jones family was not in a position to bargain.

“Argh, what a misfortune!”

Michael brought the rest of the Jones family to welcome Elijah at the door.

When Elijah got off the car, the Jones family was dumbfounded.

They had not expected him to get down on his knees in front of them...

The Protector Chapter 702

Even Elijah's generals and men kneeled down in front of them.

The Jones family was stunned by the sight and stared at them in shock.

What's going on? What's up with Elijah?

"Please don't do this, my lord. The Jones family isn't worthy of it!" Michael exclaimed. He nearly fell onto his knees at the sight of this.

What on earth does Elijah mean by this? Is this... another trap?

"Mr. Jones, I was in the wrong. This is the greatest mistake of my life! I came here to apologize and return the hostages!"

Elijah then raised a hand and his men released Mia and the others.

Mia and the other captives were stunned.

They had been in the car this entire time, unaware of what was going on outside.

The moment they got out, they realized that they had been sent back to the Jones family! *What's going on? Where's Levi? Where did he go after he got off the car? Is he in danger?*

Mia was worried for his safety. *What's going on?*

"My lord, can you please explain all of this? I'm afraid I don't understand what's going on," Michael asked.

The rest of the Jones family were equally perplexed. *What is going on? Elijah has not only returned the hostages, but also kneeled down to apologize to us.*

They were bewildered by the sudden change in events.

“Ah! I was too arrogant and got punished by someone while lording all over Erudia!” Elijah sighed.

“In the future, I won’t restrict the Jones family from doing business in my turf. In fact, if there’s anything you need help with, feel free to look for me! Please put in a good word with that man so that I can survive...” Elijah pleaded while he was on his knees.

Even if Levi let me off this time, he won’t go easy if I offend him another time. I need to get his grandfather to put in a good word for me.

“Huh? Who? I’m afraid you lost me here,” Michael queried.

The others were equally confused.

Who would Elijah be so scared of? Does such a person even exist?

“Mr. Jones, you don’t have to keep this a secret from me. This time, it was the God of War who stepped forward to help the Jones family. Several hundreds of my men died and I was nearly crippled as well! Please forgive me, Mr. Jones. I didn’t know that the Jones family was related so closely to the God of War! Otherwise, I’d never have dared to lay hands on the Jones family!” Elijah cried.

He had never expected that Michael was the God of War’s grandfather!

“God of War? You mean the highly revered man in Erudia, the God of War?” Michael questioned.

“That’s right! Everyone fears the God of War across the lands!”

“My lord, are you saying that the Jones family has connections to the God of War?” Michael repeated his question.

“That’s right! The God of War came down personally and even mobilized the Five Great Wars Regiment and the Cavalry Regiment! I got the fright of my life!” Elijah explained.

“Why don’t we know about it then?”

The Jones family stared at each other in shock. *Since when have we known anyone related to the God of War?*

“Alright, Mr. Jones, I’ll be leaving now that I’ve returned the hostages. He might be coming for me at any moment!” Elijah brought his men and prepared to leave.

“Hold on a moment, my lord. Could you tell us how the God of War is related to us?” Michael queried.

“That’s right! Tell us, my lord!”

The Protector Chapter 703

Elijah was stunned.

He had assumed that Michael and the others knew Levi's identity and were playing dumb, but their actions showed otherwise.

That's right! His identity is a state secret. It won't be surprising if his family doesn't know about it! I can't be the one to let them know either.

"I'll just put it this way — the God of War has a close relationship with the Jones family and will continue protecting you as long as you are willing to accept him!"

Elijah then left Sapphire Villa with his men.

He fled Erudia, worried that Levi would change his mind.

"Is it really true that the God of War who defeated eighteen nations and triumphed over every battle is related to the Jones family?"

Michael remained doubtful of this.

"It has to be! Look at how frightened Elijah was! Who else could it be?"

"I heard that the God of War has retired and is currently in North Hampton."

...

"But how is the God of War related to us though?" Michael frowned.

"Grandpa, you forgot about Uncle Anson!" Tyler reminded him.

Michael had seven children, and his youngest son, Anson, had joined the armed forces at a young age.

It was said that he was part of the special forces and his role was shrouded in secrecy.

He had not returned home for five years.

He was only allowed to call his family once a year, mostly to reassure them that he was still alive.

The rest of the family had given up on Anson and had not expected him to contribute much to the family.

However, they did not expect him to be related to the God of War!

This was indeed a great surprise to the Jones family!

“That’s right! Anson told us last year that he was a part of the God of War’s Iron Brigade! I didn’t tell you guys this because it was a state secret. Being part of the Iron Brigade means that he reports directly to the God of War. He might be a general for all we know! The God of War must have stepped in for Anson’s sake!”

If the God of War himself helped Anson out, this must mean that he’s holding a very high rank!

Michael was overjoyed when he thought of that.

“The Jones family has the God of War as our backer! It’s finally time for the Jones family to rise now!”

The rest of the Jones family were thrilled as well.

They had not expected the God of War of Erudia to help the Joneses.

“Anson is the pride and joy of the Jones family! We could all stand to learn from him!” everyone cheered.

On the other hand, Mia remained skeptical.

Something's wrong. It feels like this has something to do with Levi.

“Where's Levi?” Michael asked.

“He has probably escaped in the chaos!” someone suggested.

Wales scorned, “Mia, after how you've treated him as a relative, he's fled in the face of danger and abandoned you!”

“No, you don't understand...” Mia tried to explain.

“You're no longer allowed to interact with Levi anymore! Otherwise, I won't let you off!” Michael warned.

He then instructed Wallace, “Inform Levi that he's now disowned! I, Michael Jones, do not acknowledge him as my grandson and he's no longer allowed to call himself a part of the Jones family!”

Wallace and the others nodded, “That's right! Now that the matter with Elijah is settled, he's no longer of use to us! We won't let him make use of the name of the Jones family any further!”

The Protector Chapter 704

Three hundred billion in exchange for Elijah's life.

Levi was in a terribly good mood.

To him, there was an even bigger surprise.

Elijah had placed thirty thousand soldiers for reinforcement outside of South Hampton's sea.

This was not just a tactic to scare the Jones family, but there really was thirty thousand soldiers.

After locking onto the target, the five Kings of War led the Beasts and attacked Elijah's troops.

It was a good opportunity to take a look at the progress of the Beasts who had been training for a month.

Under the attack of the Beasts, Elijah's thirty thousand soldiers were pulverized and had to retreat.

That was how strong the Beasts were!

Each one of them was powerful even when they fought alone.

Hence, when they were grouped together, they were practically undefeatable.

"Mm, the result is not bad."

Levi smiled with satisfaction.

At this moment, the Joneses had dared to find him.

“What do you want?”

Levi’s faced turned rigid.

Wallace sneered at him. “Levi Garrison, I came to see you for two things.”
“Firstly, you have broken our family’s rules. The Joneses will not pursue the incident of breaking the ferule either!”

“Secondly, from now on, you don’t have any relations with the Jones family!” “I hope you will not continue to use the Joneses’ name for your benefits!”

“If it weren’t the need for a scapegoat, the Joneses would have never recognized your identity! Now that things are settled, you’d better know where you stand!”

“A person like you will never have the right to step through the doors of the Jones family!”

“I am telling you now, the God of War is supporting our family! The Joneses will only grow stronger, so trash like you will only pull down the Joneses’ standards!”

“Don’t ever think of stepping foot into the Jones Residence, because you are not worthy!”

...

The younger Joneses snickered and sneered.

“In the future, if I ever heard you using the Jones family’s name again, I will break all your limbs. You just mark my words!”

Wallace warned him sternly then left with the other Joneses.

Levi shrugged. "How childish!"

Zoey who was on the side, witnessed everything clearly.

Levi was quite pitiful.

He had finally met his relatives, yet he was treated so badly.

"Darling, that identity is not important, what's so great about the Joneses anyway!"

Zoey comforted Levi.

He nodded, "Yes, it isn't anything."

"Darling, don't worry, with our collective efforts, there will be a day where the Joneses will look up to us with envy!"

Zoey was extremely motivated. She needed to buck up and make Levi exceptional, more so than the Joneses.

Levi smiled.

Honey is the one who cares for me the most.

"Leave it to me! Be it now or in the future, the Joneses are fated to be unworthy!"

Levi made this bold statement with confidence.

The appearance of the Jones family had never affected Levi. Nothing had happened after they left.

After a few days, Levi reached the South City Warzone.

Kirin had some matters to discuss with him and conveniently asked Levi to inspect the Beasts, despite knowing that thirty thousand of Elijah's soldiers were pulverized by just a mere thousands of them.

They comprised of individuals who were highly skilled in combat and properly trained. Should their military tactics be of standards, the Beasts would be unstoppable.

Seeing the vigor Beasts in training, Levi was very satisfied.

Kirin was Erudia's best military instructor.

Coupled with a group of elite soldiers, the chemistry was off the charts.

The Beasts shall be the most terrifying regiment!

"There are no flaws! Their assets are all displayed! I am very impressed!"

Levi praised them.

"But what are you here for? It can't just be for me to observe the results of their training right?"

Levi asked.

The Protector Chapter 705

Kirin sighed, "I don't know how Ezra Williamson found out, but he knows I am training the Beasts! He was rather envious and wants to borrow the Beasts to test them out!"

"I am the one who trains my soldiers. If there is any tests, I will be to one to do them personally! Who is he to test them!" Kirin exasperated.

Levi chuckled.

These people are so interesting.

We are one unit, there is no need to be so calculative.

As for how he found out?

The news of the Beasts bashing Elijah's troops had probably leaked out.

"That's your business, I don't care!"

Levi declared.

"The problem is not me, if Ezra Williamson were to personally come down and make a request, I will have no choice but to agree to his request!"

Levi smirked, "For now, the Western Region is still considered the front line. Ezra has it hard too, so I will lend him the Beasts for now."

The news of the Western Region Commander-in-chief, a tiger on the battlefield, Ezra coming to South City was leaked unintentionally.

In no time, there were many prepared to welcome him.

Famous tycoons were all ready to butter up Ezra.

Since they could not contact the God of War, getting connected with the Western Region Commander-in-chief was not a bad idea.

He had also achieved many great feats and was an invincible God of War.

In addition, Tim had swiftly settled the three hundred billion that came easily.

It would be used for the development for the whole of Quebec.

This was a huge sum!

It would also be used to formulate corresponding policies!

Once the news had spread, Quebec and many neighboring cities' big enterprises and families developed a deep interest.

Even South Hampton's Jones family had received the news.

They knew better than anyone the origin of the three hundred billion.

Out of the three, one hundred billion was from the Joneses.

The Jones family was rather sore about it.

"Our Jones family must get an investment project, and even keep a foothold in Quebec!"

Michael Jones commanded.

“The reason is simple. One hundred billion belongs to our Jones family, you all try to get as many projects as possible to recover our losses!”

“The God of War is also interested in the development of Quebec, if we do well; we can earn points in his favor.”

Michael analyzed.

“We have understood your intentions!”

In the past, the Joneses had no interests in the small Quebec.

However, because of the God of War they had to try their best to make their presence known.

“During this period, I am prepared to use the Joneses’ reputation to invite the God of War, and express our gratitude to him personally!”

Michael had already conjured a plan in his head.

“Grandpa, are we able to invite the God of War? I have checked but he has rejected every single invitation from countless reputable families!”

Tyler voiced his dilemma.

“Are we even similar to them? My son is a General in the military, the right-hand man of the God of War! Regardless of all the circumstances, the God of War has to meet us!”

Michael said smugly.

After the incident of Elijah, he thought that his son, Anson Jones, was definitely on par with a King of War.

Little did he know, Anson was only the First Lieutenant in the army.

If one were to go by military ranks, he could only dream of meeting Levi.

“Haha, that’s true! The God of War is the backer of the Jones family. There is no reason for him to turn down the meeting!”

With that said, everyone in the Jones family was excited.

Ever since they came back, they ran amuck in South Hampton.

They answered to no one.

With the support from the God of War, there was no one they should be afraid of?

Now, inviting the God of War was all for the progression of the Joneses.

“Grandpa! I have an idea!” Tyler Jones chimed.

Tyler Jones chimed.

The Protector Chapter 706

“Say it, Tyler.” Michael immediately responded.

“Grandpa, if we want to thank the God of War, he will definitely reject any material gifts. However, I have a better idea to express our gratitude...”

“How about we build a statue of the God of War in South City to show our gratitude!”

Clap! Clap! Clap!

The moment Tyler finished his sentence, everyone started to applaud.

“Building a statue is a good idea!”

“As expected from my grandson! That’s a good idea!”

Michael cackled.

The God of War will have no reason to reject them if they were to build him a statue of him.

Furthermore, others will know that the relations between the Joneses and the God of War are tightly knitted!

This is simply killing two birds with one stone!

“Since we have decided, we shall build it immediately! Tyler you are in charge of this project!”

Michael commanded.

The Joneses were now showing their gratitude to the God of War with hidden intentions.

“Father, according to rumors, the Western Region Commander-in-chief, Ezra Williamson, will be coming to South City!”

Wallace informed.

“Go! We must welcome him in the Joneses’ name! A person like Ezra Williamson is General of the God of War. We have to welcome him with the utmost respect, and extend goodwill to the God of War!”

Michael made up his mind again.

“Although Anson’s status is still a secret, I have a feeling his rank is close to Ezra Williamson. Anson could very well be a Commander-in-chief for one of the Nine Warzones in the future!”

The Jones family sure had expectations...

Reality however was often cruel, Ezra Williamson was a King of War.

On the other hand, Anson Jones was only a mere First Lieutenant. These two were worlds apart.

News of Ezra Williamson’s visit spread like wildfire.

Even Sylas Whitfield got the news.

Sylas went to Levi feeling a little embarrassed. “Sir, I...I want to apply for leave!”

“Hm?”

This stunned Levi.

Sylas was a rigid person, why would she apply for leave?

“Sir, please listen to my explanation. Isn’t Chief Williamson coming? We have all heard of the news, so a few of the retired soldiers wanted to meet up with Chief Williamson. There will be a war retirees’ gathering and I am unable to reject them.”

Sylas was stuck between a rock and a hard place.

“Alright, no problem. Your leave is approved. I will be around so there will be nothing to worry about.”

Levi assured her.

“Thank you, Sir!”

Sylas saluted.

She was probably the luckiest bodyguard in the world for a very simple reason.

The great God of War of Erudia had personally covered her shift.

If this news were leaked, the whole world would be shocked beyond belief.

However, that was how things were, and it happened.

Levi chuckled helplessly. “This punk is here to borrow soldiers yet he has stirred such a big commotion! He even made it a bigger deal than me. He should take a page out of Percy’s book!”

In the past when Levi returned to North Hampton, he brought hundreds of fighter jets and a hundred thousand soldiers for a reason.

It was to send a message to the other countries to show that Levi did not leave his post but merely paying a visit to his hometown.

This was to announce to the other nations that he was still the God of War of Erudia.

With that, the other countries or forces that intended to make a move stayed put and stopped harboring the thought of launching an attack on Erudia.

Levi didn't like such a grand and extravagant entrance.

However, he had no choice but to do it that way.

Sylas had just left when Tim's secretary, Sean, visited personally.

"Mr...Mr. Garrison, Mr. Cronan sent me to see you. There was something he wishes to discuss."

Sean trembled slightly as he said.

"What's the matter?"

The Protector Chapter 707

“Mr. Cronan said that you’ll be fully in charge of the investment of the three hundred billion, Mr. Garrison,” said Sean Zucker.

“Why?” asked Levi curiously.

“Because once the policy was passed, tens of businesses have come to pay Mr. Cronan a visit. They’re all successful entrepreneurs from South City and have done a lot for the development of the city. It’d be too difficult for Mr. Cronan to reject their requests. So in order to avoid any controversy and to be completely impartial, he’s decided to hand over the matter to you,” explained Sean.

Levi gave it some thought before answering. “Very well. I’ve got some free time on my hands recently anyway, so I’ll take care of it.”

“Thank you, Mr. Garrison. Please let us know if you need anything.”

Soon enough, all news outlets were reporting that the person in charge of the three hundred billion investment project had changed hands and was now being handled by Mr. Garrison.

This news immediately drew the interest of plenty of entrepreneurs across South City.

This of course also included the Black family. They weren’t going to let such a great opportunity slip through their fingers.

The Blacks gathered everyone for a meeting, including Zoey.

“This is the perfect chance for us Blacks! Our family has been stagnant for the past few years, so it’ll be great if we can just get our hands on a few of these projects.”

Meredith’s eyes scanned across the crowd. “So, everyone needs to work hard to get us as many projects as possible! Oh, and I’m counting on you especially, Zoey!”

“I’m sorry, Grandma. But our company won’t be in the run for any projects this time.”

With the number of resources and funds the Morris Group had, they didn’t need to get involved in the competition at all.

“But you need to think for the Black family. What Grandma is saying is for you to acquire some projects on behalf of us,” insisted Meredith.

“I’m afraid that’ll be a little difficult, Grandma. I can’t bid for those projects using my company but if I use my own, it will be very tough.”

Zoey didn’t want to use the company’s resources for personal matters.

Meredith’s face darkened. “Frankly, I don’t care.”

“We should give Zoey a mission that she can’t refuse. After all, remember she insists on marrying Levi Garrison?” chimed Jennie.

Meredith’s eyes widened at Jennie’s reminder. “That’s right! Zoey, here’s your mission! You have to get us a project worth at least fifty billion!”

“Why are you forcing this on me, Grandma?” asked Zoey couldn’t seem to understand.

“Because... you want to get married to Levi, don't you? None of us Blacks support this marriage of yours. But as long as you get us a project worth fifty billion, then neither we nor your parents will stop you. Otherwise, as long as we're around, you can forget about marrying Levi!” asserted Meredith firmly.

What?

Zoey froze to the spot.

She thought that the Black family would be better than the Lopez family. But as it turned out, they were all the same.

They all treated her as if she were nothing but their pawn; a tool to be used.

With such massive profits tempting them, they didn't even care if their demands were unreasonable.

“Don't worry. With your resources, this shouldn't be a problem for you at all. Moreover, I'll be helping you too. I'll get in contact with the person-in-charge as soon as possible,” smiled Logan.

Zoey looked at the people around her. “Grandma, I won't agree to this! Why do I have to do this?”

“Fine, you can turn me down. But you can kiss your plans to marry Levi goodbye as long as I'm alive. I swear I'll do whatever it takes to stop you!” seethed Meredith.

Everyone else in the Black family had the same attitude too.

The Protector Chapter 708

The Black family didn't want to let this opportunity slip past them, but they didn't exactly have the capabilities to grab on any projects.

Zoey, on the other hand, was different.

She had the Morris Group backing her. In fact, as long as she wanted to, it wouldn't even be that difficult for her to get her hands on a few of the bigger projects.

Besides, if Zoey didn't succeed, they would then have the perfect excuse to keep Zoey and Levi apart.

After that, they could just find a better man for Zoey and marry her off into a rich, aristocratic family.

Either way, it was a win-win situation for the Blacks.

"Zoey, you have to understand that this is the best move for you and your parents," said Robert.

"I have given your father an executive position at Black Corporation. As for your mother, I've also pulled some strings to have her transferred to one of the top hospitals here in South City, and she's even been appointed as the head of her department. So they are both very supportive of this plan," explained Meredith.

Zoey looked at the people in front of her. "So what you're saying is, as long as I successfully land a project worth at least fifty billion, then none of you will meddle in my relationship with Levi anymore?"

“That’s right! And we promise to keep up our end of the bargain. Even your parents will have no further say,” nodded Meredith.

“Alright. I’ll agree then,” conceded Zoey.

For the sake of her relationship with Levi, she needed to give it a try.

Later that day, after Zoey returned to the company, she immediately started looking into everything concerning the investment conference.

Her secretary came up to her. “Ms. Lopez, even though the investment conference is organized by South City, the person-in-charge isn’t actually someone from here. It’s rumored that they are completely impartial, and that they’ll award the projects to the best applicants.”

“It’s good to hear that such a person is in charge. Otherwise some of the bigger conglomerates and rich families would have split the majority of the projects amongst themselves.”

Zoey’s eyes were shining. This was undeniably good news for her. It meant that she would have a better chance of succeeding.

Right then, Levi walked in. He had dropped by to see her.

“You look troubled. What’s wrong?” asked Levi.

Zoey told Levi about the mission the Blacks had forced upon her.

“A project worth fifty billion? That’s easy. And here I thought you were worried about something unfeasible,” chuckled Levi.

He was the person in charge so all the decisions were going to be made by him.

So, like he said, it was literally easy enough.

That being said, he wasn't actually worried about the threat from the Blacks or Zoey's parents to keep them apart.

He just found it troublesome.

If Zoey's family was going to cause problems for them at every turn, then it was going to be pretty annoying.

So it would be best if everything could be taken care of in one go.

Zoey stared at him with her eyes wide. "Huh? Easy? I'm talking about a project worth fifty billion here. Not to mention I'm not bidding for the project using Morris Group but personally. This is so hard that it's nearly impossible!"

"Why're you so stressed out? Just one word from me, and you'll get your project," grinned Levi.

"You're not going to pester the boss of Morris Group again, are you? I've just asked Iris, and she said that the boss isn't involved with any of this. So do you still have a way?" asked Zoey.

The Protector Chapter 709

“Just relax. You’ll get your project soon enough. However, you should suggest to the Black family that even though the project will land in their laps, you should still be the one who’s in charge,” stated Levi.

Zoey found herself unable to look away from Levi.

It was as if he had some superpower. Each time he stated something or made a claim, her problems would always just resolve magically on their own.

If she didn’t know better, she’d think that he was the one taking care of things for her.

However, this time she couldn’t bring herself to believe him, especially when the boss of Morris Group wasn’t going to help him out.

Thus, she was very curious to see just what Levi would do.

Levi noticed the doubt in her eyes, but he didn’t say anything more on the matter.

He decided he would just go ahead and delegate a project to her during the investment conference.

Recently, there were two major events that were keeping South City abuzz. The first was the investment conference, and the second was the arrival of Ezra Williamson from the Western Region.

When Ezra made a big show of his upcoming arrival to South City, Levi immediately knew what he was up to.

Soon enough, Levi received a call from Ezra.

“Ezra, you rascal. You’re trying to pull one over on your enemies by being so high-profile, aren’t you?”

Ezra chuckled. “I really can’t get anything past you, boss! Our Warzone had been battling Wheldrake, and it has been particularly difficult to break through their defense line. So I’m being intentionally loud with my whereabouts to attract their attention. Once the Beasts join us, I can then circle back and catch them by surprise,” grinned Ezra sheepishly.

This was the main reason why Ezra wanted everyone to know that he was going to return to South City.

“Looks like you’ve learned well from me.”

“Aww, shucks, boss! I still have a lot more to learn from you,” said Ezra humbly.

“I’ll see you soon then!” Levi was quite eager to see Ezra too. He was not only one of his soldiers, but was like a brother to him too.

“Hehe! By the way, I have a present for you, boss. I’ve gotten quite a few goodies from Wheldrake,” grinned Ezra.

“Oh? As long as it’s not women from Wheldrake!”

“Haha! Then what kind of women do you want, boss? Just say the word and I’ll grab you a dozen!”

If Syllas ever found out that the Chief she revered so much was actually such a person, she’d probably be shocked speechless.

At the end of the day, once Levi, Ezra, and the rest of these ruthless warriors removed their armor, they were still just ordinary people.

They were someone else's son, and some were even a father to others.

But they donned their military uniforms and braved the frontlines just to protect this land.

It was because of heroic people like them that others had the chance to lead a peaceful life.

Speaking of Syllas, she had gone off to join a veterans' gathering. Unexpectedly, Levi had also received an invitation as a guest.

It was mainly the comrades from when he first joined the military.

But they lost touch once Levi was reassigned to another squad, so none of them knew of his real identity.

The Protector Chapter 710

Those veterans had found out that Levi was in South City, so they sent him an invitation too.

When Levi saw what the invitation was, he decided to attend it at all cost.

At that moment, the veterans' gathering had started.

Most of the men there were retired soldiers from the Western Region. They had all once been elite warriors on the battlefield.

However, there were also some "less elite" veterans among them. They were ones who had never done much during their military careers but somehow kept collecting military medals left and right.

This gathering was not only attended by those from the Western Region but there were also some who came from other Warzones that Syllas had never met before.

Now that they were all gathered together, the most common topic of conversation was their current jobs.

A number of them had changed careers and gone on to other fields, but the majority had continued to work as bodyguards or security personnel.

One major point of interest for the gathering was Syllas.

There were actually quite a few other females around, but Syllas was arguably the prettiest out of the bunch. Especially now that she had dressed up, she looked as beautiful as any celebrity out there.

Naturally, a lot of the men there were interested in her.

When they were in the military then, none of them dared to mess with this warrior princess.

But things were different now.

“Sylas, I heard that you’re currently employed as a personal bodyguard?”

“That’s right,” nodded Sylas.

“How’s the pay? I’m guessing it’s at least seven or eight hundred thousand?”

“I was lucky enough to find a good employer. My salary is about ten million plus a house and a car,” answered Sylas candidly.

“What?”

Everyone stared at her in disbelief.

Hearing the salary alone was enough to stun the crowd into silence.

This also startled the men who were previously interested in her. They had to reconsider things now that she suddenly seemed out of their league.

“Sylas, is your boss still hiring? We’re all available!”

“Sure, I can ask.”

With that, Sylas stepped outside and gave Levi a call to check with him.

“Actually, I was just thinking about forming a first-class security team, so I am indeed hiring.”

Levi already had such a thought in his mind when he decided to attend the veterans' gathering. Now that Sylas had called him for this same reason, it was as if it was meant to be.

Sylas went back in and told the men that her boss would be personally coming over to do the selection and hiring.

This news undoubtedly thrilled them.

As time went on, more and more people arrived at the gathering.

There were veterans from all over, including those from the North, East, and South.

Altogether, there were more than one hundred veterans in attendance.

When everyone was seated, the conversation somehow turned into a bragging competition.

Those from the North laid it on especially thick, and wouldn't stop boasting about their military achievements.

"Back then, the three of us managed to infiltrate the enemy's command post, and we were all given first-class merits. Our whole company was also awarded a third-class merit thanks to us."

"And don't forget when the whole regiment lost their base, but our company managed to secure ours successfully. That was because of our effort too, and we were awarded yet another first-class merit!"

"Our whole military career actually was quite boring. We only just got two first-class merits, five second-class merits, and eight third-class merits. That's all."

And as if their words weren't enough, they even started to lay out all those military medals on the table.

The Protector Chapter 711

This naturally drew a lot of envious looks from the crowd.

However, Sylas really despised such behavior.

Nearly everyone in attendance had military medals, and yet no one took them out.

“Oh, and do you remember how we almost got a special class merit but it was stolen by another soldier from our squad? That was such a pity!”

“I know! We were the ones who came across the intel, but that dude just stole the credit right out from under us!”

“Oh my gosh! I still hate that guy even to this day! If it weren’t for him, I’d be so much better off right now!”

The group of men were all grumbling.

After all that bragging, the other veterans came to learn their names, which were Brad Guzman, Xerxes Lewinski, and Gordon Wheeler.

Sylas never expected that those men were once Levi’s comrades.

Levi had started out as a private before being secretly reassigned to the Northern Region.

So these men must be in the same squad as him.

And frankly, all the merits they had obtained had pretty much nothing to do with them.

They were all thanks to Levi putting his life on the line.

It was Levi who managed to infiltrate the enemy's command post, but the trio then unashamedly came to steal the limelight.

It was also because of Levi that their company was the only one that successfully defended their base when the whole regiment lost theirs. The trio again stole Levi's thunder.

All those merits that they were boasting about so smugly were all because of Levi. They had done nothing but brazenly taken the credit.

The trio had always been nothing but bums who skated through life. Their families wanted to make men out of them, so they enlisted them in the military.

So despite donning military uniforms, they had never been a soldier at heart.

Thus, they enjoyed all sorts of special treatment, but they never put in the effort during training and even caused all sorts of trouble. When they went to the battlefield, they were always the first to duck and run too.

So in the end, they had plenty of military awards to brag about despite only being in uniform for a short while.

In fact, Levi couldn't comprehend why his merits and glory had fallen in their hands.

But he was never the type to care about credit and honor.

Besides, the medals were going to the men in the same squad and sharing the same dorm with him, so he never spoke out about their doings.

However, their behavior soon worsened.

He was always the one fighting deep in the trenches while the trio silently lounged in the back and collected the awards.

That final special class merit that they spoke about earlier was one that Levi finally refused to concede. This immediately sowed a seed of hatred in them.

If they had gotten that special class merit, then they would've enjoyed a much better lifestyle after being discharged from military service.

So all these years, not only did they not feel any gratitude towards Levi, but they even spent most of their time talking smack about him.

This time around, they had actually learned that Levi was in South City; thus, they intentionally extended an invitation to him.

In Levi's case, he absolutely could have done something about them audaciously stealing his glory.

But because they were his first batch of comrades-in-arms, he chose not to make a big deal out of it.

Right then, someone in the crowd jumped up and suggested, "For the meeting with Chief Williamson, why don't we have Brad Guzman and the other two represent us?"

Everyone nodded in agreement. "That's a good idea! The three of them have the most military medals out of all of us, and their military careers have also been the most outstanding. They definitely deserve the honor of meeting with Chief Williamson!"

The Protector Chapter 712

All the soldiers happily agreed to this plan and there wasn't one dissenter in the crowd.

Brad, Xander, and Gordon couldn't keep the smug looks off their faces.

Not much later, Levi arrived at the hotel with his invitation in hand.

When Sylas saw him, she immediately got up to greet him, but she was overtaken by Brad and the other two.

"Garrison, you're finally here! It's been ages!"

The trio leaned in and hugged Levi to give the others the impression that they were all very close.

"Everyone, listen up! Let me introduce you to someone who used to be in our squad, Levi Garrison!"

"He's none other than the person who stole the special class merit from us!" Brad then turned to Levi and gave him a joking smack on his back. "We're still holding that against you by the way, you little rascal!"

The trio was smiling and looking as if they were joking, but Levi still caught the flash of resentment in their eyes.

"I heard that you're working as a security guard now?" asked Gordon as he patted Levi on the shoulders hard.

"That's right."

“Out of all the veterans, it looks like you’re the one who’s doing the worst now. Why are you working as a security guard? The least you could do is find a job as a bodyguard or something.”

“That’s right! We’ve got a female soldier who’s doing very well. That’s her over there — Sylas,” said Xerxes as he pointed over to Sylas. “She’s working as a bodyguard, and she has an annual salary of ten million. Her boss even threw in a house and a car for her!”

Sylas stood up and gave Levi a sheepish grin.

Never in a million years would she have thought that they were Levi’s comrades.

“Garrison, you’re an embarrassment to us in Northern Region!” snickered Brad.

Levi remained silent, but his gaze had traveled to the bunch of military medals laid out on the table.

A look of awkwardness flashed across the trio’s faces when they noticed where Levi was looking.

Naturally, they knew those military medals belonged solely to Levi, and that they had nothing to do with them at all.

But they weren’t going to cave in so easily. “Are you jealous? If you had been a little braver and fought alongside us, then you would’ve gotten your own medals too! Besides, you’re just working as a meager security guard even after you swiped our special class merit. On the other hand, we are just short of that one merit, otherwise, we would’ve received all the military achievements. It is really such a shame!”

The other soldiers also started to chime in. “Comrade, that’s not very loyal of you. You shouldn’t have stolen their credit, especially since you were from the same squad,” one sneered.

Levi scoffed in response. "I was the one who put in the work so of course, I deserve the medal. What did that get to do with them?"

"You deserve it? How ridiculous! Who's going to believe that?"

"I certainly don't!"

Clearly none of them believed Levi.

"They were awarded so many military medals throughout their careers, that also show that they have the ability to be awarded the special class merit too. But look at you, were you awarded any other medals apart from that one medal?" snorted another.

Brad was sneering at Levi too. "That's right! You don't have any other medals other than that one special class merit, do you?"

"Are you guys sure you want to compare military medals with me?" smirked Levi.

The Protector Chapter 713

He actually had long forgotten about all his medals.

But now that these lots were foolishly harassing him, he decided it was necessary to take care of things once and for all.

The trio broke out into waves of mocking laughter. “Ha! Compare military medals? With us? Have you lost your mind?”

If Levi really had that many military medals, then there was no way he would be working as just a security guard.

The thing was, Levi had left their squad because of a severe injury.

Thus, they naturally assumed that his military career ended then as well.

But unbeknownst to them, Levi had only just been reassigned to a top-secret squad.

Levi whipped out his phone and placed a call to Phoenix. “It’s me. Bring some of my military medals to Oceanic Restaurant.”

“Hahahaha...” The trio doubled over in laughter.

“Just how many medals do you have that you need someone to deliver them over to you? Stop fooling yourself, Garrison!” snickered Gordon.

The other veterans also had visible smirks on their faces.

They were having fun being entertained by Levi’s little show.

The thing was, the trio really had too many military medals and was undeniably the most lauded amongst everyone at the gathering.

The other veterans, as successful as their careers had been, didn't even have half as many medals as them.

So Levi was clearly only going to make himself look stupid, especially since he was quite ordinary when compared to everyone else.

Seeing all this unfold made Syllas extremely anxious. A cold sheen of sweat broke out all over her body.

She wanted to tell everyone about Levi's real identity, but she changed her mind after seeing the determined look on his face.

Levi turned his attention back on Brad and the other two. He perked an eyebrow at their smug expressions. "Can you sleep at night knowing that you took what should've been mine? Don't the three of you even feel one ounce of shame?"

"I..."

The trio hesitated for a little before quickly regaining their composure.

"What on earth are you blabbering on about? We were awarded these medals because we put our lives on the line. Everything is properly documented in the files, and an easy search will prove us right. Who are you to try and steal this from us?"

"You're despicable, Garrison! How dare you claim our medals for yourself?"

All the other veterans had believed Brad and his friends, so they naturally assumed Levi was lying through his teeth here too.

“And you call yourself a warrior of Erudia? You’re an embarrassment to all of us! Do you have nothing else better to do than to covet military medals that have nothing to do with you at all?”

Most people in the room were getting angry.

“Don’t tell anyone you served up North. We don’t want to be associated with shameful people like you! What? You don’t like what I said? Then come, let’s fight it out!” growled one muscular-looking warrior.

Sylas quickly stepped up, hoping to diffuse the situation. “We’re all comrades here. There’s no need to get fired up.”

“Fine. Since you’re the one asking, I won’t do anything. But, if no one delivers those supposed medals of his, then I can’t guarantee I’ll keep my cool,” the same guy roared.

Thus, everyone stared at Levi expectantly, waiting for those medals of his to arrive.

Soon enough, casually dressed Phoenix rushed into the scene. In his arms was an army green box.

Bang!

The Protector Chapter 714

The sound of the box hitting the table startled everyone.

Phoenix turned to Levi and whispered to him. “You have too many medals. I could only manage to grab one case.”

All of Levi’s medals — and there were really a lot — were in Phoenix’s care.

Levi gave a small smirk. “Don’t worry. These are more than enough.”

The duo’s conversation shocked those standing around them.

Did he say too many military medals?

Wait. How many medals does he have that he needs such a big case?

And... there’s more than one case?

Brad, on the other hand, still had the same sneer plastered across his face. “Open the case and show us then! There’s no way there are medals inside!”

“Exactly! Who do you think you’re fooling with that box?”

Gordon and Xerxes naturally refused to believe him too.

Levi had gotten injured and then was discharged very early in his military career. The Special Class Merit had to be the only medal he had ever been awarded.

Levi glanced lazily at Phoenix and instructed, “Open the box.”

Phoenix dutifully grabbed a key, unlocked the box, and pulled the lid up.

The sight made everyone's jaw drop. There were at least a hundred military medals nestled in the box.

Even the trio started to panic.

This... this can't be real, right?

But if they're fake, where on earth would Garrison find so many fake medals on such short notice?

Besides, he wouldn't have purposely asked someone to send them over if they were just going to be fake, right?

Levi dipped his hand into the case and grabbed a black-colored medal.

"Special Class Merit?" gasped a few of the men.

Levi sneered. "This medal is the one that you said I stole from you."

Clack!

Levi threw it gently onto the table, before reaching for yet another black-colored medal.

"Wow! That's another Special Class Merit!"

"This medal, I received five years ago during the battle at Catskills when I beheaded the enemy's commander-in-chief."

What!

There had been four hundred thousand soldiers fighting in the battle at Catskills.

Yet, Levi was the one who beheaded the commander-in-chief?

Just who is he exactly?

Levi ignored the shocked expressions on their faces and continued to pull out yet another black-colored medal.

Another one!

Everyone inhaled sharply at the sight.

“I received this because I was the first one to infiltrate the enemy’s stronghold up at the Northern Region.”

Clack!

Levi again tossed it onto the table.

Everyone stared at the three medals lying there. They couldn’t believe their eyes.

These are real medals!

Real freaking medals!

The trio was in complete panic mode now. They stared at Levi with their eyes wide and their mouths agape.

However, Levi wasn’t done yet. He continued to draw one medal after another out of the box. There were a couple dozen of them, and all were Special Class Merits.

“These were awarded for similar reasons, so there’s really nothing much to say.”

This comment nearly threw everyone into a fit.

Nothing much to say? There are at least seventy or eighty Special Class Merit medals there and he says there’s nothing much to say?

Just who is this person?

Where exactly did he come from?

Everyone then turned their eyes onto Brad, Xander, and Gordon.

It was as if their eyes were silently accusing the trio of withholding information.

Didn’t you three say he was a mere security guard? Why would a mere bodyguard have so many Special Class Merits!

The trio’s faces were completely distorted by then.

They didn’t know what was going on either.

The Protector Chapter 715

Levi then nonchalantly grabbed a purple-colored medal out of the box.

“Huh?”

This medal confused everyone.

It was purple-in-color, and one that no one had seen before.

What class is this?

Could it be of a higher class than the Special Class Merit?

On closer inspection, there was a beautifully engraved image of a Kirin on the medal.

“This Kirin Military Medal was awarded three years ago when I was in the East battling against Arendelle. I eliminated three hundred thousand enemies and captured another hundred thousand!” stated Levi.

Holy cow!

The men’s faces paled.

They had all heard of the battle between the Eastern Warzone and Arendelle.

That war lasted three whole days and three whole nights, and they managed to fight their way right into the capital of Arendelle before ultimately decimating it.

The whole of Erudia celebrated triumphantly.

Levi then pulled out another purple-colored medal. “This was another one I received three years ago. Felle Nation launched a sneak attack on the Southern Region and caused us extensive damages. I led our troops to charge after them, and we even wiped out the whole of Felle Nation.”

Again?

More sharp inhales could be heard echoing through the room.

They could more or less guess Levi’s identity after hearing his account.

The battle he had just spoken about was one that was a must-hear story among soldiers and had been retold again and again.

So everyone knew the story like the back of their hand.

Brad had a very unpleasant expression on his face, as if he were choking on a fly.

Levi ignored him and pulled yet another medal out of the case.

This time, it was a gold-colored medal.

There are gold-colored medals?

No one has seen gold-colored medals before! Heck, I’ve never even heard of anyone mentioning them before!

The engraving on this medal was of a magnificent dragon.

Everyone knew that dragon was a symbol of Erudia.

This meant that the medal itself could very well be a symbol of the country too!

The purple Kirin Military Medal was awarded to those whom the country placed great value on.

Thus, the gold medal could only be one that was awarded to Erudia's ultimate God of War.

Levi held the heavy medal in his hands as he spoke, "This medal is called the Dragon Military Medal, or just the Dragon Medal. This is the only one of its kind in the history of Erudia!"

Crash!

Levi had just finished speaking when the trio suddenly collapsed onto the floor.

They were so shocked that it wouldn't be surprising if they blacked out right then.

Who would've imagined that their fellow comrade, the one who had once been in their squad, would turn out to be someone who owned the only Dragon Military Medal in Erudia!

Everyone else was trembling in their shoes too.

Even Syllas, who was well-aware of Levi's true identity, wasn't exempted from being affected by the atmosphere in the room.

Finding themselves standing in front of such a highly-revered man made their blood pound with exhilaration.

But Levi wasn't finished yet. "Two years ago, with my very own fists, I had defeated an army coalition with the Eighteen-Nation Alliance. In order to honor me for my unmatched capabilities, Erudia awarded me with this Dragon Medal and promoted me to a five-star ranked God of War. I am also the only God of War with five stars in the history of Erudia! That was the pinnacle of my career, and my name has been written into history. I'll never forget the day that I was awarded this medal..."

Levi's voice trailed off as he became swept up in his memories.

The Protector Chapter 716

Everyone held their breath as Sylas saluted and announced. "Salute to our Chief! Salute to our Hero!"

...

Sylas' voice was like a wake-up call to everyone else as they quickly saluted to the God of War with their body trembling and eyes filled with tears.

The tears weren't only for the honor to meet face to face with the God of War, but also the stories behind each and every badge that he earned.

The man standing in front of them was the protector of Erudia, the one who gave them the peace they'd been living in.

Everyone was excited. It was as if they had returned to the military camp.

"We will fight by your side if there is war!" Sylas shouted and everyone repeated after her.

Even Phoenix straightened his body as he remembered the time when they fought the invasion from the alliance.

It was a time of darkness, but also a time of miracle.

As the world thought that Erudia was going to fall, Levi led the army to turn the tide, and defeated the Eighteen-Nation Alliance.

The God of War had slain thousands of god-like warriors sent by the eighteen nations with his iron fists. It was that fight that made Erudia one of the superpowers it was now instead of a developing country.

The three had their bloods drawn from their faces.

They didn't need to suspect Levi's identity anymore for the truth had been spoken.

Levi glared at the three of them and challenged, "Do you still want to compare the number of medals?"

"I-I-I-I..." Brad Guzman was at a loss for words.

"I have dozens of medals here. Do you need me to tell you the story behind each and every one of these medals?"

The three had nothing more to say except kneeling before him and begged for forgiveness. They didn't even come close to comparing themselves with Levi.

Levi scoffed and slowly put his medals back into the case before setting his eyes on Brad's medals on the table. "I was going to let this slide, but you three have crossed the line. I was the one who risked my life to complete the mission for these medals and yet you guys took credit for it. Now, are you still claiming that these belong to you?"

"N-no..." Brad and his partners in crime quickly shook their heads.

"Even if I ignore your wrongdoings, I still have to take back whatever that belongs to me. Even if it's a third-class award, it's still an honor that belongs to me. It's proof of my sacrifice. Phoenix, take these medals away and strip them of their achievements!" Levi ordered.

The Protector Chapter 717

“Yes, Sir!” Phoenix responded immediately.

“You guys are worthless!” Levi roared and threw Brad and his companions out, leaving the others cowering in fear.

The purpose of the gathering was to discuss how they should welcome Ezra. Yet, instead of doing that, it turned into an event where they witnessed the true face of the God of War.

Everyone finally understood the reason for Ezra, Western Region’s commander-in-chief, would come to South City. They finally had their answer.

He came to see the God of War.

“You guys don’t have to be so tense,” Levi stated. “I still have something to announce. Sylas, please.”

Sylas nodded. “The boss I was talking about earlier is the Chief. I have been hired as a bodyguard to the Chief’s wife.”

“Let me make it simple. I’m planning to build an indestructible security team at Morris Group, so I would be glad if anyone here is willing to join us,” Levi explained.

“Count me in!”

“Me too.”

...

Everyone began to volunteer as if it was a once-in-a-lifetime opportunity, which it was. To them, there would be no bigger honor than to work for the God of War.

“I don’t need to be paid!” one shouted.

“No, everyone here is getting paid according to the market price. I only have one request. Guard the company with all your might.”

Levi was feeling very happy after taking care of that matter. The safety of Morris Group’s employees was now solved.

With that, Levi and Phoenix left so that the gathering could continue.

On his way back, Levi ran into a familiar face.

It was none other than Tyler, who was leading the Joneses.

The building that Morris Group and Oriental Star Group now owned once belonged to Triple Group, a high-rise building that was situated in the center of South City.

Tyler and his people were inspecting the surroundings so that they could build a statue of the God of War.

“Hold it! Did I say you could leave?” Wales stopped Levi.

“What do you want?” Levi was a little angered by Wales’ action as that spoiled his mood. “Looks like you are playing it smart and aren’t messing around with the Joneses’ name.”

“Are you looking down on us?” Tyler questioned.

Levi was rendered speechless at the question as Tyler’s action was contradicted with what he said in the past.

“Whatever. Get the hell out of here. You in our way of building the statue of the God of War.” Tyler waved his hand to chase Levi away.

“What did you say?” Levi was surprised to hear his own title.

“Are you deaf? We’re looking for the best location to build a statue for the God of War!”

“Just give up. The God of War doesn’t like all these craps.”

The Protector Chapter 718

“What did you say?”

Everyone was stunned by what Levi had just spouted and stared at him unbelievably.

“The God of War won’t like it? Did you really just say that?”

“Yes, I did,” Levi nodded.

“What? Are you implying that you’re the God of War?” Tyler laughed.

“That’s right. And I don’t like it.”

“This guy is delusional!” one of the Joneses laughed as the others looked at Levi as if he was a total buffoon.

They would rather believe that Levi had a billion in his account rather than him being the God of War as the punishment for impersonating the guardian of the country could land one in jail for a few decades.

“Get the hell out of here! Like it has anything to do with you!” Tyler laughed. “I can assure you that the God of War will be very fond of this new statue!”

“We Joneses will be the first to build a statue of the God of War in Erudia to commemorate his great contribution and achievement to the country.” Tyler declared proudly.

The Joneses had a smug look on their faces. If they could complete the statue, everyone in Erudia, and even the whole world, would shift their focus to their family. They could gather wealth like no one had ever seen before.

They also believed that the God of War would like the statue, and that was their main goal.

“You’re just wasting your time. Still, do whatever you like,” Levi said and turned to leave.

If the Joneses were erecting a statue of him to show their gratitude, Levi would’ve let them be. He would even thank them for doing that.

The only problem was that the Joneses were never the kind people who would do things that wouldn’t benefit them, and Levi did not like that one bit.

“Stop! Who do you think you are?” Wales yelled while Tyler stood next to him with his arms crossed. The latter always looked down on Levi as he was an important member of the Prince Gang in South Hampton. If any of his friends learned that he had a cousin like Levi, they would definitely make fun of him.

“You’re just like your mother, a nobody! You don’t deserve to be a part of our family!” Tyler mocked as Levi left.

Even though their progress was held back a little by their run in with Levi, the Joneses finally found a perfect place and began their construction of the statue.

As for Levi, he put his back into the investment conference as soon as he got back to Morris Group since he promised Tim that he would handle it.

Levi even transferred Aurora from North Hampton to South City for the project.

Without wasting much time, Aurora got a handful of tender documents for Levi, which he read through thoroughly one by one.

He had high hopes for businesses from other regions to develop in South City through the investment conference.

The Protector Chapter 719

Levi was a genius in doing business from the beginning. He could instantly make out which companies would benefit South City as soon as they got their investments. The most important part of the project was to generate healthy competition in the industry.

“The Joneses?” Levi raised a brow when he noticed the Joneses’ tender.

He immediately frowned after reading through the document as the Joneses were trying to win the bid by using their royal status. The tender documents that the Joneses submitted were in a complete mess.

Thus, Levi marked a huge red cross on the document without even thinking twice.

“Oh? Isn’t this Logan and Jennie’s company?” Levi smiled. It was evident that they were trying to gain a huge profit from the conference.

Another red cross was marked at the second document.

The next tender document belonged to the Black family, which was drafted by Zoey. The only problem was that Robert and Meredith’s names were noted down as the people in charge instead of Zoey’s.

Levi took the matter into his own hands and crossed Robert and Meredith’s names off and replaced it with Zoey’s name before marking a tick on the document.

For the next few days, Levi was completely immersed in inspecting all the tender documents that were submitted and came up with a list of names.

On the other hand, there existed a powerful group called the South City Chamber of Commerce. They held the power to control every market in South City.

Yet, they would use their influence to cut off all investors from other regions in order to monopolize the businesses in South City and had caused a great deal of trouble because of that.

In the office of the chamber, the president and a few directors were holding a meeting.

Wardell Becker, President of South City Chamber of Commerce, spoke in a cold tone. "The investment conference is just days away. I noticed quite a number of companies from other regions are trying to do business here by winning the bid."

"I noticed that as well. The policy is encouraging them to develop and invest here. They are going crazy!" Joel Fraley, Vice-president of the South City Chamber of Commerce, nodded in agreement.

"The three hundred billion should belong to South City! Technically speaking, we, the South City Chamber of Commerce should be in charge of handling the money! Why would the higher-ups give such an important task to a young'un instead?"

"I know, right? If he divides the money to the companies from other regions, we would lose a lot of shares!"

The rest of the directors agreed as well.

"That's what I'm worried about the most. I've heard that this young man is an advocate of attracting investment from other regions to promote the development of Quebec! What a load of crap!" Wardell scolded.

"Don't worry. As long as we butt into this matter, even companies from other cities of Quebec can't even get a single cent from the project! That money belongs to us!" Joel stated confidently.

Their views were simple. To keep the three hundred billion away from companies from other regions. As long as the money was distributed to companies in South City, they could make a lot of profits from it.

“Mr. Becker, what should we do?” one of the directors asked.

“We just have to make the head of the project one of our own,” Wardell suggested.

“I’ve already found out who the head is. He’s Levi Garrison from North Hampton,” Joel said. “He’s not part of the business circle. I’m confused as to why the higher-ups would let him lead such an important project.”

The Protector Chapter 720

“That’s none of our business. We just have to know who the person in charge is,” Wardell smiled. “Joel, you and I are going to pay this Levi a visit.”

As Levi was leaving his office, he was greeted by a group of people.

“Are you Mr. Levi Garrison?” Joel asked. “We’re from the South City Chamber of Commerce. Is it possible to have some of your time? We would like to make a proposition.”

Levi was surprised that the Chamber of Commerce would catch up to him so soon.

They most probably found out about me when Aurora was moving the documents.

“Of course.” Levi followed Joey into a Lincoln where a person was waiting inside for him.

“Allow me to introduce myself first. I’m Wardell Becker, President of the South City Chamber of Commerce. We would like to discuss with you about the upcoming investment conference.”

“Go on.”

“Even though we aren’t part of the government, we are still an organization formed by the businessmen of South City. We represent the interest of all businessmen in South City and to stabilize the market. We heard that Mr. Garrison is interested in attracting businesses from other regions to invest in our city. We believe that this would harm our interests, which is something that we cannot ignore.”

“I see,” Levi smiled. “Then, what do you propose?”

“We propose that while companies from other regions could participate in the bid, only businesses from South City can win the projects. As long as you agree to our proposition, this will be yours,” Wardell smiled as he handed Levi a check.

Levi took a peek at the numbers and wasn’t surprised to see a hundred million written on it.

“These women will be yours as well.” Wardell pointed at the four gorgeous women sitting in the back seat. Calling them supermodels would be an understatement.

“This car could be yours too. Mr. Garrison, I know you hold the power to decide who can or can’t invest in the project. That power will still belong to you, as long as you make sure that only the businessmen from South City will win all the bids. With this, it will be a win-win situation. You also get something from it. Isn’t it a great deal?”

“You’re right. No matter what I choose, it won’t harm my interest.” Levi returned the smile.

Both Wardell and Joel were glad to see that Levi was on their side, or so they thought.

“From this day onwards, you’ll be a friend of the South City Chamber of Commerce. Just let us know if you run into any troubles in the future,” Wardell offered as he tried to hold his laughter back.

The president of the chamber could not believe he could dupe the young man in front of him so easily. He was already picturing the huge amount of shares he could get when the three hundred billion find its ways to the businesses in South City.

His net worth would shoot up by a least ten times.

Levi looked at the check and smiled, which froze both Wardell and Joel.

The Protector Chapter 721

The reason being it was a mocking smile, and it puzzled both Wardell and Joel.

Levi opened the door and got out. "I don't need any of you to tell me what to do."

With that, he slammed the door of the car that was worth millions as hard as he could.

Wardell and Joel turned to stare at each other.

"Did he just reject our offer?" Wardell could not believe what was happening.

"So, we're playing this the hard way, eh?" Joel immediately chased after Levi and stopped him. "Stop right there!"

"What now?"

"Are you sure you want to refuse our offer? Either you're our friend or you're our enemy. If you choose to be the latter, you'll meet your maker soon enough."

Joel's threat was clear. If Levi refused to agree to their terms, his life would be in danger.

"Do whatever you want. Your threat means nothing to me."

It was Levi's turn to hold his laughter back. Not only had he dealt with Kurt, President of the South Hampton Chamber of Commerce, he'd also taken down most of the big shots in South City.

He could not believe that even after that amazing feat, there would still be some mindless people trying to mess with him.

Yet, dealing with businessmen was a different problem. If one messed with their interest, they would retaliate even worse than the underworld.

Moreover, the South City Chamber of Commerce represented all of the businessmen in South City. To them, the three hundred billion that Levi was charged to distribute belonged to these businessmen.

If Levi decided to attract businesses from other regions, their profit would be affected. If things got out of hands, the business owners would retaliate.

Levi finally understood the reason Tim assigned him to handle the investment conference.

The local businesses had contributed a lot to the development of South City, which led to an ease in related policies. As things went on, the South City Chamber of Commerce became the organization in charge of local businesses.

It was the same situation with Triple Group robbing Scott of his money. It was impossible for Tim to stay calm at that incident, but the Triple Group did contribute a lot to society and it would put him in an awkward position if he were to accuse them openly.

It explained why Tim let Levi handled the situation. He hoped that the young man could solve the problem in his place and cleanse the local business circle at the same time.

“You leave us with no choice then!” Joel roared.

For the next few days, Levi was followed by Joel’s people. Since he didn’t want to waste time on some nobodies, the God of War decided to ignore them.

For the time being, Levi still stayed in the Guardian Mansion and Joel's men found out about it.

“Now that we know where he lives, it's time to show him some colors!” Wardell grinned and ordered Joel. “Get it done! I want him to come and beg for forgiveness tomorrow!”

The Protector Chapter 722

As the clock struck midnight, four excavators drove straight towards the Guardian Mansion with a truck full of armed men behind them.

The four excavators lined up in front of the compound and drove straight into the walls, tearing them down.

The military canines barked endlessly at the excavators, but all four vehicles did not reduce their speed and continued to tear down the buildings.

They only had one order from Joel, to take down the building that Levi was temporarily staying at.

Levi rushed down the stairs as soon as he heard the commotion. The sight that first came into his eyes angered him right away.

The God of War never even blinked when Elijah the Warlord sent thousands of soldiers to attack his country. The only thing he feared was when normal citizens played dirty. Levi never expected that Wardell and Joel would do something so absurd.

One of the excavator stopped only half a meter in front of Levi.

The driver glared at Levi and yelled, "Get out of the way! Don't blame me if you get hurt!"

Of course, it was just a hoax as these normal drivers wouldn't dare to harm people.

Yet, Levi remained standing there as he glared back at the driver like a fierce beast ready to pound its prey. The drivers were so intimidated by his stare that they froze.

Suddenly, dozens of men walked down from the truck with iron bars in their hands. They walked up to Levi and ordered, "Get out of my sight! We have been ordered to take this place down!"

Unlike the excavators, these people received the order to beat anyone who tried to stop them.

"Do you even know what this place is?" Phoenix's face darkened.

Everyone was furious as the uninvited guests were trying to take down a place where even the Gates family wouldn't dare step foot on.

"So what? Like hell we care where this is!" the leader of the group scoffed. "I'll only say it once! Get out of our way or we'll beat you to a pulp! I'm going to count to three! One! Two! Three!"

Even after finishing the countdown, Levi, Phoenix and White Tiger remained standing still.

"F**k! Take these three idiots down!" the leader ordered and everyone charged.

When the person leading the charge came close to Levi, a loud bang could be heard and that person was sent flying away with a kick.

That person flew for more than a hundred meter. When he fell to the fall, his body twitched for a bit before passing out.

Everyone froze and stared at Levi. Even White Tiger and Phoenix could not believe their eyes.

It was clear that Levi was furious.

The Protector Chapter 723

Levi cracked his knuckles as he got ready to take them down in one go.

His steps hastened as he rushed towards them, giving each of them a heavy blow.

In less than thirty seconds, Levi knocked them all out and the fifty men dropped to the ground motionless.

Their bones were broken and it was difficult to tell if they could even survive.

Levi would have never lifted a finger against them—not unless they messed with his home.

So this time, he struck them down mercilessly.

Even White Tiger was shocked.

This was the first time he had seen the God of War this angry ever since he came back to North Hampton.

It must be because Levi loved his home deeply.

For six full years, he never hesitated to fight courageously at the front line just to protect the land he called home.

Although this Guardian Mansion was just a temporary shelter for Levi, White Tiger could tell this place was home to him.

Levi would not spare anyone who destroyed his home.

“Bam!”

“Crash!”

He kicked the excavator hard and the strong impact dug the whole machine deep into the ground.

Everyone was dumbstruck. But before they could come back to their senses, the whole excavator broke and crumbled into pieces in a loud boom.

The deafening clangor did not seem to stop. Levi booted another excavator and it fell apart too.

And just like that, he effortlessly broke two excavators.

His power left everyone terrified.

What kind of superpower is this?

Did he really just destroy two ten-ton excavators?

Is he even human?

He must be a God!

Four frightened excavator operators scrambled to flee the scene like madmen.

Never in their life had they seen anything like this before.

“Should I go check out who’s behind this?” Azure Dragon asked Levi.

“There’s no need. I know who did it.” Levi’s voice was ominous and suppressed as he looked at the orange sky.

The sun was already breaking through the horizon.

Over on the other side, Wardell and Joel happily gathered in the South City Chamber of Commerce.

“Mr. President, we’ll get some good news real soon. I bet that bastard is shivering in fear right now!” Joel mocked.

Hearing this, a sinister smile broke out on Wardell’s face as he said, “Wanna mess with me, young man? You won’t stand a chance against me!”

“I know right? He probably didn’t know hundreds of people have died in our hands! Who does he think he is?” Joel sneered.

As the two were gloating about their evil plan, Pamela and Bailey from the Black family arrived.

It seemed like the Black family was in full swing preparing for the project.

They heard that the South City Chamber of Commerce always had good connections, so they got in touch with them.

The Black family was here to ask for a big favor.

“Thanks for taking care of the investment conference,” Bailey said, handing Wardell a check.

Wardell took a look at the figure on the check—5 million. He smiled.

This was the second time the Black family visited him and paid him the same amount.

They were really generous.

“Don’t worry about it. I’ll make sure everything is settled nicely.”

The Protector Chapter 724

Wardell finally agreed.

The Black family was really desperate. This meant money would keep flowing in for Wardell.

This deal was worth three hundred billion.

After he sent the Black family off, Wardell started thinking.

He just got the money and he was sure more would come in the future.

Wardell planned on buying two villas in North Hampton and South Hampton, each for his two little lovers.

Just as Wardell was busy fantasizing about his life, the sound of frantic footsteps echoed down the corridor.

The excavator operators came rushing in.

“What’s up?” Wardell questioned with a hint of surprise in his voice.

Joel’s eyes opened wide in curiosity.

The operators were panting and gasping for air. Their legs gave way and they collapsed to the ground out of fear.

“We... we saw him! The monster!” they gasped.

“What on earth are you talking about?” Wardell shouted.

His gut feeling told him something was not right.

“Did you demolish the place?” Joel asked.

“Yeah. We did,” the operators replied.

“Good,” Joel said shortly, giving a sigh of relief.

Now everything was settled.

He almost thought they failed the mission.

“But we messed with the wrong person,” the operators explained.

Before they could even continue, the secretary dashed in and reported, “Mr. President, there’s a guy called Levi outside.”

“I knew it! I knew he would come!” Wardell exclaimed with a haughty laugh.

Joel waved his hands, gesturing the operators to leave them alone.

They turned and walked away awkwardly.

Soon enough, Levi arrived.

Wardell and his lot greeted him with the brightest smile.

“So? Have you finally made up your mind? You should’ve just done things our way. Why force us to make things ugly?” Joel jeered.

Wardell stretched and rested his legs on his office table as he smiled contently. “You’ll get everything I offered you yesterday the moment you sign the contract. I’ll also give you an extra fifty million,” he said.

Wardell signaled his secretary, who quickly came up to him with two checks worth one hundred and fifty million in total.

This had always been Wardell's best tactic—offend first and placate later.

This was how he control other people.

“Alright, since what's done is done, let's be friends from now on. Let's bury the hatchet, shall we?” Joel suggested. He walked towards Levi, wanting to give him a friendly pat on the shoulder.

Bang!

Before Joel could even touch him, Levi raised his leg and kicked him aside.

Joel landed right on the table and the table broke in half.

He groaned as his face contorted in pain.

The others watched in horror because they did not expect Levi to attack Joel. But only Joel knew full well the intensity of Levi's kick.

Levi's cold glare swept across the room as he said, “You guy's shouldn't have touched my home.”

His voice was calm, but everyone felt the chilling threat in his voice.

“What are you doing? How dare you raise your hand against us?” Wardell shouted.

The Protector Chapter 725

Joel looked at Levi and cried out in anger, “How dare you do this to me? I’ll kill you!”

Who does he think he is?

It’s time I send him to hell!

“Take him down!” Joel commanded.

A few men in black quickly rushed in and surrounded Levi.

They were personal bodyguards hired by the South City Chamber of Commerce just to protect Wardell and the others.

These bodyguards had killed countless people throughout their service to the chamber of commerce.

But still, Wardell felt fearful seeing Levi’s glare.

He retreated unknowingly before he shouted at Levi again. “I’m giving you one last chance. If you beg for your life and listen to us now, we won’t hold this against you. If not, don’t even think about leaving this place alive!” Wardell threatened.

The thirty bodyguards charged towards Levi but he remained unmoved.

He let off a slight scoff and kicked away the chair blocking his way.

“As I said, you shouldn’t have touched my home,” Levi reiterated.

He was enraged. Now that he saw the culprits himself, Levi's anger intensified.

White Tiger would have been petrified seeing Levi like this.

"A stubborn mule. Get rid of him!" Wardell ordered.

Just as the bodyguards rolled their sleeves getting ready to beat Levi up, a commotion burst out outside.

"What's happening outside?" Wardell turned around and asked.

Wardell and a few others quickly flocked to the window to check out what was happening outside.

Their face turned pale as they processed what they saw.

Fear and horror seized them and they could not even bring themselves to talk.

Seeing their reaction, Joel struggled to get on his feet so he could go over and take a look. "What's the matter? What is it?" he asked worriedly.

Joel was struck with terror when he saw it.

He dropped to the ground weakly and his lips quivered in fear.

Outside their building, countless battle tanks lined up in an orderly manner, besieging the building and leaving them with no exit route.

There were even tens of fighting vehicles following close behind.

Armed soldiers disembarked from the vehicles and tanks as they marched concertedly towards the Chamber of Commerce.

Soon, the thuds of their footsteps could be heard drumming down the corridor.

In a split of a second, the soldiers kicked down the door and swarmed in, filling up the spacious meeting room in no time.

Each of the soldiers was fully equipped with weapons and they pointed their guns at Wardell and his friends as they awaited a command.

The bodyguards clambered to hide under the table as they saw they were clearly outnumbered. Some of them were so scared they wet their pants and a pungent smell soon wafted through the crowded room.

“Move! Let me see the bitch who dared to wreak havoc in the restricted military zone! I’m gonna beat the shit out of him!” A coarse and assertive voice came from the multitude of soldiers.

The Protector Chapter 726

Following the commanding voice, a bulky man in uniform appeared with a machine gun on his shoulder.

After making an entrance, the army official stood still and surveyed the people. He spotted Levi and quickly saluted, saying, "Chief, this is South City Warzone Black Panther Regiment's Zebedee reporting!"

It turned out that the Guardian Mansion Levi was temporarily living in was Black Panther's territory.

As soon as he found out that someone tore down the Guardian Mansion, Zebedee summoned the regiment and hunted the culprits down.

"Chief?" Wardell and Joel looked at Levi in disbelief.

It instantly dawned upon them why Tim entrusted the investment conference project to Levi.

Because he was a big shot in the army!

They thought Levi was merely someone Tim had connections with.

Wardell and Joel never once thought that Levi could actually be someone important.

Zebedee pointed his machine gun towards Wardell and shouted in a condescending tone. "Who gave you the permission to knock down the buildings in the Guardian Mansion? You've got some nerves, haven't you? Well, it's true that we are not supposed to harm innocent civilians, but you fools had brought it on yourself after what you did!"

“Why is your gun pointed at us? What do you want to do?” Wardell’s voice became shaky.

“Hah! You’re scared? I bet this is not the first time you’ve done something like this. I’m not gonna go easy on y’all!” Zebedee threatened.

Levi walked impassively towards the oval table. With a kick, he shattered the table into pieces.

Dust and debris dispersed in the air before settling into a thick layer of grey powder on the ground.

“Please! Please stop!” Wardell begged, his voice choked by a cough.

The others quickly followed suit and begged for their lives.

“Chief, it’s our fault! Please forgive us. If we knew it was you, we wouldn’t do something like this!” the others implored.

“There will be a reckoning for people like you and I mean business. Go through their criminal records and investigate everything, including their exploitation of other people, trespassing of military bases, and demolition of public property!” Levi ordered.

Wardell Becker swooned and dropped to his knees upon hearing this.

This could be the end of him.

On the same day itself, the South City Chamber of Commerce was shut down for further investigation.

Many people were thrilled to hear this.

Many merchants had long been mistreated by the South City Chamber of Commerce; many had even died because they went against the organization.

Many of them had long coveted justice—and it was finally delivered.

Words spread around in no time and people cheered, especially those lower-level merchants. Their rights and benefits had long been abused and overlooked—and they were vindicated at last.

Of course, this called for a celebration.

It turned out that the South City Chamber of Commerce's corruption was way more entrenched than thought.

The organization had siphoned public funds worth more than thousands of billions.

After confiscating the embezzled fund, the authorities channeled the money into infrastructure maintenance.

The public was appeased by how the case was handled and Levi could finally breathe a sigh of relief.

Indeed, one man's misfortune was another's fortune.

The Black family was now in hot waters.

The Protector Chapter 727

The ten million they spent were all in vain.

Since the investment conference was already around the corner, they now put all their hopes on Zoey.

Meredith and Robert beckoned Zoey over and inquired about how things had been progressing.

Zoey said she had done everything she could—but she was still unsure about how things would turn out.

Nevertheless, she remembered what Levi told her.

He said the results were entirely within his control.

Since Levi was so confident, she should also trust him.

They would face it together even if they lost.

“I think the project will be ours!” Zoey said.

“Are you sure?” Meredith’s eyes glimmered with hope.

Robert was so excited he stood up and exclaimed, “Really? Are we gonna win the project?”

“Of course! We will nail it!” Zoey repeated. She was sure Levi would make it.

This was how much Zoey trusted her husband—she trusted him no matter what came their way.

As long as it was something Levi was confident about, she would stand by him without a doubt.

“That’s great! Success has always been on your side, I’m sure it will be the same this time too!” Meredith said, almost bursting into tears of joy.

This project was worth fifty billion. This meant the Black family would pocket at least tens of billions of profit.

This was a big fortune.

“But I have a condition,” Zoey said.

“What is it?” they asked unanimously.

“This project will be under the Black family, but I want to be in charge of all the details,” Zoey pronounced her condition.

“What?” they murmured. They did not seem pleased with what they just heard.

How could Zoey be the only person in charge of how the project was rolled out?

This was unreasonable.

“No way. This is the Black family’s project, how can we let an outsider run things?” one of them protested.

“Yeah! It won’t look good on us if outsiders find out about it!” another agreed.

Voices of disagreement quickly spread among them.

“Zoey, you should stand clear of the Black family’s finances to prevent any misunderstandings, don’t you think so?” Jennie suggested.

“Yeah, I agree. Imagine what would the old folks make of it?” Logan said.

“This is my condition. It’s either y’all accept it or just forgo the project,” Zoey said adamantly.

“Alright then. Grandma and grandpa accept this condition. You will take full charge of the project!” Meredith promised.

After getting a satisfactory answer, Zoey finally left.

After she left, Bailey and other people grumbled. “Dad, mom, how could y’all allow that?”

“Well, we just need to wait till the project comes to us. By then she won’t even have a say in it,” Meredith said gleefully.

“But I thought you promised her?” someone asked.

“I don’t have to admit it! When the time comes, all of you just have to be my witnesses and say I never promised her anything.”

Hearing what Meredith said, the Blacks smiled slyly.

The Protector Chapter 728

They used the same trick all over again. They knew it was someone from the Black family who took the ten million check last time, yet they accused Levi.

This time around, they knew Zoey would not stand a single chance against them.

However, Quintus was a little worried. He said, "Grandma, that won't be foolproof right? You still have a reputation to keep."

"I will gladly trade my reputation for the Black family. Besides, given Zoey's unswerving loyalty to Levi, this project will ultimately go to him if we allow her to have her way," Meredith said.

"True. We should never let Zoey have things her way," Logan and Jennie said.

Zoey was too naive to believe the Black family.

Meredith was a reliable person in Zoey's eyes and she took her word for it.

But all this was just an illusion.

The day went by quickly and at last, the investment conference commenced.

Merchants from all over convened at the exhibition center.

Thanks to the collapse of the South City Chamber of Commerce, local low-level merchants got the chance to participate.

As the person in charge of the event, Levi had to make sure everything worked out well.

As soon as he arrived at the exhibition center, a familiar voice held his step.

“This must be an unlucky day. I can’t believe we ran into him again!”

It was Tyler.

He and his friends were here for the investment conference as well.

Their status gave them all the reason to behave snobbishly—the Jones family was the biggest player in the conference today.

The South Hampton royal family came second to none.

“Are you here for the investment conference?” Wales asked.

“Else why am I here?” Levi said.

“Aren’t you just a security guard? Why? Are you here to bid for an investment project too? Or you’re here because you want to sell your identity as the Jones family’s grandson so you can earn some money?” Wales teased.

Hearing this, Tyler warned Levi, saying, “Don’t let me catch you sneakily using our family’s name. I won’t let you off the hook that easily!”

“Sadly, I’m not here to bid for an investment project,” Levi replied accordingly.

“Then?” Tyler asked.

“I’m here to decide who wins the project,” Levi answered.

“What a joke! Are you trying you say you’re in charge here?” Wales derided.

“Not bad! I see you like role playing,” Tyler joked, shaking his head in disbelief.

Two days ago, Levi said he was the God of War; today, he said he was the chair of the investment conference.

.....

This was pure foolishness to Tyler.

Dude, this is not how you get our family's attention.

You'll need to have some substance. If your net worth were thousands of billions, we might consider taking you in.

Or at least, you should be the King of War—else don't expect us to receive you as one of us.

You're just a nobody!

Levi glanced at the Joneses and said, "You guys may leave now. You won't get anything out of the investment conference today."

The Protector Chapter 729

Tyler was taken back.

What do you mean?

We will not get anything out of the conference today?

Are you kidding me?

It's the organizers' honor our family graced the event today!

We won't land a good investment deal?

That's utterly preposterous!

If our family failed to strike a deal, no one can!

Our family controls pretty much everything that happens here.

“Don't be absurd! No one dares to cross the Jones family,” Tyler said with a crooked smirk on his face.

None of them believed anything of the sort would happen.

“Don't say I didn't warn you when you get chased out later,” Levi advised before striding into the venue.

“Hah! What a contemptuous fellow! Who does he think he is? We'll watch and see who gets driven off later,” Tyler said as the lot swaggered in.

Upon arrival, the Joneses headed for the front row seat.

“Move!” Wales yelled as he dismissed those merchants who had already taken their seats in the first row.

Everyone was seething in silence—they knew full well that woe would betide whoever upset the Joneses.

But not long after they sat down, a few guards came up to them and started asking them to leave. “You guys can’t sit here, please leave now,” they requested.

“What?” Tyler and the others could not believe they heard the guards right.

“What are you talking about?” Tyler asked.

“Please leave now, you guys are not on the guest list of the conference today,” the guards answered.

Tyler gave off a laugh. “Hey, I think you got the wrong people. Don’t you know who we are?” he questioned.

“Yes, we are well aware that you guys are the Joneses. Please, make a move and leave before we have to chase you all out,” the guards said in a serious and harsh tone.

Tyler and the others were completely stunned.

What? Wait! Isn't this what that fellow said earlier on?

They are legit asking us to leave?

No way!

“Well, since you know we are the Joneses, who gave you the guts to ask us to leave?” Tyler interrogated.

“Please leave now! We are not here to answer questions!” the guards ordered.

“I’m sorry but there is nothing you can do to make us leave,” Tyler said nonchalantly.

I doubt anyone in the South City has the balls to do anything to us!

Wales and the others followed suit and hoarded the seats without moving a muscle.

The guards took out their walkie-talkies and asked for aid, “This is Team X speaking, please send back up!”

In less than a minute, around ten security guards came to the scene.

Without another word, the guards dragged them and threw them out of the exhibition center.

“Hey? What do you think you’re doing?! Let me go! I’m the eldest son of the Jones family! Don’t you dare touch me!” the Joneses started shouting as they struggled to free themselves but to no avail.

“Who do you think you are? I’ll make sure you guys pay up!” Wales hurled threats at the guards after every one of them was chased out of the center.

“Sure! We will be waiting for the Jones family! Make sure you get my name right! I’m South City Black Panther Regiment’s First Lieutenant Sirius!” one of the men in uniform retaliated.

The Protector Chapter 730

“I’m South City Black Panther Regiment’s Captain Dave!” another one reported.

“And I’m South City Black Panther Regiment’s First Lieutenant Fillin!” another soldier stated.

.....

After each of them took turns to announce their identity. Tyler and the others were startled.

What? The organizers mobilized the military soldiers because of this investment conference? What the heck?

“We’re so sorry, we must’ve been out of our mind. Please forgive us,” Tyler and Wales quickly apologized.

Shoot! What were we thinking? They are the military!

I hope this never gets to the God of War! We need to make a good impression!

But this is really weird! Why would the investment conference deploy South City Warzone’s military personnel?

Also, everything happened exactly as Levi said!

Wales and Tyles eyed each other in confusion.

“Don’t tell me Levi Garrison is behind this. Is he the person in charge here?” Wales asked the others.

Tyler frowned as he rubbed his chin, thinking. "This is really weird. We are just here to attend the investment conference. Maybe this really has something to do with Levi Garrison."

Just as they were busy trying to figure things out, a car pulled up in front of the exhibition center, and out of the car came Zoey Lopez.

She did not go into the center herself, but rather, she sent her secretary.

"Tyler, do you know who this woman is? She's Levi's wife!"

Wales did a thorough research about Levi and he knew exactly who this woman was with just a glance.

"Let's go and ask her!" Tyler said, leading the others towards Zoey.

"Are you Levi's wife?" Tyler inquired.

"Yes, and you are?" Zoey replied as she squinted her bright and beautiful eyes in confusion.

She looked at the man in front of her from the top to the toe, wondering if he was Levi's friend.

"This brat scored big, didn't he? His wife is too good for him!" the Joneses said among themselves.

Tyler smiled courteously at the charming lady and said, "Ms. Lopez, if I were you, I'd take a good look at who I married instead of being too trusting. I don't know who Levi said he was, but he is not who he claimed to be. The Jones family will never acknowledge him and we have nothing to do with him."

"Thanks for giving me a forewarning, but don't you worry. Levi is not even interested in returning to the family," Zoey replied politely but tersely.

She would never allow anyone other than herself to criticize Levi—she would readily defend him in front of others.

“Don’t say I didn’t warn you then,” Tyler replied with a smirk as all of them turned and left.

Zoey watched them leave. A question popped up in her brain when she was talking with Tyler.

Is this how Levi nailed the project?

The leader of the Morris Group would not just sit and watch.

Zoey could not figure out how Levi did it at first, but after talking to Tyler, she thought she knew.

Levi probably bid for the project by telling people he was the grandson of the Joneses.

If people knew he was a member of a South Hampton royal family like the Jones family, getting a project worth fifty billion would not be a problem at all.

So this is how he did it.

Zoey felt really touched.

She knew how much Levi hated that family, and yet he said he was one of them just to help her get the project.

The Protector Chapter 731

Levi revealed his identity – the grandson of the Jones family – to bid this project for me.

After the investment conference ended, Zoey's secretary handed over a project proposal to her excitedly.

“Ms. Lopez, we won the bid! We obtained the investment!”

When Zoey flipped through the project proposal, she couldn't help but feel shocked.

It was indeed a project worth fifty billion of investment.

At this moment, Levi happened to come into the room.

“Did you get it?” He asked smilingly.

“Yes, thank you for your help!” Zoey immediately thanked him.

However, Levi was curious that she didn't ask him how he won the bid.

He wasn't aware that Zoey thought he utilized his identity as the grandson of the Jones family to bid on the project.

“Okay, I'll tell Grandpa the news now.”

When Zoey returned to the villa of the Black family, almost all family members were already waiting for her.

They smiled in unison as soon as Zoey entered the house.

“Zoey, how is it?” Meredith asked.

“Grandma, I did it! I have obtained the fifty-billion project! Here’s the information about the project!”

When Zoey spoke, she handed over the documents to them.

Soon, everyone was overjoyed after reading through the documents.

It is indeed a project worth fifty billion.

“Zoey you’re really awesome! You achieved it effortlessly!” Meredith complimented her.

“So, Grandma, you have to keep your word!”

“First, the Black family, including Mom and Dad, won’t interfere in the relationship between Levi and me anymore. Second, I will be fully in charge of the project worth fifty billion,” Zoey looked at Meredith and said seriously.

Puff!

All of a sudden, the atmosphere in the living room turned tenser while everyone looked somewhat sulky.

Zoey was startled once she noticed the change.

What’s going on?

The next moment, Meredith asked curiously, “Oh? Did I say that before?”

Meanwhile, Zoey was stunned when she heard it from Meredith.

Bang! She was shocked and rendered speechless as if lightning had struck her.

“Grandma, you... what do you mean? Didn’t you make me the promises? Why are you going back on your word?” Zoey asked in disbelief.

“Zoey, I’m not going back on my word. Instead, I don’t remember I have promised you such things! When did I make the promises?” Meredith answered calmly.

At the same time, Jennie and Logan added, “That’s right, Zoey, Grandma never made you such promises!”

“Besides, we were here too when you discussed with Grandma, and you never mentioned such things on that day. Zoey, are you confused? Or did you misremember it? I mean, Grandma never agreed with such things!”

Furthermore, even Robert interrupted, “Exactly. Zoey, We won’t lie to you! But the truth is you never mentioned such things on that day!”

“Hahahaha...” Since the Black family said unanimously, Zoey laughed pitifully.

She decided not to argue with them anymore.

The Protector Chapter 732

More importantly, she would never win the argument because all members of the Black family “testified” that Meredith never promised her.

What should I do?

At this moment, Robert and Meredith’s attitude flew in the face of her impression of them.

She only realized now that they were the same as Grandpa, and to a certain extent, far more shameless than him.

How could they trick me into getting the project! They don’t treat me as their family member at all!

Now, she began to understand why Levi chose not to acknowledge the Jones family as his family.

After all, the more prominent the family was, the more cold-hearted the people were.

Zoey sneered, “Grandma, I never thought that you would do such a thing! Your granddaughter is totally surprised!”

“Zoey, what do you mean? You are disrespecting your elder!” Logan immediately scolded.

“How dare you disrespect Grandma! Do you want me to slap your face?” Jennie threatened her too.

After a while, Zoey gave them a wry and pitiful smile and said, “Are you stopping me from saying it even after you guys did such a shameless thing?”

“You deserve to be slapped in the face!” As soon as Jennie finished, she came up to Zoey and lifted her palm.

Nevertheless, Zoey successfully dodged it.

“How dare you resist?” Jennie yelled furiously.

“Stop it!” Before Jennie wanted to continue slapping her, Meredith suddenly yelled.

As such, Jennie stopped and stood aside while staring at her.

Then, Meredith looked at Zoey and said, “Since you contributed a lot to the family, Grandma will take the high road and forgive you! But don’t do it ever again!”

“Exactly. You’re always obedient, yet what happened to you today? I think you must have learned the bad habits from Levi Garrison!” Robert said angrily.

Once Robert said it, everyone in the living room seemed to have recalled something.

Indeed, Zoey used to be very obedient and won't disobey us. Why is she different today?

After that, Zoey glanced at everyone in the room and said, “I don’t want the fifty billion project anymore. Take it if you want! But if any of you wishes to interfere in the relationship between Levi and me, don’t blame me for what I do in response.”

“Who are you to say such things to us?”

Robert and Meredith yelled, "As long as we are alive, don't ever think about being with Levi. We will stop you at all costs!"

"All of you can't interfere in the personal matter between the two of us!" Zoey flung the door and left once she finished.

"Look at her, why she is so bad-tempered now? Will she even respect us if she is really in charge of this project?" Jennie was apparently displeased when she said it.

"Indeed, she showed no respect to the elders now! I can't imagine how she will behave in the future!" One of them added.

Meanwhile, Meredith and Robert were exasperated.

"Damn it! She can never be together with Levi Garrison!" Meredith scolded.

After Zoey ran out of the house, she didn't cry but remained calm instead.

As a matter of fact, after Levi came back to her, she had grown up a lot and became stronger mentally.

When Zoey found Levi, she said straightforwardly, "From now on, I will live with you."

Levi was stunned for a moment. Nevertheless, his face turned somewhat pale once he sensed that something was wrong.

"Did they bully you?" Levi asked.

The Protector Chapter 733

Since Levi could sense her feelings, Zoey decided to be honest with him.

After she explained everything, he said icily, "Let's go and seek justice from the Black family! We can't just let it go!"

"I don't think it's necessary. From now on, we will stay away from each other."

Apparently, Zoey didn't wish to return to the miserable place.

"You can't be soft to them at this juncture! If you are soft to them now, they will take it as a sign of weakness and do it again!" Levi said.

"Alright, I'll go with you!" Zoey became more determined after he persuaded her.

If a similar incident happened in the past, Zoey would ask Levi to let it go and wouldn't think of seeking justice.

Meanwhile, the Black family was overjoyed because they could reap a profit worth more than ten billion from the project valued at fifty billion.

Apart from growing its wealth drastically, the family would also reap more invisible benefits such as fame and clout.

"I must admit that Zoey is indeed competent. After all, she successfully won the bid that we could never get!"

"Unfortunately, she isn't obedient anymore after being mesmerized by Levi. Otherwise, she would help our family to reap even more benefits!" Logan and Jennie said discontentedly.

After a while, Meredith also added seriously, “I think Levi Garrison most probably brainwashed her!”

“Oh? Why have you come back?”

The next moment, they saw Zoey came back to the house with Levi.

“I’m here to seek justice!” Zoey said coldly before everyone.

Initially, she didn’t want to pursue it because no one would help her. Nonetheless, now that Levi was here with her, she wasn’t afraid anymore.

“To seek Justice? Hehe, you even got your reinforcement!”

“What do you want? Do you want to create havoc in our house with Levi Garrison?”

Logan and Jennie scolded at them.

Also, Meredith gazed at her and asked, “To seek justice? Who are you seeking justice from? When did the Black family owe you justice?”

“It’s you! Grandma, you owe me justice!” Zoey said icily once Meredith finished.

“When did I owe you justice?” Meanwhile, Meredith asked her again coldly.

“I accomplished the things that I promised to you, yet what about you? What about your promises to me? Instead, you schemed with all of them by pretending that you didn’t know about the promises. Grandma and Grandpa, I respect you as elders! But what about you? Do you behave like elders when you went back on your word and distorted the truth?” She answered blandly.

“I think we should punish you!”

Logan and Jennie rushed toward her at the same time and wanted to slap her.

Bang!

However, Levi threw a kick at Logan and sent him flying before he could even touch Zoey.

As such, everyone in the living room was startled and fell silent.

When Jennie lifted her hand, he grabbed it with one of his hands and slapped her in the face with another.

“How dare you touch her? You’re asking for trouble!”

Since Levi was here, he would never allow them to bully Zoey.

On the other hand, the Black family still hadn’t uttered a word as they were totally shocked.

After a while, some of them finally broke the silence and yelled, “Levi, how dare you hit them? Do you know you have committed a grave mistake?”

The Protector Chapter 734

Jennie covered her swollen face while Logan struggled to stand up. After that, both of them stared at Levi wickedly.

Levi glanced at Meredith and scolded, "You and the old man are indeed shameless!"

"Why are we shameless? Besides, who are you to accuse us of something like this?" Meredith asked angrily.

"Did you renege on your promises to Zoey?" He asked firmly as soon as Meredith finished.

"I didn't renege on any promises. In fact, I never made such promises! Moreover, everyone in the Black family can be my witnesses!" Meredith looked unexpectedly composed even when she was lying.

"Exactly! We can testify that she never made any promises to Zoey!"

"Zoey made this up! There are no promises made whatsoever!"

The members of the Black family began to argue and asserted that Zoey made everything up.

Meanwhile, Zoey couldn't help but sneer when she felt the cold-heartedness of the Black family once again.

"Meredith, do you dare to look me in the eyes?" Zoey said furiously.

"Why not?" Meredith sneered.

“How dare you say that you didn’t promise Zoey anything? Look into my eyes and answer me with your conscience. Did you make the promises?” Suddenly, Levi interrupted and bellowed at her with a deep voice.

Much to everyone’s surprise, Meredith answered hesitantly when she met Levi’s terrifying gaze, “I... I didn’t promise her anything...”

“You hesitated! Zoey is your granddaughter, but is that how you should treat her? Is that how you behave like an elder? Don’t you ever worry that your ancestors will condemn you? Alas, you used to serve in the military. Is that how you are supposed to deceive your own granddaughter?” Levi asked a series of questions and didn’t give her a chance to interrupt.

Since Levi was rather aggressive, Meredith was frightened and breathed heavily. As her body was shivering, she dared not to look into his eyes.

“Humph! You don’t even have the guts to look at me now. You are clearly lying and feeling guilty about it! Besides, Zoey respects you a lot as an elder. Is that how you should treat her in return?” Levi continued to question Meredith.

Puff!

Actually, Meredith tried to remain composed to disguise her sense of guilt in the first place. Now that Levi kept triggering her with words, she soon couldn’t help but feel panicked.

Since Meredith couldn’t withstand his direct questioning, Robert stood up and yelled, “Who are you to question us?”

“Well, are you afraid to be questioned by me?” Levi couldn’t help but laugh when he replied.

“Why should we be afraid? The truth is no promises were made!” Even though Robert said firmly, he began to sweat from his forehead.

The Black family couldn't help but feel a sense of guilt because he was imposing and aggressive when questioning them.

In particular, his eyes looked as sharp as a knife that could pierce through their hearts in no time.

As such, many of them were petrified by merely looking into his eyes.

"Who are you to question us? This is the house of the Black family. Get out of here now!" Bailey suddenly yelled furiously.

"That's right. This is the house of the Black family. An outsider has no right to taunt us here! Get out now! Or else you shouldn't blame us when we resort to violence!"

At this time, the other members of the Black family were exasperated as well.

The Protector Chapter 735

They managed to turn their sense of guilt into a rage and vented it at Levi.

“Hehe, no one can force me to leave if we can’t get a satisfying answer tonight!”

Given that Levi made up his mind to seek justice for Zoey, he refused to settle for less.

“Zoey, what’s your motive of bringing along an outsider to make trouble here? Will you be satisfied only after Levi Garrison creates havoc to the Black family?”

Pamela began to target Zoey, knowing that she was apparently more soft-hearted.

“I...” Zoey was lost for words.

Nevertheless, Levi stood before her to face the entire Black family and said, “Come and face me! How dare you bully her instead?”

“Robert Black and Meredith Westbrook, if you two refuse to give us a satisfying answer today, I will not leave!” He said determinedly.

“Fine! Since you don’t want to leave, I’ll make sure you regret your choice!”

As Logan was infuriated, he immediately picked up the phone to call his men.

Soon, dozens of men with iron rods in their hands surrounded Levi.

“Are you certain that you refuse to leave our house? Alright, I will cripple your legs today and ditch you out!” Logan sneered at him.

At the same time, he could imagine the bloody scene in which they beat the hell out of Levi.

Robert and Meredith added heartlessly, “Beat and cripple him! We don’t mind taking care of him for the rest of his life, exactly like how we pet a dog!”

My goodness!

Zoey was nervous when she realized that the Black family was serious about it.

They really want to cripple Levi!

“Go now!”

Once Logan gave the order, all of his men rushed toward him.

Meanwhile, Zoey almost closed her eyes because she felt hopeless about what would happen next.

Bang!

She could hear that the brutal fight ensued right after she closed her eyes.

Nevertheless, about ten seconds later, the living room fell silent.

When she opened her eyes, she saw dozens of men rolled on the floor and shrieked in pain.

On the other hand, Levi stood still and was safe and sound.

Is he that strong?

Apart from Zoey, all members of the Black family were startled too.

They stared at him and couldn't believe their eyes.

In fact, no one expected that he would be strong enough to defeat dozens of men by himself.

Furthermore, Logan, who stood in front and closest to him, couldn't help but shiver.

After coming up to him, Levi lifted him and threw him out of the living room.

Bang! His bones were probably fractured when he fell.

The next moment, Levi threw a kick and smashed the table before him.

"If we can't seek justice today, I will resort to violence to solve all problems!" He said imposingly.

Meanwhile, the entire Black family stayed silent because Levi was proven too strong for them to handle.

However, Robert still plucked up the courage and said grumpily, "So, do you want to beat us all?"

Meredith immediately added, "Touch me, and you will face the consequences!"

Even Bailey had the cheek to say to Zoey, "Zoey, you have betrayed the family! How dare you inflame an outsider to beat us? Are you thinking of killing your family members for the sake of your so-called justice?"

The Protector Chapter 736

Zoey looked up at Bailey and replied, “I don’t intend to do such things but only to seek justice! Instead, you people menaced and even wanted to beat us. So, we merely exercised the right to self-defense as a result.”

“Enough! It looks like you have been totally brainwashed by Levi Garrison.”

Meredith was pissed off and continued, “Justice? No way! I will say this one more time – I never promised you anything! Instead, you made up everything by yourself! Now, I order you to leave our house along with the outsider! This is not the place for you to make trouble!”

After meeting Levi’s gaze, Zoey said firmly, “We can leave today on a few conditions. First, the Black family must promise that it will never interfere in the relationship between Levi and me. Second, I will be fully in charge of the fifty-billion project!”

“Dream on! This is impossible! We will not agree to it!”

Robert answered overbearingly, “First, the project worth fifty billion belongs to the Black family and has nothing to do with you. Second, we will stop you from marrying Levi Garrison at all costs!”

However, Levi interrupted smilingly, “Well, I do have a way to seek justice!”

After that, he dragged Logan back into the living room and moved toward them.

“What... what do you want to do?”

Meredith and the rest were scared to death.

“As I said, violence can solve all problems!” Levi sneered.

Crack!

The next moment, he threw a kick at Logan’s leg and fractured his bones.

“Ah...” Logan looked ferocious and shrieked in pain.

At this moment, the entire Black family panicked.

“You... don’t act recklessly!” Robert advised him.

Given that Levi was cruel, they were extremely afraid of the consequences.

However, since they still refused to agree to Zoey’s demands, Levi announced smilingly, “Another leg!”

Crack!

The Black family was terrified when Logan shrieked pitifully once again.

Levi Garrison is a terrifying man!

“Zoey, did you see what he did? Why didn’t you stop him!” Bailey yelled at Zoey.

Nevertheless, Zoey answered blandly, “To tell you the truth, it was actually Levi who obtained the project worth fifty billion! He did it on one condition: I have to be fully in charge of it! You have only yourself to blame for everything that turned out this way!”

“What?” The Black family was startled.

“Next will be his arms!” Levi sneered blandly.

“Grandpa, Grandma, please save me... I don’t want to die...”

Logan peed his pants because he was frightened.

“Levi, please don’t do it!”

At this time, Russell, who was on duty today, returned to the villa.

Meanwhile, the Black family was relieved to see Russel because the backbone of the family had finally arrived.

Bailey and some of them immediately screamed, “Russell, take down this wild animal now! He beat and hurt a lot of people just now!”

Much to their surprise, Russell kneeled before Levi and begged, “Levi, please give me a chance and don’t make it difficult for the Black family.”

Russell was well aware of the severe consequences if Levi was infuriated, yet the Black family didn’t understand it.

Moreover, he couldn’t do something that amounted to a disciplinary offense.

Since Levi’s identity was highly classified, he had to keep it secret at all costs.

The Protector Chapter 737

“I can leave only after I have sought justice for Zoey!” Levi replied emotionlessly.

“Grandpa, Grandma, what have you done?” After asking them, Russell eventually got the full picture of the incident.

“Grandpa, Grandma, you must be fair to Zoey, or else this will never end! Let me handle this!” Russell made the order.

Meredith and Robert looked at each other but dared not reject his suggestion.

In fact, they had no choice but to compromise to prevent Levi from creating havoc.

“Besides, you must write it down and affix your seal!” Levi demanded.

“Hey! Don’t go overboard!” Meredith yelled.

Much to her surprise, Russell immediately persuaded her and said “Grandma, listen to me. Write down their demands on a paper!”

At last, Meredith had no choice but to write down two statements to fulfill her promises to Zoey.

“Also, you must apologize!” Levi added.

“Nonsense. You are going overboard!” Meredith refused since she felt that the dignity of the family was at stake.

“Grandpa, Grandma, please save me...” At this time, Logan begged them again because he felt that his arms were almost broken.

“Alright, Zoey. It’s Grandma’s fault. I’m sorry!” Meredith finally apologized to Zoey.

“Grandma, I hope that it won’t happen again. But still, I’ve always respected you,” She replied composedly.

“You...” Meredith was exasperated deep in her heart.

She would always remember that this was the most humiliating day to her.

Much to her surprise, the humiliating day hadn’t come to an end yet.

After Meredith apologized to Zoey, Russell continued, “Grandma, I think you owe Levi justice concerning the incident about the check.”

“What? Russell, you...”

Meredith got increasingly nervous again.

Russell brought Zeek, the servant of the Black family, into the living room and continued, “Tell us everything about the check, or else I will send you to prison. Remember, I have all the evidence!”

Hence, Zeek had no choice but to explain honestly, “I took the check! It has nothing to do with Mr. Garrison!”

“My god! What have we done?”

At this time, Meredith felt humiliated but could do nothing about the dramatic turn of events.

From now on, she would be embarrassed whenever she saw Levi and Zoey.

On the other hand, Zoey was overjoyed that Levi finally cleared his name.

However, she didn't expect that the Black family had been doing similar despicable things in the past.

"Grandpa, Grandma, this is just too much!" Zoey scolded angrily.

"We did it for your own good. You will understand our kindness one day." Robert said.

At last, Zoey and Levi left the villa of the Black family after seeking justice.

"From now on, no one can ever bully you. Tell me if someone lays his hands on you again!" Levi reminded her.

On the other hand, the Black family fell silent once they left.

This was perhaps the most humiliating day in the history of the Black family.

Although Levi overbearingly made all sorts of demands, they could do nothing about it.

Hence, they were infuriated and could hardly accept the outcome.

Also, they were exasperated that Logan's legs were broken by Levi.

"No way! I can never let it go!"

Meredith said grumpily, "Exactly. If we let it go now, the Black family will hang its head in shame forever!"

Soon, all members of the Black family looked ferocious because they shared the same feeling.

The Protector Chapter 738

Logan was the most furious among all of them because his legs were broken. After a while, he said angrily, "I swear to take revenge against Levi Garrison!"

Even Jennie added, "I will tell this to the Davies family now. I'm sure they will find Levi Garrison and beat the crap out of him at all costs!"

At this time, all members of the Black family held deep grudges against him and desperately wanted payback.

Even though Russell remained silent, he would stop them from taking revenge against Levi if that really happened.

Meanwhile, once they left the villa of the Black family, Zoey heaved a long sigh of relief and shouted, "It feels so good!"

For many years, she tolerated both the Lopez and the Black families and had never been so firm like today.

She was especially overjoyed when Meredith was forced to apologize and fulfill her promises.

"By the way, you looked terrifying just now. I didn't expect you would break Logan's legs!"

As Zoey spoke, she was still a little shocked and looked at Levi curiously.

"They deserved to be beaten! Worse things might befall them if they slap you." Levi replied.

As soon as Levi finished, she hugged him and could feel the warmth exuded from him.

Levi dared to go against the prominent families and even fought the entire Black family for me.

Even if he has nothing left and becomes a nobody in the future, I will be with him forever!

At last, they chose a house built by the Triple Group.

Zoey was satisfied with it because the house was near her company.

In that case, she wouldn't go home late even if she had to work overtime in the company.

Also, she could avoid being disturbed by the Black family since the house was far from theirs.

"Should we get married as soon as possible?" It appeared that Zoey couldn't wait anymore.

She felt that it would be a ticking bomb so long as they weren't married.

However, Levi answered smilingly, "Don't worry. Others can never interfere with our relationship. Besides, I haven't finished preparing the surprise for you."

"Alright! In that case, I'll wait for the day when you marry me!" Zoey looked forward to their wedding very much.

From now on, she had to shoulder heavy responsibilities. Apart from the Oriental Star Group, she had to be in charge of the fifty-billion project.

On the other hand, Levi seemed to have more leisure time lately. He would occasionally check the progress of building their house for marriage.

The news about the arrival of Western Region's commander-in-chief Ezra Williamson at South City in a few days had become a popular topic among the residents.

After all, Ezra wanted to publicize his visit so that everyone in the city was aware of his arrival.

Hence, many wealthy and powerful figures in the city had prepared a grand welcome ceremony for him.

The Jones family even blockaded half of the airport with the help of its connections to welcome Ezra.

Furthermore, the Jones family had come all the way from South Hampton to Sapphire Villa to ensure that the preparation went well.

"Did you hear me? You must prepare everything perfectly for the welcome ceremony tomorrow!" Michael purposely reminded his employees.

The next day, the entire T1 airport terminal of the South City International Airport was blockaded.

Michael and the Joneses were waiting at the airport to welcome Ezra.

Moreover, all prominent families in South City had been here to welcome his arrival as well.

The only group that wasn't here were the ones from the warzone.

After all, it was reported outside of South City that Ezra came to the city for treatment and rest.

Nevertheless, it was actually an excuse to confuse the enemy because Ezra was safe and sound.

After waiting for quite some time, Ezra finally came out of the airport.

The Protector Chapter 739

Michael brought celebrities with him as the welcoming committees, “Welcome, Chief Williamson! You’ve been fighting hard at the frontline, so we thank you for your service!”

“On behalf of the Jones family, I would like to express our highest respect!”

Michael almost knelt in respect of Ezra before he was stopped.

“You’re too kind, Mr. Jones. I was only carrying out my duty,” responded Ezra who was dressed casually. After all, his excuse for coming back was to recover from his injuries.

“Our family made this banner just for you, Chief Williamson.”

Written on the banner, which Michael ordered to be presented, was “National Treasure”.

Although the Jones family was only doing that as a form of flattery, Ezra was definitely qualified to have that title bestowed on him.

With a wide grin on his face, Ezra accepted the banner, “You would not have spoilt me with such flattery if you knew of the prodigy in your family.”

Before Ezra came over, he did some research on the relationship between Levi and the Jones family, and what he found out was how foolish the Joneses had been to not recognize the nation’s God of War in their midst.

Instead, they put their effort on flattering me.

“Pardon me, Chief Williamson. A prodigy in our family, you said?”

“Were you referring to my son, Anson? I heard that he’s reached the top ranks in the Iron Brigade and that he’s become the right-hand man of their God of War,” asked Michael excitedly.

“What?” exclaimed Ezra in bafflement.

*I know everyone in the Iron Brigade’s top brass, and none of them has the name ‘Anson.’ Much less the right-hand man to God of War. What a load of bullsh*t!*

“Yes, that’s the one!”

Ezra was only giving Michael a perfunctory answer, but it was enough to convince Michael.

Anson really is the right-hand man to the God of War!

“We, the Jones family, finally showed our strength!” shouted Michael in excitement.

Ezra wanted so badly to knock Michael on the head for his ignorance.

The Jones family has already shown their strength with the God of War of the nation.

“This way, please. We’ve prepared the perfect place for you to heal your injuries, Chief Williamson,” invited Michael.

Since he was there to put on a show anyway, Ezra accepted the kind offer.

“After you, Mr. Jones.”

Michael was thrilled to see Ezra accepting his invitation because that meant Ezra recognized the Jones family as allies.

Convinced that he had become allies with both the God of War and Ezra, Michael was walking with his head held high.

Nobody would dare oppose the Jones family now!

In the end, Ezra decided to stay at Sapphire Villa, where the Joneses prepared a grand feast for him.

The Joneses were pleased to see Ezra accepting whatever kindness they had to offer because that meant their relationship with Ezra would only become stronger.

On the other hand, the people disagreed with Ezra leaving the warzone and spending his time in luxury with the rich and the famous.

The Protector Chapter 740

Within a short time, Ezra's popularity dropped significantly.

People were even going to Sapphire Villa deliberately to scold Ezra.

"Don't mind them, Chief Williamson. They're just jealous that we have you as our guest," comforted Michael with a smile.

"We've built a statue for the God of War and we'd like to know what you think. What do you say, Chief Williamson?" asked Tyler.

"Sure."

Afterward, Ezra followed Tyler and the others to the city center, where the ten-meter-high statue had been erected.

"What do you think, Chief Williamson? If you're satisfied with it, we can erect one for you too!" offered Tyler eagerly.

Seeing how Ezra was frowning at the statue, Michael and Tyler started to get nervous.

Is he not satisfied with the statue? If he's not, that's going to spell trouble for us.

"What's wrong, Chief Williamson?" inquired Michael.

"Whose statue is this?" asked Ezra.

"It's the God of War himself!"

“Do you know what he looks like?”

Ezra’s question hit the nail on the head.

“We don’t an actual photo of him. But from the information that we’ve gathered, that’s what he looks like,” explained Tyler.

“Bullsh*t! He doesn’t look like that! The God of War looks like... him!”

Suddenly, Ezra pointed at Levi.

“Isn’t that Levi?” asked Michael as the shocked Joneses turned to look at Levi, who just happened to be nearby.

Could Levi really be the God of War himself?

Levi did mention that he’s the God of War.

He even claimed to be the person in charge of the investment conference and drove our family out.

Could it really be him?

Ezra then continued, “You can’t just say that’s the God of War based on the information you found online! That’s like randomly picking a stranger on the streets and calling him the God of War since nobody’s actually seen him before.”

“Phew! As long as it’s not Levi.”

Michael and the others breathed a sigh of relief when they realized that Ezra pointed at Levi randomly.

“One more thing. the God of War definitely hates things like statues. If you don’t want to get on his bad side, you better remove it soon,” warned Ezra coldly.

“Really?”

Tyler and Wales exchanged perplexed looks with each other because they could not believe that Levi was actually right about the God of War’s hate for statues.

The two still felt like something was off though.

After the statue had been removed, Ezra made up an excuse to leave.

“Shadow, follow Chief Williamson and report his whereabouts to me. Do what you can to protect him,” ordered Michael.

After receiving his order, Shadow followed Ezra all the way to a remote alley and saw Ezra knelt before a man.

The Protector Chapter 741

“God of War, my lord. This is Ezra Williamson, King of War of the Western Region, at your service!” shouted Ezra.

“Get up. There’s no need for such formalities.”

Naturally, the person standing before Ezra turned out to be Levi.

Shadow, the most skillful of the Jones family, was shocked to find out that Levi was the God of War all along.

Ezra wasn’t pointing randomly after all. Levi’s the real deal!

The God of War looks like Levi because he is Levi!

Still stunned by his discovery, Shadow suddenly heard a voice asking him, “This the second time that you’ve followed me. Do you really have to wait for me to call you out?”

Shoot! I’ve been spotted!

Did he say ‘the second time’?

Shadow trembled with fear when he realized that Levi had spotted him.

Thinking that he was the best there was at hiding, Shadow never expected to be discovered by anyone.

Now that the God of War had discovered him, Shadow, clad in black, was convinced to come out to the open willingly.

He then knelt before Levi and pleaded, "Forgive me, God of War! I only followed you because I was ordered to do so."

"If I wanted it, you'd be dead already," stated Levi coldly.

"Go back to the shadows. I need you to take care of those who might follow us later," ordered Ezra who needed Shadow to deal with the spies from Wheldrake.

"Understood!" responded Shadow before disappearing again.

Ezra then informed Levi seriously, "My lord, I'll attack Wheldrake tonight when they least expect it."

"So soon?" asked Levi looking surprised, for he thought Ezra was going to stay a few more days.

"The people will only hate me more if I stay any longer. Besides, there's no better time than tonight. Once Kirin's done gathering the Beasts, we'll strike at midnight!"

"Whatever you do, just don't die on me!" encouraged Levi before giving Ezra a strong pat on the shoulder.

"So I've heard that you're remarrying Ms. Zoey soon. Unfortunately, I wouldn't be able to attend the wedding, but you can be sure you'll get my gift!"

"Come, meet my soon-to-be wife!"

Levi then brought the excited Ezra to the company.

Looking at the stranger beside Levi, Zoey was a little dumbfounded.

On the other hand, Syllas was about to explode with excitement when she saw Ezra.

It's Ezra Williamson!

Chief of the Western Region!

My true superior!

Sylas was so excited that she stumbled onto the ground before greeting Ezra, "Hello... Hello, Chief."

After looking at Ezra for quite a while, that was the only greeting Sylas could come up with.

"Chief?"

Zoey was as surprised as she was perplexed by Sylas' greeting.

Why did Sylas call him 'Chief'?

Is that his title?

"Hello there. Try not to get too excited," advised Ezra before shifting his focus to Zoey, "Nice to meet you, Ms. Zoey. I'm Ezra, a good friend of Levi's. We came from the same place."

The Protector Chapter 742

Zoey thought Ezra meant that he and Levi came out of the same prison.

“Nice to meet you too. Please, sit. Have some tea, Sylas.”

Zoey was being very hospitable.

“Thank you, but I’m good. I have to go soon. Levi told me about the wedding, which I, unfortunately, can’t attend, but I have something for you.”

Ezra then took out an army-green box, and inside it was a gold medal inscribed with the words ‘King of the West.’

It was a symbolic medal, made of pure gold, awarded to the commander-in-chief of the Nine Warzones.

Zoey could see Ezra’s utmost sincerity when he gifted her with the medal.

“You should just take it. Ol’ Williamson here really wants you to have it,” advised Levi.

Not knowing the true value of the pure gold medal, Zoey took the medal from Ezra after thanking him.

Sylas was stunned at the sight of the medal handed over to Zoey.

In a certain sense, one could command the entire army of the Western Region with that medal, so that meant Zoey had an army in the palm of her hand.

After bidding Zoey goodbye, Levi and Ezra went to the city streets and sat down at a barbecue stall before Kirin and the others soon arrived.

It was a rare moment indeed for the brothers-in-arms to have such a leisure time together.

The moment Kirin saw Ezra, he started complaining about how Ezra was going to take the Beasts away from him.

“Don’t get your panties in a bunch! I’ll return them to you once I win the war. I’ll even add in some ladies from Wheldrake. How does that sound?” asked Ezra.

“Forget the ladies! You better bring them back unharmed. Not even a single hair lost!”

Kirin was treating the Beasts like a bunch of babies.

“Whatever you say. I’ll be in the battlefield myself by then, and I’ll die before I let anything happen to your boys.”

Ezra then downed his hard liquor.

“Now that’s what I want to hear! But you better make it back alive. Otherwise, who’s going to send my boys back to me?” toasted Kirin.

Looking at how the two were bickering, Levi could not help but let out a hearty laughter.

As much as the two liked to bicker like children, Levi knew that they would both give their lives to protect each other on the battlefield.

At that moment, a group of men appeared on the street with knives and sticks in their hands.

Watching them from the darkness was both Jennie and Logan in a wheelchair who wanted to exact their vengeance on Levi.

Logan swore to break Levi's limbs and keep any doctor from treating them in time so that he would lose them forever.

The goal was to make sure Levi stay bedridden for the rest of his life.

As for the Black family, after Levi offended and angered them just a few days before, they expected nothing less to happen to Levi.

The Protector Chapter 743

Only getting Levi bedridden would relieve them of their hate for him.

“I’ll make him pay!” promised Logan viciously.

To live up to that promise, Logan had hired dozens of brutes to get the job done.

While Levi, Ezra, and the others were reminiscing about the good old days, they suddenly noticed a crowd of people approaching them.

Every one of them looked vicious and was armed with sticks and clubs.

Annoyed at the sight, Ezra, Kirin, and the others put their liquor down and frowned at the crowd.

“You guys carry on. They’re here for me, so I’ll handle them,” notified Levi.

“Your business is our business. There’s no need for you to move a muscle when you’ve got us around,” assured Ezra with a smirk.

Cursed with a bad temper, Ezra had always been the most ruthless killing machine in the army, and he would violently mow down anyone who dared to touch Levi.

Suddenly, Levi smirked, for Shadow and the Jones family’s elites had appeared, “Looks like we don’t have to do anything at all.”

After figuring out who the Shadow was, the brutes got so terrified that they begged for mercy before running off.

Watching from afar, Logan and Jennie were puzzled by the situation.

“What happened?”

“The Jones family, royalties of Erudia, is watching over this street!” explained the head of the brutes.

“What? Did you mean the Jones family of South Hampton? Ezra Williamson of the Western Region must be on this street then!” stated Logan whose face quickly turned pale.

If Ezra knew about this, both the Black and Davies family would be ruined!

“Then we better run! We’re no match to either Ezra or the Joneses,” urged Logan.

Before leaving, Jennie took another look at Levi, “You got lucky this time. Let’s see how long that luck lasts.”

“We’ll get our chance. For now, we live to fight another day,” advised Logan who was terror-stricken.

After the gathering, Ezra went back to Sapphire Villa while Shadow reported to Michael.

“So what did Ezra do today?” inquired Michael before the Joneses all looked expectantly at Shadow.

“He... He went to see the... God of War.”

At that moment, Shadow, who was usually calm like the ocean, was short of breath and seemed extremely abnormal.

After all, that discovery was the most shocking thing in his life.

“What? The God of War?”

The Joneses were more concerned about the God of War than how abnormally Shadow was acting.

“Well, what does he look like?” asked Tyler eagerly, who did put in a lot of effort to find out what the God of War looks like for the statue.

The Protector Chapter 744

“The God of War is... is Levi,” stuttered Shadow.

“You mean the God of War really does look like Levi?”

Michael misunderstood what Shadow was trying to tell them.

“I thought Chief Williamson was just randomly pointing at somebody. I didn’t expect them to really look alike,” stated Tyler and the others.

Shadow nodded helplessly, “Yes, they do look alike.”

“Shadow, you should’ve notified us sooner so that we can all go see the God of War himself. What a shame!” sighed Michael.

“He’s right. You really should’ve let us know sooner!”

The others joined Michael to blame Shadow, who was then left with no choice but to provide an excuse, “There was a group of trouble-makers approaching the God of War and his friends. I was late because I had to take care of them first.”

“What? There was a group of people who dared to go up against the God of War?”

Michael found it hard to believe while the rest of the family got anxious.

“I’ve already looked into it. It’s the Black family,” revealed Shadow.

Michael then gave an order, “Wallace, go to the Blacks and teach them a lesson! It seemed that they’re forcing my hand to destroy them.”

Before Logan and Jennie even had the time to inform the Black family of what happened, Wallace and his men stormed in.

After Wallace announced his identity, Meredith and the others were more than surprised.

He's a South Hampton royalty!

His family is much stronger than the Gates or Caesar family.

Every member of the Black family quickly greeted Wallace courteously.

“Did you, or did you not, make trouble on Peace Road just now?” asked Wallace.

The Blacks’ eyes were wide open when they realized how much trouble they were in.

“Speak!” roared Wallace.

“Yes... Yes, it was us. We’re dealing with some personal matter,” Logan and Jennie quickly came clean.

Slap!

Wallace walked up to the two and gave them both ten hard slaps on the cheek, after which their face got badly swollen.

While Logan’s face darkened, Jennie cried in pain.

Why do we keep getting hit these days?

“Do you have any idea who’s on Peace Road? How dare you send a group of trouble-makers to where the God of War and Chief Williamson are! You’re this close to disappearing from the face of the earth.”

Wallace then kicked Logan off his wheelchair while Meredith and Robert's faces turned pale after hearing Wallace's words.

The God of War himself? How can that be?

The Black family could not believe who they almost offended.

"You guys better do some serious reflecting. If this happens again, I'll make sure the Black family is turned to dust!" Warned Wallace before he stormed off and left the Black family to ruminate in dead silence.

Our family was this close to being ended.

The Protector Chapter 745

“I can’t believe the luck Levi had! How did he just happen to be around both the God of War and Ezra?”

“Well, I can’t believe we almost ruined our family for going after Levi.”

Meredith and the others still found it hard to believe that they brushed shoulders with the God of War and almost got wiped out.

On the internet, more and more people were starting to call Ezra a deserter who abused his authority and brought harm to the people.

It was obvious that someone from Wheldrake orchestrated the online activities, for the people of Wheldrake hated Ezra for how he had defeated them.

Even if they could not beat him on the battlefield, they could still ruin him with the power of public opinion on the internet.

At midnight, Ezra sneaked out of Sapphire Villa to meet with the Beasts, who were already prepared to head off to the Western Region with him.

Before dawn, Wheldrake was suddenly attacked in the Western Region.

With unmatched strength, a thousand troops attacked head-on and broke through the four lines of defense surrounding Wheldrake before Ezra’s army in the Western Region joined in to press their attack.

Wheldrake was completely defeated on the battlefield as they kept retreating from the frontline.

The stalemate between the two sides was no more, and the battle was a complete victory for Ezra and his army.

Erudia began to cheer for Ezra when they realized it was all in his plan all along.

After hearing of Ezra's victory, Levi could not be prouder of the soldiers he had trained. Both Ezra and the Beasts.

"When you get back, Ezra, I'll personally see to it that you get a feast to celebrate!" Levi contacted Ezra the second he caught wind of the good news.

People were praising Ezra for his valor, and the Beasts made their debut. It was a battle to be recorded in the annals of history.

Even the God of War was given some credit, but the Jones family got nothing but embarrassment.

All of South City was laughing at the Joneses for panicking over Ezra's disappearance that night.

It was only then that the Joneses realized they were part of Ezra's plan, so that meant they were due some credit for the great victory.

But the Joneses were not happy about that because they did not achieve their goal after all.

What they cared about was their own interests, not the welfare of Erudia.

"We've become the joke of the city and he just left?"

The Joneses were not satisfied with the outcome at all.

Michael shook his head, "We can't just let him go like that. We haven't even met the God of War yet!"

“Is that even possible?” Members of the family were skeptical.

“Chief Williamson has already confirmed it. Anson is an elite in the Iron Brigade and the right-hand man to the God of War himself. If we were to request to meet the God of War as Anson’s family, I believe it would work,” explained Michael.

“You’re right! There must be a reason why the God of War took care of Elijah for us,” agreed Tyler.

“Then come with me to the South City Warzone and we’ll meet the God of War himself!”

The Protector Chapter 746

Afterward, Michael arrived in the South City Warzone with the other Joneses, where they were stopped at the entrance.

“State your business.”

“Let me introduce myself, comrade. I’m Michael Jones of the Jones family in South Hampton. We’re here to see the God of War!” stated Michael with a smile.

“What? The God of War?” the sentry was puzzled by Michael’s words.

Not even we, the sentries, have seen him before, much less this random person.

Besides, the God of War’s identity is top secret, so not just anybody can meet him.

“Do you think this is funny, sir?” asked the sentry.

“We’re not pulling your leg. Please just inform the God of War. Tell him that Anson’s family has come to see him. That’s Anson of the Iron Brigade,” explained Michael panickily.

Even though the sentry had no idea who Anson was, his face turned pale at the mention of the Iron Brigade.

“Okay, I’ll notify them. You wait here!”

After the sentry left to pass the information along, Michael boasted proudly, “See how well-known Anson is? His name was all it took to get the soldier moving.”

“Uncle Anson is impressive indeed! He’s the hope of our family!” agreed the Joneses.

Because it was the God of War whom Michael requested to meet, the news quickly reached Mike, the commander-in-chief in the South City Warzone, and the deputy commander-in-chief.

“What? Here to see the God of War?”

“Who the hell is Anson? I’ve never heard of him!”

Everyone was perplexed by the news before Alfie of the Dragon Legion reported, “I’ve found him! Anson Jones is just a regular soldier, not a general in the Iron Brigade.”

“How can a regular soldier possibly be the right-hand man to the God of War?” Mike squinted in bafflement.

“Run a background check on the Jones family!” ordered Mike.

Soon, everyone on the scene was shocked by the result they got.

“Michael Jones is the grandfather of the God of War.”

Not familiar with the relationship between Levi and the Joneses, Mike and the others’ faces darkened when they got the news.

“Hurry up and invite Mr. Jones in! Forget it, I’ll invite him myself!” Mike hurried to the entrance with a group of people.

“Hello, Mr. Jones. I’m Mike Pence, commander-in-chief in the South City Warzone. Please, do come in.”

One by one, Mike and the others introduced themselves before inviting the Joneses into the warzone.

Every member of the Jones family was thrilled by the hospitality.

The Jones family's about to rise!

Just mentioning Anson's name was enough to get the commander-in-chief and his deputies to welcome us.

This indirectly speaks of Anson's importance in the Iron Brigade.

The right-hand man to the God of War is indeed important enough to make the entire South City Warzone tremble!

We're invited in like VIPs!

The Protector Chapter 747

Michael's heart was racing in excitement, but he tried his best to contain his emotion.

We'll soon be one of the wealthiest family in Erudia!

The other Joneses were almost just as excited as Michael was.

What they did not know was that it was all because of Levi. Otherwise, they would not even have made it past the gate.

Hearing that Alfie was the leader of the Iron Brigade, Michael had to ask, "Mr. Steele, how's Anson doing in the Iron Brigade?"

"Well... "

Alfie hesitated with his answer, for even though Anson was but a regular soldier, he was the uncle of the God of War.

"He's excellent! You can say he's one of Iron Brigade's most important members," answered Alfie awkwardly.

The scene was similar to when the Black family asked him about Russell.

"Great! That's wonderful to hear!" Michael was laughing out loud with satisfaction while those at the South City Warzone looked perplexed.

What a strange reaction. His grandson is the God of War!

Michael and the other Joneses were taken to the reception room, where they received the highest level of hospitality.

Throughout their stay, they were accompanied by Mike personally.

Michael was overjoyed to see how well they were taken care of because that spoke to Anson's level of importance.

"That boy should've told us how important he is in the army!" mumbled Michael to himself.

"Mr. Jones, the South City Warzone would like to present a banner to the Jones family." notified Mike before ordering his man, "Bring the banner!"

Soon, someone came into the room with a banner, and on it was 'The pillar of the nation.'

When The Joneses saw it, they were so excited that they could no longer remain seated.

"This is for us?" asked Michael in delight as he did not expect to receive a banner after giving one to Ezra.

"That's right!"

"On my command. Salute!" ordered Mike to his man on the scene.

"The son of the Jones family has served well to protect our nation!"

"Thank you! I'm very proud of him!" responded Michael with a burst of hearty laughter.

The other Joneses were just as exhilarated to receive such an honor.

We have a pillar of the nation in our family!

The Jones family will never be the same again because we can now rival the top family in South Hampton.

The only problem was that Michael and Mike were not referring to the same person.

Mike was presenting the banner because of Levi while Michael thought it was because of Anson.

Nonetheless, both sides were happy with the outcome.

On top of that, Mike made them a promise, "From now on, if the Jones family needs anything, all you have to do is ask."

The Protector Chapter 748

“Wonderful! This is just marvelous!” exclaimed Michael, who was already fantasizing about ascending to the top in South Hampton.

Although he was utterly thrilled, Michael did not forget their purpose of going to the South City Warzone.

“Commander-in-chief, is the God of War available to see us?” asked Michael with a smile.

“Let me find out.”

It was only after calling Levi that Mike realized it was all a big misunderstanding, for Levi no longer wanted anything to do with the Joneses.

I knew it!

Why would Michael come here to see Levi if they're really that close!

I can't even have the banner back since it's already been gifted.

“Get them out of there now!”

Even though that was Levi's order before hanging up, Mike could not just drive the Joneses out like that.

“Apologies, Mr. Jones, but the God of War is not available at the moment and we don't have the authority to be informed of his location. I'm afraid you'll have to wait for our call,” informed Mike euphemistically.

“That’s fine.”

After what they had received, the Joneses had no regrets about going over to the South City Warzone, even if they did not get to meet the God of War.

After all, they had already seen how important Anson was in the army.

“From now on, the Jones family will rule South Hampton!” exclaimed Michael ambitiously.

The rest of the Jones family was also just as excited, especially Tyler and Wales.

As members of the Prince Gang in South Hampton, their status was mediocre at best.

Once we announce our relationship with the God of War, I, Tyler Jones, would finally ascend to the highest position in the Prince Gang, that is, the title of ‘prince!’

“How fortunate of us! I thought we’d be ruined by the warlord, Elijah. Now that the God of War himself is on our side, Elijah will be under our thumb!” boasted Wallace and a few others.

“We’re right to not let Levi, that low-life, into our family. He’d only be an embarrassment to us!” sighed Wales in relief before Michael gave him a look, “Never mention that name again! He’s unworthy of discussion! Now even less so, considering our current status. He doesn’t deserve to be my grandson!”

Suddenly, Shadow appeared, “Master, you might want to keep that to yourself.”

He was worried about the trouble they might get themselves in if the God of War heard those words.

“What does that mean, Shadow?” inquired Michael curiously.

“No matter what, you can’t change the fact that Mr. Garrison’s your grandson. I believe that it’d better for you and your family if you keep your thoughts about Levi to yourself,” explained Shadow.

“What are you trying to say, exactly? And why do you seem different? You used to hate speaking out. What happened to you?”

Michael sensed that something was off, but he was not aware of the fact that Shadow knew Levi was the God of War.

The Protector Chapter 749

“Forgive me. I talked too much,” apologized Shadow, who was actually trying to hint at Michael.

Unfortunately, Michael thought too little of Levi to ever expect him to be anyone important.

To show their new status, the Joneses returned to South Hampton with the two banners held high and flapping in the wind.

For the time being, the Black family was afraid to go after Levi while Zoey got busy with work.

Besides working on a fifty-billion project, Oriental Star Group had recently released a big-budget movie that starred Helena.

The movie became a legend in the industry for breaking the record when it made more than one billion in just three days.

Iris entered Zoey’s office when Zoey was still busy at work.

“Huh? What’s this?”

Iris could not help but pick up the dark green box she saw on the desk.

“Can I take a look?”

“Sure.”

After opening the box, Iris was curious to see a gold medal inside.

“What does ‘King of the West’ mean? Could it be referring to the king of the Western Region?”

“He led the attack that defeated Wheldrake, and it was all over the news,” stated Iris casually, but Sylas, who was just beside them, was shocked to see Iris figuring it out so quickly.

Does that mean we're exposed?

Zoey raised her head and chuckled in response, “This is a wedding gift from a good friend of Levi’s. I don’t even know what ‘King of the West’ means.”

She had also heard the news, but there was no way she could have known that Ezra was the King of the West.

He was drinking with Levi the night the battle happened. How could it be him on the battlefield?

It's not like Ezra can teleport!

“A friend of Levi’s, you said? Must be my mistake then,” responded Iris naturally.

There's no way that any friend of Levi's could've been in the Western Region battle.

Unless he's a prisoner there.

Zoey continued to joke, “Like you, Sylas almost mistook Levi’s friend to be some Chief.”

“I know, right? I almost thought this piece of gold is a symbol of the King of the West!” exclaimed Iris before putting the medal back onto the desk.

Seeing how Iris was convinced, Sylas breathed a sigh of relief.

That's not just any piece of gold but a mark of the God of War, who commands the millions of troops in the Western Region!

With that medal, Zoey can summon the army of the Western Region to protect herself any time she wants.

Sylas could not help reminding Zoey, “Ms. Lopez, I think you better put that box away before you lose it.”

Her words quickly attracted both Zoey’s and Iris’ attention.

“What do you mean, Sylas? Is the box special in any way?” asked Zoey.

Suddenly reminded of how strange Sylas acted the day they met Ezra, Zoey could not help but notice something off about Sylas.

The Protector Chapter 750

“It’s just that I have special feelings for military things and that medal looks like one, so I have this urge to protect it.” lied Syllas quickly.

“That’s understandable. I’ll keep it locked in the safe, then,” assured Zoey with a smile before Syllas breathed a sigh of relief.

After that, Zoey looked at Iris and inquired, “Is there something I can help you with?”

“Because your company’s movie recently broke the industry record, Star Entertainment, South Hampton’s top entertainment company, will be sending their people here in the afternoon to learn from yours. If you managed to take good care of them, there may be cooperation in the cards,” explained Iris.

“Sure. Leave them to me! I have time anyway,” responded Zoey with an ‘okay’ sign.

Star Entertainment is one of the top three domestic entertainment companies, and they have big-shot stars and online celebrities.

Even though the Oriental Star Group was growing rapidly, they still had a long way to go since Helena was the only valuable star they had.

There was much to be gained from working with a giant like Star Entertainment.

Zoey deliberately cleared her schedule to wait for their arrival.

In the afternoon, three sedans and four MPVs parked outside of the Morris Group building.

The Star Entertainment group had arrived, and Zoey was thrilled to see their chairman, Pierre leading the group himself.

Seeing how sincere Star Entertainment was about the meet-up, Zoey welcomed the group along with her team.

Still sleeping, Levi was suddenly awakened by the noise.

“What the hell is going on?” asked Levi frustratedly before Seth replied with a smile, “Star Entertainment has sent a group to visit Oriental Star Group. Everybody’s gone to see the many famous stars and online celebrities in the building. Do you want to go take a look?”

The minute Levi heard that there were stars and online celebrities, he lost interest.

But if it helped with his wife’s career, he thought it would not hurt to let them carry on.

Star Entertainment almost sent over every one of the best.

Not only did they send Pierre and eight others from management, eighteen of their hottest superstars and online celebrities were also there.

The online celebrities then started to live stream and record everything around them, including almost everything in the Morris Group building.

Seeing how it was, Seth had to step in to stop them from broadcasting the company’s internals, many of which were confidential.

He then brought two men with him to approach the broadcasters.

“Excuse me. Live streaming is not allowed in the building! Thank you for your cooperation,” advised Seth, but the live streamers could not be bothered to listen to him as they continued with the streaming.

Seth then had to repeat himself, “Excuse me. You’re not allowed to do your live stream here. Please stop immediately!”

“You’re nothing but a bunch of lowly security guards. Who are you to tell me that I can’t do my live stream here?”

The Protector Chapter 751

One of the online celebrities, Sarah, even pointed the camera at Seth and his men before speaking to her online audience, “Now let me show you this bunch of no-good security guards who are trying to stop our live stream. What does everyone think I should do about them?”

The audience in the live broadcast immediately began to insult Seth and his men. They even threatened to expose them and their family online.

“Get lost! I’m telling you that you can’t afford to interfere with my live stream, you got it?” insulted Sarah before trying to walk away.

Naturally, Seth could not oblige her, so he quickly got in front of the live streamers once again to stop them.

In situations like that, Seth was very much like Levi, for he, too, could not tolerate them.

“We have two problems here. First, you’re not allowed to live stream here, so please stop immediately; second, you have to apologize for insulting us!” insisted Seth determinedly.

“We will not apologize, and we will continue streaming. What are you going to do about it?” provoked Sarah with a cold sneer.

“Then, you’ll have to excuse us for throwing you out of this building,” warned Seth sternly.

“Hey, what’s going on?”

Pierre and the others from the management team came over, with Zoey following close behind.

“These security guards are trying to stop our live stream! They even threatened to throw us out if we continue,” complained Sarah in tears.

Then, Pierre quickly turned to question Zoey, “What is the meaning of this, Ms. Lopez? Are we not welcome?”

“Don’t worry. Let me handle this.”

After calling Seth and his men aside, Zoey asked them to be patient with their guests.

“Okay, Ms. Lopez. For Levi’s sake, I’ll be patient. Otherwise, I’d have definitely thrown them out, even if it costs me my job!” agreed Seth while he tried to suppress his anger.

Afterward, Zoey took Pierre and his party to visit the entertainment area of the Oriental Star Group.

After the tour, Pierre sneered at what he had seen, “This doesn’t look like a place that can make good movies. I believe Helena’s the only one holding this place together.”

Helena then quickly explained, “Oh no, I only played a small part in the success. Excellent quality is the real reason why our movie was a commercial success!”

“Your company doesn’t really seem to have what it takes to produce that level of quality, though. Did you guys resort to plagiarism?” continued Pierre.

“Careful now, Mr. Pierre,” warned Zoey, who noticed the real reason why Star Entertainment came that day. They were not there to visit but to show how much more superior Star Entertainment was compared to Oriental Star Group.

To Zoey, who was already annoyed, the accusation of plagiarism was the last straw.

“I was just kidding, Ms. Lopez,” explained Pierre smiling before he boldly made Helena an offer, “Have you ever considered joining us? Even though you’re making good progress here with online movies, you should consider moving on to theatrical features! You’re better off with us.”

The Protector Chapter 752

It seemed that Pierre was openly provoking Zoey, who decided to agree generously, “Helena, that’s an offer you should definitely consider.”

“Do you see how understanding Ms. Lopez is, Helena? Come, join us,” continued Pierre as he laughed at Zoey’s response.

“Thank you for the offer, but I’ll stay.”

Helena had sworn that she would stay at the Oriental Star Group unless Levi and Zoey asked her to leave.

“Then, you better not regret that decision!” threatened Pierre in front of everyone.

Seeing how arrogantly Pierre acted as a superior, Zoey could only imagine how ‘humble’ Star Entertainment’s stars and online celebrities could be.

Obviously, the group from Star Entertainment did not come over to visit but to show off and challenge Oriental.

After the tour, Pierre inconsiderately smoked a cigar in the reception room.

“There’s something I have to tell you, Ms. Lopez.”

“Go ahead.”

Zoey was starting to lose her patience with Pierre.

“I plan to acquire the entertainment department of your company. What do you think?” asked Pierre as he smoked his cigar, choking Zoey and making her cough.

“An acquisition? That’s not going to happen. We’re doing well, and we have no plans to sell the department,” rejected Zoey, to which Pierre laughed in response, “You don’t understand. You have let it go because I’m the one making the acquisition, and I always get what I want!”

That was how overbearing Pierre was in the South Hampton entertainment industry.

It was common for him to make acquisitions and buy copyrights forcibly, which was why people in the industry feared him.

Zoey then smiled in response, “I’m afraid that I can’t just let you have what I want to keep.”

“If you reject me, Ms. Lopez, I promise you that your company will be finished. I’ll make sure that you lose access to every possible resource in this industry!” threatened Pierre boldly.

“You think I’m scared? I’ve seen worse.”

Zoey was determined not to let Pierre have his way.

“Very well. We’ll see about that. Nobody gets far without my say-so!” After issuing his final threat, Pierre got up and walked out of the building, leaving the executives of the Oriental Star Group worried.

“Do you know how many potential entertainment companies Star Entertainment has ruined over the years? We’re in grave danger.”

Even though Zoey was just as aware of how powerful Star Entertainment was, she was not just about to give in to them that easily.

At that moment, Levi came and inquired, “Where are the bunch of arrogant celebrities I’ve heard about?”

He got furious after Seth told him about them.

They’re clearly challenging me, and I will not tolerate that.

The Protector Chapter 753

“Forget it. They have left. There’s no point to keep pursuing the matter anymore.”

Zoey shook her head discouragingly.

She was fearful of exacerbating the situation.

After all, there was nothing to be gained from that.

“They better pray hard that I don’t get to lay my hands on him. I will make him meet his maker sooner,” threatened Levi angrily.

He would never let Zoey suffer.

“Ms. Lopez, Star Entertainment’s actual objective in visiting South City is not to tour our office. Instead, they’re going to film a variety show at the South City Warzone. Their initial plan was to film it at South Hampton, but they were rejected. Yet, for some unknown reason, the South City Warzone permitted them.”

The secretary explained the matter.

“I see. So that’s what happened.”

Zoey did not care much.

Levi, on the other hand, was full of anger. With rage written all over his face, he lashed out, “What are you talking about? They’re going to shoot some variety shows in the South City Warzone?”

“Yes,” confirmed the secretary.

“This is ridiculous! Where did they get that courage from? How dare they do filming at the South City Warzone?”

Levi’s face was a brewing thunderstorm.

This made Zoey and the secretary feel that something was amiss.

Why is he so angry?

He spoke as if he was the Chief of the South City Warzone.

“No way, we must not set a precedent for them! How can they just fool around at a military base? I won’t agree to it!” yelled Levi furiously.

“Why are you so agitated?” chided Zoey, mystified by his reaction.

“I just don’t want to tolerate this kind of unruly insolence!” retorted Levi as he left, fuming.

The secretary asked curiously, “Ms. Lopez, what’s wrong with Mr. Garrison? He acted as if he was an army officer.”

“I guess he just not used to our way of handling things,” answered Zoey.

After Levi left them, he headed straight to the South City Warzone.

He wanted to find out who was the one who authorized Star Entertainment to film a variety show in the middle of the South City Warzone.

They are simply too foolhardy.

Around this time, Star Entertainment had already arrived at the South City Warzone.

The filming team, the logistics team, and the celebrities were all staying at the dormitory inside the warzone.

The equipment team had finished setting up the systems needed and was waiting around for the variety show to start.

Several online influencers like Sarah were still live-streaming and filming the dormitory which the military base arranged for them.

“What’s this? How can anyone sleep on this bunk bed?”

“The floor of the dorm is all covered in mud. I dare not step on it!”

“It’s so dirty! And it’s so humid and wet here!”

Realizing that they would be stuck here for the whole month to film their show, these influencers and celebrities could not stand the living condition. A string of complaints escaped their mouths.

“I can only see a bunch of stinky, smelly, sticky soldiers everywhere! I really can’t stand it anymore!”

Sarah wrinkled her nose.

Pierre was coolly smoking a cigar as he burst out laughing, “Everyone! Just bear with it for a month! After filming this show, I guarantee that your popularity will skyrocket!”

Hearing Pierre’s assurance, Sarah and the others started to relax.

The Protector Chapter 754

Although the living and working conditions were tough, the shooting of the variety show in the barracks proceeded without a hitch.

They endured, for they knew that they were doing something different, and the outcome should be great. Most importantly, they would make a lot of money.

As they settled in slowly, they got used to the pace of life there. Seeking to further increase her popularity, Sarah queried, "Boss, can we broadcast live-stream from the barracks? My fans want to see what the army dorms look like."

Pierre puffed a cigar and replied, "It's up to you all. Let me tell you something. Since I'm the one who brought you all into this place to film a show, there's nothing I can't handle."

"You're amazing, boss! We admire you!" Sarah and the others cheered.

"It's nothing! After all, I have connections all over Erudia. There's nothing I can't do!"

Pierre boasted as he gave his cigar the last puff before casually flicking the butt onto the grass.

A small patch of the grass where his cigar butt fell was burnt.

Following his permission, the internet influencers started their live-streaming.

With one influencer assigned per team, the whole production crew started roaming around the barracks and filming.

“My dear fans, look! This is how a military base looks like. Here’s the battle tank, and this is the army-trained dogs...”

Sarah’s live streaming brought her to a phalanx of tanks.

“Dear fans! Behold, a tank!”

She sounded excited as she introduced the sight. “I’ll jump onto the tank later and show you how it looks like!”

Sarah not only filmed the tank formation, but she was also daring enough to climb up and shoot the inside of the tank.

“Excuse me, comrades! Filming is forbidden here. Please go back to where you came from!” Immediately, one of the soldiers rushed to stop her.

“Ugh, you smell bad. Do you even shower? You reek of sweat!” Sarah furrowed her brows as she insulted the soldier.

“Comrade, please return to where you come from! No form of shooting or recording is allowed here!” repeated the soldier patiently.

“Hey, do you know who I am? Don’t you dare to obstruct me from doing my job!”

Sarah was starting to get annoyed. “Furthermore, we entered this base legally. Did you see anyone stopping us? Why do you have to be such a busybody? If your superiors blame you later, can you afford to shoulder the responsibility?”

Sarah coldly replied.

“Get out of my way quickly! I’ll leave after I’ve done my broadcast. If you continue to hinder me, I’ll make sure you face the repercussions!” She insisted on barging in.

“Comrade, please back off. This is top-secret. Any photography and videography are strictly prohibited,” insisted the sentry on duty.

“Humph! What is there to be secretive about? It’s just a tank after all. Why are you acting like no one has seen it before? It’s plastered all over the televisions, but no one said anything about it being top-secret.”

With Pierre backing her up, Sarah had become arrogant and paid the sentry no heed.

As an authorized civilian in the base, she felt herself to be out of the barrack’s jurisdiction. She just wanted to do her things without any restrictions.

“Those on TVs have explicit permissions. Currently, this area is off-limits! You do not have clearance to film or take photos!” The sentry insisted persistently.

“I demand you to get out of my sight immediately! If you try to stop me again, I promise I will report your conducts to your superiors! Your future and career will be ruined,” Sarah threatened again.

“No means no! Unless you have received orders from our superiors, you’re not allowed to film here!”

Sarah was completely furious.

“I don’t believe you! I must finish my live stream today by hook or by crook. No one can stop me!” She snidely added, “Especially a stinky soldier like you!”

Despite all the warnings, Sarah still insisted on barging in.

“Who are you calling stinky?” At this moment, a fierce voice boomed.

The Protector Chapter 755

Without her realizing, Levi had shown up out of nowhere.

His booming voice shocked Sarah to the core.

She spun around just in time to see a stern man staring at her. She glared back incredulously. "Who are you? What are you doing here?"

Seeing Levi in his plainclothes, she became bolder. *Since he's not a soldier here, he must be an average worker.*

Perhaps, he belongs to the production crew.

In that case, I shall give him an earful.

"Which team do you belong to? Is it the equipment team or the logistics group? How dare you try to control what I do? Do you have a death wish?" Sarah challenged furiously.

Hearing such a disrespectful tone, Levi became enraged.

The moment he arrived at the barracks, all he saw were groups of influencers and teams of live-streamers.

By making his military base into such a public spectacle, Levi felt it was a great insult to the pride and discipline of the men and women who had pledged their lives to serve their country.

That was something he absolutely abhorred!

From the corner of his eyes, he spotted the famous influencer, Sarah, insisting on filming the tank. He immediately rushed over.

This is prohibited.

Isn't her action tantamount to leaking military secrets?

If the model, structure, or even the schematics of these tanks were leaked out, they would be rendered useless.

In addition, he heard the insult of “stinky soldier”.

This disrespect statement completely angered him.

If it weren't for us soldiers, protecting lives and sovereignty as well as keeping the peace...

Can you even broadcast your live-stream nonsense right now?

Can you even live lavishly with sumptuous food and clothes?

Levi stared at Sarah coldly and commanded, “I want you to apologize to the guards immediately for those insults you've said!”

Seeing her adamance, he emphasized harshly, “Now! Immediately!”

The rest of the guards saw the furious expression on Levi's face.

They did not want to imagine nor experience the depths of his wrath!

Sarah was petrified by Levi's terrifying outburst, not knowing what to do.

“Who are you? What right do you have to impose on us?”

The production team next to Sarah was irked as they stared at him.

“I’m a soldier. A soldier who can’t stand your behaviors!” Levi retorted coldly.

“Since when does a stinky soldier like you have the authority to butt into our business?” Sarah rebuked him arrogantly.

In their eyes, Levi looked too young and was too casually dressed to be a military officer. He must be a mere private, at most a low-ranking soldier.

A military officer was usually at least thirty-four years old.

With that thought in mind, Sarah did not mince her words as she voiced her insult.

Instead of flying into a rage, Levi smirked. “Seems like you’ve offended me too. I demand an apology from you as well!”

“Apologize to you? In your dreams! You’ve disrupted and delayed my live-stream broadcast. You are the one who should be apologizing to me!”

She was irked by his smirk further so she demanded, “Kneel and bow down to me immediately. Then, I’ll consider forgiving your mistake.”

Not only did the production team refuse to apologize, but they also demanded an apology from Levi.

This was something Levi did not expect, not even in his wildest dreams.

There are actually arrogant people like them in the world?

Moreover, this kind of arrogance was openly displayed in a military base!

Such insolence! Do they think that they’re the mightiest here?

Do they think that rules no longer apply to them?

“If I were to apologize, I’m afraid you won’t be able to bear the consequences.”
Levi grinned.

“Hah! Do you mean I can’t handle an apology from a small fry? What a joke!”
Sarah snorted coldly.

Without further ado, she haughtily urged, “Hurry up and apologize. I don’t have so much time to waste on you.”

At that moment, she wanted so badly to slap him.

The Protector Chapter 756

A glint of cold malice flashed from Levi's eyes as he kicked Sarah's legs. With a loud thud, she fell onto her knees in front of him.

"I'm willing to apologize, but only if you kneel and listen," Levi stated coldly.

Sarah was dumbfounded.

So was her production team.

All the soldiers nearby secretly gave Levi a thumbs-up upon witnessing such a scene.

He is such a ruthless man!

They had been instructed by the superiors not to cause trouble to these online celebrities. Therefore, despite all the disrespect they had received, these guards had no choice but to keep their chagrin at bay.

However, right now, the person standing in front of them was on a totally different level. He had the guts to do whatever he wanted.

Snapping out of their bewilderment, Sarah and her team were now in an uproar.

"You... What did you just do? You actually assaulted someone!"

"Do you know who Sarah is? She is one of the top influencers in the country with a following of more than tens of millions of fans!"

"You're just a lowly-ranked soldier! How dare you lay a hand on her!"

Sarah's manager and crew started shouting angrily.

“Cut the crap and just kneel!”

Levi unleashed a few more kicks continuously. The kicks were swift and precise, and no one had any time to react.

Thump!

Thud!

No one had the chance to defend themselves before falling to their knees as they were caught by surprise.

Their knees and calves were as heavy as lead, and they could not stand up at all.

As a result, they were all kneeling in front of Levi.

“Are you out of your mind? You have a death wish, huh? I, Sarah, swear that I will not let you off easily! I will utilize all the resources I have to make you suffer!” Sarah was so enraged that she was shouting at the top of her lungs.

The escalated confrontation caught the attention of even more people.

Soon, the whole place was crammed with onlookers, including the other internet celebrities and their team.

“What are you doing? How dare you assault someone?”

“Don't you know who we are? Now that you've raised your hand against someone, you'll have to bear the serious consequences!”

Voices of protest rang out louder and louder from the influencers and celebrities.

When Sarah saw that her colleagues had arrived, she threw an even bigger tantrum.

The whole place descended into a chaos.

“Come and see! These soldiers are beating up civilians! Come and be my witnesses. These stinky soldiers are assaulting civilians!” shouted Sarah exaggeratingly.

Smack!

Just as she finished shouting, Levi gave her a slap on her face.

“Say that one more time, and I’ll slap you once more!” he threatened.

“You stinky soldier!”

Smack!

She could barely finish the phrase as another slap landed on her cheek.

“Stink... You damned stinky soldier...” *Smack!*

Even before she could finish uttering her insult, another heavy slap landed across her face.

“Try saying that again...” Levi looked down icily upon her, his hand raised in preparation for another slap anytime.

This time Sarah covered her face and sobbed softly.

She dared not say anything anymore.

Levi's overbearing ruthlessness shocked everyone.

"You stinky soldiers can't even handle any criticism, huh?" A male celebrity stepped out to speak in Sarah's defense.

Bam!

With a well-aimed dropkick, the busybody was sent kneeling on the ground as well.

"You can only talk to me on your knees," Levi said coldly.

"Well, I want to see who dares to trouble my people." Pierre's voice bellowed from the midst of the crowd as he made his way through.

The Protector Chapter 757

After seeing their pillar of support, Sarah and the rest relayed what happened to Pierre in an exaggerated manner.

Sarah sobbed continuously, with the red marks left by Levi still printed on her cheek.

When Pierre saw that, he became enraged.

“Who are you? How dare you hit my people?” yelled Pierre.

Pierre

Which soldier is so foolish that he dares to offend my people?

“Who are you?” asked Levi.

“Listen up, then. I’m Pierre Javens, the CEO of Star Entertainment. We came to the South City Warzone to film a variety show,” stated Pierre coldly.

“Who permitted you to film a show in the warzone? Don’t you know that the military base is a sacred ground that cannot be infringed? Look at the mess you people have made in the military base!” said Levi coldly.

A laugh escaped Pierre’s lips. “Who gave me the permit? With my vast connections, it’s a piece of cake to get a special permit to shoot in the warzone. Furthermore, I’m filming a show here to promote the soldiers. This is a positive and motivational show. Who are you to be such a huge busybody?”

“Firstly, the military base is a sacred ground that must not be infringed. Outsiders are prohibited from entering. Secondly, why do the soldiers of Erudia need you to promote them? Go overseas and ask around. Which country doesn’t fear the soldiers of Erudia?” stated Levi angrily.

“Thirdly, you are live-streaming in the military base without any permission. Filming without any restraints is already an infringement of the rules. There’s even someone who tried to film the internal structure of the tanks. This would constitute a huge crime of leaking military secrets! Lastly, your people have insulted soldiers. Just these four points will be sufficient to make you spend the rest of your life in jail.”

Levi listed out their crimes point by point.

“Yeah! The military base is not a place for you to act brazenly!”

The other soldiers clapped and cheered as they were rather moved by the speech.

After all, Sarah and the other celebrities had gone overboard.

They had been suppressing their fury for a while because no one had shown up to back them up.

Yet, Levi’s powerful presence intimidated Sarah and the rest. They were so terrified that they stayed silent, not daring to utter a single word.

On the other hand, Pierre was enraged. “Who are you? How dare you question what we do?”

“That’s not for you to know. I’m asking you, who permitted you to film in the military base?”

Levi was curious about that.

“Listen up, you rascal. It’s the Head of Culture and Media Department who gave me special permission. He’s a good friend of mine!” declared Pierre proudly.

“Bring him to me right away. If I don’t see him within ten minutes, I won’t bother meeting him,” ordered Levi coldly.

“Who’s so arrogant to demand me to meet him? Does he have balls of steel?”

With a booming voice, Jenson Grant, Head of Culture and Media Department, arrived.

Pierre relayed what happened to Jenson in an exaggerated manner.

The Protector Chapter 758

“How dare you? You actually assaulted someone? Tell me which platoon do you belong to?”

Jenson was furious.

“You are in no position to ask me that,” replied Levi frostily.

“See, Mr. Grant? Look at how horrible his attitude is. He was worse when you weren’t around just now. He assaulted us directly!”

Pierre fanned the flames, trying to stir up his anger.

Jenson seemed to be cross at his complaint. “That’s it. I don’t care which platoon you’re from. Since you hit someone, you must apologize to them!” instructed Jenson furiously.

“We’ll only accept your apology if you kneel,” added Sarah and the others.

However, Levi merely smirked. “My stance remains the same. None of you can bear the consequences of my apology!”

“Aren’t you being too insolent, you rascal? We can’t bear the consequences of your apology? Well, I’d like to try that out!” rebuked Jenson furiously.

“Are you sure?”

Levi narrowed his eyes, a cold glint flashing within them.

For some reason, Jenson felt himself quiver uncontrollably at Levi’s glare.

This rascal has such a powerful aura!

“I’m... I’m sure! Apologize right away!” demanded Jenson.

“Let me ask you something first. Are you the one who permitted Star Entertainment to film in the military base?” Levi’s question took a sudden turn.

“Yeah, that’s right. I permitted them!” admitted Jenson defiantly.

“What’s the objective?” asked Levi.

“Of course, it’s to promote our army and let the public see the true conditions of a military base. I think that it’s very meaningful!” explained Jenson in a matter-of-fact tone.

With a cold smirk playing on his lips, Levi said, “I know that you’re just trying to film a variety show, dragging the soldiers along to participate in this act. How insolent! You’ve severely disrupted the military base’s conduct.”

“Hmph! What we’re doing is to explore the military base in-depth and understand the daily life of soldiers. It’s not all that serious!”

“But it is! Are you saying that you allow them to film the battle tanks and weapons? Are you saying that it’s acceptable to leak military secrets?” Levi abruptly asked.

“Huh?”

Taken aback, Jenson quickly clarified, “Of course, that’s not allowed! I believe that the celebrities of Star Entertainment will know what to do.”

When Jenson said that, he could sense that the atmosphere took a strange turn.

Pierre and the rest were lowering their heads silently.

A flash of guilt and embarrassment even appeared on Sarah's and the other celebrities' faces.

"You... You guys didn't actually... film it, right?" asked Jenson in astonishment.

"Mr. Grant, they're just curious! Even I'm curious, so I am sure these kiddos would be too."

As expected of a man who had been around, Pierre immediately tried to diffuse the tension.

Satisfied, Jenson nodded. "Did you hear that, rascal? Everyone's just curious. They didn't do anything over the board."

"Huh! Really? Then look at the footages in their cameras," stated Levi angrily.

The Protector Chapter 759

At that moment, Sarah and the rest became flustered.

They had taken many photos and videos earlier, which included a large part of the military base.

They knew that these were definitely classified as military secrets.

Hence, if an investigation unfolded, the consequences would be really dire.

However, the more restricted the content was, the more exciting it was to the audience, and the more publicity the show would reap.

This was why they still chose to film and live-stream the military base.

“You rascal! You’re deliberately making things difficult for me, right? Apologize right away. Otherwise, I’ll throw you out!” threatened Jenson.

When Levi heard Jenson’s’ threat, he chuckled.

“Fine. But if you want me to apologize, all of you must kneel!”

Frowning, Jenson bellowed furiously, “Who the f*** are you? How dare you be so arrogant?”

“You’re asking who I am? In that case, you might only get an answer from Mike Pence!” said Levi with a smirk.

“What? Mike Pence? How dare a mere private like you say the Commander-in-chief’s name?”

This time, Jenson was completely enraged.

“Hah! Why can’t I call Mike Pence’s name directly? Aren’t names supposed to be called?” rebuked Levi.

“You... You... You’re such a cocky bastard!”

Jenson’s body shook in rage.

Who in the South City Warzone dares to call Mike Pence by his full name?

Isn’t he asking for it?

“Mr. Grant, with him around, I think that our show cannot continue anymore. We’ve had no choice but to leave. I think that I’ve placed you in a tight spot today. After all, I didn’t expect you to have so little authority in the military base,” lamented Pierre deliberately, trying to stir up a conflict.

Pierre refused instantly.

“You don’t need to go! With me backing you up, who dares to stop the shooting?” assured Jenson.

An awkward expression appeared on Pierre’s face. “Aren’t we making things difficult for you? Look at the situation now!”

The more Pierre said that, the more enraged Pierre became.

“Do my commands not throw any weight here? Huh?”

Bellowing at the top of his lungs, Jenson glared at Levi viciously.

The other soldiers were well aware that he was the Head of Culture and Media Department.

However, with a nonchalant smile playing on his lips, Levi said calmly, “Yeah, your words are useless to me. You don’t have the right to dictate what I do!”

The moment Levi uttered those words, Jenson flew into a rage.

“Are you from the Warzone? Why are you wearing casual clothes? Could it be that you’re from Pierre’s team?” yelled Jenson.

“Mr. Grant, he’s not from our team. I don’t know him,” replied Pierre hurriedly.

“So he’s not from the Warzone, huh? Someone, throw him out! If he resists, lock him up in the detention room for a week!” cried Jenson.

His subordinates rushed forward, trying to restrain Levi.

Bang!

At that moment, a gunshot reverberated in the air.

The Protector Chapter 760

Everyone was shocked to the core as they trembled in fear.

They looked around and tried to discover the source of that sound.

“Who the f*** dares to touch him? This is outrageous!”

A furious bellow rang across the compound.

They saw Mortimer, captain of a troop, and a bunch of men sprint over.

As Mortimer headed straight towards Levi, he instructed someone, “Inform the Commander-in-chief and Captain Steele immediately!”

“What brought you here, Captain Lambert?” asked Jenson with a flattering smile when he saw Mortimer.

Although he was a department head, he still worked a desk job.

Hence, he did not have a lot of authority.

Perhaps, he would be important in festive performance, but the military base was dominated by fists. The strongest person wielded the most power.

“What are you doing?” bellowed Mortimer angrily.

“Captain Lambert, he’s not from the Warzone. He snuck in from outside, trying to disrupt the shooting of Star Entertainment’s variety show. However, I stopped him,” explained Mortimer.

However, when Mortimer heard him, his anger intensified. “Since when did the military base become a circus for these clowns?”

“Captain Lambert, let’s not talk about that first. I’m talking this troublemaker right now!”

Jenson changed the topic of conversation hurriedly.

Actually, he was the only person who permitted Star Entertainment to film the variety show and gave them the authority to enter the military base.

In reality, not many people were cognizant of this, including Mike Pence.

He was hoping that before Mike Pence and the rest caught wind of what was happening, the variety show would have already ended.

On the other hand, after receiving a call earlier, Pierre became even less fearful.

He had just talked to the head of the Jones family from South Hampton.

The Jones family was one of the shareholders in Star Entertainment’s

Hence, they were aware that Star Entertainment came to film a show at the South City Warzone.

The head of the family even informed Pierre that even the Commander-in-chief of South City Warzone needed to treat the Jones family with due respect.

His son, Anson, was one of the more prominent soldiers of the Iron Brigade.

In fact, he was the God of War’s most trusted aide.

Hence, he assured Pierre that everything at the South City Warzone would go smoothly according to his wishes.

After hanging up the call, a look of extreme delight crossed Pierre's face.

His ego was now inflated beyond imagination.

Initially, when he heard that Mortimer was a Captain, he was still a bit worried.

Now, he felt completely relieved.

With the Joneses backing him up, there was nothing for him to fear.

"Answer my question directly. Who allowed these people to enter the military base?" asked Mortimer sternly, demanding an answer.

Jenson felt very embarrassed.

First, he was interrogated by Levi, and now by Mortimer again.

This was a complete humiliation for him.

When he noticed Pierre's disappointed gaze, Jenson became angry.

"Mortimer Lambert, you have no authority to interrogate me! I'm dealing with this man right now. Move aside!"

Ignoring Mortimer, Jenson insisted on throwing Levi out.

"Do you know who he is?" asked Mortimer with a cold smirk.

"I don't give a f***! Someone, tie him up."

Jenson was adamant on doing this, no matter what.

The Protector Chapter 761

Clang! Clang! Clang!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

At the next moment, the ground started to tremble, as if there was a giant army rushing in their direction.

Everyone glanced around in fear, only to see a huge troop of soldiers surrounding them.

The soldiers' expression changed as they realized that this troop was the Dragon Legion from the Iron Brigade.

"I want to know who dares to touch the God of War?" bellowed Alfie as he strode over.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The Dragon Legion arrived simultaneously, blocking all possible paths of escape.

Sarah and the other influencers were shocked to their core by this intimidating scene.

After all, they had never seen anything like that before.

Pierre and Jenson exchanged a bewildered gaze as their expressions drastically changed.

These men seem to be coming for Levi!

Leading the Iron Brigade, Alfie stopped in front of Levi.

The entire troop surrounded Levi as they glared at Pierre and the rest menacingly.

“Who gave out the instruction to throw the God of War out?”

Alfie’s ruthless glare swept across Pierre’s and Jenson’s faces.

“This... This is a misunderstanding, right? The God of War isn’t here,” blurted Jenson.

“There’s no misunderstanding! You’re the one who gave the command, right?” asked Alfie aggressively.

Jenson was so scared that his resolve wavered.

As he quivered, he glanced at Levi with suspicion in his eyes.

Could it be that he has a special identity?

Is he telling the truth when he said that no one can bear the consequences of his apology?

He even dared to call Mike Pence by his full name!

What kind of identity does he hold that he can do all that?

Firstly, Mortimer, the Captain, came.

Then, even the Iron Brigade arrived to protect him.

Who exactly is he?

Jenson knew very well that the Iron Brigade was ranked so high in the Warzone that not even Mike had the authority to deploy them at will.

Yet, they were actually mobilized to protect a young man.

This seems to imply something...

At that thought, Jenson's forehead was already dotted with sweat, his body quivering.

I might have just gotten myself into huge trouble.

At that moment, Pierre saw the flag fluttering in the air. He asked, "Are you from the Iron Brigade?"

"Yes, that's right." Alfie nodded. "What about it?"

"Then, you should probably know Anson Jones, right?"

An arrogant expression crossed Pierre's face.

"Huh?"

Alfie was shocked to hear that name.

The head of the Jones family just asked him about two days ago.

"Yes," replied Alfie honestly.

However, Pierre interpreted his reply as an affirmation that Anson was an important personnel of the Iron Brigade.

After all, he was so significant that anyone would know him.

The Jones family has such strong connections, huh?

Now, Pierre was confident that Alfie would kowtow to the Jones family.

“Good that you know. Anson is the God of War’s most trusted aide, and the pride of the Joneses,” declared Pierre with a smile.

Levi interrupted him, “Wait a moment. The God of War’s trusted aide? Why don’t I know that?”

The Protector Chapter 762

“Huh? Who are you to know Anson? What a joke!”

Pierre shot a disdainful glance at Levi.

Anson is the right-hand man to the God of War. Naturally, an insignificant person like you won't know him.

“He's the God of War you're referring to!” announced Alfie.

“What?”

A look of astonishment appeared on Pierre's and Jenson's face. The color had been completely drained from their faces.

“How is that possible? How can he be the God of War? I don't believe you.”

Naturally, Pierre was unwilling to face the reality.

“He's really the God of War. Sir, Captain Mortimer reports!”

Mortimer saluted him.

Witnessing this scene, Pierre and Jenson felt like a bombshell had been dropped on them.

They were utterly dumbfounded.

If one person's account were unreliable, the second person would do the trick.

“Sir, Commander Pence reports!”

At that moment, a group of people rushed over.

The person at the front was Mike Pence, the Commander-in-chief of the South City Warzone, who saluted Levi.

The deputy commanders and military officers behind him saluted Levi as well.

“T-T-This...”

Pierre and Jenson gasped in disbelief. They felt like their blood had frozen in their veins as shivers ran down their spines.

If the verdict of two people was still unreliable, what about that of three, four or five people?

What if a dozen of them said that he was the God of War?

In that case, he's indeed the God of War!

The God of War?

How can it be that he's the God of War?

He's such a young man and so low-profile.

We have actually messed around with the God of War?

This is the unluckiest thing to happen to them.

They could've offended anyone else but the God of War!

Not only were the two of them terrified, but Sarah and the rest, who were kneeling on the ground, also started sweating in fear.

Their eyes widened in disbelief.

The God of War?

The stinky soldier we were referring to is actually the supreme God of War!

“Oh no...”

Sarah’s manager moaned in shock and fainted right away.

Staring at Mike, Levi asked, “Mike Pence, what’s going on? Why is the military base in such a mess, with a bunch of clowns filming here?”

Jenson’s heart was pounding so frantically that it was almost leaping out of his throat. Indeed, he dared to call Mike Pence by his full name.

“Sir, it’s my mistake. I’m completely oblivious to this.”

He whirled around to glare at Jenson. “Is this your doing, Jenson Grant?”

“No... No. I... I...” stuttered Jenson, not knowing how to explain himself.

“That’s enough! The shoot ends right now. Everyone from Star Entertainment just gets lost! The military base is not a place for you to unleash your madness!” bellowed Mike furiously.

Pierre was terrified.

Now, his connections were completely useless in this situation, not even the Jones family.

When he was up against the God of War, even the Joneses could offer no help at all.

Levi's gaze suddenly landed on Sarah and the rest. "Do you still need me to apologize?"

The Protector Chapter 763

Levi's question came like a bolt from the blue, causing Sarah and the rest to be struck by lightning.

Their bodies were already drenched in cold sweat.

He still remembers this?

Initially, when Sarah insisted on demanding an apology from Levi, he claimed that no one could bear the consequences of his apology.

He even had the audacity to say that everyone must kneel when listening to his apology.

Back then, everyone scoffed disdainfully at his presumptuousness.

Now, they all understood finally.

Indeed, no one could bear the consequences of his apology!

After all, he was the mighty God of War!

Who would dare to force an apology out of him?

Furthermore, he was not even in the wrong!

Instead, he stood on the side of justice.

“You're the influencer, Sarah, right? Who do you think you are? How dare you insult me to be a stinky soldier?” asked Levi coldly.

Pierre and the rest were at an utter loss for what to do for their minds were in a complete mess.

Err.....

She actually dared to say something such absurd as calling the God of War a stinky soldier?

She really must have a death wish.

“I’m a very fair person. I will neither accuse an innocent man, nor will I ever spare a sinner. Your evil deeds have been recorded in the cameras! Alfie, bring them to me,” commanded Levi.

Soon, Alfie confiscated all the equipment.

After playing the footage, they discovered that the footage exposed all of the activities in the military base, including the secrets involving the battle tanks.

If such footage were leaked, these people could be sentenced to death!

Reviewing the pieces of evidence, Levi scoffed coldly, “What else do you have to say for yourselves? Do you still want me to apologize?”

“We’re sorry! We’re terribly sorry!”

Sobbing, Sarah and the other celebrities started to beg and cry.

Even Pierre was so terrified that he burst into tears.

“You, apologize! Start live-streaming now and apologize!” instructed Levi as he pointed at Sarah.

Sarah followed his instructions. She started a live-stream and apologized to the few soldiers she insulted as “stinky soldiers”.

When Sarah was about to apologize to Levi, Alfie stopped her. “Get lost! You’re not worthy to apologize to the God of War!”

“Here’s your punishment. Star Entertainment will cease all operations for three months. All employees must undergo a mandatory etiquette program, and they can only continue working after they’ve passed it. As for all these people, round them up and teach them a proper lesson. Also, apologize to Zoey Lopez from the Oriental Star Group.”

No one dared to disobey Levi’s commands.

However, if Star Entertainment put all activities on hold for three months, they would lose a third of their current profit.

However, Pierre dare not disobey Levi’s order.

In the end, all these celebrities and production teams were chased out of the military base.

After the shareholders of Star Entertainment caught wind of this incident, they all called to ask about it.

The Joneses were one of them.

In fact, Michael personally called to ask, “Pierre, what’s going on? Why did you suddenly terminate such a heavily invested project? If we incur a loss, are you going to compensate?”

The Joneses actually invested in this show.

“Mr. Jones, you may not know this, but we’ve been kicked out of the military base,” lamented Pierre helplessly.

“Didn’t you mention my name?”

The Protector Chapter 764

“I did. Not only did I mention your name, but I also even brought up Anson’s name. Then, I got chased out...”

Pierre was overcome with worry.

Having offended the God of War, I’m doomed.

What’ll happen to me in the future?

“What? It didn’t work even after you mentioned mine and Anson’s name? Were you mistaken? How dare Mike disrespect the Jones family!” Exclaimed Michael furiously.

“Mr. Jones, you don’t know this, but the God of War came today! This man is Erudia’s legend. Mentioning anyone’s name would still prove futile.” Replied Pierre agitatedly.

“What? In that case, there’s no way around it. But the Jones family is acquainted with the God of War. Didn’t you mention Anson’s name to him? Anson is his right man! I don’t think he’ll make things difficult for you as a favor to Anson.” Said Michael, feeling puzzled.

“Don’t even mention it. The God of War said he doesn’t even know Anson. I was almost shot dead! Mr. Jones, you’re so unreliable.”

Michael was confused.

Something’s wrong.

How is it possible for him to not recognize Anson?

He must be saying that out of fury!

That must be it.

Pierre must have angered the man to the extent that no one could change his mind.

“You probably provoked him, didn’t you? Useless! You almost sabotaged the Jones family!”

Michael hung up the call quickly.

Afraid that the Jones family would be ruined as well, he no longer wanted to speak with Pierre.

When Levi returned to the office, Zoey asked in surprise, “Where did you go?”

“I went to teach Star Entertainment a lesson!” Replied Levi.

“Hah! Stop boasting. I don’t buy that!”

Zoey did not pay much attention to what he said.

However, her secretary and Helena rushed in soon after.

“Ms. Lopez, something bad happened! Pierre brought a bunch of people to the office. Looks like they’re up to something bad!” Exclaimed the secretary in worry.

The other company directors were extremely worried too.

After all, Star Entertainment was one of the incumbents in the industry.

It was not a good thing to be targeted by them.

Yet, it was obvious that Pierre brought people here to take revenge.

“Let’s go and take a look!” Commanded Zoey with a cold expression, not afraid of Pierre.

Soon, she arrived at the lobby.

Even Seth came along, wanting to protect Zoey.

They strode into the lobby aggressively and confronted the group of men.

“Let me warn you! Don’t do anything rash. I won’t be courteous to anyone who dares to create trouble here.”

Seth stood at the front with the security guards, glaring daggers at Pierre and his men.

Zoey too, eyed Pierre coldly, waiting to see what tricks they were up to.

Thud!

To their utter surprise, Pierre and the rest fell onto their knees.

The Protector Chapter 765

All of them knelt in front of Zoey.

That included Star Entertainment's boss and eighteen of its most popular celebrities!

What's going on with them?

This sudden scene caught everyone off guard.

Why are they kneeling?

Zoey and the others had no clue of what was happening.

Aren't they supposed to come for revenge?

Zoey, the secretary and Seth exchanged incredulous glances with one another.

The first person who simultaneously appeared in their minds was Levi.

Does this really have something to do with him?

Kneeling on the floor, Pierre groveled at her feet, "Ms. Lopez, I'm sorry! I shouldn't have sabotaged you, or threatened to acquire your company."

Thud! Thud! Thud!

Pierre kowtowed so forcefully that his forehead bled.

As Levi had specifically asked him to apologize to Zoey, he did not dare to take it lightly.

Other than him, all the celebrities and influencers joined him too.

They should not have pretended to be arrogant big-shots.

Sarah even begged for Seth's forgiveness for the words she had said to him.

On the other hand, everyone on Zoey's side was stunned, unable to comprehend what was happening.

What are these?

"Ms. Lopez, Star Entertainment will suspend all activities for three months, and you can use our resources whenever and however you want!"

Pierre even offered to activate all their connections to help Zoey develop her company's entertainment projects for three months.

"Ms. Lopez, please accept our favors!"

Speaking, Pierre sprawled on the ground.

"Okay, I'll accept it. But can you tell me what happened?" Asked Zoey confusedly.

This was everyone's query too.

What made Pierre and these arrogant people change their attitudes so drastically?

"Ms. Lopez, we broke some rules and received a harsh lesson. We've realized our mistake now." Explained Pierre helplessly.

“Ms. Lopez, we’ll take our leave first! With regards to Star Entertainment’s resources, I’ll send someone over immediately.”

With that, Pierre and his men left.

They were going to roll out an orientation on proper etiquette for all their celebrities.

When Pierre left, the secretary received an update.

“Ms. Lopez, they probably committed a mistake at the military camp and was chased out!” Reported the secretary.

“But this is a good thing for us. We can use all of Star Entertainment’s resources for three months!”

Zoey nodded in approval.

“It’d be a waste for us not to use them. Coincidentally, Helena’s new movie is going to be released soon. Let’s tap on their resources for that!” Suggested Zoey with a smile.

At that moment, Levi pushed the door open and entered.

“What happened? Did those guys come and apologize?”

The Protector Chapter 766

When Levi said that, everyone glanced at him with bated breath.

Zoey and the other two had the same idea.

Could it be that this is all Levi's doing?

The timing is just right.

Previously, Levi said that he'll settle this incident.

When he returned, Pierre and the others came.

It must be him!

But how did he do that?

Star Entertainment is one of the top three entertainment companies in the nation.

How is it possible for Pierre to cave in to him and even stop business for three months?

These questions circled around their minds.

They were exceedingly confused.

"Yeah. They left after apologizing, and even begged us to use Star Entertainment's resources to our heart's content." Replied Zoey.

Levi nodded and said, "Good then."

Zoey felt too embarrassed to ask Levi how he did it.

However, she thought of a possibility.

After Levi left, Zoey instructed her secretary, "Check how Star Entertainment's stocks are doing."

The staff checked it quickly. "Other than Pierre, the Jones family in South Hampton owns the highest share of 20%!"

"Indeed!"

Zoey heaved a sigh of relief.

Earlier, she guessed that Levi managed to achieve it through tapping on his connections with the Jones family in South Hampton.

Now, she was certain.

The Jones family was Star Entertainment's biggest shareholder.

Making Pierre do all that was merely a piece of cake for them.

"Darling, thanks for your help!"

Zoey was extremely touched.

She knew Levi hated the Jones family and would not even deign to acknowledge them.

However, this was the second time he asked the Jones family for a favor on her behalf.

This was equivalent to him throwing his pride aside.

Furthermore, Levi was one of the most prideful people she knew.

Darling, I'm very touched...

However, unknown to Zoey, that was not what happened at all.

The Jones family had nothing to do with this.

As everything was too coincidental, she misunderstood.

However, Zoey decided to keep everything a secret and did not ask Levi about it.

Then, with the help of Star Entertainment, the new movie released by Oriental Star Group skyrocketed to unprecedented popularity.

Helena, the female lead, rose to stardom and became one of the nation's most popular A-listers.

The movie star never imagined all these to happen.

Half a year ago, she was still an unknown celebrity, worrying about her meagre monthly income of three thousand.

Six months later, she became a popular celebrity in the country.

Everything was all because of Levi and Zoey, hence Helena was extremely grateful to them.

Not only that, but she also even donated some money in secret to help those in need.

“Helena, if all of the celebrities are as kind as you, I wouldn’t be so angry.” Said Levi with a laugh.

The Protector Chapter 767

Zoey was very pleased with Helena's results and character.

"Helena, your popularity skyrockets recently. A lot of people might be seeking you out now. Please resist the temptation and not fall into any traps." Advised Zoey.

"I understand, Ms. Lopez."

Helena was too popular now.

Numerous advertisers sought to hire her as their spokesperson, while many agencies tried to steal her away by offering high salaries.

However, Helena was not tempted at all. Instead, she followed all Zoey's arrangements.

When the billionaires from overseas offered high amounts of money to invite Helena to drink with them, she refused.

Yet, what she did not expect was that she caught the eyes of the South Hampton Prince Gang.

At that moment, a group of youngsters were smoking and drinking together in a luxurious club at South Hampton.

Tyler and Wales Jones were amongst them.

They were the notorious Prince Gang of South Hampton.

How impressive was the gang?

Timothy, the eldest son of the Caesar family, was merely one of the most insignificant members in the gang.

Even Tyler was only in the middle of the hierarchy.

In other words, the wealthy youngsters, who were predicted to be the most powerful people of South Hampton in the future, were all there.

They represented the entire nation.

Those men at the top of the hierarchy were even more impressive.

They belonged to the most powerful families of South Hampton. Even a royal family like the Jones would have to look up to them.

“Did you guys hear? There’s a new female celebrity called Helena!” Exclaimed Bentley Brooks with a grin.

“Of course! She’s such a chaste woman. Some wealthy businessmen offered her hundreds of millions just to drink with them, but she’s not tempted at all!”

“That’s expected. After all, she had never been in a relationship! Hence, she can still stick to her principles after becoming popular.”

Everyone were discussing enthusiastically.

Even Tyler and Wales were interested.

“I like this woman!”

A voice suddenly rang out.

Everyone, who was initially discussing excitedly, fell silent and looked at the person respectfully.

It was Lucas Quinn!

He was the future heir of the Quinn family, which was one of the top three royal families in South Hampton.

He was considered the true big-shot.

Even Tyler was nothing compared to him!

The Quinn family's influence was four times bigger than the Jones family.

This was, quite precisely, the difference between the both of them.

As the eldest son of the Quinn family, Lucas was considered a genius.

Not only was his academic outstanding, but he was also skilled in combat.

He was one of the top three members of the Prince Gang, only second after the 'Prince'.

When he spoke, everyone paused mid-action.

Twirling a cigar between his fingers, an unreadable expression crossed Lucas' handsome face.

"Wow, it's so rare for a woman to catch your eyes, Lucas." Flattered Tyler.

From what they recall, Lucas' girlfriends were all top beauties. It was very uncommon for him to fancy anyone.

Taking a puff of his cigar, Lucas said, "I've investigated this woman. She suits my taste. But what delighted me more is her boss, Zoey. She's a greater beauty! I want both of them."

The Protector Chapter 768

Everyone gasped in shock.

Lucas certainly pulled no punches this time.

Exchanging glances with each other, Tyler and Wales subconsciously said, “We know Zoey. She’s indeed one of the best! Although she’s married, she’s still a virgin.”

Lucas glanced at them suspiciously. “How do you guys know her so well?”

Wales explained, “Because the Jones family...”

At that moment, Tyler interrupted him, “It’s because we saw Zoey personally during our trip to South City. I think she’s a much better choice.”

As he spoke, he fiercely glared at Wales, reprimanding him for almost mentioning Levi’s name.

The Jones family refused to acknowledge Levi’s identity and existence.

Revealing his identity was a humiliation for them.

Especially in social circles like the Prince Gang, it was better if no one else knew about Levi.

After all, it was a disgrace to the family.

It’s very likely they would hear mocking like “So there’s such a homeless hobo in the Jones family, huh?”

By then, they would be deemed as outcasts by everyone else.

Not finding anything suspicious, Lucas grinned. "That's great! They'll definitely be mine."

"Lucas, let's go to South City, shall we?" Suggested the others.

"Okay. We'll set off tomorrow."

Finished speaking, Lucas took a puff of his cigar again.

Naturally, Zoey and Helena were completely oblivious to their impending danger, and were still preparing for the fan meeting.

That day, Meredith and Robert went to Zoey's office personally.

Under the facade of visiting Zoey, they were actually trying to check on the progress of the fifty-billion project.

The pair met Levi at the corridors coincidentally.

Seeing how lively and vigorous he was, they became consumed with anger.

Logan was still lying in the hospital, yet Levi looked completely unscathed.

How could they not be infuriated?

"Don't be too delighted yet, youngster. The Black family will never spare you." Meredith warned, whispering softly beside Levi's ears.

"Bring it on then." Replied Levi with a cold smile.

How can I even be bothered by the Black family?

If it were not for Zoey, it'd be a piece of cake for me to destroy the Black family.

The old couple then went to Zoey's office and checked the progress.

"Are you sure you want to marry Levi?" Out of the blue, Meredith asked.

Zoey nodded. "Yes. Regardless of how the both of you try to stop me, I'll still marry him!"

Her attitude was firm.

With a smile, the grandmother said, "Zoey, of course you can marry Levi! However, he must make changes until we're satisfied with him. Only then will we not stop your marriage. We met him earlier! He's still a listless and unambitious man. How can you marry such a man!"

Zoey asked directly, "Tell me your conditions, grandma."

The Protector Chapter 769

“It’s simple! There’s still some time before your marriage. Before that, Levi must earn one billion, depending on his own capabilities.” Meredith declared.

Zoey’s eyebrows knitted together.

It’s a short time before the wedding day.

How can he earn one billion by then?

Oh, right.

The Jones family!

Zoey agreed instantly. “Sure! One billion it is then.”

“Remember, no one else can help him.” Reiterated Robert.

“Yeah, that’s right! Six years ago, he gained a net worth of billions within a single year. Now, he has to depend on himself to earn a billion. We want him to recreate what he was capable of back then!”

After listening to their points, Zoey knew she had fallen for their trick.

It was simply too difficult for Levi to earn one billion without any resources.

Meredith and Robert probably dared to suggest that because they knew Levi wouldn’t be able to achieve so.

“Zoey, since you’ve agreed, you must not go back on your words!”

A delighted smile appeared on the grandparents' faces.

After they left, Zoey slumped onto the chair, blaming herself for agreeing too quickly.

How can Levi earn one billion in such a short amount of time?

However, as she had already agreed, she had no choice but to look for Levi.

When he heard what she said, he burst out into laughter. "Just one billion? I thought it'd be ten trillion."

When Zoey saw Levi's confident expression, she was taken aback.

How could he be so confident?

Is one billion really a piece of cake for him?

"You probably didn't hear the conditions right. No one is allowed to help you. You can only depend on yourself!" Reminded Zoey.

"Okay, no problem!"

Levi chuckled.

His black credit card held much more than a billion.

Meredith and Robert would be utterly dumbfounded if they knew how much money he had.

"Okay, then do your best. I'll pay attention to you, but I won't offer any assistance at all." Said Zoey.

However, for the subsequent period of time, Levi disappointed her.

He did not take any actions at all, still resuming his listless days of doing nothing.

Zoey ignored him and went on with handling Helena's fan meeting.

On that day, Zoey and Helena went together.

The fans erupted into cheers.

They were already happy enough to see Helena, but they did not expect her boss to be even more attractive.

This trip is definitely worth it!

From afar, a few men stared at the two women on stage.

"Lucas, did you see her? I'm right when I said that Zoey's a beauty, huh?" Asked Tyler as he chuckled.

"Not bad. If I get them, you will get your reward!"

Taking off his sunglasses, Lucas' gaze never left Zoey and Helena.

No preys which he had his eyes on could ever escape.

The Protector Chapter 770

Lucas commanded, "After the fan meeting, invite them to our party."

"Understood, Lucas. Consider it done." Chorused everyone simultaneously.

The man left afterwards, waiting for the two women's arrival at a French restaurant.

He loved formalities, always ensuring that everything was romantic.

Otherwise, it would be such a waste to just sleep with these women.

As the atmosphere must be perfect, he instructed the others to invite the ladies over instead of forcing them to come.

In the evening, Helena and Zoey were about to leave after the fan meeting ended.

However, there was an Rolls-Royce parked at the entrance.

A few servants, all wearing suits, stood at the side of the car.

The butler at the front bowed in a gentlemanly manner. "Hello, Ms. Lopez and Ms. Engler. On behalf of Mr. Lucas Quinn from South Hampton, I extend his invitation to dinner to both of you."

Right that moment, Levi drove to the front and blocked the Rolls-Royce's path.

"Hop in. I'll treat you to a meal." Said Levi.

Hence, Helena and Zoey refused the butler's request. They entered Levi's car directly and sped off.

The servants stood there in a daze before returning to their senses.

"What happened? Who took them away?"

Everyone was flabbergasted.

Not only did they fail to invite them, but a man also fetched them away!

"Quick! Chase after them!"

But Levi's car was nowhere to be spotted.

Everyone was dumbstruck.

How were they going to explain it to Mr. Quinn?

In the French restaurant, Lucas looked at the servants in front of him and laughed.

"Someone fetched those women away right in front of your eyes?" Asked Lucas as he ate his steak, holding a knife in his left hand and a fork in his right.

The middle-aged butler lowered his head. Trembling, he replied, "Yes, Mr. Quinn. We didn't manage to catch up with them. However, I've already sent people to look for them."

Lucas beckoned him with his finger. "Come!"

Confused, the butler walked toward him.

“Sir, what can I do for you?”

Suddenly, a cold glint appeared in Lucas’ eyes.

Swoosh!

He stabbed the fork in his hands into the butler’s body.

Swoosh!

Swoosh!

Swoosh!

Lucas repeated his actions forcefully.

Blood splattered everywhere.

After a dozen stabs, the butler had already stopped breathing.

His body toppled straight onto the floor with a loud thud.

“You useless pieces of shit!” Bellowed Lucas.

“We’re sorry, Mr. Quinn...”

The other servants were so scared that they fell onto their knees, begging for mercy.

Lucas walked to them with the cutleries in his hands.

Swoosh!

Swoosh!

He stabbed frantically at the rest of the servants, causing blood to spew everywhere.

The Protector Chapter 771

Only when the knife became bent did he stop.

However, by then, all of his servants were dead.

Walking back to his seat, Lucas took out a white handkerchief and wiped the bloodstains away from his hand.

“Someone, give me a new set of cutleries!” Ordered Lucas.

Then, he continued savoring his steak.

The corpses sprawled on the ground and the metallic stench of blood filling the room did not affect him at all.

He still had the appetite to eat.

Those who understood Lucas knew that he often had unpredictable mood swings.

On one hand, he could create a romantic atmosphere in a French Restaurant; Yet on the other hand, he could instantly transform into a crazy murderer.

In simpler words, Lucas was a psychopath.

As long as something crossed him, he killed.

In recent years, he had killed more than a hundred of his family's servants and butlers, let alone the others.

The Quinn's young master could be considered a demented mass murderer.

Hence, many people in the Prince Gang were terrified of him.

Even though Jones family had the God of War as their protector, Tyler dared not boast about it to Lucas.

If he angered the man, he might be killed mercilessly.

Hence, he had no choice but to keep flattering Lucas.

Soon, the corpses were removed and the members of the Prince Gang arrived one by one.

“What? Someone fetched the ladies away?”

Everyone was surprised.

Who would dare to do such a thing?

Do they have a death wish?

“I want to know who he is too.”

Lucas drank the red wine elegantly.

No one could tell that he had killed five people earlier.

“For snatching the women you like, the person must die!”

“Don't worry, Lucas. We've already sent someone to investigate. Soon, we'll find out where they are.” Assured the rest flatteringly.

News arrived ten minutes later, saying that they had found out where Helena and Zoey were.

They were eating at the Stardust Hotel, located in the city center.

“Let’s go. I want to take a look at the bast*rd!”

Lucas stood up, looking very curious as well.

The Prince Gang rushed to the Stardust Hotel as fast as they could.

Helena actually suggested to buy the couple a meal to express her gratitude.

Levi did not stand on ceremony either, and directly brought them to the most expensive Stardust Hotel.

When someone saw the car parked at the entrance, he pointed at it and declared, “Mr. Quinn, Helena and Zoey entered this car!”

A smile played on Lucas’ lips. He glanced at the car and said, “Let’s go in.”

They entered the lobby and saw Zoey and the rest seated beside the window.

“It’s him?”

Tyler and Wales spotted Levi instantly, and decided to back off.

If they went over, Levi would recognize them.

They could not afford to be embarrassed by him.

Furthermore, Levi had angered Lucas.

The Protector Chapter 772

“Lucas, something happened in our family. We need to return to South Hampton.”

They thought of an excuse quickly.

“Leave. Don’t affect my mood.”

Tyler and Wales did not want Levi to beg them for mercy when he was going to be killed.

Not only would it embarrass them, but they might also get involved if Lucas found out about their relationship with Levi.

It was better for them to escape.

In the restaurant, Lucas walked toward Levi and the other two with the Prince Gang following along.

The three of them, who were initially eating and chatting, sensed something amiss.

Raising their heads, they noticed those men standing beside them.

Each of them wore luxurious clothing, exuding a dignified aura.

“How can I help you?” Asked Zoey.

“Hello, Ms. Lopez and Ms. Engler. I’m an admirer of yours.” Lucas introduced himself politely.

“And you are?” Asked Zoey.

“I’m Lucas Quinn from South Hampton! Can I get to know you?”

Lucas was full of smiles.

His courteous attitude made it hard for anyone to refuse.

“No!”

At that moment, a voice rang out.

It was Levi, who was still eating.

“No?”

Lucas and everyone else turned their gazes to Levi.

“We’re eating. Please don’t disturb us.”

Without even raising his head, Levi continued eating.

His cold attitude upset the Prince Gang.

After all, no one had shown such disrespect to them in the past.

Maintaining a gentlemanly front, Lucas said, “Sir, I did not ask you. I was asking the two ladies.”

“I know, but they’re both my women. I’ve rejected you on their behalf. Go quickly! They don’t want to know you.”

His remarks were so shocking to the Prince Gang that they almost burst into laughter.

So there's someone who isn't fear of death!

How dare he disrespects Lucas?

Hearing that, Lucas chuckled. "Are you saying that both of them are yours?"

"Yeah. What about it?" Replied Levi coldly.

Lucas noticed that Zoey's expression remained calm, while Helena looked shy.

He seems to be telling the truth.

There's something wrong with the three of them.

Interesting...

"Then, I want to buy a drink for your women. How's that?"

A sick, domineering and arrogant smirk appeared on Lucas' face.

He had shown his true self.

Lucas was the type who found it exciting to invite a woman in front of her man.

"They're not free. Hurry up and leave!"

Levi was already running out of patience.

"Haha! Okay. I'll take my leave now. However, I'll be waiting for you at the entrance."

Lucas actually left courteously, and went waiting at the entrance.

“What should we do? It’s obvious that they are here with malicious intents.”

Zoey and Helena panicked.

“Let’s pretend nothing happened.”

With a calm expression, Levi continued eating and drinking his wine.

The Protector Chapter 773

Although Levi could still keep his cool, the ladies were completely flustered.

They could tell that Lucas and the rest were not ordinary person.

From their clothing and aura, apparently they came from a powerful background.

They might get themselves into trouble if they crossed those men.

“Don’t worry. Since I’m here, nothing will happen to you.” Said Levi with a smile.

For some reason, Zoey and Helena felt assured when they heard his words—especially Helena, who gazed at Levi admiringly.

To her, Levi was a mysterious man who was not as listless as how everyone had said.

To her, Levi was exceptionally impressive, and had a good eye and great foresight.

He was definitely a prominent man.

“After the meal, Syllas will send you back. I’ll settle them.” Announced Levi calmly.

“Be careful. Call me if anything happens.”

Zoey was not concerned.

As he was related with the Jones family in South Hampton, she assumed no one would dare to make things difficult for Levi.

She had a mindset: Levi used his identity as the Jones family's grandson to solve problems.

After dinner, Syllas fetched Zoey and Helena away from the back door.

Levi lit up a cigarette and swaggered out of the entrance.

There was a Rolls-Royce parked at the entrance, and a dozen sports cars blocking the road too.

They were disrupting the hotel's business.

However, when the boss learned about their identities, he did not dare to say anything. Not only did he let them park there, but he also even sent some waiters to attend to their needs.

The gang surrounded Levi the moment he stepped out of the hotel.

"You are a courageous soul, huh?" Mocked everyone.

Lucas glanced behind him and asked, "Where are the ladies?"

"They've left." Replied Levi.

"Huh?"

Everyone was stunned. *Why didn't we realize it?*

They left through the back door!

Those men were instantly filled with regret.

A furious look flashed across Lucas's face as he said coldly, "Sir, that's a bit dishonest of you. I said I want to invite your women over for drinks. Why did you ask them to leave beforehand?"

This was how domineering Lucas was.

He was blatantly inviting the ladies for drinks in front of their partner, yet he made it sound like it was the most natural thing to do.

"Do you think that you're really cool?" Levi suddenly asked.

"Huh?"

Everyone was taken aback, especially Lucas.

No one had ever said that to him!

Everyone he interacted with were all very deferential to him, not even daring to breathe loudly.

It was interesting to meet someone as straightforward as Levi.

"How would you like me to say it then? In a cruder manner? Alright. Bast*rd, lend me your women. I want to sleep with them tonight." Declared Lucas.

"Hahaha!"

The Prince Gang erupted into laughter as they looked at Levi mockingly.

The Protector Chapter 774

However, they did not notice a cold glint that flashed across Levi's eyes.

He could tolerate it if they joked about him.

However, Zoey was out of bounds!

Death was certain if they touched his raw nerve—and Zoey was his bottom-line.

“So you like to be crude and straightforward, huh?”

“Yeah dude. Lucas wants to sleep with your women! Be obedient and send them to his bed!”

Everyone guffawed.

Lucas also smiled and said, “That’s what I meant. Looks like I shouldn’t be so gentlemanly in the future. Why are you glaring at me? Do you want to hit me? Come and punch me, then.” Provoked the Quinn’s heir with a smirk.

He even brought his face closer to Levi.

Lucas had done this multiple times, yet no one ever dared to hit him.

Usually, the person would end up on his knees, begging for mercy and then send his wife to him.

Boom!

Suddenly, he felt a powerful gust of wind as a black shadow filled his vision.

His expression changed drastically.

With a crisp and loud sound, Levi slapped Lucas' cheek harshly, sending him flying almost ten meters away.

He landed on a sports car heavily, with a couple of teeth knocked out of his mouth.

The gang was utterly stunned as they looked at Levi in disbelief.

He actually hits Lucas?

Lucas lay on top of the sports car with a numb expression as shock filled his eyes.

That was certainly not something he had expected.

Then, a wave of excruciating pain hit him.

For a whole minute, everyone stood frozen to the spot before returning to their senses.

“You actually hit him! Do you know who he is?”

“He is the eldest son of the Quinn family, one of the top three royal families of South Hampton! He's also one of the three ringleaders of the Prince Gang.”

“Do you know how stupid you were? You have just caused your family's demise.”

The Prince Gang started rebuking him.

In the southern region of Erudia, let alone in South Hampton, no one would dare to slap Lucas.

Yet, someone from the insignificant South City did so.

This was something unbelievable to the rest, as if they had just witnessed an ant fighting against an elephant.

They could hardly comprehend what had happened!

“You deserve that.”

Eyeing Lucas, Levi continued, “Consider yourself lucky. If it’s in the past, you’d be long dead.”

His tone was extremely cocky and arrogant, but he was not lying.

In the past, after his departure from the battlefields, Lucas would die the moment he said something like that.

With that, Levi prepared to leave.

“Stop that man!” Bellowed Lucas.

The Protector Chapter 775

The Prince Gang did it accordingly.

“How dare you leave after hitting Lucas? Do you think that we’re just props? Are you looking down on the Prince Gang?”

Many of the members were very cocky people. Now that they met Levi, who was way more arrogant than them, they could not stand it anymore.

Levi laughed. “Why? Do you want me to beat him till he dies?”

“You... You... You’re such a cocky bast*rd!”

The Prince Gang was astounded.

They had never seen such an impudent man like him.

He was up against the Prince Gang, the most feared organization in the entire southern region.

“You’re the first person who dares to act so haughtily in front of us!” Yelled everyone furiously.

“So are you forcing me to stay just to see how arrogant I am?” Asked Levi with a smirk.

“Do you want to die?!”

“How dare you hit Lucas?!”

“Today, I’ll definitely break your limbs, knock your teeth off, rip all your hair out, tear your nails, and stab your kneecaps. I’ll make you apologize to Lucas on your knees!”

Everyone in the Prince Gang threatened Levi menacingly.

They had many ruthless methods up their sleeves.

To them, Levi was nothing but a punchbag.

They had already thought of how to torment him.

“Cripple him right away. I don’t want to see him standing anymore!”

The searing pain from his hand and mouth caused Lucas to bellow in rage.

The Prince Gang attacked instantly.

Bang!

Bang!

Bang!

However, they were up against the unparalleled God of War, who was so powerful that even other nations dared not cross him.

Although some of the members of the Prince Gang were skilled in combat, they were simply too weak in Levi’s eyes, as weak as mere defenseless women.

Levi took them out punch by punch.

Soon, all of them were sprawled on the floor as they miserably howled in regret.

Initially, they thought no one would dare to offend them in South City.

Hence, they did not even bring their bodyguards along.

This was what led to their pathetic defeat.

“How dare you beat us? You’ll die!”

“You’ll regret it!”

Threatening Levi, the Prince Gang still refused to relent as they lay on the ground.

Slam!

Levi stepped onto them.

“Ugh!!!”

Screams of agony escaped their mouths.

Stepping on the bodies, Levi strode over slowly amidst their miserable howls.

Not only did it hurt, but their pride had also been trampled under Levi’s feet.

Despite being the mighty Prince Gang, they were now being stepped on.

What an utter disgrace!

Levi reached Lucas at last.

The latter panicked. “What... What do you want?”

The Protector Chapter 776

When Lucas saw Levi's harmless smile, he felt that he was confronted by the grim reaper.

Levi looked like the epitome of terror.

His gaze was so sharp that Lucas felt like Levi was looking right into the depths of his soul, even the terror that was filling him right now.

What's going on?

Lucas' body quivered uncontrollably.

He had never feared anyone in his life, despite having met many prominent people.

However, for an unknown reason, he felt an inexplicable sense of fear facing Levi.

"Didn't you stop me from leaving?" Asked Levi.

"I... I... I didn't..." Stuttered Lucas, unable to complete his sentence.

"Looks like I can only leave after you're dead!"

A ruthless glint flashed across Levi's eyes.

Thud!

Lucas was about to say something when Levi aimed a punch on his face, causing blood to spurt out from him.

Thud!

Thud!

Thud!

After a few consecutive punches, Lucas was covered in blood.

“You can’t mess around with anyone’s woman!”

As Levi wiped his hands and walked away, Lucas toppled straight onto the ground with a loud thud.

Having lost his consciousness, blood dribbled down his mouth.

The Prince Gang regretted now. *Why did we stop him from leaving?!*

“Quick! Go to the hospital! We have to save Lucas.”

The group then sped off to the hospital.

In the office building, Zoey heaved a sigh of relief when she saw Levi return unscathed.

However, she did not ask whether the matter was resolved.

To her, she believed that it would definitely be settled due to Levi’s association with the Jones family.

“Sylas, pick two elites from the security team to protect Helena. There’s been a lot of people harassing her recently.” Instructed Levi as he glanced at Helena.

“Understood!” Sylas nodded.

The new security team was made up of discharged soldiers. All of them were top-notch fighters, armed with great combat skills.

Iris wanted Helena to be protected too.

Recently, Morris Group’s electronic products were released in the market. With Helena as their spokesperson, the sales had been amazingly good.

Zoey invested the Black family’s fifty billion in the electronic industry. This meant the Morris Group had helped the Black family reap the most profits...

“Levi, follow me. I have something to tell you.”

Zoey summoned Levi to her office.

“Levi, did you think of a way to earn that one billion?”

Zoey wanted to ask about Levi’s progress.

However, he did not seem to be taking it seriously.

“One billion... Hmm... Are they looking down on me? How about we add the amount to one hundred billion?” Suggested Levi with a chuckle.

“Stop joking. Do you care about me at all?”

The Protector Chapter 777

Levi was taken aback by Zoey's sudden question.

"Huh?"

"By asking you to earn one billion in a short amount of time, Grandpa and Grandma wants you to prove that you're worthy of me. Then, they will have no reason to separate us.

No matter what, it's an unchangeable fact that they're my relatives. The only thing we can do is to satisfy them to the best of our abilities, so that it is a win-win situation.

But I think you aren't even taking it seriously. Other than sleeping and eating, you don't do anything else." Stated Zoey furiously.

Levi smiled. "It's easy to settle this. Just wait and see."

Indeed, it was a piece of cake to him.

He could produce one billion whenever he wanted to.

However, Zoey assumed that Levi's method of resolving the issue was to use his identity as the Jones family's grandson.

It was extremely easy to earn one billion by using the Jones family's name.

This could convince the Black family, but Zoey was not pleased.

What she cared about was Levi's attitude, instead of him resolving everything using that identity.

She hoped Levi could work hard like six years ago and build his success with his own effort.

"So be it." Said Zoey with a sigh.

As she watched the man leave, she whispered, "I wish I'm marrying to the unparalleled, wealthy and formidable Levi."

However, judging from the current situation, Zoey knew it was only her wishful thinking.

Levi was no longer as driven as before.

Although it was impossible for him to meet her expectations, she was still hopeful.

Naturally, Levi did not understand what she meant.

He simply thought that she was being ridiculous.

At that moment, the Prince Gang was in a private hospital, each of them covered with bruises.

They heaved a sigh of relief when the doctor declared that Lucas was fine.

Only his nose bridge and brow bone were broken.

If something bad happened to Lucas, the entire South City would be in an uproar.

After all, he belonged to the top three families of South Hampton, whose power was four times greater than the Jones.

The mighty Quinn family would definitely be infuriated.

By then, who could afford to bear the consequences?

At that moment, they suddenly heard a commotion in the hospital ward.

Entering the room, they saw Lucas stabbing a doctor over and over again.

The doctor's white coat was completely stained with blood!

Lucas was trying to vent his anger by stabbing everyone within his sight.

He was really an inhumane murderer!

"Don't be too agitated, Lucas. The doctor saved you!"

Everyone held him back, who yelled furiously, "I've been so utterly humiliated. So what if he cures me? I'll definitely skin that bast*rd alive!"

The Protector Chapter 778

“We understand your rage, Lucas. That bast*rd humiliated us too!”

“He has destroyed the South Hampton Prince Gang’s reputation. Only by skinning him alive can we vent our hatred!”

Everyone else was equally furious.

“Lucas, you should focus on recovering first. Once you get better, we’ll go teach him a lesson. Anyway, there’s nowhere for him to escape to.” Persuaded the rest.

“To hell with recovering! If I don’t kill that man, I can never tolerate this!”

Lucas was harsh even on himself. Ripping the needles from the infusion bottles away from his hand, he got off the bed.

The nurses and doctors were taken aback.

“I’ll seek treatment after I kill that man!”

Lucas left just like that.

However, his entire face was swollen, with only his eyes and mouth discernible.

What happened today was beyond everyone’s wildest imagination.

No one would expect the Prince Gang to end up in such a miserable state.

Not only was the rest beaten up, but even Lucas was also badly hurt...

If the others in South Hampton knew about this, there would be an uproar.

“Whatever happened today must not spread to South Hampton!” Instructed Lucas.

The men placed great importance on their reputation.

If anyone knew about this, they would be a joke forever.

“But we’ll definitely need more men if we want to kill that bast*rd.”

Someone asked, “Should I summon more men secretly?”

“No. Someone will notice if a skilled fighter in South Hampton is summoned. If my Grandpa asks about it, I won’t be able to give him a proper explanation.”

Lucas shook his head.

“What should we do?” Asked the rest.

“The Four Kings of the Southern Union have control over this area. I’ll request Yadriel to lend me some skilled fighters.” Answered Lucas.

When they went to Yadriel’s villa, the man and the rest were shocked.

“How did you end up this way?”

Yadriel was taken aback.

To be honest, even the Southern Union needed to be wary of the Prince Gang.

Even Grover had warned the members to not cross the gang.

If a conflict started, the gang would definitely not give up so easily.

In fact, they would be up against the combined forces of all the wealthy families in South Hampton.

Hence, he was utterly shocked at the miserable state the gang was in.

“Yadriel, I’ll cut straight to the point. Lend me a hundred men. Don’t ask me why. Also, I hope this stays between us.” Said Lucas.

Yadriel had no choice but to agree to Lucas’ request.

He immediately selected a hundred skilled fighters for the latter.

With these experts, the Prince Gang was all ready to confront Levi.

The Protector Chapter 779

In the villa, Yadriel was still wondering who beat Lucas up.

That person must be a gutsy person.

This is equivalent to him opposing the entire Prince Gang!

“Sir, this is so strange! Who in South City would dare to beat Lucas?”

“Yeah! I can’t think of anyone. Even in South Hampton, no one would dare to beat him, right?”

His subordinates were equally puzzled, unable to think of a logical explanation.

Yadriel stroked his chin. “It’s probably a private matter. He doesn’t even dare to tell me.”

“No, there’s one person in South City who would dare to do so...” Reminded someone suddenly.

Everyone exchanged knowing glances. Immediately, Yadriel realized who he was talking about.

Previously, the Southern Union suffered a great loss in the same manner!

He was absolutely certain that the person in mind was the one who offended Lucas.

There was no one else in South City who would dare to beat him up.

“Quick, catch up with him! This is bad! Let’s hope it’s still not too late!”

Yadriel chased after them with a few of his men.

If Lucas offended that person, the entire South Hampton Prince Gang would be destroyed.

Even their families would be ruined.

It was critical to stop them in time!

However, Lucas and the rest were simply too fast, having disappeared from Yadriel’s sight soon.

“Lucas, we’ve found out that the guy is called Levi Garrison. He’s staying in Morris Group’s apartment building with Zoey.”

The insight came very quickly.

“Okay. Lead us there!”

A cold, ruthless glint flashed across Lucas’ eyes.

“I will massacre everyone there, before breaking Levi’s limbs and crippling him. Just torture him in any method possible. I want him to die in agony!”

Still not satisfied, Lucas continued furiously, “I’ll even sleep with both of his women right in front of his eyes.”

Then, looking at the rest, he announced, “After I have a go with the ladies, you guys can sleep with them one by one, right in front of him. I want to torture him to death!”

Everyone gasped in shock.

Indeed, Lucas is a pervert.

He is more terrifying than we have expected!

Not only does he plan on tormenting Levi emotionally and physically, but he also wants to torture him to death.

This is absolutely frightening!

We must never offend him.

Everyone followed the man fearfully and soon arrived at the apartment building owned by the Morris group.

They were stopped by the security guards at the entrance.

“Who are you? What are you doing here?”

The security guards were Syllas’ battle mates. They stared at Lucas and the rest warily.

At that same time, they reported what was going on to the control room through the walkie-talkie.

“What are we doing here? We’re here to kill!”

With a ruthless glare, Lucas gave a command.

The hundred skilled fighters drew their knives and charged forward.

The Protector Chapter 780

“What are you doing?”

At that moment, Levi and a few men arrived.

Zoey and Helena had also rushed over after hearing the news.

Looking at the hundred-armed men, they quivered in fear.

“Stop!”

With a wave of his hand, Lucas gestured for everyone to stop.

“Bast*rd, you’ll pay a huge price for what you’ve done!” Yelled Lucas.

It was a meeting between enemies!

When the South Hampton Prince Gang saw Levi, it was like they had gone mad.

They wished for nothing more than to devour Levi’s meat and drink his blood.

No one, other than him, had humiliated them so badly.

Lucas was particularly enraged. The moment he saw Levi, he was shooting daggers at the latter with his eyes.

In his mind, he imagined Levi ripped apart into a dozen pieces.

The ladies recognized them too.

Zoey's mind became completely blank.

She thought Levi had resolved the matter, but she did not expect his solution was to beat them up.

Back at the Black family's house, she had already realized how skilled Levi was at fighting.

"You actually beat them up?" Asked Zoey in disbelief.

"They asked for it." Replied Levi calmly.

"But... But you've gotten yourself in so much trouble! Look at how many people there are!"

Zoey was getting a little angry at Levi's attitude.

On the other hand, Helena started to panic.

"This is all because of me. I'll just accompany them for a drink. Nothing will happen." Said Helena apologetically.

She thought this entire mess was created because the men wanted to flirt with her.

Yet, she did not know that Lucas had already set his eyes on her and Zoey way back at South Hampton.

"It's fine. As long as I'm here, I won't let that happen!"

Zoey was a good leader who cared for her subordinates.

Hence, she would never permit something like that to happen.

Levi laughed. "Leave it to me. It's just a piece of cake!"

"You?"

Zoey glanced at Levi in surprise. The first thought that surfaced in her mind was that Levi was going to use his identity as the Jones family's grandson again.

"You're Levi Garrison, right? How dare you hit us? We are from the South Hampton Prince Gang!"

"The person you hit is Lucas! Let me tell you this. You've just gotten yourself into deep trouble!"

The Prince Gang started to hurl threats at them.

When Zoey heard what they were saying, fear gripped her heart.

They are from South Hampton.

We certainly cannot afford to offend them.

"So? Are you not satisfied with your beating in the evening? Do you still want to get beaten up?" Asked Levi as he smirked coldly at Lucas and the rest.

Looking at how arrogantly Levi was acting, Lucas and the rest could not tolerate it any longer.

"Cut him up into pieces!"

There was only one thought dominating Lucas' mind: Kill Levi Garrison.

Yet, an unexpected scene occurred.

The Protector Chapter 781

Clang!

All the members of the Southern Union kneeled on the ground abruptly and shouted uniformly, "Good evening, Mr. Garrison!"

Their roaring voices were deafening to the ear, vibrated the chest of everyone at the scene.

Helena, Zoey, Lucas and the rest of the people were left in shock.

...

Everyone's jaws dropped as they stared at Levi in surprise.

They were in utter disbelief. Everyone thought their eyes were playing tricks on them.

What's going on? Who is he that these people have to kneel before him? Can someone please explain what's actually happening now?

They couldn't get their head around the scene in front of their eyes.

Lucas and his men were flabbergasted the most among all.

What the hell is this?!

The members of the Southern Union weren't out of their mind. They were sane and sober.

Grover was a smart man. He had secretly shown the picture of Levi to all the members of the Southern Union and warned them about his capability. If they encountered him, the first thing to do was to kneel and avoid any conflict at all costs. On top of that, they couldn't reveal his identity to anyone.

For that reason, all of them recognized Levi at the first glance, and they were horrified to know that their target was the latter. So, they kneeled right away in order to save their own lives.

“Hey, why are you lots kneeling? He is the man I want to kill! Get on your feet!” Lucas roared anxiously.

But no one paid him any heed, and they remained in the same posture.

It was likely that they'll not move a muscle if Levi didn't give them further instructions.

“What are you doing?” Lucas yelled as his edginess grew.

His expression gradually became tense due to the increasing agitation. As a result, the wound on his face almost tore open, and he gritted his teeth in pain.

Still, they remained on the ground and didn't budge an inch.

An epiphany occurred when Zoey saw the happening, and she assumed that those people were on their knees because Levi was one of the Joneses.

Otherwise, it would be unthinkable that they'd do such a thing.

The only reason behind their bizarre action would be his identity as a royalty.

Moreover, the way they addressed him furthered reinforced her assumption.

So he had been using the influence of his family to settle issues lately. It seems like he's doing the same again, but at least the problem is solved.

“What are you waiting for?” Levi queried in a cold tone.

“We're sorry about this, Mr. Garrison!” They apologized in unison.

Right after that, they rose to their feet and disappeared into the shadows.

Leaving Lucas and the bunch behind, who were calling out for them.

That left the gang in an awkward situation. The fighters they hired bailed on them. *We're just a group of defeated foes. There's no way we can exact revenge on Levi anymore. We should retreat now.*

“Hold on. Did I give you permission to leave?” Levi stopped them.

The Protector Chapter 782

His voice immediately brought them to a standstill as they recalled the pain and horror of being beaten up by Levi in the evening.

Then, they began to tremble.

We'll lose all our faces if we're beaten to a pulp again. In the case, death would be a salvation.

“You’re coming and going as you like in my territory! Am I invisible to you?” Levi snapped in an icy tone, sending chills down everyone’s spine.

The crowd gasped in shock.

Whoever upsets him is running out of luck!

“Let’s forget about it, Levi. You’ve already beaten them up, and the problem is solved anyway. To err is human, to forgive is divine.”

Zoey didn’t want things to get out of control, so she took the initiative to intervene.

“Alright then. Consider yourself lucky today. Get lost!” Levi bellowed.

The Prince Gang ran for their lives immediately after they were released.

“Okay. Let’s all go back now. Do not say a word about what happened tonight.” Zoey ordered.

Thereafter, Levi thought she would inquire about the reason those people got on their knees.

However, she didn't do so. It was like she already had an answer, which was rather puzzling to him.

Zoey has been acting weird lately. She's not even curious about all the unusual things I've done recently. It's like she is used to it.

But little did he know that Zoey had been assuming him to utilize his identity as a member of the Jones family to settle things.

Meanwhile, Yadriel, who came rushing, bumped into the hundred fighters who were retreating.

"Mr. Garrison had us released." The person leading the group noted.

Yadriel clapped his hands as his suspicion had proven to be right.

I knew it! It's really Mr. Garrison!

"This is bad! They're so screwed!"

Following that, the man picked up his pace at once. Nevertheless, he stumbled upon Lucas' group shortly after he dashed with all his might.

"Hmm? Did he not give you a hard time?" Yadriel gazed at them in bafflement.

Judging from Mr. Garrison's personality, it's unlikely he'll let them go. What happened?

"Levi didn't want to release us at first. He only did it after his woman talked him into it." One of them explained.

At this, Yadriel heaved a sigh of relief. “Thank goodness... Oh yeah. I’ve made some arrangements to escort you out of this city. You should head back to South Hampton at once. Staying here will spell doom for all of you.” He urged.

These people can’t stay here! They’ll most likely push Mr. Garrison’s button again, and they’ll be dead meat for sure! I have to send them away now. Anyhow, I’m acquainted with the Quinn family; seeing one of theirs playing with fire certainly doesn’t sit well with me!

“Stop right there!” Lucas beckoned at him.

Once he came to a halt, Lucas stared into his eyes and asked, “What in the world is going on? Why did your people kneel and call him Mr. Garrison the moment they saw that guy?”

“They seemed to be afraid of the one called Levi.”

“Who is he that even the Southern Union members are terrified at the sight of him?” The Prince Gang wondered.

“Yeah, who on earth is he?”

The Protector Chapter 783

This question put Yadriel in a difficult spot.

Should I tell them? What if the higher-ups put the blame on me? I'll be in deep trouble then!

Just as he was contemplating, a voice could be heard saying, "You're not worthy to know who I am!"

Soon after the voice, a figure slowly emerged.

Yadriel's eyes almost popped out from their sockets after he got a good look at that person.

Did he tail them here? I knew he wasn't planning to let the Prince Gang go! At the end of the day, this is who Mr. Garrison truly is!

Right before he was about to kneel, Levi gestured him to stand aside.

Lucas and the rest on the other hand, were thrown into a panic state after seeing him.

What is he doing here? Didn't he let us go?

"Yadriel, I want you to get rid of him for me today! Whatever the cost!" Lucas bawled, his voice implying he wanted Levi killed.

"I'll pay you ten billion!" Lucas named a hefty sum of money after seeing that he remained unfazed.

Considering the amount he was willing to pay, one could roughly gauge the level of his madness and the intensity of his loathe for Levi.

Everyone drew a sharp breath after hearing his words.

He's insane! Ten billion for Levi's head! What an amount to squander!

To his surprise, Yadriel remained uninterested and moved to the sidelines.

"Handle your own mess! I won't interfere!" Yadriel replied indifferently.

Ten billion surely is alluring. But if I take the job, I'll be dead before I even get to spend a single cent.

The turn of events had caught Lucas off guard.

What do I do now? Our men are all in South Hampton. We're basically sitting ducks here.

"D-didn't you give your word to let us go?" Lucas asked with a trembling voice.

The egoistic Prince Gang was docile as a lamb in the face of Levi. They began to fear for their lives and dreaded the individual called Levi Garrison.

"It was my woman who promised to let you go, not me!"

Everyone was rendered speechless by the words of Levi while his lips curled up into a sneer.

"W-What do you want?" Everyone was shuddering.

After all, they had a phobia after being beaten up by him.

Even a madman like Lucas was frightened by his absurdity.

I need to be more ruthless to go against someone like him!

“I dare you to let me go back!” Lucas challenged in a cold tone.

Once I'm back to South Hampton, I swear I'll amass a large group of men enough to wipe out the entire South City! It doesn't matter if I lose my face or honor; I will cut you into pieces! Just you wait!

“What do you say? I see that you're also a ruthless man like myself! Let's arrange a showdown! Dispatch every man you have!” He continued after seeing a ray of hope.

“Yeah! Do you have the balls? If you're a man, then let us go! We'll have a face-off with real swords!” The others seized the opportunity to provoke Levi.

Having said that, Yadriel who was on the sidelines was dumbstruck.

The Prince Gang wants to fight with Levi! Will he accept it?

The Protector Chapter 784

Needless to say, Levi understood the intention of these people. It was so that they could gather enough forces to pay back for what he did.

“You stay back. The rest of you, scram!” Levi pointed at Lucas while commanding.

“Huh? Why are you detaining me?” Lucas was baffled.

Levi nodded, “I don’t take innocent lives anymore, so I’m not gonna kill you. But it doesn’t mean that you’ll escape being punished. You must kneel for three whole days to repent for your ill behaviors. Only after you’ve done that will I release you.”

With a wave of his hand, Azure Dragon, who was on standby, instantly restrained Lucas.

The rest of his friends could only stare helplessly as the scene unfolded.

“You must come to my rescue! Send people to save me!” Lucas cried out at the top of his lungs.

Kneel for three whole days? That’s not happening! Do you think that I, one of the three ringleaders of the Prince Gang, will bow my knees before anyone? How very insulting! But I can only place my hope on the reinforcements now!

It went without saying that the news of Lucas being detained must not reach the ear of Zoey.

For this reason, he was transferred to Guardian Mansion.

By this time, the walls and doors in the compound had been fixed.

“Kneel!” A commanding voice could be heard.

However, Lucas wouldn't give in to the order.

Thud!

Azure Dragon kicked the back of his knees, and he immediately fell onto the ground.

Shortly, his hands and feet were bounded.

At the same time, there were many large dogs keeping watch over him.

The pain and humiliation had almost caused even a man like Lucas to weep.

He became increasingly infuriated when the thought of having to go through this odious experience for another three days crossed his mind.

Yet, things surely didn't go well for him as a piece of rag was stuffed in his mouth.

This was the most tormenting moment of his life.

Even if I managed to survive this ordeal, I'd be the laughingstock of all.

Levi had none but one single rule: as long as his prisoner didn't die from starvation, anything would be fine.

Therefore, his subordinates paid little attention to the one who was on his knees.

With the situation getting out of hand, the escaped members of the Prince Gang returned to South Hampton as quickly as they could.

Naturally, none of them dared to inform their own families after getting themselves into such a big trouble, let alone the Quinn family.

Thus, they hurriedly reached out to the remaining two ringleaders of the Prince Gang early the next morning.

One of them was the leader of the Prince Gang, Jaron Goel, who was awarded the epithet “Prince”.

He was the most outstanding man among the younger generations in South Hampton and happened to be the heir to the biggest royal family in the city – the Goel family.

Be it strength, capabilities, background, or the other aspects, he excelled in all of them.

Not to mention his unchallenged mastery in the Ancient Arts of Qi.

Rumor had it that he could go toe to toe with Grover.

Surely, no one dared to challenge his position as the leader of the Prince Gang.

Thus, all the young heirs of the prominent families in South Hampton would regard him as the “Prince”.

At the present moment, Jaron was wearing a bathrobe while gazing at the men in front of him.

There was a worried expression on his handsome face as he declared, “Since this matter is pertaining to the Prince Gang, I shall deal with it personally!”

The Protector Chapter 785

“Give the order to everyone! Gather all our forces and we shall head to South City at once!” Jaron commanded.

Once the instruction was given, the other ringleader, who was regarded as an equal to Lucas, Jackson hastened to gather his men right away.

With that, all the Prince Gang’s top fighters were assembled and left for South City together.

It was considered the biggest incident that had ever happened to the Prince Gang over the past decade.

Not only did one of their ringleaders take a beating, but he was also detained.

It was beyond an insult to them.

To them, preserving their honor was more important than their own lives.

If they lost it, they would use every means to get it back.

The Prince Gang was utterly enraged this time that even their notorious Prince had come in person.

Yadriel was stunned when he heard this.

“Even the Prince himself is coming?” He was clearly surprised by the fact.

“It seems like Jaron has brought all his top fighters with him this time. He must be really pissed.”

“Jaron is an arrogant person. He answers to no one other than that man. This time however, he’s gonna get hurt as his target is you-know-who.” Yadriel sighed.

“Sir, should we give them a heads up?” One of his subordinates queried.

“Do you have a death wish? The purpose of detaining Lucas is so that he could get rid of the Prince Gang once and for all. Why are you trying to get us involved in their battle?” Yadriel glared at his man.

Lucas was totally exhausted after kneeling all night, and for that reason, his body quivered uncontrollably.

If it wasn’t for the binding ropes, he would’ve fallen to the ground.

He had fainted around seven or eight times throughout the entire night.

Lucas was someone with great stamina from his routine martial art practice. If even he couldn’t stand it, it proved just how unbearably torturing it’d be like for an average joe.

Any normal person would’ve met their demise after kneeling for such a long period with untreated injuries and inflammation.

Even Lucas himself knew that he could only hold on for another full day at most.

He could be in grave danger if this were to go on.

“Why are they not here yet?” Lucas was on the verge of total breakdown.

He cried so much last night that even his tears had dried off.

Being treated like a house dog was the part that infuriated him the most.

The food he was given looked exactly like kibble.

Yet, in order to gain energy, he had no choice but to eat them.

This was definitely the darkest and most humiliating moment in his entire life!

His honor and dignity had been utterly trampled by Levi, so he could never get over it unless Levi was killed by his own hands.

Vroom...

Just as he was about to fall into despair, the sound of car engines could be heard from afar.

Lucas forced his drooping eyes to open and peered toward the sound. His eyes gleamed the moment he identified its source.

Y'all are finally here!

Joyful tears spilled out from his eyes. Had it not been for the rag in his mouth, he would like to let out a few shouts.

A while later, dozens of cars came to a stop in front of the Guardian Mansion, and hundreds of men got out of their vehicles.

Among them stood their leaders, Jaron and Jackson.

The Protector Chapter 786

The second Lucas saw the Prince, he knew this issue was as good as resolved.

He was not afraid of Levi's connection with the Southern Union anymore because Jaron was greater than them.

Jaron wouldn't compromise especially when it came to dealing with the issues of the Prince Gang.

Hahahaha... Lucas laughed inwardly.

You screwed up big time, Levi! You're finished!

Thereafter, he was scheming on how to torment Levi, Zoey and Helena.

His mind was filled with scenes of Levi being chopped into pieces and his remains boiled in a pot.

Thud! Thud! Thud! Thud!

In no time, units of bodyguards marched toward the Guardian Mansion and got into their formation.

Everyone was equipped with weapons.

Having said that, some of them were bare-handed, yet they were undoubtedly elite fighters judging by the air around them.

After the Prince made his appearance, he was followed by two rows of men.

Each of them was carrying an ancient dagger.

These men were the Prince's personal bodyguards. All of them were highly-skilled fighters.

Together they could take down the Four Kings of Southern Union.

It just showed how powerful these people were.

Including the bodyguards of the other members, there were a total of two hundred top fighters at the scene.

The Prince Gang's members were burning in anger after seeing Lucas's miserable appearance.

This is public shaming! Our honors have been trampled! This is totally unbearable!

In a heartbeat, someone came to the front of the compound but was stopped by Jaron before he could cause a ruckus.

In a split second, Jaron raised his gun and pulled the trigger.

Bang!

The gunshot caused a spark from the muzzle.

Whoosh!

In an instant, one of military dogs tasked to watch over Lucas were headshot.

The noise caught the attention of the people inside.

In the blink of an eye, Levi, Azure Dragon, and the others dashed out to examine the situation.

“What happened?”

Everyone became furious the instant they saw their military-trained dog lying in a pool of blood.

This dog has been with us for a long time... This is too much!

A sharp glint flashed across Levi’s eyes as he put on a calm expression.

It was as clear as daylight that he was angry!

For these dogs were no different than any human to him.

To kill them in front of him was equivalent to ask for death.

The sound of the gun had alarmed the surrounding people, and they gathered around after hearing that.

Over a hundred people showed up in a blink of an eye, and they were glaring at the Prince Gang angrily.

“Identify yourself!” Azure Dragon fumed.

“Jaron of the Goel family in South Hampton. My friends usually call me ‘Prince’.” The leader remained dignified.

Scanning the crowd at the scene with his sharp gaze, he said in a cold tone, “I was entrusted by the patriarch of the Quinn family to pick Lucas Quinn home.”

“Yes. We’re here to pick Lucas home!” The Prince Gang members shouted.

Simultaneously, a unit of bodyguards formed a line in front, got on their knees and apologized, "We're sorry for coming late. Please forgive us, sir!"

At this, Jackson narrowed his eyes and chided, "You're in deep trouble now! Release our friend this instance, or else you're gonna get it!"

The Protector Chapter 787

Jaron exhorted coldly, "You'd better let my man go now. I'm running out of patience."

Seeing that the other side didn't respond, he added, "I'll count to three."

Right then, he started the countdown.

"Three!"

"Two!"

"One!"

The Prince Gang became enraged at the fact that Levi and his men were unmoved even after Jaron finished counting.

The next moment, Jaron signaled to his men and ordered ferociously, "Charge! Bring Lucas out!"

In the nick of time, Lucas spat the rag out of his mouth and cried out, "Prince, halt the charge!"

"Hmm?" Everyone was frozen in place while staring at Lucas in bewilderment.

After a light-bulb moment came to him, Jaron instructed, "Stop!"

Following closely, he glanced at Levi's group and continued, "I've changed my mind. I'll not charge in. Instead, I want you to bring him out yourself."

Lucas nodded in acknowledgement. *He gets me.*

Lucas yelled at Levi's group, "I'll make you regret for messing with me!"

His intention was simple—he stopped Jaron from rescuing him so that he could get Levi to bring him out willingly.

The Prince Gang had put together such a grand spectacle just to rescue him.

Even Levi and his subordinates must be shivering in fear by now. At least, that was what he assumed.

Out of terror, Levi will bring me out politely. Not only will I feel satisfied, but we'll also regain our lost honor.

"I want the six of you to bring Lucas out with your knees on the ground! The time limit is by tomorrow morning. Otherwise, I'll purge this place! It'll be a bloodbath. You're acquainted with these onlookers, right? I'll wipe out everyone in this place, including you!"

After Jaron had set the deadline, Lucas let out a laugh and said, "Well, I for one hope that you won't release me. With that, I'll get to see everyone in this area killed."

"Hey, buddy! We will wait at the entrance of the street! Hang in there!"

Finished speaking, Jaron led his men out of the compound and waited at where he said.

"Don't you worry, Prince! I can hold on much longer! But I'm afraid that they might bring me out! It'd be boring that way! I wanna see all of them die!" Lucas cackled hysterically, like a loony.

Next off, Azure Dragon asked, "What should we do next, Sir?"

“Okay. I’ll wait until tomorrow morning and see how he plans to kill the people here!”

Levi was truly exasperated this time as those dogs were his favorites.

“Bury them.” Levi commanded.

Later on, Lucas glanced at Levi arrogantly and sneered, “That’s right, keep it that way! Don’t bring me out and wait until the next daybreak! Mmm! You know my taste very well! I’m fond of killing! I love to see people die!”

The Protector Chapter 788

If he dares to keep me here, Prince will slaughter everyone in this street. I'd love to see that happen; If he brings me out, I'll get to burn the scene of Levi carrying me out on his knees like a dog into my memories. I'm more than happy to see that, and we get to regain our honor as well.

Levi smirked at his words and patted his cheek, "I will never let you go. You should worry about yourself first. See if you could survive tonight."

"Hahaha! Of course I will! This time round, the city streets would surely be bathed in blood!" Lucas proceeded to laugh like a lunatic.

Dozens of cars were blocking the entrance of the street.

The Prince Gang was waiting over there until the appointed time.

"Prince, it seems like they don't plan to bring Lucas out!"

A gleam of epiphany flashed across Jaron's eyes, and he commented, "Looks like we aren't as famous as we thought."

"Well, it'd be unlikely for the people from a rural city like this to hear about us, let alone be afraid of us."

"That's right. They wouldn't even try to detain Lucas if they knew about us."

As everyone was analyzing the situation, the two ringleaders stared at each other and declared, "We shall decimate the citizens of this street tomorrow! There shall be bloodshed in every corner. We won't stop until the entire South City is terrorized at the thought of our name. In the future, they'll wake up in a cold sweat from a nightmare each time they recalled of this incident."

Jaron might seem polite on the outside, but he was a resolute and obstinate person.

He leaned toward solving problems with extreme measures and always resorted to violence.

“Listen! We will station here tonight! Then, we will eradicate everyone in this street tomorrow!” Jaron ordered.

“Yes, Prince!” Everyone responded in unity.

Jackson remarked with a smirk, “I think they might bring Lucas out. Given the duration, they should’ve found out about us by now.”

“You’re right, Jackson.” Everyone agreed.

After a considerable time, Lucas remained on his knees while Levi showed no means to let him go.

Although he was exhausted, and his body was at the edge of collapsing, he had an excited look on his face.

After a long night waiting, there was no sign of Lucas getting out at all.

“These people have decided to oppose us until the end!”

At the crack of dawn, Jaron puffed on a cigarette, then threw the butt on the ground.

“Let’s go!” Jaron gave the instruction.

There were about two hundred fighters following the Prince Gang as they marched toward the Guardian Mansion.

Everyone had a murderous look on their faces.

The tension in the atmosphere was so thick that one could cut it with a knife.

The Protector Chapter 789

Soon, they arrived at the Guardian Mansion.

“Send a few units to keep all the alleys of this area off limits! Kill anyone who tries to escape!”

Jaron’s gaze became cold, and he exuded a murderous aura that sent shivers down everyone’s spine.

Dozens of men immediately guarded the exits of every passageway to stop anyone from passing through.

At this very moment, Lucas was nearly worn out after mustering every single ounce of strength he could find in his body. He was persevering with sheer willpower alone currently.

Nonetheless, he was elated when he saw Jaron charging in with his men.

In the meantime, Levi and the others also emerged from his room.

“Hahahaha...” Lucas burst into laughter right when he saw them.

“Don’t fret, punk! Once you’re dead, I’ll take care of your women! I’ll be sure to torture them with all my might! Hahaha...” Lucas said in a psychopathic tone.

Throughout the entire time being on his knees, the man thought of nothing except the ways to torment Levi and the likes. His twisted mind had already come up with more than a hundred ways to gratify his sadistic pleasure.

“Prince, take out everyone except this one! Leave him to me!” Lucas bawled.

“Alright!”

After saying that, Jaron turned to focus on Levi and proclaimed, “Now, you will pay the painful price for your foolish behaviors! I will kill everyone here!”

“Kill them!”

At Jaron’s gesture, all the fighters began their indiscriminating killing spree on the people in this area.

Apart from the ones who were guarding the alleys, there were still a hundred and fifty men.

As bodyguards of the Prince Gang members, all of them were elite fighters in their own right.

They could hurl threats at the Southern Union with forces like this.

Swoosh!

Twenty fighters sprinted to the frontline promptly.

Screech!

Those men drew the swords from their backs. The sharpness of the weapons was unmatched, and the reflections on their edges were dazzling to the eyes. With that, the top fighters charged toward their targets.

Seeing that, Levi and his men simply chortled.

Unbeknownst to their opponents, the God of War and the Five Great Wars Regiment were invincible and unstoppable on the battlefield. They were the nightmare of those who make enemies of them.

If the rest of the world came to know these ignorant warriors were trying to kill the God of War and his company of five, everyone's jaw would drop to the floor.

The following would be their first response. *Who gave them the courage to do this? Are they out of their mind?*

However, before the fighters could even reach Levi, there was a two-meter muscular man blocking their way.

Clang!

Clang!

Clang!

The fighters tried to strike the man. Yet, as if their swords were slashing on a hard surface, they created a series of resonant metallic sounds.

That almost caused a spark.

I could feel the strike. It definitely reached his skin... but it feels like striking on a steel.

"Kill them!"

They started another wave of attack and struck again.

Crack!

Crack!

Crack!

They were taken aback at the sight of their broken swords.

The Protector Chapter 790

There was a dead silence after that.

Everyone was flabbergasted.

W-what...?

Is he the Iron Man?

His skin is impenetrable!

Even the high quality sword is broken?

How terrifying!

“Ah!”

As the muscular man roared, his tank top was ripped into pieces.

The man had a shredded look, with well-developed muscles covering every inch of his skin, and they were hard as steel.

The Black Tortoise!

He was overly eye-catching due to his bulky physique. Hence, Levi had always reminded him to keep a low profile and avoided sending him on missions.

But he was summoned today as there were people who came for a showdown.

The Black Tortoise was a martial art practitioner. His skills made his body impenetrable, like a layer of steel covering his skin.

Levi found him on the battlefield four years ago. During that time, he was a fearless and undefeatable warrior.

The man had blocked countless gunfire for Levi in the past. With his steel-like body, none of the bullets were able to pierce his skin, let alone some swords.

Bam! Bam! Bam!

Like a bulldozer, the Black Tortoise crushed the fighters of the Prince Gang.

Within a short while, hundreds of fighters were left sprawling on the floor and screaming in agony.

It was a gruesome sight.

The Prince Gang was left in shock.

Hundreds of our top fighters couldn't stand a chance. What is this...? We know the strength of our men, yet they were utterly defeated! Is that guy a human?

Lucas, who was still on his knees in the compound, gazed at the happenings blankly.

After this, the smugness of the Prince Gang disappeared into thin air almost in an instant.

Everyone was petrified beyond belief.

Right then, Jackson squinted his eyes while Jaron furrowed his brows and glared at Levi's group.

Things are getting tricky!

The turn of events had Jaron felt a little stumped.

“Take his head!” The leader of the gang demanded coldly.

Those twenty fighters who had been following him drew their swords and darted forward.

These men were his trump card.

The swords they used weren't ordinary ones; they were ancient dagger with extremely sharp edges.

Screech!

The cold edges of the ancient daggers struck hard on Black Tortoise's body.

Clang!

He moved a few steps backward after many slashes, and white marks began to appear on his body.

If the attacks were to continue, even the likes of the Black Tortoise would be injured.

The ancient dagger is really something else!

The Prince Gang members put on a smile on their faces after witnessing the scene.

Meanwhile, Lucas heaved a sigh of relief.

Prince is as amazing as always! Who would still dare to challenge him?

“Back off, Black Tortoise. These are ancient daggers. You can’t handle their sharpness.” Levi ordered.

After hearing the command, he stepped aside with his body full of white marks.

Jaron peered at Levi and scoffed, “Looks like I’ve underestimated you. However, you still can’t escape your eventual death. Kill him!”

The Protector Chapter 791

The twenty men raised their swords up high, charging toward Levi and his men.

Whoosh!

Suddenly, a powerful gust of wind roared to life and there was a silhouette flickered passed them like a bolt of lightning.

It was White Tiger.

Among the Five Kings of War, Black Tortoise was the best at defense while White Tiger was the best at offence.

Wham! Wham!

White Tiger weaved through the crowd of men, his punches snapping out so quickly they were a blur.

Within moments, he stopped in his tracks.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

All twenty of his opponents crumpled to the ground like puppets that had their strings cut.

A dead silence descended upon the scene.

Jaron's face paled dramatically.

How is he so powerful?

These men were supposed to be the best of the best, the elites of his family's men. They had all been trained since young to be the perfect fighters.

He had once conquered the Southern Union using only these twenty men. No one had been able to stop them back then!

Yet now, they could not even defeat one person.

That was a testament to how powerful White Tiger was.

Seemingly satisfied by their prowess, White Tiger praised, "Not bad! You guys are stronger than those people from the Southern Union!"

Crooking a finger at Jaron, he continued, "Your turn!"

He could tell that Jaron was even more powerful than the twenty men he had just downed.

"Die!" Jaron bellowed as he leaped at White Tiger.

The two men clashed together violently and a ferocious battle broke out.

The destruction they left was terrifying, with the walls of the yard crumbling to pieces and the wooden gates splintered.

Even the ground was cracked badly, with the brick turned to dust in some places.

The Prince Gang was gaping at the scene with wide eyes while Levi and his men were also rather impressed.

Jaron was definitely the strongest opponent White Tiger had ever fought so far.

Erudia really was a country with plenty of hidden talents!

It was likely they would run into more in the future.

Even watching the fierce battle had the blood in their veins boiling with adrenaline and excitement.

Wham!

After exchanging more than a hundred blows, White Tiger sent Jaron flying with a well-placed kick.

Crash!

Slamming to the ground, Jaron coughed up a mouthful of blood. He stared at White Tiger in disbelief.

How can someone who looks around the same age as I be so much more powerful?

His Master once told him that he was the most talented fighter he had ever seen and estimated that there was nobody else like him in the entire Erudia.

The proof of how wrong his Master had been standing right in front of him.

“W-who *are* you people?” Jaron asked in a trembling voice.

The members of the Prince Gang were absolutely stunned at the turn of events.

It was only now did they begin to wonder about Levi and his men’s identities.

At first, they thought Levi was a weakling they could play with as they pleased. Never did they consider there might be more than meets the eyes with him and his men.

Azure Dragon sneered and replied, "You brats are not worthy of knowing our true identities!"

To Levi and the rest, the members of the Prince Gang were no different than children.

Lucas, who was still kneeling in the yard, broke into a cold sweat as he recalled how hundreds of men from the Southern Union got down on their knees before Levi.

We pissed off someone we shouldn't have.

Jaron struggled to his feet, wiping the blood trickling from the corner of his lips before stating, "Gentlemen, how about we brush this aside as a misunderstanding and put it all behind us? We'll apologize to you and be done with it!"

"Who gave you the right to call this a misunderstanding?" Levi answered in a cold tone.

The Protector Chapter 792

Jaron and the other members of the Prince Gang were frozen to the spot at Levi's words.

It was finally sinking in that they were in deep trouble this time.

At the rate things were going, they might just end up dying here in South City.

This was why they had to resolve this matter as peacefully as possible.

Jaron lowered his head slightly in submission, representing the Prince Gang's defeat.

This was the first time since the founding of the Prince Gang that they had actually lost to someone.

Every time before, they were always the ones pushing others around and stepping on their defeated enemies.

Unfortunately, they had run into someone even more difficult than them this time.

Today was a day of utter humiliation for the Prince Gang, the very first time they had suffered such a shame!

Not only were they disgraced as a group, but it was also a major blow to their individual egos as well.

As the head of the Prince Gang, Jaron was not a person unwilling to compromise.

He planned on appeasing Levi now and then return to South Hampton another time to rise up again.

Chuckling bitterly, he uttered, "Sir, we were wrong to have provoked you first. We should not have insulted your woman either. But all things can be worked out peacefully! Having a friend is better than making a new enemy!" However, the other man's reply was like a brutal slap to the face.

Levi scoffed, "Sorry. I'm pretty sure my enemies are numbering in the thousands already. A few more really doesn't make much of a difference."

"Don't you think you're being a little unreasonable? I'm already putting my pride aside here! Besides, each and every one of us come from an influential family in South Hampton. All of us will one day be the heads of our families. Going against us would be going up against all of the prominent families in South Hampton!" Jaron said arrogantly.

His words had the other members of the Prince Gang straightening their backs proudly.

That was right! They were from the most illustrious families in South Hampton! Who dared to offend them?

No matter how powerful Levi and his men were, there was no way they would have the courage to go up against the Prince Gang.

If not out of respect for the members of the gang themselves then at the very least for the various families they came from.

Levi looked amused. "So?"

"So, you have to accord us the right amount of respect! This matter is to be settled pleasantly without any more fuss!" Jaron stated with a smile.

Despite the calm tone, there was a commanding undercurrent to it with no room for argument.

One way or another, the Prince Gang would get the respect they thought they deserved.

Seeing that Levi did not say anything more, Jaron added, "You're a formidable person in your own right. Isn't it better to have more friends, especially if they're from the wealthiest families in South Hampton? You would only benefit from such a relationship!"

At last, Levi responded, "So I'm just supposed to forget that that guy over there insulted my wife and tried to kill me several times? I'm also supposed to disregard the fact that you killed my beloved dog and threatened to massacre a whole block of civilians? Is that what you're saying?"

"That's right! It's all just a huge misunderstanding; no big deal!" Jaron smirked. "Don't you think you're being rather petty? Aren't they just dogs? What does it matter?"

"And if I insist on pursuing this matter?" Levi questioned lowly.

"Then you make enemies out of all the prominent families in South Hampton!"

A wicked gleam appeared in Jaron's eyes.

The Protector Chapter 793

Smack!

Levi's hand darted out and he landed a ringing slap on Jaron's face.

"Then so be it! It might just be a dog to you but to us, it was a living, breathing creature! It was a precious life! It was our friend, our comrade-in-arm!" Levi roared in rage.

He was well and truly mad this time.

One of the dogs had been his constant companion when he was still in the military. Playing with it always served to brighten up his day and helped with the stress of fighting a war.

They had been on the frontlines together and fought plenty of battles.

After they retired from the military, he brought it back here with him.

Now, Jaron killed his precious dog and had the audacity to say it was "just dogs".

"To me, its life is infinitely more valuable than you scum!"

His commanding aura exploded around him, exerting immense pressure on everyone present.

Being so close to him, Jaron swore the surrounding temperature dropped several degrees, making him shivered.

“That guy killed so many people ever since he came to South City! Look at the doctor! He was someone who worked hard to save lives! That man saved that jerk but how did the lunatic repay his kindness? Were all these no big deals to you? What about your intention to slaughter everyone on this street then? Was that a small matter to you too? If we were just some feeble men, we could have been dead by now!”

Levi’s questions slammed into Jaron like bullets, rooting him to the spot.

The rest of the Prince Gang were pale in their fear. None of them dared to breathe too loudly in case that would focus Levi’s ire upon them.

A hard glint entered Jaron’s eyes and he queried, “Does this mean you won’t let us go then? Not even on behalf of the South Hampton families?”

“Did you seriously think I would? All of you, kneel!” Levi ordered.

White Tiger and the others leaped into action.

Within minutes, not a single person was standing before Levi.

“You can speak on your knees!” Levi looked down at the kneeling Jaron as he said this.

How very insulting!

This was probably the most humiliating moment Jaron had ever felt in his life!

He was the leader of the Prince Gang! A prince among princes!

Yet here he was kneeling before someone else.

This is unacceptable!

He bit out through clenched teeth, "You have some guts to do this to us! You're a dead man! Just you wait and see!"

A cruel smirk curled Levi's lips. "Now, it's time to settle the score with each of you!"

He headed for Lucas and stopped before the other man. "Since you were lusting after my wife, castrate him!"

"No!"

Agonized screams ripped from Lucas' throat and with a gush of blood, he became a eunuch.

Next, Levi focused his attention on the members of Prince Gang. "You guys were thinking of killing me, weren't you?"

"N-no! W-we weren't..." They cried out in protest.

"Break their legs! Since their parents won't discipline them properly, I'll do it for them!"

Another chorus of pained screams rang out while the legs of the members of Prince Gang were systematically broken.

It was absolutely terrifying!

When Levi fixed his gaze on Jaron, the latter began to panic. "W-what are you going to do to me!"

The Protector Chapter 794

Levi's eyes flashed and he uttered coldly, "Breaking an arm for killing my dog isn't excessive, is it?"

The threat had Jaron's face flushing red in alarm and he struggled to escape.

He was a prince! If one of his arms were snapped just like that, his reputation would be ruined forever! He would never be able to look anyone in the eyes again!

"No, please. Let's talk about this, okay? I'll give you anything you want!" He babbled anxiously.

At that moment, his disheveled appearance made him look just like any other normal person. Gone were his arrogance and princely demeanor.

"I want my dog!"

Eyes wintry with his rage, Levi glared at him.

Jaron was stumped at his words.

His dog is already dead. How am I supposed to give it back to him?

In the next second, there was the metallic glint of a blade swishing down.

Jaron's right arm flopped to the ground uselessly.

Immediately, blood sprayed forth like a crimson fountain.

“AHHHH!”

His howls of pain mixed with those of Lucas and the rest, echoing in the vast courtyard.

Thus, Levi had every single member of the South Hampton Prince Gang crippled.

The only exceptions were the Jones brothers, who had left earlier and were not involved in this incident.

This was a stain that could never be erased from the reputation of the prestigious Prince Gang.

In the blink of an eye, they had fallen from grace.

Nobody had expected this.

Jaron shrieked, “I can promise you that we’ll be back for revenge! I’ll kill you! I’ll kill all your family and friends! I won’t stop until every single one of them is dead!”

Levi smiled grimly and replied, “None of you were ever properly disciplined when you were young.

All you know how to do is bully the weak and throw your weight around.

No crime is too evil for you. All I’m doing is teaching you a lesson on your parents’ behalf. But I don’t think that’s enough...”

Checking his watch, he continued, “Before the stroke of midnight tonight, your families are to kneel before me and apologize for your actions. Otherwise, there will be consequences!”

“You... That’s just preposterous! How dare you demand that! You really are outrageous!”

“Toss them out of here!” Levi dismissed them with a wave of his hand.

His men were quick to do as he said.

In their current states, the members of the South Hampton Prince Gang really were a sorry sight.

Jaron’s face was dark as he snarled, “Let’s get back to South Hampton! We have to tell our families about what happened. Whoever was involved in what happened just now needs to die! I’m going to strip his skin from his flesh and drink his blood like it’s the most exquisite wine out there! I’ll carve his meat from his very bones! When I’m done with him, he’ll be begging to die!”

“Get revenge! We must be avenged!” The others yelled out in agreement.

There were no words to describe the extent of their hatred toward Levi.

Meanwhile, back in South Hampton, Tyler and Wales were chatting idly.

“Have you heard from Lucas in the past two days? I wonder if he managed to get Zoey and Helena?”

They had not received any news from the others ever since they returned to South Hampton.

The Protector Chapter 795

Wales chuckled and answered, "This is Lucas we're talking about. Getting a woman for himself is child's play for him!"

Tyler thought over that and had to agree.

Lucas was a domineering person who always did as he pleased in South Hampton. Nobody had ever dared to stop him here, so who would have the courage to do so at South City?

"But then why isn't he back yet? And there's been no news from him either! I tried calling him but strangely enough, his phone is turned off!"

Being a little more meticulous than his brother, Tyler got the vague feeling that something was about to happen.

"He's probably having too much fun! I wouldn't mind sleeping with those two beauties either!" Wales commented with a lecherous grin.

Furrowing his brows, Tyler mulled over everything that had happened so far.

He abruptly suggested, "Do you think he ran into some trouble?"

"Why would you say that?"

"I heard Jaron and the rest of the Prince Gang left South Hampton as well but nobody has any idea where they went. I'm starting to suspect something happened to Lucas and they went to aid him." Tyler mused.

His brother patted his shoulder. “Oh, c’mon. You’re overthinking things! Just think about who is by Zoey’s side. It’s just Levi! Do you honestly think he can do anything to Lucas? It’s not like he’ll be able to cripple Lucas of all people.”

“That’s true! Levi is just a useless piece of trash!”

“What are you two talking about?” Michael’s voice suddenly rang out from behind them.

“Grandpa, we’re discussing about Levi.” Wales answered.

Instantly, Michael’s expression darkened. He snapped, “Didn’t I say to not mention Levi Garrison again! He’s not worthy of our attention!”

“Grandpa, it’s like this...”

Tyler swiftly informed Michael about the incident with Lucas.

When he was done, a smile broke out on the older man’s face. “So that’s what happened. Levi is doomed now that Lucas has his eyes set on him! In truth, Levi is a loose end of the Jones family that might come back to bite us in the ass in the future. Unfortunately, we can’t just get rid of him! This is a wonderful opportunity that we must thank Lucas for!”

Wales grinned maniacally at his grandfather’s words. “That’s so true! There’s no way Levi will survive a confrontation with Lucas. We won’t need to worry about him anymore!”

Tyler frowned and expressed his concerns, to which his grandfather responded with, “Tyler, you’re really overthinking things! Be it another person, Lucas might be in danger. But this is just Levi! I don’t think he’s even capable of stirring up any trouble, let alone being a threat to Lucas!”

Michael gave a disdainful snort.

Comparing Lucas and Levi was like comparing a kitten to a tiger.

The Protector Chapter 796

At one of South Hampton's downtown areas.

Despite being a downtown area, this particular neighborhood was empty. Not a single soul could be seen within a ten-kilometer radius of it.

This strange phenomenon could be attributed to the guards patrolling every single road that led to it as this area was listed as private property.

As for who the property belonged to, it was none other than the most prominent family in South Hampton – the royal family of Goel.

The Goel family was said to have existed here for nearly a thousand years, a testament to their prowess.

At that moment, there were several people lying on the ground before the gates of the manor.

Every single one of them either had their arms or legs broken.

One poor soul had obviously been castrated as blood kept spurting from between his legs.

The only thing they had in common was that all of them looked extremely pitiful.

Within moments, the doors to the mansion swung open and a large group of people poured out.

Among them was an elderly man with snowy white hair holding on to a dragon-headed cane.

The old man seemed to be close to a hundred years old. While he was not as agile as he used to be, his eyes still shone bright and sharp.

The elderly was none other than Xabian Goel, the patriarch of the Goel family.

In South Hampton, he was respectfully referred to as Elder Goel by everyone else as he had the final say in most matters.

His words were ultimate, deciding the future of the city or the fate of someone.

Everyone was both in awe of and fearful of him, thus treating him with the utmost respect.

Jaron was his favorite grandson and also the one he was most proud of.

He had spent the last twenty years of his life nurturing and grooming his grandson to be his successor.

Hence, when he saw that his precious grandson was missing an arm, he exploded!

Bang!

He slammed his cane down on the floor and the stick of wood instantly splintered.

“RAAAARGH!”

He tossed his head back as he bellowed his fury to the heavens.

The rest of the Goel family also cried out in outrage at the mistreatment of one of their own.

In South Hampton, they were practically gods for all the respect people gave them. Everyone was always bending over backward to serve or please them. In fact, oftentimes whoever spoke to them did so on their knees.

They were the most powerful and prominent family in South Hampton!

The fear everyone felt toward them was so ingrained that many would suffer from insomnia at the mere mention of their names. Some would even instinctively feel the urge to get down on their knees.

This led to nobody daring to offend Jaron and his friends, who were the other various young heirs to the prominent families.

What nobody had expected was that someone would be so bold as to chop off the Prince's arm.

Despite losing an arm, amusement danced on Jaron's face. "Unfortunately, we met an incredibly powerful opponent this time. I killed his dog and he cut off my arm in revenge! He also crippled every single one of us from the Prince Gang. Not only that, but he's also saying that our parents have to go to him before midnight today and kneel as you apologize!"

"Who did this?!" Xabian roared.

The Protector Chapter 797

Silence followed the patriarch's question.

None of the other family members had ever seen the old man so enraged.

Oh no, Elder Goel is utterly infuriated this time!

"A man from South City called Levi Garrison. He has several expert fighters with him. I wasn't a match for his strongest." Jaron explained.

"By the way, Elder Goel, they seem to be related to the Southern Union. We personally witnessed as the members of the Southern Union knelt before him!" One of the Prince Gang members chimed in.

"So what if they're connected to the Southern Union? As if I'm afraid of them! I don't care who he is; I'll kill him even if he's from Oakland City!"

Xabian's eyes gleamed menacingly as he ordered, "Contact all the other families involved in this incident. Tell them to gather here right away. Tonight, I shall personally lead them to South City! I would like to see who in that damn city dares to accept an apology from me!"

Everybody present was astounded at his words.

They had not thought a day would come where Xabian would go to such a small city as South city himself.

In no time at all, the patriarch of the second royal family of South Hampton, Mario Hunt, arrived. He was incensed when he found out his grandson, Jackson had been crippled.

The patriarch of the Quinn family, Hayden Quinn, was even more furious. His dear grandson had been castrated like some animal!

That was just unacceptable!

A short while later, the various heads of families were all present.

Of the top thirty prestigious families in South Hampton, the only family not here was the Joneses.

“Remember, this matter involves our reputations! We must keep a low profile for now! Whatever else can wait till after we deal with these barbarians at South City!” Xabian ordered firmly.

As expected, everyone immediately agreed with his plan.

With that, the twenty-nine families headed for South City together.

Since they had to keep a low profile, they did not bring many men with them. However, those they brought were the best fighters they had.

This group of top fighters in South Hampton was more than enough to destroy the Southern Union several times over!

At the Guardian Mansion of South City.

Levi was watching as Azure Dragon and the others repaired the walls.

His face was twisted in an annoyed expression as he muttered angrily, “This is the second time these walls have been destroyed! Next time, I’ll shove a cannon up the ass of whoever wrecks them!”

Kirin piped up cheerfully, “Sir, that might happen a lot sooner than you think, maybe even tonight! I’m pretty sure those brats have gone back to call for reinforcements!”

“I’ll be waiting!” was the bored reply from Levi as he put the matter out of his mind.

Right then, several people appeared in the courtyard.

He recognized Mike, the commander-in-chief of the South City Warzone, and Percy, the commander-in-chief of the North Hampton Warzone.

However, the other six were unknown to him.

The eight men came to a stop before Levi and saluted him. “Good day, Chief!”

Smiling, Percy spoke up, “Sir, the eight Warzones are considering a joint exercise sometime soon. These men are the commanders-in-chief of the other six Warzones.”

The Protector Chapter 798

“This is the Commander-in-chief of the South Hampton Warzone, Clark Pond!”

“Hello Chief! It is such an honor to meet you!”

Clark said excitedly.

The South Hampton Warzone was a very important area. From the military viewpoint, it was more important than both the North Hampton and South City Warzones.

Correspondingly, Clark’s position was more important than Mike’s and Percy’s.

Levi smiled, “I’ve heard of you!”

Clark was surprised that the God of War actually remembered him.

This was an honor of a lifetime for him.

Percy began introducing the others.

“This is the commander-in-chief of Haven Warzone, Xayden Fairfield.”

“Chillshire Warzone, Weston Zink!”

“Southlake Warzone, Stanley Hodge!”

“Here, Darren Mackson from the Northlake Warzone!”

“And lastly, Zayden Ziggler from the Westview Warzone!”

....

Levi shook hands with the other five. This made them so excited and emotional, as if they had just met their idol.

They were completely caught by surprise!

Little did they expect that the legendary God of War himself would be so approachable and down-to-earth!

“Chief, what happened to these walls and floors here?”

Clark asked curiously.

“Nothing much, someone pummeled them!” Levi said.

“What? Someone fought in here?”

Clark and the other leaders had to take a deep breath.

Firstly, they were surprised that there were people who dared to fight in there.

Secondly, to create such damage, the person must be a master.

“No big deal, they are just a bunch of kids. Their parents are coming tonight to apologize!” Levi smiled.

In his eyes, the Prince Gang was really but a bunch of kids.

His experience in the past six years was more than what many people had experienced in sixty years.

The man was way too mature, much like an old bogeyman.

“It’s good to know that they are coming here to apologize. Silly of me to think that someone have the audacity to offend you, Chief.”

Clark and the rest laughed as they followed Levi into the house.

Very soon, the eight warzones were about to launch their joint exercise. They wanted Levi to give some suggestions, as their main objective was to pay tribute to him.

Edburg Manor, South Hampton.

Michael called for Tyler and Wales.

“Something might happen soon.”

Michael said.

“Oh? What’s going on?”

Both of them looked at their grandfather curiously.

“I have just received the news that Elder Goel has left South Hampton. No one knows where he has gone to.”

Michael said.

“What? How is that possible?”

“The man has not left South Hampton for the past fifty years, hasn’t he?”

Tyler was extremely shocked.

For Xabian Goel to leave South Hampton meant that something colossal was about to happen!

He had not gone anywhere for decades.

Tyler said, "Could Lucas' matter have to do with it?"

The Protector Chapter 799

“That’s impossible! After all, it’s just two women. What could have happened from there? Moreover, who else in the South City would dare to do something to Lucas? Let alone make Elder Goel to leave this city for him?”

Michael and Wales exchanged glances.

They were still very certain that Lucas was fine, and that Levi was unable to cause any ripples.

“Tyler, you are overthinking this. Think about it, what waves could Levi possibly cause?”

Michael could not help but say.

“Grandpa, why don’t I make a trip to South City to see what’s going on?” Tyler suggested.

“Alright, go and take a look so that we can all be more at ease. In case anything happens, we can get the first-hand information.” The older man nodded in agreement.

As he helmed the large family, he was full of strategies.

At the other side.

Yadriel Larson reported the incident to Grover.

“What? I guess Xabian Goel will definitely be coming to South City to seek trouble then!”

The master was surprised.

“That’s right, he might have arrived by now!” Yadriel said anxiously.

“That won’t do. I’ll go and stop him!”

Xabian’s troops had already surreptitiously infiltrated South City.

However, they were stopped the moment they entered the city.

Just when they were about to bristle with rage, they recognized Grover.

“What are you doing here, Grover?” Xabian asked coldly.

“Go back now! You’re going to get into deep trouble!”

Grover advised him.

“Hah! I know you are related to that person. However, no matter what background he has, I will get him!”

Xabian could not listen to anything at all.

“Say no more. The decision was made that moment I stepped out of South Hampton.”

His attitude was more determined than ever before.

Grover could not persuade him at all and had no choice but to return.

Very quickly, Xabian brought his group to a mysterious neighborhood.

This particular lane was very quiet and sparsely populated.

It was easy to do things in quiet places like this.

No one would know even if something big happened.

“Woof woof woof...”

The dog barking in the Guardian Mansion alerted Levi and his group.

“Our guests have arrived!”

Levi smiled.

“Chief, do you mind if we go and see who this person is? He sure has the guts to beard the lion in his den.”

Clark and the rest were very curious. Who could actually behave so atrociously before Levi and made the Guardian Mansion such a horrific state?

“Not at all. Who knows he could be someone you know.” Levi smiled.

Clark and the rest followed behind him.

Going out the door, they saw that the entrance was full with people and each of them had great temperament.

Clearly, they were the masters of the masters!

They were definitely stronger than those from the Prince Gang!

The Protector Chapter 800

“Grandpa, it’s them! They are strong. The one standing in the middle leads them!”

Jaron pointed Levi out.

However, he did not expect to see another eight strangers to turn up out of nowhere.

But he did not care.

With his grandpa here, even another eight hundred people would have been useless.

Upon seeing Levi and his men, the leaders of the twenty nine top families in South Hampton fixated their gaze on their enemies.

They could barely wait to swallow them alive.

How dare somebody crippled their precious child!

Xabian suppressed his anger forcefully and asked coldly, “Was it you who chopped off my grandson’s arm?”

“Indeed, it was me. He killed my dog and all I did was breaking one of his hands. That was already very merciful of me.” Levi said calmly.

“Are you telling me you could have killed my grandson just because of a dog?”

Xabian could not be more infuriated.

Jaron, the most noble young talent of South Hampton, was being compared to a dog?

How could he take this lying down?

The key was that his grandson's arm was chopped off because of a dog!

"That's right, an eye for an eye, which is very fair. However, I spared your grandson's life. Perhaps the entire Goel family should be thanking me instead!"

That line started everyone.

All of them fell silent and stared at him in complete disbelief.

"H...how can he say something like that?"

"The Goel family has to thank him?"

.....

This was unthinkable for each of the prominent families from South Hampton.

The man on the other side were clearly declaring war to the first family of South Hampton, the Goel family!

"Great. You are very courageous! No wonder my grandson lost to you!"

Instead of angry, Xabian laughed out loud instead.

"Did you castrate Lucas Quinn as well?" The patriarch continued asking.

"Yep. Since he had no control over the lower part of his body, I took over the control!" Indifferently, Levi replied.

“So, you crippled the entire Prince Gang?”

Xabian narrowed his eyes.

“Yes, I did! Since their parents did not teach them properly, I did all of you a favor and taught them a lesson.”

Levi’s eyes stared directly at Xabian as well.

“Excellent, we all heard it. He has admitted to all the crimes!”

Xabian told the other people.

Everyone shouted out loud. “An eye for an eye! Revenge! Revenge!”

Levi’s voice popped up. “Eh, aren’t you here to apologize?”

“Hmm?”

Xabian was taken aback.

“Before I released them, I told them to get their parents here to kneel and apologize!”

Levi retorted sharply, “Parents should bear the burden for their children’s sins! Don’t you agree?”

All the leaders were taken aback.

He was actually provoking them now.

The Protector Chapter 801

Even Clark and the rest of them were confused.

Weren't they supposed to come and apologize?

Why did they all look so ferocious, as if they were here to eat someone up?

Clark had a conflicted look on his face as he hid all the way at the back.

When he first stepped out, he had instantly recognized all of them.

They were all the top-notch leaders of South Hampton.

Especially Xabian, who was the most important person from South Hampton.

How could he not know him?

Of all people, who would have thought that they had offended Levi?

“Hahahah...”

Xabian burst out laughing when he heard Levi.

He was overjoyed.

It's been too long since he had met such an arrogant young man.

He had met arrogant young men before, but he killed all of them.

He believed that Levi would be one of them as well.

“Kiddo, you really don’t know who I am, do you?”

Xabian asked.

“I don’t, and I don’t need to know either, because I know that you are not my match.”

Tyrannical.

Arrogant.

Insufferable.

However, Levi had a certain calmness about him that controlled the entire atmosphere.

This made Xabian panic a little.

He recalled how Grover had attempted to stop him.

Was this kiddo really an heir from Oakland City?

“Are you from Oakland City?”

Xabian asked him tentatively.

“No, I was born and bred in North Hampton.”

Levi said.

“Good then!”

Xabian smiled.

“Kiddo, let me tell you, there are some people in this world that you cannot afford to offend! One example would be my grandson. I, Xabian Goel, have said before that I will destroy the families of whoever that dares to even touch my grandson! It’s been twenty-four years, and no one has dared to even touch my grandson. You are the very first one, and you chopped off his hand!”

Xabian spoke calmly as if he were just narrating a story.

However, everyone caught the chills and began perspiring as they heard him speak.

“What do you think I should do with you?”

Suddenly, Xabian lowered his tone and growled at him.

“Kill me?”

Levi chuckled.

“Yes, and to slice you into thousands of pieces! None of your family members will live to see the day either! Every single one of you will be chopped up into pieces to feed the dogs!”

Xabian hated Levi to his very core.

“You like dogs, don’t you? I’ll chop off both your hands and have the wild dogs eat them bit by bit! I want you to watch it with your very own eyes!!!”

No one had ever seen such a frightening Xabian before.

It has been fifty years, and only Levi has been able to push him to the edge like this.

“Excellent speech! However, you can’t do anything to me!”

Levi was applauding him.

“Why? Let me tell you, I don’t care who you are, I am definitely taking you down today!”

Xabian roared savagely.

“Haha, when it comes to who I am, you may not be able to afford to offend me!”

Levi suddenly laughed.

He looked at Clark and the rest of the group as he smiled, “Or rather, you can’t afford to offend anyone of us here.”

The Protector Chapter 802

“Oh? Then who are you?”

Xabian asked.

Levi smiled, “Guys, introduce yourselves!”

All of them stood up and began introducing themselves.

“Xayden Fairfield, commander-in-chief of the Haven Warzone!”

“Weston Zink, commander-in-chief of the Chillshire Warzone!”

“Stanley Hodge, commander-in-chief of the Southlake Warzone!”

“Darren Mackson, commander-in-chief of the Northlake Warzone!”

“Zayden Ziggler, commander-in-chief of the Westview Warzone!”

“Percy Covington, commander-in-chief of the North Hampton Warzone!”

“Mike Pence, commander-in-chief of the South City Warzone!”

...

Xabian and his group were all dumbfounded when that group introduced themselves one by one.

Every single one of them gaped as if they had just been struck by lightning.

In fact, one might even be able to stuff eggs into their gaping mouths.

At this juncture, Clark stood up as well and shouted, “Clark Pond, commander-in-chief of the South Hampton warzone!”

Bang!

When they saw Clark, Xabian and the other South Hampton leaders were completely shocked beyond words.

It was too shocking for them to see Clark Pond!

They did not completely believe in the self-reported identities of the seven people before him.

However, every single one of them knew who Clark Pond was.

He was the real deal, which meant that the others were real too!

The commanders-in-chief from all eight warzones were gathered here!

What kind of background does he have?

Xabian was so powerful, he was not afraid of the Southern Union nor the prominent families from Oakland City. However, no matter how strong he was, he could not help but bow to this group of people.

Who is he then?

Three hundred over eyes all fell on Levi, as they were all curious about who he really was.

“Go on, continue!”

Levi urged them.

“Azure Dragon, serving the Western Region as the King of War!”

“Phoenix, serving the Southern Region as the King of War!”

“White Tiger, serving the Eastern Region as the King of War!”

“Black Tortoise, serving the North Region as the King of War!”

“Kirin, serving the Central Region as the King of War!”

.....

The five Kings of War stood up together to introduce themselves.

Shocking!

Extremely shocking!

Bang!

Bang!

Bang!

.....

Each of the prominent leaders from South Hampton knelt down on the ground one by one.

Their knees had become so weak they could not support their bodies any longer.

Frightening!

It was absolutely horrifying!

Not only were the eight commanders-in-chief there, but even the five Kings of War were also there!

What else was left to do?

No background?

He was his own strongest background!

Jaron stared at White Tiger and suddenly understood why he had lost.

The White Tiger was the renowned unstoppable killer on the battlefield.

It was just natural for him to be defeated!

In total, there were more than ten of them, and each of them was top army leader!

What could they do now?

Next, every single person looked at the same person in complete unison — Levi.

The five Kings of War were there, and the eight commanders-in-chief were all there.

Could he be....

The Protector Chapter 803

That thought alone made everyone go numb and their blood curdle, as a stream of chilly air raced through their bodies.

In front of everyone, Xabian's face fell.

C-c-could he be...

Could he be that legendary figure?

The only Five-Star God of War in the entire history of Erudia!

The God of War himself!

That explained why he was so nonchalant about everything.

No wonder he dared to touch the Prince Gang...

Turns out he was the God of War!

Xabian had heard that the Gates and Caesar families were wiped out because they came to South City.

Also, it seemed that the Master of the Southern Union had come to South City for the sake of his disciple, only to lose all contact after that.

.....

Now it was all clear. They were all defeated by this colossal god.

With his presence, so what if all the prominent families in South Hampton banded together?

Regret!

Utter regret!

Grover had come to him personally to advise him to leave.

He paid no heed to that advice as he was too anxious.

Come to think of it now, it was a close shave!

For Grover to come and advise him, it showed that he was really not Levi's match.

"I am Xabian Goel of South Hampton, here to pay my respects to the God of War!"

Bang! He fell on his knees in front of Levi.

"All of us are here to pay our respects to the God of War!"

Everyone followed suit as they knelt down and shouted together.

Jaron and the other younger ones were all too stunned by what they saw and could not react at all.

When they saw their grandfathers and fathers kneeling down on the floor one by one, they were completely dumbfounded.

"Kneel down! Why are you still stunned?"

They were forced to get down onto the floor and to all kneel before Levi.

“We did not know who we were dealing with and we offended you, Sir. Please punish us! All I ask of you is to protect the Goel family lineage!”

Xabian’s head was stuck to the ground as he begged fervently.

Having offended the God of War, all he hoped for was to be able to keep his family lineage.

It was the same for everyone else.

They could handle any punishment, as long as Levi allowed them to save one descendent in order to keep their lineage.

Levi looked at Clark and the rest of them, “It’s all your fault! I was about to just kill a few of them. Because of you, my identity is exposed!”

“It’s our fault, Chief!”

Clark and the other leaders all looked down like guilty children.

“Let’s do this. You can all escape death but there will still be punishment! From now on, all of you will have to yield to me! Every year, you have to provide for the military expenses, do charity work, and contribute to South Hampton’s development!”

Levi said.

“We are willing!”

They were simply overjoyed that Levi was willing to let them off.

At least they could protect their families.

Clark and the others shook their heads with bitter smiles.

Before Levi had even reached South Hampton, he had united all the twenty-nine prominent families from South Hampton.

Xabian said, "Sir, twenty nine out of the top thirty prominent families of South Hampton are here, except for the Jones family. What do you think?"

The Protector Chapter 804

Levi was delighted when he heard that question.

He did not expect to gather all thirty families, except for the Joneses.

What a coincidence!

The Joneses did not see this coming at all.

All of the thirty prominent families were now under Levi, except for the Jones family.

“There is no need to do anything to the Joneses yet.”

Levi smiled.

“Yes, sir!”

Xabian had a harsh look in his eyes. With just one look from Levi, he immediately understood that there was bad blood between the Joneses and Levi.

From then onwards, the twenty-nine prominent South Hampton families completely ostracized the Jones family.

Even the other families’ followed suit as they were all controlled by Xabian and the other prominent families.

With that, the entire South Hampton had effectively ostracized the Jones family...

Just that they had no idea at all.

The South Hampton prominent families immediately left.

They had never expected that after this trip, they would lose control over their own families, and would be controlled by one person from now onwards.

Tyler rushed there as he felt that things were going terribly wrong.

From the various clues, he guessed that Lucas was in trouble.

This group of people did not say anything about it, which meant that it was a huge problem.

On the way, Tyler ran into Xabian and group.

“What? Elder Goel is really at South City?”

Tyler was completely shocked and immediately got down from the car to greet him.

“Hmm? The Joneses?”

Because of Levi, everyone suppressed themselves when they saw Tyler.

He felt that they had grown a lot more distant.

The Joneses were at least in the top six of the royal and prominent families, so they were extremely familiar with them.

Why are they behaving this way?

“What are you doing here?”

Xabian asked impatiently.

If not for Levi's instructions, he would have destroyed the Jones family.

"I was worried about Lucas, so I came here to take a look."

Tyler said.

"That's right, he is in trouble. Big trouble, in fact."

Xabian said coldly.

"Oh, big trouble?"

Tyler was taken aback.

Indeed, for Elder Goel himself to come and settle this, it must be a serious matter.

Indeed, something big had erupted.

Something massive.

"Mmm, Lucas was castrated, while the other members of the Prince Gang had their legs chopped off! Even I have lost an arm!"

Jaron said as he walked to the front.

When Tyler saw that Jaron had lost one arm, he was so startled he nearly fainted.

The heir of the Prince Gang actually had his hand chopped off.

This was unimaginable!

If it was in Southern region of Erudia, who would dare to even touch Jaron?

It would be an understatement to say that the Goel family's power and influence were second to none in the South.

However, someone actually chopped off one of his hands?

And castrated Lucas too?

What courage is this?

Both of Tyler's legs trembled as he stammered, "Wh-who did this?"

The Protector Chapter 805

Jaron gasped in shock, "It's God of War!"

Gasp!

"What?"

Tyler staggered backwards and almost fell to the ground.

Of all the people, they offended God of War.

No wonder so many people got incapacitated.

"So you all didn't manage to take revenge?" Tyler asked.

"Are you kidding? Do you think I can defeat the God of War?" The Goel patriarch took a step forward and gave him a killer stare.

"No, this is not what I meant. I'm just impressed by the fact that you managed to escape from God of War!" Tyler immediately sucked up to him.

"Get lost!" Xabian exclaimed.

"What has become of the Joneses? What a shame!"

...

Other family heads started laughing at Tyler.

“Huh?”

Tyler got more and more confused.

What’s going on?

Why is everyone making fun of the Joneses?

Tyler had no clue what was happening, but he could feel they were boycotting him.

It was as if the Jones family had lost its footing among the South Hampton’s elite class.

Everyone left since they did not bother to entertain Tyler anymore.

After knowing the problem, Tyler returned to South Hampton at once.

At the Joneses’ manor, Tyler exclaimed, “Grandpa, bad news!”

“What happened?”

Michael and the rest cast him a curious glance.

Tyler reported everything to his family members.

“Say that again? Lucas offended the God of War? All members of the Prince Gang were crippled?” Michael was stunned.

“Hold on. Isn’t it Levi we were talking about? What has he got to do with the legend?” Wales wondered.

Tyler shot daggers at him, “Are you stupid? God of War knows everything since he’s in South City! He must have known Lucas’ whereabouts the moment he stepped into the city.”

“I guess you’re right.” The brother rubbed his head in embarrassment.

“But why would God of War deal with all these insignificant people? Is it even worth his time and effort?” Michael asked in suspicion.

Tyler let out a sigh, “I’ve been thinking about this too, grandpa. I suspect God of War has found out Levi’s identity.”

The grandfather was dumbstruck, “You mean... God of War took care of Levi because he knows Levi is my grandson?”

“Yes! I can’t think of any other logical explanations. He must have learned that Levi is a member of the Joneses and went to his aid.” Tyler was very sure about it.

“Levi should be ashamed of himself for dragging the God of War into this!” Michael was infuriated.

“We nearly got Lucas to get rid of him, yet this happened. How can he be so fortunate?”

The Protector Chapter 806

Michael was exasperated.

Instead of eliminating Levi, this incident brought him even closer to the Jones family.

Why is it so hard to get rid of him?

What should we do next?

“Grandpa, Levi will be the death of the Joneses. We have to kill him before he destroys the family.” A fierce glint flashed through Wales’ eyes.

Michael nodded, “He’s a threat to us. We’ll be in deep trouble if his identity is exposed!”

“If that happens, we have no choice but to accept him into the family. The Joneses will then turn into a laughing stock!” Wales sighed.

Tyler gave it a thought and proposed, “Grandpa, what if I get someone to wipe out his identity?”

“That sounds like a good idea. As long as his records are all wiped out from the system, no one could associate him with our family anymore.” Michael responded in excitement.

By hook or by crook, the Jones family just wanted to distance themselves away from Levi as quickly as possible.

But after finding out about Levi's true identity, the Joneses went begging for him to return and acknowledge his relationship with the family.

Of course, this turn of events would only happen later on.

"Alright! Wales, do it as soon as possible. He'll then have to flee South City or even be forced to leave Erudia! We'll be able to live in peace after this!" Michael instructed.

Once Wales left, Tyler frowned and said, "There's something else I wish to tell you, grandpa. I was talking to the Goel patriarch and the rest but they seem hostile, as if they wanted to beat me up. I'm not sure what was going on."

It was as if all of these prominent families ganged up on the Joneses.

Tyler felt something was amiss, but he could not quite put his finger on it.

"Don't overthink! I think it's all because you went to South City with the group and came back in one piece, whereas the others were all incapacitated. They must be mad about it." Michael analyzed.

"That's true! The entire Prince Gang was crippled, and only Wales and I were spared. I guess I can understand why they're mad at me." Tyler was enlightened.

That, however, was not why they were boycotted.

At that moment, Wales had arrived at the said department. He pulled some strings and was ready to get them to remove Levi's records from the system.

The officer immediately complied with his order as soon as Wales revealed his identity.

In a short while, the department officer, who was sweating bullets, walked out of the office.

He looked panicked as if he had encountered a big problem.

“Did something go wrong?” Wales asked.

“Yes, we can’t erase Levi Garrison’s record from the system!”

The officer wiped the cold sweat of his forehead.

“What? How come?”

The Protector Chapter 807

Wales was surprised. *How difficult can it be to remove a person's identity from the database?*

“So? What’s the problem? You’re authorized to remove a person’s records, aren’t you?” Wales questioned.

“Sir, I don’t even have the authority to access his file, let alone remove his record from the database!”

The officer took a deep breath.

“What do you mean you’re not authorized? Are you kidding me? He’s just an orphan. Why would someone limit the access to his file?” Wales uttered in disbelief.

“Not only we have limited access to Levi Garrison’s file, but it’s also classified as the SSSSS-class! That is equivalent to the nation’s top official secrets! No one in South Hampton has the power to retrieve his file!”

“Deleting his records from the system is just like wringing water from a stone!”

Even the officer got a shock handling such a highly confidential document for the first time. His face turned pale and the man broke out in a cold sweat.

How can he asks me to clear his records? Is he trying to get me into trouble?

He gasped and tried to regained his composure.

“Are you sure?” Wales gritted his teeth and asked. He still found it hard to believe the younger man’s words.

“100% positive. I’ve checked over and over again.” The officer exclaimed.

“Alright then. Thank you.” Wales had no choice but to leave in disappointment. He had to tell the Joneses what happened here.

After Wales left, the officer collapsed onto a chair near him.

One of his colleagues once tried retrieving an S-class file and alarmed the entire department.

And today, he almost opened a Pandora’s box by attempting to access an SSSSS-class file!

The shock was just too much for him.

Suddenly, the control room in the department received a mysterious call.

Soon, the department head gathered everyone.

The officer turned ashen-faced, and his forehead was soaked in sweat.

Everyone wondered what was going on.

“The head of National Security Agency and commander-in-chief of South Hampton’s army called to find out if we’re investigating Levi Garrison!” He shot an angry glance at everyone.

“That person’s information is Erudia’s top secret! The head of the NSA warned us that the act of retrieving his file is a crime, and he’ll come personally to look into this matter.”

Bang!

The officer who helped Wales to check on Levi's status passed out and collapsed onto the ground all of a sudden.

He did not expect this to happen.

Who is this Levi Garrison? What is his identity?

Are all Joneses as idiotic as Wales? Where on the earth did they find the courage to wipe out his records?

Many people were aware of what happened earlier, but no one dared to say anything about it.

They too, broke out in a cold sweat.

They couldn't imagine what was like to have an identity like Levi's.

The Protector Chapter 808

Meanwhile, Wales arrived home after leaving the department.

“Everything settled? That’s fast.” Both Michael and Tyler asked as they were surprised to see him back so soon.

“Nope, grandpa. They can’t delete his records from the database!” Wales had an unpleasant look on his face.

“How come? They can’t even remove the records of someone as insignificant as Levi?”

Both of them refused to believe Wales.

The latter nodded, “Not only that. They are not authorized to access his file at all!”

“What?” The grandfather stood up right away.

Tyler was also dumbfounded.

“Not authorized to access his file?”

They widened their eyes in disbelief.

“That’s right! His file was classified as SSSSS, which is equivalent to the country’s top secret! Even the officers there got the shock of their lives! Unbelievable!”

The color drained out of Wales’ face as he recounted the incident.

“How is this possible? Levi’s file is classified under the SSSSS class? Levi Garrison? But he’s a nobody!”

Michael and Tyler were completely stunned.

Wales said in a helpless tone, “I even double confirmed with the officer to make sure the name was correct, and all I got was the same answer!”

“But how?” They could not accept this.

Tyler’s eyes glistened and gently patted the back of his head, “I think I know why.”

“Why?”

Michael and Wales turned their attention to Tyler.

“We all know Levi’s background, right?” Tyler asked.

“Of course. He’s from the Garrison family from the capital city. To them, even the Goels are just nobody.” Wales said.

Tyler nodded, “See, that’s it! Since the Garrison family had deserted Levi, of course they would think of ways to erase all his connections with them.”

Michael’s eyes flickered with hope, “So you’re saying, the Garrisons did this?”

“That’s right! This is the only logical explanation I can think of. Only the Garrisons have the power to classify people’s personal records under the SSSSS class!”
Tyler nodded steadily.

“You’re right. The Garrisons do have the power to do so!” Michael responded with a smile.

Wales shot out a vicious stare and said, “Levi Garrison is a bast*rd. He doesn’t even know who his parents are, yet he still tries to cling onto the Jones family!”

Michael did not show any changes to his expression when Wales was bashing Levi.

He was not even bothered by how Wales indirectly attacked his daughter.

This clearly showed how much he hated Emma!

“I’ll never allow such a bast*rd to enter the Jones family. Over my dead body!” Michael roared.

The Protector Chapter 809

“Grandpa, though we don’t want to admit our relationship with Levi, we cannot deny the fact that the God of War has rescued him. One day, we’ll still have to repay his kindness!” Tyler said.

“What should we do then?” Michael asked.

“Perhaps we should give the legend a gift?” Tyler suggested.

“What should we give?” Michael stroke his chin as he pondered.

“Paintings and jewelry might be exquisite, but I don’t think he’s into these things. As a warrior, he must be fond of weapons. Grandpa, we do have an ancient bronze sword, don’t we? Shall we give it to him?” Tyler proposed.

Upon hearing the suggestion, Michael burst out laughing, “You’re indeed the man the Jones family can rely on! Brilliant!”

“With this gift, not only can we repay his kindness, but we might also gain his favor as well!”

“Come on, let’s send the gift over!” Without hesitation, Tyler immediately had the gift delivered to South City Warzone.

Mike looked at the gift and did not know what to do with it. He contacted Levi and told him about the gift from the Joneses.

“Keep it.” Levi ordered.

In just a short while, Seth delivered the gift to Morris Group.

Unwrapping the gift box, a bronze sword that was covered in rust showed itself. It carried a musty metallic odor.

The sword was an antique the Jones family bid during an auction for three hundred million.

“How generous of them.” Levi smirked.

“I wonder how would they react if they find out the sword is with me?”

Levi then instructed Mike to inform the Joneses that he was pleased with the gift and had accepted it.

Upon receiving an update from the God of War, the Joneses were exhilarated, especially Michael. He was so excited that he could not sleep the whole night.

After all, it was the first time the God of War communicated with them directly.

The Jones family were utterly pleasantly surprised.

Imagine how Michael would react if he found out the man he regarded so highly for was none other than Levi?

Though the Joneses viewed the bronze sword as their family’s prized possession, Levi treated it as a toy.

“You bought a fake sword from Amazon? It looks like someone is very free today!”

Iris could not help to grumble when she noticed Levi was playing with a sword.

A sudden frown warped her face. Clearly, she was not in a good mood after attending a meeting.

She became even more frustrated after seeing Levi wielding his sword like he did not have a care in the world.

“Since you’re so free, why don’t you focus on your work? Do you still remember about the one billion deal with the Black family?” Iris reprimanded him.

“What’s wrong with you? Why are you so mad?” Levi felt something was amiss with her.

“That five billion project! One of the vendors has yet to clear its payment. We don’t know what to do with them anymore!”

The Protector Chapter 810

Morris Group had recently won an electronic product-related project from a foreign company that was based in South Hampton.

The project was worth five billion. But this company, which was headquartered in Raysonia, still had not settled 70% of the payment.

Iris had deployed her team to chase the payment from them but to no avail. The company even sent people to bash them up.

At this point, Iris did not have any tricks up her sleeves anymore.

That was the agenda for the meeting she attended earlier.

Yet, they still could not figure out the best solution to end this nightmare.

All they could do was to wait.

But the more they dragged, the greater the financial losses Morris Group had to bear.

Levi was shocked, "What? Who has the guts to owe Morris Group money?"

Levi had no respect for people like this.

How could he tolerate this kind of people now that they had stepped on his toes?

"Yes! The boss is simply a hooligan. He even ordered his man to beat our people up. I really have no idea what to do now."

Iris sighed and massaged her forehead.

“Leave it to me! I’ll take care of it!” Levi said.

“You?” Iris thought she heard wrongly.

“Don’t you trust me? Since you can’t handle him, why don’t you let me give it a shot?”

Iris thought what Levi said made sense.

Oh well, I guess we can give it a try.

She then passed the file to Levi and said, “Alright, here you go. Try your best but don’t push it, okay? They’re not easy to deal with.”

Iris did not have high hopes for him to solve the problem, anyway.

In her mind, she was already thinking of getting help from Neil and the mysterious boss.

Though it was not a small sum, Iris felt embarrassed to trouble the two men.

This was why she insisted of handling this matter on her own.

Levi then left the office for South Hampton with the file.

If you play with fire, you get burned!

“Come with me, Seth!” Levi called Seth and get him to drive him there.

South Hampton was about one and a half hours away from South City.

Very soon, the two arrived at their destination – Vision Group.

It was a foreign company that was headquartered in Raysonia.

Its owner, Kameda Ichiro, was a capable businessman and had close ties with many prominent families in South Hampton.

The fact that Vision Group was able to sustain its business in the highly competitive South Hampton clearly showed they were a force to be reckoned with.

Since Vision Group was already an influential business entity in South Hampton, Morris Group, to them, was an insignificant business partner.

They kept delaying the payment just because they had the leverage to do so.

Levi and Seth were stopped from entering the company when they arrived at the front desk.

“Who are you?” The security guards could not speak the language well. It was clear that they were Raysonians.

“We’re from Morris Group, and we hope your boss can settle the payment as soon as possible!”

Upon hearing what Levi said, everyone at the foyer burst out laughing.

It was as if they were watching two clowns making a fool of themselves there.

The Protector Chapter 811

“What’s so funny?” Levi asked in a cold voice.

“Morris Group still has the guts to send you here? Your boss sent 13 groups of men here, of which 8 ran away because they were so afraid of us, and another 4 fled after being beaten up. We even turned the last group of men into cripples. They’re just not giving up, aren’t they?” The security guards looked at them in disbelief.

Levi said calmly, “Oh yes. We’re also here to demand for medical fees and an apology.”

Everyone around the front desk laughed even louder.

Levi and Seth instantly became the laughing stock of the day.

“Medical fees and demand an apology from us? What a joke!” Roars of laughter resonated in the building.

“You want to ask for payment? Come, follow me.”

Instead of throwing Levi and Seth out, the security guards brought them to the chairman’s office.

“Ah!”

All of a sudden, the two of them heard a loud cry while they were walking along the corridor.

Soon, they saw two men dragging an unconscious man toward them, and the man was covered in blood.

“He’s also here to ask us to clear our payment.” The security guard said with a smirk as if he were warning Levi he would suffer the same fate too.

Levi took a glance at the person.

So that’s their usual tactic to get rid of anyone who got in their way. How atrocious!

How can we allow these foreigners to wreak havoc as they pleased in Erudia?

A fierce glint flashed through Levi’s eyes.

He was really keen to know who on earth was this Kameda Ichiro.

A voice emerged from the office, “What now? Someone asking for their payment again?”

“Yes, sir! It’s Morris Group again.” The security guard answered in a respectful manner.

“Bring them in.”

Levi and Seth then entered the office, where they saw many vicious-looking men.

These were all dressed in a traditional robe and had a longsword as their weapon. Those men exuded an aura that would frighten anyone near them.

This was also why people who demanded payment would not achieve what they came here for.

These armed men would have intimidated them and frightened them off.

Bang!

One of the men shut the door, while the others stood around Levi and Seth and shot daggers at them.

Kameda was leaning against a leather chair and puffing at a cigarette.

“From Morris Group?” He asked.

It seemed he had spent a long time in Erudia since he could speak the native language very well.

“What do you want?” Kameda puffed at his cigarette again.

“You still owe us 3.5 billion, so please pay up. In addition, you injured our men, so we’re here to demand their medical fees and an apology!” Levi said.

Whoosh!

All of a sudden, two of his samurais drew out their longsword and placed it on Levi’s and Seth’s necks.

The Protector Chapter 812

It was as if time stood still.

The tension in the room was so thick one could cut it with a knife.

The edge of the sword was so icy-cold that it sent chills down Seth's spine.

Sweat droplets also started rolling down from his forehead, and he could not help but gasp.

The sword would have cut through his neck if it had tilted a little.

On the other hand, Levi remained calm and did not show any changes on his expression at all.

As if he felt nothing on his neck.

After a while, Kameda sat straight up and looked at Levi, "Aren't you afraid?"

"No."

"Why not?" Kameda was curious.

"Because I'll smash his skull before he could do anything." Levi said nonchalantly.

"Try me if you don't believe it."

Kameda and his men were stunned by how steady Levi was.

“Put down your swords.” Kameda signaled with a hand wave, and the two men retracted the swords from their necks.

“You’ve got a lot of nerve, young man. Others would have dropped to their knees right away!”

Kameda was impressed with how courageous Levi was.

“Cut the crap and do what I said. Clear the payment, settle the medical fees, and apologize immediately!”

Levi was running out of patience.

Kameda’s men took a step forward and gave Levi and Seth a murderous stare.

“How dare you come here and make all these demands?” Kameda slammed the desk with his hand.

“The man you saw earlier came for the same thing too, and he’s now half-dead after being beaten by my men!”

“Everyone in South Hampton knows I don’t deal with this ‘clear payments’ nonsense! Every year, I turn at least 100 people into cripples because of this demand. Yet, you people still come after me. Erudians are plain stupid!” Kameda said condescendingly.

“You’re not an Erudian, right?” Levi asked.

“That’s right! Not an Erudian but a Raysonian! What’s wrong?” Kameda wondered what was on his mind.

“You’re not an Erudian, yet you behave like a barbarian on our land?” Levi’s face darkened.

“This is how I run my business empire!”

“No one in South Hampton would dare to challenge me. Everyone here knows that!” Kameda exclaimed.

“Does that mean your word is law in South Hampton?” Levi sneered?

“Of course! I control everything in South Hampton. I am the law!”

Kameda took a sidelong glance at the two and said, “Bow before me and I’ll consider letting you off. Otherwise, be prepared to lose your legs!”

Levi ignored him. He took out of his phone and made a call, “Xabian, I thought you’re the most influential person in South Hampton? How come someone from Raysonia claimed to be the master of this land?”

The Protector Chapter 813

The phone call Levi made shocked Kameda and all his men in the office.

Who did he call?

Xabian?

“Who is Xabian?” Kameda did not know what was going on.

“Xabian Goel, the patriarch of the Goel family!” His assistant reminded him.

“What? Mr. Goel?”

Having lived in South Hampton for nearly two decades, Kameda certainly knew who Xabian Goel was.

He's the number one man in South Hampton!

None of the prominent families here would dare to defy his order!

“Are you kidding me? This lad gave Mr. Goel a call?” Kameda chuckled.

Did the young man just claim that he was calling Mr. Goel, the mysterious man who sits on top of the social pyramid in South Hampton?

An errand boy like him has access to Xabian Goel? Are you kidding me?

Everyone in the office burst out laughing.

South Hampton the most economically advanced city in the entire Erudia. Hence, a lot of prominent families were based here.

There were just too many prominent families here, but there was a hierarchy.

They were generally divided into the common prominent family, quasi-royal family, and true royal family.

The Goel family occupied the top spot of the royal family.

No ordinary folk, not even Kameda, was qualified to associate themselves with the Goel family.

Kameda did not have even have access to the quasi-royal families. At his level, he could at most reach out to a few common prominent families, and that was just about it.

Yet, Levi did what he couldn't.

How is it possible?

“Very well. Let's see if you can get Mr. Goel to come and back you up!”

Kameda puffed at a cigarette and could not wait for these clowns to make a fool of themselves.

Over at the other end of the phone, Xabian broke out in a cold sweat after hearing Levi's voice, “Are you in... South Hampton?”

“Haven't I made myself clear?” Levi smirked.

“The Raysonian you mentioned earlier is...?” Xabian asked.

“Kameda Ichiro from Vision Group. He owed my company 3.5 billion and refused to clear the payment. He even bashed my men up! This fellow also claimed to be the most influential person in South Hampton. Are you going to allow this foreigner to dominate this area? You’re from the royal family here, for goodness sake!” Levi reprimanded aloofly.

“I... I’ll come over right now! Who gave Kameda the permission to call the shots in South Hampton!” A vortex of anger swirled inside Xabian.

“I’ll give you 20 minutes. Come to Vision Group right now!” Levi ended the call.

“Did you just instruct Mr. Goel to come here? What a joke!” To Kameda, Levi was cooking up some bullshit to buy time.

The businessman might believe Levi if he said he knew Mr. Goel.

But looking at the way this young man spoke so arrogantly over the phone, who would buy his story now?

No way!

“I’ve never seen someone as idiotic as him!”

Kameda’s men had enough of his crap and were ready to strike.

Kameda stopped them right away, and he smiled at Levi, “Fine. Let’s not talk about Mr. Goel. If you’re capable of getting just one of the common prominent families to come to Vision Group, I’ll bow to you and settled all your payments!”

The Protector Chapter 814

“Did he say 20 minutes? Fine! I’ll give him 20 minutes!” Kameda let out a mirthless laugh.

If no one appears after 20 minutes, I’ll incapacitate him!

Five minutes later, they began to hear footsteps along the corridor.

Kameda received a call from the front desk receptionist, who warned him that a group of men were heading toward his office.

Bang!

In a split of a second, a group of well-suited man swarmed in after kicking down his office door.

Kameda immediately stood up from his chair after seeing this group of men.

This was because he knew every single one of them.

They were the heads of prominent families from all over South Hampton.

More and more people started flocking into his office, and Kameda started panicking.

Soon, almost 40 heads of the prominent families gathered in his tiny office.

In other words, all the patriarchs from the common prominent families in South Hampton had gathered here.

“Hello, Mr. Davies!”

“Good to see you, Mr. Kernet!”

“Hey, Mr. Hocker!”

...

Kameda instantly crouched over and greeted every single one of them.

“Hmph!”

“You’re doomed!”

...

All the heads snorted dismissively.

Kameda was so confused and did not know what was going on, but he still mustered up the courage to greet them one by one.

Anyone of them right there could easily crush him like a bug!

For them to be recognized as a common prominent family, their net worth must at least hit fifty billion.

And all these people had met this minimum requirement!

Just when he thought no one else would show up in his office, more people started coming in.

And this time, there were 20 of them.

Kameda's heart nearly leapt into his throat when he saw them walking into his office.

They were the patriarchs from the 20 quasi-royal family!

The other family heads, who arrived earlier, made way for them to come through.

Quasi-royal families were a stratum above them!

"What brought you all here?" Kameda was about to drop to his knees.

The common prominent families could already destroy him easily, not to mention these quasi-royal families.

Even if they had spat on the floor, Kameda had to cup his hands to collect the fluid.

In South Hampton, this was a classic example of survival of the fittest as the social structure here was highly hierarchical!

Kameda did not know them very well. Even when he greeted them respectfully, all these influential men just ignored him.

He was not qualified to talk to them. He was not qualified to talk to them.

Hold on!

What's going on?

What are all these influential figures doing in my office?

The large group of people had clouded Kameda's mind.

As soon as he regained his composure, he suddenly thought of the most terrifying question ever – *why are they here?*

Instinctively, he turned around and looked at Levi.

Could it be because of him? All because of the phone call he made earlier?

Didn't he give them 20 minutes? All these people literally turned up in the blink of an eye.

At this point, Kameda was already sweating bullets and trembling in fear.

All of a sudden, a voice emerged from the corridor, "Mr. Goel has arrived!"

The Protector Chapter 815

At the sound of this voice, the Masters of these common prominent families in South Hampton stood upright with solemn faces.

This was Xabian Goel's prestige in South Hampton.

When he gave an order, all the noble families must follow.

Kameda Ichiro's heart leapt to his throat.

With just one phone call, he had invited South Hampton's top man, Mr. Goel to make an appearance.

What type of person was he?

Kameda Ichiro's legs trembled and he couldn't stand still.

The samurais behind him were even more frightened.

This was no ordinary person!

If they remembered correctly, when the dagger was pressed against his neck, his reaction had already shown how extraordinary he was.

I've been rash!

I've really been too rash!

In the next instant, Xabian Goel brought the patriarchs of the other eight royal families.

All royal families in South Hampton were present with the exception of the Jones family.

When the rest saw Xabian, they bowed low and greeted him respectfully, "Greetings Mr. Goel!"

However, the elderly took no notice of them. He brought all the royal families and the quasi-royal clans to meet Levi. In unison, they greeted, "Greetings, Mr. Garrison!"

It was like a thunderclap in the atmosphere!

In that instant, the atmosphere was filled with shock.

The dozens of heads of the nobles could not believe their eyes.

The samurais, too were shocked.

Kameda Ichiro was astounded.

What's happening?

The patriarchs of the royal families were greeting a young man with respect.

Who could this person be? There was a sense of mystery in the air.

The key person was Elder Goel!

He is the most important person, isn't he?

Yet, he is bowing to the waist to greet this person.

This is the most frightening aspect of the situation.

Xabian Goel turned around, pointed at all other common prominent families and said, "Mr. Garrison, you haven't met these nobles yet. Let me introduce you to them!"

Levi nodded his head slightly.

"Listen well! This Mr. Garrison standing in front of your eyes is the Master of the nine royal families and the twenty quasi-royal families! From now on, you giants will also take orders from Mr. Garrison! His identity is beyond your imagination!" Xabian announced to those present.

Although the heads of the common prominent families were surprised, they shouted together in obedience, "Hail, Mr. Garrison! We will serve you as our Master in the future!"

They did not need an explanation.

All they had to do was to follow Xabian's instructions.

If Elder Goel served Mr. Garrison as his Master, who were they to question him?

They only had to trust and obey as there was no other way.

"Mr. Garrison, from now on, the top 100 South Hampton giants will follow your orders, except for the Jones family of course!" Xabian Goel declared.

The Jones family was from this moment isolated in South Hampton.

"Well, that's okay."

Levi laughed.

"Oh, I stray from the matter at hand."

Xabian suddenly called out, "Who is Kameda Ichiro?"

The Protector Chapter 816

Thud!

When Kameda Ichiro heard his name being called, he was overcome by fear and collapsed onto the ground.

Splash...

Following that was the sound of liquid spilling and a strong stench.

Kameda's trousers became wet.

He was so scared that he urinated...

The samurai with him were also wetting their pants.

What Bushido was this?

In the face of real power, they were reduced to wetting their trousers.

A long time ago, Levi met some samurais from the country of Raysonia.

At that time, Levi's proud words had made the Raysonia warriors fearful to this day – "What is Bushido?" *What I do is Bushido!*

"I heard that you haven't paid the balance due?"

Xabian asked as he hit the ground with his new walking stick which was carved into the shape of a dragon head.

“I... I... I... I... I’ll pay now!”

Kameda was beside himself with fear.

On the spot, he asked his assistants and finance guys to hand over a check worth 3.5 billion to Levi.

“I also heard you beat someone up so badly that hospitalization was necessary. Is that true?” Xabian continued asking.

“I will pay for the medical bills and apologize!”

Bang! Bang! Bang! Kameda hit his head on the ground to show remorse.

He then paid another 10 million for medical expenses.

“Goel, since I got what I want, I’m returning to South City now.” Levi finally said.

“Phew!” Kameda heaved a sigh of relief.

Finally, it was over and despite much fear, there was no harm done.

Unfortunately, Levi’s order was heard loud and clear in the next instant, “I don’t want to see him in Erudia anymore.”

Boom!

It was just a few words, but for Kameda it was a heavy sentence.

He was being deported from Erudia!

“Mr. Garrison, we understand! We, the people of Erudia have always been a great example, welcoming friends from all over the world to come and prosper

together with us. But today, I will be the first to drive this kind of trash out of our country!”

“I will also make a statement. I myself will investigate all the immigrants in South Hampton. Whoever commits any kind of violation that hurts our countrymen will be deported at once!” Xabian declared his stance to Levi.

The other patriarchs followed suit.

Those who just wanted to make a fortune and abuse the citizens for a profit be warned.

“Hmm..., that’s great, Goel. You’re good!”

Levi praised the elderly.

This word of affirmation made Xabian feel valued.

In fact, he was quite overjoyed.

“Stay, I’ll leave on my own!”

After Levi left, the patriarchs of the common prominent families started discussing, “Elder Goel, who is this Mr. Garrison?”

“The Highest Military Merit Of Our Nation.”

This was all that Xabian would reveal but the crowd was thunderstruck.

It was a simple phrase but it was too shocking.

That was the ultimate pursuit of every warriors!

It represented the top military commander at the moment.

This was none other than The God of War! It was a shocking moment!

Retch!

Kameda finally reacted and blood spewed out of his mouth.

Levi who was about to get into his car, suddenly caught sight of a familiar figure – Wales.

The Protector Chapter 817

“Hey? What are you doing here?” Wales, immediately blocked Levi’s way and asked curiously.

“Why is that your business?” Levi sneered.

“You aren’t thinking of coming back to the Jones family, are you? Making all your way here to South Hampton.” Wales suddenly shouted.

From his point of view, Levi’s only purpose for being in South Hampton was to be recognized by the Joneses so that he could be admitted back into the family.

“Let me tell you this! The Joneses will never recognize your identity! Stop dreaming!” Furiously, Wales made his point.

“Ridiculous.” With that, Levi got into his car and left.

Immediately, Wales went back to Edburg Manor and reported everything to Michael.

“What? He has returned to South Hampton? It’s obvious that he wants to return to our family, isn’t it? What should we do?”

The grandfather panicked.

“I have no idea what he’s doing here. Anyhow, he came out of Vision Group.” Wales voiced his puzzlement.

“I should be able to find out after asking around.”

Tyler reached out to his contacts to investigate the reason for Levi's presence in the Vision Group.

"He came to Vision Group to collect a debt of 3.5 billion and managed to do so."

The news came quickly.

"How could that be possible? Why did Kameda Ichiro give him 3.5 billion so easily?"

Michael was all suspicious.

"It is said that Kameda Ichiro was pressured by the royal families. He has now left the country." Tyler reported.

"Levi is really smart. He actually does things in the name of Jones family!"

"I guess that royal families refer to us." Wales suddenly said aloud.

Unfortunately, they had misunderstood. The royal families included all but the Joneses.

Michael clenched his fists in anger, "Isn't that so? As soon as Levi revealed his identity as the grandson of Jones family, Kameda is bound to fear him!"

Tyler punched the wall in anger, "It seems that we have underestimated Levi! He is now using our family name for his own purposes! What would he do in future?"

The Joneses were all determined that Levi had used their family name to procure the balance of the debt.

It was just a small matter, so naturally they wouldn't go deep into it.

"We have to do something about this. Let's inform the Morris Group!"

Following that, Tyler contacted Iris and told her their so-called conclusion.

Iris was surprised as she did not know about Levi's relationship with the Jones family.

Quickly, she told Zoey this version of the story.

Bingo!

Zoey was stunned and then her face was full of certainty.

This had proven her theory.

All the while, that was what Levi had been doing to achieve his successes.

This time, it was no exception!

No wonder Levi volunteered to go collect the balance of the debt.

Iris arrived at this conclusion.

Right at this moment, Levi returned.

"Iris, I've collected the balance!"

The Protector Chapter 818

When Levi handed the check to Iris, the two ladies were indifferent and their faces showed no reaction.

“Hmm?”

Levi was puzzled.

He had brought in the final payment of 3.5 billion.

That solved Iris' huge problem.

How could she not show some reaction?

This is not normal!

Zoey might not know what was happening and so her indifference was acceptable.

What's with Iris?

“I've brought back the balance.”

Levi reminded her again.

“Oh, I see.”

Iris' face was still expressionless.

Levi was puzzled as he said, "Something doesn't seem right with you."

"Oh, alright. Should I praise you? You're awesome! You can settle what we can't do so easily! From now on, we shall let you collect all debts."

Iris praised him vehemently.

However, Levi still even more weird.

"It's okay. That was nothing!" Levi said nonchalantly. In any case, he did not take it to heart.

He had no way of knowing that Iris had received a call from the Joneses, nor that she and Zoey thought he was flaunting his connection with the Jones family.

Iris would be more pleased to see Levi solving this problem on his own without depending on the Joneses.

Like Zoey, she hoped that Levi would make it on his own.

Hence, she was displeased.

And so, even though the check had been procured, she showed no expression on her face.

"Iris, Levi really hates the Jones family. But because of me, he has asked for their help multiple times. I'm really touched." Zoey said.

Iris bit her lips, saying, "Nevertheless, I'm worried that he will deteriorate!"

"Do you mean that the convenience brought by being a grandson of the Jones family will make him less and less progressive? And that it may lead to terrible results in the end?"

Zoey reacted to Iris' words.

"Exactly. This status will destroy him."

Iris' gaze was full of worry.

"Furthermore, the one billion the Black family asked him to earn will definitely be derived from the Jones family!"

"Forget about it. It's going to be the Morris Group biannual celebration soon. I have to prepare for the event."

Levi did not know about all that was going on between Iris and Zoey.

He returned to his place and started playing with his ancient bronze sword.

At this moment, a call came from the Jones family.

"Yo, Levi! How smart you are!"

Wales voice was heard speaking in a weird manner.

"If you have something to say, just spit it out!"

Levi replied impatiently.

"You should know what you have done, shouldn't you?"

Wales sneered.

"What have I done?"

Levi was puzzled.

“You know best why you came to South Hampton. It’s about the debt from Vision Group, isn’t it?”

“And?”

“Why are you stooping so low? You used our family name to get the money, didn’t you? Yet there you were saying that you do not admit to being related to the Jones family.”

The Protector Chapter 819

Levi did not bother to explain himself to Wales.

He simple hung up the phone.

But that made him understand why Zoey and Iris acted so cold toward him.

It was obvious that the Jones family told them the same thing.

That was the reason for the two girls' strange reaction!

So be it!

Levi felt it was unnecessary to explain for himself.

As the God of War, it was below his dignity to bother about a nest of ants.

However if the Jones family kept on provoking him, he would have to take action against them.

If they were to cross the line, he would let them know what cruelty he was capable of.

At this moment, Kirin called and asked, “Sir, it will be the biannual celebration of Morris Group soon. All the top executives would like to meet you, especially Iris.”

Levi laughed, “Now that the Morris Group is stabilizing, it is high time for me to reveal myself!”

Levi seemed to spend most of his time drinking tea and sleeping, but his decisions and directions were what shaped the growth of Morris Group.

It could be said that his hands was what pushed Morris Group forwards.

“Fine, I shall inform the management and staff.” Kirin smiled and said.

Soon, everyone in Morris Group began to cheer.

Except for those pioneers, the others had never seen the boss at all.

Hence, everyone was very excited to hear that the mysterious boss would make an appearance.

After all, the boss had given them a lot of expectations.

“Oh yeah!” Iris was the most eager one to meet the boss.

The moment she received Neil's notification, she cheered and danced.

She could finally meet the legendary boss. The man was literally her idol!

Since the day she came back from abroad, no man could win her heart.

Levi was the man she had most contact with.

Not that she was not disinterested in romance, but she wanted a man she found desirable.

The mysterious boss had left a deep impression within her heart.

Iris vowed. If the boss were single, she would do everything in her power to pursue him, regardless of how he looked.

What she valued was his talent.

The progress of Morris Group up to now was due to this boss' hard work behind the scenes.

She was just the implementer.

Iris danced and skipped right up to Zoey's office, "Zoey, I have good news for you. The boss of Morris Group will make an appearance at our biannual celebration!"

“You will come, won’t you?” Iris invited her.

“That would not be appropriate, would it? We are just business partner.”

Actually, Zoey was also curious about what the boss of Morris Group would look like.

“What’s so inappropriate? Don’t forget that I’m the vice president.”

The Protector Chapter 820

“Furthermore, don’t you want to see this mysterious boss of Morris Group?”

“Besides, Levi will be attending for sure! I heard that he and my boss are friends. This celebration wouldn’t do without him.”

Zoey nodded her head, “In that case, okay, I shall attend.”

Following that, the whole company was busy preparing for the biannual celebration.

Finally, they decided that the celebration would be held on an island. The staff would also be holidaying as well.

When Iris bumped into Levi, she laughed, saying, “Levi, you are attending our biannual celebration, right?”

Levi smiled, “Of course. Without my presence, this celebration would be totally meaningless!”

Levi was the most important guest.

Everyone wanted to meet him.

So, it could be said that this biannual celebration was held in his honor.

If he did not attend, the celebration would be in vain!

“Boast all you can! The celebration will go on with or without you.”
Iris replied, glaring at him.

She thought the man was just talking nonsense.

“As for me, I want to see how my dream lover looks like. Just imagine that! Oh! I’m so excited!”

Levi frowned as he asked, “What? Your dream lover?”

When did I become the man of her dreams?

“Absolutely! The mysterious boss has always been my dream lover! The day we meet, I shall look my best, even more attractive than Zoey!”

Iris cried excitedly, like a teenager in love.

Levi was speechless!

The man glared at her and replied, “At your best? As if he hasn’t seen you before.”

Puzzled, Iris replied, “What did you say? The boss has seen me before?”

“Absolutely. There isn’t one staff member that he hasn’t met, including Zemo the cleaner and Lewis the chef.” Levi replied.

Iris’ countenance changed.

Finally, she realized what the matter was about.

They did not know who the boss was, but that did not mean that he had not met them.

“Oh, that’s not the same. This is our first official meeting! I must look beautiful! Possibly, it’s the start of a romance.”

Iris was fantasizing about the first meeting and her expression was full of sweet dreams.

“Poof!”

Levi was repulsed.

Iris is secretly in love with me?

She’s my wife’s good friend!

“You look fine just the way you are. There’s no need to make up or dress up.” Levi told her.

“Don’t worry. I’m not doing it for you!”

Iris gave Levi a prideful glare. Then she turned around and left.

The remaining days were spent getting ready for the biannual celebration.

The news spread quickly to South City, North Hampton and then the whole of Quebec.

Although the Morris Group was low-key, everyone knew that after the reshuffling of the major players in North Hampton and South City, the biggest beneficiary was the mysterious boss behind the company.

Everyone was curious about him!

All of them wanted to know who he was.

The Protector Chapter 821

Within half a year, he had taken Morris Group to the next level.

The Black family called Zoey over when they heard about the news.

“Grandpa, grandma, what’s the matter?” Asked Zoey.

“Zoey, I heard that Morris Group is going to hold its biannual celebration? Are you going to participate?” Asked Meredith anticipatingly.

“Yes. Why are you asking this?”

“That’s great!” Meredith ignored her question and continued asking, “Is it true that the mysterious boss is finally going to show his face?”

“It’s true!”

With a glint of excitement in her eyes, Meredith exclaimed, “That’s great news! I heard he is one of the most edible bachelors! Rumors have it that he has a strong background, which is why he got the last laugh when his company survived the financial market upheavals in North Hampton and South City.”

Robert concurred with his wife, “Indeed! He is a competent man since he managed to get a foothold in the market.”

Meredith coaxed, “Zoey, you should seize this opportunity to get in touch with him! This time we won’t interfere, and you can do as you please.”

“Grandma! What are you talking about?” Zoey was displeased as she regarded Meredith with incredulity, “I already have Levi! How could you ask me to set my cap at another man?”

“Uh-uh!” Meredith feigned an angry look on her face. “You’re still single! What’s wrong with interacting with other men? It’s not against the law, is it?”

Zoey gave a resigned smile. “Grandma, do you really think that the boss of Morris Group would take a fancy on me?”

“It might be impossible for other people to take his fancy, but you’re different! He is always there to help you when you face any difficulty. Don’t you wonder why he treats you differently?”

Zoey’s heart skipped a beat at Meredith’s words as they reminded her of her suspicions.

No one in the world was obliged to lend a helping hand to another person. Except for our family and friends who might step forward out of love, those who offered to help ‘gratuitously’ definitely had ulterior motives.

It had been weighing on her mind, *Why would the boss of Morris Group help me? Is it like what grandma said...*

Does he have feelings for me?

Although none of them had seen the mysterious boss, Zoey knew the boss had his eyes on them.

Meredith persuaded her smilingly, “Zoey, don’t let this opportunity slide! Maybe you would fall for him once you meet him!”

“Alright.” Zoey answered compliantly, giving her grandma a put-off. *I will never fall in love with any man other than Levi. When I meet him, I will ask him why did he help me so that I could return his favor.*

The Black family, on the other hand, held a different thought from Zoey. They believed that if Zoey could win the boss' fancy, it would be in everyone's interest.

Soon, it was Morris Group's biannual celebration.

One day before the celebration, the employees of Morris Group, including Zoey and Levi, were sent to the island.

The Protector Chapter 822

Iris carried her four pieces of luggage, full of her clothing for the trip. She planned to try them on and choose the one that looked best for the celebration.

Levi was rendered speechless by her act. *Iris is making a big thing of it. Will she be angry once she knows that I am the mysterious boss?*

“Levi, I wonder why the boss of Morris Group helped me in the previous times... What are your thoughts on this?” Zoey asked curiously.

“I guess he has fallen head over heels for you because you’re such a gorgeous lady.” Levi replied earnestly.

Zoey gave him a playful punch and mumbled to herself, “There ain’t no such thing as a free lunch; I believe there must be a reason behind his action.”

“Well... Maybe he looks up to you because of your talent. You have made some achievements and contributed to the company, haven’t you?” Levi caressed her hair, trying to put her mind at ease. “That’s it! Relax!”

Iris chimed in as their conversation caught her attention. “I also think that the boss is acting weird! Zoey is not an employee of Morris Group, but why is he treating her so nicely?”

Then, she eyed Levi warily and asked suspiciously, “Don’t tell me that you’re the mysterious boss!”

Levi openly admitted, “Yeah, it’s me. That’s why you don’t need to dress up.”

“Hahaha!” Iris was amused.

Zoey gave a wry smile. *How nice it would be if Levi is the boss of Morris Group... That carries a lot more weight than the identity as the grandson of the Jones family.*

But sadly, it was irrefutable evidence that he had exploited the Jones family when he collected the debt from Vision Group.

After a few hours' drive, they finally arrived at the resort located a few hundred kilometers away from South City. This place was a well-known tourism spot famous for its beautiful scenery.

The hospitable workers welcomed them upon their arrival.

Before the room allocation, the workers repeatedly reminded them to not wander off the island as the residents here were all hard-hitting two-fisted people.

If there happened to be a conflict between them and the villagers, they would find themselves in serious trouble since the latter could easily call out hundreds of men.

Meanwhile, at the Jones Residence, Tyler was reassuring his grandpa, "Grandpa, don't worry! I have it all planned out! This time, I managed to get help from the local tyrant. Levi Garrison will be dead on the remote island, and no one will ever find out about it."

Michael was pleased. "Perfect!"

It turned out that the Joneses knew that Levi was going to attend Morris Group's biannual celebration, so they planned an assassination to get rid of him.

In the resort, everyone was engaged in the preparation work for the celebration, except for the lazy bum — Levi, who was wandering around aimlessly.

Iris was scornful of his behavior. "Hmph! He acts as if he is the boss!"

Kirin arrived soon after.

Iris and the others welcomed him with open arms and allocated the best room to him.

After dinner, Levi left his room and headed toward Kirin's room.

Right at that juncture, Iris and Zoey who were taking a stroll caught glimpse of his figure in the corridor.

Zoey asked curiously, "Where is he going? That isn't the way to his room, is it?"

"Let's follow him, and we'll find out!" Iris grabbed Zoey by the wrist as they followed Levi down the corridor.

The Protector Chapter 823

The two followed Levi all the way to the presidential suite.

Iris was surprised when she saw him standing in front of the presidential suite. “This is Neil Atkinson’s room! Is he looking for Mr. Atkinson?”

Zoey too was curious. “Do they know each other?”

Iris shook her head. “No, they don’t. Mr. Atkinson has come to the company several times, but I have never seen them talking to each other.”

“Then why is he looking for Mr. Atkinson?” Asked Zoey.

“I’ll tell you why... But could you promise that you won’t be angry with me?”

“Sure. Go Ahead.”

Iris planned her speech before saying, “I think Levi is here to ingratiate himself with Mr. Atkinson.”

“Is that so?” Zoey was slightly dejected. “I know Levi pretty well... He is not a fawner!”

Iris shook her head at Zoey’s naivety. “Zoey, Levi is not the guy you used to know anymore. He has been using his identity as the Jones’ grandchild to achieve his successes, so it is no surprise that he would fawn over Neil.”

At this moment, the room door was opened. Kirin noticed that Iris and Zoey were hiding in the dark, spying on them, so he covertly gestured to Levi to leave before slamming the door shut.

The ladies saw Levi shook his head helplessly as he left; they thought Neil had given Levi the cold shoulder.

“Look, he is slighted by Neil!” Iris flashed a smug smile, thinking she had successfully gauged Levi’s mind and his conduct.

Zoey sighed in resignation as the truth was plain as day, so she could do nothing but to accept it.

Levi was once a man with unyielding character; he had always abhorred snobs who were easily swayed.

He would never try to pull strings, bootlick, or use underhand tactics to achieve his goals. However, it seemed like Levi had changed. He was no longer his old self.

...

Levi has yield to reality.

Zoey sighed at the thought of it. *It seems like time and life experiences could really cut a person down to size and dampen his pride.*

In the past, Levi used to be a man full of pride and confidence. But now, his arrogance is long gone with the wind. He is no different from any other ordinary man being weighed down by the burden and hardship of life.

But fortunately, we love each other to the moon and back.

They met Levi on the ground floor. “Where have you been just now?” Asked Iris.

Levi gave her a put-off, “Just walking around... Why are you asking?”

It ascertained their suspicions that Levi was sucking up to Neil when he evaded her question.

“Nothing.” Iris decided not to pursue the matter further.

Just then, one of the employees of Morris Group came running and yelling as soon as he saw Iris, “Ms. Anabelle, something terrible has happened! We’re in big trouble!”

The Protector Chapter 824

Iris frowned slightly as she uttered, "What's wrong? Slow down and tell me what happened."

The employee gabbled in panic, "Just now, a few of us were strolling around. All of a sudden, a group of people appeared and asked for money. We got into an altercation, and they started beating us up. Now, they have held some of our employees captive for ransom."

All of them recalled the resort workers' reminder — the locals were all two-fisted folks who liked to look for trouble.

However, none of them paid heed to the advice as they would never have expected something like this to happen on the island.

"Oh no! It must be Oliver Ross!" With a worried expression, one of the resort workers gibbered, "The bustle of the preparation work for the upcoming celebration must have caught his attention."

"Who is this Oliver Ross?" Asked Levi.

The worker explained, "He's the local tyrant of the underworld; the lake and dozens of the surrounding islands were all his territories. We pay him huge sums of money every year so that he won't disturb the tourists on the island."

Then, he scratched his head in confusion. "Usually, the tourists will be safe as long as they don't wander off the island. But what's wrong with him today? Why did they come onto the island and harm the tourists?"

"Let's go and check it out!"

Soon, everyone arrived at the scene to see six Morris Group employees being tied to the trees. They were flanked by dozen of men.

The leader of the group was a 6'2 feet tall, pot-bellied, menacing-looking man. His intimidating aura suggested that he was none other than Oliver Ross, the local tyrant.

These men instantly fixed their gaze on Iris, Zoey and other female employees, drooling over them.

They could hardly control themselves as none of them had seen so many beautiful women in their lives.

It turned out that they were the ones engaged by the Joneses to get rid of Levi.

“Oliver, what is going on here?” Asked the resort manager, who was shaking like a leaf.

Oliver bellowed, “Just now, we caught them peeing into the lake.”

The employees denied his accusation, “That’s a bloody lie! Why would we pee into the lake? You guys appeared out of nowhere and suddenly asked for protection money. You even beat us up when we refused to pay it.”

“You didn’t?” Oliver sneered, “You guys did it before my very eyes. The lake is my territory, and I have the right to hold all of you captive for what you have done.”

“Sir, the employees of Morris Group are all civilized university graduates. They will not behave like a brute, peeing in the public.” Retorted Iris.

Oliver and his gang flew into a rage upon hearing her words. “What do you mean? Are you trying to say that you guys are noble and we’re brutes?”

“How dare you look down upon us!”

“Huh, I have never seen civilized and cultured people who would pee into a lake!”

The employees countered, “We didn’t! This is a false accusation! We would never do something like that!”

The Protector Chapter 825

“Hah!” The tyrant snorted, “There is no use in denying because we have witnesses!”

“Witnesses? Where are they?” Asked Iris. She knew that Oliver was up to no good.

“Bring them!” Oliver ordered.

The reeds surrounding the lake rustled. The next moment, hundreds of burly men appeared. All of them had murderous expressions on their faces, and they were holding cold weapons.

Iris and the others panicked when the men besieged them.

As white-collar workers, they had never experienced any sorts of violent confrontations since they were under the protection of Seth when they were in North Hampton and South City.

They couldn't help feeling scared in the face of a clash with the locals on a remote island.

Iris was panic-stricken. Unlike in North Hampton or South City, she couldn't get help from anyone on this island.

She was in deep regret of her decision. *I shouldn't hold our biannual celebration at this place... No one would find out even if we are dead here today...*

“We saw them peeing into the lake!”

The staffs of Morris Group were intimidated when hundreds of men roared in unison.

Oliver gave a devilish grin and said, "I have almost three hundred witnesses here. Are you still not going to admit your misconduct?"

At this moment, they realized that they were set up. However, they could do nothing but admit the false allegations.

"Do you still dare to say that you didn't pee into the lake?" Oliver wielded his sword and held one of his captives on sword point.

The staffs were drenched in sweat, and his face was drained of all colors. "I... I did pee in the lake..." He reluctantly admitted.

Oliver pointed his sword at another employee. "What about you?"

"I... I peed as well..."

...

All six of them admitted when Oliver put screws on them.

"Firstly, they have admitted their misconduct. Secondly, I have three hundred witnesses here." Oliver stared at Iris and the others as he continued, "So now, what have you got to say?"

"Fine. I give up." Iris sneered, "Just tell me what you want so that you'll release my employees."

Oliver started to reason with her, "Since you're on our island, you should follow our rules. Your staffs should be heavily punished for their shameful behavior."

His subordinates concurred with him, "That's right! They deserve heavy punishment!"

The employees were almost scared to death.

Oliver proposed, "Ten billion! We can settle this if you agree to..."

"Impossible!" Iris cut in before he could even finish his sentence.

"Young lady, I'm not done yet!" He added, "Besides the ten billion compensation, I want you and your other female colleagues to sleep with me for one night."

The Protector Chapter 826

With a lecherous smile on his face, he uttered, “We can only settle this matter if you agree to my conditions.”

“Hahaha...” His subordinates burst into gales of laughter and exchanged nasty grins with each other.

They had long lusted for Iris, Zoey and other women.

Their boss could have the two stunners while they spent the night with the rest of them.

“Shameless!” Iris was fuming in rage as she never expected them to be so shameless. *Not only did they ask for a sky-high price, but they also even want us to sleep with them!*

No one noticed the grim expression on Levi’s face.

Apparently, they had gotten under his skin. *Those who covet Zoey shall die! I will never let anyone lay a finger on her!*

Oliver leered at Iris and asked, “What do you think?” His face grew serious as he threatened, “If you don’t agree to my conditions, my men won’t let you leave the island.”

As the local tyrant, Oliver could do anything he wanted in his territory as no one dared to stand up against him.

Iris and the others were at his mercy since they were unable to leave the island.

He gave an ultimatum, "You have three seconds to answer me!"

"I..." Iris was at a loss for words.

At that moment, a voice rang out from behind. "As expected of a local tyrant... It looks like you have come up with your own law, huh?"

Everyone turned their heads to look at Levi.

Oliver shifted his gaze at Levi and noticed that, unlike the others who were shuddering in fear, Levi had a good grip of his composure and a smile on his face. *Isn't he afraid?*

"Levi Garrison, aren't you afraid of me?" Asked Oliver.

Levi let out a chuckle.

He wasn't ruffled when someone threatened to cut his throat with a Raysonia katana a few days ago.

He didn't bat an eyelid when ten thousand soldiers besieged him on the battlefield.

Wouldn't it be funny if he were to be afraid of a petty local tyrant?

Without bothering to answer Oliver, Levi lit a cigarette and took a deep puff on it.

Everyone was stunned when they saw him blowing cigarette smoke in Oliver's face.

Where in the world did he find the courage to do that?

How dare he tries to provoke the local tyrant when his safety is in jeopardy?

He must have had a death wish!

“You...” Oliver was also dumbfounded.

As fury surged through him, he snatched the cigarette from Levi’s lips and hurled it to the floor, stubbing it out with his foot.

“I’m going to beat the crap out of you!” Levi roared.

“How dare you snatch my cigarette?” Asked Levi, looking at Oliver in somewhat disbelief.

Oliver was puzzled by Levi’s reaction. “So what? What are you going to do with me?”

“That’s simple. You have your rules, and so do I. You should compensate me for snatching my cigarette. Well... I guess 20 billion will do! Don’t worry, I’m not interested in spending the night with you and your men.”

The Protector Chapter 827

Both Iris and Zoey broke out in a cold sweat when they saw Levi paying the local tyrant back in his own coin. *Is he trying to aggravate the situation?*

Zoey knew that Levi was good at fighting, but she doubted if he could fight against three hundred people.

Oliver and his subordinates were thunderstruck by Levi's shocking remarks.

Did he imitate me just now?

How dare he even asked for 20 billion?!

Is he out of his mind?

Levi raised his brow and said, "I have witnesses who saw you snatching my cigarette just now. Aren't you going to admit your misconduct?"

"I snatched your cigarette, so what? What are you going to do with me, huh?" Oliver went livid with rage.

Levi stood his ground and stared Oliver in the eyes. "I'm now asking for compensation!"

"Levi Garrison, dream on! Don't blame me because you asked for it!" A malicious glint flashed across Oliver's eyes as he ordered, "Take all of them to the resort, except Levi Garrison. I'm looking forward to spending a lovely night with the ladies, so I don't want them to be horrified by the gruesome scene."

His subordinates complied.

“No!” Zoey screamed and resisted. She knew what would be lying ahead of Levi once he was being left alone with Oliver.

With a smile on his face, Levi reassured his wife, “Honey, I will be fine! Wait for me. I’ll come back with 20 billion.”

Oliver was amused. “I’m impressed, mate. You’re still full of big talk when your life is at risk.”

Levi took Oliver by surprise when he slapped his face forcefully. “Are you calling me ‘mate’? Who do you think you are to call me your mate?”

Everyone gaped as they never thought someone would have the courage to give the local tyrant a slap on the face.

For a whole minute, they stood frozen to their spots.

Oliver finally returned to his senses when a wave of excruciating pain hit him. He grimaced in anger, giving Levi the death stare as he ordered, “Kill him!”

Levi waved his hand. “Hold it right there!”

Oliver raised his voice, “Are you afraid? It’s too late now!”

With a confident smile, Levi threw him a question, “I bet someone has sent you to mess with me, am I right?”

The resort owner told him that they had reached a consensus with Oliver that the latter would not cause trouble on the island in return for the former paying huge sums of protection money every year.

But now, Oliver was deliberately messing with him. This showed that someone was scheming against Morris Group.

In addition, Oliver called him by his name even though he had never met him before, which further proved that he was their target.

They had to send Zoey and the others away to kill him.

This was clearly a premeditated assassination!

Levi asked another question, “Do you dare tell me who is the one who wants me dead?”

Oliver was slightly bewildered, but he then gave Levi a pitying look and replied smilingly, “I guess it doesn’t matter telling you the truth. It’s the Jones family from South Hampton! They asked me to kill you and extort money from Morris Group. By the way, I need to thank you as you have made things a lot easier for me by showing up in front of me. The Joneses want you dead, so bid your farewell to the world, mate!”

The Protector Chapter 828

The Jones family! I knew it!

At the present moment, Levi was quite certain that, out of his many enemies, the Joneses were most likely the ones who would assassinate him.

Does my presence really irk them so much?

Levi understood that in the eyes of a prominent family like the Joneses, each person was classified into a social hierarchy and given labels.

To these people, he was right at the bottom of the pyramid, belonging to the lowest class.

As long as he was alive, the Jones family would constantly worry that others would find out his relationship to the family and bring disgrace to them.

The best solution was to get rid of him once and for all!

“Kill him!” Oliver ordered.

The three hundred strong men under him, who were all armed with swords, charged toward Levi at once.

From their imposing manners, it looked like they were determined to hack Levi into pieces!

Whoosh!

A signal flare was ignited, giving off huge plumes of smoke in the air.

Everyone, including Oliver, was shocked by the sudden loud explosive noise and stopped in their tracks while looking at the skies.

Vroom! Vroom! Vroom!

Just one second later, the noise became even louder and more intense.

Hundreds of drones, which were travelling at fast speeds, appeared in the air.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Suddenly, flames were seen spurting out from the drones in all directions. A web of fire was formed in midair and came crashing down toward the ground.

Thuck! Thuck! Thuck!

Oliver's subordinates were shot at their wrists and blood jetted out from their wounds.

Clang! Clang!

Sounds of metal hitting the ground could be heard continuously as the men dropped their weapons.

Ouch! Ahhh!

Each of them were holding onto their wrists as they let out agonizing cries of pain.

Just one round of attack was sufficient to cripple Oliver's subordinates and render them immobile.

That was the power of drones.

Not only were they useful for tracking purposes, but they could also double up as firearms.

Oliver was completely dumbfounded.

He stood motionless on the spot and was at a loss.

However, that was just the beginning.

Boom!

Deafening noises which sounded like rolls of thunder erupted the next instant.

At the same time, beams of bright light shone from the sky, illuminating the surrounding area and blinding Oliver and the rest of the people.

Helicopter!

Military helicopters were hovering in the air!

Lasers from the helicopters were pointed at the men's faces.

It wasn't difficult to guess what that meant.

The tyrant and his people were probably being targeted by sniper rifles!

They knew that if they move, they would be shot at immediately.

Vroom! Vroooooom!

That was not all! A loud noise suddenly sounded from the adjacent lake, accompanied by a gust of strong wind that created huge waves on the surface of the lake.

It turned out that dozens of naval ships were sailing toward the shore.

Armed soldiers disembarked from the vessels and aimed their weapons at Oliver and his men.

Immediately, the number of red dots pointing to Oliver and his subordinates increased exponentially.

The tyrant, who had already fallen into a complete state of panic, dropped his weapon to the ground at once.

His wobbly knees finally gave way and he collapsed onto the ground with fear.

The Protector Chapter 829

All his subordinates fell to their knees, one after another, covering their heads with their hands.

They had never expected that Levi would be so difficult to deal with!

It's the military!

Does that mean Levi Garrison is also from the military?

“So do you still want to get rid of me?” Levi laughed mirthlessly.

“Boohoo... “

Oliver, the local tyrant, was scared to tears and had even wet his pants.

Levi let out a sarcastic smile and said, “I’m sure this local tyrant has been constantly terrorizing everyone who passes by here. This threat should be eradicated once and for all!”

After giving his instructions, Levi walked away and left it to his men to tie up the loose ends.

All he knew was that there would be no local tyrant from then on.

As for the helicopters, they were mobilized with just one phone call from Kirin.

When Levi returned to the hotel afterwards, everyone was stunned to see him safe and sound. The man was even behaving as if nothing happened.

“Are you alright?” Zoey asked while carefully sizing him up.

“Why wouldn’t I be?” Levi answered smilingly.

“How’s that possible? What happened to the local tyrant?” Iris stared at him in disbelief.

“Oh, I’ve gotten rid of him! Don’t worry, we can all sleep in peace tonight.” Levi grinned.

However, Iris was not convinced and headed outside with a few other people to verify his words. A tranquil sight greeted them and there was no trace that a fight had occurred.

“What happened?” It was inconceivable to Iris, whose eyes had widened.

“Told you, I’ve already gotten rid of him!” Levi smiled coolly.

Just then, the owner of the resort rushed over and exclaimed, “I’ve wonderful news! Oliver Ross, the local tyrant, and his group have been annihilated. From now onward, the dozens of surrounding islands, including us, no longer have to be constantly on our toes, for fear that he will pick on us!”

Both Zoey and Iris turned their attentions to Levi when they heard what the man said.

“Was it really you?”

“Well, there’s nothing I can do if you don’t believe me.” Levi shrugged and spread his hands helplessly.

Just then, a thought struck Zoey. She pulled Iris aside and said, “It’s not Levi.”

“Then who could it be?” The friend asked curiously.

“Your boss, of course!” Zoey prompted Iris, who then smacked herself on the head and exclaimed, “Oh my God! How could I not have thought of that? I must have been too overwhelmed with shock, that’s why! With both our boss and Mr. Atkinson around, there’s nothing I need to be afraid of! It’s as easy as pie for them to handle the local tyrant!”

Zoey chuckled and replied, “Exactly! The local tyrant is nothing as compared to the omnipotent mysterious boss.”

“Oh right, it has suddenly occurred to me that he hasn’t arrived yet. He is supposed to attend tomorrow’s ceremony, so he will definitely be here right?” Iris asked uncertainly.

“Actually, he might already be here!” Zoey had a strong gut feeling about it.

“Are you saying that he is hidden amidst the crowd?” Iris had a shocked expression on her face.

Zoey nodded, “I think the real owner of Morris Group is among the people present. In fact, he might be disguised as one of the employees!”

The Protector Chapter 830

Wham!

Zoey's words hit Iris like lighting.

That was a strong possibility.

Otherwise, how else would the boss be so clear about the happenings in the company?

It didn't seem possible for him to have heard all of those from someone else.

The only explanation was that he had experienced everything firsthand as an employee of the company.

Who could it be?

For both ladies, Levi was the first person to be eliminated from their lists of possible candidates.

They had not even considered Levi due to his status in the Jones family.

“Let me try finding out from Mr. Atkinson!”

Iris and Zoey visited Neil in his room together.

“Mr. Atkinson, has our boss arrived yet?” Iris asked expectantly while feeling slightly nervous.

“Yeah, he’s already here.” Kirin gave a positive reply.

“So, was it our boss who helped to settle the matter with the local tyrant earlier on?” Iris continued asking.

“That’s right, he did step in and help to extinguish that group of people.”

Kirin answered both questions honestly without concealing any facts.

When Kirin finished speaking, Iris and Zoey exchanged glances and said softly to each other, “Indeed, it has got nothing to do with Levi.”

“You said our boss is already here? Where is he staying at then? I’ve reserved the best room in the resort for him.” Iris asked expectantly.

Kirin shook his head and answered, “Yup, he’s here, or maybe it’s more accurate to say that he has been here all the while. I don’t know where he is staying at though!”

“What? He can’t really be one of the employees, right?” Iris gaped in astonishment.

“Yup, he is!” Neil confirmed her doubts.

Wham!

Kirin’s reply was another huge blow to Iris.

That was indeed the case.

The mysterious boss of Morris Group was one of the employees whom she might have unknowingly interacted with on a daily basis.

That also meant that he was aware of her every single move.

It was exactly like what Levi had told her— *At your best? As if he hasn't seen you before.*

Who could it be?

Iris started running through each male employee the company had in her mind.

However, given the massive scale of the company, it seemed to be an impossible task as there were many employees whom Iris had not yet met.

There was no way she could easily determine which one of them was their boss.

“Will he be revealing himself tomorrow?” Iris wondered.

“That’s the plan.” Kirin answered clearly.

“Mr. Atkinson, is our boss good-looking?” Iris was filled with anticipation as she asked that.

“He’s better looking than me at least!” Kirin laughed.

Iris was getting increasingly excited and could not wait to meet the boss after hearing Kirin’s words. “Is he married? Or rather, is he currently attached?”

With a pensive smile on his face, the man replied, “He’s still single and not married yet!”

Well, he wasn’t lying.

Levi and Zoey had already divorced, so technically-speaking, he was a single man.

Iris' heart was already fluttering uncontrollably by then.

He's the man of my dreams!

Boss, here I come!

The woman had made up her mind to pursue her boss and was already devising all sorts of strategies in her head.

Zoey was amused while she looked at her friend behaving like a teenage girl in love.

She had never seen Iris so enchanted and being so serious over a man.

After they left Kirin's room, Zoey teased, "You should get some rest. I'm worried that you would be too excited to sleep tonight."

The Protector Chapter 831

It was a long night for Iris.

In fact, she did not manage to fall asleep at all.

She felt extremely lethargic the next morning and when she looked into the mirror, she could see obvious dark circles under her eyes.

The woman had gotten out of bed early to dress up and put on makeup.

Even though their mysterious boss had already met her in person, she had not presented her best front to him.

Iris was determined to appear in front of him looking stunning. She wanted to be the most beautiful woman in his eyes.

Meanwhile, Zoey did not have a restful night as well. All this while, she had been curious about the identity of that mysterious man and was hoping to have a chance to thank him in person later.

However, she received a phone call early in the morning, alerting her that something serious happened to her entertainment company and that her presence was required immediately.

When Levi heard that, he made arrangements for Zoey to head back immediately and also sent someone to protect her.

Levi had planned to reveal his identity as the owner of Morris Group to Zoey that day.

He had not accounted for such a sudden disruption but there was nothing much he could do about it.

“You should hurry back. Give me a call if you need help!” Levi urged her.

After an eventful morning, the ceremony was finally due to commence at 9 a.m.

Levi arrived at the event venue together with Seth and his team.

As it was an internal event, there were no reporters around.

Following Seth and the security team, Iris made a grand entrance, looking dazzling in her gorgeous cocktail dress.

Being a natural beauty, she was looking as angelic as a goddess after putting in the effort to doll up.

The aura she exuded was overwhelming and even more imposing than most top models or celebrities.

Iris was very satisfied with her appearance that day after getting countless admiring stares from the crowd.

Surely, he would be happy with my look today?

Iris scanned her surroundings, hoping to catch a clue on who that mysterious boss might be.

After Iris and Kirin summarized Morris Group's achievements for the preceding year, it was time to reward the employees.

It turned out that the Audi cars Levi previously purchased had all been given out.

The updated recognition policy of the company was to either give out monetary rewards to the employees for each contribution they made or to incorporate the amount into their year-end bonuses.

That was why Morris Group's employees were a motivated bunch!

Not only were they receiving competitive remunerations, but they could also do their parts for the society in the meantime.

It was truly a wonderful company to work at.

For young graduates, Morris Group was very often their first choice prospective employer.

The awards presentation was completed smoothly and next up was the most anticipated moment of the night—the mysterious boss of Morris Group was about to reveal himself!

Only Seth, Elena and a handful of other people present knew Levi's true identity.

All the others were kept in the dark.

Iris was breathing heavily and her heart was thumping so hard as if it was going to explode.

She was finally going to meet the man of her dreams and took the chance during that interval to make sure that she was still looking impeccable...

Iris took a deep inhale and readied herself to welcome her mysterious boss.

“Very soon, our very own boss of the Morris Group would be coming up on stage.”

“Everyone, please give a round of applause for him!”

Clap! Clap! Clap!

A thunderous applause erupted as everyone clapped enthusiastically.

Kirin turned toward a corner and shouted, “Boss, stop hiding!”

The Protector Chapter 832

Most people, including Iris, turned their gazes toward the same direction as well.

Everyone was in shock.

Could the mysterious boss really be someone among the crowd?

Everyone wondered as they turned their heads around.

Wham!

Iris was thunderstruck when she noticed that Kirin was looking toward Levi and his security team.

You've got to be kidding me?

The mysterious boss is someone in the security team?

Iris was familiar with the guys in the security team.

For a moment, she thought it could be Seth, but he wasn't better looking than Neil. Furthermore, his personality was too reckless and was also too old to be the boss.

Who else is there then?

Iris could not seem to think of any person who fitted the description of their boss.

Well, there was Levi, but he was the first person who got eliminated by Zoey and also Iris herself.

Who else could it be?

Just then, Levi, who was right next to Seth, stood up suddenly and strode toward the stage.

WHAM!

That was the final blow to Iris. It was as if her world just came crashing down. The woman could not believe what she was seeing at that moment!

Levi...?

Oh my God! It's Levi!

What in the world!

Unbelievable!

Iris was shocked to the core and stood motionlessly on the spot.

She was unable to snap out of her daze and merely watched him approaching the stage.

“Huh? It's him?”

“Levi is our mysterious boss? That's impossible!”

“Goodness! There's no way I'm gonna believe this. How can he be the boss?”

The entire scene was thrown into a frenzy as discussions ensued among the people present. It definitely came as a surprise for most people.

That was because Levi had never been taken seriously in the office before.

He was even a thorn in the eyes to the majority of his co-workers.

After all, Levi had been fired from the company once as a result of an unanimous vote by the rest of the employees.

When he rejoined the company, everyone treated him as a good-for-nothing and most of the employees were not very fond of him.

No one would have thought that the leader of Morris Group would be Levi!

The senior executives of the company were particularly dumbstruck by the sudden revelation!

They finally understood why was it that their boss knew everything that went on in the company. It was exactly because he was also one of them and had witnessed everything with his own eyes.

Furthermore, Levi was in a favorable position to observe the company's daily activities.

He was aware of every action of employees of all levels, from the lower-level staff such as the security team and the cleaners, to the upper management, including Iris.

Thud!

The minute Levi stepped on the stage, everyone's hearts did a double somersault and their gazes were focused on him intently.

Levi took over the microphone and said smilingly, “Hi everyone, I’m Levi! And I’m also your boss!”

That came like a bolt from the blue.

Everyone still found it hard to believe and could feel their scalps prickle.

Some could even feel their blood pressures shoot up.

As for Iris, she was completely numbed with shock and stood frozen on the spot.

After hearing Levi’s speech, she slowly turned her head and looked at the man in disbelief. “You... you’re the boss of Morris Group?”

The Protector Chapter 833

Levi grinned and replied, "Have I ever said I am not? I remember telling you a long time ago that I own the Morris Group! Oh, by the way, you look gorgeous today."

Boom!

Levi's definitive reply was another huge blow to Iris, whose mind went blank, as if she had just been struck by lightning.

She could not believe that the very first person to be eliminated from her consideration was actually the boss!

Levi? Our mysterious boss?

It was entirely unimaginable to Iris, who was truly shook to the core.

It felt as unreal as a dream to her.

However, things started to make sense to her once she cleared her mind and thought about it.

Throughout that period of time, it was always Levi who saved the day whenever the Morris Group encountered difficulties.

Iris had assumed that Levi got those instructions from the boss, but little did she know that he was the boss himself!

Suddenly, she was able to piece the details together.

The boss of Morris Group had helped Zoey time after time, including buying the company at the auction for her and clearing any obstacles that were in her way.

He had basically made sure that Zoey was able to progress smoothly without any difficulties.

Who else, other than Levi, would have done all of those?

The various clues had all pointed to Levi being the mysterious boss!

Other than him, no one else would be able to accomplish all that he had.

It was Iris who had jumped to conclusions and ruled out Levi right from the start.

Besides, Neil had not lied to them.

What he told them was the truth.

The boss was single and also an employee...

Iris was unwilling to accept the reality as it was a world of difference from her original expectations.

How could it be Levi!

All her hopes were dashed.

Iris had done so much to impress the boss with the hope that their meeting would be the start of a beautiful fairy-tale.

In the end, that person was Levi!

The man of her dreams was her best friend's darling!

Just then, Levi, who was still at the microphone, let out a chuckle as he noticed the stunned faces of everyone present. "Guys, please don't be too shocked. It might be easier for everyone to process it if you think about these two points. First, the fact that I was able to establish Levi Group and succeeded under unfavorable circumstances was a testament to my abilities. Second, the reason for the change in name of the company to Morris Group was in remembrance of my best friend, Morris Atkinson."

Everyone quickly grasped the situation after Levi's enlightenment.

Why else would the company suddenly change its name from Levi Group to Morris Group?

Obviously, it had to be Levi's doing!

Almost everyone's faces were flushed red with embarrassment after recalling themselves voting for Levi to be fired previously.

And it turned out that he was their boss!

"Don't worry, I am very open-minded and won't bear grudges. Nothing else matters to me as long as you give your best at work and uphold high ethical standards."

The employees let out a huge sigh of relief simultaneously upon hearing that.

"Everyone, let's cheers to Morris Group's bright future!" The boss beamed as he raised his wine glass.

After Levi finished his speech and went off stage, Iris was the only person who was still behaving awkwardly as she brooded over how she was going to face Zoey.

“Ms. Anabelle, please come over for a moment, I would like to have a word with you!” Levi called out to Iris.

The Protector Chapter 834

Levi chose a secluded corner to talk to Iris and when it was just the both of them, Iris did not even dare to look at the man in the eye.

“Hey, why are you not looking at me? Are you really in love with me?”

As soon as Levi said that, Iris jolted her head up and replied, “Why would I be?”

“I’ve something serious to discuss with you!”

“What is it?”

“Please don’t let Zoey know about this yet. I intend to reveal my identity to her during our wedding and give her a surprise. You have to keep it a secret for me yeah!” Levi requested.

“Sure, that’s not a problem. I have a question though. What happened during the six years when you were in jail?” Iris asked, feeling baffled.

“The truth is, I have never been in jail! I’ll tell you more about it in due time.” Levi smiled.

The ceremony lasted all the way till night and everyone went back home the next morning.

Levi was very concerned about Zoey, who left in a hurry to deal with the unforeseen event which had happened in her entertainment company.

He headed straight to Zoey's office once he reached Morris Group.

Only after seeing Zoey in her office did he feel slightly relieved.

"What happened?" He asked.

Zoey took a deep breath before replying, "Someone splashed acid on Helena's face and disfigured her!"

"What?! Who could be so vicious!" Levi bellowed furiously.

"The culprit managed to escape and is still at large! Helena is currently receiving treatment in the hospital but things are not looking good. The doctors informed us that the only way for her to regain her looks is to undergo cosmetic surgery! Not only is this a huge blow to her career, but the company would also be suffering serious losses as well." Zoey sighed.

Levi understood that Helena was currently at the peak of her career and her sudden disfigurement would have an immense negative impact on the company, as well as her future as a celebrity.

The artiste would most likely have to retire from the entertainment industry after that.

"It's obvious that someone is trying to destroy my company! I will find out who did this!" Zoey said coldly.

Levi figured that it was likely that the Jones family was behind that.

It was possible that the Joneses had changed their target to Zoey after their failed attempt to kill Levi.

They are out to ruin everything for me.

“Oh yeah, there’s something else. All of Star Entertainment’s resources have suddenly been cut off and we have been barred from utilizing anything. It’s just so strange. Could it be linked to Helena’s disfigurement?”

A cold glint flashed across Levi’s eyes.

By then, he was pretty sure that the Joneses were the ones behind all those.

The Jones family was the main shareholder of Star Entertainment and definitely had the power to control the allocation of resources.

Damn you, Jones family!

Even the nicest person would retaliate when being driven up the wall!

Do you really think that I, Levi Garrison, am that big of a pushover?

Just then, he received a call from Wales.

Wales sneered, “I’m sure you’re already aware of what happened. All I can say is that you’re a really lucky punk! Treat this as a warning to you for using the Joneses’ name. If you dare to do it again, you won’t be our only target!”

Levi’s gaze suddenly became terrifyingly cold.

He understood that Wales was implying that his next target would be Zoey!

The Protector Chapter 835

At the Jones Residence in South Hampton.

Wales hung up the phone and smirked. "I can't believe Levi is trying to challenge the Joneses. He's going to regret it."

Tyler sighed. "This brat sure is lucky. He actually managed to escape this time!"

"We need to get rid of him! Otherwise, I'll never be able to rest easy! The Joneses are destined to surpass the Goel family and rise to the top of South Hampton! How can we allow such scum to be associated with us? He's just like that wretch of a mother of his. Thank god we chased her out of the family early on. If not we could be knee-deep in her crap!" Michael growled.

"Don't worry, Grandpa. We'll regroup and come up with a better plan. I promise to dispose of Levi before the Jones family anniversary meeting," Tyler and Wales proclaimed confidently.

Michael was eager to get rid of Levi because the Jones family anniversary meeting was just on the horizon.

Every branch of the Jones family all over Erudia will be in attendance.

This anniversary meeting was going to take place at the Jones residence in South Hampton, and it was of the utmost importance to the Joneses.

The spotlight of Erudia would be beating down on them.

This is why everything has to go well. Not even a fraction of an error will be condoned.

A pest like Levi needs to be eradicated before then.

*If the rest of the family finds out we have a homeless b*stard for a grandson, we're sure to become the joke of the family.*

We'll never live it down.

Under no circumstances can I allow such a thing to happen.

Nothing is more valuable than dignity.

Every trace of Levi has to be destroyed!

“Many members of the Jones family will be at the upcoming anniversary meeting, including the Chillshire and Southlake branches! All I ask is that we trample all of them beneath our feet to emerge as the most powerful Joneses among the Jones diasporic families in all of Erudia!” Michael bellowed.

Every anniversary meeting included a competitive segment. The South Hampton Jones family was unable to live up to expectations during the previous two meetings. Hence, Michael was placing all his hopes on this one.

“We were just unsure of ourselves at the previous meetings! The Chillshire branch is comparable to us, after all. However, this time everything will be different! Anson is not only a member of the Iron Brigade but is also the right-hand man of the God of War! The other families don't stand a chance!”

Michael shook his head as well. “They won't stand a chance!”

“Moreover, even the warlord Elijah has to bow down before us. How can the other families even hope to compare?”

“They won’t be able to!”

“Lastly, and also most importantly, our family has the God of War backing us. He accepted our sword as a gift two days ago, signifying his allegiance to us! The other family branches aside, even the Goel family can’t hold a candle to us!” Anson exclaimed, bursting with pride.

“Exactly! With the God of War by our side, we’ll be able to cut down our enemies in seconds!”

“I can’t wait for the anniversary meeting! It’s going to be spectacular!”

Michael kept his gaze straight as he prayed for time to fast forward.

A thought struck him. “We have to completely erase Levi from existence!” Michael shrieked passionately.

The Protector Chapter 836

“We cannot allow the rest of the Joneses to find out I have such a grandson. It also goes without saying that we have to prevent him from appearing at the anniversary meeting! Otherwise, we’ll be humiliated for the rest of our lives!” Michael sneered.

“Don’t worry, Grandpa. I’ll take care of it myself!”

A murderous glint flashed across Tyler’s eyes.

Meanwhile, Levi was livid after receiving Wales’ call warning him.

The audacity of the Jones family.

It looks like they’re gearing up to launch an attack on me and Zoey.

If so, they can’t blame me for retaliating! I’ll make them pay!

“Let’s go! We have to see Helena!”

When the pair arrived at the hospital, they were greeted by Helena’s bandaged face.

Yet, she remained composed.

The moment she caught sight of them, she burst into tears.

A woman's greatest asset was her looks, after all.

"The Jones family must pay!"

He clenched his fists tightly.

"How is she, doctor?" Levi enquired.

"Her burns are extremely serious! There's no chance of her recovering her original features unless she undergoes plastic surgery."

The doctor's response pierced Zoey and Helena like a deadly arrow.

They knew that even if the plastic surgery were a success, Helena would still be unable to regain her natural countenance.

Helena would rather not go through with the operation.

"I won't get plastic surgery! I would rather end up looking like some horrible beast!"

Helena still had her pride.

She knew that her career was essentially over.

"Doctor, can I take a look at the report?" Levi asked.

When he was handed the report, Levi studied it carefully.

He possessed impressive medical skills, honed from experiencing thousands of battles.

After meticulously going over the report, Levi's brows slowly relaxed.

She could be saved!

There's a way to save her!

There was a military doctor named Fredrick Greg in the Iron Brigade. He came from a family of traditional medicine practitioners but was also competent in other medical disciplines.

In fact, he was at the forefront of the entire medical field.

In order to repay his country, he volunteered to be deployed as a military doctor on the battlefield.

He and Levi had been inseparable on the battlefield. They cheated death together on numerous occasions.

He's saved my life more times than I can count.

All my medical knowledge comes from watching and learning from him.

My back full of scars is even more serious than Helena's condition.

But Greg has said that he would be able to remove all my scars. He said he would be able to wipe them all clean.

If he can even salvage these old and ingrained injuries, Helena's case should be nothing to him.

He'll definitely be able to help Helena!

He can give her her old face back!

“Don’t worry girls, I have a way to help Helena regain her original face!” Levi cried out excitedly.

Neither of the women believed him.

In fact, not one person present believed him.

After all, her case had been deemed unsalvageable by the best burn specialist in South City.

It was rational to doubt that a normal person like Levi could prove him wrong.

The Protector Chapter 837

Helena gave Levi a wry smile. “Thank you for trying to help, Levi. I know you’re just trying to make me feel better. Don’t worry about me. I’ll be fine!”

Zoey rolled her eyes at Levi. “Levi, you shouldn’t give her false hopes! You’re hurting her rather than helping.”

“Do you really think I’m lying to protect her feelings? I truly have a plan!” Levi spread his hands out in exasperation.

The doctor shot him a glare. “Why don’t you take a crack at it then, since you claim to have a solution?”

“I can’t do it. But I know someone who can!” Levi announced.

“Just leave! The patient needs to rest! The more nonsense you spout the worse her mood will be. She needs to stay positive in order to recover.”

The doctor and nurses shooed Levi out of the room.

No one believes me!

Of course, they find it ridiculous that such a severe degree of burn can be repaired.

It seems impossible unless she goes through plastic surgery.

Levi was incredibly vexed.

With one wave of his hand, Azure Dragon materialized by his side.

“Azure Dragon, head to the Northern Region and fetch Fredrick here!” Levi ordered.

“Yes, sir!”

Azure Dragon immediately set off.

Levi also sent Phoenix out to find the person who poured sulfuric acid on Helena.

No one is going to escape my wrath, Jones family or otherwise.

While Levi continued to plot, Tyler and Wales were doing the same.

Wales had a simple proposal. He wanted to dispatch a few assassins to dispose of Levi.

“A few assassins won’t be enough to end Levi’s life. I heard that he has some tricks up his sleeve. The fact that he belongs to the Morris Group also makes things more difficult. The God of War is in South City with the troops. If we send out assassins and they fail, the consequences will be dire. The God of War could sniff them out with both eyes closed!” Tyler’s tone was disapproving as he analyzed the situation out loud.

“You’re right. If we want Levi gone, we can’t leave any loose ends. His very existence needs to vanish,” Wales assented.

“Exactly! If we want Levi to disappear, the killer also needs to leave no trail behind. We need to engage the best of the best!” Wales concluded.

Tyler nodded in agreement.

Wales' eyes lit up. "Do you already have someone in mind, Tyler?"

"I do! Have you heard of Assassin 47?" Tyler asked.

"What? The foreign The King of Assassins known only as Assassin 47, whose fee is upward of ten million and who killed 1899 people in the ten years he's been active?" Wales' pitch rose as he jumped to his feet.

"The one and only Assassin 47. He's already on a plane on his way to Erudia."

Tyler nodded.

"Is it overkill to hire The King of Assassins just to kill Levi?"

"It is overkill! But we need to guarantee Levi's complete annihilation. Thus, it'll be worth it!"

The Protector Chapter 838

A trace of hardened determination streaked across Tyler's gaze. His resolution to wipe out Levi could not be more apparent.

"Let's see how you escape your doom this time, Levi." Tyler sniggered menacingly.

Tyler chuckled gleefully as well.

They were finally going to get Levi out of their hair.

The two men beamed like children on Christmas morning.

The anniversary meeting is definitely going to be an event to remember.

We're going to be the center of attention!

"Oh yeah, Grandpa wants us to invite the God of War to the anniversary meeting!"

Tyler suddenly remembered their grandfather's instructions.

"Do you think the God of War will come?" Wales asked doubtfully.

The God of War is our family's trump card for subduing the rest of the Jones family.

If he doesn't come, the South Hampton Joneses will be finished!

“Don't worry, he will! Uncle Anson has already sent word. He has probably already greeted the God of War. If we invite him now, he's sure to come. He has also accepted our gift. It's a sign that he will protect our family,” Tyler replied with confidence as a wide grin crept over his face.

“Great! Let's send him the invite now!” Wales replied with a smile of his own.

At the same time, Phoenix swiftly rounded up the perpetrators, then Levi locked them all up temporarily.

The Jones family is next. They'll regret ever crossing me.

At this moment, Mike Pence personally delivered the invite to the Jones family anniversary meeting.

After reading the invite, a smile spread across Levi's face. “The once in a decade Jones family anniversary meeting in South Hampton?”

“Yes, sir! The South Hampton Jones family humbly seeks your attendance at the anniversary meeting!” Mike said politely.

“Fine. Mike, tell the Joneses I'll be there! I'll personally attend it!”

Levi's gaze shone sinisterly.

All grievances shall be settled at the anniversary meeting.

When Mike informed the Jones brothers of the God of War's attendance, the brothers immediately set off for South Hampton.

They reported the news to the rest of the family as soon as they could.

The Jones family erupted with delight and Michael's face was flushed with elation.

"I, Michael Jones, have waited for this day for almost seventy years! This time, the Joneses from South Hampton shall step into unending glory!" Michael screamed with overwhelming exuberance.

If the God of War comes, the entire event will unfold within the palm of my hand. Nobody will be able to threaten me anymore!"

"All of you must remember to keep the God of War's attendance at the anniversary meeting a secret! Under no circumstances can it be leaked out!" Michael anxiously warned.

It's best to keep this under wraps first. When we reveal him at the anniversary meeting, it'll shock everyone. By then, we'll be instantly propelled to the top.

"How's the situation with Levi coming along?"

The Protector Chapter 839

Levi is just like a pest. I won't be able to rest easy until he's completely gone.

“Grandpa, the foreign King of Assassins 47 is scheduled to arrive today. Levi will draw his last breath tonight!” Tyler smirked viciously.

“Good. Well done!” Michael praised.

“Dad, we've settled the issue about Levi, but what about his wretch of a Mother Emma Jones?” Wallace questioned.

“Yeah! She smeared the Jones family name! She'll definitely embarrass us!”

The family members buzzed in discussion.

“No worries. She won't! Emma Jones was sent to a prison in Oakland City ages ago! She'll never be able to step foot out of there!” Michael coldly replied.

“Really? She's in jail? Here I was wondering where she has been all this time.” The family members were all shocked by this revelation.

The Jones family had always assumed that she went missing.

They had no idea she was situated right in the middle of North and South Hampton.

“We can forget about her! The wretch is getting what she deserves! She’ll never be able to shame us again! Don’t mention her from now on. The Garrison family will be pissed off if they ever hear about it.”

Michael’s order promptly sealed the lips of everyone present.

At the same time, at the South City International Airport, a foreign international airplane slowly descended upon South City.

Shortly after, a man with a towering figure, dressed in a hoodie and cap emerged. A mask further obscured his face from view.

He was carrying two large suitcases.

“How strange. He’s carrying two enormous but empty suitcases!”

“This foreigner is probably trying to steal our resources.”

The luggage security checker and airport staff mumbled in surprise to each other.

The man then made a beeline for the restroom.

He soon walked back out.

Now, he was dressed in a completely different attire.

He was outfitted in a leather jacket and black aviators. He looks like a whole other person.

Even the suitcases were different.

He was completely unrecognizable from minutes before!

He was Assassin 47.

The foreign King of Assassins with the codename 47.

Ever since entering the profession ten years ago, he had never failed in any of his jobs.

His past targets included wealthy elites, political figures as well as members of the military.

He was a cold-blooded killer.

Along with the job came the inevitability of being on the international wanted list. He ranked SSS on it, which was the category reserved for the most dangerous individuals in the world.

His presence was enough to turn the tables in any situation, regardless of the magnitude.

Once he exited the airport, he climbed into a taxi and handed the driver a piece of paper.

There was an address written on it.

Soon, they arrived at the written address.

Around him were several buildings still in the midst of being built.

The man quickly arrived on the top floor.

After surveying his surroundings and ensuring that he was safe, Assassin 47 opened the suitcase.

It was no longer empty.

The Protector Chapter 840

There were several weapons concealed inside.

His arsenal included a pistol, SMG, sniper rifle and even a rocket launcher.

He also had a dagger, a katana and other secret gadgets.

These had all been prepared by the Jones family.

They had discreetly swapped the empty case for the one full of weapons with him at the airport.

Assassin 47 went through his supplies. When he was done, he smiled broadly.

He was clearly satisfied with the provided resources.

In a flash, he stabbed a dagger through a picture on the wall.

The person in the punctured photo was Levi Garrison.

Assassin 47 locked his gaze onto the photo as the corner of his lip curled upward malevolently.

Levi was nothing but another prey to him.

He fished out a phone and dialed a number. "I'm here. The target will be taken care of tonight! Wire the money over now!" Assassin 47 barked curtly.

"Understood!"

Tyler, who was on the other side of the call, immediately transferred ten million into Assassin 47's offshore account.

He made payment before the job was done as he had unquestionable faith in the man's abilities.

Moreover, the killer had a reputation he needed to uphold and his own rules to live by, one of which included payment upfront.

In the close to two thousand targets he had encountered, none had managed to escape him.

These reasons allowed Tyler to trust him wholly.

Once Assassin 47 checked that the money had arrived in his account, he destroyed the phone.

He had to obliterate any connection between himself and the Jones family.

This was the terrifying reality of being a top assassin.

After killing the target, one had to evaporate into thin air.

Naturally, an assassin cannot be traced to his employer.

Even if he died during the job, his employers would remain anonymous.

Being the King of Assassins, this man could accomplish this better than anyone.

His competence was what justified such exorbitant fees.

Regardless of the target, he never missed.

Assassin 47 carved the image of Levi into his mind and proceeded to burn the picture.

He neatly separated the weapons, concealing each one on his person. Only the rocket launcher was left to be hand-carried.

Then, he picked up his bag, slung it over his back and popped a piece of gum into his mouth. His eyes glowed with deadly intent.

With a few steps, he strode into the blanket of darkness.

Levi dies tonight!

Levi was still ignorant of the impending danger.

He was at the hospital tonight.

Azure Dragon had just delivered Fredrick Greg from the Northern Region.

“God of War!” Fredrick respectfully and enthusiastically greeted him.

“Thank you for coming,” Levi replied.

“Fredrick, I asked you here for a private favor. Sorry for the trouble.”

Fredrick wiped tears away from his eyes and smiled. “God of War, my life is in your hands. Please don’t hold back and ask away.”

“Okay then. Please come this way to see the patient!”

Levi was about to lead Fredrick into the ward when they were blocked.

“Who are you? A doctor? A doctor from where? Why have you come to our hospital?”

The Protector Chapter 841

Helena's attending doctor, Keith Shawn, was a responsible man. Upon seeing that a stranger was giving treatment to Helena, he went up to stop him.

"Yes! I'm a doctor!" Fredrick nodded.

"Where is your ID card? Let me have a look," said Keith with concern.

Fredrick had no choice but to take out his green military ID card and handed to him.

Keith took a look, and suddenly, the expression on his face changed.

"You're Fredrick Greg? The military doctor of the Iron Brigade?" Keith asked with great respect.

"You're right. That's me!"

"Wow... You're amazing. I've heard a lot about you! You'd saved so many soldiers before, and you even saved the God of War several times! You are my role model!" Keith was excited.

"You're exaggerating. I'm just doing what I can!" Fredrick shrugged with a beam on his face.

"Please, come in. I believe you can do something about Ms. Engler's face."

Keith then led Fredrick into the ward courteously.

Levi was dumbfounded.

He tried every means to stop me. But when it comes to Fredrick, he invites him in?

After giving Helena a thorough check, Fredrick was confident that Helena could recover, and the treatment period would not take too long.

Compared with Levi's scar treatment, Helena's case was just a piece of cake.

"Let me start first for a week, and you can then follow my instructions and apply herbs on her face for another month. With that, she will recover in no time."

Fredrick told them a specific treatment cycle time, and Helena was overjoyed to hear that. She really looked forward to it.

At the same time, she began to admire Levi a little bit more.

He's so amazing. Where did he find such a great doctor?

After leaving the hospital, Levi and Fredrick returned to the Guardian Mansion.

"God of War...I heard that 47, the King of Assassins, is here in Erudia. But I'm not sure who his target is this time," chatted Fredrick casually.

"47? I know him. He once assassinated an official in the mysterious area of 51st District overseas. But he went into hiding after that. I even heard he took the head of a God of War during a desert battle!" Levi said indifferently.

“But how dare he come here? Erudia is a forbidden place for mercenaries and assassins!” Levi’s stare became intense.

“Exactly! I think he’s way too bold, even though he is the King of Assassins!” Fredrick could not help but snigger.

“I’ll ask Phoenix to check his whereabouts. A killer like him is a potential threat to Erudia even if he’s not doing anything,” said Levi.

Soon, both of them arrived at a desolate block. The place was so empty, and there was no one on the road.

Even the street lights were dim, and they looked like they were going to go out at any time.

It was quite an uncanny and eerie atmosphere.

“Well, this place is so quiet. Guess no one’s gonna bug us back here,” Fredrick laughed at his own jest.

However, Levi did not respond to him and squinted his eyes.

Bang!

The next moment, they heard a gunshot and a bullet was fired.

The Protector Chapter 842

“Watch out!”

With a tremendous lurch, Levi leaped to Fredrick swiftly.

Bang!

A bullet was fired to where they stood and left a fist-sized hole in the wall.

What if the bullet hit our head? We will explode like a watermelon!

“Sniper!” Fredrick screamed before taking a deep breath.

He had had experiences on the battlefield, so he knew exactly what kind of weapon could be so powerful.

Bang!

Before he could react, another gunshot was fired.

Levi and Fredrick continued to dodge.

Another hole appeared in the wall causing the wall to shake continuously.

Bang! Bang!

Bang! Bang!

Bang! Bang!

.....

A series of gunshots were fired by 47, using his sniper rifle in the dark.

Levi and Fredrick had to evade at full tilt.

In the end, they had no choice but to jump into the courtyard and hid behind a bunker quickly.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

However, even the thirty-meter-long bunker collapsed.

It was crashed into pieces by another series of gunshots.

“47!”

Levi and Fredrick looked at each other and immediately knew who he was.

47, the King of Assassins is here for me? Levi chortled.

Well...he's indeed something!

Not only he knew how to occupy the high ground and lock his targets, but he also had consummate sniper skills!

Perhaps, the only person in the world who could escape from his shot was Levi.

Even a master like Alfie might not be able to get away in such a situation.

But when 47, who stood on the high ground, saw Levi get away, he was shocked.

He had never missed his target in the past ten years, and there was no need for him to shoot the second time to vanquish his target completely.

But I have fired ten gunshots today and still couldn't get him. Damn! This is ridiculous!

There was a hint of excitement in 47's eyes.

It was the first time in ten years that he had met such an opponent, and he was getting excited.

And He had never been so excited before.

I must kill him!

It must be a great accomplishment if he were able to kill his target this round.

Hence, without further ado, he jumped down from the twenty-story building and chased Levi from behind.

On the other side, Levi, hiding behind the bunker, was on his nerve. He had to stay alert with movements around him.

In fact, he could hear even the faintest noise around him now.

47 was fast.

In a flash, he had moved a few hundred meters and was close to Levi now.

Clank! Clank! Clank!

While running, 47 assembled his weapons at the same time.

And as soon as he reached the bunker where Levi and Fredrick were hiding, he had the rocket launcher ready.

Snap!

Besides that, he had assembled all his other firearms too.

Running, assembling, and loading the weapons...

47 could do almost everything in one go as if he did them at the same time.

“Go to hell!”

Boom!

47 then fired the bunker where Levi and Fredrick were hiding.

Bang!

The rocket launcher scored a direct hit on the bunkers before they collapsed and were engulfed in flames.

Upon seeing the scenario, 47's lips curled into a grin...

The Protector Chapter 843

You can dodge my shots; let's see if you can hide from such a large-scale attack? Do you think you can escape? Either you're blown up or being burnt alive now!

However, 47 frowned in the next moment.

Because he couldn't see any bodies in the sheet of flame!

There must be traces of bodies either burnt or detonate! Why can't I smell any dead body odor? Don't tell me...

Right then, 47 felt as if someone was watching him.

He felt his scalp went numb, and his hair stood on end. The thought of what might happen next sent shivers down his spine, and he even felt his blood hardened.

As an assassin, he was always the one targeting his prey and was never being targeted.

This was the first time in his life that he had this kind of feeling.

When he turned around slowly, two men were standing in front of him. They were Levi and Fredrick!

They didn't die in the fire? They survived! Why?

47 was stunned and amazed.

They were behind the bunker just now. How did they escape?

47 was confident that his speed was beyond the human limit. The time he took to reach Levi and Fredrick from jumping off the high ground was so short, and it was impossible for them to escape from the bunker.

How did they make it?

“The answer is simple. Because I’m better than you!” Levi said indifferently.

The weak can never imagine how the strong do things. This is so true! Levi is faster, more alert, and more vigilant than me!

“Go to hell!”

Suddenly, 47 glared at them with a piercing stare. He took out a pistol and pulled the trigger.

He is indeed the King of Assassins...His speed...Not many people in the army could do that.

Although he was swift, Levi moved faster than him.

Levi pulled out a scalpel from Fredrick’s pocket and threw it out.

“Ouch!”

The scalpel hit 47’s wrist precisely, and his gunshot went askew.

However, 47's made another counterattack. The moment he missed his shot, he reached out for his machine gun with his left hand.

He then shot the machine gun with just one hand!

At that critical moment, Levi had no choice but to kick a small pebble under his feet.

The small pebble then made a whistling sound in the air before it bored through 47's left wrist.

"Ouch!"

47 let out a scream, and the machine gun in his hand fell to the ground.

Seeing that, Levi made a move and sprinted to 47.

Once again, 47's hair stood on end. He had no choice but to pull out a Swiss army knife quickly and dashed forward.

Both of them were moving so fast, and Fredrick could only see two blurred shadows fighting in front of him.

With the Swiss army knife in his hand, 47 made his last effort and lunged forward to stab Levi's neck.

The Protector Chapter 844

However, Levi made darted faster than 47.

He grasped 47's wrist and snapped it hard. The tip of the Swiss army knife was then pointed back to 47 and it slit directly on his neck.

Whoosh!

A gush of blood was ejected. With cold glitter in his eyes, Levi just watched calmly from the side.

It seemed like it was only a small matter to him.

Spash!

47 then sagged to the ground in no time.

Before he died, he still looked astounded.

Did I kill myself?

“God of War! It's great to see you back in action again. You're so incredible! But you look so scary when you fight.” Fredrick smiled elatedly.

At that time, Kirin, Azure Dragon, and the rest came to their rescue.

Their location was quite far from the Guardian Mansion. However, they could all rush over in such a short time. Thus, this showed how fast they were.

All of them hurried over as soon as they heard the noise just now.

They were relieved only when they saw both Levi and Fredrick were fine.

“God of War, we’ll send someone to protect you from now onwards. It’s too dangerous like this.”

Kirin and Azure Dragon said simultaneously.

However, Levi refuted, “Have you forgotten my skill?”

Even White Tiger was shocked to hear that and took a deep breath.

“Get rid of the body! And keep it confidential!” Levi commanded instead.

On the other hand, after arriving at the Guardian Mansion, Phoenix managed to track 47’s overseas account.

“Someone remitted ten million to his account! And the remitter is the Joneses!” Phoenix exclaimed.

“Well, well. Looks like the Joneses are willing to spend ten million just to kill me. They are indeed generous. And this only proved that how important the anniversary meeting is to the Joneses!”

“Then I should start thinking about how to make a scene during their anniversary meeting!” Levi guffawed as he finished his words.

A night without any news...

The Joneses were waiting patiently.

Although there was nothing to worry about for an assassin like 47 to carry out the mission, the Joneses still felt uneasy.

After all, everything was unknown before they received any confirmed news.

At dawn the next day, Michael came to ask about the outcome.

“Grandpa, don’t worry. Everything’s going according to plan. I’d talked with 47 on the phone before he went off last night. And he told me Levi is not going to live until sunrise today,” said Tyler with confidence.

“He also said he’ll leave as soon as he’s done. He won’t be contacting us again.”

“Then who can tell me whether Levi is alive or dead now?” Michael said with his hands in the air.

“Erm...” Tyler was stunned for a moment.

“How about this...Wales, you make a trip to South City personally to find out!” Michael instructed.

“Noted. Grandpa!”

Wales then went to South City straight away.

In the morning, Levi brought Fredrick to the hospital to see Helena again.

Helena played an important role in Zoey’s career.

Hence, Levi valued her greatly.

While Fredrick was giving treatment to Helena, Levi went outside to smoke.

Just then, Wales arrived and saw Levi as soon as he got off the car.

“What?” He was dumbfounded and stunned.

The Protector Chapter 845

Levi also saw Wales and gave him a smirk.

The Joneses are here to check if I'm dead? How dare they send someone to assassinate me?

They really underestimated their opponent, didn't they?

Wales was panicking when he saw that Levi was looking at him.

“Ghost....Ghost...Ghost...” he stammered.

He could not believe Levi was still alive!

47 is the King of Assassins! How could he survive? It's impossible!

He would rather believe that the man he saw now was a ghost. Otherwise, it would be hard for him to believe what he saw.

When Wales saw Levi walked over to him fearlessly, he was terrified.

“Ghost! Ghost...” He screamed.

He wanted to run but was too intimidated. He felt listless, and his legs seemed to be glued to the ground. He could not even move an inch.

He could only watch as Levi came to him.

“Hey, are you bewitched? What the hell are you screaming for?” Levi patted Wales’s face.

“Are...are you a human or a ghost?” Wales was so petrified that he almost peed in his pants.

“Do you see ghosts in broad daylight?” Levi chortled.

“You...You’re still alive? You’re not a ghost?”

Wales gradually came to his senses when he saw Levi was standing in front of him in person. *He is real!*

“Pardon? Do you want me dead? Did you send someone to kill me?” Levi asked.

“No... It’s not me!” Wales denied as beads of perspiration formed on his forehead.

He was scared out of his wits. He never thought Levi would still be alive!

How is that possible? The King of Assassins could kill the official in the mysterious area of 51st District overseas. Levi is just an ordinary man! What’s going on? Is 47 not here for his mission?

But Tyler talked to him last night, and he had taken all the money. Why is Levi here? What has gone wrong? Where the hell is the King of Assassins now?

“Well... Did anything happen to you last night?” Wales was dying to find out.

“I slept very well last night. What’s wrong?” Levi pretended to look surprised.

“Erm... Nothing....”

With that, Wales hurried back to South Hampton and told everything to the Joneses.

“What? Levi is still alive, and there is no news about The King of Assassins now?” The Joneses were all stupefied.

“Hurry! Give The King of Assassins a call and find out what had happened!” Michael urged.

Tyler began to search the King of Assassins' whereabouts through various channels, such as underground networks and connections.

But to no avail.

It seemed like The King of Assassins went missing all of a sudden!

“What’s going on? I’m very sure he was in South City. He even took all the weapons I’d prepared for him,” uttered Tyler.

“I think the only reason he’s uncontactable now is that he’d met a great opponent in South City and disappeared.” Michael pondered.

Wales then voiced out his concerns, “What if he was killed? Do you think it’s possible that he was killed when assassinating Levi?”

The Protector Chapter 846

“No way!” Michael and Tyler refuted simultaneously.

“He’s the King of Assassins. He had done this more than two thousand times and never missed a target before. Those who he assassinated were all powerful and influential people, and I seriously doubt Levi can escape from him.”

“Maybe 47 caught the attention of the God of War? Isn’t Erudia a forbidden territory for mercenaries and assassins?” Wallace suggested.

“Well, guess that’s how we should think about it. Levi can’t counter-attack!”

Michael could not accept the fact if Levi had the King of Assassins killed...

“What’s your plan, Grandpa? Do you have plans to kill Levi again?” Wales asked.

“Not for the time being. If God of War finds out we hire assassins to Erudia, it will have a bad impact on us,” answered Michael.

“Levi is such a nuisance, but yet we can’t get rid of him!” Wales was infuriated.

“Just make sure we can get rid of him before the anniversary meeting!”

Suddenly, Michael thought about something and asked, “By the way, how is your brother, Wallace?”

Daniel was still lying on the bed with all his limbs broken.

“He’s recovering. But it’s impossible for him to recover fully before the anniversary meeting,” said Wallace as he sighed.

“Then what should we do? If the other Jones knew Daniel is lying on the bed with all his limbs broken during the anniversary meeting, it’s gonna shame us!”

This is another threat no less than Levi... We would be humiliated!

“Dad, I’ve gathered many prominent doctors, but to cure Daniel, they still need some time.”

“Grandpa, I think I knew someone who can help dad!” Tyler interrupted.

“Who is it?” Michael and Wallace asked simultaneously.

“I’ve heard that Fredrick Greg, the notable military doctor, is here in South City. He is good at fracture treatment,” said Tyler.

It seemed like everybody knew the arrival of Fredrick after Keith announced it.

“Really? Why is the legendary doctor here?” Michael asked in surprise.

“Heard that he’s here for Helena. It’s said that he can recuperate Helena’s burned face to how it is before without any transplant or plastic surgery.” Tyler explained.

“What? Helena? No way! We must get rid of her too! After all, she’s close with Levi. We can’t let her receive any treatment,” said Michael maliciously.

“Wallace, go to South City and bring back Fredrick for me. He can’t be giving treatment to Helena. I need him here to treat my son. I want to make sure Daniel can walk before the anniversary meeting!”

Michael wanted to snatch away Fredrick for himself.

“Grandpa. I don’t think it’s a good idea. Fredrick is an Iron Brigade, and he has a noble status. If we bring him here without careful consideration, we might offend him, and it’s definitely not wise to offend such a person!” Tyler voiced out his concerns.

“Have you forgotten about Uncle Anson?” Michael then shot a glance at him.

The Protector Chapter 847

You Can Call As Many People As You Want

Suddenly, Michael's word dawned on Tyler. He exclaimed immediately, "Yeah, you're right. Uncle Anson is also an Iron Brigade. He will not blame us even if we go overboard."

"Yeah...Anson is a General. It's not wrong for us to summon a military doctor, right?" Michael said in disdain.

Michael did not give a damn about anyone else except for the God of War now.

Straight away, Wallace followed Michael's instructions and headed to the City First Hospital in South City.

When he arrived, he brought his men and went straight to Helena's ward.

At that moment, Fredrick was applying medical herbs on Helena's face.

Suddenly, the ward's door was pushed open, and a group of unknown people rushed in.

They knocked over the herbs in Fredrick's hand and removed the herbs on Helena's face. They even detached all the infusion tubes.

After that, they grabbed Fredrick and led him out of the ward.

“Who are you? What are you doing?” Fredrick exclaimed.

“Mr. Greg. Please bear with us. We’ll explain to you later.”

Wallace gave him an apologetic smile before leaving the ward.

“Let me go! Or else, don’t blame me for being rude!” Fredrick roared.

“Don’t worry, Mr. Greg. We will not hurt you!”

Even the doctors and nurses in the corridor could not stop them.

Soon, Fredrick was led by the men to the hospital lobby.

Right at that moment, Wallace ran into a man head-on.

“Get out of my way!” Wallace bawled.

But as soon as he raised his head to take a look, he saw Levi.

Wallace was startled!

He never expected to meet him here.

“What are you guys doing?” Levi asked.

Upon seeing Levi, Fredrick’s eyes lit up.

Phew! It’s Levi. I’m safe!

“It’s none of your business. Get out of my way!” Wallace rebuked.

However, Levi said coldly, "Let him go, and I'll let the matter rest!"

"What the hell is going on with you? You should get out of my way! Is he related to you? Why are you bugging us?" Wallace roared.

"He's my friend. And I have the right to know." Levi said, showing a flash of killing intent in his eyes.

"I don't care what's his relationship with you. I want to bring him to the Joneses. Get out of my way now!"

But Levi shook his head and answered, "No way!"

"You seem to prefer rough treatment, don't you? Get him!"

As soon as Wallace gave out his command, all his men lunged to Levi.

However, after ten seconds, all Wallace's men fell to the ground and whined.

Bang!

Levi then flung Wallace out with a forceful kick.

"How...how dare you hit me? You're so disrespectful!" Wallace said and acted as if he was an elder.

He thought it was intolerable and outrageous for Levi to hit him.

"F***k off!"

Levi gave him another kick.

“Levi, how dare you ruin our plans? The Joneses will get even with you for this; just you wait.” Wallace chided before he left.

“I will be right here waiting. You can call as many people as you want!” Levi sneered.

The Protector Chapter 848

“Fine, just you wait and be prepared to see how I’m gonna finish you off!”

With that, Wallace left in a hurry to give his family a detailed account of what happened.

“Say what? Levi got him away?”

Michael was so rattled to hear that his eyeballs nearly popped out from their sockets.

“How useless are you that you couldn’t even handle Levi Garrison?” Michael admonished in exasperation.

“Remember this—you must bring Fredrick Greg back at all costs!”

Wallace looked especially sulky after having been kicked twice by Levi.

Immediately, he summoned his men and made a trip to the hospital.

Just as they were about to step foot on the premise, they were suddenly besieged by a large group of gangsters which consisted of around a hundred men.

“What are you guys doing here?” Wallace questioned them.

“How about you guys? You guys aren’t supposed to be here. Just get lost!” The gangsters snapped furiously.

“You...”

Wallace was panic-stricken to see them there because he had assumed Levi would be there waiting for him alone.

As it turned out, Levi had arranged such a large group of gangsters to await his presence.

In Levi’s opinion, the Joneses were not worth his personal time.

Therefore, he just casually made a call and had a large group of gangsters ambush the hospital instead.

“Fine, we’ll go!”

“I’m afraid it won’t be that easy. Beat them up now!”

At last, Wallace and his men were badly beaten up by the gangsters.

In the end, Wallace managed to escape and scrambled his way back to South Hampton.

“What? Levi summoned a group of gangsters to beat you up this badly?” Michael looked utterly disappointed because both his sons had let him down big time.

“Hold on. Did you say Levi was with a group of gangsters?” He suddenly questioned in astonishment.

“Yes. He was with a bunch of gangsters! He colluded with the scum of the society!”

“What a piece of trash he is!” Levi’s clearly not good enough to be my grandson. As someone who carries the noble blood of my family, it’s such an embarrassment for him to actually mingle with a bunch of gangsters!

I can’t reveal his identity to the public in any event or it will bring great disgrace to the Jones family!

At that moment, Michael became more and more convinced that Levi was not good enough to be one of the Joneses.

He was just scum of the society who led a lowly life outside.

“We’re a very distinguished family. We won’t accept such scum to be one of us because he’ll just tarnish our reputation!”

Everyone from the Jones Family viewed Levi with repulsion.

“Dad, what should we do about Fredrick Greg now?”

With a cocky look, Michael replied, “I’ll just summon him to visit us here at our place. I’m sure he will have no choice but to comply after we reveal Anson’s identity to him.”

“You’re right! Since Anson is a highly ranked officer in the Iron Brigade, he certainly will have the authority to give an order to a mere military doctor!”

“Bring me a pen and a paper as well as Anson’s official stamp. I’m going to issue an order to summon Fredrick Greg here myself by using Anson’s authority!”

After completing the order, Michael instructed one of his subordinates to deliver it to Fredrick.

The moment Levi and Fredrick received the order, both of them looked befuddled.

The Protector Chapter 849

They were especially shocked to see the one word which was written especially large on the letter—'Order'.

The content of it was straightforward. It was an order summoning Fredrick in the name of Anson to make a trip to the Jones Residence in South Hampton at haste. In the event he defied the order, he would be punished according to the military law.

The content was succinct but powerful enough to leave Levi as well as Azure Dragon dumbfounded.

"Damn it, who is this Anson Jones guy? Does he work for me? Is he from the Iron Brigade?" Levi asked in consternation.

As the commander-in-chief of the Nine Warzones, Levi was of course a busy man.

However, he knew each and every member of the Iron Brigade because the troop was in charge of his safety.

Still, Anson's name didn't ring a bell in his mind at all.

Fredrick explained with a smile, "God of War, I know this guy pretty well because he used to be my patient. However, he belonged to another platoon instead of the Iron Brigade. On top of that, he was a deserter who later became a captive of our enemy."

Fredrick continued, "He was rescued by one of us after that and was then imprisoned because he possesses some confidential information of our enemy. Every year he is allowed to write back to his family and I guess he's been telling them he's one of the Iron Brigade soldiers to make himself look good."

Levi responded with a laugh, "That makes sense. After he wrote back telling his family that he's from the Iron Brigade, somehow a tale was spun within the family that he has become some sort of a General!"

Michael, I bet it will shock the wits out of you when you learn that Anson, whom you think is a big shot in the army, is just a deserter and a captive of our enemy.

He's imprisoned at the Iron Brigade instead of being one of its Generals!

Everyone was amused with that thought in mind.

It was especially hilarious as Michael had drafted the order very well.

"God of War, what should I do now since the Joneses threatened that I will be punished if I defy their order?" Fredrick quipped with a chuckle.

Everyone burst out laughing as soon as he said that.

How dared they speak of military law in the presence of the God of War!

"What's written on that is pure bullsh*t!" Levi bellowed angrily, "Now, help me to write a reply to them!"

Soon, the Joneses in South Hampton received a letter from Fredrick on which only a sentence was written: *'Who the hell is Anson Jones?'*

Also, Michael was told to pay Fredrick a visit and kneel down in front of him if he wanted the latter's help.

Michael's anger hit the ceiling when he saw the content of the letter.

"How dare he said something like that about Anson? Is he trying to pick a fight with us? Anson is from the Iron Brigade and he works for the God of War! He's hailed as the successor of the God of War! I can't believe Fredrick isn't taking him seriously! This is outrageous! How dare a mere military doctor like him makes such an arrogant remark? He must be sick of living!"

Rage was driving Michael mad.

"Grandpa, I think the tone of the letter sounds more like Levi instead of Fredrick," Tyler pointed out.

"What? Levi wrote that?" Michael questioned in bewilderment.

Then, he shouted, "Levi Garrison, you're indeed something! What makes you think you can refuse to take Anson seriously when you're just a gangster yourself?"

Pacing back and forth in frustration, Michael was so pissed off that he even harbored the intention to kill Levi.

"What should we do now? Tell me how should I deal with it now?"

The Protector Chapter 850

“This is tricky because Levi is with a group of gangsters and he’s physically trained himself too.” While average guys would not be able to handle him, sending any proficient fighters over would not be such a good idea too because their presence would surely catch the attention of the God of War.

Scratching his head with a troubled look, Tyler exclaimed, “This is one knotty issue!”

Never had Michael thought that his family, which was one of the royal families, would turn out to be such a toothless tiger in front of Levi the little gangster.

“Well, we’ll have to take it one step at a time now then.”

Without any further interruption from the Joneses, Fredrick was able to carry out his treatment on Helena in peace during the following week.

It was only after making sure there were enough medical herbs for her did he return to North Warzone.

After that, Helena recovered well.

With the medical herbs prepared by Fredrick, she was expected to be fully recovered in a month’s time.

In the meantime, the entertainment department of Oriental Star Group had been suffering immense pressure from all parties for the huge loss incurred due to Helena’s condition.

The situation became especially dire because the media companies had been vehemently spreading negative news about Helena around.

Because of the crisis, Zoey had had a stressful time.

By the time Helena made a public appearance again with her beauty restored a month later, Zoey believed many of those people who had been looking down upon them would get a good slap in their faces.

At the same time, it was seven days away from the decennial anniversary of the Jones family.

The Joneses invested heavily in the event. Everything, including the decoration of the venue, marketing as well as the invitation of the guests, was done in an orderly manner.

One day, Levi was fiddling with an ancient bronze sword at home when Seth informed him that he had a visitor.

When he came out of his mansion he spotted several luxurious cars parked outside which carried car plates from Chillshire.

A middle-aged man who appeared to be the leader of the bunch questioned, "Are you Levi Garrison?"

"Yes, I am. Who are you?"

"Please allow me to introduce myself. I'm Travis Jones from the Jones family in Chillshire. According to the family tree, I'm considered an uncle of yours," answered Travis with a smile.

"Oh," Levi gave him a nonchalant reply.

He knew the Jones family had a lot of branches in the country and the Chillshire branch had been vying with the one in South Hampton to become the strongest branch of all.

“I suppose you’ve learnt the truth about your identity by now? You’re the grandson of Michael Jones from South Hampton and your mother, Emma Jones, is my younger sister!” said Travis with a smile.

“Oh, I don’t acknowledge my relationship with any of you. You may go if you have no other business with me here.”

With that, Levi turned around and walked away.

“He’s indeed one haughty guy,” one of Travis’ guys commented while watching Levi’s back.

“We aren’t concerned about his character. All that matters is we’ve confirmed that Michael Jones indeed has an illegitimate grandson. Just watch how I’m going to humiliate him during the coming anniversary dinner!”

Travis broke into a triumphant smirk as soon as he said that.

Soon, Michael received a call from Westley Jones, the leader of the Joneses from Chillshire.

“Michael, I’m surprised to know that you actually have an illegitimate grandson out there. How can you be so cruel as to let him wander alone outside and become an unwanted bastard?”

Michael shuddered when he heard Westley’s voice from the other end.

Still, the cat was let out of the bag in the end.

Meanwhile, he had enough on his plate because he had yet to come up with a way to deal with Levi...

The Protector Chapter 851

“Westley!”

Michael was livid with rage when he heard Westley’s comment.

“Michael, I’m afraid you really made a grave mistake by handling the matter this way. Yes, Emma was wrong to give birth to him back then but still, he is your grandson! How can you let him live on his own outside and be labelled as a bastard by everyone else?”

Michael was left stumped in the face of Westley who was glib-tongued.

At the same time, he knew the Joneses in Chillshire had gained an upper hand by discovering Levi’s existence.

“I reckon you will let the kid attend the coming anniversary dinner? Alternatively, you can kill him before that and I will pretend I know nothing about him.”

Westley deliberately said so to provoke him.

Michael had no other choice but acknowledge Levi’s identity. “As he’s my grandson, of course he will attend the anniversary dinner. In fact, I wanted him to live on his own outside so that he could become tougher and more independent.”

He understood that if he refused to admit to the fact that Levi was his grandson, Westley would immediately reveal it to the public through the media.

By the time it happened, his family would suffer great embarrassment.

“Very well, I will look forward to see the kid there.”

Westley ended the phone call feeling satisfied.

Bang!

Crack!

Immediately after the phone call, Michael smashed his phone on the floor and broke it into pieces.

“Levi, oh Levi. What a troublemaker you are! You’re going to destroy my family!”
Michael cursed angrily.

The rest of his family were incensed to learn about Westley’s phone call.

“Levi has always been a ticking time bomb for our family. Now, he’s about to blow up any minute and bring us down with him!”

“I’m sure the other branches will seize the chance to humiliate us at the anniversary dinner because of him. Are we able to bear with such a degrading moment at that time?”

“Exactly! Our family is going to be ruined for good just because of him. Now, not even the God of War can come to our rescue and he might even give us a piece of his mind because of the scandal!”

...

The face of all of them flushed with anger as an overwhelming desire to slaughter Levi immediately grew in their minds.

They could already picture what would take place during the anniversary dinner.

Everything was going to be destroyed by the bastard and the Jones Family in South Hampton would be turned into a laughing stock.

Michael fumed, "I really can't figure out how those in Chillshire found out about Levi's identity."

"Grandpa, I was told by one of my men that Levi had a secret meeting with Travis from Chillshire earlier today! I bet they've been in touch all along!" Tyler said.

He added, "Things are becoming very clear to me now. I'm sure Levi must have contacted those in Chillshire to ask for their help so that his identity as your grandson could be properly acknowledged! How cunning he is!"

Every one of the family looked enraged because of Levi.

"I told y'all not to underestimate Levi long before this! In this way, not only will he be properly recognized as the heir of our family, but he can also make sure we treat him nicely instead of bullying him with the protection of those from Chillshire."

Michael got breathless with anger after pointing that out.

"Grandpa, what should we do now then?"

A deep crease emerged on Wales' forehead.

The Protector Chapter 852

“What else can we do? Of course we have to bring him back! Otherwise, do we want the media to tell everyone in Erudia that I have an illegitimate grandson?!” Michael bellowed fiercely.

“Grandpa, we won’t go and invite him back because he’s just a piece of crap who isn’t worth our effort.”

Wales and Tyler expressed their reluctance to bring Levi back.

“We won’t do that either!”

The rest of the family rejected to take the task too.

“Just let Mia and her family do that!”

Everyone pointed their fingers at Mia and her family who had the weakest say in the family.

“Sounds good to me.”

Before long, Mia and her family traveled to South City to visit Levi.

“Levi, are you finally happy now?” Mia’s father, Calvin Jones confronted him with a note of sarcasm in his voice.

Because of Levi, they were shunned by the rest of the Jones family in South Hampton.

Things just got worse because Levi was going to put the entire family in embarrassment.

As one of the Jones family, hatred was the only sentiment they had for Levi!

“Eh? What do you mean by that?” Levi questioned him in puzzlement.

“Hmph! You deliberately revealed your identity to the those in Chillshire to compel my father into acknowledging you as his grandson, didn’t you?”

Calvin’s anger only intensified by the confused look on Levi’s face because he assumed Levi was feigning innocence.

“You should be pleased because you’ve successfully achieved your purpose now! My father is willing to acknowledge you as his grandson and he sent us here to tell you about that,” Calvin snapped angrily.

“Haha...” Levi chuckled.

Michael might want to acknowledge him but the intention was not mutual!

What the hell was this all about?

“Come back home with us now if you want or you must show up at the anniversary dinner five days later!” Calvin barked.

“Okay. Tell Michael I’ll be there!” Levi responded with a smile.

He would attend the event as the bastard of the family as well as the God of War.

“Haha...” Calvin gave him a scornful laugh.

At first, he thought Levi would have enough backbone to give up the identity as one of the Joneses and refuse to attend the anniversary dinner.

To his surprise, he agreed to be there so readily.

Because of that, Calvin despised him a great deal.

“Levi, please don’t take what my father said too seriously. He just cares too much about the image of the family but he means no harm.” Mia walked over to console Levi.

“I’m not bothered by it.”

Levi liked his younger sister Mia fairly well.

“Mia, what are you telling him? Get back here now! You’d better stay away from him in the future! Even when he becomes one of us in the future, you should refrain from getting too close to him because the blood that runs in him isn’t as noble as ours. You will put yourself in embarrassment if you are seen hanging out with him!” Calvin warned her sternly.

As pious believers that people were divided into different classes, everyone in the Jones family deemed Levi as one who belonged to the lower class while all of them belonged to the higher class.

“Dad, what nonsense are you talking about? Levi is one of us too!”

Mia then spun around to shout at Levi, “Levi, I’ll wait for you at the anniversary dinner!”

“Great, I’ll be there!”

The Protector Chapter 853

The anniversary meeting of the Jones family was advertised so well that even Zoey was aware of it.

“Are you going to be there?” She looked for Levi and asked him about it.

In fact, she was mainly curious to see how he thought about the event.

As far as she knew about him in the past, he would not want to waste his time attending the event nor would he want to accept the identity as one of the members of the Jones family.

Staring at him with anticipation palpable in her eyes, she fervently hoped to hear the answer she preferred from him.

“I’m going to be there because they invited me,” Levi replied nonchalantly.

What?!

At that moment, Zoey’s eyes were filled with much disappointment because Levi was no longer the lofty guy who thought he was superior to everyone else in the world.

What took its place was a soul that was willing to compromise for some worldly gains.

This wasn’t the version of him she would like to see...

Levi then asked her with a smile, “Would you like to go with me?”

He wanted to bring her there to see how he was going to shine and leave the Jones family in stupor because of his glory.

To his dismay, Zoey turned him down decisively. "I'm not going. You may attend the event on your own!"

In her opinion, it was utterly humiliating for Levi to accept the identity as one of the Joneses.

On top of that, she was really taken aback by his sudden change of attitude because he had told her that he would ignore them for the rest of his life some time ago.

Iris, who happened to come by, noticed the exasperated look on Zoey's face. Out of curiosity, she queried, "Zoey, what's the matter?"

"Levi just said he's going to attend the anniversary meeting of the Jones family!" Zoey grumbled resentfully.

"Huh? Is there anything wrong with that?"

"Iris, by attending their anniversary it shows that he's going to yield to them. The moment he accepts the identity as one of them, he will lose his backbone and embarrass himself. Didn't you hate him for doing things like that too before this?" Zoey asked in befuddlement.

"I..." Iris trailed off hesitatingly as she had no idea how to answer Zoey.

Back then, she indeed loathed the fact that Levi got things done by using his connection with the Joneses because she had no idea who he really was at that time.

But now, she knew Levi was the owner of Morris Group who clearly did not need help from the Joneses.

"Zoey, things aren't how you may imagine them to be at all. Perhaps Levi is going to be there to show off his might," Iris suggested with a grin.

Zoey shot her a supercilious glare and retorted, "Show off his might? Who is he to show off in front of the Joneses? They are one of the royal families in South Hampton!"

"Maybe..."

“Iris, that’s enough. It’s so obvious that Levi has lost his backbone by deciding to yield to the Joneses! I can’t believe he’s still going to attend their anniversary after how badly they bullied him!”

Zoey went on to lament, “Perhaps it’s because my career has been thriving so well lately that he wants to become better so that he is good enough to be my partner. Yes, he’s right! He will become good enough or even too good for me once he accepts the identity as one of the Joneses! However, I can’t help but look down on him when he gives up his spine like that! I would rather he fight for his career with his own effort. Even though his achievement might not turn out too great, it will still be the fruit of his effort!”

The Protector Chapter 854

Seeing how Zoey misunderstood Levi so badly, Iris was so anxious that she felt a burning desire to tell her that Levi was in fact the owner of Morris Group and even everything she owned was given by him!

He wasn't losing his spine but instead, he had become even stronger and more powerful than six years ago!

However, she managed to hold back the urge when she recalled what Levi had told her before.

While Zoey was complaining, tears started trickling down her face.

"Does he see me as a vain girl? It doesn't make any difference to me whether he is one of the Jones family members or not!"

Iris consoled, "Zoey, I think you really should believe in him. Since he was already so talented six years ago, I believe he won't be too bad now too! I have a feeling that he's become stronger after going through the challenging times in the past six years."

Zoey shook her head and insisted, "I can't see that, Iris. I can't see any hope in him especially after he started interacting with the Joneses! He's been using his connection with them to settle things very frequently and he will slowly lose the will to fight hard because he's too used to getting things done through the easy way!"

Iris hurriedly said, “Zoey, please give him more time and I’m sure he will be able to prove his talent to everyone soon! For example, I think he will prove it to you at the wedding ceremony by making sure everyone knows that you’re the most respectable lady of the entire world!”

She could only reveal the time when a change would come so that Zoey could be hopeful about things.

“Haha.” Zoey flashed her a faint smile.

It was probable that she only saw what she said as a joke.

Immediately, Zoey changed the subject of their conversation by asking Iris, “By the way, you have yet to tell me who’s the boss of Morris Group. Every time I tried to ask you, you would always give me a vague answer.”

Iris’ expression turned stiff when she heard her question.

It was all Levi’s fault that she was put in such a quandary!

Did he really have to go this far just to reveal his identity to Zoey?

“Oh, there’s no point telling you that because you don’t know him anyway.”

Iris had no choice but to answer that way.

“Seems like he’s not a good-looking man so that’s why you aren’t interested in him!”

Much to Iris’ relief, Zoey decided to laugh it off instead of pressing on.

In the blink of an eye, the day of the Jones family's anniversary had arrived.

As the venue of the event, the old manor of the Joneses in South Hampton was decorated extensively so that the event was a vibrant and merry one.

Two sides of the road leading to the manor were adorned with big red lanterns and family flags which fluttered along with the wind.

In fact, it was said that the Joneses had splurged a staggering amount of two billion during the preparation of the event!

It was easy to see how grand and magnificent the event would be.

On the day prior to the event, Mia drove to fetch Levi to South Hampton.

Soon, she returned to Edburg Manor together with him.

A board on which two large words 'Jones Family' were written was attached to the wall above the main door; it gave the place an imperial and domineering aura.

That was the manor which was resided by the royal family!

A large troop of security officers stood outside the manor in a line to maintain the safety of the place.

"Levi, this way please!"

Mia showed him the way inside.

However, just as Levi was about to enter the manor, a voice came, "It's not that easy to step into Edburg Manor!"

The Protector Chapter 855

Shortly after the voice, Wallace, Calvin, Tyler and Wales emerged.

Escorted by a large entourage, Michael too appeared holding a walking stick decorated with a sculpture in the shape of a dragon head.

Almost all direct descendants of the family were there.

Looking intimidating, they stood in front of Levi, who stared at them with a faint smile.

“Wait a minute. Levi, I can see that you’ve been trying very desperately to be here for quite some time already. Do you really want this so badly?” Wales taunted.

“Finally you’re able to realize your dream after working hard for such a long time. Congratulations for officially becoming one of us!” Tyler said sarcastically.

Every one of them assumed that Levi had single-handedly plotted against Michael to force him into acknowledging his identity.

“But, I have to warn you that it won’t be so easy to become one of us!” Michael growled all of a sudden.

“That’s right! You have to abide by our family rules if you want to become one of the family!” Wallace chimed in.

“Oh? What are the rules?” Levi was amused to hear that.

“There are three conditions that you must fulfill before you are approved to be one of us.” Michael stuck out three of his fingers as he explained.

“Tell me all about it!” Levi was curious to know about the rules.

“First of all, you have to kneel down in front of the memorial tablets of our ancestors as well as the seniors of the family!”

“Secondly, you have to change your surname! In the future, you will go by the name of ‘Levi Jones’ instead of ‘Levi Garrison!’”

“Last but not least, you must train yourself to become resilient so that you are tough enough to endure all challenges that come your way in the future. Therefore, you have to be slapped by all the direct descendants of the family!”

Looking cold and detached, Michael added, “You’ll only be allowed to enter the place and be recognized as my grandson after fulfilling all three conditions!”

What?!

Mia was flustered the moment she heard about the three conditions.

She had never expected that her family would make such a rude demand which was clearly aimed at giving Levi a hard time.

The family had at least two to three hundreds direct descendants. If Levi were to be slapped by each and every one of them, would he be able to survive after going through that?

Also, it was very humiliating for him to kneel down to the seniors in the family in front of so many people.

Lastly, demanding him to change his surname was the most degrading condition of all!

All eyes were on Levi at that moment. “What do you think? Are you scared or are the conditions too demanding for you?”

“You have to be very clear that we have to follow our family rules because we are a huge and distinguished family! Not every Tom, Dick and Harry can be accepted as one of us!”

“If you would like to become one of us, you have to follow the rules!” said Wallace as well as some of the Joneses.

Noticing Levi’s hesitation, Michael fumed, “Answer me now! Either you complete the three conditions or you get out of here now!”

It was agreed beforehand that they would accept Levi as one of them but he needed to go through some torture before that.

They would never let him in too easily!

Tyler sneered, “Levi, you have to know that nothing is free in this world. You have to complete the three conditions if you want to become one of us!”

“Hahaha...” Levi let loose a round of guffaw all of a sudden.

The Protector Chapter 856

His laughter left every single one of them flummoxed.

What was he laughing about?

He seemed to be mocking them!

Wallace questioned him puzzledly, "Lad, what're you laughing about? Is our family a joke to you?"

"Don't think you can bypass it through any other ways! There's nothing you can do to avoid completing the three conditions!" Michael stared at Levi sternly.

"Yes, that's right! You have no other way out! Now, do you want to kneel down first or do you want to be slapped first?" One of the Joneses asked.

"Do I have to kneel down to every one of you here? Who do you think you are?"

"Do I have to change my surname? Who do you think you are?"

"Do I have to be slapped by every single one of you here? Who do you think you are?"

Levi bombarded them with three continuous questions and left them all dumbfounded.

The words 'who do you think you are?' kept on resounding in their minds.

"How dare you guys treat me this way? You guys don't deserve any of that!"

Michael chuckled, "We don't deserve any of that? We've been one of the royal families and a powerful presence in South Hampton for centuries! We own several hundred billion worth of assets and we have properties around the globe! Not only that, but we also have an abundance of talent in the army, the government as well as the business world!"

...

"Our family has so many merits and achievements that I simply don't have the time to list them all down for you. How dare you say that we don't deserve your respect?"

Staring right into Michael's eyes, Levi sneered, "Do you think you guys deserve it? I can destroy every one of you right away just by giving out an order. Do you believe me?"

His imposing and presumptuous confrontation sent each and every one of them in raging fury.

"Y-You are looking for trouble, aren't you? There's no way you can step foot into the manor now!" Wallace as well as some other of the Joneses seethed.

"Then I, Levi Garrison, am going to do just that tonight and no one will be able to stop me from doing so!"

With that, Levi strode off toward the main gate of the manor.

"You aren't allowed to go in there!" Wales immediately stepped forward to block his way.

Smack!

Levi landed a slap on his face.

"How dare you?"

Smack!

Tyler was slapped too.

Everyone was dumbstruck at the moment as none of them expected such aggressiveness from him.

Whoever tried to stop him would be slapped by him!

Most importantly, no one dared to retaliate knowing that he was physically trained.

“Levi, you’re getting out of control! I dare you to take one step further now!”

Smack!

To no one’s surprise, the person who said that ended up being slapped too.

Smack!

Smack!

...

Wallace, Calvin as well as the others were slapped and sent flying away by Levi after trying to stop him.

As none of them was able to contain him, they could only watch on as he made his way toward the main door of the manor.

The moment he was only inches away from reaching the gate, Michael suddenly yelled, “Stop him now!”

The security officers standing outside the manor encircled Levi in an instant in an attempt to get him under control.

However, it only took Levi a short time to get rid of them as they were flung away by him. Slumping on the ground, all of them groaned in pain.

Despite being such a huge family with so many family members, no one was able to stop him.

At that time, Levi spun around and shot everyone a contemptuous glance. “You Joneses are such a disappointment,” he commented with a smirk.

The Protector Chapter 857

Smack!

Levi walked past the gate and then strode off toward the manor.

His firm pace made him look unstoppable like a divine figure who had just descended onto the mortal world.

At the same time, he treated the three conditions laid down by Michael as if they were non-existent.

To the Joneses, Levi being allowed to step foot in the premise was a great humiliation.

Watching Levi's back, Mia squinted to avoid the glare because his body seemed to be glowing with a powerful aura at the time.

All by himself, he managed to deter all of the Jones family members from laying a finger on him.

That was so cool and domineering!

The mockery he made about the family just now hurt all of them immensely like a dagger that was stabbed through their hearts.

Just a single comment from him was enough to ignite blazes of fury deep down inside them.

Infuriated, Michael thundered, "Shadow, throw him out of the manor now!"

Shadow, who was standing next to Michael, stood motionless despite the order.

There was no way he dared to do as Michael ordered.

Since Levi was the God of War, Shadow knew he was no match for him.

He broke out in cold sweat when he thought of the day Levi found out that he had been secretly tracking Ezra down.

Apart from that, he was also well aware Levi could kill him as easily as killing an ant.

Therefore, he was not dumb enough to attack him.

“Hey! What are you waiting for? Go on and get rid of him now!” Michael shouted anxiously when he noticed Shadow wasn’t moving as told.

“Master, I...”

Shadow lowered his head to conceal his fear.

“What are you trying to do, Shadow? Are you defying my order or are you afraid of Levi?” Michael confronted him.

His question soon drew everyone’s attention. Was Shadow afraid of Levi?

How was that even possible?

At that moment, Levi had already walked past the gate and was about to reach the inside of the manor.

Shadow opined, “Master, I think we should not make too big a fuss out of it because it will look bad on us with so many people around.”

Michael couldn’t help but let out a sigh of frustration.

“Grandpa, please just let him go for now. If we really throw him out, those from Chillshire as well as other branches will surely taunt us because of that! I think we should put up with it for the time being and only deal with him after tonight!” Tyler suggested.

“Sounds like that’s the only way to go then.”

In the end, the Joneses decided to make a compromise by allowing Levi in.

No one mentioned the three conditions again because whoever did that would become a laughing stock.

In order to make sure the event went smoothly, they had no choice but to treat Levi well.

After dinner, Michael approached him and warned, “Don’t assume you’re one of us just because you are invited to be here! Although I recognize you as one of my family members on the outside, it’s not my genuine intention to do so because I don’t think you’re good enough to be my grandson at all! You’re a bastard just like your mother! None of us will admit being related to you in any way!”

Levi narrowed his eyes at him and asked, “What did you just say? Say it again!”

“You are a bastard just like your mother!”

The Protector Chapter 858

After Michael spoke, the atmosphere became tense.

Everyone held their breath in anticipation of what was going to happen next.

Mia and the rest of the Joneses stared at Michael in disbelief.

Michael is too much!

As expected, Levi furiously glared at Michael, with lasers shooting out of his eyes. At that moment, everyone could sense the murderous aura that he emitted.

A chill ran down their spines.

It's terrifying to see this side of Levi!

Nonetheless, these people were not the only ones who noticed the change in mood.

Michael was horrified. His pupils constricted, and his Adam's Apple bobbed around as he swallowed nervously, feeling breathless.

He is too scary!

Levi seemed like a wild animal on the loose, and his gaze alone could kill.

With Levi's eyes fixated on him, Michael was covered in sweat, and he felt like puking.

Thump!

Unable to take it any longer, his knees gave way. He collapsed onto the ground.

The glare scared and pushed Michael to the edge.

This man is crazy!

"Apologize," Levi ordered.

Everyone was shocked by his words.

Who knew a bastard child would not only have the guts to step foot into the Jones Residence while everyone was there but also demand Michael's apology?

He is being ridiculous!

Ironically, Levi managed to threaten the entire Jones family even before revealing his identity.

To him, the Joneses were as insignificant as ants.

"I won't." Michael scowled at Levi.

"There is no way I will apologize to a bastard like you!"

Michael would rather die.

“Haha. Michael, you called your own grandson a bastard. You should apologize for your mistake now,” a voice chided as a group of people streamed into the venue.

It came from Westley, the leader of the Joneses in Chillshire.

“You...”

Pft!

Michael was fuming with anger.

Oh no, Westley saw the scandal!

Funny. The more I dread something, the more likely it happens.

This is all Levi's fault.

“Exactly. Michael, you are at fault this time. You should apologize to the bastard... I mean the child!” Westley mocked.

This group of people came to watch Michael's family make a fool of themselves.

They were more than willing to see the head of the Joneses in South Hampton apologizing to Levi.

They didn't feel bad for Levi, a bastard child. However, they were looking forward to seeing Michael become a laughingstock.

Meanwhile, Levi could read their intentions from their expressions, and he swiftly yelled, “He is not the only one who needs to apologize. You should, too!”

The Protector Chapter 859

His words hit everyone like a ton of bricks. All the Joneses were stupefied.

Westley and the rest of his family did not expect Levi to direct his anger toward them, too.

“Do you think I can’t tell what all of you are thinking? In your eyes, I am nothing but a bastard child, similar to a wild animal brought up in the wild,” Levi snorted.

To Westley, it was unthinkable that a junior would speak to him this rudely.

“That’s not wrong. You don’t even know who your father is. Aren’t you an illegitimate child, then? We are indeed just interested in witnessing Michael apologizing to a bastard child.”

Michael was insulted, but he was helpless.

This is all because of my illegitimate grandson!

Westley and the rest of his family started to laugh.

In contrast, the Joneses from South Hampton hung their heads low in shame.

It was humiliating, but there was nothing they could do about it.

Everything is Levi's fault.

Without him, the Joneses from South Hampton would be superior and formidable.

Regardless, we have the backing of the God of War, so these people pose no threat to us.

On the other hand, Levi could not stand being labeled as a 'bastard child'.

Although he was indifferent and uninterested in his parents, they still gave birth to him and brought him into this world.

That was still a sacred action that should be honored.

These people were insulting his existence and dishonoring that action.

They deserve to die!

Levi slowly stood up and turned his deadly gaze to Westley and a few others.

"What... what do you want?" they stuttered, terrified and threatened by him.

He looks like he wants to kill us.

They could feel the heat from Levi's murderous glare, and it felt like they would die in the next moment.

"Please, Levi... no..." Mia, who was in front of them, stopped him.

She was afraid that something bad would happen if the situation persists.

Immediately, she dragged Levi out.

Phew!

Levi let out a sigh of relief when he stepped out.

I almost reverted to my heartless self-earlier, as though I was back on the battlefield.

If Mia did not stop me in time, I would have killed everyone there.

It doesn't matter. I'll deal with them at the anniversary meeting tomorrow.

After Levi left, Westley grinned and mocked, "Michael, now I understand your position. If I had a bastard grandson like this, there is no way in hell I would acknowledge him either. How is it possible for a child brought up in the streets to be associated with our superior bloodline?"

"Exactly! He even wanted to act all righteous and cut ties with us. How can your family in South Hampton produce such a grandson?"

Michael gritted his teeth and clenched his fists as they humiliated him.

He wanted to kill Levi there and then.

The Protector Chapter 860

If he returns to the Jones Residence, he will only bring disgrace to our family!

Besides, with that unsophisticated mother of his, they will only make us look worse.

These two disgraceful individuals have brought so much shame to our family.

Furthermore, this is just the start.

At tomorrow's meeting, hundreds of Joneses from Erudia would be attending, and we will probably face the most humiliation then.

We might even drown in the spit of those who have something to say about it.

That will definitely be the most embarrassing situation in the history of the Joneses from South Hampton.

Nonetheless, we can only think of ways to salvage what we have lost right now.

"Oh yes, have we confirmed the attendance of all our guests?" Michael asked Wallace.

"Yes, we have," Wallace replied promptly.

“How about Anson? What time will he come?”

“Father, Anson will be arriving at nine tomorrow morning. That is the earliest he can come,” Wallace responded.

“Tyler, how about the God of War?” Michael turned to Tyler.

“I have made inquiries, and Mike, the commander-in-chief, replied that God of War has reached South Hampton.”

This was a surprise to the Jones family.

If the God of War came here a day in advance, he must take their anniversary meeting seriously.

The Joneses could finally smile.

“We have to keep his attendance a secret. We will only reveal it tomorrow so that Westley and rest get a taste of how powerful we are,” Michael exclaimed with pride. “With that said, where is he then? Did we arrange anything for him?”

Tyler happily replied, “He said that it was alright and will be there tomorrow.”

“Then it’s settled! Everyone, make preparations to welcome him. Our family’s reputation will rely on the God of War’s presence.”

Michael could already picture the shocked faces on the other Jones’ faces.

Meanwhile, Levi was whining to Mia, “Mia, please bring me around. It’s too suffocating for me to stay here.”

He was afraid that his intention to kill someone would flare up if he stayed here any longer.

It would not do him any good if he killed someone.

“Well, coincidentally, I have a gathering with a few other friends. Levi, you can come along!”

“Sure! Let’s go.”

Not long after, they arrived at a lavish restaurant with live music.

There were a few foreigners playing jazz, setting a rather sentimental mood.

“Mia, look over here!” someone suddenly shouted.

In the distance, they saw a group of formally dressed youths that consisted of three males and two females.

From their appearance, anyone could tell that they were rich kids.

Mia led Levi over to their table.

“Mia, I thought you didn’t have the time to come. Don’t you have to prepare for the anniversary meeting tomorrow?” one woman asked curiously.

At the same time, she scanned Levi from head to toe before asking, “Who is he?”

Mia smiled and replied, “Let me introduce everyone to my cousin brother, Levi.”

Instantly, one of the men laughed, “Are you the rumored bastard child of South Hampton?”

The Protector Chapter 861

Whoa!

The group gasped after hearing that, and they all looked at the speaker, Kyle.

“Why are all of you looking at me? That rumor has spread across South Hampton. They said that Levi is a bastard child who only has a mother, while his father’s identity remains unknown. They even labeled him as the Jones family’s disgrace,” Kyle bluntly stated.

Boom!

Mia’s brain was about to burst.

She thought that leaving the Jones Residence would do Levi some good, yet who knew that they would meet someone who labeled him as a bastard child too.

“Did you call me a ‘bastard child’?” Levi calmly asked.

“Yes, I did. What’s wrong with that?” Kyle sneered.

He knew the Joneses looked down on Levi and could not wait to get rid of him.

As such, there was no need for him to be afraid of owning up to it.

Besides, if he taught Levi a lesson, the Joneses would probably thank him.

“I dare you to repeat it.” Levi coldly challenged.

There was a hint of anger in his eyes.

“You are a bastard child with only a mother and no father. Happy?”

Kyle arrogantly looked at Levi, his gaze filled with amusement.

Even his friends around him could not take it.

“Kyle, you are going overboard. After all, he is Mia’s brother,” one of the women, Xenia, could not help but scolded.

Kyle conceitedly chuckled. “Well, I am not the only person who is spreading it. In South Hampton, who doesn’t know that Levi is an illegitimate child? “

Slap!

Kyle had just finished his sentence when Levi gave him a tight slap across his face.

Pft!

The impact made Kyle cough out blood, together with a dozen of his teeth.

Unbelievable!

No one expected Levi to do that.

It only took one slap for him to make a few of Kyle’s teeth fall out.

“You!” Kyle angrily shouted when he regained his senses a few seconds later.

“How... how dare you hit me?”

Short of a few teeth, his speech became unclear. He looked at Levi in shock.

“You aren’t the only one I will hit. Whoever mentions it or curses at me, I will hit each of them till everyone shuts up.”

Although Levi sounded composed, one could sense the domineering presence he exuded.

It made Kyle shake in fear.

“My teeth!” he exclaimed and went crazy after seeing his broken teeth strewn across the floor.

“Watch out! I will get my revenge against you today!” he yelled.

Knowing that the relationship between Levi and the Joneses was not the best, he was not afraid of being questioned by the Joneses.

He had to get his revenge on Levi for knocking out his teeth.

“If you are bold enough, you will wait till I bring my men here!” Kyle threatened.

Although the others tried to persuade him otherwise, it was no use.

“Mia, I think you should leave. If Kyle summons his subordinates, your brother will be in trouble!” Xenia pleaded.

“Don’t worry, I will wait for him,” Levi interrupted.

“I will punish everyone who calls me a bastard child, and I will do this till no one dares to speak of it again.” He coolly took a seat.

The Protector Chapter 862

Xenia and the other girl were stunned.

He is so assertive!

They had never seen anyone as bossy as he was.

“Levi, let’s leave. There is no need to get upset with such people!”

Mia was worried for Levi.

“Mia, you don’t have to worry. If I can’t even handle a brat like him, then I do not live up to my name.” Levi shrugged and even poured himself a glass of wine.

He looked unaffected, as though the situation did not concern him at all.

Xenia and Alice’s eyes were shining with admiration as they looked at him.

Levi was charming and attractive.

Since the Joneses would likely not step in to help him, Xenia and Alice anticipated watching him deal with Kyle.

It did not take long for Kyle to bring a large group of his subordinates over, who rushed to surround Levi.

Kyle's gums were still bleeding and throbbing with pain.

He announced, "You are really something! I can't believe you are still here. Very well, since you broke my teeth, you will have to pay. I want to knock out all of your teeth too. Then, I will pluck out all your nails from your hands and feet until you beg."

With hatred, he looked at Levi.

Then, he cursed, "You filthy bastard child!"

Boom!

Crack!

In the next moment, Levi picked up the wine bottle and smashed it on Kyle's head.

Blood gushed out, and Kyle almost fainted.

In the same period, another gathering was happening on the second floor.

They all looked unique. Some had bandages on their legs, and some had bandages on their arms.

They were the Prince Gang from South Hampton and their leader, Jaron Goel.

The crash of the wine bottle caught their attention.

"Oh? Go take a look at what is happening," Jaron ordered.

Everyone looked over at the fuss.

“It is Kyle trying to teach someone a lesson,” someone reported.

Jaron glanced over at the scene and saw a familiar figure.

Immediately, his eyes widened, and he jumped to his feet.

“That is the leader of South Hampton, Levi Garrison!” Jaron gasped in surprise.

Everyone came to a realization.

He is really Levi, their leader!

“What the hell! Kyle is playing with fire!”

Everyone angrily stood up and rushed toward them.

After being hit by the bottle, Kyle looked at Levi with disbelief and anger. “You... must die. All of you, I want you to kill him! I will bear all consequences!” he screeched like a monster, livid.

The Protector Chapter 863

Crack!

Another man came forward and smashed another wine bottle on Kyle's head.

Blood splattered everywhere, and there were glass shards strewn across the floor.

Being cruelly attacked on the same spot, Kyle became disoriented.

He furiously turned and demanded, "Who the hell hit me?"

"It's me," the man behind him replied coldly.

"M-Mr. Goel?"

Just as he was about to explode, Kyle saw a familiar face that made him cower in fear.

Isn't he Jaron, the head of Prince Gang?

"Mr. Hunt? Mr. Quinn?..." Kyle proceeded to call out the people present.

It occurred to him that to forty people from the Prince Gang were there, and they were the most powerful members.

They also belonged to either quasi-royal clans or royal families.

"All of you... were here?" Kyle stuttered in shock.

Although he was also from a wealthy family, he could not outrank those from the Prince Gang.

Typically, one would turn away to hide if they saw them.

Yet, he met them today.

“What’s wrong? Can’t we be here?” Jackson asked frigidly.

“Of course not! You can!” Kyle hurriedly replied.

He broke out in a cold sweat and felt so numb that he no longer felt the pain.

However, he did not understand why the Prince Gang would approach him, much less bother to smash a bottle on his head.

“What were you trying to do?” Jaron questioned.

Kyle chuckled. “Sir, I am teaching someone a lesson. He is the bastard child from the Jones family, Levi. He had the guts to hit me.”

As he spoke, he pointed at Levi.

Jaron and the rest of Prince Gang took a step forward and knelt in front of Levi. In unison, they called out in unison, “Greetings, Master!”

Everyone from the Prince Gang, even those unknown, greeted Levi as their master.

The situation was alarming.

Xenia, Alice, Mia and Kyle were all confused.

What is going on?

How did the bastard child from the Jones family end up being the master of the Prince Gang?

Are we dreaming?

Mia's mouth was wide open as she tried to piece it all together.

No wonder Levi dared to challenge the Joneses. It was because he has the ability to do so.

Even the Prince Gang calls him 'Master'.

On the other hand, Kyle refused to buy it. He thought Jaron and the rest were mistaken.

"Sir, what is wrong with all of you? He is an illegitimate child from the Jones family! Why are you calling him 'Master'? Have you mistaken him for someone else?" Kyle questioned as his eyes widened.

Instantly, Jaron shot him a sharp glare.

Bang!

He sent Kyle flying with a kick.

The Protector Chapter 864

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Kyle crashed into several tables before he landed on the ground. Blood filled his mouth, and he felt like dying from Jaron's kick.

"I will kill your entire family if you call our master a bastard child," Jaron roared.

"Yes! The Prince Gang will haunt down whoever who has anything bad to say about our master."

The rest of the members sounded one by one.

Boom!

The short few remarks took everyone in the restaurant by surprise.

They affirmed Levi's identity as Prince Gang's leader.

"Why... How..."

Flung onto the ground, Kyle struggled to get up.

He was about to go crazy from the knowledge.

“Truth to be told, he is not only the master of Prince Gang but also the head of the hundred prominent families in South Hampton.”

Jaron’s words were as sharp as a knife, and it took everyone by surprise again.

Shaking with fear, Kyle’s subordinates fell to their knees too.

“I told him I would beat everyone who calls me a bastard child, and I will do so to the entire South Hampton until no one dares to mention it again,” Levi calmly said.

“Understood! I will do so immediately! I will find all those who dare to speak ill of you, and I will meet them one by one. As for Kyle, your family is finished.”

Naturally, Jaron called the shots.

A few moments later, they threw Kyle and his subordinates out of the restaurant, and it finally quietened down.

“Don’t worry, you guys can continue with your night.”

Everyone could finally let down their guards after Levi spoke.

Xenia and Alice stared at him in wonder.

He seems like a gentleman, but is a beast inside.

How charming!

They secretly asked Mia, “Is Levi married?”

“Not yet, but he will be soon.”

“Since he is not married, it means that we still stand a chance.”

That night, Levi rejected both women’s invitation to their homes and headed back to the Jones Residence with Mia.

The Joneses had finished the preparations and were ready for the anniversary meeting to start.

Everyone was unhappy to see Levi return.

“Levi, why did you go out? Aren’t you aware that the whole South Hampton knows you as the bastard child? My family’s reputation is going to be destroyed because of you!” Tyler growled.

By now, everyone in South Hampton knew Michael had an illegitimate grandson.

The news was spreading like wildfire, and everyone was mocking the Joneses.

This was all because of Levi’s presence.

Therefore, the Joneses were furious with him and wanted him out of sight.

They even thought of killing him.

Michael commented, “Since you are part of the Joneses, I will set a rule for you, Levi. I will lock you up in the Jones Residence forever. From now on, you can never set foot out of this place.”

The Protector Chapter 865

He could no longer afford to let Levi roam free because everyone in South Hampton knew Levi was a bastard by now.

As long as he was free to move around, he would remain a disgrace to the Jones family which they wanted to avoid.

Their only plan was to imprison Levi permanently in the Jones residence and prevent him from ever stepping out.

Although people knew he had arrived at the Jones Residence, they would forget about his existence as long as he didn't venture out.

Therefore, the damage and impact he would cause the Joneses would be greatly reduced.

Michael had learnt this tactic from someone else.

Levi's mother, Emma Jones, was permanently imprisoned and wasn't allowed to leave that place.

Until now, they had kept her in captivity for almost thirty years.

She was locked up since the day Levi was born.

Prior to this, Mia would definitely worry for him.

Not anymore. She found out about Levi's identity when the prominent Goel family acknowledged him as their master.

She knew the Joneses were powerless against him.

If there was any conflict, he would definitely not be at the losing end.

In fact, she hoped Levi could teach the Jones family a lesson.

Levi laughed. "I can move anywhere that the sun shines and river flows. No one can stop me. Furthermore, there's no cage that can stop me."

"Just wait and see if we manage to keep you locked up."

Michael was dismissive of Levi's boasts.

He wanted to wait till after the anniversary meeting to torture him properly.

Michael had another idea. If he failed to imprison Levi, he would get Anson to take the bastard back to the military to be trained.

That way, it would be good for the Jones' reputation and also remove Levi the troublemaker.

If the ten thousand warriors of the Iron Brigade knew about it, they would laugh until they dropped.

To have a deserter bring the God of War back to camp to be trained was going to be a terrible joke.

At night, Levi gave Zoey a call.

However, she was still angry and hung up on him.

Hmm? Why is Zoey behaving like that?

Levi realized the reason very quickly.

She must think that I have compromised with the Jones family for the sake of attending the anniversary meeting.

Zoey, you are mistaken! I don't need to depend on the Joneses. At my command, the hundred prominent families in South Hampton would bow at my feet.

Levi smiled wryly.

They didn't talk the whole night.

The next day, the Jones family anniversary meeting which was held once every decade began.

Levi and the Joneses arrived early at the Jones family's ancestral home.

Family members from all over Erudia and even those from overseas were present.

The anniversary meeting was finally about to begin.

The Protector Chapter 866

“Later, don’t go shooting your mouth off. You better stay in this corner and keep quiet.” Michael came over on purpose to remind him.

Since he couldn’t hide his relationship with Levi, he had no choice but to acknowledge him.

That was all Michael could do to prevent him from humiliating other Joneses.

The courtyard within their ancestral home was large enough to accommodate a thousand people.

Hence, representatives from Jones families based all over the world were gathered there.

There was a chair in the ancestral hall reserved for the head of the family.

On it sat an old man with white hair. He was as thin as a stick and looked as if he could fall anytime the wind blew.

However, his eyes glistened with energy, and he was in high spirits. He exuded an intimidating aura.

He was Joey Jones. At 123 years old, he was the eldest member of the family in Erudia.

He was the most senior member of the Jones diasporic families and had authority over all the individual Jones families.

There were four other chairs on each side of his seat where Michael, Westley, and others sat.

They were the heads of the eight most powerful Jones families.

They placed the rest of the thousand participants according to their seniority.

Levi was among them. But no one could see him as he was placed in a secluded corner.

Sitting in the chair and holding his staff, Joey exclaimed, “Hmm, what an amazing sight! All our descendants are strong and capable. Within Erudia, there are few who are stronger than the Jones family itself.

“Michael and Westley have done especially well. Within, ten years they have elevated their families from quasi-royal clans to royal families. There are eight other prominent families who were elevated to quasi-royal clan status. I am impressed!”

“Thank you for your compliments, Father. We wish you a long and prosperous life. Also, we wish the Jones diasporic families everlasting glory!” Michael and Westley both stood up to congratulate everyone.

The crowd repeated in unison, “We wish you a long and prosperous life. Also, we wish the Jones diasporic families everlasting glory!”

Joey replied with a smile, “Next, why don’t you tell us one by one what you have achieved in the last ten years.”

Michael and Westley’s achievements were a league above everyone else. Joey couldn’t stop praising them.

However, Westley explained with resignation, “Joey, the Chillshire Jones family has some regrets. We have reached the pinnacle of the business world, but there is no one in our family who has done well in government or the army. My son, Franklin, has not shown he is exceptional as he is just an ordinary government leader. While my grandson Aiden is only a colonel in the army which is nothing to shout about. As for my brother, Xaver Jones, he is just a second-tier leader in Chillshire but will be promoted to a first-tier leader next year.”

Hiss!

Everyone gasped in awe at how powerful the Jones family of the Chillshire branch was.

It was very impressive of them to have influential members in business, government, and the army.

Despite his humble tone, Westley was trying to outdo Michael.

He understood that in the south, both his family and Michael’s were evenly matched.

In terms of the government and army, his family definitely did better than the Jones family of South Hampton.

The Protector Chapter 867

“Impressive! You have lived up to the reputation of being a Jones. Our ancestors are proud of you.” Joey clapped with joy.

He turned his attention to Michael as it was now the latter’s turn to present his family’s achievements.

Michael glanced at Westley before presenting. “The South Hampton Joneses isn’t as glorious as Chillshire’s. We do not have any exceptional members. The only one worth mentioning is my seventh son, Anson.”

Westley interrupted immediately, “Oh? I heard Anson is a prodigal son, to the extent you forced him to join the army. So, how is he doing now?”

“Anson behaved badly in the past and was every bit the prodigal son you heard about, but he straightened out after joining the army. Today, he is one of the God of War’s close subordinates as a Brigadier General in the Iron Brigade. He is a fearsome warrior and the God of War’s right-hand man,” Michael explained with aplomb.

“A Brigadier General in the Iron Brigade?” Westley’s eyes almost popped out in disbelief.

If what Michael said was true, his family’s achievements would pale in comparison.

Hiss!

When the crowd heard what Michael said, all of them caught their breath in awe.

That’s really impressive!

As part of the God of War's personal troops, his status is a lot higher than that of ordinary generals.

After all, it's the God of War we are talking about here!

"Hahaha!"

At that moment, someone burst into sudden laughter.

That person was Levi.

Anson was a useless bum. Ever since he joined the army, he never saw himself as a soldier. All he did was pass the time eating and drinking.

In the end, he deserted the army and was taken prisoner by the enemy. He almost leaked out the army's secrets too.

How did this man end up being one of the Iron Brigade's King of War as claimed by Michael?

There are no wimps in the Iron Brigade, let alone a deserter like Anson.

Even if a member of the Iron Brigade is faced with ten thousand men alone, he would rather charge at the enemy and die in the blaze of glory.

As everyone was quiet, Levi's laughed was especially jarring, which caused them to turn their attention to him.

Michael was infuriated.

Is this he here to cause trouble?

Will he not rest until we're all dead?

Meanwhile, Westley was delighted to see Levi.

However, he maintained his stern expression. “How can one even laugh during such a solemn moment? It’s really rude. Do you even respect the rules of the Jones family? Who is it? Come out right now!”

“That’s right, whose dares to be so rude?” Even Joey was outraged.

“Grandfather, it’s Michael’s own grandson, Levi Garrison,” someone from the crowd replied.

The crowd was in an uproar.

Michael’s eyes were filled with dread.

The Protector Chapter 868

“Levi Garrison? Come out here!” Joey ordered angrily as he slammed his staff on the ground.

As the person with the highest authority within the Joneses, he was furious to see such conflict during a solemn event like this.

The junior members of the Jones family should always be respectful!

At that moment, everyone turned their gaze toward Levi while the members of the South Hampton Jones family hung their heads in shame.

The time to be humiliated has begun!

It's all because of Levi!

He is the source of our humiliation!

However, Levi didn't move despite being ordered to do so.

Joey shifted his sharp gaze to Levi.

“I'm talking to you. Can't you hear me?” Joey's voice deepened.

However, Levi ignored him as he never acknowledged that he was related to the Jones family.

No matter how much authority Joey had as Patriarch of the Jones family, he had no power over Levi.

Joey was furious at Levi for ignoring him again.

At the same time, Michael and the others were equally infuriated.

Levi is like a plague to us and keeps bringing us shame.

Joey then turned to Michael. "Is this how you teach your grandson? To turn a deaf ear to my command? Is he really deaf?"

Boom!

The Jones family of South Hampton were trembling uncontrollably at the patriarch's reprimand.

"Levi! Step forward!" Michael yelled at the top of his lungs.

Everyone else began yelling, "Levi Garrison, step forward!"

However, Levi refused with a smile. "You don't have the authority to order me around."

Everyone looked at him in disbelief.

Isn't that just ridiculously rude?

How could he be so brazen in front of the entire Jones diasporic families?

He does not respect anyone at all!

“Michael, you really have a wonderful grandson,” Joey scolded.

Before Michael could explain, Westley interjected, “Father, based on what I know, this grandson of Michael’s was left on the streets since he was young. He grew up in a ghetto and inadvertently picked up many bad habits. He doesn’t deserve to have the noble Jones family blood flowing through him.”

“That’s right! Despite having half the noble Jones family blood, he is a despicable person to the core. How can someone like him attend the Jones family’s anniversary meeting?”

“How can he even be allowed to stand in the ancestral hall? He is a disgrace to our bloodline!” Aiden complained angrily.

Levi’s expression darkened and retorted, “Noble bloodline? In that case, I want to see how noble is your blood. Let me extract to examine its color.”

He walked toward Aiden.

“Wait! What are you doing?”

Everyone was shocked as the scene turned chaotic.

When Michael saw that Levi was filled with murderous intent, he resigned himself to despair.

The Protector Chapter 869

Although he hadn't known Levi for a long time, he was still aware of how cruel his grandson was.

He knew Levi would have no qualms about drawing his knife and extracting blood from Aiden.

If Levi and Aiden were drawn into a conflict, the South Hampton Jones family would be done for.

The shame brought upon the family could never be washed away.

"Insolence! What are you trying to do?"

Aiden could feel how terrifying Levi was as he instinctively retreated a few steps.

The crowd berated Levi one by one, "How dare you cause trouble during such a solemn occasion?"

Joey was outraged as he stabbed his staff into the ground loudly.

"Why is there such a bastard within the illustrious Jones family?" he lamented as he watched Levi approach Aiden.

"What is this ruckus all about?"

At that moment, a voice rang out in the courtyard.

A man dressed in military fatigues carrying a green backpack entered.

“Oh? It’s my seventh son! Anson has returned!” Michael yelled in excitement.

Wallace, Calvin, and Tyler were all ecstatic to see Anson.

The pride of the Jones family has returned!

He is a real King of War!

He is also a member of the Iron Brigade under the God of War!

Everyone’s attention was focused on Anson.

“Dad, I’m back!” Anson exclaimed.

Michael hugged his son affectionately as he scrutinized him from head to toe.

You picked the right time to be back!

“Oh? Son, is there something wrong with your uniform?” Michael asked, puzzled.

He noticed there weren’t any military signs on Anson’s uniform.

His armband and the shoulder ranks were gone. Even his serial number and all other insignias were left empty.

Being a deserter who almost leaked army secrets to the enemy, he was stripped of everything, leaving nothing on his uniform.

Staring at his empty uniform, Michael and everyone else were surprised.

In their minds, Anson was supposed to be wearing the uniform of a Brigadier General with a single star on his shoulder.

However, not seeing anything there disappointed them.

They started to doubt Anson’s identity.

“Anson, where’s your uniform? Aren’t you a Brigadier General?” Michael asked.

“About that, the Iron Brigade has very strict disciplinary rules. On such an occasion, we are not allowed to deck out our uniforms in full colors. All ranks and insignias have to be removed to keep a low profile,” Anson explained without batting an eyelid.

He didn’t dare to tell his father the truth for fear of being beaten to death.

“Oh! So that’s it. Just as I’ve said!” Michael smiled in relief.

“Bullshit, who came up with that rule? Why didn’t I know about it?” Levi interjected suddenly.

The Protector Chapter 870

Levi had never set such a rule in the Iron Brigade.

In fact, he would encourage his men to put on their Iron Brigade armbands when they returned home because it was a prestigious symbol.

Any family who had a son serving in the Iron Brigade would feel extremely honored.

Levi's words brought everyone's attention back to him, including Anson's.

He sneered at Levi, "Who are you? Do I know you?"

"Are you a member of the Iron Brigade?" Levi asked.

"That's right! Brigadier General Anson Jones of the Iron Brigade at your service," Anson replied.

Levi was amused. "You're in the Iron Brigade and yet you don't know who I am?"

Soldiers from other divisions may not know him, but the Iron Brigade was under his personal command. Every member knew him by the face.

It was impossible for his subordinate not to recognize him.

It only means you are not from the Iron Brigade.

“I don’t know you. A-Are you also in the Iron Brigade?” Anson panicked.

If his lie were exposed, Michael would definitely punish him severely.

“Don’t listen to his nonsense. He is Emma’s son, Levi Garrison,” Michael reminded.

Upon hearing that, Anson heaved a sigh of relief.

He glared at Levi and bellowed, “Are you even from the Iron Brigade? Why do I need to know you? Who do you think you are?”

Levi replied with a knowing smile, “If you are really from the Iron Brigade, you will definitely know who I am.”

“Dad, is this guy being rude and disrespecting all the elders here?” Anson stared daggers at Levi.

“Just ignore him! Come over here to greet the Patriarch.”

Anson followed his father and approached Joey.

“Grandfather, it’s my honor to meet you.”

Joey stood up and looked at Anson emotionally. “The Jones diasporic families finally have a member who brings the greatest honor to the family. So what if one is extremely wealthy or if one’s wealth rival that of nations? It pales in comparison with what you have achieved! You are the right-hand man of the God of War and a famous general of the Iron Brigade. I am extremely proud of you!”

The South Hampton Jones family was ecstatic to hear that.

To be acknowledged by the Grandmaster in front of the Jones diasporic families was considered the highest honor and the envy of the other families.

As a result, Westley's face darkened.

"Come, give Anson a seat," Joey ordered.

Other than the head of prominent Jones families, no one else was allowed to sit in front.

By inviting Anson to have a seat, Joey was demonstrating how much he valued Anson's achievement.

Michael arranged for two chairs to be brought in. One for Anson while the other for a guest of the highest honor, the God of War himself.

When Levi saw the empty chair, he commented with a smile, "It appears the Jones family knows what's good for them by reserving a seat for me."

Just as he spoke, he proceeded to take his seat.

The Protector Chapter 871

“Levi, what are you doing?” Anson stopped him when he saw Levi sitting down.

“I’m taking the place they have reserved for me,” Levi casually replied.

“Are you out of your mind? Look at how many elders are standing, so what gives you the right to sit?” Anson scolded.

“Is Michael’s grandson sick in the head? Or is he just arrogant? Since when is he qualified to sit there?”

“That’s right! He keeps behaving rudely in front of the Patriarch. Michael, what’s the meaning of this? Are you doing it on purpose?”

After berating Levi, the crowd turned their attention toward Michael.

“I…”

He was close to bursting a vessel.

To him, Levi was an idiot who insisted on creating unnecessary drama.

Meanwhile, the South Hampton Jones family stared at Levi as if he was their mortal enemy.

If not for his presence, they would have outshone everyone else during the anniversary meeting.

Amongst the crowd, Calvin pulled Mia over and warned her, "Mia, you should not have anything to do with Levi from now on. Or else, he will be the death of you!"

"Why? He has always treated me well. Don't worry, he won't harm me," Mia replied with a smile.

"You're still young, so what do you know? I know a scum when I see one." Calvin hated Levi's guts now.

Mia retorted, "Dad, you're the one that's ignorant. If Levi's true identity is revealed, he would outshine everyone here. No one can compare to him."

Calvin gave her an exasperated look. "Did Levi poison your head?"

Mia replied in glee, "Dad, you will know soon enough."

Meanwhile, Westley suddenly remarked, "Michael, what's the meaning of this extra chair? Did you prepare it for your grandson?"

"Hahahaha..."

The crowd burst into laughter, causing Michael to feel humiliated.

"Michael, tell me. Who is that seat for?" Even Joey was concerned.

At that moment, Michael knew he couldn't maintain his secret any longer. "Joey, I wanted to give you a surprise at the end. Given the current circumstances, I have to choice but to tell you now."

Westley's heart sank when he realized Michael must have invited someone extremely important to the meeting.

He knew Michael planned to solidify the South Hampton Jones family's position in one move.

Westley began to panic as he did not make any other preparations.

When he turned to look at the South Hampton Jones family, all of them looked extremely confident.

It was obviously someone very important who would help them reinforce their position.

In his curiosity, Joey couldn't help but ask, "Hmm? I am very interested to know who this person is?"

Michael replied with a smile, "I'll not hide it from you any longer. The seat is prepared for the God of War."

The Protector Chapter 872

It was a shocking revelation to them.

Just as Michael spoke, everyone gasped as if they had been struck by lightning.

Other than the South Hampton Jones family, everyone else was stupefied.

Although Westley guessed it was someone important, this was still beyond what he had imagined.

It is the God of War himself!

Joey was so emotional that he teared and even dropped his staff.

“Is it true? Is the honorable God of War coming to attend our anniversary meeting?”

His body was visibly trembling.

“Father, it’s true. To be honest, the God of War has been a supporter of the South Hampton Jones Family for a long time.”

“Do you remember when we were attacked by Elijah? It was the God of War who saved us.”

After receiving an affirmative answer, Joey shouted in elation, “The status of the Jones is going to be further elevated! Going forward, the entire Jones diasporic families in Erudia will be placed under your authority.”

Pfft!

The declaration dealt a crushing blow to Westley, but it was the best news the South Hampton Jones family could hope for.

Although Levi’s appearance had humiliated them and angered the Patriarch, the South Hampton Jones family still had one more trump card—the God of War.

Michael almost jumped in joy when he realized all the Jones families in Erudia would have to take orders from him.

In his mind, a blueprint took shape.

He planned to leverage on the strength of the Jones families in Erudia to create a royal family. Not only was he going to rule South Hampton, but also the whole of Erudia in the end.

“When is the God of War arriving?” Joey asked in anticipation.

“Ordinary people like us are not privy to his itinerary. However, he has promised us that he would be here,” Michael answered confidently.

At that moment, no one noticed Anson was trembling in a corner as he didn’t expect the God of War to come in person.

When he arrives, wouldn’t I be exposed?

It would be impossible for the God of War not to recognize him, given that he claimed to be a King of War, the God of War’s right-hand man.

When that happens, where am I going to hide?

The more he thought about it, the more fearful he became. He was shivering incessantly.

In fact, he was so frightened that he could wet his pants anytime.

“Anson, why are you shaking? What are you afraid of?” Michael asked in surprise.

Curiosity flashed in his eyes.

Why is he so frightened when I mentioned the God of War?

What’s going on with him?

Joey came to Anson’s defense. “Michael, don’t you know? As the God of War’s right-hand man, Anson must be excited to see him.”

It suddenly made sense to Michael. “Oh, right! That’s true.”

A voice rang out. “No! He is afraid that once the God of War arrives and doesn’t recognize him, his lie will be exposed.”

The Protector Chapter 873

It was Levi.

Damn it, it's Levi again!

Michael couldn't be anymore outraged.

While Anson was trembling, he didn't expect Levi to bring up the topic again.

He looked at Levi in horror and wondered if the latter really knew something.

He didn't dare rebut as he was overwhelmed by fear.

“Levi, what are you babbling about? Anson really is a King of War in the Iron Brigade. You're accusing him of being a fraud. Are you for real?”

“That's right! Are you causing trouble on purpose?”

The whole South Hampton Jones family was up in arms at Levi's attitude.

If the other families weren't watching, they would have definitely killed Levi.

Meanwhile, Westley was happily watching the unexpected turn of events.

So what if the South Hampton Jones family has many achievements?

Having a King of War no longer matters when they have a crazy person like Levi running loose.

His actions alone negate all their accomplishments.

He is a disgrace to the South Hampton Jones family and deserves to be nailed to the pillar of shame.

Going with the flow, Westley inquired, "Levi, how do you know he is a fraud? Do you know something we don't?"

Anson's face turned pale while cold sweat broke out on his forehead.

"Because I know every single person in the Iron Brigade and he is not one of them," Levi replied in amusement.

Michael retorted, "What do you know? Do you think you're one of the Iron Brigade?"

Before Levi could reply, Michael interrupted him further, "I've investigated everything about you. Other than being imprisoned for six years, you were at North Hampton. What connection do you have with the Iron Brigade?" The gloves were off for Michael.

Not afraid of being laughed at, Michael revealed the fact that Levi went to prison on impulse.

Everyone was shocked by the revelation.

Michael then explained to Joey, "I know this is embarrassing but I'm sure you're aware of the shame my daughter, Emma, experienced. However, her son is even more of a disgrace! If Westley hadn't declared our relationship to the world, I would never have acknowledged him. Today, in front of you, I declare he is not fit to be my grandson. I will never acknowledge him as my family."

Joey and Westley were shocked at how harsh Michael was.

“Do you want me to acknowledge you? I can! Just show me your achievements. If you can be a colonel in the army, a government leader, or even own a billion in assets, I will acknowledge you once you accomplish any of those. Do you even have any? You’re nothing but an absolute loser and an ex-convict. Do you deserve to be part of the Jones family?”

Michael was ballistic as he bombarded Levi with questions.

At that moment, someone ran into the courtyard.

“Tyler, Wales, the Prince Gang is here!”

The Protector Chapter 874

18/06/2021 by [Chapter Novel](#)

“The Prince Gang is here?”

Both Tyler and Wales were stunned for a moment.

Although they had greeted the Prince Gang before, they were ignored by Jaron and his companions then.

Why are they here?

Join Telegram Group For Fast update and Novel Query

Regardless of the reason, it's a positive development.

At least they will provide us with a show of strength.

After all, the Prince Gang was considered a prestigious organization.

Every one of its members represented South Hampton's most prominent families.

Holding that thought, both men were ecstatic as they went out to receive them.

“Father, they are part of Tyler's network. They're an organization of youths called the Prince Gang, and are made up of all the heirs of South Hampton's prominent families.” Michael grinned.

Join Telegram Group For Fast update and Novel Query

“That's very good. I have heard about the Prince Gang before, as they are famous. These young men have a promising future, which is impressive,” Joey continued his praise.

Amidst the crowd, Mia's eyes were sparkling with excitement while her lips widened into a smug smile.

She mumbled to herself, "It appears Levi is going to make his move soon."

She was looking forward to seeing Levi revealing his identity and shocking everyone present.

I wonder how the Jones family will react later. I really can't wait!

Calvin asked out of curiosity, "Mia, what are you babbling about? What has this got to do with Levi?"

"Dad, just keep watching," Mia replied with a smile.

Calvin was none the wiser but continued to watch the situation unfold.

In a brief moment, Tyler and his brother led the members of the Prince Gang in.

Leading the group was Jaron and Jackson.

"Father, this Jaron Goel, leader of the Prince Gang and heir to South Hampton's most prominent family, the Goel family. Beside him is Jackson Hunt, heir to South Hampton's second most prominent family, the Hunt family..." Michael started to introduce the members of the Prince Gang.

"Very good. With such powerful friends, the Jones family will definitely be further elevated. Michael, not only do you make me proud, but the younger members of the family also never cease to amaze me. It seems the future of the Jones diasporic families lies in your hands," Joey remarked emotionally."

The other Jones families looked on in admiration and envy.

"Jaron, Jackson, let me introduce you. This is..."

Before Tyler could introduce them to Joey, Jaron led the Prince Gang members away and headed in a different direction.

“Oh? What’s going on?”

Everyone was caught by surprise while Tyler and Wales were stunned.

Huh? Aren't they here to support us?

Why have they left? Do they have a different reason for coming?

When he saw the direction Jaron was heading, Calvin’s heart began to race in suspense.

Is what Mia said coming true?

He gave her a thoughtful look.

Mia’s eyes were glistening with pride.

The thousand-odd attendees were staring in the direction Jaron was heading.

When the group arrived in front of Levi, they dropped to their knees with a thump.

The Protector Chapter 875

All the members of the Prince Gang were kneeling in front of Levi. They shouted in unison, "The South Hampton Prince Gang is honored to see you, Master."

Their spirited greeting echoed reverberated like rumbling thunder.

There was total silence, as if time had stopped and space had frozen.

Everything was suspended at that very moment.

Tyler was stupefied, and so was Michael and Joey.

The thousand-odd members of the Jones family were all astounded.

Everyone felt as if they had been struck by lightning and burnt to a crisp.

As Calvin and Mia were standing close by, he saw everything unfold right before him. Unable to fully process what was going on, he felt as if he was going to faint anytime.

Luckily, Mia was there to support him.

Bam!

Someone couldn't accept what was going on and fainted on the ground, causing a loud thump.

The sound brought everyone's senses back.

They were all gasping for air.

It is unbelievable!

It must be the end of the world!

No matter what, they could not accept what had just unfolded in front of them.

The South Hampton Prince Gang is actually kneeling in front of Levi?

W-What's going on?

Isn't he a bastard?

I thought he was just rabble?

Did he really spend six years in prison?

Who is he for the Prince Gang to kneel before him?

A barrage of questions bombarded everyone's mind.

They were filled with doubts and didn't know where the disconnect was.

Among the thousand men present, all that could be heard was the sound of heavy breathing.

It was obvious no one could fathom what was going on.

Tyler and Wales couldn't help but ask, "Jaron, Jackson, are you paying your respects to the wrong person? The one who is the most senior among us is Joey, the Patriarch. And he's right over here."

Hearing that, Jaron looked at Tyler and his brother. "If you are still a member of the Prince Gang, come over here and kneel!"

"Huh? Kneel? To him? Never! I can kneel to anyone but him!"

“That’s right. What are you talking about? We will never kneel to a bastard!”

Tyler and his brother made their stand.

Jaron suddenly stood up and stormed toward both of them.

Slap! Slap!

He gave each of them a forceful slap.

“I will personally kill whoever dare calls our master a bastard,” Jaron bellowed.

“From now on, you are both banished from the South Hampton Prince Gang!”

Jaron made a decisive decision.

Everyone was shocked that Tyler and Wales were kicked out.

“The next time you utter the word ‘bastard’ against our master again, I’ll kill both of you.”

The Protector Chapter 876

None of the Joneses understood Jaron's threat.

What's going on?

Who exactly is Levi?

This is such a surprise.

The Prince Gang not only called him 'master' but also defended him. Why is that?

After teaching Tyler and Wales a lesson, Jaron returned to kneel in front of Levi.

"Enough, get up," Levi casually said.

Upon his orders, all the members of the Prince Gang stood up.

At that moment, Michael's mind went blank.

He and the other Joneses could not comprehend how Levi could become the master of the South Hampton's Prince Gang.

Puzzled, Michael and Tyler exchanged glances and recalled that Lucas went to South City a few days ago.

Was Lucas crippled by Levi?

And yet, that was only the beginning.

“Sir! Sir! For some reason, a lot of luxury cars are arriving outside. From the looks of it, there are almost a hundred of them,” the butler rushed in suddenly to report what was going on outside.

“Oh? Do we still have guests?”

Michael was surprised as he was no longer expecting anyone.

Could it be the God of War?

But the God of War wouldn't come in a hundred-car convoy.

So, who else could it be?

Thud! Thud! Thud!

The next moment, they could hear a flurry of footsteps.

It sounded as if there were many people.

“Quick, look who's here?”

Everyone looked out in anticipation.

A hundred odd men arrived in front of the ancestral hall.

Luckily, the courtyard was big enough to contain all of them.

When he saw who was heading the group, Michael was astonished beyond belief.

It was Xabian Goel and the other nine heads of South Hampton's royal families.

Behind them, there was still a large entourage.

"Xabian, didn't you say that you could not attend our anniversary meeting? Why have you suddenly come?" Michael approached and asked curiously.

He had earlier invited them because they were part of his local network in South Hampton.

However, all of them rejected his invitation as they felt it inappropriate for outsiders to attend a Jones family anniversary meeting.

And yet, here they were, which confused Michael.

"Hmph! Why should we attend your family's anniversary meeting?" Xabian snorted.

"That's right, what has your family event got to do with us?" Mario of the Hunt family retorted.

Hayden of the Quinn family also sneered, "Michael, do you think we are idiots?"

"This..."

The Goel, Hunt, and Quinn families were the top three of South Hampton's ten royal families.

Therefore, Michael didn't dare offend them.

He carefully pried, "In that case, are you here for someone else?"

“Mmm, of course.”

Xabian and the others walked toward Levi.

Hiss!

The courtyard fell into complete silence again.

The Protector Chapter 877

When Xabian and the others arrived in front of Levi, they too dropped to their knees.

The Joneses felt as if their hearts were going to burst.

Those are South Hampton's finest!

That is the head of the Goel family, Xabian!

It was such a magnificent sight that everyone was enthralled.

Xabian greeted, "The South Hampton's Goel family is honored to see you, Master."

Next, Mario greeted, "The South Hampton's Hunt family is honored to see you, Master."

Then, it was Hayden who greeted, "The South Hampton's Quinn family is honored to see you, Master."

However, that was just the beginning.

One by one, the head of the other families paid their respects to Levi.

Finally, a total of ninety-nine prominent families knelt in front of Levi and greeted him as their master.

Of the hundred prominent families of South Hampton, ninety-nine of them had gathered in front of Levi.

Only the solitary Jones family was left out.

In other words, only the Jones family had not greeted Levi as their Master.

What's going on?

It's unbelievable!

It's just unimaginable!

At that instant, everything Michael believed in was in tatters.

Pfft!

His heart sank as he felt a choking sensation in his throat.

If not for him forcibly suppressing it, he would throw up anytime.

Meanwhile, the entire courtyard was silent, even the sound of breathing was non-existent this time.

Drip! Drip! Drip!

The only sound that could be heard was cold sweat dripping onto the floor as every single member of the Jones family was sweating profusely.

They were so nervous that they were already drenched in sweat.

Even Mia, who knew Levi's identity, was breathing rapidly and had broken into a cold sweat.

She had thought that him being the Master of the Prince Gang was impressive enough.

Little did she expect that was just the beginning.

Except for the Jones family, every other prominent family in South Hampton had recognized him as their master.

It was unbelievably shocking.

The Jones family couldn't believe what they just saw as their hearts beat so furiously that they could explode anytime.

As their breathing increased in pace, their breathlessness made them feel as if they were being suffocated by a rope.

Is that all?

No.

Not yet.

"Mr. Grover Cooke of the Southern Union and his Four Kings are here!"

A shout was heard from outside.

The Protector Chapter 878

Boom!

Michael and the other Joneses were so shocked that they felt as if they had been struck by lightning again.

This time, the Joneses knew that Grover and the Four Kings were here to see Levi too.

The next moment, Grover led the Four Kings inside, followed by the Six Slaves.

The eleven of them walked toward Levi and dropped to their knees in a thud.

As all of them knelt in front of Levi, they greeted in unison, "Mr. Garrison!"

Everyone was stupefied.

Grover is just as famous as Elder Goel.

Even the Four Kings who arrived with him are heroes in their own right.

And yet, they are all kneeling in front of that brat?

This is simply inconceivable.

What is Levi's true identity?

Isn't he a bastard as what the Jones family claims?

It's impossible for a hooligan to be accorded with so much respect.

Meanwhile, Joey, Westley, and all the other Joneses turned to look at Michael.

It was obvious from their gaze that they were asking the same question. *Is he really the hooligan that you claim he is?*

His status now is already higher than all the Joneses combined.

Despite such influence, Michael had the gall to say that Levi didn't deserve to be part of the Jones family? And that he will never acknowledge Levi?

He even set three conditions for Levi?

Levi's current position is so high that even the Jones family can only aspire to achieve it.

Does he even need the three conditions?

The South Hampton Jones family are a bunch of fools and Michael is the biggest fool of them all!

Joey glared angrily at Michael till his face was red.

All you needed to do was treating him better and he would become one of us.

With his capabilities and network, Levi could lead the Jones family to greater heights.

However, you made a mess of your relationship with him!

If Joey knew the Jones family had tried to assassinate Levi a few times, he would likely have beaten Michael to death with his staff.

As the atmosphere eased, everyone's heavy breathing could be heard.

It was a terrifying experience.

Everything they experienced today would never be forgotten for the rest of their lives.

“Y-Y-You...” Michael stared at Levi for a long while but couldn’t even spit out a single word.

It shocked every single one of the Jones family when they realized many of the previous misunderstandings could now be resolved.

Why Daniel was beaten to a pulp, why Lucas ended up a eunuch, why the Prince Gang was destroyed... up to the fact that the local tyrant Oliver was overthrown, and why the King of Assassins had suddenly disappeared. All these events were linked to Levi.

They had previously thought it was just a coincidence that all the above parties bumped into the God of War. But now, they knew it was all because of Levi.

He alone was strong enough.

“What do you want to ask me?” Levi smiled.

“I told you long ago that I don’t care about the Jones family at all, let alone if you acknowledge me. I’m stronger than all of you! Can’t you see that?”

The Protector Chapter 879

Tyler was the smartest in the Jones family, and he laughed before saying, "I'll admit that you are powerful, even though I don't know why or where you've gotten your power from. The important bit, however, is that the Joneses truly are not a match against you. Unfortunately for you, my family has something up our sleeves. We are supported by someone who is powerful, and everything that you have will be nothing but illusions once he shows up!"

His words made everyone gasp, and they soon regained their composure.

Levi's network and connection had frightened them so much that they had actually forgotten about the guy having their backs. The Joneses had an extremely powerful ally.

Tyler's words served as a reminder to everyone that the Joneses still had the God of War on their side!

Everyone heaved a sigh of relief when such a thought came to mind, as the color gradually returned to their cheeks.

They hadn't lost!

Or rather, the Joneses of South Hampton were just beginning.

"That's right! We have the God of War on our side, so don't you gloat, Levi Garrison."

"Wisdom comes with age, and you are simply too young to fight us," proclaimed Michael, who smiled arrogantly once more.

Joey forgave Michael for the time being.

Everything can be settled, with the God of War on our side.

“Is the God of War here yet? We’re merely minutes away from the opening ceremony,” asked Joey impatiently.

Westley murmured suspiciously, “Will the God of War really show up?”

“Of course. He is the God of War, so he will definitely keep to his word,” defended Michael immediately.

“Then why isn’t he here yet? It’s true that he is tied to his words, but the Joneses truly are too weak to get his attention.”

“He doesn’t need to come if he doesn’t want to. It’s not like you can do anything about it anyway,” reminded Westley, whose words had caused Michael to shiver a little.

He’s right. Regardless of what the God of War has said, the Joneses are still rather weak, when compared to him. He doesn’t need to show up if he doesn’t want to, and there is nothing that we can do about it.

Michael turned to his son at that crucial moment and barked, “Anson, can you get in touch with the God of War? Hurry and ask him where he is right now!”

“Huh? Um...” fumbled Anson awkwardly.

He had been lying the entire time, and he didn’t know the God of War at all! How was he supposed to get in touch with the guy?

Anson cleared his throat and announced awkwardly, “Dad, you might not be aware of this, but the God of War’s daily routines are all top secret. The password to get in touch with him changes every day.”

Michael immediately ordered, “Tyler, call the commander-in-chief right away and ask him why the God of War hasn’t shown up yet.”

The Joneses were all nervous then, and they had begun to sweat, once more.

The Joneses were done for if the God of War wasn’t going to show up.

Joey instructed, "Put it on speakerphone."

"Hello commander-in-chief, I am Tyler Jones of the Jones family. I, uh, I'd like to ask if the God of War has left yet? We don't see him around."

The voice rang up, from the other end of the line, "The God of War has already arrived. Didn't you see him there?"

The Protector Chapter 880

Tyler was so surprised that his hand had slipped, and his phone had fallen onto the ground.

The God of War is here? Why haven't we heard anything about it? I don't see the God of War anywhere. In fact, the only people here are Levi Garrison, the business tycoons of South Hampton, and the members of the Southern Union.

"Commander-in-chief, the God of War is nowhere to be seen. Maybe you made a mistake?" asked Tyler, who couldn't help himself.

"Maybe he's on his way. Let me check."

Michael appeared calmer and insisted, "The God of War is probably already on his way over, Joey."

"Yes, that has to be it. I'll have my people head over to welcome him," added Tyler.

"No, you will all go in person to show him how much we respect him," instructed Michael.

Wallace, Tyler, and the others all went out of the house to welcome the God of War.

"I don't care how powerful you are, Levi Garrison. You are nothing compared to Anson. He is the King of War-Iron Brigade, and he has the God of War watching his back. Your power doesn't matter under such circumstances!" growled Michael.

Joey glared evilly at Michael upon hearing his words. "You... Why must you speak in such a manner? Must you make an enemy out of him? He is your grandson, your biological grandson, and our blood runs in his very veins! He is also a member of our family, so why are you being so mean?" scolded Joey, before he turned to Levi and added, "Kid, the previous incident is merely a misunderstanding. They had only acted that way because they weren't aware of who you were. If they had known your true identity, they would've treated you differently and they

might've even trained you to become the next head of the family. You silly kid, why did you keep your identity a secret? You could've told us the truth from the beginning."

Joey's intentions were simple.

He had wanted to appease Levi, clear all rifts, and convince him to join the Jones family.

He got the business tycoons in South Hampton to see him as their leader, and if the family could merge with a power like that, it would definitely benefit both sides greatly. The Jones family would definitely rise to become one of the top families of the country.

Naturally, Joey didn't want to let go of an opportunity like that.

"He's right. I was wrong earlier and I didn't see how talented you were. Why didn't you inform me of your true identity earlier? I would've gone to welcome you in person," announced Michael immediately. He caught what Joey was thinking and planning.

Levi chuckled.

"And what if I were not as powerful as I am now? Would you still take me in as a member of your family? Would you still welcome me with open arms, Michael?"

"I..." fumbled Michael, who didn't quite know what to say.

Joey was stumped as well.

If Levi weren't as powerful as he was, everyone would continue treating him like a bastard.

"Hmph, let me share something with you. The Jones family means nothing to me!"

Tyler, Wales, and the others returned at that moment.

"Huh? Is the God of War already here?"

The Protector Chapter 881

Michael immediately looked ahead, with hope burning in his eyes, but he was soon disappointed.

The God of War wasn't there, and Tyler and the others were the ones who had arrived, along with a servant.

The servant had a gift box with him.

The Joneses thought that the box looked quite familiar, but they couldn't quite remember where they had seen it before.

"What's going on, Tyler? Didn't I ask you guys to go and welcome the God of War? Why did you return with this?" asked Michael.

"Calm down, grandpa. This guy is not an ordinary guy. He is the God of War's messenger and he is here with the God of War's gift to us."

Tyler's words got Michael excited.

He quickly rushed over to check it out.

Anything related to the God of War, even a stinky dog, would be viewed as a luxury, in his eyes.

Michael would have gone on his knees to accept the gift if he had needed to.

“Sir, what did the God of War have you deliver over?” asked Michael.

“An ancient relic. A bronze sword,” replied the man calmly.

“Huh? A bronze sword?”

The Joneses took a closer look and realized that it was the same sword that the Jones family had gifted the God of War, back some time ago.

That was good news, because if the sword was there, then the God of War had to be close-by as well.

Levi Garrison would mean nothing, when the God of War were to arrive.

He can either join the family and contribute accordingly, or he can rot in hell!

The Joneses were all ecstatic to see that.

“Sir, may I know why the God of War had you deliver the bronze sword over in advance?”

The Joneses guessed that the sword was meant to signal the arrival of the God of War before the real deal had shown up.

The man holding the box ignored them. He looked around and scanned the surroundings before he suddenly walked over to Levi.

Boom!

That gesture sent a dangerous message that had almost frightened Michael and Joey so much that they had fallen onto their knees.

Is the bronze sword a gift to Levi? How does he know the God of War?

As they pondered on this thought, the delivery man approached Levi and presented the box politely.

Levi opened the box and took the bronze sword out to swing it around a little.

The somewhat rusty artefact suddenly turned strangely bright, as it soon appeared powerful.

T-that gift is for Levi? H-how does he know the God of War? Or does it mean that the God of War is here?

They thought about how Levi had seemed to know everything about Anson and the Iron Brigade.

Is Levi a member of the Iron Brigade?

Wales couldn't help but scold Levi when the former saw the latter play with the sword, "Oy, what are you doing, Levi Garrison? That bronze sword is a gift from the Jones family to the God of War, and you have no right to play with it like that!"

"He's right! Put it down. You have no right to do that," chimed in the other Joneses.

Levi kept playing with the sword. He chuckled and asked, "There's a question that you guys should really think about."

"And what is that?"

"Could it be that I am the God of War?"

The Protector Chapter 882

Levi's words rained heavily on the Joneses' parade, and it was as though he was trying to administer the Joneses a heart attack.

The Joneses turned quiet instantly.

Their expression froze, their minds went blank, and their irises constricted. It was as almost as if their souls had suddenly left their bodies.

Levi's question was simply too overwhelming.

The Joneses couldn't even imagine the dire consequences they would face if what Levi had claimed was true.

It would be total annihilation, and they didn't want to think about it. They didn't dare to either.

"You? The God of War? Please... Aren't you afraid of offending the real deal?" mocked Wales, who immediately voiced out his suspicion.

Tyler laughed and shared his analysis as well, "Levi Garrison, you are powerful. In fact, you are so good that you have even crushed the Goel family. However, you being the God of War? That is simply impossible. You were imprisoned for six years, and that took you out of the equation, because the God of War rose to power while you were still in prison. I'm guessing that you had met some powerful gangster when you were in prison. That is why you are as powerful as you are now. The business tycoons only follow your tunes because they are afraid of the gangster that you had met in prison. Am I right?"

Levi's power was something that Tyler couldn't make sense of, nor understand.

The only rational explanation that he could come up with, was that Levi had met someone powerful while in prison.

The other members of the Jones family accepted that analysis as well.

After all, they didn't want, or dare to accept any other alternative.

This was seemingly apparent, as they didn't want to accept the bit where Levi might have been the God of War.

Levi laughed aloud and exclaimed, "You're smarter than you appear. You're right. I was given an opportunity while I was imprisoned."

A secret government department chose Levi and took him away while he was in prison.

In a way, he met someone powerful in prison; someone who had raised him to the top.

"You're pretty good. You've managed to get in touch with the God of War even though you've possessed a criminal record," pronounced Tyler as he grinned, "However, the Jones family is still slightly more powerful than you are! Even if we ignore the God of War's close relationship with our family, my uncle, Anson, is still a subordinate who works directly beneath the God of War! That alone trumps any connection that you might have formed with the God of War."

Levi grinned, as he shifted his gaze towards Anson, who was trembling at that very moment.

“Alright then, I’ll wait and see how terribly I will end,” mocked Levi, before he continued playing with the sword.

The Jones family, on the other hand, continued waiting nervously for the God of War to show up.

They were drowning in anxiety, when they finally heard footsteps coming.

Wallace stood at the front and had his head down, as he welcomed the few men standing behind him.

The Joneses instantly recognized one of the men.

It was the Commander-in-chief of the South Hampton Warzone, Clark Pond.

If that guy is there, then the God of War has to be in close proximity as well!

About five other men were standing beside Clark, and they were the Five Great Wars Regiment, serving under the God of War.

However, the Joneses didn’t know any of them and assumed that one of them was the God of War.

“The God of War is finally here!” announced Michael happily.

Joey and the other superiors of the Jones family walked up to welcome everyone, but were unfortunately ignored by Clark and the rest, who walked towards another man instead.

That man was Levi!

The Protector Chapter 883

“No way... Could it be...?”

A bad feeling crept up, upon Michael and the others.

They thought that one of the six men was the God of War, but that had turned out to be untrue.

The insignia on their shoulders suggested that they were five Kings of War instead.

Five Kings of War... Everyone quickly thought about the Five Great Wars Regiment who had served directly under the God of War.

All the Joneses had their eyes on Clark and the others, as they strode towards Levi.

As suspected, the men stopped in front of Levi and greeted simultaneously, “Greetings, God of War.”

Boom!

It felt as though lightning had filled the sky and tore everything apart.

Tyler was flabbergasted.

Wallace was left in shock.

Joey was stunned.

Michael was lost.

...

Over a thousand members of the Jones family had acted as though they had been struck by lightning.

They stood there, petrified, like they had been turned into stones.

The light in their eyes had diminished, as their minds had gone blank.

They were practically mindless zombies at that moment.

Six Kings of War, with five of them being the Five Great Wars Regiment... No one could get them to greet him like that... No one, except the God of War!

Levi Garrison was the God of War!

That was the truth, and it could not change, no matter how much they had wished it could.

Levi grinned and ordered, "Go and get a chair for me. I'm tired."

Levi's words got everyone to turn their gazes to the chair, placed in front of the ancestral shrine.

They still remembered how Levi had requested for that seat, when Michael was arranging the chairs.

Back then, the Joneses had stopped Levi from sitting on that chair and had even mocked him endlessly.

At that moment, it looked like no one else would dare to take that seat, all except for Levi.

After all, it was prepared solely for him.

Azure Dragon quickly grabbed the chair and placed it by Levi's side.

Levi sat down and chuckled, "I told you that this seat was reserved for me, but you lot had refused to believe it."

"Urgh!"

A sweetness spread across Michael's mouth, and he couldn't hold it in anymore. He literally spat out blood.

Thump!

Wallace, on the other hand, had fallen onto the floor, after his feet had softened, giving way to the ground.

Tyler knelt down as well, and so did Wales.

Their scalps felt tingly, as though their brains were about to explode.

Levi Garrison is the God of War!

Their worst nightmare had come true, and they couldn't believe that it actually was real.

Recalling the past incidents, they realized that they were wrong, even from the very beginning.

A guy who could control the business tycoons of South Hampton and the Southern Union couldn't be an ordinary guy, and a gangster couldn't pull something that crazy off.

Moreover, if a gangster were capable of all of that, he would have been too powerful to have been thrown in prison, in the first place!

Tyler felt his scalp going numb when he suddenly made that connection.

Ugh, and Levi's six years in jail, that is, his six years of being out of the public's eyes, coincided with the God of War's rise to power!

The timeline had matched perfectly! Why didn't I think of that sooner?

Tyler smacked his own head.

"Urgh!"

Tyler spat blood as well.

The Protector Chapter 884

It was simply too scary, and that prompted them to turn a blind eye to all the signs.

Why did the King of Assassins go missing all of a sudden? An ordinary man could not have destroyed a man like that.

Lucas was destroyed, the Prince Gang was crushed, and even the head of the Goel family, who had remained powerful in South Hampton for over fifty years, was defeated in South City...

Every single one of those incidents suggested that Levi was the God of War.

Michael stared at Levi in disbelief. The former then asked, "B-back then, the warlord, Elijah, s-shouldn't have captured you."

"Hahahaha..."

The other Joneses laughed aloud, and so did Elijah, the warlord.

They laughed at Michael's misfortune because he couldn't have guessed that the guy he had chosen to take the fall, was none other than the God of War himself.

"No wonder you've never accepted any invitation from the Jones family. It's because they're not worthy of your attention. You weren't being proud. We were merely too weak to make it to your radar."

Michael laughed pitifully. He had already turned pale by then.

Every question that the Joneses had, like why the bronze sword they gifted the God of War suddenly showed up with Levi, was already answered.

It turned out that the God of War was never on their side.

They were merely helped, because Levi was one of their blood-related relatives. The others who had been nice to the Joneses got them to assume that the God of War was on their side.

The help that they had received, plus the fact that Anson was the Iron Brigade, had pushed them into thinking that they were in alliance with the God of War...

Wait, something isn't right. Didn't Anson say that he was the God of War's right-hand man?

Over a thousand pairs of eyes shifted to Anson.

Anson was trembling at that moment, and he had his head so low that it looked like he was hiding his tears.

He knew that his lies would be exposed, as soon as the God of War had arrived.

He was never a King of War. In fact, he wasn't even a foot soldier. He was a deserter and a captive.

"What the hell is wrong with you, Anson? Why aren't you coming over to greet the God of War?" scolded Joey.

Anson was curled up, currently trembling at the side.

He didn't dare to even take a step forward.

“W-what is wrong with you? Aren’t you the King of War, also known as the Iron Brigade?” asked Joey and the others. Everyone was nervously waiting.

“Let me tell you guys the truth. Anson is a military deserter who was captured by the enemy. The real Iron Brigade had rescued him, before locking him up because he had almost spilled military secrets,” shared Levi with a smile.

“Huh? You’re a deserter? No wonder your uniform doesn’t have any insignias.”

“You’re a military deserter? How did our family produce a shameless idiot like you?” roared Michael, before he strode forward with his walking cane and beat Anson up.

Anson was their last hope of getting out of their troubles in one piece, but that hope was never there.

“Stop hitting him already. The other members of the Jones family aren’t that honorable either. Now, what do we do about you trying to assassinate me?” asked Levi suddenly.

The Protector Chapter 885

Boom!

Hearing that question at that moment got Michael's vision to turn dark, and he had almost passed out.

The God of War is making us answer for our crimes!

Thump!

Michael got on his knees, and the other members of the South Hampton Jones family soon followed suit. They fell to their knees, one after the other.

Calvin and Mia were on their knees as well.

Unlike the other members of the Jones family, Calvin was actually a little excited.

His daughter had always trusted Levi, and she was the only one who Levi had seen to be family.

Does that mean that my future will be bright? At the very least, they would have to promote me within the family and no one would dare to offend me. After all, my daughter is the God of War's family member!

"My sweet Mia, I will never learn to be as good as you in judging others," praised Calvin.

“No, dad, I am good at judging others. You guys are simply too narrow-minded. You only have your eyes on profits. Levi is related to us, after all, and he should be treated as a part of the family. I didn’t know who he was earlier either,” replied Mia.

That was when Calvin learned a very important lesson. *The kind ones will always be protected in this world.*

“A-assassinate?”

Joey’s eyes bulged so much that they had almost flown out of his sockets.

That Michael is too crazy! He had actually tried to kill the God of War?

“That’s right. There were two attempts. He hired the King of Assassins from overseas to carry the mission out. He also came after my wife twice!” Levi threw forth, calmly.

Joey fumed and rushed to Michael upon hearing that.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Joey’s cane landed mercilessly on Michael’s head, and the dragon-shaped handle of the cane made Michael begin to bleed.

Joey didn’t stop, even after all of that.

“I also heard that you’ve searched for your grandson just to send him off to the warlord, Elijah, to be tortured! Are you even human? Are you trying to destroy the entire family?” growled Joey, as he caned Michael like a lunatic.

Levi soon caught sight of Mia, who was standing there, and he smiled before saying, "Mia, come over. You don't need to be on your knees."

Mia walked to Levi while everyone else watched.

Levi moved aside so that Mia could have a seat.

Envy.

Everyone on site was envious of the lady who had been offered a seat, right beside the God of War.

What a great honor she has received!

The Joneses from South Hampton were stunned.

They had always bullied Mia, but she had become the most powerful individual in the family.

Calvin also started regretting his decision.

Would things have been even better if I hadn't stopped her from being nice to him?

Endless regret filled Calvin's heart.

"The Joneses tried to kill me twice and troubled my wife twice as well. How shall we settle the score?" asked Levi calmly.

Levi's words did not match his calm tone, and they were as domineering as they could get.

Thump!

Joey was the first one to get down on his knees.

Westley and the other thousand Joneses got down as well.

That was no longer the South Hampton's Jones family's issue.

The fate of all the Joneses of Erudia hung on the balance, at that very moment.

“God of War, we admit our crimes and we are willing to receive our punishment. All we ask is that you let our children go, so that our bloodline doesn't end,” pleaded Joey.

The Protector Chapter 886

Levi laughed boisterously. "Aren't you Joneses from a noble bloodline? Why are you on your knees now? I honestly feel like whipping you, just to see how you would bleed."

Throughout his life, the Joneses had claimed that their bloodline was noble, as they repeatedly called him a bastard, whose blood was tainted by a lower-class clan.

Levi had always felt repulsed by such a saying.

Suddenly, a sob was heard.

Westley's grandson, Aiden, cried instantly out of fear.

Just a moment ago, he was the one who had talked to Levi about having noble blood.

"Aren't you guys crazy proud? Why are you bowing down to a bastard like me now, huh?" mocked Levi with a grin.

"We were wrong! Please forgive us."

Over a thousand members of the Jones family were on their knees now, fervently begging for mercy.

They banged their heads on the floor to beg, so much so that their heads were bleeding soon after.

All they had asked was for, was for Levi to show mercy to their kids. They had simply wanted their bloodline to survive.

Everyone turned silent in the next second.

They were waiting for Levi to come to a verdict.

Mia suddenly spoke up. “Levi, please show us some mercy. Won’t you give everyone an easier punishment? We are a family, after all...”

Levi grinned and promised, “Alright, I’ll go easy on them for your sake.”

Levi then turned to Michael and asked, “Michael Jones, will you confess to your crimes and accept your punishments?”

“Yes, I confess! And I’ll accept any punishment, even the death penalty.”

“I am not interested in your life. However, I do want you to forgo your position as the head of the family. Mia will take over your position from today onwards, and no one is to complain about it!”

All it took was one word from Levi, to take Michael’s position away and hand it over to his least favorite granddaughter.

As far as Michael was concerned, that was worse than death.

Unfortunately, that was the God of War’s order, and Michael had no choice but to obey.

The other members of the Jones family stared on, in utter astonishment.

Mia Jones, the one who has always been bullied by the family, is the new head of the family?

No one could accept that, but they had no choice but to comply.

Mia was flabbergasted as well.

Me? As the head of the family?

“Mia, I’ve investigated you, and you are strategic, smart, and hardworking. You have everything it takes to do this. Also, you can continue to be kind, despite your new position. I will help you in

chasing all of the darkness away,” promised Levi before he turned to Tyler and the rest, “All three of you had hired assassins to kill me and that alone was enough to subject you to death sentence. However, I will spare you and instead, sentence you to life in prison!”

“Urgh!”

“Urgh!”

...

Quite a few people vomited blood at that moment.

Karma arrived too swiftly, and their punishment was worse than death itself.

“Anson Jones, you had faked your identity and had claimed to be a King of War. For that, I will rescind your right to be a member of the Jones family. You are on your own now,” added Levi before he continued, “Westley Jones, you had tried to ambush me using dirty tricks, so you must be punished as well. You will donate half of your estate to charity, and I will have my people monitor everything. So, don’t bother trying to get out of it. The rest of the family members will have to donate as well, and I will monitor everything.”

...

What happened next was that Levi had begun to punish every sinner within the family.

They were fortunate, because Levi wasn’t a bloodthirsty monster.

If he were, more than half the Joneses would be dead.

Levi suddenly recalled something, and he couldn’t help ask, “By the way, why did all of you call me a bastard?”

The Protector Chapter 887

“Huh? That...”

All of the Joneses were scared out of their minds.

Are we going to be further punished?

“No, no, we were wrong, please forgive us!” pleaded Michael, who was on the verge of crying.

If only I had taken the boy in as my grandson... Things would've been so great. Why didn't I treasure that opportunity?

“I am simply asking you a question! My mother is your daughter, Emma Jones, but you had called me a bastard, so my biological father must have been the one whom you had hated, right?” asked Levi.

Levi had always been curious about that.

It made sense that the others would call him a bastard, but even the Joneses had called him that.

That part was strange.

After all, my mom is a member of the Jones family after all.

Michael scanned his surroundings before asking, "God of War, can we speak privately?"

Michael had thought that there were too many people around.

"Okay," agreed Levi.

Both men walked to a secluded corner after that.

"God of War, I will now tell you a bit about your mother. She was the most talented and powerful amongst the rest of my children, and I spared no expense, to train her to become the next head of the family. I set everything up for her and had even arranged her marriage, but she went to Oakland City right before her wedding and returned pregnant, with you. I was so furious that I had almost killed her..."

Michael paused when he reached that part of the story. He snuck a peek at Levi, and when he saw that the latter wasn't angry, he continued, "I asked her who the father was, but she refused to say anything, not even after I had laid a hand on her. The wedding I had arranged for her was about to take place when her suitor learned that she was pregnant! Rumor spread across the entire city. Everyone knew that your mother had fallen pregnant out of wedlock and that the father of her child was not her fiancé. Hence, they called the baby a bastard. She had brought shame to the family, and I had chased her out of the family, in a fit of anger. That is why the Joneses view you as their enemy. This isn't about you. They are angry at your mother."

Levi then asked, "Tell me, was my mother okay with you arranging her marriage?"

"She wasn't thrilled... Okay, she wasn't happy about it at all. She had said that she had wanted to fight for her own happiness and marry someone whom she loved. She had also claimed that she was willing to forgo everything, even her life, to be with your father," murmured Michael.

“Then she is not at fault! You are,” growled Levi cruelly.

*How is it wrong to fight for her own happiness? Why do the others think that it's right to call her a b*tch for that? Furthermore, how does that make her son a bastard?*

Levi's heart stirred.

He finally understood that his mother had her reason for not looking for him.

Her life had been terrible, and she was no better off than he was.

“Is my mother still alive?”

The Protector Chapter 888

Initially, Levi wasn't concerned about his birth parents at all.

They didn't come looking for him, so he pretended that they didn't exist either.

Everyone could have acted like the strangers that they were meant to be.

After hearing his mother's sorrowful tale, Levi became touched and soon, his heart was stirred.

They had their reasons for abandoning me!

That made Levi curious about his parents.

"Yeah, she's alive, but her life is worse than death," replied Michael.

My mother is living in a terrible condition?

Levi's eyes darkened.

He endured his hardship and rose to the top, but his mother might not have been able to do as he had.

In fact, she might still be suffering right now!

Michael's words gripped Levi's heart, and it ached.

"A life worse than death? What is that supposed to mean?" demanded Levi.

“We had thought that your birth father was merely an ordinary man and that your mother had gotten in bed with a random stranger to get pregnant, to disrupt the wedding. As it turned out, your birth father was a powerful man as well! The Joneses were not a match against him, in fact, even the most powerful family in South Hampton, the Goel family, was mere ants to him. Even now, all we know, is that he is from Oakland City and that his surname is Garrison,” claimed Michael as he sighed.

“Huh? Even you can’t learn anything about him?” blurted Levi, who was rather delighted to hear about it.

The Jones family was pretty prominent, yet they couldn’t even get much information about the guy.

Is my birth father really that powerful? I should have Phoenix look into the matter and see just how powerful he is.

“Keep talking,” ordered Levi.

“Not long after I’d chased your mother out of the family, an elite fighter visited the Joneses and killed over a hundred of our men. As it turned out, he had just arrived to warn me not to contact your birth mother ever again. He said that if I had done so, the entire family would have been annihilated too. He also ordered us to keep the news about your mother’s pregnancy a secret. We were not to let anyone else find out about it. What’s strange, is that after that night, South Hampton lost all traces of your mother’s existence. It was as if she was never here in the first place!” shared Michael sadly.

Hmm... He can cover up a trending rumor within a night. That is pretty impressive.

“My birth father did all that?” asked Levi.

“Yes, or to be more accurate, your birth father’s family did that. Their motive was simple. Your birth father’s family was too powerful, and as far as they were concerned, your mother was no different from an unworthy villager. She would have simply brought shame to their family if she had married into it. I still remember the exact message that individual had sent both me and your mother,” explained Michael as he laughed mockingly at himself.

“He said... Emma Jones, you are from a horrid bloodline and you are not worthy of my son or my family. You will never be my daughter-in-law, so you can forget all about it! Also, the child in your womb is nothing but a bastard. Giving birth to him will merely taint my family’s legacy.”

The Protector Chapter 889

Boom!

Michael sensed a horrifying aura, as soon as he had finished speaking.

Levi was furious.

*Bloodline again? What freaking noble bloodline is this now? Also, how do they even divide humans? I don't give a sh*t about all the other countries, but everyone in Erudia is born equal! Everyone has a head and two arms, don't we? What? They have an extra one or something? And how is their blood nobler? It's not like they bleed gold! Freaking hell, I will murder every idiot who talks about bloodlines from now on!*

“Continue,” instructed Levi.

“It was obvious that your birth father’s family were discriminated against your mother and they had refused to allow her to marry into the family. It didn’t matter that she was pregnant at the time. They refused to let her join the family, and they certainly weren’t going to recognize the child as one of their own. Your birth father’s family only had one mission after that; and that was to make your mother experience a miscarriage. They refused to allow the child to be born because, as far as they were concerned, the tainted bastard had no right to live,” relayed Michael.

Levi chuckled.

Oh, so I was almost killed before I was born, huh?

“What happened next? Why didn’t my mom get an abortion?” asked Levi.

“Your mom begged them to let you live and fought to give birth to you. She had even claimed that she was willing to kill herself so that you could live. All she ever wanted was for them to let

you live. Your birth father's family later requested for your mom to kneel in front of their house for three continuous days. Only then did they agree to spare both you and your mother's life."

...

Levi felt tears swirling in his eyes when he heard that part of the story.

Every parent loved their child, and they would not abandon their child unless they didn't have a choice in the matter.

There is no such thing as a heartless parent. Hell, even a cruel tiger won't eat its own cub.

At that moment, Levi understood that his mother had never abandoned him. *It was quite the opposite. She sacrificed everything for him.*

Evidently, his mother's greatest gift to him was his life and making sure that he had survived.

She would even sacrifice her life just so I could live.

"Mother..." murmured Levi as his lips trembled. He then asked, "What happened next?"

"Your mother actually knelt in front of the house, and the Gods showed no mercy. It rained heavily for three whole days, and your mother was drenched the entire time. She persisted and survived through it, but her body had also reached its limit," shared Michael, who was also tearing up, as he recalled the painful past. *Despite everything, she was still his daughter.*

"After that incident, she was left with dozens of medical complications that couldn't be completely treated. She aged a decade within three days, and her muscles would ache, every time it rained. The doctor said that the trauma her body had endured had shortened her life span by about thirty years..." admitted Michael, who couldn't keep going.

"Mother!" blurted Levi as he clenched his fists.

The Protector Chapter 890

A pregnant lady had kneeled under the heavy rain for three continuous days!

How strong did she have to be, to kneel for so long under those circumstances?

She had gone through all of that, just to protect her child.

That was unimaginable and unbelievable.

A weak woman would turn strong when she became a mother.

That was just how a mother was.

She was merely an ordinary mother amongst the thousands of mothers on Earth.

It seemed that parents could transform into heavenly angels when their kids were threatened.

A parent would keep the sky afloat just to shelter their children. There are no gods in this world, but there are plenty of regular parents who would do anything for their children.

Michael wiped his tears aside and continued, "In the end, your birth father's family kept to the end of their bargain, to allow both you and your mother live, but they had one condition."

“Huh? What was it?” asked Levi.

“You were allowed to be born, but your mother must not have been one who would raise you. Instead, you were to be abandoned, to the street, and your mother was not to contact you at all. Their reasoning was simple. The kid must not have been traced back to their family. They had cut the ties from the source so that you would remain nothing but an orphan, abandoned by both of your parents. Your mother had to agree to their terms so that you could live. After giving birth to you, she abandoned you at a random spot. We didn’t think that you’d end up on the streets of North Hampton, adopted by members of the Garrison family who had lived there.”

“Mother...” whispered Levi as he clenched his fists.

He stomped his foot in anger, and the marble floor under their feet had cracked. The spider-web-like pattern spread across the floor, until every inch was practically shattered. The scary bit was that over a hundred men could stand on the floor without damaging it, but Levi’s stomp had managed to do as such.

The mere sight of Levi’s strength surprised Michael and the others.

Is he even human?

Levi was touched to know that his mother did so much just so he could live.

It could be said that she had dedicated her entire life to him.

They hadn’t seen each other in decades, but that only happened so he could merely survive.

He truly believed that his mother was living in a random corner of the Earth, missing him dearly, everyday.

She must miss her birth son a lot, especially after such a long while.

“What happened to my mother afterwards? I’m guessing that the Garrison family of Oakland City wouldn’t have allowed her to leave that easily?” asked Levi.

“You’re right about that. To keep your identity a secret, they had to remove all traces of your existence, and the same goes for your mother. The Garrison family hated loose ends. What if your mother showed up at the family manor one day or suddenly decided to announce her existence? The Garrison family didn’t want that to happen, and they refused to risk it!” informed Michael.

“So? What did they do?” demanded Levi as he held his breath.

Michael replied, “They imprisoned your mother and allowed her to rot there. To make matters worse, she was imprisoned for life and she was not allowed to take one step out of that place!”

The Protector Chapter 891

Levi hissed before he growled, "That is truly cruel!"

"The Garrison family locked your mother up, to keep her away from the rest of the world. They wanted to make it seem like your mother had never existed, so that she would never appear to have had any connections with their family," informed Michael.

"And my mom just stayed put and never stepped out of the city?" asked Levi.

From what he had come to learn about his mother, there was no way that Emma Jones would ever come to fear death.

She is the kind of person who would ignore everything and come looking for me, anyway. The fact that she never did, meant that there was another issue.

"She had never left because the Garrison family had placed a tombstone in the yard, where your mother had lived," announced Michael.

"A tombstone? Whose grave is it?" asked Levi, who didn't understand what Michael had meant.

"Yours. The name carved on the tombstone is Levi Garrison. The tombstone served to remind your mother that if she ever dared to step out of the place, the Garrison family would hunt you down and kill you. It prevented her from searching for you, or from exposing the Garrison family's secret," answered Michael.

"Oh, the Garrison family is cruel indeed," commented Levi, who couldn't help but crack his knuckles.

"That is why you and your mother's identity was never exposed, even though it has been decades. It was as if the Garrison family never had any connections to either one of you," informed Michael as he grinned bitterly.

Levi suddenly thought of something, and he couldn't help but ask, "And what about my birth father? What did he do while my mother was suffering? Why didn't he stop them? How is he okay with my mom kneeling in the rain for three continuous days, getting imprisoned for the rest of her life? My mom loved him, didn't she? So he must have loved her dearly as well, right?"

Levi was curious about what his biological dad had done, the entire time.

"Your father remained silent, throughout the entire incident. He let his family take care of matters, while he stood at the side and ignored everything. He watched, as your mother suffered, and he never once voiced up for her," responded Michael to Levi.

Levi's fist clenched, and fury burned in his soul when he heard that.

How can my biological father be that cruel? What kind of man is he? And to think that my mother had loved him so much.

"The reason he had kept silent was simple. He was the sole heir of his family, and if he had spoken on behalf of your mother, his family would have taken away his rights to inherit everything. Hell, they might have even disowned him. That is why he had chosen to remain quiet, merely standing idly by. All that, just for his personal gain and money!" insulted Michael.

Boom!

Levi was so angry that he had gone borderline insane, upon hearing what Michael had said.

*My mother was willing to die for me, whereas that a**hole abandoned his family for money?*

The Protector Chapter 892

How can anyone be that cruel? Mom was too blinded by love and she didn't see him right. A man like that is not worthy of her love! She had gotten pregnant because of him, and she had given birth to his son, while he remained distant and ignored everything!

"What about after? Did he visit my mother even once?" demanded Levi.

"No, not even once. Naturally, the Garrison family wouldn't allow him to do so, even if he had wanted to," informed Michael.

"Hmph, as expected. It would be weird if a guy like him had actually visited," growled Levi.

"Let me share something else with you. Your birth father had married another woman and had started another family right after his family had finished dealing with both you and your mother," muttered Michael, whose words had succeeded in getting Levi's jaw to drop.

"What? He had married another woman and had another child?" blurted Levi in disbelief.

"Hmph, that's right. If I've done the proper calculations, the child should be merely two years younger than you. The woman he had married was the daughter of another wealthy family, and the Garrison family regarded their marriage as the unification of two noble bloodlines. They supposedly had the best genes and had produced the most powerful heir!" scoffed Michael.

Michael knew that Levi had hated it, when others had spoken about noble blood, so the former deliberately used those words.

"Noble bloodline my a**! We're all just humans, aren't we? What? Can that a**hole fly or something?" roared Levi.

Bang!

Levi was so angry that he had punched a boulder at the side, successfully pulverizing it.

Michael was stunned, because Levi was truly furious at that moment.

It's bad enough that the man had abandoned both his lover and his child, but marrying another woman and having another child immediately after? That is merely infuriating!

Levi had never felt anger like that before.

It has been decades! Has he no conscience? Does he even remember that he has a child whom he has abandoned, along with a woman who is suffering because of him?

"Just you wait. I, Levi Garrison, swear that I will find you. I will have you answer to all the pain and suffering that my mother has endured!" swore Levi, as his eyes shone with determination.

Sooner or later, I will kick the Garrison family's front door down, and I will take my mother with me. We will stand in front of that monster and make him regret everything he has done!

"By the way, do you know where my mother is locked up?" asked Levi, who had desperately wanted to meet his mother.

Michael shook his head and replied, "I don't know where she is either. I only know that she is locked up, but the Garrison family won't tell us the exact location."

"Fine, I will investigate on my own. She is Levi Garrison's mother, and she can go anywhere that she wants! No one would dare to stop her," announced Levi, as his entire body exuded a domineering aura. It was the type of aura that could be the reality itself.

Michael would assume that the guy was bullsh*tting, if he were anyone else, but the guy standing right there was Levi Garrison.

No one dared to question his words and his promise.

The Joneses' anniversary meeting ended, after Levi and Michael had returned.

Everyone left.

Levi had Phoenix locate his mother's prison after that.

The Protector Chapter 893

Phoenix started looking for Emma Jones immediately after that.

"It is a little tough to crack. Someone covered everything up to prevent anyone from locating her. This will take some time," admitted Phoenix as he frowned.

Levi gritted his teeth.

My birth father's family truly is powerful. The fact that Phoenix is having trouble tracing everything, can only mean that the Garrisons had done an impressive job covering everything up.

Levi strode around Edburg Manor and asked Mia to show him the place where his mother had used to reside in.

It was a small, separated villa.

Everything inside was fine, and it was clear that it had been cleaned regularly.

"Grandpa had actually loved Aunt Emma the most, and he had kept everything in her room maintained," explained Mia as she sighed.

Levi didn't reply.

He understood that Michael was a father after all, and that Michael had only treated Emma so poorly because he was afraid of the Garrison family from Oakland City.

Levi scanned every corner of the place, to find a trace of his mother's past.

She is Levi Garrison's mother after all, and she has to be welcomed. Anyone who had dared to imprison her is an enemy of the God of War!

Levi was lost in his thoughts while sitting in that room, when Zoey had suddenly called him.

Zoey was still furious about the incident, but she was also worried that the Joneses might have bullied Levi, so she called to ask how he was faring.

"The anniversary meeting is over, right? When will you be home?" asked Zoey, whose tone remained distant.

However, Levi grinned when he heard that, because it was evident, that she was worried about him.

"I have to deal with some matters here, but I will be back soon."

"That's fine. I'm hanging up now."

Zoey hung up without saying or wasting another word.

Levi's grin became brighter. *That idiot of mine is obviously still upset.*

Just then, an incident happened at the Edburg Manor's front door.

Eight men carried a coffin and walked in.

Bang!

The coffin was placed at the front door.

The Joneses' security guard rushed over and had the men surrounded immediately. "Oy, what are you guys doing here?"

The security guard soon caught the emblem engraved on the men's uniform, making the security guard begin to tremble.

The emblem signified a powerful family in South Hampton.

"Tell the b*stard, Levi Garrison, that the Gonzales family has given his mother, the b*tch, Emma Jones, a coffin. They wish her a lifetime of suffering, and for her to continue being a b*tch in her next life!" announced the leader of the men, who had carried the coffin.

The men left immediately, upon delivering both the message and the gift.

The security guards were flabbergasted, as they stared at the coffin dubiously.

*Someone actually gave Emma Jones a coffin and had called Levi a b*stard?*

The Joneses had learned of Levi's true identity by then, so they were all rightfully terrified.

No one knew what dire consequences were awaiting the people who had sent the coffin and insulted the man.

The security guards turned to one another before they ran in to deliver the message.

"Something terrible has happened!"

"Something terrible has happened!"

...

Troubled screams echoed throughout the Edburg Manor.

That was definitely a terrible situation that had to be reported, without any form of delay.

Michael soon received the news, and he went to Levi immediately.

"God of War, something terrible has happened..." informed Michael, in a grim manner.

The Protector Chapter 894

Levi asked, "What's going on?"

"Come with me!" Michael led him to the front gates of the house.

Seeing the coffin that lay beside the gate, Levi's eyes grew cold. He demanded, "What is the meaning of this? Is this for me?"

"No, it's for your mother! They had said..." Here, Michael hesitated and shook with fright, too afraid to repeat what he had heard just now.

"Say it!" Levi ordered, raising his voice in a menacing manner.

Gritting his teeth, Michael replied, "The Gonzales' had arrived with a message for you, their bastard child Levi Garrison. They've sent your mother this coffin to congratulate her on being a wretch, and they had mentioned that they would pray that she would continue to be a wretch in her next life!"

Immediately, everyone felt the tension in the room rise.

The temperature seemed to drop by a few degrees Celsius.

A chill shot down the spines of the onlookers.

Levi stared frostily at Michael. "Back then, you had arranged for a marriage between my mother and the son of the Gonzales family, right?"

Michael nodded. "That's right. I had betrothed your mother to Klaus Gonzales, back when she was still alive."

“When Klaus Gonzales had discovered that your mother was pregnant, he had nearly killed her. He had announced her pregnancy to the whole of South Hampton and had humiliated your mother for being a sl*t and an adulteress. He had even told everyone that you were a bastard child.”

“When news of your mother’s pregnancy got out, your mother and the Jones family became the butt of South Hampton’s cruel jokes. Every day, people would leave all sorts of trash outside our house, vandalizing our walls with filthy words...”

“At that time, the Jones family had lost all respect in South Hampton, and your mother was their biggest source of their shame. Whenever she appeared in public, people would hurl vulgarities and even throw things at her.”

Levi sucked in a deep breath. “So all of this has been caused by the Gonzales family?”

“Exactly! When he had found out that your mother was pregnant, Klaus Gonzales had only one thing on his mind—to destroy both your mother and the Joneses! He would have liked nothing more than to see your mother become the shame of South Hampton, and for everyone to remember her as a wh*re!” Michael announced.

Levi mused aloud, “How cruel! He had put her through so much physical and mental torture.”

“If the Garrison family hadn’t issued a stern warning, your mother’s story would still be floating around in the city today!” Michael admitted.

Levi changed the topic. “So now Klaus Gonzales wants to change the target of his anger, and use me to carry out his revenge instead?”

Michael looked down and shook slightly. “As far as we know, that’s probably the case. The Gonzales family are aware that you have returned, so they’re taking this chance to get their revenge on you!”

Michael laughed silently to himself.

What a pity! The Gonzales family has chosen the wrong person to pick on.

Levi is a Demon King!

The Gonzales family would be so shocked if they knew that the bastard child that they were talking about was the God of War!

Suddenly, Levi threw his head back and burst into a fit of laughter.

“The Gonzales family wants to provoke me? I must hand it to them. They have got some courage!”

The Protector Chapter 895

Hearing this, everyone in the Jones family knew what was going to befall the Gonzales family.

They could have picked a fight with anyone. Why did they have to choose Levi?

Levi continued, "How does this Klaus Gonzales like? There must have been a reason behind my mother's reluctance to marry him."

Klaus Gonzales hesitated before admitting, "Yes, there was a reason, behind your mother's actions! Klaus had a reputation for being quite the playboy back then. He used to do nothing but fool around with his parents' money all day long. Your mother had even witnessed him, sleeping with another woman, with her very own eyes!"

Here, Michael didn't dare to continue further. Sensing Levi's anger, he bowed his head and remained silent.

Levi asked angrily, "Even while knowing this, you had chosen to marry my mother to this man?"

"I had no choice in the matter! Marriages in clans like ours are largely decided by the elders in the family, and neither your mother nor I had a say in it. Besides, Klaus had taken a liking to your mother and had insisted on marrying her. I couldn't reject his offer."

"Back then, I'd agreed to allow your mother to marry him because I had hoped that an alliance between our families would be beneficial to us, the Joneses!"

"However, that was the biggest mistake I had ever made in my entire life!" Michael gave out a huge sigh.

"Is the Gonzales family very powerful?" Levi asked.

To the best of his knowledge, the most powerful royal family in South Hampton was the Goel family.

“They’re powerful, very powerful! Xabian Goel might be the most famous in South Hampton, but he’s nowhere near being the strongest!”

Michael sucked in a deep breath. “The most powerful forces in South Hampton is actually the Restaurant of Peace, started by The Three Musketeers and Osborn St. Jacques.”

Levi pressed forth imperiously, “Well, tell me more about it!”

Michael explained, “The Restaurant of Peace has existed since a very long time ago. There’s a legend in South Hampton, saying, that any criminal, no matter how heinous his crimes, is safe, once he enters that restaurant. No one will be able to punish him, regardless of their position in society.”

Levi was incredulous. “Can the Restaurant of Peace really grant amnesty to criminals? If I go into that restaurant after killing hundreds of people, will I be safe? Can nobody touch me?”

Michael nodded. “Yes, that’s right. Hence, everyone regards the Restaurant of Peace as the strongest forces in South Hampton.”

Levi smiled. “Wow, it must be a restaurant of great reputation then. Continue!”

“The second most powerful group of people in South Hampton are The Three Musketeers. The first Musketeer is Lionel Gonzales, and the second Musketeer is Ritchie Fulmer. Finally, the last Musketeer is Perseus Emil.”

“Klaus Gonzales is the son of Lionel Gonzales. That’s why I’d gone ahead with the marriage, despite my own misgivings.”

Michael was very clear about how powerful the Gonzales family was.

Levi smiled. “By sending this coffin to your doorstep, isn’t the Gonzales family trying to announce how poorly they regard the Jones family?”

“Exactly! The Gonzales family doesn’t even humble itself before the Goel family sometimes. Of course, they aren’t going to care about a small clan like us,” Michael replied carefully.

Hence, this year’s anniversary meeting was extremely important. Michael wanted to take the opportunity to climb the ranks for his family.

Levi gritted his teeth. “I don’t care how powerful the Gonzales family is! Since they’d humiliated my mother in the past, I’m going to get my revenge!”

The Protector Chapter 896

At that moment, a discussion was taking place at the prestigious Azure Dragon villa, in the suburbs of South Hampton.

The entrance of the villa was carefully guarded by an elite squad of more than a hundred security guards. It was impossible for anyone to get in without being noticed.

The Three Musketeers had gathered up that day, for a game of cards in the drawing room.

All three of them were ancient and white-haired, but they still appeared energetic and vigorous. From time to time, a keen, insidious look flashed in their eyes, which was enough to make anyone shiver in fear.

Aside from the three old men, another middle-aged man was present. He was attired in very expensive clothes, and he had evidently paid careful attention to his appearance. There was nothing about him that could be considered greasy or old-fashioned.

This man was Klaus Gonzales.

On the surface, he looked to be a nice, scholarly gentleman. Many even mistook him for a university professor at times.

However, he was truthfully a merciless tyrant.

At that moment, a young man ran into the room.

“Father, the coffin has been delivered to the Jones family’s house!”

This man was Klaus’s son, Paulie Gonzales.

Klaus laughed gleefully. "Good, good!"

Lionel asked curiously, "Paulie, Klaus, what are you talking about?"

"Father, the Jones family has found Emma Jones's bastard son recently. He had even attended their anniversary meeting!" Klaus responded immediately.

With a loud bang, Lionel slammed his cards onto the table, enraged.

Angrily, he hissed, "What? They had found Emma Jones's bastard son, and the Joneses had even allowed him to attend their anniversary meeting?"

Ritchie Fulmer and Perseus Emil had recovered from their shock as well. Immediately, they started to rant and rave about the situation.

"What does Michael mean by this? Does he wish to disrespect The Three Musketeers in such a manner?"

"Exactly! By inviting that bastard child to their anniversary meeting, he's officially acknowledging the boy as his grandson!"

"Are the Joneses trying to humiliate the three of us? Are they tired of living?"

The Three Musketeers had good reason to be angry.

More than twenty years ago, Emma Jones's pregnancy had caused an indelible stain on all three of their reputations.

Back then, they were intent on murdering Emma Jones and killing her unborn child too.

In the end, the Joneses had disinherited Emma. She had disappeared into the bowels of South Hampton, and the child had become an orphan.

The Three Musketeers had thought that this had been the end of the matter.

Now that the Jones family had welcomed the boy back with open arms, The Three Musketeers felt as though they had been slapped in the face.

Of course they were mad! They had every right to be.

“In any case, her bastard son is now living in the Jones family’s Edburg Manor. This means that they’ve acknowledged his status within the family.”

Klaus continued, “Just now, I had gotten Paulie to deliver a coffin to the Jones family’s residence.”

Furious, Lionel snapped, “That’s hardly enough to warn them! Paulie, go to the Jones family’s residence and ask Michael Jones what he means by all of this! I want him to kneel before The Three Musketeers and give us a proper explanation for his actions!”

Back at gates of Edburg Manor, Levi and the others were still discussing what they should do with the coffin.

At that moment, a few cars pulled up to the gate.

The door opened, and a slew of bodyguards exited the vehicle, their bodies completely shielding a young man who looked to be the son of a rich clan.

When they saw the man, the Joneses faces changed.

The moment he got out of the car, Paulie Gonzales yelled, “Which one of you is the bastard son Levi Garrison?”

The Protector Chapter 897

Levi stood at the gates of Edburg Manor, staring coldly at him.

The Joneses were frightened to death.

Paulie Gonzales was either really foolish or really brave!

How could he call Levi Garrison a bastard son to his face?

If Levi decided to take revenge, even God wouldn't be able to save him.

Mia Jones walked forward and whispered timidly into Levi's ear, "That's Paulie Gonzales, the son of Klaus Gonzales."

Upon realizing Paulie's true status, a frosty expression flashed across Levi's face. He stared unblinkingly at Paulie, as though considering his next move.

Michael yelled, "Paulie Gonzales, how dare you come and stir up trouble in front of the Jones Residence when you're junior to all of us here?"

Nonchalantly, Paulie stuck his hands into his pockets. Looking tauntingly at Michael, he replied, "Michael, are you questioning me? What right do you even have to do that?"

"You..." Michael was so angry that steam was practically blowing out of his ears.

He would have swallowed his anger if The Three Musketeers had been the ones castigating him.

However, there was no way he could stomach being disciplined by a member of the younger generation.

Paulie continued brazenly, "Michael, my three grandfathers have demanded that you give them a proper explanation as to why you've accepted Emma Jones's bastard son back into the Jones family. Are you acknowledging him as one of your own?"

Michael yelled, "Yes, and what about it?"

"By acknowledging that boy as one of your own, your family clearly means to insult The Three Musketeers! My grandfathers want you to kneel before them and give them a proper explanation!" Paulie yelled in response.

Michael retorted, "That's not going to happen!"

In the past, Michael would never have dared to say something so outrageous. However, now that he had Levi's backing, he was no longer afraid of The Three Musketeers.

Furious, Paulie spat, "Good on you, Michael! Are you openly declaring war on us? I'll tell my grandfathers exactly what you've said—let's see if your family will live until tomorrow morning!"

However, before he left, Paulie asked, "Where's the bastard son Levi Garrison? Has he hidden himself away, out of fright?"

As soon as he spoke, Levi stepped out of the crowd and walked towards him.

Seeing him, Paulie asked with contempt, "So you're the bastard son Levi Garrison?"

Levi didn't reply. Suddenly, he lunged forward and gave Paulie a tight slap across his face.

With a loud smack, Paulie's cheeks started bleeding profusely, as a few of his loose teeth began to fly out of his mouth.

An awed silence fell over the entire crowd.

Paulie's bodyguards were so stunned that they couldn't react on time.

Clawing at his bleeding face, Paulie screamed at Levi, "How dare you hit me, you filthy bastard?"

What followed was a series of horrifying clicks, as Levi lunged at him and delivered powerful kicks to his leg. In a flash, Paulie's legs had been broken.

He staggered and collapsed before Levi.

With another loud crack, Levi broke both of Paulie's arms.

Paulie lay on the floor, his limbs completely broken.

Like a pig in a slaughterhouse, he screamed in pain.

At that moment, Paulie's bodyguards finally snapped out of their daze. "Kill him!"

The Protector Chapter 898

In a flash, Levi had managed to break all of their limbs as well.

Paulie and his bodyguards were laying on the ground, groaning in pain.

Levi ordered, "Someone put this man into the coffin, and send it back to Mr. Klaus Gonzales!"

Back in Azure Dragon, The Three Musketeers and Klaus were still playing their cards.

At that moment, someone ran into the room, looking extremely frightened. "Sirs, something horrible has happened! The Jones family has sent the coffin back to us, and Mr. Paulie isn't back yet!"

"What?" The Three Musketeers and Klaus hurried outside to take a look.

Seeing the coffin by the gates, Klaus exploded in anger. "The Jones family must be crazy! How dare they send the coffin back to us?"

Just then, they heard a distinct sob as someone hammered against the walls of the coffin.

Klaus's expression morphed into one of panic. "I think that there's someone inside the coffin! Open it up quickly!"

When they finally managed to pry open the lid of the coffin, they found Paulie Gonzales lying in it.

His entire body was covered in blood, and all four of his limbs had been broken. He looked up at them, sobbing piteously.

The Three Musketeers and Klaus gasped. Immediately, their expressions changed into that of anger.

How dare the Jones family break Paulie's limbs and send him back in a coffin?

Wasn't that a direct challenge to them? Was that an effort to taunt them?

Seeing his son's pitiful figure, Klaus felt his heart convulse with pain. "You Joneses will pay for this!"

The Three Musketeers were so angry that you could practically see steam coming out of their ears.

How dare the Joneses do this to us?

Even the Goel family, the most prominent family of South Hampton, wouldn't have the balls to do such a thing.

The onlookers hurriedly lifted Paulie out of the coffin.

"Who did this to you, son?" asked Klaus.

"It was that bastard son of Emma Jones— Levi Garrison!" spat Paulie.

He would never forget his grudge against Levi Garrison. He swore to himself that he would devote the rest of his life to getting his revenge on Levi.

Lionel Gonzales fumed, "The Jones family must be crazy! How dare they allow their bastard son to injure my grandson like this?"

Paulie burst into tears. "My three grandfathers, and my father, you must exact revenge for me, or I'll never be able to swallow this anger for the rest of my life! He nearly killed me by sticking me into that coffin! He's warning us that we will die by his hands..."

Lionel replied angrily, "We will definitely seek vengeance! How dare the Jones family behave in such a preposterous manner? I'll have to destroy their entire family!"

Beside him, Ritchie Fulmer and Perseus Emil seethed along with him.

Klaus jumped in. "Father, Uncles, don't be angry. I'll settle this matter by myself. I'm going to go to demand an explanation from Michael Jones right now!"

"Alright. Make sure that you bring enough men with you!"

Soon enough, a large group of people had assembled in front of the gates of Jones Residence.

All of them were clothed in black, and a few words had been sewn onto their clothes—Gonzales, Fulmer and Emil.

These people had been sent by The Three Musketeers.

There were hundreds of them, and they lined up in neat rows outside of Jones Residence, surrounding the gates completely.

In the middle of them all, Klaus stood in his white clothes, appearing immediately recognizable.

He hollered, "Michael Jones and Levi Garrison, come out at once!"

The Protector Chapter 899

Soon, Michael walked out into the open, with Levi Garrison in tow.

Levi was interested to see Klaus Gonzales for himself.

When the Joneses saw the crowd of people descending upon them, they started to panic.

If it weren't for Levi, they would unquestionably be trampled over without a second a thought.

Klaus and his men really did look extremely intimidating.

Klaus yelled in anger the moment he had spotted Michael. "Michael Jones, look at what you've done!"

However, Michael merely chuckled in response. "Oh? And what have I done, Klaus?"

"Don't you dare call me that! You had better explain yourself for what you've done to my son!" bellowed Klaus.

Michael smirked. "Your son ran his mouth and insulted others, so he was taught a little lesson. You should really spend more time teaching your son how to behave, Mr. Gonzales. Because if you don't, someone else will certainly 'educate' him for you."

Klaus was thoroughly peeved. "How insolent! Neither I nor my father has ever disciplined this precious son of mine! So what gives others the right to even touch a single hair on his body? Just who gave you the right to discipline my child, Michael!"

Michael's smirk only deepened. "Actually, I wasn't the one who had disciplined him. He had insulted someone he wasn't supposed to. And so, that person kindly took it upon himself to teach your son a lesson."

"It was Levi Garrison, wasn't it? Get him out here right now!"

At that moment, a calm voice cut through the tension. "I'm right here."

When Klaus identified Levi, he nearly blew a gasket.

*This is that b***h's son?*

He forced his anger down before speaking again. "What's this? You Joneses actually welcomed Emma's son back into the family? Does this mean that you're acknowledging him as one of yours?"

Michael didn't dare to answer on Levi's behalf, so he glanced at the younger man instead.

He mentally heaved a sigh of relief when he saw Levi giving him an affirmative nod. It appeared that he was okay with being formally known as Emma's son.

"That's right. He's now here with the Joneses, which means that we're acknowledging his birthright! He is indeed my daughter's son!" declared Michael firmly.

Klaus glared at him angrily. "You do know that you are blatantly insulting me by doing this?"

Michael scoffed, "Just what has any of this got to do with you? It's not like you're related to him anyway."

"Emma was my fiancée back then, but she had slept with some other man and had given birth to this bastard! What about my reputation, huh? That b***h has already humiliated me enough, and now you Joneses are going to pile on?" roared Klaus.

"Your fiancée? The only reason she became your fiancée was because you had forced me to marry her off to you! All because you took a liking to her!" retorted Michael.

"Fine! Say what you will. You have the balls, I'll give you that, Michael. But aren't you afraid that a certain someone will come after you? They ensured that the Joneses, including

Emma, broke all ties with that bastard child back then, but now you're so flagrantly welcoming him back? What do you think is going to happen to you when they find out?"

The Protector Chapter 900

Klaus' words sent a chill through Michael.

The image of that man descending upon the Joneses residence twenty years ago and easily wiping out all of their bodyguards flashed across his eyes, and goosebumps broke out all over his body.

But Levi was by his side now, so he had nothing to fear.

"What do I have to be afraid of? We Joneses can take anything that comes our way!" announced Michael coldly.

"Fine then! So you insist on acknowledging Emma's bastard son? Even if it means going against the Gonzales family?"

"Yes, that's right!"

A blood-thirsty glint flashed across Klaus' eyes. "Then, the Joneses will no longer have a place in South Hampton!"

"What did you just say?"

It was Levi who spoke up just then, and it took Klaus very much by surprise.

How dare Emma's bastard son talk back to me!

"I said, your mother is a b***h and that literally makes you a son of a b***h! Also, were you the one who had crippled my son?" seethed Klaus.

Levi, with a completely unbothered expression, slowly made his way over to Klaus.

"I'll make you pay for hurting my son! I'll make you pay tenfold, nay, a hundredfold!" affirmed Klaus as he glared at him.

Soon enough, Levi walked right up to Klaus and stared him down.

"Did you just call me a son of a b***h and a bastard?"

"Yes, that's right! You're a bastard, and your mother is a b***h! Your whole family is nothing but trash!" spat Klaus.

His hatred for Levi knew no bounds.

For the past thirty years, his resentment towards Emma had not only not decreased, but rather, it had also grown exponentially.

That was one humiliation that he could never live down.

Klaus wanted nothing more than to kill Emma with his own two hands.

But unfortunately, he didn't have the chance to do so.

So when he heard that Emma's bastard son had been brought back to the Joneses, he became so enraged that he yearned to end Levi too.

The son should bear the mother's burden, and so Levi needed to pay for his mother's sins.

Thus, he immediately ordered a coffin and had it delivered.

Slap!

A slap from Levi brought Klaus out of his reverie.

It was such a hard slap that the skin on Klaus' face immediately split open. Blood spurted everywhere, and even a number of teeth fell out of his mouth.

Just one slap was enough for Klaus to feel as though half of his life force had been slapped away. He stood there in a complete daze, not able to move even an inch.

The men around him, as skilled as they were, didn't even have a chance to react.

Slap!

Slap!

Slap!

...

Unfortunately, that slap was only just the beginning because Levi then followed on with a dozen more.

After the tens of slaps, Klaus' face no longer even resembled a face, and he was barely hanging on by a thread.

Klaus crumpled onto the ground, shocking everyone.

No one had expected Levi to act so ruthlessly.

"This is what you get for insulting both me and my mother," stated Levi in an almost-bored tone.

"Men! Kill them! Wipe out every last member of the Jones family!" ordered Klaus through gritted teeth.

Immediately, hundreds of men dressed in black surged forward.

The Protector Chapter 901

The Joneses began to panic upon seeing a horde of people swarm in.

Quite a few of them even squeezed their eyes shut from fear.

Just then, five people appeared before the doors of the Jones Residence.

They were the Five Great Wars Regiment.

They charged into the thick of the crowd. *Thump! Thump! Thump!*

Although the men that Klaus brought were the best of the best, these five men were invincible killing machines straight out of the battlefield.

One down.

Two down.

Three down.

...

Ninety-nine down.

...

The Joneses witnessed a bloody battle.

One where five men crushed a few hundred men.

There were constantly men sent flying across the expanse.

A few minutes later.

The floor was littered with men in black who were howling in pain.

The only ones who were standing tall were six men, including Levi.

Five of them were standing in a protective circle around him. Not a single drop of blood from the battle had splattered onto him.

Across from Levi, Klaus Gonzales was dumbfounded.

He scanned the perimeter around him, noticing that the few hundred men that he had brought with him were all lying on the ground. *Who are these people really? Isn't this complete madness? Five of them had defeated a few hundred elite fighters under The Three Musketeers! Even if the news of this spreads out, no one would believe it. Nonetheless, it really did happen! It looks like these five men are that bastard child's subordinates. No. Wasn't that b*tch Emma Jones' bastard child left out on the streets and orphaned? He didn't have any resources since young, or anyone to cultivate him. How did he obtain these five elite fighters? It's unbelievable.*

Upon meeting Levi's frightening gaze, Klaus subconsciously shrunk back. *The look in this bastard's eyes is terrifying! It's almost as though he wants to swallow me whole!*

"Still dare to call me a bastard now?"

Levi smirked.

"Don't... Don't you know who I am?" Klaus spoke in a trembling voice.

"You're the son of Lionel Gonzales, one of The Three Musketeers!" Levi answered.

When Klaus saw that Levi was aware of his identity, he immediately became smug.

He was certain that Levi would, at the most, rough him up a little; he wouldn't dare to kill him. *After all, which sane person would dare to kill me upon knowing that I'm Lionel Gonzales' son? No one! Absolutely no one!*

"You're a bastard, and your mother's a b*tch! A b*tch would certainly give birth to a bastard. Your whole family is filthy to the core!" Klaus roared without restraint. *Bang!*

Levi's answer to his insults was a powerful kick. *Pfft!*

Klaus flew across the distance and crashed into a car with blood spewing out of his mouth.

A look of utter disbelief was sprawled across his face.

Never in a million years did he expect that Levi would dare to harm him with the intention of killing him. *He really has the guts to kill me!*

"You... You're going to kill me?" Klaus asked, unable to wrap his mind around it.

"Let's play a game, shall we? I'll give you a ten-minute head start to run. After ten minutes, I'll come after you! If I catch you, I'll kill you!" Levi suggested with a grin.

Klaus immediately spat out, "Fine. Then don't regret it!"

"Your time starts now!"

Levi glanced at his watch, his mouth arching up into a bloodthirsty grin.

The Protector Chapter 902

Klaus wasted no time at all. He climbed into a car and sped away. He reached the maximum speed and beat the red lights all the way.

He understood that he would be a dead man if he fell into Levi's hands.

Meanwhile, Levi watched as he escaped.

"Sir, should we go after him to see where he's headed off to?" Azure Dragon asked.

Levi shook his head. "There's no need for that. He's definitely going to look for The Three Musketeers."

"The Three Musketeers' base is at Greenfield Mansion, located in the western suburbs!" Michael stated.

Levi lit a cigarette and ordered, "Alright. Move out after ten minutes. We're going to Greenfield Mansion."

Ten minutes later, Levi growled softly, "No one is allowed to insult my mother!"

Levi, Azure Dragon, and the rest headed straight toward Greenfield Mansion where The Three Musketeers were at.

What was usually a one-hour journey only took Klaus forty minutes as he floored the accelerator.

"Huh? Klaus, what's happened to you?"

Upon seeing the miserable state that Klaus was in, The Three Musketeers were all stunned.

"Father, Mr. Fulmer, and Mr. Emil, I've encountered a monster! That b*tch Emma Jones' bastard is now a very formidable person, especially while accompanied by his five terrifying subordinates. They defeated all of the men that I'd brought there earlier!"

"He's coming to kill me now. Father, Mr. Fulmer, and Mr. Emil, please save me!"

Klaus was paralyzed with fear.

Lionel Gonzales scoffed derisively as he spat out, "Outrageous! Kill my son? There's no one in South Hampton who has the guts to do so!"

"He's even planning to do so on our territory?" Ritchie Fulmer's tone oozed with disdain.

"Does he really think that The Three Musketeers are getting old and useless?"

Perseus Emil roared, "Gather all of our men and await my orders. I'd like to see who would dare to barge into Greenfield Mansion!"

Very soon, all of The Three Musketeers' ultimate trump cards were assembled.

All of these people were the ones who lay the groundwork for The Three Musketeers during the battle in South Hampton back then.

Each of them was an elite warrior and they were all ruthless in their own way.

Who in South Hampton wouldn't be afraid of them?

"How dare they beat up my son and grandson! Don't worry, Klaus. I will bring you justice!" Lionel reassured his son.

His anger shot through the skies when he saw Klaus all beaten up.

Klaus' whole body was trembling with pain. "Father, you must save me. I have a feeling, a very strong feeling, that I'm about to die!"

An ominous sensation washed over Klaus. He only had one thought in his mind. *Levi Garrison is going to kill me!*

"Don't be afraid, Klaus! With the three of us here, even Hades can forget about taking you away, let alone a bastard child!" Ritchie and Perseus erupted in anger.

Lionel was the angriest amongst them. "I vow to massacre the entire Jones family. I'll chop that bastard into pieces too before I feed him to the dogs!"

Boom!

Right at that moment, Greenfield Mansion's enormous gates were blasted open with a single kick, resulting in a loud crash.

"Come out to receive your death, Klaus Gonzales!" A thunderous voice of reckoning stretched through every corner of Greenfield Mansion.

The Protector Chapter 903

Thud!

Hearing the familiar voice, Klaus fell to the ground with fear gripping his heart.

“He’s here... He’s here...” Klaus’ voice shook.

Levi resembled a demon straight from the fiery pits of hell who instilled great terror within him.

Lionel was beside himself with rage upon seeing his son so petrified.

“Let’s go. I’d like to see just how capable this bastard is!”

Perseus and Ritchie tagged along as well.

“Father, you must finish him off or he’ll kill me!”

Klaus was almost in tears.

In Greenfield Mansion, The Three Musketeers’ ultimate trump cards were dispatched at the same time, standing neatly in front of them as they stared Levi and his men down.

“Stop right there!”

“Whoever takes another step will be killed!”

All of the elites were surrounded by a murderous aura as they pinned Levi and the rest with killer gazes.

“What can I do? I’d like to step forward.”

A smirk played on Levi’s mouth as he walked forward without a care.

The Three Musketeers’ men retreated in tandem as they watched the intruders with vigilant eyes.

“The purpose of my arrival is simple, really. It’s to kill Klaus Gonzales! Those who have nothing to do with him, step aside!” Levi uttered frostily.

“Hmph! You wanna lay a hand on Mr. Gonzales? Over our dead bodies!”

Everyone began to cage Levi and his men in.

“You’re gutsy to have caused trouble on The Three Musketeers’ territory!”

Following that angry roar was the appearance of Lionel and his two associates.

The three of them had heads of white hair, but they still exuded an air of danger.

Their razor-sharp gazes could pierce straight through one’s heart.

It was especially the case for Lionel Gonzales who had an unparalleled kind of dominance surrounding him!

After Lionel cast his gaze around, he fixed it on one man in particular and asked, “So you’re Levi Garrison?”

“That’s right. I’m Levi Garrison, and I’m here for your son’s life!”

Levi had a broad smile on his face, looking eerily docile.

However, his words completely contradicted his demeanor!

He could be considered the most arrogant one amongst them all!

He must be insane to announce that he’s here to kill my son in front of us, The Three Musketeers.

Levi's words had stunned The Three Musketeers.

He's taken bluntness to a whole new level.

He didn't even bother to be discreet about his intentions.

Isn't he too full of himself?

"So, please hand over Klaus Gonzales! I came here today to kill one person only. I won't make trouble for the rest of you."

There was a heavy sense of authority in Levi's tone.

The Three Musketeers were taken aback.

They were lost in a daze for quite some time.

This young man is far too conceited!

"What did you say?" Lionel finally reacted after a full ten seconds.

"You think that you can kill my son, just because you've said so?"

"You're just Emma Jones' bastard son. Even if you were Hades himself, you wouldn't be able to claim my son's life today!"

Perseus and Ritchie expressed their animosity as well, sneering, "That's right. Why don't you ask around and see if anyone has ever dared to kill someone under The Three Musketeers?"

The Protector Chapter 904

"Hahaha..." Levi laughed.

His eyes flashed with deep ridicule.

The Three Musketeers felt greatly humiliated by this.

No one had ever dared to laugh at them.

“Then let me tell you something. There is no one that I, Levi Garrison, can’t kill!”

Levi’s gaze sharpened as a cold glint flashed in his eyes.

“Men, seize them!”

Under Lionel’s orders, their subordinates immediately propelled forward.

“Clear a path for me. I’m going in, to get Klaus Gonzales!” Levi instructed indifferently.

“Understood!”

Azure Dragon and his four comrades formed a circle around Levi and hacked their way forward.

Black Tortoise’s mountain-like body opened a path at the front, like a chariot bulldozing its way through the crowd.

Azure Dragon and Kirin flanked Levi, while the remaining two brought up the rear.

All of the elite fighters who attacked were defeated by the four of them.

Levi, who was in the middle, calmly walked through the courtyard as he smoked his cigarette in a leisurely manner.

A path was cut right through the hundreds of men.

Beneath them, men fell, one by one, lying on the ground and unable to get up.

The Three Musketeers' jaws were hanging off their hinges.

They finally understood what Klaus meant when he said that these five men were formidable!

They were practically indestructible!

A few hundred men couldn't even stop the six of them.

A few minutes later.

Levi and his men reached the front of the mansion.

At that moment, Klaus Gonzales was cowering inside the mansion.

The remaining fighters who were blocking the path into the mansion stared at Levi and his men with anxiety and horror.

They were traumatized after being handed their asses by Levi's men.

Levi's men had cut down hundreds of men as they made their way forward. Those men were now curled up and shrieking in pain as they rolled on the ground.

Everyone was dumbstruck!

Lionel and his two associates weren't faring any better either.

Those few hundred men were their ultimate trump cards.

They were the key to their strong foothold in South Hampton!

Those hundred men had the power to wipe out all of the influential families in South Hampton.

However, half of them were taken down by these six men in a matter of minutes.

How terrifying!

Levi glanced at the ones who were still standing their ground, albeit slightly shaky and fearful. He smiled and challenged, "Would you really want to stand in our way? Are you sure you can stop us?"

"We..."

They were thrown into a frenzy.

Levi and his men were too powerful, causing them to feel fear in its purest form.

Inside the mansion, Klaus opened the window with quivering hands and looked down when he heard the commotion.

The sight of all the men wailing on the ground below scared him witless.

Levi Garrison has forced his way in.

He doesn't even care that is The Three Musketeers' territory.

He is absolutely terrifying.

With fear coursing through his veins, he shouted at Lionel and the rest, "Father, you must save me! Stop him or he'll really kill me!"

Levi tilted his head up to look at Klaus with a smile. "Stop resisting it. You'll never escape my clutches!"

Levi's penetrating gaze chilled Klaus to the bone.

He felt as though he would be scared to death at any moment.

The Protector Chapter 905

“Ram down the front door!”

Upon Levi’s orders, Black Tortoise surged forward and broke through the men’s formation.

A huge section of them was attacked by White Tiger and his comrades as well.

The remaining ones didn’t dare to block their way anymore.

With nothing in the way, the door was about to be broken down.

“Quick! Get the Dual-Serrated Monks!” Lionel yelled.

The Dual-Serrated Monks were the top fighters working for The Three Musketeers.

The two of them were said to have crushed all the invincible fighters in the whole of South Hampton.

Everyone in South Hampton would cower before them.

The Dual-Serrated Monks had practiced the Ancient Arts of Qi from a young age, and their skins were impenetrable.

The number of times they had blocked bullets and arrows for The Three Musketeers was innumerable.

Just when Black Tortoise was about to break down the door to the mansion, a murderous aura filled the area.

Boom!

An iron rod shot through the sky at lightning speed.

Bang!

The iron rod hit Black Tortoise's body, forcing him to take a step back.

Bang!

A strong gust of wind was the only warning before another man appeared out of nowhere. The iron rod in his hand landed on Black Tortoise once again, making a dull sound reverberate through the air.

Other than taking a step backward, Black Tortoise was otherwise unharmed.

"Huh? You're trained in the Ancient Arts of Qi?"

The two monks who were blocking the entrance asked in surprise.

There was no one in South Hampton who was able to withstand two consecutive strikes from them.

It was too rare of a sight.

They finally met their match.

However, the Dual-Serrated Monks were filled with excitement.

For so many years, they had not encountered anyone even close to their caliber.

Black Tortoise yelled a war cry before clashing head-on with the Dual-Serrated Monks.

Both sides were well-trained in wrestling and the Ancient Arts of Qi. Their bodies were as hard as iron.

It was hard for them to defeat one another.

Hitting their bodies was equivalent to hitting metal, with only a clanging sound as the result.

Upon seeing the Dual-Serrated Monks successfully holding Black Tortoise back, The Three Musketeers heaved sighs of relief.

Finally, they had a winning chance in this.

However, White Tiger stepped forward the next second and stated, "Fall back Black Tortoise! Allow me!"

White Tiger strode forward menacingly. After swapping places with Black Tortoise, he launched a fierce attack on the Dual-Serrated Monks.

Every strike caused the Dual-Serrated Monks' faces to flush redder.

It was evident that White Tiger was exerting pressure on them.

Boom!

After a short while of battling, White Tiger was still fully energized as he launched a kick at one of them.

Bang!

The one called Dragon Monk was instantly sent flying.

There was a dark bloodstain on his supposedly impenetrable body as blood streamed out of his body.

Bang!

White Tiger landed a kick on the other one, Tiger Monk, to which the latter was sent flying as well.

Bloodstains appeared on his body too, looking like spider webs.

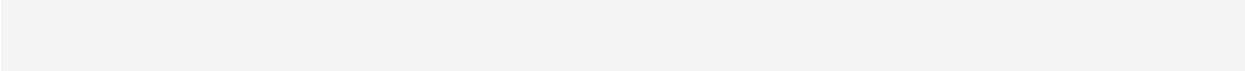
Their bodies were as strong as iron due to practicing the Ancient Arts of Qi.

However, it was useless when faced with White Tiger, because sufficient force could definitely break through their Qi!

The Dual-Serrated Monks were defeated.

The Three Musketeers were completely stunned.

“Hurry up and take Klaus away! The rest of you, stop them!” Lionel roared anxiously.



The Protector Chapter 906

The rest of the men at the scene rushed up and formed a human barricade in front of the mansion's doors, so as to impede Levi and his company from entering.

In the meantime, Klaus was frightened out of his mind inside the mansion.

Just then, the butler brought a few people up to look for him.

"Mr. Gonzales, you can't stay here. Come, we must escape at once! They're going to be here any minute now!" the butler urged.

A look of despair took its place on Klaus' face. "Even the Dual-Serrated Monks were no match for them. Who in South Hampton will be able to defeat them?"

"Where else can I run too, anyway?"

The butler answered, "There is one place!"

A sliver of hope entered Klaus' eyes as he recalled something. He asked in an enthusiasm-laced voice, "Do you mean Peace Hotel?"

"Yes, that's right! As long as you pass through the doors of Peace Hotel, you'll be safe! No matter how powerful those men outside are, they won't be able to harm you there! Peace Hotel provides first-rate protection services. No one would dare to cross them!"

"Take me there right now!"

"Yes. We will escape through the secret passageway and head toward Peace Hotel!"

The butler led Klaus out through a secret passageway.

Although The Three Musketeers were powerful in South Hampton to the point that even the Goel family was no match for them, they had still dug up a hidden passageway in Greenfield Mansion, just to be safe.

Such a passageway was made so that in the face of danger, they would have the means to escape.

The passageway was put into good use by Klaus today.

This showed how important it was to take precautionary measures.

Outside the mansion, more than a hundred men stood shoulder to shoulder as they blocked Levi and his party from passing.

Bang!

Black Tortoise hurtled forward like a chariot in the next second.

The human barricade was knocked over.

Crash!

The mansion's doors were smashed into smithereens.

"None of you can stop us. So why even try?" Levi shook his head.

"If you want to kill my son, it'll be over my dead body!"

As a last resort, The Three Musketeers used their bodies to hinder Levi and his men from moving forward.

"I don't know what my son has said or done, Mr. Garrison, but I'll apologize to you on his behalf. I only ask that you spare his life!"

The Three Musketeers could tell that Levi was no ordinary person.

Emma Jones' son was no doubt a dragon in human skin.

They were no match for him.

They only wished that Klaus could keep his life.

If it meant that they would reach a peaceful settlement, they would willingly bow their heads in submission.

If peace were out of the question, they would then proceed to stall for as long as possible to give Klaus the necessary time to escape and seek refuge at Peace Hotel before Levi could get to him.

“Stalling for time, I see. It’s useless. No matter where he goes, I’ll still catch him!”

Levi grinned.

“Come on! You’ll have to get through past the three of us if you want to kill my son!”

The three of them still wanted to give Klaus more time, so they continued standing in Levi’s way.

“Get lost!” Levi roared angrily.

The Three Musketeers were thrown to one side.

Levi successfully entered the mansion with his men in tow.

The Protector Chapter 907

However, Klaus Gonzales was already long gone.

“Boss, that b*stard has escaped!” Kirin exclaimed.

“Boss, I have found a secret passageway. Klaus Gonzales must’ve escaped through it,” Azure Dragon reported as he made a slow-jog over.

"Phew!" Lionel and his party sighed in relief.

Ritchie bellowed with laughter. "You should just give up! Even if you find him, it'll be to no avail!"

Perseus laughed along as well. "That's right. Take a piece of my advice and just give up now! You lot won't be able to do anything even if you find him!"

Lionel nodded in agreement.

Levi was amused. "Oh? And why is that?"

"Because he went to a secret place and you'll be powerless even after finding it!" Ritchie cackled.

"You mean Peace Hotel?"

Levi suddenly recalled the mention of Peace Hotel that Michael had informed him about before.

Entering Peace Hotel would guarantee one's safety.

No one could take someone out from that hotel.

"Well, it looks like you're quite knowledgeable, punk! Give up! My son is already at Peace Hotel. You won't be able to lay a finger on him as long as he stays there!"

Lionel threw his head back with laughter.

"Of course you're welcomed to wait! My son can stay in Peace Hotel forever, but can you bear to wait as long as him?" Lionel raised his brows tauntingly.

Levi's mouth curved upwards with a mocking smile. "Oh? Since he can enter Peace Hotel, why can't I go in and drag him out?"

“Hahahaha...”

The three of them laughed maniacally upon hearing his question.

They looked at Levi as though he was an idiot, as though his words were completely idiotic!

“Don’t you know that the moment a person enters Peace Hotel, the people inside would use all of their resources to protect that person! No matter your power or background, Peace Hotel would never allow harm to befall its guests.”

“Let alone allow you to barge in there to kill my son!”

“You should know that the owner of Peace Hotel, Osborn St-Jacques, is a legendary figure. No matter which line of business you’re in, you’ll have to pay him respect! That’s why the myth about Peace Hotel is still intact! Whoever dares to break in would face imminent death!”

Lionel had a smug look on his face.

“Is Peace Hotel really so amazing? I don’t buy it! I’m going to go there to drag someone out and no one can stop me!”

Levi smiled brightly.

He didn’t believe in myths and legends!

No matter how amazing, resourceful, or powerful Peace Hotel’s background is, they can’t stop me!

Unless they’re more powerful than me!

Which is impossible!

“Let’s move out. We’re going to Peace Hotel!”

Levi brought his five men and headed toward Peace Hotel.

Meanwhile, Klaus had successfully entered the hotel under the guidance of his butler.

“Phew!”

After stepping into the hotel, Klaus heaved a sigh of relief.

“I’m finally safe!”

“Levi Garrison wants to kill me? In his dreams! Don’t even think about killing me in this lifetime of yours, b@stard!”

The Protector Chapter 908

Laying down on the floor, Klaus took in huge gulps of air.

That was when he felt a sharp pain on his face.

Seeing that he was overwhelmed by fear earlier, he had been completely numb to any form of pain.

“Didn’t Emma Jones’ bastard son end up on the streets? How did he become so powerful?”

Klaus was very puzzled by this.

A bastard nobody has become so powerful that even South Hampton’s Three Musketeers were unable to suppress him.

“Thank goodness I ran quickly enough, otherwise, that punk would’ve definitely killed me!”

Klaus felt that he had literally escaped death.

“Mr. Gonzales, stay here for the time being. I’ll keep you updated on the situation,” the butler advised.

Just then, Levi and his group had arrived in front of Peace Hotel.

The hotel had an antique design.

It didn't look very impressive on the surface.

However, when Levi and his men wanted to enter, they were stopped by a group of people.

"Greetings, gentlemen. You need to make an appointment in advance to enter Peace Hotel! Guests who do not have an appointment are not allowed to enter!" the security guards by the door politely informed.

Not everyone could enter Peace Hotel.

One would either have to make an appointment beforehand or get the owner's permission.

Levi caught a glimpse of the thick calluses on the security guards' hands, as well as the slight dents in their knuckles.

They were no doubt good fighters who were no less skilled than the Beast of Death and the Wolf King.

The fact that they were measly security guards at Peace Hotel served to show just how terrifying this place was.

Despite his observation, Levi didn't take them seriously.

"Apologies, I'm not here to stay at your hotel."

"Then, how may we help you, Sir?"

The security guards were perplexed.

"I'm here to kill someone! Don't worry, I'll leave right after I'm done with him and I won't cause you any trouble!" Levi spoke calmly.

However, it sounded like a cannonade of bombs to the security guards' ears.

Their minds were in complete shambles!

Peace Hotel had a history of at least two centuries.

Its rules had also stood for the same amount of time.

However, this was their first time hearing someone say this!

Here to kill someone? At Peace Hotel?

The words seemed to roll off his tongue just now.

If word of this gets out, the entire South Hampton will be shaken.

How can there be someone foolish enough to have come to Peace Hotel hoping to kill someone?

He's either insane or unaware of the rules of Peace Hotel.

Other than that, there isn't a third possibility.

It has been so many years and no one has dared to force their way into Peace Hotel.

"Sir, this is Peace Hotel," one of the guards reminded.

They thought that perhaps he didn't know that this was Peace Hotel.

"I am aware of that, but I want to go in and kill someone! Do you understand now?"

With that, Levi prepared to head in.

"No. You can't enter!"

"There are rules at Peace Hotel. You can't enter, let alone kill someone!"

The guards stood in his way.

The Protector Chapter 909

Very soon, a man clad in formal attire walked out.

From his gait and aura, one could tell that he was from the military.

“What’s going on here?”

The security guards explained the situation to him.

“Good day, gentlemen. I am Peace Hotel’s manager, Herman Sanders. I’m sure that you’ve all heard about the rules at Peace Hotel, right?”

“Once a person enters Peace Hotel, they will become our distinguished guests! Peace Hotel will ensure their safety! You cannot enter our hotel, let alone kill our guests! Please leave!” Herman warned.

He was bewildered upon encountering a group of people who had the nerve to force their way into Peace Hotel.

Anyone who knew about the rules here would never do this.

Furthermore, after so many years, not one person had the guts to disobey the rules!

“You have your rules, and I have mine. Even God can’t protect the person that I’m set on killing!”

Levi’s lips arched into a profound smile. “You’ll ensure the safety of your guests the moment they step into Peace Hotel? Well today, I’d like to see just how you’re going to protect him for me!”

“Charge in and kill Klaus Gonzales!”

Levi’s eyes flashed with murderous intent.

“Since you’re hell-bent on forcing your way in, don’t blame us for being rude! Throw them out!” Herman commanded.

Eight security guards immediately charged toward them.

These eight, skilled men resembled cannonballs as they rushed toward Levi and his men at a frightening speed.

It wouldn’t be an exaggeration to say that these eight men were on par with the Dual-Serrated Monks.

The two monks were The Three Musketeers’ trump cards.

However, they had met their match and they were bested.

Bang!

Bang!

Bang!

...

Azure Dragon, Kirin, and their comrades did not hesitate to strike.

In little to no time at all, all of the eight security guards were sent hurtling through the air.

Crack!

Peace Hotel’s glass doors were shattered by the impact of their flying bodies, causing the ground to be littered with broken shards.

Herman was completely dumbfounded.

These eight men weren't even a match for them?

The people in the hotel lobby were scared witless.

This was especially the case for Klaus, who was still catching his breath in the lobby when the big glass doors were suddenly smashed open.

Soon after, a few familiar figures walked in from outside.

Levi Garrison!

Upon seeing Levi, Klaus was so terrified that his eyes almost bulged out of their sockets.

Why is he here?

He's even barged into Peace Hotel?

Levi's eyes locked onto Klaus as a smile crept onto his lips. "We meet again!"

Klaus' voice cracked as he stuttered out, "How... How are you here? How dare you break into Peace Hotel? You've got some balls of steel!"

Everyone in South Hampton had one thought when it came to Peace Hotel; this place was sacred land.

It wasn't a place where one could just break into.

By doing this, Levi was putting his own neck at great risk.

A cruel smile played on the corners of his mouth. "There is no place on this earth that I cannot go to. Look, I'm here now, aren't I?"

Klaus shook violently in his seat as Levi approached him.

The Protector Chapter 910

Klaus scrambled to his feet and ran further into the hotel. "Save me! He's going to kill me!"

"Isn't Peace Hotel supposed to be a safe place? How did he get in? What the hell is going on?" Klaus shrieked at the top of his lungs.

Herman and the other hotel staff had embarrassed looks on their faces.

This situation was completely unprecedented.

Nothing like this had ever happened in the entire history of this hotel.

Hence, this was an utter humiliation to Peace Hotel.

All of the hotel staff were not exempted from it either!

If news of this spread, Peace Hotel would become the laughing stock of South Hampton.

They simply could not allow something like this to happen.

"Stop right there! One more step and you'll all become enemies of the entire Peace Hotel!" Herman yelled in warning.

An increasing number of security guards came to check in on the commotion, totaling up to approximately eighty of them.

Every one of them was an elite fighter in their own right.

Each one would be able to conquer a land alone.

They were no less powerful than even Scott Yates and Brock Green.

However, they were willing to settle for measly positions as security guards.

There were a multitude of them.

This was, in fact, very unusual.

It was evident how powerful Peace Hotel was.

The owner, Osborn St-Jacques was no doubt an exceptional man with a wide range of skills.

Levi's curiosity about its owner was piqued.

Why is he considered the strongest person in South Hampton?

White Tiger shook his head. "Oh look, so many fighters have suddenly appeared. Interesting!"

Levi continued to stride forward. "So what if we become enemies of Peace Hotel? This hotel doesn't even impress me!"

His seemingly casual words were, in fact, shocking beyond words.

Everyone gaped at him in disbelief.

In South Hampton, and probably the whole of the South, who would dare to be so disrespectful toward Peace Hotel?

I've seen crazy people, but never ones who are as crazy as him!

Klaus was petrified as he hid behind the lines.

Peace Hotel had always been considered to have a sacred existence.

But at that moment, he began to doubt its credibility.

"You guys have to stop him! He's a lunatic and he isn't joking around now!"

"If he breaks in and kills me, Peace Hotel's reputation will be done for! You can all forget about keeping the business running as usual!"

Klaus triggered everyone at Peace Hotel with his words.

All of the guests had fearful expressions on their faces.

Peace Hotel would completely lose its face at this rate.

All the hotel employees were responsible for upholding the hotel's reputation.

Their faces were flushed red with anger and embarrassment.

They would lose their jobs if their boss were to pursue this matter.

Herman glared at Levi as the latter stepped over his so-called demarcation line and growled out, "Don't say I didn't warn you! Take them down!"

Peace Hotel was built on sacred land and all intruders would be cut down.

Levi had just broken the rules and had challenged Peace Hotel's authority by intruding.

All of a sudden, about eighty security guards rolled into action.

They resembled wild beasts that were let loose from their chains.

Compared to the hundreds of men belonging to The Three Musketeers earlier, these men were by far more capable.

Both were on completely different levels!

The Protector Chapter 911

“Beat them up! I don’t want to see them standing anymore!”

Levi took a puff of his cigarette.

White Tiger and the rest of the Five Great Wars Regiment clashed against the eighty skilled fighters.

As expected, these people were more challenging, and taking them down required more energy.

Levi understood why Peace Hotel could protect all of their guests with the bold claim that once they stepped into the hotel, they would be safe.

With so many powerful fighters guarding this place, who could possibly lay a finger on them?

Forget about eighty of them. Even the eight men guarding the entrance would scare anyone in South Hampton from breaking in.

Unfortunately, they were up against Levi Garrison this time!

The battle grew more intense.

All the staff at Peace Hotel were dumbstruck.

The walkie-talkie in Herman’s hand had even fallen to the ground.

Sweat covered his whole body, not from heat but from fear, because the security guards of Peace Hotel were incapacitated one after the other.

Ten minutes later, not even one out of the eighty security guards was left standing.

All of them had collapsed onto the ground.

“That was fun! Anyone else? Give us a hundred more of them!”

White Tiger was high from the battle and couldn't help himself from challenging them.

The crowd fell silent.

No one in Peace Hotel would have expected these six men to have skills of the highest level!

Not even one security guard from Peace Hotel was their match!

They had finally met someone powerful enough to overcome them!

“You... You people aren't from around here!” Herman deduced.

Peace Hotel kept records on all of the powerful figures in South Hampton and even the entire South.

However, Levi and his five men were definitely not in their records.

They seemed to have been materialized out of nowhere.

“Indeed, we're not!”

Then, Levi coldly ordered, “Azure Dragon, bring him over to me!”

Klaus was on the verge of having a mental breakdown.

He was hiding behind a few hotel staff as he pleaded, “Save me. I... I don't wanna die!”

“No. You can't take him away!”

“You can't break the rules at Peace Hotel!”

Herman and a few of them tried to stop Azure Dragon.

“Beat them up!”

“Beat anyone who gets in our way!” Levi growled out.

Bang!

Those who were standing in their way were sent flying by Azure Dragon.

In an instant, all of the hotel staff were lying on the ground, unable to stand.

Klaus swept his gaze around the hotel, already at his wits' end.

He was the only one left standing.

Didn't they say that once we were inside Peace Hotel, we'd be safe?

How did Levi Garrison force his way in here?

He's even defeated all of Peace Hotel's top fighters!

“No...” Klaus looked at Levi and shouted in horror.

Azure Dragon picked him up with one hand and went over to Levi before throwing Klaus at his feet.

“I beg you, please. Don't kill me! I was wrong! I've realized my mistake now!” Klaus wept as he begged for mercy.

“Please, forgive me!”

Levi's eyes turned cold. “Oh, well. Apology not accepted!”

He slowly raised his right hand, but before he could sweep it across Klaus' face, a loud voice sounded out, “Wait!”

The Protector Chapter 912

A group of people poured out of the hotel.

In the middle of the crowd stood an old man in traditional clothing.

He was none other than the owner of Peace Hotel, Osborn St-Jacques.

When he had first heard about someone causing a scene at Peace Hotel, he paid it no heed.

After all, who would dare to cause trouble here?

However, he had no choice but to show up after receiving the latest news about it.

“Young man, I am Osborn St-Jacques, the owner of Peace Hotel! I’m sure that you know the rules here. Do you have an explanation for all of this?”

Although Osborn’s tone sounded amiable, it had an edge to it at the same time.

Levi chuckled and uttered, “Oh, my apologies, but I’ve always been a rule-breaker. And today, I’ve broken the rules of your hotel!”

“You...” Osborn’s anger skyrocketed.

Despite his rage, one glance at the wailing people on the ground told him that Levi wasn’t someone that he should underestimate.

“Rules are made to restrain those weaker than us, but it’s useless against me because I’m stronger than you!”

Levi’s mouth arched upwards.

"Since the beginning, I'd already stated that I'm only here to kill someone and that I wouldn't trouble the rest of you!"

"I clearly said that I would leave once he was killed!" Levi added.

"No... Save me... Mr. St-Jacques, you have to save me! I'm Lionel Gonzales' son!"

"If I were to be killed right under your nose, Peace Hotel wouldn't be able to keep operating in the future. You'll become the laughing stock of the entire South Hampton!" Klaus yelled, grasping for straws.

His words magnified Osborn's concerns.

If such a situation came true, he would certainly lose his foothold in South Hampton.

Especially when Klaus was the son of one of The Three Musketeers! He had an identity that was far too important.

"Let him go, and I'll allow this whole matter to slide!" Osborn coldly demanded.

"And if I don't?"

What Levi hated the most was being threatened by others.

"Then you'll become an enemy of Peace Hotel, as well as a common enemy to all of Osborn St-Jacques' connections!"

"When that happens, bigwigs from all walks of life will unite against you. Do you think you'll be able to survive that?"

Several people behind Osborn challenged Levi.

"Do you know why no one dares to break the rules at Peace Hotel? And that no matter how grave the mistake, those who step into Peace Hotel would be safe?" Osborn asked.

"Please, enlighten me!"

Levi was rather interested in knowing the answer.

“Firstly, there are many skilled fighters within the walls of Peace Hotel. All of them owe me and are willing to work as security guards here.”

“Secondly, I have connections all over the business, politics, military, and various other fields! You could say that the big shots in the South, and even from the North and East, all owe me favors. One word from me, and they’ll offer me their aid, no questions asked. This is the real reason that no one dares to mess with Peace Hotel!”

“Provoking Peace Hotel is equivalent to offending half of the East!”

Osborn leveled his gaze with Levi as he suggested, “So, cut me some slack! Let’s be friends instead!”

The Protector Chapter 913

Osborn was smiling broadly when he continued, “I’ve treasured peace my entire life. Making one more friend is better than one more enemy. What do you say, young man?”

“Let him go on my account. Just take it as me owing you a favor!”

The crowd was shocked.

They could hardly believe that Osborn had lowered his ego as he offered to befriend Levi.

This was an extremely rare occurrence.

People had always owed Osborn favors, not the other way around.

It wouldn’t make sense for Levi to turn him down!

This involved Peace Hotel’s reputation as well!

Out of everyone's expectations, Levi sneered in return. "Your friendship means nothing to me!"

"Nonetheless, after I've settled my matters, perhaps we can still talk about being friends!"

Klaus became a bundle of nerves when he heard what Levi had uttered.

"Mr. St-Jacques, you have to save me!"

Slap!

Levi swung his palm at Klaus' skull

Every orifice of his head began to bleed.

His life seeped out of his body in a matter of seconds.

Thump!

Klaus' body went limp as he slumped onto the ground.

This man had repeatedly insulted Levi's mother and was also the culprit who had pushed her into an abyss.

If he had not constantly tried to claim Levi's mother for himself, his mother would not have ended up with her current fate!

Levi's eyes were terrifyingly cold.

Boom!

Things happened too quickly, catching Osborn and the rest completely off guard.

Before they could react, Levi had already attacked.

Everyone could barely believe their eyes.

Levi had actually killed Klaus Gonzales in Peace Hotel, right in front of Osborn St-Jacques.

He's simply too foolhardy!

This was the first time that something like this had happened in the hotel's entire history!

He completely disregarded Osborn St-Jacques, the most powerful figure in South Hampton.

At that moment, everyone's heads were spinning.

"Y-Y-You..."

Osborn stared wide-eyed at Levi and couldn't formulate a proper string of words. He felt as if he could vomit blood at any given moment.

Outrageous!

Simply outrageous!

Levi's actions were against Peace Hotel's rules and completely stripped the hotel of its dignity.

The hotel could no longer operate in South Hampton from thereon forth.

Peace Hotel was famous all across South Hampton because of its unique code— as long as you were a guest at Peace Hotel, no one would dare to lay a finger on you.

However, their code was completely destroyed today!

Not only did someone break into Peace Hotel, rather, they had also killed a guest right in front of the owner.

This was the biggest humiliation that Peace Hotel had ever faced in their entire long history of operation!

It was also a scar that would never heal for Osborn!

"Alright. My work here is done. Let's go."

Levi wiped his hand with a nonchalant smile on his face before he turned to leave with Azure Dragon and the rest.

“Stop right there!” Osborn bellowed at Levi.

“Do you think that you can leave after making a mess at my hotel? Who do you take me for?” Osborn roared furiously.

Levi paused in his stride and grinned. “What? Are you trying to stop me?”

The Protector Chapter 914

Levi’s question stunned Osborn.

Stop him?

It would take a whole lot more to be able to stop him.

All of my top fighters are incapacitated, so who’s going to stop him for me?

“I can’t stop you, but you’d do well to remember this! Since you’ve broken the rules of Peace Hotel and humiliated me, from today onwards, I, Osborn St-Jacques, will use all of my connections and power to come after you! I will make your life a living hell!” Osborn yelled at Levi.

“Sure. I’ll be waiting for you, then!”

With that, Levi turned on his heels and left.

Thump!

Osborn stumbled back and fell on his bum.

He was on the brink of tears.

From this day onwards, Peace Hotel would cease to exist.

Osborn would be worse off.

At Greenfield Mansion, upon seeing Klaus' corpse, The Three Musketeers burst into tears as well.

News spread like wildfire across the entire South Hampton.

The Three Musketeers and Osborn St-Jacques had to bear the shame of a lifetime!

Someone had publicly walked all over a group of South Hampton's powerful figures.

This news filled the Jones family with endless regret.

This was especially the case for Michael.

Putting aside benefits and purely based on family relations, Levi would be considered his grandson.

His family had truly risen to the top.

After everything was settled, Levi went back to South City.

During these two days, Zoey was staying with the Black family.

"Did Levi go to South Hampton in the past two days?" Meredith asked.

"Yes, he had some things to settle there."

Zoey did not disclose the news about the Jones family, lest the Black family got any ideas.

Robert smiled and uttered, "I heard that something huge happened in South Hampton during the past two days. It was nothing short of a magnitude ten earthquake!"

"Oh? What happened there?"

Everyone gathered around for some juicy gossip.

“They said that a group of people suddenly appeared in South Hampton. First, they crushed the prominent families there and made them bow before them! Then, they killed the son of Lionel Gonzales, one of The Three Musketeers. They had done that by breaking into Peace Hotel and killing him right in front of the hotel’s owner, Osborn St-Jacques! The moment this group of people appeared in South Hampton, they wiped out all of the influential families in one go!”

“This was all done in a few short days!” Robert exclaimed.

“This is way too scary! This group of people won’t come to South City, right?”

Everyone shivered slightly in fear.

“Don’t worry. A small city like ours isn’t on their radar!”

Zoey’s brows furrowed slightly. As soon as she heard about the serious commotion in South Hampton, Levi was the first one who came to her mind.

Levi can’t be the one who’d caused all that trouble in South Hampton, right?

Impossible!

She immediately dismissed that possibility.

Levi went to attend the anniversary meeting of the Jones family. He went there to butter them up and get into their good books.

Thus, he couldn’t possibly have had the power to do something like this.

Robert continued, “That’s right. They definitely won’t come to South City. That’s because the leader of the group went to South Hampton to avenge his biological mother! I heard that he is an orphan. He killed anyone and everyone who’d insulted his mother!”

“Biological mother? Orphan?”

Zoey instantly thought of Levi again.

The Protector Chapter 915

He's an orphan.

In addition to that, his biological mother came from the Jones family.

He seems to match the details of this incident.

Nonetheless, how could it have been Levi?

How could he have turned the whole of South Hampton upside down by himself?

He had even trampled all over the powerful families there?

That's rather impossible.

Meredith was green with envy when she uttered, "If only there was someone like that amongst our younger generation. Not to mention, turning South Hampton upside down is equivalent to turning South City upside down. If we had a descendant of such caliber, I'd be so happy that I wouldn't be able to sleep."

She sighed before continuing, "The Black family can only rely on..."

As one, everyone's gazes fell on Zoey.

Amongst the younger generation in their family, she possessed the most potential.

If it weren't for Levi's appearance, the Black family would probably have risen through the ranks by now.

However, they believed that Levi would not be able to fulfill their condition of making a billion with his own two hands.

Hence, they weren't worried at all in the least because very soon, they would have a valid reason in stopping Levi and Zoey from being together.

When the time came, they would arrange for a good husband for Zoey who would bring their family infinite benefits.

Of course, Zoey knew what they were planning.

If they knew about Levi's identity as the grandson of the Jones family, they would immediately stop trying to tear them apart and immediately pounce at the chance to join families.

However, Zoey did not want to see something like such.

She greatly disliked this sort of mindset.

More than anything, she hoped that Levi could support her on his own instead of relying on his family background and other factors.

Before long, Levi returned home.

Iris politely inquired, "How was the anniversary meeting?"

"Not bad!" Levi smiled.

Zoey was surprised.

Why is Iris being so polite to Levi?

She wasn't like this previously!

She's treating Levi like he's her boss now.

Zoey cast her questions aside and rolled her eyes at Levi before going back into her office.

Levi immediately went after her.

However, Zoey had closed the door to her office, preventing him from entering.

She was still angry about Levi attending the anniversary meeting of the Jones family.

“Zoey, there’s something that I need to discuss with you!” Levi raised his voice to be heard as a helpless look appeared on his face.

Only then did Zoey open the door.

However, her expression was as cold as ice.

“Get right to it. I’m busy.”

Zoey was impatient.

“I’ve discovered my biological mother’s whereabouts!” Levi answered.

“What?”

Zoey sprung up from her seat.

“I went to South Hampton and learned about my past. It turns out that there was a reason that I was abandoned on the streets and became an orphan! My mother had even sacrificed her life to let me live...”

Levi told Emma Jones’ story to Zoey.

Zoey teared up with emotion upon listening to her story.

“She’s a great mother!”

“I support your decision to bring her back!”

The Protector Chapter 916

“Zoey, I’ve decided to bring you along while I get my mother. What are your thoughts on this?” asked Levi.

“But... “ Zoey blushed because this meant that she was going to meet her mother-in-law. Seeing as such, she was nervous about it. “Okay. I’ll accompany you.”

Levi nodded as he smiled. “Get ready then. We’ll be setting off tomorrow.”

Phoenix was able to deduce where Emma was currently being held; she was in Margo City, a small city located in the center of North Hampton, South City, and South Hampton.

Having never thought of such a place, Klaus and the Joneses were brought to shame, in view of the fact that the woman they had wanted to kill lived just less than an hour’s drive away from them.

Levi was equally as surprised to discover that his biological mother had been nearby all along.

As for the Garrison family’s background, Phoenix had informed Levi that the information was SSSSS-level classified.

This meant that it was only a level lower than the information on Levi himself.

Authority was required to gain access, so there were only two ways to get information.

Levi could either acquire the required authority from Oakland City or gain access to the information by force. Unfortunately, none of those options would work for Levi.

Due to some deep-seated issues, Levi would never contact Oakland City to make such a request.

On the other hand, if he were to access Haunted by force, he would surely be spotted. *That's going to cause a lot of problems. It's not that I can't solve them, rather, it's that I can't afford to be distracted by petty things like that right now.*

"Continue your investigation. I'm sure that you'll find a way." Levi's idea was merely to take things slowly for the moment. *The Garrison clan will definitely find out when I get my mother back! When it comes to such, they'll reveal themselves to me, so I'm in no hurry at all.*

At night, Zoey made all of the necessary arrangements as she put Iris in charge of her work, for she expected her business in Margo City to take her a few days.

At that moment, Levi received a call from Mia.

"I've heard that Osborn and The Three Musketeers are planning to deal with you. Nevertheless, we can't be certain as to how or when they're going to strike. You'd better be careful," warned Mia.

"Don't worry, Mia. They'll find that it's not that easy to get rid of me. By the way, I'll pick your aunt up in a few days, so you should come to see her and your sister-in-law too."

Levi smiled while Zoey blushed when she overheard the conversation.

Zoey was as nervous as she was excited to meet Levi's family. *I think that we'll be very happy together from now on.*

The next day, Levi and Zoey set off for Margo City early in the morning.

Sylas was their driver, and it took them about an hour before they reached the small city.

The Protector Chapter 917

Chapter 917 The Tomb of Levi Garrison

Upon stepping out of the car, Levi took a deep breath as he looked at the word "Oakland" that was engraved on a stone monument beside the road.

At that point, the furious man mumbled to himself, "So, this is where my mother has been imprisoned for nearly thirty years?" *What a cruel thing it is to have imprisoned someone here for the rest of their life. It's almost like binding a person by invisible shackles, forever reminding them that they're incarcerated and that they would rather die. How could the Garrisons have been this ruthless? How could my biological father have married another woman while his wife was suffering in such a place? Does the man not have a conscience? Heck, is he even a man at all?*

Conscious of the fact that Levi was rather tempted to smash the stone monument, Zoey soon uttered, "Don't overthink it. I know that it's unfortunate that Emma met a scumbag, but we can give her a better life from now on. We'll make it up to her."

"Okay, but he won't be getting away with this! I shall find him!" promised Levi angrily, causing Zoey to be frightened by his response.

"Why can't we just live a good life with Emma? Why do you insist on going against the man? As you've mentioned before, his family is so powerful and influential that even a royal family like the Joneses are forced to obey them. Making that man your enemy is practically suicide!"

Zoey had heard from Levi about how powerful the Garrisons were, so she was certain that Levi would be no match for them.

Hence, Zoey was worried that Levi would die trying to do the impossible while hoping to avenge his mother.

"I am aware that the Garrisons are powerful. So what? I'm not afraid of them," muttered Levi softly. "Let's go!"

Sylas then drove them to the courtyard that Phoenix had found.

Thinking that the place would be bigger, Levi was surprised when he discovered that it was merely a small place with tattered gates and cracked walls.

In the courtyard was a small house estimated to be around twenty to thirty square meters.

Left exposed, some of the bricks inside the cracked walls of the house had already fallen out.

If an earthquake of magnitude four or five were to happen, the house would surely collapse.

At only a few square meters large, the yard was surprisingly smaller than the house.

Other than some plants, in the middle of the yard stood a tombstone engraved with Levi's name.

The Garrisons threatened Emma that if she stepped out of Margo City, they would complete the engraving to "Tomb of Levi Garrison."

The Protector Chapter 918

It would have been hard for anyone to have missed the tombstone in such a small yard; hence, Emma was constantly reminded not to leave Margo City.

The tombstone was not just a reminder of the Garrisons' threat. To Emma, seeing the tombstone was like seeing Levi, so nothing made her happier than spending her time thinking about her son in front of it.

Hence, Levi felt infuriated as he gazed upon the tombstone along with his mother's prison.

Zoey and Syllas shivered when they sensed that Levi was about to explode with rage.

As a member of royalty in South Hampton, my mother was supposed to enjoy a luxurious life! Nonetheless, she was imprisoned here by that scumbag! Seeing as such, how could I not be furious about it?

"Let's have a look inside."

The door was unlocked so Levi got it open easily.

Although it was dilapidated, the yard was rather tidy as the flowers only served to make it cozier.

Holding back his anger for the eyesore of a tombstone, Levi approached a room and knocked on its door, only to find that there was no response.

He entered the small room and found it to be neat and clean.

There was nothing else in the room other than a table, a bed, and a cabinet.

Levi could avow just how miserable his mother was for the past few decades, seeing the old clothes that were hanging on the drying rack. The clothes were so old that the colors had faded from them.

While Levi was seething, tears rolled down Zoey's face when she caught sight of such a scene.

The next moment, the three noticed a photo frame on the bedside. They were shocked by the photo that was kept inside it.

It displayed the image of a good-looking couple who were holding a child together; the pair looked like a match that was made in heaven.

Levi had heard from Michael that Emma was the most beautiful woman in South Hampton when she was younger.

Levi's eyes blazed with hatred as his eyes fell on the man in the photo. *This is the irresponsible man who should be held accountable for my mother's imprisonment. He is the reason that I grew up an orphan!*

Levi was surprised to find that his mother had kept the photo because it meant that she still missed the man. *She has no idea that he has married someone else, having children with another woman.*

"I'll make him pay!"

The photo evoked nothing but hatred in Levi; nonetheless, he wasn't aware that Emma had begged and kowtowed to have had the photo taken.

Emma wanted a memento of the man, so he agreed and requested that she should never share the photo with anyone else. Otherwise, his identity would be exposed.

The Protector Chapter 919

Chapter 919 Meeting His Biological Mother

Wishing for her son to gain control over the Garrison family, Emma hoped that her son would make something out of himself. Hence, she gave Levi his first name. Unfortunately, the Garrisons forbade him from carrying their family name because they saw him as a bastard who did not deserve it.

Levi was supposed to be a Jones, but Emma begged once more for her son to be able to keep his biological family's last name, and at long last, the biological father agreed.

This was the only request from Emma that the man had ever agreed to.

A sharp glint flashed across Levi's eyes; he swore to avenge his mother, uninformed of the fact that he had almost lost the right to become a Garrison.

"It seems that Emma was sick," stated Zoey. She had found some medication in the cabinet.

Levi momentarily remembered that his mother had knelt at the Garrisons' for three consecutive days when she had borne him.

It was raining back then, which only served to deteriorate Emma's health.

Levi's eyes turned red as he imagined his mother being in pain and agony. *I should have discovered this sooner! My mother would not have had to suffer for this long if it were otherwise!*

"Where else could my mother be, if not at home?" asked Levi.

"She's probably working to support herself, seeing that she lives alone. Though, the money that she earned must have gone to these medications."

Levi could not imagine how his mother had survived on her own upon hearing the heartbreaking truth that Zoey had pointed out.

"Let's search for her!"

Levi asked Phoenix to look up his mother's occupation and workplace while searching around the courtyard with Zoey and Sylas.

They searched through an entire block but it was to no avail.

A garbage truck was rumbling nearby as a group of workers was actively trying to unclog the sewer. Unfortunately, no matter how far in they inserted the tube, they found that they could not remove the clog.

Seeing as such, the job would now have to be done manually, but unfortunately, there were no volunteers.

"Anyone willing to do it will get fifty as their reward," offered the team leader.

All of the workers shook their heads in refusal; the sewer was far too smelly and dirty.

"I'll do it."

At that moment, a woman in sanitation raised her hand to volunteer.

"Good! Deal with the clog and you'll get your fifty, Emma," promised the team leader to the woman.

"Emma?"

Levi and Zoey widened their eyes at their mind-blowing discovery.

The Protector Chapter 920

Chapter 920 Tears Of Men

That's Emma? The two turned to gaze at the woman in shock. Soon, Levi received a message from Phoenix: *Emma Jones has been working as a sanitation worker.*

The hacker even sent him a photo, to which Levi compared to the woman across from him. *It's the same person. That is my mother, Emma Jones!*

Emma was only in her fifties, but her hair had already turned gray. Her face was as wrinkled as a seventy-year-old woman.

She was so skinny that it looked as though a gust of wind could blow her away.

Time and illness had not been kind to Levi's mother.

Looking at Emma's miserable state, Zoey could not help but cry.

Levi was not faring any better either, for tears had started to flow down his face.

As a man, it was only natural for him to have cried over someone whom he held so dear to him.

When Emma heard that she would be rewarded with fifty, joy flashed across her face. *With that money, I can finally get myself some quality pain medications.*

Emma put her gloves on, readying herself to go down into the sewer to unclog it.

"Mom!"

The sudden shout shocked the workers, who all turned around to glance at the source of the voice.

Bewildered, Emma did the same, wanting to find out who shouted.

“Mom!” shouted Levi once again before he rushed over to his mother.

Emma was stunned when she realized that the man was calling out to her. *Did he mistake me for someone else?*

However, like a bolt from the blue, Emma suddenly recognized the familiar face when Levi approached her.

It looked at least half as similar to the face of the man whom she had loved so much. *There’s no mistaking this face. This is my son!*

When Levi reached his mother, he wrapped his arms around her tightly.

“I’m so sorry, Mom!” shouted Levi.

Dumbfounded, Emma looked at Levi in disbelief before she asked in a shaky voice, “Are you... Are you really Levi?”

“Yes, it’s me!”

Thud!

Levi knelt before his mother and kowtowed to her. “I’m sorry, Mom! I should have found you sooner.”

Emma could no longer contain herself as she burst out into tears. “You’re really Levi! My son! My sweet boy!”

The mother also knelt to embrace her son as the two sobbed in each other’s arms.

Minutes passed before Levi helped his mother up. “Let’s go home, Mom.”

“Not yet, Levi. I’m still at work.”

"You don't have to work anymore. I'll take care of you," promised the son.

"No."

Emma approached the team leader and bowed to him. "My son is here, so I'd like to take a leave. Thank you, Sir."

Witnessing how lowly his mother had seemed, Levi could feel the tears rolling down his face once more.

The Protector Chapter 921

Chapter 921 A Dream Come True

“Go with your son, Emma. Thank you for your hard work,” affirmed the team leader.

Levi then gave the man an earnest glance to show him his gratitude.

“Let’s go, Mom.”

The son supported his mother, and the two were ready to go home along with Zoey and Sylas.

Emma was surprised to see such a beautiful woman with them.

“This is Zoey, your daughter-in-law.” introduced Levi with a smile.

“I’m so sorry for what you’ve been through, Emma!” Zoey’s eyes had already reddened from all her crying.

After briefly introducing Sylas to Emma, they returned to the courtyard.

Emma had dreamt of seeing her son again for nearly thirty years, and she was willing to die for it no less. However, she also understood that she could never leave Margo City.

She never expected anyone to find her, much less to see her son again.

Still, her dream came true, and her son appeared before her very two eyes. He had even brought her daughter-in-law along.

The tears never stopped flowing down Emma's face on their way home, but they were tears of joy.

"Levi, how did you know that I was here?" asked Emma curiously, for she was certain that the Garrisons had made it impossible for anyone to have found her.

"I received some help."

On the way home, the mother felt like she had a multitude of questions to ask her son.

When Emma returned to the courtyard and saw the tombstone, her face turned grim. "Levi, don't mind this."

Emma then covered the engraving on the tombstone with her body.

"It's okay, Mom. You don't have to do that. I know that my name is on it."

The mother's face fell because she would rather have kept her son in the dark about it.

After getting inside the house, Emma wanted to serve her guests. Nonetheless, Zoey stopped her.

"Allow me to do so."

"I'm so happy, Levi! Not only has my dream come true, rather, you've also found yourself such a kind and beautiful wife. Now, I can die without regrets."

"You still have a good life ahead of you, Mom. I'll make sure that you become the happiest mother in the world!" promised Levi as he held his mother's hands tightly.

"Seeing you is enough for me," responded Emma with a smile.

"Mom, have you ever thought of leaving?"

"I can't do that. Didn't you see the tombstone? They'll kill you if I leave this place."
"Are they using that rock to keep you here?"

“No. They’ve also got people watching me, and they’ll never allow me to step foot out of Margo City.”

The Return of the God of War [The Protector]

Chapter 922

Chapter 922 Nobody Bullies My Mother

Emma continued, “It’s not just Margo City. For almost thirty years, I was only allowed to move within this block. They warned me that if I ever stepped out of the boundary, I’d receive a serious beating.”

Levi widened his eyes so much that they could almost drop out. “What? You were only allowed to move within this block for almost thirty years?”

What’s worse than being imprisoned in a city for almost thirty years is being confined to a single block. Those ruthless scumbags!

“Yes. The Garrisons had ordered the people in Margo City to imprison me here. To make it foolproof, they deliberately narrowed the range down to just this block.” Emma sighed.

When Levi heard her words, rage pulsed through his veins, and a murderous intent flashed across his eyes.

“Emma, have you been a sanitation worker all these years?” The thought of it broke Zoey’s heart.

“Yes. They control everything that I do, including my job. I was only allowed to be a sanitation worker because they’d wanted me to struggle,” replied Emma with a nod, who then smiled at the tearful Zoey. “I was fine, though. On top of my salary, scavenging around was enough to help me get by.”

Even so, everybody else could see how things really were, for it was impossible to forget seeing what Emma was willing to do for fifty.

“But your health...” Zoey choked before she could finish.

“It’s nothing. As long as I continue to take my medications, I’ll be fine. The pain does get a little worse during cloudy and rainy days, though,” explained Emma casually.

Still, her sickness made her look at least twenty years older than she was.

Momentarily, Emma suddenly remembered something. “You guys had better leave now. You shouldn’t stay here for too long.”

“Why?” asked Levi and Zoey in confusion.

“They’re always watching me. For almost thirty years, nobody was allowed to enter this courtyard or even talk to me. That was why I didn’t have to lock the door. Nobody would dare to come by. If they find you here, you’ll all be in danger. There might even be a serious beating.”

In a panic, Emma tried to hurry the three out, but Levi would not budge.

“It’s okay, Mom. Nobody will lay a finger on you while I’m around.”

Levi sneered. “Nobody bullies my mother!”

“We’re no match for these people, so please just go! They’ll see you!” begged Emma anxiously.

The Return of the God of War [The Protector]

Chapter 923

Chapter 923 Beat Her Up A Lot

Emma was well aware that she was constantly being watched, so it was only a matter of time before her son and his companions were spotted.

“Just go!”

Emma even pushed her son to get him to leave.

Creak!

Emma’s face fell when she heard the door opening.

“Oh, no! They’re here!” exclaimed Emma with a pale face.

“Hey, old swine! Someone’s here with you, aren’t they? Did you forget the rules? How dare you bring outsiders home with you!” threatened a voice from outside.

Seeing how terrified his mother was, Levi realized how she was treated before.

“What do we do now?”

Emma was as anxious as a mouse in a cattery.

“We’ll be fine, Mom. You have me now,” assured the son.

“Let’s go and check it out.” Levi and the others then went out to the yard to meet a few fierce-looking young men.

“So, you really do have people here, you old swine! Are you trying to get beaten up?” sneered the group leader.

Seeing how his mother had shrunk behind him in terror, Levi was infuriated. “Do you guys beat her up a lot?”

“We do. So what? She’s nothing but an old piece of trash,” ridiculed the leader before the other men laughed. Unfortunately, none of them realized the severity of Levi’s rage.

“Get yourself over here and kneel before me, you old swine! You’ve broken the rules, so that means that it’s time for a beating!” shouted the man.

Emma was so frightened that she trembled all over; it was evident that she had been beaten up before.

There was no way that her frail and sickly body could take such a beating.

“Hiding, are we? I’ll drag you out if I have to!”

The man then rushed toward Levi to grab Emma.

Slap!

Levi slapped his hand onto the man’s wrist to grab hold of it.

“What the... “ The man tried to break free, but it was to no avail.

“Release me before I beat you up too,” threatened the young man.

Kick!

A cold glint flashed across Levi’s eyes before he lifted his leg to kick the young man. The thug was soon sent tumbling backward.

“Get them! Get all of them!” roared the young man as blood dripped out of his mouth.

The other men rushed forward, but Sylas took care of them all with only a few kicks and punches.

Emma's jaw dropped when she saw how powerful her son and his companions were.

The men got back up before threatening, "So, you've got yourself some help to leave Margo City, huh? We'll see about that, Emma. You're not out of the woods yet!"

"No, that's not it. I... I'm not going to leave Margo City," denied Emma immediately.

"Then, how would you explain this? There's no denying it. Just you wait!" shouted the men before retreating.

The Return of the God of War [The Protector]

Chapter 924

Chapter 924 In This Together

"It's all over now. Get as far away as possible, and don't ever return. Seeing you once more is enough for me. I have no other regrets."

Emma had completely broken down. "If you don't leave now, they'll return to kill you."

She was not to contact the outside world, much less allow anyone to find her. That was the rule.

She was told that anyone who found out about her existence would be killed, and that was how the Garrisons ensured that nobody would ever find her.

"To tell you the truth, I came here to take you away with me, so pack your things. We're leaving, Mom."

“What?”

Emma could not believe what she had just heard. I hadn't even dared to leave this block, why would I leave the city?

She had been imprisoned in that city for nearly thirty years, and the invisible shackles on her had become part of her.

Even in her dreams, she could not escape the purgatory. I don't have the courage to do it.

Anything but leaving Margo City!

“I understand what you're trying to do for me, but the Garrisons have set the rule that I'm not to step out of this city, ever! If I do, they'll kill you. You saw the tombstone, right? That's for you!” Tears were already dropping like rain from Emma, but the idea amused Levi.

“Nobody can kill me. Not yet anyway.”

The man had survived the battlefield for six years, and no matter how bad things got, he would always come back alive. Thus, why the heck would I be afraid of the Garrisons? Besides, a small place like Margo City doesn't scare me.

“Listen to me, Mom. One way or the other, I'm going to get you out,” insisted Levi.

“Do you know who's keeping me here? He's the most powerful man in the city, The King of Margo City himself! The Garrisons got the man to imprison me for nearly thirty years. He's practically the city itself! He has eyes all over the place and he knows exactly who is in his city.”

Emma continued to dissuade her son. “I know that you're an extraordinary man, but you're no match for The King of Margo City, let alone the Garrisons. Levi, listen to me and leave now!”

Even Zoey was starting to worry for her husband. How is Levi going to fight against all of these people?

“Levi, maybe we should leave first and come up with a plan later,” suggested Zoey.

"You do that, Zoey, but I'm staying," insisted Levi.
"No. We're all in this together!"

The Return of the God of War [The Protector]

Chapter 925

Chapter 925 Kill Them All

Emma grew anxious as she wondered what to do about the hard-headed couple.

Vroom!

Several cars arrived at the courtyard, and dozens of men stepped out of them.

"Emma, you old swine! I'd heard that you'd gotten yourself some help to escape Margo City. Oh my, the audacity this woman has!"

Shivers traveled down Emma's spine when she heard the voice.

It was Erwin, the son of Amos Braus, The King of Margo City.

Amos had already delegated his son to watch over Emma because he wanted the Garrisons to recognize Erwin

This would be a great help to his son's future.

When Erwin heard that Emma was trying to escape, he quickly brought a group of men over.

"So it's true." Erwin sneered at Levi and the rest.

“Didn’t you use to kneel whenever I arrived, Emma? What’s changed? Grown a pair, have you?” Erwin continued to sneer as anger flooded through Levi’s veins.

I’ll ensure that these people shall pay for what they have done to my mother for the past twenty years!

“I’m sorry, Mr. Braus. I’ll do it right now.”

Emma was about to kneel before the man, but Levi stopped her.

“Don’t, Mom. You shall bow to no one.”

“Mom? So this is your son?” Shocked, Erwin shifted his focus to Levi. “This is Levi Garrison? Tell me, old swine, how did this bastard find you?”

Erwin was surprised because he always heard his father promising the Garrisons that nobody would know that Emma was in Margo City, especially not those who were close to her.

Never did they expect Emma’s son to have found her.

If the Garrisons were to find out about this, their family alone would be ruined, if not massacred.

Erwin perspired all over at the thought of it.

“Well done, Levi. I didn’t expect you to have stumbled upon this place,” admitted Erwin after taking a deep breath.

“Emma, you should know the rules. Whoever knows about you and your location will be killed, let alone your son. He’ll never walk out of here alive because we can’t have the world know of your true identities.”

A murderous glint flashed in Erwin’s eyes before he coldly ordered, “Kill all three of them!” If it were the usual, Erwin would have captured a beauty like Zoey for his own enjoyment. However, there was too much at stake then.

The Protector Chapter 926

Chapter 926 Breaking The Rules

When Emma and Zoey heard that Erwin wanted them killed, both of them panicked.

"Please spare my son, Mr. Braus. I'd never said that I wanted to leave Margo City.

Heck, I wouldn't even leave this courtyard!" begged Emma after kneeling before the man.

"Mom, what are you doing?"

Levi quickly helped his mother up.

"What if he spreads the information that you're here or goes to the Garrisons? I can't allow that to happen. My father would never allow it! Killing them is the only way to avoid complications," insisted Erwin.

"Kill me if you have to, but please let my son live!"

Emma stood determinedly before her three guests.

"You've broken the rules, Emma. They'll have to die."

With a wave of his hand, dozens of Erwin's men rushed inside with shiny daggers in their hands.

"Close your eyes, Mom. You too, Zoey," instructed Levi.

The two women did as they were told, and the frightening noises that followed only made them more afraid to open their eyes.

After a while, silence fell upon the scene. Afraid that something had happened to Levi, the two finally opened their eyes, only to see the other men lying motionlessly on the ground.

Staring at the unscathed Levi, Erwin was dumbfounded.

The man could not believe his eyes when he witnessed Levi crushing his men effortlessly. How can someone who had grown up an orphan be this powerful?

“Tell The King of Margo City that I’ll be waiting for him here. He kept my mother here for nearly thirty years, didn’t he?”

I want him to watch as I walk away with her,” commanded Levi calmly.

“What?”

Erwin was stupefied by how arrogant Levi was.

Why would he want to do it in front of my father, The King of Margo City?

Levi glanced at the tombstone. “This is what you’ve used to keep my mother here for more than twenty years. I’m going to destroy it today.”

Crack!

Levi broke the tombstone into pieces with a strong kick while Erwin and Emma watched on with widened eyes.

It had been almost thirty years since the Garrisons had erected the tombstone there, and it was finally destroyed that day.

Its destruction was a challenge to the Garrisons and the rules that they had set for the past few decades.

Erwin was so horrified that he quickly took off to find The King of Margo City.

“We’re in trouble now, Levi! The Garrisons will never let us get away with destroying the tombstone,” stated Emma.

The Return of the God of War [The Protector]

Chapter 927

Chapter 927 The Ancient Family Of Erudia

"It's simple, Mom. Nobody will erect a tombstone for me while I'm alive. Anyone who tries to do so will die," responded Levi with a smile.

"You're too young to fully understand what you're up against, Levi. You have no idea how powerful the Garrisons are." Emma shook her head helplessly.

"Is that so? I'd like to see it for myself."

Since Phoenix was unable to gain access to their information, Levi was curious to find out.

"Did you know that the prominent families in Erudia are century-old, while the ancient ones are millennia-old? The Garrisons happened to be the most powerful family of them all, and they were known as The Head of Erudia!"

Over the years, the Garrisons had gradually hidden themselves to the point that even their identities' had become top secret. Still, those who knew anything about powerful families knew that the Garrison family was the most powerful in Erudia.

"The Joneses were considered a prominent family in South Hampton, but when compared to the Garrisons, we're nothing. Because of the inferior blood that runs in my veins, I'm not worthy of being part of the Garrison family. They refused to allow me to stay with your biological father, let alone allow you to be born," continued Emma.

"The Head of Erudia, huh? Interesting," responded Levi with a smile.

No wonder the files on the Garrisons were SSSSS-level classified. I didn't know that they were so powerful.

The corners of Levi's mouth lifted higher as he smirked.

Too bad for them, the confidentiality of my files is SSSSSS-level, a level higher than theirs. So what if they are the most powerful ancient family in Erudia? They're no match for me.

"What the most powerful ancient family says shall go. They allowed me to give birth to you, but in exchange, I was to be imprisoned here. You'd broken the rules when you'd destroyed the tombstone, and they won't take it lightly."

Emma was in despair because she knew that the Garrisons would never allow any of them to leave Margo City.

Not to mention, letting the world know that Levi was a Garrison.

They had every reason to make the four disappear from the face of the earth.

I don't mind dying, but I don't want to see my son being killed. I'd only just met him.

The thought was enough to bring Emma to tears once again.

Zoey was almost as frightened as her mother-in-law when she heard about the Garrisons.

Even the Joneses of South Hampton submit to them, so how can we hope to fight against a family that is so powerful?

They'll probably merely have to lift a finger to obliterate us.

Zoey shuddered when she thought of how superior the Garrisons were.

To her, it was like a battle between gods and mortals.

Zoey then glared at Levi before she scolded him, "Levi, you're far too impulsive! You may not care about yourself, but you've endangered your mother. Why can't we just think of another solution?"

The Return of the God of War [The Protector]

Chapter 928

Chapter 928 The One Who Imprisoned My Mother

Emma could not help but agree with Zoey because her daughter-in-law was right about her son being impulsive.

I'm happy that my son is capable, but he has to learn how to pick his fights.

"Now that the tombstone has been destroyed, it wouldn't make a difference even if I stayed, so let's get out of here before The King of Margo City arrives!" requested Emma.

"We're in no hurry, Mom," responded Levi with a smile.

"What?"

Both Emma and Zoey were stunned by Levi's response.

What is Levi thinking? He's the one who wanted me to leave with him earlier. Now that I've agreed, why are we not leaving?

"Don't worry. We will leave eventually, but I have a score to settle first," assured Levi when he noticed how confused the two seemed.

"I'll make them pay for what they'd done to you for over twenty years, so we'll wait for them here."

"The past doesn't bother me. What's important to me is your safety. Trust me, you wouldn't want to face The King of Margo City. Let's just leave!"

"Sylas, get them out of here," ordered Levi after forcing his mother and wife into the car.

Sylas then quickly drove away, leaving Levi alone.

Before long, The King of Margo City arrived with a dozen cars and several trucks, as hundreds of men stepped out of the vehicles.

As the title suggested, the man was the king of the city, and he could summon hundreds to the courtyard with a raise of his arm.

When The King of Margo City, Amos, and his son arrived, they only saw a calm-looking man.

The man, with his hands behind his back, looked as though he was waiting for them.

"Where's Emma that old swine?" shouted Amos.

"She probably took off. We just spotted a car outside," answered Erwin.

"Father, let me go after her."

"No. I have eyes all over Margo City. They won't get away," stated Amos coldly before entering the courtyard to stare at Levi. "So, you're Emma's bastard son?"

Without a hint of emotion, Levi remained silent.

"Weren't you an orphan who was abandoned to the streets? How did you find this place?"

Amos was curious as to how Levi had done it.

"Answer my father, you bastard! Are you dumb?" roared Erwin.

"You're not worth it."

The arrogant answer stunned Amos, who never expected anyone to speak to him in such a manner.

"So you're The King of Margo City? The one who'd imprisoned my mother for almost thirty years?" asked Levi.

Amos laughed out loud before replying, "That's right. I'm the one who's kept that old swine here."

The Return of the God of War [The Protector]

Chapter 929

Chapter 929 Reward For Killing Levi

"The Garrisons only wanted me to keep the old swine in Margo City. It was me who decided to imprison her in this city block, forbidding anyone from socializing with her. I also made her clean the sewers and deliberately raised the prices for the medications to torture her."

The man seemed to enjoy remembering how Emma had suffered. "You may not have seen it before, but it was amazing to watch her writhe in agony during the rainy days. I'll never forget the sight. There's only so much a person can take before they succumb to the pain."

Levi's face darkened as he clenched his fists.

"Are you even a human being? Do you have a conscience?" asked Levi coldly.

Amos laughed once more. "Calm down, boy. You should blame your mother because this is what happens to people who have offended the Garrisons. I could have treated her a lot worse, you know?"

Erwin agreed, "It's true. I only give her a casual beating once every three days and a serious one, once every five days."

"The old swine can really take a beating, can't she? She's still alive after all of these years. What a miracle!"

Listening to their conversation, Levi tried his best to hold back his tears. These heartless animals!

"Look at how upset he is. I think that he wants to kill us." "Look at how scary his face is."

The men ridiculed Levi for being angry and had a good laugh for themselves.

Levi then smiled with a murderous intent.

"I'm guessing that everyone present had a hand in bullying my mother, right?" asked Levi coldly.

"That's right. Every single one of us has hit your mother before. So what?"

Then, Amos and all his men continued to laugh.

"Good. I just needed to hear you say it because you'll all pay for hurting my mother!" promised Levi before his mouth curved into a disturbing smirk.

He had not had a good fight since he had gotten back from the front line of the warzone.

Even taking Assassin 47 was a breeze.

Today's going to be different because these people will suffer my wrath. How unfortunate for them to have met the God of War!

"Make us pay? Who do you think you are?"

"Look around. You're outnumbered!"

Once again, the men laughed as though Levi had made a fool of himself.

"I've heard that he's skilled at fighting. Let's put that to the test. Seize him!" ordered Amos as dozens of men rushed forward.

"The Garrisons will reward me for killing this boy."

Amos laughed in excitement.

The Return of the God of War [The Protector]

Chapter 930

Chapter 930 The Horrifying Side Of Levi

The King of Margo City was sure that his dozens of elites would have no problem in regard to dealing with Levi.

“Kill him!”

The men gave it their all to take Levi’s life.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

The next moment, Amos froze in terror because he had witnessed the impossible.

The men that he had sent to kill Levi were driven back as if they had been hit by a truck.

Thump! Thump! Thump!

One by one, the men fell to the ground with blood gurgling in their mouths.

Their bodies twitched and squirmed before coming to a halt.

The men merely passed out because of their broken ribs. Levi thought that the bone fractures were punishment enough for them and that there was no need to kill them.

“What?”

Amos and his remaining men were dumbfounded at the sight that lay before them.

How can he be that powerful?

“We’ve underestimated him, father. We need to send everyone over,” suggested Erwin.

“Go! All of you!”

At Amos’ command, hundreds of men broke through the courtyard walls and doors to swarm in like locusts.

“You’re vastly outnumbered! Let’s see how long it’ll take before my men tire you out.”

Amos looked at Levi and cackled.

“Let’s see how good you are.” Then, as though they were getting ready for a good show, Erwin lit some cigarettes for his father and himself before leaning casually against a car.

Due to the crowd, the two could not actually bear witness to how the battle was going, but they believed that Levi would die from exhaustion if he had not been beaten to death.

The father and son merely had to wait for the result.

A minute later, they started to notice their men backing away from the courtyard.

Peeping through a gap in the crowd, the two were surprised to see a mountain of fallen men in the courtyard.

The men were only backing away because there was hardly any space left inside.

There are people everywhere on the ground, and some are even stacked up upon others.

Levi must have defeated them all! Nevertheless, how is that possible?

The two were so horrified that they both dropped their cigarettes as they began to break into a cold sweat.

Then, they finally spotted Levi, the God of War himself.

Wherever the God of War went, people were bound to drop like flies.

Like a powerful weapon, the man could break bones just by swinging his iron fists.

The invincible God of War had no problem in defeating hundreds of Amos' men.

Horror! It's pure horror!

The situation that unfolded next was rather unbelievable.

The Protector Chapter 931

Chapter 931 My Mother Got Lucky

Like a cannon, Levi shot his right fist into a man and sent him flying toward the crowd. It was as if the man had been hit by a sports car with five hundred horsepower.

Crack! Crack! Crack!

In an instant, more than thirty men were sent flying as the sound of bones cracking filled the air.

Those who were hit by Levi either had broken ribs, broken backs, or broken legs.

None of them walked away without a bone fracture because Levi's punches were unbelievably powerful.

Amos was stupefied at the sight.

How can someone be this terrifying?

Levi put on a show as he cruelly beat up hundreds of men, making them wail helplessly.

Instead of killing those men, Levi crippled them as punishment for hurting his mother.

Sigh!

Levi sighed with relief as he dusted off his hands.

Around him were people laying over all the place, stacked up like mountains.

While Levi stood there with his chest puffed, the Brauses froze with their mouths wide open.

The two had trouble believing what they had just witnessed.

Is he even human?

He just crippled almost six hundred men by himself.

These men will be bedridden for a year!

Thud!

Erwin slipped from the car and sat down helplessly on the ground.

This is just too frightening. I've never seen anyone this good.

"You're next!"

Step by step, Levi walked toward the two.

"We... We're sorry! You should know that we've actually treated your mother fairly. We never... We never gave her a hard time," stuttered Erwin.

"That's funny. Didn't you just tell me about how you used to torture her?" Levi sneered.

Amos smiled apologetically before responding, "We... We were merely kidding. Why would we torture your mother? We wanted nothing but the best for her."

"It's true. We've been good to her. Just think about it, Mr. Garrison. It's been nearly thirty years. How could she have survived if we weren't good to her?" reminded Erwin.

"She would have passed away a long time ago if we'd tortured her, but she's alive and well. That proves that we've been nice to her," added Amos with a smile.

"That's because she got lucky! She was strong!" roared Levi suddenly, which scared the living daylights out of the Brauses.

"Why don't you take a guess at what I'm about to do to you guys," suggested Levi with a smirk.

The Return of the God of War [The Protector]

Chapter 932

Chapter 932 Going Against The Garrisons

The Brauses knew well that Levi's smirk could only mean trouble for them.

"Please spare us, Mr. Garrison! We were only following orders."

"We're no different than dogs!"

The two quickly begged Levi for his forgiveness.

"The masters may be despicable, but the dogs aren't any better."

A murderous glint suddenly flashed across Levi's eyes before he grabbed Amos by the collar and lifted the man off the ground.

Amos kicked his legs in the air as his face quickly turned red from suffocation.

Thump!

Crack!

Levi punched Amos on the ribs, and immediately, the sound of bone cracking could be heard.

The punch had completely fractured the man's ribs.

"Argh!" Amos cried out in agony.

Thump!

Crack!

“Argh!”

The other side of his rib cage was broken too.

Thump!

Crack!

Next was his breastbone, which collapsed after it was struck.

Thump!

Crack!

Another punch landed on his nose, and Amos' face was sunken in.

Thump!

Crack!

Thump!

Crack!

Levi smashed every bone in the man's body, including his arms and legs.

The King of Margo City had bone fractures all over his body.

His bones were so smashed up that they were almost powder-like.

Amos passed out eight times during his beating.

He would wake up when Levi's punches landed on him before passing out again, and he continuously screamed with pain.

“Now, it’s your turn!”

Levi threw Amos aside before picking Erwin up.

Like what he had done to the man before, Levi broke Erwin’s bones, one by one, with his punches.

Erwin was weaker than his father. The son passed out thirteen times and screamed even louder.

The two went through hell at Levi’s hands and could only lie motionlessly on the ground because all of their bones were broken.

“Compared to what my mother has been through, this is mercy. I should have simply killed you,” stated Levi calmly.

The Brauses looked at Levi with fear because they knew that the man would continue to haunt them in their dreams.

“You’re only alive because I need you to send the Garrisons a message,” explained Levi.

“Tell them that Levi Garrison’s back and that nobody is to imprison my mother. I’ll kill anyone who tries to do so! One more thing. Tell them that I’ll pay them a visit soon. The most powerful ancient family in Erudia is now my enemy!”

The Return of the God of War [The Protector]

Chapter 933

Chapter 933 We Will Not Bow To An Orphan

“I... I admit that you’re powerful, but you’re nothing... Nothing compared to the Garrisons.”

It took every bit of strength in Amos to force out those words.

They're the most powerful ancient family in Erudia, The Head of Erudia!

There's no way that one man can overthrow a millennia-old ancient family.

They'll never bow to a bastard like Levi.

"That's also why I didn't kill you. I want you to witness how I crush the Garrisons," explained Levi calmly.

Thump!

He then stomped on the ground with both of his feet, causing the house that had imprisoned Emma for nearly thirty years to collapse and turn into billows of smoke.

After that, Levi turned to leave the place.

He had finally destroyed his mother's decades-old prison that day and undermined the Garrison's authority.

Glancing at Levi's back, the Brauses scoffed, "You can't escape the Garrisons. You'll see eventually."

At that moment, Sylas had already left Margo City.

Although there were obstacles along the way, they were nothing that she could not handle.

On top of that, Zoey had powerful allies watching over her, like the fully-recovered Hades.

Most of the obstacles along their way were already taken care of.

"What happened to my son? Please. We have to go back," begged Emma in tears.

Zoey was also worried about leaving Levi alone.

"Don't worry. Mr. Garrison is fine," assured Sylas confidently.

She was somewhat regretful that she did not get to see the God of War in all of his glory.

“Sylas, you seem to have a lot of faith in Levi.”

It was by women’s intuition that Zoey noticed how Sylas had changed her attitude toward Levi.

Sylas used to see Levi as her enemy, but she has since changed and she now seems to revere him.

The same thing happened to Iris.

Somewhere along the line, she began to treat Levi differently, as if he was a changed man.

Like Sylas, she’d put a lot of faith in Levi and had seemed to revere him too.

What happened to the both of them?

Zoey was starting to get paranoid and thought that everyone was hiding something from her.

“Mr. Garrison is not a reckless man,” explained Sylas.

At that point, a call came in from Levi, so Zoey and Emma finally heaved a sigh of relief.

“He wants us to return to South City without him. He’ll meet us there.”

Zoey then asked Sylas to continue driving.

“Emma, the border is just up ahead. When we pass it, you will have finally stepped out of Margo City,” uttered Zoey as she looked sympathetically at Emma.

What a poor woman!

She’s been imprisoned here for half her lifetime.

“No! I can’t do it!” exclaimed Emma suddenly when she was reminded by Zoey.

“If I step out of Margo City, we’ll be doome

The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 934

Chapter 934 Live And Die Together

“What’s wrong, Emma?” asked Zoey in confusion.

“I will have broken my vow if I leave! The Garrisons will surely kill Levi! I know better than anyone just how powerful they are. You may not know this, but the Garrisons had sent a servant to silence the entire South Hampton.

The servant made sure that everyone in the city said nothing of me. He was merely a servant to the Garrison family, and he alone was enough to frighten an entire city! Imagine what the entire family can do!”

When Zoey and Syllas heard that, they both took a deep breath, for they had a new understanding of the Garrisons’ strength.

If their servant was powerful enough to control the entire South Hampton, it’s hard to imagine how much more powerful the Garrison family is.

“The King of Margo City was nothing to the Garrisons. He’s not even worthy of being their guard dog. That’s why I can’t leave this city.

For Levi’s sake, I insist on staying here!”

Emma then quickly got out of the car.

“You can’t do this, Emma! I know Levi. He’ll never give you up, not even if he has to go against the Garrisons or die trying. He won’t let you walk away like this.”

Zoey immediately stopped Emma, who pessimistically responded, "I don't want anything bad to happen to the both of you. It doesn't matter how hard we try, we'll never beat the Garrisons."

"That's fine with me. From the day I married Levi, I've sworn to be by his side no matter what. We will live and die together! Whatever comes, we'll get through it together!"

"Good girl! Levi is blessed to have a wife like you."

Emma was moved by her daughter-in-law's words.

When they reached South City, Zoey immediately brought Emma to barbershops and beauty salons in the malls to give her mother-in-law a makeover.

"Emma, we'll get the best doctors to treat you, and you'll be in the pink of health again," promised Zoey as she held Emma's arm.

The three were about to enter a barbershop when a car suddenly drove toward them.

Then, Meredith, Robert, and the others stepped out of the car.

"What are you doing, Zoey?" asked Meredith coldly.

"Grandpa, Grandma, let me introduce you to... "

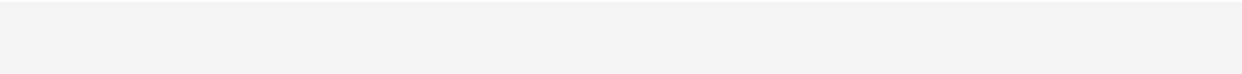
Before Zoey could finish, Meredith interrupted, "There's no need for that. We know who this is. She is Levi's mother, isn't she?"

Meredith glanced at Emma with disgust.

She looks older than I'd thought.

Not only does she look dirty, rather, but she also reeks.

"Let go of her now! She's filthy!" commanded Meredith.



The Return of the God of War [The Protector]

Chapter 935

Chapter 935 Stay Away From Her

Self-conscious, Emma lowered her head and dared not to look at the well-dressed Meredith.

Nearly thirty years of hardship had taken its toll on the woman. Emma went from being a rich girl to a lowly old woman.

Thinking about her son was the only thing that kept her alive.

Otherwise, she would have already killed herself.

Feeling inferior after what Meredith had said, Emma subconsciously moved her arm and kept her distance from Zoey.

“Grandma, this is Levi’s mother, but she’s also my... “

Meredith interrupted her granddaughter once again, “Are you trying to tell me that she’s your mother-in-law?”

You and Levi are divorced, so that man has nothing to do with you anymore, much less his filthy mother. Just look at how dirty she is! And the horrible smell! How can you be related to a beggar like her?”

Meredith’s words only further deprecated Emma’s self-esteem.

She knew that she was only a liability to her son and daughter-in-law, regardless of her identity or other aspects.

“Grandma! How can you say that?” exclaimed Zoey.

“Do you even know what you’re doing, Zoey? Have you no idea who you are? You’re the director of the Oriental Star Group, and your net worth is more than ten billion! You’re even in charge of a fifty-billion project! Let me also remind you that you’re the granddaughter of the prominent Black family.

How can you stand next to a beggar? To make things worse, she’s the mother of your Ex-husband! Are you not ashamed of yourself?”

Meredith did not give her granddaughter a chance to speak. “You’re a famous entrepreneur in this city.

People look at you as you walk down the street, and paparazzi stalk you. Imagine if they’d caught you walking around with a beggar. It’ll ruin both you and your company. Not to mention the Black family! Have you not thought of these consequences?”

“Your Grandma is right. Our family may not be of noble descent, but we’re respected in South City. We’ll let go of what happened between you and Levi, but we’ll never agree to you hanging out with his filthy mother! Now come with us!” chimed in Robert, who then forced his granddaughter into the car.

“You too, Sylas!”

Meredith pushed Sylas to the car herself, and there was nothing that Sylas could do about it.

After all, she did not want to argue with Meredith, so she secretly texted Levi.

“If I see you disturbing my granddaughter again, I’ll kick you out of South City, you beggar!” threatened Meredith before leaving.

Vroom!

Left alone in a strange place, Emma felt as though her surroundings were spinning around her.

The Protector Chapter 936

Chapter 936 The Tragedy Of A Wrong Match

Emma began to regret leaving Margo City.

Not only have I upset the Garrisons, but I've also affected Zoey's life and business. Possibly even her relationship with Levi!

Zoey's family was right in keeping their distance from me.

That way, the Garrisons won't go after them.

Looking around, Emma only felt increasingly self-conscious and afraid.

I'll probably be doing everyone a favor if I'd just killed myself.

"Mom!"

Just when Emma was considering suicide, she heard her son's voice.

"Levi, your wife... "

"I know, Mom. Don't blame yourself. No one despises my mother!"

Afterward, Levi gave his mother a makeover, which caused her to look much younger than before.

Although traces of her age and the hardship that she went through could not be removed, Levi believed that things would only get better for his mother from thereon forth.

The son promised to never allow his mother to suffer again.

“Mom, do you want to go to South Hampton?” asked Levi. Surprisingly, Emma shook her head.

“No.

Bad things have happened to people around me. The Jones family was almost ruined because of me.”

“Then, we’ll stay in South City for now. After Zoey and I get married again, we’ll move to North Hampton.”

Levi did not want his mother to be in danger, so he brought her back to the Warzone compound.

Emma was relieved to see the compound again.

She would have been uncomfortable if she were to stay in a big manor.

Looking at the compound, Emma was smart enough to figure out why Zoey’s grandparents had wanted nothing to do with her or her son. Zoey had a net worth of tens of billions, while Levi was evidently worth much less.

Zoey would make a wonderful daughter-in-law, but she’s out of our league. This kind of mismatched marriage can only end in tragedy.

Emma harbored such thoughts to herself.

Isn’t that what happened to my own marriage?

The Joneses were not worthy of the Garrisons, and hence, my tragedy.

I should dissuade Levi from marrying Zoey because I know that it’s not going to end well.

At the compound, the Azure Dragon and his gang knelt before Emma when they found out who she was.

“Oh, there’s no need for such courtesy! Please get up.” Emma chuckled.

“They are family to me, Mom. You’ll be safe here with them. Nobody’s going to bully you when they’re around,” assured Levi.

As comforting as that sounded, Emma was not convinced that any of them could stop the Garrisons.

If only it were that easy.

The Return of the God of War [The Protector]

Chapter 937

Chapter 937 Get Rid Of Them

Little did Emma know that kneeling before her was the Five Great Wars Regiment.

Other than the God of War himself, no one else could match them.

In fact, the Cavalry Regiment was also hiding in the dark and ready to pounce.

With those warriors around, nobody would dare to attack the compound.

On the other side, Meredith had Zoey kneel on the ground back at home as punishment.

“You’ll only get up when you admit to your mistake!”

Rage flowed through Meredith like lava.

“What’s going on, Mom? What did Zoey do?” asked Aaron and Caitlyn as they hurried over.

“You’ll never guess who she’d gone out with today. It was Levi’s filthy mother!” shouted Meredith as she glared at the two.

“Isn’t Levi an orphan? How would he have a mother?”

The couple looked at each other in bafflement.

“You two really don’t know, do you? Levi’s no orphan because his mother is alive. It’s a shame that she turned out to be a beggar, though. The woman looked older than me! The wrinkles on her were horrifying! She was dirty and smelly like someone who had just crawled out of the sewer,” complained Meredith.

“I think that she is a sanitation worker. I noticed the uniform that she was wearing,” added Robert.

“Zoey was walking around with that beggar on a bustling street. If the paparazzi took a photo of that, Zoey would be in big trouble. Besides, she’s already divorced from Levi, so who is she to go shopping with the man’s mother?” continued Meredith furiously.

Aaron and Caitlyn were upset as well when they heard that. “You’re in the wrong here, Zoey. Why did you go out with Levi’s mother? Didn’t we tell you to stay away?”

“Levi was never a capable man. You’re way out of that kept man’s league! And now, he’s even brought his beggar of a mother along. The two of them are trying to live off of you!”

“Levi’s filthy mother must have heard about you. That’s why she’s deliberately trying to take advantage of you.”

The couple exchanged looks before Zoey finally voiced out, “Mom! Dad! It’s not what you think it is! She’s not that kind of person.”

Zoey wanted to tell them the truth about Emma so badly, but it did not seem like a good idea.

“I don’t care what kind of person she is, and I have no interest in finding out either.”

“We have only one thing to tell you. From now on, you and Levi are over. You’ll have nothing to do with that man anymore. Even if our family has to exhaust every resource and call in all favors, we’ll make sure that the two of you are separated!”

“Or, we’ll simply drive Levi and his mother out of Quebec,” threatened Robert and Meredith in unison.

The Blacks were hellbent on separating Zoey and Levi, no matter the cost.

The Return of the God of War [The Protector]

Chapter 938

Chapter 938 One Man Against A City

Zoey was stunned, for she never expected her parents and the entire Black family to oppose her marriage.

“You will kneel until you learn your mistake!”

Meredith glared daggers at Zoey.

“Hurry up and admit that you’re wrong, Zoey. Apologize to your Grandma,” ordered Caitlyn and Aaron.

“I’ve done nothing wrong,” insisted Zoey.

“Then, you shall continue to kneel. Let’s see how long you can keep this up,” responded Meredith angrily.

She never had any problems in regard to controlling the other young ones in the family.

Zoey was the only one who was always rebelling against her grandmother, and that was why Meredith felt that her authority was challenged.

Meanwhile, in Margo City, Amos and his men were being carried away by family members because nobody could move.

It did not take long before the one handling Amos heard of what happened.

Amos only knew that the man's name was Caleb and that he was a servant to the Garrisons.

Caleb was the servant who had rampaged through the entire South Hampton, silencing the city overnight.

Amos was unable to imagine just how powerful the Garrisons were, seeing that their servant could do that much to a city.

The man trembled all over when his phone rang.

"Do you know what you've done, Amos?" asked a cold voice.

"I... I do."

Amos was so frightened that he could almost cry.

"You'd better have a good explanation for Emma's absence in Margo City. Even her courtyard was laid to waste!"

"To tell you the truth, Emma's bastard son came for her, and he was insanely powerful. My men were crippled and so was I. Mr. Garrison, you have to avenge us. He had even said that he was not afraid of your family and that he'll be seeing you soon."

Amos exaggerated the incident, in hopes of getting the Garrisons to avenge him, but Caleb merely laughed in response.

"That bastard thinks that he can challenge the most powerful ancient family in Erudia? He's not even worthy of being my opponent, let alone the entire Garrison family. Heck, he's not even worth mentioning to the Garrisons."

Levi thought that the Garrisons would hear about him when he instructed Amos to send the message, but little did he know that he had not earned a mention yet.

The man's appearance was not even worth mentioning to the Garrisons. Such news had merely reached the family's servant.

“Since Emma has broken the rules, the Garrisons no longer have to abide by the agreement.

Levi and his mother are nothing but a nuisance to the family, so the only way to deal with them is to kill them!” exclaimed Caleb as a murderous intent flashed across his eyes.

“Excellent.”

Amos almost cheered out loud.

The Return of the God of War [The Protector]

Chapter 939

Chapter 939 Is This Your Mother

“Even the servant despises Levi, let alone the Garrison family. What makes him think that he has a chance against the Garrisons?” Erwin gritted his teeth in anger.

The man was not exaggerating because the Garrisons were indeed unbelievably powerful.

In the Brauses’ opinion, no matter how powerful Levi was, he would not be able to do a thing about the Garrisons.

Going against the most powerful ancient family would only get the man killed.

The Brauses were about to celebrate when they heard Caleb’s voice. “This will be the last mistake that you’ll ever make.”

Boom!

Suddenly, the Brauses’ heads exploded.

A prominent family like the Garrisons would never have allowed the Brauses to live. They had always been decisive in tying up loose ends, and they would never tolerate mistakes.

Seeing what happened with Emma, they had to contain the situation.

“But... “

There was a deathly silence in Amos’ eyes.

Even with his bones broken, Amos thought that he could at least live, but things did not turn out as he expected.

That night, anyone who knew about Emma disappeared along with the Brauses.

On the other side, Zoey had knelt for a full day but still believed that she did nothing wrong, so Meredith decided to stop the corporal punishment. After all, Zoey was the hope and future of their family.

Meredith and her husband then had a discussion with Zoey’s parents. “Let’s find Levi and his mother.

Then, we’ll drive them out of Quebec so that Zoey will never see them again.”

“I believe that this will work. We should also buy them off.”

Aaron and Caitlyn immediately agreed with the suggestion before heading off to the Warzone compound with Meredith and Robert.

Levi was surprised to see them there. “What brings you here?”

“Where’s your mother, Levi? Call her out,” ordered Meredith.

“What’s going on, Levi?”

Emma stepped out when she heard the commotion.

Both Aaron and Caitlyn grimaced when they caught sight of how weak and old Emma was. They soon realized that Meredith was not exaggerating at all.

What a disgrace!

Having her with us would be an insult to the family!

This ugly-looking thing shall never be our in-law!

Levi was bad enough, but his mother is even worse!

We were right to insist on the divorce.

Mother really does know best!

This time, we'll make sure that Zoey doesn't end up with Levi again.

"So, this is your mother, Levi?" asked Aaron.

"That's right. What about it?"

"Hahaha!"

Suddenly, Aaron burst out laughing.

The Return of the God of War [The Protector]

Chapter 940

Chapter 940 Get Out Both Of You

Levi was puzzled, but the sensitive Emma could tell that Aaron was mocking her.

The mother felt terrible for bringing shame upon her son.

"Aren't you an orphan? Seeing as such, why would you have a filthy... I mean, is this a joke?" inquired Aaron.

Levi shook his head. "I'm not joking. This is my mother."

"So, you'll live with your mother?" chimed in Caitlyn.

"She's my mother. Of course, she has to stay with me."

"You're a good son, but have you thought about your future?" asked Aaron seriously.

"What does that mean?"

"Didn't you say that you'd wanted to marry Zoey and have a grand wedding? Now that you've found your mother, are you planning to have her stay with you and Zoey?"

Aaron was trying to control his anger.

"Of course! Zoey's already met my mother, and they had no problem getting along. I don't see why we can't live together."

"I don't think so!" roared Aaron suddenly.

"Do you know what people say about you?"

Almost everyone at Morris knows that you're a deadbeat. Are you and your mother planning to live off of Zoey for the rest of your miserable lives?"

Caitlyn then chimed in, "Are you going to bring your father home with you too? Do you seriously think that Zoey owes your family that much?"

Supporting you wasn't enough? Now, she has to support your parents too?"

"We wouldn't complain if they'd at least looked decent, but just look at your mother! She's nothing but a disease-carrying old hag!"

"You've brought shame to Zoey. What has she done to deserve this?"

Under the couple's barrage of insults, Emma broke down in tears.

I'm nothing but a liability to my son!

"Besides, Zoey's the star entrepreneur of Quebec. Her net worth will reach fifty billion, if not hundreds of billions, in the future. She'll be one of the elites in the upper class while your mother will remain a lowly sanitation worker. You and your family are not worthy of Zoey!" voiced Meredith.

"People will make fun of us for having in-laws like you!" added Robert.

Emma trembled all over when her worries actually came true.

She knew that her son could never be with Zoey because their relationship could only end in a tragedy.

"So what? What exactly are you guys here for?" asked Levi with a smile.

Aaron and Caitlyn were acquainted with Levi, so it was hard for them to be straightforward with the man.

"We want you and your mother to leave Quebec!" Meredith sneered.

The Protector Chapter 941

"You need to realize that you'll never be with Zoey! You're not worthy, so we won't let you have her."

"Not only that, but you also have to leave Quebec. Having you here will only affect Zoey, so we want both you and your mother to leave."

Seeing how straightforward Meredith was, Robert quickly added, "Of course, we'll make it worth your while. You'll receive fifty million and you'll be assigned jobs in real estate. That should be enough to last you a lifetime. Our only condition is that you leave Zoey alone."

Aaron took a deep breath while Caitlyn sighed. "We're friends, right? Hence, please do this for Zoey and us."

"You should take the offer, Levi," urged Emma with mixed feelings.

"Huh?"

Meredith and the others were surprised to find that Emma was not a gold-digger like they had expected her to be. They never expected her to agree with them.

"I'll be honest with you, Levi. Zoey's a nice girl, but she's out of your league. It'll only end in tragedy. Just look at what happened to me."

Emma had also wanted to keep Zoey safe from the Garrisons, and asking Levi to let go of her was the only way.

"Did you hear that, Levi? You should listen to your mother. You may have a big mouth, but it's time to face your reality," snickered Meredith.

Levi gazed deeply into his mother's eyes as he began to think to himself.

You may think that I'm out of Zoey's league, but that's only because you don't know how powerful I've become.

There's no one in Erudia that can match me.

With a wave of her hand, Meredith signaled Jennie to hand a check and other things over to Emma.

"We don't need such things or your pity!"

Levi stopped Jennie in her tracks.

"You should know that I go wherever I please. I'm in charge of my own fate! I will not let go of Zoey because we're truly in love with each other. Nobody can come between us."

Levi made his intentions crystal clear.

As long as Zoey loves me, no one can separate us.

The God of War was afraid of no one.

"Do you still call yourself a man? Are you not ashamed of yourself for clinging onto Zoey like that? Even your mother has asked you to let go of her, so stop bothering Zoey!" shouted Jennie furiously.

"Stay out of my business," responded Levi after glaring at the woman.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 942

Robert and Meredith then stormed off and were determined to drive Levi and his mother out of the city.

"No matter what, Levi will never be good enough for you, so don't even think about marrying him!" shouted Zoey's parents when they got back home to her.

Zoey already knew what they had done, and she wanted so badly to reveal Levi's relationship to both the Joneses and the Garrisons.

However, that would probably only make things more complicated, seeing that the Blacks were terrified of the Garrisons.

Zoey could not help but feel sorry for Levi and his mother.

Not only did they have to deal with the Garrisons, rather, but they also had the Blacks breathing down their necks.

What should I do about this?

Zoey got anxious when Meredith and the others started to discuss how they would drive Levi and his mother out.

"Levi's good at fighting, so we have to get someone better if we want them out."

Meanwhile, Emma was crying. "I'm so sorry for the trouble that I've caused, Levi. You wouldn't have had any problem in marrying Zoey if it weren't for me. Now, we'll both be chased off."

"I won't allow it!" stated Levi furiously.

"You're safe here, Emma. We'll make sure of it," promised Azure Dragon, Kirin, and their comrades.

Not even the president himself can do a thing to Emma while we're around.

However, Emma still seemed worried.

This is just the beginning.

Getting kicked out of this city is nothing compared to what the Garrisons are going to do to us.

That night, it was quiet as usual at the Joneses' residence.

The council members of the Jones family were having a discussion in the meeting hall.

Leading the group was Mia, with the ever-helpful Michael by her side.

Thump!

Rumble!

Suddenly, a loud rumbling sound came from the yard, and the earth shook beneath their feet.

"What's going on?"

Everyone quickly rushed out to the yard, only to catch sight of a figure standing there.

The figure sank its feet into the ground and left deep footprints on the yard.

It turned out that the figure's footsteps were the cause of the rumbling.

Michael was scared stiff when he saw the person.

Twenty-eight years ago, that same person killed all the elites in the Jones family and silenced the entire South Hampton, stopping all information from getting out.

Now, he's returned!

Reminded of the horror, Michael immediately fell to his knees.

"You've honored us with your presence, my lord!"

It was Caleb, the servant of the Garrison family, who had arrived.

His cold eyes fell on Michael before he shouted, "How dare you tell that bastard of where Emma was!"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 943

"There must be some mistake! I did no such thing. I don't even know where she was kept!"

Michael panicked as he knelt before the furious servant who could easily destroy his family.

"If you didn't tell him, how did the bastard find out?"

Caleb did not think that Levi was capable of such a feat.

"Who are you calling a bastard? You'd better mind your manners," rebuked a cold female voice.

It was Mia, who would not tolerate anyone calling Levi a bastard.

Michael and the others were stupefied by how she had spoken to the man who took on the entire South Hampton.

Caleb then shifted his focus to Mia. "Who are you?"

"Levi's my brother, and I won't allow you to insult him. Besides, you don't get to speak ill of him."

Mia kept her eyes fixed on Caleb.

Levi's the invincible God of War!

Nobody insults him!

"You'd dare to speak to me in such a tone? Aren't you afraid that I'll kill you?" asked Caleb after sizing the woman up.

Boom!

Caleb's body exuded a murderous aura so terrifying that the color drained from Mia's face.

Suffocating because of her fear, Mia clawed at her throat as though an invisible pair of hands were choking her.

Faced by death itself, Mia could not help but break out into a cold sweat.

Caleb cackled before asking, "What are you going to do if I call Levi a bastard again?"

Even though Mia had difficulty breathing, she forced herself to respond, "I... I will stop you. I'm not... Not afraid of you."

"You've got guts! I like that. I'll spare you for now because I want you to watch me when I kill that bastard," stated Caleb coldly.

"He's going to kill you instead. Do you think you can take on my brother? Dream on! Not even the entire Garrison family can beat him, let alone a servant like you!" shouted Mia with every bit of strength in her.

She had complete faith in Levi even before she knew about his identity, and she was certain that he could beat anyone with his iron fists.

"Hahaha!"

Caleb suddenly cackled because he found it amusing that someone would have such faith in the bastard.

Has this woman lost her mind?

Or is she just not thinking straight?

"So he wants to fight the Garrisons? Then let me tell you of the true strength of the Garrison family... "

When Caleb was done sharing the information on the Garrison family, there was dead silence at the scene.

The Joneses always knew that the Garrisons were powerful, but they never knew just how powerful the family was until that moment itself.

“Do you still think that your brother stands a chance against the Garrisons?”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 944

Mia had a determined expression on her face. “I’ve told you this before. Provoking my brother would be a grave mistake on your end!”

“Sure, sure. Just you watch-I’ll deliver his head to you soon!” Caleb laughed.

Initially, he had plans to exterminate the Joneses that very night.

However, his plans changed with Mia’s appearance.

He wanted the ignorant, innocent lass to witness just how powerful he was-just how fearsome the Garrison family was.

He also wanted her to see just how powerless her brother was when compared to the most powerful ancient family in Erudia.

When Caleb arrived at Greenfield Mansion, the place in which The Three Musketeers were, a funeral was being held, much to his surprise.

He was soon made aware of what happened.

A cold look appeared in Caleb’s eyes. “What? Emma’s child killed Klaus Gonzales in front of Osborn in the Peace Hotel? That b*stard!”

“He’s too arrogant and powerful!”

“We’re discussing how to get rid of him...”

The Three Musketeers wanted to weep but failed to shed a tear.

Although The Three Musketeers and Osborn were nothing in Caleb’s eyes, he had already subjugated them once twenty years ago.

However, they were talking about South Hampton’s strongest presence, after all.

To think that a lowly orphan could do all of this? That’s terrifying!

“Well, he has the blood of the Garrison clan flowing through him, after all. While he is a lowly commoner, that doesn’t mean that he’s weak!”

Caleb chalked Levi’s power up to him having the Garrison clan’s blood running through him, negating the latter’s own efforts and merits in the progress.

“It’s no surprise then that he’s so exceptional. He would only be more powerful if we’d given him more resources,” The Three Musketeers remarked, flabbergasted.

“Yes, that’s right! If we allow him to continue to do as he pleases, there will come a great calamity, posing much threat to the family!”

“Therefore, I will kill him myself!” Coldness radiated from Caleb’s eyes.

Originally, he had planned to send The Three Musketeers to get rid of Levi, because if he had done it himself, he would have risked revealing his identity.

Although he was merely a servant, he was rather invaluable.

Hence, someone like Levi had no right to be granted the honor of getting killed by him.

However, his interest was piqued once he caught news of just how powerful Levi was.

Killing a prodigy would grant him a great sense of achievement.

"If you're the one who's going to kill him, then he's just as good as dead already!"

"After some investigating, we've found out that he's currently at South City."

The Three Musketeers grinned widely.

Klaus will finally be avenged.

That night, Emma had a horrible nightmare.

The servant, Caleb, who once had the whole of South Hampton under his thumb, had come to kill both her and Levi.

Shluk!

In the nightmare, she saw Levi getting stabbed in front of her very two eyes.

She woke up with a start.

When she opened her windows to get some air, she realized that it was not a dream.

It was real!

Caleb's really here!

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 945

On the wall of the Warzone compound, a shadow was cast.

Emma knew all too well who that shadow belonged to; it was Caleb.

The Garrison family had sent someone in their inner ranks.

"Come on out, Emma and her commoner son!"

That one sentence enveloped the entire courtyard in silence.

At this moment, the military dogs started barking.

It turned out that they had not even noticed Caleb until he had spoken.

Emma fell to the ground in fear.

Now that Caleb's here, we're all as good as dead.

I don't care if I die.

All I care about is Levi. He cannot die!

"Sleep well, mom." Levi's voice rang out while he shut the windows.

The next moment, Levi and Azure Dragon appeared in the courtyard.

"Hmm, not bad! That's to be expected of the b*stard with our noble blood flowing in his veins! It's no wonder the peasants all want to climb to nobility! Having noble blood sure is great. Just a little will change the entire course of your life!" Caleb laughed coldly.

In the most powerful families, bloodlines and statuses were extremely important.

For example, Caleb used to have a different first and last name, but when he became a servant of the Garrison family, he was given his current name.

He was extremely honored, and immediately tossed his old name aside.

To him, his new name was a status symbol.

"How insolent! You're merely a servant, yet you dare to talk to my boss in this manner?" Black Tortoise warned in a low muffled voice.

"You sure are capable, punk, to have been able to chase us down all the way to Oakland City! Nonetheless, this is a mistake on your part!"

"I came to kill both you and your mother today!" Caleb shouted coldly.

As soon as they heard that he was here to kill Levi, they all started laughing.

Is he an idiot?

"Do you have a death wish?"

White Tiger had a ruthless smile on his face.

He was excited to finally have a worthy opponent.

"No, let me do it!" Levi stepped forward.

He had heard from his mother that the Garrison family did not care about her at all. For nearly thirty years, the one who controlled her was Caleb, the servant, while The King of Oakland City was his dog.

Therefore, it could be said that Caleb was the one who had brought suffering upon his mother.

I must kill him myself!

"Phoenix, hand me a knife!"

Phoenix handed him a military knife with his name carved on it.

"Interesting, to think that someone who served would challenge me! I wouldn't have thought that a worthless b*stard like you would've served the country!"

As expected, Caleb was extremely skilled in combat- one could tell from his mannerism and his choice of weapon.

"You sure are insightful!" Levi laughed and walked toward Caleb with deliberate footsteps.

"You think you can kill me? What an idiot!" Caleb laughed coldly.

He drew a long knife slowly, and it shone with a pale blue light.

Over twenty years ago, he had conquered South Hampton using this very knife.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 946

"Getting killed by me should be an honor!" Caleb charged forward as soon as he said that.

He was so fast that human eyes could not keep up with him, and it seemed as though he was teleporting.

He was ten times as fast as the King of Assassins.

There were about ten meters of distance between them, but he crossed that in a flash of an eye.

"He's so swift!" Azure Dragon and Kirin exclaimed.

Even on the battlefield, there were not many people who could rival this speed.

Caleb swung his knife with such force that it created a gust of wind so strong that it seemed to have created a forcefield.

However, he did not expect Levi to be swifter than him.

The two of them passed each other and stood still for ten seconds.

Levi blinked.

He was unscathed.

Meanwhile, blood flowed down Caleb's neck.

He widened his eyes in shock.

To think that I would meet my end because of a b*stard like him?

His lifeless body fell to the ground.

If word got out that Caleb was killed by Levi in just a few seconds, many people's jaws would have dropped to the floor in shock.

"Haha, boss, to think that after having not fought in such a long time, you've only gotten stronger." White Tiger laughed heartily.

"As expected of the most powerful ancient family in Erudia- even a mere servant is so powerful!" Azure Dragon analyzed.

"That's right! It's a common saying that the people of Erudia are not to be underestimated."

"What a shame that the Garrison family had met such a monster on the battlefield!"

Upon handing the knife back to Phoenix, Levi uttered indifferently, "Send his body back! I'm officially declaring war on the Garrison family!"

In the room, Emma was still trembling.

"Mom, everything's fine now. Get some sleep." Levi smiled.

"Huh? What happened to Caleb?" Emma was both anxious and fearful.

"He's been taken care of. You're going to be safe from now on," Levi comforted her.

Emma was astonished.

He's so powerful that he could even kill Caleb?

Have I been underestimating him?

Could it be that he actually does have the capabilities to go against the Garrison family?

No.

That's not possible.

No matter how powerful he is, he can't go against the Garrison family.

They're legendary- I would liken their power to that of a dragon.

In the past, Levi's power could be likened to that of an ant, but even now that he became stronger, he's still nothing more than a sparrow.

How could a mere sparrow defeat a dragon?

The Garrison family is way too powerful!

What should we do next?

Once they get news of Caleb's death, the Garrison family will come knocking for sure.

Soon enough, they'll send over someone who is even more powerful than Caleb!

Will Levi be able to defeat that person?

If the Garrison family were to come, the only thing I can do is to plead for them to spare us.

I'll agree to anything that they'll suggest.

If worst comes to worst, I'll die for Levi. After all, I have a valuable secret in my hands.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 947

When Caleb's body was sent back to South Hampton, Osborn and The Three Musketeers were at a loss for words.

Caleb's dead?

Judging from the state of his wound, he was defeated in mere seconds.

Caleb was a legendary presence who conquered South Hampton by himself twenty years ago. To think that he's been killed!

This...

Try as they might, they could not wrap their heads around it.

Someone as powerful as him was defeated in mere seconds?

If word gets out, the world will be shaken!

That Levi- he's so powerful despite being a mere servant.

The fear that the mention of his name brought was remembered vividly, even to this day.

"Just... Just how powerful can he be?" The Three Musketeers began to panic.

Their previous unquenchable thirst for revenge dissipated in an instant.

Besides, who would even dare to take revenge? Nobody would unless they have a death wish.

"Our top priority is to send Caleb back!" Ritchie exclaimed.

"Nevertheless, where do we send him? It's not like we have that many connections," Perseus pressed forth.

When compared to the Garrison clan, they were not even as good as whimpering dogs.

“Mr. St-Jacques, we can only count on you. You have many connections.” The Three Musketeers looked toward Osborn.

He shook his head. “Even so, I don’t have connections with the most powerful ancient family in Erudia. I don’t even have the right to kneel at their door!”

The Three Musketeers sighed in defeat.

The Garrison clan is way too powerful.

To think that even Osborn isn’t acquainted with them!

“However, I do know of a patriarch of one of the Garrison clan’s branch families- Jonah Garrison,” Osborn admitted.

Amongst all the families, there were regular families too; they were called royal families.

Above them, there were imperial families.

It may have been a bit of an exaggeration, but it could be said that, in the past, they would be equivalent to the relatives of the emperor.

Of course, that was simply a metaphor.

And “imperial family” was, after all, just a title.

Not only did they reach the top using terrifying strength, but they also had hundreds of years of heritage and experience under their belts.

Normally, the imperial families would reign for five hundred years, or even more than a thousand years. Hence, the sheer power of a family that had maintained its status for that long could only be imagined.

Yet, the Garrison family was merely a branch family of the Oakland City Garrison clan.

That was the sheer strength of the Garrison clan.

“Alright, seeing as such, let’s send Caleb to the Haven Garrison clan so that they’ll know about this as well!” The Three Musketeers agreed in unison.

“Hopefully, they’ll send someone really powerful this time to take care of that punk!”

“My anger will never cease!” Osborn shouted.

...

At this moment, the Black family was wracking their brains on how to get rid of Levi and Emma.

“Sending someone to chase them out should be reserved as the last alternative! Does anyone have any better ideas?” Meredith asked.

Logan turned toward her and grinned. “Grandma, I have an idea! Let’s do this...”

After he revealed his plan, Meredith immediately started applauding. “That’s good!”

“Logan’s idea is great! With this, we’ll definitely be able to chase them out!” Everyone in the room had a smile on their face.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 948

Logan’s plan was simple.

It was to restrict every aspect of Levi and Emma’s lives, making their lives in the city unbearable.

That way, they would willingly leave on their own.

"Grandma, let's put this plan into action immediately!" Logan exclaimed. *Just watch, Levi! I'll make it so that you and that wh*re of a mother of yours can't do anything in South City!*

A few days passed, and Emma had gradually gotten used to life in South City.

After she made breakfast for Levi in the morning, she went to the market nearby to buy fresh meat and vegetables for dinner.

After she picked out the vegetables, she handed them to the stall owner.

He was just about to weigh them when he got a good look at Emma's face.

"No, I can't sell these to you!" He immediately took them back.

"Huh?" Emma was startled.

That was strange.

Why would he not sell them to me?

However, she did not let it get to her and went to the stall next to it.

To her surprise, she was met with the same response. "Leave!" The stall owner chased her away.

She noticed that the other stall owners acted as if they had seen a ghost whenever they laid their eyes upon her, and they all avoided her like the plague.

It was at this moment that she realized that something was wrong.

She walked to the other end of the market, far away from where she was.

"I'm not selling these today!" Yet another stall owner yelled as soon as he saw her.

She was puzzled. "Aren't they buying it?" She pointed at the other customers at the stall. "So why can't I?"

"You're right. I can sell my vegetables to anyone, just not you! Go away! Don't disrupt my business!" The stall owner chased Emma away forcibly.

Emma wandered around the market, exasperated.

She tried to buy from the stall owners again, but nobody was willing to sell anything to her, no matter whether it was vegetables, meat, or other goods.

It was as if she had been shut out by the entire city.

Everyone avoided her as soon as they saw her.

She tried going to another market, but the result was still the same.

Nobody was willing to sell a single thing to her.

It was the same even at the supermarket.

This time, they would not even let her in.

At this point, she realized that someone was behind all of this.

She tried going to other places.

The shopping mall, the restaurant, the hotel- none of them let her in.

...

It was as if she was on some kind of blacklist- for everyone in the city.

She could not even board a bus or taxi.

It seemed as though someone had made it so that it would be impossible for her to go about her life in the city.

It was a cloudy day, and her illness was already acting up.

She wandered around aimlessly on the streets while bearing with the pain.

Gradually, the terrible pain built up, leaving her forehead full of sweat.

Her knees buckled and she could not even walk.

With great difficulty, she finally found a pharmacy and hurriedly entered it.

She grabbed some medicine to alleviate her symptoms.

“Get out! You’re not welcome here!”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 949

Emma was just about to exit the pharmacy when someone shoved her from behind.

She staggered and fell onto the ground.

The pain from both her fall and her illness made her eyes spin.

However, she did not give up and continued to search for other pharmacies.

She visited four or five other pharmacies, but the result was still the same.

They did not even let her set foot in the door.

In the sixth pharmacy, the owner was slightly more kindhearted than the rest.

“Just leave! I’m sure that you’ve already visited all of the pharmacies in South City. No one will sell the medicine to you! You should go to another city! Don’t blame it on us, okay? We have no choice in the matter.”

Emma finally gave up.

Someone's deliberately making life difficult for me.

Even all the shops in the city are in on this.

Especially the pharmacies.

The pharmacies were the most important to her.

She could survive for a few days without food, but not without her medicine.

She would die from the pain.

I'll persuade Levi to leave this city when I get back.

And to stop troubling Zoey.

I know that I'm a bearer of ill luck.

Anyone who comes into contact with me will surely have misfortune befall them.

This time, it was my son and daughter-in-law.

As she walked back, she felt her head spinning.

She fell onto the ground with a thump.

When she woke up, Phoenix was by her side.

"Aunt Emma, what's happened?" Phoenix was so anxious that she was on the verge of tears.

Emma told her everything that had happened.

"Phoenix, please help me to persuade Levi to leave South City!" she begged.

“What? They all shut you out and refused to sell anything to you?” Phoenix was about to explode from anger.

Preposterous!

We’re talking about the God of War’s mother here!

To think that she would be treated this way!

Phoenix brought Emma to the market to see what would happen, and sure enough, she was chased out of every shop.

Phoenix wanted to take care of the matter right then and there but decided that it was better to inform Levi of it first.

Hence, she brought Emma to the hospital and used acupuncture to temporarily ease her pain.

Bang!

Very soon, Levi arrived, panting from having rushed to the hospital as soon as he heard what had happened.

“What’s going on? The pharmacies refused to sell you medicine?” Levi demanded.

“Yeah, it’s not just the pharmacies, either. All the other stores have Aunt Emma on their blacklist too. They won’t sell anything to her!” Phoenix uttered in a low, muffled voice with her head down.

“The Black family? Just you wait!” Levi was increasingly furious.

His mother was his Achilles’ heel, and the Black family knew that.

He wanted to laugh.

The whole city’s tormenting my mother, huh?

She’s already so old and frail, and now they want to treat her like this?

She's done nothing wrong!

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 950

Very soon, Emma's medicine was delivered to their doorstep, courtesy of Alfie.

The medical department of the Dragon Legion had all kinds of medicine available.

"Huh? Weren't we shut out by the entire South City? How have we gotten the medicine?" Emma asked, puzzled.

"Mom, don't worry about it and just take it. What happened today is just a trivial matter for me," Levi replied.

Big, hearty bouts of laughter rang out in the Black family courtyard.

"Haha, did you know, Grandma? Levi's mother fainted from pain!"

"Restricting where she can get medicine is equivalent to restricting her very survival! This way, I'll say that we don't even have to control the other markets!" Logan and Jennie laughed.

They were behind everything that had happened that day.

There was no merchant who would dare to go against their demands.

They were overjoyed, especially upon seeing Emma in great pain. They had even filmed it with their phones and went around displaying the humiliating video for everyone to see.

"Haha, they'll definitely be gone from South City within three days!" Logan uttered.

"That's right. If this continues, even if Levi's mother doesn't die by hunger, she'll die from pain!" Meredith followed.

"Levi's a worthless wretch, too- he won't do something until his back's against the wall. It would have been so easy for him to have just taken the fifty million and left when we'd offered it, but no- he had to force us to take things into our own hands!"

"Isn't it so pathetic that they're going to have to leave on their own accord now? He's not getting a single cent!"

"Hahahaha!"

"If he has the guts to go against the Black family, then he had better be prepared for how we'd fight back!"

Everyone in the room burst out laughing.

"What are you doing? What are you looking at?" At this moment, Zoey walked in.

"Nothing!" Everyone hurriedly avoided her as they hid the phone.

"This has to do with Levi and his mother, right?" Zoey asked coldly.

Meredith admitted to it. "Yes, you're right. We're going to chase them out of Quebec so that there'll be no one here to cause you any more trouble."

"What? I never agreed to this!" Zoey was astonished.

"You don't have to concern yourself with this! They'll get out of here on their own accord within three days," Jennie and Logan explained.

"You can't stop us unless you sever all your ties with your parents and the rest of the Black family," Meredith announced bluntly.

All Zoey did was to look at them with anger in her eyes, because they were right- there was nothing that she could do.

However, there was no way that she would merely sit and watch the disaster unfold.

“Oh, Levi... To think that we were still worried about how to stop him and Zoey from getting together. We didn't expect that he would have brought that wh*re of a mother with him. Isn't that just giving us a golden opportunity?” Meredith smirked.

Zoey glared at her and went back to her room.

Having enacted punishment on Levi and his mother, the Black family was in over their heads.

That night, something big happened in South City without their knowledge.

The Protector Chapter 951

Chapter 951 My Son Is As Powerful As A God

The next day, all the shops that had chased Emma out received a stern warning.

Some were even forced to shut down.

The reason was simple- not only did they disrespect the basic rights of consumers, rather, they had also gone as far as to insult and use physical force upon one of their customers.

There was not a single person who was not shocked by this unexpected turn of events; the Black family was especially shocked.

Upon receiving the news, Logan immediately contacted the relevant people in charge.

He got a very simple answer- the previous day, someone had filmed the store owners refusing to serve Emma and had used that to file a report against them.

This caused not only Logan, but the whole Black family to become furious.

Just when we were celebrating how well this plan had worked out for us, we've received news that it was reported?

Of course, they would never have thought that Levi was the one behind all of this.

All they could do was complain about what good luck Levi had, which was something that seemed to be happening rather often these days.

In the morning, Levi told Emma that he was going to take her somewhere.

While she was doubtful, she followed him anyway.

It turned out to be the market that she had visited yesterday.

“Oh, you’re here! I’ll pick out the freshest vegetables for you!”

“Please come here, I’ll sell you the best meat and I’ll even throw in some freebies!”

“You’re finally here! I’ve prepared these medicinal herbs for you!”

...

The stall owners who had turned her away yesterday seemed to have done a complete one-eighty.

Not only did they now want to sell their goods to her, but they also wanted to give her freebies as well.

Levi brought Emma to many other places.

The store owners were all overjoyed to see her and were willing to sell their goods to her.

When they got to the pharmacy that Emma had visited the previous day, the owner bent his head deeply in apology.

After all, it was a much bigger deal for a pharmacy to have refused service- in the worst-case scenario, the customer may suffer a fatality from not being able to obtain the necessary medicine.

“Levi, this...” Emma was shocked.

Yesterday, I was met with disdain from everyone and was shut out by the entire city.

And now, I feel like as though I am some kind of celebrity.

“See, Mom? I told you that you could trust me. All these are but trivial matters to me.” Levi smiled.

Emma spaced out.

No, it’s a good thing that my son is powerful.

She sucked in a deep breath. Overwhelmed by her sudden realization, impulsive thoughts such as bringing him to the Garrison family popped up in her consciousness.

Just you wait- I'll show you that my son isn't a worthless commoner- his power is on equal terms with the Garrison family!

However, she knew that this was all just an overinflated desire of hers.

No matter how strong Levi is, he will never be able to take down the Garrison family.

It's foolish to think that Levi's measly twenty years' worth of training would be enough to rival the sheer power of the Garrison family, which has countless generations of heritage under its belt.

At this moment, to their disbelief, Zoey pulled up.

"Aunt Emma, let's go. I'll take you somewhere." Zoey smiled mysteriously.

Levi felt rather suspicious. What does she have in mind?

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 952

Chapter 952 Zoey Got Slapped

Very soon, they reached a top-tier neighborhood.

By this time, Levi had already understood Zoey's intentions.

She definitely bought a house for Mom.

When they got off the car, as predicted, Zoey had brought them toward a neat row of manors.

They were all elaborately renovated and were ready to be moved into immediately.

“Mom, I bought this house for you. You’ll live here from now on!” Zoey beamed. “Also, I’ve hired a nanny to take care of you.”

As soon as Emma heard that, she burst into tears.

I have such a good daughter-in-law.

To think that she would buy me a house- a manor, even!

“No, no. There’s no need to worry about me. I’m alright with staying with Levi. This is way too expensive,” Emma refused.

“How could I allow that when he can’t take even take care of people?

Besides, this house is close to my office, so it’s convenient for us to visit you.” Zoey smiled.

She had spent twenty million on this manor.

While her net worth was high, most of it was invested in her company.

She only had a couple of millions in hand, and buying the manor had cost her half of that.

“Mom, Zoey means well, so just accept it!” Levi smiled. “And she’s right- the location is great.”

He had wanted to buy his mother a big house himself, but Zoey beat him to it.

“Levi, Mom shouldn’t have to head back. You should go and bring her things here,” Zoey instructed.

Try as she might, Emma could not turn Zoey down, so she had no choice but to accept the manor.

Very soon, the nanny had arrived.

She was a gold-standard nanny selected very carefully by Zoey.

During her free time, she was even able to accompany Emma to go shopping.

“Zoey, we owe you too much. Levi will make it up to you,” Emma admitted, touched.

Zoey laughed, saying, “I’m just asking for him to cause less trouble for me.”

Looking at the peaceful, harmonious scene before him, Levi felt extremely blessed.

He decided to bring Morris’ parents over in a couple of days.

When they heard that his mother was back, they wanted to see her.

When the old folks gathered together, they could keep each other company and keep each other from getting lonely.

Besides, Levi’s circumstances allowed for this luxury.

At night, Zoey reached home and was about to enter the house when she was stopped by Meredith and the other members of the Black family.

“Grandpa, Grandma, what’s going on? And Dad, Mom, what are you all doing?” Looking at the group in front of her, Zoey was confused.

“Do you even know what you’ve done?” Meredith asked coldly.

“What?” Zoey asked.

“How could you say that? You’d bought a manor for Levi and his mother! How could you?”

“And you’d even hired a nanny at such a high price! Do you want to go with Levi?” Meredith shouted.

“It’s not that big of a deal. She’s Levi’s mother, so she’s my mother, too,” Zoey replied stubbornly.

Slap!

All of a sudden, Zoey was slapped harshly across her face.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War

[The Protector] Chapter 953

Chapter 953 Get Stronger

Caitlyn was the one who hit Zoey.

She stared at the latter and yelled furiously, "Your mom? I'm your only mom!"

Zoey was flabbergasted to be slapped so suddenly and stared at her mother in disbelief.

That was the first time someone had ever hit her since she was born.

"Zoey, you're such a disappointment!" Her father, Aaron sighed.

"Why would you be so stupid as to buy a house for Levi's mom? What on Earth was going through your head?"

"Are you intending to leave the Lopez family and the Black family? You want to live with Levi and his family from now onward?"

Everyone was taking turns to reprimand the woman.

Zoey covered her face with her hands, feeling extremely aggrieved.

She did not think she had done anything wrong.

"Let me tell you this. If you are going to treat Levi's mother as your own mom, don't call me mom anymore!"

"Go and be with them if you wish! We will sever all ties from today onward! My stance is very clear!"

After she finished speaking, Caitlyn walked out and slammed the door, leaving Zoey standing there, looking absolutely stunned.

The younger ones in the Black family were all trying to persuade Zoey to change her mind. "Zoey, we can't be too easygoing when it comes to marriage matters.

As a member of the Black family, we should marry someone of comparable status. Besides, it's you, the hope of both the Lopez and Black families."

That was indeed the truth.

The main reason for the families' wrath was that Zoey was their greatest hope. Naturally, her marriage would be a serious affair to them.

Judging by the current situation, Zoey clearly knew that she had only two ways out. Her first option was to become so strong that she would no longer be subject to the control of both families – she will be able to do whatever she wanted.

The second was for Levi to come up with a big surprise during their wedding, something big and grand enough to shut the mouths of the families up.

Otherwise, both the Lopez and Black families would continue to object to her union with Levi.

However, Zoey quickly dropped the second idea; she wasn't sure if she could count on Levi to deliver on his word.

It was easier for her to become stronger than to depend on Levi to do anything to stop her families' objections.

It was perfect that Morris Group had launched a major technology project recently, and Zoey decided to speak to Iris and request to be in charge of the project.

As long as that particular project proceeded smoothly, Zoey's career would be elevated to the next level. Her net worth would surely skyrocket.

By then, she would be free to do anything she wanted and not be trapped in the current situation where she had to be subject to her families' scrutinizes.

Zoey was the type of person who acted on her words.

She immediately contacted Iris and asked to be in charge of that project.

To her surprise, her friend agreed to her request readily.

“Sure, it’s yours then. You’ll have free rein.”

“Huh?”

“Don’t you need to consider anything? This is a project that is worth hundreds of billions, Iris!”

Zoey was bewildered by the other woman’s carefree attitude towards the project.

“Indeed it is, and you’re now in charge of the project,” Iris replied.

Well, your husband is the boss of Morris Group, so everything is already yours. Whatever request you have will certainly be granted.

“But this is such an important project. Shouldn’t you have a discussion with the rest before coming to a decision instead of handing it to me straight away?”

Zoey asked in shock.

“Trust me, no one will object to this decision! If you don’t believe me, I can call them right now to ask!”

Iris then personally rang each of the higher-ups and asked for their opinions on the project being handed over to Zoey.

“Ms. Lopez would like to handle that project?”

“I’m totally for it!”

“Oh, Ms. Lopez wishes to do so? I don’t have any comments then!”

Iris carried on calling the board members, and each one of them agreed instantly when they heard that it was Zoey who wanted the project.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War

[The Protector] Chapter 954

“Wow.”

Zoey looked totally perplexed; the whole thing felt like a dream to her.

Weren't the higher-ups of Morris Group supposed to be the crème de la crème?

Is this how a project that's worth hundreds of billions supposed to be handled?

Why did they agree to it once they heard my name?

What's the meaning of such readiness?

Ever since those people found out that Levi was the boss, Zoey had immediately risen to the top of their priority list.

She was now their lady boss after all!

“Iris, I didn't expect your influence in the company to be so strong! They only agreed to it because of you, right?”

The only reason Zoey could think of for the higher-ups' willingness was that she was Iris' friend. She thought it was on that account that they trusted her with the project.

“Why would I have such influence... “

They only agreed because you're our lady boss. I'm merely your employee.

Meanwhile, Emma was busy boiling chicken soup at their new house. She intended to deliver it to Levi and Zoey when lunchtime arrived.

Just then, someone rang the doorbell.

The nanny opened the door and asked, "Who are you looking for?"

"Is Emma Jones in?"

Emma rushed out of the kitchen immediately. The people standing at the door were Zoey's parents, grandma, and a few of their other relatives.

"Oh, hello! It's so nice to see all of you. Come on in!" the woman welcomed them all in a friendly manner.

"Ha! Seems like you are already seeing yourself as the owner of this place, aren't you?" Caitlyn yelled suddenly.

"Huh... " Emma was shocked at that sudden outburst.

"The house was bought by my daughter. Who gave you the right to stay here?" Zoey's mother glared at Emma.

"Zoey bought this place for... for me... " the latter mumbled.

"Who do you think you are? Why would she buy it for you?"

"I... " Emma was stumped.

It didn't seem right to say that Zoey was her daughter-in-law.

After all, her son and Zoey were still officially divorced. No matter how she looked at the situation, it indeed seemed as if she and Zoey were completely unrelated.

It did seem that Zoey had no reason to buy her a house.

"See! She can't even come up with a proper explanation!

That's because Zoey is not related to her in any way! I suspect she cheated my daughter into buying her this house!" Caitlyn sneered.

Meredith agreed with her right away, saying, “Yup! Our Zoey is kind and innocent. She definitely fell into your trap!”

“This house is worth tens of millions.

Why would Zoey buy such an expensive house for a stranger? Anyone with just a bit of common sense would know what happened. Surely, Zoey was duped!”

“There are too many wicked people around these days!”

After everyone shared their views on the matter, their accusatory gazes landing on Emma.

Aaron then berated, “Come clean this instance! How did you manage to swindle Zoey?

If we find evidence of you doing so, we’ll ensure that you serve jail time!”

“Yup! If you don’t tell us what happened, we’ll get someone to investigate the matter and send you straight to jail!”

Everyone began hurling threats at poor Emma.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 955

The woman tried to explain herself anxiously, “I did not cheat her! I really didn’t! You guys have misunderstood the entire situation. If you don’t believe me, you can check with Zoey directly!”

“Ha! You think it would be helpful to ask her since she has already fallen for your trick?

I see that you’re indeed a cunning woman!” Meredith shot a look of contempt at Emma.

“Hey, excuse me? Who are you guys? You are causing a disturbance to us! Can you please leave?” The nanny, Nancy, was unable to tolerate their behavior any longer.

“Who the hell are you? You have no right to speak!” Meredith glared at Nancy and chided her.

“Besides, do you even know who bought this house? My daughter did! I’m her dad, and she is her mom!” After Aaron stated his relationship to Zoey, Nancy did not dare speak her mind any further.

“Emma Jones, you have to give us an explanation today.

How did you trick my daughter into buying this house for you? We are going to make your life really difficult if you refuse to say anything!” Caitlyn proclaimed coldly.

The woman and her entourage had already set their minds on teaching Levi and his mother a good lesson.

“I did no such thing! Zoey really bought it for me on her own accord. I didn’t cheat her into doing anything. Please believe me... “

Emma was in such a deep state of panic that she almost burst into tears.

“I’m her biological mother, yet she did not even buy an ordinary house for me, not to mention a villa like this. You’re just an outsider.

Do you think it’s normal for her to buy you such a nice villa to stay in?”

Emma was at a loss for words; she did not know how to reply to Caitlyn’s accusation.

In fact, she herself was not able to explain why Zoey had done such a thing for her.

“Well, say something! Explain it to us!”

Caitlyn and the rest glared at Emma, sizing her up.

The latter could only purse her lips and say, “There’s nothing I can tell you! I can’t think of a reason why Zoey would buy me this villa, but the truth is that I had never conned her into buying it!”

“Haha! So you do know that it’s ridiculous for Zoey to buy a house for you?

Then why are you so shamelessly staying here?”

“Emma, don’t you feel guilty staying here? Or are you enjoying it very much?”

“I’ve never met someone as thick-skinned as you. Not only are you staying in someone else’s house, but you’re also even boiling chicken soup?”

Do you really think you’re some rich madam?”

Members of the Black family started throwing all sorts of insults at Emma.

“Why? Why are you looking at me with such a murderous expression? Do you want to hit me? Since you’re staying in my daughter’s house, you should be bowing and thanking me instead.

But here you are with the actual nerve to glare at me?” Caitlyn yelled.

“Emma Jones, do you really think you can continue staying here? It’s my daughter’s house, so we have every right to chase you out of here!”

“Pack up all your rubbish and scam immediately! You’re not welcomed here! It’s our house. You have no right to stay here!”

Meredith and the rest chased Emma away.

The nanny could no longer stand the way Emma was being treated and stepped forward to question, “Does Ms. Lopez know about this?”

“We are her parents. Do we even need to inform her of such a trivial matter? Anyway, you will have to leave together with this shameless b*tch as well!” Caitlyn roared; she could not wait to chase those two women away.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 956

Emma smiled when she heard that.

She knew that things were not as simple as they seemed.

However, she did not expect trouble to start right from the first day they moved in.

Zoey was a good woman, and her family was not at fault.

Emma only blamed herself for being a burden to Levi. Her presence in his life did not benefit him at all – it only brought him trouble and ridicule.

“Why are you still standing here like an idiot?

You should be packing your things right now!”

Meredith was itching to throw Emma and Nancy out of the house that very instant.

After a long moment, the two women began to pack their belongings.

“Scram immediately!”

In the midst of the yelling from the crowd, Emma headed to the kitchen and packed the chicken soup she had boiled into two separate containers.

“I’ve been boiling this chicken soup for a long time.

I want to bring it to Zoey as a way of expressing my gratitude towards her,” Emma said.

However, Logan suddenly stepped forward and snatched the containers from her.

Splash!

The man then proceeded to pour the soup into the drain.

“You’re still thinking of harassing Zoey? I bet your real intention is to plead with her. Let me tell you that that’ll be impossible!” Logan said harshly.

Jennie concurred. "He's right. Besides, do you think Zoey would actually drink the soup that's been boiled by you? Anything made by you will surely be disgusting, seeing as to how you're so dirty. I'm sure she'll spit it out after trying one scoop of it!"

"Hurry up and leave! Zoey would not drink something so filthy!" Caitlyn gave Emma an angry stare.

In the end, Emma and Nancy were tossed out of the house.

Bang!

Logan slammed the door shut once the both of them were outside.

"Ha! We've finally managed to chase that annoying woman away. It feels so good!" Aaron laughed.

Meredith frowned and replied unhappily, "Not entirely; her scent is still lingering in the house. Quickly, open the windows to allow the revolting smells to dissipate!"

"I must say, Zoey sure has good tastes in houses!"

Both Logan and Jennie were very satisfied with Zoey's housing choice.

"How about this, Grandma shall make the decision to let the both of you have this villa!

As for Aaron and Caitlyn, you two would be able to stay anywhere you want to next time at the rate Zoey's net worth is soaring."

Meredith gifted the villa to Logan and his wife right away.

"Sure, we don't mind that arrangement. As long as it's not Levi's mom staying here!"

Aaron and Caitlyn's target was solely Emma. They did not actually care about owning the villa at all.

"Thank you, Grandpa, Grandma, Aunt Caitlyn, and Uncle Aaron."

Logan was delighted to receive such a luxurious villa as a gift out of the blue.

Meanwhile, Emma and Nancy had already reached the entrance of the estate. They bumped into Levi there.

“Mom, Aunt Nancy, what’s going on?” Levi asked.

“Mr. Garrison, you probably aren’t aware of this, but Zoey’s parents have chased us out!”

Emma had not intended to tell her son about it, but Nancy had spilled the beans upon seeing the man.

“What? Come, let’s head back together! This is outrageous!”

Levi dragged the two women back to the villa with him.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 957

Even though Emma was extremely reluctant to return to the place, she could not win against Levi.

Levi was, in fact, overwhelmed with guilt as it was already the second time his mom had to endure such suffering ever since she moved in with him.

The man had planned to change the entire team of security guards to his subordinates so that no one would be able to get near his mother again, not to mention hurting her.

Ding-dong! Ding-dong!

Members of the Black family had puzzled expressions on their faces when they heard the doorbell ring.

“Logan, go open the gate and see who’s outside.”

Once Logan opened the door, a furious bellow was heard. “Who gave you all the audacity to chase my mom out?”

Most of the Blacks jumped in shock when they heard that voice.

“It’s Levi!”

The next moment, they saw Levi walking in with Emma.

“We chased your mom away. What’s wrong with that?” Logan replied haughtily.

“This is my mom’s house. Who gave you the right to chase her out?” Levi said coldly.

“This is your mother’s house? My foot! This house was bought by Zoey. What has it got to do with your mom?” Jennie shouted angrily.

Logan smiled and added, “Well, this villa belongs to me now. Grandpa and Grandma have already gifted it to me.”

Robert and Meredith nodded and said, “Yup, this villa is now Logan’s. Your mom has got nothing to do with it.”

“Ha! And who do you think you are? Who gave you the right to give Zoey’s house to someone else?” Levi asked.

Meredith let out a curt laugh and replied, “Levi, do you hear how unreasonable you’re being now? You and Zoey have already divorced. Her assets are not linked to you in any way. However, we are her family, and that gives us the right to handle her assets.”

“If that’s the case, I’ll inform Zoey about it immediately!”

When Levi took out his phone to ring Zoey, Meredith and the others’ expressions changed instantly.

It would complicate matters if Zoey knew about the situation.

After Levi told the woman what had happened, Zoey arrived at the villa shortly after.

“Dad, Mom, what did you guys do? I bought this house for Aunt Emma. Why did you chase her away?” Zoey was enraged.

“That won’t do! Why would you buy a villa for her when you two are unrelated? You’ll be the butt of the joke if word gets around. If that happens, you’ll bring shame to the family!” Her father’s stance was firm.

Zoey let out a helpless smile and replied, “Fine then, what do you guys want in order for Aunt Emma to continue staying here?”

Meredith shot a glance at Levi before answering, “Since you asked, I’ll let you know what I think. That woman can stay in this villa only if Levi pays you back for the house!”

“Grandma, aren’t you intentionally making things difficult by saying that?”

Zoey grew anxious.

The villa was priced at more than twenty million! Where was Levi going to find the money to pay her?

“If Levi can’t afford that, his mom will not have the right to stay here!”

“That’s right, a pauper shouldn’t be staying in a villa,” everyone else agreed coldly.

“Sure, I’ll pay! It’s just a mere twenty million anyway.”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 958

Everyone was stunned when they heard that; they stared at Levi blankly.

Did he just say that amount is a mere twenty million?

“Very well! It sounds like twenty million is peanuts to you. I want you to show us that money right now!”

Meredith was infuriated by Levi’s attitude.

“No problem! I’ll transfer the money to Zoey right away!”

Levi then transferred twenty million to Zoey under the watchful gazes of the people present.

“What? He really just did that! How does he have so much money?”

Once the transfer was completed successfully, everyone looked at Levi in disbelief.

It seemed entirely unreal to them for a ruffian like Levi to have so much money.

If he could easily pay twenty million, it meant that what he had was way more than that amount.

However, Zoey did not find it surprising.

After all, Levi was one of the Joneses, and it was not entirely impossible that he had such large amounts of money.

Even though the man had not earned the money himself, it had helped them solve the problem at hand.

“Fine, Levi Garrison. You’re really something! But Zoey, you are not allowed to transfer the money back to him!”

In the end, Meredith and the rest had no choice but to leave the villa, feeling totally defeated.

Logan and Jennie were the most upset among the group as they had lost the villa they had deemed as theirs.

After the whole ordeal, Emma could continue staying there without any worry.

Besides, the entire security team had already been changed to Levi’s men.

As such, his family would be safe from then onward.

No one would be able to get near Emma, not to mention bully her in any way.

Levi’s mother unpacked her belongings and placed them back into her room again.

She specially positioned her family photo beside her bed.

Levi picked up the photo frame and said, "Mom, just throw this away."

"No!" She snatched it back immediately and hugged it close to her.

"This is my only memento. I have to keep it."

The man pursed his lips and replied, "Mom, do you still miss that man?"

Emma did not answer her son's question directly, but the answer was clear from the look in her eyes.

His dad was definitely still in her heart; she did not regret any of her past choices.

"You miss him so much, but he does not think about you at all. After settling matters with you, he went back to Oakland City and married another woman immediately.

They even have a child who's only two years younger than me." Levi finally told his mom the truth.

When his mother heard that, she was shocked to her core.

Emma's eyes were filled with disbelief as she said, "What?"

He married someone else? And they even have a child together?"

She was absolutely astounded.

She retreated a few steps subconsciously and almost staggered to the floor.

"He told me that I'll be the only woman he loves in his entire life. It was his family who insisted on locking me up. He was not powerful enough to go against them. He vowed that he would not marry anyone else; he had vowed and that his bride would only be me!

Because of that vow, I have been waiting for him all these years. I have always dreamed that he would come for me one day and marry me officially."

Emma was sobbed uncontrollably as she spoke.

“Turns out that it was just my wishful thinking. He’s been lying to me all this while! How could he marry someone else right after I left!”

She was crying hysterically and was feeling utterly miserable.

When Levi heard what his mom said, he clenched his fists tightly, rage pulsing through his veins.

He couldn’t believe that it was how a man from Erudia’s number one ancient family behaved.

That sort of conduct felt more like it was from a hooligan who was full of lies.

Noble blood?

What a joke!

It’s the greatest joke of the century!

Because of his selfish promise, Levi’s mom had waited for him in vain for more than twenty years.

And that man?

He got married to someone else long ago.

The man should not have made a promise if he did not intend to keep it.

This bastard deserves to die a thousand times!

A murderous glint shone in Levi’s eyes.

“Don’t worry; your good days are coming to an end soon! After Zoey and I get married, it will be doomsday for the Garrison family.”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War

[The Protector] Chapter 959

Zoey pursed her lips as she listened to Levi rant.

Her blood was boiling as well, and she wished she could punch that bastard right at that instant.

She wanted to interrogate that heartless man and ask him why he had done such a cruel thing to Emma.

But who was he?

He was the heir of the most powerful family in Erudia, and his presence was akin to a mythical dragon roaming in the sky.

Not to mention interrogating him, it wouldn't even be possible to meet him face to face.

So what if Levi was the most prominent character locally?

He was still no match for Erudia's first ancient family!

Besides, Levi was a nobody.

Being a member of the Jones family was his most prestigious identity, but even a servant of the Garrison family could easily crush the Joneses.

It was just not possible for him to challenge the Garrison family and seek justice for his mother!

Revenge did not seem to be within their reach in this lifetime.

They should simply strive to have a peaceful life and be contented with venting to each other whenever they needed to.

"Mom, what's his name?" Levi asked.

"Tyrone Garrison!" Emma recited that man's name through gritted teeth.

"Alright. I'll remember it! That name shall be disgraced very soon!" Levi said coldly.

Meanwhile, early in the morning in Haven, the body of Caleb, a servant of the Garrisons, was laid at the entrance of the imperial Garrison family.

It turned out that Osborn had brought him there.

Osborn met Jonah, the head of the imperial Garrison family from Haven, and told him what happened.

"Mr. Garrison, I don't have any connections to the Garrison family in Oakland City, so I could only send him here," Osborn explained.

Jonah was in deep thought for a while before saying, "That bastard has grown to be so formidable that he was even able to kill Caleb? Caleb was an elite who was sent by Oakland City's Garrison family to guard the South. The fact that he was the only person who was sent there is telling of his abilities."

"Exactly! Who would have imagined a bastard to be so powerful!" Osborn was unable to wrap his head around the whole situation as well.

After all, the reputation of Peace Hotel was now ruined.

"For the honor of the Garrison family, that mother-and-son pair must die! If word gets out that they are still alive, it will only bring shame to our family! Oakland City's Garrison family does not need to know about this matter. A bastard like him is not worthy of their attention. Leave it to me to settle it."

Jonah spun his two legendary pearls in his palms and shouted towards the gate, "Gather our men immediately.

We're setting off to South City to kill Emma Jones and her bastard son!"

“What? Sir, you’re heading there personally?” Osborn was surprised.

He had initially thought Jonah would send an expert assassin to get rid of Levi and Emma.

He had not expected the head of the imperial family to attend to the matter personally.

“Mr. Garrison, is Levi Garrison that big of a threat to you?” he asked, unable to contain his shock.

Jonah chuckled and replied, “Of course not, he’s just a small fry!

Why would I feel threatened by him? He is definitely not important enough for me to deal with him personally.”

Osborn was a smart man; he immediately understood what Jonah meant. “Could it be that Mr. Garrison has other matters to attend to at South City?”

“Yes, that’s right. I’ve heard a while back that the God of War has returned to South City with the Five Great Wars Regiment. I had planned to go there earlier on and was already making preparations. This is the perfect opportunity for me to make the trip,” Jonah shared.

“Does Mr. Garrison have a history with the God of War?” Osborn asked.

“Yes, indeed. Kirin, the King of War, is under the God of War. He is the benefactor of our Garrison family in Haven. Three years ago, if it weren’t for him, our entire family would have perished overseas,” Jonah sighed as he recalled what had previously happened.

That year, Jonah had led several other key members of Haven’s Garrison family to take part in an overseas collaboration.

However, they were ambushed there and were almost wiped out.

Kirin was the one who had saved them.

As such, the Garrison family from Haven began treating Kirin as the family’s benefactor from then on.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 960

Osborn smiled in realization. “Oh, I see! You can also take this chance to meet the God of War! Other people might not be granted an audience with the general, but he will definitely want to meet you.”

“Yes, that’s what I intend to do.

I have always wanted to meet the God of War in person! I’ve heard that he’s also a Garrison. Do you think he could be one of the Garrisons from Oakland City?”

Jonah had that suspicion when he heard ‘Garrison’ was the God of War’s last name.

The man had even tried to search the files for more information.

However, the God of War’s files were classified SSSSSS – a confidentiality level even higher than that of Oakland City’s Garrison family. Hence, Jonah was not able to find out anything.

Osborn immediately replied, “Yup, I think that’s highly likely!

A God of War who is a Garrison, other than the Garrison family, the number one ancient family, no other family would be able to have such a formidable descendant!”

“Yeah, it can’t be wrong! The Garrison family has produced countless talents.

For a twenty-something-year-old man to be a Five-Star God of War, he must be from the Garrison family.”

Jonah was very confident in his guess.

“Oh yeah, it seems like that bastard is quite powerful now. Bring more men along. Get some fighters from the Tang Sect as well,” Jonah ordered.

The corners of Osborn's lips curled up when he heard that the martial arts experts from the Tang Sect would also be going.

Tang Sect was a legend.

It was also one of the ancient families and was known for its usage of secret weapons and other martial arts techniques.

Tang Sect was still in existence during modern times, though they lived in seclusion, away from the crowd. As such, ordinary people wouldn't have heard of their existence.

There were many other martial arts experts in the Sect who were employed by the powerful families in Haven.

Out of all the numerous families, the Garrison family was served by the most number of experts from Tang Sect.

Word was that those experts from Tang Sect were all highly skilled and ruthless assassins.

As such, Osborn was relieved, knowing that no matter how formidable Levi was, he wouldn't stand a chance against those fighters from Tang Sect.

The Garrison family was ready to leave by the next day and soon set off for South City.

Knowing that the Garrison family from Haven had arrived at South City, all of the city's powerful and noble families got ready to welcome them. Even the upper echelons from neighboring cities had also joined in, including the royal families from South Hampton, which were under the leadership of the Goel family.

Each family had sent out a welcome party to receive the Garrisons, and the streets were lined with colorful welcome banners.

That was the kind of reception that only an imperial family would get to enjoy.

Once news got out that the Garrison family was visiting, hundreds of powerful families gathered to welcome them.

Even though the Garrison family from Haven was an imperial family, it was merely a division of the Garrison clan in Oakland City.

If Oakland City's Garrison family arrived at South City, the welcome party would definitely consist of tens of thousands of other clans.

Such a welcome ceremony would only be fit for the head of all the powerful and noble families – Erudia's number one ancient family, the Garrison family.

Right then, the aisles of the street were already crowded with people who were kneeling on the ground, worshiping the Garrisons.

It was their way of welcoming them in order to show respect for the imperial family.

Jonah sat in his car, very satisfied with what he saw outside the window.

"Hmm, this is quite a ceremony. Look, the Garrison family is God-like to the people! Whenever anyone hears our family name, they drop to their knees and worship us."

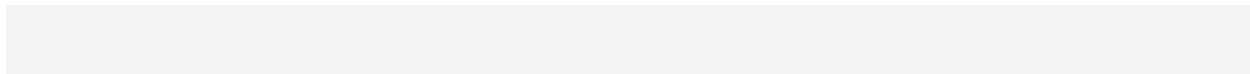
The next moment, he changed the topic and said, "The prestigious name of the Garrison family holds weight globally. If the public finds out that the heir of the Garrison clan from Oakland City has a bastard child and an ex-lover here, our reputation would be ruined!

It would be so shameful for us! Therefore, it is of utmost importance that these two people disappear from the face of the Earth! They remain a threat to the Garrisons as long as they are alive."

His eyes shone with killing intent as he spoke.

"Dad, where should we go now? Should we kill Levi and his mom first? Or should we head off to look for the King of War, Kirin, first?" Jonah's eldest son, Seamus, asked.

"Of course we'll pay a visit to Kirin first. How can that bastard be compared to the King of War?" Jonah snorted.



The Protector Chapter 961

Trembling in fear, Seamus said, "Dad, you're right! My priorities are all messed up. We can always finish off Levi anytime we like!"

His father replied agitatedly, "I'm glad you finally realize your mistake, boy. Don't be intimidated by Levi just because he killed Caleb. Caleb was at most just a servant of our family! You guys are really a disgrace to the Garrison family to be scared of Levi!"

The youngsters of the Garrison family from Haven all kept their eyes downcast guiltily like a bunch of kids who had just broken something valuable in the house.

They felt embarrassed to be intimidated by Levi, who was just an illegitimate child of their family.

"Levi doesn't deserve to be treated so seriously by us! He's clearly not that important!" Fenton, Jonah's favorite grandson, emphasized in a cold voice.

Jonah was pleased to hear those words. "You guys should learn from Fenton. That's how a man from our family is supposed to behave!"

If the Garrison clan from Oakland City know how intimidated you lot are by Levi, I don't think I will be able to put up with the embarrassment!"

"Master, we've found out where Kirin resides in. We can visit him right away," the butler informed Jonah.

"Great! I can't wait to meet him!" Jonah guffawed.

Soon, Jonah and his family arrived at the Warzone compound.

Azure Dragon and the rest were still staying there, although Levi had moved out.

The commotion of the Garrisons' arrival soon caught their attention.

Assuming that the Garrisons were there to look for their trouble, Azure Dragon and the others strutted out of the building, all the while exuding a murderous aura.

“What are you lot doing here? Are you here to pick up a fight with us?” White Tiger, who looked ready for a combat, confronted them.

White Tiger was excited to find quite a number of skilled fighters in the middle of Jonah’s entourage.

All the fighters were experts in their fields who were evidently stronger than Caleb. The man had visited the compound last time and was easily killed by White Tiger and his entourage.

“It’s been such a long time since I come across so many admirable skilled fighters!” White Tiger remarked with a chuckle.

“Kirin, you’re the benefactor of our family! It’s an honor to finally meet you,” Jonah boomed.

With the help of his sons and grandsons, Jonah walked up to Kirin and got down on his knees.

Meanwhile, the rest of his family knelt on the ground around him in front of Kirin.

“We, the Garrison family from Haven, are here to pay respect to our benefactor – Kirin!”

The Garrison family from Haven’s eyes were brimming with gratitude as they spoke.

Without Kirin’s help back then, the entire Garrison family in Haven would not have existed.

In the meantime, Osborn was flabbergasted by such a sight.

He was shocked to see a family as powerful as the Garrison family kneeling down humbly in front of the Five Great Wars Regiment.

If the Garrisons were acting that way in front of the Five Great Wars Regiment, Osborn dreaded to imagine how much more powerful and authoritative the God of War must be.

“Mr. Jonah Garrison! It’s been three years since we last met each other.” Kirin immediately approached the man and helped him to his feet.

All the Garrisons were elated to see that Kirin still remembered them.

“Kirin, I rushed here as soon as I heard you gracing the South City with your presence. I wonder who these gentlemen are?” Jonah glanced at the other members of the Five Great Wars Regiment, curious.

“Let me introduce them to you! This is Azure Dragon, White Tiger, and Phoenix...”

Kirin introduced his peers to the Garrison family.

With his back hunched, Jonah shook hands with the rest of the Five Great Wars Regiment in an ingratiating manner.

Men from the Five Great Wars Regiment who’ve been the right-hand men of the God of War for ages!

They are famous for being ruthless and merciless on the battlefield.

I can’t believe I’m meeting them all in one go now!

This is huge!

Although Jonah was the head of an imperial family, he still needed help from groups like the Five Great Wars Regiment to bolster his force.

Not only Jonah needed their aid – even the Garrison clan based in Oakland City would have to take the Five Great Wars Regiment seriously too.

If the group decided to pay the Garrison clan a surprise visit, the family would have no choice but to invite them in cordially.

“Would I have the honor to meet the God of War too?” Jonah asked, anticipation written all over his face.

Everyone in the Garrison family was desperate for a chance to meet the God of War.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 962

Kirin answered his question with a pleasant smile, "Of course you can meet the God of War. In fact, he's a pretty friendly and approachable guy."

"Is that so?" Jonah, as well as his family members, looked thrilled upon hearing what the man said.

Meeting the God of War in person was probably the greatest wish of everyone from the prominent families.

An idea struck Kirin, prompting him to ask Jonah, "Mr. Garrison, I bet there's something else that inspired you to come all the way here. Care to enlighten me?"

The latter replied with a breezy smile, "Meeting you is, of course, my top priority. However, you're right – I'm here to run some unimportant errands."

"Unimportant errands? What sort of errands would that be?" Kirin asked curiously.

Sounding somewhat stiff, Jonah answered, "I'm going to deal with a traitor of our family. In fact, it's too trivial a matter to be worth discussing with all of you here."

"Oh, it's a domestic affair. In that case, we'll leave you to it then."

Kirin and the rest of the Five Great Wars Regiment couldn't be bothered with the Garrison family's troubles.

Then, Kirin invited Jonah and his family inside the Warzone compound.

His friendly gesture took them all by surprise.

After all, few people in the world had the honor to be welcomed into the Warzone compound by the Five Great Wars Regiment themselves.

In the meantime, Levi moved to stay with his mother's place for the time being.

Emma had been enjoying quite a peaceful stay in South City so far. However, something had been nagging at the back of her mind – she had a feeling someone would come after them soon after Caleb had failed to kill Levi and her.

That was a danger they could avoid only via death.

“Ms. Jones, I was told that the Garrison family from Haven have come to this city. The streets outside are crowded with businessmen and tycoons who are eager to welcome their arrival. Is Mr. Garrison related to them? He does share their surname.” Nancy, who had just come back from the market, prattled on.

“Say what? The Garrison family is here?” Emma’s heart gave a lurch after listening to what the nanny said.

At last, the situation she had worried about the most had come.

Although Levi had fought his way to become the most powerful and influential figure in South City, he was still a nobody in the presence of the Garrison family from Haven, not to mention the Garrison clan based in Oakland City, which was the most powerful of all imperial families.

Yet, the woman’s face still shone with determination.

No matter what happened, she would do all she could to protect Levi and keep him out of harm’s way.

Jonah and his family left the Warzone compound later that night.

“Mr. Garrison, I’m sure you will get to meet the God of War tomorrow,” Kirin promised.

“That’s great! I’ve prepared some gifts for him and his mother. I hope they will like them!”

As soon as Jonah learned that the God of War’s mother was here too, he had immediately dispatched some of his men to make a trip back to Haven to pick a gift for her.

The gifts would reach them by the end of that day.

“Mr. Garrison, that’s very kind of you,” Kirin commented with a smile.

Soon, the Garrison family headed back to the villa they were going to stay in during their time in South City.

“Has anyone found out where Levi and his mother live?” Jonah asked the rest of his family.

“Yes, we have. They’re staying somewhere not too far away from here, and everything is under our control at the moment,” answered Seamus.

“Well, there’s no rush to deal with them now. After we meet the God of War tomorrow, we can finish them off the night before we return to Haven.”

Putting on a stern expression, Jonah glared at his sons and growled, “What’s wrong? Are you guys still scared of Levi, the useless bastard?”

It was obvious that Jonah did not take Levi seriously.

In his opinion, the man was just like one of the ants crawling on the ground that he could kill easily by stepping on it.

Why are all my sons and grandsons so scared of the bastard?

Why do they all see him as a threat?

Levi is clearly a nobody. What makes him so special?

“As my sons and grandsons, how can all of you be so timid and useless?”

I’ve told you guys this over and over again – we can finish Levi and his mother off very easily! Haven’t I made myself clear?” Jonah seethed.

“Dad, you’re right! Levi Garrison is a nobody in the presence of our family!” Seamus shouted vehemently.

“That’s more like it! Now, we should focus our attention on preparing the meeting with the God of War tomorrow!” Jonah instructed.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War

[The Protector] Chapter 963

Emma woke up early the next morning to prepare breakfast for Levi and Zoey.

As she had no idea how long such peaceful and happy days would last, she decided to enjoy every day like it was the last.

While they were having their breakfast, Zoey asked Levi, "Are you heading out later?"

"Yes. Kirin told me someone wants to see me, so I have to head out."

He had no idea who Kirin wanted him to meet.

Despite that, he still decided to be there for his subordinate's sake.

"Okay. Let's talk tonight after you're back then," Zoey proposed, her face flushing with embarrassment.

"Sure, that shouldn't be a problem."

Meanwhile, the gifts prepared for the God of War and his mother had arrived from Haven.

All the gifts were nicely kept in three exquisite wooden boxes.

After making sure that the gifts were to his satisfaction, Jonah broke into a contented smile.

Every member of the Garrison family from Haven dressed up to the nines before they set off to the Warzone compound.

To show their utmost respect to the God of War, they made their way to the destination on foot.

All the tycoons of the city couldn't help but be astonished when they saw the Garrisons walking along the streets.

Jonah, as well as his family, arrived at the Warzone compound in the morning.

“Mr. Garrison, Boss will be late. Please do wait for him patiently,” Kirin informed.

“Sure! It’s our honor to wait for the God of War!” Jonah laughed heartily.

Seamus chimed in, “Exactly. Few people in the world have such an honor to wait for him. At least I’ve never heard of anyone having the honor before!”

For Jonah and his entire family, it was an esteemed honor to be awaiting Levi’s arrival.

They were more than willing to wait for days – or even months – to meet him.

Will we become the talk of the town after word spreads around about our meeting with the God of War?

About an hour later, Levi finally arrived.

Jonah and his entourage were stunned to see him.

Firstly, they thought Levi looked too young to be the God of War.

Secondly, the man looked too much like a commoner for him to be someone as prominent as the God of War.

Levi was dressed casually, so he looked no different from a commoner when he was not in action.

Could he possibly be the God of War?

“Boss!”

It was only when the Five Great Wars Regimen greeted Levi did Jonah and the rest of his family believe him to be the God of War.

“Are they all here to meet me?” Levi asked.

"It's our utmost honor to meet you, God of War!"

Jonah, as well as his sons and grandsons, knelt down in front of Levi in unison.

"Boss, please allow me to introduce to you the head of the Garrison family from Haven, Jonah Garrison! He and I go way back," Kirin shared.

"The Garrison family from Haven?" Levi scoffed.

I'm almost sure that they're related to the Garrison clan from Oakland City.

"Yes! Esteemed God of War, I'm Jonah Garrison of the Garrison family from Haven!"

With his head pressed firmly against the ground, Jonah couldn't resist but ask, "God of War, is it true that you share our surname?"

Levi nodded his head. "You're right. I am indeed a Garrison."

All at once, Jonah and his family members heaved out a sigh of relief.

All of them felt euphoric to have their speculation verified by the man himself.

In their opinions, the God of War must be one from the Garrison clan in Oakland City or other major branches of the family, considering that he was talented enough to become such a prominent figure.

Jonah and his family were pleased with the prospect of being considered as the God of War's relatives.

How could they not be elated upon hearing that piece of news?

Jonah swallowed hard before looking up at Levi with anticipation in his eyes. "God of War, would you be kind enough to answer one more question from me?"

"Go ahead," Levi answered.

"If I'm not mistaken, I suppose you are one of the greatest talents produced by the Garrison clan in Oakland City. It's because they're the only ones who have enough resources to train you into becoming such a skillful fighter."

Although Jonah emphasized that it was nothing but his presumption, the man sounded very sure about what he said.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 964

Everyone from Jonah's family couldn't wait to hear Levi's confirmation.

If Levi were indeed someone from the Garrison clan in Oakland City, the situation would be very beneficial to them all.

They had to rely on the Garrison clan in Oakland City for support as they were just a small branch of the Garrison family

Now that they were lucky enough to have a chance to establish a connection with the God of War, their future seemed bright in their eyes.

"The Garrison clan from Oakland City? Haha! They aren't worthy to have a descendant as great as me!"

Levi's answer drove Jonah and his family to despair.

The God of War isn't related to the Garrison clan from Oakland City? What?

How's that possible?

Other than the Garrison clan in Oakland City, which branch could possibly have the resources to train him?

Jonah could not think of any other Garrison branch who could be capable of nurturing a descendant like Levi.

Just like them, the branches in Northeast City, Northwest City, and Chillshire could never have had the resources to train their descendants into someone like Levi despite them being an imperial family.

“Huh?”

You aren’t from the Garrison clan in Oakland City? How can that be? I can hardly believe other branches of our family have the resources to train you!”

The eyes of Jonah and his family went wide in shock, all filled with utter disbelief.

They did not think other branches of their family had what it took to train someone like the God of War.

“You guys are wrong to think that Boss ever relied on anyone to achieve his success.

Just like everyone else, Boss started out at the bottom and slowly worked his way up to become the God of War through sheer hard work,” Kirin quickly explained.

Levi glanced at Jonah and the rest of his family before announcing, “Listen to me very carefully – I’m not related to any branch of the Garrison family, especially the Garrison clan in Oakland City.”

Jonah and the others gasped in shock at his bold statement.

How could someone from an ordinary background be the God of War of Erudia?

Those who were born into rich and powerful families did not think those who came from poor families stood a chance at achieving success.

In their opinion, someone from a poor background could never be a match for those from rich and powerful families; it was because they could never have the same education, resources, and connections the latter could have.

Those from poor families, who managed to achieve something, would be quickly eliminated by those who come from rich and powerful families.

Therefore, Jonah and his family found it hard to believe that the God of War actually came from a poor family.

“Well, please get up. We’ll talk then,” Levi urged.

“Thank you for gracing us, God of War!”

Jonah and the rest of his family rose to their feet and followed Levi to his room.

“Are you guys a branch of the Garrison clan in Oakland City?” the latter asked.

“Yes, that’s correct.”

Levi flashed him a meaningful smile as he asked, “I suppose you guys are here to carry out another mission then?”

The air in the room froze as soon as he posed that question.

Everyone, including Kirin, gaped at Levi in utter astonishment.

How does he know we have a mission?

With that doubt in mind, Jonah experienced a mixture of feelings, his eyes brimming with disbelief.

The rest of the Garrison family were left stupefied; they knew the God of War was referring to their plan to kill Emma Jones and her son.

Jonah took a deep breath to calm his nerves.

I’m surprised at how fast words travels. How is even the God of War aware of our intention to kill that b*tch and her son?

Bad news spreads like wildfire indeed.

Now that even the God of War is aware of our plan, I bet the news will become widespread in a jiffy.

By the time that happens, those in Oakland City will become the laughing stock of the entire country!

As a branch of their family, sure enough, our family will be implicated too!

It will be hard to live with that kind of embarrassment.

In order to prevent the disastrous situation, Jonah made up his mind to kill Emma and his son as soon as he could and tie up any loose ends.

Jonah had actually planned to execute the plan the night before they returned to Haven. However, he changed his mind, deciding to play safe and not delay things any further. Jonah looked up at Levi and replied somewhat reluctantly, "Yes, we're here to get rid of a traitor of our family!"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 965

Levi broke into a smile which grew wider and slowly turned into a sneer in response to Jonah's answer.

They're really here to kill me.

I knew they weren't only here to visit the God of War!

"A traitor? I heard from the grapevine that he is quite a prominent skilled fighter. You guys better summon more help to handle him!" Levi chuckled.

Levi's answer only cemented Jonah's opinion that the God of War had already discovered everything there is to know about Emma and her son.

Even the God of War knows that Levi is a tough nut to crack. I bet our family has become the laughing stock of the town right now because of that bastard and his mother!

"God of War, thanks for your concern. However, please don't worry about us. I'm sure we will be able to finish them both off!"

A dangerous glint flickered in Jonah's eyes when he said that.

"Well, I'll wait for your good news then." Levi nodded.

"Huh?"

Jonah's eyes gleamed with hope at once.

Does the God of War also want to get rid of Emma and her son?

Wait, of course he does. After all, he is one of the Garrisons too!

I bet he couldn't tolerate the scandal Emma and her son have brought upon the Garrison family!

No matter what, there is no reason to keep the both of them alive!

I'll be there myself later tonight to make sure the two of them are killed!

"By the way, we've prepared some gifts for you, your mother, and your wife. We really hope you like them!"

Jonah beckoned his sons to bring the gift boxes over.

"What does this mean?" Levi questioned with a sharp edge in his tone.

Kirin came to Jonah's rescue by saying, "Boss, please accept their gifts! I'm sure Mr. Garrison means nothing but goodwill!"

Levi smiled in amusement.

He had never received gifts offered to him by any other people.

Yet, he couldn't see the reason why he should not accept the gifts from Jonah and his family, considering that they were there to kill him.

Why shouldn't I take their gifts?

"Sure." Levi agreed to accept the gifts readily.

Jonah delightedly presented the gifts to him one by one.

The first box contained shiny armor made of a special metal.

"God of War, this armor was made according to a combination of traditional and modern techniques.

What makes it stand out is its sturdiness. It can protect its wearer from knives, swords, and even bullets. It's much better than an ordinary bulletproof vest because it can withstand high temperatures. This armor is perfect for you. You can wear it on the battlefields," Jonah elaborated.

Levi picked the armor up and examined it.

Indeed, the craftsmanship was fabulous.

"I like this," he commented.

Feeling thrilled, Jonah moved on to the second box to reveal red, wild ginseng.

"God of War, here's some red ginseng for your mother! It's a herb famous for its immense benefits for health."

"This is great. I'll keep it too," Levi responded.

Jonah, who tried hard to subdue the excitement coursing in his blood, continued to open the third box. "This is a topaz pendant for your wife! Please send my greetings to your mother and your wife on my behalf!"

Levi accepted all the gifts happily. "You're really great at choosing gifts. I love them all!" he commented with a friendly smile.

"If there's nothing else, I've got to go now. I hope your mission of eliminating the traitor goes well later," Levi said with a barely noticeable smirk on his face.

Jonah and his family were ecstatic as the God of War had not only accepted their gifts – but he also even showed care and interest in their mission.

It seemed to them that they had successfully built a strong bond with the God of War through this trip.

It was not hard to imagine what a promising and prosperous future they could have!

With the bond with the God of War, they might get to act with more backbone the next time they interacted with those in Oakland City next time.

"Kirin, we shall not disturb you guys any further then."

In a buoyant mood, Jonah brought the rest of the family back to the villa.

Immediately, the man started preparing for the mission to finish off Emma and her son later that night. He was determined to make sure that their plan allowed no loopholes.

"Emma and her son will soon be unable to see the rising sun of the next morning!" Jonah sneered.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 966

Jonah had a clear idea of who he needed to implement his plan.

He recruited six skilled fighters from Tang Sect, all of them masters in wielding concealed weapons.

In addition to that, he dispatched eighteen top skilled fighters trained by the Garrison family to guard all exits of the neighborhood, giving Levi no chance to escape.

Last but not least, he and the rest of the family would be supervising everything from outside the neighborhood to deal with emergencies.

“Levi Garrison, I can’t believe even the God of War sees you as a skilled fighter too. Tonight, I’m going to witness you in action with my own eyes!”

Jonah looked forward to the violence that would be unleashed.

Meanwhile, Levi brought the gifts he had received from Jonah back home.

He was overjoyed to receive the red ginseng, as that was what his mother needed the most at the moment.

In order to cure Emma’s illness, he had sent some of his men on a search for rare and precious medicinal herbs over the past two days.

Much to his pleasant surprise, he received red ginseng from the Garrisons right at his doorstep.

The red ginseng, if used properly, could cure his mother of her chronic illness, boost her health, and even help her achieve longevity.

To be more precise, the red ginseng could help with his mother’s skin condition too.

In short, the red ginseng was a very timely gift.

After consulting Fredrick, Levi prepared a soup with red ginseng for Emma.

When Zoey got back home, Levi casually passed her the topaz pendant.

“Someone sent us a gift each. This is yours,” he said.

“Thanks.”

Zoey, who did not know much about jade, kept the topaz pendant away like it was just an ordinary jade pendant.

It was unbeknownst to her that that topaz pendant was actually a priceless item – the rarest of its kind.

After all, the Garrison family would never give out anything shabby as gifts.

Anyone who knew something about jade would have to pick their jaws up from the ground when they saw the topaz pendant Zoey had received from the Garrison family.

Zoey would only realize the real value of the topaz pendant sometime later.

“Hey, didn’t you say you had something to discuss with me?”

Levi remembered the woman telling him that that morning.

“Yes. Let’s talk in the bedroom.”

The man couldn’t help but be curious when she dragged him into their bedroom surreptitiously.

“I suppose you know that I’m handling a project worth a hundred billion right now,” Zoey began.

“Yes, I know about it.”

It went without saying that Levi knew about the project. Zoey was working at the company owned by him, after all.

Of course you’re free to grab any project you like. You’re the wife of the boss!

“When the project is officially launched, my net worth will soar, and I’ll be free from the control of both the Lopez family as well as the Black family. By then, I’ll have the freedom to make decisions in my life, like getting married to you,” Zoey said.

Only then did Levi understand why she was so eager to be in charge of the project.

Solemnly, the woman stared at him. “Just to be safe, I need to do something extra to make sure my parents and Grandma have no chance to stop us from marrying each other.”

“I actually don’t think that’s necessary because I will be able to settle all the problems.”

Levi had intended to announce his true identity to Zoey’s family at their wedding ceremony.

He believed the Lopez family and the Black family would not have any objections against their marriage once they learned about his true identity.

She cast a fleeting glance at him and snapped, “No way. You’re unreliable!”

Looking resigned, he was rendered speechless.

He knew that Zoey still assumed he was depending on the Joneses up until now.

In her opinion, he was a useless guy. Someone who was not capable of solving the issues she was facing at the moment.

“I’ve already come up with a plan which can ensure they have no grounds to object to our marriage!”

Zoey smiled craftily before quickly lowering her head to hide the embarrassment on her face.

“What’s this brilliant plan of yours?” he asked, curiosity written all over his face.

“We... We...” Zoey stammered, having a hard time revealing her plan.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 967

Levi scratched his head, looking puzzled.

“What exactly is on your mind?”

Despite him being the God of War, who had vast experience on the battlefields, he knew nothing about relationships.

Therefore, he had no idea how to gaug

e what was on Zoey's mind.

The woman shot him a glare. "You really can be such a blockhead sometimes. I'm thinking about getting pregnant!"

"Huh? Oh, I-I see..." It finally dawned upon him what she was thinking about.

So, her getting pregnant is her plan!

That's quite brilliant, actually.

As soon as she's pregnant, her family will have no choice but to accept our marriage.

"As long as I'm pregnant, there's nothing the Lopez family and the Black family can do to stop us from marrying each other. On top of that, I'll be getting so rich at that time that they will no longer be able to exert any more control on me!

I'll be free to decide who I'd like to marry, and no one will be able to stop me from doing that!" Zoey announced agitatedly.

Yet, Levi had his reservations. "It's not very appropriate, is it?"

"Why do you think so?"

"You know that I'm a very conservative man. I've always wanted to give you the best of everything, and I respect you a lot. I really think we should think about getting a child after we remarry each other. Right now, we're officially still a divorced couple."

"Zoey, getting pregnant at this juncture will do nothing but tarnish your reputation, and that's the last thing I want to see!

It pains me to see you suffer something like that as you've had gone through more than your share of hardships during these years. So, why don't we only think about having a child after we remarry each other?" Levi tried to convince Zoey earnestly.

The latter was touched by his words.

“Levi, you’re indeed the nice I’ve always thought you to be! I’m so glad because it means that all the effort I’ve made so far for you are worthwhile! Listen to me – having a kid is the only way we can get rid of my family!” Zoey insisted with tears welled up in her eyes.

She did not mind going through some hardships upon seeing how much Levi cared about her.

“Alright, I’ll do as you say.”

Levi beamed at her reply.

He had always wanted to have a kid with her.

However, he dared not propose that idea, considering he had owed her too much over the past six years.

“We can’t do anything frisky tonight. I’ll be busy later,” Levi spoke all of a sudden.

He was not in the mood to spend time with Zoey in bed because Jonah and his family were coming to kill him soon.

“Who said we’re going to do it tonight?”

the woman shot him a supercilious glance.

Levi suddenly felt himself heat up and quickly walked out of the mansion to let the breeze cool him down.

With one wave of his hands, someone materialized from the darkness.

“How can I help you, God of War?”

“Tell everyone guarding the neighborhood to retreat immediately!”

“Understood!”

Soon, the heavily guarded neighborhood became defenseless after all Levi's men had left on his order.

The action was necessary. Levi was worried that Jonah's men might not be able to get through the line of defense.

As the sky grew darker, Levi sipped on his cup of tea, enjoying the cool breeze outside the manor.

At the same time, Jonah and all his men had gathered outside Levi's neighborhood.

"Everyone, it's time we get to work! We have to kill Emma Jones and her son at all costs tonight!" Jonah commanded.

Six skilled fighters from Tang Sect, as well as eighteen skilled fighters from the Garrison family, crept their way into the neighborhood. They soon vanished into the darkness.

Dozens of skilled fighters were dispatched by Jonah to guard the surroundings of the neighborhood. They were to make sure no one was able to escape.

They had found out Levi's address ages ago, so they were quite familiar with the layout of the neighborhood after meticulously studying it.

The eighteen skilled fighters from the Garrison family were entrusted with the task to guard all the exits of the neighborhood. They were to ensure that Levi would not be able to run away.

Meanwhile, the six skilled fighters from Tang Sect were tasked to kill Levi and his mother.

While Levi was examining a stain on his shirt in front of the main gate of the mansion, the six skilled fighters from Tang Sect started closing in on him from less than fifty meters away.

"That's Levi Garrison! Kill him!"

After making sure the man they saw was indeed Levi, the six skilled fighters launched their attack on him.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War

[The Protector] Chapter 968

Swish, swish, swish...

The rustling sound of something moving in the air at a rapid speed could be heard.

Up to a hundred concealed weapons swooped down at Levi dangerously at one go.

The skilled fighters from Tang Sect were aiming to kill Levi with a single strike.

They were very sure that their concealed weapons would be able to kill the man, leaving his body filled with holes.

Clank!

Clank!

Clank!

Much to their consternation, sparks flew and the sound of metal on metal could be heard.

“What is this sorcery? Is he wearing armor? Let’s give it another go!”

The skilled fighters from Tang Sect reacted promptly by launching another round of attack on Levi without further ado.

Clank...

Yet, the same thing happened this time – their weapons were unable to pierce through Levi’s armor.

“Damn it! He’s wearing the Golden Armor! It’s one of our creations!” One of them let out an exclamation after taking a closer look at the armor Levi was wearing.

"It can't be! How did he get his hands on the Golden Armor?"

"The thing he's wearing looks very much like it, though."

"We've failed our mission! Retreat immediately!"

The six skilled fighters immediately retreated after a brief discussion.

Levi broke into a smile as he broke into a smile.

I must say, this Golden Armor is indeed fantastic!

If Black Tortoise were here, he would have gotten injured by the concealed weapons.

Even though Black Tortoise's skin is impenetrable to ordinary weapons and bullets, he is defenseless to the weapons used by the fighter of Tang Sect.

This Golden Armor Jonah gifted me is even better than all the bulletproof vests I've been wearing!

Levi couldn't help but marvel at how sturdy the Golden Armor was.

The fighters, who were guarding the exits, were horrified to see the fighters from Tang Sect running away from Levi's manor.

"You guys should remain here," they told the eighteen skilled fighters.

Outside the neighborhood, Jonah looked very much at ease. "I guess Levi and his mother have already been killed by now. I have a lot of confidence in the skilled fighters from Tang Sect."

At that juncture, the six skilled fighters he mentioned made a beeline for where Jonah was standing.

"What went wrong?"

Judging from their pale faces, Jonah knew their mission had gone awry.

“Mr. Garrison, this is bad. Levi Garrison

is wearing armor that looks very much like the Golden Armor – a creation of our sect! He can’t be hurt by our concealed weapons at all!”

Another man from Tang Sect chimed in, “If my judgment is correct, he is indeed wearing a Golden Armor!”

“What?”

How could something like this happen?”

Soon, a person popped up in Jonah’s mind. It was the God of War whom they had gifted a Golden Armor earlier that day.

Yet, they did not reckon that there existed any association between Levi and the God of War.

One of them was the God of War of the country, whereas the other was the bastard of the prestigious Garrison family.

It seemed extremely unlikely that the two could have any connection.

There was only one plausible reason that could explain the situation – Levi just so happened to be wearing something that looked extremely similar to a Golden Armor.

Indeed, it was human nature to avoid what they feared and try to convince themselves that the things they feared did not exist.

“Levi really is a force to be reckoned with. No wonder even the God of War thinks highly of him. I think he’s wearing some sort of flexible body armor; that’s probably what’s protect him from some weapons.”

“Come on, let’s go and check him out ourselves! If assassination doesn’t work, we should launch a frontal attack on him then! Let’s see how he’s going to defend himself this time!”

Jonah, together with all the skilled fighters, charged toward Levi’s manor.

The eighteen skilled fighters guarding the exits began advancing on the manor too.

Meanwhile, Levi was still sitting leisurely at the gate of the mansion.

Just then, silhouettes of Jonah's people emerged from the darkness.

"Levi Garrison, today is your doomsday! You are going to die a horrible death this time!"
At Jonah's command, the eighteen skilled fighters charged at Levi in unison.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 969

The Garrison family had spent a fortune on training the eighteen skilled fighters who had never acted together before that day.

They were confident that their joined forces would be capable of finishing off anyone.

Exuding a murderous aura, the skilled fighters closed in on Levi.

Swish!

The blades of their swords swept past the icy air toward Levi.

Clank!

Levi allowed them to slash his body with the swords, not doing anything to defend himself.

.

To the utter dismay of the skilled fighters, only a dull thud was produced when the blades landed on Levi's body as their swords failed to cut through him

"Mr. Garrison, did you see that? He's wearing a powerful armor that can protect him from the swords!" one of the skilled fighters from Tang Sect pointed out.

Clank!

Clank!

Clank!

The eighteen skilled fighters tried attacking Levi again and again, but their efforts were futile.

The blades of their swords only ended up being dented.

What kind of armor is Levi Garrison wearing?

His armor must be very strong because our swords are powerful enough to pierce through bulletproof vests made with the most advanced techniques.

"I have a feeling that Levi is wearing the Golden Armor. If he wasn't, there's no way he'll be able to last this long," Seamus whispered to his father.

"He's really something!" Jonah tried to catch a glimpse at what Levi looked like, but he couldn't see the man's face clearly. He was standing too far away.

Suddenly, a sinister glint shone in Levi's eyes while the eighteen skilled fighters were attacking him.

"It's my turn now..."

Thump!

As soon as Levi spoke, he flew into action, sending the skilled fighters flying some distance away by forcefully kicking them one by one.

The eighteen skilled fighters suffered from his attacks, tossed around as if they were mere figurines.

Soon, all of them slumped on the ground quite far away from Levi.

It was a mind-blowing sight. The Garrison family from Haven could not believe their eyes.

They knew the eighteen skilled fighters well enough to know that they were all extremely talented. The combative power of one of them was equal to the total combative power of ten men like Caleb.

Yet, none of them had been a match for Levi.

“Kill him! Slaughter him now!”

“We have to get rid of Levi tonight, or he will go on to become a great disgrace to our family! Now that even the God of War is aware of his presence, we have to kill him to spare ourselves from the embarrassment!”

Panic-stricken, Jonah dispatched all his men, ordering a full-blown attack on the man at once.

In an instant, a hundred skilled fighters were charging toward Levi.

The man approached them one step at a time.

Clank!

He allowed them to strike blows after blows at him, not bothering to dodge or fight back.

Levi knew he was well protected by the Golden Armor; he would not be harmed no matter how they tried to hurt him.

The skilled fighters soon discovered something bizarre.

Regardless of how they swung their blades, all strikes were directed by an invisible force, making all blows land on only Levi's body.

They could never seem to reach the more vulnerable body parts of his, like his neck or his head.

While Levi could withstand their attack without getting hurt, all of them were vulnerable to his attack.

Thump!

Thump!

The ground Levi walked past was filled with the fighters who had collapsed.

In the end, none of the skilled fighters dared to go near Levi, considering that he was literally invincible.

There was nothing much all of them could do at the moment.

Eventually, Levi forced them to retreat about one hundred meters.

He was moving closer to Jonah and his family and would reach them soon.

“T-This can’t be happening...”

The eyes of Jonah and his family were filled with utter disbelief when they saw the skilled fighters being defeated by Levi so effortlessly.

How can that bastard be such a prominent fighter?

Why does he seem invincible?

Although Levi stood meters away from them, they still could not make out his face because the surroundings were dimly lit.

“Kill him! Finish him off now!” Jonah bellowed at the top of his lungs.

At that moment, Jonah was seized by a spasm of fear seeing that Levi was only meters away from him.

The latter commented with a hearty laugh, “Jonah, I must say this Golden Armor from you is really as fabulous as you put it! I’m giving it a score of ten out of ten after trying it out with real weapons just now!”

Upon hearing his comment, Jonah and his family looked as though they had been struck by lightning.

That voice certainly rings a bell...

What did he say just now? A gift from us?

Realization slowly dawned upon Jonah and his entire family.

When did we ever give Levi a Golden Armor?

Damn it! Could he be...

Jonah and his family were mortified when they finally realized the truth.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 970

Jonah was left gob smacked. He felt as though his head was going to explode, and his eyeballs were going to pop out of their sockets any minute.

Levi received a Golden Armor from me?

Didn't I gift that to the God of War earlier today?

Could Levi possibly be the God of War? How could he be such a prominent figure?

While Jonah went lost in his own thoughts, Levi had already made his way right in front of them.

The Garrisons turned to face Levi and what greeted them was a face they had seen earlier that day.

Isn't this man the God of War?

Having met during the day, the two parties encountered each other again, albeit in a much more awkward manner.

"Jonah, I really love this Golden Armor from you! It's so much better than the usual bulletproof vests I've been wearing."

Levi flashed the group a good-natured smile.

For some reason, Jonah and his family felt as though their legs just turned into jelly.

Thud!

Thud!

One after another, they collapsed onto the ground and knelt before Levi.

The skilled fighters standing around them were left at a loss.

."What are you lot waiting for? Get down on your knees right now!" Jonah snarled

Thud!

Immediately, all the skilled fighters were on their knees too.

Levi let out an amused laugh. "Why are you guys kneeling in front of me? Come on, kill me now! Jonah Garrison, aren't you here to kill me?"

The man he directed his question to was left speechless.

At that moment, everyone in the Garrison family from Haven was made aware of one thing – Levi Garrison was the God of War!

That was certainly a staggering discovery to them.

No wonder the man had been reluctant to admit to the fact that he was one of the Garrisons. No wonder he did not take the Garrison clan in Oakland City seriously.

No wonder he knew about the other purpose of their visit to South City...

No wonder he tipped them off by saying that the bastard of their family was a tough nut to crack and advising them to bring more men with them.

As it turned out, Levi was the God of War!

At that moment, the Garrisons from Haven realized they had made a serious misjudgment.

If Levi were indeed a useless man, how could he have killed Caleb?

How could he have brought his mother back with him?

How could he have destroyed that tombstone?

On top of that, they had made a fool out of themselves by happily telling Levi all about their plan to kill him earlier that day.

After so much hassle, the bastard they had planned to kill turned out to be the God of War.

“We were wrong! God of War, we’ve made a very grave mistake!”

Jonah was scared out of his wits, and his body was drenched in a cold sweat.

He could not believe they had just tried to kill the God of War!

If what they did was known by the army of the Erudia, his entire family would be massacred.

They had really made a grave mistake this time.

“Aren’t you guys an imperial family?”

Isn’t the blood that runs in you guys a noble one? Is it appropriate of you to kneel in front of a bastard like me?” Sarcasm was evident in Levi’s tone.

“God of War, it’s our honor to get down on our knees in your distinguished presence!” Jonah was eager to butter the man up.

“Are you trying to say that I deserve to be mercilessly killed by you guys if I am not the God of War?”

Jonah and his family were startled when they heard Levi suddenly raise his voice.

“Isn’t the reason why you guys have been trying so hard to hunt my mother and I down because you guys see us as a disgrace to the Garrison family?”

Don't you guys think that the blood that runs in me is so filthy that I will only bring nothing but an embarrassment to the family?" The man yelled furiously.

"This..." Jonah was left stumped because it was true that they had thought of Levi and his mother that way.

In their opinion, bastards did not deserve to exist in this world.

"I really wonder what makes you guys think you're superior to me. Is the blood that runs in you guys? Does that make you think of yourselves as nobler than us? Or is it just because you guys are part of the Garrison family?"

"Now that I'm the God of War, am I finally be good enough to deserve some respect from you? From an orphan, I fought hard and worked my way up to achieve success.

Has anyone from your distinguished family achieved something like that?"

"What about Tyrone Garrison? Isn't he the successor to the head of your family? Out of Tyrone and I, who do you think deserves more respect?" Levi nearly growled at them.

The Protector Chapter 971

With a note of awkwardness in his voice, Jonah responded, "God of War, of course, you deserve more respect. Tyrone is nothing compared to you!"

Jonah spoke only the truth.

No matter how powerful and influential the Garrison clan and Tyrone Garrison were, the God of War was still way out of their league.

"If that's the case, what gives him the right to look down on me and call me a bastard? Do he and his family have the right to treat me in such a disrespectful manner?"

"No, of course, they don't! They have no right to be so rude to you!" Jonah replied eagerly.

At the same time, the man was so terrified – his body was shaking.

"How dare they even think of killing me? Do they have what it takes to do that?" Levi scoffed.

"Very well. You guys are free to send as many men as you like to kill me. I can easily handle them all!"

Thump!

Thump!

Jonah and his family quickly offered several bows to plead for Levi's mercy. "God of War, please spare our lives! We made a mistake by trying to kill you! We didn't know you were the God of War!"

The entire family pressed their heads against the ground so hard that their foreheads started bleeding.

Jonah looked like he was on the brink of passing out.

“We will accept any request you make as long as you spare our lives!” he implored in a fit of panic.

He knew his entire family would be annihilated if they incurred the God of War’s wrath.

They should not have made their way over to South City.

Never in their wildest dreams did they imagine Levi, the bastard, to turn out to be the God of War.

With a disdainful smile, Levi gave his verdict.

“Get lost! I’m not going to kill you guys today! None of you are worth my effort, and your blood will only dirty my hands! The gifts from you lot do offer some compensation, though. They are quite to my liking!”

Jonah and his family let out a sigh of relief when they realized that they would not be killed on the spot.

They were glad that they had sent Levi some gifts earlier that day – that gesture had seemingly successfully saved their lives.

“Will you guys be able to reach Tyrone Garrison?” Levi asked them out of the blue.

“Y-Yes, we can...” Jonah replied.

“Very well, go back and tell Tyrone that my mother and I are still alive and kicking! Ask him to wait for me as I might decide to visit him anytime when I am in a foul mood!”

“But don’t you dare reveal my identity to him.

For the hard work, I’ll reward you guys with a huge gift,” Levi instructed.

In quivering voices, the Garrisons responded in unison, “Alright, we’ll convey your message to Tyrone!”

“Get lost now then!”

As soon as Levi allowed them to go, all of them immediately made a run for their lives.

However, Jonah and his sons did not leave right away.

Instead, they approached Kirin and explained everything to him.

“You guys are incorrigible!” Kirin was livid.

No wonder Boss already knew what they were up to earlier today!

They came here to kill Boss!

“There’s nothing left to be said now. From today onward, I will have nothing to do with you guys! If you dare pull something like this again in the future, I will be the first to punish you!” Kirin snapped angrily.

Jonah and his family made their trip back to Haven that night.

They knew they had to lie low during the days that followed if they wished to survive.

“Dad, should we inform the Garrison clan about this? Should we tell them the truth?” Seamus questioned.

“No, we shouldn’t tell them anything! Judging from the God of War’s tone, there must be a feud between him and the Garrison clan! Do we want to get implicated by their clash?” Jonah seethed.

“No, we don’t! After all, they don’t take us seriously – they see us as a bunch of nobodies!”

Everyone nodded in agreement.

“Make a phone call to Tyrone for me now. I’m going to convey the message to him, and then I’ll leave him to settle the mess himself!”

Just as Jonah was going to dial Tyrone’s number, he received a call from the Garrison clan.

“Dad, someone from the Garrison clan is calling. Seems like they’ve gotten a sniff of what happened already!” Seamus exclaimed.

“Pass me the phone.”

Jonah picked up the call. “Hello...”

An aged and feeble voice came from the other end.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 972

“Jonah Garrison?” said the elderly man in a cool tone.

Jonah’s expression took a sharp turn, and he spoke respectfully, “Greetings, Mr. Edward.”

Jonah’s change in attitude showed just how powerful the other party truly was.

The person speaking to him wasn’t even a high-ranking member of the Garrison clan.

It was a mere servant who had more influence than Caleb.

Edward was the personal attendant who had been assigned to take care of Levi’s biological father, Tyrone Garrison. In fact, the man had been working by Tyrone’s side ever since Tyrone was born.

It could be said that Edward was responsible for dealing with every single matter regarding Tyrone.

Moreover, the man wasn’t just Tyrone’s bodyguard – he was also the latter’s right-hand man.

That was the reason that Edward held incredible power within the Garrison clan, even though he wasn’t a member of the family.

Even the master of the Garrison family in Haven had to bow down to him.

They were simply not on the same level.

The Garrison clan of Oakland City was too powerful; even a servant was seen as royalty.

“How did things go? Has everything been settled?” Edward inquired.

Obviously, Edward had already known all about Levi and Emma, despite it being a secret.

Still, given the power of the Garrison clan, it was just a matter of time before they learned all about it, anyway.

“Uh...”

Jonah was a little hesitant to reply.

Edward’s tone turned stern immediately. He demanded, “What? Don’t tell me you failed? Jonah Garrison, you are the head of the

Garrison clan from Haven! How could you have been bested by a bastard? The Garrison family and I are so disappointed in you. Seriously, what’s the point of keeping trash like you around? All you do is embarrass the Garrison clan!”

Jonah grew upset after being scolded by him.

He’s the freaking God of War! No one can deal with someone like that.

“Why are you staying quiet? Are you discontent? Well, tough luck! There’s no point in being discontent. My gosh, you can’t even kill a bastard. You lot really are nothing but trash,” growled Edward.

“There’s a reason I couldn’t kill him. It doesn’t mean the Garrison family of Haven is weak. We’re certainly not the trash you claim us to be!” yelled Jonah angrily.

“Fine, then tell me what that reason is,” said Edward in an amused tone.

“The reason is that this whole ordeal doesn’t have much to do with me, anyway, so I don’t want to do anything about it. Satisfied?” scoffed Jonah.

"Hah! That is nothing but an excuse coming from a useless man. Well then, I will personally deal with the matter for Master Tyrone. You'll see how easy it is to kill that b*tch and that bastard!" growled Edward.

Jonah grinned and replied, "In that case, allow me to deliver a message from Levi to Tyrone. He said he and his mother are leading a good life now, but he tells Tyrone to be patient, for there will come a day when they knock on the Garrison family's door."

Jonah knew that, as far as the Garrisons from Oakland City were concerned, the extended family members were nothing more than mutts.

Even a mere servant was allowed to insult the extended family.

That poor treatment made Jonah upset, and he suddenly wanted to see Levi crush the Garrison clan in Oakland City.

"What? Did that bastard really say that?" demanded Edward, who was obviously furious. After that, the man added, "You're actually delivering a message for that bastard? My gosh, Jonah, you really are an embarrassment to the Garrisons. You're worse than a scoundrel!"

"Go ahead and diss us all you like. I'll sit back and watch how miserable your attempt to kill him will be."

There was no way Jonah would warn Edward about Levi's power after being insulted so thoroughly by the man like that.

"Jonah Garrison, just you wait, you useless piece of shit!

I will report this to the higher-ups soon, and the Garrison family of Haven will definitely be disowned!"

After saying his piece, Edward hung up furiously.

"He is really too much!"

Jonah smashed his phone onto the floor out of anger. He later looked into the distance and murmured, "Why do I get the feeling that he has the ability to crush the Garrison clan in Oakland City?"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War

[The Protector] Chapter 973

“How is that possible? So what if he is the God of War? There’s no way he can do anything to the Garrison clan. The clan spent the past thousand years building a firm foundation!” said Seamus, who didn’t believe in Levi.

“We’ll have to wait and see then.”

On the other side of the line, Edward was still waiting in the Northern region.

The man looked grouchy.

“Trash. Utter trash! They can’t even kill a bastard, so how can they be allowed to call themselves a part of the Garrison clan?” he fumed.

“That’s right! The Garrison clan has plenty of members in Erudia, but none of them are of any use. Stupid trash! They’re not worthy of being a part of the Garrison clan, even if they bear the same surname!”

A few others chimed in and gave their two cents as well.

“What do we do next, Edward? Should we deliver Levi’s message to Master Tyrone?” someone asked daringly.

“No! We can’t let this matter affect Master Tyrone at a crucial moment like this. We have to deal with everything in secret,” informed Edward grimly.

“The Succession Ceremony is right around the corner, and Master Tyrone is about to be named the head of the Garrison clan. If news about that b*tch and bastard gets out at a time like this, trouble will most definitely follow.”

“Moreover, if Master Tyrone becomes the new head of the Garrison clan, we will become the most powerful servants within the clan.

Such a matter will affect our future as well!” chimed another member.

Edward’s eyes shone with eccentricity as he said, “Exactly! As the servants, it is our duty to protect Master Tyrone and help him become the next head. We shall kill anyone who threatens his position, be it Levi Garrison or Emma Jones. As for how we’ll go about doing that... Well, I have a great idea.”

Edward’s lips curved into a cruel smile.

Tyrone had long craved the position of the head of the Garrison clan.

The man once said that he would forgo everything and be as cruel as he needed to be to claw his way up to that position.

That was why the act of abandoning Emma and Levi meant nothing to him.

Compared to the position as the head of the Garrison clan, Emma and Levi were nothing.

Edward received a call at that moment.

The call was from Damien – Tyrone’s legitimate son.

He was the son Tyrone had with his wife, whom he married after he abandoned Levi and Emma.

Edward and the others had been there at every stage of Damien’s life.

Hence, they knew just how cruel the man really was.

Tyrone alone was a heartless and merciless being, but Damien somehow managed to be ten times worse than his father.

The man will definitely be a force to be reckoned with in the future.

“Edward, I’ve learned about everything. My dad is on the verge of succeeding in obtaining the position as the head of the Garrison clan. You know what will happen if those two show up at a time like this, don’t you?” sneered Damien.

"We know what to do, Mr. Damien.

We will definitely kill your brother, Levi Garrison, and his mother," replied Edward was quick to speak, and he accidentally used the wrong term in the process.

"He is not my brother! That man is nothing but a bastard, and he is not worthy to be called my brother.

I will soon be the successor to the most prominent family in Erudia, and he will stay a useless bastard. I'm warning you right now. Damien Garrison does not have a brother. I am my father's only son. Do you hear me? Kill them! You must kill both that bastard and his mother. Do not let them survive," Damien barked endlessly on the other end of the line.

All it took was one word from Edward to infuriate Damien.

As far as Damien was concerned, calling Levi his brother was a huge insult.

Damien regarded himself as the heir of two noble bloodlines, whereas Levi was nothing but a bastard with mixed blood. His blood is tainted, and he's inferior! How can they compare a noble being like me to that... thing?

"If you fail to crush those two, you will be the ones I kill," threatened Damien grimly.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 974

Edward and the others present were scared senseless.

The former, in particular, realized that he had made a mistake and that the only way out of it was to kill Levi Garrison.

"By the way, Levi sent a message over, Mr. Damien."

Edward later told Damien everything Jonah had told him.

The latter was infuriated when he heard the message. "What? That bastard wants to come over and walk into our home?"

"I think so. I'm guessing he refused to let go of this rare opportunity after learning about his family background.

He will do anything to get into the family and force the Garrison clan to recognize him as a member," suggested Edward.

"That is ridiculous! He wants to join the Garrison clan? Who does he think he is? He is nothing but a bastard, so he can dream on.

The Garrison clan is the best of the best, and we don't take in useless bastards like that. No way am I going to let that bastard be a member of our family and be listed in our family tree. Not a chance in hell!" Damien shouted.

"I don't think he will let this opportunity go so easily, Mr. Damien. He already knows who he is, and he knows that his life will be elevated once he is recognized by the family."

"He can forget about ever stepping foot in the Garrison clan home! Hell, even thinking about kneeling before us and our ancestors is a privilege he is not worthy of," roared Damien cruelly.

Both of them misunderstood Levi's intention.

They assumed that the man would be begging to be admitted into the family and be recognized as one.

However, when Levi said he would be visiting the Garrison family home, he meant that he would be kicking the door down and bringing chaos.

"And that is why you have three days. He must die in three days! That bastard has been breathing for too long as it is, and that itself is a huge enough insult to the entire Garrison clan."

Damien was furious and murderous when he thought about the so-called brother he had never met before.

"Understood. I promise it will be done discreetly."

Edward took off that very night, and he brought his men with him to South Hampton.

The Garrison clan had an enormous base in the city – it was practically the economic pillar of South Hampton.

However, it operated in the dark, so no one knew about it.

Even the most prominent family in South Hampton, the Goel family, was unaware of its existence.

All outsiders knew was that there was a company named Pinnacle Group.

They didn't realize that it was one of Tyrone's companies and that he used it to manage the Garrison clan's assets in the South.

It turns out that the company was under Caleb's management.

Zoey had been busy working on the new project those few days.

Unfortunately, Iris came running that day, telling her that the project had hit a snag.

At first, they didn't have any competitors, allowing Morris Group to take over easily. Everything had been set in stone and ready.

However, a large-scale company popped out of nowhere that day, and it threatened to snatch the project away in the most domineering way.

Iris had rushed over to inform Zoey about it.

"Which company are we talking about?" asked the latter curiously.

"It's a company called Pinnacle Group from South Hampton. It popped out of nowhere, but its powers are incredible. The company basically controls South Hampton's economy, and Morris Group is definitely not its competitor," replied Iris.

Zoey investigated Pinnacle Group right away.

The company's information had never been a secret, but it was a little difficult to learn about them.

She spent some time on it and eventually discovered something.

"The company is owned by Tyrone Garrison... That name sounds familiar. Where have I heard this name before?" she murmured before she recalled who the man was, and a chill ran down her spine. She then let out a gasp. "Wait, Tyrone Garrison... Isn't he Levi's biological dad?"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 975

Competing against the Garrison clan? What chance do we really have of winning if we do such a thing?

Zoey's first instinct was to give up.

After all, what were the chances of her actually succeeding? Especially if they already had it out for her.

Iris' secretary walked into the office at that moment to deliver a message.

The woman turned pale upon hearing Zoey's words. She then informed, "Pinnacle Group's person-in-charge will be here this afternoon. I'm guessing they are here to talk about the project. You should attend that meeting."

"Okay."

Zoey took a few deep breaths.

So what if Tyrone owns the company? So what if the Garrison clan is ridiculously powerful? I'm the one who got the project first. I will not let Pinnacle Group take it away from me!

Levi examined Zoey closely during lunch and commented, "What's wrong? You look troubled."

"It's nothing. I'm just dealing with some issues from work."

She never told him about the issue with Pinnacle Group.

She worried that unnecessary mayhem would ensue if he knew about Tyrone's advances.

It's probably a better idea to keep quiet. After all, there is no way a puny enterprise like ours can deal with a corporate giant like that.

That afternoon, a number of luxurious, black cars drove up.

The people from Pinnacle Group had arrived.

Zoey personally welcomed them.

The ones in charge were a woman and two men. Their assistants were following close behind, and all of them were obviously out for blood.

"Zoey Lopez? So it really is you!" said the woman before she chuckled aloud.

"And you are..."

The woman had on a pair of sunglasses, so Zoey could not recognize her.

The latter trembled, and her eyes shone with surprise when the woman took her sunglasses off. She then mumbled, "I-it's you!"

"You remember me? Aw, I thought you'd forgotten all about me," replied the woman as a stunning grin appeared on her face.

"Y-you're the person-in-charge of Pinnacle Group?"

"Thanks to you. I've been well after you guys chased me out of North Hampton, and I am now the vice president of Pinnacle Group!" The woman smiled.

That woman was Lyndsay Granger, Zoey's ex-BFF and senior.

She was the one who brought Zoey into the field and was, in a way, the one who taught Zoey most of what she knew.

Lyndsay had cared for her in every way.

However, she later discovered that it was all a lie.

Lyndsay had only been nice to her to get close to Levi.

At the time, the man had already founded Levi Group, and his career was taking off at an incredible speed.

Lyndsay's greed slowly showed itself soon after.

She continuously hurt Zoey from behind the scenes and created a number of illusions to make Levi misunderstand Zoey.

Lyndsay's worst scheme in her quest to separate the couple was having her men drag Zoey into a hotel, where they almost raped her.

When Levi learned about all that, he chased Lyndsay out of North Hampton.

Hence, the two women were now enemies.

That made Lyndsay an eyesore for Zoey.

The latter scoffed and said, "Then I guess there is no need to enter the building. Our company does not welcome vile b*tches."

"What is that supposed to mean, Zoey Lopez? I am Pinnacle Group's representative. How dare you turn Pinnacle Group away!" growled Lyndsay.

In the end, Zoey had no choice but to lead all of them into the building.

Once they got inside the meeting room, Zoey immediately said, "Let's get to the point, shall we? I'm busy."

Lyndsay grinned and replied, "We're here about the project. We heard your company has already accepted it."

"That's right. The project has already been taken. You guys have no shot at obtaining it anymore. You can't exactly steal it now, can you?" Zoey stated firmly.

Lyndsay smiled. "We're actually here to steal that project."

The woman then stood and looked her up and down before adding, "Zoey, I'm sure you've learned all about what Pinnacle Group is capable of. I am here on behalf of the company and am commanding you to give it up. Hand the project over to us!"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 976

Domineering, arrogant, and blatant cruelty.

That was Pinnacle Group's style.

Lyndsay and the others knew just how powerful the force supporting Pinnacle Group was, so they did not refrain from making demands.

They had never been afraid of anyone because of that knowledge.

In fact, the entire southern region would know about Lyndsay if Pinnacle Group's motto wasn't to stay in the dark and to control everything from behind the scenes.

Zoey was taken aback by the woman's direct and domineering words.

They're going to snatch it away just like that? And she's daring enough to command me without a hint of shame! They have no right to do such shitty things.

She had been tempted to give the project up when she learned that Pinnacle Group was after it.

However, that option had become one she would never opt for when she laid eyes on Lyndsay.

Why should I give up?

“Sorry, but you are not my boss. You don’t have the authority to command me to do anything. Moreover, our company has already gotten the project. You guys can’t snatch it away even if you want to!” scoffed Zoey.

“And who told you that you already have the project?” Lyndsay asked cruelly.

“Our client, of course. We’ve already met and discussed everything. The project belongs to Oriental Star Group, and you guys are too late. Please leave.”

Zoey had just discussed the terms with the client – she had even paid the deposit.

It was then that Lyndsay let out a small smile.

“Oh, the project belongs to you? Have you signed the contract then?”

“I...” blurted Zoey, who was somewhat stunned. She later added, “Regardless, I have already paid the deposit. If the client goes back on his word, he will have to pay for the legal damages.”

Zoey held her head high as she glared at Lyndsay.

The former suddenly received a call at that moment – it was from the client.

The client was willing to pay three times the legal damage to terminate their collaboration with Morris Group.

“Feel free to continue competing for the project, though. At first, there weren’t any viable competitors against Morris Group, but one showed up recently,” informed the other party via the phone.

The project was more scientific in nature, so Pinnacle Group wasn't exactly equipped to be too involved.

Getting the other party to cancel the collaboration was the most Pinnacle Group could do.

As a result, Zoey was in fair competition against Tyrone's company.

"So? Are you still certain that the project is yours?"

Lyndsay crossed her arms and asked arrogantly.

"You..." growled Zoey. She was fuming at that moment.

She had known Pinnacle Group to be powerful, but she hadn't expected them to have such a strong influence. It was strong enough to get the client to breach the contract. *They did all that just to get to us.*

However, the more unreasonable Pinnacle Group was, the more Zoey wanted to fight.

She wanted to get back at her competitor if nothing else.

"You've seen what we're capable of. Are you sure you want to go against us?" taunted Lyndsay with a smile.

"We've investigated you, Ms. Zoey Lopez. Oriental Star Group won't even make it to our radar if it doesn't have Morris Group backing it up. As far as we are concerned, Oriental Star Group is nothing but a powerless maggot," said a representative of Pinnacle Group.

Everyone else chuckled tauntingly.

Lyndsay grinned and added, "It's even less of a deal when we don't even give a shit about Morris Group. Just hand the project over without making a fuss, Zoey. There's actually something in it for you if you do so. Moreover, going against us will only destroy you. It might even get you killed."

"Are you threatening me?" Zoey questioned sharply, her expression turning grave.

Lyndsay feigned innocence and claimed, "How could that possibly be a threat? I am simply... giving you some suggestions as your BFF. You'll get something great out of it."

“My BFF? I don’t have friends like you! Don’t bother putting up an act in front of me,” Zoey gritted out.

“Haha, you just wait and see then. Not only will this project be ours, but your company will also soon belong to us,” announced Lyndsay before she laughed aloud.

Pinnacle Group was already planning on acquiring a few sizable enterprises, and both Oriental Star Group and Morris Group were already on their list.

“Oh my, how arrogant of you.”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 977

A voice rang up at that moment, and everyone turned to see Levi strolling into the conference room.

“You! Levi Garrison!”

Lyndsay gritted her teeth, revealing her nasty nature as soon as she spotted the man.

Levi had been cruel in chasing Lyndsay out of the city after her evil plan was exposed.

“Acquiring Oriental and Morris? Dream on, woman!” scoffed Levi.

When Levi first heard that Pinnacle Group was there to cause trouble, he looked into the company. He was surprised to see that it belonged to his biological father, Tyrone.

He had rushed over immediately after.

As suspected, a meeting was ongoing.

Shameless vixens like Lyndsay are thriving in Pinnacle Group. Guess that proves what a terrible company Pinnacle Group really is.

“Your Oriental and Morris? Hahaha..” Lyndsay let out a boisterous laugh.

Levi stared at her like he was looking at a lunatic.

“How shameless of you to say that, Levi Garrison. Oriental Star Group belongs to Zoey and might, in a way, be yours. However, what does Morris Group have anything to do with you?” scoffed Lyndsay.

“I’m going to be frank with you all. We’re definitely acquiring Morris Group, and Oriental Star Group is going down with it!” someone from the side chirped.

Pinnacle Group had always operated from the dark, and Tyrone was the sole reason it was making itself known at that moment.

Tyrone was about to inherit the position as the head of the Garrison clan in Oakland City.

To achieve that, he needed to earn the approval of every member of the Garrison clan.

That was why he needed ridiculously amazing achievements on his resume.

The man owned corporations all over Erudia that all operated from the shadows. Now was the moment they needed to show themselves to the world. He needed to expand their operations ten folds within a short frame of time.

Pinnacle Group, which was under Lyndsay, was tasked with acquiring Morris Group and other sizable enterprises.

“Okay, we’ll see who comes out on top,” Levi replied sweetly with a smile.

Tyrone wishes to acquire my company? Hah! Dream on, old man. There’s no saying which company will end up acquiring the other.

“So, Zoey, are you sure you’re not going to back down?” asked Lyndsay.

"I'm very sure!"

"Okay, just you wait then. I'll defeat you mercilessly, and after I acquire your company, I will force you to get on your knees!"

Lyndsay and the others walked away proudly after saying their piece.

Zoey bit her lip lightly before she turned to Levi and asked, "So you've learned about everything?"

"Yeah. You didn't need to hide anything from me, though. Tyrone and I are bound to meet eventually," he replied.

She nodded.

That actually makes sense.

She then thought about how they were about to go to war with Tyrone's company.

"Pinnacle Group is too powerful. It's the secret entity controlling everything in South Hampton. I'm not confident about going against it." She sighed.

She had only been that persistent earlier because she was at odds with Lyndsay.

However, the difference in their power was too great in an actual war.

"Why are you worried? They don't get to cause mayhem in our territory," commented Levi; he didn't see Pinnacle Group as a threat at all.

"I'm not a coward, but Pinnacle Group is too strong. Even Morris Group has no shot against it," replied Zoey exasperatedly.

The difference in the strength of the two companies was too much, and it was not something that hard work and determination could make up for.

"So, are you giving up on that project?" Levi asked.

"No way! I'll be sure to fight for it," Zoey declared firmly.

She thought about how the project would elevate herself and make it so that neither the Lopez nor the Black families could control her anymore.

That thought alone pumped Zoey up.

“You can work on other projects if you want to let this one go. Just inform Iris about it,” said Levi.

You’re the boss. All you have to do is say the word, and you can get another project.

“Levi, that project values over a hundred billion. There aren’t many projects like that out there. We can’t just pick and choose to switch as we please.”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 978

Zoey stared at Levi incredulously.

How could he change the project so casually?

This is a project worth hundreds of billions.

Has he gotten too used to being a lay about?

How could he make everything sound so casual?

Little did she know that it only took one sentence from her to change a project.

The Pinnacle Group owned a large building in South City, which Lyndsay and the other senior management members returned to.

“It’s simple. Just get rid of this hundred billion technology project first. We can then chip away at Morris Group bit by bit!”

Lyndsay and the others had already planned out the annexation in detail.

They were in deep discussion when the door to the conference room was suddenly pushed open.

Seven people walked in.

An old man dressed in a green suit was leading the group. His imposing mannerism combined with the murderous aura he emitted made everyone present hold their breaths.

“W-welcome, M-Mr. Edward, thank you for honoring us with your presence. W-we apologize for...”

The few senior management members of Pinnacle Group immediately knelt down in his presence.

“Kneel immediately!”

Trembling with trepidation, Lyndsay and the rest all got on their knees.

The Garrison clan imposed very strict rules on their members; they were expected to kneel the moment any of them met a person of high ranking.

Otherwise, it would be considered as a show of disrespect, which was akin to a straight path to hell.

Jayden Yolander, the current leader of Pinnacle Group, understood that this meant that something big was about to happen.

Someone of Edward’s level would not appear even once in thirty years.

Therefore, for him to make an appearance meant that something big was about to happen.

“I heard that you all have done quite well, seeing as to how you already have South Hampton’s economy under your control. Continue your expansion and fight to acquire all the property in the South. This will be of incredible help to Master Tyrone once he secures his position as the leader of the Garrison clan!” Edward proclaimed loudly.

"Understood. We're now planning to acquire Morris Group that is basking in the limelight right now. This will definitely be an added advantage to us," Jayden informed.

He then asked bravely, "Are you here for that bastard, Mr. Edward?"

"Indeed I am. He has already become a snake in the grass, and I have to get rid of him personally!" Edward replied coldly.

"Which bastard?"

Lyndsay and the rest were all puzzled by his remark.

"Of course I will let you know who he is! He's actually right here. He's Levi Garrison..."

Edward told them the gist of everything.

Lyndsay flew into a rage when she heard that the man Edward was referring to was Levi. "People like him should have been killed a long time ago!"

"Oh, would you mind elaborating further on why you're so angered?" Edward asked her curiously.

"Levi is an unscrupulous, materialistic, and insidiously cunning person! I think he will definitely make use of his position as an Oakland City Garrison to do something... I know his character very well! I have no doubt that he will use himself and his mother to threaten the Garrison clan!"

Edward turned furious. "Indeed, once a bastard, always a bastard! So what if he has noble blood running through his veins? Clearly, he's a bastard who's unworthy of belonging in our family. How can such a despicable person call himself a Garrison when he is filled with nothing but deep-rooted shamelessness?"

Edward felt that Levi had become a huge invisible threat.

"Die, the bastard must die!" the former shouted vehemently.

"Mr. Edward, how do you propose we deal with him? Will you be personally handling it?" Jayden asked.

Would it be overkill to have Edward deal with it directly?

“It is not appropriate for me to do such a thing as it could impact Master Tyrone negatively if people notice it,” Edward replied firmly.

“Now, you go ahead and release a kill order on the dark web. Whoever kills Levi Garrison and Emma Jones within one day will be rewarded with three billion!”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 979

Lyndsay inhaled sharply when she heard that.

Three billion just to take Levi’s wretched life?

Isn’t that being overly generous?

How could Levi the low life be worth that much?

She was not the only one who felt that the price for Levi’s head was a little too high.

Nonetheless, this was Edward’s command, and it was imperative that Jayden follows through.

The man immediately released this information on the dark web.

Swiftly, numerous elite fighters and assassins heeded the call.

The top fighters outside of Erudia could not do anything but watch enviously as the deadline was way too short for them to make a trip for the mission.

They could barely reach Erudia in time, let alone kill Levi.

Suddenly, all the elite fighters of Southern Erudia had gathered enthusiastically.

Nobody had any time to lose.

After all, three billion was being offered!

“Mr. Edward, within thirty minutes, around one hundred top assassins have heeded the call. The number is still growing!”

Jayden smiled in glee as he reported to Edward.

“Alright, no matter how much of a genius Levi Garrison is, he will not escape this time!”

In comparison to Jayden, Edward was completely calm.

The latter was suddenly reminded of Jonah Garrison, so he gave the man a call.

“You better watch out, Jonah, you piece of trash. You’re going to see how Levi is going to die in one day.”

Stunned, the other man on the line immediately shouted, “Edward, listen to me and get yourself back to Oakland City as quick as you can! Tell Tyrone about this and let him handle it. Don’t get yourself involved in this.”

“Haha, why should I do that? Should I be afraid of him? I can handle something small like this on my own. Why would I need to trouble Master Tyrone?”

Edward was full of confidence.

He could not imagine what kind of ability Levi would possess in order to survive under such extreme conditions.

“Fine, don’t say I didn’t warn you.”

“Hmph, all of you useless good-for-nothings! And you dare call yourselves Garrisons?”

Jonah let out a bitter laugh. “Another ignoramus.”

Edward completely disregarded the man's words, merely viewing him as a useless coward.

Moreover, what waves could a bastard like Levi raise?

Lyndsay was the happiest of them all when she found out that Levi was about to die.

The woman still held a deep grudge over how Levi had driven her out of the city six years ago. Revenge had always been on her mind.

She had the intention to kill both Levi and Zoey, and the opportunity was being presented itself before her right now.

After Levi died, she wished to torture Zoey to death.

The workers of Morris Group finished their work when night fell.

Levi and Zoey were about to head home when they saw Lyndsay waiting for them.

"What's the matter? Old friends can't come looking for each other? Are you two actually going to ignore me like this?"

Lyndsay sniggered.

"Can we help you?" Levi asked coldly.

"I'm here to deliver a piece of bad news."

Lyndsay couldn't help but chuckle in anticipation at seeing the look on their faces.

"Oh?"

Levi was baffled. She's here to tell me what?

"Zoey, please give us a moment. I've something to say to him!"

Levi patted Zoey lightly in assurance and the woman walked to one side.

"Alright. What sort of news are you here to tell me?" Levi asked.

"You're about to die!"

Lyndsay stared at Levi, a ferocious expression playing on her face.

"You will not live to see tomorrow morning's sun! I've been waiting for this day to come for a very long time. It's a pity that you'll be unable to watch how I'll torture Zoey after your death. Don't worry though, she will surely come and keep you company in hell!"

Lyndsay then let out a loud laugh maniacally.

"I'm about to die? Hahaha..."

Upon seeing Levi laugh, Lyndsay looked at him, confused.

Wasn't... wasn't he afraid of death?

"I'm telling you, you are definitely going to die soon, despite who you may be!"

She gritted her teeth in anger.

With a deepened smile, the man said, "Let's have a bet, shall we? I bet that I will still be alive tomorrow! Just you wait and see!"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 980

"Alright, if I see you alive tomorrow, I'll kneel in front of you right here, at your company entrance!"

Lyndsay agreed to the bet he proposed right away.

She knew about the plans that had been set in motion and also knew that Edward was the one overlooking the fight.

There was no way Levi will be able to avoid death.

This was why she was able to engage in the bet.

“Alright.”

Levi then approached Zoey from behind.

The latter asked curiously, “Why was Lyndsay look for you?”

“She says she wants to kneel in front of me tomorrow...” Levi answered nonchalantly.

The woman stared at him with astonishment. “Oh? Has Lyndsay gone mad? She actually wants to kneel in front of you?”

“She might have just found her conscience! We shall wait to watch her kneel tomorrow.”

Zoey was still befuddled by the whole situation. “That’s strange. Why would she suddenly say such an absurd thing?”

After dinner that night, Levi left the manor.

From what Lyndsay had told him, he knew that the Garrison clan was about to take action on him.

The matter was no longer about the different branch families. It was definitely the Garrison clan from Oakland City.

Hence, he needed to do some preparation to counter their attacks.

Levi soon arrived at the warzone compound.

“Phoenix, run a check on all the strangers that have entered South City today and sieve out all the targets!” Levi commanded.

"Alright, but there is a certain level of difficulty here. I will need to activate the Iron Brigade's Skynet in order to run such a check."

Phoenix frowned.

Levi nodded. "Alright, I'll grant you the access authority!"

The Iron Brigade's Skynet would aid Phoenix's investigation as it covered every corner of the city.

This would mean that the elite fighters, who had come into the city to murder Levi, had nowhere to hide. They were all covered by this Skynet.

"At the same time, get the Cavalry Regiment ready. When Phoenix confirms the targets, Azure Dragon, get rid of every one of them!"

"Yes, Sir!"

Azure Dragon nodded.

After giving all the instructions, Levi headed home to accompany his mother and Zoey as if nothing had happened.

Meanwhile, at Golden Plaza.

Edward and Jayden, together with the rest of them, were paying constant close attention to the situation.

Lyndsay was very concerned about this particular matter, so she had requested to stay.

"Mr. Edward, up till now, three hundred and eighty-eight elite fighters have arrived! The numbers are growing, and it is expected to grow till five hundred before twelve o'clock!"

Jayden chuckled quietly. "Five hundred elite fighters? No matter how powerful he claims to be, Levi won't know what hit him!"

"All of them are top assassins! He will have no chance at survival!" Edward growled coldly.

This was because they had purposely set a prerequisite when they released the mission on the dark web – only top elites were allowed to take up this mission.

Levi was about to be assassinated by the top five hundred elite fighters.

Lyndsay was extremely excited to hear of such plans.

Death will surely claim Levi, even if the man has ten lives!

How could he place such a bet saying that he will survive the attacks?

Hah, what a joke!

Levi Garrison, you still want me to kneel before you?

That won't ever happen!

You will never have such an opportunity in this lifetime!

I will not give it to you!

Finally, twelve o'clock arrived.

"How many people have now gathered?" Edward questioned.

Damien had already pressed him about the situation once.

It seemed like the Garrison clan of Oakland City was growing anxious about the matter.

"There's currently a total of five hundred and thirty-eight people! The reward is abundant, so people are rushing to make their way here!" Jayden informed gleefully.

"Alright, let them begin their hunt!" Edward commanded.

The leader of Pinnacle Group immediately released the command in the dark web:
Commence action!

"Levi, don't blame me for killing you. Bastards simply have no place in this world!"

A chilly glare flashed across Edward's eyes.

Once the command aired, people began hunting Levi Garrison, roaming every corner of South City for him.

Many fixed their eyes on Levi's residence, planning to target him there.

The Protector Chapter 981

Levi was already serenely asleep in his bed.

He knew nobody would be able to get close to his manor that night.

At the warzone compound, Phoenix was busy controlling a few computers. There were dense red dots on the map above.

The red dots indicated their targets – the elite fighters who had heeded the Garrison clan's call to assassinate Levi.

"They have started to take action!"

Through the Skynet surveillance, all the assassins were clearly seen moving towards the city center.

"Alright, let the Cavalry Regiment begin action!" Phoenix ordered.

"On top of that, there are other people who are still trying to get into South City!" she informed.

"Leave that matter to us! From now on, we will not allow anyone to enter the city."

Azure Dragon and Kirin, together with their team, soon began to take action, keeping all the elite fighters from entering the city to join the hunt.

Amongst these elite fighters, the speediest team had to be the Southeastern Tigers. These three brothers had been practicing martial arts since they were young and were incredibly skilled.

They made their way near Levi's manor very quickly.

“We’re the first to arrive here. Once we kill Levi and his mother, the reward of three billion will be ours.”

With excitement in their eyes, the Southeastern Tigers rushed into the manor.

However, at the very next moment, two figures appeared in front of them.

The two of them were Lionfang Knights.

Bang!

Bang!

Zlopp!

In an instant, the Southeastern Tigers lost their consciousness and fell onto the ground...

More assassins soon emerged around the manor. The moment they attempted to enter the residence, a few more figures appeared before them.

They all shared one similarity – they were all Lionfang Knights.

One by one, they disappeared.

For each assassin that popped up, another would definitely vanish.

The number of assassins who arrived was rising rapidly...

One hundred...

Two hundred...

Five hundred....

Five hundred thirty eight...

In the end, more than five hundred people had disappeared – none of them had managed to get close to the manor.

Once all the assassins had been taken care of, eighteen figures around the manor dissipated immediately.

The Cavalry Regiment had completed their mission.

At the Golden Plaza.

Jayden and the rest could not help feeling a little anxious.

“It’s already been half an hour. Why has there been no news at all?”

They began pacing up and down the room.

Lyndsay was not present there. She had left when she found out that the elite fighters were headed to kill Levi.

“Mr. Edward, should I send someone there to check what’s going on?” Jayden asked worriedly.

“There is no need for that. Such big movements will only attract attention. We cannot reveal our identities,” Edward cautioned.

“Can’t you all have a little patience? What are you afraid of? You think Levi did not die? That’ll be impossible!”

Edward shot daggers at all of them.

“Understood.”

So, everyone continued waiting with bated breath.

However, another hour soon passed, and something had yet to happen.

By now, Edward could no longer maintain his calm composure.

How could five hundred elite fighters take so long to kill Levi and his mother?

Something must have gone wrong...

Someone analyzed the situation and insinuated, "Let's wait a little longer. There could have been a conflict when they were fighting over the job. After all, the killer gets three billion. Anyone would fight for this!"

"That's true! Out of more than five hundred people, there will only be one person or one team that will end up with that three billion. They must all be fighting to murder Levi right now!"

Edward agreed with such an analysis.

Hence, everyone continued waiting.

However, another hour passed with no news being reported.

"This..."

Edward was growing increasingly impatient.

"Oh no, oh no..."

At that moment, someone ran in bearing bad news.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 982

"What happened?" Edward immediately questioned.

"The experts have vanished inexplicably, all five hundred thirty-eight of them! It's as if they were never even here!"

What?

Everyone felt as if they had been struck by lightning when they heard this piece of shocking news.

“What? They all vanished? Every single one of them?”

Edward was in shock and disbelief, just like everyone else around him.

“That’s right! It’s too strange! Everyone actually disappeared! On top of that, there was no sign of fight nor struggle at the scene. None of them actually reached Levi’s residence. They just vanished into thin air...” the person reported in a hurry.

“How is that even possible? Five hundred over elite fighters disappearing into thin air? That’s clearly not possible!”

Jayden was shocked to the core.

Edward took a deep breath before he spoke. “Someone must have taken action against them! Otherwise, how can one explain the disappearance of more than five hundred elite fighters? Such an occurrence is simply absurd!”

Everyone was just as confused as him. “But who has the ability to make more than five hundred elite fighters suddenly disappear without a trace? Such a feat is clearly impossible!”

“Yes, who could possess such abilities and power? It definitely can’t be Levi; he doesn’t have such strong abilities!”

Levi was the first person they eliminated from their list of possible suspects.

Edward suddenly thought of something and asked, “Has there been someone prominent who arrived here not too long ago?”

“Come to think of it, Mr. Edward, there is indeed someone prominent here. The God of War is here, and he has apparently killed a number of prominent figures,” Jayden told him.

“Then, it must have been the God of War who noticed these elite fighters. With his power, he can definitely make more than five hundred people disappear instantly!” Edward contemplated out loud.

“In this case, is Levi really that lucky? Did the God of War actually save his life?” Jayden exclaimed helplessly.

Edward was suddenly reminded of Jonah's warning.

The latter had already warned him not to take action.

"What could the Garrison family of Haven find difficult about killing a bastard? How can that be possible? I guess Jonah and the rest have already met the God of War."

Everything soon made sense to Edward.

"Yes, that's possible. I heard that Jonah was once saved by Kirin, who reports to the God of War. Hence, it's only logical that he would not dare to do anything under their watchful eye!"

Jayden affirmed Edward's speculation.

Bang!

Edward slammed his hands on the table violently.

"That's to say, as long as we are here, we will not be able to kill Levi?" Edward snarled.

"It seems like it! Whatever we do will be observed by the God of War, and there is no way of escaping his scope."

"How can one bastard be so lucky?" Edward sneered.

Damien had said that the rest of them would have to die if the bastard did not.

"Think of a way to get Levi and his mother out of here. Get them to a place where we are not under the sight of the God of War!" Edward ordered as he tried to keep the tone of exasperation out of his voice.

"Yes, sir!"

"Oh yes, Mr. Edward, I've heard that the God of War is also a Garrison. Could he be one of the Garrisons of Oakland City? Apart from the Garrison clan of Oakland City, no other Garrison branch has the ability to produce a superior talent like this!"

Jayden could not help but ask.

“Oh yes, when the God of War appeared out of nowhere, we assumed that he was a Garrison talent! However, after we investigated, we found out that it was not so! Both the Grand Master and Master Tyrone wishes he were a Garrison too!”

“If the God of War belongs to the Garrison clan of Oakland City, our position will surely be further elevated!”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 983

Edward was hopeful as well.

The Grand Master, Kenny Garrison, Tyrone’s father, who was also Levi’s supposed grandfather, had once said that if they were ever to meet the God of War, the man was to be their god-grandson.

They shared the same last name anyway; their positions and ranks also perfectly matched.

“Come on, if this bastard had even one-tenth of the God of War’s powers, would the Garrison clan need to kill him? Master Tyrone and even the Grand Master himself would need to plead for him to return to the family!”

Edward sighed.

Jayden allowed himself to smile. “How could you say such a thing, Mr. Edward? How could you compare a bastard to the God of War? There is no point of comparison between the two of them at all!”

“That’s true. The bastard is miles and miles beneath the God of War!”

Edward's eyes scanned the room before he said, "Think about how we can get the two of them out of there!"

To which Jayden replied, "Mr. Edward, I have an idea!"

"Out with it then!"

"Mr. Edward, you could use the Garrison clan of Oakland City's name to issue a command to the South Hampton's Joneses. You could instruct them to bring Emma Jones home and reinstate her identity as a Jones. With that, Emma and Levi will definitely leave for the Jones residence. By then, won't they be ready for slaughter?"

Jayden chuckled menacingly after he shared his thoughts.

Edward nodded in satisfaction, saying, "Brilliant! We will go with what you have proposed then!"

He then added, "I will arrange for a group of top assassins to lie in ambush throughout their journey. The moment Levi appears in South Hampton, they will instantly decimate him."

That night itself, Edward brought his men to the Jones residence in South Hampton.

"Michael, since Emma has been freed, reinstate her identity! This is an order from the Garrison clan!"

Edward delivered his command directly.

Michael, the head of the Joneses, did not think too much about such an order.

When he heard that he was allowed to bring Emma home, he was very emotional and immediately agreed to do so.

The next day.

Everything went about as normal among Levi's family; it was as if nothing had happened.

However, a huge earthquake had occurred last night...

Zoey and Emma were completely ignorant about it.

"Zoey, you should head to work first. I have something to do here," Levi informed.

He then headed to the warzone compound to find out more about last night's situation.

Lyndsay was hiding in a dark corner in front of the Morris Group building, observing her surroundings the entire time she was there.

She was camped out there to confirm Levi's death.

She had resorted to such measures as Jayden had not cared to update her on anything.

"Oh? Only Zoey is here. And she's walking in such a hurry? Levi is definitely dead!"

Lyndsay almost laughed out loud.

Her most hated enemy was finally dead!

"Levi, take a look at how I will torture Zoey now!"

Lyndsay laughed once more before she put on her shades and walked towards the entrance of Morris Group.

"I'm here for Zoey!"

She walked into Zoey's office with an air of arrogance. "Oh, you're still in the mood to come to work, Ms. Lopez? Why don't I see you crying?"

Such a statement made Zoey very confused.

What's up with Lyndsay?

Is there something wrong with her?

She said she wanted to kneel in front of Levi yesterday, and here she is today, spouting strange things.

What's wrong with her?

"Are you alright?" Zoey asked.

"I'm just here to see you. Mentally, you're a lot stronger than I expected you to be. And here I was expecting you to collapse. Or do you actually not love Levi nor care about him at all?"

Lyndsay was intrigued by how the other woman behaved; it was as if nothing had happened.

"What do you mean I don't care about him? Of course I love him."

Zoey was getting more and more befuddled.

What is she even doing here?

At that very moment, the office door opened, and in walked Levi.

"Ghost!"

Lyndsay screamed out loud when she saw him.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 984

"Ghost?"

Zoey grew even more confused.

Why on earth is Lyndsay spouting nonsense?

"Do I look like a ghost to you?"

Levi chuckled at her question.

Lyndsay gawked at the man with a frightened and incredulous expression.

“She’s acting really weird. Why does she keep talking gibberish?”

Zoey’s beautiful brows furrowed slightly, and bewilderment glinted in her big, round eyes.

“She’s here to kneel before me.”

With that, Levi dragged the terrified woman out of the office and to the front of the company’s entrance.

Only then did Lyndsay slowly regain her composure.

“You... You’re not dead?” she asked in disbelief.

“I told you I wouldn’t die, didn’t I?” Levi chuckled.

The woman hurriedly sent a text to seek confirmation on the matter, and Jayden soon verified that Levi’s death did not occur as planned.

“How are you still alive? It should’ve been impossible!”

She couldn’t wrap her head around this fact.

“Why do you say so? Did you send someone to murder me?”

The grin on Levi’s face grew even wider as he spoke.

“No, no... I should actually get going...”

Turning around, Lyndsay tried to scurry away.

“Hold on. Did I say you could leave?”

Levi's voice echoed in her ears.

"What? How can you stop me from leaving? What are you trying to do?" she retorted fearlessly.

I'm not scared of him. He's just an illegitimate bastard who's going to lose his life anytime.

"Do you still remember our bet yesterday?"

His words made Lyndsay's expression fall. Yet, the woman gritted her teeth, denying it. "Our bet? What bet are you talking about? I don't know a thing about it."

"Besides, you're not qualified to have ever placed a bet with me," she added.

"You said it right here yesterday evening. You told me that if I'm still alive today, you'll kneel before me now," Levi stated slowly, enunciating every word.

"No way! No such thing happened! Why would I agree to such a lame bet?" Lyndsay denied adamantly.

"Move aside! I'm leaving!"

She attempted to shove him out of the way, but he caught ahold of her and said, "I'll let you go only if you kneel to me."

Levi's voice was ice cold and intimidating.

Lyndsay's face flushed in embarrassment.

Of course I remember the bet. But there's no way I'm going to kneel to this bastard! That'll be the humiliation of a lifetime! I'm the vice president of the Pinnacle Group and a prominent figure under the Garrison clan of Oakland City. According to the norms in the upper echelons of society, I'm nobler than the others because of my close association with the Garrison clan. It'll be so embarrassing if I kneel before a lowly illegitimate son like him. So there's no way I'm going to admit it.

"You claimed that there's a bet between us. Do you have any proof of it?" she asked, continuing to insist that she had nothing to do with whatever bet the man was talking about.

Only Levi and I were here yesterday, so I'm sure he has no proof.

Levi burst into mocking laughter.

"You want proof? I have it."

He took his phone out and played a recording of what Lyndsay had said yesterday.

Her voice sounded from the phone speakers, and it was clear that she had indeed said she would kneel to Levi if he wasn't dead.

"You... You..."

Never had she thought that he would have recorded their conversation.

She wasn't aware of the fact that Levi actually made a habit of keeping pieces of evidence whenever he was dealing with cunning people like her.

"What else do you have to say? Kneel before me now," he sneered at her.

Lyndsay shot him a death stare and said, "So what if you have proof? The recording must be fake! Even if it's real, I was only joking. How dare you ask me to kneel? Dream on! Never in your lifetime will you be qualified for me to kneel before you. It'll be impossible for you to make me do such a thing!"

Lyndsay continued to insist on leaving shamelessly.

Levi scowled. Alright. I guess there's only one way to handle a scoundrel like her.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 985

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 985

The only way for me to get my point across would be me hitting her.

Slap!

Crisp and loud, a tight slap landed on Lyndsay's cheek.

She was dumbstruck by the sudden blow he had landed on her, so she stared at Levi in utter disbelief.

"How dare you slap me?"

"I only did so because you refused to kneel before me."

Slap!

Levi then gave her another slap.

Within seconds, the woman's reddened face swelled up severely.

"I'll hit you once more if you don't get on your knees."

Slap!

“Are you going to kneel or not?”

Just when he was about to slap her for the fourth time, Lyndsay fell heavily to her knees with a thud in front of him, begging with a whimper, “I... I will kneel now... Don’t hit me anymore...”

Thud! Thud! Thud! Thud...

She knelt before Levi ten times.

In the meantime, the employees of the Morris Group looked at the two with curiosity in their eyes.

Even Zoey and Iris were watching the scene play out.

“Iris, what’s going on? Why would the arrogant Lyndsay Granger kneel in front of Levi? This is unbelievable!” Zoey exclaimed.

A secretary beside them agreed, “You’re right. Lyndsay is the vice president of Pinnacle Group. Why would she do this?”

Iris only gave the woman an awkward smile without saying a word.

Because he’s the omnipotent boss of Morris Group.

Staring at the scene downstairs, Zoey was intrigued by Levi, the enigmatic man.

He sure is a man of mystery.

Levi stood at the company’s entrance and flashed Lyndsay half a smile. “You wouldn’t have gotten slapped if you had just been honest and knelt before me.”

The woman scuttled away hastily once she finished kneeling to him.

Her eyes were full of hostility and resentment as she left in a hurry.

Six years ago, he chased me out of North Hampton, and that moment was the biggest shame in my life. Now, he made me go through such terrible humiliation again.

Her hatred toward him began to grow even stronger.

“Just you wait, Levi Garrison. I won’t let you off the hook for this!” she growled at him through gritted teeth.

However, Levi couldn’t care less about her and her threats. “You couldn’t stand against me six years ago, let alone now.”

Lyndsay rushed over to ask Jayden about Levi, and the latter gave her a straightforward answer, telling her that she had no right to enquire about the matter.

It was late at night when Levi reached home.

He saw Emma oozing delight and excitement when he stepped into his house.

“Mom, what made you so happy?” he asked.

“Levi, your grandpa has asked me to head back to the Jones residence. He’s going to reinstate me as the daughter of the Jones family and rewrite my name on the family register in our family’s ancestral shrine,” his mother replied with much enthusiasm.

The woman didn’t have many wishes. Returning to the Jones family was one of them.

Nevertheless, Levi’s brows knitted together at his mother’s words.

The Joneses never mentioned this before. Why do they want to reinstate Mom all of a sudden?

He let out a snicker as a wave of realization hit him.

This must be an order from the Garrison clan. Michael must have thought the Garrison clan has decided to let bygones be bygones and thinks that they’ve stopped going against mom and I. Little does he know that this is just a scheme of theirs. The Garrison clan is trying to lure us out of here so that they can kill us on the way to the Jones residence or in South Hampton.

Michael came to pick Emma up himself the next day.

The father-and-daughter duo delightedly chatted for a while upon seeing each other.

Emma asked inquisitively, "Dad, did the Garrison clan really ask you to reinstate me as your daughter? Does this mean they won't pursue the matter anymore?"

Michael let out a light laugh while nodding his head. "That's for sure. I believe they will stop holding you accountable. That's why I'm allowing you to come back home."

She shed tears of joy at the news.

"Finally, my son and I are safe. We can now live in peace."

Levi chose not to debunk the scheme too early. I'm okay with it as long as mom is happy.

The Protector Chapter 986

“Mr. Garri... Levi, let’s head off then.”

Thankfully, Michael reacted quickly enough not to address Levi wrongly.

“Sure, let’s get moving.”

Soon, a large convoy of the Jones family’s luxurious cars could be seen headed to South Hampton.

This time, Michael had employed the most impressive homecoming etiquette because of the guilt he felt toward his daughter and Levi’s status.

In the car, Emma could barely contain her eagerness to head home.

The Garrison clan has finally overlooked the grudges between us. Hence, I can now live a worry-free life with dignity.

The moment the convoy of luxurious cars departed, Edward was notified right away.

“Alright, we should get going too. It’s time to send Levi a great gift,” Edward said with a sneer.

The Jones family’s cars soon crossed the border into South Hampton, heading toward the suburbs, where the Jones residence was located.

Emma had fallen asleep on the way there.

Gazing at the woman, Levi made a vow in his heart. Mom, I'll protect your dream and hopes. There's no way I'll let the Garrison clan harm us.

On the other hand, Emma's father was engrossed in his grand plans for his family.

With his mother around, Levi had no choice but to accept this man as his grandpa.

As a result, the future of the Jones family seemed secured.

Bang!

The convoy of cars screeched to a stop abruptly.

"What's going on?" Michael immediately shouted, demanding answers.

A group of fighters dressed in black appeared on both sides of the road with murderous looks on their faces.

Michael got out of the car and saw a few familiar faces, including Edward's.

"Mr. Edward, what is the meaning of this?"

The man was baffled by what he saw.

"Hahaha! The God of War was present in the vicinity of Levi and his mom's place, so it was inconvenient for us to make any moves against the two. That's why we lured them out. Thanks to you, we now have a golden opportunity to seize them."

Edward let out a sinister laugh.

Only then did Michael realize that he had been fooled.

I was wondering why the Garrison clan chose to let go of the enmity out of the blue. They even allowed Emma to join the Jones family again. Turns out that it was just a scheme to lure Levi out to his death.

Moments later, Emma got out of the car too, and she shuddered the second she laid eyes on Edward.

I can never forget this man. After all, he's Tyrone Garrison's butler.

"Ms. Jones, we meet again. It's been thirty years," Edward said with a smile.

However, his tone soon turned vicious. "It's a shame that I'll have to bid farewell to you when we've just met."

Emma gave him a bitter smile. "Why can't you guys let my son and I off?"

"Hahaha... No way! You and that bastard don't deserve to live! How can you not understand this even after thirty years?"

Edward laughed out loud scornfully at her.

"What about Tyrone? Can he really bear to kill me and his own flesh and blood?" the woman questioned exasperatedly.

Edward only sniggered in response. "His own flesh and blood? Master Tyrone has only one son – Damien Garrison. Olivia Garcia is his only wife."

"Who are you two in the eyes of Master Tyrone? Does he even know you? Stop humiliating yourself! You'll never be able to marry into the Garrison clan!"

Edward's insults were like a sharp blade that was stabbing Emma's heart over and over again.

The immense heartache made her feel as if her heart was bleeding.

"You, together with that bastard you gave birth to, will vanish forever today! Master Tyrone will not be troubled anymore."

The man broke into a fit of laughter after speaking.

"Do you mean we're going to die?" Levi asked suddenly.

"Are you the bastard?" Edward asked him in return, his eyes ablaze with anger.

Levi sneered in an icy voice, "If my mom wasn't beside me now, you would've been dead after you said such things."

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 987

He refused to show the violet and murderous side of him in front of his mother. Otherwise, these people would've been long dead.

Emma stared intently at her son, and a pang of terror washed over her once she caught a glimpse of brutality in him.

Levi's words briefly stunned Edward and his men.

"How arrogant! You actually think you can kill Mr. Edward? That's ridiculous!"

"How dare a bastard like you be so boastful? You're digging your own grave!"

Edward's men retorted in anger.

Unexpectedly, Edward grinned instead of growing mad. "That's the difference between Mr. Damien and this bastard. Mr. Damien proves himself with his ability, but this bastard is all bark and no bite. The two of them are worlds apart."

Right then, Michael warned him coldly, "Mind your language, Edward! You despicable old coot."

Edward and his men could not believe what they had just heard from the head of the Joneses.

"What? Michael, how dare you talk back to us? You sure have got a lot of nerve."

All this while, a mere servant like Caleb was sufficient to oppress the entire Jones family. Michael used to be too timid to utter a word in the presence of the Garrison clan.

But he had the guts to shout at Edward today.

His behavior was totally unacceptable in their eyes; they didn't know that the man was completely unafraid of them now.

Michael smirked. *Why should I be afraid when Levi is here?*

"Damn you, Michael! How dare you speak to me that way! Believe it or not, I can get rid of the entire Jones family with only a few words!" Edward shrieked in rage.

Michael's heart skipped a beat at the man's threat.

Caleb alone – not to mention Edward – had the capability to wipe out the Jones family.

Such a feat was a piece of cake for them; they were way too powerful.

"I don't believe you! The Garrison clan has always been haughty in Oakland City, and now you're behaving atrociously everywhere else! Do you really think no one is able to stand against you?" Michael refuted.

"Are you really going to side with the bastard and his mom against our family?"

Edward shot daggers at him.

"Yes! So what if we go against you? We're not afraid at all!" Mia, the head of the Joneses, suddenly declared.

"Yes! No one can touch my daughter and grandson as long as I'm around. Not only will I protect them, but I'll reinstate them. She's my daughter and a part of the Jones family!" Michael bellowed firmly.

Edward was enraged by his words. Wherever he went, everyone had revered; no one had dared to oppose the Garrison clan.

The Joneses were the first.

They had actually outrightly challenged the majestic Garrison clan.

According to the rules set by the Garrison clan in Oakland City, all the Joneses had to be slaughtered for this act alone.

“Fine! You and your family are out of your minds for wishing to go against the Garrison clan. You lot indeed have balls of steel!” Edward growled.

He then sneered, “Do you really want to protect the mother-and-son duo? How are you going to do that? Or does the Jones family have what it takes to save them? What a joke!”

The man waved his hand, and dozens of fighters showed up instantly.

He had brought these highly skilled fighters from the Garrison clan along with him. Every one of them was comparable to Caleb.

There was no way out for the Joneses today.

“I’ll protect them even if it costs my life!”

Michael went all out, not just for his family’s sake, but also for Levi to see his determination.

“You can’t protect the Jones family!”

Edward was merciless.

“What if we join him?”

A voice suddenly rang out.

“Charge!”

At the next second, countless figures emerged from the woods on both sides of the road.

About a thousand of them appeared on each side – a large crowd forming behind and in front of them.

The men surrounded the place in no time.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War

[The Protector] Chapter 988

Such a massive formation startled everyone, including Edward and his fighters.

Never had they expected there to be so many men waiting in ambush.

Despite their unparalleled capabilities, Edward and his fighters couldn't help panicking on the inside.

The Joneses were taken aback by such a sight, but they soon snapped back to their senses and were over the moon when they recognized the faces of some of those men.

Among the crowd stood an old man – he was no one other than Xabian.

Xabian stepped forward and bellowed, "Xabian Goel and the top hundred prominent families from South Hampton are here to welcome Ms. Jones."

The rest of the men gathered around him followed his lead and shouted, "Welcome home, Ms. Jones!"

Their deafening voices shook everyone present to the core.

Meanwhile, Emma gaped at them in astonishment and disbelief.

What's going on here?

Xabian cast a glance at Michael. "What are you waiting for? Take Ms. Jones home now."

Snapping out of his trance, Michael glanced at Edward, hinting to Xabian that the latter and his fighters were still in his way.

Squinting his eyes slightly, Xabian said in a cold voice, "Who dares stand in the way of the top hundred prominent families from South Hampton?"

"Yes! Who dares stop us from welcoming them home?" the others followed and yelled.

This is ridiculous!

Fury spiked within Edward at the sight of the huge crowd.

I thought the Joneses were the only ones who had the audacity to resist the Garrison clan. But now, even the top hundred prominent families from South Hampton are on Emma's side. Are they trying to challenge our authority?

"Hold on. Don't you dare leave!"

With a dignified expression, Edward scanned through Xabian and his men. "The Garrison clan demands Emma Jones' and her son's lives to be taken. Do you understand?"

"Leave now! No outsider is allowed to meddle in this matter, especially peasants like you," someone from the Garrison clan reprimanded.

Hearing that, Xabian chuckled. "Firstly, South Hampton is our territory. Secondly, Ms. Jones is under our protection, so one shall touch her."

"That's right! None of you can oppress us in our territory!"

"Michael, take them away! I'll see who dares to stop you from leaving. We don't go around stirring up trouble, but we're not cowards. We'll go all out to fight against anyone who provokes us!"

Xabian was adamant in his decision, undaunted by the fighters that were glaring his way.

The attitude of the top hundred prominent families enraged the members of the Garrison clan.

Since when does the Garrison clan from Oakland City have no authority here? Are these people mad? How dare they resist us and meddle in our affairs?

"Xabian, have you thought this through? Are you sure you want to poke your nose into the Garrison clan's affairs?" Edward scowled.

"Yes, I'm sure. Whoever lays a hand on Ms. Jones and Mr. Garrison will be considered our enemy. We'll fight with all we have even if we're no match for you! So what if you're members of the Garrison clan? We're not afraid of you! We'll not let you off since you're causing havoc in our territory."

Xabian squared them up, showing the resolution of the prominent families to war to the knife.

Edward was now smoldering with rage.

There's surely a bunch of lunatics if they're crazy enough to cross the Garrison clan!

The Jones family's cars began on their journey once again, ignoring Edward and his fighters, who were bottling up their wrath while watching them leave.

The fighters clutched their weapons tightly, prepared to pounce on and kill Levi and his mom on Edward's command.

Thump! Thump! Thump!

The entire place was in pin-drop silence; everyone's racing heartbeats were almost audible.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 989

A fight was about to break out as the tense atmosphere enveloped every one of them.

If the Garrison clan made the first move, the top hundred prominent families would not back down, even if such actions would cost them their lives.

The Garrison clan fighters were still waiting for Edward's command.

However, the man didn't utter a word even after the Jones family's cars disappeared out of their sight.

What's happening? Has Mr. Edward given up? Are we not going to kill them?

The fighters were baffled.

Why should the Garrison clan fear these men from South Hampton? Back then, even Caleb could handle them single-handedly.

Staring at Edward, Xabian said, "Give it a try. I don't mind sacrificing my life fighting against you."

All the men on Xabian's side glared at the fighters, ready for a fight to the death.

In the end, Edward didn't give the killing command, allowing the Jones family's cars to drive away.

"Retreat!" Xabian instructed, and the top hundred prominent families left in unison.

Soon, only Edward and his fighters were left standing there.

"Mr. Edward, why didn't you give us the command to kill them?"

Puzzled, his men questioned him.

Edward heaved a sigh. "I don't understand why the top hundred prominent families stood up for Emma. What makes them so determined to do so? They didn't relent, even after we warned them."

The others couldn't understand why that had happened either. "We have nothing to fear, Mr. Edward. They only had a few thousand men. It wasn't a threat to us at all."

"Yes, I'm aware of that. But if we chose to start a fight, both of us would've gotten hurt badly. After all, there are only dozens of men with us now. They outnumbered us greatly.

Besides, the news will get about if we make a big deal out of this." Edward analyzed the situation and broke it down for the fighters to understand.

"You're right. If we pushed them over the edge, they might tell the whole Erudia about our deeds."

"But are we just going to endure their disrespect?"

Edward sneered, "What else can we do? Kill them? Do you think that is possible? Let's head back first. We need to strategize our next move."

This time, the Garrison clan had lost miserably.

We could've killed them without breaking a sweat, but the prominent families from South Hampton saved them. Something is not right. Back then, Caleb alone could oppress the entire South Hampton, but the people are now willing to risk their lives to protect the mother-and-son duo. There must be something fishy going on.

Meanwhile, the Jones family's cars had arrived at the Jones residence.

Emma was still in a state of bewilderment.

Why did the prominent families in South Hampton protect me? They even had the nerve to go against the Garrison clan.

Before she could piece the pieces together, she found herself in front of the ancestral shrine.

There was a set of complicated procedures to go through in accordance with the family law. Nevertheless, Michael couldn't wait any longer to write his daughter's name on the family register.

He couldn't help shooting a few glances at Levi.

However, the latter simply stroked Mia's head and said, "Make it simple."

Mia nodded in agreement. "Right, let's make it simple."

After getting approval from both Levi and the head of the family, Michael simplified the procedures.

Before the last step of the reinstatement, Emma called out to Michael, causing everyone to turn and look at her with perplexed expressions.

“Father, are you sure about reinstating me?” she asked.

“Yes, I’m positive.”

Her father nodded firmly.

“But the Garrison clan has yet to agree to this. If you do it, you’re going against them, and they’ll certainly place the blame on us. Aren’t you or the Joneses scared?” she asked.

“Don’t worry. I’ve already thought it through. How can I let my daughter and grandchild be orphaned and homeless? I’ll fight against the Garrison clan if they ever blame us. I’ll do whatever it takes to reinstate you.”

Levi nodded in agreement. “Why should we be afraid of the Garrison clan?”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 990

Hearing Levi’s comforting words, Michael felt assured that he was making the right decision.

Whatever happens, he’ll be here to back us up.

“I’m going to reinstate Emma Jones as a part of the Jones family in front of our ancestors today...”

Soon, the rituals ended, and Emma’s name was on the family register once again.

The woman had been waiting for this day for way too long.

Tears of joy escaped her eyes once the ritual was completed.

I thought my life was over. But much to my surprise, I reunited with my son and was reinstated as a part of the Jones family. I'll be happy even if I die now. Yet, my biggest wish is to declare in front of the Garrison clan that my son isn't a bastard, but a supreme ruler, whom all of you must look up to. However, that's out of the question, as the Garrison clan is too powerful. No matter how competent Levi is, his thirty years of accomplishments are nothing compared to the Garrison clan, which has built a strong foundation over a few thousand years.

After Emma's reinstatement, the Joneses from all over Erudia called to congratulate her.

Emma felt as if she was dreaming.

When she used to get into trouble, all the other extended families, other than the Jones family in South Hampton, shunned and cut ties with her right away.

Why are they congratulating me this time? I don't get it. From Elder Goel's attitude to the prominent families' actions, everything just seems so odd.

Never had she thought that things had turned out this way because of her son.

At night, Emma finally had a reunion dinner with her family after thirty long years.

Meanwhile, Edward and his men were still lingering somewhere in South Hampton.

They dared not go back without killing Levi and his mother.

Damien would probably end their lives if they headed back empty-handed and bearing no good news.

"We can't find out why Xabian did such a thing even after knowing that it's the Garrison clan's affair."

After hours of searching, Edward and his men had managed to find nothing, not even one clue.

“Could it be because of Levi? That man seems mysterious to me.”

Someone voiced out their suspicion.

“Levi? You think that’s actually possible? I won’t need to kill him if he has the authority to command the top hundred prominent families in South Hampton. If that’s truly the case, Master Tyrone will bring him home,” Edward refuted coldly.

“That’s true. The bastard can’t be that powerful.”

Everyone nodded.

Just then, a call from Damien came.

“Edward, how’s everything going? Is it settled? Three days should have been more than enough for you to carry out your task.”

The man’s rough voice sounded on the other side of the phone.

“Mr. Damien, I...”

Edward was silent for fear of angering Tyrone’s son.

“You’ve got to be kidding me. Haven’t you killed that bastard?”

Edward shuddered at his voice.

“Mr. Damien, please allow me to explain...”

“No! I don’t want any excuses from you! How is it that you haven’t killed him? You worthless piece of shit!”

His reprimand sent shivers down Edward’s spine.

The man knew Damien's way of doing things better than anyone else. The latter was a vicious and ruthless psycho who could take someone's life without so much as batting an eye.

Imagining the consequences scared the daylights out of Edward.

"Mr. Damien, there's been a change in the situation. Perhaps we should rethink the decision of killing Levi," he suggested carefully.

"What? Why can't we kill that bastard? Are you out of your mind?" Damien roared.

"Mr. Damien, something happened when..."

"Do you want me to kill that bastard myself?"

"No, Mr. Damien. You shouldn't need to handle such a small matter yourself."

"Small matter? It's been three days, but that bastard's still alive! And yet, here you are, telling me that it's a small matter?"

Damien then paused briefly, curious. "Is that bastard really that strong and tenacious? Is it really so hard to kill him?"

The Protector Chapter 991

“He’s just so lucky. He managed to escape our attacks unharmed every time we tried anything.”

Edward then went on to explain everything that had happened.

“Hmm. Logically, the bastard should’ve been starved to death much earlier. Yet, this lowlife lives longer than I expected.”

Damien abruptly changed the subject. “But it’ll be such a disgrace that the Garrison clan can’t even kill a bastard. Do you know that? You’ve ruined our family’s reputation! Kill Levi and his mom, or you’ll die! By hook or by crook, you must get this done. Do you understand me? Kill whoever from South Hampton tries to stop you too! If anyone of them spread the news, massacre the entire city! Spare no one who knows about the past incident.”

His violent voice echoed on the other side of the phone.

Edward gasped in shock.

Massacre the entire South Hampton?

“Mr. Damien, at least a few thousand people in South Hampton already know about this. Do you really want us to kill them all?”

His Adam’s apple bobbed as he swallowed hard.

“Yes, kill them all! No one shall know about this! Plus, those people in South Hampton are a lost cause anyway,” Damien instructed resolutely.

How brutal! Mr. Damien is way crueler than his father and grandmother. A man like him is surely meant to do great things. He will certainly be more accomplished than Master Tyrone.

"I got it, Mr. Damien. We've only one night to do this as Levi and his mom will be going back tomorrow," Edward informed.

"Alright. Kill them at all costs! I know our family has many fighters in the South. I'm now giving you the authority to mobilize them," Damien told him.

"Understood!"

Two hundred fighters gathered in front of Edward at midnight.

The Garrison clan had been secretly training and keeping these men at various places in the South.

Such training was to ensure the influence of the most powerful ancient family across the whole of Erudia. It was also a backup for any unforeseen circumstances.

"Kill them all!" Edward ordered.

"Xabian Goel, none of you will be able to escape this tonight. You shall all rot in hell! This is the price you shall pay for going against the mighty Garrison clan!"

A glint of malice flashed across Edward's gaze.

The fighters were soon on the move, aiming to slaughter everyone in South Hampton.

It showed how influential the Garrison clan was.

Anyone who messed with them had a death wish.

In the Edburg Manor.

Emma was busy catching up with her family while Levi stood outside, puffing away at a cigarette.

Just then, Ezra called from the West Warzone.

“Boss, I think I’ll be able to make it to your wedding because the mission will be ending earlier than expected,” he informed excitedly.

“Great, I’ll be waiting!”

It’s great that Ezra can attend my wedding.

“I’ll be coming with Wyatt from the North, Rogier from the South, and Colton from the East. Someone from each of the Nine Warzones must attend your wedding. Despite our status, you’re still our boss and master. Hence, we can’t be absent,” Ezra continued enthusiastically.

I’m going to attend the boss’ wedding together with the Commander-In-Chief of the Nine Warzones. We have to be there to witness the most important moment in our boss’ life.

“Okay, I’ll be sure to prepare a ton of wine for you guys.”

At that thought, Levi grew more eager for his wedding day to come.

“By the way, boss, there’s one more thing...”

Before he could finish his sentence, however, Levi interrupted him. “Hold on. Something’s not right.”

He had sensed something unusual happening around him.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 992

Tension quickly escalated when some fighters appeared around Edburg Manor.

“Mr. Garrison, it seems like there are many of them,” Shadow from the Jones family noted as he came closer to Levi.

Over on the phone, Ezra's voice rang loud and clear in Levi's ears. "Boss, did you bring anyone along?"

"No, I came alone," Levi replied.

"Come on, there's no need to tackle these scums on your own. By the way, as I said, I'm done with the Beasts. They're now at South Hampton. As for the Amethyst Guards of the West, they are on the way back with the Beasts. I'll ask them to go over to assist you," Ezra reported.

"Good. I was just wondering if I'll have to dirty my hands getting rid of these people," Levi replied with an approving nod.

The Amethyst Guards of the West were known for striking fear in their enemies. Every single member of the group had impeccable skills – they were on par with the Beasts.

Outside the Edburg Manor, a good two hundred fighters besieged the building; they were all ready to break their way in.

"Make sure you spare no one, especially those on the list!" A commanding voice rang out from the multitude.

Just as the two hundred Garrison clan fighters were about to launch the attack, shadows fled across their view, and the ambiance chilled.

The smell of death pervaded the air as the fighters saw members of the Amethyst Guards and the Beasts appearing before them.

Their gazes hardened as they moved around, eyeing the two hundred men, looking like predators waiting for an opportunity to dig their blood-thirsty fangs into their prey.

Fighters from the Garrison clan shuddered at the sight and began to cluster together.

"What should we do?" someone whispered.

Everyone was reluctant to make the first strike.

The fighters had definitely not foreseen such formidable enemies from South Hampton.

And it was not just one of them they had to fight – there was a whole group of them ready for battle.

They were fighting against the entire coalition of the Beasts and the Amethyst Guards—how could they not feel afraid?

“Kill them! Protect the God of War!”

With a shout of command, the Beasts and the Amethyst Guard charged towards their enemies like a pride of roaring lions.

In no time, the two sides clashed in a fierce and intense fight.

The Beasts and the Amethyst Guards fought like animals with an insatiable appetite, slaughtering fighters of the Garrison clan without showing the slightest mercy.

Never had those fighters seen anything like that.

The coalition fought like madmen. Every blow they dealt was fatal, and every step they took was calculated.

It was obvious that they were well-trained – the team worked together seamlessly.

In the face of such relentless opponents, the fighters from the Garrison clan crumbled in less than five minutes.

Some of them collapsed while some of them fled.

“Go after them! Don’t lose any of them!”

The Beasts and the Amethyst Guards pursued their enemies like wolves hunting down headless sheep.

In no time, the fighters from the Garrison clan were nailed down and brought back.

Even in their defeat, they still had not wrapped their heads around who they were fighting against.

Not far away, Levi stood watching the bloody commotion from above as his lips curved in a proud smile.

As expected, the Amethyst Guards never let me down.

Their fighting capability is indisputable.

As for the Beasts, they've gotten more skilled with more experience. They instill fear wherever they go.

"Make sure you don't lose any of them!" Levi shouted an order.

"Roger that!" the Amethyst Guards and the Beasts cried out in unison.

Over on the other side, Edward sat deep on his couch with his legs crossed. He hummed a tune leisurely, anticipating good news.

He had sent out the best fighters he had, so there was no way anything could go wrong.

"There will be a bloodshed in South Hampton tonight," he jeered.

"This is what you get for crossing the Garrison clan! Now you know we mean business if you ever go against us!"

A smug smile spread across his face as he crossed his hands before his chest.

Bang!

Click!

Edward and his company jerked at the loud noise that was coming from the outside. The gate of the residence was knocked down, and the glass windows were in pieces.

A few hundred men in black battle suits planted themselves right in front of the unguarded residence.

Sensing an intrusion, Edward and the others got on their feet as their blood ran cold.

Edward rushed outward and questioned, "Who are you?"

"Surrender yourselves! Or we'll strike!" the group warned.

The butler smirked and pursed his lips. "Surrender? Do you even know who I am? There's nothing you can do to us!"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 993

Edward and the others showed no signs of retreat in the face of the Beasts and the Amethyst Guards.

After all, they were members of the Garrison clan from Oakland City. No one would dare do anything to them.

Everyone from the family stood unfazed as they stood guard over their residence.

"We don't care who you are! Seize them all!"

The Beasts and the Amethyst Guards stormed in at the command.

Although Edward and the others were skilled fighters, they were no match for the Beasts and the Amethyst Guards. They dropped to the ground in no time.

"Do you know what sort of crime you're committing? We're the Garrison clan from Oakland City! Tyrone Garrison is the family's heir and I'm his personal attendant! Let me go and I'll spare you!" the butler yelled at the top of his voice, trying to affright the enemies.

Pow!

Before Edward could utter another threat, one of the fighters from the Beasts kicked him in forcefully in the face.

“Do you think we care about who you are in the Garrison clan?” a voice followed.

The only order the Beasts and the Amethyst Guards received was to protect the God of War.

They were not asked to kneel to anyone—regardless of which family they were from.

They would do anything to eliminate anyone who had plans to kill the God of War.

“Who are you people?” Words seethed through Edward’s mouth as he stumbled and recovered from the blow.

He guessed that these people must be related to Levi, but he had no idea who they were.

But the Beasts and the Amethyst Guards did not answer his question. Instead, they bound them and brought them to a rugged warehouse, where all the defeated fighters from the earlier confrontation were all locked up.

When Edward saw the injured and wounded fighters he had sent out there, he instantly knew that his plan had failed.

They had lost to their enemies.

Who are these people? Think, Edward! Wait... They’re all wearing the same uniform... This can only mean one thing...

Edward’s blood froze, and he looked around in fear.

Just as he wrapped his head around who the group of men was, the door swung opened, and a familiar figure appeared at the entrance of the warehouse.

Why does this person look familiar?

Edward poked his head out to get a closer look.

Levi Garrison? It's actually Levi Garrison! What? How?

Is this all his doing?

No way... This is impossible!

Terror gripped Edward, and he started stuttering. "You... Why... How..."

"You want to know my identity?" Levi finished his sentence for him.

"Those fighters who subdued you are all my men. And yes, just in case you're wondering, I'm the one who stopped the top 100 prominent families in South Hampton. I'm also why the five hundred skilled fighters you gathered on the dark web went missing."

Levi's answers to all the burning questions boiling in Edward's mind hit him like a bolt from the blue.

When did this bastard become so powerful?

I bet he didn't achieve all these on his own.

After all, he's just a bastard who has Garrison's blood running in his veins.

Why am I even surprised?

"Master Levi! Your servants are so glad to see you again! I always knew you would do something great one day!"

Knowing full well that he could not afford to get on Levi's bad side, Edward instantly changed his tone, even going as far as calling Levi "Master."

"Yes, Master Levi! We're so happy for you! We can't wait to share the good news with Master Tyrone and the Grand Master!" the other servants quickly flocked over and agreed.

"Really? You guys don't seem very happy though," Levi sneered as he looked at the butler from the corner of his eyes.

“Give me a chance to explain myself, Master Levi. The whole family was against you last time because we didn’t know you would achieve something this great. But lo and behold, you’re a man of impressive accomplishments now. This is a pleasant surprise for all of us! You’ve surpassed a lot of the Garrisons, and the whole family is extremely proud of you! I’m sure they will invite you back to the family in the most honorable fashion possible!”

Edward paused and surveyed Levi’s face before he carefully continued, “I’m sure Master Tyrone and the Grand Master will welcome you with open arms if I share this piece of good news with them! You’ll return with the greatest honor!”

“Welcome me back to the family? Who do you think the Garrison clan is? They are not worthy of me,” Levi rejected crudely.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 994

Everyone was dumbfounded. No one could believe what they had just heard come out of Levi’s mouth.

The Garrison clan is not worthy of you? Who do you think you are?

Not a single person in Erudia dares mention the name of Oakland City’s Garrison clan without holding their breath.

“Master Levi, I’ll admit you’re a man of capability. The fact that you managed to catch me speaks a lot about your ability. But you shouldn’t insult the family like this. Ultimately, the Garrison clan is still a powerful family. Even among the younger generation of the clan, there is easily a handful of them who are far better than you. Take Mr. Damien for example – he’s way better than you are in every way. He’s humble although he’s capable,” Edward reminded Levi.

“Yeah. Master Levi, humility is a virtue. A humble man goes a long way! Besides, given the clan’s enormous resources and extensive connections, we’re sure you’ll achieve something greater if you return to the clan!” the other servants agreed.

“Bullshit!” Levi stared at them with a contemptuous glare.

“Humility? Keep your advice for the Garrison clan! The family is powerful? What a joke. Don’t even talk about the younger generation of the clan—the entire family is no match for me!”

Levi straightened his back and cocked his head as he stood his ground before the servants, his gaze hard and unyielding.

The Beasts and the Amethyst Guards stood upright in an assertive position at the voice of the God of War.

The two groups knew the man came in second to none.

Levi was the one and only in the whole of Erudia. Never had there been anyone like him—and there would never be.

He was the only Five-Star God of War.

The man was way out of the league of the youngsters from the Garrison clan.

Edward’s body shook subtly as he sensed the shift in the atmosphere.

He soon got lost in Levi’s commanding aura, which compelled him to revere the man standing before him.

“Yes, Master Levi, we know you’re powerful like no other. We are at your mercy. Please, let us go so we can bring the good news home. The family will definitely await your glorious return,” Edward begged.

The other servants trailed their gaze towards Levi, looking at him imploringly.

“Oh? So you guys are not interested in killing me anymore?” Levi questioned.

The butler flashed him a servile smile and shook his head nervously. “Of course not! I’m sure the family will give you a warm welcome! You’re a great asset to our family!”

“What about my mother?” Levi asked coldly.

“Ms. Jones is your mother, so how can we not treat her with respect? Things might indeed be a little awkward since Master Tyrone is already married, but I’ll try my best to persuade him. I’m sure he’ll allow Ms. Jones to come back. As long as you agree to return, there’ll always be a place for your mother in the family,” Edward replied.

The man believed that he had made a proposal good enough to leave no room for rejection.

Once Levi agreed to come back, he would have a place in the Garrison family—the most prominent family in Erudia—the Head of Erudia!

There was no way Levi would turn this offer down.

Levi would be able to clear Emma’s name and give the woman a legitimate place in the Garrison clan.

“Master Levi, please let us go. I’m sure your mother will be happy to hear that the family is finally acknowledging her. Doesn’t she want to marry Master Tyrone? All this is not impossible! You only need to let us go. Now that you’ve made a name for yourself, your mother will definitely regain her place in the family. This is a chance to help her realize her dream!” Other servants chimed in, trying to convince Levi.

They were taking every opportunity they could to free themselves; they knew Emma Jones would be their best shot to move Levi.

However, the man was clearly not buying it. His face remained unperturbed as he looked at them in a detached manner. Yet Edward was not planning on budging either. “Master Levi, I’m sure you don’t want to live in the shadow of the past anymore. This is a golden opportunity for you to undo that shameful title of a bastard. All you need to do is say yes—and I will make sure you become a legitimate member of the Garrison clan!”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 995

Levi burst out laughing upon hearing their solemn advice and desperate pleas.

In front of him, the butler and the other servants exchanged startled looks in complete silence.

They knew Levi was mocking them. Before long, Edward finally spoke up, “Master Levi, are you doubting what I just told you? I’m dead serious. If you let us go, we’ll guarantee your glorious return, and your mother will regain her status. The Garrison clan will never let go of someone as powerful as you are!”

“I’m not doubting you—I just find your stupidity amusing. I’ve never taken the Garrison clan seriously, so why would I covet a place in the family? Also, I don’t know where you got the idea from, but my mother couldn’t care less about the Garrison clan. Marrying Tyrone Garrison? Who does he think he is? He doesn’t deserve my mother—the entire Garrison family doesn’t deserve her!”

Levi’s voice bellowed in the spacious warehouse as he recalled the shame and pain he and his mother had gone through all those years.

Edward and the others shook their heads in disbelief when they heard what he had to say.

Did you just say Tyrone Garrison doesn’t deserve Emma Jones?

The Garrison family is the most prestigious family in all of Erudia. You should be thankful you have Garrison blood in your veins! This noble bloodline carries thousands of years of an ancient legacy.

The Garrison family doesn’t deserve Emma Jones? Who is she?

She’s from a mere royal family in South Hampton!

She’s nothing compared to the Garrison family! She’s despicable in our eyes!

She’s the one who is not worthy of the Garrison family!

You must have lost your mind to say something this ridiculous!

But just as they thought that that was all he had to say, Levi let off a scoff and continued dispassionately. "You said this is an opportunity for me to give my mother a better life? It's exactly because I want a better life for her that I won't allow the Garrison clan to ever come near her again. The family doesn't deserve her, and neither does Tyrone Garrison."

Opposite him, Edward's jaw dropped at Levi's impudence. The others frowned and squinted their eyes, appalled by how the latter had butchered the family's honor.

Geez, I can't believe you have no regard for the Garrison family.

Yes, you're indeed much more powerful now, but your accomplishments amount to nothing compared to the family!

Who do you think you are? Your position in the family is only slightly higher than a mere butler; you're in no way close to the important figures in the family!

So don't even dream about comparing yourself to the entire Garrison family!

Edward's patience was wearing thin under Levi's constant bashing. "Don't be too arrogant. You'll regret it when you see a glimpse of what the Garrison family can actually do!"

"Ha! I can't wait to see that!" Levi ridiculed.

Edward's glare intensified, and his blood boiled as he faced the haughty man.

He could not wait to let him experience what the Garrison family was capable of.

"Master Levi, I dare you to let me go. I'll show you what the Garrison family can do! You will regret not joining us when we extend an olive branch!" the butler challenged.

"Well, I don't mind sparing your worthless life. I only need you to bring Tyrone and the others a message—they won't even have a chance to regret not killing me when I eventually set foot near the Garrison family."

A confident smile broke across Levi's face as he drilled his gaze into Edward's fierce glare; the butler did not shun his stare.

"I'll make sure your insolent remarks reach their ear. It's time you start counting down to your death!"

Zap!

Crack!

Ow!

Edward's smirk disappeared as his face contorted in pain. Levi had pushed him to the ground and broken all of his limbs.

Before the other servants could react, they were also pinned to the ground.

Agonizing shrieks echoed through the warehouse as the servants groaned in unbearable pain.

"I'll let you all go, but everyone will have to crawl back!" Levi sneered as he looked at the bunch of crippled servants who were now wallowing in a pool of their own blood.

It would be difficult for them to crawl their way back judging from their injury—but they did not have to—because the servants were all thrown out of South Hampton like stray dogs at the end of the day.

As Edward struggled to move, his phone rang, and a clear voice came through. "Is he gone?" Damien demanded.

"Mr. Damien, we're good as dead. Levi is not as useless as we thought he was!" the butler replied, his voice almost breaking in tears.

"What? That bastard was able to do something to you lot?" Damien questioned, his tone betraying his disbelief.

The Protector Chapter 996

“Yeah! He’s the one behind everything that has happened recently! We thought he simply got lucky, but it turns out that he has a trick or two up his sleeves!” Edward said while panting in excruciating pain.

Damien refused to believe what he had just heard from the butler. “Are you sure? He’s just an orphan! He doesn’t have any connections and resources. It’s impossible that he’s the one behind all this! I can’t believe he managed to defeat you!”

“I’m just as surprised as you are, Mr. Damien. But remember that the man still has Garrison’s blood in him. He’s bound to do exceptional things! As long as he has our bloodline, he’ll definitely shake up the world one day!” Edward tried registering the gravity of the problem to his skeptical master.

“True that. He’s a Garrison, after all. How bad can someone from our family turn out to be? Even a Garrison bastard is better than an average person,” Damien conceded.

To people like him who grew up in a prominent family, they had always attributed success to one’s bloodline.

It was never a matter of individual effort whenever someone did well in life.

Thus, it was natural for them to give credit to the Garrisons instead of acknowledging Levi’s own capability.

“I’m sure Father and Grandpa will welcome him back to the family after they find out about his success. Yes, everyone in the family has great achievements, but we won’t say no to another genius like him joining us. There are still ways in which the bastard can be of service to the family,” Damien noted.

The younger generation in the Garrison clan was talented and competent, and they were at the very least, top fifty in Erudia. All of them were deserving of the family name.

The fact that Levi could outdo them meant that he was not to be underestimated at all.

“Mr. Damien, he might be accomplished, but he’s too arrogant for his own good. He has no regard for the Garrison family—not even you or Master Tyrone! He even wanted me to convey a message to Master Tyrone. He said we would regret it when he made his way to the Garrison family’s residence!” Edward complained.

Bang!

Over on the other end, Damien slammed his fist on the table. “Come again? What did he say? Sure enough, a bastard’s always a bastard. He might share our noble blood, but he’s obviously unrefined! I shouldn’t have expected something good to come out of a bastard who grew up in a questionable environment. He’s nothing compared to us! And since he has no respect for the family, I can only say it’s his loss. He won’t go far with his haughty attitude. His pride and his narrow-mindedness will be his undoing!” Damien shouted into the phone.

Damien nodded his head weakly at the man’s outburst. “I agree, Mr. Damien. His pride is way bigger than his accomplishments. He needs to know that South Hampton is just a small part of the world!”

Hearing this, the other man chuckled in pride. “Of course. He’ll shut up once he’s seen what Oakland City’s Garrison clan can do with his own eyes. This bastard needs to broaden his horizon instead of being so full of himself. Wait till he faces someone more powerful than himself.”

“What should we do then, Mr. Damien? Should we still kill him?” Edward asked.

“No. Given his ability now, he won’t be a shame to the family anymore. We shall spare him for now,” Damien replied.

“Then what should we do about him, Mr. Damien?”

A slight pause came from the other side before Damien finally spoke, “Since he’s so egoistic and treats the family as a joke, I’ll teach him a lesson myself!”

The butler’s eyes glistened in hope when he heard Damien was handling this himself.

Edward had had enough of Levi Garrison and his conceited attitude. Now that Tyrone's son was getting involved directly, someone could finally avenge what Levi had done to him.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 997

"Aha! That's why that bastard has the guts to challenge us. He's Morris Group's boss!" Damien exclaimed after doing some digging into Levi's background.

He finally understood why Levi had the guts to be so obnoxious.

Although few people knew Levi was the head of Morris Group, it did not take the Garrison clan long to obtain that piece of information.

Hearing the name, Edward widened his eyes in surprise. "Morris Group? Even Triple Group in Keerea is no match for that company! It practically dominates everything."

"Well, it's true that Morris Group has got some substance. But that doesn't mean Levi can take the Garrison family lightly. Father's Pinnacle Group in South Hampton is far superior! I'll tell the company to acquire Morris Group. I bet Levi Garrison will come begging on his knees in no time. This will be the price he has to pay for messing with the Garrison family!" Damien let out a confident laugh as he imagined Levi begging for mercy.

The next day, Levi and his mother began their journey home along with the Beasts and the Amethyst Guards.

Levi was deep in thought, thinking about the encounter he had yesterday. A frown settled on his brows. Before long, he finally broke the silence. "Mother, do you miss him?"

Emma was startled by his sudden question. She turned towards her son reluctantly, trying to think of how she should answer in an appropriate manner.

"Do you still want to marry Tyrone? The family will finally accept you after all these years," Levi continued.

"No. I don't harbor unrealistic expectations like that anymore. That's no longer what I care about," she replied firmly as she looked at Levi in the eyes.

"What do you care about then?" he asked.

A warm and gentle smile slowly spread across her face.

"Well, it's not anything important that you need to know."

"Come on, Mom. I will try my best to make your dream come true!" he insisted.

"I hope you can stand in front of the Garrisons one day and proudly tell them that you're my son—and that you're a man worthy of their respect!"

But she quickly regretted what she said when she saw her son's solemn expression. "You don't have to get all stressed out about it, Levi. This is just a thought I have, don't take it too seriously."

The last thing she wanted was to pressurize her son and make things difficult for him.

She knew how difficult and dangerous such an action could be for Levi.

But that was not what her son thought. "No, Mom. You will live to see that day. I promise," Levi pronounced.

Yet, Emma knew he was just trying to make her feel better. She knew better than to set her expectations too high.

Besides, Levi was not even thirty yet. He still had a long way to go before he could actually do something substantial.

It was impossible that someone of his age would earn the respect of the Garrison family.

When they arrived, Zoey was already waiting for them. She had put aside work to pick Emma up.

"How's the prep coming along?" Levi asked when he saw the woman.

“We’re almost done. We’ll go over and bid for the project tomorrow,” she replied.

He nodded approvingly and let out a small smile. “Remember to be careful of Lyndsay Granger. She’s not an easy character.”

“Don’t worry; I already have it all planned out. Iris and I will travel separately tomorrow,” Zoey assured.

“That’s great. All the best for tomorrow then.”

Levi knew Zoey must have made adequate preparation, but he was still worried that something unexpected would pop up.

Over at Golden Plaza, Jayden hung up the phone after a long call.

“Do you know who just called me? Damien Garrison! The actual Mr. Damien!” he exclaimed at the top of his voice.

Around him, everyone looked at him enviously.

Damien was well known to be the potential next heir of the Garrison clan.

It must be an urgent matter for a man of his standing to actually call Jayden.

“What did Mr. Damien say?” Lyndsay asked as she scooted closer to Jayden.

“Mr. Damien wanted one thing done—we are to crush Morris Group as soon as possible,” the latter replied.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 998

“That’s good news. We’re competing for a project with them tomorrow anyway. That’ll be our first chance,” Lyndsay commented.

Jayden nodded, rolling his eyes schemingly. “Exactly. Make sure you deal with them accordingly. I don’t want anything to go wrong tomorrow.”

Lyndsay and the other council members exchanged cunning glances with each other, and sinister smiles curved on their lips. “Don’t worry. They won’t even make it to the venue tomorrow.”

The big day soon arrived. Sylas and her team escorted Zoey and Oriental Star Group’s council members as they headed for the venue.

“Sylas, make sure nothing happens to anyone. Someone might try and stop us on the way,” Zoey reminded before they departed.

The woman refused to allow the same thing to happen again. She had once been held up by her competitor when she was on her way to the venue and had missed the bidding event because of that incident.

She had been fooled once; she would not fall into the same trap again.

“Ms. Lopez, rest assured that everything will be okay. We will make sure everyone arrives safely,” Sylas replied calmly.

In no time, Oriental Star Group’s convoy departed for the venue.

To ensure nothing would happen, Iris took a different route towards the destination.

No one else in the company knew about it except for Zoey.

Although everything had been meticulously planned out, Zoey still had a premonition of imminent danger as she sat in the car.

Her eyelids kept twitching, and she could not hold it in any longer—she needed to double-confirm everything.

“Sylas, could you check and see if everything is fine out there?”

“Everything looks fine,” her bodyguard answered after surveying the surroundings.

Bam!

Suddenly, a vendor on a trishaw came out of nowhere. One of the cars did not manage to stop in time, running into it at full force.

The collision sent the vendor flying three to four meters away before the man finally hit his head against the cold tar road. The grey road was soon stained red as blood gushed out of the man’s body.

The whole Oriental Star Group fleet pulled the emergency brake – everyone was stupefied.

Zoey’s face turned pale—something had happened just as she expected.

She knew Pinnacle Group would not let her off the hook that easily.

“Is everyone okay?” Zoey turned around frantically, checking to see if anyone was hurt. Their schedule had been affected because of the accident, and Pinnacle Group managed to have their way, but Zoey did not want anything to happen to anyone, be it friends or foes.

Everyone got out of the car, and some people rushed towards the vendor lying on the ground.

Sylas checked the man’s pulse and her frightened gaze slowly trailed towards Zoey.

“Ms. Lopez... He’s gone...”

Zoey’s steps faltered, her knees going weak at the news.

She could not believe Pinnacle Group would kill someone in order to stop her.

Did they really plan all this?

How cruel can those people get?

This was not the first time a competitor had targeted her, but no one had ever gone to such length to get in her way.

Pinnacle Group was the first to do so.

“Somebody help! They just hit someone! And the man is now dead!” a passerby shouted.

Soon, a huge crowd hurried over, encircling Zoey and the others. They had come forward with kitchen knives, ready to get revenge on behalf of the man.

“You’re not getting away with this! We will make sure you pay for it!” the angry men shouted.

“It wasn’t our fault! He’s the one who came out of the junction all of a sudden! He’s the one who ran into us!” Zoey tried to explain the situation.

However, her pleas only made the situation worse; she had angered them all even more.

There were no surveillance cameras around that area, and it so happened that the trishaw had rushed out at the car dashcam’s blind spot.

There was no proof to whatever she claimed.

“Bullshit! We saw everything with our own eyes. You guys hit him! Don’t blame a dead man for what you did!” one of the men yelled.

“Yeah! We’re all witnesses! You won’t get away with this!” another cried out.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 999

Sylas’ blood ran cold at the sight of those furious men.

This is all my fault.

I clearly saw that man there. But I didn’t expect him to dash out just like that! Gosh, what should I do?

“Ms. Lopez... What should we do now...” she asked in a frail voice.

Her mind went blank; she could not think of any way of getting them out of this mess.

“There’s nothing we can do. This was all premeditated. They did it to keep me away from the event,” Zoey stated with a resigned sigh.

The only thing she was concerned about now was that an innocent man had lost his life because of the strife between Pinnacle Group and her.

If she knew that all this would come at the expense of a man’s life, she would have given up on this project readily.

But she also knew that Iris would still make it to the event.

She and Iris had foreseen something bad happening, and they already had a bulletproof plan laid out.

Even if Zoey did not make it to the venue, Iris would still be there.

“You guys have nothing to worry about. I won’t run away. I’ll settle this properly,” Zoey told the crowd.

After all, this man had died because of her. She took it on herself to look into the accident.

Meanwhile, a car sped by along a road in the suburb.

Iris cried out when she was informed that something had happened to Zoey.

The woman had been on the way using another route when she got news of the incident.

The car she was seated in braked to halt when a few men in black suddenly appeared before her, blocking her way in the middle of the road.

“Ms. Anabelle, I’m sorry, but we have to cut your trip short. Don’t worry; it’ll only take two hours, that’s if you cooperate with us,” one of them said as he leaned closer to the car window.

Iris knew exactly what they were up to.

It went without saying that all they wanted was to stop her from bidding for the project.

The fact that these people had found out about her route surprised her.

Now that these men were in her way, it was impossible for her to get herself out of this.

The only thing she could do was to do as they demanded.

"I'm so sorry, Zoey." Iris sighed.

Over at the venue, all the council members from Pinnacle Group had already gathered in a timely manner.

Jayden and Lyndsay held their heads high as they looked around. The event was about to commence.

Many big companies had convened after knowing that the project was open for bid.

Jayden approached some of the heads, putting up a smug smile. "You guys won't stand a chance against us today. Pinnacle Group will win the project. All of you'd better back off. Try us, and you'll end up dead!"

He was rude and overbearing—yet there was nothing those people could say.

Jayden was from Pinnacle Group; no one had the guts to challenge that company.

Since they were here at the event just for the sake of it, there was no need for them to incur the wrath of Pinnacle Group unnecessarily.

"Mr. Yolander, Ms. Granger, we've handled Zoey and Iris as instructed. They won't be able to make it," an assistant reported.

A smirk crafted Jayden and Lyndsay's faces when they received the news.

There was no way a small company like Morris Group could threaten Pinnacle Group.

It was foolish for Morris Group to think that they stood a chance to win.

“Did you leave any traces?” Lyndsay asked.

“No. No one will be able to track it back to Pinnacle Group. Also, we’ve blocked all the roads, so no one from Morris Group will reach this place,” the assistant added with a sly smile.

Beside him, Lyndsay nodded as an evil smile broke out on her face. “Now that I think of it, it’s actually not a bad idea for Morris Group to come. They can well amuse us if they’re humiliated here today. But, oh well, they can’t even make it here now. What a pity.”

“Yeah, they’ll lose the project to us even if they came. It’s just a matter of time before Morris Group belongs to us!” Jayden agreed.

Just as the two were busy talking about taking Morris Group down, Yale Freeman, the person in charge of the project, walked over.

“Mr. Yolander, Ms. Granger, we’re about to start. Shall we take a seat?” he inquired politely.

Jayden shot the man an innocent smile and asked, “Oh, aren’t we still waiting for Morris Group?”

Yale gestured to invite them in as he cleared his throat. “Actually, Morris Group met with an accident when they were on their way. I don’t think they’ll be able to make it.”

Just as Jayden and Lyndsay were about to walk in, a deafening noise rang out from above, causing everyone to tilt their heads towards the sky.

“Quick! Look up! Look at the sky!” someone exclaimed in shock.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1000

A choppy noise resounded through the place as a few private helicopters hovered in the sky.

The rotor blades spun incessantly, and the sound grew louder as time passed.

Everyone looked up and squinted their eyes at the sight of the helicopters flying in weird patterns in the sky.

It turned out that those helicopters were making a skywriting.

“Morris Group?” Everyone was surprised when they saw what was written in the sky.

Are these helicopters from Morris Group?

Jayden and Lyndsay exchanged worried looks as they watched everything play out before their eyes.

They had done all they could to stop Morris Group from reaching the venue, but never in their wildest imagination would they expect them to arrive in private helicopters.

The private helicopters pitched forward and finally got ready to descend, creating ripples of strong winds as the pilots lowered the machines on the ground.

Everyone tried standing their ground, lowering their heads as the helicopters got closer. The wind sent all the dust blowing in their faces, and people were forced to close their eyes as the wind got more forceful.

Many began taking refuge and sought shelter as the wind intensified.

Ironically, Jayden, who claimed to have noble blood, was the first to flee. In fact, he was crawling away like a coward because he knew he would die if he didn't get away quickly.

His jaw dropped when he saw workers of Morris Group descend from the sky.

His men had blocked all roads leading to the venue—yet he had still miscalculated.

Morris Group had flown people in private helicopters to get to the venue.

Once the helicopters landed and positioned themselves in front of the place, Levi and Kirin came down and walked towards the disheveled lot.

"Levi... Levi Garrison..." Lyndsay mumbled in disbelief.

"He's Levi Garrison? Mr. Damien told me he's the man who owns Morris Group. But regardless, Mr. Damien has told us that he's a nobody. Morris Group will be ours soon," Jayden scoffed.

Lyndsay did not answer him. Hatred and spite sparked in her eyes as her glare traced him. "Levi Garrison... Things are gonna get interesting."

"Just in time!" Levi exclaimed as he stood before the crowd.

However, Yale did not seem happy to see him.

The man personally preferred entrusting the project to Pinnacle Group; he knew he could not afford to get on the wrong side with that company.

Now that Morris Group had arrived, Yale was caught in a difficult position.

But the bidding process still had to go as planned. "Alright, since everyone's here, let's get started!"

Yale led everyone in.

Behind Levi, Jayden and Lyndsay came close enough so he could hear them.

"You'd better stop before things turn ugly. You have no idea who you're going up against. Pinnacle Group is not a company you can mess with!" Jayden warned.

"We will acquire Morris Group in no time. It's useless to compete with us!" Lyndsay added as she tried to keep up with Levi's pace.

However, Levi's nonchalance enraged her. "Did you hear me? Give up now! It's for your own good! I know you're Morris Group's boss, but don't overestimate yourself. The enemy you're facing is much stronger than you think, and the world is much bigger than your tiny brain can imagine!"

Jayden also interjected, "I heard that you have no regard for the Garrison family. Don't be childish! You've only seen a tiny bit of what they're capable of. You need to be realistic. Stop being so arrogant!"

Levi stopped abruptly at the entrance of the venue and shifted his contemptuous gaze towards them.

"I think y'all should stop here. There's no way you guys are getting in," he stated.

Jayden and Lyndsay's eyes widened in astonishment as they stared at him. Everyone who heard him all turned around in bewilderment.

"What? Who are you to bar us from entering?" Lyndsay interrogated.

In front of them, Yale halted his step and walked over.

He knew Levi had no right to stop Jayden and Lyndsay.

"Kirin, keep an eye on them. Make sure they stay away," Levi ordered in a domineering tone as he looked at the two from the corner of his eyes.

The Protector Chapter 1001

Levi wouldn't allow anyone to question anything he said.

Nevertheless, Yale, Jayden, and everyone else present was startled.

Lyndsay immediately asked, "Levi, who are you to bar us from entering?"

How dare he bar us from entering even when we're not stopping him from going in?

Jayden then said, "Mr. Freeman, you're the person in charge of the project. Can he actually bar us from entering? I mean, shouldn't you be in charge of everything here?"

Yale glanced at Levi before he replied, "You're right. Mr. Garrison, I think there's been some misunderstanding. Since you're only a tender, I'm afraid you can't bar anyone from entering."

"What I say goes! Your word means nothing against mine!"

Levi entered the hall as soon as he finished speaking.

Unperturbed by his outburst, Jayden, Lyndsay, and the rest began to head into the hall but were all stopped by Kirin.

"All of you are not allowed to enter!"

"What if we want to go in anyway?" Jayden retorted.

"Restrain them!"

Once Kirin gave the command, a few personnel came up and restrained them.

As such, the whole lot did not have the chance to participate in the tender event.

It wasn't difficult to guess the outcome – Morris Group had obtained the project.

After all that had happened, the people in the hall dared not to offer a price.

Jayden and Lyndsay were exasperated as they couldn't do anything until the tender event ended.

Levi Garrison is even more overbearing than us!

We only obstruct other tenders to buy ourselves time, at the very most.

However, that man dared to bar us from participating in the tender event directly!

“Levi Garrison, just you wait! We will never let off for this!” Jayden yelled and glared at Levi resentfully.

“Well, here I am, waiting.” Levi smiled coldly.

Meanwhile, Zoey had finished settling all of her matters, and Iris had been released.

“We're not ruthless enough compared to them!” Zoey sighed.

She was no match for those from Pinnacle Group, who would resort to every possible means to achieve their missions, no matter any lives were at stake.

She had lost the project – her plan had failed.

Without achieving success, the Lopez and Black families will continue to belittle me. In that case, will they still stop me from marrying Levi? It's not enough to only depend on having a baby...

Zoey heaved a long sigh.

At that moment, Iris came to her office and handed a document to her.

After flipping through the document, Zoey was puzzled. "Oh? We obtained the project?"

"Iris, didn't someone stop you from entering the tender event? How could you have obtained the project?" Zoey couldn't figure out what had happened.

"They stopped me, including the men whom I secretly sent to the event. However, the boss successfully obtained the project by himself this time!" Iris explained.

"What? We got this project because of the boss again?"

"That's right."

"Who even is the boss? Why did he go to great lengths to help me?"

Zoey was flummoxed.

"Why are you bothered by it? After all, we got our hands on the project in the end."

Iris rolled her eyes at her best friend. It's because you're the boss's wife!

After recollecting herself, Zoey immediately went looking for Levi.

Once the woman owned the project, her wealth would instantly skyrocket.

As such, she had amassed enough bargaining chips to negotiate with the Lopez and Black families.

Grandma can't control me anymore when I'm seen as successful!

No one can stop the two of us once I get pregnant!

Levi's time hasn't come yet, but it doesn't matter because I am successful now.

"Zoey, why do you look so emotional?" Levi asked.

"Can we decide on our wedding date? I've checked the calendar, and there will be an auspicious day one and a half months later. Do you think we should get married then?" she asked, wanting to get his opinion on things.

“Alright. Let’s set a date. I will give you a wedding of which the world has never seen before.”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1002

Exactly a month later, the bridal chamber that Levi designed was completed.

It’s time to give Zoey a perfect wedding.

To him, their wedding will be perfect as long as his mother, sister, and brother attended it.

He vowed to tell Zoey the truth about who he really was on their wedding day.

I want to tell her about the truth by myself. I want her to know that her husband is Erudia’s God of War!

Then, I will hold her hand and overlook the world like an emperor with his empress!

“We should also make early preparation to get pregnant before our wedding!” Zoey added bashfully.

“Certainly. In that case, we shouldn’t go home today!” Levi put on a sly smile.

“Sounds good.”

Levi and Zoey didn’t return to their homes that night.

After a night of intimacy, both of them grew to cherish each other more.

The two of them were finally together after going through ups and down for ten years.

From that moment onwards, no one would be able to separate them from each other.

They would eventually be able to build a family of three.

When Iris saw Zoey the next day, the former stated curiously, "Zoey, something seems different about you..."

"Oh? What's different about me?" the other woman asked while her face turned red.

"I can't pinpoint it, but you seem to be more feminine now," Iris explained.

That remark made Zoey lower her head and blush even more.

"Since you and Levi have decided on the wedding date, I'm sure you both plan to have children soon, right?"

Zoey didn't respond to her question. She merely glanced at her friend and chided, "Iris, you should get a boyfriend as soon as possible. Aren't you fond of the boss? Just court him already!"

"What?"

Iris was taken aback upon hearing that.

Well, I do hope to court the boss, but he's Levi! How could I possibly do that to you?

"The boss isn't single." Iris flashed her a smile.

"Oh? Wasn't he single some time ago? How did he get a girlfriend so soon?" Zoey asked, surprised.

"Yes, everything happened very fast. Speaking of which, aren't you going to marry Levi soon?"

The good news spread like wildfire. Soon, everyone in the company had heard the news of Zoey and Levi deciding on their wedding date.

Zoey's curiosity was piqued when she saw how thrilled all her workers were.

Why does everyone seem so excited about it? Is Levi really a respected figure in the company?

After all, Zoey used to hear complaints about Levi all the time.

It's strange...

Miles away, the Black family caught wind of the news.

"What?"

"So, the wedding date of Zoey and Levi Garrison has been fixed? As her grandpa and grandma, why weren't we informed about this?"

Meredith and Robert were shocked upon hearing about the wedding.

"We had no idea about it either..." the rest murmured.

Robert immediately made a phone call to Harry to ask about it.

However, the latter also wasn't aware of it.

When Meredith contacted Caitlyn and Aaron, the answers she received were the same.

Both of them were clueless about it too.

"How could outsiders know about it when even her parents aren't aware of the wedding date yet? Zoey has gone overboard!" Meredith grew infuriated with them all.

"Come back as soon as possible. Your daughter is going to marry someone soon," she yelled into the phone.

Not long after that, Aaron, Caitlyn, and Harry gathered at the Black family's manor.

Everyone seemed to be confused about what was going on.

Has the marriage between Zoey and Levi Garrison really been fixed?

The news spread widely even before the family was informed...

“Look at how your daughter behaves! You two weren’t even aware of her marriage! Humph! She doesn’t respect you as parents, nor does she treat us as her elders! I mean, is she planning to disregard us once and for all?” Meredith scolded.

“What an unfilial daughter she is!”

Aaron heaved a sigh helplessly. At this moment, he and Caitlyn were greatly embarrassed.

“How do you tolerate her? I can’t take it anymore!”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1003

Meredith, Robert, and Harry were all exasperated.

Meanwhile, Zoey’s parents were indignant at the sudden news.

Immediately, they called Zoey and asked, “We heard you have decided on your wedding date. Is that true?”

To which their daughter replied composedly, “It’s true, I’ve discussed it with Levi. I was planning to give you a call to inform you tonight.”

“Why have you not discussed your wedding date with us? Do you even treat us as your parents? Do you even respect the elders in the Lopez and Black families?”

"Are you planning to ditch your mother? Oh right, I guess Levi's mother is your new mother now. In that case, who am I to you?" Caitlyn scowled, almost smashing the phone out of anger.

Zoey hurriedly explained, "Mom, I'm already an adult. I can make my own decisions now. I'll discuss certain things with you all when it's necessary. However, I can make most decisions on my own."

"Since marriage is a life-changing event, how can you decide on it all by yourself? Besides, all of us don't agree to your marriage to Levi Garrison again!"

Caitlyn continued on without listening to her daughter, "Also, why don't you listen to your grandpa and grandma? They will gladly arrange your marriage for you!"

"Mom, why should all of you decide everything for me? I understand that you're afraid of Grandpa and Grandma, but they hold no authority over me. Besides, I won't be manipulated by anyone else because I have enough bargaining chips now," Zoey said.

"Come home as soon as possible to discuss with us! If you don't home, Grandpa and Grandma will look for you by themselves!"

As such, Zoey and Levi had no choice but to go to the Black family's manor.

The atmosphere was rather tense in the meeting room; everyone had on grim expressions.

"Kneel!" Meredith commanded coldly.

"Grandma, what do you mean by that?" Zoey asked.

"I'm asking you to kneel before me! Do you not understand? Both of you have to kneel as well!" Meredith fixated her gaze on Levi when she yelled.

"Why should we kneel? You must at least give us a reason," Levi said.

"Aren't you aware of your wrongdoing? How could you decide on your marriage all on your own? You even decided on the wedding date without consulting all of us!"

Zoey's grandmother trembled violently with anger.

The next moment, Zoey explained smilingly, "I can make my own decisions. I don't have to trouble all of you about this trivial matter. On that day, all of you only have to attend the wedding and enjoy the ceremony,"

"Bullshit! Did we agree on such an arrangement?" Meredith couldn't help but blurt a curse.

"Grandma, I have to get it straight – Any decisions about my wedding have to be decided by me!" Zoey immediately retorted.

"That will happen only when you're competent enough!" Meredith sneered.

"I am competent enough, and the Lopez and Black families can't tell me what to do anymore. Here, take a look by yourselves!"

As soon as she finished, Zoey threw a document on the table in front of Meredith.

All her family members were taken aback after they took the document and read through it.

"What? Zoey, are you really that wealthy now?" Meredith asked; the shock she felt was evident in her voice.

"Yes. Under such circumstances, can I make my own decisions?" Zoey questioned.

Meanwhile, everyone in the room was startled and lost in thought.

"I have something else to tell you all. I'm bearing Levi a child now. Therefore, all of you can never separate us!"

"What?"

The woman nearly threw everyone into a fit as the news had come like a bolt from the blue.

After ten minutes, her parents and grandparents eventually recollected themselves and reluctantly accepted the fact.

"My god! What have we done?" Aaron heaved a sigh.

Meanwhile, Meredith glanced at Levi and said, "Your wedding has to be a grand ceremony. I will agree to it on one condition... His mother cannot attend the wedding! I can't allow her presence to dishonor the Black family!"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1004

Immediately, the rest added, "That's right. The grand wedding will certainly become a popular topic among the people in the entire South. Won't we be embarrassed if his mother attends the wedding?"

"Exactly. We mean no offense, but both the Lopez and Black families have to maintain our reputations!" Harry agreed.

"Look, Zoey. Everyone agrees to the condition I've set!" A triumphant smile appeared on Meredith's face.

Aaron suddenly interjected, "As your father, I have to list down some conditions too!"

"What?"

Everyone looked at Aaron in bewilderment.

"Your marriage is unavoidable because you two have already become husband and wife. So, I will agree to it. However, Levi has to marry into our family!" the man commanded coldly.

"Marry into your family?" Levi was stunned by his demand.

How can I, the God of War, marry into someone's family?

At the same time, Zoey was startled too.

Why should he marry into our family?

“That’s right. You have to marry into our family if you want to marry my daughter. It’s not easy to marry into our family, though. There are several conditions you will have to obey!”

“Firstly, after marrying into our family, you will have to change your last name to Lopez. From now on, you’re not Levi Garrison but Levi Lopez! I don’t want you to mention your original name under all circumstances!”

“Secondly, after marrying into the Lopez family, you must follow all rules set by the Lopez family without protest. I don’t want to hear a “No” from you, not even once!”

“Thirdly, your daily routine will be arranged by the Lopez family. You’ll have to report who you meet with every day and how much money you’ve spent!”

“You’ll also have no right to say a word on important occasions, such as our family meetings. You can only speak when we allow you to do so!”

Aaron spelled out ten extremely harsh rules in total.

Harry and Meredith backed him up almost instantly. “Sounds great! Aaron has come up with many good ideas. You’re to marry into our family. Also, you will have to follow all the rules from that day onward. Otherwise, you can never marry Zoey!”

The main reason they had listed those rules was because Zoey had so much wealth now. They believed that Levi should not be allowed to marry her so effortlessly.

Since they couldn’t stop the marriage, they looked for other ways to make up for their “loss.”

Their thought process was as simple as Aaron’s – Zoey is wealthy, so they feel embarrassed and dishonored to see Levi marrying her.

Hence, they hoped to reduce the negative impact on Zoey and the Lopez and Black families by having Levi marry into the family.

“Furthermore, there has to be a ceremony when he marries into our family! He must first kneel and bow before the head of the Lopez family in our family’s manor. Then, he must kneel and bow again before our ancestors in the ancestral shrine!” Harry added.

“Yes! There has to be a grand ceremony since Levi is marrying into the Lopez family. The Black family agrees to this suggestion!” Meredith and Robert fully supported the idea in unison.

Meanwhile, Caitlyn said sobbingly, “My precious daughter has to marry a poor lad in the end! I really can’t accept it!”

“Caitlyn, we can’t do much about it. Now, what we can do is to make sure that he marries into our family!”

All of them let out a heavy sigh.

Zoey had thought that she could control everything; she didn’t expect things to turn out in such a way!

Are they treating me like a tool? What’s so wrong with Levi ? Why are they doing this to him?

Levi might not be a prominent figure like he was before, but he’s sincere about me and is willing to sacrifice his life for me. That’s what I love about him!

“Sweetie, don’t utter a word! If you respect me as your father, Levi must marry into our family! Otherwise, the wedding will be called off!”

The man then glanced at Levi and continued, “So, Levi, are you willing to marry into the Lopez family?”

Everyone present shifted their gaze toward the man in question.

The Protector Chapter 1005

Zoey wished that Levi would pretend to agree to the conditions to avoid any trouble.

She was ready to deal with the problems afterward once he pretended to agree.

She made a promise to herself – she would not make Levi embarrassed.

As such, the man definitely wouldn't have to obey the rules.

"Of course I don't agree! It's still acceptable if you only want me to marry into your family. But to make me change my last name? No way! I'm Levi Garrison for the rest of my life, and no one can ever change my last name!" Levi retorted coldly.

My mother gave me this name. No one can ever change it!

Everyone was startled at how Levi sounded so resolute.

"In that case, are you also saying you don't want to marry Zoey?" Meredith asked immediately.

"I certainly want to marry her!" Levi replied smilingly.

"Marry into our family if you want to marry her then. Otherwise, the marriage is out of the question!" Aaron firmly stated.

"Let me get this straight. Firstly, I'm going to marry Zoey. Secondly, I won't change my last name nor marry into your family. Thirdly, my mother must attend our wedding."

Levi spelled out his thoughts resolutely – he didn't allow anyone to question him.

All the members of the Lopez and Black families froze for a moment.

How dare he talk to us in such a manner?

"Levi Garrison, do you think you have the right to speak here? Are you aware of who you are? Zoey is worth about a hundred billion. Do you think you really deserve her?" Zoey's father yelled furiously.

They felt that the marriage was totally unfair. After all, Zoey was way out of Levi's league in terms of social status and wealth.

In other words, the two were from two different worlds and not meant to be together.

The Lopez and Black family had felt that it was a huge loss to let Zoey marry Levi from the very beginning.

To them, their relationship was practically identical to the one in the movie *Beauty and the Beast*.

Unexpectedly, Levi put on a smile and asserted, "To tell you the truth, I do deserve her!"

At this moment, his imposing look was engraved on Zoey's heart. It was as if the high-spirited Levi Garrison whom she met six years ago had finally returned.

Zoey knew that everything the man was about to say was right.

Nonetheless, she foresaw Levi explaining that they were a good match in terms of social status.

After all, as Tyrone Garrison's son and the Jones family's grandson, he certainly deserved her hand in marriage.

However, deep in her heart, she also hoped that Levi could be as successful as her, making them a perfect match.

She wished Levi to regain his success and be as powerful as he was six years ago.

"You deserve her? Hahaha..."

The next moment, everyone in the room burst out in laughter.

How could you possibly deserve her? Zoey is way more successful than you! You don't even deserve to be a maid who takes care of her shoes!

"In which aspect do you deserve to be with her? Are you kidding us? Levi, do you have the slightest idea about your own status?"

Amused, Logan Zachs stared at Levi like an idiot.

Much to everyone's surprise, the latter only chortled in response.

Levi was the one-and-only God of War, who commanded the army of Erudia like a monarch.

Putting that identity aside, as the boss of Morris Group, he still deserved to be with her.

Moreover, apart from Zoey's own effort, she was only successful because Levi had helped her on many occasions.

It could be said that Zoey had only come this far because of the help Levi gave to her!

In that case, why don't I deserve to be with her?

"Rest assured that I will reveal my true identity to Zoey during the wedding! On that day, all of you will keep your mouths shut once you are aware of my identity," Levi retorted.

He began imagining their change of attitude once they knew who he really was as he spoke.

"Hahaha! Your true identity? Are you kidding me? Do you think we don't know who you are?"

Everyone burst into mocking laughter.

"This brat wants to shock us to our core? Impossible!" Meredith shot Levi a look full of disdain.

After glancing at everyone in the room, Levi announced, "In that case, I will tell you a secret!"

The Protector Chapter 1006

"A secret?"

All of them were startled at first, but they soon glanced at him curiously.

Zoey looked at Levi curiously. *Does he have a secret?*

Levi said smilingly, "I actually wasn't in jail for the past six years!"

Indeed, this was a startling revelation to everyone in the hall.

All of them looked at him in disbelief; they used to think Levi had been imprisoned for six years.

However, it turned out that they were very, very wrong.

Stunned and surprised, everyone wondered what had actually transpired.

Meanwhile, Zoey was more flabbergasted than the rest.

No wonder they didn't allow me to visit him three months after he supposedly went into jail.

She hadn't visited Levi in prison for several consecutive years because she had not been allowed to enter.

All her doubts were cleared. *I couldn't see Levi because he wasn't even in prison!*

"You... You weren't in prison?" Aaron's teeth ground as he spoke.

"I was acquitted not long after I was jailed. They soon found out that I had been framed by the Garrison family and their dirty tricks." Levi smirked.

Meanwhile, Zoey, who was equally shocked by his revelation, asked sobbingly, "Where were you the past six years? Why didn't you come back?"

Apart from Zoey, everyone in the room had the same doubt.

If Levi wasn't in prison for the past six years, where was he?

The man shifted his gaze toward Zoey and replied lovingly, "I can't tell you right now. I'm only planning to reveal it to you on our wedding day!"

He paused for a moment and added, "But I can promise you that I deserve to be with you. I can give you everything you desire! I will make you the happiest woman who is admired by everyone else in the world!"

A rush of excitement washed over Zoey when she heard that.

Perhaps Levi will surprise me.

She began to look forward to their wedding more than ever.

Upon hearing Levi speak so firmly, everyone stopped ridiculing him and began to take what he said seriously.

He gazed at everyone slowly and asserted blandly, "Once I reveal my identity, none of you will dare impose any rules on me! Wait and see during our wedding if you don't believe me!"

After pondering over the situation for quite some time, Aaron glanced at him and replied, "Alright! I'll wait until the wedding to find out who you really are. I'll withdraw the rules I've set if you really do deserve Zoey. However, heavy punishment awaits you if you have lied to us."

"I agree. We shall make life difficult for you in the future if you lied to us!"

The other family members began to threaten him mercilessly.

After leaving the Black family's manor, Zoey asked in a low voice, "Did you really tell them the truth just now?"

"Of course, everything I said is true! I was never jailed!" Levi replied with a grin on his face.

"Alright, I will wait until you tell me everything!"

Deep in her heart, Zoey increasingly looked forward to their big day.

Lately, the woman was busier than ever because she had to work and handle the project worth one hundred billion. She also had to prepare for her wedding.

Apart from all that, she also had to take part in shooting for a TV drama.

Fortunately, Damon, the vice president of Oriental Star Group, assisted her in many ways to minimize her workload, including dealing with reporters and visitors who came.

If not for him, Zoey would be overwhelmed with all sorts of tasks.

"Mr. Trudon, I'm truly sorry for all the troubles lately!"

Damon didn't mind helping her, so he flashed her a smile to put her at ease. Due to many trivial problems, he frequently went in and out of Zoey's office and even looked for her after office hours.

Meanwhile, Jayden, Lyndsay, and the others were having a meeting in Golden Plaza.

"Zoey Lopez is about to get married soon. Hehe, I hope she and Levi Garrison will like the gift that we've specially prepared for her!"

Lyndsay added smilingly, "It will be how things end for anyone who goes against Pinnacle Group!"

A chilly glare flashed across Jayden's eyes.

Ever since Levi took away the project, they had held a grudge against him. They refused to let him off the hook for what he'd done to them.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1007

Time flew by, and Zoey and Levi had stayed in the hotel for many days.

After more than ten days, Zoey suddenly said to him, "My period hasn't..."

"Oh? Really?" Levi asked excitedly.

"I'll go to the hospital to do a pregnancy test later. Sylas will join me, so you don't have to come with me," she said.

Actually, Zoey had already secretly taken a pregnancy test at home; she knew she was pregnant.

Nevertheless, she would be relieved only after she went through the proper pregnancy test in the hospital.

"Okay, I'll wait for your good news then!"

Levi actually wished to go along with her. However, after giving it a thought, he felt that it was better to wait for her news because he was too nervous.

Zoey and Sylas soon arrived at the hospital for a pregnancy test in the afternoon.

"Why do I feel like someone is following us?"

Sylas instinctively felt something unusual in the air, but the woman didn't manage to notice anything out of place when she turned around.

There was no one behind them, save for a few patients who wore face masks passing by.

“Sylas, you’re being oversensitive.”

Zoey headed into the ward for her test.

After a long time of waiting, the test result was out in the evening.

“Congratulations, Ms. Lopez! You’re indeed pregnant!” the doctor told her the result smilingly.

Tears of joy escaped Zoey’s eyes upon hearing his confirmation. We’re going to have a baby after going through ups and downs together for almost ten years.

After obtaining the test result, she rushed back to the company with Sylas excitedly.

Just as she was about to share the good news with Levi and Iris, her secretary came up to her and said nervously, “Ms. Lopez, this doesn’t look good. We’re in big trouble!”

“What’s going on?” Zoey asked, totally perplexed.

The secretary pushed a notebook in front of her.

Zoey read the content and was flabbergasted.

A headline on the screen read: Bombshell: President of Oriental Star Group Zoey Lopes is Pregnant! Who is the baby’s Father?

“What’s going on? How on earth did the media get the news and reveal it right after we obtained the pregnancy result?” Sylas was at a loss for words,

Zoey’s heart sank.

She instantly knew that someone wanted to target her.

It’s a set-up! Someone must have orchestrated it!

Zoey had recently become a popular figure, attracting a lot of public attention.

Thus, it was no surprise when the news of her pregnancy immediately became a hot topic as soon as it was released.

A minute after this newspaper revealed the news, hundreds of newspapers began reporting on it as well.

In no time, Zoey's pregnancy became the hottest news in every newspaper.

Almost everyone in North Hampton, South Hampton, and different regions in the South was aware of the news.

Zoey's popularity continued to increase as time went by.

Ten minutes after the news was released to the public, many newspapers began digging for news into another related aspect – the identity of the unborn baby's father.

Zoey and Levi had divorced for a long time; they weren't related in any way anymore.

There had been no single scandal about Zoey throughout the six years when Levi was in jail.

Levi has never touched Levi.

Zoey had been seen going in and out of a hotel lately. The woman had even bought medicine for herself from a nearby pharmacy.

After listing down many reasons, the reporters deduced that the baby was definitely not Levi's.

On the other hand, Zoey was pregnant after she and Levi divorced.

Therefore, they could only come up with two conclusions.

First, it was a fact that Zoey was pregnant before marrying anyone. After all, even her pregnancy test result had been revealed.

Second, Zoey could probably have a long-term secret relationship, and it existed when she was still Levi's wife.

The two conclusions spread like wildfire as soon as the reporters wrote about them, and the netizens' comments were blowing up.

As such, Zoey seemed to be doomed. Everything was spiraling out of her control.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1008

The media were still trying to find out who the father was.

Soon, the secret would come to light.

Even the paparazzi and private detectives were also investigating this case in secret.

With that, Zoey's pregnancy became the talk of the town.

Who is the father of her child?

Boom!

Upon reading the news in the media, Zoey was thunderstruck. Her face instantly turned pale.

Sylas exploded. "Someone is trying to stir up trouble!"

We all know Zoey well!

Yes, she's pregnant, and without a doubt, the child she carries is Levi's!

What's with all these rumors?

Zoey knew who the mastermind was, but it was too late for her to control the damage now.

Upon receiving the news, Iris rushed over.

“Bad news, Zoey. We’re surrounded by journalists and paparazzi! They must have come for you. The office is not a safe place for you anymore. You got to go!” Iris suggested.

“All right. I’ll find a place to hide.”

With Sylas’ help, Zoey managed to leave the building without being noticed by the journalists and paparazzi.

Initially, they thought of taking shelter in the company’s condominium, but by the time they arrived, members of the press were already waiting for them at the entrance.

“We can’t go to the villa either. I’m sure there will be people there as well!” Zoey analyzed.

“Let’s go to my place then!”

Sylas then brought Zoey to her condominium.

Just when Sylas was about to drive into her neighborhood, she noticed that a group of people emerged.

“They’re here! They’re here! Let’s get hold of them!” A group of paparazzi started snapping photos of Zoey and Sylas in the car.

After they had successfully entered the building, Damon called.

“I heard you’ve gone into hiding, but I need you to sign a few documents urgently. Where can I find you?”

Damon sounded anxious.

“All right. Come and find me at...”

Half an hour later, Ebone Beard, the most experienced paparazzi of the bunch, shouted, “Look! Here comes our target. Stay focused!”

These paparazzi were known for exposing the private lives of celebrities and wealthy people.

They all gathered here after receiving a tip-off.

At first, they did not believe it but were convinced that the information they received was real after seeing Zoey.

Soon, a black car arrived and parked right in front of the Syllas' condominium.

A man in a suit then got out of the car. He was wearing a cap and even had a mask on.

Zoey was taken aback by Damon's look when she saw him. "Why are you dressed like this?"

"Better to be safe than sorry. Please sign these documents as soon as possible!"

Damon then passed all the documents to Zoey.

Without hesitation, Zoey dropped her signatures on all the documents.

Little did she know, it was all a scheme, and she had unknowingly fallen into the trap.

After collecting all the documents from Zoey, Damon turned around with a smirk.

He then left the place in his car.

Ebone asked, "Have you all gotten the shots?"

"Yes, we got them. So this man is the father of Zoey's child? Unbelievable!"

"Looking at the way he dressed, he must be her lover."

Ebone said with a smile, "Sort everything out, do some research on that man, and send the pictures out to the media. We're going to be rich soon!"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1009

"We've got updates on the man! His name is Damon Trudon, the vice president of Oriental Star Group, and he's Zoey's right-hand man. He's thirty-nine years old and a father to two kids!"

One of the men burst out laughing.

Ebone sneered, "Useless woman. She must have been having an affair with this man for quite some time now, and she's even pregnant with his child!"

"Shame on her! How could she hook up with a married man who already has two kids?"

"Let's expose her! Everyone should know what kind of woman she is!"

The paparazzi were very excited.

Ebone let out a cold snort. "Zoey Lopez is doomed!"

He had not been so ecstatic in years.

Not only could he make a quick buck out of this scandal, but he could also destroy someone who sat on top of the social pyramid.

What a great feeling!

An hour had passed when the media released the groundbreaking news simultaneously. They claimed that they had identified the father of Zoey's child!

To everyone's surprise, the man was Damon!

The news also provided extensive background details about him: Damon Trudon is Zoey Lopez's vice president. They have been working closely for the past six months and have spent a lot of time together. Not only is Damon thirty-nine years old, but he is also a father to two children.

In other words, Zoey was a homewrecker!

The news reports also published quite a number of photos and videos as evidence.

First of all, the media released photos and videos that showed Damon and Zoey walking into a building during work.

Next, they showed proof that Damon and Zoey entered a hotel at about the same time. They even included a list of items both of them spent on when they were there.

The news reports then went on to explain how Zoey went into hiding and had a private meeting with Damon in a condominium. They also included a video of Damon walking into the building with a cap and a mask on.

Last but not least, the media released another video of Zoey undergoing a body checkup at a hospital this morning. The same man who had a cap and a mask on was also present in the clip.

All the evidence gave the impression that Zoey was carrying Damon's child.

There was no way she could deny their relationship as he accompanied her to the hospital for her prenatal care visit.

Zoey was utterly dumbfounded.

It was apparent that Damon was involved in this scheme, and he definitely played a crucial role in it.

Getting Zoey to sign those documents was just an excuse for him to shoot the video.

No wonder Sylas felt as if someone had been following us, so she was right. Apparently, Damon was at the hospital too!

I should have been more alert.

The social media was soon awash with criticism, and netizens started calling Zoey a shameless b*tch and a homewrecker.

The news spread like wildfire on the internet, especially the videos.

There were even fake and edited videos circulating the social media. However, many netizens believed what they saw without verifying their veracity.

After all, people had the tendency to regard what they saw as reality.

Upon receiving the news, Iris immediately contacted Zoey. "This is bad! We can't find Damon anymore. We've been tricked!"

At this point, how could Zoey defend herself when all the evidence the media presented was against her?

"You need to move to a new place soon since they know where you are now."

Just when Zoey and Syllas were about to leave, they noticed that a group of people had surrounded the building.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1010

There was no way they could escape from the building anymore.

“What do we do now?” Sylas asked.

“I’ll give Levi a call.”

She got through to Levi on the phone. “Darling, something terrible happened!”

Levi did not know what was going on as he was still at home. “What is it?”

When Levi checked his phone, he was stunned by what he read.

Did all this happen in just one morning?

“Where are you? I’ll go and get you now!”

Levi sped to Sylas’ condominium and noticed that a large group of paparazzi and journalists were swarming into the building.

Hence, he immediately called Azure Dragon, who then came and expelled the crowd.

Levi finally managed to enter the building and find Zoey. He then brought her to the Warzone compound.

To him, that was the safest place for Zoey.

Yet, the fact that Zoey went into hiding caused the rumors about her to blow out of proportion.

At the Black family's manor, Meredith got so mad that she nearly fainted.

"What? Levi is not the father of Zoey's baby? The baby belongs to another married man?"

It had not been easy for Meredith to accept that Zoey was carrying Levi's child.

Needless to say, this rumor further fueled her anger toward Zoey.

How do you expect me to sit quietly and watch this happen?

"Mom! How could you not trust Zoey?"

Aaron and Caitlyn immediately defended their daughter.

"I want to trust her too, but there's all this evidence against her! How do you expect me to trust her based on my gut feeling?" Meredith roared.

"That's right. Some of the evidence might be fake, but most of them are real! Even the guy involved has fled!" Robert said.

"Why is this happening to our family? I don't even have the courage to face the public anymore!"

"She's a disgrace to the Lopez and Black families!"

"I'll not hesitate to give her a slap if she dares to step into this house!"

...

"I don't care what you say, but I have faith in my daughter. She must have been framed!"

Meanwhile, a group of journalists gathered in front of the office building that Morris Group and Oriental Star Group co-owned.

Noelle Sinsler, another vice president of Oriental Star Group, addressed the matter before the media, "On behalf of Oriental Star Group, I apologize for the problems caused, and we'll take full responsibility for the scandal!"

"Zoey Lopez's personal life has always been a mess. Though she's divorced, she doesn't actually have a clean breakup with her ex-husband. Besides this, she has been hitting on our young male talents from the entertainment department. But there was nothing we could do at that time because she's our president. We sincerely hope that the public could accept our apology!"

Having said that, Noelle bowed to the camera.

The act of Noelle making a public apology on behalf of Oriental Star Group was equivalent to admitting that Zoey was indeed a homewrecker.

In no time, the media released another news article with the headline: Oriental Star Group comes clean about the Zoey-Damon affair and the truth behind her pregnancy.

Once again, the scandal became one of the trending topics on social media.

All the employees looked at Noelle in shock. Hasn't she always been a low-profile person? Why did she bash Zoey all of a sudden?

They were taken aback by the sudden change in her behavior.

"What's wrong with you? Why are you doing this to Zoey?"

Iris immediately stepped in and interrupted her.

Noelle responded with a cold snort, "I'm absolutely embarrassed by what my boss has done. She should be ashamed of herself! Besides, the evidence is conclusive. What else have you got to say?"

Noelle then turned around and looked at the rest. "Zoey Lopez doesn't deserve to lead the company anymore. She should step down and leave the company!"

"How dare you!" Iris' eyes glowed with a towering rage.

The Protector Chapter 1011

At this point, Noelle finally revealed her ambition.

Oriental Star Group had recently secured a project that would rake in one hundred billion, so the company had a bright future ahead.

Once Zoey is out of the way, I shall become the next president, and everyone will have to listen to me!

In the meantime, there was a commotion in front of the office building.

It was Damon's family.

His wife, parents, brothers, and relatives were all gathered outside.

At least a hundred people arrived in several cars, and they wanted to barge into the building to settle scores with Zoey.

Some of them came with wooden clubs, and some even had knives in their hands.

If it were not for Seth and his men, these rowdies would have intruded the building.

"Where is that b*tch? Ask her to come out now!"

"Come out, you slut! You're doomed!"

"Just you wait! I'll kill you!"

...

Damon's family went on threatening and cursing Zoey at the entrance of the building.

Of course, the media went into a frenzy and started taking photos and videos of the chaos as much as they could.

Some even started live-streaming on the spot.

Once again, the pictures and videos of the hullabaloo made it to the trending topics on social media.

With that, the scandal continued to take the internet by storm.

Even Damon's wife came out and accused Zoey of destroying her family.

That homewrecker seduced my husband! It's all her fault!

"Let us in! We need to teach that b*tch a lesson!"

"We want to kill that shameless woman!"

"She's the most promiscuous woman of the century!"

Damon's parents and in-laws were among the first to force their way through.

At this point, Seth and his men could no longer stop them from entering the building.

Out of nowhere, Noelle went up and said, "Please accept our apology. I totally understand how you feel, but Zoey has gone into hiding. We don't even know where she is now!"

"Gone into hiding? I'll hunt her down if it's the last thing I do!"

It was as if Damon's family members were possessed by demons.

Iris exclaimed, "Who are you to apologize to them? You don't even know a single thing!"

Noelle took the opportunity and pointed at Iris. "This woman is Zoey's best friend. She should know where that b*tch is!"

The crowd instantly charged toward Iris.

"Tell us where she is right now!"

Morris Group's office building descended into another round of havoc.

It was so chaotic that the entire company could not operate as usual anymore.

"We'll not leave unless you tell us where Zoey is! Don't you dare to run away from us too!"

Damon's family stopped everyone from leaving.

Meanwhile, at Golden Plaza.

Lyndsay let out a satisfied laugh after reading the news on the internet. "This is the price you need to pay for securing the one hundred billion project."

Jayden nodded in agreement. "This is the end for Zoey Lopez!"

He then asked, "So how's Damon?"

"I've hidden him at a place they would never find out." Lyndsay laughed.

"Great! Not only did we destroy Zoey, but we also managed to deliver a blow to Morris Group's business. This will bring us a step closer to the acquisition of their company!"

Meanwhile, the turn of events had caused the color to drain from Levi's face.

Levi, who was going through the online news with Azure Dragon and his men, said in a cold voice, "What else can we do now?"

"Let's go and find Damon! I heard he's in hiding now," Kirin said.

All of a sudden, Azure Dragon exclaimed, "Look! It's Damon!"

A video of Damon popped up on social media, and in the video, he admitted to having an extramarital affair with Zoey.

The Protector Chapter 1012

The video clip emerged as a surprise on all the online news portals.

The person who spoke in the video was none other than Damon.

The video was divided into two parts.

Damon first admitted that he was in a relationship with Zoey and that he was the father of her baby. According to him, she even forced him to leave his wife and threatened him with their unborn baby.

He even went into great detail about what happened in the office when they were working together.

In the second half of the video, Damon apologized to his family and owned up to all his wrongdoings in between sobs.

Toward the end, he swore that he would leave Zoey.

All in all, he presented himself as the victim of this scandal, as if Zoey were the one who forced him into submission.

The video cut through Zoey's heart like a sharp blade, pushing her deeper into the abyss.

Netizens started lambasting Zoey even more intensely after the release of the video.

They were all convinced that Damon had been the victim of Zoey's abuse all along.

Crack!

After watching the video, Levi smashed the tablet.

“Azure Dragon!”

“Yes!”

Azure Dragon and his men stepped forward.

“Find Damon Trudon first, then seize all the paparazzi and bring them to me! I want all the keyboard warriors and the people in charge of the newspaper publishers and online news portals here as well! And find the mastermind behind this scheme! I will personally deal with the culprit!”

...

“You have one day to bring these people to me! They must all appear in front of me before sunrise!”

Levi was truly infuriated.

How dare they bully Zoey? These people are testing my patience.

He knew who was behind all this, and he would not let them off easily anymore!

The masterminds must have kept their identities a secret and tried to target me. After all, Pinnacle Group knows about my identity.

They carried their plan so discreetly that even Morris Group was unable to find out who the culprit was.

However, unbeknownst to them, Levi Garrison also had a secret identity—he was the God of War!

To him, dealing with these people would be a piece of cake!

“All right!” Azure Dragon and his men responded unanimously.

Justice would be served that night, and Zoey would be free from all these accusations!

Everyone waited for Phoenix, who was the world's best elite hacker, to carry out the investigations.

In just a short while, she managed to locate those people and their information.

"Damon Trudon has recently received one billion in his bank account. He has also frequented the hotel that you and Ms. Lopez were staying in to mislead the public into believing he was there to meet her. The person who provided all the photos and videos of Damon and Ms. Lopez working together was Noelle Sinsler, another vice president of Oriental Star Group. She has also received five hundred million in her account."

"The people who shot the pictures and videos of the private meetings between Damon and Ms. Lopez were a group of paparazzi led by Ebone Beard. As for the keyboard warriors, they were hired by Times Group to tarnish Ms. Lopez's reputation, and the company's person-in-charge is Floyd Henderson. A total of fifty-eight media companies and forums was involved in disseminating the news!"

"Apart from that, all the newspaper publishers in both North Hampton and South Hampton also intentionally played up this scandal in their news reports! Last but not least, the ultimate mastermind is Pinnacle Group, and the key figures who orchestrated all this are Jayden and Lyndsay."

"Great. Capture all these people and bring them to me before sunrise!"

A murderous glint flashed across Levi's bloodshot eyes as if he were ready to go on a killing spree.

The Protector Chapter 1013

The Southern Daily New was the largest newspaper publisher in the South.

At that moment, the whole publishing house was working overtime, and the atmosphere was hectic.

The exposé of Zoey generated so much buzz that they could barely cope.

The revenue from just these two days alone was more than enough to cover them for months.

As the first reporter who broke the news about the scandal, Ryan Danaher was currently surrounded by a lot of people.

Previously, he was only a low-ranking staff member at the Southern Daily News.

Ever since he exposed Zoey's scandal, his status rapidly rose in the company.

All the senior managers at the newspaper had personally met with him.

Even rival media companies were trying to poach him over.

Moreover, his female colleagues were all giving him subtle hints.

Those ladies used to be beauties who wouldn't bat an eyelid at him, but now, they were all throwing themselves at him.

It made Ryan feel ecstatic.

If not for the mysterious man who delivered the information to me, I wouldn't even dare to dream of such a day.

"Ryan, since we're going to finish work late, why don't you stay outside for tonight?" his female supervisor asked suggestively as she passed him a keycard to a room.

When he saw her seductive expression, the lust within him was set ablaze.

She has treated me harshly all this while. But today, even she has to submit and offer herself to me.

The thought of an impending night of passion caused Ryan to have his head in the clouds.

Bang!

At that very moment, someone kicked open the office door.

The man who stormed in was White Tiger.

"Which of you is Ryan Danaher?" White Tiger demanded.

"That's the twenty-fourth person who has come looking for Ryan. He's so famous now that everyone wants a piece of him."

All his colleagues look at him enviously.

"Ryan, someone from another major company is here to see you," someone shouted.

Ryan stood up and declared haughtily, "I am Ryan. State your business quickly. Otherwise, just come back tomorrow as I'm going off for the day."

White Tiger didn't reply as he closed the distance between them.

Bang!

Suddenly, White Tiger grabbed Ryan's collar and slammed him onto the office table, causing the table to split in half.

Crack!

“Argh!”

Ryan screamed in pain as his back broke from the impact.

Everyone present was shocked by what had just occurred.

White Tiger then dragged the bloodied Ryan out of the office, just like a lifeless dog.

From another corner, Azure Dragon also dragged the person in charge of the publisher out.

Meanwhile, Ebone’s paparazzi team was hiding in a dilapidated basement.

“Ebone, we have received our money, so why are we hiding in here? We should be out drinking to celebrate!”

A few of his subordinates were starting to become restless.

“That’s right. We will be fine.”

Ebone warned them with a grim expression, “No, just to be safe, we have to stay in hiding. After all, our enemy is someone powerful.”

“Fine. We will continue to hide then since no one is going to find this place.”

Ebone couldn’t help but smile.

They made a lot of enemies due to their line of work.

If they didn’t hide properly, it would be easy for them to lose their lives.

The basement they were in was very secluded. He had used it for hiding during the last thirteen years, and no one had ever found it.

One of his subordinates protested, “Ebone, I have a feeling that something is amiss. Why don’t we hide somewhere else?”

He felt a strong sense of dread.

“Bullsh*t, no one has found this place in thirteen years. It will be no different today.”

Ebone gave him a hard slap.

Bang!

Crack!

Suddenly, the door to the basement was blasted to smithereens.

The Protector Chapter 1014

The next instant, a huge man with bulging muscles came in.

He was so tall that he had to lower his head to enter.

“W-Who are you?”

Ebone panicked as he was overwhelmed by an impending sense of danger.

Bang!

Without uttering a word, Black Tortoise sent Ebone flying with a forceful kick.

Ebone spewed blood upon impact as he felt his spine break.

...

In the end, Black Tortoise dragged Ebone and his men out and left.

All over the South, similar scenes were playing out where reporters and paparazzi were being taken away.

At Times Group in South Hampton.

Floyd put both his legs on his office desk, humming a song.

The scandal involving Zoey, which the Times Group orchestrated, netted them a profit of seven hundred million.

Furthermore, it continued to increase as time went by.

“Hahaha, in just half a day, we have made half a year’s worth of profit!” Floyd laughed heartily.

As a public relations company that thrived on scandals, all Floyd’s profits were made from exploiting the suffering of others.

Throughout his career, he had destroyed many celebrities and prominent families with his company’s underhanded methods.

“Zoey, although you are innocent, it’s a pity that you have gotten in the way of someone else,” Floyd mumbled to himself with a smile while holding Zoey’s picture.

Ding dong!

At that moment, he received an email which he opened out of curiosity.

The contents were simple. It ordered him to publish the truth about Zoey’s scandal and make a public apology to her. Otherwise, he would have to bear the consequences.

When he saw the email, Floyd was amused.

“Publish the truth? No way! Am I supposed to give up the seven to eight hundred million that I have just earned? How dare you threaten me? Hmph! It looks like I have to redouble my efforts and utterly destroy Zoey,” Floyd sneered.

In fact, he wasn’t the only one who received the email. More than fifty other media companies received it too.

However, most of their management teams shared Floyd’s attitude toward the matter.

They weren’t afraid of threats. In fact, they were outraged by it and intensified their efforts in slandering Zoey.

Very soon, all of them received another email.

It demanded them to disclose the truth and make a public apology in an hour. Or else, trouble would come knocking.

“Hahaha...” Floyd burst into laughter.

“What? Zoey can’t solve her problem? Is that why she’s resorting to threats?”

Floyd immediately published the two emails, claiming that Zoey was threatening him.

He also intensified the attacks against Zoey and stepped up the insults, further inflaming the scandal.

And just like that, he earned another hundred million.

After all, his company relied a lot on the publicity generated by scandals. The more controversial it was, the higher the profits.

Therefore, the two emails became a tool in hyping the controversy.

The other media companies followed suit by disclosing the emails.

They were all as delighted as Floyd was.

“Come and threaten me again. The more threats you make, the more I profit from them.”
Floyd laughed heartily.

Everyone else in the office were also laughing.

In fact, they were hoping to receive another email, eagerly waiting to work overtime.

Very quickly, the one hour deadline passed.

Floyd stood up with a smirk. “Didn’t you give me a deadline of one hour? Now that it has passed, what are the consequences? Didn’t you promise I would have to bear them?”

“Mr. Henderson, they’re all bark without any bite. What sort of consequences could there be?”

Everyone laughed haughtily again.

Floyd walked to the French window of his office and looked out at the cityscape from the fiftieth floor.

“Where are the consequences?” he screamed aloud.

Crack!

Suddenly, the window broke into pieces.

The Protector Chapter 1015

As Floyd stared at the broken window, he was too shocked to even react when the flying glass shards from the impact cut his face.

More than ten men swung into his office located on the fiftieth floor.

It was Kirin leading a squad of Beasts.

Floyd could barely imagine how they even entered.

We are located fifty stories high!

“You... Who are you...”

Floyd’s lips trembled while his face turned ashen.

“Do you think we sent you the emails for nothing? Why do you insist on not publishing the truth and apologizing?” Kirin sneered.

“I... I...”

When Floyd saw what had just unfolded before him, he knew his enemy was not someone to mess with.

“Didn’t we say that you have to bear the consequences?” Kirin sneered.

“What are you trying to do? You want our company to publish the truth and apologize when Zoey did all those despicable things? Why should we?”

The others were visibly upset.

“What’s going on? Are you playing dumb? You expect me to believe that you’re not aware of the truth regarding Ms. Lopez?” Kirin asked with a grim expression.

The few of them were visibly panicking as they clearly knew what the truth was.

“Of course, it’s Zoey seducing a married man and becoming his mistress,” the few of them sneered.

Bang!

Kirin didn’t reply as he sent Floyd flying with a thunderous kick.

Crack!

Floyd landed a few meters away and crashed into an office desk, breaking it. Covered in blood, he howled in pain just like a pig being slaughtered.

“What about now? Are you going to confess?” Kirin asked again.

Thump! Thump!

Everyone else dropped to their knees in front of Kirin and pleaded, “We admit our mistake! Someone wanted to malign Ms. Lopez, and we were just following orders...”

“Take them away!” Kirin’s eyes flashed with a cold glint.

Following that, the same thing happened to the other media companies.

They were all filled with arrogance before the Beasts and Amethyst Guards stormed their office. Anyone who was involved was taken away.

That night, Lyndsay and Jayden didn’t sleep as they were busy fanning the flames of Zoey’s scandal.

They wanted to destroy Zoey’s reputation completely by morning.

“Hmm? What’s going on? Why is everyone stopping?”

Lyndsay was surprised when she noticed that all the media companies were no longer publicizing the scandal.

With her suspicions raised, she quickly called her contacts but couldn’t reach any of them.

“Did something happen to them?”

Lyndsay’s heart began to race.

“Does Levi have the capability to capture them? That should be impossible as there’s no way he can find out who did it,” she remarked.

It was four o’clock.

There was a large group of men kneeling in front of Levi. All of them were involved in publicizing the scandal.

Their faces were all bruised and swollen.

Levi sneered, “Who can tell me the truth?”

All of them remained silent.

“Very well, we have a bunch of stubborn fools here.”

Levi laughed before a cruel smile appeared on his face.

Bam!

He raised his leg and sent Ebone flying with a devastating kick.

Thump!

Ebone fell onto the ground with blood gushing out of his mouth while his body twitched violently.

"I'll confess!"

"Me too!"

...

Everyone was shocked by what they saw and volunteered to spill the beans.

"Good!"

"Now that everyone is gathered, where is Damon?" Levi asked.

"He is in hiding, and we're still searching for him."

Azure Dragon and the others lowered their heads in regret.

"Go! Find him as soon as possible!" Levi roared.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1016

"I remember! There's one more place that we haven't searched," Azure Dragon suddenly exclaimed.

They had searched every corner of the city except for one—the Morris Group.

Azure Dragon hurried there immediately and found Damon as expected.

After returning to the Morris Group, he hid in the warehouse.

To him, the most dangerous place had become the safest one.

Soon, Damon was brought before Levi along with Noelle.

"You..."

"Levi, what are you planning to do? Let me tell you, it was Zoey who seduced me, so I had nothing to do with it!" Damon bluffed.

Boom!

Levi was outraged when he heard those words.

He couldn't believe that Damon had the guts to slander Zoey despite being in his presence.

"Can you drop the act?" Levi sneered as he suppressed his fury.

“Act? What act? It was Zoey who forced me to do it. She wants me to get a divorce, but I refused. After that, she threatened me with her pregnancy. Sigh... I’m a married man, so how could I agree to her request?”

Damon continued to lie through his teeth without even blinking.

Noelle added, “Levi, what’s the meaning of this? Why have you captured me? Let me go this instant, or else you will regret it! Also, why is Mr. Trudon here too? Zoey is the one at fault, so it has nothing to do with anyone else.”

Levi glared at her. “I will come to you later. Let me finish with him first.”

“Do you still refuse to confess?” Levi stared at Damon and asked.

“What are you talking about? I don’t know what you mean. I know that you’re feeling indignant about Zoey, but what I said is true. What else can I do?”

Levi raised a finger at him. “I’m giving you one more chance.”

“Even if you give me ten more chances, the result will still be the same. I have told you the truth!” Damon insisted.

Bam!

Suddenly, Levi threw a punch at Damon’s face.

Pfft!

At that very instant, blood splattered everywhere, and all of Damon’s teeth flew out of his mouth.

Before he could even let out a scream, Damon fainted right away.

“Wake him up!”

Splash!

Damon was awoken by a sudden splash of water.

He looked at Levi in horror. "Levi, no matter how you torture me, I will never obey you!"

Noelle yelled angrily, "That's right. Levi, don't think you can cow us with violence. I'm warning you, it's impossible!"

Levi looked at both of them and asked, "Do you insist on keeping your lips sealed?"

"What is there to confess? How can we say something that didn't happen? Your wife is a despicable person who seduced a married man. She is a slut, and the fact that I work for her disgusts me. An unscrupulous woman like her deserves to die!" Noelle ranted.

Damon added, "That's right. Your wife was the one who seduced me. What does it have to do with me? Let me be honest with you. I even took photos and videos of her. Hahaha..."

Levi let out a vicious smile, and his eyes were filled with murderous intent. "I have already given you your last chance. You should take a look outside."

After hearing Levi's words, Damon and Noelle walked to the door and opened it.

Whoosh!

When they saw what was outside, both of them gasped in shock while their faces turned pale.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1017

In front of them, there were a few hundred people kneeling. All of them were covered in blood.

The sight of them shook Damon and Noelle to their core.

What's going on?

"Come, let me introduce you. This is Ebone... This is Floyd..."

When they heard Levi introducing the men one by one, Damon and Noelle were astounded.

Damn it! Everyone involved in publicizing the scandal is here!

Have they all been captured too?

Who in the world is Levi to be able to do such a thing?

"All of them have confessed!" Levi declared. "How about both of you?"

Levi's aura was so intimidating that Noelle and Damon felt suffocated.

They exchanged glances and said, "W-We will come clean..."

They were now finally aware of how terrible the consequences would be if they didn't cooperate with Levi.

It would be foolish of them to bring suffering on themselves.

"That's right. We will tell you everything. Actually, we were also forced to slander Zoey."

Levi nodded. "Good... Continue."

"They paid me money and threatened me with my family so that I would help them frame Ms. Lopez. Previously, they gave me access to the hotel and got me to print the bill and receipt for Ms. Lopez to sign. It was done to give the impression that Ms. Lopez and I entered the hotel together..."

Damon and Noelle explained everything, including all the nitty-gritty details.

"Mr. Garrison, please let us go. We have told you everything!" Damon and Noelle were choked up as they pleaded.

Levi asked with a smile, "Did you record it?"

Phoenix nodded. "Mm, we have it."

Levi looked at Damon and Noelle with a devious smile. "I already gave you your last chance, but you were the ones who didn't appreciate it."

"What? What do you mean?" Damon's expression changed drastically while Noelle's face lost all color.

"No, but we told you everything..." Noelle explained.

"And I have also given you a chance." Levi smiled.

Then he left the room with Phoenix, leaving Damon and Noelle inside.

At that moment, a pack of ferocious-looking dogs charged into the room.

When they saw Noelle and Damon, their eyes glowed with excitement.

Bam!

Phoenix shut the door tightly.

Bark! Bark! Bark!

"Argh..."

The next moment, screams of anguish could be heard.

It continued for half an hour before silence took over.

Although both of them were still alive, their bodies were covered with wounds.

In fact, there were even parts of their bodies where raw flesh was bitten off.

Both of them were writhing in immense pain before passing out.

And that was their punishment.

At eight in the morning, Lyndsay was still unable to contact anyone from the major media companies.

Both she and Jayden began to panic.

“Did he really manage to find them?”

“That’s impossible. I hid all of them well. There’s no way the Morris Group is capable of locating them with their current capabilities,” Jayden replied.

“I’ve just received news that Damon has disappeared. Wasn’t he hiding securely at the Morris Group?” Lyndsay wondered.

“Look, all the media companies are announcing something,” their assistant suddenly exclaimed.

All of them suddenly saw a headline flash across their phone screens.

The truth of Zoey Lopez’s controversy—she’s innocent!

The article described everything that had actually happened.

All the major media houses published the truth and made a public apology to Zoey.

The culprits, Damon and Noelle, also admitted to their attempt at slandering Zoey.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1018

Finally, the truth was revealed, and Zoey’s name was cleared.

As justice had been served, Zoey heaved a sigh of relief.

Both the Lopez and Black families were relieved as well.

The major media companies' apologies managed to restore Zoey's reputation.

She was indeed pregnant, but the father of the child was Levi, not Damon.

Furthermore, she would be remarrying Levi soon.

Hence, the media companies also announced the date of their wedding.

Just like that, the news of them getting married spread far and wide.

From Zoey's perspective, it was a good thing.

Firstly, it helped in increasing the company's influence.

Moreover, no one else could interfere with their wedding now.

Needless to say, there were winners and losers from the outcome.

While the winners rejoiced, the losers were devastated, especially Zoey's enemies.

They didn't expect that she was capable of making such a spectacular comeback when she had already fallen into a bottomless abyss.

How did it even happen?

The ones who were most dispirited were Jayden and Lyndsay.

"Is Levi that powerful? I can't believe he managed to find Damon and the others. How was he able to do it? Didn't we shut down all avenues of communication?" Jayden wondered out loud.

“We have totally underestimated him. He has proven himself to be quite capable.”

“What do we do next? Levi would definitely have guessed that we were behind it. In fact, he must already be looking for us to exact his revenge.”

Lyndsay panicked all of a sudden as she felt that there was more to Levi than met the eye.

He wasn't just the boss of Morris Group. In fact, he must be a lot more capable than what his title suggested.

She knew that he was a vengeful person, so there was no way he was going to let her and the others go.

Jayden remained defiant. “So what? We have destroyed all the trails that connect us with Damon. Hence, Levi will not be able to find any evidence. Furthermore, we are the Pinnacle Group, so what can he do? No matter how powerful he is, is it enough to challenge the Garrison family?”

Lyndsay finally heaved a sigh of relief. “That makes sense. In the eyes of the Garrison family, he is just an insect regardless of how strong he is.”

Jayden remained calm. “That's why you should loosen up because he won't be coming. A bastard like him is no match for the Garrison family.”

Meanwhile, Levi and Kirin arrived at the entrance of Golden Plaza.

“Stop! Do you have an appointment? You're not allowed to barge in like that.”

The security guard at the entrance stopped them.

Levi Garrison smiled. “I'm here to kill someone, so there's no need for an appointment.”

“What?”

The bodyguards' eyes widened as they stared at Levi in disbelief.

How dare he come to Pinnacle Group to kill? Such impudence!

“Stop where you are! Are you looking for trouble?” the security guard yelled angrily.

“Get them!”

At Levi’s cue, Kirin leaped into action.

Charging into Golden Plaza, he slammed and pounded everyone in his way.

Behind him, Levi strolled casually past all the fallen men who were howling in pain.

“The president’s office is on the thirty-seventh floor? Attack!” Levi commanded nonchalantly.

Floor by floor, Levi and Kirin steamrolled their way up.

More than a hundred security guards from the plaza arrived to stop them but to no avail.

They ended up being strewn all over the floor, crying in anguish.

Meanwhile, in the president’s office, Jayden and Lyndsay were discussing their counterattack.

“If Levi knows what is good for him, he won’t come here looking for trouble,” Lyndsay sneered.

Bang!

Crack!

The very next moment, the office door was kicked down so hard that it broke into pieces.

The thunderous sound from the impact startled everyone.

Following that, two men entered, and one of them was Levi.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1019

It took a whole ten seconds for Jayden and Lyndsay to realize what was going on.

“You... How did you get here? L-Levi Garrison...” Lyndsay gulped anxiously.

“Where’s the security? Why is such scum allowed in here? Are all of you just for show?” Jayden called out to the security guards.

But there was no one left to heed his call.

“Oh, about the security guards, they’re all lying on the floor outside. Is there something you need?” Levi asked.

“Y-y-you...”

The devious smile on Levi’s face sent a chill down Jayden’s spine.

Levi approached them and sat down in Jayden’s chair.

“Get up! That’s my chair. How dare you sit in my place?” Jayden rebuked.

However, in the face of Levi’s terrifying gaze, Jayden quickly shut his mouth.

“Do you know why I’m here to see you?” Levi asked.

Jayden and Lyndsay both shook their heads but were unable to hide the guilt on their faces.

“Do you really not know?” Levi asked again.

"We don't!" Everyone shook their heads.

At that moment, Levi suddenly slammed Jayden's head onto the office desk.

Bang!

He then grabbed the computer and walloped Jayden's head with it.

Crack!

Blood splattered all over as glass from the computer screen splintered out.

The gruesome scene shocked everyone there.

Lyndsay and the rest shuddered in horror when they heard Jayden scream in anguish.

"Do you still not know?" Levi asked again.

"No... I know, I know..."

Before anyone else said a thing, Jayden yelled in capitulation.

"But Mr. Garrison, this has nothing to do with us," Jayden began to deny.

"Nothing to do with you? Tell me, Lyndsay, are you guys involved?" Levi demanded.

"No, I know that you suspect us, but we really didn't do it. We are Pinnacle Group which is supported by the Garrison family. Do you think we would stoop so low as to do such a thing?" Lyndsay explained.

"That's right. Given how noble our status is, committing such a despicable act is beyond us," the others added.

"Are you really not involved?" Levi asked.

"N-No!" Everyone shook their heads.

Whoosh!

Out of the blue, Levi grabbed a pen and stabbed it into Jayden's palm.

"Argh!" Jayden let out an agonizing cry, causing everyone to turn pale and break out in cold sweat.

"Are you involved?" Levi continued to interrogate.

Despite being overwhelmed with fear, Lyndsay was persistent in her denial. "No... we're not."

"Kirin, bring me the blade!" Levi extended his hand.

Kirin unsheathed a customized military blade and handed it to Levi, who then fiddled with it.

He asked Kirin, "Do you remember how many slashes I made on the enemy spy before he spilled the beans?"

Kirin pondered for a moment. "I think it was three hundred and twenty-eight. He's the most stubborn man I have ever encountered. Only after being covered with so many cuts did he confess everything."

Levi looked at Kirin and smiled. "Kirin, you may not believe what I'm going to say. My carving technique is so good that I can give a man a thousand cuts without killing him. Every cut of mine is able to avoid the vital points. However, the spy disappointed me as I was confident of reaching a thousand cuts then."

"Boss, I really have to see it with my own eyes to believe it." Kirin was filled with disbelief.

Levi turned to Lyndsay and the rest with a smile. "I'll prove it to you by demonstrating it on them with my blade. I guarantee that I can make a thousand cuts, and they will still survive."

Hearing that, Kirin replied in glee, "That's a great idea. I just can't wait!"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1020

When they heard the terrifying conversation between Levi and Kirin, Lyndsay and the others trembled in fear as their faces lost all color.

“Who’s going to be the first one? You? Let’s start with you then.”

Levi scanned the room, and his gaze finally fell upon Jayden.

Splash!

Right at that moment, Jayden peed his pants in fear.

“Please, I beg you! Let me go, and I’ll tell you everything. We were the ones responsible for everything. I was the one who maligned Ms. Lopez.”

Kneeling on the floor, Jayden owned up to everything he did.

Realizing the game was over, Lyndsay and the others followed suit by dropping to their knees and admitting their mistakes.

“We were the ones who did it. We wronged Ms. Lopez!”

Levi scoffed, “Oh? That’s not right. How can someone as noble as you commit such a despicable act?”

All of them hung their heads in shame.

"Can't all of you have a little more backbone? Just the mention of a thousand cuts made all of you waver. Moreover, I haven't even done anything yet," Levi remarked in disappointment.

In his mind, he expected them to endure probably ten to a hundred slashes.

In the end, they were all just cowards without any guts.

"In that case, what do you suggest we do about this? Your defamation has caused my wife immense mental distress, so I can't let it go just like that," Levi asked.

Lyndsay and the others exchanged glances before offering, "We will make a public apology and then compensate Ms. Lopez."

"What will you compensate her with?" Levi inquired.

"Money, of course! Give us a number. A billion or even a couple of billion will not be a problem," Lyndsay declared.

Money wasn't a problem for the wealthy Pinnacle Group.

"No, I don't want money as I'm not short of it," Levi replied.

"In that case, what do you want?" Lyndsay realized something was amiss.

"I want you to pay with your lives!" Levi's eyes flashed with murderous intent.

Thump!

When they heard his words, everyone's legs gave out in shock.

Lyndsay had a strong sense of foreboding that Levi was really going to kill them.

She stared directly at Levi. "You dare kill us?"

"Why not?"

"We are the senior management of the Pinnacle Group, and I'm sure you're aware of who owns the group. He is the heir of the Garrison clan, Tyrone Garrison. We are under his direct

supervision. Furthermore, Mr. Damien Garrison is also backing us up. So how dare you lay a finger on us?" Lyndsay sneered.

Just as she spoke, everyone else suddenly realized that they were unnecessarily cowed by Levi. In truth, there was no need for them to feel afraid at all.

After all, they were members of the Pinnacle Group, which was supported by the Garrison clan of Oakland City.

Hence, they couldn't imagine who in the world would dare to harm them.

Upon realizing the fact, they gradually stood up and stopped kneeling before Levi.

Even Jayden heaved a sigh of relief. He glared at Levi and offered, "We will apologize to Zoey and compensate her financially. You can take it or leave it. Levi, you better think twice before you do anything to us. You will be challenging Mr. Damien and the whole Garrison clan."

Lyndsay sneered, "I admit that you have exceeded my expectations. But, compared to the Garrison clan, you are nothing but an insect."

"Is that's why you have decided to resolve this in such an insincere manner?" Levi asked.

"Otherwise, do you really want to go against the Garrison clan? Listen to me. You should let the matter rest. Despite how unfair you think it is, you have to bear with it." Jayden patted Levi on the shoulder.

Crack!

At that moment, Levi twisted Jayden's hand around and snapped his wrist.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1021

From Jayden's perspective, there was no way Levi would dare challenge the Garrison clan.

He thought Levi had no choice but to turn a blind eye to what they did.

For any injustice that he suffered, Levi could only accept it in silence.

However, Jayden didn't expect Levi to attack him.

Bam!

Levi sent him flying with a devastating kick.

Jayden's body slammed against the concrete wall before dropping to the ground. Blood splattered all over the wall from the impact.

After twitching for a brief moment, he lost consciousness.

"Levi, how dare you beat up Mr. Garrison's subordinate?" Lyndsay bellowed.

"Are you crazy? By doing this to Mr. Yolander, you have insulted the Garrison clan. Do you have a death wish?" the others yelled at Levi.

They attempted to bring the powerful Garrison clan into the matter so that they could intimidate Levi.

"Humiliating the Garrison clan is precisely what I'm looking to do."

Without saying another word, Levi slapped Lyndsay back and forth, causing everyone to fall silent.

“Levi, aren’t you afraid that the Garrison clan would exact revenge? Know your place. In the eyes of the Garrison family, you’re just a bastard,” Lyndsay yelled.

Slap!

All she got for a reply was another slap.

The slap was so forceful that a wound opened up, exposing her flesh. Consequently, her face began to look mutilated.

At that moment, Zoey called and asked Levi where he was.

After he ended the call, he sneered, “Count yourselves lucky that I let you live. However, all of you must give something up in exchange.”

“What?” Lyndsay and the others panicked.

“At least leave behind a hand or some fingers, or else death is what awaits you.”

“Do it yourselves.” Levi threw his knife to them.

After a momentary hesitation, Lyndsay picked up the blade and swung it hard at her own hand...

“Argh!”

She let out an agonizing scream, just like a pig who was being slaughtered.

Everyone else had no choice but to follow suit by mutilating themselves with the knife.

Excruciating screams reverberated through the room while the air was filled with the stench of blood.

“Levi, you will regret this! From today onwards, the Garrison clan will not rest until they have destroyed you. You are a dead man walking!” Lyndsay yelled.

“Hmm, but you won’t live long enough to see it. Make a public apology now!” Levi bellowed.

Finally, under Levi’s coercion, Lyndsay and the others apologized and revealed the truth on the internet.

After that, Jayden and Lyndsay were ostracized by the whole media industry to the extent that their reputations were utterly destroyed.

Going forward, they had to be careful wherever they went. In the event they were recognized, they would definitely be beaten up.

After Levi left, all of them were still crying in anguish. However, more than pain, they were all filled with hatred.

It was as if Levi had banished them from heaven and sent them straight to hell.

Their whole lives were ruined.

Not long after Levi left, Damien called them.

“What’s going on? Why did you apologize on the internet?” Damien demanded coldly.

“Mr. Garrison, you have to listen to us. It’s all Levi’s fault. He was the one who did this,” Jayden ranted in a choked voice.

Lyndsay related the matter to Damien and added fuel to the fire by exaggerating it.

“D*mn it, just you wait, Levi! I will personally deal with you. I will show the Garrison family and the whole world that I’m more powerful than a bastard like you. Beyond that, I’ll let Father know that his decision to abandon you was correct!”

Damien’s voice was frosty and carried with it a murderous intent.

“Excellent!” Lyndsay and the others were filled with tears of joy.

“As for you bunch of scum, it’s the end of you, so don’t force me to do it myself.”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1022

Meanwhile, Levi received news that Lyndsay and her companions disappeared after the apology. Sometime later, their bodies were found in a river.

Levi didn't even need to guess who did it.

The Garrison clan was so ruthless that they would not allow anyone to escape.

"Very well, I will take them down one day."

Levi's eyes were filled with resolve.

After having her name cleared, Zoey returned to the company. She reshuffled the top management, and everything else went back to normal.

The only difference now was that everyone knew about the date of her wedding with Levi.

Both she and Levi were busy preparing for it.

In fact, many of her old classmates called to congratulate her, including those she met when she was studying overseas.

Coincidentally, Zoey needed bridesmaids. However, given her age, most of her friends were already married with kids.

So far, Iris was her only bridesmaid. Therefore, Zoey had to choose a few more from among the friends she got to know abroad.

As for the best men, Zoey let Levi decide for himself.

It was a difficult choice for Levi to make as he was spoiled for choice.

Smiling, he fell into silence while his thoughts drifted back to their wedding day six years ago.

His best man then was Morris...

Sadly, he was no longer around.

Levi let out a long sigh.

The other two best men were Mateo and Jason.

Mateo, Morris, and he were best buddies since they were in school.

However, Mateo was the least capable among them as he had a reckless demeanor.

Jason was both a mentor and a friend to Levi.

Since he was a few years older than Levi, he helped him out a lot.

Based on Phoenix's investigations, Mateo and Jason tried their best to bail him out when he was sent to prison, but they didn't succeed.

However, Jason managed to get Levi's sentence reduced by two years from the original eight-year sentence.

After that, both of them disappeared, and no one knew where they went.

"I want them to be present at such an important event."

Six years ago, he didn't have many good friends. Those were the only three, but it was more than enough.

Levi immediately sent his men to look for both of them.

Soon, Phoenix had some updates on Jason.

She found out that he was a member of the illustrious Lowe family of Oakland City. He had spent a few years training in the Southern region.

When Levi was imprisoned, Jason returned home.

“Good, give me his contact.”

Filled with anticipation, Levi called Jason.

“Hello, who is this?” The voice on the opposite end of the line sounded surprised.

“Jason, it’s me. Levi Garrison!”

“What? Levi?” Jason’s tone was one of delight.

Levi laughed. “Jason, I didn’t expect you to be a member of one of Oakland City’s prominent families! At that time, I still thought you were from a poor family.”

“Oakland City... I...”

At the mention of Oakland City, Jason’s tone changed.

Recently, he had heard that Levi was the illegitimate son of the Garrison clan.

Furthermore, he was aware that they wanted to annihilate Levi, the bastard son.

Hence, he was worried that the Garrison clan would take action against the Lowe family if they found out about his relationship with Levi.

Especially since he heard that Damien himself wanted to deal with the matter personally.

Damien was known to be extremely ruthless.

Therefore, if he found out that Jason used to be Levi’s best friend, the Lowe family would be wiped out.

“Levi, what’s up?”

“Jason, I’m going to hold my wedding again and would like to invite you. You must attend!”

Jason hesitated for a moment. “Levi, I’m afraid I might not be able to make it...”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1023

Jason didn’t dare attend Levi’s wedding.

Recently, he was feeling anxious about his relationship with Levi as Damien was persecuting everyone who was connected to him.

Although Jason was based in Oakland City, he had been best friends with Levi for some time.

Hence, there was no way Damien was going to let him go.

Even hiding would not do him any good.

Therefore, attending Levi’s wedding was the last thing he dared to do as that would reveal his connection with Levi.

What if the Garrison clan comes to destroy the Lowe family?

All he could do was pray that the Garrison clan didn’t find out.

Consequently, he was unable to attend the wedding despite being best friends with Levi.

Considering the threat the Garrison clan posed to the survival of his family, he had no choice but to abandon his friendship with Levi.

The last thing he wanted was to see his family being annihilated.

"Why?" Levi was puzzled.

"Oh, Levi. I have long found out about your identity. You're related to the Garrison clan of Oakland City! That's why it's fated that I'm unable to attend your wedding."

"But I have always treated you as my best friend! We're friends for life!"

"Nevertheless, I still can't attend your wedding. If the Garrison clan finds out that we are connected, they will target my family. I just want my parents to live out their years in peace and prevent the annihilation of my family. Please understand my predicament. This is the end of our friendship. Perhaps we will have better luck in the next life."

Jason had chosen his family over his best friend.

"Jason, so you are just afraid that the Garrison clan will take revenge on your family. Don't worry. As long as I'm around, you don't have to fear them. Just come to my wedding. You don't have to be afraid of them at all. I'll take care of everything. Whoever dares to trouble you will feel my wrath, including the Garrison clan."

Levi quickly understood why Jason declined his invitation.

Why is Jason so afraid of Damien? With me around, even Tyrone can't do anything, let alone Damien.

"I can't, my friend. I just can't bet my life on this. Recently, Damian has been keeping tabs on me. That ruthless man is also looking for you, so you have to be more careful and go into hiding. If he finds you, you're dead meat!"

After offering his advice, Jason ended the call.

Levi felt depressed listening to the monotonous dial tone.

Since Jason was unwilling to accept his invitation, there was no point in forcing him.

He respected Jason's decision. After all, choosing to protect his family was the right decision.

The Garrison clan? How could they frighten the Lowe family to this extent?

However, their fear was understandable as the Garrison clan was the Head of Erudia, the first among the ancient families.

No one dared to offend them.

Phoenix, who was beside Levi, informed him, "Boss, Damien has declared that anyone who has anything to do with you will be persecuted. He probably plans to destroy everyone related to you."

"No wonder Jason was quaking in his boots. It's all Damien's fault."

Levi's eyes flashed with anger.

Damien is indeed relentless in his effort to destroy me, to the extent of hurting everyone connected to me. Damien, your ruthlessness will be the death of you!

Levi didn't even think of the Garrison clan as a threat, let alone someone like Damien.

"Phoenix, get me Damien's contact. I want to talk to him."

In no time, Phoenix found it.

When the call got through, Levi heard Damien's voice over the phone. "Hello, who is this?"

"It's Levi Garrison!"

After Levi announced his identity, the line fell silent. All that could be heard was heavy breathing.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1024

After a long silence, the voice spoke, "Y-You dare contact me?"

Levi laughed. "Why not?"

Does he really think he's some bigshot? D*mn it, even your grandfather doesn't have the guts to talk to me like that.

"Hahaha... Never in my wildest dreams did I expect you to call me."

Damien's laughter was heard over the line.

"What is it? Are you trying to beg for mercy? Have you realized the folly of your actions? Are you finally aware that the Garrison clan can't be challenged? I can accept your pleas, but you have to kneel before me! Hahaha..." Damien asked.

"Plead for mercy? You should be the one pleading," Levi sneered.

"If not that, why are you even calling?" It was obvious from Damien's tone that he was puzzled.

"I heard that you wanted to persecute everyone connected to me?" Levi asked.

"That's right. Anyone related to you will be disposed of. I found out that Jason Lowe of Oakland City was one of your best friends. He will be the first to suffer my wrath. What do you think?" Damien let out a maniacal laugh.

"How dare you!" Levi bellowed.

“What is there to stop me? And yet you still want to invite him to your wedding? It’s never going to happen. With me around, no one will dare to attend your wedding,” Damien scoffed.

Levi’s grin widened. “Fine, you should sit tight and wait. He will definitely be at my wedding. Furthermore, if you dare to touch anyone related to me, I will definitely kill you. Mark my words!”

“Hahaha...”

Damien didn’t take Levi’s warning seriously at all.

“Is there anyone in this world who dares threaten me? I guess you are the first one in Erudia,” Damien sneered.

He was the prince of the Garrison clan of Oakland City, while his father was the heir to the foremost ancient family in Erudia.

Apart from that, his mother was from the second most powerful ancient family in Erudia—the Garcias.

Therefore, the blood that flowed in his veins was as noble as it could possibly be.

He was the result of the combination of genes from the first and second most powerful ancient families.

Ever since he was young, he was pampered and received a lot of attention. Whatever he wanted was given to him unconditionally.

Besides his prominent background, his strong capability was another reason he was so famous in Oakland City.

There was no one in this world who could threaten him as he represented the two strongest ancient families in Erudia.

Within Erudia, only he had such an illustrious background.

Therefore, no one dared to offend him.

“Levi, how dare a bastard like you challenge me? Ask yourself if you are even qualified to do so. What right do you have? My mother is the darling of the second most powerful ancient family in Erudia, and her blood is the noblest of them all. Only she deserves to marry Father and join the Garrison clan.”

He continued, “Your mother is a lowborn and doesn’t deserve to marry into the Garrison clan. In fact, she doesn’t even deserve to be Father’s mistress! Even when we compare capabilities, you are just the boss of Morris Group, and yet you’re acting with such impunity? I’m more powerful than you by a thousand times! I can destroy the Morris Group with a flick of my finger.”

“So how dare a bastard like you come and challenge me? I will prove on behalf of my father that abandoning you then was the right decision. Noble blood is always stronger than that of any lowborn. I am practically royalty, while you are just a nobody. You will always have to worship my existence!” Damien bellowed like a maniac.

“Fine, fine, I get it. Just show me what you got. I want to see for myself how much the Garrison clan’s noble blood is worth,” Levi replied with a laugh.

He was looking forward to seeing how capable Damien was after all that talk. In fact, he wanted to verify if Damien was really a thousand times more powerful than he was.

“Very well. Just you wait, Levi. You will be groveling at my feet soon enough!”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1025

After Levi ended the call, White Tiger’s expression turned grim. He requested, “Boss, let me head to Oakland City and kill that annoying ass.”

Levi looked at White Tiger intently.

In terms of strength, White Tiger would have no problem killing Damien in his home. In fact, he might even do so unscathed.

However, as it was a matter related to the Garrison clan, Levi felt it was more appropriate for him to defeat Damien personally so that he could prove himself to both Damien and the whole Garrison clan.

He wanted to show them that the 'bastard' was in fact a thousand times more powerful than those of noble blood.

Furthermore, he wanted them to regret their decision to abandon him.

He wanted to see Tyrone grovel on the floor in remorse.

In fact, the whole Garrison clan should be equally repentant.

They should learn that even ordinary people can create miracles.

"By the way, Damien will move against the Lowe family. He just used them to threaten me, so he's definitely going to do it," Levi remarked.

"What should we do then?" everyone asked.

"Phoenix, can you check if we have anyone near Oakland City?" Levi ordered.

Within these six years, Levi had trained up many elite military squads.

Despite their small numbers, every one of them was formidable and had impressive combat abilities.

"Boss, the Dragon Warriors are in Oakland City."

Phoenix found the relevant squad in a short time.

“Alright, order the Dragon Warriors to protect the Lowe family from the shadows. Make sure they don’t make any mistakes,” Levi instructed.

After Phoenix gave the order, she reported, “Sir, we didn’t expect that among the Dragon Warriors, one of them is a member of the Garrison clan of Oakland City.”

Levi laughed when he heard it.

That soldier was likely the pride of the Garrison clan and yet was just one of Levi’s many subordinates.

At the Lowe residence in Oakland City, Erudia.

Jason was kneeling in the meeting hall while the elders of the Lowe family were admonishing him.

“Look at what you have done! Why did you make friends with a bastard!”

“Do you know you are the death of our family? Damien has ordered his men to come for us, and they are arriving anytime soon.”

“The Lowe family earned the right to be an ancient family through their achievements in the army. A few years ago, we even received the Paragon Seal. However, not only did you not continue the family’s legacy, but you also caused the family’s downfall.”

Everyone in the Lowe family lamented their impending fate.

The Paragon Seal was made to commemorate the victory of the God of War over the Eighteen-Nation Alliance. It was then awarded to all the military families that distinguished themselves in battle.

The Lowe family received one, and it was the pride of the entire family.

“What’s the use of having a Paragon Seal when our family has someone like you? We are going to be wiped out anyway. Why did you make friends with a bastard like that?” everyone in the Lowe family cursed.

Jason was devastated by the angst he was getting.

The Lowe family was considered an obscure family by Oakland City's standards.

Compared to the top ancient family, they were no different from insects.

Very soon, a convoy of cars stopped at the entrance to the Lowe residence.

An undeniably handsome man alighted, but he had a vicious expression on.

Behind him were hundreds of formidable fighters, and a few hundred more were in hiding just to ensure his security.

Other than that, every street nearby was filled with their convoys which could arrive in five minutes whenever they were needed.

Furthermore, there were tens of helicopters circling in the sky which could land in just a minute.

Only one man could mobilize such an impressive display of force—Damien Garrison.

However, he was there to annihilate the Lowe family.

He was the favorite son of the two most powerful ancient families in Erudia.

As no one wanted any harm to come to him, the security around him was impregnable, to the extent that there were men beside him whose sole purpose was to sacrifice their lives to save him at the crucial moment.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1026

Damien Garrison adjusted his gold-rimmed glasses. The air was oozing with his natural-born aura of nobility.

In his world, there were only two types of people— the ones who were close to him and the lowly peasants.

Other than the Garrison family and the Garcia family, everyone else was equivalent to peasants in his eyes.

“Levi Garrison! Didn’t you say that you wanted to protect the Lowe family? So why would you ask Jason Lowe to attend your wedding! I’ll burn every single member of the Lowe family into ashes today! I’ll break the limbs of Jason Lowe! Let’s see if he will still be able to attend your wedding!”

Damien was a man of his word. He had said that he would start his massacre with Jason, and here he was.

Boom!

As Damien waved his hand leisurely, his men immediately pushed down the gate to the Lowe residence. Troops consisting of hundreds of soldiers promptly marched their way into the house in an orderly manner.

Upon seeing Damien’s army, the members of the Lowe family immediately fell to their knees. They didn’t dare oppose his wishes.

Jason’s father, Yosef Lowe, pleaded with Damien, “Mr. Garrison! Please... please give us a chance... My son was ignorant! Please forgive us!”

“Have mercy on us, Mr. Garrison! We’re willing to give you everything! As long as you spare our lives, all the assets of the Lowe family can be yours! Take all the money as well!”

The entire Lowe family pleaded in unison.

They were going all out in order to salvage their family.

“Haha! What makes you think that I care about a puny family like yours? Do you think I lack that bit of money that your family is worth? Are you looking down on me?” Damien scoffed.

The Lowes were terrified.

It was a fact that Damien had everything that he wanted.

There was literally nothing he was in need of!

“The only reason I am here today is to annihilate the entire Lowe Family! It’s your fault for having relations with that bastard Levi! I’ve said before that I would wipe out every single person who had anything to do with Levi Garrison!”

Damien flashed a twisted smile.

“Mr. Garrison! I was wrong! I shouldn’t have interacted with him! Please let my family go!”

Jason begged in despair.

“Go to Levi Garrison and call him a bastard a hundred times to his face. If you do that, I’ll let you off!”

Damien smiled in amusement.

“I-I can’t...”

Jason gave up.

“Well, if you can’t, then you might as well just die!”

A wall of men unsheathed their blades and charged toward the Lowe family with the wave of Damien's hand.

The Lowe family was about to be annihilated.

"Stop right there! Don't you dare touch the Lowe family!"

A shout of demand sounded from behind them at the very last moment.

Clash!

Clash!

...

A sea of warriors in black charged their way down from the roof and the walls surrounding the Lowe residence.

There was a magnificent dragon stitched onto the black battle suit of those warriors.

They all had a bulletproof mask shielding their faces.

"Huh? Aren't they the Dragon Warriors who are under the direct command of the God of War? What are they doing here?"

Damien was very familiar with the God of War's troops.

It was his ultimate goal to be the God of War, after all.

He remembered what Kenny and Tyrone told him after the God of War came into existence.

You have to become the God of War. This is a goal you have to work toward!

Damien, you may be superior to your peers, but compared to the God of War, your achievements are far from enough.

It's like your accomplishments are a joke.

From then on, Damien set his goal to be the God of War.

The only thing he thought about every day was how to minimize the difference between him and the God of War.

To surpass someone, one must first understand everything about him.

That was why Damien was so familiar with everything remotely related to the God of War.

“I am Damien, a direct descendent of the Garrison family. With all due respect, Dragon Warriors, why have you come here today?” Damien queried.

“Damien Garrison, leave immediately! The Lowe family is not to be at your disposal!”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1027

A demanding voice sounded.

“Hm? Is that you, Lincon?”

Damien recognized that voice. It belonged to his cousin, Lincon Garrison.

He was the son of Damien’s uncle, who was Tyrone’s eldest brother.

As a member of the Dragon Warriors, he was not only the pride of Damien’s uncle but also the whole Garrison family.

Having a member who attained the prestige of being a trusted subordinate of the God of War was a great honor for any family, no matter how formidable that family may be.

"I understand, Lincon. I'll leave right now!"

Although Damien may have a prominent status, it was not within his ability to start a conflict with the direct subordinate of the God of War.

Therefore, he promptly retreated with all his men.

He was curious, though.

How did the Lowe family have anything to do with the God of War's Dragon Warriors?

Even Jason was bewildered by the turn of events.

What's going on?

Why are the Dragon Warriors here?

Even Damien was intimidated by their presence, so much that he abruptly abandoned his plan altogether.

Could it be Levi?

Levi had told Jason that he'd do everything in his power to protect the Lowe family and that there wasn't a single person in the Garrison family who could make his determination waver.

Could this be his doing?

Damien had the exact same thoughts as Jason.

It wasn't that long ago when he and Levi talked on the phone.

During their call, Levi had issued him a warning.

Besides that, Damien was also told that he wouldn't be able to do anything to the Lowe family.

I can't believe the Dagon Warriors came.

Could it be that Levi is the God of War?

That thought sent a chill down Damien's spine.

How could that be possible?

If the God of War really were Levi, there would be consequences that he wouldn't even dare think about.

Damien was unable to imagine the repercussions. More importantly, he wouldn't be able to take the blow to his pride.

It can't be true!

Erudia had over five thousand years of history, but there was only one man who became the God of War in his twenties!

He was the only one who had obtained that title, which signified the highest level of military prestige!

Every era of Erudia's existence produced countless outstanding talents.

But there was only one God of War who was able to clinch such prominent status in his mere twenties.

Not only was this person immensely capable, but he also had the honor of being recognized as the God of War during the prosperous era of the country.

Damien recalled what the Garrison family's seniors remarked about the God of War. Erudia must have used up thousands of years' worth of prosperity in exchange for such a great God of War.

This person is beyond extraordinary!

He was definitely of the noblest bloodline in Erudia and bore the prosperity of Erudia over thousands of years.

Even the direct descendants of Erudia's ancient families couldn't have obtained such high status, much less a bastard.

How would he ever be worthy of such a title?

It is simply impossible!

There is no way that a bastard from a filthy bloodline like Levi Garrison has anything to do with the God of War!

But why did the Dragon Warriors come forth to defend the Lowe family?

Damien didn't leave as he was waiting for Lincon.

It didn't take long for Lincon to join him as he slipped into the shadows.

"Lincon!"

Damien greeted him respectfully.

Even if Lincon had nothing on him in terms of ability, attaining the title of a Dragon Warrior was enough for the former to intimidate him.

"Damien, you aren't allowed to touch the Lowe family from now on!"

Lincon told him.

Damien nodded. "I understand!"

Following this, his tone changed immediately. "Lincon, what background does this Lowe family have? Why did the Dragon Warriors come forth and protect them?"

"I'm not sure. We were just following the orders given. But I do know that the Lowe family used to be an ancient family with a military background. They were even awarded the Paragon Seal. It probably has something to do with that," Lincon explained.

"Oh, I see!" Damien replied.

The Lowe family attained the Paragon Seal?

Damien knew that after the battle with the Eighteen-Nation Alliance years ago, the country had specially crafted Paragon Seals to reward those families that made contributions. Ten of those seals were awarded to the Garrison family.

The Garrison Family had always been proud of this achievement.

They were the family that had been awarded the most number of Paragon Seals in all of Erudia, after all.

Never would Damien have imagined that the Lowe family owned one too!

That thing was equivalent to an amulet.

With that seal in hand, it only made sense that they had the protection of the Dragon Warriors.

Lincon Garrison didn't linger around and left promptly.

Meanwhile, the Lowe family was shocked, to say the least, as they had thought that they were done for today.

Who would have expected the God of War's personal army to show up all of a sudden?

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1028

"Mr. Lowe, our leader told us that no one from the Garrison family would mess with you again, so you don't have to live in fear of them anymore!"

The Dragon Warriors left upon conveying the message.

Shortly after that, the Lowe Family came to their senses.

“Could it be the Paragon Seal? After all, there weren’t many who had the honor of receiving the seal! No wonder the Dragon Warriors came down to protect us!”

Jason was beaming with glee.

No one would mess with us?

That means I can go to Levi’s wedding!

It’s not like Damien could make things difficult for me after what happened earlier.

At that thought, Jason immediately phoned Levi to confirm that he would be attending his wedding.

A smile formed on Levi’s face when he heard the news from Jason.

“That’s right! How could a mere Damien try and stop my friend from attending my wedding? Hoho, he’s so naive!”

Levi laughed.

Who’s capable of harming the people I care about?

Back in Oakland City, Damien sat in misery.

He had planned to give Levi a warning by massacring the Lowe family.

Who would have expected them to possess a Paragon Seal?

Even the Dragon Warriors came down personally to protect them.

Their luck was a little too good to be true, wasn’t it?

Damien’s eyes glimmered with murderous intent. “How is it possible that everyone close to Levi is so lucky? You’d better watch out, Levi! I’ll get back at you!” he growled in rage.

Even up until then, he still refused to believe in his own speculation.

Could it be that every single person related to Levi Garrison has the Paragon Seal?

It's not like all of them can have the God of War's protection, right?

The wedding date was approaching.

Levi had sent out many wedding invitations.

Although it was a remarriage, he was treating this wedding as his first one, and it was the same for Zoey.

The bridesmaids whom she had invited were already here.

Since they came all the way from overseas, Zoey demanded that Levi tag along to fetch them from the airport.

At North Hampton International Airport, two women were alighting from a plane that just landed.

They were clad in luxurious branded goods from head to toe and carried an air of arrogance.

The haughty women deliberately hinted at their noble status with their actions.

It was as if they desperately wanted everyone to know that they came from abroad.

It was obvious that Zoey's best friends had been influenced by the culture and practices of the countries that they were living in.

As a result, they had gotten used to thinking highly of themselves.

They probably despised everyone in Erudia and thought of them as peasants.

Levi could feel their disdain from the way they were scrutinizing him.

"Zoey! We initially weren't planning on attending your wedding!" Zara Hilton and Yvette Carnell told her.

Zoey's happy expression faded away immediately. "Huh? Why not?"

"I'm telling you, Zoey, you're the prettiest among the three of us, but your taste in men is terrible! We disapprove of your husband! We thought that you had married someone else, but it turned out to be the same person!"

Zara scoffed coldly.

Yvette gave a helpless look. "Zoey, you were exposed to the foreign culture too when you studied there. With the kind of status you have, it only makes sense for you to have high standards when you're choosing a man to marry! Why would you pick him?"

"It seems like this country sucks. If Zoey had stayed overseas, her standards definitely wouldn't be as low as this!" Zara commented.

Yvette immediately chimed in, "Yeah! That's right. This country's conditions are toxic. It's so much better to be overseas. There's no way Zoey would have chosen this guy if she had stayed abroad. Instead, she would have picked someone much more competent! Definitely not this joke of a guy!"

Yvette ended her speech with a glare at Levi.

These words made Levi upset to say the least.

His voice was cold as he spoke. "Excuse me, are you two still Erudian? All you talk about is how good the other countries are. However, I highly doubt it."

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1029

Levi couldn't stand xenophiles.

They were living in Erudia, the most secured and prosperous place in the world.

Yet, all they did was complain about it.

In their eyes, as long as something was from a foreign country, it was better than that of Erudia.

Even the air overseas smelled sweeter and the moon over there was brighter.

Those people who had lived abroad always felt a sense of superiority over Erudians, as if the latter were peasants.

Wasn't this exactly the case for Zoey's two friends?

It was then Zara and Yvette's turn to get upset after hearing Levi's chastise.

"It is much better to live overseas. That's the harsh truth! Do you foolish people seriously think that Erudia is the best place in the world? Let me tell you, Erudia is worthless compared to other countries!"

"You're asking if I'm Erudian? Well, I don't want to be one anymore! I've been working on getting an immigration permit. The moment the permit is approved, I'll immigrate immediately! Why would anyone want to be Erudian? Staying abroad is amazing!"

Zara and Yvette retorted disdainfully.

It was their instinct to reject everything that was Erudian.

From the moment they got off the plane, even the air seemed contaminated to them.

If not for Zoey's current status, there was no way she could have convinced them to come back and be her bridesmaids.

They looked at her and said, "Zoey, why don't you immigrate too? With your wealth, it'll be blissful to live overseas!"

"Yeah! Everything abroad is so much better compared to Erudia! Hurry up and immigrate! The moment you obtain overseas citizenship, you'll get great opportunities everywhere you go!"

However, Zoey rebuked, "I was born and raised in Erudia. There is no way that I'll immigrate anywhere else. I've only gone overseas for the sake of broadening my horizons."

Zoey strongly disagreed with the views of her friends.

But since she was the one who had requested them to be her bridesmaids, she couldn't be too blunt.

"Sigh... Zoey, that's such a pity! It'll be a waste for a genius like you to remain in Erudia!" both of them lamented.

Zara and Yvette were only two out of countless people who shared the same opinion.

Unfortunately, it wasn't uncommon to find xenophiles among the younger generation nowadays, and they fought tooth and nail for an immigration permit.

In their opinion, everything foreign were better.

Levi sneered, "You two had better give up on that thought. There's no way my wife would want to immigrate! Not only is Erudia a prosperous country, but it also has a rich history dating back thousands of years. It's perfect! Why would anyone be envious of those staying abroad! Haha!"

"Haha! What's so good about Erudia? Look at Zoey! She must have gotten used to the old-fashioned way of living here! That's why she chose you to be her husband! This would

never have happened if Zoey went overseas! She definitely would have chosen a husband a hundred times better than you! How good can life even get here?" Zara mocked.

Zoey made an effort to stop their bantering. "Alright! All that matters is that we're compatible with each other!"

Zara shot a last glare at Levi before she shut her mouth.

"Zoey, have you chosen the groomsmen? I've heard that Erudian groomsmen have a terrible practice of bullying the bridesmaids at the wedding!" Yvette asked.

"Yeah! I've seen so many videos of groomsmen harassing bridesmaids at Erudian weddings! Everyone overseas thought that all Erudians acted this way. It's so embarrassing for us!"

Zara frowned as she queried.

Zoey smiled. "Levi has already chosen the groomsmen! Don't worry. They're all morally upright and gentlemanly. There is no way such a situation will happen at our wedding!"

"He was the one who chose the groomsmen?"

Zara and Yvette cast their looks of doubt at Levi.

"Won't they be like him then? In fact, they could be worse than him! I can't stand Erudian men. They're inferior to foreign guys!"

"That won't do. We want to be the ones to choose the groomsmen!"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1030

Zara and Yvette stood firm on their request. "Zoey, let us choose the groomsmen! Your wedding this time has such a huge eminence. There are surely innumerable crowds who would pay close attention to it, so there is a need to ensure that the wedding is held with great splendor. Let's hire a few foreign models to be the groomsmen!"

"That's right! Only models from overseas will be worthy of standing next to bridesmaids like us!"

...

The two of them launched into a heated discussion.

If this went on, they might even end up finding a new husband for Zoey.

"Let you two choose my groomsmen? Impossible! I'll much rather give up you two as the bridesmaids than allow you to choose my groomsmen! And there is no way I'll accept foreigners!"

Levi was firm in his decision.

Zoey watched as her husband and her friends tore at each other's throats.

She immediately stepped forward to coax Zara and Yvette.

"Fine. We can give up the choosing of the groomsmen. But Garrison, you'd better let us vet those groomsmen you've chosen. They can only attend the wedding with our approval," Zara conceded.

"Yeah! Even if we don't consider whether they're qualified for the role, we must at least vet them! Who knows if he has chosen any Tom, Dick, and Harry to the wedding!" Yvette added.

Zoey sighed helplessly. "Levi, could you please get the groomsmen to meet up with us?"

"Alright, I'll arrange that."

Levi's groomsmen consisted of four members of the Five Great Wars Regiment, including Azure Dragon and Kirin. The last member of the regiment, Phoenix, was to be one of the bridesmaids.

"Zoey, where have you arranged for us to stay?" Zara questioned.

"In a five star hotel!" Came the reply from Zoey.

"Is it owned by a foreign company?" Yvette asked.

Zoey shook her head. "Nope. It's a local company, but they've been rated five stars."

"That won't do! We're so used to living overseas. If we aren't staying in a foreign-owned hotel or a foreign-styled manor, we'll feel uncomfortable!"

"Yeah! The style is so different! It'll affect our stay greatly!"

Zara and Yvette complained.

These drama queens!

Now they're going overboard!

Is there even a need to be so picky?

"Alright, alright. I'll arrange for you to stay in a foreign-owned hotel! I'll make sure the manager and staff are all foreigners. How does that sound?"

Zoey didn't want to spoil the mood over such petty things, so she could only give in to their requests.

"Hmph, that's more like it!"

Zara and Yvette finally relented.

At night, Zara and Yvette whined about how they couldn't get used to local cuisine and insisted on dining in a western diner.

The two ladies were satisfied with their meal at the western diner, and they could not shut up about how good western food was.

In their eyes, western cuisine was high-class and fine, whereas local dishes were appalling.

After a while, Azure Dragon brought his team of five from the regiment over to the western diner.

Zoey was extremely pleased to see them.

Even though she didn't know what they did for a living, she appreciated the way they treated her courteously.

"Levi, why don't you do the introductions?"

Without delay, Levi introduced Azure Dragon and his crew to the two girls.

"Hold up. This person over here is supposed to be one of the bridesmaids too? Seriously? With this kind of dowdy look, she looks like a tomboy! How can she be a bridesmaid and stand next to us!"

The moment they heard that Phoenix was one of the bridesmaids, Zara and Yvette's faces paled.

It took a long time for them to accept that Iris was going to be a bridesmaid.

But they couldn't accept Phoenix's aloofness and tomboyish style.

Phoenix was actually a woman of stunning beauty. In fact, she was much prettier than the two ladies who were sitting there judging her looks.

Having been in the army for a long time, Phoenix was a virago who was as competent as men on the battlefield.

However, she was different from most women in terms of demeanor and appearance, looking slightly manly.

"Zoey, I thought you would choose a stunning woman to be your last bridesmaid. I mean, I don't expect her to be outstanding like us, but at least she's got to be better than this!"

“How is she even qualified to be a bridesmaid?”

The two of them couldn't even be bothered to cover up the mockery in their voices.

Bang!

Phoenix slammed a fist onto the table.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1031

Clang!

Following that, she grabbed a dinner knife and stabbed it right into the center of the table.

“Why do the two of you have so much bullsh*t coming out of your mouths? And who the hell are you calling a tomboy?”

Phoenix questioned them coldly.

Even her enemies couldn't make her shed a single tear on the battlefield.

What made these ladies think that they could bully her?

Phoenix fiddled with the dinner knife.

The threat was clear. She could send the knife flying straight through the necks of Zara and Yvette at any second.

Zara and Yvette were frightened stiff.

They exchanged a helpless look and laughed weakly. “I mean, we think you're really great too! We're so happy to have you join us!”

They were powerless against Phoenix, so they chose to keep their mouths shut.

The two of them only had the guts to bully those weaker than them, after all.

The nicer Zoey was to them, the more they took advantage of her.

But when faced with violence like the kind Phoenix had just demonstrated, they would chicken out immediately.

Zoey valued her friendships greatly. Since she was the one who asked them to be her bridesmaids, she had no choice but to put up with their bullying.

In fact, Zoey had a domineering side to her too. If it were not for her tolerance, she would have sent them packing for home already.

“Well, anyway, we will need to find a new group of groomsmen! This batch won’t do!”

Seeing that they couldn’t boss Phoenix around, Zara immediately turned to target the remaining four men.

Yvette nodded in concurrence. “That’s right. These groomsmen are horrendous! Look at the four of them. Their fashion sense is outdated. Their complexions are too dark, and some of them are bulky like bulls! Oh, this is terrible! They’ll seem so out of place next to bridesmaids like us!”

It was probably because Azure Dragon and the other three guys were all in plain clothing, not to mention the standard and boring military buzz cut they all had.

The whole look made them seem trigger-ready and unapproachable.

Zara and Yvette definitely wouldn’t make do with them.

“Zoey, you’ve got to listen to us. Get a few international models. They don’t even have to do anything else besides standing there, but they’ll make your wedding look much more prestigious,” Yvette suggested.

“Exactly! Your wedding’s got to be the best. Zoey, take a good look at these groomsmen! How are you supposed to work with them?”

Zara scoffed in disgust.

Zoey laughed awkwardly. "I think they're great. All of them are Levi's best friends. He treats them like his brothers! It's just within expectations for him to invite them to be his groomsmen!"

Zara and Yvette scowled. "No way! They can't be the groomsmen! We refuse to accept them!"

"Their expressions aren't even right! I seriously suspect that they're up to something! They won't be fit to stand next to us!"

Upon hearing their remarks, Azure Dragon and his men were furious.

These b*tches seriously need some disciplining.

They'll shut up the moment we land a few slaps on them.

Too bad they are Zoey's friends.

For that reason, they didn't dare speak their mind, despite being furious.

All they could do was to swallow their anger and remain silent.

Iris sighed next to them. "Do us all a favor, and make do with them, will you? We're just choosing the groomsmen, so don't put too much thought into it!"

However, Zara scoffed and turned to Zoey. "Zoey, we're fine with letting you choose the groomsmen, but you've got to choose some whom we're comfortable with! If you insist on having them as the groomsmen, then the two of us will refuse to be your bridesmaids!"

Yvette nodded along. "Yeah! If you insist on choosing them, then you can't have us! Find some other girls to be your bridesmaids! Hmph!"

Zoey quickly jumped into the conversation to mediate the situation. "Come on. Don't be like this! Let's all calm down and talk this through, alright?"

Zoey didn't want anyone to feel uneasy and hoped that they could all come to a peaceful consensus.

Little did she know that such kindness would only encourage those two girls to try and take advantage of her.

“That won’t do! Zoey, you’ve got to make a decision! Either you choose to have them as the groomsmen, or we stay as the bridesmaids! It’s one or the other!”

Zara and Yvette insisted on having Zoey make a decision.

“I...”

Zoey was at a loss for what to do.

How am I supposed to decide?

“Great! Just f*ck off if you don’t want to be a bridesmaid! Who the hell cares about the two of you?”

At that moment, Levi, who was at his wits’ end, yelled at Zara and Yvette in rage.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1032

Levi’s sudden burst of anger shocked everyone into silence.

“I’ve been tolerating the two of you for a very long time now! I’ve shown you respect, but what about you? You’ve been nothing but overbearing and annoying! You’ve vividly portrayed to me how incessant b*tches would behave! Scram if you don’t want to be a bridesmaid! We couldn’t care less! Do you seriously think that we won’t be able to hold our wedding without you?” Levi yelled.

Zara and Yvette were stunned.

Zoey hadn't said a word about their attitude, but Levi had gotten enraged before her.

It took a solid minute for the two of them to regain their bearings.

"What? Are you telling us to leave?"

The two of them stared at Levi unbelievably.

"Yes. Get lost if you don't want to be a bridesmaid! Zoey has been treating the two of you as her friends, but what about you? How have you been treating her?"

"You've been rudely ordering her around, asking her to make new arrangements for your accommodation and your meals. That's fine. We're still able to tolerate that. But asking to choose the groomsmen? Excuse me. Is it you or Zoey who is getting married?"

"Have you ever given Zoey a shred of respect? Do you seriously take her as your friend? We've invited you over to be our bridesmaids, not VIPs whom we're supposed to please!"

"What makes you think that you are the ones to decide how our wedding should be held? What more do you want? Do you want to change me, the freaking groom of the wedding, out as well?"

Levi attacked them with questions.

The two women were rendered speechless.

Zara and Yvette stood up from their seats and stared at Zoey. "You don't want us to be your bridesmaids either, do you? You'll choose them over us at the end of the day, won't you?"

"Zoey, say something if you still treat us as your friends! You'll know who to choose if you've ever considered us your real friends!"

Zara and Yvette stubbornly insisted that Zoey make a decision.

To their surprise, Zoey wore a cold expression as she spoke. "If the two of you were my real friends, you wouldn't have asked me to choose! Since you're not treating me sincerely as your friend, then there's no point in me being courteous to you! Please leave!"

Zoey was fed up and finally gave them an answer.

The two girls looked at Zoey in disbelief as they never expected Zoey to make such a decision.

The only reason why they dared to act so presumptuously was that they thought Zoey was meek.

It never crossed their minds that Zoey changed so much in such a short period of time, especially in terms of her personality.

"Great. This is just great! How dare you reject us as your bridesmaids? You'll regret this!" Zara raged.

"Yeah! That's right! Without us, who will you ask to be your bridesmaids?"

Levi scoffed, "Any woman with two legs? That'll be like shopping for groceries in the market!"

Levi already had candidates in mind, and one of them was Helena Engler.

Anyone would be better than these two clowns.

Besides, they wouldn't even be here if it were not for Zoey, who still cared about their friendship.

"Hmph! Who do you think you are, Zoey Lopez? Are you even aware that your wedding is for a remarriage? Why are you making it so grand? You seriously have no shame, do you?"

"Yeah! Do you think you're some celebrity? I would be so embarrassed to remarry! Much less hold a wedding for it! Do you not want your reputation anymore?"

They scoffed, tearing their façade altogether.

“This is freaking Erudia! People will laugh at you for making such a grandeur over a remarriage! This kind of culture would be a joke overseas!”

“Get lost!”

Zoey yelled in the midst of her fury.

“Do we have to leave just because you told us to? What if I refuse to leave? Huh? What can you do?”

“We’ll leave whenever we want to! Not just because you told us to!”

Zara and Yvette sneered at her.

“Throw them out if they refuse to cooperate.” Levi’s icy voice sounded.

“Great! Because I’ve been waiting all day to beat up these b*tches!”

Black Tortoise murmured in annoyance.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1033

Even Iris had the impulse to throw out those two women, let alone Azure Dragon and his men, who all had a bad temper.

“You wouldn’t dare!”

“Don’t you dare touch us!”

Zara and Yvette threatened.

“Erudian men are really boorish! You’re all acting like barbarians! How rude! You don’t even have basic courtesy!”

“All of you should really take lessons from foreigners. Every one of them is so gentlemanly, unlike you! Barbaric! Repulsive!”

The two of them screeched at Black Tortoise and the other men.

Having spent many years abroad, they felt edified by the culture over there and were now putting on airs.

Not only did they scorn everything that had to do with Erudia, but they also made it their mission to compare Erudia with foreign countries in every possible way.

This was especially so with the case of people.

Needless to say, they felt that foreigners were better than Erudians.

And having gone through that whole ordeal a while ago, they only felt a stronger prejudice against Erudians.

“Look at these people! If I didn’t know this was Erudia, I would have thought that I had been transported back to the Stone Age! All of you are so barbaric!”

Levi shot them a chilling glare. “Throw them out!”

Upon receiving that order, Black Tortoise took the opportunity to vent his frustration. He grabbed the two screeching ladies, one in each hand, and dragged them toward the entrance.

“Let go of me!”

However, their frenzied struggling were to no avail.

Bam!

Black Tortoise mercilessly threw them out of the door as if he were disposing of garbage.

Zara and Yvette felt pain shot through their bodies while they stared at him with their mouths agape in shock.

They had been thrown out like beggars onto the street.

“Just you wait! You lowly Erudian peasants! Barbarians! I’ll expose all of your vulgar acts to the world!”

They continued screaming.

“This monstrous country makes me sick! We shouldn’t even be here! We want to leave this barbaric place right now!”

Their clamorous shrieks of resentment echoed through the street as they left with the promise that they would be back to take revenge.

Levi shot a look at Azure Dragon.

After Azure Dragon pulled a few strings, those two mad women were immediately deported out of the country.

They had literally been chased out of Erudia.

As they left, they still made sure to voice out their scolding. “Don’t you worry! We won’t even want to step into the borders of this country ever again! Barbarians! You’re all destined to live as peasants!”

It was not until they hopped off the plane onto foreign land did they truly let out a breath of relief.

“Oh, we’re finally here! I can smell the sweet scent of foreign air again! Look at how glamorous it is over here in a foreign land!”

Zara was nearly moaning in glee.

“My mood is a hundred times better now that we’ve left that barbaric place called Erudia! The air is so fresh over here!”

“Exactly! Look at all these familiar faces! Oh, I’m so happy right now! Erudians seriously make me sick!”

...

A whole string of nasty words could be heard while the two of them exchanged their complaints exasperatedly.

When they left the airport, they decided not to flag down a taxi.

Instead, they wanted to take a stroll back.

They felt that they needed to filter out the dirty Erudian air in their bodies with the fresh and clean air in their beloved foreign land.

In their opinion, Erudia was a petty country.

“I’ll never admit that I’m Erudian! It’s such a shame!”

Yvette decided resolutely.

“Yes, yes! We’re foreigners! Noble citizens! Erudia doesn’t deserve to have us!”

Zara concurred with her statement.

At that moment, a group of foreign men walked past them.

They looked fierce, with murderous intent clear in their eyes. Upon seeing the two coquettish ladies, their eyes lit up with a malicious glint.

They whipped out their daggers and quickly surrounded the two girls.

Ba dum!

Zara and Yvette panicked. Their hearts flipped as they surveyed the situation.

They had been too caught up in their complaint session and hadn’t bothered to pay close attention to their surroundings.

Although all they talked about was how good foreign countries were, they had encountered robbers when they first arrived in a foreign land.

In the years following their stay in the foreign country, they met with several cases of robbery. They weren't spared, even when they were in the middle of a bustling city.

Hence, they didn't dare to step out of their house at night.

Tonight, however, they seemed to have forgotten that.

"Hehe..."

It didn't take long for the foreigners to encircle the women.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1034

The foreigners snickered as they sized Zara and Yvette up.

If they were lucky, they would get to rob and rape tonight.

The foreign gentlemen, as Zara had once called them, smacked their lips as they checked out their prey.

This would never have happened in Erudia. No matter how lowly they thought Erudia was, they definitely wouldn't be robbed near the airport.

Neither would they need to worry about wandering in a major city at night.

This was the so-called greatness of foreign countries.

Foreigners were 'noble,' and the men were 'gentlemanly.'

However, it clearly wasn't the case at that moment.

"We'll give you all our money..."

Zara fished out a wad of cash and stuffed it into the hands of the robbers.

"Hehe..."

The foreigners grabbed the money and threw Zara and Yvette onto their shoulders.

The two girls barely stood a chance against the group of burly men.

Soon, they were brought to a dark and secluded place.

Rip!

"Ah..."

The sound of clothing being ripped echoed amidst the silence of the night.

"Let go of us! You imbeciles! Go to hell!"

"You disgusting foreigners! You're beasts! Barbarians!"

"You're heinous! You're nothing compared to Erudian men!"

"Erudia is so much better! I want to go back to Erudia! Foreigners are nothing but trash..."

Zara and Yvette screeched desperately at the top of their lungs.

Their cries, however, were soon drowned out by the nasty laughter of the foreign 'gentlemen.'

It was ironic how those two women had nothing but praise for foreign countries and their citizens a while ago.

Only in times of grave danger would people ever think about the motherland that they had been raised in...

At other times, Erudia was merely trash to them.

When they were overseas, they refused to admit their Erudian citizenship.

They would say that they were from Erudia's neighboring islands and pose as the islands' citizens, not even daring to speak a word of Erudian.

To them, it was humiliating to admit that they were Erudians.

Meanwhile, Zara and Yvette's absence barely had any impact on Levi and Zoey.

It didn't take long for them to find another two bridesmaids as replacements, and they were Helena and the financial director, Elena.

Both of them were much better than Zara and Yvette.

As for the groomsmen whom Zara and Yvette despised, they were the Five Great Wars Regiment, the direct subordinates of the God of War!

They were practically undefeatable on the battlefield!

Once their identities were made known, not only would Erudia be in awe, but the whole world would also tremor in fear.

It was preposterous that Zara and Yvette deemed them unworthy of standing next to both of them.

As their wedding date drew closer, Zoey and Levi sent out the last of their invitations.

Apart from Ezra and the other eight Commanders-In-Chief of the Nine Warzones, Levi also invited his close friends.

But the person whom Levi was truly excited to see was his teacher, Angus Belford.

After enlisting in the army, it was Angus who saw the great potential in Levi. He was the one who had trained him and ensured his preferments.

Zoey also invited a huge group of friends.

She thought that Levi's guests were all ordinary people.

Little did she know that every single person on his guest list was a big shot.

Even the mention of their names could easily cause an uproar in Erudia or even foreign countries.

If people knew that this group of people was about to show up together, the entire world would go mad!

Levi smiled at Zoey. "At our wedding, I'll let you know just how amazing your husband is! You'll know how capable I actually am!"

He had promised to reveal his identity at the wedding and come clean to Zoey, the Lopez family, and the Black family.

Seeing how confident Levi looked, Zoey truly looked forward to that day.

Finally, I will find out this secret of his!

I've waited too long for this moment.

Ever since Levi was locked up in prison, I have been hoping that one day, when the snow covers everything in white, Levi would return to me victoriously!

And from that moment onward, he would protect me forever and always!

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1035

It looks like my wish is about to be granted very soon.

There's so much that I don't know about Levi, but he promised to tell me about it on the day of our wedding.

I knew I was right to be patient!

When the Garrisons eventually found out that Levi was still alive and was getting married, the family was shaken to the core.

After all, Levi was the illegitimate son of Tyrone Garrison, the next patriarch of the Garrison family.

Tyrone's appointment ceremony was coming up, but it was greatly affected by the news about Levi.

The Garrisons were anxious because of their failed attempts to assassinate Levi.

Hence, it was harder for them to make another attempt at that point in time.

"If you were made aware of the bastard before, why was I not informed?" roared Kenny, who blamed Edward and the others for not telling him about Levi.

Edward's failure was the cause of their predicament.

"Go to hell! All of you!"

Kenny continued to roar.

These people have brought nothing but shame to the Garrison family!

“The situation may be better than it seems. I mean, the bastard isn’t completely useless. He’s the boss of Morris Group. Even the prominent families in South Hampton listen to him!” explained Edward.

“What?”

After hearing that, Kenny seemed a little calmer.

“That’s nothing compared to what our family has achieved! So what if he’s the boss of a group? What’s so special about South Hampton? Our servant was enough to take that city head-on. A bastard will always be a bastard!” stated Kenny angrily.

“You’re right. He’s only achieved his minor success because of the noble blood that runs within him. Otherwise, he’d simply be another street rat.”

The Garrisons were upset over Levi and the fact that the man was doing well.

In the study of a luxurious villa somewhere in Oakland City, calligraphy paintings worth billions hung on the walls.

There were also various porcelain vases and exotic collections in the room, and one of them was even worth two billion.

Rather than being locked away, these luxury items were displayed in the study as if the room was a private calligraphy painting and antique museum.

A tall, handsome middle-aged man moved his pen gracefully over the canvas, practicing his calligraphy.

When he was done, the name ‘Garrison’ appeared, signifying the man’s resolve to become the next patriarch of the Garrison clan.

He could hardly wait any longer to be appointed as the head of the clan.

This man was Tyrone Garrison, the biological father of Levi.

A smirk appeared on Tyrone's face when he was done with his work.

Before long, the man would be at the helm of the most powerful ancient family in Erudia.

When I get appointed as the patriarch of the clan, millions will bow before me.

By then, I'll be the most powerful man in Erudia!

"Someone once asked me to choose between my career and a fair maiden. I chose my career, and I have never once regretted my decision because I'll soon have everything that I could ever want," muttered Tyrone to himself before smirking.

"Something terrible has happened, Mr. Garrison!" shouted a voice from outside.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1036

“What’s all the fuss about? Calm yourself!” ordered Tyrone coldly.

The servant was about to speak when a woman rushed in from behind. “We’re in deep trouble! How are you still in the mood for your calligraphy?”

Dressed in luxurious clothing, the woman was perfectly poised and looked nothing short of royalty.

Although Olivia was old, her charm and graceful demeanor were incomparable.

Olivia was Tyrone’s wife and Damien’s mother.

As a member of the Garcia family, the second most powerful family in Erudia, she was the only one who was worthy of marrying Tyrone.

“What is it, Olivia?” asked Tyrone.

“Do you remember what happened twenty years ago?” asked Olivia with widened eyes.

Tyrone would never forget how he had fallen in love with Emma when he was just a young man. Twenty years ago, he had almost ruined his future.

“I do, and I remember taking care of it. So what is this about?” inquired Tyrone with a puzzled look.

“Didn’t you say that Emma that b*tch would be kept in Margo City for the rest of her life and that she would never leave?”

"I did because I know her. She'd never leave that city. I'd even erected a tombstone there as a reminder."

Like a madwoman, Olivia roared, "Bullsh*t! The tombstone has been destroyed, and Emma is nowhere to be found! It turns out that you don't know her as well as you'd thought."

"What? She left Margo City and even destroyed the tombstone? How is that possible?"

Dumbfounded, Tyrone almost lost his balance.

"Didn't you say that you'd taken care of the bastard too? Didn't you promise that he was dead and would never be a threat to our family?"

"Are you saying that the boy is still alive?" Tyrone could not believe what he had just heard.

"He's more than alive. That bastard's the one who's brought Emma out of Margo City! Not only that, but he has also killed Caleb and defeated the Garrison clan in Haven. Even Edward was crippled when he tried to assassinate the bastard. You said that he couldn't be alive, but look at the threat that he's become to us. That bastard has humiliated our family!"

Mad with rage, Olivia lifted the porcelain vase that was worth billions and smashed it onto the floor. Nevertheless, Tyrone was too distraught to worry about the vase.

"That is not possible. He can't be alive! I lied to Emma when I promised her that I'd let the boy go. I had to kill him, so I left him in the mountains to freeze or starve to death. Even a wild dog could have killed the boy! It's merely impossible for him to have been alive!"

"Well, the bastard is still alive. Not only that but rather, he's also doing well," stated Olivia as she glared daggers at her husband.

"How could it be? I'd done it myself. I left the boy to die in the wild."

Tyrone was deeply troubled.

"Wait a second. I remember it now. It has to be him! He must be the one who's responsible!" exclaimed Tyrone.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1037

“Get the butler over here now!” shouted Tyrone furiously.

Before long, an old man with gray hair arrived at the scene.

Thud!

The butler fell to his knees before Tyrone and Olivia, for he could already guess why he had been summoned.

As a butler, Dexter was in charge of the housekeeping for Tyrone’s residence, unlike Edward, whose duty was to protect Tyrone.

Dexter was there when Tyrone fell in love with Emma, and he helped his master with keeping secrets and other things.

Otherwise, the two love birds would have been discovered even earlier.

Dexter liked Emma, so he had persuaded Tyrone not to abandon the woman on multiple occasions.

“I’m guessing that you’re aware of why you’ve been summoned?” asked Tyrone angrily.

Dexter knew that the day would come when the Garrisons would catch news of Levi.

“I do, Master.”

"Then, tell me what happened back then. I need to know why the boy is still alive." Tyrone had his eyes fixed on the butler.

Dexter sighed. "After you'd abandoned the child, I went back for him because I couldn't simply allow him to die like that. He was a person, and more importantly, he was your flesh and blood!"

Olivia immediately corrected him. "Tyrone has only one son, and that is Damien! That bastard is not even worthy of the Garrison name! Nobody will see him as Tyrone's son."

Dexter then took a deep breath before continuing, "I couldn't allow Ms. Jones' child to die, so I took him to North Hampton and left him in the streets. I gave him a chance at life. If he was lucky, he would've gotten adopted. Otherwise, he would've frozen to death. Fortunately, fate was kind to him. The child ended up getting adopted by the Garrison clan in North Hampton."

Not even Levi knew that he owed his life to the man.

If it were not for Dexter, Levi would have died in the wild.

There was no way he could have survived otherwise.

When Dexter was done explaining, Tyrone gasped as if he had trouble breathing.

"So it really was you! It's your fault that the boy is still alive. I never wanted him to live!" shouted Tyrone.

Thump!

Tyrone was so furious that he flipped his desk over, as all of the valuables were soon smashed into pieces.

Rage was pulsing through the man's veins.

"Have you lost your mind? Do you know how much trouble he's caused us? The fact that he's alive brings nothing but shame to our family!" roared Tyrone.

Olivia approached Dexter and gave the man a good hard slap on the face. "You have no idea what you've done, you slave! Now that everyone in Erudia knows Tyrone had an illegitimate

son, how will he lead our family? Who is going to listen to him now? Do you think that our family can bear this shame? I ought to kill you where you're standing!"

"I'm aware of what I've done, but I could not bear to merely allow the child to die! I couldn't bring myself to look the other way. Even after all that has happened, I wouldn't have had it any other way," insisted Dexter.

Tyrone and Olivia were stunned by the man's response.

"You seriously still believe that you'd done the right thing? You must have a death wish!" shouted Olivia with widened eyes.

She was ready to murder the man for saving Levi.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1038

"I do! Human lives are more important than reputation, and we're talking about my Master's own flesh and blood. No matter how you put it, Master's blood runs in that boy's veins."

Dexter remained headstrong.

"I'll kill you!" roared Olivia before she grabbed a sword in the study and swung it toward Dexter.

The butler shut his eyes and was ready to die when Tyrone shouted, "No!"

Dexter smiled when Tyrone stopped Olivia because he knew his Master well.

Tyrone was by no means a good man.

He was cruel and ruthless, or else he would not have left his own flesh and blood to die in the wild.

Master did not stop Olivia merely to save my life.

Why would he? He has never once treated us like human beings. We're merely slaves, and our lives do not matter to him.

"Why did you stop me? He's useless to us!" shouted Olivia fiercely.

"What are we going to tell Father if you've killed him? How will we explain ourselves?"

Dexter smiled because he knew that there was a reason that his master had kept him alive.

The butler was to be their scapegoat.

"You're right. What's happened has happened. Now, we'll have to explain ourselves, so we can hand him over to the clan. He'll suffer our harshest punishment!"

"He'll pay for breaking the rules. There's no way that he'll live," stated Tyrone as he stared coldly at the butler.

"No, I can't wait that long."

Olivia could not contain herself.

"Then, cut off his arms," suggested Tyrone cruelly, so Olivia lifted the sword once again before swinging it down decisively.

"Argh!"

Dexter cried aloud, left in excruciating pain.

"Better, Olivia? If not, you still have the legs."

The Garrisons had no problem when it came to toying with human lives, especially the lives of lowly servants.

"I'm good. So what shall we do about the b*tch and the bastard?" inquired Olivia.

"I want nothing more than to kill the two, but now is not the right time. If we do it now, we'll become a joke to the world." Tyrone sighed.

Olivia nodded in agreement. "You're right. The world is watching us now. If we make a move now, we'll risk tarnishing our reputation in Erudia and the entire East side of the world.

"Seeing as such, what else can we do?"

Tyrone was in distress.

"If all else fails, maybe we'll ask him to join us. It's safer that way," suggested a servant. Unfortunately, as soon as he was done speaking, he got slapped by Olivia.

"Are you seriously suggesting that we should allow the bastard to become one of us? What right does the bastard have to step inside of this house? I'll never agree to it, and I don't think the clan will either," shouted Olivia, utterly infuriated.

"That's right. He'll never be worthy of joining us. At least, not with his current identity. If he wants to become a part of us, he's got to earn it. I'll only allow him to join us once the clan recognizes his strength," agreed Tyrone.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1039

Olivia nodded vigorously. "I've heard that he's good. Let's see if he has what it takes to become one of us. I don't believe that he can beat Damien."

"If he remains humble and works hard enough, he'll possibly be able to join my family," mused Tyrone.

I believe that he is a capable man. He is my own flesh and blood, after all.

"I don't think so! Levi bows to no one, not even to the Garrison family. He's far too arrogant."

At that moment, Damien returned.

"Not even the Garrison family, you say?"

Tyrone and Olivia were taken aback because the Garrisons were the most powerful family in Erudia.

Anyone who refuses to submit to the Garrisons are either mad or suicidal.

"Damien, the bastard really said that?" questioned Olivia.

"I've heard about him for a while now. I've just never mentioned it. He's challenged the Garrisons many times. He has even called me on the phone."

"What? He called you?" asked Damien's parents immediately.

"Yes. I never expected him to contact me. I'd thought that he wanted to apologize, but he merely called to threaten me. He'd said that if I told you anything about him and Emma, he would make us pay for it."

Damien then repeated all of Levi's threats to his parents.

When Damien was done, Tyrone punched the wall in anger.

Crack!

Suddenly, a web-like crack appeared on the wall.

"Never have I heard of anyone so arrogant!"

"And here I was, thinking about allowing him to join the family even though he was not qualified. How dare he threaten us like that!" Tyrone roared, his voice like thunder.

Olivia was equally as enraged. "Not only did he threaten Damien, rather, but he had also threatened our entire family! He's got nothing on Damien, let alone our entire family. He can only dream of becoming as good as Damien."

"No matter how hard he tries, he'll never be as good as Damien," agreed Tyrone.

Damien was Tyrone's greatest pride because the family elders had said that he was the first genius to have been born in the family in a millennium.

How can Levi ever hope to compare to Damien?

There's no way that's possible!

"Don't worry. Levi's all bark with no bite," assured Damien with a smirk. Hence, his parents nodded with satisfaction.

"You can count on me. I'll prove to you that Dad was right to abandon Levi and his mother. That bastard is no match for me because I'm much more powerful than he is," continued Damien.

"That's my boy! Show that bastard what you can do."

Tyrone was very pleased with his son.

"Don't worry, Father. When he meets me, he'll know what it means to be powerful. I'll make sure that he'll curse the day that he was born!" promised Damien.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1040

Looking at how confident their son was, Tyrone and Olivia could not be more pleased.

Now that's our son, our pride!

Born a genius with the strongest bloodline, our son has always been a prodigy, and his training only made him stronger.

"Go, my son! Head south. After all these years in Oakland City, it's time for you to unleash your potential," instructed Tyrone, whose life was too precious to be put at risk.

Worried for Tyrone's safety, the Garrisons surrounded the man with thousands of guards no matter where he went.

Olivia nodded in agreement. "It's time for you to see the world and let everyone witness what a true genius is capable of!"

The mother's tone then took a turn. "Nonetheless, we should also make sure that Damien is safe."

"I agree. We'll send only the best to protect him and make sure that nothing bad happens," concurred Tyrone.

Olivia was relieved to hear her husband utter such words. "I'll also speak to my father and have him send our family's elites."

Damien chuckled in response. "You two don't seem to trust me completely. I alone will be enough to take the South head-on. There is no need for any protection."

"We know that you're definitely the best amongst your peers, but you're far too important for that. You are the future of the two most powerful ancient families, so we can't allow anything to happen to you. Not even a slight risk," explained Tyrone.

"I understand, Father. You'll hear from me soon. I'm going to give Levi one hell of a surprise at his wedding," promised Damien with a malicious scowl.

"Good! Make him sorry for mocking our family and remind him of how insignificant he is!" cackled Tyrone

"Mother, what happened to the butler?" asked Damien as he looked curiously at Dexter.

After his mother told him everything about what Dexter had done, Damien walked over to the butler and stepped on his wounds.

Crack!

Blood gushed out of the man's wounds.

"Argh!"

Dexter cried out again in agony before looking at Damien with a pale face.

This boy is crueler than his father.

He has completely inherited the ruthlessness of both of his parents.

Being at his mercy is worse than death itself, so I choose death!

Dexter suddenly stood up and was ready to end his life by hitting his head against the wall.

Pow!

Damien kicked Dexter and sent the butler flying.

“Trying to kill yourself? You don’t have my permission to die just yet!”

Damien then laughed maniacally.

“Please grant me a swift death, Master Tyrone! I’m willing to accept death as my punishment,” Dexter begged the indifferent Tyrone.

“Why are you in a hurry to die? Isn’t it wonderful to be alive?” Damien continued to make fun of the butler.

“I guess that this makes you Levi’s savior, doesn’t it? Then, you’ll have to wait for him to rescue you. Do you think that he’ll come to your rescue if I tell him that you’d saved his life?”

Damien then turned to his parents. “I’ll be taking the butler with me. I need to use him against Levi.”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1041

On the other side, Levi had no idea that the Garrisons were in the heat of a discussion because of him.

Even Tyrone and Kenny were informed of his existence.

Busy with his wedding, Levi was not aware that Damien was getting ready to deal with him.

The couple's new house in North Hampton was completed, and Levi was very satisfied with it.

Hence, he was in an excellent mood.

On top of that, Jason had also reached North Hampton.

It had been six years since Levi had last seen his good friend, so naturally, he was excited to see Jason again.

"Levi, I'm very happy for you, but... "

Jason seemed hesitant.

"What is it, Jason? Come on. Out with it!"

"I just came from Oakland City, and everyone there knows of your existence, including the Garrisons! So it's only a matter of time before they come for you, especially Damien. You wouldn't want the Garrisons to be your enemy. I suggest that you should beg them for mercy," advised Jason.

Bad things happen to those in Damien's crosshairs.

Levi got lucky because he had the Paragon Seal.

"Beg the Garrisons?" Levi chuckled.

"Yes. Just kneel before them and say something pleasant. I'm sure that they won't make it hard on you. After all, they can't do anything to you, now that everyone knows of your existence."

"I have no problem kneeling before them, but do they seriously think that they're worth it?" asked Levi coldly.

The God of War bows to no one, not even to the Garrisons.

"Levi, you're a good man, but you're just too damn stubborn! You never listen to anyone. I should talk to Emma. Maybe she'll do it," relented Jason.

Jason only wanted what was best for his good friend.

He believed that the Garrisons would let Levi go if the man would submit himself to them.

"Save it. I know how to deal with the Garrisons."

Levi decided to bring his mother with him to meet the Garrisons after his wedding.

He needed to know why Tyrone had abandoned him and his mother.

"Come, let's go and visit Morris."

Afterward, Levi and Jason arrived before Morris' grave, which had already been well-refurbished by Nueve and his men.

"Now, we're merely short of Warren. It's good to be reunited again." Jason sighed before toasting to Morris' grave.

"I've been looking for Warren, and I'm sure that I'll find him soon," assured Levi.

Warren had disappeared, and Phoenix had been searching for him for a long time. Unfortunately, it was to no avail.

“You’ve been searching for a while, haven’t you? You should just give up. You’re not going to find him because he’s changed his identity.”

“Wait, you know where he is?” asked Levi.

“Yes. I think that I might be able to find him.”

“The three of you were close, so when Warren found out that he couldn’t help the both of you, he felt useless. In low spirits, Warren changed his identity and led a different life,” explained Jason.

“Take me there, Jason! I need to see Warren!”

“Okay. I didn’t want to bother him, but I think that you two should meet. Perhaps he’ll be able to convince you to submit to the Garrisons. He’s a good friend of yours, after all. Maybe you’ll listen to him,” agreed Jason.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1042

Jason only wanted Levi to see Warren again because he was hoping that Warren could convince Levi to submit to the Garrisons.

He did not want his friend’s wedding to turn into a funeral.

I know that the Garrisons will spare Levi if he kneels before them.

Levi knew what Jason’s intention was, but he saw no need to bow to the Garrisons.

I'll destroy anyone who dares to stir up trouble at my wedding!

With Jason's help, Levi was finally reunited with Warren.

His friend had settled down and even had himself a daughter. He was living a good life.

When Warren heard that Levi was getting married again, he was more than happy to be part of the celebration as he wanted to make up for his past regret.

Three days before his wedding, Levi finally got everyone important to him to accept his invitation.

Meanwhile, at the Oakland City Airport, a private plane took off with dozens of other planes escorting it.

On the ground was a convoy made up of hundreds of vehicles on their way to North Hampton.

As heir to the most powerful ancient family in Erudia, such an occurrence was normal to Damien.

He was always surrounded by tens of thousands of men to make sure that he was safe.

Even though the movement was extremely large-scale, no one knew about it because the Garrisons were powerful enough to control the flow of information.

On top of that, the Garrisons' allies arrived in North Hampton early to pave the way for Damien, for they had to ensure that nothing would go wrong.

"Levi, you'll realize just how insignificant you are when you meet me," whispered Damien to himself on the plane.

Glancing out of the window, Damien wondered if there was anyone in Erudia who could outmatch him.

There's only one person, the God of War.

All Damien could ever do was keep up with the God of War because the man's achievements were far too great.

One of his achievements was beating the elites of the Eighteen-Nation Alliance with only his iron fists and quelling the alliance.

He was certainly the only person who had ever achieved such a feat, and it was enough to make Damien feel hopeless in his pursuit to match the God of War.

I guess that being number two isn't that bad.

"Perhaps the God of War views me in the manner that I view Levi," muttered Damien to himself.

"No, that's not right. The bastard's not even worthy of being compared to me!" shouted Damien suddenly.

"I wouldn't be so sure if I were you," chuckled Dexter, who was tied to his seat.

"Huh?"

Damien was stunned. "What did you say?"

"Given the same resources and advantages, Levi might just be better than you. Look at what he's achieved growing up on the streets. If he had the same upbringing as you, it's not hard to imagine that he could do a whole lot better."

Dexter's words were like knives to Damien's heart.

Furious, the man stared at the butler in utter disbelief. "Did you just say that Levi is better than me?"

"That's right. If he had grown up in the same environment that you had, I believe that he would've been a lot more powerful than you are." Dexter cackled.

"You think that he's more powerful than me?"

Raw anger shot through Damien.

“Say that Levi can’t compare to me! Say it! Say it now!”

Damien grabbed Dexter by the throat and forced the butler to say the words.

“Master Levi is stronger than you!” Dexter cackled again as he stared at his perpetrator.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1043

Huffing and puffing, Damien grabbed a fork and stabbed Dexter with it, causing blood to squirt out from the butler.

Dexter’s mouth was gurgling with blood, and his body twitched.

“Now, let’s try this again. Who’s stronger?”

Damien was acting like a mad man.

“Master Levi is stronger, and I’ll always support him!” insisted Dexter.

The people around them quickly stopped Damien when he was about to murder the butler.

“You can’t kill him yet, Mr. Damien! You still need him, remember?”

Only then did Damien calm down, and before long, he arrived in North Hampton.

“Is this what the outside world is like? How pathetic! These people must not know what a paradise looks like. To me, Oakland City is the only true paradise!” mocked Damien.

"Of course, Mr. Damien. This place is a far cry from Oakland City," agreed a lackey beside Damien.

"I can now see why Levi is so arrogant. He thinks that he's seen it all when he'd merely achieved a minor success in this pathetic environment. He probably still has no idea of how insignificant he is. Wait till he sees what I have in store for his wedding."

The wedding was only a few days away, and Levi was just as nervous as he was before.

After all, he had promised to reveal his true identity to Zoey, the Lopezes, and the Blacks.

"Levi, your wedding venue has been arranged. As instructed, it is not unnecessarily extravagant, but you can be sure it'll be grand nonetheless," assured Azure Dragon and his men.

"Good!"

Levi nodded in satisfaction.

This time, I want Zoey to have a wedding that she'll never forget.

However, Levi did not want to achieve that with a ludicrous amount of money, so he took the time to make a ring and a necklace out of bullet shells as gifts to Zoey.

"Boss, Ezra will be here tonight! It's been a while since I'd last seen the Commanders-In-Chief of the Nine Warzones and the Four Guardians."

Levi smiled in response. "I'll pick them up myself tonight."

Family members and friends had already arrived at the venue because the wedding would be held on the next day.

Although Meredith and the other Blacks were not happy about the wedding, they came anyway since Levi promised to reveal secrets at the occasion.

They were curious about what the man had to offer.

“We didn’t come here to give you our blessings. Rather, we merely wanted to see the surprise that you have in store for us. You won’t be marrying Zoey if we’re dissatisfied with your reveal,” threatened Meredith.

“That’s right. If you lie to us, the child will never take your last name. He or she will be a Lopez or even a Black,” chimed in Aaron.

The couple was well-prepared in case Levi was planning to lie to them.

“You two should ready yourselves. I’m worried that you might faint when I reveal my secrets. After all, you’re not as young as you used to be.” Levi chuckled.

Meredith then glared daggers at Levi. “You’re worried that I’ll faint? We’ll see how big of a deal your identity is.”

Nobody took Levi seriously, but he could already imagine how half of the crowd would kneel while the other half would pass out.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1044

Zoey gazed at Levi expectantly.

The day had finally come for her to marry the love of her life.

Bursting with joy for her son, Emma was easily the happiest person in the crowd.

She never imagined that she would be able to attend her son’s wedding.

"Huh? Not only are you attending the wedding, but you also have to give a speech?" asked Meredith after checking the itinerary.

"That's right."

Emma nodded.

"We can't have you doing that! What will people think of Zoey when they see you? Do you know how many will be watching you tomorrow? Many are trying to dig for dirt on Zoey."

"Do you know how much trouble it will cause if people find out that Levi has a mother like you?"

"You don't want to cause problems for Zoey, do you?"

Meredith, Robert, and the others all ganged up on Emma.

"I... I don't, so what should I do?"

Naturally, Emma would not want anything bad to happen to Zoey.

"It'll be better for you to forego the wedding tomorrow," advised Meredith.

"What?"

Emma hesitated because she really wanted to be a part of her son's wedding.

"If you insist on going, then your son will never marry Zoey!" threatened Meredith.

"I won't go then."

Emma had no choice but to listen to Meredith.

"Good! We have an agreement then. You can't appear at the wedding, and you can't tell Levi or Zoey about this."

"I understand."

Emma was aggrieved but she did not want to ruin her son's wedding.

"Phew! Can you imagine how humiliating it would've been if Levi's filthy mother were to show up at the wedding?" The Blacks cackled.

That night, Levi went to the airport with Azure Dragon and the others to pick his friends up personally.

Logan and Jennie were also there to pick up their big-shot relatives, who only decided to attend Zoey's wedding when they heard of Zoey's net worth.

Before long, the Blacks appeared out of the arrival gate, and every one of them was well-dressed.

Logan then glanced at Levi. "Take a good look, Levi. Notice how all the Lopezes and Blacks are all big shots? What about your family and friends? Anyone worth mentioning?"

Compared to the Lopezes and Blacks, Azure Dragon and others were dressed quite casually.

"I'm guessing that the friends whom you're waiting for will fare no better than the ones beside you now," mocked Jennie.

"Boss!" cried Ezra and others excitedly when they appeared out of the arrival gate.

"Weren't these people on the same flight as us? They were in the economy class," ridiculed one of Logan's relatives.

"Hahaha!"

Logan and Jennie joined in on the laughter.

It's evident that we're on a different level from Levi's friends.

We were in first class while they were stuck in economy class.

Without their uniforms, Ezra and the others were no different from ordinary people.

They had even bought economy class tickets, so it was only natural that people would misunderstand.

Little did Logan, Jennie, and the others know that they were standing before the renowned Commanders-In-Chief of the Nine Warzones and the Four Guardians of Erudia.

These men were the ones who shaped Erudia's destiny and they were revered both locally and abroad.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1045

Out of their uniforms, the men could not look more ordinary than they were, currently.

They had paid for the economy class tickets out of their own pockets and had boarded the plane just like everyone else.

They wanted nothing extravagant and had no interest in abusing their privileges because they had the intention of attending Levi's wedding as friends.

"You can determine how successful a person is by looking at the people who have surrounded him. By the looks of it, you seem way out of Zoey's league," mocked Logan's relatives.

"I bet that you didn't even get a single big shot to attend your wedding."

Amongst the relatives and friends that Levi had invited to his wedding, Jason was the only one that Meredith had considered important; the Lopezes and the Blacks wanted nothing more than to drive the rest away.

Ezra was displeased when he realized how Levi's relatives treated the man.

Neither Ezra nor the others thought that the God of War should receive such treatment.

“Don’t worry, I’ll tell them everything tomorrow,” assured Levi with a smile, for he was looking forward to it himself.

When they reached home, Levi excitedly introduced Ezra and others to Zoey.

“Hello, everyone. I’m Ezra Williamson from the West.”

“Todd Greenwood from the North.”

“Wilfrid Harrett from the East.”

“Darton Rogier from the South.”

“Siegfried Adkins from the Central.”

After the Commanders-In-Chief of the Nine Warzones introduced themselves, the Four Guardians did the same.

“Manfred Reyes of the East Gate.”

“Howell Dinwiddie of the West Gate.”

“Geoffrey Meskill of the South Gate.”

“Benjamin Dickinson of the North Gate.”

Other than the Nine Warzones, Erudia also had the Four National Gates, which had consisted of the North Gate, South Gate, East Gate, and West Gate.

Those gates had guarded the borders of Erudia for thousands of years, preventing countless invasions.

The Four Guardians were the ones who would watch over the gates as they guarded the nation against attacks.

Levi's other friends also introduced themselves one by one.

Nevertheless, only those who were in the military knew what they were talking about.

"What's a North Warzone, and what's a West Gate? I have no idea what you guys are talking about!" exclaimed Aaron in confusion.

Aaron was not the only one who was confused. Rather, Zoey was confused as well.

"Your friends are just the same as you, Levi. A bunch of weirdos!" remarked Caitlyn.

"If you ask me, they sound like a bunch of hooligans!"

The Lopezes and the Blacks had nothing but contempt for Levi's friends.

What kind of friends does Levi surround himself with?

And it's not just a few of them.

There are dozens of these hooligans!

In the end, only Zoey and Emma welcomed Ezra and the others.

That night, Benny merely congratulated Levi through a video call because he was too occupied at the moment.

"I'll visit Oakland City soon, Mr. Quinton. See you then."

After Benny's video call, Abigail also called to congratulate Levi.

Abigail was supposed to attend the wedding, but she had suddenly changed her mind when she thought of what happened previously.

"Where are you?" asked Levi.

"I'm in Oakland City," answered Abigail honestly, for she was in South Hampton when she heard that Levi was in North Hampton.

To avoid Levi, Abigail left South Hampton and went to Oakland City.

"I see. Maybe I'll head over visit you some day."

Afterward, Levi received one congratulation after the other, and that was how he had spent the remainder of the night before his wedding.

The next day, the wedding finally commenced.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1046

"Mom, what did just you say? You're not attending the wedding?"

Levi and Zoey stared at Emma in disbelief.

Emma mumbled, "Mm. I'm not feeling well, so I won't be attending."

"Mom, are you alright?"

Both of them started to worry.

"I'm fine. It's just that my body doesn't feel too good. You both should hurry up and get ready."

Emma shook her head.

"You two should go now. There are many things to be done over there. Since she said she's not attending, just let her be!" Meredith said coldly.

Hence, Levi and Zoey did not dwell too much on it either.

After they left, a smile appeared on Meredith's face. "You did well. It's better for everyone if you didn't attend the wedding!"

"I know, right? You'd be embarrassing the hell out of all of us if you attended."

"Yeah! Both the Lopez and Black families want to keep our dignities intact at a wedding of this magnitude."

...

Emma could only silently endure the verbal bashings from both the Lopez and Black families.

She hid in a corner and watched the wedding in silence.

It was her own son's wedding, but she had to witness it from the shadows.

Just before the wedding began, all the guests were ushered into the venue.

There were even numerous media reporters among them.

They weren't arranged by Levi, but were here for Zoey instead.

After all, Zoey was a well-known entrepreneur and her wedding would no doubt rule the headlines.

Meredith, who was gathered together with her family, observed the guests and exclaimed, "That little brat reap the benefits of our hard work!"

"It's useless dwelling on that now! We can only hope that Levi has indeed prepared a little surprise for us!"

Aaron only shook his head in response. "Mom, Dad, don't have any high hopes! According to my understanding of Levi, he wouldn't have anything prepared for us."

They sighed. "Well, let's just wait and see! We don't have any other choice!"

It was Zoey's big day today, but her relatives did not seem to be happy for her at all as they complained behind her back.

Today, Levi was clad in a white wedding suit, his muscular body filling it perfectly.

"Sir, your other attire is ready as well," Azure Dragon announced beside him.

Of course, the other attire he was referring to was none other than Levi's Five-Star God of War military uniform!

In Erudia, this was the only military uniform with a five-star insignia!

He planned to appear before Zoey in the most perfect way possible later.

He wanted to tell her that this was her husband!

Even all five members of the Five Great Wars Regiment would be in their military uniform.

This was the definition of a grand entrance.

“Alright. Let me know when we’re halfway through the ceremony and I’ll change!”

Meanwhile, Zoey was wearing a white bridal dress which had Erudian culture woven into it. The dress accentuated every curve on her body, resembling a waterfall cascading downwards as it pooled on the floor.

Her beauty was absolutely breathtaking and could shake the entire world.

Just as Levi said, Erudians stayed true to their culture.

The moment Zoey appeared, the crowd cheered.

They sighed inwardly, thinking what a waste it was for a stunning beauty like Zoey to be wedded to Levi, who was such a sorry excuse of a man.

“What did we ever do to deserve such misfortune? Zoey was never supposed to marry him!”

Aaron sighed and kept hitting the table with his fist.

“That’s right! Look at the friends and relatives behind Levi. None of them are impressive!” Harry bellowed in anger.

Meredith and Robert were shaking with rage as well.

If Levi failed to give them a pleasant surprise today, they would no doubt demand an explanation from him.

Suddenly, hundreds of cars screeched to a stop outside.

All of them were luxury cars.

A magnificent scene like that shocked many people. Harry and the rest were no exception.

He was puzzled. "Whose relatives are they? Why don't I have any recollection of them?"

Meredith and her family shook their heads with similarly clueless looks on their faces. "I don't think they're relatives from our side of the family either."

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1047

The next moment, countless smart-looking men and celebrities alighted the cars and entered the wedding venue.

"On behalf of the Goel family, Xabian Goel from South Hampton congratulates Mr. Levi Garrison and Ms. Zoey Lopez on their wedding!"

"On behalf of the Hunt family, Mario Hunt from South Hampton congratulates..."

"On behalf of the Quinn family, Hayden Quinn from South Hampton congratulates..."

...

These people's identities were revealed upon stepping into the venue.

Boom!

Meredith and the rest were utterly flabbergasted by then.

This... This... This...

The top ten royal families of South Hampton are all here!

Even Elder Goel is here in person!

This line-up is too good to be true.

Little did they know that this was only the beginning.

The quasi-royal clans and other big figures were waiting behind to offer their congratulatory wishes.

It seemed like all the top families from South Hampton were here to celebrate Levi and Zoey's wedding.

What... What is going on?

The Lopez and Black families traded looks with each other.

They were not acquainted with any of these people.

Neither were they qualified to be acquainted with them.

And yet, they were all here to offer their best wishes.

Could they be here for Levi?

"The Jones family from South Hampton is here to congratulate..."

Finally, a large number of people including Michael and Mia Jones arrived.

Today, Levi welcomed them here with open arms.

Upon seeing Levi come in together with these big shots from South Hampton, Meredith and the others could hardly wrap their minds around it.

Is this the surprise Levi was talking about?

This is completely unbelievable!

“Where’s Emma?”

Michael looked around in search of his daughter.

Someone in the crowd answered, “The bride’s family said that Ms. Jones is an embarrassment to them, so they deliberately stopped her from attending!”

Levi and Michael were incensed upon hearing this.

Michael roared, “What? My daughter, Emma, doesn’t have the right to attend the wedding? What about you lot? Are any of your statuses higher than my daughter’s?”

Meredith and the others finally understood.

It turned out that Levi’s disgraceful mother had a strong family background!

She was from the royal family of South Hampton and the daughter of Michael Jones!

It turned out that Levi hailed from that family.

No wonder he had announced that he had a surprise for them.

For the Lopez and Black families, the Jones family was considered completely out of their league.

Hence, this was enough of a surprise for them.

However, never in a million years did they expect Levi to have something bigger in store for them.

Even the Jones family was nothing compared to his real surprise.

“Hurry up and invite Ms. Jones out. We can’t very well stop her from attending the wedding, now can we?”

Meredith and a few others immediately invited Emma out with warm smiles on their faces.

Fortunately, she wasn't one to harbor grudges.

"We really never thought that you'd be from South Hampton's Jones family. You should've told us earlier!"

Everyone's attitudes towards Emma took a hundred and eighty degree turn, especially Aaron, Caitlyn and Meredith.

Aaron even patted Levi on the shoulder and complimented, "Levi, you definitely surprised us, I'll give you that!"

"You completely deserve to be with Zoey! We've misjudged you all this while."

The Lopez and Black families chattered away as they tried buttering him up.

Levi's status as the grandson of the Jones family was more than enough to appease them.

It was beyond their imaginations that the top 100 prominent families would personally attend the wedding.

They were even more delighted that Levi was from the Jones family.

However, the prominent families from South Hampton did not spare a glance at the Jones family whatsoever. It wasn't too far-fetched to say that the Joneses meant nothing to them.

They were only here for Levi.

Levi smiled and said, "Mom, Dad, this isn't the surprise. The real surprise is yet to come."

He was amused by everyone's assumption.

They consider this a surprise? Their expectations are way too low.

"Oh? There's another surprise?"

Aaron's eyes lit up with excitement, along with the rest of his family.

Meredith and her family were at the edge of their seats, teeming with anticipation.

Could Levi have another identity?

Or perhaps some other big figures are going to attend the wedding?

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1048

“Didn’t I tell you Levi is a great man? But all of you even tried to stop me back then.”

“See? He’s worthy after all. I completely approve of Levi!”

Aaron scoffed and ridiculed the others.

“Yes. Who wouldn’t like a good young man such as Levi?”

...

The Lopez and Black families had completely contradicted their previous selves.

This huge change in attitude was brought about by the knowledge of Levi’s status as the grandson of the Joneses.

Zoey felt very uneasy listening to them.

She didn’t want Levi to rely on his family background, but instead shine because of his own efforts.

However, her family only acknowledged him because of his background.

Zoey looked at Levi's side profile, hoping that the surprise he had for her would be because of his own hard work and not because of others.

Otherwise, she would be extremely disappointed.

Thereafter, Master Grover Cooke of the Southern Union and his Four Kings arrived at the wedding ceremony.

This caused an uproar within the Lopez and Black families because they had always looked up to those big figures.

Later on, several other people showed up as well.

They were the Garrisons from Haven, Jonah Garrison and his family.

Boom!

His attendance shocked everyone present.

Even Xabian Goel and his family could not sit still at the sight of the Garrisons, immediately scurrying over to greet them.

The Garrison family was a force to be reckoned with.

Meredith and the others trembled in their places, unable to move as if their legs were made of lead.

These surprises are getting too overwhelming!

They're considered an imperial family, which is superior to the royal families.

And they're here for Levi's wedding?

Who exactly is he?

Indeed, he saved the best for last!

Aaron wiped the cold sweat off his brow. "Levi, you're really overwhelming us with your surprises. From now on, whatever you say goes in the family!"

"Yes. From now on, you're in charge of the Lopez and Black families."

Both Harry and Robert gave Levi their consent.

Everyone's snobbish sides were on full display at this moment.

Earlier, they had even prevented Emma from attending the wedding.

At present, only Zoey and Emma felt uncomfortable.

Both women exchanged glances and sighed softly.

They thought that the appearance of the Garrisons from Haven was not a good sign.

However, they did not know about Levi's relation to the Garrison family and assumed that the latter was sent by the Garrison clan from Oakland City.

Zoey did not see this as a surprise at all.

Levi smiled. "Dad, this isn't the surprise I've prepared for you. In fact, it's far from it!"

"Boy, how can this not be a surprise? This is one of the imperial families! An imperial family is here for your wedding! What else can top this as a surprise?" Aaron chuckled.

Levi grinned in response.

Jonah Garrison's presence is really nothing much to be excited about.

Over there are Ezra Williamson and the other Commander-In-Chiefs of the Nine Warzones, as well as the Four Guardians. Which one of them won't own the room if given the chance?

"Since Levi says there's another surprise, why are you still doubting him? Just wait and see."

Meredith shot a glare at Aaron.

Both families were looking forward to Levi's final surprise.

Zoey was no exception.

She didn't want Levi's surprise to be all of this.

She wanted him to give her a surprise which was sculpted by his own two hands.

Very soon, all of the guests had arrived.

The wedding ceremony was about to begin.

Meanwhile, in North Hampton.

Damien had just left his place.

"The wedding is almost starting. We'll be just in time if we rush over now!" Damien grinned.

"You're right, Mr. Damien!" said his subordinate.

"Has the gift been prepared?" Damien queried.

"Yes!"

An eerie smile played on the corner of Damien's lips. "I think you'll like my gift, Levi Garrison. Hahahaha..."

"Wishing you a happy marriage!"

Damien threw his head back with laughter.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1049

Just then, Damien received a call from Tyrone.

“Damien, I heard that it’s his wedding today?” Tyrone asked.

“Yeah. I’m about to head over there,” Damien answered.

There was momentary silence before Tyrone spoke, “Try to resolve things as peacefully as possible and don’t cause any deaths. If he gives in and begs the Garrison family, you can choose to let him off the hook! After all, many people know about his existence. Killing him won’t benefit our family.”

“Rest assured, Father. I’ve prepared a huge gift for that bas*ard. I’ll make him kneel at my feet and beg for mercy. Of course, it won’t be easy getting me to spare him. He has to pay a painful price for his actions.” Damien sneered.

“Mmm. You go ahead and take care of it then! I’m mainly concerned about the undesirable consequences we might face because of this. Other than that, I don’t care much about his wellbeing, so just do as you see fit.”

With that, Tyrone ended the call.

Zoey’s friends and relatives who attended the wedding this time were more or less the same people.

On the other hand, Levi’s guests took up more than half of the venue and livened up the occasion.

His mother, sister and many other close friends were present.

Only his late best friend, Morris, was absent. But his parents had come in person.

To Levi, the wedding this time was perfect and enough to compensate for all the regrets from the past six years.

It was the same for Zoey.

Before long, the wedding officially began.

Zoey held onto Aaron's arm as they walked towards Levi.

Both of them tightly embraced each other.

Thud. Thud. Thud.

At that exact moment, two troops of men in black suits marched into the venue in a neat and orderly manner.

Besides that, there were people pushing in cannons behind them.

Of course, those were firework cannons.

These people were from the Dragon Legion and led by Alfie Steele.

Once everything was set in place, Alfie commanded, "Fire!"

Ceremonial fireworks shot up into the sky, resulting in booming sounds reverberating through the whole area.

The atmosphere was extremely joyous.

Compared to six years ago, Zoey was much more satisfied now.

In fact, she was on the verge of shedding tears of joy.

"Honey, don't get emotional just yet. This isn't even the real surprise."

Levi helped Zoey to dab away her tears.

“Mm, I’m waiting,” Zoey replied.

The wedding ceremony went on as planned.

Meanwhile, the Lopez and Black families were getting more impatient by the second.

When is Levi’s actual surprise going to be revealed?

They could barely wait a second longer.

The first half of the wedding was over.

“Next up, let’s listen to the groom’s heartfelt confession!”

The host passed the microphone to Levi.

After taking over the microphone, Levi greeted everyone present first.

Finally, he directed his gaze towards Zoey.

“Zoey, thank you for staying with me until this day!”

Levi held Zoey’s hand as he spoke.

“Over the years, you have been wronged and have suffered too much. I know about it all!”

“Even when I was down and out, you never once belittled me. You only wished for me to get back on my feet! Having you beside me for the rest of my life is more than enough for me.”

...

Tears were already streaming down Zoey’s cheeks by then.

“Zoey, more than anything else, I understand that you don’t want me to rely on anyone else other than myself to give you a huge surprise.”

“Well, the surprise is coming right up! Please wait a moment and I’ll tell you once I’m back. I’ll prove to you that your man can rule the world!”

...

The wedding came to a brief cessation.

Levi, Azure Dragon and several of them went to the changing room.

All of them changed into their military uniforms.

At that moment, Levi’s commanding and majestic aura was in full force.

He didn’t forget to grab the gift he had prepared beforehand as well.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1050

Azure Dragon and Kirin adjusted Levi’s uniform.

Then, four of them stepped to the side and saluted him.

Levi returned their salutes.

Upon donning their uniforms, their identities had completely changed.

They were not the only ones who changed out of their clothes.

Even Ezra and the others had done the same.

After all, Levi wanted to give Zoey the best surprise ever!

The man she was waiting for was now officially Erudia's God of War.

The Lopez and Black families were anxiously waiting to be surprised while Levi and his men had gone off to change.

"What's going on? What surprise has he prepared?"

Aaron was so nervous that he became slightly out of breath.

The others were not faring any better either.

They racked their brains as they tried to guess what kind of surprise could top the attendance of the Jones family and the Garrisons from Haven.

However, none came close to it.

Each of them felt their throats go dry as they awaited the big reveal.

Zoey was the most tormented one out of them all.

It was only several minutes, but it felt as if centuries had passed for her.

The wait was indeed too torturous.

Russell and Jonah, who somewhat knew that truth, were also at the edge of their seats.

They were certain that Levi would appear as the God of War later.

When that happened, everyone would no doubt be thrown off their seats.

Although Emma was excited, she had a vague premonition of an imminent disaster.

After all, the Garrison family knew about the wedding today.

In the villa.

Levi and the rest were all dressed in their military uniforms.

“Get into formation!” Levi commanded.

With that, everyone formed two rows.

Levi stood in the center.

“On my command. Move out!”

Thud! Thud! Thud!

They marched towards the wedding venue.

Vroom...

Suddenly, a commotion sounded from outside.

One by one, vehicles had come to a halt just beyond the gates.

Many people stepped out of the vehicles.

The one taking the lead was none other than Damien Garrison.

By then, the Royal Villa was surrounded by thousands of people.

After all, Damien’s safety was of top priority.

The ruckus outside grabbed the attention of the guests at the wedding. Everyone stood up to get a peek of the situation.

“What? There’s still someone coming for the wedding at this hour?”

Everyone was confused.

“Or is this the surprise Levi prepared for us?”

Unable to wait anymore, Aaron and several others got to their feet and went to greet the newcomers.

Boom!

However, when Emma and a few others heard the noise, their faces fell.

Her worries had come true.

This was inevitable.

"I'm not late, am I?" A voice abruptly rang out.

Everyone looked over and saw a handsome young man languidly walking in with dozens of people in tow.

Those fighters were all the best of the best.

"Who is this?"

The guests were baffled

Just right then, Jonah Garrison and his family stepped forward. "Greetings, Mr. Damien!"

"Mr. Damien?"

Confusion was still sprawled across everyone's faces.

After all, someone of his status was far from their reach.

Aaron came forward with a flattering smile. "Sir, you must be here for my son-in-law, Levi."

"Yes, you're right. I'm here to attend Levi Garrison's wedding. I even prepared a huge gift for him!" Damien's mouth stretched into a broad grin.

"Please, come in! Come in!"

They welcomed Damien and his company into the venue.

Although they did not know Damien's identity, from his appearance and demeanor, they could tell that he was no ordinary man.

His identity would no doubt come as a shock to the guests.

His grand entrance alone was enough to differentiate him from the rest.

Damien did not take a seat, but went to the stage and grabbed the microphone from the host instead. Then, he asked with a smile, "Where is Levi Garrison?"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1051

The troop which had just exited the villa paused in their march upon hearing the man's voice.

"What's going on?"

Levi had already sensed the imminent danger.

White Tiger carefully assessed their surroundings.

He gasped softly and reported, "Fighters! The whole place has been surrounded by elite fighters!"

"Mm, you're right. There are at least a thousand of them and their numbers are still increasing," Ezra added.

These killing machines from the battlefield had already sensed the presence of Damien's men.

"Phoenix, what's the situation at the front?" Levi asked.

"Jonah Garrison addressed him as Mr. Damien. So it's probably Damien Garrison," Phoenix answered.

"Alright, understood," said Levi.

"Should we get into battle right away?" Ezra queried.

“No. Let’s change back into our previous attire. For the time being, I don’t want to expose my identity to Damien. I’ll only reveal my identity after I’ve brought down his family! It’s not appropriate to do it right now.”

Ezra’s eyes widened in surprise. “What? Boss! I know that you don’t want the Garrison family to know your identity, but you’ve already promised to give your wife a surprise. Are you going to keep hiding it from her?”

The others also stared at Levi with doubt.

He sighed in response and said, “I don’t have a choice. I guess I’ll have to tell Zoey some other time.”

“Besides, Damien isn’t here to genuinely congratulate me on my wedding!” Levi sighed.

“Alright. Let’s all change back into our previous attire!”

Soon, everyone was back in their original clothes.

On the stage.

“While waiting for the groom, allow me to introduce myself!”

“My name is Damien Garrison, and I’m from the Garrison clan of Oakland City!”

Hearing this, everyone only noted that Levi and Damien had the same surnames, and did not think much about it.

After all, no one present was privy to the details of the Garrison clan from Oakland City.

Even Xabian Goel did not have a deep understanding of that clan.

Only Emma, Zoey and a handful of people were terrified by this.

Damien’s lips curled upwards upon seeing the clueless looks of the audience.

As expected, they’re a bunch of oblivious commoners.

They are so ignorant.

They don't even know what the Garrison clan is?

It's no wonder Levi is completely full of himself to the point of disrespecting the Garrison clan. It's all because he grew up in an environment like this.

Pathetic.

A bunch of ignorant idiots.

Damien sneered. "Perhaps all of you don't fully understand the workings of the Garrison clan. Allow me to enlighten you. A servant from my family by the name of Caleb had ruled over the entire South Hampton for almost thirty years."

Everyone gasped when they heard this and looked towards the families from South Hampton for confirmation.

Xabian Goel and the other relevant families nodded, confirming that what he said was indeed true.

Everyone was dumbfounded.

This particular Garrison family must be immensely powerful!

"The Garrison clan from Oakland City is also known as the most powerful ancient family in the country, the Head of Erudia!" Damien announced.

The crowd gasped once again.

After getting the clearer picture of things, everyone was shell-shocked.

Aaron and his family gradually regained their senses.

Levi shares the same surname as them.

Could he be related to the Garrison clan from Oakland City?

Could this be the final surprise Levi prepared for us?

“Could Levi be a member of the Garrison clan from Oakland City?”

Aaron’s face brightened with excitement.

Everyone glanced expectantly at Damien.

Damien scoffed. “No. He isn’t qualified to be a member of our clan.”

These people are indeed hoi polloi.

They’re thinking of riding on Levi Garrison’s coattails?

In their dreams!

A lowly beggar like him doesn’t hold a candle to me.

“Huh?”

Disappointment was written across the faces of Aaron and the others.

Right at that moment, Levi led his men back to the wedding.

“You’ve got some guts coming to my wedding, Damien. Where did you even pluck the courage from?” Levi growled.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1052

Damien looked towards the source of the voice.

As his eyes met with Levi's, animosity filled the air.

In the small space, their gazes resembled sharp blades ferociously colliding with each other.

The tension in the air grew so thick it could be sliced with a blade.

This was the first time Levi came face-to-face with Damien.

The two half-brothers stared each other down, resembling old enemies.

They were filled with a sense of familiarity and foreignness at the same time.

"Huh? How dare you disrespect Mr. Damien? You're courting death!"

Damien's men who were flanking him disapproved of his behavior and wanted to kill him instantly.

In Oakland City, which was also the Garrison's territory, no one dared to look Damien in the eye, let alone be speak to him in such a manner.

The way Levi was staring daggers at Damien was utterly disrespectful.

And disrespecting Damien meant death.

This was the rule set by the Garrison clan and everyone had to abide by it.

"Hold on!"

Damien waved a casual hand, gesturing for his men to stop.

Damien glanced at Levi and said, "You're worse than I expected!"

"Especially when I saw the environment and people you've surrounded yourself with. It makes me even more disappointed!"

Levi's smile broadened at that. "You've greatly disappointed me as well, because I've realized that you're nothing but a child!"

Although Levi was only two years older than Damien, his experience in the past six years was something most people would never be able to gain even if they were given a lifetime.

Even someone with rich experiences such as Damien had to look up to him.

Hence, Damien really did seem like a child to him.

Absolutely childish!

Yet he wants to mess with me?

Levi wasn't the least bit interested to play with a child.

Perhaps only Kenny and Tyrone Garrison would catch his attention, albeit barely.

"Is this all there is to the younger generation of the Garrisons?"

Levi spread out his hands.

"Hahahaha..." Out of everyone else's expectations, Damien burst with laughter.

"I've long heard rumors saying that you were an insolent fool, and now I've seen it firsthand! You indeed live up to your reputation!"

Damien's men cackled with laughter as well.

However, they were all mocking Levi.

A bas*ard child dares to look down on Damien?

Has he lost his mind?

Sure enough. People like him can't differentiate between gold and dirt.

He is just a narrow-minded and ignorant pig.

His achievements in life would no doubt be limited as well.

Therefore, he's not qualified to be associated with the Garrisons.

Damien scrutinized Levi and asked, "I wonder if you have the power to back your statement?"

"Of course I..."

Levi was about to answer when he was interrupted by Jason Lowe.

"Don't speak too rashly, Levi! This is Mr. Damien you're talking to! You obviously don't know much about the Garrisons. Listen to me and stop provoking him!"

Even his close buddy, Mateo Jackman, advised him, "Levi, just bear with it. He's not someone we can afford to offend."

Emma came over to her son and offered him the same advice.

When Damien saw this, he laughed aloud. "It seems like there are some smart people here who know about my family's influence!"

"They're right, Levi. I'm not someone you can afford to offend. You really know too little about us. But once you get the gist of our power, you won't be speaking so arrogantly anymore."

Damien looked down his nose at Levi, sizing him up.

A murderous glint appeared in Levi's eyes as one side of his mouth quirked up into a cold smirk.

Emma was holding onto him with a death grip.

"Son, don't! We can't offend them, so please bear with it!"

Damien's gaze abruptly landed on Emma just then.

“So you’re Emma Jones! Tsk, tsk, tsk. To tell you the truth, my father’s taste back then was pretty bad. Or perhaps he was a blind fool. I mean, how could he have fallen for you?”

“Oh, I get it. You must’ve found a way to seduce my father, right?”

The moment these words left his lips, Damien felt the temperature around him drop sharply.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1053

In an instant, Damien felt as if he was in the North Pole.

He shivered as a chill penetrated his body and seeped into his veins.

This was not simply a feeling, but something far more substantial.

Everyone present could feel the drastic drop in temperature.

One glance at Levi showed how livid he was.

Damien had spoken about his mother in such a way right in front of him.

Death was the only thing waiting for him!

Seeing Levi’s rage, Damien couldn’t help but smirk. “What? Are you angry? Well, this is a fact. If it weren’t for Emma Jones seducing my father, how could he have fallen for her? How could you have come to exist?”

“A b*tch giving birth to a bastard! What a joke!”

Damien's men snickered alongside him.

"You're courting your own death, you know that?" Levi's voice deepened.

His eyes flashed menacingly.

"Boss, you can't... This... This is your wedding..."

Ezra and the others who knew Levi well could tell that he was well and truly enraged this time.

Damien had really pushed all of his buttons.

Based on how Levi usually reacted on the battlefield, he would definitely go on a full-blown massacre.

Damien and his men would not be able to walk away alive today.

However, this was a wedding and Levi could not afford to ruin it.

Zoey and Emma were desperately holding Levi back, afraid that he might do something reckless on impulse.

"Calm down. This is your wedding! Don't ruin it!"

Only then did Levi put a lid on his anger.

He did not wish for his and Zoey's wedding to become a bloodbath either.

"What? Are you angry? Do you wanna kill me?"

Damien laughed evilly.

As expected of an impulsive person. I was able to provoke him with just a couple of words.

Why don't you take a good look at who you're facing, huh?

I'm Damien Garrison!

I'm a descendant of Erudia's number one ancient family!

It was at this moment that everyone gradually understood.

Levi was indeed a member of the Garrison clan from Oakland City.

However, he was an illegitimate child.

A surprise?

This was indeed an earth-shattering surprise!

Meredith and the others were not angered or fearful in the least. On the contrary, they were brimming with excitement.

So what if he's an illegitimate child of the Garrison family?

He's still part of the Garrisons from Oakland City!

Perhaps he's not welcomed by Oakland City's Garrisons, but with his status as part of their family, Levi would be able to get whatever he wants.

Putting aside everything else, one word from Levi would be enough to place the Lopez and Black families on the throne overseeing the South.

This was indeed a surprise.

It turned out that Levi did not lie to them.

"Levi, this surprise of yours is too perfect. I can't believe you're a member of the Garrison clan from Oakland City!"

Aaron almost gave Levi a thumbs-up.

"A member of the Garrison clan from Oakland City? Hahaha... Who said that?" Damien scoffed.

"Isn't he your older brother? That means he's a member of the Garrison clan," Aaron said matter-of-factly.

Two laser beams seemed to shoot out of Damien's eyes. "The Garrison clan does not acknowledge him as one of us! Not just any Tom, Dick and Harry can enter our clan! He's just a bas*ard child! What right does he have?"

"Huh? Mr. Damien, that can't be right. Of course he has the right to be a part of your clan. At the very least, my son-in-law has the Garrison blood flowing in his veins, does he not?"

Aaron and the rest looked at Damien expectantly.

"Yes, yes, yes. We beseech you, Mr. Damien. Allow my son-in-law to enter your clan! He's actually quite capable and can definitely contribute to your clan."

...

Meredith and a few of them quickly pleaded with him, so that they could ride the coattails of the Garrisons from Oakland City.

They were so eager that they were about to grovel at Damien's feet.

How could they let this once-in-a-lifetime opportunity slip through their fingers?

Damien touched his nose and smirked. "Allowing Levi to enter the Garrison clan isn't completely impossible, but he has to fulfil some conditions..."

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1054

"Huh? What conditions? Please tell us, Mr. Damien!" Meredith blurted out.

Everyone cast curious glances at Damien.

Damien looked at Levi with a smug smile. "I want Levi to kneel at my feet and beg me! If you can kneel for half a day and beg me, perhaps I'll let you off the hook, and even acknowledge you as part of our clan!"

"It's either that, or getting each and every member of the Garrison clan to acknowledge you, if you have what it takes, of course. Then only can you be qualified enter the clan."

Everyone completely dismissed the second condition upon hearing it.

Getting the acknowledgement of every member in the Garrison clan?

How capable would one have to be?

How could Levi possibly be able to do that!

His biggest accomplishment was Levi Group from six years ago.

However, Levi Group was nothing but a speck of dust to the Garrison clan.

Hence, everyone had come to the same conclusion. There was only one way Levi could only enter the Garrison clan; by begging on his knees.

Although this way was slightly humiliating, it was nothing compared to the glory of entering the Garrison clan.

Honestly speaking, many of them wouldn't mind eating sh*t if it meant being a part of the Garrison clan, let alone getting on their knees to grovel a little.

Almost everyone present shared similar thoughts on this.

Once a person officially became a part of the clan, he or she would have an insurmountable position and receive infinite glory and wealth.

In fact, that description barely scraped the tip of the iceberg.

At that moment, everyone wished that they were Levi.

So that they could kneel before Damien at once.

Meredith stared at Damien and asked, "Mr. Damien, you can't go back on your words. If Levi gets on his knees to beg you, can you really fulfil your earlier promise?"

"Hahaha. Of course! I'm Damien Garrison. So of course I have a responsibility to stay true to my words!"

He chuckled and continued, "Besides, there are so many people here to bear witness. Would I dare to ruin my family's image?"

"That's great!"

Meredith was so excited she could barely stay still.

The opportunity to be associated with the most powerful family in Erudia was right at within their grasps.

Meredith, Harry and the rest of them turned towards Levi. "Well, what are you waiting for? Hurry up and kneel before Mr. Damien!"

"That's right. Don't be so slow-witted, boy! Quickly get on your knees! Mr. Damien has already said that he'll let you enter the Garrison clan if you beg him on your knees!"

Faced with the crowd's urging, Levi did not move a muscle.

All he did was pin Damien a frosty stare.

"Levi, stop pretending. I know you're eager to enter the Garrison clan. Why are you still pretending at a time like this? I'm telling you, you get have one chance at this. If you miss it, that's it!"

"Besides, once you kneel and beg me, I'll write off all your past mistakes too! You don't want your mother and wife to get hurt because of you, right?" Damien said.

Zoey cast a nervous glance at Levi.

She was afraid that Levi would kneel in front of Damien.

He was a proud man.

If he got on his knees, Zoey might even have to reconsider marrying him.

Levi would have completely lost her respect if that happened.

At the same time, she believed that Levi would not kneel.

However, the circumstances were different right now.

Faced with a powerful figure such as Damien, Levi might really give in for the sake of his mother and her.

She was very worried.

"Levi, what are you waiting for? Quickly kneel and grovel a little. That's all you have to do."

Jason and Mateo advised him as well.

To all of them, Levi only needed to bend his knees and grovel, and he would be able to gain access to infinite power.

And also to all of them, bending the knee was nothing.

Little did they know that this was a matter of dignity to Levi!

It was comparable to the dignity of Erudia which emphasized to never surrender an inch of ground!

As someone who rarely bowed to anything or anyone, how could Levi give in to someone like Damien?

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1055

Levi remained standing and did not have the intention to kneel whatsoever.

Aaron and his family were so anxious that they almost pushed Levi down to the ground.

Damien eyed Levi and growled, "Are you going to kneel or not?"

"Levi, stop thinking and just kneel!" Meredith urged loudly.

Before Levi could say a word, Emma walked forward and offered, "Mr. Damien, is it alright if I kneel for you instead?"

"Our family won't ask to be a part of the Garrison clan. It's too extravagant of a wish. I only ask that your clan let us go and stop making things difficult for us! We promise not to cause your clan any trouble in the future!"

Over a short time of knowing Levi, Emma found that he was a proud man through and through.

Not a single bone in his body was submissive!

There was no way he would get on his knees!

Hence, she was willing to kneel in her son's stead.

"Hahaha..." Damien laughed out loud upon seeing this turn of events.

"Really? You're willing to kneel for Levi?" he asked.

"As long as you promise to let us go, I'm willing to kneel at your feet, Mr. Damien!" Emma assured.

As a mother, she could not care less about her dignity when it came to her son.

Her only wish was for Levi and Zoey to live a happy life together.

Thus, she was willing to do anything to make that happen.

That was just how a mother was.

For the sake of her son and daughter-in-law, she would selflessly sacrifice herself without batting an eyelid.

"Sure, you can kneel. It doesn't matter whether you or Levi kneels. It's all the same to me."

"I'll let all of you off the hook as long as you kneel and grovel in front of me."

Damien wore a hideous smile on his face.

He enjoyed the feeling of toying with others just because he could.

He knew that to Levi, allowing his mother to kneel in his stead was even worse than him kneeling himself.

After all, no one could bear to watch their own mother being humiliated.

It was especially true for a proud man like Levi.

The humiliation he felt would be tenfold.

Damien smirked at Levi. "Levi, your mother is going to kneel in your place. Are you just going to watch?"

"Nonetheless, the effect would be same. Whether you or your mother kneels, I'll let all of you go! I'll even allow you to enter our clan!"

Damien was actually openly goading Levi.

"Levi, since you're not going to kneel, your mother will have to do it. Quickly get on your knees, Emma!" Meredith continued urging.

Others also chimed in with their advices.

Emma only has to kneel and everything would be settled.

Perhaps Levi needs to maintain his dignity and can't put down his ego to kneel.

But what dignity does Emma have?

She should just kneel right now.

"Don't kneel!"

Michael and Mia hastily advised Emma against it.

How could the mother of the revered God of War kneel before another person?

"Does the Jones family really want to side against the Garrison clan?" Damien sneered.

"You must not kneel, Ms. Jones! You must not!"

Xabian Goel and the other leaders of South Hampton's prominent families raised their objections one after another.

They were adamant on stopping Emma from kneeling.

Damien took note of everything. "Very well. All of the prominent families from South Hampton must have gone mad, huh? I will make sure to settle the scores with each and every one of you!"

Damien's gaze returned to Emma as he stated, "There's a limit to my patience. I'll count to three. If you don't kneel, that's it."

"Mr. Damien, don't do this. Please heed my advice and leave at once. This is a wedding, after all!" Jonah Garrison stepped forward to warn him.

He was really afraid that Damien would lose his life here.

"Hahahaha... wedding? Well, gatecrashing his wedding is exactly what I want to do!" Damien guffawed.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1056

Damien was a tyrant and a bully.

He did not even bother to hide it!

Above all, he was the descendant of the most powerful ancient family in Erudia.

Even the second-most powerful ancient family had to answer to him.

Who in Erudia would dare to offend him?

That was the reason he pranced around on his high horse and did whatever he liked.

Everyone was beneath him.

Especially back in North Hampton, no one could stop him.

Ruining a mere wedding was child's play to him.

Jonah heaved a sigh and silently retreated to the back.

What could he do if Damien refused to heed his advice?

He was just asking for it at this point.

"Aren't you going to kneel yet, Emma?" Meredith yelled, along with several others.

The fate of Levi, as well as the Lopez and Black families rested on Emma's shoulders now. She had the power to help them soar through the ranks.

Hence, they were more frantic than anyone else at the scene.

After all, this involved their own interests.

Emma inhaled deeply and was about to kneel when a large palm held her back.

"My mother will never kneel before anyone! Not even when the sky falls and the earth crumbles!" Levi stated coldly.

"As for me kneeling before you? You can forget about it! But if you kneel before me right now, perhaps I'll spare your pathetic excuse of a life!"

His words startled everyone.

The moment he spoke those words, the entire venue was filled with gasps.

Everyone stared at him in wide-eyed disbelief.

Isn't he openly challenging Damien?

He even wants Damien to kneel?

He must be kidding!

Is he insane?

"Hahahaha..." Booming laughter escaped Damien's lips.

"Great. I see you have a spine! Or to be more precise, you're an arrogant fool who knows no better. You don't realize how powerful the Garrison clan is and the dangers you would be facing. An ignorant person knows no fear."

Damien's lips curled into a sneer.

Meredith and the others were utterly disappointed.

Just like that, the opportunity to make it big slipped away...

Levi clearly had it right in the palm of his hand, but he threw it away.

"Mr. Damien, please give us one more chance. Why don't we kneel for you? We will definitely discipline Levi after this," Meredith and some of them begged.

They were unwilling to let such an opportunity slip away.

Damien looked at Levi and said, "See? They're more sensible than you."

"But I told you that you'd only have one chance. I've given it, so there are no more chances now."

The Lopez and Black families were unable to accept how things had turned out.

Disappointment flooded them; utter disappointment!

Is Levi a f*cking idiot?

How could he turn down such a good opportunity?

What's he acting all high and mighty for?

His damned pride cost us a once-in-a-lifetime opportunity.

Damien smiled. "You're as stubborn as a mule, Levi, but you will kneel at my feet."

"Damien, today is my wedding day, so I won't hold this against you. Now, leave at once!" Levi lowered his voice the best he could as he spoke to Damien.

If today wasn't his big day, he would have shred Damien into pieces right in front of everyone.

He had messed up his wedding with Zoey once.

He did not want it to happen a second time.

Hence, he would spare Damien's life this time around and settle the scores after everything was over.

"How dare you chase Mr. Damien away, Levi? Are you mad?"

Of course, Meredith and the rest did not dare to step on Damien's toes.

Damien feigned a sigh. "I never wanted to attend this wedding. I only came to take a look and present you a huge gift!"

With that, he ordered his men, "Bring the gift over!"

He fixed his gaze on Levi with a grin. "This is a gift I've specially prepared for you. I hope you like it!"

A car drove in.

An object was carried down the car and moved into the wedding venue.

Boom!

Upon seeing the gift prepared by Damien, everyone's expression changed drastically.

Especially Levi...

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1057

It wasn't because of him, but the present that Damien gave.

He had given the couple a funeral wreath, a coffin, and a gravestone.

Both the gravestone and the wreath had Levi's name clearly written on them.

It was preposterous for Damien to gift him something like this on his wedding day.

It was quite obvious that he had cruel intentions.

A hush fell over the entire room. Instantly, the temperature in the room fell by a few degrees.

Everyone was shocked by Damien's gift.

Who in their right mind would send these as wedding gifts?

Zoey was furious, too.

She had her perfect wedding all planned out nicely. Now, she would have to live with this unhappy memory for the rest of her life.

Azure Dragon, Kirin, Ezra, and the others were so livid they were about to burst.

Who dared to stir up trouble at the God of War's wedding?

They could not tolerate it!

No matter how they tried to hold back their anger, they felt as though they were about to explode.

White Tiger, who had the fiercest temper among all of them, gazed at Damien with his eyes full of murderous hatred.

His thoughts now were very simple. First, he would kill Damien. Then, he would make his way up to Oakland City and kill the entire ancient family to which Damien belonged.

"Well, looks like you've developed quite a liking towards my gifts! I won't bother you anymore—go ahead and get married!"

After delivering his presents and rubbing Levi Garrison the wrong way, Damien turned to leave.

He enjoyed the feeling of slowly torturing someone to death, instead of killing them off instantly.

He wanted to see how stupid Levi would look when he was furious but completely helpless.

Torturing Levi to death sounded like an excellent plan.

In fact, by the time he was through, Levi would not want to live anymore—but he also wouldn't be able to die.

Damien knew that Levi was close to exploding with rage.

However, he didn't have the ability to go up against Damien, and could only force himself to not lash out.

White Tiger roared loudly, "Boss, allow me to kill off this insolent fool!"

This time, nobody tried to stop White Tiger.

This was because they shared the same idea as him—to kill Damien.

Since he had committed such an appalling act against Levi, he had to pay the price for it!

"Boss, one word from you is all I need! When I hear it from you, I'll make sure to raze the home of the Garrison family in Oakland City to the ground!" Ezra and the others cried, pleading with Levi to let them take revenge.

They were so furious that they couldn't tolerate Damien's behavior anymore, especially when they saw that Damien was about to get into the car and drive off.

Levi's thoughts mirrored theirs quite exactly.

Just as he was about to issue a kill order on Damien, he caught Zoey's eye.

Don't do it.

Zoey shook her head almost imperceptibly, warning him not to behave recklessly.

Damien's goal was very simple. He wanted to aggravate Levi so that Levi would feel obliged to kill him.

He would then have a solid reason to finish Levi off, and the Garrison family would get away scot-free.

Damien was a very smart man. Even his actions, which seemed unplanned and reckless, had been carefully calculated in view of his grand plans.

"Let him leave!" Levi snapped, taking a deep breath to steady himself.

The audience let out a sigh of disappointment

"Keep this coffin! Remember not to throw it away or damage it! I'll be using this on Damien Garrison one day," Levi said blandly.

"Got it!" A spark of excitement lit up in White Tiger's eyes again.

Levi was making plans for the future; he would use these items when he had an opportunity to get back at Damien.

He decided to let the fool revel in his happiness for a few more days...

The wedding continued on as though nothing had happened.

Aside from Damien's intrusion, everything went perfectly as planned.

"Sorry, Zoey. I'm afraid your dream of a perfect wedding was ruined," Levi apologized.

"No worries! Actually, don't they say that the most beautiful memories are the ones in which we feel regret? I'll forget about it soon enough. You've given me a wedding that was more than perfect!"

"I support you for holding your ground against the Garrison family! In fact, I'm very pleased with it. Let me join you in the dangerous task of seeking revenge against them!" Zoey said.

“Don’t worry. I’ll never kneel before anyone—not now, not ever! Frankly, I doubt it’s of any concern—the Garrison family won’t do anything to me,” Levi promised her.

“Yes, I know that. Even if you were to start a fight against the Garrison family, they have no reason to respond to you.”

Changing the topic naturally, she continued, “By the way, where’s the surprise you promised me?”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1058

[Leave a Comment / The Protector / By Chapter Novel](#)

“Ah, the surprise! Of course.” Levi laughed brightly.

Everyone in the audience turned to look at them.

Under all their gazes, Levi took out a customized necklace along with a ring and helped Zoey put them on.

Seeing the necklace and ring made out of reconstituted ammunition cases, Zoey felt extremely touched.

These were much more valuable than necklaces and rings that cost millions.

Zoey grabbed the necklace tightly in her hands. “This is the best gift I’ve received in my entire life!”

She then glanced at Levi and commented, “But this can’t be the surprise you were planning on giving me, right?”

Levi had put in so much effort to organize the wedding.

There was no way these two pieces of jewelry were his surprise.

Levi had announced to everyone that he had not been to jail at all. Perhaps he would use this time to explain everything to them once and for all.

“Well, go ahead and tell me! I hope you’ll personally let me know what this surprise is. I’ve been waiting for this for so long!”

Zoey looked at him in eager anticipation.

Levi’s expression looked rather conflicted.

If Damien hadn’t intruded on their wedding today, he would’ve told Zoey all of his secrets and revealed his true identity.

After all, he was already wearing his military uniform...

Now that the arrow was already on the bow, he had no reason not to fire.

If he didn’t reveal at least a little something, Zoey was bound to be very confused.

“To tell you the truth... I’m the mysterious boss of the Morris Group!” Levi blurted out.

Because of the matter with the Garrison family, he was temporarily unable to reveal his identity as the God of War.

However, it was now the right time to reveal his identity as the boss of Morris Group, since the Garrison family already knew about it anyway.

Hearing this, murmurs ran through the crowd. The audience was stunned by what he had just said.

The Lopez and Black families were especially flabbergasted.

Slowly, they all turned to look at Levi with disbelief on their faces.

This man, whom we've always regarded as a beggarly loser, turns out to be the mysterious boss of Morris Group?

That Morris Group to which Triple Group could barely hold a candle?

Meredith and the others were so stunned that they stood up from their seats...

They were all trembling from head to toe, especially Aaron and Caitlyn.

Thinking back to the incidents that had happened back in North Hampton, both of them felt thunderstruck. They gazed at Levi as though their eyeballs were going to pop out of their sockets.

The Lopez and Black families gazed at each other in fear.

Before this, they had found no explanation for the preposterous acts Levi had been displaying. Now, they finally realized what had been going on all along.

He was the boss of Morris Group; there was no need for him to be afraid of anyone.

He also had no special reason to fear the Lopez and Black families, either.

When Zoey heard this, she burst into a loud wail. Her body trembled as she cried; tears cascaded down her face uncontrollably.

It was as though a dam had burst inside her.

This was why the boss of Morris Group had kept helping her without any demands for compensation.

This was why Levi had been working at Morris Group under his disguise of a nobody.

This was why Iris stammered like an idiot and spoke vaguely and evasively after she came back from meeting the mysterious boss.

This was why Levi Group had changed its name to the Morris Group.

...

Everything had been pointing to the fact that Levi was the head of Morris Group.

Aside from Levi, nobody else in the world would treat Zoey so well.

Actually, when Levi informed her that he had a surprise for her, she had already had her suspicions about what he was going to tell her.

The signs had been there all along. With hindsight, it was painfully obvious.

In fact, Zoey's suspicion started when she noted Iris's strange expression after the latter learned of the identity of that mysterious boss.

When she thought back on it, all the signs led to Levi being that person.

Hence, even before the wedding, she had already guessed that the surprise would have something to do with his identity.

But she still wanted to hear the confession from Levi himself.

Finally, she received the confirmation that she wanted.

Zoey threw her arms around Levi and cried, "Levi, you're still the biggest hero to me!"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1059

At that moment, an image of Levi from six years ago flashed across her mind. Back then, he was young and idealistic.

Without help from anyone else, he had managed to make a name for himself and establish his company through his own efforts.

This was what she most admired about Levi.

Even after six years, Levi still retained the bravado and tenacity he had in his younger days.

However, he had learned to be less aggressive and to hide his powers when necessary.

Other than that, his achievements and his character remained much the same as before. Zoey felt that he had even improved somewhat.

She was very pleased with how Levi was right now.

She didn't care about the number of achievements he had. As long as he still possessed the fortitude he had back then, she would be satisfied.

"To me, this is the biggest surprise you could have given me," she continued to sob, drenching the front of his suit.

Levi wiped the tears from her face and gazed at her with conflicted emotions.

In his heart, he added: Actually, this isn't the surprise I intended to tell you! The real surprise must be hidden from you for now.

However, it would only take him a while more to clear things up with the Garrison family. By then, Zoey would find out for herself, too.

He believed that the day would come soon!

Although Levi had just announced that he was the mysterious boss of Morris Group, nobody at the wedding aside from Zoey could feel happy for him.

Sure, as the head of Morris Group, Levi Garrison had the most prestigious status out of everyone in South Hampton and its surrounding lands.

However, the Garrison clan was intent on creating trouble for him.

This lent a touch of sorrow to Levi's small bit of achievement.

In front of a tremendously powerful clan like the Garrisons, the Morris Group was practically nothing.

Worse still, Levi and the Garrison clan went back a long way and they loathed each other bitterly.

Levi was in for a very rough and dangerous time.

While he was the esteemed boss of the Morris Group, he was still nothing but an ordinary person to the Garrisons.

"Oh, Levi! We are all very happy to hear that you're the boss of Morris Group. However, the little power you have is nothing compared to that of the Garrison family. You must be delusional if you think you can take them down!"

Jason had a very clear understanding of the Garrison family's power. He knew that if Levi tried to go up against them, he would be destroyed instantly like an egg that had been hurled against a rock.

Even Emma tried to dissuade him. "My son, I'm already very proud of you for your achievements. However, this is the Garrison family you're up against. Why don't you let me go to them and plead for your life on your behalf? Why can't we live peacefully instead of stirring up trouble with them?"

Meredith and the others agreed immediately. "Exactly! Just get down on your knees and prostrate yourself before Mr. Damien! It shouldn't be that hard."

"Can you survive on dignity alone? Forgive me for being blunt, but you're too hung up on dignity!"

"Exactly! As long as you kneel before Mr. Damien and plead for your life, you'll be recognized as a young master of the Garrison family. You'll have as much riches and glory as you'll ever need. Isn't that a great deal?"

"Besides, are you willing to put Zoey through this sort of danger? What if you put the child inside her belly in danger as well? Have you ever thought about that?"

...

As for the Lopez and Black families, they much preferred the idea of sucking up to the Garrison family.

Levi's status as the boss of the Morris Group made him as useful as the "p" in raspberry.

In fact, he was in a great deal of physical danger himself.

They could not count on him to protect them.

"Levi, you might be very strong in other areas but there are two weaknesses of yours we must point out," Robert said sternly. "Firstly, your worldview is way too limited. Secondly, you are a poor judge of situations and do not know how to turn them to your advantage."

"It's just as Damien said—your privileged circumstances and the small bubble of people you interact with have caused you to have a narrow view of the world. You should maintain a heart of humility. There are many out there who are stronger and much more powerful than you are. Are you so reckless and arrogant that you want to go up against them?"

"Besides, the Garrison clan is choosing to ignore your lowly status and is accepting you back into their family as long as you kneel before them. Don't you see the opportunity that's been given to you?"

Everyone agreed very much with Robert's words.

Levi was too crazy for his own good. Trying to talk sense into him would do no good.

It was quite possible that what happened six years ago might happen again.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1060

Harry threw a look of contempt at Levi. "Levi, if you act recklessly, you'll only put yourself and Zoey in danger! What can dignity do for you when you're dead and six feet underground?"

"Exactly! Before an opportunity like this, dignity is nothing!"

"Levi, you're a smart man. Why can't you see what's the best option for you?"

"As the saying goes, no matter how vicious a tiger is, it will not eat its own child. Until now, the Garrison family has refused to accept you as one of them because of your lowly status. In addition, no matter how many waves you make in your career, it's nothing to them!"

"The Garrison family is way up there in prestige and power. They value their honor very much and will never stoop to offer you a spot among them. As long as you accept defeat and say something pleasing to your father, you'll find your place among them again. Is kneeling really so demeaning when it comes to your own family? You shouldn't feel any shame at all!"

Everyone was pointing fingers at Levi.

To them, kneeling before the Garrison family seemed a low price to pay for the riches and glory that would come after.

After all, was dignity still worth anything in this era?

Under these circumstances, practically nobody would still hold on tightly to their dignity.

So why was Levi Garrison so determined to make things difficult for himself?

How important was something like dignity, something as insubstantial as a wisp of smoke in the air?

Levi shot everyone a look. "Firstly, the Garrison family has never treated me as a member and I've never thought of myself as one of them, either. Secondly, I value dignity very much. It's something that I will never throw away for all the riches in the world!"

"You...you must be thick-skulled!"

Harry and the others were so furious that they almost exploded at him instantly.

"This is the most you're ever going to achieve in your life! You won't be able to take another step forward," Meredith hollered.

Robert banged viciously on the table and roared, "Are you still concerned about your dignity at this moment? What good can dignity do for you?"

However, Zoey stood resolutely by her husband and argued, "I think Levi is right; that little dignity is more important!"

"Why do we have to give up our dignity and beg others for our lives? They're just going to treat us like a bunch of dogs!"

Jason sighed helplessly and said, "My dear girl, I'll be honest. Being a lapdog of the Garrison family isn't such a bad thing. In fact, it's a dream for many people who are willing to fight to the death for such an opportunity."

Meredith and the others nodded in agreement.

Jason was right!

A dog of the Garrison clan still enjoyed a position more privileged than most other people in Oakland City.

Besides, Levi was the son of the next patriarch of the Garrison family!

"You're still too young to understand what we're talking about. You're too idealistic about these sorts of things. You should face reality! When you're at our age, you'll regret the decision you made today!"

Zoey gazed at everyone in disbelief.

None of them care about their dignity!

They even profess their desire to be a dog of the Garrison family!

Thankfully, Levi already had everything planned out.

Zoey said coldly, "Alright, stop talking now. Everyone has a different point of view. If we continue to discuss this, it might end in an argument."

With that, the wedding concluded hastily.

Although there were many mishaps throughout the ceremony, Zoey had no regrets about the wedding. This was all she had ever wanted.

"No matter what happens after this, I'll always be right next to you!" she said to Levi, smiling.

"Don't worry! With me around, I won't let you or our child go through any sort of suffering!"

Meanwhile...

"Mr. Damien, I didn't know Levi Garrison would be such a hard nut to crack!"

Damien laughed cruelly. "Well, the blood of the Garrison family runs in his veins, so it's only natural that he's a little rebellious. But I'd like to see how long he can keep up that act of his. I'll make him face the cruel reality of life. He'll end up kneeling before me and throwing away his dignity!"

"Mr. Damien, we're all looking forward to that! Haha..."

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1061

“Levi Garrison is still too weak. Wouldn’t it be more fun if he posed a little more of a challenge?”

Damien sighed resignedly and replied, “I have so many ways of taking him down right now! Take Zoey Lopez and that child inside her, for example. If I wanted to, I could make sure that the child won’t be born alive!”

“Exactly! Mr. Damien, we await your orders. One word from you and we’ll head off to torment him immediately!”

However, Damien shook his head. “No, no, no... Where’s the fun in that? I want to torment him to death slowly. By the time I’m through with him, he’ll realize how foolish he has been to hold on so tightly to his pride!”

“As for his wedding night, I’ll make sure nothing goes well for him, either! Tell my men to go...”

Levi was having drinks with his friends.

It was rare that his friends of “special status” could meet up.

The fact that his beloved mentor, Angus Belford, was also present made Levi feel overwhelmed with pleasure.

Angus said, “Levi, I understand your situation now. To tell you the truth, the Garrison clan of Oakland City aren’t ordinary folks. They have been around for thousand-odd years and numerous generations. Their fighting prowess is top-notch.”

“Shall I tell you some statistics? You know about Erudia’s Saber Leaderboard, don’t you?”

Levi nodded.

Erudia’s Saber Leaderboard was a ranking of Erudia’s best warriors. Everyone on it was the creme de la creme among experts.

However, warriors like Levi and those in the Iron Brigade were ranked in a separate and confidential list and not on the Saber Leaderboard.

All they knew was that those on the Saber Leaderboard were very strong; they only had a vague understanding of how powerful those warriors truly were.

“On Erudia’s Saber Leaderboard, the disciples of the Garrison clan take up a grand total of twenty-one spots, while the warriors related to the Garrison clan take up forty-six spots in total! This means that about half of the warriors on the Saber Leaderboard have connections to the Garrisons!”

After hearing these statistics, Levi and the others were stunned.

The warriors on the Saber Leaderboard were vicious military warriors.

All of them were devils on the battlefield and had gained quite a reputation even overseas.

Not only were they loaded with military accomplishments, but those warriors were also full of power and talent.

Were there really so many of them with connections with the Garrison clan?

Evidently, the clan was powerful beyond belief.

However, Levi had already had a taste of their power for himself before.

One of the servants of the Garrison clan had the power to make an entire city yield to him.

It was unimaginable what the real power of the Garrison clan could be if they turned it out in full force.

“Not only that. The Garrison family has other warriors with different areas of expertise, too. They are excellent fighters. There’s a reason for the Garrison family’s fearsome reputation in Erudia. They are more frightening than even I could imagine.”

“Besides, Damien’s mother, Olivia Garcia, is a beloved member of the ancient Garcia family, which is second only to the Garrison family. The Garrisons and Garcias are in this together. If we strike against the Garrisons, we’ll have two ancient families after our blood.”

Angus turned to look at Levi. “I hope that you, as the God of War, will exercise some caution while taking down the Garrison clan of Oakland City. You must absolutely tread with caution!”

Levi nodded. “Don’t worry, Master. I’ll do my best to do this properly, and I’ll make sure that the Garrison family pays for everything they have done to me.”

Hearing this, everyone knew that Levi had made up his mind to go against the Garrison family.

He was not even afraid when faced with the Eighteen-Nation Alliance in the past, and he certainly would not back off just because the Garrison family was powerful.

Just as everyone was drowning in high spirits, someone barged into the room.

Everyone recognized the intruder at once. It was one of Damien’s subordinates who had appeared with him during the wedding.

Upon seeing him, White Tiger growled, “What are you doing here?”

Damien’s subordinate, Vincent Garrison, looked at him and smirked. “Levi Garrison, I’ve been sent to tell you something!”

“What?”

Damien’s subordinate laughed. “The person you owe your life to is in danger at this very moment. Do you wish to save this person?”

Levi’s expression changed. “The person I owe my life to?”

“Yes, indeed. He’s on the brink of death right now, I might add.”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1062

"Who is it?" Levi asked.

Shaking slightly, Emma asked, "Could it be Dexter?"

If there was someone in the Garrison family whom Levi owed his life to, it had to be Dexter, the Garrisons' butler.

Back then, Dexter had treated Emma like his own daughter.

He had helped her numerous times, often secretly.

Hence, he had a huge role to play in the fact that she was still alive today.

After Emma gave birth to her child, the child was taken away by Tyrone Garrison.

She had feared for her child's life and wondered if he could live on.

However, Dexter promised her that he would find a way to ensure that her child lived.

"Right on the first try! Yes, it's Dexter."

Vincent laughed coldly. "I'll tell you guys the truth. Initially, the Garrison family had no plans of letting Levi Garrison live. They took him and abandoned him in the mountains, leaving

him to die. However, Dexter, that old hag, secretly left him on the streets of North Hampton instead. If not for him, Levi would have died a long time ago!”

A hush fell over the room. Emma felt as though she had just been struck by lightning.

The Garrison family had been lying to her all along!

Tyrone had tricked her!

They never had any plans to let Levi off the hook.

Back then, Tyrone hadn't had the heart to kill off his son by himself, so he simply abandoned him in the wild. But how was this any different from committing murder with his own two hands?

The Garrison family had never planned on letting Levi live from the beginning.

Emma had thought that Tyrone would at least feel some sort of affection for his son and let him live. However, things had not gone the way she imagined they would.

How could a clan as prestigious as the Garrisons go back on their word like this?

How could they simply break their promises whenever they wanted to?

What she failed to comprehend was that for a family like the Garrisons, personal benefits came above everything else.

When it came to personal benefits, nothing else mattered.

Besides, Tyrone had gone behind everyone else's back to do this.

“Tyrone, I've finally seen you for the brute you are! So much for tigers not eating their own children! You're the worst savage I've ever had the misfortune to meet!”

Zoey clenched her hands into fists as her body began to shake with rage.

This is saddening, awfully saddening!

She finally experienced what it was like for trust to evaporate in an instant.

Levi felt extremely stunned by the news of his father's cruelty too.

Had he really tried to kill me when I was a child?

He finally understood everything.

This was why it had always been the Garrison family's servants who were sent to deal with him in the past.

Apparently, everyone in the Garrison family already thought he was dead!

Tyrone Garrison, how cruel of you!

As a father yourself, how could you have done something so horrible to your own flesh and blood? What a father you are!

Vincent snorted derisively. "You have that stupid Dexter to thank for all this! If not for him, there would be less trouble for all of us. As for you, Levi Garrison, you can decide for yourself whether you want to save Dexter! I'll give you three hours. If you don't come by then, I'll make sure to bleed out every last drop of blood from his body!"

Vincent gave one last cackle before he turned around and left.

Levi turned to Emma and asked if what Vincent said about Dexter was true.

"My son, it seems that it's really true! Dexter was the one who saved you from dying!" Emma said confidently.

Levi said coldly, "Alright, then. Since he was the one who saved my life and he's now in trouble because of me, I must save him! I'll get going now."

"My son..."

Emma wracked her brains to think of how best to deter her son from going to Dexter's rescue.

She understood what Damien's plan was. He meant to lure Levi straight into his trap, where he would have the perfect opportunity to kill him off.

This way, the Garrison family would escape the consequences of his murder.

If Levi were to walk straight into Damien's trap, he would be putting himself in great danger.

Besides, he had just gotten married today! There was no need for him to put himself into this sort of situation immediately.

As his mother, Emma was very reluctant to let him do it.

On the other hand, however, she wished for Levi to be a man who knew the value of courage and gratitude. Since Dexter was the person who had saved his life, Levi should go ahead and rescue him.

"Don't worry, Mom! Damien and I are bound to meet each other before long anyway."

With that, Levi turned and left to search for Damien.

Dexter was somebody he had to save.

Nobody, not even his mother, could hold him back from doing so.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1063

"Levi..."

As Levi left, Emma gazed after him, her mouth agape as she stood rooted to her spot.

I can't let this happen!

I can't send Levi straight to his death.

Emma quickly left, too, but no one knew where she was headed.

The villa in North Hampton had originally been the residence of the Gonzales family, but they had moved away a long time ago.

Now, it was Damien's year-round residence.

He was currently enjoying his wine in the enormous meeting room of the house.

He had a reputation for having a Machiavellian and deceitful personality. However, quite different from his character, he had quite a liking for hard liquor.

He enjoyed the feeling of the liquor burning its way down his throat like a ball of fire.

"Ah! That's some good stuff."

He gulped down another mouthful of liquor.

Drip, drip...

In front of him, blood dripped down onto the floor from the ceiling, adding to a pool of redness.

Dexter was hung upside-down from the ceiling and bleeding from head to toe.

Damien had just sliced another wound across his abdomen; blood could be seen gushing out of it.

If he didn't receive medical attention soon, Dexter would most probably perish from blood loss.

Damien barked with laughter. "Hey, Mr. Butler, I really hope you'll be able to hold up until Levi Garrison gets here!"

Adding injury to insult, he poured some of the liquor onto Dexter's wounds.

"Ahh!"

Immediately, Dexter screamed in pain like a pig bound for slaughter.

He managed to squeeze out a single word from between his gritted teeth. "You..."

Damien was twisted beyond words.

Vincent turned to Damien and asked, "Mr. Damien, are you sure Levi is going to turn up?"

Damien nodded. "Yes, of course he will. I'm a good judge of people's characters. Levi Garrison cares too much for loyalty and gratitude. These things are of no use to someone like my father. In fact, they're a sign of weakness, and people will exploit your weakness to bring you down. Sometimes, it might even cost you your life!"

Tyrone had always taught his son one thing—to never be a man of emotion. One had to learn to abandon all else and be emotionless during crucial moments or risk losing everything. Only then could one be trusted with important missions.

This was also why Tyrone had been able to abandon Emma and their son without so much as a flinch.

Logic and indifference were the principles he abided by.

He could throw away everything in an instant if it meant achieving what he wanted.

Of course, Emma and Levi, who held almost no value in his heart, were easy targets.

And why not? They were like the stones that threatened to trip him on his way, so he had better get rid of them as soon as he could.

"That's very true. If Levi Garrison didn't value loyalty and gratitude so much, he wouldn't come here at all. He would be able to save himself from certain death." Vincent laughed.

Damien nodded. "That's right, that's right. That's what I mean! If he doesn't come, nothing will happen to him."

From above, Dexter screamed, "Damien, you're insane for instigating Master Levi to strike you first so you would have an excuse to murder him later on!"

Dexter's smile widened. "That b*stard will never enter the Garrison family—I'll see to that. But there are too many eyes on him right now so I can't do whatever I want to him. Since I can't kill him as and when I like, the only other option I have is to instigate him to start a fight!"

"You...cough, cough..."

Dexter was so agitated that blood started seeping out of his wounds again.

Every wound on his body pricked at his consciousness, making him groan in pain.

"Hold on a little longer! Levi will be here soon. When he arrives, I'll send both of you to hell together so you won't feel pain anymore."

Damien picked up a steak knife and started slicing away at Dexter's torso again.

Blood once again oozed out of Dexter's heavily wounded body; he would die very soon.

Instead of dying from having lost too much blood, it was more probable that he would die from the excruciating pain.

Bang!

"Dexter, I'm coming for you!"

At that moment, there was a loud bang as the gates of the villa swung open. Levi's voice floated into the hall.

"Haha! Just as you've predicted, Mr. Damien! Levi Garrison has arrived to see himself off to hell!" Vincent laughed.

"Oh, dear," Dexter sighed miserably.

This kid should not have come.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1064

At that moment, Levi kicked the gates open and strode into the villa.

He was greeted by the sight of up to a thousand of Damien's men, who stared him down with murderous intent.

"Take him down!"

There was a buzz as the men started running towards him immediately. However, a slow drawl interrupted their progress.

"Slow down! Let him take his time," Damien said from inside the meeting room.

Upon hearing Damien's orders, the warriors moved aside and opened up a narrow path for Levi to walk across to the front door. They continued to watch him closely as he stepped into the house.

Levi noticed those men were top-class warriors.

The Garrison family really hires and trains the best of the best.

Very quickly, Levi found his way through the corridors and arrived at the meeting room.

When he spotted Dexter hanging upside down from ceiling, his eyes narrowed into a thin line.

Damien is too cruel.

Levi turned livid when he noted the pool of blood on the floor below Dexter.

Damien burst into laughter. “Levi, this is the man you owe your life to! If it hadn’t been for him, you would have died in the wilderness a few hours after you were born.”

By then, Dexter was already one foot in the grave. When he spotted Levi, he only had the breath to croak, “Master—Master Levi...”

“Dexter...”

Levi took a deep breath.

How could they treat the man he owed his life to in this inhumane way?

Coldly, Levi ordered, “Damien, remove him from the ceiling and set him down on the floor immediately!”

Damien burst into laughter again. “You want me to set him down? Sure! But that’ll depend on whether you have the ability to make me do it.”

Summoning the remaining energy in his body, Dexter whispered, “Master Levi, leave...leave quickly... It’s a trap...”

“Don’t worry. I must save you today! When I was a child, you saved my life once. Today, you risked your life for my sake again! I must save you.”

With that, Levi started walking towards Damien.

Suddenly, a large boom sounded across the entire room.

The meeting room, which had been empty of other people until now, was now a crowded place. Men stood shoulder to shoulder, filling the room from corner to corner. All of them were top-class warriors and there were at least a few hundred of them.

Everyone gazed at Levi, looking prepared to kill him if need be.

Click!

Instantly, the door of the meeting room was locked.

Even if Levi miraculously grew wings that very moment, it would be impossible for him to escape now.

Damien cackled with glee.

Now, Levi will die and his corpse won't even be intact!

They are almost at their inevitable end. In a few minutes, both Levi and Dexter will be dead.

Damien had already thought everything through.

After he killed both of them, he would announce to the public that Levi had murdered the butler of the Garrison family, Dexter. As far as the public was concerned, Damien had killed Levi in retaliation.

This was a perfectly reasonable excuse.

Although everyone would know it was a set-up, nobody would be able to dispute his narrative.

Meanwhile, Emma had dashed back into her room and dialed a telephone number she had saved at the very back of her mind a long time ago.

"Come on, pick up! Come on! If you don't pick up now, Levi is going to be in huge trouble," Emma muttered anxiously to herself.

Finally, the person on the other end picked up the phone. "Who—who is this?"

"It's me, Emma Jones!"

After Emma revealed her identity, the other party remained silent for a long while. She could sense that they were holding their breath.

Emma jumped straight into the topic and stated her reason for calling. "Mr. Tyrone Garrison, I won't beat around the bush anymore. I just have one request!"

She was afraid that if they dragged this out, Levi would be dead.

"What is it?"

“I hope you’ll let my son go! Just this time, I promise! As long as you let go of my son this once, both my son and I will never have anything to do with the Garrison family again! You know I’m a person of my word! I’ll keep my promise!” Emma pleaded desperately.

“I don’t call the shots on this matter. Nobody asked him to be so reckless. He deserves this for trying to go up against the Garrison clan!” Tyrone replied icily.

“He’s young and doesn’t know the ways of the world yet. Please just let him go this time! Just this time! I’ve never asked you for anything before, but please let my son off this time! I can even die in his place!”

“Please, I beg of you...I’ll even kneel before you...”

Emma was crying so hard that her face was practically soaked with tears.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1065

However, Tyrone turned her down immediately. “Even if I let him off the hook, I can’t promise you that the other Garrison family members will do the same!”

“Tyrone Garrison! If you don’t promise me this, I’ll expose that secret of yours to the world!” Emma suddenly exclaimed.

“You...”

Tyrone’s tone underwent a profound change when he heard that.

He roared angrily, "So much for your promise to love me for the rest of your life and to keep my secret forever! How dare you threaten to expose it to the world now, you wretched b*tch!"

Emma was forced into a corner. "I'm willing to do almost anything if it means saving my son's life. If there's anything that can get him out, I'll do it!"

"Alright, alright, I'll let him off, alright? I'll make sure to keep him alive. But there's still a problem—how will I know that you won't use this secret to threaten me again?" Tyrone asked.

"I swear I'll never use this secret against you again!"

However, Tyrone replied in a low and dangerous voice, "Preposterous. I've long understood that only the dead can keep secrets."

A shiver ran through Emma's body. She felt a little panicked by the implications of his words.

"Alright, here's my proposal. Trade your life with your son's. When Levi makes it out of there, I'll send someone to fetch you back to Oakland City!"

There was no way Tyrone would allow his secret to be leaked to the public.

This had never been a source of concern for him before, because Emma loved him way too much and would take his secret to her grave rather than exposing him to the world.

However, now that her son's life was at stake, it was a different story altogether.

Hence, Emma needed to die.

"Fine. I promise you!"

In order to save her son's life, Emma didn't care if she lived or died anymore.

...

Back at the villa in North Hampton, Levi smiled as he gazed at the hundreds of warriors surrounding him.

Blandly, he announced, "Today is my wedding day, so the last thing I want to see is bloodshed. However, some people are pushing me too far! I have no choice but to pull out all stops and kill all of you."

Damien laughed shrilly. "Levi Garrison, that silly bravado of yours has always been a source of admiration for me! Look where you are now. Do you still dare to make those silly proclamations of yours?"

"And guess what, I arranged for all this to happen today, just for you!"

"Six years ago on this very day, you had your limbs broken by my men and were left for dead on the streets. Today, I'll see to it that you're beaten to death! Haha...life comes a full circle, doesn't it?"

Damien threw his head back and guffawed.

Dexter was livid.

This devil is downright disgusting!

What a tyrant!

Damien's subordinates laughed next to him. "Hey, kid, did you bring the coffin, gravestone, and funeral wreath we gave you earlier today? We prepared that especially for you!"

Levi's expression remained placid. He said, "Damien, the biggest mistake you made in your life was to come to North Hampton!"

"Hmm! A mistake?" Damien asked in confusion.

"Because you're going to die! Even though it's my wedding day today, I'm going to bash your head in and make sure I decorate these walls with your intestines!"

Levi had already made up his mind to kill him.

Damien must die!

“Men, go...”

Just as Damien was going to order his men to kill Levi, he received a phone call from his father.

“What? Are you serious? But why? Oh, alright...I understand...Father...”

Damien hung up the phone and gazed at Levi with disbelief.

Vincent urged him, “Mr. Damien, your orders, please!”

To their surprise, Damien waved a hand dismissively and snapped, “Alright, that’s enough. We won’t be killing Levi Garrison today.”

“Huh?”

Everyone was stunned.

Why did he suddenly change his mind about killing Levi?

In a very disgruntled voice, Damien grumbled, “Levi, count yourself lucky for escaping death today. I won’t be killing you for now. As for Dexter, you can have him, too. So there!”

He didn’t understand why his father had suddenly ordered him to spare Levi’s life.

Back then, his father had also given him the order to murder Levi without much explanation, either.

However, Levi didn’t move from his spot. He glared angrily at Damien and spat, “That won’t do! You might not want to kill me anymore, but that doesn’t mean I’m going to let you off the hook!”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1066

Levi thought the whole situation ridiculous.

Does Damien really think he'll emerge from this without any consequences?

Has he ever considered what I might have up my sleeve?

Damien has no clue as to who will be killing who.

"Hmm?" Damien froze.

I have already agreed to spare Levi's life, but this incorrigible jerk is trying to push it.

"Alright, everyone heard that, right? He said he wanted to kill me, didn't he? If I kill him now, I doubt my father will blame me for it. Haha..."

Just now, Damien was feeling despondent when he realized there was no way he could kill Levi without angering his father.

However, Levi had decided to dig his own grave.

This is excellent!

Damien burst into laughter.

"Levi Garrison, you're asking to be killed, aren't you? Don't blame me for being too awful to you!"

“Men, go! Empty out his guts!”

Immediately, there was a loud clang as the men drew their swords.

At that moment, someone yelled, “Mr. Damien, there’s a woman outside who seeks your audience! Her name is Emma Jones!”

Very quickly, Emma arrived at the meeting hall.

She cried, “Mr. Damien, your father has already agreed to let the both of us off. You can’t go back on his word!”

“Yes, I’ve already let him go,” Damien said agreeably.

“Mom, leave by yourself first! He might have let me go, but I sure haven’t let him go!” Levi was adamant about killing Damien before leaving the place.

Emma threw herself onto the floor and grabbed the leg of his pants. “My son, I beg of you to stop kicking up a fuss! We need to leave now! Stop trying to play the hero! It’s your wedding day today! Think about Zoey and your child she’s bearing!”

Levi seemed to hesitate. He turned to gaze malevolently at Damien and spat, “Alright, count yourself lucky today that you managed to keep yourself alive! Now get out of my sight immediately! If I change my mind, I’m afraid you won’t get to leave North Hampton alive.”

Damien burst into laughter. “Haha...To tell you the truth, I’ve never met anyone as self-deluded as you are. Don’t worry, Levi. I’ll leave today but there will come another day when I’ll have you in the palm of my hand.”

Still guffawing, Damien continued, “Didn’t you say you wanted to go up against the Garrison clan itself? I’ll wait for you at the gates of the Garrison residence, then. Be there or be square!”

“Don’t worry about it. I’ll definitely be there.”

With that, Levi left the villa with his mother, carrying the barely alive Dexter on his back.

Bang!

Damien was so enraged that he punched the wall next to him.

Almost instantaneously, the wall collapsed. With another loud rumble, the entire building collapsed in a huge puff of dust.

From this, everyone could see how much strength Damien possessed. He made an entire building crumble with his fist!

They could also see how furious Damien truly was. He couldn't stand the idea that Levi had mocked him straight to his face, but he wasn't allowed to murder him in retaliation.

"Mr. Damien, are we just going to leave it at that?" Vincent asked tremulously.

Even he couldn't bear it anymore.

"If we don't leave it at that, what else are we supposed to do? Now tell everyone to get lost!"

That very night, Damien left North Hampton.

He didn't understand why his father had made such a strange decision.

When Damien asked his father previously, the latter gave him his permission to murder Levi.

After they finished making arrangements for Dexter, Emma received a phone call from Tyrone.

"I've let your people go. Isn't it time for you to uphold your end of the bargain?" he asked coldly.

"Yes, I gave you my word. But I sure hope you won't go back on yours!" Emma warned.

She was reminding him of the promise he broke years ago, when he said he would keep their son alive but then dumped Levi in the wilderness.

Tyrone replied frostily, "Oh, don't worry, I won't do that. Prepare yourself. I'll be sending someone to pick you up soon enough."

"Alright, then."

The next morning, news spread all over town. Emma Jones was missing!

"This is bad!" Levi exclaimed, alarmed by the news.

Was this why Damien let me off so easily last night? There must be a reason.

It seemed the reason had something to do with his mother.

There was a possibility that his mother was in grave danger right now...

It was quite evident to Levi that Emma Jones had some past dealings with the Garrison family.

Otherwise, Damien would never have let him off so easily.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1067

Emma was now on her way to Oakland City.

She was brought before Tyrone Garrison.

It had been twenty years since the last time they met.

Now that they met each other again, Tyrone observed that the woman had changed drastically since he last saw her.

Tyrone still looked elegant and polished as ever. He still had that commanding vibe, albeit it had become more mature and made him seem even more impressive.

Tyrone had lived a perfect life from all perspectives.

Besides, he was currently poised to become the next patriarch of the Garrison family. When that happened, he would become the most respected man on earth.

On the other hand, age had significantly altered Emma's beauty. The wrinkles that crept across her entire forehead made her seem older than she really was. She was so skinny that she looked like a walking skeleton.

She was once as beautiful as a flower. Now, she simply looked like an old hag.

The two of them were a glaring contrast to each other when they stood together.

Nobody would have thought they used to be a couple...

When she saw Tyrone again, a complicated mix of emotions welled up within Emma.

However, when Tyrone gazed down at her, his eyes were only full of mockery and contempt.

He mocked himself for falling for this woman in his younger years; he had been too naïve in the past.

At the same time, Tyrone was also laughing at Emma. How could she have ever thought of marrying me, much less marrying into the prestigious Garrison clan?

Oh, how stupid I was! How could I have been in love with this woman all those years ago? I nearly missed out on my future with Olivia!

Yes, I was too young and foolish. Oh, just look at Emma now!

She's no match for me at all.

Not even a little bit!

Compared to his present wife, Olivia, Emma was practically nothing. The difference between the two women was simply too great.

With a little exaggeration, Tyrone would even say that looking at the present Emma made him feel like throwing up.

If he were a bird soaring high up in the sky, she would be a filthy bug crawling on the ground!

Did this loser of a woman think she's suitable to be my wife?

Dream on!

She will never become my wife!

Tyrone would only regard her with contempt.

However, he had forgotten that he had a role to play in Emma's current predicament.

Emma used to be a rose, too.

For Tyrone's sake, she had gambled with her life and ruined her future in the process.

Without him in the picture, Emma would still be as beautiful as she had been back then.

"Wow, I didn't think we would ever meet again! You're quite a lucky person, do you know that?"

Tyrone felt that any opportunity for Emma to meet him was a boon for her.

He wasn't entirely wrong. Someone as lowly as Emma didn't have the right to meet him.

"Yes, we meet again," Emma whispered.

Tyrone continued, "However, I must remind you not to harbor any hopes on me. There's no way things will ever work out between the two of us, for as long as we live. I'll tell you the truth. The difference in our status is simply too big, and the gap is only getting wider! You and I aren't compatible at all."

Tyrone rambled on, "Think about it yourself. Do you think you can hold a candle to Olivia? I don't think so! I must have been blind in the past."

Tyrone was afraid that Emma still desired some sort of romantic relationship with him so he had to dispel those thoughts immediately.

Hearing this, Emma bowed her head.

The last ember of hope in her heart was extinguished.

The difference between her status and that of Tyrone was simply enormous.

"Not only that, but your son is nothing compared to Olivia's son," Tyrone mocked. "Her son is of unparalleled talent and he's the best and fiercest warrior in practically every aspect!"

Tyrone struck Emma emotionlessly with such harsh words. "As for your son, I must admit that he has made some small achievements on his own. To normal people, he is worthy of some respect. But to the Garrison clan of Oakland City, his achievements are nothing! What are his achievements as compared to those of Olivia's son?"

Emma wouldn't stand for it. He could insult her all he liked, but insulting her son was taboo for her.

Emma's eyes widened as she stared at Tyrone. "That might not be so! Damien was brought up in an environment that was simply too perfect. In a less ideal environment, my son might easily beat him."

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1068

Suddenly, a cold voice sounded at the door. "Ridiculous. Who said my son was brought up in a perfect environment?"

The woman sent an intimidating vibe as she glided into the room. Olivia appeared, looking as regal as a queen.

The difference between Emma and herself was obvious.

Tyrone laughed. "Olivia, I made the best decision of my life when I chose you to be my wife all those years ago."

Olivia walked in front of Emma and said coldly, "Emma, let me tell you something that might shock the skin off those pathetic bones of yours."

"My son, Damien, was never brought up in the warm environment of the Garrison residence, like you imagined. From the time he was born, Damien was abandoned at a training ground in the frigid north. During his time in training, he never knew his true identity and the Garrison family never provided him with any help. Instead, we made sure to place all sorts of obstacles in his way to ensure that he grew up strong."

Olivia continued, "Damien managed to survive those challenges because of his own strength and intelligence. We only accepted him into the family when he came of age and proved himself to be a capable warrior. His achievements surpassed those of others in his generation; no one ever came close to defeating him."

Olivia went into greater detail. "In order to create challenges for him, the Garrison clan spent tens of billions and lost more than three thousands of our men! Back at the training grounds, there were about eighty other recruits who trained alongside Damien, but only one

could emerge alive. Damien was the one who killed off the rest and walked away as the victor!"

...

Hearing this, Emma was so shocked that sweat started to form on her brows.

It was evident that Damien's experiences before he came of age were even worse than what Levi went through.

If he lost focus for even one moment, he would have died.

The Garrisons' brutal training had produced a genius like Damien.

Even Emma had to admit that Levi's achievements paled in comparison to what Damien had achieved.

Olivia continued, "Do you really think that b*stard son of yours can be compared to Damien? What rubbish!"

Emma remained silent.

Although she wished for her son to win, his skills were truly nothing compared to Damien.

Olivia turned to Tyrone and said coldly, "Tyrone, why has she come?"

She wasn't afraid that their reunion would reignite old flames. Emma is so hideous now. Tyrone must be out of his mind to lust for her.

Tyrone replied coolly, "I brought her back to kill her!"

"That's nice. Get it done as quickly as you can. There's no use in keeping her around anyway," Olivia said.

Emma knelt down immediately and pleaded, "Could the two of you give me some more time? I want to meet my grandchild and make the baby some clothes!"

In nine months, Zoey's child would finally be born.

Emma wanted to see the child at least once.

As Emma looked up piteously at Tyrone, his expression flickered a little.

After all, Emma was still holding on to his secret.

"Fine, whatever," he relented. "Since you're going to die anyway, I don't see how a few more months is going to do you any harm."

Olivia didn't think much of it, either. "Men, take her away and lock her up! Don't let her escape."

Tyrone tried to reassure her. "Don't worry, Olivia. She's being locked up by the Garrison family. Unless someone has God's power, I doubt she could be rescued."

After they locked Emma up securely, Olivia turned to Tyrone and smiled. "My dear, do you think that b*stard might come here and try to rescue his mother? I heard this boy is very reckless by nature. If he was foolish enough to rescue Dexter, don't you think he'll definitely try and get his mother out of there?"

Tyrone laughed dismissively. "Huh? Is he going to attempt a prison break on the grounds of the Garrison residence? How is he going to rescue her? How preposterous!"

So what if that b*stard is talented?

There was no way he will be able to take a step past the front door of the Garrison residence, much less break his mother out of jail.

"Well, I personally hope he'll try and rescue her. It will be quite an entertaining scene, don't you think?"

Olivia enjoyed seeing other people struggle helplessly.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1069

However, Tyrone replied icily, "No way. That day will never come. He will never get that opportunity."

Olivia froze before replying, "Do—do you mean you'll kill Emma Jones?"

"Yes, of course. Does a b*tch like her really think she has any right to bargain with me? As for extending her life by a few more months, that's never going to happen!"

Tyrone was deathly afraid that his secret would be exposed.

Emma had to go, and she had to go now.

He had only agreed to her demands on the surface.

Oh, what a shame. Emma has been tricked again.

Tyrone was never someone who took his promises seriously.

Besides, Emma was holding onto a secret that could have a devastating impact on his future within the family. He would be stupid to let her live.

He arrived at her cell.

Emma had already figured out his intentions. "You're here to kill me off, aren't you?"

Tyrone scoffed cruelly. "I once thought you could take this secret to your grave, but I don't think you love me enough. Back then, who was the one who said she would love me for a lifetime and promised to do everything for my sake?"

Emma glared at him and hollered angrily, "Tyrone Garrison, I've finally seen you for the brute you are! You have no emotions at all, do you? You're just a cold-blooded animal."

Tyrone laughed apathetically and replied, "That's what makes me different from common folks like you! In the Garrison clan, women must never become a stumbling block for their men. They must only be tools! This was exactly why I abandoned you! To me, you're no different from other women. You proved to be of no value to me, and you might even be a stumbling block for me in the future!"

"Only a woman like Olivia is suitable for me. She's the only person on this earth who is compatible with me," asserted Tyrone.

Emma had to bite her lip in order to not cry.

Laughing coldly, she snapped, "You probably admire her for her family background and the resources of the Garcia family, don't you? Do you even have any feelings for her?"

Hearing this, Tyrone kept silent.

That was true.

He had married Olivia because her family background was advantageous to him.

Laughing mockingly at him, Emma said, "You will stop at nothing to achieve what you want, won't you?"

"Haha, you don't understand me at all! If one wishes to make their way up in the world, one needs to be prepared to abandon many things! Unfortunately, you've never been in such a position, so you wouldn't know about that."

Immediately, Emma retorted, "Is that why you paralyzed your own younger brother?"

Tyrone was enraged. "You..."

That was precisely his secret.

The idea of everyone knowing about it filled him with fear and made him sleepless.

The Garrison clan of Oakland City was full of talented warriors.

Tyrone's generation was an especially talented cohort.

However, Tyrone wasn't the most talented one out of them all.

Among his peers, Tyrone ranked third in terms of talent and achievement. His fourth brother, Micah, was the one in first place.

While Micah was alive, his powers surpassed everyone else's. He was practically the next patriarch of the family.

Tyrone could only watch and stew in jealousy as everyone lauded his brother with praise.

Finally, when he could stand it no longer, he set a trap and paralyzed his brother. Till this day, Micah was still confined to his bed.

Everyone in the Garrison family believed that Micah's fall and subsequent paralysis was an accident.

The day after Micah was paralyzed, Tyrone was conferred the title of the next head of the family, his father's successor.

Emma found out about this by accident, and Tyrone was deathly afraid that Emma would leak this secret to his family.

Once the Garrison family caught wind of his crime, Tyrone would lose his position immediately.

The Garrison clan had very strict rules, and anyone who broke them would be subject to grave punishment.

Out of the numerous rules they had, one was the most important—kill not your own brethren.

"Emma Jones, you've forced my hand at last. I'll make sure to kill you today!"

Tyrone gazed at her with red eyes and a murderous look on his face.

Emma shut her eyes in despair...

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1070

Tyrone raised his right hand into the air.

In a moment, he would swing it down and bash it against the top of Emma's head.

Emma could feel the wind as Tyrone brought his fist down with a whoosh.

She was only a few moments away from death...

Right before his fist made contact with her head, however, Tyrone froze.

Emma waited for a few moments with her eyes shut, but nothing happened. She opened her eyes timidly.

"Aren't—aren't you going to kill me?" she asked tremulously.

Tyrone gazed at her with a complicated look and didn't say anything. He turned and left the room.

He slammed the door shut behind him with a loud bang.

Emma's eyes glittered as she understood what was going on.

Tyrone feared the consequences of killing her.

He was afraid that Emma would've already told his secret to her son and he did not want to take that risk.

If Levi already knew his secret, he would definitely expose it once he found out that Emma was dead.

This was what Tyrone truly feared.

For the sake of his position as the future patriarch of his clan, he had to be cautious.

In the past, he needn't have worried about this because Emma loved him enough to give her life for him and take his secret with her to her grave.

But now that Levi was involved, Tyrone could no longer count on Emma's love for him.

In order to protect Levi, Emma had probably told her son about this secret.

Tyrone couldn't kill off Emma without having his secret leaked.

I must find a way to confirm if Levi knows about it. Only then can I make a decision as to whether I should kill Emma!

Thus, Tyrone decided to go and look for Levi himself.

Once he had his answer, his first goal would be to kill off both Levi and Emma.

Even if this would upset the Garrison family and cause outsiders to despise him for being cold-blooded and cruel, it would be much better than having his secret exposed to the public.

If that happened, he would be subjected to the family's most horrible punishment!

In North Hampton, everyone was busy looking for Emma.

Finally, Levi discovered a note left for him by his mother in his room.

In summary, she told him not to worry because she was doing fine. She also instructed Levi not to go looking for her.

"Mom, how could I not go looking for you?"

Levi banged his hand onto the table.

The more he thought about it, the more he was certain that the Garrison family was behind it.

He figured that his mother was going to die in his place.

However, Levi was adamant that he would not yield to the Garrison family.

If you haven't held me back earlier, I would've killed Damien.

Levi felt helpless.

Initially, he had wanted to wait a while before making any move.

He wanted things to be peaceful until Zoey gave birth to their child.

As Zoey was pregnant, he was too afraid to leave her alone.

Zoey needs someone to take care of her...

However, now that this matter regarding his mother had cropped up, he had to speed things up a little. He decided to head up to Oakland City.

Just as he was about to summon Azure Dragon and the others, he received a phone call from an anonymous number.

As soon as he picked up the call, the person on the other end introduced himself. "I'm Tyrone Garrison."

Immediately, Levi asked, "What? It's you? Is my mother with you right now?"

Levi was quite surprised that Tyrone would give him a call.

"Yes, she is. She's all fine and dandy. As for me, I'd like to meet you in North Hampton tonight. There's something I need to talk to you about."

Upon hearing that his mother was alright, Levi let out a sigh of relief.

If anything happened to his mother, he would tear down the Garrison residence, brick by brick, and kill every single person living within its walls.

“Alright, I’ll wait for you. However, if anything happens to my mother, I’ll kill you on sight!” Levi swore angrily.

“Haha...” Tyrone burst into laughter on the other end.

To him, Levi was all bark and no bite. His declaration of vengeance was nothing but an empty threat.

He wanted to kill me?

Can he even do it?

At eight o’clock that night, a private jet landed at the North Hampton Airport.

As quietly and swiftly as he could, Tyrone arrived at the meeting place they had agreed on beforehand.

Levi was already waiting there when he arrived.

The father and son finally met for the first time in their lives.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1071

As Levi gazed at Tyrone in an attempt to size him up, the older man was doing the same with him.

Levi saw immediately that his father was a once-in-a-generation type of warrior.

He was subdued and detached, and an untouchable vibe radiated from his very body.

However, his movements also spoke of someone who was ill-tempered and capricious.

To kill one is a sin, but to kill ten thousand is a heroic feat.

That sentence described Tyrone exactly.

His very face lent him a look of arrogance and self-assurance that made him stand out from the crowd. He had the vibe of someone who was used to standing in the limelight at the applause of everyone.

After all, he was the future patriarch of the most prestigious ancient family in Erudia.

He had been bred for this very purpose.

Tyrone was a good fighter—there was no doubt about that.

Before this, Levi had instructed Phoenix to conduct a thorough investigation into Tyrone's background.

Levi did not do so early on because he was afraid that the people in Oakland City might catch on; that would have caused him a great deal of trouble.

However, his relationship with Tyrone had been one of the hottest topics in the city of late. Practically everyone already knew about it.

Given that development, if Levi wanted to look up Tyrone in his own capacity, no one would question it.

Tyrone was a cruel tyrant who had no qualms about doing whatever that was needed to get to the top.

He was willing to abandon everything that stood in his way.

Levi had taken a look at Tyrone's bloody and criminal history.

Indeed, Tyrone was someone who set his sights on big goals.

In the process of investigating him, Levi had discovered Tyrone's biggest secret—he had paralyzed his own brother in order to become his father's successor.

In order to ensure the prosperity of their clan, the Garrisons of Oakland City had established an ironclad rule.

It was also the most important one in their book of rules: kill not your own brethren. Those who violated it would be the harshest of punishment.

This rule had been established so that the Garrison clan would unite with each other rather than being divided by petty fights and jealousy.

Hence, the Garrison clan was renowned for their unity, which had seen them through over a thousand years. There had never been an instance of family members killing each other...until now.

This was also why the Garrison clan was so powerful.

However, Tyrone had violated this sacred rule in order to pursue his own selfish interests.

He had very extreme beliefs. To him, love, family ties, and friendships weren't important.

What was important, however, was the benefits he could reap.

One look at his father was enough for Levi to see him for who he was.

To Tyrone, however, Levi was just an arrogant and reckless troublemaker.

Tyrone had seen his share of this sort of youngsters.

A little taste of achievement was enough to send them into a downward spiral of haughtiness.

In the end, however, their wild ways would be tamed by the harsh reality.

There was nothing wrong with being arrogant, of course, but if one overdid it, the consequences would be extremely dire.

From his observation of Levi, Tyrone could tell that this b*stard son of his wouldn't last very long in the real world.

Compared to Damien, he was nothing but a small fry.

Damien was every bit as arrogant as Levi was, but at least he had talent and ability.

With the two most powerful ancient families in Erudia backing his every move, Damien's power was simply unimaginable!

Although the blood of the Garrisons flowed through Levi's veins as well, he wasn't suited to be Tyrone's son at all.

Tyrone would never acknowledge him as one of his own.

If Levi really wanted to become a member of the Garrisons, he had to first prove himself.

Otherwise, in no way would they accept him.

"Did you bring my mother along?" Levi asked.

“Don’t worry, she’s fine. She’s very safe as well—I can give her a video call if you don’t believe me,” Tyrone replied.

Levi asked again, “Alright, then, what are you here for?”

Suddenly, Tyrone smiled and said, “I’m here for a very simple reason—I’m here to meet you. I wanted to see for myself how reckless and foolish the son of Emma Jones is. As expected, my men weren’t exaggerating at all when they described you. You seem to be even more arrogant than I thought.”

Levi grinned. “You aren’t just here to see how reckless and foolish I am, are you? Why don’t you tell me what you’re really here for? Stop beating around the bush.”

Levi refused to believe that heap of rubbish Tyrone was feeding him.

As if!

Tyrone has come here so secretly. Evidently, he doesn’t want anyone to know he is in North Hampton.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1072

Besides, he hasn't yet made a move to kill Mother.

Therefore, there is only one possible reason for his appearance—he wants to find out for himself if I know his secret.

Levi made up his mind immediately.

His mother had saved herself with that secret.

Tyrone's expression was rather unnatural. He looked pallid and nervous, and rather hesitant to open his mouth.

Finally, he decided to allude delicately to the matter.

Sighing deeply, he asked, "Has your mother ever told you anything about me?"

Levi continued grinning. "Yes, she has."

"Well, has she ever told you anything that she should've kept a secret?"

Tyrone held his breath and gazed intensely at Levi.

Levi smiled. "Of course she has! She has told me all sorts of secrets about you."

Seeing the damning smile on Levi's face, Tyrone felt as though he had been struck by lightning. His heart sank a little.

Levi had given him a very vague answer, but he had a nagging suspicion that the young man already knew about his secret.

However, he could not be absolutely certain of that.

What if Emma had told him other secrets about me?

Gritting his teeth, Tyrone asked, "What exactly did she tell you?"

Levi smiled. "Don't you know your own secrets?"

"Well..."

Tyrone was so nervous that sweat was beading on his brows.

He still couldn't confirm if Levi knew that dark secret of his.

To kill or not to kill?

That is the question.

Levi suddenly spoke up, his voice sending shivers down Tyrone's spine. "What? Are you thinking of whether you should kill me?"

Did Levi sense my intention?

"If you wish to kill me, do it! After all, you've never hesitated to do something when it comes to achieving your own goals."

Hearing this, Tyrone became certain that Levi already knew the damning secret he had been hiding for decades.

Now, he was afraid that Levi was going to use this secret against him for the rest of his life. What if he tries to threaten his way into the Garrison family?

This b*stard has no right to enter the Garrison family!

The Garrison family valued their honor over anything else, after all.

"I'll tell you this, Levi Garrison! Don't you dare use this to threaten me and force your way into the Garrison family! Even if the clan decides to punish me and my reputation takes a serious hit, I will never let you become one of us."

Tyrone made a very serious declaration.

He'd much rather have the clan find out about his secret than let this b*stard taint the halls of the Garrison residence with his filth.

There was no way Levi Garrison could become a member of the clan. Not for as long as Tyrone was alive.

Hearing this, Levi burst into laughter.

Coldly, he said, "Do you think I'll use this secret against you just so I could enter the Garrison family? How ridiculous. Tyrone Garrison, listen to me—I couldn't care less about a pathetic family like yours. Even if all of you come begging at my door for me to join the clan, I'll turn you down!"

Tyrone was so angry that he roared, "You—you're arrogant beyond belief! This is going to be the end of you one day!"

Levi laughed. "You came here to ask me if I know your secret, didn't you? Well, I know it, of course. But why would I bother to threaten you with it? I couldn't care less about a small fry like you."

Tyrone's breath hitched.

He really wanted to kill Levi on the spot.

However, he was afraid that Levi wasn't the only person who knew the secret.

For now, he had to find a way to seal Levi and Emma's mouths.

The expose would not matter anymore after he assumed the position of the patriarch.

"Alright, alright, I believe you! As long as you don't leak my secret, I promise not to lay a hand on your mother," Tyrone said.

He would tolerate it for a while longer.

In a few days, he would be the new head of the Garrison family.

After that, Levi would have no leverage over him anymore.

At that time, Tyrone would finally kill him.

Levi smiled coldly. "Let's move on, then. I still have some things to discuss with you."

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1073

"Firstly, release my mother instantly. Secondly, I will personally take revenge on the Garrison clan after my child is born. All of you will regret the sins you have committed against my Mom. Thirdly, I will kill Damien right in front of you!"

After Levi uttered these three threats, Tyrone stared at him in disbelief, feeling utterly stunned.

How outrageous!

He's simply being too absurd!

How dare he make such arrogant claims?

Kill Damien in front of me?

What a joke!

It is downright laughable!

"I have nothing to say about your first point. However, for your second point, did you say that you want to take revenge on the Garrison clan and make all of us regret it?"

Tyrone was utterly amused.

The Garrison clan is the most powerful ancient family in Erudia, with more than a thousand years of history.

Who has the ability to take revenge on the Garrisons?

A mere youngster in his twenties?

How is it possible that he's capable enough to do so?

"That's right. I'll fulfil my Mom's wish—that is to declare to all the Garrisons that you aren't worthy enough for my Mom! I want every one of you to drown in regret. I'll let my Mom declare to all of you that her son is the conqueror of the world!" announced Levi coldly.

"Hahaha! Just by yourself? Fine, I'll wait! And you want to kill Damien? It's impossible," said Tyrone as he laughed.

With me around, who would dare to touch Damien?

"Don't worry, you can never protect anyone whom I'm determined to kill."

A murderous glint flashed across Levi's eyes.

From the moment Damien appeared at his wedding, his fate had been sealed—he would die!

Levi did not throw away the coffin Damien brought to the wedding because he intended it to be meant for him.

"Very well! You've got guts. When will it be, specifically? I don't want to wait too long for you!" asked Tyrone with a cold smirk.

"Around a year after my child is born, I'll definitely attack the Garrison clan!"

"Fine! I will make a bet with you. One year later, if you can take even one step into the Garrison clan's residence, I'll sincerely apologize for what I have done in the past. I will even kneel in front of you and your mother in repentance! There's only one way to make me repent—by relying on your capabilities. Otherwise, even if you kill me, you will not even find a single shred of remorse within me."

A one-year pact was hence established between Tyrone and Levi.

In his opinion, regardless of how powerful Levi became, he would never be capable enough to even enter the Garrison clan's residence.

“Okay. We’re agreed on this.”

Levi nodded.

Smirking coldly, Tyrone said, “If you aren’t capable enough to enter the Garrison clan’s residence, don’t blame me for being ruthless.”

“Don’t worry. If I’m not capable enough to do that, I’d die willingly!”

“That’s settled, then. I’ll wait for you at the Garrison clan’s residence!”

After Tyrone made the bet, he left North Hampton.

Now, he was no longer worried that Levi would reveal the secret to others.

Through that short conversation, he had already figured out Levi’s temper.

Although he seemed like an impudent man, he was, in reality, an extremely prideful person.

He would never make a huge deal out of Tyrone’s secret.

For a prideful man like him, an act like that was tantamount to humiliation.

Furthermore, Tyron had suggested a one-year pact as part of his strategy to provoke him.

Hence, he was certain that Levi would not reveal his secret at all.

Chuckling coldly, he proudly declared, “This is the sheer difference between me, Damien and him! We never care about these insignificant things. As long as it’s beneficial to us, we will certainly achieve our goal regardless of the methods used. After all, a man of great ambition does not bother about trifles. Levi, you will never achieve anything great! A year later, I will witness the sight of you pathetically groveling in front of the Garrison clan’s residence.”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1074

Tyrone was quite accurate in his judgment of people.

Indeed, Levi was an extremely prideful person who would not deign to blackmail Tyrone with his secret.

If he wanted to resolve the matter, he would depend on only his capabilities.

This was the reason why Tyrone made the bet with Levi.

In his opinion, Levi only agreed on the bet because he was too young and impulsive.

Yet, unknown to him, Levi was completely aware of his tricks.

As “a man of his words”, Tyrone released Emma and even spread the news of his bet with Levi around.

Now, everyone in Erudia knew that Levi made a pact with Tyrone.

The Garrison clan of Oakland City became even more famous now.

After all, they openly gave their illegitimate son a chance to challenge them.

This was an unprecedented move!

Logically speaking, any wealthy family would rush to hide such an illegitimate child.

They would often end up killed according to conventions.

However, the Garrison clan of Oakland City went against the norms.

Not only did they acknowledge the presence of an illegitimate child, but they also even gave him a chance to challenge them.

At the same time, they clearly showed how dignified they were as the most powerful ancient family in Erudia.

Tyrone, who established the pact, was praised by many.

Only someone with such dignity and ease like him was the most suitable candidate to lead the clan.

Even the high-ranking elders of the Garrison clan admired how Tyrone dealt with this matter, heaping him with praises.

No one expected that the appearance of Tyrone's illegitimate child would actually benefit him.

It proved exceptionally helpful to him in rising to the position as the head of the clan.

Even Tyrone did not expect that he could benefit from it.

This proved that seemingly unlucky events might not be completely bad— it all depended on how one dealt with them.

News of Levi's famous bet with Tyrone spread widely. Soon, all of the elites in the region knew about it.

Although everyone was now familiarized with Levi's name, they all thought that he was incredibly foolish.

Undoubtedly, he was fighting a futile battle.

What assets did he have to fight the Garrison clan with?

Did he not have an inkling of his chances of success?

A mere youngster actually dared to challenge the most powerful ancient family in Erudia.

It was a widely-known fact that entry to the Garrison clan in Oakland City was strictly controlled.

Only someone who wielded considerable power in the four domains of military, business, politics, and martial arts, would be recognized by the Garrison clan.

For the military domain, one must at least be a mighty general in the frontiers.

For the business domain, one must be at least a significant figure in the corporate world.

For the political domain, one must be at least a high-ranking officer.

For the martial arts domain, one must at least be capable enough of attacking the Garrison clan.

As long as one of those four conditions was fulfilled, the person could set foot in the Garrison clan's residence.

However, this was an incredibly challenging feat.

In everyone's opinion, Levi only had accumulated some success in the business domain.

However, a measly Morris Group was nothing to the Garrison clan.

He might stand a chance if he expanded his business by ten or twenty folds.

But, how could he do that within a year?

Hence, no one believed that Levi would succeed in challenging the Garrison clan and rely on his own capabilities to enter the clan's residence.

Yet, never in their wildest dreams would they expect Levi to actually be the weakest in the business domain.

Needless to say, his influence in the military and the political domain was unparalleled.

He was the Erudia's God of War!

His martial arts strength was undeniably matchless as well.

After all, he had trained himself by fighting in two thousand battles over a span of six years.

In fact, he could conquer almost everything!

As for now, he did not need to act personally.

There were too many skilled experts working for him now.

After Emma returned, she looked at Levi with an indecipherable look. "Levi, you shouldn't have done it! If you agreed to his bet, it means that you have fallen for his trick. He knows your personality, so he's using it to constrain you."

"Mom, it's going to be fine. It's true that this is a trap he set up for me. However, he doesn't know that I'm actually capable enough. Don't worry, I'll definitely fulfill your wish!"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1075

This was a dream that Emma knew was absolutely impossible.

Yet, she was content to just fantasize about it.

Hence, she named her son Levi, a name that signified harmony and unification. She hoped that he would preside over the world and let the Garrison clan realize their mistake.

“Okay, Levi. I’ll look forward to one year later.”

Emma smiled.

Regardless of what the outcome would be next year, she could still accompany Levi, Zoey, and the soon-to-be-born baby this year.

Life went back on track afterward.

The Lopez family and the Zhao family were extremely unhappy with Levi.

He could have chosen to kneel in forgiveness and remain content as a member of the Garrison clan.

However, he insisted on challenging them.

They were certain that he was crazy.

The Garrison clan of Oakland City also specified the conditions of the challenge for Levi.

In the military domain, he must surpass Hugh Garrison. He was the chief of the Gray Wolf Squad from the North. In fact, the God of War personally bestowed the title upon him.

In the political domain, he must surpass Finnick Garrison, a high-ranking politician of Oakland City.

In the business domain, his corporation must perform better than 5% of Damien's business. After all, Damien owned countless assets, with the Pinnacle Group alone strong enough to completely trump the Morris Group.

In the martial arts domain, he must be able to defeat Titus Garrison, one of the Garrison clan's youngest guards who had perfected his martial arts skills.

However, everyone clearly knew that these youngsters, who were used as benchmarks, were not the strongest of the Garrison clan—they were, at the most, considered average in the family.

It was evident how high the standards of entering the Garrison clan were.

If one did not want to rely on background, it was simply too challenging a feat to enter the Garrison clan through capabilities alone.

In fact, for the business domain, the standards were only 5% of Damien's business.

It was obvious how strong Damien was.

They purposely set the benchmark as 5% of Damien's business, intending it to be a constant reminder to Levi and Emma.

As quoted from Tyrone and Olivia, if Levi could not even achieve 5% of what Damien could, there was nothing for Emma to be proud of.

Everyone knew that should Levi fail in his challenge, his demise was certain.

“Do your best, Levi. I'm sure that you can achieve it within a year. Iris and I will assist you to develop Morris Group even further!”

When Zoey heard this bet, she gave Levi tremendous encouragement.

Right now, their only hope was Morris Group.

There was not much time left for them—they must accomplish everything within a year!

Otherwise, certain death awaited them.

On the other hand, Levi was overjoyed.

That period of one year was meant for the Garrison clan to have a breather before the battle ahead. It was not the case of the Garrison clan giving him one year to pathetically cling onto his meager chance of survival.

He was waiting for Zoey to give birth to their child.

Otherwise, he would have just attacked the Garrison clan directly.

Hence, Levi felt no sense of urgency.

For the following days, he stayed by Zoey's side constantly.

Zoey and her child were the most important priority for him.

As for the Morris Group, he left everything in the hands of Iris.

Although Zoey was unhappy about it, she was helpless to do anything.

"If Zoey's not pregnant with your child, we'd certainly have forced you to cut off all ties with her!"

Even though the Lopez family and the Black family were upset by this incident, they had no choice but to turn a blind eye.

Soon, it was time for the appointment of the next successor of the Garrison clan.

Tyrone was unanimously voted to become the head of the clan.

In order to maintain the clan's constant development, the head of the Garrison clan could only keep his position for a term of twenty years.

Tyrone's age was just right.

At this moment, Tyrone had finally achieved the highest position of the Garrison clan.

"Well, I have to you to thank, Levi!"

He was right.

Previously, there were many respected elders in the family who opposed Tyrone being the patriarch.

However, after his one-year pact with Levi, many people started looking at him in a different light.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1076

It could be said that Levi helped tremendously in letting Tyrone become the head of the clan.

This was the only help he offered as Tyrone's biological son.

"Hahaha! So this illegitimate bastard can benefit me in this way too, huh?"

Tyron even specially called Levi.

"From this moment onward, I'm the mighty head of the Garrison clan. The secret you know no longer poses any threat to me! You've missed the perfect opportunity."

Tyrone's voice was filled with arrogance and pride.

"The head of the Garrison clan? Congratulations, then!"

Levi smiled.

"Yeah, that's right! The most powerful family of Erudia is now completely in my control. I've already reached the apex! But don't you even dare to imagine that I'll validate your identity. It is impossible! I will never acknowledge you as my child. I only have one son— Damien! So, stop dreaming," scoffed Tyrone.

A trace of mockery crept into Levi's smile. "Tyrone, do you know what kind of person you are?"

"What?" asked Tyrone curiously.

“A self-righteous person! You always view things from such a myopic point of view, oblivious to the fact that there are always people stronger than you. Perhaps, you are nothing but a measly ant to others!”

Tyrone could not help but burst into laughter. “Hahaha! I’m a measly ant to others? Do you still not understand who I am now? I’m the patriarch of the most powerful ancient family in Erudia!”

“Okay. Well, there’s not much time left for the Garrison clan now. You should accumulate as much power and social connections as to fight me. Otherwise, when the deadline is up, the Garrison clan will not even stand a chance!”

Levi remembered that this was the second time he had said this to the Garrisons.

They all probably harbored the same attitude towards him— disdain.

“Hahaha! Are you talking about yourself? Everyone in Erudia knows about this bet. It’ll be your death-day by then. Shouldn’t you be thinking about how to extend your pathetic life?”

Indeed, Tyrone was filled with disdain.

No matter what, he believed that Levi would never succeed.

Hence, he posed no threat at all.

“Hahaha!

Levi burst out laughing loudly.

“You madman!” cursed Tyrone before hanging up the call.

To him, Levi was nothing more than an unreasonable madman.

That was why he dared to keep provoking Tyrone.

There was a saying that ignorant people were more confident than the wise.

Levi was one of such ignorant people.

“Don’t be angry, Dad. One day, this illegitimate bastard will understand what true power means. If he wants to succeed, he can only strive in the business domain. However, I’ll deliberately make things difficult for him. I guarantee that within a year, the Morris Group will worsen,” promised Damien with an assured smile.

He would never give Levi any chances.

Tyrone was satisfied with Damien’s words.

Only by resorting to unscrupulous means could one accomplish great success.

Damien was truly his son.

For the following days, the Morris Group kept facing setbacks in their business development. It was simply too difficult to expand their business.

They had no choice but to remain stuck within North Hampton and South Hampton.

Iris immediately called for a meeting with Zoey and Levi.

“It is most likely the Pinnacle Group who is suppressing us. They severed all possible pathways for us to access the external markets. If this continues, we will remain stagnant. It’ll be impossible for us to expand our business,” Iris explained her thoughts.

Everyone knew that it was the Garrison clan who was suppressing them, so Levi would fail in his challenge.

Zoey bit her lips and glanced at Levi. “Levi, I want to hear your opinion. What do you think we should do?”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1077

Unable to think of any solutions, everyone turned their gaze toward Levi.

He smiled and said, "My suggestion is very simple. You should just rest well and not fuss over this. Just let them suppress us! We can just continue with our business as usual."

As Zoey was still pregnant, Levi did not want any troubles to arise.

All he wanted was to take care of Zoey until their child was born.

Everything else was insignificant in comparison.

However, Zoey interpreted Levi's attitude in a different manner.

This was the time when Levi should strive hard, stand up to the challenge and solve the problem.

Yet, he had such a pessimistic attitude.

When he was faced with a problem, he was actually backing away and neglecting it.

In fact, he still had a one-year pact with the Garrison clan!

Even if he might not succeed, he should at least have the right attitude.

He should strive till the last moment with his best effort. This was a way for him to prove himself and make the rest acknowledge him.

Even if they lost, they would just admit defeat.

However, this attitude was simply unacceptable!

One year later, how could Levi challenge the Garrison clan?

It would just be a complete joke!

“For this period of time, Zoey’s health is my priority. Everything else is insignificant to me!” said Levi honestly.

Zoey and Iris sighed simultaneously.

Indeed, Levi was backing away when confronted with the powerful Garrison clan.

“I know what you’re afraid of. Don’t worry! I’m not even concerned about the Garrison clan. They should be the ones worried.”

When Zoey heard Levi’s arrogant words, she became angry.

“Levi, I admit that you’re very impressive. There are not many youngsters as capable as you are! However, the Garrison clan is simply too powerful. I think that you should personally visit Oakland City and take a look. After witnessing how powerful the Garrison clan is, you’ll be back on the right track,” suggested Zoey exasperatedly.

“Don’t be angry, Zoey. I’ll do my best in expanding the Morris Group!”

To calm Zoey down, Levi could only put on an act of firm determination.

“That’s more like it! At least you’ve got the right attitude!”

Only then did Zoey stop being angry.

Yet, Levi’s plan was still to leave the Morris group to Iris and the rest to run.

The only reason why he founded this business was to promote the development of the North Hampton region and benefit the citizens.

He would never use it for private reasons, such as going against the Garrison clan.

Furthermore, it would not prove useful at all.

For now, he only had one objective— to take care of Zoey.

Everyone already knew about his famous bet with Tyrone.

Yet, they could all tell that Levi was completely unbothered by it.

It was as if he had resigned to his fate.

“I heard that the Pinnacle Group, which is currently controlled by Damien, is starting to suppress the Morris Group. Looks like Levi has given up!”

“What other solutions are there except to give up? He can only accept his inevitable fate!”

On the flight from Oakland City to North Hampton, everyone was discussing Levi.

Everyone thought that Levi had certainly given up.

After all, his opponent was so powerful that he stood no chance of winning.

A few youngsters in the same flight were currently sitting in the first-class cabin.

There were a total of two women and three men.

From their appearance and demeanor, it was evident that these five youngsters came from elite families with high social statuses.

When they heard the people beside them talking about Levi, they seemed to be extremely interested. In fact, they were all grinning.

They listened to the discussions about Levi for the entire trip.

Soon, the plane arrived at the North Hampton Airport.

The five youngsters alighted the plane.

"I hope that Levi won't disappoint us. After all, we came all the way to North Hampton!" One of them said.

These youngsters from Oakland City came just for Levi.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1078

"I heard that his child is about to be born."

"Yeah, how fortunate! If Levi returned to the Garrison clan, Tiffany might have to marry him!"

"Him? How can he be worthy of Tiffany?"

A few of them mocked him.

The five of the youngsters were Carl Mullins, Dominic Coleman, Eden Davie, Taylor Reilly, and Leia Buxton.

They all hailed from powerful families in Oakland City.

Families in Oakland City were split into five categories.

The first category was ancient families like the Garrison clan with more than a thousand years of history.

The second category was the imperial families.

The third category was the royal families.

The fourth category was the prominent families.

Lastly, the fifth category was the other ordinary families.

However, the prominent families of Oakland City were much more powerful than the royal families in South Hampton. After all, as they were in the capital city, they needed to be powerful enough to gain a foothold there.

These five youngsters came from royal families in Oakland City. Yet, their families surpassed even the imperial Garrison family in Haven.

Hence, now that they were at North Hampton, they acted in an extremely arrogant and domineering way, as if they were superior to the others.

After all, they came from a place that was higher in the hierarchy than North Hampton.

The Tiffany they were referring to was actually Tiffany Meyers.

She was the heiress of the imperial Meyers family of Oakland City.

Back then, Tyrone arranged for an engagement with the Meyers in order to appease Emma—one that took place between Levi and Tiffany.

Although Tyrone did not take it seriously and was only lying to Emma, everyone else took his words seriously.

After all, he was a member of the Garrison clan in Oakland City.

Since he was talking about something as important as marriage, the Meyers took it seriously.

They even specially drafted an engagement contract, which Tyrone and Emma had both signed.

Initially, Tyrone did not think much about it.

Back then, he already knew that the Garrison clan would never allow him to marry Emma.

In other words, her child was not destined to survive.

Hence, the arranged marriage did not matter much.

However, according to the rules, the engagement contract was still in effect even till now.

It could only be considered ineffective only if both parties refused and tore up the contract on the spot.

Due to this engagement contract, Tiffany did not dare to marry anyone even till now.

After all, it had been signed by the Garrison clan.

If Tiffany married someone else, it would mean that she was disrespecting the authority of the Garrison clan.

The Meyers family would be destroyed.

Hence, they had been troubled over this matter for a long time. After all, they did not know the Garrison clan's stance on it, nor did they dare to ask.

However, Levi's bet with Tyrone allowed the Meyers to finally know the Garrison clan's attitude towards Levi.

Hence, they were prepared to call off the engagement and ask Levi to rip the contract on the spot.

As the Meyers family was an imperial family in Oakland City, it was too embarrassing for them to personally end the engagement themselves.

After all, Levi was just an illegitimate bastard.

Hence, they sent some members of the royal families to look for Levi, call off the engagement and tear up the engagement contract on their behalf.

"I really hate Levi Garrison! Because of him, Tiffany doesn't even dare to date."

"Yeah! By this time, she should've been married and have kids already."

The five of them lamented furiously.

Leia smiled and said, "After Levi tears up the engagement contract, Tiffany will finally be free!"

"Yeah, Martin has been waiting for Tiffany for many years. Only someone like him is worthy enough for her!"

A look of anticipation crossed Taylor's face.

Martin was ranked second in the Heir Leaderboard in Oakland City.

The Heir Leaderboard ranked the top heirs, excluding those from the most powerful ancient families, in Oakland city.

They were much more powerful than the Prince Gang in South Hampton.

It could be said that the most powerful youngsters of Oakland City were all listed on the Heir Leaderboard.

The five of them wanted to destroy the engagement contract as soon as possible so that Tiffany could marry Martin.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1079

Soon, Leia and the rest arrived at the Morris Group office building.

Gazing up at the building, Carl scoffed, "To be honest, even the Mullins family can completely destroy the Morris Group."

"Yeah! Ruining the Morris Group is simply a piece of cake for us."

"Yet, they still want to challenge the Garrison clan. Isn't that completely absurd?"

"How can such an insolent and arrogant madman be worthy of Tiffany?"

Everyone mocked coldly.

After witnessing Morris Group's scale of operations, they were even more certain that Levi's challenge to the Garrison clan was nothing more than a joke.

Someone like he would never achieve much.

Levi was wondering what he should cook for Zoey tonight when Seth suddenly called him, saying that he had some guests.

Confused, Levi went to the waiting area in the lobby.

He did not recognize the five youngsters at all.

However, judging from their arrogant demeanor, it was obvious that they came from exceptional backgrounds.

“So, you are Levi Garrison?” asked Carl disdainfully.

“That’s me. Who are you?” asked Levi, feeling puzzled.

“We come from Oakland City. We’re here on someone’s behalf to call off your arranged engagement.”

Taylor cut straight to the point.

“An arranged engagement? What’s it got to do with me?”

Levi was completely befuddled by her words.

My child is about to be born, yet someone is telling me that I have an arranged engagement?

Isn’t this absurd?

“That’s right, your arranged engagement! Your biological parents settled an arranged engagement for you before you were even born. Your fiancée is Tiffany Meyers, the most beautiful woman of Oakland City!” explained Leia with a cold smirk.

They thought that Levi was putting on an act.

Emma must have told him already.

Yet, he’s pretending to be ignorant?

How annoying!

“Huh? An arranged engagement? Wait a moment.”

Levi quickly contacted his mother and told her to come over.

Soon, Emma arrived.

“Mom, have you ever arranged an engagement for me?” asked Levi.

Emma was shocked momentarily before nodding. "Yeah, that's right. Back then, Tyrone formed an engagement between you and a girl from the Meyers family in Oakland City. Her name is Tiffany Meyers! I've already forgotten about this. What's wrong?"

Levi glanced at the five people and said, "They're here to call off the engagement on behalf of the Meyers."

Emma slapped her forehead in realization. "Oh my, I've completely forgotten about this. Regardless of what happened, this engagement is still in effect. Aren't we holding Tiffany back? As she's bound by the engagement, she probably can't even marry yet. I'm sorry, everyone. This is my fault!"

However, Leia and the rest scoffed at Emma's apology. "You've finally realized that it's your fault? Do you have any idea how many years Tiffany has wasted because of you? Till now, she doesn't even dare to marry or even date someone!"

"You ruined half of her life! Someone like you will certainly face karma. You deserve a horrendous death!"

"Yeah, you sabotaged her. If it weren't for you, there wouldn't have been this engagement. You probably don't want to call it off, right? Do you still want him to marry Tiffany? We know your objectives. You still want to be part of the Garrison clan, right?"

The five of them started to hurl accusations at Emma, which infuriated Levi.

"Damn it! Tyrone's the one responsible for the engagement. Why didn't you look for him instead?"

Levi's words rendered everyone speechless.

Naturally, no one would dare to look for Tyrone.

"What's it got to do with Mr. Garrison? It's all your Mom's fault! Call off the engagement immediately and tear up the engagement contract in front of us."

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1080

Even though everyone was well aware that Tyrone agreed to establish this arranged marriage, and that Emma had nothing to do with it, they all pushed the blame on her.

Intimidated by power, none of them dared to drag Tyrone into this.

Everything was Emma's fault.

As she spoke, Leia passed the engagement contract to Levi and ordered him to tear it apart.

The rest whipped out their phones to film it.

Sighing, Emma said, "Levi, just tear it. We are indebted to Tiffany, so we should give her back her freedom."

"Yeah, this is the proper attitude of repentance! We won't blame you for wasting so much of Tiffany's time. Rip the contract now and don't pester Tiffany anymore," instructed Taylor arrogantly.

"Tear it up! Why aren't you moving? Tear it now! We still have to return," urged the rest when they saw Levi standing there motionlessly.

To their surprise, Levi crumpled the contract into a ball and shoved it into his pocket.

Everyone was stunned.

What is he planning to do?

"Levi, what are you doing?" yelled Leia angrily.

Even Emma was confused.

"Listen up! I'll safeguard the engagement contract for now. I'm fine with calling off the engagement and tearing the contract up. However, you should tell Tiffany to come personally. Who are all of you? How dare you criticize my Mom like that? Rather, you should directly find Tyrone and call off the engagement!" said Levi sternly as he glared at the rest.

If they spoke in a more courteous manner, he would just tear the contract up.

Yet, since they dared to scold his Mom, he would not agree to their request.

It was not so simple to make him tear the contract!

"You..."

Everyone glared at Levi Garrison resentfully.

"How dare you?" yelled Taylor.

"Get lost! If you want me to tear up the contract, tell Tiffany to come personally. Anyone else will not count," ordered Levi furiously.

"You... You just don't want to call off the engagement, right? That's why you deliberately snatched the contract away. You want Tiffany to marry you, right?"

"You shameless bastard! You aren't worthy enough for Tiffany. She's the most beautiful woman of Oakland City and the heiress of the imperial Meyers family. What right do you have to do this?"

"Yeah, you even have a pregnant wife! Even Martin, who has a crush on Tiffany, can kill you so easily."

Everyone bellowed in fury.

"Haha! The more you act like this, the more reluctant I will be to destroy the contract. The only condition is that Tiffany comes personally. Seth, send the guests away!" instructed Levi.

Seth instantly chased the five people out of the Morris Group.

Although they were furious, they were well aware they no longer had any authority outside their turf.

"I'm sure that Levi is trying to use Tiffany. Even if he doesn't want to marry her, he will use the engagement to extort money from the Meyers!" analyzed Leia.

"What should we do now?" asked the others.

"Should we quickly inform Tiffany and the Meyers family? Let them decide!" suggested Taylor.

At that moment, Eden's phone rang.

"It's a call from Martin! He's been paying attention to our progress in calling off the engagement."

Eden picked up the call.

"Martin, something bad happened. Levi doesn't want to call off the engagement and he even snatched the contract away. He demands Tiffany to personally come and call it off."

Eden relayed everything to Martin, who instantly became mad with fury.

"This is outrageous! You guys, continue staying at North Hampton for the time being. Tiffany and I will personally come to settle this issue!" ordered Martin coldly.

Everyone was overjoyed to hear that.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1081

The second most powerful heir in Oakland City is going to deal with Levi personally.

Things were truly getting exciting.

When they remembered Levi's attitude and how he chased them out, they were furious.

They wished for nothing more than to teach him a lesson.

Now that Martin was coming, Levi had no choice but to defer regardless of how powerful he might be.

Would he still dare to refuse to tear up the engagement contract?

Back in Oakland City, in the imperial Meyers family's manor, a woman was dressed in a long white dress.

She looked as beautiful as an angel, with a well-defined oval-shaped face and exquisite facial features. She exuded breathtaking beauty.

Her almond-shaped eyes sparkled brightly, brimming with affection and tenderness.

Even her figure was slender and curvaceous— even more beautiful than professional models.

This woman was none other than Tiffany, hailed as the most beautiful woman of Oakland City.

She was woman of many men's dreams.

Yet, no one dared to pursue her. The most they would do was to have a crush on her silently.

These men included the second most powerful heir in Oakland City— Martin Preston, who similarly hailed from an imperial family.

After all, Tiffany was engaged to Levi and everyone feared the Garrison clan.

“Ma’am, Mr. Meyers summoned you over, saying that it’s about something important,” informed a maid.

Tiffany soon arrived at the Meyers family’s meeting hall.

Her grandfather, Jordan Meyers, and her father, Arvin Meyers, were both present.

A smart woman, Tiffany immediately asked, “Grandpa, Dad, did something go wrong with calling off the engagement?”

“Yes, that’s right. Levi refused to tear up the engagement contract unless you go personally,” said Arvin with a sigh.

Tiffany started to panic. “What is he talking about? He already has a wife and a son! Why is he still clinging on to me? Hasn’t he ruined me enough for all these years? Must he drag me down forever?”

The Meyers family had a similar attitude.

Although Tyrone was the sole person responsible for the engagement, no one dared to voice out any dissatisfaction toward him.

All of them decided that the culprit was Levi— he was the one who sabotaged her.

He was the reason why she could not date or marry others.

Yet, Levi was completely oblivious to all these.

“We don’t know his objectives either. As of now, we have only two guesses. Firstly, he wants to marry you and not call off the engagement. Secondly, he wants to extort a huge sum of money from us using the engagement as leverage,” explained Jordan helplessly.

“This is ridiculous! How can there be a man like him? I’ll never respect a person like that,” spat Tiffany furiously.

“Grandpa, Dad, what should we do?” she asked.

“Now, the only choice is for you to go to North Hampton personally. As long as he doesn’t request for anything unreasonable, we will fulfill his conditions to the best of our abilities!” said Arvin.

A worried look crossed Jordan’s face. “But I’ll be worried if Tiffany goes alone.”

“Don’t worry, Dad. I’ll send more people with her so she’ll be safe,” assured Arvin.

“No, I’m not worried about this. I’m concerned that she won’t be able to settle the problem even if she goes there.”

Arvin frowned. “But we can’t possibly go with her, right? It’ll be quite inappropriate.”

“Mr. Meyers, I’ll accompany Tiffany there!”

A voice rang out as a burly figure appeared at the door.

The young man had a handsome and cold look, exuding a dignified aura.

He was none other than Martin Preston.

When Tiffany saw him, her eyes lit up.

Amongst all of her pursuers, she liked Martin the most.

After all, he was nearly perfect in all aspects.

Excluding the powerful ancient families, he ranked second amongst the other heirs.

“It’s inappropriate for elders like both of you to turn up because you might be gossiped about. After all, this concerns the Garrison clan! I can go there personally to settle the issue. I promise that Levi will tear up the engagement contract! After that, the Preston family will propose a marriage with the Meyers family, and I will take Tiffany as my wife,” promised Martin.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1082

Jordan and Arvin were very satisfied. "This is great! If Martin goes, he can definitely resolve this matter!"

Even if Levi were reluctant, Martin could just force him to rip the engagement contract.

Everyone was very pleased with Martin.

Excluding the heirs of those powerful ancient families, he ranked second in Oakland City!

Naturally, he was worthy enough for Tiffany.

He had also been waiting for her all this while.

"Okay, then. I'll leave this to you, Martin. You'll bring Tiffany there to settle the issue."

Then, Martin and Tiffany headed to North Hampton.

Back in North Hampton, Emma was very upset with Levi refusing to rip the engagement contract.

By doing so, he was making more enemies.

He could not afford to offend those people from Oakland City.

Morris Group was simply too weak and vulnerable when compared to them.

Even Zoey learned about this incident.

She joked, "Did you keep the engagement contract because you still want to marry your fiancée?"

"I don't mind as long as you agree! Haha!"

"F*** you."

Zoey pinched Levi forcefully.

"I just dislike how arrogantly they acted. If they refuse to humble themselves, I will never call off the engagement. Anyway, it won't affect me at all. My child is going to be born soon," said Levi dismissively.

"Deal with it properly, then. Just don't make things more troublesome than it already is!" said Zoey exasperatedly.

She was really afraid that Levi would make more enemies.

After all, those people were from Oakland City.

At night, Tiffany and Martin arrived at North Hampton with more than ten highly skilled experts tailing them.

"Martin, Tiffany, this Levi rascal is simply too arrogant! He even chased us out," complained Leia and the rest.

"It's expected. If he's not arrogant and presumptuous, would he have made a bet with the Garrison clan?" scoffed Martin.

Tiffany's expression was extremely cold. "I heard many people remarking that he's a madman! It's expected that he'll make such an abnormal move."

"Tiffany, if this madman refuses to tear the engagement contract, what should we do?" asked Taylor.

"How dare he?" yelled Martin furiously. "Let's go! We came here this time to make him call off the engagement. He won't dare to refuse."

A cold and sinister glint flashed across his eyes.

Soon, the group arrived at the residence Levi was living in. They were stopped at the entrance.

“We are from Oakland City. I’m Martin Preston. Let me in now!”

Martin declared his identity right off the bat.

However, the security guards responsible for guarding the residence scoffed, “We don’t care where you’re from. We don’t know you! Everything will be done in accordance with the rules.”

“You...”

Everyone was almost mad with fury.

They had always been treated as distinguished guests wherever they went because of their background in Oakland City.

Yet, they were now stopped by a few measly security guards.

“This is indeed such a small, insignificant city. You haven’t even heard of Martin’s name!” mocked the rest, an arrogant look crossing their faces.

As residents of Oakland City, they always felt a sense of superiority compared to people from other cities.

They were in the capital city, the most legitimate city in the nation. The other cities were merely peripheral to it.

When Martin noticed their reaction, he smirked coldly and said, “So, Levi grew up in such an environment. No wonder he doesn’t even fear the Garrison clan. I finally understand now. These people are just ignorant pricks who’ve spent their lives cooped up in a hole.”

Tiffany agreed, “Isn’t there a saying that the oblivious know no fear, while the ignorant suffer from baseless confidence? They are blind to everything else. He’s been constrained to this tiny city, shielded from the real world.”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1083

“What are you doing here? Who are you looking for?” asked the security guard.

“My name is Tiffany Meyers from Oakland City. I’m here to look for Levi Garrison. Tell him my name and he’ll naturally show up to see me,” said Tiffany.

The security guard returned soon.

“Mr. Garrison said that he’s still eating dinner, so he’s busy. He told you to wait a while longer.”

“What? Levi is going too far!”

Martin was on the verge of flying into a rage.

He had always been a ruthless and decisive person— someone who hated such situations the most.

“How dare he make us wait? Does he really think that he’s a big shot? This is outrageous!”

He was the mighty heir of Oakland City’s imperial family

Not only that but he was also ranked second in the Heir Leaderboard.

How was it possible for him to wait for someone else?

This was a huge humiliation to him.

Furious, Tiffany's expression also turned cold.

"Forget it. Let's wait for a while longer! Our priority is to tear up the engagement contract. Everything else doesn't matter."

Tiffany thought that they should wait.

It was true that Levi was eating earlier.

However, he had already finished his meal and was chatting with Azure Dragon and the rest.

"Sir, I heard that Tiffany Meyers and Martin Preston came. He's even ranked second amongst the heirs of Oakland City."

Phoenix possessed very comprehensive intel.

From the moment Tiffany and the rest acted, she had everything under her control.

At the mention of this, Azure Dragon's expression changed. A strange look flashed across his eyes, which was noticed by Levi.

"Azure Dragon, I remember that you're from Oakland City, right?" asked Levi.

Azure Dragon nodded.

Levi remembered that Azure Dragon had been selected from prison just like himself.

Naturally, not everyone had the chance to be chosen.

Firstly, only those who had been wrongfully accused like Levi stood a chance.

The authorities had actually investigated the cases clearly. However, as it involved classified secrets, they could not publicly announce the fact that the prisoners had been wrongfully accused.

Hence, Levi knew that Azure Dragon went to prison because he had been framed.

After being selected, it was only after a rigorous, life-threatening experience that they could rise up to their current position.

“Azure Dragon, why were you sent to prison back then?” asked Levi.

After a moment of hesitation, Azure Dragon spat, “I went to prison on behalf of someone else!”

Indeed, he had been framed too.

This was the reason why he had been selected to join the military.

Levi asked curiously, “Do you mind sharing with us the specifics?”

“Sure. Coincidentally, Martin made me remember some past events!”

Everyone gazed at Azure Dragon and listened to his story.

“Actually, I was born into a decent family. I came from the Stuart family, one of the top ten imperial families outside of the ancient families.”

The rest gasped upon hearing his words, not expecting him to have such a strong background.

“I was the eldest amongst the Stuart family’s younger generation and quite capable across all domains. According to the rules, I should be the heir. However, my younger brother, Curtis, surpassed me in every way. My Grandpa made him the heir, thinking that he was the hope of the Stuart family. I endured this. After all, I was not as capable as him. However, Curtis committed a heinous crime— one that even a member of the imperial family could not be pardoned for. He was supposed to go to jail for twenty years. Yet, the Stuart family made me the scapegoat and go to prison on his behalf. As everyone in the family agreed, my parents had no choice but to relent.”

After a short pause, he spat resentfully, “What’s more despicable is that after sending me to prison, Curtis married my fiancée. He said that he would take care of her forever, right in front of my face. That b**** even hugged him!”

By then, Azure Dragon was already fuming.

Everyone's breathing quickened after they finished hearing his story.

Indeed, these wealthy families lived in a completely different world.

Anything— even the most outrageous things— could happen.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1084

He's so pitiful!

His backstory is so tragic.

Azure Dragon actually suffered as much as Levi did.

At least Levi had Zoey, who silently waited for him for six years; Azure Dragon had nothing.

All he had was a merciless family and a fiancée who betrayed him.

No wonder he never mentioned his family for so many years.

Everyone even assumed that he was an orphan.

"Curtis? Could it be Curtis Stuart, ranked number one in the Heir Leaderboard?" asked Phoenix.

She was extremely knowledgeable about the Heir Leaderboard.

"Yes, that's right! Curtis is extremely capable in all domains. He earned that rank with his own capabilities. This is why the Stuart family was willing to go to such lengths to protect him. Before meeting you, I thought that Curtis was the most powerful young man in the world. He was so terrifying that even I feared him. Back then, regardless of how hard I tried, I could never catch up to him," lamented Azure Dragon helplessly as he sighed.

"Most importantly, my fiancée actually said that only the strongest man was worthy enough of her, and I'm not deserving enough! She said that I can stop dreaming about catching up

to Curtis. Yet, I was at a loss on how to rebuke her. Back then, Curtis was simply too terrifying. He alone could suppress all the youngsters in Oakland City! He can really let you know how real despair feels like.”

By this time, Azure Dragon was already mad with fury.

“I can only helplessly watch as that b**** threw herself into his arms!”

Staring at him, Levi Garrison asked, “Do you still feel that way now? Do you still fear him?”

Azure Dragon suddenly laughed.

After all these years, his capabilities and mental strength had reached an unprecedented level.

Curtis, who used to be his greatest nightmare, was no longer someone to be feared.

Actually, he looked forward to battling Curtis.

He wanted to prove to the Stuart family and that b**** that he was stronger than Curtis; that their previous decision was a horrible mistake!

“Then, do you want to go to the Stuart family? Do you want to prove that you’re stronger than Curtis? Do you want to prove to that b**** that her choice was wrong? Do you want to make the entire Stuart family regret?” Levi shot these questions at him consecutively.

After a slight hesitation, Azure Dragon nodded.

This had always been his goal and dream.

Of course he wanted to!

However, bound by his current duties, he could not do so.

“Okay, I support you! You also know that I will go to Oakland City soon, right? The first thing will be for you to take your revenge on the Stuart family. We’ll turn the entire city upside down!”

Levi patted Azure Dragon's shoulder heavily.

"Boss, with you supporting me, I have nothing to fear! I will definitely prove myself in this battle, and fight on your behalf as well!"

A determined look raged within Azure Dragon's eyes.

He was already getting restless.

Time passed quickly while Levi and his friends were chatting.

Tiffany at the rest, who were waiting at the entrance of the residence, were already extremely impatient.

Half an hour passed, yet no one turned up.

Even after one hour passed, Levi was still nowhere to be seen.

Now, three hours had passed.

If it were not for Tiffany, who forcefully held Martin back, he would have charged into the residence and wreaked havoc.

"How can he eat for three to four hours? Who'll believe him? It's obvious that he's doing it on purpose!"

Everyone was almost fuming.

"After Tiffany tears up the engagement contract, I'll settle this score with Levi. I'll not let him off the hook until he groveled to me!" bellowed Martin furiously.

After another half an hour, Levi finally showed up.

"I'm sorry to keep all of you waiting!" apologized Levi with a grin.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1085

"I'm really sorry, I forgot that you guys are still waiting for me!"

Levi walked toward them with an apologetic look.

However, when the rest heard his words, they felt like they were on the verge of flying into a rage.

He actually forgot?

It's been almost four hours!

We've been waiting for too long.

More importantly, it's so unbecoming of our status—we've got the heirs and heiresses of two imperial families and five royal families of Oakland City here.

Scrutinizing Levi, Martin's eyes blazed with rage.

"You've made us wait for almost four hours. Give me a reasonable explanation!" bellowed Martin.

He was never a patient person. Waiting for four hours was like torture to him.

Now, he even had an urge to kill Levi there and then.

Tiffany tugged Martin back, signaling him to not do anything rash.

“Fine, let’s not dwell on this first. Tear up the marriage contract now! I’m ordering you to do it right away!”

Martin sized Levi up with an arrogant and contemptuous look.

Levi’s expression turned cold. “Who the f*** are you?”

“I’m Martin Preston!”

“I’ve never heard of you. Get lost and let Tiffany talk to me herself!”

Levi did not show any respect for Martin at all.

Everyone else was stunned, turning their gaze to Levi in utter disbelief.

This was the second time today that Martin had been neglected so blatantly.

Not only was he ranked second in the Heir Leaderboard, but he was also the heir of an imperial family—a man who could get whatever he wanted.

Now that he was ignored once again in such a small city like North Hampton, Martin could not bear it anymore.

He was fuming now.

“I’m going to kill you!”

Martin’s aggressively murderous aura enveloped Levi.

The tension in the atmosphere was so thick one could cut it with a knife.

“I’m Tiffany!”

Tiffany stepped out in time.

She and Levi sized each other up, yet she felt extremely uneasy by his gaze.

It felt like he could see right through her.

He already has a wife, so why is he looking at me like that?

“What are you trying to do? Why are you staring at me so intensely? Please show some respect!”

Tiffany glared at Levi in disgust, her gaze plainly revealing her disdain for him.

Someone like you wants to marry me? Can't he look into the mirror and see that he's not in my league at all?

Oh no! What if Levi is unwilling to destroy the engagement contract and wants to marry me instead?

After seeing how I look, he might not want to give up on me anymore.

After all, his biological father abandoned Emma and him for Olivia.

Levi might do the same thing and abandon his wife and child for me!

On the other hand, Levi just wanted to see how the most beautiful woman of Oakland City looked like.

He did not know that he was currently being misunderstood.

“The most beautiful woman of Oakland City? Well, I now see that you're just mediocre. Slightly inferior to my wife,” concluded Levi after a thorough scrutinization.

He did not want to say it out loud initially, but this woman's attitude provoked him.

“You...”

Fury crossed Tiffany's face.

Levi is indeed so irritating!

When Martin heard Levi insulting the woman he loved, he instantly became infuriated.

“Apologize! Apologize to Tiffany right now!” yelled Martin as he pointed at Levi.

Frowning, Levi asked, "Apologize? Why should I apologize?"

"You said that Tiffany pales in comparison to your wife! This is the greatest insult you can give her. You must apologize to her right now!"

Martin was extremely adamant.

"Yeah! How can there be someone who's better than Tiffany? It's impossible."

"You must apologize to Tiffany right now!"

The others insisted that Levi apologize.

Tiffany had the exact same thoughts too.

Since young, she had been doted on by the Meyers family and treated with utmost care.

No woman could even compare to her.

However, Levi claimed that his wife was better than her.

Tiffany refused to admit it.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1086

This was a humiliation to her!

Ever since she became an adult, her position as the most beautiful woman of Oakland City had always been undisputed.

No one could even compare to her!

In fact, it was a woman's greatest honor to be compared to Tiffany.

However, even though she was okay with being compared with others, she refused to be deemed the inferior one.

"Levi, you must apologize to me for this!" commanded Tiffany coldly as she glared at him.

"This is ridiculous! I've never heard of someone needing to apologize for this!"

Levi burst out laughing.

This is utterly absurd.

It's the first time I'm demanded to apologize for making a comparison.

"Levi, you don't even know Tiffany's status in Oakland City. She's been known as the most beautiful woman in Oakland City for ten years! Who dares to compare others to her? Yet, you dared to claim that she's inferior to your wife. By doing so, you're insulting Tiffany!" explained Leia furiously.

She was not wrong— everyone in Oakland City shared the same sentiment.

However, Levi thought that they were just a bunch of crazy people.

“Apologize? It’s impossible. If there’s nothing else, I’ll take my leave now.”

Levi spun around and left.

“Stand right there. Did I let you leave?” bellowed Martin as he dashed in front of Levi, blocking his path.

“Apologize right now! I command you to do so!”

Unable to endure it anymore, Martin was already on the verge of flying into a rage.

Levi smiled. “What if I refuse to apologize?”

“Don’t blame me for being ruthless, then!”

Martin clenched his fists tightly, with the sound of his knuckles cracking ringing through the air.

Having ranked second on the Heir Leaderboard, it meant that not only was he extremely capable in other domains, but he was also skilled in fighting.

Martin had learned how to fight since young. Through rigorous training, he perfected his martial arts skills, earning him the reputation of being invincible—not even knives, guns, or bullets could harm him.

Seeing that a huge fight was about to unfold, Tiffany quickly diffused the tense atmosphere. “Fine, I’ll endure this. You don’t need to apologize, but you must tear up the engagement contract and return me my freedom.”

Thinking about their main objective of coming here, Martin suppressed his anger.

As long as the engagement contract was destroyed, it was never too late for him to take his revenge.

“Yeah, tear it into shreds right now!” urged the others.

“You guys also know that you’re here to call off the engagement? Why did you waste so much time spouting nonsense, then?” rebuked Levi.

“Well...”

They became visibly awkward.

Tiffany was the quickest to react. “Tear up the engagement contract now. We will have nothing to do with each other afterward.”

“Tear up the engagement contract? I’m afraid that it won’t be that simple anymore!” declared Levi coldly.

If they spoke in a nice manner earlier, he would have agreed to call the engagement off.

It was not a big deal anyway.

However, he could not endure their arrogant attitude.

“What?”

Stunned, they stared at Levi in disbelief.

He’s such a shameless bastard!

He’s actually refusing to tear up the engagement contract!

“What... What did you say? Could it be that you’re unwilling to tear it up?”

Tiffany was even more certain that Levi intended to marry her and abandon his wife.

It was obvious not only from his intense stare earlier, but also his current actions.

However, someone like him would never win her favor!

Tiffany’s standards for a man was extremely high.

Not even the top three heirs of Oakland City's Heir Leaderboard could arouse her interest.

She believed that only the heirs of those ancient families were worthy enough for her— for instance, Damien.

It would be an utter joke for Levi to be her husband!

"Hahaha! Levi, we have already expected you to do this. Tell us, under what conditions will you tear up the marriage contract? Obviously, we won't let you marry Tiffany!" said Martin.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1087

Everyone knew very well that there were only two reasons why Levi refused to tear up the engagement contract— either to marry Tiffany or to extort a large sum of money from her.

“Well, of course, I have some conditions!” said Levi with a grin.

Everyone flinched in disdain.

As expected.

“All of you must apologize to me and my mother before I tear up the engagement contract! You, in particular, must kneel in apology!”

Levi pointed at Martin.

When he said that, Tiffany and the others were momentarily stunned.

Instead of asking us for money, he’s actually demanding us to apologize to him!

How is it possible?

As the heirs and heiresses of royal and imperial families, how can we deign to apologize to an illegitimate bastard?

We aren’t even at fault here! But even if we are, we will never apologize.

“You want me to kneel and apologize? Dream on! Can you afford to bear the consequences if I apologized to you on my knees?” scoffed Martin.

Tiffany pursed her lips and said arrogantly, "Levi, you can raise any other conditions, be it money or anything else. We will fulfill whatever terms you raise. However, we'll never apologize! We didn't do anything wrong, so why should we apologize? Furthermore, if we apologized to you— of all people— we'll bear the brunt of everyone's mockery."

Tiffany was adamant that she would not apologize.

"You didn't do anything wrong? Very well. Since you haven't realized your mistake, it looks like I won't be hearing your apology anymore. In that case, don't even think about making me tear up the engagement contract! Look for me again when you find out what you did wrong."

With that, Levi spun around and returned to the residence.

Martin was about to block him when a group of people suddenly emerged one by one and surrounded him.

"How dare you create trouble here in North Hampton? Have you sought our permission yet?"

There were more than a hundred people around him right now.

Martin was about to become angry when Tiffany pulled him back.

"Let's resolve this peacefully! We'll go back and discuss first."

Tiffany did not want to blow the issue out of proportion, afraid that the Garrison clan in Oakland City would blame her.

"Do we just endure the humiliation just like this? I don't want to!"

It was tormenting to suppress the anger building up within him.

They went back and had a discussion together.

"Apologize? But what did we do wrong?"

Everyone was puzzled.

They were too used to having their way and treating everyone with such arrogance that they found nothing wrong with what they had done.

After all, everyone they met in the past acted subserviently around them. It did not matter even if they were slightly more overbearing.

They mulled over it for ages, but no one could figure out what they had done wrong.

At this moment, Tiffany suddenly suggested, "Does Levi think that we're too aggressive towards him? Have you guys scolded his mother before?"

Everyone only realized after being reminded by Tiffany.

"That's right! We scolded his mother previously. However, we merely stated facts. It's true that his mother ruined your life, Tiffany."

"Yeah! If it were not for his mother, Tiffany would've already been married."

Even though they knew why Levi was infuriated, they still did not think that they were wrong.

"He's making us apologize for such an insignificant manner? Is that rascal deliberately putting us into a difficult spot? He even wants me to kneel and apologize! It's impossible!"

A haughty look crossed Martin's face.

"Then, what should we do?" asked Leia.

They felt disgusted at the thought of apologizing.

Despite their noble statuses, they had to apologize to an illegitimate bastard. If news about this got around, their reputation in Oakland City would be thoroughly ruined.

"Listen to me! I'll kidnap that bastard here and force him to tear up the engagement contract. Don't worry, Tiffany. This is just a piece of cake to me. We don't need to resolve the issue the hard way," said Martin with a sinister smirk.

Left with no choice, Tiffany could only agree.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1088

Martin arrived at the residence at midnight, flanked by numerous skilled fighters.

Tiffany and the rest waited outside.

“Don’t worry, Tiffany. This is simply a piece of cake! I don’t fear anyone in a small city like North Hampton.”

With that, Martin was about to lead his subordinates to kidnap Levi when his phone suddenly rang.

When he accepted the call, he realized that it was Damien on the other end of the line.

“Hello, Mr. Garrison!”

Immediately dropping his haughty attitude, Martin became extremely polite and servile.

No matter how powerful his family was, they were nothing compared to the mighty Garrison clan.

“I heard that you’re going to confront Levi?” Damien’s voice was icy-cold.

“I... I am...”

After a moment of hesitation, Martin eventually decided to admit it.

“I know that you are helping Tiffany tear up her engagement contract because you like her. However, you must deal with it in a peaceful manner, understand? Even though Levi is an

illegitimate bastard, he's still related to the Garrison clan. If you do anything out of the line, it'll be deemed as disrespecting the Garrison clan. Understood?" warned Damien.

By then, Martin had already broken out into cold sweat.

Luckily, I was a step slower.

Otherwise, something tragic would've happened.

I didn't even consider this point earlier...

What should we do to Levi, then?

Because of the infamous bet he made, everyone knows about his relationship with Tyrone.

If I do anything excessive, it'll be seen as looking down on the Garrison clan.

Even a simple action like this can lead to the demise of the Preston family!

"Understood, Mr. Garrison!"

Martin took a deep breath.

"What happened?"

When everyone gazed at Martin curiously, they noticed that his face was already pale.

"We cannot touch Levi! There's no choice but to think of another solution."

Martin relayed Damien's threat to the rest.

"What should we do now? Is apologizing the only solution left?"

Everyone felt helpless.

The next day, Levi took care of Zoey as usual, almost forgetting about what happened last night.

After all, those irrelevant people were not important enough to concern him.

At that moment, Tiffany and the rest visited him again.

“What’s up? Have you realized your mistake?” asked Levi.

This time, Tiffany’s attitude was much more friendly. She nodded and said, “Yes, we’ve realized our mistake. Mr. Garrison, I hereby apologize to you and your mother. Please forgive our rudeness earlier!”

In order to tear up the engagement contract and regain her freedom, Tiffany was ready to risk it all.

Just bear with it.

I’ll simply treat this as a slight inconvenience.

The others also apologized, albeit very reluctantly.

It was simply too humiliating for them to apologize to Levi.

However, in order to help Tiffany tear up her engagement contract, they risked it all.

Even Martin mumbled, “I’m sorry for being so rude earlier.”

“What did you say? You were too soft!” said Levi.

“I’m sorry!”

Martin was stunned for a while before quickly raising his voice.

Levi smiled. “Looks like you’ve really realized your mistake.”

Delighted, Tiffany immediately asked, “So, are you willing to tear up the engagement contract now?”

“Of course. However, your apologies are still inadequate!” replied Levi coldly.

“What? Are you going to go against your words? We apologized to you already!”

Tiffany started to panic.

Levi’s gaze landed on Martin. “Didn’t I say that he must kneel and apologize?”

“You...”

Martin was furious.

Apologizing to a bastard like him was already the most humiliating thing he had done.

It was impossible for him to kneel and apologize to Levi!

“If he kneels and apologizes, I’ll tear up the contract immediately!”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1089

After hearing Levi's assertive response, Tiffany and the rest simultaneously glanced at Martin.

"No way... How can I possibly kneel to him? Tiffany, I can't do it!"

He then looked at Levi. "You rascal, raise another condition and I promise that I'll agree to it!"

"No. I want you to kneel and apologize to me!"

Levi was very adamant.

Martin wished for nothing more than to kill Levi there and then.

However, recalling Damien's warning, he suppressed that urge.

"Martin, please help me this time! I really don't want to be bound by this engagement anymore," pleaded Tiffany earnestly.

After hesitating for five minutes, he took a deep breath and finally agreed.

"Fine, I'll help you!"

Dropping to his knees in front of Levi, he yelled, "Mr. Garrison, I was wrong. I'm sorry. Please forgive us!"

This act of kneeling was equivalent to having his pride trampled all over.

It was as humiliating as having Levi stomp on his face.

However, he endured it for the sake of the woman he so dearly loved.

“Now that’s more like it!”

As he spoke, Levi took out the engagement contract and tore it into shreds right in front of Tiffany.

“Listen up, Tiffany. From now on, our engagement is called off. I have nothing to do with you, so I hope that you won’t harass me anymore,” said Levi coldly.

“Huh?”

Tiffany was stunned.

Shouldn’t I be the one saying this?

Why is Levi saying it instead?

“Don’t worry. I won’t harass you because you aren’t even worthy enough!” replied Tiffany proudly.

“Yeah! I think that this is the most unequal arranged engagement in the whole of history!”

“You’re nothing compared to Tiffany. Stop trying to aim above your station!”

Leia and the rest chimed in angrily.

Tiffany scoffed, “Levi, you said that I pale in comparison to your wife. I want to see how exactly I am inferior to her! Not to exaggerate, but I’ve never seen a woman more exceptional than me.”

Earlier, she did not dare to say anything because of the engagement contract. Now that it had been torn up, she had nothing else to fear.

“Yeah, that’s right. Anyway, I’m married now. Even if I wasn’t, I’ll still choose Zoey over you. The reason is simple— she’s better than you!” declared Levi.

When he said that, everyone fell silent for a few seconds.

A look of utter disbelief crossed Tiffany's face.

Does Levi really think that I, the most beautiful woman in Oakland City, is inferior to his wife?

"Is this the reason why you're willing to tear up the engagement contract?" asked Tiffany coldly.

"That's right!"

"You'll regret this when you go to Oakland City! You've made an extremely erroneous mistake. You'll regret choosing her over me!" shrieked Tiffany.

For this trip to North Hampton, she did not put on any make-up at all. Her hair was disheveled and her clothes were very simple.

She dressed up in a low-key manner, deliberately trying to prevent Levi from taking a fancy to her.

To her surprise, things turned out like this...

Now that Levi had torn up the engagement contract, she actually found herself quite upset.

She even had the impulse to make Levi choose her instead.

After all, she must not lose to Zoey.

"On the day you come to Oakland City, I'll appear in front of you in my greatest splendor. Then, you'll finally understand how it feels like to have your breath taken away by my beauty. You'll be embarrassed for your words today."

Tiffany decided that she would dress up prettily when she next appeared in front of Levi. She was determined to make him regret it.

"There's no need for that, Tiffany. I'll make him regret it now!"

Unable to suppress his anger anymore, he shot a hostile glare at Levi.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1090

He couldn't take it anymore.

It was fine if he was insulted. He could even kneel before Levi.

However, he refused to allow anyone to laugh at Tiffany.

Hence, he strode over to Levi aggressively.

At the thought of what Levi did earlier, he had to hold himself back from strangling him.

"Martin!"

When Tiffany and the others realized what he was doing, it was too late to stop him.

Slap!

A clear slap rang out.

Everyone was stunned.

Even Martin was dumbfounded.

No one knew Levi would dare to hit Martin Preston.

"H-How dare you slap me?" Martin glared at Preston.

Slap!

Slap!

Slap!

Levi's forceful slaps landed on Martin's cheeks continuously.

Flabbergasted, the crowd thought, He seriously slapped Martin?

Soon, Martin's face swelled up badly as blood trickled down from the corner of his lips.

He stood in front of Levi, hyperventilating and about to explode in rage.

"I'll kill you!"

Martin roared furiously, intent on killing Levi.

"No!"

Tiffany and the others rushed up to stop him.

If he kills Levi, the Garrison clan will seek revenge! None of us could bear the consequences.

After they tried to persuade Martin, he calmed down considerably.

Recalling Damien's warning, he held his anger in check.

"Just wait and see. You'll die in my hands one day!" he announced before storming off.

Tiffany was gazing at Levi, her emotions a complex mixture.

Logically speaking, after their engagement contract was destroyed, she was no longer tied to Levi anymore.

However, she wasn't willing to give up just yet.

She vowed to show Levi the best side of herself so he'd regret his decision.

After they left, Azure Dragon appeared.

“Boss, you should’ve let me help.”

“I want to defeat everyone whose name is listed in Oakland City’s Heir Leaderboard so the Stuart family will be full of regrets!” Azure Dragon was obviously upset.

“Don’t worry. You’ll get a chance to do so,” said Levi with a smile.

Tiffany and her entourage returned to Oakland City.

The news about the end of their engagement spread all over Oakland City soon.

It even reached Tyrone’s ears.

“The engagement got called off? What a loser. Why did I have such a son?” Tyrone was fuming mad.

He thought the engagement was broken off because Levi was useless.

“Yes, that’s right. How humiliating. Even if he’s a bastard, he represents us Garrisons!”

“We’ll become a joke after this broken engagement of his!”

Everyone was displeased.

Olivia responded, “Yes. Even if we remain silent, everyone thinks he’s related to us.”

“For example, Tyrone’s cheeks were swollen after the bastard slapped him but he dared not retaliate.”

After hearing that, Tyrone declared, “No, this won’t do. We can’t let this bastard use our name out there. Otherwise, other people dared not go against him. He could do whatever he likes!”

Damien refuted at once. “But Father, he’s still a Garrison. He represents us!”

Earlier, Damien had called Martin to warn him because, in his opinion, no one could hurt Levi.

"Says who? That will only be true if he succeeds in the challenge a year later. Right now, he has nothing to do with us!"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1091

Tyrone ordered, "Damien, post an announcement on my behalf: Now, Levi Garrison has nothing to do with the Garrison clan in Oakland City. He is responsible for his own matters. His safety has nothing to do with the Garrison clan."

What Tyrone meant was clear. After this announcement was posted, the Garrison clan wouldn't interfere even if Levi were beaten to his death.

Smirking, Tyrone said, "Levi, I don't think you can last till one year later."

"Indeed. He gets into trouble too often. Look, he had just offended Martin. He isn't even in Oakland City yet, but he has already made so many enemies here."

"He might not even make it to Oakland City, let alone challenge us."

"The Garrison clan is full of talented people. Levi Garrison is nothing to us."

None of the Garrisons were afraid of Levi.

After all, there were too many skilled experts in the Garrison clan and working for them.

Right then, the head butler of Garrison clan, Toud Garrison, appeared with a list in his hand.

Chuckling, he handed the list to Tyrone. "Sir, great news for the Garrison clan!"

"Fifty candidates have been chosen to join the Hidden Dragon Soldier King Training Camp at the South Warzone. Six men from the Garrison clan have been selected, while thirteen men

from the families affiliated with our clan have been selected. The six men from our clan are in the top ten of the list! They are all future Soldier Kings!”

“I heard the Hidden Dragon Soldier King Training Camp will recommend a few candidates to the Iron Brigade. That’s a tremendous opportunity for our clan!”

Tyrone was delighted after receiving the list.

He was the head of the Garrison clan as of now.

The stronger the younger generation of the Garrison clan was, the brighter their future would be.

“Good. Good job! In the future, the Garrisons will be listed in Erudia’s Saber Leaderboard!” Tyrone guffawed out loud.

“If Levi is capable enough to climb up Saber Leaderboard, the Garrison clan will definitely acknowledge him,” someone scoffed.

Tyrone mocked. “Forget about Erudia’s Saber Leaderboard. If he is qualified enough to enter Hidden Dragon Soldier King Training Camp, he’s showing potential, too!”

After Tyrone’s announcement was posted by Damien, the entire Oakland City was in an uproar.

Previously, Martin and the others held back because they were afraid the Garrison clan would avenge Levi.

Now that the announcement had made things clear, they no longer had to worry.

Martin was excited after hearing the news.

Everyone in Oakland City knew how Levi slapped him previously.

He was so humiliated that the only way out was to kill Levi!

It was only a matter of time before they depart for North Hampton.

Without the disturbance, Levi's life was peaceful once again.

He accompanied Zoey and took care of his pregnant wife carefully.

Iris was in charge of handling his company.

This decision of his made everyone anxious.

As Morris Group was muzzled, there was no room for development.

Shouldn't Levi be worried?

Did he forget about the bet?

What will he use to challenge the Garrison clan one year later?

Is he going to grovel at their feet to beg for forgiveness?

By now, Zoey's belly was showing.

She didn't want to get mad and affect her baby, so she turned a blind eye to this incident.

One day, Levi received a call from the South Warzone's Commander-In-Chief, Darton Rogier.

"Sir, we're going to hold the Hidden Dragon Soldier King Training Camp in South Warzone. From there, we will recommend a few talents to the Iron Brigade. If you're free, will you come and pick the talents yourself?" asked Darton.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1092

“Okay. I’ll be there.” Levi agreed.

“It’ll be great if you can come and teach them,” implored Darton.

“Sure, Rogier. I’ll be there.”

Darton was excited by his promise.

“This will be the most impressive session of Hidden Dragon Soldier King Training Camp ever! I shall keep it a secret and give the youngsters a surprise!”

Right then, a car had just departed the Garrison clan.

Six young Garrisons were in the car, heading to Hidden Dragon Soldier King Training Camp. Tyrone had just sent them off.

Tyrone and the Garrison clan had high hopes for the six young men.

The young men were arrogant and rebellious.

After all, they were born in the top ancient family in Erudia.

Burt Garrison, the young men’s leader, declared sternly, “This time, we’re representing the Garrison clan. We need to be the top six in the camp!”

“We need to be the six selected ones to join the Iron Brigade. Understand?”

"Yes!" the others replied in the affirmative.

They had always felt a sense of superiority, so there was no way they'd lose to the other weaklings at the camp.

"My dream is to enter the Iron Brigade and be the God of War's subordinate. If I succeed, that will be a great honor for me and my family!" another young Garrison by the name Klint, exclaimed.

Burt nodded. "Yes, that's right. I'll be extremely honored to be the God of War's subordinate. He's the idol of every young man in Erudia. Damien is nothing compared to him!"

"Yes. The God of War has always been Damien's idol. He's been working hard to reach that height."

The young men were excited about the upcoming adventure.

Right then, Pewter Garrison changed the topic. "The South that we're going to include North Hampton. I wonder what Levi Garrison looks like."

"Ha! I'm curious, too. Let's take some time off to teach Levi a lesson!" A look of anticipation crossed Klint's face.

"Sure. Let's beat him up one day. He's too arrogant. He even looked down on Damien!"

The other three agreed unanimously.

In a forest deep in the mountains in the South Warzone, fifty trainees were gathered.

The young men present were from various warzones all over Erudia.

They were valuable talents to their teams because of their expertise.

Each of them was arrogant and wild.

There was a possibility that they would even look down on the instructors in the training camp.

Their instructor would need to show his capabilities and convince the young men.

Darton himself showed up to make an announcement. "You're all Hidden Dragons, the future of Erudia. Your instructor will be arriving soon!" he declared with a chuckle.

Burt asked, "Sir, is our instructor going to be one of the God of Slaughters in the South?"

There were four famous God of Slaughters in the South Warzone.

Before arriving, Burt and the others couldn't help but wonder who their instructor would be.

They thought it would be one of the Four God of Slaughters.

"No," said Darton, shaking his head.

"Could it be one of the Eight Combat Heroes?" Burt thought of another possibility.

"No. You'll know when your instructor arrives."

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1093

Everyone's curiosity was piqued.

However, they didn't want a nobody to be their instructor.

They wanted someone whom they could trust.

Burt gathered everyone and ridiculed, "Everyone, since the strongest men in the South wouldn't be our instructor, I don't think we need to stay."

Wolfe Leek from Northwest City joined in. "Yes, that's right. I came here to meet the Four God of Slaughters. If they aren't here, what would be the point of holding the training camp? Perhaps the instructor won't be as powerful as me!"

"You're right. Everyone here is capable. Not anyone can be our instructor!"

"Why don't we prepare a welcome gift for him tomorrow? If he can't reach our standards, he can leave right away!" suggested Burt.

Wolfe agreed immediately. "Sure. This is a great idea. Let's show him how powerful we are!"

"Let's protest so the South will get us the best instructor available!"

The fifty young men reached a consensus soon enough.

The next day, Darton came to pick Levi up.

"Zoey, can I take him away for a day?" asked Darton with a smile.

Zoey nodded. "Of course you can. Come with me. I need to talk to you."

Darton trailed behind her curiously.

"Darton, you're Levi's best friend, right?" she inquired.

"Zoey, boss and I went through a lot together!" exclaimed Darton.

He wasn't the only one. The Commander-in-Chiefs of the Nine Warzones and the Four Guardians owed Levi one.

After all, Levi had saved them on the battlefield.

"Do you want to see him in trouble?"

Darton immediately replied, "Of course not. Boss can't be in trouble!"

"You know about the one-year bet he placed with the Garrison clan, right? The Garrison clan stated four conditions. For now, Levi's hope is all on his business. But he isn't working hard at all. I want you to convince Levi to take this seriously. At least he needs to work hard," implored Zoey.

"Oh? But this is nothing for him!" Darton was shocked as he thought it was something important.

The bet with the Garrison clan?

I can defeat them easily, let alone Levi.

"Huh? Nothing?" Zoey was taken aback.

Why are Levi and his friends reacting the same way?

They don't even care about the bet!

"Darton, don't you know the Garrison clan? You know Levi's situation, right?"

Zoey thought Darton was an ordinary citizen who knew nothing about how powerful the Garrison clan was.

"Don't worry, Zoey. I'll advise him to deal with this matter asap." Finally, Darton realized what she was talking about.

"Okay, you do that. He won't listen to me. Perhaps he'll listen to his comrade," said Zoey.

She hoped Levi's comrades would be able to convince him.

After all, they looked like ordinary citizens to her.

Darton returned to his vehicle and told Levi all about her concern.

"Boss, when will you inform Zoey of your identity?" he asked.

"When I enter the Garrison clan, I'll tell her. She's pregnant now. I can't afford to make her emotional," replied Levi.

"Got it. Boss, a few Garrisons are at the training camp."

Darton recalled Burt and the other young Garrisons.

"Oh? Interesting." The smirk on Levi's lips deepened.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1094

"You don't have to come with me. Let me see how capable the youngsters are," Levi declared.

"Got it. I'll ask someone to send you to the training camp."

Shortly after, Levi arrived at the training camp.

He sat on the back seat, while Gruffin and Windy took the front seats.

They were both in charge of the training camp's security.

Through the rearview mirror, they could see Levi was sleeping.

"Seriously? Did Chief Rogier appoint him to be the instructor? Look at how young he is!" Windy was astounded.

Gruffin seemed surprised, too. "Yes. I've never heard of him. Where is he from? What is Chief Rogier trying to do?"

Windy scorned, "The trainees of the training camp this time are all wayward and capable. As their instructor, he needs to be more powerful than them. But this man is going to humiliate us all!"

Gruffin chuckled. "I heard the youngsters are going to show him who's boss. Can he take it?"

"I think we'll be sending him to the hospital later. Chief Rogier made the wrong decision this time!" declared Windy, who was prepared to give Levi a ride back later.

In the training camp, the fifty young men were ready.

However, they were idling lazily around. Some of them were even sitting on the ground, biting on grass casually.

They were all being rude and arrogant as they were all tough nuts in their respective teams.

Unless they met someone more powerful than them, they'd never admit defeat.

"Remember, we'll give him a hard time," reminded Burt.

"Don't worry. If he wants to teach me, he'll have to talk to my fists first!" mocked Wolfe, who was lying on the ground lazily.

"They are here!"

Clouds of dust wafted in the air, signaling the arrival of the instructor.

Everyone looked in that direction.

When the car came to a stop, Levi was still asleep.

Windy hollered unhappily, "We're here!"

"I know," said Levi as his eyes snapped open.

Actually, he was just resting earlier.

Hence, he had overheard Gruffin and Windy's conversation.

After alighting the car, he followed Windy and Gruffin to the team's location.

When he saw how lazy the trainees were, a furious glint flashed across his gaze.

How unruly!

As Erudian soldiers, they have to obey the military rules.

They are acting all improper!

We're in the training camp instead of a kitchen where you can do anything you like!

In the meantime, Gruffin and Windy were delighted.

The capricious young men are going to give this instructor a hard time.

He's in deep trouble.

When the youngsters saw that their instructor was a young and unfamiliar Levi, they were upset.

Never mind if their instructor wasn't a famous Mighty General.

There was no way they would accept a young and ordinary man to be their instructor.

What is this?

Is this a joke?

This instructor is worse than we had imagined.

He's so young.

Is he even capable?

This is an insult!

Gruffin coughed twice. "Everyone, this is your head instructor at Hidden Dragon Soldier King Training Camp. Please give him a warm welcome!"

Alas, after Gruffin's announcement, everyone ignored him.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1095

They all glared at Levi arrogantly and didn't move an inch.

Windy reminded them. "Have some respect. He's your instructor!"

No one responded.

Windy shot Levi a smug smile.

It was as if she was saying, Look! Not everyone can be an instructor.

Levi stood there, saying nothing. Both Windy and Gruffin felt ashamed on his behalf.

At the sight of the lazy young men, Levi was enraged.

Respect!

They didn't even have basic respect for their instructor!

They had to respect his position as their instructor no matter what his ability was.

Besides, Darton wouldn't just assign a nobody to be their instructor.

Suddenly, Levi bellowed, "Stand in your positions!"

His yell shocked everyone.

Wolfe, Burt and the others rose to their feet instinctively.

“The future Hidden Dragon Soldier Kings? You’re even dreaming of entering the Iron Brigade? Look at you. Who do you think you are? Where is your respect?” Levi scoffed.

His roar had managed to intimidate some of them.

Wolfe wasn’t one of them. He retorted at once. “Look at you. Are you capable enough to be our instructor?”

Burt chimed in. “We’re here to improve our capabilities. We won’t accept some nobody as our instructor!”

Pewter sneered, “That’s right. Respect you? You need to be capable enough to earn our respect.”

Levi flashed a smirk. “You think I’m not capable enough to be your instructor?”

“Of course! You’re only in your thirties, right? How dare you take up the job to be our instructor? Are you even capable?”

“Didn’t you ask around before coming? We’re the top experts in our respective teams all over Erudia. We have no other opponents. Hence, we came here to make a breakthrough.”

The young men expressed their thoughts haughtily.

They were capable enough to be this arrogant.

In the future, they would be leaders of this country, so there was no way they’d allow Levi to instruct them.

Windy and Gruffin were elated at the sight.

Frankly, they despised how cool Levi was.

In this training camp, Levi had to show them how capable he was for them to listen to him obediently.

“Ha! I’m standing right here. You still think I’m not capable enough to be your instructor?” Levi was amused.

“Of course! Our instructor should be one of the Four God of Slaughters, or at least one of the Eight Combat Heroes,” proclaimed Wolfe arrogantly.

Burt looked at him. “Let’s give him something specific. Our instructor shall be someone on Saber Leaderboard!”

The men they talked of earlier were on this Saber Leaderboard.

“Yes, that’s right. You need to be a top fighter in Saber Leaderboard!”

Wolfe looked straight at Levi and inquired, “What is your current ranking on Saber Leaderboard?”

Both Windy and Gruffin burst into laughter.

They knew everyone on Saber Leaderboard.

Obviously, Levi Garrison wasn’t listed on the leaderboard.

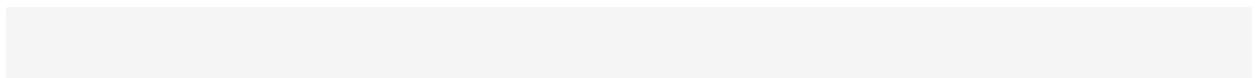
Levi shook his head. “I’m not on Saber Leaderboard.”

He and his comrades from Iron Brigade weren’t on Saber Leaderboard to protect their identities.

At his words, everyone burst out laughing.

However, Levi added, “I might not be on the leaderboard, but I’m stronger than all the fighters listed on it!”

The entire place fell silent after Levi spoke.



Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1096

How arrogant!

I can't believe he's this arrogant!

That's the famous Erudia's Saber Leaderboard!

All the strongest fighters of Erudia were listed on Saber Leaderboard.

The top one hundred fighters were famous for their fighting abilities.

The ancient families in Erudia were snobbishly proud to have just one of their members listed on Saber Leaderboard.

No one could believe how exaggerated Levi was.

How could he say he's stronger than all the fighters listed on Saber Leaderboard?

What is Saber Leaderboard to him?

To Burt, Wolfe, and the others, Saber Leaderboard was a sacred existence.

Their only goal was either to join the Iron Brigade or make it to Saber Leaderboard.

To be honest, making it to Saber Leaderboard was harder than joining the Iron Brigade as there were only one hundred spots on the leaderboard.

Windy and Gruffin nearly collapsed in shock.

Only strong fighters like the Four God of Slaughters would make it to Saber Leaderboard.

The Four God of Slaughters were so strong that they emerged unscathed after battling against thirty thousand men. Their enemy ended up losing ten thousand men after the battle.

Hence, they deserved to be on Saber Leaderboard.

But even so, they were in the middle ranks instead of being at the top.

One could imagine how strong and impressive the top ten in the leaderboard would be.

At the mention of their names, other organizations and countries would be terrified.

After all, these fighters were strong enough to take on thousands alone.

Levi had just announced he was stronger than everyone on the leaderboard.

No one in the world dared to disregard Saber Leaderboard.

Even the top ancient family in Erudia, the Garrison clan, dared not say such a thing.

“That’s funny. How dare you say you’re stronger than the fighters listed on Saber Leaderboard?” mocked Wolfe.

“Right. I’ve never heard anyone being this arrogant,” Burt joined in.

Everyone started sneering at Levi.

“The South Commander-In-Chief, Darton Rogier, might be strong, but he is only ranked seventeenth in the leaderboard. How dare you disregard Saber Leaderboard, young man?” said an amused Gruffin.

“Are you doing this on purpose? You have a death wish!”

“If you continue insulting Saber Leaderboard, we’ll teach you a lesson!”

All it took was one word from Levi to infuriate everyone.

Some were about to take action, but Wolfe stopped their actions.

“Okay. Since you claim to be stronger than everyone on Saber Leaderboard, we need you to prove it. We won’t ask you to be the strongest. As long as you get ranked, we’ll listen to you!” Wolfe suggested with a chuckle.

He wanted to humiliate Levi by asking the latter to show his capabilities.

That was because he was certain Levi would be proven a liar soon.

“Yes, prove it to us! Otherwise, we won’t let you leave in one piece!”

“We won’t allow you to disregard Saber Leaderboard!”

Everyone else chimed in, glaring at Levi resentfully.

Windy and Gruffin were watching the entire debacle with smirks on their faces.

Your act will be exposed once you take action.

Ha! Serves you right for being so boastful!

“What now? You’re scared? You shouldn’t brag that much.”

“If you refuse to change, we’ll help you. You won’t dare to brag after we teach you a lesson.”

“I was contemplating on how to show you I’m stronger than all the fighters in Saber Leaderboard. After all, you’re all weaklings.”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1097

Levi was gazing at them seriously.

The young men were strong, but they were no match for him.

Even after defeating them, he couldn't prove he was stronger than the fighters on Saber Leaderboard.

Alas, Levi's words only served to infuriate the wayward fellows.

We're weaklings?

Is he joking?

"We're weaklings? Fine! I'll give you a chance to prove yourself. If you can defeat us, we'll listen to you!" declared Burt.

Wolfe chimed in. "Me, too! I, Wolfe Leek, would only succumb to those who are stronger than me. Nothing else will make me succumb!"

The young men would only listen to those who were stronger than them.

"Look carefully."

Suddenly, Levi raised his right leg and stomped on the ground forcefully.

Boom!

A huge tremor sounded from the ground as if an earthquake had just happened.

Instantly, everyone stumbled in dizziness from the sudden tremor. If they weren't stable enough, they would've toppled to the ground.

Their eyes were about to pop out when they saw cracks forming on the ground.

Cracks started appearing beneath their feet. If they moved an inch, they'd fall into the crevice.

They stared at Levi, absolutely stupefied.

What was that?

What class is he in?

His stomp created a giant earthquake!

Look, the cracks are forming up to hundreds of meters away. Is he still human?

No one knew whether he was stronger than the fighters on Saber Leaderboard, but they were about to go crazy.

If that kick of his had landed on anyone here, that person would be dead by now.

His stomp had created a giant earthquake. It was a spectacular sight!

Wolfe, Burt, Windy and the others were dumbfounded.

They belatedly realized Darton wouldn't have sent a nobody to be the instructor.

"If any of you are unwilling to submit, you're welcome to battle with me!" Levi announced.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

At his words, everyone hurriedly got into line.

Wolfe jumped to his feet and straightened his back.

Levi's actions had impressed the crowd.

"Stand in line! Let me introduce myself. I'm your instructor!"

"First lesson, respect. No matter how strong and capable you are, you need to abide by the rules. You must respect your instructor as he will be teaching you!"

"Besides, the higher-ups aren't fools. Would they assign a nobody to be your instructor?"

"Hence, be humble and have respect for others. That's basic manners."

Levi himself was a God of War.

However, he remained humble in front of Benny Quinton and the others and gave them the utmost respect.

"Understood!" roared Wolfe and the others.

"I'll only proceed with the other lessons after you learn this!" said Levi.

"Sir, can you tell us who you are? We don't know of your existence in Erudia!" yelled Burt.

They knew everyone on Saber Leaderboard and all the strongest fighters in Erudia.

As part of the Garrison clan, it was easy for them to gain this information.

"Yes, Sir. Please tell us who you are!" the others implored.

"Your instructor is none other than the God of War!"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1098

Darton appeared and declared.

“G-God of War?” Burt repeated soullessly.

“What? The God of War?”

At the mention of the familiar but distant title, Wolfe thought he was dreaming.

Windy and Gruffin froze in their tracks, utterly stunned.

“That’s right. He is Erudia’s God of War!” said Darton sternly.

That got everyone silent once again.

Darton had confirmed it himself. Levi was indeed the God of War.

They felt goosebumps all over.

No wonder we’ve never heard of this young man.

Turns out he’s the God of War!

No wonder he disregarded Saber Leaderboard.

He is stronger than all the fighters listed on Saber Leaderboard, because the leaderboard was formed by his subordinates.

“Greetings, God of War!” everyone echoed in unison.

After the initial shock, came their surprise.

No one had expected that the God of War would be an instructor in the Hidden Dragon Soldier King Training Camp.

At this point, they regretted treating him badly earlier.

They lowered their heads and dared not look at Levi.

It was a memorable lesson.

They would remember to treat others with respect from now on.

“Look up. Stand in line!” commanded Levi.

“I’ll only continue with the rest of the lessons after you’ve learned how to be respectful,” he announced.

“I heard a few young men from the Garrison clan in Oakland City are here. Show yourselves.”

Burt and the others stood out arrogantly.

Looks like our family is so powerful that even God of War notices us.

“Mm, not bad. The Garrison clan of Oakland City has many talents!” Levi nodded in approval.

He might have a grudge against the Garrison clan, but he had to admit they were powerful enough to produce talented fighters for Erudia.

That was enough for him.

Hence, Levi wouldn’t spare his efforts to teach them.

To him, they weren’t part of the Garrison clan. They were the future fighters of Erudia.

He wouldn’t treat them differently because of his grudge with the Garrison clan.

“Next, I’ll teach you a training method. You’ll be practicing this for the next month. When the time’s up, I’ll come for an inspection.”

Levi proceeded to teach them a special training method.

Everyone was excited and astounded. They had no idea such a method existed.

No wonder God of War is so powerful. It’s because of this special training method!

“Sir, won’t you be here every day?” Wolfe asked.

He wanted to see the God of War every day.

“You need at least a year to master this training method. It’ll be enough to occupy your time for a month,” explained Levi.

“Understood. We’ll do our best. We won’t let you down!” everyone promised.

“Good. I’ll be here a month later to choose a few candidates for the Iron Brigade!” Levi nodded approvingly.

Burt finally plucked up the courage to ask. “Sir, is your surname Garrison?”

Every other Garrison immediately glanced at him nervously.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1099

Previously, the Garrison clan had suspected that the God of War was a Garrison.

Even if he weren't part of the main Garrison clan in Oakland City, he would be from a branch of the Garrison clan.

Since the God of War's identity was highly classified, it had to be a secret at all costs.

The Garrison clan couldn't find out anything.

However, Tyrone was certain the God of War was a Garrison.

"Mm, you're right." Levi inclined his head.

"Phew!"

Burt and the other Garrisons heaved a sigh of relief. They were proud of the fact that Levi was a Garrison.

After Levi departed, they threw themselves into training.

Darton was pleased with their efforts. He knew they'd improve tremendously after a month.

Meanwhile, in Oakland City.

Martin was planning to return to North Hampton immediately to take revenge on Levi, but everyone had found out about the broken engagement.

Hence, people flocked to the Meyers family in hopes of an arranged marriage.

Martin had to be on guard, so he couldn't leave.

Soon, one month went by in the blink of an eye.

Morris Group was going nowhere, so both Iris and Zoey were anxious.

Alas, Levi was unfazed.

He was currently at the training camp to inspect the trainees' progress.

For the past month, Burt and the others had trained vehemently. There was visible improvement.

"Mmm, not bad. Satisfactory, at least." Levi nodded.

Well, they are still weak.

When Kirin trained the Beasts, the results were so much better.

In the end, Levi chose five men to enter the Iron Brigade.

Besides Wolfe, the other four were from the Garrison clan.

Levi couldn't be bothered about their status as long as they were capable enough.

Thus, Hidden Dragon Soldier King Training Camp came to a fulfilling end.

Burt and the others were thrilled.

Besides getting into the top ten, four of them were selected to join Iron Brigade.

The first thing they did after getting out of camp was to inform their clan about their results.

"Wait up! I have an idea. We're near North Hampton. Why don't we meet Levi Garrison?"
Pewter suggested.

"Sure, I can't wait to see him!" Klint returned eagerly.

The rest agreed to the suggestion.

Their confidence had gone up significantly after getting stronger.

"Sure. We'll meet Levi, then inform our clan about the results." Burt assented.

Zoey's belly was growing larger by the day.

She had to be extra careful even when she was walking around.

However, she was worried about Levi's nonchalance.

We have less than one year left. How could he challenge the Garrison clan with what he had?

She was deep in thought when her phone started ringing.

Someone from the Garrison clan in Oakland City wanted to treat Levi to a meal.

Shocked, Zoey immediately went to Levi.

She was afraid it might be a trap.

After all, this was the Garrison clan.

"Why not? If they're treating us, we'll be there," replied Levi.

"Well," Zoey sighed. "An ignorant person like you knows no fear, huh?"

Why isn't Levi afraid of the Garrison clan?

Doesn't he know how powerful the Garrison clan is?

Even I know how dangerous they are. Why is Levi still clueless?

In the meantime, Burt and the others were waiting in the restaurant.

“Levi agreed to come just like that? How brave of him!” scoffed Klint.

“He’s afraid of nothing. He isn’t even afraid of the Garrison clan.”

Burt narrowed his eyes menacingly. “Let’s show him who’s in power later.”

“Can’t wait!”

Everyone was anticipating Levi’s arrival.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1100

Soon, voices were heard from the hallway.

A woman stepped into the room.

Burt and the rest were stunned by how pretty she was.

If she weren't pregnant, her beauty would be comparable to Tiffany.

This was the first time they had seen someone as gorgeous as Tiffany.

"Are you Zoey Lopez?" Burt was the first to snap back to reality.

"Yes, I am," replied Zoey with a nod.

"What a pity." Burt and the rest shook their heads.

What did the bastard do to deserve such a gorgeous wife?

"By the way, where is Levi?" asked Klint.

"I'm here!" A voice bellowed outside the room.

"Mm?"

The six Garrisons thought the voice sounded familiar.

"Eh? That voice certainly rings a bell."

They exchanged glances.

We've never met Levi. Why does his voice sound familiar?

Then, Levi walked into the room.

The moment Levi appeared, Burt and the other Garrisons froze in confusion. Their expressions paled instantly.

None of them knew Levi Garrison was the God of War.

They had just met Levi this morning.

Now, they were meeting him again under different circumstances.

It was a mind-blowing sight.

Right then, realization dawned on them.

No wonder the God of War is a Garrison. He should've been a part of the Garrison clan in Oakland City.

Why is Levi bold enough to go against the Garrison clan in Oakland City and place a bet with Tyrone?

Why did Levi despise the Garrison clan and everything else? This is the reason.

Never in their wildest dream did they expect Levi, the bastard of their family, to be the legend of Erudia.

Zoey sensed the change in their reactions after Levi's arrival.

They seem to be terrified of Levi.

What is going on?

A minute ago, they were arrogant and snobby.

Why did they become so petrified all of a sudden?

Is Levi that scary?

Or is there something I don't know?

"Sir—No, Mr. Garrison," Burt corrected himself immediately.

They could address him as "Sir" in the training camp, but Levi's identity was a secret outside of camp.

Indeed, Burt and the other Garrisons were shaking in fear.

If they weren't sitting down, they would've fallen to their knees in fright.

Did we just try to cower the God of War into submission again? For the second time?

Alas, their plan had failed from the very start.

Levi was surprised to see the young lads, too.

Oh? Did they try to cower me into submission again?

"Is this meant to be a trap?" inquired Levi.

"N-No. Of course it isn't a trap. We want to treat Mr. Garrison and Ms. Lopez to a meal. That's all!" Burt hurriedly explained after regaining his composure in time.

He wiped the sweat off his forehead.

The others immediately welcomed Levi and Zoey warmly. "Have a seat!"

Zoey was flummoxed at how respectful they were.

Huh? What is going on?

I thought the Garrison clan is at odds with Levi?

Why are they being so polite?

When she arrived earlier, she instantly realized that this was a trap.

But everything changed after Levi showed up.

She couldn't believe her eyes.

After taking a seat, Zoey spoke. "Be honest with me. Why are you terrified after seeing him?"

Burt and the others whipped their heads to look at Levi.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1101

"Why are you guys just... Staring at me? Answer the question!"

Levi rolled his eyes at the crowd.

Everyone remained silent on the surface. Internally, they were exclaiming, however.

Well, it's because you're the God of War! How can we not be scared?

"It's because he... "

Pewter almost exposed Levi's identity, but Burt reacted in time to halt his statement.

"Ms. Lopez, Mr. Garrison looks too much like our Mr. Tyrone. When we first met, we all thought Sir came!"

"Ah, yes. They look too similar."

No one could breathe easy in the room.

But Zoey alone accepted Burt's explanation without further thought. It sounded convincing enough- everyone met Levi for the first time and got intimidated merely because he resembled Tyrone. That was all.

"That makes sense. So, what do you want? I'm all ears."

Her tone was laced with apprehension- she did not have a good feeling about the party present before her. It felt as if they were up to no good.

Levi simply chuckled and said, "Honey, all they want is a meal with us. There's no need for so many questions."

Then, turning to the relevant people, Levi boomed impatiently, "Serve the dishes!"

The meal was practically a time of tribulation for the majority at the table, save for Levi and Zoey. The man was wolfing the food down while his wife picked out the nutritious dishes to keep her baby well-nourished.

Meanwhile, the rest ate in constant trepidation. Many were drenched in cold sweat while their minds wandered everywhere else.

Such was the feeling of eating with a beast that could snap anytime. They felt like they were being scrutinized, and that one wrong move would result in a fatal end.

The simple meal practically halved their lifespans by the time it ended.

"Hmm, the meal was delicious today. I look forward to more in the future," Levi said as he escorted Zoey out.

The lady was puzzled. This is it? Just a simple meal, and nothing else?

As if reading her mind, Levi pacified, "Honey, don't overthink it. They really did just want a meal."

He flashed her a smile.

At that moment, Zoey felt that her concerns were unnecessary.

Perhaps, Tyrone may become lenient one day. After all, they're still blood-related.

When Levi left, the company practically collapsed in relief simultaneously on their seats, heaving sighs of relief.

The meal was frankly more mentally exhausting than the hellish month of training that just passed.

They almost broke down on the spot.

"This is truly a moment of pride and disaster for the Garrison clan," Burt commented while sighing.

Right at this moment, a call came from the Garrison family.

Damien's voice echoed from the line. "Burt, tell me about how everything went! The family is very concerned. I heard that the training camp's instructor is a very extraordinary guy."

"Umm, that's right... "

Burt summarized the happenings to him.

Damien cheered, "Wow! That's pretty impressive. The family is proud of you guys!"

"And regarding the instructor... he is the God of War!"

It was not the first time Burt announced such a revelation to someone, but the reactions he received were always the same- pure shock.

The dumbfounded Damien fell into a long silence.

When he finally came to his senses, the excitement in his voice could barely be contained. "T-The God of War? You're all are so lucky! That means you guys are handpicked by the God of War into the Iron Brigade! The Garrison family is very proud! Tyrone will be giving a word of commendation on our next anniversary meeting."

These juniors are so capable and brought so much pride to the clan, he thought.

Burt was overjoyed by the response. A word of affirmation was always great, but receiving such commendation from Tyrone himself was the highest form of praise in the Garrison clan.

But recalling the ordeal that just occurred, Burt found his spirits dampened almost immediately.

"I have one more thing I wish to say... And hopefully, this can be conveyed to Sir... "

"What happened?" Damien's curiosity was evidently piqued.

“We just met Levi...”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1102

Damien asked curiously, "What's wrong with meeting him?"

"Can you request Sir to restore Levi's status and bring him back to the Garrison family? This will bring immense glory to the clan."

Burt articulated every syllable seriously.

Damien's laugh echoed from the call as he replied, "Was Levi's charm so powerful that you all got subdued promptly? That's very disappointing of you guys. But anyway, I will convey your words to Sir."

When he proceeded to convey the information to Tyrone, the latter grew livid.

"What's wrong with these juniors? They're speaking up for Levi just because they met him once? What a bunch of letdowns."

"I heard that the God of War's first lesson to them was about respect. Maybe that's why."

That explained some things for Tyrone. "I see. I don't doubt the effectiveness of the lessons given by the God of War."

Then, his tone changed sharply. "But that's their military rule and has nothing to do with us. My personal philosophy is that I will only respect those who deserve my respect- someone like Levi won't earn it unless he shows me some true power."

Damien concurred, "You're right- even if Levi completes the challenge a year later, that's far from earning our respect. We can only at best accept him into the family."

The older man added agitatedly, "To earn my respect, he must at least have a strength that's on par with those on the top ten of the Saber Leaderboard. If he is really that strong, I will literally put him on a pedestal and parade him around town."

Tyrone knew the true strength of the top three well as they hailed from the Garrison family. They were people Tyrone respected. If Levi wanted his affirmation or wished to make regret his decisions, he should at least be at the level of the top three before speaking.

But he was only certain that Levi could never achieve that.

The said top three were the feared trio of Erudia. Any foreign power would quake in fear and double over in agony upon hearing their names.

There was a popular saying that went, "Those ranked on the Saber Leaderboard of Erudia can take down a battalion of ten thousand troops."

How can Levi ever be on that level?

But the biggest irony of all awaited him- Levi was the one ranking the Saber Leaderboard.

Damien grinned at Tyrone's sarcasm and added, "That's true- if Levi is on the same level as the top three, I will make him next in line for the title instead."

Speaking of that, Tyrone said, "I plan to officially name you my heir after the bet with Levi. There will be a handover ceremony held."

Damien was elated at the news.

Until now, although everyone knew that he would be the next Sir, there was no official handover ceremony held yet.

Now that Tyrone finally decided on a date, Damien was on cloud nine. He thanked the man profusely.

"Making it the same day as the duel... That's such a great date, Father!" Damien beamed.

"I want to show the world what my son is capable of, and to prove that not everyone can be as capable as you," Tyrone extolled with a cold laugh.

On the side, Olivia interjected, “Emma thinks her son would make her proud? I’m going to show the whole of Erudia that my son is stronger than hers.”

She was confident of Damien, and could not wait for the day of the showdown to come soon.

When the news broke that the handover ceremony would be held on the same day as the duel, everyone knew that Tyrone did it intentionally.

Regardless of how Levi fared that day, he would compare him with Damien and showcase how superior the latter was as compared to the former.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1103

Emma was visibly disappointed upon the news of the handover.

Nevertheless, she never hoped that Levi would be the next in line.

All she wanted was for his skills to be acknowledged by the Garrison family.

Her dejection was in full view of Zoey. She comforted, "Mother, it's fine. We don't have to compare ourselves with others. Let's just live our own lives peacefully."

Comparisons usually yielded nothing but a new sense of inferiority- especially if one was comparing themselves to the people of the Garrison clan. Zoey knew better to just focus on one's everyday life.

Her words seemed to have an effect on Emma.

Perking up a little, the lady acknowledged Zoey's wise words, "That's true, we're leading pretty happy lives right now. Let's just continue this way!"

Changing the topic, Zoey took the chance to ask for a group photo together.

The lady had taken an interest in documenting her everyday life and the changes that were happening. She had taken many photos as commemoration already.

"Levi, join in the photo too!" shouted Zoey.

If the lady asked, rejection was the last thing the man would do. Levi jogged over and joined the photo.

Zoey took a few snapshots and decided to upload the photos on her overseas social media account. All she wanted was to boast about her blissful family of four a little.

Otherwise, she usually did not have the habit to share her life online. Even if she did post, it would be on her overseas account, so that none of her close friends and relatives would see could see her updates.

This seemingly harmless decision to post today resulted in a global uproar.

Within ten minutes, the photos reached over ten million shares online.

And the numbers only grew and grew.

At this rate, the number of views would easily reach over a billion in just less than an hour.

The reason behind the ongoing virality was simple- Levi was in the photo.

In Erudia, all information about Levi was kept strictly confidential.

If a photo of him was uploaded within Erudia, it would automatically be censored.

But the same confidentiality did not exist out there.

As a result, when Zoey uploaded the photos, the outside world immediately recognized Levi.

News of his photos spread like wildfire, and it was not long before an international commotion erupted.

In particular, hundreds of countries and the underground organizations were in a frenzy over their new discovery- the almighty God of War had a pregnant wife.

It was shocking news to the whole world.

Levi was a walking legend ever since he suppressed the Eighteen-Nation Alliance.

The God of War was unanimously considered by hundreds of nations to be the worst nightmare ever to exist.

In fact, there was a saying that went, "As long as the God of War is present, Erudia cannot be attacked." In other words, as long as Levi was still alive, Erudia would remain impenetrable. The foreign powers could do nothing but cowering in fear of his ever-present wrath.

As a result, other nations hated him and countless people wanted him dead.

"Countless" was not an exaggeration- someone once did a tabulation and estimated that over ten million people wanted him to perish.

As a result, it was no surprise that Levi ranked top on the international hitlist with a bounty of hundreds of billions on his head.

While the bounty was extremely attractive, no one managed to complete it thus far. The reason was obvious- Levi had no weak points.

He was already used to assassination attempts. In fact, he was practically a target of an assassination every living second due to the sheer number of people interested in the prize money.

There were also many people who spent years trying to dig out his weaknesses, but all their attempts were to no avail.

In conclusion, Levi was simply too strong, too almighty. He truly lived up to his title as the God of War.

There's no way to kill him!

But everything changed on this day because of some photographs.

The all-powerful God of War had an Achilles' heel- his pregnant wife.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1104

For the longest time, it was impossible to find any information about Levi. His family background and the people associated with him were all wiped clean from Erudia's database.

When people heard that Levi was an orphan, their despair only increased as that meant that they had no elderly parents to threaten him with.

As a result, there was no other way to defeat the invincible God than to become stronger than him.

However, now that Zoey's photographs exposed that Levi had a mother and a pregnant wife, everyone knew his fatal weaknesses.

The old saying now no longer stood. The rest of the nation finally found the opening to bring down Erudia.

Erudia's God of War, whose existence was the bane of hundreds of nations, had a line of weakness that everyone could not wait to exploit.

Amongst those people, the Eighteen-Nation Alliance, in particular, were in hysteria. Their long-awaited opportunity for revenge had finally come.

Another group of people who were equally riled up was those eyeing the incredible bounty.

The appeal only increased when the bounty reward shot up by tens of billions in a blink of an eye due to the contribution of multiple well-to-do individuals.

These contributors hoped to eliminate Levi as quickly and as mercilessly as possible.

Levi's existence had compromised too many people's interests.

Knowing that he had countless existing enemies who were blood-thirsty enough to take him down, they increased the bounty prize money to accelerate the momentum to take him out.

In other words, it was called striking the iron while it was hot.

In summary, the world was cheering for Levi's imminent death. The Eighteen-Nation Alliance was looking forward to the day when Erudia would fall into their hands. The other foreign forces were also interested in partaking in this attack. Many others could not wait for their own personal gains that would follow Levi's demise too.

Meanwhile, Zoey remained oblivious to the global commotion that her photos had ignited.

In conclusion, a revolution would happen the moment Levi fell.

That alone was a testament to the God of War's menace all this while. He might be just an individual, but he was capable of intimidating the entire world.

No one dared to lay a finger on Erudia because of him.

When Zoey finally checked her account, she almost flung her phone on the ground out of shock.

"O-Oh my, what on earth is happening? Huh? Why are there billions of likes, along with tens of thousands of shares and comments?"

She could not believe her eyes. Am I hallucinating? Are my eyes playing tricks on me?

A post on her account would typically garner at most about a hundred likes.

Why were her recent photos gaining so much traction?

Out of disbelief, she recounted the engagement numbers. Eventually, she concluded that her eyes were indeed well and functioning.

These engagement numbers probably broke some records on the platform, she thought.

What is happening?

Zoey double-checked the post once again, but the bizarre reality proved not to be a dream.

Amidst her confusion, there was one thing she could be certain about- these numbers had nothing to do with her or Emma. After all, the older lady was confined for almost thirty years.

That left her with Levi as the prime suspect for stirring up this commotion. The likes, comments, and shares could not have been for anyone else, she believed.

Does Levi hold so much influence overseas?

She rubbed her eyes and checked the numbers again.

Nothing changed from before.

“Oh right, there are many comments. Let me check them.”

Opening the comments section, one comment caught her eye.

“The God of War of Erudia?” she muttered to herself.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1105

Just when Zoey was able to continue reading the comment, it got deleted.

There was nothing else but a blank page reflecting on her phone screen.

Refreshing the page, she realized that all the other comments were gone too.

All the likes also disappeared.

It was as if nothing had happened and everything was normal again.

“Phew, it was just a system error! That was so scary... Those billions of likes... Unimaginable.” It was not uncommon to see such system hiccups- she had encountered them before in other software. The reflected engagement numbers similarly went completely haywire during the glitches.

The tension left her body as she heaved a sigh of relief and broke into an amused chuckle.

But the truth was far from what she assumed. What really happened was that someone from Erudia noticed Zoey’s photos and immediately locked her account from further viewing by others.

Zoey conveyed the ordeal to her husband, telling him how the uploaded photos on her overseas account met with a system error, causing them to gain billions of likes and tens of millions of shares. “The comments were also really amusing- one read something like ‘The God of War’ or something... ”

“What?” Levi froze on the spot. His expression turned increasingly strained.

Realizing the gravity of the situation, he immediately grew worried over the safety of Zoey and Emma. His concerns only worsened considering that his wife was pregnant.

He was aware of the forces they were up against- they were not simply just the wealthy ancient families, but also included the Eighteen-Nation Alliance, hundreds of foreign powers, and tens of thousands of organizations.

The combined forces were overpowering, and anyone could strike anywhere at any time.

A cloud of uncertainty loomed, and that was what really shook Levi's confidence.

He was not exactly scared for himself. Rather, he was fearful of this great unknown and how that might jeopardize his loved ones.

He knew he could protect Zoey as long as he was by her side.

But there could be times when he might not be able to be with her.

There were many things that could go very wrong, and he was not sure if he could be omniscient enough to come up with a fool-proof counterplan.

Levi grew increasingly vexed.

As he took a deep breath, his unusual countenance made Zoey both worried and curious.

"Darling, are you alright?"

Levi could only force a chuckle as he responded, "Billions of likes? Such a thing can happen?"

Internally, he made up his mind. Rather than waste all his energy worrying, he knew he had to be more drastic this time. Whoever dared to touch his loved ones would meet with a terrible fate.

Even if they tried running, he would hunt them down regardless. And when he managed to do so, he would not hesitate in killing them.

In other words, whoever was bold enough to offend him would be inviting in their own demises.

Zoey's voice snapped him out of his rumination. "The numbers were like that because there was a system error. I met such a thing before too! It's such a shame that I didn't read the majority of the comments..." "

Her tone was laced with a tinge of regret as she wished she had read more of the comments before they were gone.

Meanwhile, Levi tried his best to change the subject. With a plastered smile, he replied, "Alright, don't fret about it. Take care of your body and when our baby comes, we can take as many photos as you like!"

Posting photos of one's newborn was the trend now, and Levi could already imagine how Zoey would be constantly doing so once their child was born.

His sole mission now was to ensure that nothing would go wrong until the day of labor came.

The undertaking would be challenging- he would have to nip every danger in its bud while keeping Zoey in the dark about everything.

Most importantly, he had to ensure that not only North Hampton, but the whole of Erudia would be an impenetrable place.

He would not tolerate any trouble.

At this point, he could not help but snigger at how insignificant Tyrone's bet was as compared to his current predicament.

While everyone thought that the Garrison clan was the greatest obstacle he had to overcome, the man knew better; the Garrisons were honestly not worth even a mention.

Instead, the current crisis deserved more of his attention right now. If this fiasco had not happened, he would have been more confident that no mishaps would occur during the pregnancy period. But what was done was done- he could only move on and prepare a contingency plan.

Springing into action, he found Azure Dragon and instructed, "The situation is pretty dire right now. We need to prepare early."

The Protector Chapter 1106

“Understood. From now on, we’re peril-ridden! No matter how we tried to stop them, there would still be enemies entering Erudia,” Phoenix said with a frown.

After all, if the enemy were indeed coming against Levi, they would not send someone mediocre for sure.

Those sent would definitely be the best of the best!

Hence, everyone’s responsibilities would turn much heavier.

Levi heaved a sigh. “I don’t wish to trouble too many people regarding this, so just arrange my own people for this. Phoenix, please check which team is idle at the moment.”

Phoenix bore a relaxed smile and replied, “Sir, it so happens that the Specter Army has completed their mission.”

“Good, then summon the Specter Army and the Cavalry Regiment. That would do!” Levi commanded.

There were not many people in the Specter Army. In fact, it was made up of only fifty members.

It was a special army established by Levi.

As the name itself implied, they were just like specters, moving elusively on the battlefield.

They often killed without exposing themselves. Like assassins, they attacked the Achilles heel and slew with just one move.

The Specter Army was extremely terrifying.

The most crucial point was that most of their enemies weren't even aware of the existence of such an army.

Seeing them implied that Death was after you.

The Specter Army under the God of War remained unknown to many people.

Other than Levi, no one even knew what they were like.

Not even Azure Dragon and others.

This army worked directly under the command of Levi.

Even though the existence of the Specter Army was unknown to others, the enemy was aware of the existence of such a troop and they were terrified to the bone.

It was hard to tell when they would be targeted by these specters of the battlefield.

With the Specter Army and the Cavalry Regiment, in addition to his own presence, no one could really lay a hand on Zoey.

Zoey was totally unaware that a photograph had brought such a huge turmoil to the entire world.

Tens of thousands of forces and organizations abroad started to get restless.

Countless of eyes were fixated on her.

Her net worth was also rocketing, reaching a hundred billion...

There were already bounties issued overseas amounting to a hundred million for providing specific information about Zoey alone and another hundred billion for capturing her. In addition, whoever was able to kill Levi would be awarded two hundred billion.

Apart from that, the amount of the bounty kept rising.

Meanwhile, on a small island abroad.

It was the territory of Atlantis.

Atlantis was a member of the Eighteen-Nation Alliance which had been defeated by Levi in the past.

There were a few helicopters on the small island and a luxurious yacht in the dock.

There were also plenty of fully-armed guards standing around.

In a residence on the island, dozens of people were discussing some issues.

There were photos of Zoey and Emma on the screen.

These people present at the residence had all been defeated by Levi. They were from the Eighteen-Nation Alliance and had been subjugated to Levi for almost five years, mortified execrably.

When Zoey's photo was exposed, they were the most excited party. In fact, they were also the ones who couldn't wait to be the first to take action.

"We had to get ahead of everyone. If we kill Levi Garrison, the shame we've experienced all these years would all be cleared!"

"Mmm, so then, our next step would be to send thirty top fighters to Erudia to capture these two women!"

"Hold on, would thirty of them be sufficient?"

"It should suffice. These top fighters selected this time were enough to rival the top fighters on the Saber Leaderboard of Erudia! With their synergy and our cooperation in the dark, we would definitely succeed!"

"It's not good enough. I'll send a hundred well-trained fighters to disturb Levi Garrison beforehand and then we'll let these thirty men handle him. This way, the probability of winning would be higher."

The Protector Chapter 1107

These defeated foes of Levi were busy discussing how to secure their win.

They must capture Zoey and Emma or either of them. They had come out with a lot of plans, and all they wanted was success!

It was different now that Levi Garrison's weakness had been identified.

In the past, they hadn't been able to devise any scheme. Even when Levi Garrison stood there and let them strike, no one could have killed him.

Not only the Eighteen-Nation Alliance that had been overcome by Levi was preying on Zoey, but it was also the same with many other forces from different nations. They were all targeting Zoey.

One of them was Wheldrake which had been conquered by Beasts led by Williamson.

Their arrogance was entirely crushed by Williamson from the West.

This time, after getting to know about Zoey's existence, they started weaving a nasty plot.

Wheldrake was belligerent with its hard-hitting and rugged people. The folks in Wheldrake advocated for martial arts as a way of life.

There was also a leaderboard in Wheldrake which was known as the Saga Leaderboard, similar to the Saber Leaderboard in Erudia. Everyone in Wheldrake regarded those listed on the leaderboard like gods.

This time, everyone on the Saga Leaderboard, which consisted of a hundred skillful fighters would all sneak into North Hampton.

Preparing to capture both Zoey and Emma alive.

In order to deal with Levi, Wheldrake had gone all in this round.

Revealing each and every one of their trump card.

Not only Wheldrake but there were many other forces and organizations sending their people to worm their way into North Hampton as well.

Therefore, there were indeed plenty of formidable fighters targeting Levi this round.

An unfathomably large number of them.

Even assassins, mercenaries, and hackers had been attracted by the enormous bounty and joined in.

All in all, the menace awaiting was far worse than what one could imagine...

Not even Levi had expected this.

He had underestimated how horrifying he was to his enemies.

As soon as any of his weakness was identified, the enemies would counter and target frantically.

The hostility faced this time was unprecedented.

His enemies had risked everything to come against him.

As time passed, the information obtained about Zoey and Emma was getting more and more detailed.

Even information regarding the background of Levi was obtained.

They had even discovered the Garrison family.

Initially, they intended to take advantage of the Garrison family but after figuring out the relationship between Levi and the Garrison family, everyone gave up on their initial intent.

There was no advantage to be taken; it was totally pointless.

On the other hand, in the Garrison clan in Oakland City.

Tyrone Garrison just hung up the phone with a perplexed expression.

"Is Levi so well known? This has been the fifth person calling to ask me about Levi's identity..." He marveled.

The rest of them asked, "Sir, what's going on? What happened to Levi?"

Tyrone was equally bewildered. "I have no idea either. All the foreign family forces which have ties with the Garrison family were looking for me today to verify the identity of Levi. There were already five of them calling; I'm sure there would be more to come! This really makes me wonder if Levi has some prominent status unknown to us!"

Tyrone was truly puzzled by this strange happening.

Not even Damien receives this kind of treatment.

How could Levi have such privilege?

Just as he pondered about this, there were incoming calls to confirm Levi's identity again.

Dozens of them.

Going berserk.

"What? Levi's connection with the Garrison family is even known to forces abroad? Sure enough, bad news has wings!"

"As expected, now that the fact of this rascal's identity as an illegitimate child has spread, even the forces abroad would mock this top ancient family of ours in Erudia!"

...

The Garrison family members were utterly displeased.

They thought that the Garrison family's reputation was powerful enough within and without their home country.

And it was because others had found out about Levi's identity as an illegitimate son.

Just then, Tyrone received another phone call from overseas.

"Are you making a bet with Levi?" after confirming Levi's identity, the person on the line couldn't help but ask.

The Protector Chapter 1108

Tyrone answered with his subconscious mind, "Yes, what's wrong?"

"You're such a moron! How dare you make a bet with him? Now everyone overseas knew it!"

With that, the person ended the call ferociously.

"What?"

Tyrone was completely confounded.

Why does he call me a "moron" after getting to know my relationship with Levi?

What is going on?

In fact, the person's intention was simple.

He was berating Tyrone for his ludicrous bravery of making a bet with the God of War of Erudia.

Is he mad?

The God of War has conquered hundreds of nations outside Erudia; he's the worst nightmare of tens of thousands of foreign family forces.

And this moronic Tyrone dares to make a bet with him.

Isn't it ridiculous?

“Oh, I get it! He’s berating me for demeaning my superior status to bet against an illegitimate desperado. Isn’t this discrediting? It’s indeed a foolish act! Especially now that everyone abroad has come to know the existence of Levi, they would regard my decision to be exceedingly mindless! Levi is definitely unworthy of my attention!” Tyrone put on a helpless face.

But he was indeed at a loss for solutions.

Levi got hold of his secrets, leaving him with no other option than to bet on it.

How could he have known that he got it totally wrong?

Between him and Levi, the one with a lowly status was he himself!

“Ah, I see! So now the Garrison family is being ridiculed by these people abroad thanks to Levi!”

“He’s indeed the disgrace of the family! Sooner or later he would make the Garrison family nailed on the pillars of shame!”

“True. A genius like Damien thrives in obscurity and a trash like Levi is infamous!”

...

The Garrison clan had absolutely no idea about what was happening in Erudia.

Neither were they aware that forces from overseas had erupted.

Within half a day’s time, the situation of the entire globe had taken an unexpected turn. Everything was undergoing enormous changes.

All because of the b*stard in their eyes.

Just because of a single person alone, the entire world had gone frenzied.

Damien smiled and said, “Father, I’ve heard that Martin would be going against Levi soon. He’s no angel!”

“Haha, let others teach him a lesson lest that rascal is boastful.” Tyrone laughed.

As anticipated, Martin departed to North Hampton.

Along with him was Tiffany.

Tiffany had dressed up this time, preparing to meet Levi in her most graceful comportment.

To make him regret!

On the other hand, Levi had no plans to let Zoey and his mother go out anymore. There were inevitable risks outside.

He was constantly staying by their side to take care of them.

Meanwhile, there was news from Phoenix that a lot of skilled fighters had already snuck into North Hampton but it was difficult to identify them.

Right then, there were hundreds of pairs of eyes observing Levi.

There were hazards everywhere.

“Phoenix, North Hampton doesn’t need to be fortified; let them all in and we can wipe them out in one shot!”

Levi commanded.

All he wanted to do was to thrash them so dreadfully that fears were struck into their hearts.

So that they dared not come up with nasty thoughts anymore.

“With me around, Erudia is the forbidden ground. Don’t you all understand?”

Levi had a feeling that many people had forgotten what pain felt like in the past six months when he was dormant.

Within a few hours, the number of fighters entering from abroad had reached thousands.

A large proportion of them was on par with the big-time fighters on the Saber Leaderboard of Erudia, especially when all the fighters on the Saga Leaderboard from Wheldrake had also come.

They had already hidden around Levi and his people, waiting for a reasonable chance to act.

The Protector Chapter 1109

“Whoa!”

At the North Hampton Airport.

After getting off the plane, Martin took in a long breath; he had come specifically for Levi.

After all, the engagement has been called off. And the Garrison family gives no d*mn about him now.

Hence, Martin had no more concerns. Levi has to be severely injured if not dead. That was his sole purpose.

There were other people who came on the same flight as Martin.

They were all wearing a hat and were in leather jackets. Tattoos could be vaguely seen on their faces.

They even took a glance at Martin when they passed him by.

The North Hampton Airport that day was filled with an unusually high number of foreigners.

“Mr. Preston, it’s very strange at the airport here today,” just then, one of the personal bodyguards of Martin said with a hushed voice.

“What’s wrong?”

Tiffany and Martin looked in his direction simultaneously.

“This airport is filled with extremely skilled fighters everywhere. I could sense that everyone here is unusual!”

The bodyguard uttered while he looked around.

“Exactly! I could feel that too. There’re many top fighters around and they don’t seem to be from Erudia.”

“And those are only what we’re able to observe. I’m sure there are more who are even more powerful than us!”

“What happened? Did something go wrong?”

...

The other bodyguards could feel the same.

There was danger everywhere in this North Hampton Airport. There were too many powerful fighters around.

The majority were those who were stronger than them.

Their intuition was right.

Ever since Levi told Phoenix to remove the fortification, many fighters had come swaggering.

There were three groups of people who had come together in the same plane as Martin.

“Hmm... What’s happening? What are so many fighters doing in North Hampton Airport?” Tiffany was confused.

So was Martin.

“I heard that something happened abroad but I don’t know the specific details.”

“Could it be something to do with what we’re here for?” One of the bodyguards asked.

“But that shouldn’t involve North Hampton. In my opinion, other than the fact that Levi Garrison is here, there’s nothing much about North Hampton. Even if there’s anything huge about to happen, it should be in Oakland City. How could it possibly be in some small towns like this?” Every word that came out of Martin was spoken with disdain.

They were from Oakland City so when they looked at other places, they felt privileged very naturally.

Especially both Tiffany and Martin were from imperial families.

Hence, they were all the more snobbish, bearing the thought that nothing major should happen in such an insignificant place.

Unlike Oakland City which was the real grand place.

Even the exposure there was far greater and better than that of such a small place.

That was the reason why they were all overweening when they faced Levi.

Not to mention the stronger Garrison clan.

“Forget it. Let’s go find Levi directly!” A cold glint flashed across Martin’s eyes.

“Sure!” Tiffany nodded in agreement.

She took off her sunglasses and her face showed up.

“Whoa... She’s so beautiful!”

When Tiffany’s face was revealed, there was an uproar in the airport.

Many people were surrounding her, trying to capture photographs of her.

After all, Tiffany had put on the most exquisite makeup and was wearing the most noble and fashionable outfit.

She was incredibly stunning.

An inexplicably elegant air was wafting from her. That was cultivated from living in an affluent family since young. It was something even the celebrities couldn't compare.

During her previous visit, Tiffany was afraid that Levi would refuse to call off the engagement due to her attractiveness. Hence, she had deliberately made herself appear unappealing.

They were there to call off their engagement but Levi made a remark that she was no match for his wife.

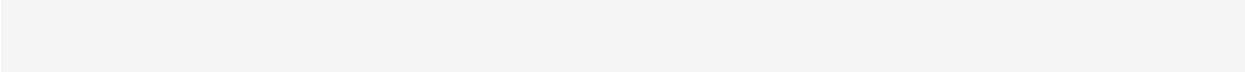
She had been keeping this in mind ever since.

This time, she had come in her best shape.

She couldn't wait to see Levi's response when he saw her.

Would he still say she was not as pretty as his wife?

"Levi Garrison, I've come. Are you ready?" Tiffany curled her lips into a gracious smile.



The Protector Chapter 1110

Meanwhile, Levi was accompanying Zoey.

He got a call from Seth Wilson, who told him that someone was looking for him.

Levi was stunned. Wow, are these people so straightforward now? Coming directly in my face?

But when he heard that it was actually Tiffany and Martin, he was relieved instantly.

Oh, it's actually these two morons.

"Seth, tell them that I have no time for them. Ask them to get lost!"

Levi was preparing for a herculean enemy and had no time to entertain them. They were nothing to him at this point in time.

On the other hand, outside of Morris Group.

Martin and the lot were waiting anxiously.

Seth came out and spoke in a placid tone, "My boss is occupied at the moment, please leave immediately!"

"What?"

Martin was exasperated. With their status and background, Levi had the nerve to ignore them?

That's outrageous!

"There was the Garrison family covering for him before, but why is he still so cocky now? He's totally disregarding us!" Martin asked furiously.

Likewise, it had never occurred to Tiffany that Levi could be so haughty that he had refused to even meet her.

"You better get back to Levi now and tell him that if he doesn't see us, I'll personally stir up trouble for him." Martin intimidated.

"Please leave now. Mr. Garrison is really busy with other things and had no time for some nobody like you!" Seth waved his hand impatiently.

Even though he didn't know what happened, he could tell Levi was occupied with something big recently.

"Nobody?" Martin and Tiffany pointed toward themselves and asked.

As the descendants of the imperial families in Oakland City, how could they be nobody?

Is he joking?

Nevertheless, comparing to the hundreds of nations overseas, they were indeed nobody.

"Fine! Levi Garrison, you jack*ss! We'll do things the hard way then!"

Tiffany was also unimpressed.

When she first came here, Levi regarded her with disdain. This time, she had come in her best appearance but she was shut out.

"No way, Levi Garrison must see me!" There was a steely glint flashing across Tiffany's eyes.

She wanted to stand in front of Zoey and let Levi make a thorough comparison, hearing from him in person that she was better than Zoey.

Night fell, and darkness descended upon North Hampton, which also signified the forthcoming peril.

The top fighters from the Eighteen-Nation Alliance including Wheldrake and Atlantis had come together. There were also fighters from some other overseas nations, not forgetting the mercenaries, assassins, forces from the Western Dark World, and even fighters from some large consortiums who continued to gather around.

Initially, every distinct force wanted to be the first to capture Zoey and Emma, making their names in the world.

However, according to information gathered, Levi had been keeping them company and there was no opportunity at all for them to act.

Apart from that, everyone knew full well that Levi must have been aware of their actions and was ready with heavy defense.

If it were in the past, they would have no possibility of winning.

But this round, Levi had two weaknesses. And they could try.

Hence, everyone had given up on firing their attacks alone and instead, gathered as many of them around as possible.

They had to strengthen their power and create synergies to fight with Levi in his face.

It would be best if they were able to separate Levi from the two targets and then get their hands on Zoey or Emma.

“The result of this is very clear— we would be severely hampered! The God of War of Erudia was immensely potent, I’m afraid half of us would be left, buried forever in this land. Despite that, the order given to us is to strike at all costs!”

...

Owing to the hatred toward Levi, every one of these fighters had prepared to die in this battle.

“What’s going on here?”

A group of people showed up out of the blue.

They were none other than Martin and Tiffany.

“Wait a minute... It seems like an upheaval has occurred and our winning rate has gone higher!”

The Protector Chapter 1111

Martin and the lot had come directly to the manor of Levi and shouted, "Levi Garrison, if you're a real man, you better come out and face us! If you're scared already, come out and kneel down before me, I might consider forgiving you for once!"

Tiffany and Martin were of the opinion that Levi was afraid of them.

He had been protected by the Garrison family so he was on his high horse and even dared to beat Martin.

But it was different now.

"Huh? What's happening?"

The thousands of fighters who had been hiding around were just about to strike when they were confounded by what was happening right in front of them.

They paused their actions and observed what just happened.

Especially when they heard that Tiffany and Martin were also here to look for Levi.

Martin and Tiffany were still trying to provoke with nasty words.

And Martin was even counting down.

If Levi was not coming out, then they would barge in.

"Ten! Nine! Eight... One!"

As soon as he finished counting down, Martin was ready to get in.

When suddenly, a figure emerged.

It was Levi! Everyone, regardless of those in the dark or Martin and the lot, was astounded.

When the few thousands of fighters from hundreds of nations saw the “devilish” face of Levi Garrison, all of them were in a frenzied state.

Their blood coagulated, and their bodies were trembling with frosty air wafting from them. Fearful beams were shooting from their timid eyes.

It was this man standing in front of them who had conquered hundreds of nations abroad, rendering every man to put an end to their greed and cease having any thoughts on Erudia.

He was like a “Demon King” to millions of people.

Seeing him again made the blood pressure of everyone around rise and they began to feel agitated.

It had never occurred to them that this war machine who was also the famous God of War was just like an ordinary man in his usual life.

What kind of a person was he?

After being stunned for a while, it suddenly dawned on them.

Levi Garrison has come out...

Doesn't that mean he's away from Zoey and Emma?

With thousands of brilliant fighters from over a hundred nations around, even just a ten-meter distance between Levi and Zoey was enough.

After all, the victory or defeat of a battle between fighters of top-notch would be decided in the blink of an eye.

Ten meters was a distance sufficient for them to strike.

Not to mention that Levi had left the main building and came to the entrance of the manor. It was in fact a distance of over a thousand meters...

Which meant that Levi was totally separated from Zoey and Emma.

It was a huge opportunity to them.

Increasing their winning rate greatly.

They knew very well that there must be other people guarding Zoey and Emma and they were familiar with those people as well.

Such as the Five Great Wars Regiment under the God of War or something like that.

Despite that, as long as the Demon King, Levi was not around, they were fearless.

The few fighters in the lead started allocating tasks among themselves.

Even though Levi had been separated from Zoey and Emma, they had to come up with a plan to prevent Levi from retreating back to the manor.

Therefore, they would need to allocate half or more than half of these fighters to stop Levi.

Killing Levi was unattainable.

They knew all too well how powerful he was.

They could only try to stop him to buy more time for themselves.

The rest of the people would enter the manor and take away Zoey and Emma in the shortest time possible.

In this way, they could threaten Levi Garrison with these two women.

That was exactly their goal.

After arranging everything, the fighters advanced according to the plan.

There were around a thousand of them approaching and entering the manor quietly in the dark.

The rest of them kept their attention on Levi.

The reason Levi had come out was of course due to the presence of Martin and Tiffany.

They had been shouting for half the day in front of the gate.

“Levi Garrison, you’ve finally come out. I thought you were scared.” Martin sneered.

Tiffany tilted her head up as proud as a peacock, appearing in front of Levi in her best outlook.

The Protector Chapter 1112

At that moment, Tiffany was like the brightest gem, shimmering brilliantly in the dark.

Her beauty was so breathtaking, making everyone who set eyes on her in awe.

Perfect!

Unbearably perfect!

Regardless of whether it was her face, her body, or her demeanor, Tiffany was flawless.

She was definitely the prettiest woman in Oakland City.

Coupled with her lofty manner, she was just like a goddess who was distinctive from ordinary folks.

She believed that no man could be unimpressed by her beauty.

There had never been anyone who was not stunned by her appearance.

Even the most promising man, Damien from the Garrison family, could not stay cool in her presence.

Tiffany stood across from Levi without speaking a word but was intentionally flaunting her attractive appearance from time to time.

Together with Martin, she had imagined how obsessed and stunned Levi would be.

However, right in the next second, they were utterly disappointed.

Levi glanced around very quickly without landing his gaze on any of the two persons in front of him.

It was as though the extraordinary beauty of Tiffany was just a common sight for him.

Being neglected in such a way by Levi, Tiffany could not bear it any longer.

She had taken well over six hours to dress and makeup so elaborately just to impress Levi. Wasn't that to make him regret?

However, Levi had no response.

This made her awfully unsettled.

Tiffany even suspected that it was because the lighting was too dim that Levi did not see her clearly.

"Levi, look at me..."

Tiffany shouted at Levi.

Levi turned to her. His gaze was clear and cool, without even the tiniest ripple.

He was completely unmoved by Tiffany's beauty; neither did he have any other thoughts.

Tiffany could discern from his clear eyes that Levi was not acting.

He was indeed apathetic to her beauty.

How come?

How could there be any man on this earth who could withstand my charm?

It was indeed not Tiffany being over confident.

Her looks were indeed top-notch. Otherwise, she wouldn't be known as the prettiest woman of Oakland City. There had never been any man who was nonchalant to her as such. Besides, she had even come fully prepared, putting on her makeup and everything.

And yet, she was still ignored by Levi.

Why?

Tiffany couldn't get her head around it.

Unless he doesn't like women!

Tiffany could only think of this possibility.

"Levi Garrison, didn't you notice that I was different from last time?" Tiffany couldn't help asking.

"Yes, you're different from last time."

Levi answered absent-mindedly. He was focusing his attention on the top fighters hiding in the dark.

"Then don't you have anything to say?" Tiffany asked tentatively.

She wanted to hear from Levi that he had regretted and that his wife could never compare to her.

Even Martin and his men were looking at Levi with anticipation of hearing answers of the same sorts.

However, to their surprise, Levi warned, "If you want to live, get lost immediately, stay the farther the better!"

His words caught them totally off guard.

Tiffany and others were rooted to the ground at what Levi said.

What did he just say? Did he just ask us to get lost?

If we want to live?

What is that supposed to mean?

Tiffany was so irritable she stormed on the ground.

Isn't Levi supposed to say that he's remorseful?

"What are you trying to imply? Looking at me in my best shape here, don't you have anything to tell me? Am I not better than your wife?"

Tiffany's gaze fixated on Levi.

"This woman must be crazy! I've already advised you to leave but you chose not to. Now, there's no way out anymore even if you wish to."

Levi glared at Tiffany.

"What do you mean?"

Martin was equally baffled as Tiffany.

That was because the fighters who had been hiding in the dark were about to strike.

The Protector Chapter 1113

Almost instantly, Levi, Tiffany, and the others were surrounded by dark figures.

Each of them was exuding a threatening, murderous aura.

Although they were the elite fighters of various countries, they all had a black mask on them.

“What’s going on?”

Martin looked around at his surroundings. *It looks like there are more than a hundred people here.*

However, his guess was wrong. There were actually over a thousand, but most were still hidden in the shadows.

Tiffany’s delicate brows furrowed as confusion flashed past her eyes.

What’s going on?

Why are there so many people around?

Is this related to what Levi said earlier?

That I should scram if I wished to live?

“Levi Garrison, we meet again,” one of them sneered.

By hearing the voice, Levi knew it was one of the Eighteen-Nation Alliance's strongest fighters.

Sensing the murderous aura from the group of people, Martin couldn't help but ask, "Are you here to fight Levi too?"

"Of course. Why else are we here?" the person scoffed.

In response, Martin jeered, "I'll be frank with you. Levi is my prey, so you and your lot can get lost!"

"What?"

The thousands of elite fighters were stunned.

He dares to claim Erudia's God of War as his prey?

Who is he?

Seeing the dumbfounded looks on the others' faces, Martin scoffed, "Why, are my words not clear enough? Or maybe you're all deaf. Listen carefully; I'm Martin Preston, the heir of the imperial Preston family of Oakland City. Right now, Levi is my prey, and I'm the only one who can decide whether to beat him up or kill you. None of you have the right to lay a finger on him. Now, get lost!"

Martin took the opportunity to perform well in front of Tiffany.

After all, he reckoned that he couldn't always let others go up against Levi Garrison.

He had to show Tiffany how powerful he was.

Upon hearing Martin announcing his identity, everyone burst out laughing.

His status may have some prominence in Oakland City, but in the foreign elite fighters' minds, he was nothing but a simple housefly.

Hearing their laughter, Martin was about to say something when Levi interrupted. "That's enough. Stop talking. If you keep talking, you'll lose your life."

“Who dares to take my life? Them?” Martin scorned as he pointed at the foreign elite fighters.

Just the ten guards by my side are more than enough to clear the crowd.

Gush! Gush! Gush!

Just as the thought crossed his mind, blood could be seen spurting out from his guards in the next second.

Thump!

All ten of Martin’s guards now lay in a puddle of blood, no longer breathing.

Everything happened in a blink of an eye.

Martin had been learning martial arts since young, and he had achieved the second rank in the Heir Leaderboard with his own capabilities.

He was a capable fighter.

However, he wasn’t able to see who was the one who killed his guards, nor how they were killed.

What the hell just happened? It was over in a flash!

Realization finally dawned on him that those who were present were much stronger than he was.

With that thought in mind, Martin started sweating as his legs shook.

Tiffany, too, could feel a chill running down her spine. As she looked at dark shadows surrounding them, terror gnawed at her heart.

Subconsciously, she leaned closer to Levi.

“Levi, the you from before had no weaknesses. But now that you have your own family, they are your weaknesses!”

“In fact, some of us have gone for them. You won’t be able to save them in time!”

“Not unless you kill us all!” the crowd jeered.

A murderous look flitted across Levi’s eyes, and he laughed.

“Then so be it, I’ll kill every one of you!”

The Protector Chapter 1114

Standing beside Levi, both Tiffany and Martin were stupefied.

W-What's going on?

What kind of battle did we get ourselves involved in?

These elite fighters are all coming after Levi?

What scared them the most, however, was the fact that these elite fighters were stronger than they could ever imagine.

Despite them being a member of the imperial family in Oakland City and having seen most of the world, they felt like they were in unknown territory when it comes to these fighters and that struck fear into them.

Only several ancient families in Oakland City can have these many fighters at their beck and call, right?

Even Martin, who was ranked second in the Heir Leaderboard, could not comprehend the moves of the fighters around him.

He felt as if all his previous achievements were for naught as he stared at the fighters that were all stronger than him.

This is terrifying!

Martin's ten guards had been the best of the best, but they were killed in a blink of an eye.

How strong are these people in front of me?

Martin and Tiffany could not imagine the prowess they possessed.

Moreover, there were over a thousand surrounding them.

They were reminded of the unusual scene at the airport.

The guard had spoken the truth.

There really were many foreign fighters at the airport.

Something major really happened in North Hampton.

I can't believe all these foreign fighters are all here for Levi.

Isn't Levi an illegitimate son?

Could it be that he have another identity?

This scene is appalling.

Neither Tiffany nor he could think of any reason for them to be here for Levi; their minds were blank.

All they could do was to stand transfixed.

"Get them!"

The fighters surged forward.

Thump!

Having stood in the front, Martin was the first to receive a heavy punch.

The fighting skills that made the Preston family proud were useless here. In just a moment, Martin, who was ranked number two in the Heir Leaderboard was crushed in the battle.

All his opponent needed to do was give him a punch to send him flying.

He did not even get the chance to react.

After falling to the ground, the first thing Martin did was cough up blood. Then, he twitched for a few seconds before he stopped moving.

Although he was not dead, he would have to lie in the hospital for several months after this.

At that moment, both Tiffany and he finally understood the words Seth once said. Levi is busy. He has no time to deal with small-time characters like you.

As it turned out, they were indeed small-time characters.

They were no match for any of the thousand fighters around them.

What kind of identity does Levi have?

Why are so many fighters coming after him?

Is he involved in that major event that happened overseas?

Thump!

Just then, one of the fighter swung a sword toward Tiffany.

Her blood ran cold as she watched the blade that will soon end her life coming for her.

She could only shut her eyes in despair.

I'm going to die.

Suddenly, she felt a mighty hand on her shoulders, pulling her backward.

Her eyes flew open only to see it was Levi who saved her.

Elation filled her entire being.

As she stared at Levi's profile, her heart thumped in excitement.

Thump!

Levi sent the attacker flying with a swift kick.

"You have no right to kill the people of Erudia, even if they've committed the greatest crime!"

Levi's expression was as cold as ice.

"Ha! You're still protecting someone? Levi, you're just making things harder for yourself."

The surrounding fighters became even more excited.

Their initial plan was to waste Levi's time.

Now that Levi had to protect someone else, he was doing exactly what they wanted him to do.

"Feel free to give me all you've got."

The moment the words left his mouth, the fighters swarmed over.

Tiffany, who was protected by Levi, was stupefied.

Looking at the countless dark figures that were rushing over, her heart thumped erratically almost as if it was going to leap out of her body.

She had never seen a scene like this in her entire life.

Can he really deal with this?

"Close your eyes."

Levi's voice sounded beside her ears.

The Protector Chapter 1115

The Undefeatable God of War made his move.

Tiffany closed her eyes and covered her ears.

Shaking as she stood, she could feel a gust of wind slashing at her face like a blade. Instantly, her face was burning in pain.

Thump!

Another strong gust of wind smashed into her and pushed her onto the ground.

Tiffany opened her eyes, and the scene before her would be seared into her mind for the rest of her life.

Levi was like a battle God who had descended upon the mortal realm.

All he had with him was his guts and his iron-like fists.

Yet, the foreign fighters could not even defend themselves under his attacks.

In the brief moment she had her eyes closed, the floor was already littered with corpses.

With a quick count, she realized there were over three hundred bodies on the ground.

Her eyes had been closed for less than a minute.

The average-sized figure in the middle suddenly seemed to be towering over everyone.

He's a hero!

He's the undefeatable God of War!

A sharp scent of blood assaulted her senses.

The shocking scene made her unable to tear her eyes away.

More than the shock that she felt was the epiphany that dawned upon her.

As the most beautiful woman in Oakland City, Tiffany had seen every kind of situation and every type of person.

Nevertheless, this was something she had never come across before today.

This man, who was like a God of War, was the kind of person she hated and looked down upon.

Yet, the shocking epiphany that she was now experiencing came from none other than the man before her.

Who is he?

Is he really just the Garrison family's illegitimate son?

Is he simply just the bastard that everyone's talking about?

On the battlefield, the more Levi fought, the stronger he became.

His fighting prowess sent despair into the hearts of the other fighters.

This can't be.

Levi has been living as a hermit for so long. How can he still be this powerful?

No.

He's even more powerful than before!

We're doomed.

Aside from the despair that the fighters were feeling, they had noticed that Levi did not seem to have the intention to rush into the manor to save anyone.

Instead, the goal he had in his mind seemed to be killing every single one of them.

Did we step into a trap?

The people we sent in might be in danger.

They might not even get a glimpse of Zoey and Emma.

Meanwhile, in the manor, the foreign fighters rushed in.

To their disappointment, they found no one in it.

There were no signs of Zoey and Emma.

However, the best stalkers had been monitoring the two and they were sure that neither of the women had left the manor.

No matter how impressive Levi was, or how terrifying his subordinates were, the two women could not have disappeared without a trace in front of the foreign fighters.

It was simply impossible.

Before they could think of the reason, someone ordered, "Retreat!"

If Zoey and Emma were absent, that meant this was a trap.

Just as they were about to retreat, a voice echoed in the room. "Are you all leaving just like this?"

With that, the Five Great Wars Regiment, Cavalry Regiment, Specter Army, Beasts, and Amethyst Guards all surrounded the foreign fighters.

What came next was Levi's men trashing their opponents.

White Tiger, especially, enjoyed his time. After all, it had been a while since he had been so excited.

It was a one-sided battle where one party crushed the other.

None of the elite fighters escaped.

Outside the manor.

Tiffany had a look of disbelief on her face.

She had just witnessed Levi destroying all of his opponents.

There were over a thousand people!

When Martin opened his eyes again, he was surrounded by bodies.

This time, he fainted from fright.

Horror.

It's pure horror!

This was hell on earth.

The whole time, Tiffany never stopped shaking.

The man in front of her was like the devil.

The distance between them had never been wider.

"You used to be losers. You're still losers now."

Indifference was the only emotion in Levi's eyes as he looked at the defeated fighters.

Staring at Levi, Tiffany shouted, "W-Who are you?"

The Protector Chapter 1116

She could not imagine who Levi truly was.

But she was sure that he was definitely not just a bastard.

Tiffany finally had a better understanding of Levi after what she witnessed.

Levi had ignored the Garrison family and even bet against Tyrone not because he was ignorant but because he could; he had the power to challenge the Garrison family.

At that moment, Tiffany could no longer compare Levi to any member of the Garrison family.

She now had to compare Levi with the entire Garrison family.

Damien, the genius of the Garrison family, was once the excellent man she favored.

Now, however, she did not even want to compare him with Levi.

If Damien had been in this battle, he would have died within seconds.

Even I myself would have been dead.

However, this man was undefeatable; his fighting prowess far exceeds the rest.

He even saved me from danger.

With that thought in mind, Tiffany knew the man before her was not as simple as he looked.

After all, he was someone who could make the Garrison clan of the Oakland City remorseful.

“You don’t need to know.”

Levi cast her an indifferent glance.

Looking at his back, Tiffany felt a pang of sadness and hopelessness in her heart.

She realized that no matter how beautiful she was, she could never make Levi interested in her.

In fact, he was worthy to ignore her.

But isn’t he being too apathetic?

Does he really not have any feelings for me?

After all, I’m such a gorgeous lady.

Can’t he even soften his tone when he talks to me?

But... Wait a minute.

He saved me earlier.

Thinking of the way Levi’s hand was on her shoulder, delight filled her heart.

That means he feels something for me.

Otherwise, why would he save me?

I did such a despicable thing. Isn’t it better to kill me?

So why did he save me?

It could only mean that he isn’t completely ignoring me.

“Thank you for saving my life!”

Even after everything had died down, Tiffany was still trembling.

All she wanted earlier was to make Levi regret; she never expected to be involved in a great battle like this.

It felt like hell for her.

“I don’t need your thanks, I just hope that you’ll stop harassing me from now on,” Levi responded without turning around.

Biting down on her lower lip, Tiffany muttered, “Why... Why are you so cold to me? Didn’t you save me earlier?”

Tiffany had come to a simple conclusion—Levi must have saved her because he liked her.

Why else would he save me, but not Martin and the others?

“I did save you, but only because you’re from Erudia. That’s all,” Levi clarified in a frigid tone.

“What about Martin? He’s from Erudia too. And what about his subordinates? Why didn’t you save them?” Tiffany questioned without hesitation.

In a placid tone, Levi replied, “I didn’t save Martin because I know he’ll survive.”

After all, Martin had been training since young; he would survive the punch from the fight earlier.

“As for his subordinates, they’re not from Erudia, so why should I save them?” Levi threw the question back at her.

Tiffany froze.

Levi was right. Martin’s guards were not from Erudia; they were from Raysonia.

“Let me make myself clear. I saved you for no other reasons than because you’re Erudian.”

With that, Levi turned and left.

Tiffany could not react as she stood rooted to the ground.

Nothing had gone according to what she imagined would happen in her trip to North Hampton.

Instead, she had gotten herself into such a fiasco.

This was the first time she saw the true side of Levi.

In the beginning, she thought the only one who could match her was Damien. At the same time, the one she preferred was the legendary God of War.

Now, another person had entered her list—Levi.

But why is he acting so cold toward me?

The Protector Chapter 1117

Soon, someone sent Martin and Tiffany away.

At the same time, they cleaned up the battlefield.

When Levi returned to the manor, the signs of battle had long since been erased.

It was as if no one had come.

No one could have imagined that over two thousand elite fighters were annihilated.

Even until the moment they died, they never knew where Zoey and Emma were.

Neither did they ever find out when the two women left.

Even to their last breaths, they wondered why they never found out the whereabouts of Zoey and Emma.

They were so sure they had eyes on them.

In actuality, Zoey and Emma never took a step out of the manor.

After all, no one could take them away while elites from various countries had their eyes on them.

In other words, the whole world was focused on Zoey and Emma.

It was impossible for them to leave.

As such, the two had always been in the manor.

Their seeming absence could be attributed to Levi's design of their house.

Back then, he had been extra cautious, and he made a secret space under the manor.

It was a precaution in case of a day like this day would happen. If he could not protect them in time, Zoey and the others could hide in this space.

He never thought it would ever be used.

Levi had wanted to lure all that conspire to harm him into one spot so that he could get rid of them at once.

However, it was difficult for his enemy to make a move as he was always in the manor.

As such, he thought that he might not be able to lure them out all at once.

Just as he was looking for an opportunity to leave the manor so that he could draw the fight to him, Martin and Tiffany came.

They gave him the perfect opportunity to leave the manor and let his enemy make a move.

With how everything panned out in the end, he had to admit that these two had been a great help to his plan.

"This feels great! I haven't felt like this for ages!" White Tiger bellowed.

"They're all wiped out this time! This must be a great blow to their plans!" everyone laughed.

Soon, news from North Hampton spread across Erudia. In a blink of an eye, the entire world found out about it.

The Eighteen-Nation Alliance and other forces were dumbfounded.

We've failed!

We actually failed.

Not to mention we've failed so miserably. Just like that, we've lost everyone...

How strong is he?

With just one battle, over two thousand elite fighters gathered by tens of thousands of forces abroad were all wiped out.

The battle once again made the mention of God of War rock the entire world.

The devil-like man was still as powerful as ever.

He was still undefeatable, despite having weaknesses.

As previously commented, he was like a God that no mortal could lay a finger on.

“The God of War of Erudia once again makes a shocking move. He wiped out the entire army and won against hundreds of countries.”

That was the news that spread across the world.

At that moment, the world was in an uproar.

The God of War of Erudia was stronger than before, and he was still undefeatable.

Once again, the words “Erudia is a forbidden ground as long as he was around” were proven to be right.

No one would dare to lay a finger on Erudia anymore.

The citizens of Erudia were cheering.

The victory made the quiet Erudia flew into an uproar once again.

The more powerful Erudia was, the prouder its citizens were.

Moreover, the battle had relieved the citizens of their frustrations.

It had taught the invaders a tough lesson—That Erudia was not a country to be belittled.

The God of War was pushed to greater heights once more.

Nowadays, the dreams of many children were to protect their country and make Erudia prosper even more.

Before that, the children were developing the wrong morals as all of them were hoping to become celebrities instead.

Tiffany and Martin returned by plane.

When they entered the plane, they realized every passenger had a look of joy on their faces.

What's going on?

Tiffany was burning with curiosity.

"The God of War has shown everyone the greatness of Erudia again! It's so satisfying to hear about the battle at North Hampton," someone yelled.

"Wait... What? The God of War?"

Tiffany's face paled.

The Protector Chapter 1118

This entire time, Tiffany had been busy treating Martin in a dazed state.

She knew nothing about the significant news of Erudia.

But the moment she heard the mention of the North Hampton battle...

Isn't that what I've experienced first-hand?

Are they saying that the man that was involved in that battle was the God of War?

Levi is actually the God of War?

"He's the hero that I've been yearning for!"

Upon realizing it, Tiffany jumped to her feet. She was delighted and in disbelief at the same time.

Her abnormal action made everyone turned to look at her.

Even Martin shot her a look that was reserved for lunatics.

He's actually Erudia's God of War...

We were in an epic fight...

Is this bad luck or good luck?

I can't tell.

Tiffany finally understood what Levi's words meant.

He saved them because they were Erudians.

He was the God of War who put the welfare of Erudia and its people in his heart.

Other than admiration and adoration, Tiffany now had respect for Levi too.

The world that Levi was in was a world they could never imagine reaching.

For the country, he was even able to let go of his hatred.

He knew Martin had come to take his life, but he still saved him.

To live in Erudia and be in the protection of the God of War was a blessing.

Tiffany stared out the window as a plethora of feelings settled in her heart.

After returning to Oakland City, no man would pique her interest anymore.

After all, a woman who had seen a lion would never settle for stray dogs.

Knowing that Martin was injured, Tiffany's grandfather and father, Jordan and Arvin Meyers, came to pick them up.

Even the head of the imperial Preston family, Leland, who was also Martin's grandfather, came.

"Why are you hurt so badly?"

Everyone panicked upon seeing Martin severely injured state.

"What's going on? Didn't you go to take revenge on Levi? Why are you hurt so badly? And what happened to the ten guards I've invited from Raysonia? Where are they?" Leland asked anxiously.

Tiffany pursed her lips and muttered, "They're all... Dead."

"What? They're all dead? What happened? Did Levi do this?" Leland questioned.

Leland, Jordan, Arvin all gulped.

If this really is Levi's doing, he's a monster!

After all, Martin is ranked second on the Heir Leaderboard.

Tiffany shook her head. "It wasn't Levi."

She was telling them the truth; Levi was not the one who did this.

"I knew it. How can Levi possibly do this? If he can defeat the person who was ranked number two of the Heir Leaderboard, the Garrison family would have definitely taken him in."

Arvin heaved a sigh of relief.

Both Tiffany and Martin, however, fell silent.

If they were honest with themselves, neither of them were in any place to discuss Levi's prowess.

"We came across the foreign fighters who were there to kill the God of War. They were the ones who killed the guards, and they even injured Martin," Tiffany informed.

"What? You were involved in that battle? The entire Oakland City is talking about it. The Garrison family has found out the identity of the God of War. They're now trying to find out which of the Garrison family's bloodline the God of War is from," Arvin exclaimed.

Martin's swollen eye twitched.

He's from the Garrison clan of Oakland City.

With a conflicted look, Tiffany muttered, "We've actually met the God of War. He was the one who saved us. If it weren't for him, both of us would have been dead by now."

“What? You saw the God of War?”

“What does he look like?”

The Protector Chapter 1119

Jordan, Arvin, and Leland were questioning them with a manic look on their faces.

Even though they were part of the imperial family in Oakland City, to meet the God of War was an honor for them.

Moreover, to hear that Tiffany and Martin were saved by the God of War was more than enough to send them into a frenzy.

They fixed their gazes on Tiffany, waiting to hear her answer about his appearance.

“He is the personification of greatness. From today onward, no man will have a place in my heart. If I can’t marry him, I’d rather stay single until I die.”

That was the only answer Tiffany gave them.

Arvin and the others understood her words instantly.

Tiffany must have seen a man of true perfection.

Otherwise, she would not have made a decision like this.

The one she was interested in earlier had been Damien, but even then, she never made any declaration like this.

They could barely believe these words would come out of her mouth after meeting the God of War.

“My dear, you have to think this through,” Arvin sighed.

“I’ve thought this through. Dad, please spread the news,” Tiffany pleaded.

Unexpectedly, Martin expressed his support for Tiffany’s declaration.

His support stunned the rest.

After all, Martin had always been in love with Tiffany, and he was even prepared to propose to her with the Preston family’s support.

Why is he giving up now?

The only explanation was because Martin was defeated by the God of War.

Soon, news of how the beauty of Oakland City, Tiffany, would only have eyes for the God of War traveled across Oakland City. She had declared that she would not marry anyone other than him, even if that meant she would stay single forever.

The moment that news spread, Oakland City was in an uproar.

Is Tiffany going to be single until she dies?

And to think that she would declare it in this way!

However, it wasn’t exactly impossible for her to be together with the God of War.

That night, many of Tiffany’s suitors did not sleep.

They were at a loss of what to do.

After all, their love rival was the God of War.

They knew full well that they would never be able to win against that man.

In the Garrison clan’s hall in Oakland City.

“Fantastic. As expected of the God of War of Erudia. What a satisfying battle!” Tyrone thundered.

“How powerful! How great! Many thought the God of War can only fight in wars with armies. no one would think that he’d be that strong himself. He actually defeated thousands of elite fighters all by himself!” the people praised.

Damien exclaimed, “That being said, the best battle was still the battle that gave the God of War his title.”

Damien knew everything about the God of War, including the battles he was in.

“That’s right! The God of War defeated the Eighteen-Nation Alliance’s fighter with a pair of iron fists. Now that was a true display of power!”

Everyone could not help but sing praises upon recalling that battle.

“He really showed the world how great Erudia is. The God of War is really a role model for all our children,” Tyrone sighed wistfully.

His gaze then landed on Damien.

If only Damien is the God of War.

How nice will it be if the God of War is my son?

“The God of War is one of the Garrisons, but we’ve yet to find out which family he belongs in. We’ve tried to look into his identity, but our search was to no avail.”

At that, the council members of the Garrison family all had similar looks of disappointment.

Tyrone announced, “From now on, I’ll be using all my resources to find out who the God of War is. Since he’s a Garrison, he has to know his roots. Even if he’s many times removed, he is still part of the Garrison clan. We have to take the God of War back into the family.”

The Garrison clan of the Oakland City was the oldest and purest bloodline of the Garrisons. In other words, they were the original family of the Garrisons.

Anyone who bore the Garrison family name was in a way related to the Garrison clan in Oakland City.

This was Tyrone’s reason to get the God of War to return to the Garrison clan.

If the top ancient family of Erudia had the God of War among them, it would be an unimaginable and magnificent sight.

The Protector Chapter 1120

After Tyrone made sure he would not lose his status as the head of the family anytime soon, he wanted to contribute to the family.

Hence, he wanted to get the God of War to join the Garrison clan.

This was something he had to do, regardless of the price he had to pay.

“The moment we have the God of War on our side, we will have a pair of powerful people in the younger generation of the Garrison clan.”

Tyrone could already imagine the scene.

Naturally, the other one in the pair Tyrone was talking about was Damien.

“Sir, I’ll be honest with you. Damien isn’t worthy yet to be compared with the God of War,” someone pointed out.

“Come now, I know it’s just wishful thinking on my part, but that doesn’t mean you can rain on my parade like that.” Tyrone chuckled.

Meanwhile, Damien’s fists were clenched tight. He had been doing his best to catch up to the God of War, but the latter was too strong.

The fact that he could never catch up to the man caused him despair.

Right then, someone announced, "News from the imperial Meyers family. Tiffany has declared that she won't marry anyone other than the God of War. She'll stay single until she dies if she doesn't get to marry him."

"Huh? What's going on?" Tyrone and the others asked.

Damien, who knew almost everything about the God of War, said, "Father, Martin and Tiffany had originally went to deal with Levi, but they ended up encountering the foreign elite fighters. I think they were saved by the God of War!"

"I see. So the girl has seen the God of War's true face and was impressed by him. I'm sure any woman in Erudia will want to marry him, much less Tiffany," Tyrone voiced.

"That's right. The girl of the Meyers family has high expectations. I heard even Damien barely reaches her expectations. Only the God of War can impress the beauty of Oakland City," one noted.

"Hahaha! I heard Levi is still in love with Tiffany? Did he refuse to destroy the engagement contract?" Tyrone laughed.

Damien nodded. "Yes. But I guess it's normal for a spirited young man like Levi to yearn for Tiffany. If he did not have a wife, I reckoned he wouldn't have torn up the contract."

"But is he any match for her? Now that she's refusing to marry anyone other than the God of War, he's nothing but a joke now!" Tyrone scoffed.

"Right. Let's not waste any more time on this and start finding out who the God of War is. If things don't work out, we, the Garrison clan, will head to North Hampton to meet him."

That was what Tyrone had planned.

Nonetheless, he never thought he would go to North Hampton and South Hampton so often in his life.

As news of Tiffany's declaration spread across Oakland City, a displeased voice could be heard roaring somewhere in said city.

"My brother-in-law will never fall for you. So you best give up now!"

The owner of the voice was none other than Abigail.

She had come to Oakland City.

Yet, she could not avoid the news about Levi.

Even if the bet with the Garrison family had gone unmentioned, she kept hearing news about him defeating the foreign fighters and getting involved with the beautiful Tiffany.

It was as if Levi was haunting her, following her wherever she goes.

Moreover, someone had been courting her recently.

Describing her mood as foul was an understatement.

"It's so annoying!" Abigail fumed.

On the other hand, there was someone who was thrilled to hear news of Levi.

That person was Benny.

As a good friend of Levi, when he heard about his victory, he was overjoyed. Benny had even sent a congratulatory message to Levi.

"Mr. Quinton, I will come to Oakland City soon. Let's meet when I'm there," Levi chuckled.

"Hahaha! All right. I look forward to your visit."

Both were prominent figures in Erudia, and yet, they acted like ordinary people in their daily lives.

However, whenever they were on the battlefield or in the hospital, they were like Gods walking in the mortal world.

The Protector Chapter 1121

Almost everyone was discussing the God of War's victory in North Hampton.

Even Zoey and Emma were gossiping about it.

They would never have thought that this battle to have taken place where they lived.

"I wonder what kind of person the God of War is. Is he a good husband? A good son? A good father?" Zoey chuckled.

Levi immediately answered, "Of course he is."

In the beginning, Zoey had found out about his identity.

Yet, Damien appeared.

The next few days, everything returned to normal.

Forces from all over the world were now silent.

They had paid a tremendous price for their last attack by having their army wiped out.

Moreover, none of the hundred elite fighters of the Saga Leaderboard came back alive.

"He's too powerful. Even when we know his weakness, we can't do anything about it."

Levi's prowess instilled despair in others.

“No. We can’t just give up like this. It’s a rare chance that we know his weakness. We have to find a way.”

The overseas forces still refused to give up.

In a blink of an eye, half a year passed.

By now, Zoey’s belly was already humongous. In three months, it would be time for her labor.

Nowadays, Zoey could not do anything. No matter what she did, Levi and Emma would be by her side.

As days went by, Levi became more worried and anxious.

Both the Lopez and Black families were worried about Zoey’s condition.

One day, Meredith and the others came to North Hampton.

“Zoey only has three months before it’s time for her labor. You have to send her abroad until the baby is born,” Meredith said.

Nowadays, more and more rich people preferred giving birth abroad.

The reasons being that the air, the environment, the people, and the medical standards abroad were much better.

Even many rich celebrities gave birth to their children overseas.

“Well, thanks to Logan, we’ve already made the necessary arrangements overseas. We’ll be waiting for the baby to be born with the best doctors and medical equipment,” Aaron and Caitlyn uttered.

Upon hearing that, Levi frowned.

Aren't they being too melodramatic?

What's so good about the other countries?

Why does she have to give birth to the baby overseas?

I've never heard of anything bad about giving birth to the baby here.

Accidents happen everywhere.

Are babies that are born overseas smarter?

How can that be?

*This is bullsh*t.*

"I don't agree with it. My child has to be born in Erudia. We won't go overseas," Levi firmly rejected.

Shocked, Meredith glared at him. "I'm sorry, but you have no say in this," she uttered, despite knowing Levi was the boss of Morris Group.

The fact that the Morris Group was now the target of the Garrison clan meant they were in crisis.

Moreover, the bet that Levi made with the Garrison clan meant that his status as the boss of Morris Group was now essentially useless.

Neither the Lopez and Black families were treating Levi any differently.

Patting Levi, Aaron muttered, "I have something to talk to you about. Soon, the baby will be born. I have a question for you."

"Ask away."

"It's about the baby's last name. After discussing, we've decided for the baby to follow the mother's last name, Lopez. You have nothing against it, right?" Aaron uttered.

"Yes. The baby has to take on her mother's last name. The baby must not be one of the Garrisons, even if that means the baby has to be one of the Blacks."

Everyone's minds were made.

"You won't oppose to this, will you?" Caitlyn questioned.

Levi glanced at Zoey. "As long as Zoey agrees to it, I won't oppose."

"I disagree with it! Since I'm married to Levi, the baby has to be a Garrison."

The Protector Chapter 1122

Zoey's firm stance delighted Levi.

She's standing on my side.

"Alright, that settles it then. My child can only be a Garrison. I won't let anyone change my child's last name."

Levi cast an icy gaze at the others.

"Levi, it's not as if you have a choice. Besides, your bet with the Garrison clan will be soon. You don't even know if you'll survive it, so why should you care about your child's last name?"

"We're changing the baby's last name for their sake!"

They were uncompromising.

"Zoey, pack up. We're going overseas. Logan has made all the necessary arrangements," Caitlyn urged.

To make sure Zoey would give birth to the child safely, they would bring her out of the country.

"No. I won't let Zoey leave the country. My mother and I can take good care of her."

Levi was resolute.

For starters, he wanted the child to be born in Erudia.

Secondly, Zoey was still watched by many. The moment she was overseas, she would be in danger.

While he would surely protect her, he still did not want her to be in any form of danger at all.

He had to make sure that she was safe and sound.

“She’s our daughter, you don’t have a choice in this matter.”

“I’m a doctor myself. It’s true that the medical standards abroad are better than the ones in the country. Don’t try to insist otherwise.”

Both Aaron and Caitlyn were adamant, too.

Meanwhile, Zoey was silent.

Her priority was to give birth to her baby.

She did not mind doing what was best for the baby to be born safely.

Hence, she did not reject the idea of heading overseas.

Moreover, Caitlyn was a doctor, so she would heed her mother’s words.

“My stance remains the same. Zoey’s not going overseas. What’s wrong? Are the medical standards in Erudia that lousy? Moreover, I know Benny Quinton. I’ll just ask him for help with Zoey’s delivery,” Levi insisted.

“This...”

His words stumped Caitlyn and the others.

It was true. He knew Benny as he was the boss of Morris Group.

“Besides, Zoey’s stomach is already so huge. It won’t be good for her to take another long trip,” Levi continued.

“He’s right. Mom, Dad, I was born here. It’s not that bad. Furthermore, he knows a lot of capable people.”

Even Zoey was now standing on Levi’s side.

It was mainly because Levi had mentioned Benny, who was the greatest doctor in all of Erudia.

“Fine, we’ll go with your plan. But Levi, I’m warning you. You’d better give the best to my daughter. You have to be by her side every single moment,” Aaron warned in a grave tone.

“Don’t worry. I won’t leave Zoey, not even for a second.”

I don’t need him to tell me that.

There’s no way I’ll treat Zoey badly.

In fact, it’s Impossible for me to treat her badly.

“Levi. I need to ask you a question. It’s almost time for your bet with the Garrison clan. How are you going to win the bet? They’ve given you four conditions, but which one can you achieve? I thought you’d be able to complete the business condition, but now, the Morris Group is in critical condition. How will you go up against the Garrison clan?”

Aaron bombarded him with questions.

Hearing that, Zoey’s face turned ashen.

Time was ticking, but Levi seemed to have made no preparations for it.

Has he accept defeat?

“Don’t concern yourself with the Garrison clan. It’s but a trivial matter. Right now, we should look forward to the baby’s birth.”

Levi’s nonchalant attitude infuriated the others.

He really doesn’t think for Zoey.

What a disappointment.

At that moment, all everyone could feel was disappointment for Levi.

The Protector Chapter 1123

Worry was written all over Zoey's face. *What is Levi going to do next?*

How will he go up against the Garrison clan?

A year had almost gone by, but Levi had done nothing in preparation.

Instead, it seemed like Morris Group's situation was worsening.

Staring at Levi, Meredith and Robert inquired, "When it's time for the day of the bet, you won't escape, will you?"

"That sounds possible. You might ditch your wife and child. You look like that kind of person to me!" Harry added.

Levi smiled. "How is that possible?"

He said before that he would protect Zoey for the rest of his life.

He was unmoved, even when he saw the most beautiful woman in Oakland City.

AS such, it was simply impossible for him to abandon Zoey.

"All right. We'll see whether you'll resolve the matter or try to run away when the time comes," the few people sneered.

In a meeting room at Raysonia's navy base were several people with different skin colors.

They were the ones who hated Levi the most. After all, they were defeated by Levi once.

Ever since they found out Levi's weaknesses, they had been researching ways to defeat him.

In other words, as long as Levi was alive, they could never rest.

They spend their every waking moment wishing they could kill him.

Levi's weaknesses, Zoey and Emma, were their target.

"The God of War is in Erudia, and we can't lay a finger on him there, not after how he wiped out our entire army a while back," someone sighed.

"Unless we can find a way to lure the God of War away from his turf, we won't be able to do anything."

"But how can we lure him out? Zoey is about to give birth soon. Unless there is something exceptionally urgent, the God of War will never leave the place."

Everyone felt helpless.

Finally, they all turned to look at Tenichi, the military strategist of Raysonia.

Not only was the man capable, but he was also a brilliant strategist.

Right then, Tenichi smiled.

Instantly, everyone knew what that smile meant.

It was clear that Tenichi had a plan.

"If there aren't any emergencies, we'll make one. We'll force the God of War to leave Erudia. Everything else after that will be a piece of cake. We'll send someone to go after Zoey and Emma. Once that's done, we can blackmail Levi Garrison. His days as the God of War will be good as gone."

Tenichi's smile grew into a sinister grin.

“What kind of emergency should we create that will make the God of War leave Erudia?” the others queried.

Confidently, Tenichi uttered, “Don’t worry. I already have a plan.”

“That’s great. This time, we must kill Levi.”

Everyone had excited grins on their faces.

Meanwhile, the Garrison clan was pulling strings to find out details about the God of War.

Yet, their investigation was fruitless.

To find out about the God of War, one had to have high societal status.

Moreover, photos of Zoey overseas had been removed from everywhere.

Thus, the Garrison clan could not find a single clue about his identity.

“What should we do?”

The council members of the Garrison clan were depressed.

“How about this? I’ll head to North Hampton myself to meet with the God of War and I’ll tell him our aim,” Tyrone sighed.

With no other choice, he decided to let go of his pride this time.

Initially, he had hoped that he could maintain his dignity, but things were not going his way.

“Will the God of War agree to meet with you?” Damien inquired.

“I’m still the patriarch of the top ancient family in Erudia. How can he refuse? To me, we’re equals. He’s the top of the military world, and I’m the top of the ancient families.”

As he spoke, Tyrone had his head held high and he was exuding an aura that only noble had.

The Protector Chapter 1124

“Damien, you’ll come with me. I’ll let you meet with the God of War so that you’ll be motivated. You’ll benefit from this in the long run.”

“I have high hopes for you. Even though you’re not as good as the God of War, you’re still better than everyone else when he’s excluded,” Tyrone reassured.

“All right, Father.”

Passion burned in Damien’s eyes.

All this while, the God of War had been his aim.

He collected every information about the God of War and analyzed everything about the man.

In other words, he was a fanatic of the God of War.

In his eyes, the God of War was like a hurdle that he had to cross in order for him to achieve greatness.

Therefore, when he heard he would be able to get a glimpse of the God of War, Damien was beyond ecstatic.

He was sure that he would be even more motivated after meeting him.

He looked forward to the meeting.

In the afternoon, the father and son duo headed to North Hampton.

This time, Tyrone did not hide the news of his journey. Instead, he traveled like the head of the top ancient family in Erudia that he was.

There were more than a hundred jets escorting him.

The moment he shifted an inch, tens of thousands would surge forward to protect him.

Every moment of his journey showed everyone the difference between common folks and the ancient family.

Tyrone's act was a message for the God of War. He was telling him they were equals.

"Let's go, Damien. Let's visit Levi first. It'll be a year in four months. Let's take a look at how prepared he is."

After reaching North Hampton, the first person Tyrone went to was Levi.

"Haha! Sure. It's been more than half a year. Let's visit him," Damien laughed boisterously.

For the past six months, Levi had been his target.

He had cornered Morris Group in North Hampton, making sure that they were unable to do anything.

In other words, the company was doomed in the corporate world.

It could not make any moves in the military and political domain.

The only way left was physical force.

However, it was impossible to enter the Garrison clan through physical force.

Even the guardsmen at the Garrison clan were terrifying.

Meanwhile, Levi and Emma were suntanning with Zoey. Even Caitlyn and the others were doing the same as well.

Just then, Tyrone arrived.

The moment he came, the park was cleared out.

His dramatic arrival stunned Caitlyn and the others.

Upon finding out their identities, Caitlyn and the rest were frightened out of their wits.

This is horrifying!

The Garrison clan's power was unimaginable for them.

Once upon a time, even a servant of the Garrison clan had the capability to crush North Hampton and South Hampton.

Now that the head of the family was here, coupled with the fact of the grand entrance he had made, it was a miracle that they had not fainted from fear.

That day was the first time Zoey had seen Tyrone.

The noble aura he exuded was something she had never come across in the past.

It was an overwhelming aura.

To the average person, Tyrone was god-like.

Nowadays, she was getting familiar with the Garrison clan. But just when she thought she understood them, meeting Tyrone made her realize how wrong she was.

The Garrison clan was even more unfathomable than she could imagine.

For a moment, she even felt that a man like Tyrone should not only have one wife—that it was right for him to abandon Emma back then.

In her eyes, the man before him was mighty.

He was the man who led the top ancient family of Erudia.

He was a man beyond imagination.

Facing Tyrone's strong presence, Meredith and the others got on their knees to greet him.

It was as if they had met an emperor of the olden times.

He looked at the rest as if they were nothing but insignificant insects.

To him, the people of North Hampton were no different from worms.

Even if Levi was mighty, he was just a mighty worm.

Slowly, he turned to look at Levi and inquired, "How are your preparations going?"

The Protector Chapter 1125

At that moment, the entire place fell silent.

Everyone gasped.

The color drained from Zoey and Emma's faces.

Levi had not done any preparations in the past six months.

It's impossible for him to win the challenge.

They could only pray that Tyrone would forget about this matter.

However, it seemed like not only did Tyrone remember it, but he even came to check up on him.

We're doomed.

I guess the saying was true, that those targeted by the Garrison clan would not have any good ending.

Levi looked at Tyrone calmly and smiled. "You don't need to worry about that. I can still deal with a small fry like the Garrison clan. This is just a trivial matter; it's incomparable to the birth of my child."

Such arrogance!

I can see that he's still as arrogant as ever.

Even now, he still looked down upon the top ancient family of Erudia.

What a crazy man.

He's a lunatic through and through.

In other words, they felt that there was something wrong with Levi's brain.

They could not believe he just ignored Tyrone.

Even Zoey was infuriated.

How can he still spout such nonsense at a time like this?

There's no benefit for him to act that way.

His stubbornness will only infuriate the Garrison clan further! They will never let him off the hook now.

Meredith and the others were even angrier than Zoey.

All of them were cursing at Levi for his foolish words.

"Get on your knees and apologize! who are you to speak that way to your father?"

"Once everything's blow over, you can still be a carefree man in the Garrison family. That's a great thing!"

Unfortunately, Levi was persistent, and they were sure something was fried in his brain.

"Honorable Mr. Garrison, we apologize to you on behalf of this kid. He's just a stubborn boy, he didn't mean anything by it."

"That's right. He's a good kid. As long as you take him in, he won't cause any trouble for you."

Meredith, Robert, and the others were all on their knees, putting in a good word for Levi.

This was their only hope now.

If they managed to tug on Tyron's heartstring, this was their chance to prosper.

However, Tyrone sneered, "Give up. I know what you're thinking about. I'll tell you now that it's impossible. Even if he wins the challenge, I won't take him in as my son. Not unless he can become one of the top three in the Saber Leaderboard."

Tyrone's ruthlessness stupefied Meredith and the others.

"Top three in Saber Leaderboard?"

Meredith and Robert knew what that meant.

It was impossible for Levi to achieve that.

To achieve the top three in the Saber Leaderboard, one had to be the genius among geniuses.

One had to become a self-made master in a field.

In fact, the individual had to be so capable that they would be able to establish a prominent family on their own.

Looking at Emma, Damien chuckled, "It's not that Father doesn't want to take him in. Father's status is too high right now. Levi will have to have an appropriate status to become my father's son."

What he was implying was that Levi was unworthy of being Tyrone's son.

"Levi, don't forget. Four months later will be the day of the bet.

I've given you the four conditions. It's your win as long as you fulfill any one of them. If you fail, however, I'm sure you remember what you said. It'll be too embarrassing for you to live, so you'll have to kill yourself."

Tyrone fixed his icy gaze on Levi.

This time, he would no longer show any mercy.

The moment Levi failed, he would be doomed.

There would be no chance for him to stay alive.

Zoey nearly passed out upon hearing that.

Will my baby have to live a life without a father?

"I know, but I won't fail."

Levi gave him a smile.

"Well, I'll be waiting for you four months later at the Garrison clan's main entrance then. I hope you'll be there. And don't try to escape," Tyrone burst out laughing.

The Protector Chapter 1126

Tyrone, Damien, Meredith, Robert, and the others shared similar beliefs that Levi will take the cowardly route at the very last minute.

In their minds, they were sure that he was going to abandon his family when the time came.

Back then, he was able to get through many obstacles due to great timing and luck.

However, this time, his opponent is Erudia's top ancient family.

Even the secret that Emma has was useless.

"Father, I'm quite sure Levi will run away. He must have thought that everything was fine, so he must be surprised that you've come to monitor him," Damien chortled.

He, too, felt that Levi would escape.

"We'll see."

"Let's go. We're meeting with the God of War next."

With that, Tyrone left with Damien.

Caitlyn and Aaron glared at Levi. "I'm warning you. You'd better not leave Zoey and your baby behind."

"That's right. Even if death awaits you, you have to face it yourself. You can't leave this mess behind for Zoey," they ordered.

They feared Levi would just leave.

“Don’t worry. While my son doesn’t excel in anything else, he’s a good man. Otherwise, he’d have admitted defeat to the Garrison clan early on,” Emma defended.

Zoey gently touched her belly and muttered, “I trust Levi. No matter how tough things get, he won’t leave the child and me behind.”

They had been together for a long time. As such, Zoey knew Levi well.

She would not be exaggerating if she claimed that Levi would die for her.

She believed in him.

He would not leave her to face the crisis alone.

Aggrieved, Meredith stomped her feet. “Continue to have blind faith in him then. You’ll find out soon enough that he’ll leave you all eventually!”

If they were honest with themselves, they were not shameless enough to speak the words in their heart.

Tyrone had once abandoned his family for his own benefits.

Hence, they felt that Levi would follow in his father’s footsteps.

As the saying goes, the apple doesn’t fall far from the tree.

Moreover, this was a situation of life and death.

As time passed, the thought of Levi running off became stronger in their minds.

However, they dared not say what Tyrone had done.

All they dared to say was their distrust in Levi.

“Grandma, don’t worry. Until the baby is born, Levi won’t take a step away from me. I swear this on my life,” Zoey proudly stated.

Levi moved closer and held her hands tightly. "Zoey, don't worry. I'll always be with you."

Zoey was sure of Levi's character.

There was nothing more Levi could ask for when he had a wife like this.

He smiled.

There is no way a mere Garrison clan can make me leave her.

Even if the sky collapsed on me, I would not take a step away from her.

"I hope so, but Zoey, I still think you'll be disappointed."

Harry still had a look of disbelief on his face.

"All right. Let's stop talking about this. Levi will never leave me, and I'll leave it at that."

Zoey then asked Levi to help her back to the house.

Several days later, Levi received a call from Percy from North Hampton Warzone.

Percy told him Tyrone wanted to meet him.

He even asked Levi if he should reject Tyrone's request.

"No. I'll be happy to meet with him. I wonder what they want from me." Levi responded.

At the front of North Hampton Warzone.

Tyrone and Damien were quietly waiting.

By now, their tens of thousands of escorts had left.

After all, they had put up enough of a show.

"Hello, Mr. Garrison. The God of War has decided to meet you."

The Protector Chapter 1127

"That's great!" Damien was enraptured.

He was finally going to meet his idol, the God of War.

This would definitely help him a lot in the future.

On the flipside, Tyrone was as calm as the sea.

In his mind, it was only natural that the God of War would come and personally meet someone of his status.

Everyone else is negligible!

I'm the only one that matters!

"Mr. Garrison, please give me a moment! I'll bring you to meet the God of War shortly!" Percy assured.

"Thank you, Commander-in-Chief Covington." Damien politely replied.

The duo waited patiently in the room.

"We're finally able to find out which bloodline of the Garrison family does the God of War belong to." Tyrone was filled with excitement.

In any case, he was determined to recruit the God of War into the Garrison clan.

This way, the status of Garrison clan as Erudia's most powerful ancient family would be fortified.

Not to mention the clan would also be able to cement its footing in Bayview.

Damien was trembling in excitement.

The God of War had always been Damien's source of motivation and fear.

This time, he was going to meet him in person. The overwhelming anxiety was expected.

Meanwhile, Levi arrived and met with Percy.

"God of War, it appears that Tyrone intends for you to regress to the Garrison clan! According to him, the Garrison family in Erudia originated from the Garrison clan. Hence, he insists that you are a member of the Garrison clan and wants you to regress!" Percy sarcastically explained the situation.

"Dream on! He's asking for the impossible! Who does he think he is? I'm not related to the Garrison clan!" Levi exploded in rage.

"If that's the case, shall we meet with them now?" Percy questioned.

"Sure," Levi was looking forward to meeting them now.

His initial plan was to wait patiently until Zoey gave birth to the child. Only then, he would address the issue with the Garrison clan.

However, Tyrone was becoming more aggressive with each passing moment. Now, the man even had the audacity to threaten Levi. His actions had significantly dampened both Zoey and Levi's moods.

Thus, Levi decided to solve the issue once and for all.

I'll meet them as the God of War!

I am done hiding my identity!

Levi and Percy walked side by side into the hall.

Just then, a loud whirring sound can be heard coming from the sky.

Levi looked upwards and exclaimed, "It's the Dragonite Helicopter..."

In Erudia, the usage frequency of the Dragonite Helicopter was extremely low.

The reason being the helicopter was utilized specifically for special missions only. It would only be used either to transport people of status or valuable resources. Additionally, it was also used as a message courier to convey and deliver urgent orders.

If the Dragonite Helicopter were to appear, it must signify an impending important event.

Thud!

Levi's heart sank as he realized that something was wrong.

The Dragonite Helicopter landed on a nearby lawn.

Two men got off the Dragonite Helicopter. They were decked out in black battle suits with a gold dragon imprinted on their chest plate.

"It's the Dragonites!" Levi exclaimed.

The Dragonite Helicopter belonged to the jurisdiction of Erudia and Oakland City. Even Levi himself had no right nor power to mobilize it.

Since the Dragonites are here personally to convey and deliver the order. This must mean that the order came from Erudia.

Needless to say, the order is meant for me.

Something big must have happened!

The fact that both the Dragonite Helicopter and the Dragonites were there could only mean that the situation must be extremely urgent and required Levi to personally address it.

Standing beside Levi, Percy was dumbfounded.

He did not expect the Dragonites to show up.

What happened?

Meanwhile, Levi appeared to have figured it out and his face was as pale as paper.

If anything were to happen at this juncture...

I would be in an awkward position.

The two Dragonites strode toward Levi and announced, "The God of War is hereby summoned by this order. This order is extremely urgent!"

The Protector Chapter 1128

Levi stood up straight and saluted.

He gazed at the two Dragonites, "What's the order?"

"The God of War is to lead your warriors, including the Five Great Wars Regiment, Calvary Regiment, Specter Army, Beasts, and Dragon Legion, and head to North Base One! This order is extremely urgent and requires immediate action. Any form of disobedience will entail military punishment!" the Dragonites enunciated the order clearly.

The Dragonites had issued an irrevocable order.

Levi retrieved the order and glanced through it. As expected, it was an order of the highest level.

Even someone of his status must comply with the order.

"What happened?" Levi asked calmly.

"God of War, do you remember the Blood King Palace?" the Dragonites asked.

"Of course. I eradicated them three years ago! They are a formidable force to be reckoned with. I wouldn't be exaggerating if I say that the threat of the Blood King Palace is even greater than a whole country!" Levi replied.

The Blood King Palace was once an organization in the Western Dark World. It consisted of thousands of elite warriors.

They were a bunch of lunatics, exceptionally specialized at assassination and sabotage.

They were vicious and merciless, without any regard to the consequences of their actions.

They frequently massacred cities of people.

An enemy as such was terrifying.

After all, it was a group of lunatics that ranged in the thousands.

Back then, the Blood King Palace was the most feared and dangerous organization in the Western Dark World.

In fact, it wasn't just other organizations that were afraid of them, even strong countries were also terrified of them.

The threat from the Blood King Palace was just too overwhelming.

The fact they would strike at unexpected times to take revenge loomed over the Blood King Palace's enemies.

Those years, the Blood King Palace reigned unchallenged and their ferocity outranked even Levi himself.

Truth be told, Levi even opined that the threat posed by the Blood King Palace significantly exceeds that of the Eighteen-Nation Alliance.

"Could it be that the Blood King Palace has return?" Levi shakenly asked.

"Yes, that is correct! The Blood King Palace is back! Last night, they launched several attacks on North Base One and we suffered severe casualties! According to intelligence, the forces of the Blood King Palace are far stronger than three years ago!" the Dragonites nervously answered.

"How is that possible? I eradicated them during our last encounter three years ago!" Levi was puzzled.

It must be a calculated scheme.

Someone must be behind all of this.

Unbeknownst to him, Levi had actually guessed it correctly.

The person who orchestrated all these was someone who knows about his weakness. And although they have failed once, that doesn't mean that they would just let Levi off the hook.

That person was none other than Tenichi, the military strategist of Raysonia.

He was the one who lured the Blood King Palace out of hiding...

The fear of the Blood King Palace was deeply rooted in many hearts and the gang of lunatics was not something an ordinary commoner could deal with.

At the moment, only the God of War had what it takes to face them head-on and came out on top.

No one else had been successful before.

Even for Levi, it took him a whole year to successfully complete what he thought was the eradication of the Blood King Palace.

Therefore, when the Blood King Palace resurfaces, Erudia would surely order the God of War to personally confront him.

With that plan in mind, Tenichi was sure that Levi would be transferred away.

As expected.

When the Blood King Palace showed up, Erudia immediately thought of Levi.

An urgent order to eradicate the Blood King Palace once more was immediately delivered and conveyed to Levi.

"God of War, we're afraid we cannot provide an answer to your question. Rumors have it that it is the surviving minions of the Blood King Palace who hid for nearly four years!"

“God of War, it’s best if you head out now! There’s no time to lose!” the Dragonites pestered him further.

Levi took a deep breath and roared, “Order the Azure Dragon to rejoin us immediately! We’ll be heading to war!”

The Protector Chapter 1129

The order from Erudia was to be prioritized immediately.

Levi had no time to dilly dally.

After he gave the order, the Five Great Wars Regiment and the others grouped up within a short period of time.

“We head out, now!” Levi ordered without hesitation.

“God of War, please wait a moment!” Azure Dragon said.

The others also had a hesitant look on their faces.

“Speak!” Levi impatiently demanded.

“God of War, what about Ms. Lopez? She’s about to go into labor soon. This is clearly the enemy’s scheme to lure you away so that they would have the chance to capture them!” Azure calmly postulated.

“He’s right! At the very least, please allow some of us to stay here and protect Ms. Lopez.” White Tiger proposed.

Although White Tiger loved to battle, Zoey’s safety was his primary concern.

Levi shook his head, “That’s not possible. The order was clear that all of us must head north! No one gets to stay behind.”

“But what about Ms. Lopez? What about your child? Don’t you want to witness the birth of your child?”

“That’s right, the last time we took out the Blood King Palace, we had to spend one whole year to do so! Now that their forces are even stronger this time, we may need a longer time! It may take up to one and a half years!”

“To leave for one and a half years at such a critical time is too risky!”

They were not willing to abandon Zoey for such a long time, not to mention that she was about to give birth to a child.

It was too heartless for Zoey and the child.

Besides, the risks of leaving was too high.

“Why don’t we stay back?” the Cavalry Regiment suggested, which was surprising considering they were always the quiet ones.

“Are you all disobeying my order?” Levi growled.

With that, every single one of them stood up straight and dared not speak another word.

A military order was absolute and they dared not disobey.

“Everyone, head toward the North now!” Levi shouted.

This time, there were no disagreements. They prepared the necessary transportations and were ready to depart.

Levi did not even get to meet Zoey or his own mother before departing. There was simply no time for such arrangements.

He departed without hesitation toward the North.

The situation was extremely urgent.

Levi knew very well how terrifying the Blood King Palace was.

Any delay would entail massive destruction.

Hence, he needed to act immediately.

Even if it meant that he could not meet with his family...

As Levi left, Percy assured, "I will do my best to protect her."

However, he was well aware of his limitations.

Some things were within his expectations; some were not.

He anticipated that those that were once defeated would not let this slide.

They would try to separate Levi from Zoey and his mother.

However, Percy could not figure out how they would achieve that purpose.

At the end of the day, the borders enjoyed tranquility and peace.

Levi should have never been transferred away.

However, it was unexpected that the Blood King Palace would reappear with forces stronger than before.

The Blood King Palace's return was significant enough to transfer Levi out of Erudia.

Levi was the only one that defeated them before, the others didn't even come close.

This was truly beyond his expectation.

Such a dire circumstance happened coincidentally during the most critical moment for Zoey.

With the order of the highest level, Levi could not even bid farewell with Zoey and the others.

Meredith accurately predicted this.

At this moment, Levi was indeed gone.

And he would be gone for more than a year...

The Protector Chapter 1130

According to them, Levi was scared away by the Garrison clan.

For the sake of survival, Levi abandoned his family and escaped.

The silence was deafening.

Everyone's facial expression was icy cold.

Especially Azure Dragon and the few men that sat beside Levi, their frustration was evident.

The sudden order caught everyone off guard.

Levi didn't even have time to make arrangements for Zoey and the others.

However, they dared not question further about Levi's command.

Everyone understood that Levi's only goal now was to eradicate the Blood King Palace.

Nonetheless, Azure Dragon was concerned about the safety of Zoey and others.

At the hall, Tyrone and Damien were still waiting.

As they heard some commotion outside, the duo walked out to have a look.

What greeted their sights were fleets of armored vehicles leaving swiftly.

"What happened?" Tyrone and Damien were shocked.

"Mr. Garrison, my deepest apologies. The God of War had been summoned to the North! He cannot meet with you anymore," Percy regrettably explained.

"What? What is the issue that required the God of War himself to personally attend to?" Tyrone was surprised.

Damien became nervous as well.

It must be something significant in order to require the involvement of the God of War himself.

"It's classified information and I cannot disclose it to you. Please, go home." Percy refused to answer.

"What?"

As the armored vehicles passed by, Damien was startled.

"I think I just saw someone familiar..." Damien suddenly mumbled.

"Did you see someone you know?" Tyrone asked.

"I think I met them somewhere before, Was it at Levi's wedding?" Damien was unsure.

Damien thought he had met some of them during Levi's wedding.

"That's impossible!" Tyrone dismissed his statement without any hesitation.

It was simply impossible.

Since the God of War was heading toward the North, they no longer had any purpose to remain in North Hampton.

"Oh yes, I still need to meet Levi regarding another matter!" Tyrone abruptly recalled.

The Garrison clan made a decision regarding the family name of Levi's unborn child.

As anyone who bore the Garrison family name would be inevitably related to the Garrison clan, the clan decided they wanted to avoid this.

As such, once the child was born, he cannot bear the family name of Garrison.

Seeing Tyrone and Damien arrived once again, Zoey and the others started to panic.

"Where is Levi? Get him out here right now!" Tyrone shouted.

"Levi's not here..." Emma nervously replied.

She gulped and took a deep breath in an attempt to calm herself down.

It had been a few hours, but Levi had yet to return.

Even Emma herself had no idea where her son had gone to.

For the past few months, Emma had always been by Zoey's side and she would not leave her alone for more than ten minutes.

Damien scoffed. "Could it be that he had run away?"

"Hah, that might be possible," Tyrone nodded in agreement.

For some reason, a sense of trepidation settled in Meredith's and the others' hearts when they heard that.

The circumstances did suggest that Levi had escaped.

"What do you want?" Zoey asked.

Tyrone arrogantly replied, "What I want is simple. Your unborn child cannot bear the family name of Garrison! Since the Garrison family in Erudia originated from the Garrison Clan, whoever that wished to bear the Garrison name must seek our approval! And I'm telling you now that Levi's child is not allowed to do so!"

"It's none of your business what my child's surname would be!" Zoey firmly refuted the preposterous demand.

“You can choose to ignore us, but you will make an enemy of the Garrison clan! The consequences will be abysmal!” Tyrone left after making the threat.

Zoey thought about it and called Levi.

The Protector Chapter 1131

Just as Levi was headed toward the North, his cell phone unexpectedly rang.

The sound broke the silence that lasted for two hours. All attention was now focused on Levi.

Levi looked at the screen and saw that the caller ID was "Honey".

Just when he was going to answer the call, he hesitated.

He struggled to make a decision...

Levi's veins bulged and he frowned as frustration surged from within him.

He took a deep breath and decided not to answer the call.

He knew that if he took the call, he would not be able to stick to his decision to leave.

Truth be told, it was a tough choice for him to choose between heading to the North or staying with his family.

However, now that the rampage of the Blood King Palace was even more horrifying than before, Levi had no choice but to settle in his role as a warrior from Erudia.

For the sake of Erudia, he must head toward the North.

One should prioritize the country before the family.

He decided that he must protect his country with all his might.

His family was less important compared to the safety and sovereignty of Erudia.

Levi held onto his phone tightly and crushed it forcefully.

“Mom, I’m sorry. I’m a useless son that is unable to protect you.”

“Zoey, I’m sorry that I cannot take care of you anymore.”

“My child, I’m sorry that I will not be there to witness your birth.”

Levi held back his emotions and mumbled on his own.

Everything happened so suddenly that he could not make arrangements for the safety of Zoey and the others.

He could not find any person to help him in such a short span of time.

After all, the enemy was just too strong.

It was not something any ordinary people could handle.

The only plan that Levi had in mind now was to head toward the North, eradicate the Blood King Palace, and rush back as soon as possible.

He wanted to return in the shortest possible period of time.

“That’s weird... Why is Levi not picking up his phone?” Zoey repeatedly dialed his number but to no avail.

Her heart sank and she had a bad feeling about this.

“What? He’s not picking up his phone?” Emma then tried calling Levi on her phone.

“Sorry, the number you have dialed is unavailable,” the robotic voice sounded from the phone.

"What does this mean?" Emma felt uneasy.

Zoey's face turned sour immediately.

Not only he didn't pick up the phone, but now he had his phone switched off?

This meant that Levi did it on purpose!

He's not picking up the phone...

This is bad.

What I feared the worst may have happened...

Meredith and the others repeatedly tried to contact Levi, but he was unreachable.

"I was right! Levi is scared off by the Garrison clan!" Meredith said in a cold voice.

"He must have run away... Didn't you all notice that he's gone right after Tyrone's warning? It has already been a few hours, and he's still nowhere to be found. I'm sure he has run away!" Logan scornfully remarked.

Everyone pondered about Logan's statement.

What he said is true.

Levi did disappear right after Tyrone's warning.

"Emma, didn't you say that you were proud that your son is a fine gentleman that will never run away? How about now? Now that he's gone you should give us an explanation!"

"That's right! For the past few months, he has always been by Zoey's side to the point where if the situation permits, he'll even want to follow her to the toilet! Now, it's been a few hours, he's nowhere to be seen and his phone is even switched off!"

Harry and Robert joined the conversation.

Unfortunately, their proposition indeed made sense.

Emma could not rebuke their allegations.

Her face turned pale and she started shivering uncontrollably.

She thought to herself, *Son, please don't follow in Tyrone's footsteps and abandon your family.*

"I tried searching for him but Levi has vanished without a trace!" Aaron was infuriated.

The Protector Chapter 1132

As soon as Aaron found out about Levi's disappearance, he immediately ordered his men to look for him.

However, Levi was nowhere to be found.

Abigail's parents even contacted the Rogers family to help locate Levi.

However, the Rogers family failed to discover any important clues about his location as well.

Besides, the Rogers family knew about Levi's identity.

"No one knows where Levi is?" the hard-hitting truth was unacceptable for Zoey.

She was trembling.

"That's impossible! Levi will not abandon me! He will never do that!" Zoey confidently asserted.

Emma gritted and assured, "That's right. I believe in my son, he will not leave us! I assume he must have something important to attend to right now!"

The two of them trusted Levi the most.

"Stop deluding yourself! The truth is right in front of you! Why isn't he answering the phone? Why did he switch off his phone? Why is he gone for such a long time? You should know better than anyone! Stop trying to make excuses!" Jennie yelled unemphatically.

Zoey and Emma exchanged glances and their frustration was evident.

Although they trusted Levi, the reality of their situation was cruel.

“Let me ask Iris! She should know where Levi is!” Zoey immediately thought of Iris.

“What? I’m not sure. Why? Is he gone?” Iris sounded surprised.

Zoey sighed in disappointment.

“Iris, I can’t find Levi. He appears to have disappeared and refuses to pick up the phone. Please help me locate him.” Zoey asked for her help.

Upon hearing Zoey’s request, Iris acted immediately.

Ten minutes later, Iris called. “Zoey, I can’t find him at all. And, I have some bad news for you...”

Zoey’s heart sank.

Iris continued, “I tried contacting Neil and he is also unreachable. I made further investigations and found out that Levi’s contact number has been deleted as well...”

Because Levi received an order of the highest level, it meant that it was also a top-secret mission.

As such, all information related to him must be erased.

Erasing the contact number was the basic protocol.

Upon hearing Iris’ words, Zoey’s grip on her phone loosened and it dropped onto the floor.

The news struck her like lightning.

She remembered Levi once mentioned that Neil was his best friend. They were inseparable.

Now that Neil was also unreachable like Levi...

It could only mean the rumor that Levi ran away must be true!

“You hear that, Zoey? Levi must have run away! I gotta say, he’s quick on his feet! Even his own company was abandoned by him!”

"You're so confident that he will not abandon you, and yet, he did!"

"Also, Emma, what is wrong with your son? How could he abandon his family at such a critical time!"

Facing the countless criticism that was thrown their way, Zoey and Emma could only bow their heads in embarrassment.

They remained silent for they were unable to rebut them.

Unarguably, the truth was before them.

No words could mitigate the situation.

"Zoey, all I can say is that you've chosen the wrong partner. Frankly speaking, Levi is just like his father. It is unsurprising that he will abandon you," Aaron said.

Everyone came to a sudden realization.

That Levi was just a chip off the old block.

Just like how Tyrone had abandoned his family, it was no surprise that Levi would do the same.

Even Emma was unable to refute the statement.

Is it true that Levi is no different from Tyrone?

"No, I refuse to believe this! I'm going to look for him! I know a place, he should be there..."
Zoey stood up.

The Protector Chapter 1133

It didn't take long before Zoey and her group arrived at the South City.

They raced toward the Warzone compound.

Although the place was run-down, Zoey knew that this place was Levi's base camp.

Levi's secrets were hidden here.

His best friends all lived here before.

However, when Zoey and the group arrived, there was not a single person in the Warzone compound.

Even the dogs that used to run around the place were gone.

Based on the settled dust and cobwebs, the place had been unoccupied for a long time.

Zoey could only stare blankly at the sight before her, feeling lost and helpless.

Levi's not here...

Zoey could not imagine where would he be.

Just then, Emma received news from South Hampton.

As expected, Levi was not in South Hampton as well.

This proved that Levi had indeed disappeared.

Zoey's vision went dark and she collapsed onto the floor.

"Zoey!" everyone rushed to her side.

When Zoey woke up, she was already on a hospital bed.

"Zoey, hang in there. Please take care of yourself!" Emma held onto her hands and sobbed.

"Stop faking it! You're just like your son! Leave my sweetie alone!" Caitlyn raged and tried to separate them.

"Mom, stop it! You can't blame it on her! She has nothing to do with this." Zoey tried to mediate the rising tension.

"This is all Levi's fault! He's an animal! Not only did he abandoned Zoey, but he also left his own mother!" Meredith fumed.

Levi's sudden disappearance stirred up intense turmoil between the Lopez and Black families.

His disappearance coincided with the timing when Tyrone made the threat.

All circumstances suggested the irresistible conclusion that Levi was scared away by the Garrison clan.

"He's a coward! A hypocrite! How could he call himself a man!"

"Does Levi not feel any shame? He abandoned his own mother, wife, and unborn child! What an animal!"

"I'm ashamed to even know him! He's not worthy to be a man, a husband nor a father!"

Logan and the others condemned Levi relentlessly.

Sylas tried to defend Levi, "He must be away because of some urgent matters, he'll definitely be back!"

She knew Levi's actual identity and guessed that he was probably summoned to handle some urgent matters.

At that, Zoey's eyes showed signs of hope. "She's right, that must be it! I believe he will not abandon me!"

"Zoey, why are you so stubborn? He even deleted his contact number..."

"He's never coming back! Back then, he was capable enough to solve his problems. However, it's different this time. The Garrison clan wants him dead, he can only run away!"

Meredith and the others tried to dash Zoey's hope.

Nonetheless, Zoey was adamant. "No, I don't care what all of you are saying. My gut tells me that Levi will return very soon! I believe in him, he will not abandon me!"

"Return? That's impossible! If he wants to return, he wouldn't have left quietly nor delete his contact number!"

Zoey smiled. "Mom, Dad, dare to make a bet with me then?"

"What are we betting on?" Aaron asked.

"We'll bet if Levi will return within one month's time. If he does return, all of you must apologize to him!" Zoey proposed confidently.

"Alright!" Aaron agreed.

"If he doesn't return, I will believe that he abandoned me!" Zoey placed the bet based on her trust in Levi.

The Protector Chapter 1134

“Fine. We’ll find out in one month’s time then! I’m sure that a month’s time is more than enough for Levi to finish whatever he’s doing.” Aaron agreed to her daughter’s proposition readily.

We’re winning this bet.

Everyone knew that Levi would not be coming back.

However, Zoey trusted Levi too much.

She was hopeful and optimistic.

By giving Levi a month, it served as a form of solace for her and also represented her trust toward him.

“Alright, it’s settled then. If Levi doesn’t return in a month, I will send you overseas to give birth to the baby, and no one can stop me.” Meredith was excited.

Zoey nodded, “Fine. If he doesn’t return in a month, I will travel overseas. If that happens, I will need to trouble Logan to make the necessary arrangements.”

“Don’t worry about it. One word from me and it’s settled.” Aaron hesitated for a moment before he said, “Zoey, you must ponder on the issue regarding the child’s family name. The Garrison clan clearly prohibits the child from bearing their family name! If you insist, it might entail serious consequences! I suggest that the child bear your own family name.”

Zoey nodded again. "All right. If Levi doesn't return in a month, the child will bear my family name."

Now, everything was dependent on the outcome in a month's time.

Emma started to tear up. "Son, what are you doing? Please return quickly! If you don't, your child would bear the family name of Lopez."

Nevertheless, the situation wasn't all bad after Levi's disappearance.

For instance, the final decision-making power in Morris Group was now passed to Zoey.

Aside from that, the top hundred prominent families in North Hampton declared that they would protect Zoey at all costs and would be at her command.

This was comforting to Zoey.

Her confidence started to build and she was looking forward to the end of the month.

She was certain that Levi would return.

Meanwhile, Levi arrived at North Base One.

He had already fought hand to hand with the Blood King Palace.

The Blood King Palace was indeed stronger than three years before.

The moment Levi was transferred away from North Hampton, Zoey and Emma instantly fell under the watchful gazes of those abroad.

On an island abroad, a group of people with different colored skin were having a meeting.

Presiding over the meeting was Tenichi, the military strategist from Raysonia.

Even though Levi was transferred away, they dared not act rashly.

They must be sure that Levi truly left North Hampton.

Moments ago, they received news that Levi arrived at North Base One and battled with the Blood King Palace.

Even so, they did not act immediately upon receiving the news.

In order for them to act, they would need to have a meeting and sufficient intelligence must be gathered first.

“Mr. Watanabe, I suggest we act immediately and send people to Erudia to capture her.” Someone from the group proposed.

They were all impatient.

Tenichi shook his head. “No, my intelligence suggests that there are elite warriors protecting her. There might even be traps waiting to ambush us! Even if we successfully capture her, the loss is simply too great.”

The others replied swiftly, “If that’s the case, what should we do? The God of War has already been transferred away. It’s a golden opportunity that we must not lose.”

“No. I received news that in a month’s time, Zoey will leave Erudia to give birth to her child! Once the time comes...” Tenichi trailed off and smirked maliciously.

“Is that true? We might not be able to touch her in Erudia, but once she leaves, that just means that we can do whatever we want then!” Another person exclaimed.

Everyone had excited grins on their faces.

“Alright. Make the necessary preparations! By the time Zoey leaves Erudia, we’ll act immediately!” Tenichi had everything planned out perfectly.

The Protector Chapter 1135

Zoey and the others were unaware of the perilous danger that was steadily advancing toward them.

The threat was not posed by the Garrison clan, but rather, it was forces located abroad.

Logan thought that he had a lot of connections abroad.

However, he was oblivious to the fact that his every move was being manipulated by many.

Zoey never imagined that everything would change drastically one month later.

But for now, she was safe.

Percy and many other warriors were secretly protecting her. They were willing to devote their lives to protect her.

The Amethyst Guards were available as well. Therefore, Zoey's safety was well protected.

Nonetheless, Percy was afraid of any sort of infiltration by strong enemies.

Since the order that summoned Levi was of the highest level, this meant that everything must be kept a secret.

Percy didn't dare to disclose anything.

He could only stay strong and take it upon himself to protect Zoey.

It didn't take long before the news regarding Levi's disappearance reached the Garrison Clan.

"What? We were right? Levi ran away?" Damien and Tyrone could not believe it.

They didn't really mean it when they first said it. As such, Levi's disappearance was completely unexpected.

"That's correct! Levi ran away! Even his contact number has been deleted!" Damien and Tyrone received confirmation.

Tyrone laughed and said, "This is Emma's son? What a coward! A wimp! I can't believe he wants to be my child! Dream on!"

Damien sighed, "I thought that he's a principled person that will face any challenge. Who knew he turned out to be a coward that ran away simply because of a warning from you, father."

"He's unworthy to be part of the Garrison clan! What an embarrassment! The fact that he bears the same family name has brought shame upon the Garrison clan! I can't believe he really ran away!" Tyrone ridiculed.

They had always thought highly of themselves. The series of aggressive acts and retaliation from Levi was deemed as a futile struggle in their mind.

Now that Levi had run away because of a simple threat, the disdain they felt for him intensified.

"And he had the audacity to challenge me and the Garrison clan? Even saying that he wants us to regret what we did? Hah! What a laughing stock!" Tyrone continued his contemptuous remark before changing the topic. "Damien, find out where is Levi."

"Of course, rest assured I will locate him. Does he think that he can just run away like that? Such wishful thinking! I'll make sure he's shamed and laughed at by the whole of Erudia!" Damien sneered coldly.

As the day passed, Levi was still nowhere to be seen.

It was as if he had vanished into thin air.

There were no trails left behind at all.

All this while, Iris together with the Lopez and Black families had been looking for Levi.

However, their efforts were in vain.

It wasn't just them who couldn't find Levi, however, as even Damien could not find the slightest trace of Levi's whereabouts.

Unbeknownst to them, it was actually impossible for them to find any information regarding Levi. After all, he was on a special mission with the highest level of confidentiality.

"I don't understand how, but Levi's completely untraceable. I've tried my best but so far there's nothing!" Damien was bewildered.

"Anyway, it seemed that Levi is really gone! What a joke!" Damien burst out laughing.

He recalled the brave and valorous statement made by Levi and Emma in their previous encounter.

Now it seemed that those were simply empty threats that served no purpose other than comedic value.

In the end, Levi ran away with his tail between his leg...

In a blink of an eye, Levi's disappearance approached the one-month mark.

It was the last day before the time was up.

Zoey was dejected but she still had a tiny ounce of hope.

She was still waiting for her hero to appear.

The whole month, she had been waiting for him.

"Zoey, give up. He's not coming back."

The sky turned dark and Levi never showed up.

Zoey was heartbroken as her hopes and expectations were shattered.

The Protector Chapter 1136

She had waited thirty days for Levi's return, but he didn't come back.

That man had disappeared, or to put it bluntly, he had run away while abandoning his family.

All of them were more than aware of the fact that if Levi didn't show his face within a month under these circumstances, chances were he won't ever show up again.

No matter how hard Zoey tried to trust in Levi, now, she must accept the reality that Levi was gone.

Nonetheless, there was not a trace of anger on her face. The only semblance of emotion that could be seen on her face was the streaks of tears that were running down her cheeks.

Thud!

Emma fainted as everything was too overwhelming for her to bear. She couldn't believe that her son would prioritize his interests over his family, just like what Tyrone had once done to her.

Sylas and Russell were both in a state of agitation. They had guessed that Levi must have had a mission at hand, which explained why he didn't have a choice but to leave without a word. However, they were not allowed to reveal Levi's real identity to them.

"This is good news! Levi leaving is actually a good thing for us!"

"If he had returned, it would spell doom for us since he had offended the Garrison clan."

Both Harry and Robert felt elated.

Meredith, too, was excited. "That's right! Tyrone said that everything would be alright as long as the baby doesn't take on the surname of the Garrisons."

Even though they couldn't cozy up to the Garrison family, it didn't matter anymore since Morris Group and the topmost prominent families in South Hampton were now under Zoey's control. This alone was enough an improvement of the status of their family.

"Zoey, you should accept the reality that Levi has abandoned you. It is time for you to start anew!"

"That's right! Forget about him! You should move on for the sake of your baby!"

Everyone started giving their advices.

Zoey wiped her tears away. With her eyes full of determination, she uttered, "Dad, Mom, I've lost the bet. I'll believe that Levi has run away now. He has abandoned me and the baby."

From Zoey's sorrowful expression, everyone could tell how disappointed she was toward Levi.

She must be heartbroken right now. This time, Levi had really hurt her to the core.

Six years ago, she was willing to wait for his return because she knew he was framed. However, things were totally different this time.

Meanwhile, Emma, who had just regained consciousness, started sobbing uncontrollably. Things had spiraled out of control, heading toward the direction contrary to all her expectations. *My son... Levi... Please come back...*

Zoey cast her eyes over the whole lot before announcing, "I declare that from today onwards, I, Zoey Lopez, will cut ties with Levi Garrison. He is no longer my husband or my baby's father!"

"No..." Emma shouted her objection, but to no avail.

"Secondly, my baby will take on my surname as Lopez. Thirdly, I will reside overseas during the last few months of my pregnancy until I deliver the baby." Zoey announced the three

most difficult decisions in her entire life in one go. Her voice was firm and resolute because the person who was supposed to be there for her had run away, leaving her behind, and now she could only count on herself.

"I'm happy for you, Zoey! You've finally decided to move on."

"After all these years, you finally got to see Levi's true colors!"

"I'm glad you finally know that Levi is nothing but a selfish prick!"

Caitlyn and the others couldn't help getting a little emotional.

"And you!" Meredith shifted her gaze to Emma. "From now onward, you will leave Zoey alone, and don't you ever come anywhere near her! From now on, the Lopez family has nothing to do with anyone from the Garrison family. Zoey's baby has no relationship with you either."

"Mo—" Zoey suddenly recalled that it was not her place to call her "mom" anymore, so she changed the way she addressed Emma. "Aunt Emma, you should leave now and go back to South Hampton. Goodbye."

The Protector Chapter 1137

“Zoey, can you let me take care of you? Why don’t you let me stay by your side since I’m the one who has been taking care of your daily livings all this while? Besides, I wish to make it up for you on behalf of Levi. At the very least, please let me stay until you deliver the baby.” Emma pleaded earnestly.

Caitlyn and Aaron concurred with her. “She’s right, Zoey, why don’t you let her stay? We believe she can take good care of you.”

They had taken note of how meticulous Emma was when it came to taking care of Zoey. Even Caitlyn herself had to admit that she wasn’t capable of doing what Emma did, taking every matter into her own hands. She honestly thought that even a nanny wouldn’t do any better than Emma.

“Alright, she can stay. After all, she did take good care of Zoey.” Meredith relented.

However, Zoey shook her head and gave the final word. “No. Aunt Emma must leave. Thank you for taking care of me all this while.” She wouldn’t budge in this matter. “But... Don’t worry, Aunt Emma. You can always come and see the baby if you want. Of course, it will be best if you can leave us alone.” Her voice was soft yet firm, making it clear that Emma was allowed to visit the baby, but she will never be acknowledged as the baby’s grandma.

Zoey’s resoluteness was surely beyond everyone’s expectations.

“Then we’ll listen to Zoey. You should leave now! We have nothing to do with the Garrison family from now on.” Caitlyn and Aaron chased Emma out.

Emma had no choice but to go back to South Hampton.

“Zoey, get ready, we’re leaving the country immediately. All of us have quit our jobs, and we’ll accompany you until you deliver the baby,” said Caitlyn.

The Black and Lopez family had booked a private jet to Keerea, a country well-known for its high-quality healthcare system, which was not far from Erudia. Logan had also made arrangements in that country beforehand.

The jet was scheduled to take flight in the afternoon.

Unbeknownst to Zoey and Emma, Tenichi had been keeping an eye on their every move.

“Zoey Lopez will be arriving at Keerea by midnight! We have all the information about their motorcade route and manpower arrangement. Be prepared, my dear allies! It will be more than enough if we have Zoey in our hands, but it will be best if we can catch Emma Jones as well. We will have more bargaining chips if we manage to capture both of them.” Tenichi had everything all planned out. *We will catch both of them!*

In the afternoon, the Lopezs and the Blacks boarded the jet with Zoey alongside some paramedics.

The private jet was set to land at the capital of Keerea at Stellar International Airport. Little did they know that Tenichi, the man whom Levi had defeated, had set an ambush for them at the airport.

He had cleared the airspace, stopped all the flights, and emptied the whole airport. Tens of thousands of elites were now lurking in the darkness, waiting to launch their attacks as soon as the jet landed.

In the meantime, Emma had just arrived in South Hampton when she was ambushed on her way back to Edburg Manor as Tenichi’s elites had been lying in wait for her for quite some time.

While Tenichi was busy capturing both Zoey and Emma, Levi, on the other hand, was stuck in North Base One, fighting a life and death battle against the lunatics of the Blood King Palace.

The private jet from North Hampton landed safe and sound at the Stellar International Airport.

Sitting at the control tower, Tenichi had a clear view of the runway. "Zoey Lopez is here! Get ready, everyone! We will attack as soon as she appears!"

"My men are on standby outside the airport. Let's hurry and get off the plane." Logan urged.

Unaware of what was awaiting ahead for them, Zoey and the others got off the plane.

The Protector Chapter 1138

In North Base One, a battle had been waged on the vast glacier. The battlefield was baptized in blood and effluvium of death as dead bodies were scattered everywhere.

Levi and his men had just fought another wave of the Blood King Palace's ferocious attack off and were now resting and reorganizing themselves.

Sitting on a huge rock, Levi was smoking his cigar when all of a sudden, restlessness crept around his heart as he broke into a cold sweat. It felt as if his extrasensory perception was being triggered, and it was an odd feeling that he had never experienced before.

Oh no! Something bad happened!

Levi felt a gloomy foreboding that something must have had happened to Zoey and his mother.

However, since he was on Erudia's top confidential and secret mission, he couldn't possibly allocate his men for his private affairs in protecting his family.

Even though he knew Percy wouldn't be able to fend off the attacks if they were being set as a target by his enemy, he could only count on him now.

This is bad! Zoey and Mother must be in imminent danger! Levi was soaked in a cold sweat as he couldn't help feeling panicked.

If he couldn't be there to protect his family when they needed him, he was in no way a dependable husband or son. But as the situation stands now, he could only choose between his country or his family.

In fact, most of Erudia's soldiers faced the same dilemma as Levi. They couldn't be by their parents, wives, and children's side because they were being entrusted with missions. Some of them might even miss some of the most important events in life because of that.

Even when they were spending time with their families, the soldiers must be at the military's beck and call and leave whenever they received orders. It was inevitable that their families and loved ones might feel disappointed, and their friends might find them distant.

Nonetheless, they had no choice because they needed to protect their country. It was their conviction that allowed the citizens, their families, and friends to live peaceful and stable life.

Not only the soldiers, but many from different industries were also facing the same situation as them. These people were the ones who made contributions to Erudia's development, but they were also constantly being misunderstood by their close ones for the same reason.

Unknown to anyone, there existed a group of people who were selfless enough that they were willing to contribute all of their time and efforts in exchange for the country's better future. It was because of heroic people like them bearing the cross that the citizens got the chance to live a peaceful life.

The stability of the country was the result of sacrifices by countless people like Levi. Being entrusted with the mission to destroy the Blood King Palace and protect his country, he must give up his family even though his wife was pregnant with his baby.

"God of War, we don't care if we receive military punishment for disobeying the orders. Please allow us to head back to save Aunt Emma and Zoey!" Azure Dragon volunteered himself upon noticing the paleness on Levi's face.

White Tiger, whose body was covered in blood, kneeled in front of Levi. "That's right! God of War, let us save Zoey even though it would mean disobeying military orders. We are willing to accept any punishment!" Both of them were unwilling to see Zoey and Emma in danger.

Thump!

Thump!

Soon, all the soldiers followed suit and they kneeled before Levi.

Levi raised his head, trying hard to hold back his tears as he uttered through gritted teeth, "The military order is absolute; no one can disobey it! As the leader of the team, I should set a good example. This is the end of the discussion, and don't ever bring it up again."

From the moment he put on his military uniform and stepped onto the battlefield, he no longer held the identity as anyone else's husband, son, or father. As Erudia's soldier, he must prioritize his duty in protecting his country over his private affairs.

Phoenix broke out into tears. "Then what should we do now? They must be in imminent danger right now! A month has passed, and Tenichi must have prepared for revenge. Are we just going to sit here and let him harm Zoey and Aunt Emma?"

"Sir, the Blood King Palace is back again!"

The Protector Chapter 1139

Levi was at the end of his rope when the Blood King Palace came back with another wave of attack. All of the soldiers had to focus energy on it because they were facing an enemy that was too powerful.

“Charge forward on my command!” Levi gave his command, his voice loud and clear.

Chuff! Chuff! Chuff!

Just then, a Dragonite Helicopter landed on the ice sheet. A few Dragonites hopped out of the helicopter and immediately ran toward Levi. The next moment, they were all kneeling on one knee in front of him. “Greetings God of War! Please hold fire as we are here with urgent news!”

“What is it?” Levi’s heart skipped a beat.

The others were just as confused. *Did the Dragonites travel all the way from Oakland City to bring them another bad news?*

One of the Dragonites smiled and asked, “God of War, are you worried about your family’s safety?”

Levi nodded. “Yes, I’m very worried about them. Those previously defeated by me will definitely target my family once I leave their side.”

The Dragonite slowly explained to him, “Don’t worry, God of War. The government has taken notice of your concern as well. The re-emergence of the Blood King Palace is a part of the conspiracy of Tenichi, Raysonia’s military strategist. He did all this to send you away from Erudia so that he could seize the opportunity to capture your family and threaten you with them.”

Levi was surprised and overjoyed. *The government is aware of Tenichi's conspiracy, which means Mother and Zoey are safe now!*

With a smile, the Dragonite reassured them, "All soldiers that are fighting for the country, you need not worry for your family. Erudia will be your strongest backup!"

Thousands of millions of soldiers were touched by the reassurance. It was inevitable that, as a soldier, they might be required to choose between their beloved country and dearest family. Luckily, they were born in Erudia – a country whose government would protect their family while they were at the frontlines, defending the nation.

"God of War, your wife and family have headed to Keerea..."

Levi's heart sank. *Zoey has really gone overseas... I guess she hates me to the core now...*

He asked softly, "Are they safe?"

"Tenichi has sent at least ten thousand elites to the Stellar International Airport. They will attack as soon as your wife arrives at the airport." In a sudden change of tone, the Dragonites gave him reassuring news. "But you need not worry because we have sent someone else to protect your family. Tenichi no longer poses a threat to their safety."

"Who did you send?" Levi asked curiously.

"Winsor Campbell."

"Him?" Levi drew in a sharp breath, and his expression changed upon the mention of that name.

Winsor Campbell was his one and only competitor in the whole of Erudia. Back then, when he defeated the Eighteen-Nation Alliance of God class fighters, Winsor's achievements were only second to his.

He was crowned as the God of War, while Winsor received the title of Asura.

Winsor was a cold-blooded and merciless man. Just like what his title Asura connoted, he seemed to be a living embodiment of destruction.

Back then, he had received as much acclamation as well as criticisms for his act of annihilating the war captives. Later, for some reason, the military decided to transfer him to Oakland City.

He couldn't become someone like Levi because of his bloodthirsty nature, but he was undeniable a worthy opponent second only to the latter in terms of his combat skill and prowess in war.

The Protector Chapter 1140

He was more of a mighty warrior than a colonel!

"I'm glad that I have Asura!" Levi was both relieved and extremely touched.

Everyone in Erudia knew that the God of War and Asura were never on good terms. They were practically arch-enemies.

If it weren't for the fact that they were both mighty military leaders of Erudia, they would've fought to the bitter end.

No one in Erudia dared to disobey Levi except Asura, a.k.a. Winsor Campbell.

He'd been unhappy about Levi being the God of war as he believed that he had the edge over Levi and he should be the one bearing the title.

Their hostility towards each other never ceased.

From what Levi understood, under no circumstances would Winsor protect Zoey for him, but he did.

That showed how much Erudia had done to persuade Winsor into helping him.

It also reflected his willingness to put his personal grudges aside when in the face of Erudia's interests...

"I'm impressed, Winsor! I owe you one!" Laughed Levi.

Even if he had to hand out his title to Winsor after that, he would be more than willing to do it.

“God of War, Asura has arrived at Keerea. Your wife is in safe hands. Asura’s three disciples— Bolgun, Zar, and Talon—are on their way to protect your mother. We plead for your full allegiance in bringing Blood King Palace down. You have Erudia at your back and we are with you too!” the Dragonites roared as they saluted.

Levi saluted and led his men to the annihilation of Blood King Palace.

Somewhere around the Joneses’ Edburg Manor in South Hampton.

Just when the foreign elite fighters were about to strike, they sensed something amiss. Before they knew it, blood was jetting out from the back of their neck.

Indeed, those men were virtuosos in their field. But the people they were against were much more vicious and bloodthirsty—Bolgun, Zar, and Talon.

They bore a resemblance to their master, Asura. They were brutal, ruthless, and would show no mercy.

Emma was unscathed.

Meanwhile at Keerea’s Stellar International Airport.

Tenichi Watanabe spotted Zoey on the big screen.

“On my command...” Just as he was about to shout out his command, he smelled blood.

He turned his head around only to see all his men lying in a pool of blood.

Someone was staring at him!

It was a gauntly tall figure in a Devil’s mask.

“Erudia’s Asu... Asura...” Tenichi gulped.

“Tell your men to retreat! Don’t make me bring death to all! Zoey’s under my guard and no one touches her!” commanded Winsor.

Tenichi expressed his disbelief. “How was this even possible! You should be on bad terms with the God of War. Why have you come all the way to protect his woman? This is unbelievable!”

Everyone knew that the God of War and Asura were at loggerheads since forever.

“Indeed! You’re right! Levi and I can never get along. We may detest each other but you have forgotten something important. We are people of Erudia and no one terrorizes Erudia!” Winsor’s words pierced through the air.

Tenichi overlooked the shared pride and patriotism between Levi and Winsor for their nation.

They would willingly make peace in the face of a common enemy.

Being ever unyielding to Levi was something personal.

But when it came to the interest of Erudia, there was no place for personal disputes.

“This is unbelievable. Alright, I’ll retreat!” Tenichi immediately withdrew his men.

He could afford to provoke neither the God of War nor Asura.

Especially the latter who was known to be absolutely vindictive and would seek revenge at all cost.

With that, Zoey and the rest were safe and they left unharmed.

The Protector Chapter 1141

Tenichi and his men were all feeling pretty glum.

The elaborate plan that took them months to come up with ended with disaster.

They couldn't comprehend the patriots' devotion to Erudia and hence still couldn't fathom why Asura came to Zoey's rescue.

Shouldn't it be better for Winsor once Levi is gotten rid of?

He'd be number one in Erudia.

He'd also be the God of War.

In other words, he would benefit the most once Levi's gone.

But he came to protect Zoey.

They couldn't wrap their heads around it.

This was the most obvious difference between the ideologies of the people from Erudia and the other nations.

"That crazy Winsor is now in the picture, so there's nothing we could do! We need to come out with something else," muttered Tenichi's men.

He was at the verge of closing himself off.

They'd toiled and managed to keep the God of War at bay. Then in came Asura.

There was really nothing more they could do!

Meanwhile, Zoey was sent to the best hospital in Stellar City, waiting for the baby to be born.

"Levi said that it's unsafe outside Erudia. Like how is it unsafe?" sneered Logan.

"Why did you even bring up his name? He's nothing but a bastard!" Meredith grumbled.

Zoey glanced at everyone and snapped, "I don't wanna hear his name ever again! Never mention it in front of me again!"

"Alright..." With that, dead silence followed.

This time, anyone could tell that Zoey had given up on him.

If not, she wouldn't have gone abroad and let her child take on her last name.

In the shadows, Winsor took note of everything.

Even he, cold-hearted as he was, let out a sigh.

It was tough indeed...

"This may sound strange. After we left, I heard that the God of War left North Hampton too. I heard there's something extremely urgent that he has to deal with!" Logan tattled.

Puzzled, Meredith questioned, "Really? Didn't know there was something so important that could get him out of Erudia."

"Right? It must be something of grave urgency! Otherwise, he wouldn't have left the country!"

...

Chatters about the God of War continued.

Zoey looked out the window, she felt as calm as a millpond.

The only thing that she took heed to was the baby in her belly.

She started swiping through the photos on her phone. When she came across a photo of her and Levi, her finger droned to "Delete" deliberately.

But she hesitated as she couldn't get herself to do it.

The next one was still a photo of them.

She was wondering if she should just delete them.

A few nurses saw the photos on her phone and felt blood drained from their faces instantly.

They exchanged glances and felt a shiver down their spines.

They went for another peek, just to make sure.

Oh lord, it is him!

This hospital was the pinnacle of Keerea's medical infrastructure. People whom the nurses got to be in touch with were also elitists.

News revolving around this matter had spread through high society especially this period time.

That was why they could recognize Levi Garrison from the pictures.

"Yes?" Zoey looked up and asked, sensing nerves in those eyes.

As she put her phone away, someone asked timidly, "Ms. Lopez, is that your husband?"

"He was."

"Is he also from Erudia?" another voice popped in.

"Yes, he is," nodded Zoey.

BOOM!

Another shudder as Zoey replied. Their fear was apparent.

This woman whom they were about to take care of was the wife of that man.

That's too scary!

Zoey saw all the emotional changes in them and asked, "Hmm? It seems like you know him?"

The Protector Chapter 1142

"We... We are just curious. Why isn't he here with you?"

"Ms. Lopez, we heard that men of Erudia are especially caring to their wives!"

Given the years of experience in mingling with Keerea's upper-class elites, the nurses knew when to hold their tongue.

They changed the subject there and then.

"Oh, he must have had some business to deal with. That's why he couldn't come!"

Zoey didn't think much. The nurses reacted simply too quickly and didn't reveal much of what they actually knew.

They knew Levi couldn't come because they knew where he was...

Days passed.

Blood King Palace was way stronger than what Erudia had expected.

Fortunately, Levi was in command and could still hold them back.

All he needed was more time.

Two tormenting months went by.

That day, Levi was feeling uneasy. He couldn't put his mind to anything he was doing.

If everything went as planned, the baby would be due within these two days.

His nerves showed a high probability that Zoey was in labor.

“Zoey, I’ve failed you! I didn’t hold a proper wedding for you. I couldn’t even take care of you when you deliver the baby!” Levi mumbled under his breath.

He understood that it wasn’t a matter of compensation.

In what way could he possibly make it up to her?

He had been perpetually absent during all these important moments.

In what way could he make it up to her?

“Sorry, Zoey!” he said as he clenched his fists.

There was no time for sorrow as he once again battled with Blood King Palace.

At a hospital in Keerea.

Zoey faced another major juncture in her life...

The Lopez and Black families were waiting outside the operation room.

Emma wanted to come too but Zoey said no.

“Waaa...”

After a nerve-racking long wait, a wail finally broke the silence.

It’s the baby!

At last, the baby’s born!

It’s a girl!

Zoey gave birth to a baby girl.

She was overjoyed with tears.

Levi, while fighting on the battlefield, felt relieved all of a sudden. He charged to the front line and brawled with the elite warriors of Blood King Palace.

“Zoey, what are you gonna name her?” Everyone’s hopeful eyes fell upon Zoey.

“Let’s call her Forlevia Lopez,” she said without any hesitation.

It was obvious that she had already thought it through.

“For-levi-a? Isn’t that…”

Aaron stopped Caitlyn before she could finish her question.

Everyone there knew what that name implied.

They could also tell how much Zoey loved Levi especially these two months in Stellar City. She even sent someone to look for him discreetly when she was heavily pregnant.

Although Zoey had made up her mind, she was still holding on to the fleeting glimpse of hope.

However, the three-month wait had ground that glimpse of hope to bits.

He never came.

It seemed like he was hiding from the Garrison clan.

In less than a month, the bet between them would come due.

Forlevia!

Zoey wanted to forget Levi Garrison, once and for all!

She wanted to have no more ties with him!

“Dad, mom, let’s pack up and leave for Erudia! I can’t stay here any longer,” said Zoey.

"But you just gave birth. Your body's still very weak..." Everyone was concerned.

"Nah, it's alright! I can handle it!" She was persistent.

Everyone went back to Erudia that night.

Winsor escorted them home. That was his mission, after all.

Zoey insisted on returning to Erudia in a rush as she had something important to deal with.

The Protector Chapter 1143

Emma stood at the entrance of Royal Villa in North Hampton. She had been waiting for Zoey's return.

She rushed up to Zoey the moment she saw her.

"What are you doing here? Go away! You're not welcome here! You have nothing to do with this child!" Aaron and Caitlyn immediately stepped in and stood in her way.

Abashed, Emma looked at Zoey and pleaded, " Zoey, let me take care of you and your baby! I'll pay the deeds for that unfilial son of mine!"

"Yes, you should! That son of yours has wronged Zoey in such atrocious ways. It's only fair that you pay penance!" chimed in the rest.

"Emma, it's alright. My girl and I will be fine without you. Also, I am done with him and no one's at fault!" Zoey was firm with her words.

"Alright then. Take good care of yourself and the baby, Zoey." Emma sighed helplessly as she turned around and left.

"Emma, wait!" Zoey called out.

"Yes?"

"Come, have a look at the baby," Zoey continued.

Emma walked into the manor and burst into tears upon seeing the little baby.

As she held the baby girl, she felt the blood bond between them.

Won't it be nice if Levi never left?

How blissful it'd be to have a family!

What a shame!

This unfilial son ran away, just like Tyrone.

"Right, times up! Off you go. You're not welcome here!" Meredith shooed Emma away.

"Oh, before I forget. The baby's name is Forlevia Lopez! You can see how determined Zoey is now, right? So stay out of our sight!" sniggered Meredith as she slammed the gate shut.

Thud!

Emma quivered.

Zoey has made up her mind.

She showed me the child and proclaimed that she had fully severed ties with Levi.

The child's name...

Emma cried the whole way home...

As far as she was concerned, her life was an utter failure.

Not only did she fall for a heartless man, even her son turned out to be like him.

What a foundered life....

The Garrison clan in Oakland City

"Someone told me that Levi's child was born. Is that true?" Tyrone asked.

"Yeah, she delivered in Keerea and she is back in North Hampton. They named her Forlevia Lopez," responded Damien as he nodded.

He knew everything about Zoey and also the people around her.

Tyrone was absolutely delighted. "Haha, that's wonderful! His kid doesn't deserve the name Garrison! Not over my dead body will she bear the honor of the Garrison clan! Right, still no news of Levi? It has been three months!"

"Yeah, nothing! I would've found his body if he were dead. But there was nothing. It was almost as if he'd vanished into thin air... How is that even possible!" Damien frowned.

"That bugger is quite something to be able to avoid all our detections," Tyrone blabbed on as the corner of his mouth twitched.

"He's most probably out of Erudia. What a pathetic coward!" Damien scowled.

"Well, our bet is coming due pretty soon! I wonder how many people are following this. Who knew that this kiddo would hole up! He is nothing but a joke! Hahaha..." Tyrone let out a hearty laugh.

And again he affirmed his action of disowning Levi.

The folds on Damien's forehead remained as he popped another question, "Father, what if Levi came back on the very day the bet comes due?"

The Protector Chapter 1144

"Hmm?"

This question stumped Tyrone.

This is actually possible.

Levi might be keeping his trump card hidden all this while until the day the bet comes due.

"That's impossible!" Tyrone immediately argued. "Levi wasn't even around when his own child was born; how could he ever show up now?"

Damien nodded. "You're right. If he could leave during such a moment, there'd be even less reason for him to show up for the bet."

"Don't worry. He'll become a laughingstock if he doesn't show up."

Tyrone's face was full of contempt and mockery.

Damien sighed, "What a shame. We won't be able to see the look on Levi's face when he gets completely trashed and start begging for mercy."

Still, Damien and Tyrone hoped that Levi would come.

They wanted to show him just how powerful the Garrisons were.

They were untouchable!

Insurmountable!

How they wanted Levi to regret spewing such insolent words back then.

More than anything, they wanted to prove that Damien was more powerful than he was.

Most importantly, Tyrone had made the right decision.

Emma wants to make me regret it?

Like that'll ever happen!

What will I ever regret now that Levi has run away?

For the entire month, Zoey remained occupied despite having just given birth.

She had integrated all the resources of the Morris Group.

The woman insisted on walking the path that Levi hadn't managed to finish.

Under the combined effort of herself and Iris, Morris Group obtained notable results within a month and was now back on track.

This utterly puzzled Zoey.

Why didn't Levi work harder?

He had all the resources and connections.

It didn't take that much effort to produce results at all.

On top of that, he's so much capable than I am.

Yet, he chose to give up...

Zoey heaved a sigh.

I guess he's been planning to run off since the beginning.

All the concern he has shown me during those months was probably just to make him feel better.

Time flew by quickly, and the day of the bet between Levi and Tyrone had come.

If Levi hadn't disappeared, he would have had to be in Oakland City today to challenge the Garrisons.

If he were to succeed, he would be allowed to join them.

Otherwise, only death awaited him.

Meanwhile, Levi had been at war with Blood King Palace for four consecutive months at the battlefield of North Base One.

This time, he was adamant about completely annihilating his enemy.

"Oh, isn't today supposed to be the day of my bet with Tyrone?" Levi asked while puffing on a cigarette.

"That's right."

"Since you can't make it this time, I'm guessing the Garrison clan—or maybe even the whole of Oakland—is laughing at you."

"That's for sure. You'll surely be made a laughingstock for not showing up. That's inevitable."

Azure Dragon and the others responded to Levi simultaneously.

"Let him have his fun while it lasts," Levi remarked with a smile. "By the way, how are Zoey and the child?"

Phoenix reported everything about Zoey to Levi.

Levi's brows furrowed several times in the process, feeling as though he was right next to his wife.

Oakland City was in complete shock today.

Tens of thousands of eyes fell on the Garrison clan.

Despite knowing that Levi wouldn't come, Tyrone had decided to conduct the ceremony of accepting a challenge.

The high-ranking members of the Garrisons gathered at the entrance of the family home, with Tyrone seated on a chair.

Damien and the other juniors stood next to him on each side.

Members like Finnick, Hugh, and Titus were present too.

Whether or not Levi would show up, their stance remained.

"I've placed a bet with Levi Garrison today. I'm here in front of the Garrison family home and hereby declare that I accept his challenge!" roared Tyrone.

The Protector Chapter 1145

As the leader of the Grey Wolf Squad, Hugh is too tough of an opponent.

Finnick is a high-ranking official, so that makes him untouchable too.

When it comes to martial arts, Titus is the guardian of the Garrisons. There's probably some hope for Levi in this regard.

If we were to compete business-wise, he might stand a chance against Damien, who owns five percent of the business.

Still, it's nothing but a glimmer of hope.

Many in Erudia knew of the bet between the father and son.

Hence, a large number of citizens of Oakland City now surrounded the Garrison family home.

Such people included Tiffany Meyers and Martin Preston.

Even Benny Quinton and Abigail Rogers had come.

Unlike others, these few were here to watch how Levi crush the Garrison clan.

They knew who Levi's true identity, after all.

Most of the others had come just to watch the show.

Jason Lowe was here simply because he felt sorry for his friend.

He wished Levi would run far away instead of showing up.

“Alright. Time’s up,” the Garrison household butler announced. “Levi Garrison has yet to turn up, which means he has forfeited the challenge! A coward like him doesn’t deserve to be part of the clan. Thus, from here on, we’ll retract his last name. He shall longer be a Garrison!”

At this instant, Levi became the biggest joke in town.

He was now labeled an absolute disgrace and humiliation.

Abigail clenched her fists. “Why aren’t you here yet, Levi? Hurry up!”

Tiffany inhaled deeply. How she looked forward to seeing her Prince Charming reign terror upon the Garrison clan.

Unfortunately, Levi had already been missing for several months.

Hence, it was extremely unlikely that he would show up now.

Tyrone had even gone out of his way to bring Emma over.

Now, he turned to her and smirked. “Is there something you’d like to say now? Haha! Do you still think the same way? That you’d take Levi here before me and declare that your son is undefeatable? That the Garrisons would deeply regret it?”

Hearing the man’s sneers, Emma could only look down in despair.

Of course I’d want to do all that.

But I guess that’s just wishful thinking.

At this point, she wanted nothing else but for Levi to show up.

Even if things may not turn out well, it’s only right that he shows up.

That's how he should be; at least his conscience would be clear.

He shouldn't be hiding away like this!

Some traits are more important than life itself!

Olivia gazed at Emma with a disdainful smile. "Your son is an absolute joke, Emma. A disgrace! He's not fit to be a Garrison, nor is he ever comparable to Damien. The Garrisons officially gave you a chance, but he chose not to take it! If your son were truly powerful and won the challenge, both he and you would've been able to join the family and return to Tyrone's side."

The crowd began to comment. "We expect nothing less from the top ancient family in Erudia. Such a presence and sense of tolerance are indeed rare!"

Many citizens had nice things to say about the Garrisons accepting Levi's challenge.

Olivia smiled triumphantly and continued, "It's just unfortunate that your son doesn't even have the guts to show up, let alone win the challenge. What a useless wimp! I heard he even left his wife, child, and mother behind! He doesn't deserve to be a man—no, he doesn't even deserve to live!"

Upon hearing Olivia's insults, Emma gripped her fists so hard that her nails dug into her flesh.

Yet, there was nothing she could do to fight back.

Because Olivia had said nothing but the truth.

"The Garrisons are the number one ancient family in Erudia. Honestly, we don't ask a lot from him. Just be brave to show up for the challenge is more than enough. In fact, it doesn't even matter if he loses; he won't necessarily have to die. Yet, he doesn't even have the courage to stand here before us?" Olivia scoffed.

"Who says I don't?"

A cold voice suddenly rang out.

The Protector Chapter 1146

The voice was like a roaring thunder.

Everyone turned to the source and was instantly stunned—especially the Garrisons.

All their smiling faces froze in a blink of an eye.

Olivia, who had so much to say just a moment ago, was now dumbfounded.

As though she had been struck by lightning.

Damien paled.

Tyrone's expression turned ghastly.

So did everyone else's.

The tens of thousands of eyes immediately shifted toward the direction of that voice.

"Hmm? Wait. I think it was a woman's voice..."

Then, it dawned on everyone.

That was a woman's voice?

So it's not Levi Garrison?

Everyone had initially thought Levi had arrived.

Emma had even become ecstatic for a brief moment.

Yet, what the crowd saw next was a woman walking over with a baby in her arms.

It was none other than Zoey.

She was the one who had spoken.

“What? It’s actually her!”

Tyrone inhaled sharply.

Damien looked horrid.

What is she up to?

Emma immediately ran up to her.

“What... What are you doing here?”

She was petrified.

Zoey smiled. “I’m here to take up the Garrison clan’s challenge in my husband’s place.”

She had returned from Keerea for this.

Otherwise, she would have still been recuperating in that country.

Today was supposed to be the child’s baby shower, but she had duped both the Lopez and Black families and come to Oakland City just to fulfill the agreement.

The woman shocked everyone with her revelation.

The crowd was stupefied the moment her words fell.

Everyone stared at her in disbelief.

"My husband has other matters to take care of, so I'm here to keep his promise and challenge the Garrisons. We never go back on our word, so please take back all the insults you've made against him!" she yelled.

Emma couldn't endure it anymore. Tears began to flow down her cheeks.

Zoey hasn't forgotten about Levi.

Instead, she still loves him dearly.

She's even here to take up the challenge in his place.

Abigail, Benny, and the others were beyond moved.

Tyrone gazed at Zoey in bewilderment. "You want to take Levi's place and challenge us?"

Many among the crowd stared at her similarly.

A woman challenging the Garrisons?

And she's even here in her husband's place?

Zoey nodded in determination. "That's right."

Tyrone burst into laughter. "Are you seeing this, Levi? Your wife and one-month-old child are here to take up the challenge in your place, but where are you? You're the biggest coward and most pathetic excuse for a man I've ever met!"

Damien chimed in frostily, "This has to be the biggest joke I've seen so far. What a champ, Levi! You vanished without a trace, and now your woman and child are here to shoulder everything for you? You're not cut out to be a husband or father! How despicable!"

"I know, right? And he tried to compare himself to my son? Is he even worthy?"

Olivia's face was full of contempt.

Emma was crying profusely at this point.

It didn't matter if her son never made her proud, but now, he was now seen as an utter disgrace.

Zoey scanned the crowd. "That's nonsense! My husband isn't a scumbag, and he certainly isn't irresponsible! I'm telling all of you, he just has some urgent matters to take care of right now. He's the most responsible man I've ever met! Besides, I'm his wife; what difference does it make if I'm here instead of him?"

Damien shook his head, baffled. "Do you seriously still believe him even though you know exactly what's going on, Zoey? Stop trying to fool yourself!"

"That's right. I've always believed in my husband, and I always will!"

The Protector Chapter 1147

Zoey was loud and firm.

She had always believed in Levi, no matter what he did.

He just owes me an explanation now.

But I know he'll definitely show up.

She looked forward to hearing Levi's explanation later.

Many among the crowd were moved by Zoey's words.

To think that such an incredible woman still exists!

A woman like her is a treasure and hard to come by in today's society.

However, the more they felt moved, the more furious they were with Levi.

How could he do such a thing?

Damien roared with laughter. "Did you hear that, Levi? You sure are a lucky one! You don't deserve a wife like her! Well, the Garrison clan has strict rules to adhere to, but we're not merciless. We'll make an exception just this once and allow you to take part in the bet in Levi's place."

Tyrone agreed.

"I'm Hugh, leader of the Grey Wolf Squad. Do you think you can win?"

"No."

"I'm Finnick—"

"Nope."

"I'm Titus, guardian of the Garrison clan. I was practically born into martial arts. Can you beat me?"

"No!"

"I'm Damien, and I control five percent of the clan's businesses. Can you achieve such feats too?"

The final option would require auditing on both sides.

Zoey and Iris may have pooled together all of their resources available, but one month was still too short.

Morris Group was certainly no match for Damien's achievements in the corporate world.

Thus, everyone knew how the bet would turn out.

There was no way Zoey could win.

After all, the Garrisons were far too remarkable in all four aspects mentioned earlier.

The Garrisons began to laugh.

"Your son can't even compare to Damien's five percent, Emma; yet, he's still trying to put up a fight?"

"Hahaha! He doesn't even stand a chance against Damien! What an embarrassment!"

There was a reason the Garrisons had used these four aspects as benchmarks.

It was chosen precisely so Tyrone could humiliate Emma and Levi.

The man sneered, "In that case, I'd like to announce that Levi has lost the challenge! Do you accept this verdict, Zoey Lopez?"

"Yes, I do. It's my loss. But you can't say that my husband failed to keep his promise!"

Zoey looked resolute.

A murderous glint flashed in Damien's eyes. "Mind you—this matter doesn't end with you taking part in the bet. You'll have to pay the price of losing!"

"He's right! Levi said he'd disappear off the face of the earth if he lost."

To a prominent clan like the Garrisons, a person's life was worth nothing.

Zoey's actions might have touched the hearts of many, but the Garrisons were completely unfazed.

Rather, her action had only served to provoke them.

Zoey nodded without any hesitation. "Okay, fine. I'll bear the consequences on my own."

"No, you idiot! I'll do it. I'll bear the consequences!" Emma exclaimed while rushing over. "I'm his mother, so I'll take responsibility. You're still young, but I'll be dead soon enough."

Then, she turned to Tyrone. "Let me do it. Don't give Zoey a hard time."

"Alright. Discuss this among yourselves. It doesn't matter who pays the price, but someone has to do it!"

Tyrone looked especially stern.

The Garrison clan's dignity was on the line, after all.

That was why someone had to die.

Before Zoey could say anything else, Emma grabbed onto her. "Take good care of the child and wait for Levi. I believe he'll be back one day."

"Mom! I..."

Zoey's eyes brimmed with tears.

"I'll take responsibility for this. Levi will show up. I'm sure of it. Keep waiting for him, Zoey!"

With that, Emma walked toward Tyrone.

The Protector Chapter 1148

“Things would’ve turned out this way sooner or later, Emma! Why did you even try to fight it in the first place?” Tyrone smirked.

Emma had knelt before the entrance of the Garrison family home while she was pregnant back then.

I wouldn't have done that if I knew this day would come.

“Die!”

Tyrone’s eyes flashed coldly with not a single trace of mercy in them.

Swoosh!

One of the Garrison family’s top fighters began to swing his blade.

Crack!

Bam!

Yet, the blade broke all of a sudden, and its owner was sent flying by a mysterious force.

“Who did this? Who dares behave like this in front of the Garrisons?” Damien bellowed.

“It was me!”

A figure wearing a demon mask slowly emerged.

“Who are you?” Tyrone demanded, frowning.

No one could tell who this man was.

After all, Erudia had deliberately kept this masked man’s identity a secret after he had been defeated by Levi. On top of that, he had been assigned to silently return to Oakland City in advance.

That was why Tyrone was in the dark too.

However, Damien was well aware of this man’s identity.

He knew everything about the God of War, including the latter’s enemies.

That was why he was no stranger to Asura.

From just one look, Damien immediately knew this man was Winsor Campbell!

“The Garrisons—the top clan in Erudia—enjoys picking on women and children?” Winsor scoffed.

Despite being violent by nature, he wasn’t completely heartless.

The man had come for two reasons.

One, to perform his duty of protecting Zoey and Emma.

Two, because he couldn’t tolerate the Garrisons’ deed.

“Levi was the one who made the bet with you, so you should be looking for him instead! What are you doing picking on two women? Are you that incapable of searching for him? These two women are under my care today,” declared Winsor.

Just as Tyrone was about to fly into a rage, Damien hurriedly told him Winsor’s identity.

“Huh? It’s him?”

Tyrone was astounded.

“That’s right. He was relocated to Oakland City after some issues, but I never thought he’d show up because of this bet. We can’t afford to get into a fight with him. He’d do anything once he loses his mind!

Damien trembled as he spoke.

“Fine. The Garrisons will show you mercy just this once. We shall not punish women, but Levi will have to pay for his own sins! You are indeed a gracious woman, Zoey Lopez, but Levi doesn’t deserve you.”

Thanks to Winsor’s interference, Tyrone had no choice but to let Emma off.

“I heard that Asura is absolutely cold-hearted, merciless, and violent. Why is he backing Zoey up?”

Damien was extremely perplexed.

“I’m guessing it’s because he’s been touched by her actions. She really is a remarkable woman, after all!”

Olivia couldn’t help but look up to Zoey.

On this day, Zoey’s name spread far and wide across Oakland City.

Everyone expressed their admiration at the mention of her.

This incident became the talk of the town.

Zoey and Emma hurriedly went up to Asura. “Thank you for your help. May I know who you—”

Asura cut them off. “You don’t need to know who I am, nor do you need to thank me.”

He gazed deep into Zoey’s eyes and remarked coldly, “You are indeed worthy of Levi.”

Then, he left right after saying something this unusual.

“Huh?”

The crowd was bewildered.

Isn't it about whether or not Levi is worthy of Zoey?

Why did he say that instead?

Was he mistaken?

Even Zoey and Emma found it strange.

Even so, they didn't think too much about it and left with the child.

The Protector Chapter 1149

With that, the bet between Levi and Tyrone came to an end.

Levi suffered a complete defeat—a terrible one at that.

He had become the biggest disgrace by now.

On the contrary, Zoey won the respect of almost everyone in Oakland City.

It was Tiffany's first time seeing the woman.

Levi used to say that she was no match for Zoey.

That was why she wanted to find out what Zoey looked like.

Considering that the latter had just given birth, worked herself to the bone for the past month, and shown up bare-faced, she certainly didn't look as attractive compared to her.

Hence, she was disappointed at first glance.

But after what had happened, Tiffany understood why she had lost to Zoey.

I'll never be as good as her.

Meanwhile, far up North, Levi had just received word of Zoey meeting the Garrisons.

"Arghh!"

With a roar, the ice beneath his foot cracked beyond a thousand meters.

“Thankfully, Asura saved them just in time. They’re fine now,” Phoenix reported.

Levi took a deep breath. “Looks like I owe him another one. I’d gladly let him take over as God of War. I was just thinking of spending the rest of my time with Zoey and the baby anyway.”

Azure Dragon and the others immediately argued, “You can’t do that! You’re the only one who’s worthy of such a title. He can’t replace you.”

“Yeah! He’s not even close when it comes to ability. Not just any barbarian gets to be God of War,” added White Tiger.

Levi chuckled. “You guys clearly don’t understand him. He’d never accept the position if I offer it to him.”

“You scared us!”

Everyone patted their own chests.

If Levi were to give up his position, the country would be in utter chaos.

“We’re going to have to work even harder now, team. Let’s demolish Blood King Palace as quickly as possible!” Levi shouted.

“I’ve noticed something, General,” remarked White Tiger. “I vividly remember how we took down many members of Blood King Palace three years ago, but how did they survive? In fact, they’ve become stronger in just after three years!”

“I’ve realized this too. They’re really bizarre. It’s like they’re attacking us blindly without any goal in mind.”

“Yeah. Just the fact that they’ve initiated the attack on us is really weird.”

The others were just as confused.

Levi’s eyes briefly flashed with murderous intent. “Let’s not think about this. Once we destroy Blood King Palace, all its mysteries will be solved too.”

“Got it!” everyone responded.

Levi proceeded to gather more forces.

It was all so he could get rid of Blood King Palace once and for all.

Another year passed, and finally, Levi wiped out Blood King Palace in its entirety.

To prevent its return, he annihilated every single member of the group and refused to rest until he was sure that none of them could ever come back to life.

After a game of tug-of-war spanning a year and a half, they finally emerged victorious.

According to the estimation then, it should have taken them at least four years to eliminate Blood King Palace.

Now, Levi’s trip home had been brought forward by over one and a half years.

The God of War sent waves across the world upon defeating Blood King Palace once again.

As Erudia soared, the rest of the world trembled at its presence.

Those who had initially planned to attack Levi now gave in completely.

After all, he was the only one who could defeat Blood King Palace.

No one else could come close to his achievement!

He was still the God of War, but stronger than before.

“I can finally go home! Mom, Zoey, my dear child—I’m coming home!”

It was time for Levi to return.

How he looked forward to seeing his family...

The Protector Chapter 1150

The nation underwent many big changes within the past year.

First off was the Garrison clan.

On the day Zoey challenged the Garrisons, Damien had been appointed as the successor of the clan.

Previously, the Garrison clan worked behind the scenes as Erudia's most prominent ancient family.

But after Tyrone and his son took over, the clan began to operate with a different strategy.

Tyron and Damien started by winning over all the Garrison clan's collateral relatives and gaining absolute power over the entire clan.

Then, they set up a humongous financial group and took control of all its funds.

Moreover, Damien even founded a special combat club to recruit the best fighters in Erudia and all over the globe.

Despite the organization being known as a club, it was, in fact, merely a way for the Garrisons to obtain more pawns.

This was precisely Tyrone's and Damien's intention—to take control of as much wealth and power as possible while also having an array of martial artists at their command.

Then, the Garrisons' influence spread across Bayview and other nations.

Within just a year, the Garrison clan became even more powerful than before.

It sat comfortably in its position as the number one ancient family in Erudia.

In addition, being a son-in-law of the Garcia family meant Damian could utilize both the Garrisons' and Garcias' resources.

With that, the father-son duo now headed the two most powerful ancient families.

No one in Erudia could go against them.

Only few clans in Bayview were any match for them.

There was one other person who had changed drastically within the year.

It was Zoey.

Within a short period of time, Zoey expanded Morris Group tenfold.

Thus, she was now known as the Queen of the South's Corporate World.

Aside from her own hard work, she also had a benefactor.

Erudia was full of prominent families, but there were only eight that could truly be referred to as ancient families.

Many people were touched by her courage on the day she challenged the Garrisons.

In fact, the head of the third most prominent ancient family in Erudia, Dale Lehman, declared his intention to take Zoey as a goddaughter and Forlevia as his god-granddaughter.

With the Lehman family's help, the Garrisons renounced their boycott against Morris Group, thus allowing Zoey's career to skyrocket.

Her situation was not what Levi had expected at all.

The mother-daughter duo didn't suffer at all. In fact, they were doing extremely well now.

Levi had thought that Zoey would surely be living a hard life from being constantly oppressed.

That Forlevia would be abhorred by both the Lopez and Black families, and resort to finding food on the streets.

Yet, the child was now loved by everyone, just like a princess.

She was Dale's god-granddaughter, after all.

Who would dare treat her poorly?

Emma would occasionally drop by to see her too.

Everyone's lives seemed to flourish.

All that was missing was Levi.

Even so, they had grown accustomed to not having him around.

So much time had passed that he was slowly being forgotten.

There were even rumors that Levi was already dead.

That he had been secretly murdered by the Garrisons.

However, the Garrisons never clarified this rumor. All they said was that he had disappeared.

Even Zoey herself had once suspected that this was true.

After all, there was solid proof of the rumor.

If Levi was alive, why hadn't he appeared after more than a year?

Hence, it was highly likely that he had died.

Even so, Zoey, Emma, and a few others continued to believe that he was still alive.

For the past few days, Erudia was abuzz with excitement.

The country's hero—the God of War—had defeated Blood King Palace once again and brought glory to Erudia.

“Remember, Evie; you should always look up to people like the God of War!” Iris beamed while carrying the little girl.

She happened to be reading a news article about the God of War.

Zoey smiled too.

Suddenly, the child became wide-eyed as she stared at the back of the mighty figure in the picture. “Da... Daddy... Daddy!”

The Protector Chapter 1151

Iris chuckled upon hearing that. “That’s not your daddy, Evie! It’d be great if he were, though!”

Zoey sighed. “Let’s not joke about the God of War, Iris. He’s no ordinary human. He’s a god.”

“Oh, wasn’t Evie’s first word ‘daddy’? You really worked hard on that.”

Iris remembered how Zoey had taught the child to say ‘daddy’ first instead of ‘mommy’.

That was why Forlevia’s very first word was ‘daddy’.

Iris gazed at Zoey sternly. “Zoey, I know you still love Levi, but you have to accept how things are now. Even if he’s still alive, he probably won’t come back. Who knows, he might have even followed his dad’s footsteps and found himself another wife. It’s not impossible.”

Thump.

Zoey’s heart sank.

There was certainly a possibility.

This was what Tyrone did, after all.

It wasn’t unusual if his son did the same.

“You’ve been shouldering everything on your own. The burden’s just too heavy! You’re still young, so I suggest you find another man to walk the path with you for the rest of your life. Evie needs a father too,” Iris said earnestly.

Zoey disagreed. “Let’s not talk about this anymore, Iris. Besides, I have a child now. Who would ever want me?”

Iris was amused. “Oh, please, Zoey. Don’t you have lots of men chasing after you? They don’t care if you have Evie! Who would say no to you anyway, considering who you are right now? You’re not lacking in any aspect!”

Suddenly, Zoey recalled how her godfather, Dale, wanted to get her married.

The man treated her and Forlevia so well that Zoey didn’t know how to turn this matter down.

“Mr. Lehman likes you a lot, Zoey, so he’ll definitely find you a good husband. Don’t worry. I’m sure you’ll be happy. The guy he’s picked out will be here in North Hampton tomorrow. Why don’t you give it a thought after meeting him?” Iris smiled.

Zoey let out a sigh. “I guess I’ll do that.”

However, she had no other intention on this.

All she wanted was to fulfill her godfather’s wishes.

“Yeah, I know you’ll be pleased with him. Do it for Evie! Besides, Ms. Jones has agreed to it too, hasn’t she?”

Emma knew about this too, and she had given her consent.

The next day, Percy Convington suddenly led his subordinates to one of North Hampton’s remote entrances. There was no traffic here; instead, it was an area with steep terrains that were difficult to maneuver. Tourists were usually prohibited from coming here.

As the men stood in two straight lines, Percy paced back and forth as though waiting for someone.

Finally, the sound of engine rumbling began to surface half an hour later.

Soon, war vehicles began to make their way over.

The first few bore flags that danced in the wind.

Apart from the flag of Erudia, there were also flags with the words 'God of War' on them.

A mighty presence emerged.

Percy and his subordinates immediately saluted.

"The Iron Brigade has returned! The God of War has returned!" Percy shouted.

The soldiers standing in rows began to shout too.

Levi and his team were back.

They were Erudia's invincible troop!

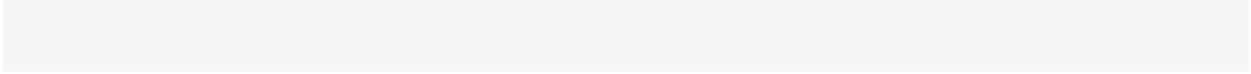
The pride of the country!

The very souls of Erudia's army!

Not only had they defeated Blood King Palace for the second time, but they had miraculously done so in just half the estimated time needed.

The vehicles stopped.

A window rolled down, revealing Levi's face.



The Protector Chapter 1152

The god-like man was back.

Percy and his men had nothing but respect and admiration for him.

This man had done what no one else in the world could do—twice.

Moreover, Blood King Palace had become even more powerful the second time round.

Yet, Levi and his forces had created an absolute miracle.

But instead of heading to Oakland City to receive his accolade, Levi had chosen to return to North Hampton discreetly.

The true hero doesn't seek adulation, he fights for what is right simply because it's his nature. Percy couldn't help but think to himself.

On the same day, the man Dale had arranged to be Zoey's suitor arrived in North Hampton.

If Zoey were childless, Dale would have definitely chosen for her to marry someone within his own family.

However, the Lehmans were the third most prominent ancient family in Erudia. They still had to watch their reputation.

Still, the man Dale had chosen was an exceptional one.

He was Jerry Gott, the successor of an imperial family in Oakland City.

He ranked third on the Heir Leaderboard.

This man was no wastrel, and he certainly wasn't a philanderer.

There was not a single negative rumor about him.

Oakland City referred to him as a true gentleman.

That was why he was also known as Saint Jerry.

Jerry didn't top the Heir Leaderboard, but he was an all-rounder.

Dale had spent a great deal of time deciding on this man.

Furthermore, Jerry was willing to marry Zoey, and he accepted the fact that she had a child.

Marrying a woman who already had a child was a disgrace to imperial families.

But still, Zoey was Dale's goddaughter.

Hence, the imperial Gott family had no choice but to accept this.

Accompanying Jerry was Dale's eldest son, Edwin Lehman.

Edwin had a ferociousness akin to a warlord.

He was hot-tempered and extremely capable.

Many in Oakland City feared him.

However, he treasured his god sister dearly.

Many young heirs had coveted Zoey, only to have their limbs broken by Edwin.

That was why no one had dared cross Zoey for the past year.

All her other suitors fled with terror upon hearing that Edwin's presence.

Jerry was the only man he seemed to approve of.

"You'd better treat my god sister well, Jerry. You'll be sorry if you don't!" Edwin threatened.

"I understand, Edwin," Jerry replied with a nod. "I'm very fond of Ms. Lopez's talents and abilities."

Despite saying this, a peculiar glint flashed in his eyes.

The two parties met at the Golden Hotel.

After talking to each other, Jerry seemed extremely pleased with Zoey.

He readily accepted the fact that the woman was once married and already had a child.

"So, what do you think?" asked Edwin.

Jerry nodded. "I'm very impressed. I'd be more than willing to marry you, Ms. Lopez. I'll take care of you and Evie for life. Everything may seem too sudden right now, but we can always take our time."

Both Zoey and Iris were taken aback.

He's that straightforward?

They had thought the man would at least take some time to consider this.

Edwin nodded in satisfaction. "Alright. I'll take it from here, then. Dad will be thrilled to hear this."

The Lehman family was in charge of handling everything regarding this matter.

There was no need to listen to any of Zoey's suggestions.

"Wait! I do have one condition, however," Jerry suddenly called out.

Even Zoey froze.

She was just about to express her disagreement, but Jerry had beat her to it.

“What is it?” asked Edwin.

“I’d gladly marry Ms. Lopez and care for Evie, but I have just one request, which has something to do with the Gott family’s reputation. Can Evie’s last name be Gott instead? This is all I ask for,” Jerry answered earnestly.

After all, the Gott family was an imperial family. Taking a once-married woman as a wife and having to raise her child was shameful enough for them. What more, the child didn’t even take Gott as her last name.

“Why should *my* child bear your last name?”

The Protector Chapter 1153

Just as Jerry made his request, a loud voice boomed across the room like thunder.

Everyone was shocked.

Zoey and Iris were immediately stupefied upon hearing that familiar voice.

Could it be...

No. It can't be him...

The women trembled involuntarily as they exchanged glances.

With her big, innocent eyes, Forlevia gazed in the direction of the entrance.

At the very moment, a tall, mighty figure emerged.

It was Levi!

At present, the man looked rather worn-out. There was soot on his face, and his clothes were tattered as though he had just escaped the jaws of death.

Still, none of that diminished the murderous energy he now emitted. Everyone's scalp began to tingle as goosebumps formed on their skin.

Levi had just returned from the battlefield, so he had no time to tidy himself.

He had come over hastily right after enduring the hardships of a long journey.

Edwin and Jerry were stunned upon seeing Levi.

Who is he?

Is he some refugee?

"I'm back, Zoey," Levi announced.

"Huh?"

Zoey was utterly dumbfounded.

She had imagined Levi's return countless times, even dreaming about it in her sleep.

Yet, the woman was bewildered now that Levi was actually standing right in front of her.

She couldn't tell if this was reality or just a dream.

Right now, she could only stare at him...

But Levi's eyes were on the child.

Forlevia stared right back at him.

They looked so similar to each other!

The little girl had his eyes and demeanor.

Everything else about her closely resembled Zoey.

At this moment, an intense feeling of familial love began to surface within Levi.

It was something he had never felt before.

This child was his!

Levi strode over and took the child from the nanny's arms.

Forlevia was extremely timid and would usually cry if a stranger picked her up.

Yet, when Levi carried her, not only did she not cry, but she even gazed at him with curiosity.

“Daddy... you’re Daddy!” the child suddenly cried out.

Boom!

Upon hearing the sweet child’s voice, Levi instantly froze and his mind went blank.

He had never experienced being a father.

This little girl in his arms was like the most precious gem he had ever owned—the most important piece of himself.

“Daddy’s back! Daddy’s back!”

Forlevia was a bright child. She had long remembered Levi’s face after frequently seeing Zoey looking at his photos.

Zoey had never mentioned who the man in the photo was, but the child knew that he was her father.

“My little girl!”

Levi held the child in his arms tightly.

Then, he suddenly began to cry.

To think there was such a gentle side to the man who stood on the top of the mountain...

“Hey! What are you up to? Why did you take the child? Give her back!” the nanny frantically yelled at Levi.

Levi responded politely, “Hello, ma’am. I’m the child’s father.”

“Oh, please! The child’s father is long dead! Everyone knows that.”

The nanny clearly wasn't buying it.

"But I really am her father!" Levi insisted.

"Then do you know her name?" A cold voice suddenly rang out.

Jerry and Edwin walked toward Levi.

"I..."

Indeed, Levi had no idea.

Phoenix had found out the child's name long ago, but she never told him.

The little girl didn't bear his last name anyway.

"Are you here just to cause a scene? I won't let that happen!"

While speaking, Jerry gave Levi a shove.

Pfft!

Staggering, Levi spewed a mouthful of blood.

The Protector Chapter 1154

No one had expected this from Levi.

Not even Levi himself.

The man gave his mouth a wipe as a look of disbelief formed on his face.

He could feel something different within his body.

He felt especially frail and was even beginning to have double vision.

Am I... injured?

That can't be.

We may have fought Blood King Palace for over a year, but no one has managed to hurt me.

Could it be...

Levi began to recall.

During the final battle with Blood King Palace, Levi had faced Bloodking and the Four Bloodmasters on his own.

Ultimately, he had the last laugh and all of them died in his hands.

But before Bloodking drew his last breath, he told Levi, "I'll be waiting for you down below."

Back then, Levi merely thought the man was just spewing nonsense and paid no attention to it.

But now that this was happening...

Realization quickly dawned on Levi.

I've been poisoned!

Blood King Palace was the most terrifying force in the Western Dark World. They were ruthless in everything they did.

Thus, the act of poisoning someone was nothing out of the ordinary for them.

But how could I not have known about this? I'm only feeling it now.

"Cough, cough..."

Levi coughed two more times, only to expel more blood.

This poison is insane.

Those who were aware of Levi's true abilities knew how powerful he was.

Most toxins had no effect on his body at all.

In fact, for the past six years, he had been poisoned multiple times.

Yet, this was the first time his body was having a reaction.

Bloodking must have done it right before he died, just so I'd join him eventually.

Or maybe... his true purpose was simply to kill me!

This poison really is something else.

"Are... Are you okay?" asked Zoey and Iris after returning to their senses.

Even Jerry jumped in fright.

He had only given Levi a light shove, yet the latter had suddenly sprayed blood out of his mouth.

“What have you done? How did you turn out this way?” Zoey choked.

Levi looked so miserable right now.

His face was white as a sheet, and blood trickled from his mouth. The man looked like he had just narrowly escaped death.

Where did he run off to in the past year?

Did I jump to conclusions about him?

Could he have been dealing with something really important?

Levi smiled. “I’m fine.”

As he adjusted his body and forced himself to suppress the toxins, his complexion quickly returned to normal.

“Daddy’s okay!” Forlevia yelped with excitement.

“Who the hell are you? Give me back my daughter!”

With a frosty look on his face, Jerry tried to take the child away from Levi.

But the latter easily evaded him.

“Your child? Bullsh*t! This is *my* child!” Levi raged.

Jerry turned red with fury.

His marriage with Zoey had been arranged by Dale Lehman himself.

Everyone in Oakland City was already aware of this. Even many in the whole country knew that Zoey belonged to him.

Yet, someone had decided to show up all of a sudden and snatch his child?

How could he ever allow that?

Jerry glared daggers at Levi.

The former had also studied martial arts since young and was second to Martin Preston on the Heir Leaderboard in this regard.

“Do you have a death wish? Hand the child over right now!”

Edwin was beginning to lose his patience too.

A hostile atmosphere instantly surrounded the entire place.

Zoey and Iris hastily stepped in. “Edwin! Mr. Gott! Don’t do anything rash! We know this man.”

“Who is he?” asked Edwin.

“He’s Levi Garrison!”

Hearing that, Edwin immediately flew into a fit of rage. “So he’s the b*stard who abandoned you and Evie?”

The Protector Chapter 1155

They hadn't heard him when he mentioned who he was, but now that they knew, even Jerry stared at him in bewilderment.

So he's that scumbag?

The guy everyone in the country calls a cowardly disgrace?

Zoey immediately jumped to Levi's defense. "No, he never abandoned us. Isn't he here right now?"

"Hah! Where was he when you gave birth to Evie? Where was he when went to face the Garrisons head-on? Where was he when you and Emma Jones were ready to die for him, and what about the time you raise the child on your own?"

Zoey fell silent at Edwin's string of questions.

She couldn't deny the truth.

"The Garrisons have forgotten about him, the child has grown up, and you're now the Queen of the Corporate World. And now, he's finally shown up! This spineless man is here only because the danger's gone. Isn't it obvious? Are you really still going to believe him?" Edwin remarked.

"I..."

Zoey was tongue-tied.

Even Iris gazed at Levi in disappointment.

No matter how urgent his matters may have been, he shouldn't have left Zoey when she needed him most.

Even if he really had to, he should've at least told her what was going on.

He disappeared for over a year and finally shows up now. What's the point then?

What more, he shows up at this time so it was very suspicious!

"Don't protect him, Zoey!" Edwin demanded. "You should be treating him like a stranger or even a dead man! He's gone. This isn't him! A guy like him isn't worthy of your sacrifices"

The others chimed in too. "That's right, Zoey. He doesn't deserve you!"

Levi gazed at Zoey apologetically. "I'm sorry, Zoey. I've disappointed you for the second time. No amount of words can describe how sorry I feel. I promise there won't be a third time."

"If apologies could fix everything, I'd have just apologized for every mistake I've made. So, can I kill someone and say I'm sorry?" Edwin roared.

Even Iris was infuriated.

Zoey didn't do all this just to hear you tell her that you're sorry.

You're heartless, Levi.

"I promise never to leave you and the baby again. I—"

Iris cut him off. "That's enough. You've said that once in the past. All that talk about spending the rest of your life with Zoey and giving her the world—none of that means anything when you weren't even there for her while she was giving birth."

Levi had no idea how distanced he and Zoey had become in his absence of one-and-a-half-year, nor was he aware of how much he had hurt her.

Hence, it was futile trying to explain himself.

“I really didn’t mean to abandon you, Zoey. Why do you think I’ve come back?”

Jerry glared at him haughtily. “Aren’t you going to give Ms. Lopez an explanation behind your year-long absence? Do you think she’d accept you just like that?”

Zoey turned to Levi too.

She had been waiting for an explanation all this while, and finally, that day had come.

“Well, what are you waiting for?” Iris demanded. “Where have you been the past year? What did you do? Tell us everything. You owe Zoey and Evie an explanation no matter what!”

Zoey nodded. “Yeah. Iris has said exactly what’s been on my mind. I demand an explanation.”

The Protector Chapter 1156

Both Jerry and Edwin glanced at Levi contemptuously.

They were curious to find out what kind of nonsense he was about to make up.

"I..."

Levi began to hesitate.

"Go on! You're not going to say you were busy protecting the country, are you?"

"Well, that's possible. Someone like him could come up with anything!"

Levi gazed at Zoey. "Yes, I was indeed protecting the country. I really had no choice. It was a top-secret operation, so I couldn't tell you about it."

But right after he finished speaking, the few of them glared at him with fury.

"Did you hear that, Zoey? He's full of sh*t! To think he has the balls to say he was protecting the nation!"

Edwin was livid.

He had always been hot-tempered, and everyone in Oakland City feared his existence as though he was Hades.

Most importantly, he despised people like Levi most.

Even Zoey was skeptical with what he said.

"I said I want an explanation. I didn't ask you to manipulate me with your lousy excuses!"

Zoey spoke hoarsely with tears brimming in her eyes.

"Forget it, Zoey," Edwin scoffed. "We don't need to hear his explanation. He has nothing to do with you and Evie anymore."

"Nothing to do with them? What the hell do you mean by that? The child is mine!"

Levi began to get worked up.

"The child's name is Forlevia Lopez, do you understand?" shouted Edwin. "Zoey's forgotten all about you. She thinks you're dead! Where were you while she was in labor? Have you performed a single duty as a father? What the hell are you doing here now?"

"How dare you come back, Levi Garrison? I'll kill you, you b*stard!"

A furious voice came from the entrance. Both the Lopez and Black families had arrived.

Meredith attempted to strike Levi with her walking stick.

"No, Grandma!"

Zoey frantically stopped her.

"I have no words for you, Levi Garrison. How dare you show yourself and bother Zoey?"

Aaron and Caitlyn were beyond exasperated.

"Zoey is now the Queen of the Corporate World. She's also the goddaughter of Mr. Dale Lehman, the head of Erudia's third-ranked ancient family. She's way out of your league!"

"And you're coming back to your wife and daughter only now? How shameless can you be? Get out of here!"

“Take a look at yourself! You look like a refugee. Do you actually think you’re cut out for Zoey?”

Harry and the others proceeded to humiliate Levi.

Zoey did nothing to stop them.

Levi’s past actions had indeed crossed the line.

Hence, she felt everyone had a point.

“Give me the baby.”

Zoey snatched Forlevia from Levi.

“I’m telling you, Levi, Mr. Dale Lehman has arranged for Zoey to marry Jerry Gott, the third on the Heir Leaderboard. You’re out of luck now,” Meredith remarked with a smirk.

“Dear elders, I have but one request—I’d like Evie to bear my last name,” Jerry pleaded sincerely.

“Okay, we’ll take care of this. Once Zoey marries you, Evie will have her last name changed to Gott.”

“Yup, we’ll do just that!”

Aaron, Caitlyn, and the other members of the family immediately agreed.

Right in front of Levi, they made plans to change the child’s last name.

Anyway, the child was never a Garrison to begin with.

Everyone began discussing among themselves, disregarding Levi.

“Did you even ask for my opinion before deciding on that?” he demanded.

“Huh? Your opinion? What does this have to do with you?”

“Evie’s real father is long dead. Who the hell are you? Why would we need your opinion?”

“Get the he*I out of here!”

The Protector Chapter 1157

Levi's face was cold as he articulated each word clearly, "Don't force me!"

He exuded a murderous aura as he spoke.

The people around him felt as though there was a heavyweight pressed on their chests, making it difficult to breathe.

Meredith became furious upon seeing Levi acting like a wild beast. "What? Are you gonna hit me?"

Everyone could feel his intense desire to kill someone, and both Jerry and Edwin fell into a daze that instant.

The man standing before them gave off a vibe of a powerful master.

But that's not possible!

We knew everything about him. There's no way he could be a master.

A flash of killing intent flashed through Levi's eyes as he growled, "I'll kill whoever that changes my child's last name! Just know that I don't make frivolous remarks!"

"How dare you? I will change Evie's surname whether you like it or not. She'll be called Forlevia Gott from now on! There, I said it!" Edwin roared, obviously enraged by Levi's words.

"Mr. Lehman, you're Zoey's godbrother. You definitely have the right to change the child's surname!" Meredith and the others said in an unctuous manner.

“Are you going to kill me?” he provoked as he gave Levi a push.

Meanwhile, Meredith and the others were happy to see the situation unfold.

They knew that Edwin was hot-tempered, and he was capable of terrifying things, so death would be Levi’s only outcome for provoking him.

Once they had gotten rid of him, Zoey would definitely give up completely.

“You’re asking for it!”

At that moment, Levi’s fury was obvious, and he was about to murder someone soon.

He had been living his life in a violent world for a whole year, so he would easily give in to his murderous intent was very irritable.

To put it simply – Levi was just like a gunpowder keg that was highly flammable.

This is outrageous! Who does he think he is – trying to change my daughter’s surname?

Right then, Edwin slowly advanced towards him and sneered, “Come on. Didn’t you say that you’re going to kill me? Make a move, then.”

“Die!” the latter roared.

As he said this, a violent, domineering aura filled the space. How he wished he could kill Edwin on the spot.

At the same moment, a pang of terror washed over Edwin.

Looking at Levi’s face, Edwin felt as though he would actually be killed soon. Hence, his expression changed drastically.

“Levi Garrison!!” a voice suddenly screamed at the most critical moment.

Emma rushed over and blocked Levi’s way. Then, she gave him a slap across his face. “You unfilial son! How dare you come back? What are you doing? Have you gone crazy?”

The latter's face darkened, but he put on a strong front as he looked at his mother.

He didn't blame anyone.

Just like many other soldiers, many things were out of their control. Their family and friends couldn't understand them.

However, some things were secrets that couldn't be told to anybody, and because of that, their hands were tied.

"Why did you come back? Zoey had already forgotten about you. She's going to get married to someone else and is about to live a happy life. Are you here to ruin their relationship?" Emma scolded angrily.

In truth, she wasn't trying to criticize Levi but was actually protecting him.

If he had actually made a move earlier, Edwin would've killed him.

That was why she was putting on an act to protect her son.

When Emma slapped him earlier, it may have hurt him physically, but it also hurt her heart to do so.

"Unless I die, I will never let anybody change my daughter's surname!" Levi insisted.

"Alright then. Let me ask you this, where were you when Evie was born? Where were you when Zoey stood before the Garrison family's doors, fulfilling her promise? Ask yourself this, do you really have the right to be their husband and father?" Emma asked.

At the same time, Zoey was crying profusely when she said, "You didn't even give me an explanation!"

"Follow me back to the Garrison family in Oakland City, Zoey. I'll give you an explanation!" Coldness shone in Levi's eyes as he spoke.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1158

He couldn't let the matter with the Garrison family from Oakland City off so easily. Besides, he wanted to give Zoey an explanation and clear his mother's name too.

Three of these things could be resolved together.

However, everyone was shocked by his words.

Back to Oakland City?

To the Garrison family?

Is this fella crazy?

The Garrison family finally forgot about this, yet he seems so eager to get himself killed.

That's Erudia's most powerful ancient family!

Even Dale Lehman has to show them respect!

Zoey glanced at Levi with a puzzled look on her face. "You... Why would you want to go to the Garrison family? Weren't you supposed to give me an explanation? What does this have to do with them?"

"Zoey, please just give me another chance. If I can't give you a perfect explanation, I'll leave on my own," he said while looking at her in anticipation.

“Who do you think you are? Another chance? Are you even worthy of it?” People from the Lopez and Black families began grumbling upon hearing what he had said.

Levi hasn't made any progress at all. It's always the same things coming from him.

Yet he still has the audacity to ask for another chance in a situation like this?

Just then, a glint flashed through Emma's eyes as an idea popped into her head. She was afraid that Levi would act on impulse and do something stupid.

Hence, she spoke up, “No! Zoey, you can't give him any more chances. What he did this time is unforgivable.”

Emma was actually being so insistent because she wanted to protect her son.

Then Edwin said while looking at Zoey, “Your father arranged this wedding, Zoey. If you give him a chance, your father will definitely be upset.”

“I-” she stuttered as she was in a dilemma.

At that moment, Jerry shouted, “I, Jerry Gott, have always been a passive person. I acted impulsively earlier. However, I want to give my blessings. So why don't we just go to Oakland City and see what he has to say for himself? After all, destroying someone's marriage is a sin.”

Everyone's eyes lit up when they heard what Jerry had said.

What a gentleman.

Mr. Lehman definitely picked the right person.

“Well, since Jerry said it himself, we'll do what you asked for. We'll head to Oakland City and see for ourselves just what kind of explanation you'll be giving Zoey,” Edwin replied.

All of them stopped with the arguments after that.

“Although, I have one condition. Before you've given us the explanation, you are not allowed to see Zoey and your daughter,” Aaron immediately added.

"All of you don't have to worry. I'll be bringing Zoey and the kid to the Lehman residence. No matter how powerful he is, he wouldn't be able to get in."

After that, Levi left with Emma while Zoey and the others headed to Oakland City.

"What are you doing? The Garrison family isn't pursuing the matter, yet you're going to them on your own?"

Emma was so anxious even her tone had changed.

However, Levi smiled and replied, "Mom, I'm not the only one that has to go. You have to as well! Did you forget your dream already?"

"Uh..."

That dream of mine is just wishful thinking.

It will never come true.

Especially when my son went missing for half a year. Besides, I have nothing. How in the world could I ever fulfill my dream?

"I'll make your dream come true this time, Mom. You should get ready, and then we'll head to Oakland City."

This time, he would finally make a move against the Garrison family.

"Oh, alright then! It's now or never!"

Emma decided then and there that she would die with her son.

Then, Levi gathered Azure Dragon and the others.

"Azure Dragon, we're about to head to Oakland City soon. Are you ready?" he asked.

He needed to settle his own matters as well as Azure Dragon's while at Oakland City.

The latter stayed silent for a moment before answering, "Yes! Here I come, Stuart family!"

His eyes burned with fury at the thought of Curtis and the fiancée who betrayed him.

He had held it in for so many years, waiting for the day he was strong enough. Now, the day had finally come.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1159

Zoey and the rest arrived at Oakland City first, and they stayed at the Lehman residence in the meantime.

They saw an authoritative old man sitting in there the moment they entered.

Though he was seated, his aura was so intimidating and heavy that everyone found it difficult to breathe.

It's Dale Lehman!

The head of the third ancient family in Erudia.

In the eyes of an ordinary person, he was just like a god.

"What? That b*stard is back?" Dale spat.

As a blunt and righteous person, he liked Zoey's personality. At the same time, he was disgusted by Levi for abandoning his wife and daughter.

"Yes! He even tried to ruin the engagement you planned and take his daughter away," Edwin said.

Dale glared at him and asked, "Where did that temper of yours go? Shouldn't you have broken his legs for doing so?"

The latter hung his head. "Father, I was going to cripple him, but Jerry said that we should see just what kind of explanation he would give Zoey. Jerry's a gentleman after all, and he wanted to give his blessings."

Hearing that, Dale sneered, "Hmmp! What kind of explanation could a shameless person like him give? He's just like his father. They would do anything just to get what they want. The excuses they give are just too much! Besides, so what if he'd given her an explanation? Is he worthy enough for my daughter? Based on his identity and his background, do you really think he's worthy?"

He then changed the topic, "Unless he becomes the young master of the Garrison clan, I will not accept him! He needs to show me that he's capable if he really wants his wife and daughter back. I will never accept it if I'm not satisfied."

Zoey knew that it was bad when she saw that her godfather's face was black with rage.

Yet, she didn't have the guts to go against what he said.

After all, he was a person of virtue and prestige. Everything he did was for her sake.

"I heard that he wants to go to the Garrison residence?" Dale asked.

"Yes. Apparently, he wants to go there to give Zoey an explanation. Although, I don't know what it is."

"Alright, then. We'll wait and see just what exactly he'd do," Dale said furiously.

Meanwhile, Levi and his group arrived at Oakland City.

It was his first time here.

Well, technically, he had received awards countless times, but he rejected it every time.

I am here, and I'm here to conquer.

Azure Dragon seemed like a completely different person the moment he stepped foot into Oakland City.

He clenched his fists tightly.

I'm back!

I'm here to take back what belongs to me.

Curtis, Eldora and Grandpa. Are you guys ready?

"Boss, are we heading to the Garrison residence straight away?" Kirin asked.

"No, we'll need to help Azure Dragon take care of his matter first. I'll deal with mine a little later."

Levi was always like that, putting others before himself.

"Alright. Thanks, boss!"

Tears of joy escaped Azure Dragon's eyes as he had been waiting for this moment for so long.

It didn't take long before the news regarding Levi's return reached the Garrison family.

"What? He actually resurfaced?" Tyrone asked in shock.

He thought that Levi would stay hidden for the rest of his life and would never show his face anymore.

"Not only has he resurfaced, but he also even plans to come to us!" Damien replied.

"Does he have a death wish?" Tyrone's eyes were ice-cold as he spoke.

"I don't know. But based on the news I heard, Levi looked miserable, as if he was a refugee. I even heard that he coughed up blood after someone pushed him," the latter said.

"He's probably going to prove something to Zoey by coming here – probably to prove that he wasn't going to back down."

Tyrone snorted, "Hah! Using the Garrison family to prove himself? How naïve of him. Okay, then. Since he's in Oakland City, we'll make sure he can never leave!"

He became murderous upon the thought.

I'll never spare Levi this time!

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1160

A lot of people found out that Levi had resurfaced and planned to head to Oakland City.

As for Tiffany, she was absolutely delighted when she found out.

Martin, on the other hand, was extremely excited upon hearing the news.

His reputation had been ruined in just a year, and his place on the Heir Leaderboard fell from second place to seventeenth place.

Everyone within Oakland City humiliated him for being unable to handle Levi.

Martin had suffered through all the insults and criticism the whole time.

Gradually, he became reticent and tended to shut himself off from the world.

Even the Preston family thought that he had gone insane.

With that, Martin scoffed and said, "Now that he's here, all of you would finally understand."

He looked forward to seeing Levi stir up chaos in Oakland City so that the arrogant and impudent people would finally understand that there was always someone stronger.

On the contrary, all the other prominent families were waiting for Levi to make a fool out of himself when they heard he was about to head to Oakland City.

After all, he was already the biggest disgrace last year.

The name Levi Garrison had become an adjective to describe men – men who were pathetic and irresponsible.

In the meantime, the so-called pathetic man was leading his group of people when they ran into four people in masks.

The masks made them look cold and terrifying, each of them giving off murderous auras.

It was Asura and his three disciples – Zar, Bolgun, and Talon.

“Winsor!” Levi called out with a smile.

“Not bad. You were great.”

Even though Winsor spoke only a few words, he was actually praising Levi’s contribution to eliminating the Blood King Palace.

“Thank you so much for taking care of my mother and my wife. I owe you a favor now,” the former said while taking a deep bow.

If it weren’t for him, Zoey and the others would’ve been in great danger.

The least I can do is bow to him.

Winsor stared at him before nodding. “Indeed, you do owe me a favor. You can return it now.”

The rest of them were rendered speechless.

They had never expected Winsor to be so direct.

Levi froze for a moment before answering, “How should I return the favor?”

“Accept my challenge!” Winsor said with determination.

All these years, he had been displeased with the former.

Levi isn’t even as strong as I am. I should’ve been named the God of War, not him!

He had challenged the latter dozens of times, but the latter didn't care much for rankings and would reject him every time.

It made no difference even if I were to hold a knife against his neck. He'd still reject the challenge.

That was why Winsor never had the chance to prove that he was stronger than Levi.

Now, his opportunity was finally here.

"Actually, if you want my position, I can definitely let you have it. I owe you such a huge favor after all." Levi told him.

"No! Let me have it? Are you looking down on me? I'll get it with my own capabilities. I don't need you to let me have it!"

Levi's words sent him into a rage.

The former then pursed his lips and said, "No, you misunderstood me. The favor I owe you is just too huge. I feel like I wouldn't be able to repay it fully even if I accepted your challenge."

"I don't need you to return the favor. I just want you to accept the challenge and let us fight," Winsor replied coldly.

At that moment, Azure Dragon, Zar, and the rest grew anxious as they watched the scene unfold.

They wanted to know for themselves who was stronger too.

Everyone had their own opinions and thought that both of them were basically on the same level, so all of them were curious to see who was actually the stronger one.

Left without a choice, Levi took a deep breath before agreeing, "Okay. I accept your challenge."

"Great. If you lose, you have to give me your title. If I lose, I'll follow your orders for the rest of my life," Winsor said as a wicked gleam flashed through his eyes.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1161

"Fine. But this fight will only happen after I took care of my personal matters," Levi informed him.

Winsor nodded at that.

In the meantime, everyone else inhaled sharply as they knew this fight was extremely important – both of them were betting on everything they had.

Hence, whoever lost would have unimaginable consequences.

Not only would their fight cause a huge commotion in Erudia, but the rest of the world would also be thrown into an uproar.

Azure Dragon and his group stared at Levi while Zar and the rest stared at Asura, all of their eyes burning with determination.

They all hoped that their boss would win the fight, but they knew that both sides were very powerful.

Thus, at that moment, no one knew what the end result would be.

After they left, Bolgun asked, "Master, how confident are you about winning?"

"I'd say it's fifty percent," Winsor said after pondering about it for a moment.

"Huh..." three of them muttered as they drew in a deep breath.

This was the first time they had seen him with such a grim look on his face.

Besides, the answer he had given them was only a “fifty percent.”

Winsor was an extremely confident and arrogant person who wouldn't even submit to the heavens and earth.

In his eyes, everyone was beneath him.

However, he was actually afraid when it came to Levi.

To be honest, he wasn't really afraid – he just wasn't hundred percent sure that if he could win against Levi.

It just showed how strong Levi really was. In fact, he was so strong that even Winsor was being wary of it.

The news of the God of War and Asura's fight flew through Erudia, then Bayview, and soon it spread across the whole world.

Everybody knew about the battle now, and they knew that this fight was something that could affect the whole world.

If Levi won, the God of War would surely be able to take his game to the next level. With Asura in hand, it would be a huge disadvantage to their enemies.

However, if he lost, he would have to step down from his position and let Asura have it.

Although, this was good news to Tenichi and a few others.

Even though Asura's combat powers were amazing, Levi was still better in terms of strategy and looking at the bigger picture.

That was why this battle was so important.

“God! This is just too scary. Both of them are about to fight soon!”

Damien was obviously the first person to get news of it.

After all, he was always keeping tabs on the God of War.

“This is a duel of the strongest in Erudia, right? Asura has been waiting for years just to prove that he is the strongest.”

He was already looking forward to it and wanted to witness the fight happen.

“Haha! I’m excited about it too. The God of War has to win! He is part of the Garrison clan after all,” Tyrone exclaimed excitedly.

The news of the fight was still spreading like wildfire, and it grew more and more influential by the minute.

When Zoey heard the news, she was astounded as she had met Asura before.

“Is Asura really as bloodthirsty and cruel like everyone says – like the Demon King? It can’t be, right? He even saved me last year!”

She couldn’t understand the comments people were making about him.

When she met him the last time, she felt that he was a very humane person.

“That can’t be right. They say that Asura is a heartless person, and he’s no different than a robot. It’s just too unbelievable that your incident caught his attention and that he helped you out,” Dale said.

They knew Winsor very well.

He wouldn’t have bothered with an ordinary person’s matter.

“That’s right. It seemed like Asura was purposely protecting Zoey,” Edwin added.

“What?”

Upon hearing that, Zoey trembled and a look of disbelief crept across her face.

“It can’t be... Unless...”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1162

There was only one possibility that she could think of.

Maybe Asura was actually there to protect me.

Based on what everyone says, he wouldn't even bat an eye even if someone dies right in front of him.

He probably came forward just for me, right?

There must be a reason as to why he did it.

Did Levi arrange this?

Impossible!

Asura wouldn't even obey the God of War, so why would he listen to Levi and protect me?

It'd be impossible even if Levi was an important person.

Meanwhile, Levi and the others separated from Azure Dragon.

The latter wanted to go to the Stuart family first, while Levi planned to visit an old friend of his – Benny Quinton.

There were many people at Benny's residence, eight people to be exact, including Benny.

All of them were stars of the medical field.

They were the famous and renowned Octa-Medic of Erudia.

Eight of them were the top doctors in the medical field, including experts in Western medicine and traditional Chinese medicine.

At the same time, Benny was especially surprised to hear that Levi had resurfaced.

He quickly invited the latter into the house and introduced him to everyone else.

The rest of the doctors were shocked as they didn't expect to meet the God of War himself.

"This is The Acupuncturist – Asa Wormwood."

"This is The Herbalist – Witney Safin."

Benny introduced everybody one by one and informed Levi that they were the top doctors of Erudia, and they all excelled in Western medicine and traditional Chinese medicine.

He also told the latter that they were like "national treasures" of Erudia.

With a slight bow, Levi said politely, "It's an honor to meet all of you."

"No, no, pleasure is ours, God of War! There's no need for that!" Everyone stood up immediately.

"There's a medical convention held once every four years in Oakland City recently. That's why all of us are gathered here. Otherwise, there wouldn't be a chance like this," Benny smiled and explained the reason they were here.

"Then I must be in luck! It's my first time here in Oakland City, and I'm able to meet eight famous doctors," Levi replied sincerely.

He was always respectful and polite towards his seniors.

Nowadays, people were able to live in prosperity and peace while Erudia was able to flourish all because of these dedicated seniors.

I'm so glad to have them.

They chatted for a long time, and Levi was able to gain a lot from their conversation.

He had limited knowledge of medical skills since Fredrick was willing to teach him. However, he didn't have the time to do more research on it.

While Levi was busy with the doctors, Azure Dragon stood before a quaint residence.

Almost ten years had passed, and he was finally home.

But this home had brought him so much harm and suffering.

Firstly, his place as the head of his family was snatched away. Then, his fiancée betrayed him and married his own brother.

Lastly, he was forced to go to jail in place of his brother.

The hurtful words of Azure Dragon's fiancée still echoed in his ears after all these years.

"Only the strongest man is worthy enough for me. He's not worthy enough for me, and he'll never be up to par with Curtis!"

Besides, he could never forget the scene where his fiancée, Eldora, threw herself into Curtis' arms, nor could he forget the day the Stuart family sent him into the prisoner transport.

For all those years he was in jail, none of the Stuart family had visited him.

The one who should have been in jail was Curtis, yet he continued to be ranked first place in the Heir Leaderboard, with a beautiful woman by his side.

Crack! Crack!

Azure Dragon clenched his fists tightly, and his knuckles cracked when these memories surfaced.

"I'm finally back now. I'll show these b***** that they shouldn't mess with me. Weren't you my nightmare, Curtis? I'm here to challenge you now!"

His face darkened as he strode towards the doors.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Azure Dragon knocked on the doors, hard.

When the doors opened, a few guards walked out.

“What the hell are you knocking for? Don’t you know where you are right now?”

“Hmm? Mr. Indigo? Mr. Indigo is back!”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1163

Very soon, the Stuart family was in a frenzy.

All of the lights in the mansion were turned on, and almost everyone in the family went out of the house.

Everyone one of the familiar faces appeared before Azure Dragon.

The cowardly parents, who let people take advantage of them, and the uncle and aunts, who liked to add salt to the wound.

The Grandpa, who revoked his right of being the heir, Basil, was also there.

The ones who came out last were Curtis and Eldora.

The woman was still in his brother's arms, showing off how affectionate they were.

After years of training, Azure Dragon's powers were at the highest level.

It could be said that he was at the point where he wouldn't even panic even when the world was falling apart.

However, now that he met his enemies, Azure Dragon couldn't keep his calm anymore, and he clenched his fists tightly.

"Huh? It really is you. What is with you? Aren't you supposed to be in jail for twenty years? It hasn't even been ten years, why are you back already? Did you escape from prison and come back here? You know you're ruining the Stuart family's name by doing that!"

Basil and the others were afraid that he actually broke out of prison when they saw him.

Azure Dragon replied while shaking his head, "No. I got released a long time ago."

Someone from the family immediately checked, and they nodded. "He's right. He really was released from prison."

Basil sneered, "It seems like your attitude in jail was great! You even managed to get released ten years earlier."

"I've almost forgotten about this person. What is he doing here?" one of Azure Dragon's uncles, who was also Curtis' father, Ansel, snorted.

For all these years, the Stuart family was in the hands of the father-and-son duo.

To him, Azure Dragon didn't exist anymore.

"Exactly. He must be full of bad luck since he had been to prison."

"Stay away from me. I don't want your bad luck to be passed to me."

"It'll be much better if you don't step into our doors. We, the Stuart family, are the first imperial family. How can we have a criminal who has been to prison be in our family? That would be a joke to everyone else!"

How cold.

Every one of them is so cold and heartless.

I was in prison all because of Curtis!

And it was eight years in there too!

Not only are they ungrateful for what I've done, but they are also insulting and humiliating me.

They even told me that I shouldn't step foot into the mansion.

To hell with that!

Azure Dragon looked at Curtis and Eldora.

The latter was still looking pompous as usual.

He was the first on the Heir Leaderboard after all. Hence, who could ever go against him?

In his eyes, Azure Dragon wasn't even worthy of being his opponent.

As for Eldora, she was still in his embrace as a mocking smile appeared on her face. "What's wrong? Did spending a few years in prison make you look like such a piece of sh*t? Well, you are a piece of sh*t! I made the right choice all those years ago. I, Eldora Seres, will only be with the strongest man."

At that moment, he looked just like Levi, with tattered clothes and soot on his face.

Azure Dragon had only arrived in Oakland City, so he didn't have time to tidy himself.

With an image like a refugee, he was basically a joke to the Stuart family.

He clenched his fists tightly again upon hearing Eldora's words.

This shameless woman!

"Seriously, why the hell did you come back, Indigo? You don't belong in the Stuart family! Besides, we will never let a criminal step foot into our residence," Ansel said coldly.

Indigo was Azure Dragon's real name.

"The reason is simple. I'm here to take back what really belongs to me all those years ago," Azure Dragon sneered.

His cold eyes passed over each and every one of the family.

"Hahahaha..." everyone burst into laughter and looked at him as if he was an idiot.

Curtis finally spoke, "You're here to take back what belongs to you? My position and your fiancée? And to avenge the fact that you took my place in prison? Do you even have what it takes to do that? Do you have the capability to do so?"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1164

“Eight years ago, you were but a worm, Indigo. Do you think a stint in prison could turn you into a real dragon?”

“Curtis has always been a living manifestation of your own worst nightmare. An insurmountable juggernaut beyond your reach no matter how much you try. You ought to know better than anyone else that he has only gotten stronger since, so what makes you think going to prison has changed anything for you?”

“Take back what’s rightfully yours, you say? Let me tell you this – The only man fit for me is a stud like Curtis, not a pathetic sinner like you!” Eldora Seres’s words plunged deep into Azure Dragon’s chest like a thousand knives.

To think that Azure Dragon was previously convinced that she was to be his one true love... He had only himself to blame for his own error of judgment.

“You’ve got a nerve hurling threats around here, Indigo. Don’t even think about stepping through our doors. You have been warned!” Ansel then stood himself between Azure Dragon and the entrance.

“What does Grandpa think?” Azure Dragon looked to his grandfather Basil.

There was a hint of fury in Basil’s eyes. “Your uncle’s right. In order to preserve the honor of our family, we can no longer afford to have you here. I will provide you with a sum of money sufficient to last you a lifetime. Take it, and leave Oakland City!”

Azure Dragon then asked of his parents, “Father, Mother. What say you?”

“We...”

His parents hemmed and hawed but did not utter anything discernible.

It was apparent that they had no say in the matter.

“Leave. From now on, you are no longer a member of the Stuart family!” Basil’s pronouncement was swift and final.

Being treated so harshly by his own family made Azure Dragon’s blood ran cold.

Not only had he done nothing wrong, but he also went to prison for eight years in place of Curtis.

And yet, he was still treated this way.

“Fine. So be it! I shall return tomorrow to stomp Curtis and have all of you begging on your knees!”

With that, Azure Dragon turned to leave.

The curses and mockery of the Stuart family followed him out.

All of them seemed to think him deranged and delusional.

As a matter of fact, Azure Dragon primarily came to the family home to see how the people there would react to him.

If only!

The whole episode would have seen a peaceful resolution if only they knew to be appreciative and receptive towards him.

Instead, they had forced his hand towards adopting a harder stance.

It was in anticipation of situations like this that he had sent Levi away.

If Levi were to get wind of this, he would surely rend them asunder!

This was why he came by to observe the family's reception first.

To call the verdict a disappointment would be a gross understatement.

There wasn't any grateful soul amongst the lot of them as all of them unfailingly derided him and shut him out.

His own brother and his fiancée insulted him.

His grandfather and uncle barred him from entry.

While his weak parents stood by and watched.

There was no longer room left for sentimentality.

Hence, he had decided then and there that tomorrow would be the day he would put the Stuart family to the fire and the sword.

Later that night, Levi and Benny amongst others met up and made merry.

The accomplishments of the Octa-Medics were peerless in the medical realm.

The eight of them were yet to encounter any conditions which they were not able to treat.

Just as Frederick Greg's name came up in their conversations, The Acupuncturist and The Herbalist professed to know him.

According to them, Frederick was a renowned physician from an enduring medical lineage that shared the same roots as theirs.

"Only the ignorant would declare that Erudia's ancestral medical tradition has been lost. Or perhaps I should say they have not the privilege to learn of these time-honored methods!" The Acupuncturist, Asa Wormwood, sneered.

He had made a valid point.

Many had a tendency to assume much of which they did not have knowledge or lacked direct experience of.

“God of War, seek us out should you ever find yourself in need!”

The few of them said with a smile.

After the group dispersed, Levi and Azure Dragon convened.

“Boss, I’ve decided that I’m going to crush the Stuarts tomorrow!”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1165

“Very well. I will stand by you, as always!” Levi said as he placed an assuring hand on Azure Dragon’s shoulder.

The next day at the Stuart family mansion, the entire family was dining at the table in silence.

Strict discipline was necessary to help maintain their premier position amongst the imperial families, especially during this time when they were clashing with the rest.

Perhaps they would be able to ascend into the ranks of the ancient families in time.

“Grandpa, do you think that rascal Indigo would show up?”

The silence was broken by Curtis.

No one else spoke as no one else dared to.

It was different for Curtis, who had done much to earn the privilege.

“Do you think? I reckon that it was just a bit of boisterous chest-thumping, that’s all!” Basil sneered dismissively.

Elnora laughed. “Why concern yourself with that good-for-nothing, Curtis? He would not be able to measure up to a fraction of you even if given a hundred more years!”

She had a beguiling presence with a face and a figure to match and could have any man clamoring for her with one glance.

While Tiffany Meyers was Oakland City's most beautiful, Eldora Seres was the most charming.

However, this woman had a weakness for powerful men.

She was with Azure Dragon when he was firmly in the seat of inheritance.

Now that he had been stripped of his position, she had turned and thrown herself into the arms of his younger brother, Curtis, instead.

Word had it that Eldora had a long and colored dating history.

The fact that Curtis had not given up on her was proof that she had her ways of dealing with him.

Her new beau replied haughtily, "I'm not concerned about him as I do not even consider him a worthy opponent. I'm only worried that he might do something that might bring our family into disrepute!"

"Ignore him! I highly doubt that he would have the guts to seek trouble here. To bring us Stuarts onto our knees? The sheer ravings of a madman!"

Bang!

The waves of a deafening explosion suddenly thundered in. This was followed by a booming bellow, "Prepare yourself for death, my dear brother!"

The voice echoed throughout every corner of the house.

"What's going on?"

"Has the bastard come?"

Basil and the rest of the family sat stunned at the dining table.

"The outrage! I shall destroy him!" Curtis declared as he rose to his feet.

The others, too, were variously spurred into action as they all arisen and collectively made their way towards the main entrance.

There were five others apart from Azure Dragon, whose raggedy getup complimented his.

“What’s this I see. Helpers? Do you intend to take on the Stuart family with just this ragtag bunch with you? You ought to have brought along something more respectable than a bunch of refugees...” Eldora said mockingly.

Azure Dragon smiled. “The problem with you, Eldora, is that you have never been able to see beyond the superficial. You obviously have no idea who stands before you!”

His eyes passed over each and every one of the family in scrutiny. “I am offering the lot of you one last chance. Bend your knees before me and repent your wicked ways, and I shall spare you! Otherwise, I shall level the house of Stuart to the ground this day!”

“Ha ha ha...” The Stuarts were uproarious upon hearing this.

They did not take Azure Dragon with any measure of seriousness. “What in the world was that about? Shut your mouth, fool.”

His own parents chimed in, “You want to destroy our family, you say? I doubt you could even get past your own younger brother!”

Curtis laughed, “Are you so obviously lacking in self-awareness, Indigo? I am your worst fear, your nightmare manifest. You were beneath me eight years ago, and I have only gotten stronger since. What hope do you have pitting yourself against someone whose ability ranks in the top twenty in Erudia’s Saber Leaderboard?”

Those words had Azure Dragon trembling as Curtis always had his number.

“No! I shall defeat you and prove myself against you!”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1166

"Hahaha... You're about to find out what separates you and me, maggot!" Curtis snorted.

"Do it, Curtis! Bring him to his knees!" Eldora screeched.

The top scion in Oakland City had headlined the pecking order in the Oakland City's Heir Leaderboard for eight years running, and his martial prowess had only gone from strength to strength during this time.

In short, Curtis was now practically untouchable.

Thus, to the Stuart family, Azure Dragon was already a dead man walking.

"Your wish for death will be granted!"

Curtis was instantly upon Azure Dragon in a single powerful stride.

He threw out a savage fist in a bid to finish his older brother in a single blow, but his expression changed when Azure Dragon managed to avoid it completely.

All present watched with bated breath once the fight commenced proper...

The haughtiness on the faces of the Stuart family turned to astonishment and then shock as the battle ensued...

About a hundred rounds in, one of the fighters was suddenly sent flying.

Bang!

His opponent closed in with pace and smashed a devastating blow into him in mid-air, sending him hurtling down into the ground.

Bang!

The downed man crashed heavily and left an imprint of concentric cracks upon the blue tiles at the point of impact.

When everyone looked over, they were stunned because the man lying on the floor was none other than Curtis.

Curtis was soaked in blood and bearing an untold extent of damage to his bones. At that moment, his body was quivering uncontrollably, and incredulity was apparent in his eyes.

Shocking!

Utterly shocking!

No one could have foreseen how formidable Azure Dragon would become. Nor could anyone have predicted that he would be able to best Curtis.

The looks on Basil, Ansel, and Eldora's faces were a picture of shock.

And then there was silence all around.

How did Azure Dragon grow to be so strong?

Did he not languish in prison for eight years?

"You were my worst fear, Curtis, but not anymore. At one point, I did think consider you the strongest ever. But I've realized how low I've set the bar once I've stepped onto the battlefield!" Azure Dragon laughed.

"Battlefield? Weren't you supposed to be behind bars?" asked a bewildered Eldora.

"When there's a will, there's a way. I was selected to join the special forces while I was serving out my sentence. You may not be aware, but now I'm known as – The Azure Dragon, King of War."

“What!”

“King of War?”

The faces of his family changed drastically.

“And standing here before you is my boss, the God of War, and a few of my friends, Kirin...”

The Stuarts stood shell-shocked as Azure Dragon went down the line introducing the companions beside him.

Thud!

A mournful Eldora fell onto her knees in front of Azure Dragon and clutched his legs. “I was in the wrong, Indigo. Please forgive me for this once! In all these years, I’ve never stopped thinking about us! If you are willing, we could go back to the way we were and spend the rest of our lives together!”

“Son, Mom and I did not do right by you. We should not have remained silent!”

“Grandpa made a mistake, my boy. I shall reinstate you as heir. Grandpa had been a fool!”

“Uncle had treated you unjustly, Indigo!”

Azure Dragon remained silent throughout their remonstrating.

Against the overwhelming influence and martial prowess possessed by Azure Dragon today, the attitudes of the members of his estranged family shifted drastically as they variously sought penance for themselves.

Levi had seen too many of their types to be impressed.

He and the others departed from the Stuart residence and left Azure Dragon to resolve his own personal affairs.

The day’s headlines rocked Oakland City.

News broke that Indigo Stuart, who went to prison in place of his younger brother, returned home to subdue the Stuart family and even defeated the top scion, Curtis, himself.

With Azure Dragon's affairs settled, it was time for Levi to turn his attention onto his own.

"Are you ready for me now, Garrisons?"

Levi's eyes darkened with cold intent.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1167

“Have you got what I’ve asked for, Kirin?” Levi asked.

“Yes, God of War, it is en-route and should arrive in Oakland City shortly!” Kirin replied.

Levi was about to proceed with his next move when he was interrupted by a call.

He saw that it came from Abigail.

“Hey Abigail. How did you find out about my new number?” Levi asked in surprise.

“I got to know about it through Mr. Quinton!”

Abigail had been in regular contact with Benny since her arrival in Oakland City.

“What’s up?”

“Could you come and pick me up, Levi? I’m in a spot of trouble! Have to hang up now. Please come find me...” Abigail sounded a little harried.

Levi’s expression grew somber. “Get a lock on her location, Phoenix!”

Instantly, Phoenix got to work and soon had her position.

She was at Dynasty Manor, a place frequented by the most affluent and influential in Oakland City.

Dynasty Manor had been fully reserved by a wealthy scion for the evening to host a prestigious gathering. The guest list included young gentlemen and ladies in the same league as himself.

Several dozen cars were parked by the entrance, and they featured a comprehensive collection of many limited editions of the top-tiered models lined up amongst them. The value of the hardware congregated there was worth more than a combined two billion.

The organizer for the event was Conrad, the second scion of the Garcia family – the second most illustrious of Erudia’s ancient families.

His guests were sons and daughters of the various imperial and royal families in Oakland City.

Even Jerry himself had to grace the occasion, for an invitation from an imperial scion was hard to turn down.

The subject of interest amongst the guests was naturally the affair at the Stuarts.

“Never thought that the bigwig on the Heir Leaderboard could have been defeated by Indigo Stuart, a man who spent the last eight years in prison!”

“With the top dog defeated, the Oakland City hierarchy has been upset. Whoever is in second place must be fretting!”

“We’re counting on you to hold the fort, Mr. Gott!” the assembly bantered.

Jerry smiled. “You all know I’ve never cared for these things. What difference does it make who’s ahead and who’s behind in the rankings?”

“I get the sinking feeling that something major is going down in Oakland City. First was God of War challenging Asura. Then there was Indigo Stuart stomping on his family. Now there’s the matter of Levi Garrison! Rumor has it that he is planning to go to the Garrison clan...” someone said.

“Indeed. Many things have been happening lately. But could Levi Garrison’s business be considered major? After all, he’s a cowardly good-for-nothing who’s unworthy of our attention!” The smile on Jerry’s lips belied the glint of coldness in his eyes.

"Be quiet now. Mr. Garcia's here!"

The room fell silent as a strapping youth strode through.

It was Conrad – a scion of the ancient Garcia family and one of the top sitting members in the Heir Leaderboards.

Next to him was a girl, unknown to all of the rich and powerful in Oakland City except for Levi.

She was Abigail Rogers.

Conrad beamed a broad smile at his guests. "Today, we are gathered here for two reasons. Firstly, for us to discuss the matter of Curtis's defeat, and secondly, to hear a personal announcement with regards to myself."

The assembly looked at him in eager anticipation.

Jerry asked, "Has it anything to do with your future happiness?"

He inferred it from the presence of Abigail.

"Yes, Jerry. It is as you say. This is indeed a moment of great joy for me!"

Conrad glanced at the woman beside him. "I've decided to marry this young lady Abigail!"

"Huh? Aren't you already married with children, Mr. Garcia? How are you to marry again?" someone thought aloud.

It was common knowledge that Conrad had enough children to almost lose count of them, and marriage into the ancient family was no frivolous matter.

Conrad laughed. "It's going to be a concubinage. I wish to make Abigail my concubine!"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1168

"What?" The attendees gasped.

Even though those present were of noble descent, polygamy was a thing of the past. Not even current prominent members of the imperial and ancient families partook in it.

Confidants were tolerated, but there was to be only one woman who would be granted a recognized status.

It followed that no one could be accorded the title of concubine and no exception could be made even for one such as Tyrone Garrison.

However, none present dared voice their protestations against this scion of an ancient family.

Ultimately, Conrad had a reputation as a notorious libertine.

No one knew for certain how many young lives were ruined at the hands of The Casanova of Oakland City, who was also known as the ultimate lady killer, over the years.

His body count of female conquests might have numbered in the five to six hundred, with many of being underage when they had fallen prey to him.

More than a few also have vanished right after he took them away. Neither their person nor a cadaver had been found since.

As Conrad was a true deviant, his decision to take on a concubine came as no big surprise.

When Abigail came to Oakland City to work under the employ of the Garcia family, she had unexpectedly caught the eye of Conrad, who then forcibly wanted to make a concubine of her.

Abigail was at her wit's end until she heard that Levi was in town. She spent the better part of the day deliberating whether to call him before she eventually did.

"Congratulations on your new acquisition, Mr. Garcia! We would be looking forward to sharing a toast with you at your wedding!" The first to come forward was Jerry.

"Congratulations, Mr. Garcia!" And the others followed as soon as they stirred from their stupor.

All they could have offered Abigail was their unspoken sympathies.

Yet another fine young woman to fall victim to Conrad Garcia.

"My thanks to all of you for your well wishes. I hope to see all of you there at my wedding!" Conrad was riding on a high.

He could hardly contain himself as he gazed lasciviously upon the coquettish yet innocent Abigail.

The scion of the Garcias did not actually need to grant any formalized status to Abigail.

That was before he found out that Abigail's older sister was Dale Lehman's adopted daughter.

Taking her by force might spell trouble for him given her extended connections; hence, his decision to opt for concubinage.

That way, he could openly lay his hands on Abigail without leaving cause for opposition.

"Is the young lady willing, though?" Just then, a voice rang out amidst the bustle.

All of those present turned their heads. The owner of the voice was none other than Martin "Madman" Preston himself.

No one had expected his presence there, as he was better known as a lunatic than a ranking scion in the eyes of the public.

"I'm never one to take no for an answer! Whatever I fancy will be mine to have!"

Conrad was as brash and arrogant as they come.

After that, he regarded Abigail. "She will be mine so long as I desire her. Who dares stand in my way?"

The scion certainly had the capital to do as he pleased since the Garcia family pandered to his every whim, and his father was extremely protective of him within reason.

He, too, enjoyed the favor of his uncle-in-law, Tyrone Garrison, and his cousin, Damien.

With the convenience of always having someone available to clean up after him, Conrad could always afford to act without hesitation nor fear of consequences.

"You are making a mistake with this one, Conrad! Do you have any idea who she is?" Martin asked.

"Of course I do. Her sister is the adopted daughter of Mr. Lehman! Even he should have nothing to say if I were to take her as my concubine!" Conrad stated calmly.

"Haha, is that so? I'd reckon that you would be courting death if you tried!" Martin laughed heartily.

Nonetheless, Conrad was naturally undeterred.

"Hahaha, who else could I not afford to offend? In that case, I shall take her as my concubine before this day ends. And we shall see who is there to stand in my way!" he trumpeted.

Martin merely shook his head in response.

But this time, the Casanova of Oakland City was to meet his foil.

Bang!

The doors slammed violently against the walls upon a potent strike of someone's foot.

"He got that right. Abigail is not someone you could afford to mess with!"

A chilling voice was carried by the shockwaves riding across the room.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1169

All eyes were zoned in on the silhouette that appeared at the entrance of the hallway.

None recognized the male stranger who had appeared save for Jerry, whose face turned pallid upon seeing him.

It's Levi Garrison!

Martin smirked as he slinked away into a corner to spectate the events to unfold.

"And who the hell might you be?" Conrad challenged.

"Levi, you are here!" Abigail ran towards Levi the moment she saw him.

"What's happening here?" Levi asked.

Conrad took a step forward. "Let me give it to you straight. Abigail is to become my concubine!"

Abigail nodded furiously in affirmation of his general summary of the situation.

"Why in the world is anyone taking concubines in this day and age? Who granted permission for this?" Levi glared.

Conrad retained his haughty demeanor. "Do you even know who I am? I am the beloved scion of the Garcia family and wield the favor of the head of the Garrisons, the top ancient family. Whose permission would I need to do what I want?"

“Does that mean you are not going to seek anyone’s consent as well?” Levi asked.

Conrad chortled. “Of course not. What I want is mine to have. What use have I for anyone’s consent?”

Hearing his reply, Levi was amused.

Without regard for common decency nor the rule of law.

A truly irrepressible tyrant!

No wonder Abigail needed my help to save herself from this menace.

Conrad lowered his gaze to scrutinize Levi from his elevated position. “Listen here, boy. I don’t care who or what you are. Abigail will become my concubine, and there’s not a damn thing you can do about it!”

“Oh, is that so? Then I have this to say – Whoever who would attempt to force Abigail to do anything against her will get no quarter from me!” Levi toughened his stance.

“You wouldn’t want to stick your nose into Mr. Garcia’s business, Levi. It would be best if you left quickly!” Jerry stood up suddenly and spoke.

“What did you say? Levi... Levi Garrison?” Conrad asked.

The others turned and looked in Levi’s direction.

“You heard it right. This is Levi Garrison himself!”

Jerry’s introduction had everyone else on their feet.

Though they had never seen the man in person, they had certainly heard of his name.

“He’s here in Oakland City?”

The masses were bewildered as they regarded him warily.

It's him – the dishonorable progeny of the Garrison family who abandoned his mother and wife to save his own skin!

“You're unfit to call yourself a man, Levi. The gall of you to even show your face around here!”

“I'd wish for no better than to throttle you to death!”

“You inhuman, cowardly good-for-nothing! You are a disgrace to all of Erudia!”

Levi listened in silence as the barrage of cusses exploded upon him like an ignited barrel of gunpowder.

“Get out of here, Levi, and Mr. Garcia may spare you your life yet!” Jerry prompted advised of him.

“Mr. Gott is a true gentleman. Looking out even for his bitter rival!”

“Only you are fit for Zoey. Not this sorry excuse for a man!” Those assembled chorused in praise for Jerry.

A peculiar glint flashed across Jerry's eyes.

Unwavering by their comments, Levi smiled. “Fine. I can leave. But Abigail comes with me!”

“No! Abigail must remain and become my concubine! Since this has become public knowledge, would it not be a cause for embarrassment for me to allow her she to leave?” Conrad howled.

“Then all the more reason for me to take her! Woe be to whoever gets in my way!” Levi declared with blood-lust in his eyes.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1170

"You are begging for death, boy!"

"Who dares threaten Mr. Garcia? Are you tired of living?"

Up stepped two men – Cosimo Cuvier and Clarence Trent.

They were sons of the imperial families, variously the ninth and tenth ranking scions in the city.

Both of them were lifelong practitioners of martial arts and highly competent exponents.

"Clear out!" Levi warned.

"Get him!" Conrad commanded at the same time.

Cosimo and Clarence then simultaneously rushed towards Levi.

Bang!

Bang!

Levi pivoted on one foot and lashed out with the other, sending the two men flying back in the opposite direction.

Crack!

Crack!

The loudness of the fighting juxtaposed against the silence of the crowd.

The two young men crashed through several tables before falling heavily onto the ground, followed by their briefly quivering bodies before they lost consciousness.

As those awful sounds died down, the stillness of the air engulfed the entire room.

The masses were stunned as no one knew Levi could fight...

What was even least expected was how well he was able to manage against the ninth and tenth ranking scions, who were both martial Extraordinaires in their own rights.

Jerry and Conrad's jaws hit the deck.

"Hmm. The boy has got some moves. But do you have any idea who you just laid your hands on? They are sons of the imperial family! You are done for! Finished!" Conrad pointed a finger at Levi as he directed his rage towards him.

"Of all of the people you could have beaten up, you had to choose them! You're in big trouble now, Levi!" Jerry yelled.

It certainly spelled no end for trouble for anyone who dared to manhandle the offspring of the imperial families. It was no news that the prominent families were infamous for how protective they were of their own.

Levi Garrison snickered. "What's that about them? That they are untouchable? Then I would love for nothing more than to give them imperials a good whopping!"

Conrad was about to throw a fit at Levi's repeated provocations.

There was no way he could stomach this transgression.

"Move, or I'll give you a taste of this too!" Levi raised a tightened fist steadily as he eyeballed Conrad.

"Bring it on then, if you dare!"

Conrad was too used to having his way and reckoned no one in Oakland City would ever think of laying a finger on him.

“All of you shall bear witness that it was he himself who asked for a good spanking!”

Levi’s foot raised the moment his voice fell and drove itself into his opponent’s left leg.

Crack!

With another bone splintering sound, Conrad was brought to kneel before Levi.

Bang!

Crack!

Once, twice. Levi’s struck out again with his right foot.

Crack!

Crack!

These follow-up blows landed unerringly on either side of Conrad and took out both of his arms.

“Arrgh...”

Conrad’s bloodcurdling scream echoed through the hall.

He is maimed!

All four of his limbs were broken!

That’s brutal!

This is insanely cruel!

All present were shell-shocked.

Has he gone mad?

He dared cripple Conrad Garcia?

Levi Garrison is really in for it this time!

No way he is going to get away with this!

“Mr. Garcia...”

Those who are able to react rushed to the side of the fallen man.

“Have you lost it, Levi? Is there anyone you won’t strike at? This is the scion of the second most prominent ancient family in Erudia!” Jerry shouted.

“You are done for! If you could live past today, I would take after your name!”

“Don’t you dare dream about leaving. You will die here this day!”

There was pandemonium as the masses of privileged young men and women joined in the reprimanding.

The spoiled youngsters then pulled out their phones to call upon the elders of their various families for help.

Unexpectedly for everyone, things had gone way out of control.

If the Garcia family came seeking answers, no one there would be able to evade responsibility.

Within a short frame of time, sixteen of the imperial families and thirty-two of the royal families in Oakland City were mobilized. With that, the heads of the families were on their way to the Dynasty Manor with their best fighters in tow.

It was as though the city had been turned upside down overnight.

This was something at a different level as the primary casualty was the scion of the second most prominent ancient family.

“You’ve a lot to answer for today, Levi!”

Everyone’s eyes were locked onto the lone figure who stood apart from everyone else.

He then pulled up a chair and settled himself down. "Good. Let them come so that we may resolve this once and for all."

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1171

I'm going to thrash all of them!

"What were you yammering about? This and that about some Heir Leaderboard rankings? However many you have, bring it on!" Levi bellowed at the assembly in front of him.

The crowd, incensed by his brazenness, continued to cuss at him.

They were determined to bring the wrath of Oakland City upon him in its fullest potency.

Jerry looked at Levi intently before stepping outside.

It was at that moment, his eyes had betrayed his deviousness.

Little did they know that he had purposefully pulled some strings to suppress word of this incident to keep it from a few of the ancient families. It was because he was concerned how things might change for him should the Lehmans become involved.

News were kept under wraps so that he might rid himself of Levi through the combined strength of the various imperial and royal families, and deny his rival the chance to clarify things with Zoey.

Jerry's true nature was that of a practicing hypocrite.

He saw a union with Zoey as a stepping stone into the ranks of the ancient Lehman family...

And it just so happened that Levi's emergence had thrown a wrench in his best-laid plans.

For this, Levi must die.

At that moment, Oakland City was in an upheaval.

Representatives of the Gotts, Prestons, Meyers, Cuviers, Trents, and the multitude of other imperial and royal families have descended upon Dynasty Manor.

Barring the notable absence of the first imperial family, the Stuarts and all the others were present.

Hundreds of cars were promptly left packed at the front as all the heads of the families quickly made their way inside with their men.

At that time, Conrad's screams of agony still reverberated off the walls inside the hall.

Levi, on the other hand, had his eyes closed and was at rest.

"Who was the one who hurt my son?"

"Who was the one who maimed Mr. Garcia?"

The stern shouting ushered in the arrival of several lavishly dressed elders and the large entourage propping up the rear.

They were spearheaded by Esmond of the Cuviers and Otis of the Trents.

The two men were joined by Jordan, Arvin, and Tiffany of the Meyers.

Prominent figures, who were rarely seen in public, had been brought together on this occasion.

"It's him! Levi Garrison!" The accusing fingers were concerted in identifying the guilty party.

Upon that, Levi surveyed the scene before him. "So is everyone present? Good. Why don't you lot come at me at the same time? I'd like to thrash all of you!"

"Arrogant fool! Die!"

A man took to his heel to rush Levi.

Bang!

Levi fired out the heel of his foot and sent his assailant sprawling as though struck by a five-ton truck. The downed man fell to the ground and remained motionless.

The crowd drew in sharp breaths the moment they witnessed that.

“Even the top pugilist from the Cuvier family was no match?” Their eyes popped in surprise.

“Kill him!”

A bevy of fighters then charged in concert towards Levi.

However, Levi deftly dispatched as many of them as there were, and no one had been able to displace him from his position on the chair.

He remained seated while his fallen foes were left groaning on the floor all around him.

“How could he be that good? This...”

Jordan and Arvin stared at Levi in disbelief.

Is this really the man that everyone called a good-for-nothing?

For a brief moment, they felt a smidgen of regret for calling off the engagement.

In the meantime, the others were going ballistic.

How was it that we could not get a handle on him even with so many skilled men?

Even Jerry was dumbstruck.

“Truly, the Garrisons could not produce anyone incapable. To think even a bastard of theirs is this formidable!” They sighed.

Propped up by the supporters around him, Conrad's eyes burned at Levi. "I don't care how good he is. Kill him, or I'll have to invoke the Garcias and the Garrison clan to deal with this personally. And when they do, I'll make sure to have all of you held collectively responsible!"

Faced with threats from the son of the Garcias, the heads of the prominent families present could only oblige.

"Listen to me. We must kill this man. For when the Garrisons hears of this, we should expect not blame, but reward!" Esmond rallied.

The morale of the aggressors were elevated in an instant.

"No! You cannot afford to cross this man, for he is the God of War!"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1172

Everyone was stunned by Tiffany's hysterical shouting.

The hundreds of fighters stilled their hands, and the onlookers stood frozen with mouths agape.

The well-hidden Martin snickered.

All of you just messed with the wrong guy.

This is someone who could stand up against all the aristocratic families in Oakland City!

Martin could only credit his meeting with this man for his own ascension.

Silence ensued for one whole minute.

That was the duration for which everyone was rooted to the spot.

"The... The God of War..." someone swallowed hard.

Martin proclaimed aloud, "That's right. Standing before you is the rock of Erudia – God of War! Martin Preston hails the God of War!"

"Tiffany Meyers hails the God of War!"

Following the two person's affirmative voices, Conrad fell to the ground, and Jerry slumped back into his chair.

The eyes of all present almost popped from their sockets.

No one could have expected that the God of War was Levi Garrison.

In fact, everyone was in absolute disbelief.

Jordan and Arvin looked at Levi, and then at their progeny before they finally understood why Tiffany made the decision she did after her return.

“So Martin and Tiffany did not meet the God of War by chance. They had purposefully sought out Levi!”

“It was no wonder Levi agreed to the wager against Tyrone. He really did not fear the Garrisons!”

“Now I understand why Levi Garrison dropped off the radar. He embarked on a campaign north to eradicate the Blood King Palace! This was why he could not be present for the birth of his child and the match against the Garrison clan!”

All the missing pieces of the puzzle quietly fell into place.

In short order, everyone had figured out the facts behind the matter.

Conrad then understood why he ought to have steered clear of Abigail...

No one would be able to protect him as even the Garcia family might find themselves in crisis over this.

Thud!

Thud!

The room was silent save for the rhythmic pattering of knees hitting the ground.

One after the other, those in the crowd prostrated themselves.

“The Prestons hail the God of War!”

“The Meyers hail the God of War!”

“The Gotts hail the God of War!”

There was silence as the entire room was held in fear and awe of the great man in their midst.

Only the dazed and hapless Jerry remained on his feet.

He finally caught on to what kind of explanation Levi had in mind for Zoey when he brought her to Oakland City.

Jerry shuddered at this own audacity trying to snatch the wife and child away from the God of War himself.

“What are you doing? Why aren’t you on your knees?” His family anxiously gesticulated at him.

Jerry then fell onto his knees with a loud thud. “God of War, I was wrong. I shouldn’t have...”

Levi smirked, “You may not have been a gentleman, but I shall spare you in consideration of your effort to convince Zoey and the others to come to Oakland City!”

“Thank you, God of War!” Jerry prostrated himself and bowed his head repeatedly.

“There are rules and traditions to observe in all matters. Could we not be so outrageous as to entertain the notion of concubinage? What makes any of you think it appropriate for you to conduct yourselves as the kings of yore do? Someday, someone would cure you of your arrogance!” Levi reprimanded.

Conrad shrunk even more as he bowed deeper in deference. “Never again! I swear!”

Levi then took Abigail and made their exit.

This was one of the most heart-stopping moments that the prominent families of Oakland City had ever experienced.

They now understood how the house of Stuart had fallen – Because Indigo Stuart was The Azure Dragon, a King of War.

The maimed Conrad was eventually stretchered back to the Garcias.

He dared not breathe a word of the truth behind what transpired.

“Who was it who crippled my grandson? I demand justice to be done!” Zed, the head of the Garcia family, howled.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1173

The entire Garcia family was hurting as Conrad was the apple of their eye.

It was excruciating to see him physically reduced to a cripple.

“Grandpa, Dad, let’s not continue to pursue this matter!” Conrad yelled.

“What?” All of them looked at him quizzically as that seemed a little out of character for him.

In the past, Conrad was never one to tolerate even the least amount of aggrivement. He was the sort to wrought vengeance upon the tribe if anyone amongst them so much as looked him the wrong way.

They could not understand this change in his temperament, at least with regard to this episode.

“Will you stop asking and just let it go?” Conrad implored anxiously.

Revenge?

Seeking revenge on the God of War?

*Are you f**king insane?*

“Your Uncle Tyrone just called to inquire about the situation. He’s very concerned!”

Even the Garrison clan had gotten word of Conrad’s misadventure by now.

Everyone wanted to know who was responsible and throwing down the gauntlet to the ancient families.

Just then, Damien hurried over.

“Who did this to Conrad?”

When Damien saw the sorry state Conrad was in, his face darkened. “Give me a name, and I’ll take care of it!”

Though Conrad was the one who experienced the pain, Damien felt the humiliation for him.

“No, Damien. This is my problem. I’m not saying anything, so stop asking!” Conrad was determined to take the truth to the grave.

Everyone found this behavior of his extremely bizarre.

They just could not figure out what could have broken the spirit of this once proud son of Garcia.

A cold glint flashed across Damien’s eyes. “Have it your way. I’ll go find out for myself!”

What Damien sought was what the ancient families of Oakland City were interested to know as well.

Word of the incident had reached the ears of Dale, as well as Zoey’s.

“Was it that same Conrad?”

Zoey remembered that Conrad had herself in his cross-hairs at one point. However, she was fortunate to receive Dale’s timely intervention at that time.

“Right. He was reluctant to name the culprit despite being maimed and also declined to pursue accountability. It was totally unlike him – very strange indeed!” Dale furrowed.

“That reminds me, Zoey, has that Levi contacted you? Didn’t he say he wanted to talk things through?” Edwin asked.

Zoey shook her head. "Not yet."

After arriving in Oakland City, it seemed as though Levi had vanished into thin air.

"That man is completely unreliable! What manner of an explanation is this? What is he trying to pull?" Edwin raged.

"Master, Jerry Gott is outside seeking an audience with you," the butler informed.

"Alright. Send him in, quick!"

Dale still looked upon Jerry quite favorably.

At the same time, Martin was going crazy after learning about Curtis's defeat.

In actuality, Jerry was the real top-ranking scion in the Oakland City's Heir Leaderboard.

Jerry arrived in the meeting chamber in short order.

He looked pallid and haggard beyond compare, as though he had just recovered from a major illness.

"By the gods, Jerry, what happened to you?" Everyone glared at him in astonishment.

Thud!

Jerry fell to his knee in front of the master of the house of Lehman.

"Mr. Lehman! I'm here to request the annulment of the engagement between Ms. Lopez and myself!"

Jerry choked up as he reconciled with the fact that he could never challenge the God of War for the hand of Zoey.

"What? Haven't we already come to an agreement on his issue? Why the sudden change of heart?" Dale was quite astounded.

"Is it because you dislike that Zoey had a child with someone else?" Edwin added.

Jerry shook his head vigorously. "No! It's nothing of the sort! It's because I'm unworthy of Ms. Lopez! Please consider my request, Mr. Lehman. I implore of you!"

Dale looked at him angrily. "What is your justification? Explain yourself!"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1174

Dale was the master of an ancient family – A man who had seen it all.

He knew in a second that something was amiss as nothing about Jerry's erraticism could have escaped his eagle-sharp eyes.

"Speak to me. Tell me what happened exactly that led you to this decision!" Dale was adamant to know why Jerry was backing out.

Jerry sounded like he was on the verge of a nervous breakdown.

"I'm afraid..." he whimpered.

"Huh? What are you raving about? Afraid of what?" Dale pressed.

Jerry gritted his teeth. "Please don't ask anymore, Mr. Lehman. My reasons are personal. Please do agree to the annulment!"

"Aren't you scared of pissing me off then?" The old man erupted.

"I'm not! Annul the engagement, I beg of you! I will bear all the consequences, whatever they may be!" Jerry had left it all on the floor.

I would gladly offend the Lehman family over Levi Garrison.

"Huh?"

Jerry's blatant disregard for death shocked the members of the Lehman family present.

Even Zoey's curiosity was piqued.

What is this about?

What has spooked Jerry Gott so much that it made him so deathly desperate to call off the engagement?

Seeing that Jerry refused to continue further, Dale was dismayed. "You really are determined to keep your lips sealed, aren't you?"

Jerry nodded furiously. "Yes. It's personal and had nothing to do with anyone else."

His obstinate behavior had the elder hopping mad. "You really are convinced that I wouldn't do anything to you, do you?"

"Godfather, let's just leave him be!" Zoey urged.

"Fine. I shall honor the wishes of my daughter!" Dale finally relented.

"Thank you!" Jerry bowed profusely, relieved to be off the hook at long last.

"But don't think that I wouldn't find out just because you choose to kept mum! I will have the truth, one way or another!" Dale bellowed.

The day grew stranger by the moment.

First Conrad Garcia, then it was Jerry Gott.

What's eating them?

"Could it be that Jerry had decided to back out because he is fearful of that rascal Levi?" Dale speculated.

"Surely not, Dad? It's not like they've never met before. How could Levi have frightened off the third-ranking scion on the Heir Leaderboard? It's simply impossible!" Edwin quickly countered.

Zoey, too, did not see how that conjecture could have made sense.

The root cause for Jerry's conduct must run even deeper.

"Right. Where's that Levi Garrison then? Summon him here. I want him to explain himself to you in person!" Dale said as he opted to change the subject.

Zoey felt compelled to ring up Levi.

"Hey, have you arrived in Oakland City?"

"I'm here with Abigail. What's up?"

What's up? The nerve this guy has! Zoey was deeply unhappy to hear those words from Levi. "You're one to ask. Didn't you tell me that you would be here to explain yourself? Why haven't you shown up?"

"I'm sorry. Something else came up that needed my attention. Tell you what – why don't we meet up tomorrow?" Levi sounded apologetic.

Zoey scoffed. "It would seem to me that you never had the intention to see this through. If you wanted, you would have come over to the Lehman's to see me right away!"

"Alright. I'll be there soon! It's about time I properly thanked your godfather as well!"

Levi then parted ways with Abigail and made haste to the Lehman estate.

When Levi arrived, he was intercepted at the door.

"Wasn't I expected? Why deny me access now?" Levi frowned.

"You may enter, but not on your feet. You must come in obeisance!" Edwin stated coldly.

"What?"

"Aren't you ashamed of having disappeared on Zoey this past year and a half? Asking you to crawl in on your knees is meant to cleanse you of your sins!"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1175

“Kneel! Repent!”

“Kneel! Repent!”

Levi surveyed the vicinity as the Lehman guards echoed in unison all around him.

This was what Dale had planned out for Levi.

Kneel first, talk later!

Levi regarded the spectators coldly and did not seem like he was going to comply.

“Where is your sincerity? Where is your guilt? Don’t you think she has done enough to earn your repentance?” Edwin chided.

Upon hearing that, Levi was mildly annoyed. “Where is Zoey?”

“She is inside. But if you want to see her, you must show your worth by demonstrating genuflection!”

Levi laughed coldly, “Am I here to explain things, or am I here to bend the knee?”

“We will hear you out, without question. But for that to happen, the kneeling is a prerequisite!”

The Lehman family was especially harsh to Levi as they wanted him to understand in no uncertain terms how displeased they were.

Yet, Zoey had no idea that her family was going to intentionally make things difficult for him.

“Is this what Zoey wants?” Levi inquired.

Edwin nodded. “But of course! If you only knew how upset she was with you!”

Levi smirked.

As someone who understood Zoey better than anyone else, he was positive that there was no way she could be involved in this fiasco.

“Fine then. In that case, I should be going as for me, bending the knee is an impossibility!”

Levi then turned to depart.

“Hey, where do you think you are going?” Edwin bellowed.

Even so, Levi did not look back the slightest bit.

They had only intended to humble him just a little and had not anticipated this reaction.

“Insolence!” Edwin spat angrily.

In the Lehman family’s hall.

“Huh? Where is Levi? He told me that he was at the door a minute ago.” Zoey asked of Edwin.

Edwin replied, “This Levi Garrison is not a man! Guess what, Zoey? When I gave him a little ticking off outside and commented on how hard it had been for you, that kid blew his top! He also said that you must be insincere and distrustful of him since you were not there to receive him. After that, he questioned the need for him to explain anything! Said you changed the surname of his child, and he did not run away a year and a half and all that crap... I got into an argument with him over it, and then, he decided he was going to leave!”

Edwin added more concoctions into the mix but neglected to mention how he tried to get Levi to prostrate himself.

“Levi Garrison!” Zoey shrieked.

“I couldn’t decide whose name the child would take after! My hands were tied as the Garrison family forbade it! You ought to give me a reason for your going missing during this time! If you do not see the need to explain yourself, then I have no wish to hear it!” Zoey was agitated to the point of tears.

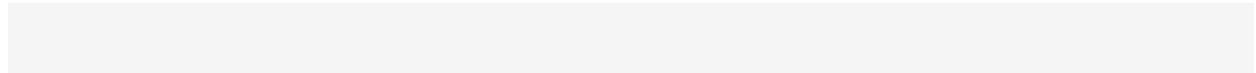
“I wish I could deliver one tight slap across the face of that detestable fool!” Dale fumed.

“Right! He clearly had no intention of clearing the air. If he wanted to, surely there was no need to come up to Oakland City as he could have done so in North Hampton. He’s obviously playing tricks on us! What more is there to explain? He abandoned his wife and mother. That is the plain truth that had been laid bare!”

Hearing the Lehman family’s commentary reduced Zoey to a sobbing mess.

“Mom, don’t cry. Don’t cry...” Forlevia wiped at her mother’s tears with her tiny hands.

In the meantime, Levi did not go back after leaving the Lehmans but made straight for the Garrisons.



Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1176

It was said that the Garrison clan ancestral compound used to be a small palace more than a thousand years ago. The size of it was comparable to a small village.

Levi was standing at the top of a mountain overlooking the Garrison clan ancestral compound in all its glory.

He had to admit the compound was built in a prime location. With a large range of mountains behind and beside it, it ensured that any enemies would only be able to attack them from the front. It would be easily defensible.

He sighed, "No wonder they're the most powerful ancient family in Erudia."

"Who dares to trespass onto the Garrison clan's forbidden grounds?"

An old man's voice suddenly called out.

Levi acutely detected someone's breathing and strong aura rapidly closing in on him.

A few seconds later, an old man with a head full of snowy white hair appeared behind him.

Judging from the old man's outward appearance, Levi guessed he was at the very least eighty to ninety years old. Maybe even over a hundred.

But from their close distance, Levi could sense how the old man's blood was still pounding through his veins powerfully. He could almost hear the roaring of it. When the old man shuttered his eyes, it was like the faint rumble of thunder.

He's definitely a very formidable fighter! In fact, I think he might even be on par with Bloodking and his Four Bloodmasters! He's probably the oldest person in the Garrison clan.

"Who are you? You don't look like one of the Garrison clan members," the old man questioned.

Levi grinned and replied, "No, I'm not part of the Garrison clan."

The older man shoed, "Then get out of here, little boy! You shouldn't be here. This is the forbidden grounds of the Garrison clan! Even most of the Garrison clan members are not allowed here!"

Glancing down at the sprawling buildings, Levi sneered. "Isn't the Garrison clan ancestral compound down there? Don't tell me this mountain belongs to you too? This is part of Erudia, a free country. I can go wherever I like. Where I go is none of your business."

He was absolutely furious.

How ridiculous! These people are too used to getting their way and being such tyrants! How can this entire mountain range be considered as part of their clan's forbidden grounds?

The old man bellowed, "What nonsense are you talking about, little boy? Let me be clear with you. This is the forbidden ground of the Garrison clan. Nobody is allowed to trespass here! Anyone who does so will be punished by death!"

Levi chuckled in response. "Oh really? Well, I'm clearly intruding here. What are you going to do about it?"

"You asked for it!" the old man roared before thrusting a palm out toward Levi.

His strike looked weak but there was an undercurrent of energy to it.

Even boulders would shatter underneath the force of this blow. If it were to land on a human, the human would be absolutely annihilated.

With a snort, Levi's fist flew out like a cannonball to meet the old man's palm.

Boom!

The fist and palm collided together, causing a thunderous boom to ring out.

The crashing sound was so loud that down at the Garrison clan ancestral compound, they thought the skies were cracking open with thunder.

“Urk!”

The old man was no match for Levi’s punch. Blood sprayed out of his mouth as he went flying back several meters before slamming into the ground heavily.

Disbelief flashed through his eyes.

How can a punch that looks so normal contain such power? And from a man as young as him? It’s unbelievable!

The old man stared at Levi with shock.

He was no ordinary old man.

His name was Teneb Garrison, the Guardian of the Oakland City Garrison clan.

He was the oldest and most powerful person in the clan.

Everyone in the clan referred to him as a living god due to his advanced age – he was 130 years old!

He had experienced the rise and fall of several generations and was respected by all. In the Garrison clan, what he said, went.

Not only that, but he had also been the one who cultivated Damien to be the man he was today. In fact, the top three fighters on the Saber Leaderboard had been trained by him as well!

The most powerful men from the younger generations of the Garrison clan had been taught by him.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1177

Rumors had it that Teneb was so strong that his feats surpassed human limits.

Yet he had lost to Levi!

He demanded, "Just who are you!"

"My name is Levi Garrison! I came to scout out the Garrison clan ancestral compound today. Tomorrow, I'll personally arrive at your doors. I had no choice but to retaliate since you pushed me," Levi answered in an exasperated tone.

"Levi Garrison?" Teneb muttered the name to himself.

Abruptly, he remembered where he had heard the name.

"It's you!"

Although Teneb had retreated to the mountains behind the Garrison clan compound to practice his martial arts, he was still well aware of what went on in Erudia and the Garrison clan.

Thus, he knew about Levi Garrison.

Recalling what he knew of the younger man, he could not help but sigh silently.

Damien was known by all to be a genius.

However, when compared to Levi, he was practically nothing.

Just what did the Garrison clan lose out on?

“Alright. I’ll be coming over again tomorrow. I hope you won’t interfere then. Otherwise, I’ll have no choice but to kill you!”

With that said, Levi left.

Meanwhile, the Garrison clan ancestral compound was in an uproar.

Due to the earlier commotion, they realized that something must have happened at the forbidden grounds.

Tyrone and Damien hurried over to see what was wrong.

Tyrone asked, “Elder Teneb, did something happen?”

Instead of actually answering them, Teneb ordered, “Go home!”

Tyrone and Damien exchanged bewildered looks.

Just what was going on?

Something big seemed to be stirring in Oakland City as strange occurrences were happening everywhere.

There were rumors that the imperial family and royal families had gathered together and done something huge.

However, despite being one of the ancient families, the Garrisons had not heard anything about it.

Then there was the fact that Conrad Garcia had been crippled. Unfortunately, they were unable to find any clues about who did it either.

Now, even Teneb was acting strangely...

“Since you’re okay, Elder Teneb, we’ll be taking our leave.”

The father-son pair departed from the forbidden grounds.

Damien felt unease welling within him. "Father, I think something bad is going to happen. I can feel it in my gut!"

Tyrone's expression was grim as he replied, "I get the feeling it's going to be something to do with Levi! That damn jinx really does bring misfortune with him wherever he goes! Only bad things have happened ever since his appearance! I even heard that he's coming here!"

Damien nodded in agreement. "Supposedly, he's coming here tomorrow!"

"Okay then. I'm definitely going to get rid of that damn brat once and for all!"

A murderous glint flickered through Tyrone's eyes as he said that.

On the other side of things, Levi had not gone far from the Garrison clan compound when he suddenly tasted something salty and metallic in his mouth.

The next thing he knew, blood was dribbling from the corner of his lips.

I'm injured?

He had not realized he had been hurt.

That old man really is quite powerful. Luckily, he's only a little stronger than the Bloodking so I can still handle him relatively easily. But how did I get injured?

After a moment of thought, realization dawned on him.

The Bloodking's poison! It must be acting up again!

Cough cough!

At that moment, a wave of weakness washed over him, leaving him feeling extremely feeble.

It was even worse than that hit from Jerry Gott last time.

His earlier fight with that old man had taken more out of him than he thought. He had actually put quite a bit of power behind that punch.

Once again, he forcefully suppressed the poison's toxicity.

After a short while, his body returned to normal.

Since the poison did not seem to be harming him directly, he put the matter out of his mind.

That night, Kirin reported to him, "Sir, the items you requested have already arrived in Oakland City!"

"Alright. Get everything ready. We're going to the Garrison clan ancestral compound tomorrow!"

Early the next morning, Levi brought Emma with him to the Garrison clan ancestral compound.

He also made sure to call Zoey and have her go there as well.

Dale stated in a cold voice, "Fine! Let's go over too. I would like to see him explain all this!"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1178

Thus, Dale brought Zoey and the Lehman family council members to the Garrison clan ancestral compound.

Not only him, the head of the Garcia family, Zed, also brought his council members with him there.

Flynn Hurst, the head of the Hurst family, also went with his council members. The Hursts were another ancient family.

All eight of the ancient families of Oakland City were heading for the Garrison clan ancestral compound.

From the Stuart family, Azure Dragon led his family members there.

The Preston family.

The Meyers family.

The Cuvier family.

In fact, it was like a mass exodus as all the powerful families flocked to the Garrison clan's ancestral compound.

All the imperial, royal, quasi-royal and prominent families were gathering there as well.

Oakland City was in an uproar.

Luxury car after luxury car raced down the streets, all heading in a beeline for the Garrison clan compound.

It was incredibly likely that there would be more than ten thousand people gathered at the compound today.

This was a turnout that the Garrison clan had not expected.

How was it that someone like Levi could manage to cause so many people to arrive?

At the Garrison clan ancestral compound.

Last night, Teneb had sent out an order to all the family members. The members from the Oakland City clan were all to return to the compound within the day. There was something important he had to announce to them.

The entire Garrison clan was in turmoil over that message.

What was even stranger was that even Tyrone had no idea what was happening. This was an order from Elder Teneb himself. Even he, the head of the clan, had to obey the older man.

So all the Garrison clan members had to return to their roots.

Even though it was still morning, most of them had already arrived. The rest were on their way.

"Father, I just received news from Edward. Uncles Yancy, Lyle and Micah are back!" Damien stated.

Tyrone was absolutely delighted at this news.

Yancy, Lyle and Micah were his brothers.

They were also the top three fighters in Erudia's Saber Leaderboard.

Together with Tyrone, they were usually called the Four Dragons of the Garrison clan. They were also the most powerful men in the second generation of the Garrison clan.

Damien held the utmost respect for his three uncles. They had been trained by Elder Teneb himself and learnt everything from him.

Was it any wonder that they had managed to become the top three on the Saber Leaderboard?

That was the dream of countless warriors in Erudia!

Every single fighter thought it an incredible honor to even get onto the leaderboard!

Damien continued with a smile, "Brandon, Greg, Herbert and Hayner are here too!"

Those four men were all from his generation and were each incredibly powerful fighters in their own right. They all had a spot on the Saber Leaderboard as well.

Burt and Lincon, who had been selected to join the Hidden Dragon Soldier King Training Camp, had also returned for the occasion.

However, the last two were not worthy enough for Damien to remember so he did not bother bringing them up.

Tyrone had a puzzled expression on his face. "I wonder what Elder Teneb wants to announce that he needs everyone to come back?"

Furrowing his brows, Damien suggested, "It must have something to do with what happened last night!"

"Then it should be something good, right? Maybe Elder Teneb wants to bring out the family heirloom!" Tyrone guessed.

With how prominent the Garrison clan was right now, there was no way anything bad would happen to them.

Especially since it was the Guardian of the Garrison clan, Teneb, that was making this announcement.

"Yeah, exactly! It must be something good! There can't possibly be anything bad to say!" Damien agreed wholeheartedly.

Tyrone added confidently, "It must be an auspicious occasion for the clan! Is the Elder going to hand something to me? After all, everyone's seen how much I've worked to help this clan prosper!"

Just then, one of the servants rushed inside to inform Tyrone, "Sir, for some reason, there's a lot of people from the other families assembled outside! And their numbers just keep increasing!"

In response, Tyrone grinned happily. "Well, it's normal that the other families will want to be here to witness this wonderful occasion!"

"But that jinx, Levi Garrison, is coming too!"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1179

At the mention of Levi, Tyrone's expression darkened.

How very unfortunate! This is supposed to be a blessed day for the Garrison clan yet that blasted brat is still coming!

A scornful look crossed Damien's face as well.

To him, Levi was a nobody, not even someone worthy of being called an opponent.

Yet he was coming here today of all days!

Damien proposed to his father, "Chasing him away now would only humiliate us before the other families. Perhaps we should see what he wants to do first?"

"Yes."

From his higher position, Tyrone could clearly see the plaza outside the gates. Presently, it was filled with a sea of vehicles and was even expanding as he watched.

He shouted, "Do you see that? This is how powerful the Garrison clan is! More than ten thousand people are here because we're having a major event!"

All the members of the Garrison clan thought everyone was here because of their worship of the Garrisons.

Little did they know, most of the families were not actually here for them.

After a while, all the members of the Oakland City Garrison clan arrived.

"Is Elder Teneb here yet?" Tyrone questioned.

Damien, who had only just returned from the forbidden grounds, replied, "He says he'll appear when it's time."

"Okay! If that's the case, we might as well head outside and deal with Levi first!"

Hence, Tyrone led the council members down to the plaza in front of their gates.

At that moment, the plaza was crammed full of people from all the families. From the ancient families down to the prominent families, every single family came with their representatives and council members. The initially huge plaza was packed tight with the massive crowd.

In truth, most of the people there were completely in the dark about what was happening.

What were they doing here? Was something going to happen here today?

Humans tended to be like a herd of sheep, following what the rest of the flock did.

Since they had heard the other families were coming, they decided to join in too.

The eight ancient families were here to see what Teneb would decide. The Lehman family had a second reason to be there because they wanted to hear Levi's explanation.

Those who knew Levi's true identity were here to support him, of course.

Thus, the crowd could be roughly separated into four groups.

Everyone glanced at each other in confusion.

Tyrone had initially thought these people were here to worship the Garrison clan.

But upon stepping into the plaza, he got the feeling that something was off.

Even he was clueless as to what to do.

“Mr. Garrison! Where’s Levi Garrison?”

Dale was the first to break the silence.

Tyrone froze briefly before answering, “Mr. Lehman, Levi is not coming!”

Furious, Dale roared, “You mean that brat tricked us? He’s not even going to come?”

Zoey was visibly upset at that.

Bewildered, Tyrone queried, “Huh? Mr. Lehman, what do you mean by that?”

He was getting more and more confused.

What are these people doing here?

He was oblivious to the fact that Teneb’s announcement would have something to do with Levi and that was the reason why everyone was here.

“That brat said he would give my goddaughter an explanation today here at the Garrison clan ancestral compound! That’s why we’re here!” Dale retorted loudly.

Tyrone snapped back furiously, “But Levi isn’t here! I think he probably lied to you. There’s no way he dares to come here! If he does, I’ll make sure he won’t be able to leave this place alive!”

“Hahaha!”

Suddenly, the sound of cheerful laughter rang out.

“Levi Garrison is here!” someone shouted.

Like the Red Sea that parted before Moses, the crowd split down the middle to allow a path for Levi.

Levi strode forward with a tense Emma close behind. Kirin and the other four were also following Levi.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

The ground seemed to tremble under everyone's feet.

The cause for the mini earthquake was Black Tortoise, who was carrying a coffin and a gravestone on his back.

Thump! Thump!

He threw the coffin and the gravestone on the ground before the Garrison clan compound's gates.

Then, it was clear these were the exact same coffin and gravestone that Damien had sent to Levi previously.

Levi was returning them to him!

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1180

Everyone was shocked by this sight.

Just how outrageous and arrogant must Levi be to bring a coffin and gravestone to the home of the most powerful ancient family in Erudia?

This was a deliberate provocation!

Damien's eyebrows twitched as his face reddened in fury.

He recognized those two items.

Does he mean to return them to me? Insolent b*****d!

Tyrone was even more enraged.

He had thought Levi was here to beg him, but it was obvious now that the younger man was here to cause a scene.

How dare a bastard child like him taunt the most powerful ancient family in Erudia?

Thousands of pairs of eyes were focused on Levi.

Zoey's emotions were all over the place at seeing him again.

Even though she had not gotten an explanation from him yet, the fact that he had come here already proved his courage.

"Wow, it's so lively here! It's even more crowded than last year during our bet!"

Tyrone guffawed before asking, “Levi Garrison, what are you doing here?”

Levi did not answer the man. Instead, he turned to his mother and stated, “Mom, I brought you here today so you may get an explanation from Tyrone and the Garrison clan! Ask them! Ask them why they abandoned you back then!”

Emma jerked at her son’s words before trembling. Her eyes were shining with tears as various emotions played across her face.

The day she had been wishing and praying for so many years had finally arrived!

Next, Levi turned to look at Zoey. “Zoey, I promise I’ll give you a satisfactory explanation today! I definitely won’t be like Tyrone Garrison and abandon my wife and child!”

“Levi...” Zoey murmured softly while tears trailed down her cheeks silently.

At last, Levi fixed his gaze on Tyrone and Damien. “Today, I, Levi Garrison, will destroy the Garrison clan. I’ll show everyone just how weak and powerless the so-called most powerful ancient family in Erudia is before me!”

The moment those words left his lips, everybody present burst into loud, mocking laughter.

The Garrison clan members even threw their heads back as they roared with laughter.

They were utterly astounded that Levi thought he could take them on all alone!

As they had said before, the Garrison clan had more than a thousand years’ worth of power and resources behind it. It had gotten to its position today due to generations worth of hard work!

Was it possible that they would lose to Levi?

There was a small chance.

However, it was like a one in a million chance.

“Hahaha! Interesting! How very interesting!”

Tyrone had always been amused to see people he deemed as insignificant trying to act tough before him. It was like an ant saying it was powerful before a dragon.

“Emma, I’m eager to see just what kind of ability your son has today!”

With that said, Tyrone’s expression chilled. “Titus?”

“Yes, Sir?”

Titus, one of the Garrison clan’s youngest guards, stepped forward.

He was also one of the challengers for last year’s bet.

“Defeat him!” Tyrone ordered.

Boom!

Titus instantly stomped his feet on the ground, leaving two deep imprints.

Leaping into the air, Titus threw a vicious punch at Levi.

The force behind his punch caused the wind to whistle past his fist. Everyone could distinctly feel the heat generated from it as it felt like razor blades slashing at their faces.

Being able to achieve such power at a young age, Titus was a true genius when it came to martial arts.

“Too weak!” Levi commented softly.

Wham!

His leg flashed upward to land a kick into Titus’ abdomen, sending the man flying back.

Thud!

After more than a dozen meters, Titus finally crashed into one of the stone lions guarding the gates. Slumping to the ground, he did not get up again.

Everybody was utterly dumbfounded!

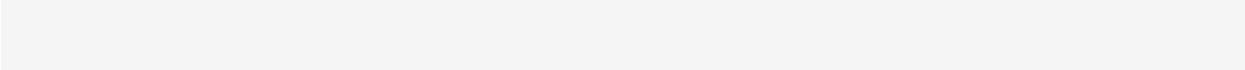
None of the Garrison clan members had expected Levi to be a martial arts expert as well!

Even Emma had not known that.

“T-This...”

The expressions on the Garrison clan members’ faces were grim.

“He’s too weak! I want to fight your strongest!” Levi hollered at Tyrone while staring straight into his eyes.



Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1181

One of the younger Garrisons, Marco, bellowed, "Such arrogance! How dare you show such insolence here at the Garrison clan ancestral compound!"

He was ranked tenth among the top ten strongest fighters in the younger generation.

He charged straight at Levi without a moment's hesitation.

Smack!

With one harsh slap from Levi, Marco was sent flying back.

"Go to hell!"

Ranked eighth among the top ten strongest fighters in the younger generation, Allan threw himself at Levi.

Wham!

A punch threw Allan back.

Bam!

Thud!

Ranked sixth, David lost as well.

Number three and four, Ruben and Clayton, were both defeated too.

Beginning to get impatient, Levi demanded, "All of you come at me!"

Thud! Wham! Thump!

...

One by one, each of the younger generation Garrisons stepped forward to challenge Levi.

Yet the results were all the same.

They all lost.

In no time at all, Levi had managed to defeat every single one of the younger generation Garrisons.

It did not matter how powerful they were, they were all beaten within one blow! None of them even got a chance to strike a second time!

He's so unbelievably strong!

Everyone was rendered speechless at Levi's display of power.

They stared at him, their eyes wide with disbelief.

Zoey's eyes were rounded in shock as well while her mouth hung open slightly. Her heart felt like it was about to leap out of her throat.

So not only is he a great businessman, but his combat skills are also through the roof!

"Wow! Daddy's so awesome!" Forlevia cheered while clapping her hands delightedly.

The Garrison clan members were stunned.

Disregarding everything else, they should be taking him in as one of their own just based on his combat skills alone!

With the combined might of Levi and Damien, they would be unstoppable! None of the other families would even dare think badly of them!

Tyrone and his council members were feeling rather numb from their shock and regret.

They felt like they had made a grave mistake in not allowing Levi to join the clan initially. If only they had known how powerful he was back then, they would have accepted him in an instant!

“So this is my son? Hahaha! As expected of someone who has my blood flowing through his veins! He’s a Garrison indeed! Not bad! Not bad at all!” Tyrone exclaimed gleefully. He then shouted, “Everyone, hold on a moment!”

Turning to Levi, he said, “Levi, I was wrong to have blamed you previously. As long as you agree now, I’ll allow you to join the Garrison clan. I can guarantee your status will be the same as Damien’s. In fact, you might be entitled to even more resources than him!”

“That’s right! I agree on letting Levi Garrison join the clan!”

“Me too!”

One by one, each of the Garrison clan council members voiced their agreement.

They would have been crazy to kill off a genius like Levi!

Emma was close to tears with joy and pride at hearing this. Her son was finally making a name for himself! He had managed to obtain the Garrison clan’s approval through his own abilities!

Zoey was feeling much the same as Emma.

That was her husband! He had proven himself to the most powerful ancient family in Erudia and they were impressed!

Rubbing his goatee, Dale chuckled and commented, “Hmm, not bad. Now, this is a man that’s worthy of my goddaughter!”

Everyone was certain that Levi would say yes to the Garrison clan’s offer. After all, he would be able to enjoy the same privileges as Damien.

Imagine their surprise when Levi merely sneered and replied, “You want me to join the Garrison clan? There’s no way in hell I’ll do that! You’re not worth my time!”

He then leveled a scornful look on Tyrone. "You want to be my father? Do you even have the right? The Garrison clan is about as insignificant as ants in my eyes!"

Levi's words served to anger the Garrison clan.

"We're just appreciative of your talents! Do you seriously think we can't do anything about you if we really tried?" Tyrone thundered.

In reply, Levi challenged coldly, "C'mon then! Who's next!"

"Me!"

A voice called out loudly.

Damien stepped forward from the crowd.

Earlier, Levi had defeated all of the younger generation Garrisons except Damien, who ranked first among them.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1182

Tyrone snorted and gloated, "Levi, I admit that you're quite strong. However, I think you're severely overestimating yourself! You'll never be able to beat Damien!"

His belief in his son was almost borderline fanatical.

Damien was like the symbol of the Garrison clan's prowess, not to mention he was the strongest man among the younger generations of all of Erudia.

In all the ways that counted, he was the best!

Nobody could beat him!

Even if Levi had defeated all the younger generation members of the Garrison clan, he was still no match for Damien!

After all, Damien could easily do what Levi had done as well.

As Damien emerged from the crowd to stand opposite Levi, everyone gasped.

He was like some sort of celestial dragon coming down to Earth to grace the commoners with his presence.

He was the greatest pride and joy of Tyrone Garrison and Olivia Garcia!

Olivia had a haughty smile on her face as she spoke to Emma, "Your son might be slightly talented, but he'll never be able to beat my son! You can stop dreaming about that!"

Her precious son, her pride, could not lose!

The pride of the Garrison clan could not lose!

When Damien was facing Levi, Levi grinned and stated, "You see that coffin and gravestone? I brought it back here specifically for you!"

"You dare show me such disrespect? Die!" Damien roared.

With that, he released his energy. A wave of power exploded from his body, forcefully pushing everyone back several meters like an invisible hand.

It was absolutely terrifying!

"He's a God class fighter?" someone cried.

"Damien Garrison is actually a God class warrior!"

There was a strict ranking system when it came to fighters in this world. They were split into these ranks according to their fighting prowess.

Generally speaking, they could be separated into four classes. Commoner, King, God and Ultimate.

Commoner class usually referred to those that had not been training for long.

King class warriors were powerful fighters that were usually in various positions of authority in the military and led armies.

In terms of power, God class warriors were several times that of a King class. They were the true masters of fighting, being able to take on an entire army alone.

Back then, Levi was pronounced to be a God class due to having singlehandedly defeated the Eighteen-Nation Alliance of God class fighters!

God class warriors were very rare, a fact that could be seen when it had taken all members of the Eighteen-Nation Alliance to scrounge up even a hundred fighters.

Damien achieving this rank at such a young age proved how talented he was at martial arts.

No wonder he was considered a true genius!

If he were to ever consider joining the military, it would definitely not take him long to make his way onto the Saber Leaderboard.

The next instant, Damien moved.

Boom!

His fist snapped out powerfully, sending out a loud roar as the air was pressurized by the force.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

As he dashed toward Levi, his footsteps compressed the air, causing little explosions of sound like a firecracker.

Crack! Crack! Crack!

The ground split open beneath each footfall.

Damien leaped into the air to come flying down at Levi, his fist aiming straight for him.

The force behind that punch was akin to a thunderbolt from Heaven.

Yet Levi's face was blank as he stood there with his hands clasped behind his back. It was almost like he was frozen to the spot in fear.

Boom!

Damien's fist slammed into Levi's shoulder and a loud rumbling sound echoed in the air.

Crack!

What was even scarier was that the floor actually shattered beneath Levi's feet. A spiderweb of cracks spread out for at least one hundred meters while some parts of the ground actually crumbled into a deep hole.

The strong gust of wind from that punch kicked up a cloud of dust, blotting out the skies. A lot of people cried out in pain as grit flew into their eyes. They could not see anything.

It almost felt like a bomb had gone off there.

It was utterly terrifying!

As expected from a God class fighter!

Tyrone and Olivia cheered, "Hahaha! My son won!"

After a moment, the smoke gradually cleared so everyone could finally see the battlefield.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1183

Levi and Damien were standing across from each other.

Patting his shoulder, Levi smirked and taunted, "That's it? That tickled!"

He's completely unhurt?

Damien had dealt such a powerful blow yet Levi did not even have a scratch on him!

How ridiculous is that!

Everyone had thought he would at the very least be badly injured if not dead.

"You're too weak!" Levi commented with a snigger.

Back then, he had taken on more than a hundred God class fighters the Eighteen-Nation Alliance had thrown at him. Alone.

Individually, none of them were weaker than Damien at all.

"Time for you to lose!"

With that, Levi threw out his fist.

BOOM!

His punch sounded like an explosion, causing everyone to go deaf momentarily. All they could hear was a loud ringing in their ears.

In fact, some would later describe this like they had been standing in the middle of a warzone while a hundred bombs went off around them.

Watching the fist that sped toward him, Damien tried to meet it with his own.

Thud!

Unfortunately, he was unable to withstand the power at all. Damien was thrown backward like a ragdoll, blood spurting from his mouth.

He crashed to the floor, disbelief shining in his eyes.

I lost?

“Damien lost? How can that be? How could he have possibly lost?”

Nobody could accept this brutal reality.

The strongest of the younger generation of Garrisons had been defeated!

How horrifying!

That meant that Levi Garrison was also a God class fighter!

Although Emma and Zoey did not know much about the ranking system, they were happy enough that he was so powerful.

No words could describe their pride in him right now!

The Garrison clan was completely frozen in shock.

“No! That can’t be! My son cannot possibly lose! He can’t! He has to win, no matter what!”

Tyrone and Olivia glanced at each other, determined glints in their eyes.

In the past few years, Damien had practically bulldozed over every single opponent he had come across. He had never once lost!

That was also the reason why the Garrison clan was so proud and arrogant.

If he actually lost, that would severely tarnish the Garrison clan's name and reputation!

The other fighters in the family looked at each other meaningfully, the same thoughts crossing their minds.

They had to make sure Damien won even if it meant cheating! He could not lose, not even once!

As the most powerful ancient family, the Garrison clan did not know the meaning of the word "defeat."

By this point, Damien was also shooting pleading looks at his father.

Their thoughts echoed that of the other clan members.

Tyrone hurried over to Damien's side and surreptitiously shoved a pill at him.

Damien swallowed it quickly.

This pill was a special drug that could unlock a person's full potential.

At the same time, Tyrone and several of the other elite fighters pressed their hands against Damien. They transferred their energies into him, boosting his power even more.

With these two guarantees, he was definitely going to be able to win against Levi!

At this point, nobody cared that they were using such despicable methods to cheat.

When it came to these influential and powerful families, their glamorous and perfect image was just a front for how dirty and disgusting they truly were.

Damien's power increased dramatically under the inflow of energies and the pill.

Five times!

Ten times!

A hundred times!

His power was now a hundred times his previous level!

Whoosh!

Like a phoenix reborn, Damien rose to his feet while his hostile aura exploded out of him. Strong gusts of winds swirled around him.

Feeling the power coursing through his veins, Damien let out a demonic laugh.

This was the first time he had felt so much power!

He was beyond giddy, drunk on the feeling of being invisible!

At that moment, he felt like he could even kill God himself!

“Die, Levi Garrison!” he roared like some demon from Hell.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1184

Anybody who was observant enough would realize what the Garrison clan had done.

But this was the most powerful ancient family in Erudia.

Nobody dared to speak up even if they were mad about it.

“What the hell is this? That’s cheating! How can the Garrison clan do that?” Dale protested in righteous anger.

After all, he was standing on Zoey’s side, which by extension meant Levi’s side. Of course he would be mad at seeing the Garrison clan members cheating.

“Hasn’t the Garrison clan always been like that? They’re ruthless when it comes to getting what they want! The fact that this concerns Damien is making them even more uncaring of anything else! After all, if he loses, that means the Garrisons lose too! There’s no way they’ll allow him to be defeated!” someone piped up.

Dale huffed angrily, “So we’re going to do nothing but watch?”

The people nearest to him sighed. “There’s nothing we can do but endure this! This is the Garrison clan we’re talking about.”

“Argh!” Dale hit his chest anxiously.

He was helpless and he knew it. The most he could do was complain.

Zoey panicked when she heard that short conversation.

It was just so unfair that the Garrison clan cheated!

This was not a one on one match with Damien.

This was Levi fighting against the entire Garrison clan!

That meant he was in even more danger!

It did not matter how strong he was.

If the Garrison clan was really as ruthless as they said, then he would be dead either way.

What a bunch of bullies! He was only supposed to fight Damien!

“What a pity! Levi is definitely one of the rare true geniuses out there. Unfortunately, he just had to piss off the Garrison clan. I guess it’s his fate to fall by their hands!”

Everyone was already lamenting the loss of such potential.

But they did not have a choice.

Nobody could actually control the Garrison clan for they did not have the courage nor the power to do so.

Due to his increased power, Damien had left the title of God class behind. He was probably closer to the legendary Ultimate class now.

Anyone in the Ultimate class was absolutely terrifying.

It was said that they could take on tens of thousands of men singlehandedly and still win like it was a walk in the park. They were the ultimate warriors that could not be taken down easily even with an army and heavy weaponry.

The only thing was that an Ultimate class warrior was nearly extinct for how rare they were.

Running into a God class warrior was already rare enough, let alone an Ultimate class one.

Damien stalked toward Levi, the sheer power emanating from him pressing down on the other people present. They struggled to breathe as it felt like a boulder was pressing down on their chests.

“Levi Garrison, I won’t lose!” Damien bellowed before swinging his fist out.

The destructive force behind this punch was a hundred times his earlier attack, capable of destroying entire mountains!

He was absolutely certain that this blow would obliterate Levi once and for all.

“Hahaha!”

Levi’s lips curled into a mocking sneer before he met Damien’s fist with his own.

BOOM!

The impact of that collision was like a satellite smashing into Earth, sending shockwaves everywhere.

“Urgh!”

“Ack!”

More than a few people coughed out blood from the shockwaves that had slammed into them.

As a whole, the entire crowd was also pushed back more than a dozen meters.

CRACK!

At last, the plaza could no longer hold up under this assault. The entire floor collapsed beneath their feet.

What was even more frightening was that Damien had been defeated.

He had been shoved back twenty meters, his feet leaving two deep furrows in the ground.

Even in this state, Damien had lost?

Just how powerful was Levi?

Everyone was utterly dumbfounded.

"I-I... can't lose! I can't lose!" Damien screamed.

He continued to push his body over and beyond his limits. It was obvious he was going to defeat Levi or at least die trying!

Wham! Wham! Wham!

Levi pummeled Damien three more times, leaving the latter a bloody mess.

Damien's body crumpled to the floor lifelessly.

In the end, the coffin he had custom ordered would become his final resting place!

Tyrone and Olivia screamed when they saw their son fall. "My son! Levi Garrison, you'll pay for this! Men, kill him!"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1185

The bloodied form of Damien lay on the floor for all to see.

Zoey had been quick to cover her daughter's eyes, not wanting her to see such a horrible sight.

Is Levi really that powerful? He's really not afraid of the Garrisons, is he? They really did wrongfully blame him!

Everyone was stunned at Damien's defeat, especially since he had already been boosted by the pill and energies of others.

How fearsome!

"You can make use of this yourself!"

With that said, Levi kicked open the lid of the coffin and threw Damien inside.

Scritch scritch!

Using a dagger, he carved some words into the gravestone. Here lies Damien Garrison.

Slam!

When he was done, he rammed the gravestone into the ground.

Levi's rapid defeat of Damien caught the Garrison clan off guard and they were absolutely incensed.

This was the biggest taunt Levi could ever do to the Garrison clan.

I killed off your future, all your hopes and dreams!

The Garrison clan members were about to lose their minds.

Levi had killed off Damien, their best and brightest! He was supposed to be the future of the Garrison clan!

Not only that, but he had also been the future of the Garcia family too!

After all, he had Garcia blood flowing through his veins as well.

Both families were crazed with anger as they yelled, "Die! Kill him!"

Warrior after warrior appeared and gathered together. Every single one of them was a God class fighter.

One.

Two.

...

Seventy-one!

It was absolutely astonishing and daunting!

It had taken all eighteen countries of the Eighteen-Nation Alliance to gather even a hundred God class warriors.

Yet the Garrison clan and Garcia family alone already had seventy-one God class warriors!

This was the might of the number one and two ancient families in Erudia.

There were two characteristics that separated a God class warrior from a normal human. Other than their incredible power, they also lived a lot longer than an ordinary person due to their stronger life energies.

That was why a lot of the God class warriors before Levi now were actually rather old.

Since they had pinned all their hopes on Damien, there was no way they would let Levi off the hook for killing him!

“You’re dead, you hear me? Dead!” Zed Garcia hollered.

Tyrone was also screaming like a madman, “Do you seriously think I won’t kill you?”

Despite being faced with the pressure of so many God class warriors, Levi was extremely delighted!

It reminded him of back then when he was facing the God class warriors of the Eighteen-Nation Alliance!

“Wonderful, wonderful!” he crowed while laughing.

“Boss, let us take them!” White Tiger offered as the five of them stepped forward eagerly.

Levi shook his head. “No. This is my business so I’ll handle them myself!”

He was not the slightest bit afraid of these seventy plus God class warriors.

It was not like he had not already experienced this once before!

“Are there any more? All of you should come at me together! It’ll save me a lot of time!”

He wagged his finger at them tauntingly.

Such arrogance!

Even now, he was still provoking the people here!

It was clear he was completely disrespectful to the Garrison clan and Garcia family!

Tyrone thundered, “So you think you’re that good, huh? I’d like to see just how capable a fighter you are! The Garrison clan has an abundance of elite fighters! If they’re not enough,

we still have the top three fighters of the Saber Leaderboard! We also have the Guardian of the Garrison Clan!”

“Kill him!”

Immediately, all the God class warriors charged at Levi simultaneously.

The ensuing battle was chaotic and intense.

From where they were standing by the sidelines, White Tiger and the other four could feel their blood pounding through their veins in excitement.

It was like they were seeing the legendary and undefeatable God of War again.

A short while later, Levi was standing tall with his white shirt stained crimson with blood.

Around him, all seventy-one God class warriors were groaning or howling with pain.

They had been utterly defeated!

It was outrageous how strong Levi was!

He had singlehandedly wiped out the best fighters the Garrison clan and Garcia family had!

The crowd was abuzz at the shocking event.

“T-This... That... That’s just too scary!”

“I’ve never seen anyone as powerful as him!”

Tyrone and the rest of the Garrison clan members had not expected Levi would be that strong either.

“Levi, don’t think that we’ll admit defeat just like that! Please grace us with your presence, Elder Teneb!” Tyrone yelled.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1186

It was absolutely outrageous how formidable Levi was!

They had never seen a young man as terrifying as him before.

In fact, they had never even heard of the existence of someone remotely like him!

Tyrone was dumbstruck.

This is my son? If only we had accepted him into the family back then, we would be unstoppable right now! The other families would be bowing down before our might for at least a hundred years, maybe even more! The Garrison clan would have attained new heights! However, now that things have deteriorated to this extent, what's more important is protecting our pride and reputation. We have to defeat him!

Thus, the only option they had left was to bring in the one man in their clan that was like a living god – Teneb.

Rumors had it that Teneb was an Ultimate class warrior, which was why he had managed to live so long.

At one hundred and thirty years old, his energy was still strong.

None of the people present had expected Levi would be so powerful that the Garrison clan would need to invite Teneb to the scene.

In no time at all, Teneb was escorted down to the plaza.

Thump!

The Garrison clan members fell to their knees before the old man, chorusing, "Please seek justice for us, Elder Teneb! The disowned son, Levi Garrison, refused to acknowledge his ancestors and elders! He beat up his own cousins and even his elders! He even killed the Garrison clan's hope, Damien! Please eradicate him for the sake of the clan, Elder Teneb!"

...

Presently, the Garrison clan was acknowledging Levi's identity as a Garrison. However, they were now painting him as someone heartless and disrespectful.

Cough cough!

To their immense surprise, Teneb's body shook as he coughed violently, spitting out blood.

"What? Elder Teneb... You're injured?"

The color drained from everyone's faces at that thought.

But then they recalled the commotion that had come from the forbidden grounds yesterday and understood.

Elder Teneb must have fought with someone yesterday and gotten hurt! To be able to injure the Guardian of the Garrison clan, how formidable must that person be? Was it yet another Ultimate class warrior?

That was an incredibly daunting thought. Having it be someone from the God class was already scary enough, but another Ultimate class?

It was said the gap between a God and Ultimate class was nearly insurmountable.

If one were to achieve the rank of Ultimate, that would mean he had gone beyond the limits of a mortal!

What was even more amazing was their combat prowess and longevity!

One could take on an army of ten thousand men by himself and his life was extended infinitely...

When it came to influence, it was said that having an Ultimate class warrior in a country was the best defense that country could have.

With an Ultimate class warrior on the frontlines, any army would quail in fear!

That was why everyone thought the culprit who injured Teneb was another Ultimate class warrior.

Wiping away the blood trickling from his lips, Teneb nodded. "Yes, I'm injured."

Then, he turned to look at Levi.

"Don't tell me it's Levi who did this to you?"

Disbelief was writ across everybody's faces.

"That's right. It was him!" Teneb nodded. "I gathered everyone here today because of this important issue!"

In an instant, everyone realized why Teneb had called back all the Garrison clan members.

Pfft!

A coppery taste spread through Tyrone's mouth before blood gushed out of his mouth.

To think they had been throwing the younger generations at Levi when he had already defeated their strongest member, Teneb!

Was there any limit to Levi's power? He had singlehandedly obliterated the entire Garrison clan!

Tyrone ranted, "No, we haven't lost yet! The truly strong fighters are not here yet!"

He was referring to the clan members on the Saber Leaderboard, in particular Yancy, Lyle and Micah. Those three really were the strongest fighters the Garrison clan had left.

If they took on Levi together, it was likely they might win.

Soon, Yancy arrived with more than a dozen fighters from the Saber Leaderboard.

Burt, Lincon and the others who had joined the Hidden Dragon training camp also arrived.

“The Garrison clan can’t lose!” Yancy shouted.

But as his eyes locked onto Levi’s in the next instant, he was dumbstruck.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1187

Yancy was not the only one who had such a drastic change in demeanor.

Lyle and Micah's expression fell when they got a good look at Levi's face.

Behind them, Brandon, Greg and the other fighters were also looking pale.

As the best fighters on the Saber Leaderboard, how could they not recognize Levi?

Especially since the leaderboard was set up by Levi's subordinates!

Thump!

"Yancy Garrison greets the God of War!"

Thump!

"Lyle Garrison greets the God of War!"

Thump!

"Micah Garrison greets the God of War!"

...

Brandon.

Greg.

Hayner.

Lincon.

Burt.

In the blink of an eye, all the Garrison clan members who were in the military were kneeling before Levi.

They chorused, "All hail the God of War!"

This rapid turn of events was just too shocking!

Everyone present was completely caught by surprise.

Why would Yancy and the rest kneel to Levi?

They were the top three fighters on the Saber Leaderboard, the best warriors in all of Erudia!

Even Teneb was taken aback at their actions.

Just who is he? What is this "God of War?"

He was so astounded his thinking seemed to have ground to a halt.

"The Stuart family greets the God of War!" Azure Dragon suddenly shouted before he and his family members all kneeled down.

"The Preston family greets the God of War!"

"The Meyers family greets the God of War!"

"The Gott family greets the God of War!"

...

What followed was even more astonishing!

All sixteen of the imperial families and the thirty-two royal families got down on their knees before Levi, shouting the exact same sentence as the others.

The quasi-royal and prominent families followed their lead and kneeled as well.

In an incredibly short amount of time, the thousands of people in the plaza were all kneeling.

It was a mind-blowing sight.

The Garrison clan and Zoey were unable to react as their minds went blank.

Awooo!

Suddenly, the eerie howling of wolves could be heard.

Everybody glanced around, finally spotting the eighteen figures that had appeared on a nearby hill. The figures were riding on wolves.

At once, everyone realized who they were.

These were the subordinates of the God of War, his Cavalry Regiment!

“Azure Dragon greets the God of War!”

“Kirin greets the God of War!”

“Phoenix greets the God of War!”

“White Tiger greets the God of War!”

“Black Tortoise greets the God of War!”

The Five Great Wars Regiment also went down on their knees.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

The sound of synchronized marching rang out before row after row of men in black clothing appeared.

These were the Dragon Warriors that had appeared in Jason's house previously!

"The Dragon Warriors greet the God of War!"

The Dragon Warriors got down on one knee, giving Levi their highest gesture of respect!

"The Specter Army greets the God of War!"

Yet another group of soldiers arrived to greet Levi.

Then, even more appeared.

"The Ruby Army greets the God of War!"

"The Sapphire Army greets the God of War!"

"The Emerald Army greets the God of War!"

"The Topaz Army greets the God of War!"

Four separate groups appeared. These four were yet more undefeatable regiments that had been personally trained by Levi.

Coincidentally, they had been in Oakland City so they decided to come.

"The Dragonites greet the God of War! Welcome to Oakland City!"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1188

Another group of soldiers appeared.

It was the representative army of Oakland City – the Dragonites!

The initially spacious plaza was now completely filled to overflowing with more than ten thousand people there kneeling to Levi!

The Garrison clan, Zoey and Emma were at a loss for what to do.

They stood there dumbly, still in a daze from what they had seen.

“Asura is here with Zar, Bolgun and Talon!”

A commanding voice announced loudly.

Winsor strode over with three of his own regiments of men. His men were all wearing demon masks. However, there were three kinds of masks to differentiate them into their separate regiments.

“Zar greets the God of War!”

“Bolgun greets the God of War!”

“Talon greets the God of War!”

As the three men said that, their individual regiments all kneeled before Levi and addressed him as well.

It was a truly majestic scene!

These were all of Erudia's fiercest and strongest armies!

Each was capable of defeating a ten thousand men army themselves!

It would not be an exaggeration to say all the soldiers present here right now were equivalent to millions of normal men!

That meant more than a million men were currently worshipping the God of War!

"Winsor Campbell greets the God of War!"

Even Winsor had to address Levi respectfully, but only because the latter was stronger than him.

Rank-wise, they were of equal rank. Thus, Winsor did not have to kneel. It was enough that he bow as a sign of respect.

Since Levi was here to accept the challenge, of course Winsor had to make an appearance to support him.

Winsor was a man of great reputation and influence.

All the influential families in Oakland City knew him, especially since he had appeared last year as well.

With such a jaw-dropping turnout, it was obvious now who Levi was.

This young man in his twenties was none other than Erudia's own God of War!

He was Erudia's best defense, able to strike terror into every other countries' hearts!

"G-God of War...?"

The first to snap out of his shock was Teneb. Now he understood how he had lost.

How could he possibly win against the God of War?

Zed and the Garcia family members were close to crying.

They finally knew why Conrad, who had been crippled, had chosen to let things go. He had absolutely refused to speak about what happened to him.

It turned out that he had offended the God of War. Who had the guts to pursue this matter further?

No way the Garcia family was going to let themselves be exterminated!

Dale was completely blown away by this revelation.

It was dawning on him why Jerry would risk pissing off the Lehman family and break off his marriage contract with Zoey.

Jerry must have known about Levi's true identity.

That was why he would rather die than actually snatch the God of War's wife away from him!

Speaking of dying...

Edwin felt like a bolt of lightning had struck him.

What did I do yesterday? I was actually trying to force the God of War to give us an explanation while on his knees! What an idiot! I'm definitely going to die for this!

"Woohoo, Daddy's amazing! Daddy's so cool!"

Among all the people present, little Forlevia was the most clearheaded at that moment.

As a young child, she did not understand what the adults were talking about. All she knew was that a lot of people were kneeling before her father.

Of course he's amazing! He's the venerable God of War himself!

Zoey's blank eyes gradually brightened as she slowly began to make the connections.

“The God of War?”

“Wait a minute, the God of War?”

“My husband is the God of War?”

A crazed expression made its way onto her face and she was close to losing her composure.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1189

Emma was slowly hit with the realization as well.

It can't be? No way. It turns out what Levi said was all true!

My fantasies actually turned into reality?

Am I dreaming?

She gave herself a hard pinch and felt a sharp pain.

"You Garrison folks know nothing... We know better!" the Stuart family shouted.

The entire Garrison clan was struck with a deep realization, as though someone had just poured ice-cold water on them.

Why has Levi always been so disdainful towards the Garrison clan?

Why did he agree to the bet if he did not care about the Garrison clan?

In the past, everyone used to think that Levi was a dumb fool.

However, it turned out that he simply did not take the Garrison clan seriously at all!

The Garrison clan finally figured out why the God of War's last name was Garrison.

The God of War is Levi Garrison!

They had spent a great deal of effort to investigate which branch of the Garrison clan he was from, but they did not expect him to be from their branch.

They also realized he was the same person that Tyrone almost killed.

That moment, Tyrone recalled Jonah's warning to him and Damien.

They had disagreed with Jonah at that time, but Jonah already knew of Levi's identity then.

Tyrone's face suddenly turned pale as he recollected the first time he met Levi face-to-face.

He suddenly understood that Emma wasn't the one who leaked the secret to Levi.

Of course, Levi found out by himself!

Given his status, it was a piece of cake for him to investigate this!

How naïve of me to think that he would use this to blackmail me...

I was wrong!

Absolutely wrong!

Someone of his status and position wouldn't do this!

People generally regarded Levi as arrogant and aloof, but what they didn't know was that his status was way above theirs.

On the other hand, the Garrison clan treated him as a lowly creature, but he was actually an extraordinary and mighty being.

The crowd took a deep breath when they thought about how easily Levi resolved the matter that the Garrison clan confronted him with.

They should have known better that he wasn't a common man.

But they were blind-sided by Morris Group.

They underestimated the company and did not take it seriously.

All sorts of thoughts ran through their mind at that time. The God of War?

Levi Garrison is actually the God of War!

Who said a single man's hard work over several decades cannot compare with the blood, sweat and tears of prominent families who have been around for generations?

Whoever said that was wrong. It's absolutely possible!

The chances of this happening might be one in a million, but it is not impossible.

Levi Garrison is living proof of that possibility!

My son is the God of War?

With Levi around, would Damien still be of any use?

Could he possibly match up to Levi?

What a shame!

What an absolute shame!

If only the Garrison clan brought Levi back earlier, the God of War would be a part of the clan!

Who wouldn't be convinced then?

The Garrison clan's power would be on the rise, and going up the social ladder wouldn't be a problem at all!

If that happened, it would actually be possible to dominate the whole of Bayview...

But it is too late to cry over spilled milk now!

We were the ones who pushed Levi to the enemy's side...

Damien even ruined his wedding...

Now he's taking revenge!

Levi looked at the thousands of people kneeling before him and shouted, "Get up!"

Everyone quickly stood up synchronously.

He then grabbed his mother and walked up to Tyrone.

"Did you ever dream of this day, that I would personally defeat the Garrison clan? Do you think it's that difficult to defeat the clan? I'll show you how it's done! Mother and I are here to demand an explanation today!" he said with a contemptuous grin.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1190

Levi's words cut like a knife while his voice sounded like roaring thunder.

His overwhelming presence swept across the crowd.

Whoosh...

Every member of the Garrison clan was suddenly short of breath.

It was as though a large rock had knocked the breath right out of them, leaving them gasping for air.

Thump! Thump! Their hearts pounded rapidly.

Several people who could not withstand the psychological pressure started collapsing onto the ground one after another.

Their entire bodies were drenched in cold sweat.

It was a horrifying sight.

Showcasing his powers, Levi was like a god who had descended from the heavens, and mere ordinary folk could not withstand his attacks.

Tyrone, who was standing closest to Levi at this moment, turned pale white.

His legs started trembling as a layer of cold sweat formed on his forehead.

Levi glared at Tyrone. *So what if you're the head of Erudia's first ancient family?*

You can't kneel before the God of War?

"You and the Garrison clan both owe me an explanation!" he bellowed.

Boom!

Lightning suddenly struck the Garrison clan as Levi demanded an explanation from them.

"Alright, it's time to question Tyrone and the rest of the Garrison clan! When my mother was pregnant back then, she knelt in front of the Garrison family home for three whole days. Where were you, and what were you doing? Why did you abandon your wife and child? Why did you choose to kill your own flesh and blood? Why are you so cold-hearted to my mother? Did she do anything to wrong you?" he interrogated Tyrone and stared at the entire clan.

Every member of the clan, including Tyrone, lowered their heads and did not dare to look at Levi.

Everyone remained quiet.

"Speak up!" Levi roared and slammed the main door.

In a wink, the door crumbled and turned into dust.

At that moment, Levi was like a demon who had unleashed his rage on all of humanity.

Thud!

Thud!

There was a seemingly invisible force that forced everyone to kneel down one after another, but no one could explain what was going on.

There was no logical explanation for this phenomenon.

Boom!

Tyrone could no longer withstand the overwhelming pressure and finally collapsed on his knees.

Olivia, Kenny, and Teneb were all on their knees too.

They could not stand the pressure either!

By then, every single member of the Garrison clan was kneeling down before Levi.

Erudia's first ancient family finally surrendered to Levi Garrison!

"Hahaha..." Emma chuckled in delight as tears started rolling down her cheeks.

"Olivia, didn't you think I was inferior to you? That my son is of a lowly bloodline? What do you think now? Can your son compared to mine?" Emma yelled.

But Olivia remained silent.

"Your clan used to look down on me, thinking that my blood was less human than yours just because I am from a humble family. Back then, I dreamt of standing in front of all of you and telling you that my son will one day rule the world. Now, look at you, aren't you all kneeling before my son?" Emma sneered.

Tyrone and the rest of the clan continued to hold their silence until she finished ranting.

For the first time in her life, Emma felt relieved.

The Garrison clan trembled with fear as they stood speechless before Levi.

"Why are all of you kneeling before a bastard? Hahaha... We'll deal with you all soon..." she added sarcastically.

Levi then turned to look at Zoey, saying, "Zoey, I'll give you an explanation right now!"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1191

"I actually wanted to tell you everything at the wedding, but Damien's unexpected intrusion disrupted my plan! Later on, I wanted to explain while I dealt with the Garrisons, but something unexpected happened. The Dragonites transferred me out under their highest order and made it my mission to annihilate Blood King Palace. Because of that, I had to be away for the past year and a half. I missed the birth of our child and the agreement with the Garrison clan, and you were left to fend for yourself..." Levi explained why he went missing for one and a half years.

Everyone finally understood the real reason behind his disappearance.

He had been tasked to wipe out Blood King Palace.

"This was all in fact a scheme by my enemies from overseas to separate you and Mother from me!" Levi continued.

"Then why were we not in danger after you left? I even went overseas..." Zoey questioned him.

"Erudia had sent Asura to protect you from the ten thousand men who were waiting to ambush you at Keerea airport. Meanwhile, Mother was protected by Zar, Bolgun, and Talon," Levi explained.

Zoey then understood why things had been so smooth for her when Levi was away.

There were always people around to protect her.

Even when Asura tried to attack her when her negotiations with the Garrison clan failed, there were men looking after her.

“Zoey, I’m sorry I wasn’t there for you and our child. But trust me when I say I’m Erudia’s God of War. Your husband now rules the world!” Levi finally made it up to her with a complete explanation.

“I’m so proud of you, darling!” Zoey hugged him tightly as she burst into tears.

This is my husband!

My pride and my hero!

He is the world’s best husband!

“You kept all this from me for so long. Why didn’t you tell me earlier...” She sobbed.

Thinking back on what she went through for the last two years, she realized everything that happened was no coincidence.

Levi had always been in control of every event in her life, and everything started to make sense to her.

“What a perfect explanation! You are indeed Erudia’s hero! We owe you a huge apology!” Dale took the initiative to apologize.

“I was wrong too!” Edwin got down on his knees.

“The Garrisons should kneel for three whole days! If Tyrone can take a punch from me, I’ll let this matter go!” Levi offered the Garrison clan an ultimatum.

From a wider point of view, he knew that it was best not to annihilate the Garrison clan.

Finally, Tyrone stood before him.

Bash!

Levi threw a hard punch without any reservation, and Tyrone’s body flew over a hundred meters before he hit a wall.

No one knew if he survived.

Meanwhile, the rest of the Garrison clan had to kneel for three entire days to atone for their sins.

As the public caught wave of this news, many shady figures watched on in the dark.

They were not Erudians, and but were Tenichi's men.

"Levi's repeated assaults have triggered the Blood King Palace's most poisonous attack! He is about to battle Asura again, and he will die without a doubt!" One of the spies sneered.

The Blood King Palace's poison was the best weapon they could use to defeat Levi.

That very moment, Levi was suddenly overcome by an unpleasant sensation.

He felt like the sky was spinning as he struggled to stand up straight.

Feeling nauseous, he tried his best to hold back his vomit.

But he clearly felt that the effects of the toxin were a lot stronger this time.

He had battled Teneb and the seventy-one God class warriors of the Garrison clan before, so he was surprised that he was feeling this weak.

How come I can't seem to control the poison this time? How is this possible?

Levi's expression changed drastically.

"God of War, it's time for our battle now!" someone exclaimed.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1192

As Levi felt his body spin out of control because of the poison, Asura suddenly appeared.

He had come to fulfil his end of the battle.

Levi continued to bear with the poison as much as he could while fearing he might pass out or vomit blood.

At this critical moment, Asura turned up to challenge him.

"Are you alright?" Winsor sensed that Levi wasn't doing well.

Nevertheless, Levi covered up his pain and discomfort so well that Winsor could not tell in the end.

"I'm fine. I'm just excited!" Levi answered with a chuckle.

That moment, he exhausted every bit of strength in him to fight the Blood King Palace's poison.

On the surface, he looked fine, but inside, his body was completely ruined.

Meanwhile, several spies were having a discussion between themselves somewhere in the dark. "Hahaha, the Blood King Palace's poison is indeed powerful. Even the God of War cannot withstand it!" the first spy said.

"Did you know it took forty years for the Blood King Palace to develop this poison so he can defeat the strongest warrior!" another spy said.

"This time, Levi Garrison will definitely die. It will a wish come true for Blood King Palace and his military strategist!" a third one replied.

They knew best how powerful this poison was.

While Levi fights Teneb, Damien, and the seventy-one God class warriors of the Garrison clan, the poison would spread throughout his body.

No matter how strong Levi was, it would be too late for him.

The poison would have attacked every inch of his body.

The most unique characteristic of this poison was its ability to consume human blood and energy.

Even the gods would not be able to save him by then!

Moreover, Levi would have to face another powerful opponent, Winsor Campbell.

So his death would be inevitable.

All of this was within Tenichi's plans, though some factors were beyond his control, such as Levi's initial battle against the Garrison clan warriors.

Nevertheless, this was still favorable for him.

Winsor, on the other hand, did not bother about it much either.

After all, he and Levi had already reached such a high point.

Defeating the Garrison clan would not be a difficult task at all.

So he thought their agreed battle would not be a problem as well.

However, he did not know what Levi was enduring physically.

He glanced at Levi and said, "Come on, let's settle this right now! The whole world knows the God of War, but few know of Asura. People will assume you are stronger than me, but I

don't think I'm any weaker than you. You've rejected my challenges more than ten times these few years! Today, the opportunity has finally come, and I want to prove to the world that Winsor Campbell is no weaker than you!"

In the blink of an eye, Winsor altered his appearance. It was as though he was a demon reborn from hell.

"Alright, I accept your challenge! If I win, you will have to work under my command. If I lose, I'll let you take over as the God of War!" Levi mustered up his energy and accepted Winsor's challenge.

"No, the position was originally mine! I will only be taking back what's rightfully mine!" Winsor retorted.

He was completely consumed by the idea of becoming the God of War, and this obsession was the driving force for his insane actions.

All his life, he had been waiting for the day he could finally defeat Levi Garrison.

Just as the battle between Levi and Winsor was about to start, White Tiger suddenly exclaimed, "There's something wrong with the boss! He seems to be injured!"

"I think so too!" Kirin echoed.

Phoenix, Kirin, and the other subordinates knew Levi well.

Even if he looked fine to others, they could tell that he was in trouble.

They sensed that he was injured.

Thinking that he was capable of fighting Asura, White Tiger took a deep breath and said, "Why don't I take Levi's place for the battle?"

"No, you can't change opponents at this moment," said Winsor.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1193

Next, the huge battle began between Levi and Winsor.

From the moment they made their first move, the crowd was astounded and astonished by their actions.

Everyone was suddenly forced to step back about one hundred meters, and there was nowhere left for them to stand on in the middle of the grounds.

Between them, they released airwaves that were strong enough to send a few people flying away, and a number of people were injured because of this as well.

It was a dark fight indeed.

The Garrison clan compound had completely collapsed.

All the surrounding trees were destroyed and even the two stone lions at the entrance had exploded without anybody's realization.

Nobody had ever witnessed such an earth-shattering battle before.

After all, both of them were practically invincible, having defeated thousands of soldiers on the battlefield.

In terms of fighting prowess, they were of the ultimate class at the very least.

Hence, this was definitely the battle of the century.

Asura gave it his all in this battle, vividly displaying every inch of his cruel and ruthless side.

Having singlehandedly killed more than eight thousand people belonging to a terrifying organization from the Western Dark World, Asura was carnage personified!

However, this was Levi he was battling with.

“Terrific! This is absolutely marvelous!”

Everyone could not help but sing their praises.

Pfft!

However, something unforeseen had happened. Levi suddenly fell backward and fresh blood was spurting out of his mouth.

Seizing the opportunity, Winsor did not give him any breathing room and went all out.

The combat resumed.

Pfft!

Levi was sent flying across the air once again.

As he lay on the ground, Levi could feel his head spinning. The Blood King Palace’s ultimate poison was way too powerful.

In fact, it was definitely fatal!

Before this, Levi was still holding on firmly.

However, after the rigorous battle with Winsor, he could no longer suppress the poison.

He had always known that Asura was very strong, and from that battle, he could gauge his powers.

Strong!

He was incredibly, terrifyingly strong!

However, Levi had his own way to defeat him!

Despite being poisoned, as long as Levi channeled all of his energy into that one strike, Winsor will definitely lose!

At this moment, two voices appeared in his mind.

One said, Levi, you cannot lose, you must give it your all to defeat Winsor!

The other voice said, Put everything down and be with your wife and daughter.

The two voices were interweaving in his mind.

Levi had owed Zoey way too much over all these years.

He really wanted to give up his identity as God of War. All he wanted to do was to be a commoner who could spend quality time with his family.

Previously, when Asura helped to protect Zoey and her parents, Levi really wanted to vacate his position as God of War.

However, the more he thought about it, it did not feel right to him.

The entire Erudia acknowledged him and his position.

While Winsor was welcomed to take over, he had to defeat Levi first!

The latter was the God of War, and in the face of every challenge, he would definitely give it his all and never give up!

He could not throw the game, and he definitely could not be defeated!

Bang!

At this moment, Levi's energy suddenly elevated rapidly, as if he was an awakened beast.

His frightening aura made everyone's blood run cold.

Suddenly, everyone felt like they were short of breath and found it hard to even breathe.

Terrifying!

This was simply too terrifying!

Is this the Levi Garrison who had fought off one hundred thousand soldiers all by himself?

White Tiger and the rest were excited as the undefeatable devil from the battlefield emerged in their vision once again.

It was indeed extremely frightening!

Winsor's face changed.

He could feel fear now that Levi had levelled up.

All smiles disappeared from his disciple Zar's face.

They had just assumed that they were about to win this.

The spies were dumbfounded as they witnessed everything from the dark corners.

Was Levi that strong?

Even that did not kill him, and he could still fight?

From the looks of it, he might even defeat Asura?

Where were his limits?

No!

Levi must not be allowed to live, and definitely not allowed to win!

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1194

“Did you really think you hide so well that no one has seen you?”

Suddenly, the spies heard a frosty voice next to them.

Specters appeared all around them.

It was the Specter Army!

“Kill!”

.....

Immediately, the spies were all killed.

There was no longer anyone doing secret sabotage.

Levi could now fight fair and square with Winsor.

“Alright, you have finally revealed your true powers!”

Winsor shouted with glee.

His powers were being elevated continuously as well.

The Garrison clan ancestral compound was submerged by an overwhelming force of strength.

Everyone could feel the great pressure exuded from the battle.

“Come on, fight!!!”

Levi’s eyes turned red.

The Iron Brigade’s motto was to charge, even to the point of death!

The two of them battled once again.

Their movements were so swift, no one could see anything clearly.

With their combined detrimental strength, their aura assaulted the surroundings again and again.

The Garrison compound was no longer as it was, and all of the buildings were already destroyed.

“Is this power of the Ultimate class warrior? Absolutely frightful!”

Everyone held their breaths.

“The end!”

Enduring the spread of the toxins, Levi gathered all of his strength and delivered a powerful blow.

Asura would probably be defeated by this strike even if he had ultimate powers.

However, at this very moment, the strangest thing happened.

Levi actually failed right when he was close to fully recharge his powers.

It was so close as he was just one step away.

Bang!

Asura landed a deafening punch on Levi.

Thud!

Levi's body was sent flying.

He was hurled one hundred meters away and crashed violently onto the ground.

After landing, Levi was in utter disbelief.

Was there someone secretly targeting him?

When he was battling with Asura, he could feel invisible energy forces pressurizing him from all directions.

It was at this very moment that Asura was able to defeat Levi with the most fatal strike of them all!

Seems like somebody does not want me to be the God of War...

It could not be from overseas...

It is too difficult for an elite fighter from overseas to burrow their way in here without being spotted almost immediately.

Therefore, it has to be someone from Erudia!

There is someone here at Erudia who does not want me to continue being the God of War!

Who is that?

Who could that be?

It could not be Asura.

Even though this guy is ruthless and cruel, he will definitely not use cheap tricks like these.

If he knew I was poisoned, he would definitely not fight with me.

He would want to win me fair and square.

Levi's mind spun madly and he quickly came to the conclusion that the person that had just attacked him must be from Erudia.

In fact, that person might be lying in ambush amidst the Oakland City's families.

Oh?

All these years, he had always been battling at the borders and had never offended anyone at Erudia.

Does somebody see me as a threat?

So much that they want to kill me and get me off the position as God of War?

At this moment, Levi stood up once again.

Not noticing that something was off, Asura continued fighting him.

Pfft!

Soon, Levi was flung across the air again.

Pfft!

He got up again only to be sent flying once again.

.....

After a few more times, Levi lay motionless on the ground.

Fresh blood kept flowing nonstop from his mouth.

Finally, he could no longer suppress the poison.

The toxins had spread and had begun to encroach his body.

On top of the injuries from Asura and the secret fighter, he could not take it anymore.

By now, a little child with a knife could finish him off, let alone Asura.

“Y-you...you won...”

Levi felt that his head was becoming heavier.

Bang!

His head slammed against the floor forcefully and he lost all movement.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1195

Silence!

Extreme silence!

One could hear a pin drop.

Everyone was petrified when Levi had no more movement.

This included Asura, who was rooted to the ground.

Cough...

For a full thirty seconds, Asura trembled violently while spurting out fresh blood from his mouth.

This brought everyone back to reality.

In this fight, even though Levi was down, Winsor had also paid a painful price.

He was seriously injured as well.

Levi, who was ambushed repeatedly and poisoned, could still cause such injuries to Asura.

How powerful would he be had he been well?

However, the truth was before them...

Someone did not want to see Levi alive, or rather, did not want him to continue being the God of War.

The legend was defeated in a despicable way!

He did not actually lose!

He was being schemed!

Bang!

Thud!

Each and every one of Levi's closest guards fell on their knees in disbelief of all that was happening before their eyes.

Azure Dragon and a few others rushed to check on Levi's condition.

"I won!"

"I, Winsor Campbell, have defeated the God of War Levi Garrison!"

"That title should've belonged to me long ago! Now, I've won it with my bare hands!"

Winsor screamed and howled maniacally.

This was his glorious moment, or rather, this was the peak of his life!

Not only him, the entire Erudia and all of the ancient families witnessed the fall of Levi!

Winsor was stronger than Levi!

Everyone was more concerned with the outcome rather than the process, and they did not care if Levi had been poisoned, injured, or ambushed.

All they saw was that Levi was defeated...

“Asura Trio...”

“Zar congratulates the God of War on your victory!”

“Asura! Asura! Asura!” The Bolgun yelled.

“God of War, Asura!”

Asura’s guards all fell to their knees and cheered out loud.

“Asura is undefeatable!”

“Asura is Invincible!”

.....

“Hahaha, no longer Asura. He should be addressed as the God of War!”

“Levi has mentioned that if he loses, he will vacate the position!”

Zar said.

“We congratulate the new God of War. May you protect Erudia!”

.....

At this moment, up to one hundred families at Oakland City, including even the Garrisons, Garcias, and the Lehmans, all knelt before Winsor and cheered loudly together.

Winsor waved and said, "Alright, from now on, I am the new God of War!"

"Hahaha..."

He had waited too long for this day to arrive.

Somewhere at Erudia.

A few people were having tea.

"Sir, under our forcible interference, Levi lost and is probably dead by now!"

Someone suddenly reported.

"Alright! Hahaha...he is finally defeated!"

A middle-aged man laughed heartily.

This was the same at various places overseas.

Tenichi, Wheldrake, and Atlantis all received the news of Levi's defeat and even of his death.

It seemed like many places were cheering for joy.

The terrifying force that had suppressed them for years was finally conquered.

This called for a universal celebration!

The amount of hatred for Levi had now turned into joy.

In front of the Garrison family compound.

Zoey and Emma made a dash for Levi.

"Boss..."

"Levi..."

“My son...”

Everyone was cheering.

They shook him a few times but he still did not wake up.

In fact, his body had stiffened and become icy cold.

Zoey put her fingers tentatively in front of his nostrils...

“There is no breath...”

Zoey was shocked beyond madness.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1196

“Darling!!!”

Zoey wailed from the bottom of her soul.

Forlevia began crying out loud as well.

“Wahhhh.....”

Emma could not handle it and passed out immediately.

Azure Dragon, Kirin and the rest also lost their minds.

“Boss!!!”

Levi’s subordinates all roared maniacally.

They began using various ways to wake Levi up, but to no avail. The cruel reality hit them.

There was simply no breath left in Levi...

This was a fact that nobody was willing to accept...

It looked like Levi was dead.

The Calvary Regiment was not calm.

The Specter Army lost their composure.

The Ruby, Emerald, Sapphire, and Topaz Armies could no longer hold themselves together.

Levi had presented himself in front of the Garrison family this day to identify himself. Who would have thought that someone who lorded over Oakland City would come to such an ending?

Not only was he defeated, but he was also dead...

This was something his family was unable to accept no matter what...

Even Asura felt a little curious...

He had noticed that something was off earlier, but he could not point his finger at it.

He did not think too much about it.

The man had always felt that he was stronger than Levi.

Now that he was so seriously injured, it would not be abnormal for Levi to be dead.

“No! Boss, you definitely cannot die!!!”

“I will get Fredrick and the rest to come back immediately!”

Behaving like he had gone mad, White Tiger scrambled to get up.

“Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Specter Army, Dragon Warriors, Cavalry Regiment, Ruby, Emerald, Sapphire, and Topaz Armies – prepare to receive your command!”

“As the God of War, I command you! From now onwards, leave here with me without dissent! Military action will be taken against those who violate my orders!”

Winsor suddenly gave his command.

Based on his cruel and heartless character, he would not care about Levi’s life nor death.

In his eyes, Levi was merely a loser.

Losers did not deserve to live!

There was only one chance!

To him, there was no such thing as a revival!

Therefore, when he saw that Azure Dragon and the rest still wanted to struggle, he immediately gave the command.

However, Levi's guards all ignored him.

"I'll say it once again! As God of War, I command you to leave with me immediately! You will suffer terrible consequences should I be angered!"

Asura roared furiously.

"Who is afraid of you? Come on, I'll fight you!"

White Tiger could not hold back anymore and roared while he charged towards Asura.

"Seeking death, aren't you? White Tiger, you are violating rank protocol here!"

Zar, Bolgun, and Talon were all glaring ferociously at White Tiger.

"Winsor Campbell, I am not afraid of you!"

White Tiger's eyes were filled with intention to fight.

Snap! Snap! Snap!

The Cavalry Regiment, Specter Army and the rest were all staring at Asura in a uniformed manner.

"Are you all not defying the commands of the God of War?"

Asura laughed.

This sparked off a tensed atmosphere immediately.

At this very moment, Azure Dragon, who had been laying down next to Levi, suddenly stood up and roared, "We shall obey! He is the new God of War, and we should obey his commands!"

Azure Dragon's words carried a lot of weight among the group, so the moment he spoke, everyone immediately stopped.

"I refuse!"

White Tiger remained stubborn.

Azure Dragon then murmured in his ears.

His face immediately changed.

Then, he looked down and nodded. "I, White Tiger, am willing to obey the commands. Everyone, listen to Azure Dragon and leave together with the new God of War!"

Even though everyone was extremely unwilling to do so, they still obeyed the commands.

Winsor could not be bothered with that and merely laughed. "Alright, come with me!"

He brought everyone away immediately.

Levi was left there, barely breathing.

Zoey was crying so hard she almost fainted.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1197

Dale and Edwin tested for Levi's breathing, and the former had to tell Zoey the truth that she was forced to accept...

"Child, he is no longer here!"

Bang!

That moment, Zoey felt like her head was about to explode.

She could not find it within herself to accept it!

Right before this, Levi had given her the perfect explanation.

He had let her know that her man lorded over the entire world.

The next moment, something like this happened.

"Hahahaha..."

The Garrisons were overjoyed.

Olivia laughed out loud, "Retribution, this is retribution!"

"Emma, my son is dead, and your son can forget about living too!"

Both the Garrisons and the Garcias were cheering.

Earlier, Levi had even punished them into kneeling for three days and nights. Who would have thought that he would cease to exist the very next moment?

“There is retribution and the heaven is watching!”

Kenny laughed out loud.

Zed too, sneered, “Levi, your end awfully, didn’t you? After you lost, not only did you lose your position as the God of War, but all of your henchmen also left and you even died! Hahaha...”

Pondering, everyone lost in thought. Indeed, Levi ended tragically.

Now, even the smaller families were bullying him.

More frighteningly, Winsor had sent Azure Dragon and the rest to the borders to defend the nation. They were not allowed to return to Erudia within the next ten years.

This was how Winsor cut off their ties with Levi.

However, this was an order and everyone had to accept it.

On top of that, Winsor had also instructed that Fredrick was not allowed to attend to Levi’s injuries.

The military doctor was stuck as well.

This was how Winsor denied Levi any chance of survival.

His motto was that losers had to die.

To Zoey and the few of them, it had been an emotional roller coaster of a day.

If not for the Lehman family protecting her, she would have to suffer as well.

“Is Levi really dead?”

Someone asked.

"It's not possible for him to be alive! There is not enough time to save him right now!"

However, Zoey refused to believe it and still insisted on sending Levi to the hospital.

In the meantime, nobody noticed several people slipping away quietly.

They did not attract anyone's attention with their existence nor departures.

It was as if they were specters...

Clearly, they were the ones lying in ambush!

They waited long enough to confirm Levi's death.

The news that Winsor was now the God of War flew through Erudia and swiftly spread across the entire world.

It was as if the world had experienced a huge explosion.

What happened to the God of War?

He actually lost?

That's the one and only God of War!

However, this just showed that Winsor was stronger!

Only the most invincible one was worthy of this title.

After Zoey sent Levi to the hospital, Benny immediately made his way there to treat him upon receiving the news.

Outside the emergency room.

Zoey and the rest were waiting anxiously.

"Zoey, Levi had no more breath left in him. It is impossible for him to still be alive!"

“Even if Benny Quinton himself comes to heal him, there is no way he could live!”

...

Dale said cruelly.

After all, both Levi and Winsor were no ordinary men. Their battle was beyond anyone’s wildest imagination.

Levi was practically dead earlier.

There was no way that he could still be alive!

“No, as long as there is hope, I will continue to wait!”

Zoey looked determined.

Time passed and soon, it had been over a dozen of hours.

The red light outside the emergency room was still on.

Desperation filled Zoey.

“No, no, no...”

She kept muttering.

Slam!

The door to the emergency room suddenly swung open.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1198

Benny walked out with exhaustion written all over his face.

Zoey and Emma, who had just woken up, rushed to him instantly.

“Mr. Quinton, how is he?”

The two of them asked hurriedly.

Benny tugged at his mask and gave them a deep bow. “I am sorry, I tried my best. He still did not wake up.”

Bang!

This piece of news was completely distressing to Zoey and Emma.

Both of them fell to the ground immediately.

“However, he is not dead!”

Benny’s words made everyone regain hope.

“What? Not dead? That means there is still hope for him to wake up?”

Zoey wiped her tears away and rays of light shone from her eyes.

“Yes, he is not dead! I have never seen such will and determination in a person! That’s how he is staying alive!”

Benny recalled, "I remember him telling me that as an Erudian warrior, he needs to keep fighting till the very end. He is probably surviving with this iron-strong will of his!"

"When will he be able to wake up?"

Zoey was very worried.

"There is no certainty! Based on the statistics, there is a ninety-nine percent chance that he will not wake up, with only one percent chance that he will! We don't know when that will happen. It could be a few years, or it could be decades..."

Benny told them the cruel truth.

"What???"

Zoey did not expect the situation to be so serious, and for hope to be so elusive!

"Don't you have any other way, Mr. Quinton?"

Emma cried.

"No. Right now, it's all up to his good luck..."

Benny seemed like he did not want to see this happening as well.

Zoey was very determined. "No, it's alright as long as there is still hope! I believe that Levi will not just abandon us like this. He will definitely wake up!"

"Zoey, we would advise you to give up. He is as good as dead!"

Dale advised her.

He really did not wish for his god-daughter to waste so much time on a person in a vegetative state.

"No, my child and I must wait for him to wake up!"

Zoey was very determined.

Soon, the news that Levi had fallen into a vegetative state spread like wildfire.

The former God of War had met with such a tragic ending, and only had one percent chance of waking up...

His position was usurped and his people were transferred away, while he fell into a vegetative state.

It was a shuddering ending...

“Oh, not completely dead? There is still a chance for him to wake up?”

“His will to live is really strong!”

Winsor was very surprised to hear this piece of news.

With that, he snorted. “He is just a loser. What has his life or death got to do with me?”

“Levi still has a chance to wake up? No, he must be completely dead!”

There were voices and murmurs like these in Erudia and the rest of the world.

They had paid a huge price for Levi to end up this way.

And he was actually not completely dead yet?

How could everyone be relaxed about it?

Despite being in a coma state, he was still a potential threat.

They would only feel at ease after they see Levi’s corpse.

“Send out my command. Dispatch the elite fighter to check on Levi’s condition! No, whether he is alive or dead, kill!!!”

“Winsor won’t care about his life. Now that all of Levi’s people have been transferred away, we can do whatever we want!”

.....

Similar commands came from all over the world.

One by one, elite fighters appeared at Oakland City.

The solitary and helpless Levi was about to face a huge impending danger...

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1199

Levi topped the international hit list, and the bounty did not change at all.

Even though their target was a man in a vegetative state, the assassins would receive the same amount of bounty reward.

This drove all the assassins and fighters crazy, and they were all determined to kill off Levi.

On the other hand, this also showed how everyone was incredibly fearful of Levi.

Even though he was in a vegetative state, people still offered a large bounty for his life.

After Levi got into trouble, many people continued adding more insult to his injury.

The worst were the Garrisons and the Garcias who resumed their mockery.

Especially Conrad, who swore to take revenge.

However, they were all suppressed by the Lehman family. Otherwise, Levi would be in extreme danger.

The only person who did not change her attitude towards Levi was Tiffany.

Despite her family's disapproval, she went to visit him.

Of course, Abigail appeared as well after she heard the news.

Even Iris came from afar.

They were considered the few who remained by Levi's side after he was down and out.

Troubled, Tiffany said, "I heard that there are people targeting Mr. Garrison! There are many assassins who are on their way, as they are promised a huge bounty as long as they manage to kill him!"

Zoey knew about this and had experienced all of these before.

Her pictures from the last time were what triggered the incident later.

She understood the vicious hatred those overseas enemies harbored for Levi.

However, Levi was on his own solitary self-right now. No, he could not even wake up.

Who could possibly deal with the assassins?

The Lehman family?

Impossible!

The enemies were so much stronger than the Lehman family....

The only person who could solve this problem was Winsor.

However, nobody knew where he was.

She could not think of anyone else now...

Before this, Levi was in his heyday. Who would have thought that this was his ending?

Despair!

Extreme despair!

"I'll think of a way to secure Mr. Garrison's safety!"

Finished speaking, Tiffany left the hospital.

She was their biggest hope now.

At the other side.

The Lopez and Black families who were far away in the South also received the news that Levi had fallen into a vegetative state at Oakland City after being attacked by the 'Garrison clan'.

Even though they heard about this farce at the Garrisons' residence, they didn't know the exact details. It was kept confidential as it involved a battle for the position of the God of War.

Therefore, everyone had access only to all sorts of rumors and gossip.

Only very few of them knew about Levi's previous identity.

What the Lopez and Black families heard was that Levi went to the Garrison family and was attacked, leading to his current vegetative state.

"Explanation? That's an explanation?"

"Was there something wrong with his brain? How dare he challenge the Garrison clan?"

"Hahaha....serves him right now that he is a vegetable!"

The Lopez and Black families insulted him continuously.

When the South Hamptons families heard about it, they were extremely excited.

Finally, they did not need to be suppressed by Levi any longer.

After all, it was hardly comfortable to be constantly suppressed.

Very soon, innumerable elite fighters were lurking around the hospital Levi was in.

He was truly a threat to everyone!

Every single breath he took was a nightmare.

This was something that Winsor did not expect at all.

No matter what, Levi's threat was larger than Winsor's, despite the latter's victory!

Before Zoey and Tiffany could come up with any countermeasures, the overseas elite fighters had already arrived.

Everyone was simply moving too quickly.

Some were not even from overseas. The ones that arrived the soonest were the elite fighters from Erudia itself.

There was someone here who did not want Levi to stay alive.

In the hospital's ICU.

The nurses had just left after completing Levi's intravenous infusion.

Zoey was due to return in five minutes.

At this moment, three figures slipped surreptitiously into the room.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1200

They were not in a hurry to take action and were just there to observe Levi.

"I just want to see if Levi has really become a vegetable?"

This was definitely an Erudian who was speaking.

They observed for a full minute before exchanging shocked glances while exclaiming, "It's true!"

"There is no way he can wake up after being poisoned by the Blood King Palace! It doesn't matter anymore whether he's alive or dead!"

One of them said.

"No, don't you remember that we have a mission? Even if he were dead, we'd still have to kill him once again!"

"Yes, our objective is very simple. Since Mr. Finch wants Levi's head, we will cut off his head and hang it at the highest spot we can find, so that the whole world can see that he is dead!"

Swoosh!

With a flip of his wrist, the other person drew out a sharp knife that shone brightly with an icy gleam.

The assassin aimed the sharp knife at Levi's neck. With one slice, his head would definitely be separated from his body.

Even though the blade is pressing against Levi's skin, he was still lying motionlessly.

"Die!"

That man growled.

At that split second...

Clang!

That knife actually landed on a hard object.

Whoosh!

At the very next moment, the three of them saw Levi's eyes flew open.

His glare was razor sharp and icy cold.

It was the ring on his finger that had prevented that knife.

Bang!

Levi suddenly got up. With one shove, the knife turned around to stab the other person instead.

Bang!

He immediately sprang out of bed and slammed the other two persons' heads together violently.

Even till the point of their deaths, the three of them could not understand how Levi had woken up.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

At the same time, his window suddenly exploded and his room door was forcibly opened.

Every single one of the assassins and fighters rushed into the room and charged towards Levi.

They were just one step behind these three elite fighters from Erudia.

The next moment, the two opposing parties were locked in battle in that tiny ward.

Bloody arrows were shot across the rooms while continuous howls and growls were heard.

The intensive care unit seemed to be so isolated from the other places in the hospital that nobody knew what was going on despite all the action and noise from the inside.

Nobody knew where Zoey was as well...

On his own, Levi faced and slashed his way through hundreds of assassins.

In the end, all of them were defeated.

Levi squeezed out every ounce of his strength and finally fell down.

This time, he had really used up all his strength.

The man had actually saved up some of his strength during his fight with Winsor.

He could have won that battle.

It was because he wanted to see who from Erudia wanted him dead that he did this.

White Tiger and Azure Dragon left because Levi had secretly given the latter a signal.

Otherwise, based on White Tiger's character, he would have fought with Winsor until the very end.

Therefore, Levi took advantage of his 'death' to deceive everyone, including even Benny.

The doctor really thought that Levi had fallen into a vegetative state, hence he declared so.

Thanked to Benny, Levi used this as a bait to entice his potential killers.

Mr. Finch?

Just now, the three fighters from Erudia had mentioned this name.

Who was he?

Even though Levi was the God of War, he did not know much about the prominent figures in Erudia.

After all, he had been at the borders all this time.

However, it was useless knowledge anyway, as he was about to die.

“Pfft!”

.....

Levi could not stop coughing up blood.

He had completely exhausted that very last breath he had been saving up.

After all, he just killed a few hundred elite fighters a moment ago...

He really fought hard until the very last moment.

The man could do no more.

Right now, he could feel life flowing out of him...

He was losing his consciousness, and could even feel his soul leaving his body...

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1201

Levi had a really long dream.

It was as if he had relived all twenty over years of his life in his dream.

Things were starting to get blurry as he was about to die, but he couldn't afford to just yet.

Zoey... My family and friends... Erudia... C'mon! Wake up! I have to live on! I can't just die like this! I still haven't found out who Mr. Finch is!

"Dad..."

Levi heard a faint voice shouting in his ear.

He slowly opened his eyes and saw a chubby little face next to his.

"Dad's awake!" Forlevia shouted.

"Evie..."

Levi wanted to hug Forlevia, but realized he couldn't move his body.

Despite trying his hardest, all he could move were his eyes.

Levi was dumbstruck.

His entire body had been paralyzed by the poison from Blood King Palace.

It completely disabled his acupoints, corroded his muscle tissue, and severely damaged his internal organs.

That, in combination with his continuous combat had left him completely disabled.

Though he had his limbs broken eight years ago, this was a lot worse. The man couldn't move at all.

Fortunately, he had regained consciousness, much to everyone's relief.

"It's a miracle! This is definitely going down in history as one of the most miraculous events in medicine!" Benny shouted excitedly.

It's definitely a miracle for Levi to regain consciousness under such circumstances! Of course, it didn't come without a huge price, but still...

Fredrick too, played a part in Levi's recovery.

He ignored Winsor's orders and came to see Levi, so Winsor fired him on the spot and imposed tons of restrictions on him as a result.

Even so, Fredrick didn't care and worked with Benny to treat Levi and help him regain consciousness.

"Mr. Quinton, how is my husband doing?" Zoey asked.

Benny looked at her hesitantly.

"Just go ahead and tell them the truth, Mr. Quinton. I know for a fact that I'm disabled!" Levi said.

Benny sighed. "Yeah, you're right... The God of War has become completely paralyzed and will be bedridden for the rest of his life. He can't even be sat on a wheelchair, and will need someone to take care of his basic necessities."

Fredrick sniffled. "All of his muscle tissues and acupoints have been disabled. The God of War will no longer be able to move at all!"

If only we could remove the Blood King Palace's poison from his body... I can't believe this is actually happening... The great Levi has now become disabled!

Thud!

Emma nearly fainted again from the shock.

Zoey was shocked to hear that too, but she quickly regained her composure. "All that matters is that Levi is awake! Don't worry, I'll look after him!"

At that point, him being alive was all that she could ask for.

Given her financial status, maintaining a life of comfort wouldn't be a problem at all.

Zoey held Levi's hands tightly, and he smiled back at her. "I guess my life is in your hands now, Zoey."

"Sure thing!"

Benny and Fredrick let out a sigh of relief when they saw how well the two were taking things.

In the end, the only things that matters are safety and happiness...

"The God of War of Erudia has become a cripple? What a joke! Hahaha..."

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1202

That incident became the biggest joke of the century as well as the disgrace of Erudia.

The God of War feared by every country had now been reduced to a bedridden cripple who couldn't even use a wheelchair.

Although it was a much greater form of humiliation than death, Levi being alive still posed a threat to some.

Levi had caused a huge scene after killing off hundreds of elites in his final battle, so assassinating him in Erudia would be impossible.

Winsor and the Dragonites were on high alert after the individuals and organizations exposed themselves during their attempt at assassinating Levi.

Ironically, Levi was actually safest now that he was crippled as the assassins would not risk exposing themselves again.

Of course, that was if he remained in Erudia.

Fredrick called out to Levi after having everyone else leave the room, "God of War..."

Levi cut him off, "I've already given up that position, so don't call me that anymore."

Fredrick frowned. "Fine, I'll call you Boss, but you'll always remain the God of War to me and all of your men! Boss, you don't actually have to give up your position. You could just tell everyone about you being poisoned! I'm sure Winsor wouldn't challenge you!"

Benny and I are the only ones who know about Levi being poisoned, and that he's only in this state because of it. Had he told them about his condition sooner, he could've kept his position as God of War and save himself from this humiliation!

"It's useless. They came for me specifically, so it was only a matter of time anyway. Besides, I'm tired of being the God of War. I want to spend some time with my family instead."

Levi was taking it rather well.

Fredrick let out a huge sigh.

Who would've thought that the undefeatable God of War would someday be reduced to a bedridden cripple...

After a few days of treatment, Levi and Zoey made plans for their return to North Hampton as that was their home.

Levi also convinced Fredrick to return to his family before leaving.

Zoey smiled in relief when they arrived home.

"Great! The family is reunited now!"

At the very least, Levi wouldn't suddenly go missing again like he did before...

Forlevia played with him in his arms while Zoey and Emma were cooking in the kitchen.

It was a heartwarming sight to behold.

Levi let out a smile as he experienced a feeling of relaxation like never before.

I suppose a quiet and peaceful life like this is pretty nice, after all.

The peace and quiet were soon interrupted when Aaron, Caitlyn, and Meredith came over.

"Zoey, what's the meaning of this? Are you seriously planning on looking after a cripple for the rest of your life?" Meredith shouted.

"You said he can't even move, so how is he going to be a good husband and father? He was already a huge burden even when he was in good health and things have only gotten worse now that he's crippled!" Robert yelled at her too.

They now had a legitimate reason to reprimand the two.

Aaron slammed his fist on the table. "I will not have my daughter spend the rest of her life taking care of a cripple! You guys wouldn't want Evie to have a cripple as a father either, right?"

Aaron's words had everyone speechless.

"Of course not! I could just hit him like this and he can't even do anything about it!"

Logan gave Levi a kick, who then winced from the pain.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1203

Logan burst out in laughter. "See? This poor b*stard can't even move a muscle! Even a dog would be a lot more useful than him!"

Jennie laughed as well. "Yeah! At least a dog would be able to watch the door or something! What can he do?"

Forlevia cried when she heard all the nasty things they said about her dad. "Don't you bully my dad!" She shouted while standing in front of Levi with her arms outstretched.

Emma was crying too.

I can't believe this is happening to my son... None of these people would dare say any of that if he were still fit and healthy...

Levi frowned and kept his eyes shut as he lay on the bed.

"That's enough!" Zoey shouted.

"Don't you dare talk about my husband like that! He is and always will be my hero, regardless of his physical condition! Evie and I will always take pride in his glory, even if it was only temporary!"

Levi fought valiantly for all of Erudia, and this is how they repay him after he got crippled as a result? I won't stand for this!

“Glory? What glory? And no, Morris Group doesn’t count!” Meredith asked.

“He’s...”

Zoey was about to tell them about his identity, but changed her mind at the last second.

No, that’s all in the past now. Telling them about it won’t do him any good. Heck, they’ll probably just mock him even more for it!

“He’s what, hmm? Go on, say it! He’s lesser than a dog if you ask me!” Logan sneered.

“Enough! It is what it is, and I have decided to look after Levi for the rest of my life! That’s all I have to say!”

Zoey was determined to stand her ground.

“Are you stupid or what? How could you be so reckless? Have you ever thought about the future? What would Evie tell her friends when only her mother attends her school’s parent-teacher conferences? Do you know how traumatic it will be for her? She’ll forever be humiliated by her friends for having a cripple as a father!”

“Yeah, that’s right! All other kids have their fathers to take them out on family trips while Evie’s can’t even get out of bed!”

“And it’s not just her! You and your godfather would also have to endure the ridicule and shame as a result!”

Aaron and the others lashed out at her.

Forlevia hugged Levi tightly and shook her head. “No! I wanna be with Dad, and no one’s gonna separate us!”

Meredith looked at Emma and said, “Emma, please tell me you haven’t lost your mind like these two have. Look at the state your son is in! Do you really want to ruin Zoey’s life like this? I would’ve left with him if I were you!”

The others chimed in as well. “Meredith is right! You shouldn’t be so selfish, Emma!”

“Your son is as good as dead! Why don’t you just set Zoey free?”

“Yeah! Just pack your stuff and go as far away as possible!”

They all ganged up and tried to get rid of Levi and Emma.

“Don’t you dare insult my mother!” Levi spoke up all of a sudden.

Everyone turned to look at him.

“So what if we’re insulting your mother? What are you gonna do about it, huh?”

Aaron and the others sneered.

“Get lost, Emma!”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1204

Boom!

There was a sudden burst of energy in the room which sent a chill down everyone’s spine.

All eyes were on Levi.

It’s Levi... He’s mad... I can’t believe he’s still capable of instilling fear in his current state...

“What are you doing?” Logan asked with a shudder.

“I’m gonna knock the teeth out of that big mouth of yours!” Levi shouted furiously.

However, despite struggling with all his might, he found himself unable to move a muscle.

“Get up, damn it!” Levi roared as he forced his body to its limits, only to roll off the bed and fall to the floor with a loud thud.

“Levi!” Zoey and Emma rushed over to his aid.

“Hahaha!”

Everyone laughed when they saw how pathetic Levi looked as he was sprawled out on the floor.

“Is that all you got? So much for hitting me!”

“How are you even going to protect your mother and child like this? I could hit them now, and you’d only be able to watch helplessly!”

Jennie and Logan laughed as they mocked him.

“You guys have gone too far!” Zoey yelled.

Logan chuckled and said, “I’m just showing you what’s gonna happen in the future, Zoey. You’re all fine now because we’re family, but what if you are up against his enemies, huh? Do you think that cripple can protect you? Even a dog could do a better job at that!”

What Logan said was horrible, but he does have a point... What if it were someone else that came today? What could Levi possibly do to protect us in his current state? He’d only be able to lie there and watch us get hurt!

“Come on, grandpa, grandma! Let’s go!” Russell urged the angry crowd to leave.

As much as they wanted to get rid of Levi and Emma, they didn’t dare do anything as Zoey had Dale to back her up.

After all, Dale respected Zoey’s decisions on the matter.

Both Emma and Zoey were in tears after carrying Levi back onto the bed.

Those guys were too much, and yet there's nothing we could do about it... None of this would've happened if Levi wasn't poisoned and crippled!

"Mom, Grandma, don't cry! I'm sure Dad will get better!" Forlevia said as she helped wipe their tears.

Levi took a deep breath. "Evie is right. Everything will be alright!"

"Yeah, we've gotta keep moving forward in life!" Zoey recomposed herself.

Ben, Winnie, Bryan, and Victoria of the Garrison family from North Hampton also came by later that day, much to their surprise.

"Hahaha, I can't believe this is what's left of the great Levi Garrison!"

"So much for being the God of War, eh? Look at you now!"

"Karma sure is a b*tch! Looks like I was right to break your legs eight years ago! This was all meant to be, after all!" Bryan burst into laughter.

"You've been thrown into prison with your limbs broken, and yet you somehow managed to get chosen? Man, you sure are something, Levi! Tell me, how did you get your legs treated back then?" Victoria added.

"Hahahaha... Did you encounter some miracle worker or something in prison?"

"Maybe we should send you back into prison so you can get yourself treated again!"

Levi was the one who ruined their lives, so the two of them took extreme pleasure in seeing him like this.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1205

"If even Benny couldn't treat him, I doubt anyone else can!" Ben sneered.

"Maybe prison is where he truly belongs!" Winnie said with a chuckle.

They were all so busy taunting Levi that none of them noticed the grin on his face.

"Don't worry, Levi, we're not here to hurt you. We just want to tell you that you should never push your luck, as you could fall from grace anytime! Your condition right now is a good example of that!"

"Yeah! Given that pathetic state you're in, even we can't bring ourselves to bully you right now!"

"He's right! There's no point in bullying someone who can't even fight back at all!"

"Hahahaha..."

With that, the members of the Garrison family laughed as they made their way out of the house.

More guests kept showing up one after another.

They were all former victims of Levi's wrath when he was in power, and had all come to mock him now that he was crippled.

Zoey could only console him. "Don't take it to heart, darling. These guys are just trying to pick a fight with you. With my godfather around, they won't dare do anything!"

They were fortunate enough to have Dale around, or Levi would've received more than just verbal insults.

Bang!

The door was suddenly kicked open, and dozens of men rushed into the room with Lucas taking the lead.

"So this is what's left of the great Levi Garrison, huh? I never thought I'd live to see the day I get to have my revenge!"

Lucas had been holding a grudge against Levi ever since he had him castrated back then, but he was powerless to do anything about it.

After a long wait for his chance at revenge, he had been presented with that opportunity.

"So, you can't even move a muscle, huh? Guess you can only watch helplessly as I hurt your mother, wife, and daughter!" Lucas shouted maniacally.

Clomp! Clomp! Clomp!

A few bodyguards stepped forward.

"Make a move, I dare you!" Sylas said.

She had stayed by Levi's side ever since his downfall.

"Do you think you can stop us? What a joke! I came here to get my revenge on Levi, and I don't give a damn who's backing him up!" Lucas cackled like a madman.

Sylas was starting to panic. Those guys are elite fighters... I'm no match for them alone, and it's too late to call for backup now! Lucas is obviously here for blood, and not even the Grand Master can stop him!

"You guys, take her out! The rest of you, bring me Levi's limbs! Oh, and I want him castrated too!" Lucas ordered.

His men sprang into action, and Sylas was soon overpowered.

“Hahaha! How does it feels like to be in such despair, Levi?”

Lucas had a smug grin on his face.

“Do it!”

His men were about to make their move when a cold voice was heard from behind.

“I don’t think so!”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1206

They turned around and saw a figure clad in a black hood that covered the face.

Levi chuckled at the sight of that.

He didn't expect that the person coming to his aid was his former enemy, Hades.

Hades was wounded once, and Levi had his men tend to his injuries. However, he disappeared after he was fully healed.

Bam! Bam! Bam!

Despite L Nation being a small country, Hades was still a formidable fighter and dispatched all of Lucas's men in less than a minute.

"Thank you so much..."

Zoey and the others thanked him profusely.

"I've always respected the strong, and the God of War is the one I respect the most! From now on, I will protect him with my life!" Hades said with a determined look on his face.

Levi simply stared at him in silence.

Sylas let out a sigh.

Man, that must really suck for Levi! I mean, having to rely on Hades to protect him? Talk about a huge blow to his ego!

There were a lot fewer troublemakers dropping by now that everyone knew Hades was dead set on protecting Levi, but things weren't that peaceful in the other countries.

Winsor had eliminated dozens of criminal organizations within just one week after being the new God of War.

He was doing so in order to establish his dominance overseas and instill fear in everyone's hearts.

Being a violent person in nature, he was determined to prove himself stronger than Levi.

His method was very effective, and even Tenichi found him to be quite a headache.

With Levi out of the picture, Winsor soon built up a solid reputation for himself in Erudia.

Those who used to support Levi had gravitated towards Winsor as they only recognized him as the current God of War.

Not only did they practically forget about Levi, but they were also criticizing him for his downfall.

"The previous God of War was simply too conservative! That's why he lost and fell!"

"Look at how powerful the new God of War is! He took the initiative, and now our enemies are cowering in fear!"

"That's right! If only Winsor had taken over the position sooner... Erudia would probably be several times more powerful than it is now!"

"I know right? It's all Levi's fault! Winsor is the best God of War ever!"

Levi simply smiled as he heard what they said.

It's hard to find people who would stay by your side unconditionally when you're down in the dumps. Right now, Hades and Benny are the only ones apart from my mother, wife, and daughter.

"While you were staking your life on the frontlines, those you protected were enjoying themselves in the back. They pretended to support you during your glory days, and left you

the moment you fall from power! In fact, it is them who are most likely to stab you in the back now! Some people simply aren't worthy of your protection!" Zoey said with a wry smile.

Benny came over to give him a follow-up examination two weeks later, but the results were disappointing.

Levi's condition showed no signs of improvement, and his fate of being bedridden for life seemed to be sealed.

What an unfortunate guy...

Benny let out a sigh as he looked at Levi.

He was about to leave when Winsor's disciple, Zar, showed up at the door.

Levi chuckled.

It's never good news if Zar is here! Something big must've happened...

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1207

Zar glanced at Levi, and hesitated when he saw Zoey and the others.

"It's okay, they can hear whatever you have to say. What is it, Zar?" Levi said.

After everything that has happened, I'm sure Zoey should be able to handle anything that comes our way.

Zar had a stern look on his face as he spoke, "There are two reasons for my visit today, first being to retrieve the Paragon Seal of Honor which you should've handed over a long time ago."

Zar glared at Levi coldly.

Winsor may be the new God of War, but the Paragon Seal of Honor is still in Levi's possession. That seal is the symbol of the God of War, and only those who carry it are worthy of commanding the Iron Brigade!

Levi nodded. "No problem, I'll hand the seal over later. Now, what's the second reason?"

A huge wave of energy surged through Zar's body, filling the entire room with his murderous intent.

"Levi Garrison, do you admit to your crimes?" Zar shouted, frightening Zoey and the others with his sudden outburst.

What's going on here?

Levi narrowed his eyes and returned the cold stare. "And what crimes would I be admitting to?"

"Treason!" Zar yelled angrily.

"What? Treason?"

Zoey and Sylas were dumbfounded.

Knowing Levi, there's no way he'd do such a thing! He would rather die than betray his country!

"That's impossible..."

"Y-Yeah, that's definitely impossible..."

Everyone began to panic, but Levi shushed them and signaled them to calm down.

"And how have I committed treason?" Levi looked at him curiously.

"You've wiped out the Blood King Palace completely five years ago, right? No surviving minions?"

Levi nodded, as he had indeed killed off every single one of them back then.

"Then how would you explain the sudden revival of the Blood King Palace last year?"

Zar kept his sharp gaze fixated on Levi.

"I..."

Levi was unable to come up with an explanation as even he didn't know the answer to that question.

The Blood King Palace had mysteriously returned, and they were much stronger than before.

"Oh, you don't know? Well, we do! It's all because of you! You're in cahoots with the Blood King Palace, and you've been betraying Erudia this entire time! You didn't wipe out the Blood King Palace back then, did you? You made everyone think that they were gone, but they've actually been secretly growing in power! That's why they're so much stronger now! We have solid evidence of your conspiracy with the Blood King Palace, Levi!"

Levi let out a chuckle when he heard what Zar said.

I knew they are gonna bring up the Blood King Palace... It's the perfect crime to frame me for because I have no way of proving my innocence!

"I bet you wouldn't even attack them if it weren't for the Dragonites ordering the strike, huh?" Zar sneered. "Levi Garrison, your acts of treason by conspiring with the Blood King Palace have led to huge losses in many organizations. What do you have to say for yourself?"

Levi refused to say anything further as he knew it was a pointless struggle.

Someone had set him up, so accepting the punishment was his only option.

"What will my punishment be?" Levi asked with a smile.

"In view of your past contributions, you will be spared the death penalty. Instead, you are banished from Erudia from this moment on! You have three days to leave the country or you will be forcibly deported!" Zar said coldly.

Those words hit Zoey like a sledgehammer.

They framed Levi just so they could banish him from Erudia? How could they do such a cruel thing? This is simply unacceptable!

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1208

This is obviously a set-up! A conspiracy with the sole purpose of driving Levi out of Erudia so he would be vulnerable to assassinations!

Zoey smiled wryly at the thought of that.

"My husband is a magnanimous man who has dedicated his life to the protection of the country and its people, and yet this is how they repay his deeds? Destroying his reputation with a false accusation and banishing him from the very country he protected? What a joke! Hahahaha..."

Zoey burst out into a sad and bitter laughter.

So this is how it will end for the God of War, huh? How tragic...

Zar sneered. "How is it a false accusation if we have solid evidence to prove it? The Blood King Palace is the most powerful criminal organization in the world guilty of practically every heinous crime in history! Anyone caught working with them is to be executed, and Levi is no exception! You should be thankful that Winsor took pity in him and decided to only banish him instead!"

Winsor was actually aware of the dangers Levi would face if he left Erudia, but he didn't find Levi worthy of his concern.

"I'm not here to seek your opinion on the matter, Levi. I'm simply here to inform you of the decision that's been made! Now, where's the seal?" Zar asked coldly.

"Give him the seal, Zoey."

Zoey did as told and handed Zar the Paragon Seal of Honor.

"Remember, you only have three days to leave the country or I'll kick you out myself!"

Soon, all of Erudia heard about Levi's conspiracy with the Blood King Palace, and the entire nation was in an uproar.

Everyone hurled abuse at Levi for being the biggest traitor in the country's recorded history.

Some of the people took matters into their own hands and found where Levi was currently residing.

They gathered outside the house and shouted at him.

"Erudia has no room for traitors!"

"Get out of here, you b*stard!"

Zoey was on the verge of breaking down when she heard the angry mob outside.

"What do we do, Levi? Are we going to just let them have their way? Is leaving Erudia really our only option?" She asked.

Sylas shook her head. "There's nothing else we can do right now."

"Sylas is right. Given how determined they are to get rid of me, I'd say resistance is futile."

Levi was rather calm and collected.

“So we’re just gonna leave, then?”

But... This is unfair! It’s so unfair!

“Yes, for the time being.”

“In that case, we’re going together!” Zoey said.

“No, you guys stay here. I’ll bring you guys over once I’ve settled down. You’ll be a lot safer here with the protection of the Lehman family.”

“But isn’t it dangerous for you to be out there all by yourself?” Zoey was very worried.

“There’s a very safe island that I can go to lay low. Given my current physical condition, I doubt they’d even deem me a threat worth killing. Besides, I’ve got Hades to protect me!”

After a lot of coaxing, Levi was able to persuade Zoey into staying behind.

“We’ll leave tomorrow!”

Again, word got out really fast about the God of War being banished from Erudia the next day.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1209

All his enemies from overseas took great pleasure in hearing that, especially those who were dying to get their revenge on him.

Tenichi and a group of men were gathered on an island.

“Levi Garrison... You’re finally being banished from Erudia, eh?” Tenichi smiled gleefully.

He was the one behind everything that had happened.

Levi remained a threat to all of his enemies overseas for as long as he was alive, and they wouldn't be able to rest until they got rid of him completely.

Winsor saw an opportunity when he discovered the "evidence" of Levi conspiring with the Blood King Palace, and he seized that opportunity immediately.

"Levi is going to leave Erudia tomorrow. We can make our move as soon as he steps out of the country's borders, and we wouldn't even have to be sneaky about it!" Tenichi sneered.

"You're right, sir! Mr. Finch will send us the route that Levi takes on his way out of the country soon!"

"Hahaha! He sure is great help in getting rid of Levi!"

Tenichi broke into a sinister grin.

"Make sure all preparations are complete! We must kill Levi as soon as he leaves Erudia!"

Ensuring that Levi was truly dead was the only way to ease their worries.

It was soon the next day.

"Don't worry, Levi! I've asked my godfather to have these elite fighters escort you to your destination! Just get us over there once you've settled down, okay?" Zoey said while pointing at the group of elite fighters from the Lehman family standing behind her.

She had really wanted to leave with him, but decided not to as she would only be a liability to him in the event of an attack.

"The Lehman family has also arranged for someone to receive you upon arrival, so everything will be fine!"

Zoey wiped her tears as she helped Levi into the car.

I'll head over there with Evie once he's settled down!

"Mom, Zoey... Don't worry, I'll be back soon! Take good care of Evie for me!" Levi said with a smile.

Zar had come over to supervise him. "You're never coming back here, Levi! Don't even dream about it!"

"If that's the case, we'll just spend the rest of our lives overseas. Either way works fine for us!"

Emma and Zoey broke down in tears.

"The God of War is innocent!" Sylas shouted.

Zar chuckled and pointed at Hades. "Funny how you say that when you have Hades of L Nation protecting Levi on this trip! It's obvious that Levi has been conspiring against Erudia with these foreigners!"

"You..."

Both Hades and Sylas were speechless with anger upon hearing that.

"That's enough, you guys!" Levi shouted.

Even Hades has become evidence of my treachery...

With that, Levi began heading North towards the borders of Erudia.

After a lengthy drive, they arrived at the border and were greeted by a cold and barren wasteland.

Zar had personally escorted them to the border. "This is as far as I'll go, Levi. You're on your own from here. Once you step past that border, you're no longer allowed to set foot in Erudia!"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1210

It was a day of desolation and grief.

The time had finally come for Erudia's God of War to be exiled.

Levi smirked. "Tell Winsor Campbell to watch his back. He'd better work hard to fulfill his duties to Erudia. If he proves to be unworthy of that seal, I'll be back to pull him off his throne!"

Zar broke into laughter. "You? Of all people?"

"Look who's blabbering. Nothing more than a mere loser defeated in the hands of my Master, just like every other opponent... Just hurry up and get your ass out of here!"

Zar thought what he had just heard must have been the world's biggest joke ever.

You're barely even a worthy opponent for Master even in your prime.

How dare you even speak of bringing him down now that you're crippled?

That's just impossible!

Levi retained his smile. He signaled for the fleet to carry on.

"Hold it right there!"

A loud voice hollered from above. A few jets were descending from the sky in an enormous roar.

Those private jets were recognizable. Just as they landed in a piercing screech, all the airstairs were pulled out in a simultaneous beat. A handful of men descended onto the ground in swift but almost unison steps.

One of them was seated in a wheelchair pushed by another man.

It was none other than Tyrone Garrison.

A few men followed closely behind as he approached closer and stopped in front of the troop escorting Levi.

“Levi Garrison! To think that this day would befall you! Where’s all that glamorous air of authority you once had?”

Tyrone bellowed with laughter.

“I’ll soon be able to stand on my feet, but look at you – bedridden for the rest of your life! Or should I say... You probably won’t even have much time to lay crippled in bed like this! The moment you land a foot outside the border, there’ll be people coming for you right away!”

The rest of the Garrison clan laughed along. “It’s retribution indeed!”

Tyrone saw the Lehman family’s elite fighters behind Levi. He beckoned to them. “You guys over there!”

“Aren’t you all from the Lehman family? Here to accompany him on this trip? Forget it, just go home!” He chided.

“No. We shall obey the orders of Ms. Lopez.” They answered.

“Not a very obedient bunch, are you? How about this... If you go back as I say, every single one of you gets ten million from me! Otherwise, each of your precious little family will fall into my hands once I return.”

He threatened and lured at the same time.

There were over 10 men from the Lehman family. They glanced at each other with a hint of hesitation. One by one, they began to retreat.

"Hahaha..."

The Garrison clan burst into laughter.

The Lehman elites weren't as steadfast and loyal as expected. Levi was seemingly left all alone...

Save for Hades who remained unshaken by his side.

"One more over there! Aren't you going back with the rest? What's the point of sticking together with a cripple who's being banished from Erudia?" Tyrone looked at Hades in amusement.

"If you leave as well, I'll reward you a hundred million!" He tempted.

No man should be able to resist a tenfold of what he offered earlier to those guys from the Lehmans.

Hades remained silent.

"One billion!" He offered again.

"Three billion!"

"Five billion!"

Tyrone was willing to offer any price just to force Levi into a dead corner.

Hades was unmoved.

Vrooom!

Tyrone's offers were answered by nothing but a rumble of the car engine.

Hades sped past the Garrison troupe. In the blink of an eye, the car disappeared into the horizon as it crossed over the borders of Erudia.

He had already vowed to protect Levi even at the cost of his life. At this point, a monetary reward meant nothing.

“Hahaha... This is interesting!”

Tyrone laughed out loud.

The Garrison clan joined in his laughter as they watched Levi’s defeat.

With danger lurking all around, they could only imagine how disastrous his journey would be with only one guard by his side.

“Levi Garrison... What a pity! Even a stray dog lives a better life than you on this day!”

Tyrone felt a gush of euphoria from the bottom of his heart.

This was the best day ever. It felt so much better than killing Levi Garrison himself.

Zar shook his head helplessly as he observed.

What a downfall for a hero who was once hailed as the God of War.

Levi laid quietly in the car as he looked out the window. The Erudian borders shrank further into the distance.

Lost in thoughts, he continued to stare without a blink.

“The God of War shouldn’t be worrying so much! I understand that feeling of not being able to return home.”

Hades chuckled bitterly as he drove on.

“It’s not that bad, you know... At least your family will be coming along. It’ll eventually get better once we’ve settled down.” He added, seeing how sober Levi remained the whole time.

He didn’t know what else to say that could possibly make the exiled God of War feel better.

“Settled down, you say?” Levi let out a mocking laugh. “Danger is literally all around us from here on out.”

Just as he finished speaking, Hades’ expression changed.

He sensed a presence ahead of them.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1211

A large group of people came into view from the distance.

Amidst a flurry of dust and ashes, Hades could sense a dominating presence as the group approached them at a steady pace.

Anxiety filled him immediately. "Don't worry, I'll protect you no matter what!" He exclaimed.

Levi smiled and replied calmly, "It's probably not what you're thinking."

They had just left the borders of Erudia.

It would be too early for the enemy to make a move.

Soon, the group of numerous men marched close enough that each of their faces could be seen clearly. They halted and stood a few arm's lengths away in front of the car.

Levi smiled at the sight of these familiar faces.

"Jonah Garrison, at your service! These nineteen men with me are from the Tang Sect. We're here to escort the God of War on his journey!"

Jonah declared in a loud voice as he and the Tang Sect fighters knelt before them.

"Four Kings of the Southern Union and the Six Slaves, at your service!"

One by one, each man introduced themselves in a similar manner as they too fell onto their knees. There were Johnny Lawrence, Jael Ellison, Yadriel Larson, Connor Hill, and the Six Slaves of Grover Cooke.

“Osborn St-Jacques of South Hampton and The Three Musketeers, at your service!”

“The Dual-Serrated Monks, at your service!”

These were the people Levi had known.

There were some new faces among the group as well.

“Drakon, Boreas, Tigris and Leon from the Northrush Clan, at your service!”

“Forty Brothers of the East, at your service!”

“Anonymous Eighty of the West, at your service!”

“Heavenly Guardians of the North, at your service!”

“Dragon Warriors of the South, at your service!”

“Twenty-eight members of the Stuart family, on our Master’s orders, at your service!”

“Thirty of us from the Meyers family, on our Lady’s orders, at your service!”

“Nineteen members of the Preston family, on our Young Master’s orders, at your service!”

“We have heard about the enemy’s attempt to overthrow your position. The God of War has been the great savior and guardian of Erudia! We offer ourselves as a shield for you on this perilous journey!”

“We’re just a handful of rough men. Ruffians like us aren’t good with our words, but we’ve always had the utmost regards for you!”

“Our country wouldn’t have been as safe and prosperous as it is today without you! You are the only true God of War in our hearts!”

The men cried out one by one.

Amused and somewhat relieved, Levi smiled.

Who could've predicted the way things had turned out? In the end, these "rough men" were the ones who had really come to escort and protect him.

"You should know that the journey ahead is extremely dangerous. It's highly possible that none of us may survive." He spoke in a matter-of-fact tone.

"We came on our own accord. None of us are afraid of death!"

"We have faith that the God of War will one day regain his health and reclaim his throne! The evil ones shall not prevail! Long live Erudia!"

The men roared with their fists held high in the air.

"Very well, then. You have my gratitude!" Levi was pleased with their courageous pledge.

He gazed upon the group which had gathered before him. "Arise, men! I'll be fine once I reach the arranged destination."

His voice rang with authority.

"We shall escort the God of War to safety at all costs!"

A unison cry erupted from the group of fighters as they threw their fists towards the sky. Their voices beamed with full spirit.

The cheer went on for a while. As it died down, Jonah Garrison spoke, "Sir, do you think it'll be too eye-catching if all of us were to set out together?"

Levi shook his head. "No. It's pointless to break into smaller groups or change our route now. Our enemies would've already set their eyes on every one of us from the very start."

"Alright then. Let's fight them head-on when they come at us! We pledge our lives to the God of War until our very last breaths!"

Jonah proclaimed loudly as shouts of agreement rose from the crowd.

Levi's speculation was right.

Tenichi had been observing every move they made.

One way or another, confrontation from the enemy would be inevitable.

They would have no choice but to face Tenichi upfront when the time comes.

Meanwhile, a tense discussion ensued in the enemy's camp.

"Well... Looks like Levi Garrison has finally departed!" Tenichi announced. His face turned grim as he continued, "Everyone gets ready! It's time to let that person out and do his thing."

Everyone present drew a sharp breath. All of them stifled at the mention of 'that person'.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1212

"Let's go! Follow me to the Northgale Prison!"

Tenichi commanded as he stood up.

At this moment, they were in Northgale. It was a region right across Erudia's borders.

It was the exact place where Levi was heading to.

Deep beneath the ground stood a desolate and mysterious dungeon.

It was a place for the most heinous and murderous captives from Bayview and Northgale.

Every single prisoner locked up here had at least killed a thousand lives.

Tenichi was looking for the strongest of them all.

That person was known as the strongest captive of Northgale Prison, who had single-handedly massacred tens of thousands. No other prisoner had ever outstripped his records.

A truly demonic murderer.

Legend had it that he had originated from an extremely wild and violent tribe.

Secluded far away from the eyes of the world, the tribe was said to hunt all sorts of animals and eat them alive. There had also been reports about human intruders who were cannibalized.

Nobody knew his name. He had always been known as the "Harbinger of Death."

Back then, it took dozens of nations including Raysonia, Keerea, and Northgale to devise a cross-border operation to capture him. Thousands of elite fighters were involved, yet they went through countless failures and revised strategies before he was finally taken down.

He was a terrifying villain whose fighting prowess was that of an Ultimate class.

It was rare to even come across a God-class warrior, let alone one who ranked Ultimate.

Soon, Tenichi and his men arrived at the prison.

The place was heavily guarded with tens of thousands of warriors stationed throughout the compound. Heavy weapons were installed everywhere. The entire prison seemed like an arsenal of firearms on its own.

They descended lower and lower into the depths as they headed towards the cell where the Harbinger of Death was held.

A pair of gigantic metal doors stood before them. It was specially customized with a thickness of almost two meters and weighed over a hundred tons.

This was the deepest part of the dungeon, completely devoid of sunlight and warmth from above. The atmosphere was filled with an eerie air. The temperature had dropped significantly as well. Many of Tenichi's men shuddered.

They did not even dare take a step closer.

At the thought of seeing the Harbinger of Death right behind the doors, all of them eventually stopped in their tracks.

Tenichi shot them a scornful glare. "Useless pieces of trash!" He rebuked.

He proceeded towards the cell alone and unlocked the doors. With a forceful thrust, the doors gradually swung open with a ghastly creak, followed by a heavy grunt.

Grrrrr... Thud!

A sinister and deadly aura gushed out and engulfed the whole room.

Within the narrow cell, several metal chains were securely fastened onto a single man.

Or rather...

A beast. The aura exuding from the person was far from that of a human.

The prisoner lifted his head slowly. Beneath a messy shroud of long hair, his eyes emitted an icy, merciless flash.

For a brief second, Tenichi felt as if somebody had gripped his neck.

"What do you want from me?" The prisoner sneered.

His voice was extremely hoarse.

It sounded like the deep growl of a vicious beast.

"I'm here to give you a chance to freedom." Tenichi answered as he regained his composure.

"Hm?"

The Harbinger of Death glared at him suspiciously.

He had been held in this cold, dark place for four years.

An offer of freedom at a time like this?

"I'll set you free on one condition – kill somebody for me."

Tenichi returned his stare calmly.

The Harbinger of Death let out a raucous chuckle. "Aren't you afraid that I'll bring you all another disaster?"

An Ultimate-class demon would never be controllable once he's freed.

It would be an almost impossible feat to recapture him.

And of course, someone like him wouldn't obey anyone's instructions.

"Fret not. Firstly, I'll have you drink a special poison before letting you out of here. Secondly, the person I want you to kill..." Tenichi paused and gave a teasing smirk.

"... Is none other than Erudia's God of War, Levi Garrison!"

The Harbinger of Death's eyes lit up at that name.

"Agreed!" He exclaimed immediately with a wide grin, revealing his horribly jagged and crooked teeth that were as sharp as a beast's fangs.

Knowing well who the target was, there's no need for him to hesitate.

Tenichi ordered his men to bring the poison and watched as the demon gulped it down.

The Harbinger of Death wasn't the only one given the poison.

It had been distributed to every other prisoner, whom Tenichi had set free under the same condition.

“Go! Bring me the head of Erudia’s God of War! Hahahaha...”

Tenichi’s laughter echoed throughout the dungeon.

Hundreds of vicious killers rushed out of Northgale Prison in an instance as the Harbinger of Death led them.

Evil laughter and frenzied screams filled the air as the freed prisoners poured out of the gate.

Very soon, destruction would once again strike the world above them.

In order to annihilate Levi Garrison, Tenichi would go to any lengths.

His hatred towards Levi was beyond measure.

Even his men shivered at the sight of the crazy mob scrambling out towards the ground above. As much as they had obeyed Tenichi, they could never fathom such an act of cold-blooded tyranny by their leader.

It was sheer terror!

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1213

On the other side...

Levi and his group drove across the desert land at full speed.

They had to make it to the designated town as fast as possible.

The God of War would be safe once they sent him there.

The journey was unexpectedly smooth.

It seems like no one is coming after all. Jonah and the others thought to themselves.

Came to think of it, who would want to go after a man who was crippled and exiled?

He wouldn't pose a threat in any way.

Even a five-year-old child could kill him with ease.

What's the point of wasting a few countries' resources just to get rid of him?

Everyone began to feel relieved.

At last, their objective would be fulfilled without much trouble.

Levi would be safe.

"God of War, we'll be entering a small town soon. It's barely thirty kilometers from your destined location! We should be safe once we make it past this town!"

Hades said.

"Alright... Tell everyone to be on guard. Something feels off to me." Levi warned.

His right eyelid had been throbbing the whole time.

The town ahead seemed oddly quiet and lifeless. There weren't any signs of a single civilian on the streets at all. In fact, the atmosphere felt sinister.

Much to his dismay, he couldn't move an inch at this moment.

How he wished it were just a pretense.

Alas, it's undeniable that he's disabled for real.

He began to worry.

He didn't wish for any of the men escorting him to be harmed.

Before he could worry longer, the group arrived at the town.

It wasn't a large settlement. Only one main street could be seen, spanning an estimated length of three kilometers.

Screeeech!

The car jolted into an abrupt halt as Hades braked suddenly.

They were greeted by a morbid sight as they neared the town center. A sickening stench filled the air as dead bodies were piled up across the main street. Fresh blood was splattered in every corner.

These were the bodies of the town's residents! The old and young; Women and children.

None of them were spared.

"God of War... It seems like this whole town was massacred just a while ago!"

Hades drew a sharp breath.

"Son of a b*tch..." Levi cursed bitterly.

He was angered.

The last thing he had ever wanted would be to see innocent civilians killed like this.

Even if they weren't the people of Erudia.

"Be careful! Let's move these bodies aside quickly! We have to get past this town as fast as we can!"

Jonah ordered the group as he took the lead.

There was no time to waste. They had to make an opening out of the mountain of corpses obstructing their way.

“Hahahaha...”

Just then, a series of savage laughter and shrieks echoed from their surroundings.

One shadow followed after another as they emerged from every corner.

The figures approaching them were dressed in worn-out clothing and untamed hair. They looked like primitive cavemen.

The escort group frantically readied their weapons. They sensed an intense bloodthirst.

The enemies gave off an extremely powerful vibe. There were indeed a few God-class fighters among the berserk mob.

They fixed their bloodshot eyes at Levi’s fleet.

“We’re in deep trouble!” Someone exclaimed.

The group gasped in horror as they made sense of the situation.

With one clear look at the enemy, they could tell these people weren’t just a bunch of deranged barbarians. They were lunatics with frightening power.

“Take the head of the God of War!” A maniacal shriek pierced through the heavy air.

Exhilarated at their newfound freedom out of Northgale Prison, the convicts charged towards Levi at lightning speed.

“Brothers! We shall fight for the God of War until the very end!” Jonah roared. A series of battle cries echoed after him as the crowd prepared to engage the enemies.

“Erudia’s God of War will not fall like this!”

“For Erudia! For the God of War!”

“Charge!”

In the blink of an eye, both parties clashed in a violent rampage.

“Darn it!”

Levi shouted with rage.

Everybody was fighting for his sake.

On the other hand, he couldn't even move a limb!

He hated every second that had passed.

Panic filled him as he struggled in vain.

He didn't want to see any of the men die before his eyes.

The man hated every bit of himself.

God knew how much had he wanted to get up.

He wanted to fight alongside everyone.

But what good was he now?

He had never felt so desperate throughout his entire life.

Meanwhile, at the top floor of a nearby building...

The Harbinger of Death stood alone, his keen eyes scanning through the battlefield.

His mouth was drenched in a grimy splatter of red. He observed the scene as wet blood dripped from a chunk of meat clutched in his hand. It was a piece of raw flesh; nobody would've known which animal—or who—was it from.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1214

“Sigh... Levi Garrison, why should I waste my time on you now that you’ve become a piece of trash?”

The Harbinger of Death lost interest as soon as he spotted the crippled Levi sheltered in the car.

Like Winsor Campbell, he too had wanted to kill the God of War in his prime sovereignty.

But the person he saw now was a weak, defenseless Levi. Anyone could’ve finished him off at his fingertips.

He was no longer a worthy opponent.

The Harbinger of Death withdrew his attention from the battlefield.

He tore another bite off the meat with his sharp teeth. More blood trickled and dripped onto the ground as he feasted.

In the center of the town, sparks and explosions filled the air.

The prisoners had frightening strength. Like a disoriented pack of wild beasts released from captivity, their ecstatic craze of being freed earlier had elevated their brutal power.

Levi’s group of escorts were no less potent.

Each side fought for a different goal. The enemies sought to murder and destroy; the Erudians aimed to protect their pride and virtue.

Tears swirled in his eyes as Levi watched Jonah charge into the midst of the enemies with a blade in one hand.

That man was someone who had one foot in the grave. Yet he was there, fiercely fighting on for his sake along with the others.

Most of the men didn't even know each other.

But all of them united and fought valiantly.

If they were to forsake their own lives in return, so be it.

It would be a worthy sacrifice for the justice they shared.

For the land of Erudia they shared!

Levi's face twitched in despair.

I hate this!

He despised his current self who wasn't able to lift his blade and protect the people of Erudia.

"Charge! Kill them!"

Jonah was leading on the front line. The Tang Sect elites followed closely as they attacked, like a pack of ferocious tigers.

The Four Kings soon charged forward in a split second. Drakon and the trio followed suit in tacit understanding. They wouldn't let the pride of the Northrush Clan crumble without a fight alongside the other warriors. They quickly invaded the enemies' horde and took down a mass.

All the other men too, fought to the best of their abilities.

Whatever it took, they wouldn't let a single enemy move a step closer to the car where Levi was inside.

Hades kept on driving forward as much as he could. As a handful of men dragged and rolled the dead bodies aside, the car inched forward slowly.

Every single fighter had his hands full with making an opening for the car and defending against the enemies' onslaught at the same time.

Whoosh!

Thud!

Bang!

Before long, bodies were flung into the air one by one. Each landed with a heavy thud as they dropped dead on the bloodstained ground.

Those were the elites from the Preston family!

Boom!

Thump!

Blood spilled and splattered in all directions. More bodies collapsed as time went on.

Both sides suffered a huge loss as the wild battle raged on.

The mountain of dead civilian bodies that had clogged up the street earlier had been cleared apart. Nevertheless, the car transporting Levi had only managed to advance over a mere ten meters.

Hundreds of killers still stood in the way ahead of them.

There was no other option to leave this town unharmed. Bloodshed was inevitable.

"Let's go, brothers!"

It was the Forty Brothers of the East. They roared as they rushed towards the barrier of enemies.

The forty men were soon overwhelmed as arrows rained down from the sky. One by one, they fell...

Within a minute, no one was left standing.

How tragic!

Yet how gallant they were!

Their sacrifice had made an opening for the rest.

"It's our turn now! Charge!"

This time it was the Anonymous Eighty of the West.

The league comprised men from various walks of life. Among them were retired military officers, hunters, martial art coaches, and members of other professions.

To put it simply, they were but a group of commoners.

Regular civilians who established a combat guild in order to aid Levi.

They charged into the swarm of enemies.

"Kill them!"

"Fight! We're not going down until we pave a way for the God of War!"

They were eighty commoners, yet they were as valiant as eighty fearless beasts.

Whoosh!

Clang!

Gush!

More blood were spilled. More bodies were strewn.

They braved the battle with wounded bodies. No one was wasting the opportunity that the Forty Brothers had set up for them at the cost of their lives.

The enemies were surprised.

Their opponents clearly lacked in fighting strategies and combat skills. Despite that, they stubbornly clawed and tore at their defense like ravenous animals. As if they weren't afflicted by their wounds and injuries at all!

This was unimaginable!

What's wrong with these commoners?

These men were crazier than themselves!

Thump!

Thud!

Crash!

"Get the God of War out of here!"

The difference in strength proved far too large after all. In the end, the Anonymous Eighty of the West was completely defeated and laid lifeless in a pool of blood.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1215

Another eighty men thus drew their last breaths on a foreign battlefield.

Tears finally trickled down Levi's face.

Exemplary men of Erudia!

You are a true hero! Every one of you!

More guilt and hatred seized his entire self.

Why did it have to become like this?

Protected at the cost of multiple lives while not being able to do anything himself?

He was increasingly tormented at the awareness that he was incapable to fight.

He didn't want more lives to be lost.

Warriors from both the West and the East had fallen.

At long last, an opening had become more visible across the street.

The sacrifice of the fallen warriors had paid off.

Not a single one of them died without a smile on his face.

"Attack!"

"Avenge our brothers from the East and the West!"

The Dragon Warriors of the South and the Heavenly Guardians of the North dashed forward. They continued to breach into the enemies' turf and expand the passage opened up by the fallen heroes.

The tables had begun to turn. It's as if the deaths of the warriors were a sacred sacrifice that had been received by the gods above. Levi's men started to gain the upper hand. Perhaps the gods' blessings had descended on them. Little by little, the remaining killers from Northgale Prison were forced backward as they pushed on.

In a split second, the fleet had advanced another hundred meters.

The sudden commotion had caught the attention of the Harbinger of Death once again.

“Bunch of trash!” He berated in anger.

He continued gnawing and chewing on the piece of raw meat brutishly.

Meanwhile, the bloody war continued on the street.

The Northgale Prisoners were taken aback at the sudden reversal of the situation.

What happened to these measly peasants? Weren't they already on the losing end since the beginning?

They were throwing their lives away like crazy beasts!

Such frightening zeal!

The prisoners were still in shock and amazement.

Why're they doing this?

All for a cripple?

A traitor?

All for a now useless Levi Garrison?

Was he really worth it?

They could never understand the men's devotion to their leader and their beloved nation.

This was something outcasts and murderers like them could never comprehend.

“Onward!”

“Kill them all! We'll soon make it through!”

Jonah continued waving and slashing his blade. His eyes were bloodshot.

The Tang Sect kept the enemies busy as they launched their strikes in all forms – secret weapons, poisoned ammunition, and explosive firearms.

The Northrush Clan were equally unrelenting. Their blows and kicks cascaded down on their foes in a swift, continuous stream, like a raging torrent.

The Three Musketeers and the Dual-Serrated Monks too, were unfaltering.

They all knew how great their loss had been.

The numbers of those who had fallen kept rising.

There were constantly fellow men who were severely injured.

In spite of those, they had finally gained the advantage. They wouldn't let themselves back down or waver at any moment.

Boom!

Pow!

Wham!

The rampage continued. More blood was shed.

Jonah had over ten slash wounds across his body. The vivid red that had covered him along with dust and debris, had made his aged white crown appear even brighter.

All nineteen men from the Tang Sect were just as wounded if no less, albeit there wasn't a single death amongst them.

One of them had both his arms broken while another lost a leg. Neither of them moaned; each continued to fight with maximum strength.

This was the first time Levi could only observe the battlefield as a complete spectator. He quietly swore to never forget this sight – the dead and the critically wounded, all who had fallen on the earth for his sake.

These people were the pride of Erudia!

Men who fought with relentless honor.

Brave warriors with iron blood.

Their sacrifices were not in vain. The enemies' forces were diminishing.

Dead bodies from both sides littered all over the ground.

The Northgale Prisoners had only been treating this battle like a game of eagles hunting chicks.

But who would've known that these "hunted chicks" turned out to be such a fearful force? Even their fellow God-class prisoners were killed!

"Come on! Come at us if you dare!" Jonah roared at the enemies, waving his blade at them.

His physical strength was about to give away. He staggered for a second and nearly stumbled.

Nonetheless, his will to fight was unyielding.

"I will kill every single one of you who comes!"

Not far from him stood Johnny and Yadriel of the Four Kings, with a few others. Their bloodshot eyes fumed with rage.

Their spear guns and blades were drenched in red. The blood of those who were killed at the tip of their weapons continued to drip and trickle.

"Ahhh! Run!"

Fear began to consume the remaining dozens of prisoners. They staggered backward and prepared to turn and run.

A scene like this was unimaginable.

Who would've believed if this news were to spread out?

Who would've believed if they were told that thousands of murderous criminals from the Northgale Prison were scared away by regular men?

"Utter trash! You're all useless!" A raging demonic voice roared from behind them.

The Harbinger of Death appeared just as they started running away.

Boom!

Just as one of the prisoners ran past him, he landed a slap on his head.

The prisoner's skull burst into a flurry of flesh and bones in that instant.

Boom!

"Arrghh!" Another slap followed and one more skull exploded.

One after another, the Harbinger of Death dealt a fatal blow to every prisoner who tried to escape.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1216

Meanwhile...

Jonah Garrison and his men burst into laughter at their survival.

“We did it, everyone! Thank you for your hard work!” Levi yelled.

Suddenly, his intuition told him that something dangerous was coming, and it made him frown.

Boom!

A huge gust of wind swept through the streets, bringing with it a strong bloody stench and an avalanche of dead leaves.

Jonah Garrison and his men’s smiles melted off their faces immediately as fear got the better of them.

All the hairs on their bodies stood on end, and their hands turned clammy with cold sweat. They could almost feel their blood curdling in their veins.

The person they feared was not even at the scene yet, but his aura could make anyone’s legs turn to jelly.

He was like a feral beast that just woke up from a century-long nap.

A few moments later, a shadow emerged from the other end of the street, and it had an eerie resemblance to the one they met before.

However, the person before them was gnawing on a piece of raw meat, with the bone still attached and blood dripping onto the streets.

From the looks of it, he looked like a cannibal!

"It's him!" someone shouted, and Levi turned pale in the face.

I know this person...

It took the combined effort of many countries to catch the Harbinger of Death and throw him into Northgale Prison for life, and now he's back to finish us off...

They really want me dead, huh?

"He's the Harbinger of Death from the Ultimate class! He's targeting me, so leave while you still have the chance!" Levi commanded frantically.

The last thing he wanted to see was more unnecessary bloodshed.

He's way too strong!

Thousands of top-class fighters have fallen in the international operation to capture him...he's way out of anyone's league!

"Leave! Just leave!" he shouted, but no one budged.

No one wanted to give up just yet, especially since they were barely thirty kilometers from safety.

Just a while more, and Levi would be able to plan for the next part of their journey.

"No way!"

"I can't bear to leave you, God of War!"

Jonah smirked. "We'll suffer even more if we left you at this juncture!"

"I'm not scared of death! Heck, I'll even bring a piece of him down to hell with me!"

"We must fight and send the God of War to the designated location! There's no way we can't overwhelm that guy with our strength in numbers!"

Levi had wanted to chase the others away, but his words only made them even more confident.

Everyone refused to retreat, and Levi bit his lip in reluctance.

I don't want to see anyone die in vain anymore...

I hate this!

I wish I could at least stand up and lead the charge, even if I were to die in the process!

But why can't I even move my fingers?

"Die, Levi Garrison!" the Harbinger of Death growled, tossing the meat in his mouth aside and advancing towards Levi.

"Everyone! Kill him!"

"Hahaha! It'll be such an honor to be able to kill someone from the Ultimate class!"

Jonah and his men chuckled loudly, their confidence at an all-time high.

"Listen to me! Leave this place at once!" Levi yelled desperately.

No... no more deaths... please...

Nevertheless, everyone exchanged glances and grinned. "Apologies, this is an order we cannot execute!"

Before Levi could say another word, several people have already rushed forward.

"The Meyers of Oakland shall lead the charge!"

"Don't forget the Stuarts of Oakland!"

Both families only had around twenty members left standing, but they charged forward nonetheless.

Forty longswords glinted under the sunlight as they descended upon the Harbinger of Death's body.

Clank!

Clank!

To everyone's horror, the blades simply bounced off his skin with a loud metallic clink, and the Harbinger of Death emerged from their onslaught completely unscathed.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1217

Boom!

A chilling shockwave shook the ground beneath them, followed by a deafening explosion.

A person flew out of the mess with a giant, bloody hole in his torso and landed on the ground in a lifeless heap.

Boom!

The Harbinger of Death landed another punch, and it shattered everything in the poor victim's chest on impact.

Boom!

"Argghhhhh!"

Another person slumped onto the ground with his spine snapped into two.

Boom!

A severed head landed on the ground not too far away, its eyes still wide open and frozen in fear.

Every one of his moves could kill, as though he was the Grim Reaper himself.

Boom!

Yet another person's organs shattered into a bloody mess inside his body as the Harbinger of Death rammed his foot into his torso.

In just thirty seconds, all that was left of the forty fighters were marred bodies and broken forms.

Everyone else gaped at the Harbinger of Death, shivering in fear.

He's strong...

He's way too strong!

No wonder he's from the Ultimate class!

We've underestimated him...

"Leave!" Levi hollered, his eyes brimming with tears.

People were giving up their lives for him, and he would never forgive himself for allowing that to happen.

"Hades, take the God of War away from this place with your men! This guy is too dangerous!" Johnny Lawrence commanded.

After a while, Levi left the scene together with Jonah, Osborn, the Dual-Serrated Monks, the Three Musketeers, as well as a bunch of other capable fighters, leaving the rest behind to keep the Harbinger of Death occupied.

"No! We can't leave them there!" Levi screamed, knowing full well what their fate was.

However, his men refused to retreat.

"You're in big trouble, Harbinger!" Johnny Lawrence yelled with a smirk on his face.

At that moment, the Four Kings surrounded the Harbinger of Death and yelled, "Kill him!"

With that, the rest of the crowd charged towards the Harbinger of Death in an attempt to kill or at least overwhelm him.

“Die!” the Harbinger of Death yelled, snapping the neck of the person closest to him.

Boom!

Crash!

Splat!

However, none of their attacks worked.

It was as though they were attacking a metal mannequin.

Everyone knew that the Harbinger of Death had a bulletproof body of steel, and that was precisely why it took a dozen countries and a thousand fighters to capture him and throw him in jail.

But that was the best they could do since he was impossible to kill.

His mere presence could make anyone break out in cold sweat.

Crack!

Crash!

Boom!

Every move the Harbinger of Death made was lethal.

Within minutes, the ground near his feet was littered with bodies, and two entire factions have fallen.

He could kill a person with one strike, and no one was ever able to survive his attacks.

“You’re going down, Harbinger!”

“We’re buying time for the God of War!”

Johnny and the rest of the fighters went all out against the Harbinger of Death, but they were fighting a losing battle.

Splat!

Crash!

Snap!

Unfortunately for them, the Harbinger of Death was immune to all their attacks.

Even the Tang Sect's discreet weapons and poisons did not even come close to making a scratch on his body.

In fact, most of their members were already lying in heaps on the ground, some of them broken into several pieces.

The Six Slaves were gone as well, with holes and bruises all over their dead bodies.

"Keep him occupied even if it costs you your life!" the rest of them yelled.

However, that did not make the fight any easier.

No one would be able to win a fight against someone from the Ultimate class, and asking for one would be a surefire way to die.

Soon, more and more fighters dropped dead like flies as the fight went on.

Drakon, Boreas, Tigris, and Leon from the Northrush Clan, Johnny, Jael, Yadriel, Connor...

The street was eerily quiet, and there was not a soul to be seen.

Alas, the fierce fight had ended.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1218

In just a few short minutes, all that was left of the brave bunch was a heap of mangled bodies.

Not even a single person survived the ordeal.

However, none of them backed out of the fight or wavered in their stance.

All of them were willing to die for Erudia.

“What a bunch of pests!” the Harbinger of Death scoffed.

The fighters have held him back for a mere twelve minutes, and Levi would not have gotten far in just twelve minutes.

However, he quickly realized that something was wrong the moment he tried to lift his leg.

Why can't I move?

He looked down and was horrified to find the dead bodies of Johnny Lawrence and everyone else clinging onto his legs tightly.

Now that rigor mortis was setting in, their hardened bodies held him down like a deadweight.

Their collective strength managed to hold him down, making it impossible for him to even make a single step.

It was their last-ditch effort as brave Erudian men to keep the enemy occupied.

They refused to admit defeat, even after death had befallen them.

“Get out of my way!” the Harbinger of Death bellowed, shaking the dead bodies off him.
“You will never get away from me, Levi Garrison!”

With that, the Harbinger of Death was on his way again.

The Erudian warriors have held him up for a mere fifteen minutes, but their efforts have not gone to waste.

Those fifteen minutes had cost them their lives, and that made it priceless.

Meanwhile, Jonah and the others rushed towards the designated town at full speed with Levi in tow.

Time was ticking, and they could almost visualize the fates of Johnny Lawrence and the rest who chose to stay behind.

The Harbinger of Death was practically undefeatable, after all.

“Three more kilometers!” Hades yelled.

Everyone’s eyes brightened up at his statement.

No one knew what the town they were heading towards looked like, but they trusted Levi when he said that they would be safe once they arrived.

It was a huge source of motivation for them.

Boom!

However, before they could rejoice, a giant rock crashed into the side of the car.

If not for Hades’ quick reflexes, they would have toppled over on impact.

By the time everyone wrapped their head around the situation, another person had appeared before their eyes.

It was the Harbinger of Death!

His supersonic speed allowed him to catch up with Levi before he could get to his destination.

Boom!

An explosion went off in everyone's heads at the sight of him.

All of them are dead...

None of them survived!

"Nice! Well done!" Jonah yelled. "That's how Erudian men should be!"

"Thank you! We will avenge you!" everyone chorused.

"I owe you one!" Levi said, gritting his teeth and holding back tears. "When I get better, I'll paint the sky red with those scumbags' blood!"

He hated how things turned out.

For all his life, he had spent years fighting to keep Erudians safe from threats, and yet there were still people dying for the sake of his own life.

I can't allow this! I won't!

"You won't have a chance to do that! Time to die!" the Harbinger of Death bellowed with a cold smirk.

"Hades! Send the God of War to the town! We'll buy time for you!" Jonah said as he trained his eyes on the Harbinger of Death.

Everyone was ready to battle to the death.

However, just as Hades was about to drive off, the Harbinger of Death lifted his foot and brought it down upon the hood of the car.

Boom!

Crack!

The hood of the car was shattered into pieces immediately.

His powerful stomp had destroyed the car completely and even Hades was injured from the sudden attack.

“Don’t you dare leave!” the Harbinger of Death scoffed.

All of you are dead meat to me!

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1219

"Kill him!"

Jonah and the others rushed forward and surrounded the Harbinger of Death.

"Hades! Carry the God of War to the designated location!" Jonah yelled.

Hades obeyed his instructions immediately.

Seeing all this, the Harbinger of Death merely grinned.

Anyone below the Ultimate class is nothing but a mere pest.

Hah! You won't be able to stop me!

Boom!

Crash!

Splat!

Clank!

The Harbinger of Death crushed each person who came forward with nothing but his palms, and there was already a pile of bodies forming by his feet after just thirty seconds.

Levi watched in horror as more and more of his men fell to the ground before the Harbinger of Death.

"You're not getting away today!" Jonah yelled, raising his longsword and bringing it down upon the Harbinger of Death's head.

Boom!

Before anyone could react, the Harbinger of Death had already grabbed his neck and snapped it into two.

Crack!

The Harbinger of Death tossed Jonah's body into the air and punched a hole through his torso.

Jonah was thrown onto the street about ten meters away from the Harbinger of Death, and he managed to mutter, "I must protect the God of..." before taking his final breath.

Crash!

"Take this, you murderer!" The Three Musketeers and Osborn yelled as they rushed forwards to challenge the Harbinger of Death.

In the end...

Osborn was crushed under the Harbinger of Death's foot.

The Three Musketeers were tossed into a pile on the ground, their blood cascading down onto the ground like a fountain.

Even as their souls left their bodies, they refused to let go of their longswords.

Boom!

Crash!

After a while, all that was left were the Dual-Serrated Monks, who were the strongest ones in the bunch.

In fact, they were the only ones strong enough to pose a challenge to the Harbinger of Death.

Crash!

Clank!

They brought their metal sticks upon the Harbinger of Death's head over and over again, which managed to make him stagger backward for a few seconds.

"Die!" he yelled after a while, his eyes glinting dangerously.

Crack!

Snap!

He somehow managed to break the Monks' sticks into several pieces with his bare hands.

Splat!

Crash!

He flung the Monks onto the street after punching a hole through their torsos.

With that, everyone who accompanied Levi on this mission had sacrificed themselves in the race towards safety.

All of them were brave heroes, no matter what their backgrounds were.

Those scheming aristocrats would never compare to them, for they had the courage to stand up for what was right.

"We're going to be there soon!" Hades yelled as the town came into view.

They were only around a hundred meters away from the entrance of the town, and Hades broke into a sprint.

Levi, on the other hand, was horrified to see the Harbinger of Death catching up to them from behind.

After just a few seconds, he managed to narrow the gap to just ten meters.

Hades gritted his teeth. *Just a few more meters...*

"Aren't you from L Nation? Why are you protecting your enemy?" the Harbinger of Death asked.

"You don't understand! The God of War is my hero!" Hades yelled.

Without warning, he tossed Levi in the direction of the town's entrance, and he landed squarely at the gates.

"You're asking for it!" the Harbinger of Death yelled, barreling towards Levi at top speed.

Boom!

However, before he could get close to Levi, Hades grabbed his waist and held on tight.

"Die!"

Boom!

Crash!

Clash!

The Harbinger of Death landed several punches on Hades' back, and blood gushed out of the latter's eyes.

Even so, Hades had a large grin on his face.

"I've done it, everyone!" he yelled.

The Harbinger of Death continued to pound his fists onto Hades' body, turning him into an unrecognizable heap of minced meat.

There was nothing Levi could do but watch in desperation.

“So what if you’ve arrived at the town?” the Harbinger of Death bellowed at Levi, shooting him a menacing glare.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1220

“What’s the point of all this? Why are you protecting this piece of trash?” the Harbinger of Death snickered. “What a bunch of dimwits!”

Killing Levi would not be hard for him even in Erudia, let alone a tiny town in Northgale.

How stupid of them to protect him!

It’s absolutely worthless!

They’re just sacrificing themselves for no good reason!

Meanwhile, Levi could only stare at Hades’ dead body on the ground from where he lay sprawled just outside the gates.

He had been overcome with helplessness as he watched his men give up their lives for his sake.

However, there was nothing he could do.

I hate this...

He wanted to scream, but his throat was too dry for it.

Not only that, but he wanted to kill the murderer standing before him, yet his legs would not listen to his brain’s commands.

Strangers and friends alike admired him, and he owed them the world for it.

I need to avenge them! I must!

After all that, the Harbinger of Death fixed his gaze on Levi and started to walk towards him.

With each blink of his eyes, the Harbinger of Death came ten meters closer.

He chuckled as he stared at Levi. "What's the point of that battle? It's absolutely useless!"

Unfazed, Levi glared at him. "Watch it! You're going to die soon!"

"Hahaha! Me? Dying? No way!"

He was not exactly boasting – after all, it took a thousand fighters just to restrain him back then.

It would take a million more to kill him.

"Die, Levi Garrison!" the Harbinger of Death bellowed, raising his palm and bringing it down upon Levi's head.

Boom!

However, before he could flatten Levi into a pancake, a huge explosion rang through the air.

Crash!

A powerful force rammed into the Harbinger of Death's chest, and it sent him flying backward with blood spewing out of his mouth.

Hiss...

He staggered backward for a good ten meters before slowing to a halt.

When he looked down, he was horrified to see several cracks appearing on the ground beneath him.

His shirt was tattered and torn at the chest area, and a large, bloody palm print was slowly appearing on his chest.

The Harbinger of Death was supposed to be immune to all kinds of weapons, and not even the sharpest blade could come close to making a scratch on his skin.

That was why the surprise attack and the mark shocked him.

Without giving him a chance to recover, a shadow rushed forward and landed another punch on his chest.

Boom!

The pain that followed was like a nuclear explosion.

“How dare you!” he bellowed, swinging his fist at the shadow.

Crash!

The moment their fists connected, a huge shockwave shook the ground as though an air raid had occurred.

Crack!

The Harbinger of Death’s arm burst open the very next second, spewing blood and gore everywhere. It came as a shock to him.

What the...

How could this happen?

What kind of monster could I be facing against?

Boom!

Crash!

Snap!

“Argh! Ouch! ARGH!”

The shadow landed a few more punches without even giving the Harbinger of Death a chance to breathe.

As time went on, his chest began to cave in, and blood continued to spill out of his mouth in alarming amounts.

His shoulders sagged, but it was not the end of the ordeal yet.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The shadow continued to throw punch after punch onto the Harbinger of Death's body, tearing open his flesh and exposing everything inside.

After a while, his body was nothing but a mangled piece of meat.

Then, he fell to the ground, dead from the pain.

Even as he took his last breath, he struggled to understand why he was defeated so easily.

Nothing posed a challenge to him, and no one in Northgale had ever won in a fight against him.

It took the combined effort of a dozen countries to catch him and throw him into prison, and little did he expect to meet his end in the hands of a person whose face he could not even see.

The person was dressed entirely in black, complete with a half-devil, half-angel mask.

As the Harbinger of Death fell to the ground in defeat, several people in similar getups walked out of the gates of the town.

Boom!

The crowd fell to their knees before Levi.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1221

“Greetings, Master!” a thousand cloaked men and women chorused, shaking every rock and ruffling every blade of grass around them.

“Please give your orders, Master! We will kill whoever dares to lay their hands on you!” the man who killed the Harbinger of Death said as he stepped forward.

They had known what Levi went through over the past few months, but they were just as helpless as he was.

Without Levi’s orders, they could not do anything but stay in the shadows.

“Your orders, Master!” the crowd roared.

These cloaked people were none other than Levi’s own secret troops.

They had no connections to Erudia whatsoever on the surface, for they have been hidden overseas ever since Levi established the organization, known as “The Calamity.”

The purpose of their existence was to provide aid in times of crisis and protect Erudia from any threats.

Thus, they spend most of their time in hiding, only emerging from the shadows when an emergency occurred.

By right, The Calamity belonged to the Erudian state and not Levi, but no one knew about that connection.

Only Levi and a certain other person knew the truth about The Calamity, and even someone like the Azure Dragon was ignorant about its existence.

Every member of The Calamity had one thing in common, and that was their lack of identity. While information about Levi remained top secret, the members of The Calamity did not exist in any kind of Erudian records.

In other words, it was almost like they never existed, to begin with.

In fact, it would have stayed that way if not for Levi.

Mobilizing The Calamity would be a massive chore, for it required two “keys.”

Levi was one, while another person held on to the other “key.” Both of them must give the green light before The Calamity could be mobilized.

However, with Levi missing in action and the other person nowhere to be found, the members of The Calamity had no choice but to stay hidden.

The only other way to mobilize them would be for Levi to seek them out personally, but everyone knew that that was nearly impossible to achieve.

Hades would not have been able to send Levi to Northgale by himself, and Levi was about to give up hope when the Harbinger of Death caught up to them.

That was where the brave souls from Erudia appeared and sacrificed their lives just to buy time for Hades and Levi.

“I won’t let any one of you die in vain!” Levi growled.

I must seek Mr. Finch out and slice them into pieces with my own two hands!

Suddenly, two other men and one woman stepped forward and kneeled before Levi.

“East Sky Lord, West Sky Lord, and South Sky Lord of The Calamity at your service, Master!” they chorused.

The man who had pounded the Harbinger of Death into a pile of mess earlier on had been the North Sky Lord.

The Master and the Four Lords were the highest forms of authority in The Calamity, while the rest of the members were split into factions led by the Four Lords.

The East Sky Lord was in charge of expanding their influence, and The Calamity had since taken over several organizations.

The West Sky Lord came up with plans for operations and had access to every source of information and intelligence networks.

Meanwhile, the South Sky Lord managed the finances, and The Calamity lived comfortably under the South Sky Lord's careful planning.

Lastly, The North Sky Lord oversaw training operations, shaping The Calamity into an undefeatable force.

As a result, The Calamity had seen a massive development since its conception under the leadership of the Four Lords.

The Calamity had since grown into something even more powerful than the Blood King Palace.

"Shall we mobilize The Calamity, Master?" the Four Lords asked in unison.

"Yes!" Levi answered decisively with a blank expression on his face.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1222

Once The Calamity was mobilized, they would come out of hiding, which would change the world drastically.

Unless the situation was dire, Levi never mobilized them.

However, now was the time to summon them into the light.

Every member of The Calamity beamed brightly at Levi's order.

We can finally emerge from the shadows and see the light of day...

"The Calamity has officially been mobilized, Master! We await your orders!" The Four Lords chorused out loud.

"Alright. I'll follow up with you soon," Levi said, nodding.

"Master...I've heard that the Blood King Palace had poisoned you with the product of one of their decade-long projects... is that true?" the West Sky Lord asked tentatively.

As the only female Lord, she was the most attentive to detail, and that was why she was in charge of their intelligence networks.

"Yes, but it's gone now," Levi said.

"What?" the West Sky Lord exclaimed, surprised.

From the intel she had gathered, she knew that the poisons developed by the Blood King Palace spelled certain doom for their victims once injected into their bodies.

Not even the strongest cleansers could save them.

Levi sighed. "I got lucky and ran into the gathering of the Octa-Medic. One of them, in particular, was adept in using poisons to cleanse a poison victim's body, and that was how I was saved from certain doom."

At that time, Levi had spent a whole night discussing those matters with the Octa-Medic, and it took a while before Benny Quinton finally realized that Levi had been cured of the poison.

However, despite the doctor's best efforts, Levi could no longer move on his own accord.

The poison had destroyed all his nerves, and the hardships he went through did not make it any better.

He was lucky to still be alive, for being able to survive was in itself the best possible scenario, even if he could not move.

"Erudian doctors are the best!"

"I knew I was right to trust the work of our ancestors!"

The crowd chattered away happily as the North Sky Lord studied Levi from head to toe.

He shook his head with a sigh. "Looks like it's going to stay this way forever..."

The North Sky Lord was the best fighter in The Calamity, and killing someone like the Harbinger of Death was like a stroll on the streets to him.

If he said that Levi would never recover fully, he meant that Levi would actually be crippled for the rest of his life.

"Huh?" everyone chorused in shock.

Our master... is he going to be bedridden for the rest of his life?

However, Levi simply smirked.

"East, go and take care of this for me..."

"West, I need to you find out about..."

After Levi gave his orders to the Lords, he proceeded to settle down.

The tiny town in the outskirts of Northgale was pretty much deserted, and he would be able to live under the radar for a while if he stayed there.

Taking out his phone, Levi gave Zoey a call, who almost broke down upon hearing his voice.

"I'm fine, Levi! I'll personally escort you back once I settle down!" she said.

Levi smiled to hide how reluctant he felt. "Alright. Great to hear that you're doing well. Stay vigilant from now on, and don't tell anyone about our conversations."

Meanwhile, in a castle somewhere in Northgale...

Tenichi was in a meeting with a group of people.

"Hm? Shouldn't Levi be dead by now?" Tenichi asked.

He had entrusted the Harbinger of Death and his other goons with the task of killing Levi. However, he had heard nothing but radio silence from them for the past few hours.

"Did something happen?" someone asked.

"I have a bad feeling about this. One of you should go and check on the Harbinger," Tenichi said, his face paling.

Suddenly, someone ran over yelling, "I have something to report!"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1223

"What is it? Just say it!" Tenichi ordered impatiently.

"It's about Levi Garrison! His entire army fell in the battle against the Harbinger, and he's dead as well!" the person reported. "We've suffered a great loss as well... the only person who survived was the Harbinger himself!"

"Where's the Harbinger of Death now?" Tenichi asked.

"He's... gone!"

"Looks like he's just a feral beast that can't be tamed!" Tenichi said, smirking. "Whatever. We'll just capture him again when we need him."

After a while, he gathered enough evidence to prove that Levi was dead, and so was his entire party.

"Hahaha! You're finally dead, Levi Garrison! Don't you know how much of an annoying gnat you were when you were alive?" Tenichi scoffed. "You there! Announce to the world that Levi Garrison is dead!"

"As for us... let's have a three-day-long party!"

When news got out that the former God of War of Erudia had met his end in Northgale, it created a huge shock across the world.

The leaders of several powerful organizations welcomed the news with open arms.

Their oppressor was gone, and they were free to do whatever they desired. Gone were the days they lived in constant fear and anxiety.

Everyone else in Erudia was in a state of shock as well.

When rumors of his betrayal first appeared, some people began to berate and belittle him, while the others tried their best to protect his reputation.

"No! This can't be true! The God of War wouldn't die!"

"Can't you tell that someone's behind all this?"

As they prayed for his safe return, malicious comments began to surface as well.

"I'm so glad he's dead!"

"That's what a traitor deserves!"

"I can't wait to celebrate his death!"

The rich families of South Hampton and Oakland City were delighted to hear of the news, for they could finally be freed from Levi's suffocating iron grip.

In particular, the Garrison family cheered the moment they heard of the news.

As the laughter continued, Tyrone looked at his family members proudly and said, "I was right! He's dead to me the moment he left Erudia! He's no match for me!"

Olivia grinned. "Did you see that, Damien? Levi is dead! We've avenged you!"

Over at the Garcias, people were jumping up and down in excitement.

"Look how the tables have turned, Levi Garrison! You ripped my limbs off my body and lost your life because of it! Hahaha!" Conrad guffawed.

Meanwhile, at a base camp...

"Levi Garrison is dead!" Zar reported.

Winsor simply huffed and said, "Whatever. He's just a failure."

When Zoey and Emma heard of Levi's "death," they were shocked as well.

Zoey could feel a sheen of cold sweat forming on her forehead as Levi's words rang in her head.

I mustn't tell anyone about our conversation...

"Mom, it's time we begin the act," she told Emma.

"Yeah. I'm glad he told us about the plan earlier, or else I would have thrown myself off this building!" Emma said, heaving a sigh of relief.

Zoey grinned. "I'm sure he has his reasons for this. He'll come back soon, and we'll wait for him in Erudia!"

She had been feeling anxious for a long time, but when news of his “death” finally came around, she somehow found herself calmer than before.

Levi’s a careful guy... he definitely has his reasons for doing this!

“Everyone thinks my husband is dead, so we’re the only ones who know that he’s still alive. We must keep that a secret!” Zoey declared. “When he comes back, he’ll conquer the world and bring peace to everyone once more!”

At that, Zoey and Emma exchanged confident looks.

It feels great to have hope!

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1224

What no one knew was that the East Sky Lord of The Calamity had been the one fabricating the news of Levi’s untimely “death.”

The East Sky Lord had covered it up so thoroughly that even someone like Watanabe Tenichi overlooked it.

That night, the North and South Sky Lord silently began their operation.

The dozens of corporations that the South Sky Lord had acquired over the past, as well as the enormous business empire that he had built, emerged from the shadows. Under his management, organizations were pouring millions upon millions into The Calamity’s bank account.

As for the North Sky Lord, he singlehandedly destroyed a dozen underground forces and ruled over the entirety of The Dark World with an iron fist.

Not only that, countless families, conglomerates, and organizations have pledged their loyalty to The Calamity, giving them all the resources they needed to emerge from the shadows and begin their operations as the most powerful organization in the world.

In fact, they were several times stronger than the Blood King Palace at their peak.

The Calamity spent years building up their power behind the scenes, and the effort they put in was immeasurable.

The world was still reeling in shock from the news of Levi's "death" when news of The Calamity's sudden appearance materialized out of nowhere.

Everyone's attention turned to The Calamity in an instant.

"It's not a coincidence! They've been secretly building up their power since years ago!"

"This was all part of the plan all along!"

More and more people started to dig into The Calamity's past after the news broke out.

Tenichi and his men were no exception.

"What do you think of The Calamity's return, Mr. Watanabe?" someone asked.

Tenichi pondered over it for a moment before answering, "It must have been because of Levi's death!"

"That's right! If Levi had been alive, The Calamity would have stayed hidden! Levi had the power to hold anyone's head underwater!" someone yelled, and everyone else nodded in agreement.

They were convinced that The Calamity had emerged because of Levi's "death."

“Well, that doesn’t mean that we can stop collecting intel about them. We must establish some kind of relationship with them, in the event that we fail to acquire them.” Tenichi said with a confident smirk.

Just you wait! You’ll be mine soon, just like that Blood King Palace!

Meanwhile, news of The Calamity’s resurgence spread to Erudia as well.

When Winsor heard of the news, his eyes widened in shock. “What? It’s scarier than the Blood King Palace?”

“That’s right. They’re much better than the Blood King Palace in terms of strength,” Bolgun said.

Winsor smirked. “Would I become even better of a hero than Levi Garrison if I got rid of The Calamity?”

“Of course!” Bolgun and the others chorused. “I’m sure more people would be willing to recognize your current status as the God of War once you cleared out The Calamity!”

Winsor scoffed. “While it’s true that Levi defeated the Blood King Palace twice in a row, he didn’t do it by himself, did he?” The answer was a sound “no.” It had been his subordinates who did all the dirty work.

Besides the Five Great Wars Regiment, there were also the Cavalry Regiment, the Specter Army, as well as the Ruby, Emerald, Sapphire, and Topaz Armies.

They deserved most of the credit, for Levi would not have been able to win the battles without them.

With that, the three disciples nodded. “Of course. He’s nothing but a failure!”

“He’s destined to suffer! He’s a useless piece of trash!” Winsor growled.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1225

Their last fight had proved to Winsor that Levi's strength came from his subordinates, not Levi alone.

Levi had highly capable fighters like White Tiger by his side, and it made Winsor jealous.

Previously, Winsor had wanted to convince those fighters to join his ranks, but he knew that their loyalty to Levi was no laughing matter.

Although he hated it, there was nothing he could do to change it.

He even suggested merging the Iron Brigade and Levi's other armies into the Asura Army, only to be rejected on the spot.

"It's going to be pretty difficult to convince White Tiger and the others to join you, Master," Zar said.

"Just like how we'll refuse to join Levi's army no matter what happens," Bolgun added.

Winsor shook his head. "I don't care. They'll know just how powerful I am once they joined the Asura Army!"

Hearing that, Talon grinned. "Master's right. Levi's nothing compared to Master. He's just the son of a great Erudian family!"

Just then, Zar and Bolgun chuckled, and Talon raised an eyebrow in confusion. "Hm?"

“Are you saying that our Master doesn’t have a powerful background? That’s not true! So what if Levi’s the son of a great family?” Zar scoffed.

“Huh? What could be scarier than an ancient family?” Talon asked, bewildered.

Since he hailed from the mountains, he knew very little about Erudia’s aristocracy.

“That’s right. The truly powerful ones stay hidden while the show-offs flaunt their wealth. The Garrison clan wouldn’t even *dare* to offend Master’s family!” Bolgun explained.

Talon nodded slowly with wide eyes.

It all made sense to him.

The more powerful something was, the further it would be from the layman’s reach.

Everyone was under the illusion that the Garrison clan was the most powerful family in Oakland city, but what they failed to realize was that there were plenty of organizations out there that could outperform the Garrison clan in every way possible.

To spot a billionaire among the common folk would be like spotting a rare species. However, the same billionaire would pale in comparison to the people Winsor came into contact with.

In fact, in their social circles, being a billionaire was nothing to brag about.

One would not know about the existence of a certain matter if it was way out of their league, but that was not an excuse to deny its existence.

Talon trembled as he thought about the other two disciples’ words.

Looks like Master’s the true nobleman!

Rumble...

Suddenly, the sound of an army closing in on their base camp shook the ground beneath them.

It was as though an earthquake had occurred, and everyone struggled to stay upright.

“What’s going on?” Winsor asked, his face paling. “Is it an earthquake?”

His three disciples rushed outside to take a look, and Winsor followed them closely.

The soldiers of the Asura Army stood at attention.

“Master! It’s not an earthquake!” Zar yelled. “We’re under attack!”

A few minutes later, the Five Great Wars Regiment, the Cavalry Regiment, the Specter Army, the Dragon Warriors as well as the Iron Brigade slowed to a halt before Winsor, sending shivers down everyone’s spines.

Winsor frowned and stared at the crowd before him. “What are you trying to do, Azure Dragon?”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1226

“How dare you act so rashly before me? Are you out of your mind?” Winsor crossed his hands behind his back and stared intensely at Azure Dragon and the others.

White Tiger returned his glance and said, “Winsor Campbell, we are here for only one thing. We want to rectify my boss’s name!”

“Indeed! Our boss didn’t betray Erudia!”

“Clear his name!” The crowd shouted in unison.

“These are pieces of evidence to prove his innocence!” Phoenix handed Winsor a copy of the audio and visual recordings.

It was a video recording of the battle against the Blood King Palace – a solid proof that Levi Garrison was innocent.

When they were at Oakland City, Levi had ordered Azure Dragon to wait for his further instructions. Hence, both Azure Dragon and White Tiger were patiently waiting for Levi’s command.

However, they received the shocking news of his death instead. Thus, they could no longer remain calm.

Earlier, when Levi was still alive, they could not do much for him. Unfortunately, he was gone before they could serve him wholeheartedly. Hence, the least they could do now was to help rectify his name.

Winsor's expression dropped after he watched the video recording.

"It seems that Levi Garrison was framed! I didn't realize this from the start!" Winsor responded.

He wondered to himself. How did a cripple man like Levi cause such a tremendous threat that even his enemies were frightened?

"I'm afraid you wouldn't understand, Asura. In the eyes of the foreign enemies, my boss poses a greater danger than you! He is a huge threat as long as he has one single breath left." White Tiger sneered.

Winsor's expression dulled at his words.

Why is everyone comparing me against Levi even though I had defeated him? Why? Is it impossible for the strong to be approved? How could the people turn a blind eye to me?

I am indeed better than Levi, and it was proven with thousands of people as witnesses! Besides, Levi Garrison had admitted to his loss.

I don't get it. Why does everyone still think he's stronger than I am?

For some reason, he had defeated Levi, yet failed to win the hearts of the people.

Thus, he felt particularly uneasy about the time when he lured Levi into a trap and killed him. He wished Levi were alive instead. That way, he could have had a rematch to prove that his victory was not a coincidence and that he was indeed stronger.

Unfortunately, it's impossible now.

There's no chance now that he's dead.

In the meantime, I have to destroy The Calamity to conquer people's hearts.

"Asura, we hope you may restore the God of War's identity and revoke all previous punishments!"

Suddenly, Azure Dragon, White Tiger, and the others knelt to the ground.

Winsor was taken back by their actions.

He knew the group of unruly men very well, and they would not simply kneel for anyone or anything.

Based on his knowledge, they would only kneel for the heavens, the earth, and Erudia – no one else.

However, to his surprise, they knelt before him on this very day. Seeing that, it was evident that Levi was someone very close to their hearts.

Albeit being jealous of Levi, Winsor still did the right thing.

“Alright, I shall revoke all punishments against Levi and crown him as a martyr!” After a short while, Winsor announced.

“Thank you, Asura!” The Iron Brigade cried out.

Azure Dragon then stepped forward and said, “Asura, I plan to organize a funeral for my boss once his body’s transported back!”

“Alright, go head!” Winsor turned and left after that.

After two weeks of searching, Azure Dragon finally managed to transport “Levi’s body” back to Erudia.

He had also informed Zoey and Emma about his passing. However, he did not encourage them to come.

On a cold day in the North, a simple yet grand funeral was conducted.

The Iron Brigade escorted the “God of War” on his last journey on earth with the highest honor.

At the same time, several figures were looking down from a mountain top.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1227

“Master, how does it feel to witness your own funeral?” North Sky King asked with a smile.

The person next to him was none other than Levi Garrison.

In fact, Levi was standing. He looked relaxed, with his hands on his back.

He was in a healthy state as his body had recovered completely.

It would cause many jaw-drops if the others knew about it.

That was because the poison from the Blood King Palace he had in his body was cured by the Octa-Medic.

Surprisingly, his body had fully recovered despite the poison.

Outsiders aside, even the Four Lords of The Calamity were shocked to see Levi walking around after a month of recovery.

This is unbelievable...

It's a miracle! It can only be a miracle! How could I have recovered so fast?

It reminded him of the incident when he was framed into prison eight years ago.

He was beaten up so severely until he was crippled and unable to move.

Due to his condition, he knew he had no chance of being selected by the special task force.

However, he had an opportunity during his time in prison that gave him a chance to live today.

And, of course, it was his biggest secret of all times. It was the key to his recovery this time around!

When his body was completely destroyed, he needed time to recover.

Yet, the situation was too dangerous in the past, so he didn't have the time to heal.

Levi glanced at the funeral below and said plainly, "Perhaps dying could also be a way of relief? Yet, I cannot die. I have to stay alive! Erudia, Mother, Evie Zoey, and all my friends wouldn't let me die! Besides, I have sworn to avenge my dead brothers as long as I live! They shall not die in vain!"

The Four Lords agreed, "If you fall, Master, the world would be in chaos!"

West Sky Lord responded, "Master, I have some news regarding the incident you wanted me to investigate! I believe there would be results very soon!"

"Excellent, I have to return to Erudia first. North Sky Lord, you're with me!" Levi said.

Meanwhile, Azure Dragon and the rest were the ones who held the funeral, which had confirmed the news of Levi Garrison's death.

From that day onwards, Levi Garrison had disappeared from the world.

Just like The Calamity.

They were like ghosts – every piece of information about them was wiped clean as if they never existed in the world.

On this day, the Eighteen-Nation Alliance was having a grand celebration.

After all, their biggest threat was dead.

Tenichi smiled, "We may start to take action anytime now!"

When Levi was alive, he was a hindrance to everyone's plan. Hence, everyone wanted to eliminate him.

On the other hand, Winsor was ready to strike The Calamity. However, he had received orders from the Dragonites to stop whatever he was doing, saying that he could not attack The Calamity unless they had caused trouble that would threaten Erudia.

Although he was eager to prove himself, he had to abort his plans for now.

Meanwhile, the people of North Hampton had heard about the death of Levi.

However, Zoey and her family did not know how to react to the news.

At this moment, someone appeared at the manor, and it was Jerry.

For some reason, a smile was plastered across his face.

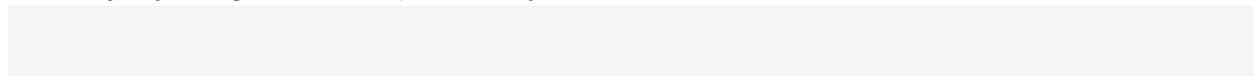
"Why're you here?" Zoey asked in surprise.

"Huh? Ms. Lopez, have you completely forgotten about Mr. Garrison? I heard it's his funeral today. I thought you would be very upset, but instead, you haven't shed a tear!"

"Ms. Jones, too, she seems perfectly fine. Did you all think Levi was a traitor – who turned his back on Erudia? That's why you're ashamed of him?" Jerry joked.

It was true; both Zoey and Emma did not react any differently. It was as if Levi was still alive.

"But that's probably for the better anyway. I'm willing to take care of you for the rest of my life, only if you agree, Ms. Lopez!" Jerry continued.



Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1227

“Master, how does it feel to witness your own funeral?” North Sky King asked with a smile.

The person next to him was none other than Levi Garrison.

In fact, Levi was standing. He looked relaxed, with his hands on his back.

He was in a healthy state as his body had recovered completely.

It would cause many jaw-drops if the others knew about it.

That was because the poison from the Blood King Palace he had in his body was cured by the Octa-Medic.

Surprisingly, his body had fully recovered despite the poison.

Outsiders aside, even the Four Lords of The Calamity were shocked to see Levi walking around after a month of recovery.

This is unbelievable...

It's a miracle! It can only be a miracle! How could I have recovered so fast?

It reminded him of the incident when he was framed into prison eight years ago.

He was beaten up so severely until he was crippled and unable to move.

Due to his condition, he knew he had no chance of being selected by the special task force.

However, he had an opportunity during his time in prison that gave him a chance to live today.

And, of course, it was his biggest secret of all times. It was the key to his recovery this time around!

When his body was completely destroyed, he needed time to recover.

Yet, the situation was too dangerous in the past, so he didn't have the time to heal.

Levi glanced at the funeral below and said plainly, "Perhaps dying could also be a way of relief? Yet, I cannot die. I have to stay alive! Erudia, Mother, Evie Zoey, and all my friends wouldn't let me die! Besides, I have sworn to avenge my dead brothers as long as I live! They shall not die in vain!"

The Four Lords agreed, "If you fall, Master, the world would be in chaos!"

West Sky Lord responded, "Master, I have some news regarding the incident you wanted me to investigate! I believe there would be results very soon!"

"Excellent, I have to return to Erudia first. North Sky Lord, you're with me!" Levi said.

Meanwhile, Azure Dragon and the rest were the ones who held the funeral, which had confirmed the news of Levi Garrison's death.

From that day onwards, Levi Garrison had disappeared from the world.

Just like The Calamity.

They were like ghosts – every piece of information about them was wiped clean as if they never existed in the world.

On this day, the Eighteen-Nation Alliance was having a grand celebration.

After all, their biggest threat was dead.

Tenichi smiled, "We may start to take action anytime now!"

When Levi was alive, he was a hindrance to everyone's plan. Hence, everyone wanted to eliminate him.

On the other hand, Winsor was ready to strike The Calamity. However, he had received orders from the Dragonites to stop whatever he was doing, saying that he could not attack The Calamity unless they had caused trouble that would threaten Erudia.

Although he was eager to prove himself, he had to abort his plans for now.

Meanwhile, the people of North Hampton had heard about the death of Levi.

However, Zoey and her family did not know how to react to the news.

At this moment, someone appeared at the manor, and it was Jerry.

For some reason, a smile was plastered across his face.

"Why're you here?" Zoey asked in surprise.

"Huh? Ms. Lopez, have you completely forgotten about Mr. Garrison? I heard it's his funeral today. I thought you would be very upset, but instead, you haven't shed a tear!"

"Ms. Jones, too, she seems perfectly fine. Did you all think Levi was a traitor – who turned his back on Erudia? That's why you're ashamed of him?" Jerry joked.

It was true; both Zoey and Emma did not react any differently. It was as if Levi was still alive.

"But that's probably for the better anyway. I'm willing to take care of you for the rest of my life, only if you agree, Ms. Lopez!" Jerry continued.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1229

Danger is slowly approaching. Therefore, Evie's safety depends on me.

However, there's not much I can do.

Even an honorable man like my godfather had also given in in exchange to protect his family.

It further proves how powerful the mysterious force is!

And it won't be a force that I can't handle on my own...

It seems like Jerry's right – he's probably my only hope now.

Looking at her perplexed expression, Jerry smiled, "I'll allow you some time to think about it, but don't take too long! Actions will be taken soon enough once the assassination order has been announced. I have a flight at 11 p.m. tomorrow, and I'll leave if you don't give me an answer by then!"

Zoey and Emma's heart sank as Jerry left.

It was all part of his plan, by asking Zoey not to give him an answer on the spot.

Instead, he gave her a time limit to consider his offer, which would defeat her psychological barrier even more.

It had indeed made Zoey even more nervous.

On the other hand, Levin was on his way back to Erudia when he received news from The Calamity.

"Master, The Dark World has released an assassination order to eliminate your child!"

"The mysterious force claims that your child cannot live!" West Sky Lord told Levi.

Levi's eyes widened as he shot her a cold glance.

Who dares to touch my child?

“Besides, this assassination order was released from Erudia! Therefore, many assassination organizations in Erudia would be going after your child!”

Levi instantly knew the person who framed him was the same person who had released the assassination order when he heard those words.

It must be Mr. Finch!

I’m already “dead.” Yet, he intends to cut weeds and eliminate the roots and not let Evie live.

Well, it was about time I rake this person out! I would like to see the man who forbade my existence.

This was the reason why Levi had the East Sky Lord spread the news of his death. Levi planned to investigate the incident secretly.

He was determined to catch Mr. Finch and his henchmen once and for all!

At the same time, North Hampton was seemingly peaceful, yet a dark force was surging as countless assassination organizations had laid their eyes on the city.

The oppressing atmosphere was so intense that it was suffocating.

Zoey could sense the horror approaching the manor.

Although she had hired many bodyguards to enhance protection, her heart was not at peace.

After Jerry left, Zoey had also received news from Tiffany and the rest. They warned her to stay alert as people from the assassination organizations were going to approach Evie.

As time ticked on, Zoey became more worried.

I can’t care less about anything else except for Evie!

I must protect her even if it costs my life!

It was nearly 11 p.m.

As much as she did not trust Jerry, she was willing to take the risk for Evie's sake.

Hence, she contacted Jerry.

"I'll do whatever you say as long as you can guarantee Evie's safety!" Zoey had compromised at last.

Soon after that, Jerry arrived and had the same smile plastered on his face, "Although the assassins are already here, there were only a few top-notch assassins like Bloodleaf, the Dark Lord, and Slayer. I could take care of them... but as for the second batch of assassins..."

After hearing Jerry's word, Zoey believed him.

I think he really does know everything about the assassin organization.

After all, he spoke in a very convincing tone.

As a matter of fact, Jerry was the one who had arranged several groups of assassins to go after Evie. Once the time had come, he would pretend to be a hero to take care of things just as he planned.

It would deepen the trust between them when Zoey witnessed it before her eyes.

At the same time, Zoey and Emma had no choice but to go with Jerry's plan out of desperation.

And that included handing over the authoritative rights to Zoey's company.

Once he had power over the company, he immediately transferred the rights over to himself.

With that, Jerry had taken over the entire Morris Group in half an hour and disappeared in a flash.

When Zoey heard the news, it was like a lightning bolt had struck her, making her lost for words.

I can't believe I was scammed!

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1230

Jerry knew that both Zoey and Emma were eager to keep Evie safe. Hence, he leveraged that and put on a good show to convince them to go with his plan.

Besides, he was their last hope. Therefore, Zoey had no choice but to believe him.

She had her speculations that Jerry might be a liar, however, it was a risk she had to take.

Even if there was a slightest hope.

Yet, the reality was cruel.

Once Jerry had the Morris Group to himself, he immediately fired Iris and the other council members. The reason behind his actions was to gain complete control of the company in the shortest amount of time.

In the meantime, Zoey was left in a miserable state...

The Lehman family had publicly broken off their relationship with her, the business empire she built on her own was taken away from her, and her child was facing grave danger.

She felt hopeless.

The news of Jerry deceiving Zoey soon spread like wildfire.

Even so, the Lehman family could only watch as they were no longer related.

Everyone merely reprimanded Jerry regarding his actions but did nothing else.

As for Jerry, he was overjoyed that he had acquired Zoey's business empire easily.

Consequently, the Gott family had become even more powerful than before.

Although it was not comparable to the standards of an ancient family, it was still on par with an imperial family.

"Hmph, did the Lehman family think that they could use me like that? How could they let me marry a woman who had a child? Are they trying to tarnish my reputation?"

"If it weren't for Zoey's empire and the Lehman family's power, I would have never agreed to the marriage! Did she think that she's that irresistible? Hah! How ridiculous!"

"Besides, how could you count on me to raise the child of a traitor? Is she even worth it? She's just an illegitimate child that should have died along with her father instead of staying alive in this world!"

"Anyway, I've heard the news about the assassination organizations going after the child. So I guess we'll receive the news very soon!"

Jerry made the following series of remarks as soon as he had gotten everything he desired.

Meanwhile, Zoey was appalled at the sight of Jerry on TV.

"What a shameless, despicable animal!"

The more Zoey thought about it, the more she became furious as she dug her nails into her palms.

She was in a difficult situation, yet he had scammed her at this moment and made such vicious remarks!

A gentleman! Hah! He's even worse than a villain!

Just you wait! When Levi's back, I will take back everything that I've lost! Mark my words!

"Things are going to get out of hand now, by the looks of it. I'm afraid our people can't keep Evie safe," Emma said with a hoarse voice.

Even though the Jones family had sent an ace like Shadow to protect them, everyone knew that it wasn't enough...

Little Evie seemed to know what was going on as she scrunched up her face in silence.

Judging from her stubborn temper, it reminded Zoey of Levi.

"We can only hide in the basement for now and pray that they won't find us!"

Zoey and Emma carried Evie as they hid in the basement with Syllas, who had prepared sufficient food and water.

They had successfully avoided the assassins once when Levi hid them in the basement of the manor.

Meanwhile, the assassination organizations who had received the assassination order had arrived at North Hampton.

A total of ten assassination organizations had begun their assassination operation simultaneously.

They bypassed Shadow and the other guards who were stationed outside and infiltrated the manor without much difficulty.

However, the assassins were dumbfounded when they found the manor was empty.

"Where are they? Where did they go?"

"They were in the manor the entire time and had never left. How could they disappear in thin air?"

The assassins searched everywhere, but there were no signs of Zoey and the others.

"No, we've been watching them all this time. It's impossible that they've left!"

"The only possibility is that there is a secret room situated somewhere in this manor. Spread out and do a search!"

In the meantime, Zoey and the others were observing the situation through the surveillance cameras in the basement.

"Damn it, they've figured it out!" Zoey gasped in shock as she stared at the surveillance cameras.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1231

It was only a matter of time for the secret room to be discovered albeit being quite hidden.

As expected, the professional assassins located the secret room effortlessly within seconds.

Screech!

Suddenly, the footage from the surveillance camera turned blurry.

That means they've found the hidden cameras too.

With that, it defeats the purpose of having a secret room.

Knock! Knock! Knock!

Hearing the noises coming from above, Zoey and the rest had ants in their pants.

We're all doomed once they get in here.

"We've found it! All that's left is to force it open."

The assassins were all geared up to intrude into the place by force.

"Hey."

Out of the blue, someone tapped the shoulder of an assassin.

The assassin turned around and saw two men staring back at him coldly.

Whoosh!

Before he could say anything, a harsh slap landed on his face and he died on the spot.

The other assassins snapped their bodies around and asked, "Who are you?"

"Levi Garrison."

"What? Levi Garrison? You... you're still alive? This is impossible! You're supposed to be dead!" The assassins were stunned.

"North." Levi called out softly.

"Yes!" North Sky Lord acknowledged.

"Kill them!" ordered Levi.

North Sky Lord struck everyone dead within moments.

He was too terrifying, simply a league above them all.

After cleaning up, they left.

Meanwhile, Zoey had been waiting in the secret room for ages, yet nobody came.

In the end, Sylas was sent to check on the situation outside of the room.

The assassins are gone and everything seems as normal as it can be.

"What.. What is going on here?"

They were flummoxed by the scene before them.

"Could it be Levi who did this?" Everyone suspected him at once.

But, isn't he abroad right now? Not to mention he's a cripple now...

How could he possibly be here to save us?

So, if it's not him, who could it be then?

On their way out, Levi commanded, "We must find out who's the mastermind behind all these."

He wanted to find out who gave the assassination order.

North Sky King nodded in response.

"Master, I've received news that Jerry from Oakland City defrauded Zoey's company."

"Is that so?" Levi's expression changed.

He quickly sought confirmation from the West Sky Lord and was furious to know that Jerry had indeed snatched away all of Zoey's top-notch staff.

How could such a despicable person exist?

After reading Jerry's published remarks on the matter, Levi blew a fuse.

"Jerry Gott must die!" He spat as a murderous glint flashed through his eyes.

Meanwhile, Jerry organized a grand banquet at the Lafite Manor in Oakland City.

The successful appropriation of Morris Group had elevated his family status and made them first among the imperial families.

As a consequence, he also emerged first in the Oakland City's Heir Leaderboard.

Giddy with delight, he organized a special banquet to celebrate his proud achievements.

"Mr. Gott, we were shocked to the bone when we thought that you would really marry Zoey Lopez!"

"Turns out you've got some amazing tricks up your sleeve."

"Hahaha..." Everyone cheered.

A satisfied sneer settled upon Jerry's face. "I'm not foolish enough to marry the woman of Erudia's greatest traitor and keep a surviving minion under my name. How preposterous would that be!"

"Haha, that's right. They aren't worthy to even lick your boots."

Everyone chimed in and echoed their agreements.

Someone asked, "Mr. Gott, people have the perception that you've deceived Zoey and taken away all of her possessions. What would you say about that?"

"I would say that's bulls***! Have you ever considered the reputational damage and loss incurred to me because of that b***h and the bastard? Morris Group was simply compensation. It's supposed to be mine in the first place!" Jerry proclaimed brazenly.

Just then, a commanding voice yelled, "A despicable rat like you should die!"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1232

The voice thundered through the banquet hall and jolted everyone present.

"Who? Who is it?"

Everyone looked around to find the person that had just spoken.

"Who dares to call me despicable?" Jerry sneered.

Now that he had absolute power and authority, he stopped pretending to be chivalrous.

After all, his influence had further elevated after taking over Morris Group.

So what if others know my true colors? But who's the one who dares call me despicable?

Does he have a death wish?

"It's me!" A cold voice was heard.

At that moment, two figures emerged from the entrance.

One of them was unfamiliar to everyone as no one had seen him before.

As for the other...

"Y-you..."

"A ghost!"

"It's a ghost!"

When the crowd saw the familiar face, they screamed in shock.

However, those that were sitting in front couldn't see. They wondered what was going on when they saw everyone else running around aimlessly shrieking their heads off.

Jerry led the other guests to see what the commotion was about and was shocked by what he saw.

"L-Levi Garrison... How can it... Be you."

"Why... Why are you still... Alive?"

Jerry staggered backwards and almost lost his balance.

Many in Oakland City had seen Levi before.

As such, they could feel panic started rising within them by the sight of him.

Isn't Levi supposed to be dead?

Why is he still alive?

Not to mention his body has recovered?

How is this possible?

How can a dead person suddenly appear in Erudia?

After all, everyone knew that the news was true.

The Iron Brigade even organized a funeral for him on purpose where they cremated his body.

Furthermore, it was widely reported that Levi was dead.

Therefore, it was impossible for him to be alive.

Everyone was so frightened that their knees wobbled.

They had the urge to run but found that their legs wouldn't budge as they stared at the supposedly dead man before them.

Levi approached Jerry step by step. "Who says I'm dead? Can't you see I'm doing just fine?"

Slap! Slap! Slap!

Levi slapped Jerry's cheeks.

"I..."

Jerry gulped and he fell on his knees, staring at Levi in horror.

Despite the burning sensation on his cheeks, he could still feel the warmth in Levi's hands.

Levi is really alive!

“You... How can you still be alive?”

Despite his reluctance to believe, the reality of the situation was right before his eyes.

Jerry felt like having a heart attack.

“What?”

“Levi is still alive?”

The whole banquet was in an uproar.

It was considered earth-shattering news not just in Erudia but also in the world.

“You... Why are you here?”

Jerry’s face was filled with horror.

“For doing something so despicable while I’m away, It’s only natural that I am here to kill you!”

Levi’s eyes were filled with murderous intent.

“Kill me? You can’t kill me. Levi, so what if you’re still alive? You are a traitor to Erudia and have been exiled for it. If Winsor finds out that you’re here, do you know what the consequences for you are?”

“Not only will you lose your life, but even your family will also be exiled from Erudia.”

Although Azure Dragon and the others had cleared Levi’s name, only those within military circles knew about it.

The common folks were still unaware of Levi’s innocence.

Therefore, Levi was still a traitor in their eyes and for that reason, Jerry wasn’t afraid.

“Levi, why don’t I give you a chance? As long as you leave Erudia quietly, I will pretend that I didn’t see you. In fact, I won’t even report this to Winsor.”

Jerry scrutinized Levi in a condescending manner and was confident that he had the upper hand.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1233

Levi laughed. “That’s a good idea. Why don’t you inform Winsor right this moment? Tell him that I have returned to Erudia in defiance of my exile. Get him to come here and kick me out.”

Levi’s confident demeanor shocked Jerry.

Isn’t he afraid?

“Levi, I have no idea why you’re still alive and why your body has fully recovered. But once Winsor finds out about this, you will be in a world of trouble. After all, he was the one that gave the order to banish you and to forbid you from ever returning to Erudia. The moment you return, you are in open defiance of Winsor and his orders,” Jerry cleared his throat and declared.

In response, Levi simply chuckled.

Why would I be afraid of Winsor? This is getting interesting.

“Levi, you are someone that has lost to Winsor, he’s your bane and you know it! If he can beat you once, he can definitely beat you again.”

“Once you are arrested by him for causing trouble in Erudia, do you think he will let you live?” Jerry sneered.

The exact same thought crossed everyone’s minds.

After all, many in Oakland City had seen with their own eyes how Winsor defeated Levi.

In their minds, Winsor was stronger than Levi and Levi’s appearance was considered an open provocation towards him.

Once Winsor found out Levi was here, the consequences would be dire.

“So get out of here now! I’ll let you off this one time,” Jerry scoffed.

“Beat him up.” Levi ordered.

Slap!

North Sky Lord approached and slapped Jerry forcefully, causing the latter’s flesh to split and blood to gush out.

“Argh!” Jerry screamed in agony.

Slap!

North Sky Lord slapped him again and his face turned into a bloody mess.

Screams of anguish reverberated through the hall as if a pig were being slaughtered inside.

Slap!

He was slapped again.

By now, Jerry was cringing on the ground in utter pain, his face an unrecognizable mess.

North Sky Lord pulled him up and rained punches down upon him.

The impact was so great that bloody holes appeared on Jerry's body.

In the end, Jerry died from the overwhelming pain.

"How dare you bully my family? Hmph, for that you deserve death!"

Levi's eyes flashed with anger.

When everyone heard his words, they held their breath in fear and broke into a cold sweat.

It was a terrifying sight.

No one expected that Levi would return in such a manner.

It was as if he had come back from hell itself.

The next day.

Zoey was filled with questions as Morris Group was once again back in her hands.

What wrong with Jerry? Has he gone nuts?

He just returned the company to me after spending so much effort in taking over it?

"It doesn't make sense! Someone must have interfered."

...

At North Hampton, everything was safe for the moment.

However, there was an uproar within The Dark World when they realized the assassins sent to kill Forlevia had all disappeared.

They were puzzled as to where the assassins could have gone.

After further investigations, they reconfirmed that there was no one at Zoey's side to protect her.

How is it that the assassins disappeared? Is someone protecting her? But that's impossible!

Soon, The Dark World sent out another assassination order with an increased reward from the original one billion to ten billion.

The tenfold reward increase was done in order to attract even more powerful assassins.

Just as expected, an ancient assassin organization emerged in response to the assassination order.

As the saying goes, money makes the world go round.

The handsome reward was enough to attract an ancient assassin organization that had been in hiding for decades to reemerged.

Also, it demonstrated the resolve of the employer to have Forlevia killed. They wanted to make sure Levi's child was dead.

"Another assassination order has been issued. Check the source! I want to know who issued it."

Levi, who had been watching from the shadows finally found his opportunity.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1234

This time, too many people had sacrificed their lives for Levi.

He couldn't allow them to die in vain, hence he had to have his revenge.

The one who gave the assassination order had to be ferreted out.

"It's a pity that my recovery was too slow. If only I had recovered faster, they wouldn't have to die."

Thinking back to the gruesome scene, Levi clenched his fists subconsciously.

North Sky Lord couldn't help but ask, "Master, I have always wanted to ask..."

"You want to ask how I recovered?" Levi surmised.

"That's right. I was surprised when you recovered from that condition in less than a month. Furthermore, I feel that you are now stronger than before. I don't understand what's going on anymore."

North Sky Lord's face was filled with surprise.

Levi recalled his memories, "Eight years ago, I was framed and sent to prison. Before they sent me in, they made sure my limbs were all broken as punishment. Just when I was at the lowest point of my life, I had a stroke of luck. I met my benefactor in prison whom I'm more than willing to address as Master."

"He taught me an ancient technique which was perfect for me due to the disabilities I suffered then."

North Sky Lord was puzzled. "Huh?"

"The technique required one's body to be broken before it can be rebuilt. If I were of ordinary health then, it wouldn't have worked at all."

North Sky Lord understood immediately. "So you're saying that with your limbs broken, you were in the perfect condition to practice that technique."

"Exactly! Before long, my body quickly recovered in prison. Moreover, I made a name for myself fighting in prison and that was how I was drafted."

Levi revealed a secret that he never told anyone before.

“So that means that this time, given the injuries you sustained were even worse, you would then be in a better position to practice that technique!”

North Sky Lord managed to link what Levi told him to his recent recovery.

Levi nodded, “Yep, that’s right.”

“Furthermore, I managed to get a better understanding of the technique this time. In fact, I fixed all the flaws that it previously had.”

“What?”

North Sky Lord’s eyes almost popped out of their sockets.

So that’s how Levi became the invincible God of War. It all came down to an ancient technique made for cripples.

Now that he has fixed the technique’s flaws, God knows how much stronger he is now.

It only goes to show how intelligent he is to be able to perfect such an ancient technique.

In fact, not every cripple can effectively practice it. One had to be intellectually gifted and equally tenacious.

North Sky Lord shifted the focus of the conversation. “Master, I’m curious as to who your Master is, given that he knows such a powerful technique.”

“He is indeed a mysterious man. It’s obvious that the prison can’t hold him, but he chose to stay there his entire life.”

Levi smiled. “He doesn’t want me to address him as ‘Master’ and forbids me from telling anyone else that I met him.”

“Huh? Why? Besides, how did someone as powerful as him landed himself in prison?”

North Sky Lord was confused.

"Beats me. Even in prison, he pretended not to know me and didn't allow me to get close to him. His reason was that he had offended someone powerful and whoever is close to him will suffer a terrible tragedy," Levi explained.

North Sky Lord was getting more puzzled as the conversation went on.

"Why does it sound so mysterious?"

Levi shook his head. "That was the first thing that came to my mind too. How is it possible to have a tragedy befall someone just for getting close? After that, I realized he was talking about his identity. All the members of his clan were labeled as criminals the day they were born. Anyone who came into contact with them was also punished."

"Huh? How can that be?" North Sky Lord exclaimed.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1235

North Sky Lord had always considered himself to be extremely knowledgeable.

For example, members of The Calamity were not known to exist in the world.

However, he was still surprised to hear about Levi's master.

A whole clan labeled as criminals the moment they are born?

Even those that come into contact with them are punished?

What did they do to deserve such a harsh punishment?

"I have not told anyone about my secret in the prison. Thinking about it now, it seems my master has saved me twice already," Levi lamented.

The world is still a beautiful place, where the good outnumbers the bad.

There are still many who are good to me including those that I hardly know.

For the sake of all those people, I have to live and get to the bottom of this.

"Don't you plan on visiting him?" North Sky Lord asked.

"When I was drafted, he declared that our relationship ended there and then. Going forward, we were no longer supposed to know each other."

Levi felt a sense of remorse over the matter. "That's why I can only greet him 'Master' in my heart."

"How strong are you now?" North Sky Lord inquired.

"In my current condition, the poison from the Blood King Palace will no longer affect me."

Gasp!

North Sky Lord sucked in a breath.

The Blood King Palace poison was the culmination of decades of hard work and massive resources.

To think that it's ineffective against Levi now...

How strong is Levi now, really?

Even Winsor may not be able to touch a hair on him, let alone defeat him.

It's amusing how Winsor still thinks he is stronger and wants to fight Levi again.

The Levi of the past was already stronger than you, let alone Levi in his current state.

Do you even stand a chance?

Meanwhile, Winsor wasn't resting on his laurels either as he had focused his attention on The Calamity.

Even though the Dragonites warned him to stay away from The Calamity, Winsor's curiosity got the better of him.

He was fanatical about martial arts and was obsessed with looking for someone to fight. He would seek out the best warriors wherever he could find them.

When he heard that The Calamity had an invincible warrior in the form of North Sky Lord, he set his eyes on him.

"I want to defeat him and make him submit to me."

Just then, Zar reported, "Asura, there's a middle-aged man outside that wants to see you."

"Alright, follow me."

Winsor headed out immediately.

Outside, there was a middle-aged man in a white robe, he had exquisite features and exuded an elegant vibe.

In fact, he gave others a sense of otherworldliness.

"Master!"

When Winsor saw him, he stood at attention out of respect.

The middle-aged man patted Winsor on his back. "Congratulations, you've finally taken over the God of War's position."

"I hope I made you proud, Master," Winsor remarked as he bowed.

His master nodded. "You did. You've done a good job, Winsor. Levi is a lowborn, how can he compare to someone as noble as you? If you had lost, you would have humiliated all the great families."

"People say that a poor family has a better chance of producing a successful son, while noble families produce failures. However, I want to show them that there's no way a humble family can produce anyone capable. A lowborn can never beat one who is born from a noble family," his master declared haughtily as if he wanted to prove a point to the world.

"Therefore I was furious when the position of Erudia's God of War was taken away by a lowborn. I had wanted you to challenge him many times and we finally got our opportunity."

Winsor smiled, "That's right. Everyone thinks that Levi was borne of Erudia's top ancient family. But they didn't know that an ancient family is nothing to us."

The middle-aged man smiled smugly.

The most important detail of all was that his surname was Finch.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1236

Winsor's master was none other than the man that Levi was looking for – Mr. Finch.

His full name was Sampson Finch.

He was the one responsible for plotting to kill Levi.

He had Tenichi use the Blood King Palace to tempt Levi away and poisoned him.

He was also the one who ordered the assassination of Forlevia twice.

Everything was put in place by him from behind the scenes.

When Damien was fighting against Levi, the Garrison family cheated so that Damien wouldn't lose.

However, what they did was nothing compared to Sampson.

To ensure Winsor's victory, Sampson put in place many traps and even had the Four Warriors help him from the shadows.

They had to cheat in order to defeat Levi.

Sampson's objective was simple. He felt that Levi didn't deserve to be Erudia's God of War and wanted his own disciple to take on the title.

The moment Levi was awarded the title of God of War, he was already in Winsor's way.

Ever since Winsor was young, Sampson groomed him for the title only to have Levi stole it from them.

Therefore, it was a development that they hated to see.

The place where Winsor was born was extremely secluded. It wasn't accessible for members of high society let alone ordinary folk.

It was considered home to a legendary great family.

A family that was a hundred years old was considered a prominent family while one that was a thousand years old an ancient family.

However, a great family had a longer and more illustrious history.

It wasn't just comprised of a particular race or clan but a combination of very old groups.

A great family had usually existed for two to three thousand years and stood the test of time.

Therefore, they were more powerful than anyone could imagine.

For example, God class warriors were so rare that the Eighteen-Nation Alliance could only gather a hundred of them.

Ultimate class warriors were even harder to come by. The Harbinger of Death alone could defeat everyone before him.

However, a great family was filled with God class and Ultimate class warriors.

That was how much their skills differed.

Just by comparing strength alone, a great family within Erudia is more powerful than a single nation overseas.

Sampson and his companions had their own circle and their own rules.

They were above it all as if they were Gods themselves.

To them, the ordinary folk in the mundane world were just insects crawling about their daily lives.

They considered the life of an ordinary person the lowest of classes and view them with disdain.

Even the weakest member of a great family was someone extremely influential in the mundane world.

Winsor was the only one of Sampson's disciples who stepped into the mundane world.

When he first arrived, he was like a wolf being unleashed on unsuspecting sheep.

He overwhelmed everyone else both in terms of power and fame.

The reason he was sent out into the world was that they wanted the world to fear them for being all-powerful.

Winsor was so terrifying that he single-handedly built the Asura Army and had the support of Zar and three other disciples.

His aim was to win the title of God of War but he didn't expect Levi to beat him to it after coming out of nowhere.

Therefore, Sampson and Winsor resented the fact.

Winsor was a descendant of a great family, so he would never accept that he had lost to a nobody.

Ever since then, they had been looking for an opportunity but Levi had never lost a battle over the last few years.

It wasn't until Levi left the army that the opportunity finally presented itself.

Just as how Damien couldn't lose to Levi, it was the same for them as it was a matter of pride.

If a reclusive great family such as theirs was defeated, they would surely become a laughing stock.

Therefore, they had to do whatever it takes to guarantee Winsor's victory over Levi.

Only then can they take over the title of God of War.

After putting in so much effort, they finally did it.

They even managed to kill Levi off in the process. And now, they wanted to kill Forlevia too just to prevent any eventualities.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1237

However, it was ironic that Winsor thought he had beaten Levi fair and square.

He was oblivious to the fact that everything was arranged by his master and the fact that Levi decided to lose on purpose in the end.

In reality, Winsor's own capabilities only made up one-third of the factors for his victory over Levi.

"Master, why are you here?" Winsor was curious.

The great families owned many ancient artifacts and technologies such as martial art techniques, medical knowledge, etc.

There was nothing in the mundane world that was interesting enough for them.

Therefore, Winsor couldn't fathom why his master left their home.

Ever since he left home at fifteen, he never saw his master again.

Unbeknownst to him, however, his master had actually left their home in the beginning and was busy scheming against Levi.

"I am here to visit you. I can see that you're doing well for yourself since you are now the one and only God of War of Erudia."

Sampson patted Winsor on his shoulder.

Winsor sighed, "Unfortunately, it could never erase the fact that the first one was Levi."

"No, he is already dead. You are the only one now!"

"Master, I have something to get off my chest. Despite beating Levi, many people still do not respect me. In fact, they still have faith in Levi."

Winsor voiced out his concerns.

Many claimed that he had the advantage because Levi was already exhausted from battling consecutively.

Every time he heard a comment like that, it made his blood boil.

Sampson snorted, "Hmph! They're just a bunch of ignorant scum. We live in a world where the fittest survive. The winner takes all while the loser doesn't deserve to complain."

"If they are unconvinced, you will have to demonstrate it with your power."

Sampson's whole body emanated a cold killing intent.

Winsor lamented, "If only Levi was still alive. I can battle him once more and shut everyone else up once and for all."

"That's no longer possible. He is already six feet under."

Sampson had reconfirmed with Tenichi about Levi's death.

"It's such a pity or else I could defeat him once again."

Winsor was extremely confident in his skills and cared a lot about how others saw him.

After visiting Winsor, Sampson wanted to check on whether Forlevia had been killed.

Meanwhile, Levi and his men were monitoring the assassin organizations. At that moment, West Sky Lord arrived with news.

She had masqueraded as an assassin to accept the assassination order and discovered who issued it.

It was Olivia Garcia!

Due to the pain she suffered for losing her son, Olivia wanted Levi and his whole family dead.

Mr. Finch realized the opportunity and seized it.

Despite the fact that he was the real mastermind, he was very careful in his methods. He made sure that everything he did was done by someone else's hands.

Levi was also aware that Olivia was just the front and there was someone else instructing her.

Therefore, he wanted to ferret out the mastermind by going through Olivia.

After fending off a few waves of assassins that came for Forlevia, Levi and North Sky Lord returned to Oakland City.

However, Olivia wasn't at the Garrison clan ancestral compound. Instead, she was in a luxury manor.

Inside the room, she was pacing around and was visibly troubled.

After all, the first assassination order had failed and all the assassin organizations involved had also disappeared.

Although the assassins she hired this time were even more terrifying, she still couldn't rid herself of the sense of dread she felt.

"I must succeed this time. Damien, Mom will avenge you! Not only do I want Levi to be disposed of, but I also want his family to be massacred," Olivia pleaded.

"Don't worry, the assassins we sent this time are extremely deadly. Death awaits anyone who protects them."

A voice rang out from behind her suddenly as Sampson entered the room.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1238

Olivia heaved a sigh of relief and asked, "Mr. Finch, what happened the first time? Why did all the assassins disappear?"

Truth be told, Sampson had paid no attention to the matter all this while.

As such, when Olivia suddenly brought it up, he didn't know how to answer.

"Perhaps Zoey has some formidable bodyguards protecting her? Nonetheless, the assassin organization we sent this time was one that had remained hidden for decades."

Sampson was filled with confidence.

After all, the assassin organization that accepted the mission this time was very secretive and was deadly in its methods.

Olivia asked curiously, "Given that you come from the Great Family of Frostford, why are you so fixated on an ordinary person like Levi?"

Based on Olivia's understanding, a great family was greater than that of an ancient family.

Erudia had Four Great Families. They were the Great Family of Frostford, Great Family of Southford, Great Family of Eastford, and Great Family of Westford.

Sampson came from the Great Family of Frostford.

A great family combined a group of ancient families and clans into a larger faction.

They control many of Erudia's ancient artifacts and technologies.

The simplest ones were martial art techniques and medical knowledge.

They were even feared by ancient families such as the Garrison clan, let alone ordinary folk.

Therefore, even righteous men like Dale Lehman were forced to abandon Zoey.

No one dared to stand against a great family.

Sampson replied with a smile, "It's because Levi broke all the rules."

"Mr. Finch, is the current God of War, Winsor, related to you?"

Olivia was a smart woman. She remembered when Sampson asked her about Winsor previously.

Sampson admitted, "Yes, he is my disciple."

"However, he isn't the most exceptional young man within the Great Family of Frostford. He's just considered above average," Sampson added.

Gasp!

Olivia caught her breath.

How powerful are they?

Winsor is considered above average and he is already able to take the position of God of War?

Isn't this reclusive faction just ridiculously powerful?

Without a doubt, the strongest and most powerful are always well hidden.

Or perhaps they're just so far away from us that we can't reach them.

Olivia had always assumed that Damien was the most exceptional young man in the world.

But now, it seems it was her knowledge that was limited.

For ancient and imperial families, their status was measured in terms of power, influence, and wealth.

Martial prowess had always been frowned upon and hardly shown any attention.

However, to the most powerful or those that live beyond the circles of ordinary men, the real measurement of a man's strength is their martial prowess.

It was a world where the fittest survive.

As long as one was strong in martial arts, one's status, wealth, and power were secured.

In other words, when one was proficient enough in martial arts, matters of the mundane world no longer mattered.

Using Winsor as an example, he knew nothing about wealth or managing a business.

He also didn't have connections to help him.

All he could rely on was his own fists to claim the title of Asura.

That was the definition of the martial way.

Everyone will submit in the face of absolute power.

Therefore, within a great family, it was common for everyone to focus on martial arts training. Ever since they were young, they would be trained in the martial way to become formidable warriors.

That was the reason why a great family would always be packed with God class and Ultimate class warriors.

Although they lived within their own circle, they were not afraid of being out of touch with the outside world.

As long as they had overwhelming power, they would be kings whenever they appeared in society.

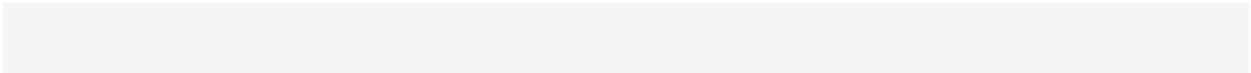
Winsor's appearance proved that point.

"Ordinary people like you are just ants to us," Sampson sneered.

Even though he was ridiculing her, Olivia didn't dare to retort.

Bang!

Just then, the manor's main door was busted open by a kick.



Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1239

“Olivia! Come out this instance!”

A cold voice reverberated throughout.

The manor’s hundreds of security guards charged ahead.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

One by one, the security guards were sent flying.

Two figures walked into the manor’s living hall with bodies strewn all around them.

The Garrison clan’s elite security guards fell like flies.

In the hall.

Olivia’s expression drastically changed.

Even Sampson’s entourage was shocked.

Who is it?

How dare they cause trouble here?

A moment later, two figures emerged in the hall.

“What? How can it be y-you...”

"Levi... Garrison... How can you still be alive?"

Levi's sudden appearance threw Olivia and Sampson into utter shock.

After all, a dead man had just appeared right before their eyes. It would be weird if they weren't surprised at all.

Olivia's eyes looked as if they were going to pop out.

"I have died a wrongful death. As such, I'm here for my revenge!" Levi declared as he burst into laughter.

"No... I didn't kill you. It wasn't me, it's them..."

Olivia was on the verge of despair and couldn't believe that Levi was still alive.

Even Sampson, who was from a great family, was stunned for almost a minute. Gasping in disbelief, he asked, "How is it that you're still alive?"

Levi stared at him and sneered, "Mr. Finch?"

"You actually know me? Damn... I've fallen into a trap."

Mr. Finch was a smart man and immediately realized what was going on.

"How is that possible? You could hardly move then and all your bodyguards were killed. How can you still be alive? If you have recovered, you should have taken action then..." Sampson ranted in surprise.

The mention of that incident struck a raw nerve within Levi.

All the comrades that died for me...

Damn it!

Wouldn't it be great if I could fight back earlier?

Everyone wouldn't have to die then.

However, his recovery simply needed more time.

Sampson glanced at North Sky Lord and said, "No, someone must have saved you. From there, they created the illusion of your death. Even your own subordinates have been fooled."

"But, how can you still recover? It's just impossible!"

Sampson had sent his men to examine Levi's body and was sure that there was no way he could recover.

He was supposed to be paralyzed for life.

Even the ancient medical techniques and doctors of the Great Family of Frostford couldn't heal him, let alone Levi healing himself.

How the hell did he recover?

It was already a surprise that he didn't die, but to recover in such a short time?

The Great Family of Frostford had many ancient texts and Sampson had gone through them many times.

But he never came across such a scenario.

Furthermore, he had a good grasp of modern medical technology and clearly understood that Levi's condition couldn't be treated.

So how did he do it?

Levi ignored him as his gaze fell upon the Four Warriors standing behind Sampson.

"Were you the ones who attacked at the crucial time when the Garrison clan, myself, and Winsor were engaged in battle?" Levi asked.

"Huh?"

The Four Warriors were stunned and hung their heads subconsciously.

They were indeed the ones who helped Winsor cheat in the battle with Levi.

As they were also members of the Great Family of Frostford, it was humiliating for them to be exposed for cheating by Levi.

At the end of the day, their pride still flowed strongly in their blood.

“So it really was you!” Levi sneered.

“Nonsense! My disciple, Winsor, beat you fair and square. Thousands witness it with their own eyes. How can you say that they helped in the shadows? It’s just ridiculous!”

“Every member of the Great Family of Frostford is exceptional. They would never use such unscrupulous means.”

There was no way that Sampson was going to confess to something like that.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1240

Sampson stared at Levi and scoffed, "Levi, I never expected to see this side of you. Are you trying to find excuses for your own defeat?"

Levi simply smiled in response.

You're really shameless to still deny it.

Sampson continued, "Do you still want to claim that your body has been poisoned? And that you had to fight the warriors from both the Blood King Palace and Garrison clan consecutively? And that my disciple won because we cheated?" Sampson threw all the questions back at Levi.

He tried to turn the situation around by making it look like Levi was making excuses for losing.

Levi replied with a smile, "That's correct. What you have said is true. By the way, there's one more thing I need to tell you. I actually lost to Winsor on purpose because I wanted to see who the real mastermind was."

"Hahaha..." Sampson burst into laughter.

"You lost to my disciple on purpose? That's just ridiculous. Losers really are good at finding excuses. You will never beat my disciple in your entire life!" Sampson sneered.

Although that was what he said, he was actually aware of the fact that Levi was more powerful than Winsor. Or else, they wouldn't have needed to cheat.

However, when Levi claimed that he had lost on purpose, it was the ultimate insult to Sampson.

He had made massive sacrifices to scheme and plot.

But in the end, Levi claimed that it was his choice to lose.

Sampson just couldn't accept it.

"That aside, there's no such thing as real fairness in this world. Especially not when you're the best warrior in Erudia. You should have been prepared for all eventualities. A loss is a loss and you have no excuse," Sampson berated.

With Sampson twisting the facts, even Olivia was convinced that Levi was just making excuses for his loss.

"Are all noble families just as shameless as you are?" Levi asked.

Despite the repeated proclamations of how virtuous they are and the noble blood that flowed within them, their actions were utterly despicable.

"Insolence! How dare you insult Master!"

"Do you want to die?"

The Four Warriors behind Sampson cursed as they glared at Levi in a bloodthirsty manner.

They were proud of their identity and the fact that their master was someone extremely well respected and feared.

Hence, they would not tolerate any insults from ordinary men.

"Do you know who we are? We are the Great Family of Frostford and are more powerful than ancient families."

"My junior, Winsor, is only considered above average within the Great Family of Frostford. That alone should tell you how terrifying we are."

The few of them made their identities clear.

Although the Great Family of Frostford was really powerful, Levi could still crush someone like Winsor with just a finger.

Hence, he saw them as a joke instead of a threat.

“The Great Family of Frostford? If you anger me, I’ll crush all of you,” Levi glowered.

Even Olivia couldn’t stand it anymore.

Isn’t Levi getting too reckless to ignore the Great Family of Frostford?

Does he know how many God class warriors they have?

It’s easily a hundred, or a few hundred!

Not to mention that doesn’t include the Ultimate class fighters yet.

The Harbinger of Death who was an Ultimate class warrior killed all of Levi’s bodyguards.

And the Great Family of Frostford has at least tens of them.

It is something that is just unimaginable.

If they were to go to battle, they will annihilate their enemies.

So on what basis is Levi ridiculing them?

“Levi, you’re just spouting nonsense. I don’t care how you healed your body, but that can’t be the reason for you to insult the Great Family of Frostford,” Sampson roared.

Levi smiled smugly at him. “I suppose you’re Winsor’s master?”

“Of course!”

“Then you must be stronger than him?”

“That goes without saying.”

“Fine. Since you claim that I’m not Winsor’s match, I’ll beat his master to show you then.”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1241

Levi had lost interest in Sampson's disciple, Winsor.

He now felt that it was more challenging to defeat Winsor's master.

"Hahaha..." Everyone laughed.

Has Levi gone mad?

At most, he is a little stronger than Winsor, how dare he challenge Sampson.

Sampson has been an Ultimate class warrior for more than twenty years.

His power now is simply terrifying.

To challenge him means certain death.

"Shouldn't you defeat us first before you challenge our master?" The Four Warriors scoffed.

Sampson wasn't the only famous Ultimate class warrior around.

Even the Four Warriors were Ultimate class warriors as well.

The Four Warriors were Sampson's most outstanding disciples. They were all stronger than Winsor in terms of power and talent.

They were also the ones who interfered in Levi's battle that day.

Hence, they had a good grasp of how strong Levi was.

Moreover, they assumed that he had just recovered from a grievous injury and was definitely no match for them.

After all, there were now a total of five Ultimate class warriors standing before him.

One Ultimate class warrior could take on a ten thousand strong army.

With five of them, they were simply invincible.

Levi's eyes flashed with murderous intent. "In that case, I'll kill the four of you first before I kill your master."

"Such insolence!"

"Such impudence!"

"Only death awaits you!"

"I'll have you kneel as atonement for your words!"

Amidst the mishmash of words, Sampson's four disciples attacked.

Boom!

The Four Warriors charged at Levi in furious rage.

In Erudia, a God class warrior was adept at using the Ancient Arts of Qi.

They would have massive strength and a boundless amount of energy.

Their bodies would be as tough as solid steel.

They were able to channel their energy in a way that increases their attacking power while elevating their defensive strength.

The biggest difference an Ultimate class warrior had was that they could send shockwaves out of their body to harm an enemy.

In layman terms, it was considered a release of energy.

Just like the shockwave caused by an exploding bomb, it was equally devastating in terms of its destructive power.

That was the reason why during the battle between Levi and Winsor, the Garrison clan residence was almost destroyed.

Before the four Ultimate class warriors came close, they already unleashed an invincible shockwave.

Its power was similar to that of a Tsunami.

The huge force caused a gale to blow through the hall and destroyed all the objects in it.

Crack! Crack!

The glass windows were blasted into smithereens.

In fact, the whole hall itself was shaking as if there was an earthquake.

It felt as if everything was going to collapse.

Olivia was dumbfounded.

Are these the young men of the Great Family of Frostford?

They are ridiculously powerful!

It's simply unimaginable!

Olivia realized that despite being the top ancient family in Erudia, their exposure was still limited.

"Die, Levi!"

The four Ultimate class warriors surrounded Levi and attacked from all four directions.

Just when North Sky Lord wanted to join the fray, Levi shook his head.

This was something Levi had to deal with it himself.

That being said, Levi simply stood there and did nothing.

When Sampson saw Levi's response, he was stunned.

In the next moment, however, he burst out laughing.

He can't even deal with my disciples and yet he wants to challenge me?

The audacity!

"Levi, since you're not dead yet, I'll let my disciples kill you again."

Sampson smiled triumphantly.

The next moment, the four Ultimate class warriors' deadly attacks reached Levi.

They were confident that Levi would be torn into pieces by their attack.

Bam!

Bam!

Bam!

The four attacks landed on Levi and made a thunderous sound.

Boom!

However, in the next second, Levi unleashed an even greater shockwave.

"Argh!"

“Argh!”

The four Ultimate class warriors were sent flying backward by a powerful burst of energy. All of them spewed blood in mid-air before crashing onto the ground, dead.

The hall fell into a state of ghastly silence.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1242

Olivia’s eyes almost popped out.

Why are they not moving?

Why are the four Ultimate class warriors lying still?

Levi didn’t make a move at all, but all four of them were sent flying...

How powerful did Levi become?

Isn’t he supposed to be dead? Or crippled?

How did he end up getting stronger?

Sampson too was utterly shocked.

He was well aware of how strong his four best disciples were and was stunned when Levi sent them flying.

Th-th-this... Is not real!

“Not only have you recovered from your injuries, but you have also regained your strength?”

Sampson’s expression changed drastically.

How is that possible?

Levi was poisoned by the Blood King Palace and was crippled by them.

It’s already amazing that he survived, but to regain his strength?

This is something even the Great Family of Frostford can’t achieve and is unheard of throughout its three-thousand-year history!

How can one man from modern society accomplish it?

Most of the ancient medical knowledge and techniques are monopolized by the great families.

Therefore, very little of that knowledge flowed into modern society.

So how did Levi achieve it?

Sampson was curious.

If he managed to get his hands on this technique, he would be highly valued in the Great Family of Frostford.

Once this technique was made public, it would shock the whole world.

That was how impressive it was.

After all, Levi’s technique simply defied nature.

The idea that a cripple could be turned into the God of War was something unimaginable.

“Levi, tell me how you recovered and I will let you live.”

Sampson began to take interest in Levi's amazing technique.

He knew that the moment other powerful men or organizations found out about it, they too would scramble for it.

Levi would be hunted for having such valuable knowledge.

The reason Sampson dared to say those words was because he had full confidence in his strength, despite the fact that Levi had beaten four Ultimate class warriors.

For his part, Levi only had a singular thought in mind when facing Sampson – revenge.

"Did you work with others to revive the Blood King Palace so that you can force me to leave?" Levi asked.

"Yes, I did. But it was a pity that Winsor was sent to protect your wife and child. It was such a pity indeed!"

Sampson's face was filled with remorse.

"Did you plot with the Blood King Palace to poison me?"

"That's right!"

"Did you send men to disrupt my battle with Winsor from the shadows?"

"Yes!"

"Did you send men to assassinate me?"

"Of course!"

"Did you frame me and had me exiled for betraying Erudia?"

"Indeed, I did!"

"Did you plot with outsiders to kill three hundred and fifty-eight of my good men?"

By then, Levi's eyes were red and his voice sounded raspy.

The gruesome scenes of Northgale flashed before him.

The Anonymous Eighty of the West...

The few prominent families of Oakland City...

Jonah Garrison, who fought till his last breath despite his age.

The Four Kings, who clung to the thighs of the Harbinger of Death even in death.

And Hades, who was resolute in not letting go despite being beaten to a pulp.

...

One by one, all the faces both familiar and unfamiliar flashed through his mind.

Kill! Kill! Kill!

Avenge them for they cannot die in vain!

Their blood shall not flow for nothing!

Sampson looked at Levi and sneered, "That's right. I was the one who planned everything. They're just insects, so their death means nothing to me. It's just a pity I didn't manage to kill you."

Sampson didn't care for human lives at all, even if they were his comrades.

"Levi, I realized that there are tons of people who hate you and want you dead. Hahaha, I could easily gather them with a snap of my fingers."

Sampson burst out in a cruel laughter.

"Damn you, Sampson! Does Erudia even have a place in your heart? Many of them were your comrades. How could you be so cruel to kill them?"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1243

Sampson replied with a smile, "I always teach my disciples one principle, which is the weak do not deserve to live."

"They were simply too weak. If they were a little stronger, they would still be alive. In the end, their death was caused by their weakness. They can't blame anyone else."

Levi was speechless as Sampson's words shocked him.

Did the weak offend you?

Do they not have the right to live?

We live in a time where everyone is equal!

The age where men are separated into different classes is over!

If the Great Family of Frostford insists on following such a ridiculous principle, I will pummel you till you face reality and admit to your mistake.

Sampson sneered at Levi, "Ultimately, this matter has nothing to do with me. It's all because you are weak."

"So what if I got my disciples to cheat or even poison you? What can you do about it? If I kill you this time, who would know the truth?"

Sampson laughed again.

Within a great family, only the fittest survive. Therefore, everyone was capable of doing anything just for survival.

It was the same reason why such old powers had disconnected themselves from modern society.

The other reason was that they couldn't be restrained as they were simply too strong.

With so many Ultimate class warriors among them, no one could control them if they were infuriated.

"Is Erudia not important to you?" Levi felt his heart ached at Sampson's words.

The three hundred comrades had died in vain.

Sampson is not the least bit remorseful.

Sampson scoffed, "I only care about myself and nothing else. The world belongs to the strong so stop giving me those b*llshit!"

Levi spat, "You went through so much trouble to plot against me just for your own selfish gains? You've really done it now!"

"Comrades, are you watching now? Today, I, Levi Garrison, will avenge you by killing this b**tard!" Levi bellowed into the sky.

"Hahaha..." Sampson laughed deviously.

"Let me repeat myself. As long as you hand over your recovery technique to me, I will spare your life," Sampson warned Levi again.

"Die, you assh*le!"

Levi gritted his teeth and sprang forward.

Boom!

He threw an explosive punch.

Sampson raised his right hand and blocked the punch. Demonstrating the power of one who has been an Ultimate class warrior for twenty years.

Crack!

However, at the moment of impact, fault lines emerged on the ground beneath his feet and stretched for a few thousand meters.

“This is for Jonah Garrison!”

That punch caused Sampson’s expression to drastically change.

What a powerful punch!

Before he could react, the second punch was almost upon him...

Boom!

Levi threw his second punch.

Sampson sank into the ground further. By now, his ankles were below ground level.

‘This is for Hades!’

Boom!

The third punch came.

Sampson continued to be hammered into the ground with his calves now buried.

“This is for the comrades of South Hampton!”

Boom!

The fourth blow came.

Sampson was buried deeper into the ground with his knees now covered.

"This is for the brother-in-arms of Oakland City!"

Boom!

The fifth blow landed.

Sampson sank further into the ground.

"This is for the Anonymous Eighty of the West!"

Boom!

Levi threw his sixth punch.

Half of Sampson's body was below ground now.

"This for the Four Kings!"

...

Boom!

"This is for the comrades of the north!"

Boom!

"This is for the residents of Northgale who were massacred!"

Levi wailed into the sky above, his ferocity so strong that it could almost swallow the earth.

He unleashed ten blows consecutively until Sampson disappeared.

The latter was pounded into the ground to the extent that his head couldn't be seen.

With his whole body underground, Sampson became one with the Earth.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1244

Olivia sobbed as she watched Levi bash Sampson into the ground, punch by punch.

To her terror, Sampson's body slowly sank into the earth below, like a nail being hammered into a wall.

Horror...

Horror was all that she could feel at that moment.

That's not just any man!

That's a man who has been a powerful ultimate class warrior for twenty years!

A fighter who took on a hundred thousand enemies himself on the battlefields!

Gone just like that?

Just how powerful is Levi?

And how on earth did he even become this powerful?

Could it be... A rebirth?

Heck... He's even stronger than before!

Upon watching the gruesome scene unfold before her, Olivia became hysterical. Her sobbing gradually turned into a creaky howl.

“Don’t come near me! Don’t... don’t come near me...”

Meeting Levi’s gaze was the last straw for her.

She had completely lost it.

North Sky Lord snorted, “The five Ultimate class warriors? How weak!”

Hmph. And what’s with Levi Garrison? I must be even more wary of this guy from now on.

Looking into the distance, Levi bellowed, “Do you see this, my brothers? This despicable man is dead! And don’t you worry! From now on, I’ll hunt the rest down to avenge your deaths.”

With that, Levi left with the North Sky Lord.

Boom!

The entire manor collapsed, crumbling into pieces.

With only a dozen punches, Levi had destroyed the foundation of the manor building.

With the five Ultimate class warriors, dead, and the wife of the patriarch of the first ancient family gone mad – it was a stormy, treacherous night indeed.

“Hey, what’s wrong?”

Not getting a response, Tyrone asked again, “Hey, what’s wrong? You’re scaring me.”

When he found Olivia, she seemed to be in a mentally unstable state.

“A ghost... a ghost... A ghost!” Olivia’s pupils dilated as she pointed a shaky finger forward.

“Someone get the doctor! Forget it – get an exorcist!”

Dumbfounded, Tyrone began suspecting that Olivia had gotten possessed.

Still, no one knew about the demise of the five Ultimate class warriors.

Nobody even knew about the fact that someone was reborn within the Great Family of Frostford.

All that the public was aware of was the disappearance of Jerry Gott, which caused a huge commotion in Oakland City.

Right at that instant, one could almost smell the impending danger; the air and the streets were filled with it.

It felt as if a storm was coming.

Furthermore, the recent turn of events had been rather bizarre.

The assassination order on Forlevia was lifted all of a sudden, with the assassination organizations being disbanded.

Yet, nobody had a clue of what was going on.

For some, including Dale Lehman, they guessed that the Great Family of Frostford had been pressured to do so because they were the ones who gave the assassination order in the first place.

It would be likely that people like the Dragonites had put pressure on the Great Family of Frostford in memory of the good that Levi Garrison had done in the past.

They were not even considering the possibility that the five Ultimate class warriors had been defeated. If news of their downfall were to spread, the city would be in pandemonium.

After all, people had absolute faith in the Ultimate class warriors.

In smaller countries, one would hear rumors that it would only take one Ultimate class warrior to safeguard an entire country.

Or as they would say, an Ultimate class warrior could control the fate of millions of people!

In Erudia, though the stories told were less exaggerated, the Ultimate class warriors were still regarded as figures on the same level as Asura.

Unbeknownst to them, the five Ultimate class warriors had already been defeated by Levi, and the power that he held was unimaginable.

Meanwhile, back at the training base.

"I wonder why Master left. Something feels off!" Winsor furrowed his brows.

Zar shook his head, saying, "There haven't been any new updates related to that."

"Well, I'd better start training again then. Master showed me some new fighting techniques before he left," Winsor said with a sigh.

"Something just tells me that Levi is still alive, you know? If he is, I shall show him that I'm the fighter that he'll never be able to defeat!"

The others chuckled, "Well, we feel the same too! If Levi really is alive, it'll be a chance for you, the great Asura, to defeat him again!"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1245

Little did he know, Levi Garrison was the very person who knocked the wind out of his Master, along with his team.

New fighting techniques?

His beloved Master didn't even had the chance to use them!

What a joke!

After getting rid of Sampson Finch, Levi shifted his focus to the foreign assassins whom Sampson had teamed up with.

He chose to delegate the West Sky Lord to investigate the people in question.

“So, the operation was led by the military strategist of Raysonia – Watanabe Tenichi?” Levi said, looking at a name list.

“Yes! He was also the one behind the comeback of the Blood King Palace!” West Sky Lord replied.

Pursing his lips, Levi said in amusement, “Oh wow. How remarkable! How very remarkable indeed. The comeback of the Blood King Palace whom I had already fought and defeated!”

He could still vividly remember exterminating the leaders of the Blood King Palace when he first dealt with them.

And yet, they rose back from the dead somehow. When they met again, members of the Blood King Palace were standing well and alive before him.

He found that rather hard to believe and had been getting West Sky Lord to investigate the situation.

For now, he was positive that Watanabe Tenichi was the mastermind behind it all.

“Now that I have this name list in hand, I shall be paying a rather special visit to everyone on there!” Levi laughed, his gaze turning cold.

“Listen up!” He yelled at The Calamity.

“Yes, sir!” They answered while kneeling before Levi.

“Let the hunt begin!” Levi gave his command, flinging the name list onto the ground.

“Fight for justice! Protect our lands! Exterminate all traitors, and bring death to our enemies!”

And with that, The Calamity sprang into action.

That was the day that marked the start of Levi's agenda, by hunting down every last person who had been involved in the scheme to kill him.

The nights were stained with bloodshed, and there was nowhere to hide.

Of course, the string of murders quickly took over the daily headlines.

Callan Sky, the Great Martial Master of Wheldrake, disappeared...

The master of the largest island of Atlantis, Tennojima, found dead...

Death of the boss of Daelee Group in Keerea...

The ruler of the greatest organization of the underworld in Alizeh, deceased...

Soon enough, chaos ensued in various countries.

In the short span of a few days, murders of that sort occurred one after the other, country by country.

It was as if manslaughter was happening every other minute!

In no time, these events quickly caused the public to be consumed by panic and fear.

After all, those being assassinated were not just your average citizen but prominent figures of high status!

Everyone was desperate to know who did it.

Based on the leads obtained from the crime scenes, it was clear that The Calamity was behind the killings.

Who else would have the power to do that?

It would take an incredibly strong group of fighters to tackle those powerful figures, with some being formidable fighters themselves.

At that point, it was pretty much a common consensus that The Calamity was onto some sort of assassination operation.

“Who in the world are they? How did they kill so many of our partners?” Tenichi was rather appalled.

“They are not coming after me... are they?” He mumbled to himself.

Even so, Tenichi was well aware that something dark was looming in the corner as those deaths made their intentions too obvious.

Everyone who got killed had one thing in common – they were all involved in the operation to kill off Levi Garrison.

And so, there was only one answer. Levi Garrison was coming after him.

“Sir, that might not be the case! Those people who died have had conflicts with The Calamity in the past anyways, and it was way before that operation!” One of his subordinates said.

“Yes, yes. And there’s no way that Levi Garrison is still alive!” Another quickly added.

However, Tenichi shook his head. “No, I’d rather be safe than sorry. I need to start preparing immediately!” He said, with some anxiety in his voice.

“Though Levi Garrison is dead for sure, The Calamity might still come after me.”

Tenichi was a cautious and calculative man.

On the other hand, The Calamity only had three more names left on their list – Watanabe Tenichi, Yamamoto Yuta, and Mitsui Ichiro of Raysonia.

“Let us march forward! To Raysonia!”

From a high vantage point, Levi viewed the island country expressionlessly.

Raysonia, I'm coming for you...

“It’s been five years since we came to Raysonia. Five years of peace we’ve spared them, but this time, three shall lose their lives!”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1246

Levi's gaze was dark.

Five years ago, he had come to Raysonia, all alone, for the sake of rescuing someone.

In that fight, he fought solo against thirty thousand enemy fighters from Raysonia and slaughtered a record number of eight thousand enemies.

It was a fight that shook up the entire country, and also the main reason as to why Raysonia remained hostile toward him.

The people of Raysonia were livid. Whatever that Levi had done was sacrilegious to the Raysonian Bushido, which they had put their faith in from a young age.

Some even felt that only death would quench their anger toward him.

Since then, Levi had not set foot in the country for a total of five years.

However, the Demon King had arrived once again.

It was time bring back the unrest and chaos!

Meanwhile, in Edojo – the capital city of Raysonia.

The most renowned building of Edojo was the Tower of the Sun. It was also the tallest infrastructure of the city, standing at six hundred meters in height.

A particular private manor in the city was seemed to be shrouded by an atmosphere of tension and suspense.

At that instant, thousands of mercenaries were hidden in every corner of the manor.

They donned traditional robes with longswords bound to their waists.

Their faces were covered by black masks, and one could only see their eyes, which were set to kill.

These mercenaries were the well-respected samurais of Edojo, as well as the surrounding islands.

They had stationed themselves at the Military Division voluntarily, upon hearing that the military strategist of the country was in danger.

Not only that, but there was also an elite samurai on his way there.

The recent turn of events had put their nerves on edge, but Watanabe Tenichi was their bottom line – he had to be protected at all costs!

Watanabe Tenichi was the most influential figure of Raysonia.

To the citizens, he was a man of extraordinary wisdom on par with a demon god – a rare gift to their country.

However, Tenichi was not actually at the Military Division. He had gone elsewhere.

Meanwhile, in a straw shed hidden within the deep bamboo forests in the rural area of Edojo.

A certain man was kneeling before the straw shed on that particular day, and that man happened to be Watanabe Tenichi.

It was a rather peculiar scene, seeing the great military strategist of Raysonia getting on his knees to beg.

The people of Raysonia would probably faint at such a sight.

How dare he make the great military strategist of Raysonia kneel before him?

Not to mention, Tenichi had been kneeling there for almost a day.

“Stop pestering me! I have already retired!” The raspy voice of an old man could be heard from within the shed.

“Demon Blade, I’m not just here for my own safety. I’m here because your help would be crucial in order for the Raysonian Bushido to rise again!” Tenichi pleaded.

“Five years ago, Levi Garrison intruded our lands, and single-handedly slaughtered eight thousands of our men! For him, it was his glorious battle to fame, but for us, a stain in our history forever! Not only that, but our very own brand of martial arts also took a huge blow from that fight. We fell from the high ranks amongst the others in Bayview, and have not recovered since. Our people feel nothing but shame about the Raysonian Bushido that they were once so proud of!”

Tenichi’s tear-streaked face was trembling. “I can’t help but fear the destruction that The Calamity would bring! We’ll never be able to recover from that! I simply don’t want our people to live with their heads low forever! Would you please consider?” He cried.

“We do have many ultimate class fighters around here, but your presence will ensure our victory! I know that you have retired for fifty years, but I cannot find another samurai as capable as you! Oh, Demon Blade, please! Please help us!” Tenichi had his head on the ground while begging.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1247

Thud! Thud! Thud!

Tenichi slammed his forehead onto the ground frantically, with blood oozing out of it.

He had a rather maniacal side to him, where he would resort to every last measure for the sake of Raysonia and the Raysonian Bushido.

In his head, he was ready to fight Levi Garrison to death.

As a matter of fact, he was even willing to shoulder all the blame and backlash from it.

While some might not agree with what he had done, or his way of doing things, it was not really a matter of right or wrong; it was simply a clash interests from different perspectives.

Of course, Tenichi also had his personal motives.

He wanted to live.

The bloodshed caused by The Calamity gave him a clear warning – that having ultimate class warriors around him was not enough.

Plenty of those who died were protected by ultimate class warriors.

Tenichi could tell that his enemies were very much overpowered, to the extent that they were unafraid of the ultimate class warriors.

That was why he needed to use all the cards that he owned just to survive this ordeal.

Tenichi also saw the addition of Demon Blade as a chance for the dignity and honor of the Raysonian Bushido to be restored.

This was a plan that would enable him to kill two birds with one stone.

“I beg you, Demon Blade, to come and fight alongside us for the sake of Raysonia’s martial arts!” Tenichi pleaded once again, along with hundreds of people kneeling behind him.

Their voices resounded through the woods, echoing like the howling winds during a thunderstorm.

As for the man referred to as Demon Blade, he was the Great Grandmaster of Raysonia, the strongest warrior of the country.

Demon Blade was just his title, and his real name was Kawasaki Zando.

Sixty years ago, he swept the entirety of Bayview by storm. There was not a single fighter who could rival him.

Even when faced with a master of the same class as him, he made instant kills.

No one could describe how strong he really was because every fighter who had gone up against him had died.

Kawasaki Zando had even paid a visit to Erudia before, giving the practitioners of the martial arts in Erudia nothing but humiliation.

As one might say, he was the ruler of that era, standing above all forms of martial arts in Bayview.

People saw him as the pride of Raysonia, an undefeatable god.

However, for reasons unknown to the masses, Demon Blade went into retirement out of the blue and lived his life hidden from the rest of the world.

Fifty years had passed since then, and still not a single sign of his return.

"Alright then. For the sake of Raysonia, I shall wield my blade once more!" Demon Blade finally made his decision.

"Hah... Yes! What an honor!" Watanabe Tenichi cried out in laughter.

Who would dare come after me now? With Demon Blade on my side?

Who would dare humiliate the Raysonian Bushido?

Along with six other ultimate class warriors, Tenichi now had seven ultimate class warriors fighting for him.

They would be seen as a formidable group of warriors not to be reckoned with anywhere in Bayview.

God class warriors were already a rarity, not to even mention the ultimate class warriors.

A group of seven ultimate class warriors was something that no one had ever seen before.

After all, none of the countries wanted to reveal their trump cards too early.

Hence, assembling such a group of fighters together would be done as a last resort.

While the various forces seemed to be teaming up against Levi Garrison at the moment, they knew well enough they might become rivals in the future.

Therefore, showing the entire world the number of ultimate class warriors that they had would be suicide.

Thud. Thud.

An elderly man emerged from the straw shed right then.

His footsteps were a little wobbly, and his body was thin as a stick.

In spite of that, the aura around him was unmistakable. Everyone held their breaths, as they watched him walk toward them.

Demon Blade!

A god-like warrior!

He was a man feared by all fifty years ago.

And it seemed like he still had it in him.

"Welcome! Oh, the great Demon Blade!" Tenichi hollered, gesturing for the rest to follow.

I'll be safe now.

The Raysonian Bushido shall prosper.

And so shall Raysonia.

"Let us fight The Calamity!" Tenichi was wholly confident about their upcoming battle.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1248

"Where is the man who sullied our lands fifty years ago?" Demon Blade asked.

Tenichi quickly replied, "Sir, he goes by the name Levi Garrison. He's known as the God of War of Erudia, but don't you worry, sir, he is already dead."

"Dead? That's good to hear," Demon Blade sighed.

"I'll have to thank the Great Family of Frostford for that!" Tenichi said, smiling.

"The... what? The Great Family of Frostford?" Upon hearing Tenichi's words, Demon Blade's face turned outcast, as if he had recalled something horrid.

"Sir, what's wrong? Are you alright?" Tenichi asked.

"Yes, I'm fine. I have heard about the Great Family of Frostford before. Word has it that the fighters in the family are the best of the best! Not to mention the other three of the Four Great Families!" Demon Blade said, coming to his senses.

Tenichi and the others quickly assured him, "No matter how strong they say they are, they can't even compare to you, sir!"

Demon Blade shook his head and got Tenichi to tell him all about their current situation.

"Where are the other two?" He asked, referring to Yamamoto Yuta and Mitsui Ichiro.

Those two were also involved in the scheme to kill Levi under Tenichi's command.

Tenichi's gaze darkened upon hearing these two names. "The two of them turned a deaf ear to my words. I don't think they even realize the severity of the situation."

Yet, Demon Blade was not particularly surprised about it. "Well, for those two, as descendants of the Ancient Warrior Families, it is to be expected that they stay confident and steadfast no matter what enemies come in their ways," he said.

"Yes, let them think whatever they want," Tenichi said coldly.

Hmph. I'll be safe without them anyways.

In a rather remote, quiet part of Edojo, there was a long-established residence that had retained its traditional architectural style, known as the General's Residence.

It was once the residence for a military general but now transformed into the residence for the Ancient Warrior Families.

They practiced the Bushido, which was respected by all.

Needless to say, there were countless skilled fighters within the families.

Currently, Yamamoto Yuta was the patriarch of the families and was an ultimate class warrior.

Another ultimate class warrior, who belonged to the Ancient Warrior Families, was Mitsui Ichiro.

The two of them, together with Watanabe Tenichi, became the guardians of Raysonia.

Two warriors, and one strategist.

However, the recent turn of events had brought about cracks in their alliance.

“Tenichi is too cautious and indecisive about everything. While I do think that he has the wits to be a good strategist, we’ve missed out on so many opportunities because of him!”

“Hah... You’re right. It’s impossible to succeed without taking risks!” The two of them bantered.

“The Calamity? Hmph. If they dare step foot on Raysonia, they might as well die here!” Yamamoto Yuta smirked, his longsword in hand as he sat on his futon.

A group of samurai in black stood behind him.

On the other hand, a group of samurai in white stood behind Mitsui Ichiro.

Unlike Tenichi, they were not searching high and low for warriors to protect themselves.

They were actually waiting for The Calamity to come to their doors; they were ready to fight.

That was how a true samurai of Raysonia would conduct himself.

While Raysonia was not known to be the country with the most combative people like Wheldrake, the samurais of Raysonia were recognized as the most determined fighters of them all.

“The Calamity is definitely after us two. All that’s on my mind right now is how they would come to us,” Ichiro said while furrowing his brows.

They had delegated a robust force of samurais to station themselves throughout the entire residence.

“I can’t care less about that. I won’t even blink if they decide to plunge down from the heavens!” Yuta scoffed.

Meanwhile, an aircraft belonging to The Calamity hovered over the skies above Edojo, Raysonia.

“Master, Yamamoto Yuta’s residence is located directly below us!”

“Open up the gate. I’m jumping down from here!”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1249

“Yes! Master, I’ll prepare your parachute right this moment!” Levi’s subordinate replied, scrambling to fasten a parachute on his body.

They assumed that Levi wanted to dive down from the plane to take his targets by surprise.

“No need for parachutes. I’ll be jumping straight down!”

To their surprise, Levi declined the proposal and shook them off.

“What... what did he just say?” Everyone on the aircraft was taken aback.

Jumping straight down?

Though their aircraft was gliding at a slightly lower altitude, they were at least a thousand and five hundred meters from ground level.

Jumping off from our current height?

He must be joking!

With our aircraft at such a speed and this high from the ground, anyone who jumps would be committing suicide!

Just the sheer force of the impact was enough to crush the bones of any martial artist.

Though there was no doubt that Levi was one of the strongest warriors to live, he was still no superhero.

He was a human made of blood and flesh.

Thus, no matter how robust his body was as a martial artist, there was no way that he would survive.

At the thought of that, everyone could not help but hesitate in their actions.

“Master, I think it’ll be much safer to wear this parachute!” One of his subordinates said anxiously.

Levi stayed silent, his face dispassionate.

“Didn’t you hear him? Open the gates! Now!” The North Sky Lord repeated Levi’s command, sounding annoyed.

“Yes, yes!” The people on the aircraft hurried back to their positions and sprang into action.

No one dared disobey their master’s orders.

Whoosh!

All of a sudden, the unnerving howling of air currents surging into their aircraft reverberated in their ears.

“I’m going off now!”

Crossing his hands behind him, Levi made his way toward the door of the aircraft and jumped down without a second thought.

The North Sky Lord promptly followed behind and plunged down.

Watching the two dive down from their aircraft without even blinking, the members of The Calamity within the aircraft found themselves at a loss for words.

“What...”

Maniacs!

Absolute maniacs!

They shuddered a little.

Undoubtedly, Levi and the North Sky Lord were tenacious warriors.

However, jumping from an aircraft a thousand and five hundred meters high in the sky without a parachute was a completely different matter altogether.

Are they even human?

How frightening!

Meanwhile, at the General's Residence.

Thousands of samurais awaited the arrival of The Calamity.

Yuta and Ichiro meditated with their eyes closed while their hands gripped tightly onto their longswords.

"Hey! Look up! There is an aircraft hovering above this building!" Someone suddenly yelled.

"Yes, I see it too! The aircraft is at a dangerously low altitude! Are they coming after us?" Another added.

Outside, the people on the streets were all pointing and talking about the foreign aircraft intruding their skies.

The people on ground level could see the jet black aircraft rather clearly.

After all, an altitude of a thousand and five hundred meters would be relatively low for an aircraft.

"Huh?"

Yuta and Ichiro opened their eyes, looking up toward the skies above.

Indeed, an aircraft was seen gliding overhead.

Gliding suspiciously low!

“Has The Calamity really decided to attack from the air?” Ichiro uttered, his eyes widening.

“What the hell?” Yuta swore under his breath upon seeing the outlines of what looked like two people jumping off the aircraft.

“Someone is jumping down!” Ichiro howled.

Ping!

The samurais on stand-by pulled out their swords in unison.

The air within the General’s Residence quickly became thick with tension.

Everyone expected the two in the air to open their parachutes before landing somewhere nearby.

In their heads, they even rehearsed how they would charge toward the two as they landed, slaughtering them instantly.

Their silhouettes became bigger and clearer as the two men fell from the sky, like meteors striking earth.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

The deafening howling of air currents echoed within the building.

To their horror, the speed of those human meteors seemed to have exceeded that of the sound of the air currents.

“They’re not using parachutes!” Yuta yelled.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1250

Ichiro was speechless.

So were the thousands of samurais around them.

Are they nuts?

Did they just jump off an aircraft without parachutes?

Due to the fact that they were free-falling from a thousand and five hundred meters, the speed at which Levi and the North Sky Lord were moving was frighteningly fast.

The onlookers could not even make out their faces as they plunged downwards, leaving a white trail behind them.

Thud!

The impact of their landing was explosive.

The people in the General's Residence could feel the vibrations on the floorboards, vibrating their eardrums.

Their thunderous landing was closely followed by a blast of air which literally blew off some of the samurais in the building.

Everyone could already feel the immense power of their enemies before they even showed themselves.

Sensing their impending doom, some of the samurais yelled, "Retreat! Retreat!"

However, there was no time to react. Before they could even begin evacuating the building, the two human meteors finally made their touchdowns.

Boom!

Boom!

Levi and the North Sky Lord landed one after the other.

It almost sounded like the consecutive explosions of two missiles.

Boom! Bang!

It almost seemed like the heavens were crashing down upon the earth.

Bang!

Bang!

Bang!

Everything in sight seemed to be crumbling into dust.

Clink! Clank!

Long, branching cracks appeared on the floorboards, with the tiles shattering into pieces.

And as the finale to all of that destruction, Levi and the North Sky Lord created two gigantic craters within as they came into contact with the ground.

Now, it really seemed as if two missiles had landed from the skies.

Six hundred years – A residence with a whopping six hundred years of history, demolished in a matter of minutes.

Poof!

Poof!

Poof!

The aftershock of the impact of their falls was also fatal.

At the same time, the huge army of samurais who had gathered in the building were blasted off, along with the wreckage.

Pandemonium ensued soon after.

Following that, desperate cries filled the air, and corpses were seen everywhere.

The amount of bloodshed caused was unfathomable.

The bloody aftermath was a testament to the impact brought about by what seemed to be human meteors.

Those who remained standing stared fixedly at the site of the landings, now enveloped by a cloud of thick smoke.

They were desperate to know if the two people that they saw had survived the fall.

As minutes passed by, the fog gradually cleared, revealing two men standing tall on the ground.

One was busy patting off the dust on his body, his complexion unnaturally red.

Evidently, the free fall had taken a toll on him physically.

That man was the North Sky Lord.

Though he was uninjured, he looked rather displeased about the state that he was in.

"Damn it!" He swore.

On the other hand, the onlookers were absolutely terrified by his reaction.

Even Yamamoto Yuta felt as if he was on the verge of fainting.

Damn it? That's it? Is that all that he has got to say after falling down from such a height without a freaking parachute?

No injuries?

This can't be possible!

"Oh my goodness!" Someone from the crowd shrieked in terror.

When the crowd turned to look at the other man who had landed, they could not believe what they saw.

There he was, Levi Garrison, with his arms still crossed behind him, standing there looking all calm and composed.

There was not even a single speck of dust on him.

It was as if he had just arrived at the scene from a walk in a park.

How is that possible?

Is he even human?

Is that even humanly possible?

Even an ultimate class warrior wouldn't be able to survive a fall like that!

While the onlookers were still stricken by terror and awe, Levi and the North Sky Lord made their way toward them.

Unable to recover from the shock, Yuta and Ichiro simply stared fixedly at the two coming closer.

It took a whole solid minute for people to return to their senses.

However, they were immediately struck by another horrifying reality.

The man who had fallen like a human meteor was someone they were all too familiar with.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1251

“Levi... Levi Garrison... H-How are y-you still...” Ichiro had completely lost his marbles.

His voice was shaking so much that he could barely finish a sentence.

With his body convulsing in terror, it seemed that he was about to collapse any moment.

In the meantime, Yuta’s face darkened in fear and anger. “It’s you! Levi Garrison! How in the world are you still alive!” He growled.

Hicc!

The samurais at the scene gasped, their faces turning pale.

Just when they thought that they had survived the worst crisis that struck their lands, they were met with the man of their nightmares – Levi Garrison.

He was not only a man who came back from the dead, but their greatest enemy who had humiliated their country fifty years ago.

The samurais of Raysonia had so much hatred for Levi that they carved his face deep into their minds so that they would never forget about their ultimate foe.

Killing Levi Garrison became the top priority for every samurai in Raysonia.

It was like a mission ingrained into their souls.

However, upon seeing Levi standing before them, their immense fury quickly turned into confusion and fear.

Is he a ghost?

Many had that speculation in mind.

After all, they had seen his dead body with their very own eyes.

And yet, he had somehow come back to life.

How preposterous!

“No, no. He is Levi Garrison! Levi Garrison did not die! I get it! He sent The Calamity!” Ichiro was the first to grasp the situation.

He also caught on the fact that Levi had become the master of The Calamity.

“What? He’s the master of The Calamity?” Yuta exclaimed, his eyes widening.

When The Calamity first appeared, everyone was so sure that they came to power because of Levi’s death.

But, who would have known, that in reality, Levi Garrison was the one in command of The Calamity!

Piece by piece, past events were starting to add up.

The disappearance of the Harbinger of Death, the series of actions taken by The Calamity, and the recent deaths were all linked to the man – Levi Garrison.

It was obvious by then, that Levi was seeking revenge.

Everything finally made sense right then and there.

After their long wait for The Calamity to arrive, Levi Garrison finally showed up at their doors instead.

"Kill them!" Levi gave his command.

The North Sky Lord immediately sprang into action.

He hurled himself into the crowd, slashing the heads off his enemies.

The samurais did not want to give up just yet, and they dashed towards the North Sky Lord, fighting with all their might.

"No matter how many times you come back from the dead, we'll come after you all the same!" Yuta and Ichiro cried out, pulling out their longswords.

On the battlefield, the samurais fought the North Sky Lord, while the ultimate class warriors focused their attacks on Levi.

Soon, the fight came to a closure.

Not even a single samurai survived the battle with the North Sky Lord, with their corpses lying a gruesome pool of blood on the ground.

Meanwhile, Yuta and Ichiro were also at wits' end as their longswords were ruthlessly shattered by Levi.

The next thing they knew, Levi was holding them by their necks and lifting them above the ground.

With their eyes filled with fear and dread, they yelled, "Levi, no matter how strong you are, you'll never be able to kill Tenichi."

"You won't even make it out of Raysonia alive! Let me tell you that!"

Little did they know that those were their last words...

"Too bad you two won't be around to see that!"

Following that, Levi smashed the two bodies together forcibly. Blood splattered all over the place, and all that remained of the two ultimate class fighters was a horrid pile of human flesh.

“Two gone. One left. Watanabe Tenichi, just you wait!” Levi smirked coldly.

And so, the hunt for Watanabe Tenichi began.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1252

Within the Great Family of Frostford, which was the backbone of Sampson Finch, Watanabe Tenichi was one of the most talented individuals.

Though Levi had never fought Tenichi personally, he had heard quite a lot of rumors.

Watanabe Tenichi was the famous military strategist of Raysonia.

“Those two seemed to have waited for us to show up at their doors. They were completely unprepared! This is probably just a distraction for Tenichi to buy more time to set up traps!” The North Sky Lord said.

Levi pursed his lips and said, “Oh, I’ll let him do what he wants for now. I’ll be able to hunt him down anyways.”

Meanwhile, a total of three thousand samurais, including god class warriors, had gathered at the Military Division.

For the sake of safeguarding his own life, Tenichi decided to play every last one of his trump cards.

He even had Kawasaki Zando, the Great Grandmaster of Raysonia, on his side.

Tenichi was confident about the upcoming battle.

"By the way, any news from Yuta?" He asked.

"Nothing for now! Based on the information gathered by our spies, The Calamity has yet to make a move," his subordinate replied.

"Is The Calamity really coming?" Demon Blade, who was sitting on a futon, snarled.

"Yes, yes! I am quite certain of it!" Tenichi said firmly.

"This is our chance to move up the ranks once more! If we can defeat or even destroy The Calamity in this battle, we'll be able to show the world just how formidable we are!" He continued.

Demon Blade squinted his eyes and said, "Well, let them come. I'll just kill them all for the sake of the Raysonian Bushido!"

With those words, Tenichi felt more reassured than ever.

All the fear and apprehension that he felt were dispelled.

Oh, they better show up...

Even so, minutes ticked by, but they received no updates on the whereabouts of The Calamity.

Yuta and Ichiro were also nowhere to be found.

"What if something bad happened to them?" Someone among them said.

Boom!

At that exact moment, a thundering rumble reverberated throughout the manor.

The stone gates of the Military Division, which weighed five tons, crumbled into pieces in the blink of an eye.

Someone had kicked them down from outside.

Bam! Whoosh!

Before anyone could react, the entire Military Division was shaking, as if an earthquake had hit the area. Ripples began forming uncontrollably in the artificial lake within the manor.

“Someone’s coming!”

All of the samurais who were on standby quickly stood up and got into position, staring intently at the doors of the room.

Kawasaki Zando, who had been meditating with his eyes closed, suddenly opened his eyes, looking battle-ready.

Bang!

Bang!

Two unidentified projectiles flew across the room at lightning speed.

Clink!

Clank!

Clink!

The samurais on the first line of defense responded swiftly, deflecting and slashing through the projectiles.

“What in the world? Yuta? Ichiro?”

When the samurais finally took a closer look at the supposed projectiles shot at them, they froze on the spot, in utter shock and terror.

Those were not projectiles; those were the flesh and bones of Yamamoto Yuta and Mitsui Ichiro!

Tenichi’s face turned pale as a sheet.

So those two have already fallen...

Is that how powerful The Calamity really is?

Two ultimate class warriors, fighting alongside thousands of samurais and god class warriors. And yet, they were brutally slaughtered like this?

Demon Blade narrowed his eyes.

Pursing his lips into a cold smile, he seemed to be rather amused by the turn of events.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

There was a shuffle of footsteps approaching the room.

Each of the footsteps sounded like the beat of a drum, building up the tension in the room in a steady crescendo.

The silhouettes of two men could be seen.

“Two men?” Someone pointed out.

“Am I seeing things? Two men trying to fight against us? Here in the Military Division?”
Another said.

The samurais in the room were completely dumbfounded by the odd turn of events.

Seriously? This is too absurd!

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1253

Tenichi had seven ultimate class warriors guarding him!

And one of them is the formidable Demon Blade, who's the Great Grandmaster of Raysonia!

How dare The Calamity send out two fighters to fight us?

"Tenichi, be prepared to face my wrath!" A ruthless growl could be heard.

Levi knew that Tenichi was the mastermind behind his murder, alongside Sampson Finch.

Thus, his hatred toward him was no less than that for Sampson Finch.

Only with Tenichi's head in hand, would the souls of his dead brothers be appeased.

At that thought, a murderous aura emanated from him.

On the contrary, Tenichi's heart dropped with a thump.

Why is The Calamity so hell-bent on killing me?

His questions were quickly answered the very next moment when Levi strode into the room, glaring at him like a predator eyeing his prey.

"Levi... Levi Garrison... You're still alive?" Tenichi recognized him immediately.

It was only then that he finally connected the dots in his head and understood what was going on.

“So... so The Calamity is yours! And you’re the reason as to why I lost contact with Mr. Finch of the Great Family of Frostford, aren’t you?” Tenichi spluttered.

The others in the room looked rather appalled.

Nobody expected Levi to be the person behind all the recent turmoil and deaths.

No wonder those who were involved in scheming his murder were all hunted down! Tenichi thought to himself.

But this does not affect my plans in any way. I’ll just kill two birds with one stone.

Raysonia shall regain its dignity, and Raysonia’s greatest enemy shall be eliminated once again!

Levi responded indifferently, “You’re pretty smart, aren’t you? Sampson Finch has already gone to hell, and you’re going to be keeping him company!”

Tenichi eyeballed the North Sky Lord, who stood beside Levi. He donned a peculiar mask that looked like a horrendous mishmash of the faces of an angel and a demon. Tenichi chuckled, “Just the two of you, going against all of us?”

“Hmph, are you blind? Do you see anyone else here? Of course, it’s just the two of us!” The North Sky Lord stared at the samurais in the room with contempt.

He did not feel unnerved at all, even when faced with the menacing warriors in the room.

“Is he Levi Garrison?” Demon Blade spoke, pointing a finger.

“Yes, he is Levi Garrison! Formerly known as the God of War!” Tenichi promptly replied.

“Was he the one who brought humiliation to Raysonia five years ago? The one who disgraced the Raysonian Bushido?” Demon Blade snarled, his voice all raspy.

“Yes! Yes, it’s him!” Tenichi sounded hysterical.

My enemy!

Raysonia's enemy!

"Hmph, is that so? Then the last thing he shall witness before his death shall be the power of the Raysonian Bushido!" Kawasaki Zando rumbled.

He brandished his longsword, which had not seen daylight in fifty years.

Nevertheless, Levi ignored the two's chatter and turned to the rest of the people in the room. "I have come here today for the sole purpose of killing Watanabe Tenichi. The rest of you shall be spared if you leave the place now!" He yelled.

Levi was not a bloodthirsty monster who would kill just anyone.

He only had his eyes on his enemies.

However, if those who were innocent were to decide to stand in his way, he was prepared to slaughter them all.

"No way in hell!" A samurai shouted.

"You'll have to get past us first!"

"Nobody can touch our military strategist!"

"Protect our leader! Take down Levi Garrison! Restore our pride!" The samurais cried out in unison.

Each and every one of them seemed to have the determination to fight to their deaths.

For the people of Raysonia, Watanabe Tenichi was a beloved, well-respected leader.

He had the entire country on his side.

Just then, Demon Blade also responded, "You'll have to kill me first, if you want to even lay a finger on him. Of course, that is if you can!"

Levi snorted, "Oh, I'm so sorry then. But I think even god himself can't save him today! I shall end him right in front of your eyes!"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1254

"Try me!" Demon Blade bellowed.

His voice was deafening like thunder, echoing throughout the room.

How dare a young brat like that threaten me!

Nobody would have dared offend me the slightest fifty years ago, not even the ultimate class warriors!

Demon Blade finally lost his calm, as uncontrollable anger began to consume him.

You said that you'll kill him right in front of my eyes?

How preposterous!

You're the one who's dying today!

Demon Blade stood up. At that time, his eyes were sparkling like a lion that had been woken up from its slumber.

"Levi Garrison! I admit that you are no ordinary man. Indeed, you have come back from the dead and killed Sampson Finch, who had been an ultimate class warrior for twenty years," Tenichi said.

Upon hearing that, Demon Blade raised an eyebrow, his interest in his opponent growing.

It was common knowledge that the more years of experience that an ultimate class warrior had, the more powerful he would be.

That young brat defeated someone who had been an ultimate class warrior for twenty years?

And he's the fighter who single-handedly tarnished Raysonia's reputation? How interesting.

"However, the Raysonian Bushido has evolved exponentially over the last five years, and unlike last time, the great warrior, Demon Blade, is now fighting with us. Don't you dare underestimate our strengths now!" Tenichi continued.

He was feeling rather confident. In his head, Levi was definitely not making it out of Raysonia alive.

"Yes, that's right! Demon Blade has been an ultimate class fighter for almost a hundred years!" A samurai said.

"You can't win!"

Kawasaki Zando was actually older than Teneb Garrison, the Grandmaster of the Garrison clan.

Having been an ultimate class warrior for almost a hundred years, his strength was unimaginable.

In his eyes, the likes of Sampson Finch were no more than ordinary warriors.

"Hah... You're so going to die!" Levi was unmoved.

He was determined to take Tenichi's head no matter what.

"You want my head? Then come to me, at the peak of the Tower of the Sun," Tenichi said, laughing.

"I wish you all the best!" He taunted.

With that, he dashed towards the doors, along with Demon Blade and a few others.

“Don’t you dare!”

Clink!

Before Levi could go after them, samurais began crowding up around him, swinging their swords.

“You’ll have to get past us first!” They yelled.

“We won’t let you leave!”

The samurais were not backing down.

Soon, Tenichi and his men arrived at the peak of the Tower of the Sun.

Standing at a height of six hundred meters above the ground, the howling winds was all that they could hear.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

The chilly winds felt like small blades, cutting across their faces and leaving a burning pain.

“Why did you choose to come here?” Kawasaki Zando asked.

“Don’t you think that it’ll be far more meaningful to end his life here? A victory on the highest peak of our country, which would signify Raysonia rising to power!” Tenichi replied.

“Secondly, him knowing that I’m here waiting for him would be a huge distraction which would affect his performance in battle. And lastly, this is my strategy to spot his weaknesses before we finally come face-to-face with him,” he continued.

Simply put, it was a strategy to ensure that Levi Garrison would die – a strategy to end his life at all costs!

Undoubtedly, Tenichi was a military strategist, not a warrior. Thus, he could not care less about playing it fair on the battlefields.

On the other hand, Kawasaki Zando was not bothered about Tenichi’s strategy at all.

All that he had in mind was manslaughter.

“I hope that he does come here.”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1255

[Leave a Comment / The Protector / By Chapter Novel](#)

Kawasaki Zando had hoped to engage in combat with the youngsters of Erudia. He wanted to see what they were truly made of.

Otherwise, he would've come out of solitude for nothing.

“Our Raysonian Bushido will be restored to its former glory! In fact, the news should come as no surprise. In less than half a day, it'll spread like wildfire and rock the world!”

Tenichi was also waiting eagerly for this moment to arrive.

If he could send Levi to his death on Raysonian soil, the glory would be insurmountable.

Meanwhile, both Levi and the North Sky Lord were cornered by thousands of people. The numbers were increasing still.

Including the group outside the Military Division, it was an army of five thousand strong.

Everyone waited with bated breath.

There was only one possible solution to undo the shame they had to endure five years ago, kill Levi.

"Begin!" came the order from Tenichi.

Levi and North Sky Lord shared a look before beginning their assault.

North Sky Lord charged into the battlefield like a hero with superhuman strength.

Instantly, he summoned a hundred-meter-tall shockwave that he sent hurtling into the oncoming crowd.

Boom!

The dense crowd was abruptly torn apart and scattered by this attack. Numerous casualties could be seen as the panicked troops struggled to move out of the way.

"Get out of my way, or perish!" bellowed Levi as he breached the opening created by North Sky Lord.

Levi eyed an adversary that was standing in his way. He threw a punch that sent the man flying into the crowd like a cannonball.

Bang!

That blow was devastating enough to knock more than a hundred men out of the way.

They lay there in a writhing mass, with plenty of broken bones. Levi clicked his tongue impatiently as he observed the next wave of enemies coming his way.

A battle cry was heard as a squad of more than a dozen God class warriors charged towards Levi with sabers in hand.

Slash!

Nobody could foresee what happened next.

Upon impact, the sabers broke. It was as if Levi's body was made of steel for it was completely impenetrable.

Levi nonchalantly dodged an attack that came from his right flank. He reached over and gently grabbed the katana of his opponent. With a plucking motion, Levi snapped the blade clean in half.

His opponent tried to escape, but it was too late. With a flick of his wrist, Levi tossed the blade into the person's body. Blood splattered all over the floor before the dead assailant crumpled to the ground with a dull thud.

Everyone was stunned. These were God class warriors! Seasoned fighters were being treated as if they were mere playthings!

The battalion started to sweat in their armor. How were they going to defeat Levi?

His expression, on the other hand, was one of indifference. The fight was nothing but a walk in the park for him.

He walked around the area leisurely despite being completely surrounded.

But North Sky Lord painted a completely different picture. He attacked like a vicious animal, sending thousands scattered in complete disarray.

The pair had two completely different combat styles. One was calm, and the other, wild.

However, they made a terrifying team. It was as if the demons from hell had risen to fight.

Each attack they unleashed maimed or killed anyone in their path.

In a short period of time, the grounds of the Military Division had turned into a mass grave. Piles of bodies were scattered throughout the courtyard.

The army of five thousand was no match for Levi or North Sky Lord.

Soon, the pair left the area with less than two thousand men attempting to stop their advance.

The troops were samurai, believers in the spirit of Bushido. Even with the odds against them, they would not back away without a fight.

"We kill!" came their cries as they rushed towards the pair.

North Sky Lord attacked again, with Levi following closely behind.

A crushing battle was currently being staged.

A mere five minutes had passed, and there was nobody left standing. Levi and North Sky Lord had successfully plowed through a battalion of more than one thousand strong.

The battle had left many wounded. Despite this, they still burned with the desire to stop Levi and North Sky Lord.

However, the severity of their injuries prevented them from getting up. The troops had no choice but to watch helplessly as they walked past them.

Five thousand seasoned warriors only managed to deter the pair for about ten minutes.

They were horrified. Those defeated were ultimate samurai masters, who, without a doubt, outclassed the thirty-thousand that Levi had fought five years ago.

This only showed how much power Levi had gained throughout the course of five years.

Now, he had even gained a powerful ally. He was practically invincible.

“Onward, to the Tower of the Sun!” yelled Levi, his eyes ablaze with a chilling glow.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1256

What Levi and North Sky Lord didn't realize was that the earlier battle had only been a taste of what was to come.

There may have been an army of five thousand at the Military Division's grounds, but that was only a fraction of the conscripted fighters.

Levi paused to survey the area and found that the real deterrent to hinder their progress lay outside the grounds.

The Tower of the Sun wasn't too far away from the Military Division, but they had to traverse a pathway spanning ten kilometers.

Warriors had been stationed throughout the way, and they were by no means unskilled.

They had been lying in wait, biding their time for a chance to attack.

All of them were men loyal to Tenichi, duty-bound to defend him with their lives.

This was all a part of Tenichi's plan. Even if the mob of warriors couldn't kill Levi, there was a chance they would overwhelm him instead.

Levi might not be dead, but he would at least be exhausted. Or so he thought.

In a grievous miscalculation, Tenichi failed to anticipate the true strength of his opponents.

The samurai he had positioned barely proved to be a hindrance to them at all.

The pair swept through their defenses with a crushing force, defeating any obstacle in their path.

Soon, nobody was left standing.

But the one thing that even Watanabe Tenichi himself did not expect was the sheer number of loyal men who showed up to stop Levi.

The entire pathway was dotted with no less than a hundred thousand samurai.

They all believe in the spirit of Bushido and were eager to fight.

Having heard that Watanabe Tenichi was in danger, they all rallied to his call, hoping for a chance to restore Raysonian Bushido to its former glory.

Samurai from all over came with a single purpose, to kill Levi Garrison.

It had been less than an hour, but it felt like an eternity had passed.

Soon, Levi and North Sky Lord arrived at the base of the Tower of the Sun.

Both men were drenched in enough blood to be mistaken for corpses, but the blood did not belong to them.

So far, all hundred thousand men they encountered on their way to the Tower of the Sun had been defeated. The bodies piled high, with the stench of blood and warfare filling the air.

Throughout the region, the wails of defeated samurai were heard. It was a sorrowful lament of shame and anguish.

This was an even bigger smear on Raysonian Bushido, worse than the colossal embarrassment they had to endure five years ago.

Not even one hundred thousand samurai could stop the two of them.

If news of the fight were to spread, it would've been named the Battle of Gods.

The Master of The Calamity, as well as North Sky Lord, had successfully defeated a hundred thousand samurai on Raysonia.

This was the equivalent of two grown men warding off insects.

The Raysonians had no dignity left to spare, for it was completely destroyed by their losses in this battle.

This fight would set Raysonian Bushido back by ten years. It wasn't just men they lost, but most importantly, their dignity.

The shame was more than what everyone could bear.

They could only watch, completely hapless at the pair's advances.

Soon, it was up to Tenichi alone to put up a fight.

He bore the hopes of the thousands on Raysonia. These were the men who desperately wanted to bring back Raysonian Bushido to a more respectable state.

"Levi Garrison must be defeated! Glory to Raysonia!"

Thousands of the fallen lay there, their eyes watching the Tower of the Sun, the place where their only hopes remained.

Looking at the Tower of the Sun, Levi sneered. "Even if you go to hell and back, Tenichi, I will have your head!"

With that, Levi and North Sky Lord entered the Tower.

Tenichi was not about to let them waltz inside, unhindered. He had stationed even more fighters, ready to intercept the moment Levi entered the building.

Despite that, Levi and North Sky Lord managed to fight their way through all two hundred floors. After all, this wasn't a question of difficulty but merely time.

Levi and North Sky Lord were the invincible duo.

It did not take them long at all, in fact. The battle was a bloody one, as they fought their way up.

At the very top of the tower, Tenichi feverishly kept track of their movements. Every bit of progress was reported to him, with no information withheld.

“What? They fought their way through all of them?” exclaimed Tenichi worriedly.

“Is he injured?” he inquired again, hurriedly. *This is troubling news indeed.*

“He’s covered in blood. If he does manage to get up here, he’s probably exhausted!” came one report.

Tenichi smiled. “Ha! He’s strong indeed, but we have something better!”

Demon Blade merely observed the exchange impassively.

He couldn’t care less. A single blow would be enough to put them out of their misery.

I bet Levi Garrison wouldn’t see my blade coming, he mused.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1257

Levi and North Sky Lord were making quick work of the warriors in all two hundred floors.

Each floor was full of God class warriors but all of them were defeated. They were no match for the two of them.

These warriors were the backbone of Raysonian Bushido, who owed their successes in combat to the vigorous training under this branch. In spite of their efforts, they were wiped out easily. They could barely hold Levi back for more than a minute.

Levi and North Sky Lord were truly masterful opponents.

All it took was their combined efforts to decimate the legacy of Raysonian Bushido.

The pair made their way up the tower steadily, before finally arriving at its peak.

Suddenly, a group of six warriors surrounded them.

They were Tenichi's trump card. His last resort, the Six Great Grandmaster.

If he had not been in such dire straits, the thought of bringing them out wouldn't have crossed Tenichi's mind.

"Levi Garrison! Let this floor be your grave!"

The Six pinned Levi with a threatening glare, as they readied their attacks.

North Sky Lord eyed the six figures coldly and said, "Master, leave them to me."

"Alright!" replied Levi as he rushed towards the peak.

The Six Great Grandmaster tried to stop Levi, but they were held back by North Sky Lord.

A ferocious battle broke out between the seven in that small, confined space.

At the peak of the Tower of the Sun, Demon Blade sat on his knees. His eyes were closed as he waited for Levi's impending arrival.

Tenichi was standing next to him.

The weather reflected the bleak atmosphere of Raysonia. Dark clouds gathered in the sky, adding to the sense of foreboding and gloom.

The Tower was easily one of the tallest structures in the land. The upper half was encased in the clouds, where its current occupants lay in wait amongst the howling winds and gathered mist.

Outside, a storm was brewing.

Suddenly, the sound of footsteps was heard approaching the room.

Tenichi's face fell.

And so he arrives.

A gruesome figure rapidly approached, drenched in blood.

Suddenly, Demon Blade opened his eyes. He glared at Levi with lightning illuminating his gaze.

A terrible shockwave formed and blasted its way towards Levi, letting out a loud rumble.
Boom!

Levi only stood there, blood dripping off his body.

Tenichi stared for some time and realized that none of the blood on Levi's body was his own.

What the hell? Did he fight over a hundred thousand men without a single injury? His breath is calm and steady. His footsteps are light. Did he seriously just fight a battle? The thought made Tenichi's blood run cold.

Demon Blade, however, grinned.

Levi was a strong opponent, and that certainly piqued his interest.

Why would I even bother killing someone weak?

After all, he had not come out of a fifty-year seclusion to fight a wimp.

When Levi arrived, he looked at his surroundings bemusedly before saying, "Not a bad place you've chosen for your death."

"You arrogant little sh*t!" Demon Blade glanced at Levi and pinned him with a glare.

Surprisingly enough, Tenichi seemed relaxed. "Goodness, you're so strong! If not for the circumstances, I'd love to be friends with you!"

"Do you think you're somehow worthy of that? Piss off." Levi clicked his tongue in annoyance and pointed an accusatory finger at Tenichi.

"Look, I know you're determined to kill me and all, but do you know who this man is, standing before you?" asked Tenichi, with an absent-minded flick of his wrist. "Allow me to introduce you to Demon Blade, the Ultimate class warrior of the highest caliber in Raysonia.

"Fifty years ago, this man single-handedly took on all of Bayview's Ultimate class warriors, only to deliver unto them a crushing defeat. Nobody would dare cross him, and I honestly doubt that even someone of your capabilities will win against him today."

Suddenly, there was a fierceness in Tenichi's eyes. "Levi Garrison, I'm here to sentence you to death by the hands of the Ultimate Great Grandmaster. Consider this an honor of the highest degree!"

"I'm still going to kill you!" came Levi's reply. He seemed unperturbed by the threat.

"Such arrogance. Young man, do you think you can kill him? You'll have to go through me first!" retorted Demon Blade.

Levi sneered. "Ah, but what is youth without arrogance, old man?"

"Five years ago, you threw Raysonian Bushido such a heavy blow that you set us back by fifty years. It was a nightmare. You've been our greatest source of shame!"

He paused briefly and gave Levi another icy stare. "Henceforth, I, Kawasaki Zando, pledge to defeat you and restore Raysonian Bushido to its former glory!"

Very slowly, Demon Blade got to his feet.

Boom!

His body pulsed with static and gave out a threatening aura. There was the sound of the wind howling and the distant crack of thunder.

“Pay attention, young man. One slice of my blade will be enough to finish you.”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1258

As Kawasaki Zando said these words, there was no hint of arrogance in his flat tone.

He seemed to be expressing a simple fact. A mere slash of his blade was enough to end anyone who stood in his way.

His demeanor did not express self-confidence but a sense of familiarity in his abilities. This man was dangerous as an opponent, and clashing with him would be perilous.

Death was inevitable.

All he had to do was attack Levi Garrison with his blade, and it would mean the end of it.

Tenichi also believed his words without a doubt.

If Demon Blade were that strong fifty years ago, he'd be even stronger now.

“Oh, is that so?” sneered Levi.

Now that he had mastered the age-old martial arts techniques that he had sought to learn, Levi's strength was not to be underestimated.

The first battle between the two began shortly.

Suddenly, Kawasaki Zando's demeanor changed.

He may have looked the part of a grey-haired, miserable man, but his eyes shone with spirit.

Kawasaki Zando felt his blood surge like waves.

The momentum his body had generated was increasing very steadily.

Phew!...

A storm had indeed formed at the summit of the Tower. The already-darkened sky was accompanied by a loud chorus of thunder.

The ground surrounding the Tower was elevated, which also contributed to the increased airflow and the relentless howling wind.

Now, Kawasaki Zando's momentum had increased even more. His body rumbled with the energy he amassed as he fused the currents of air generated by the wind.

Soon, an explosive burst of thunder was heard.

Tenichi, who'd been standing too close, was flung away from the site. Since he was an ordinary person, the impact was so great that he tasted his own blood.

All of Edojo could feel the tremors caused by the storm as if alluding to a heavy downpour.

Yet, the sky showed no signs of lightning. Only thunder was heard.

The phenomenon made everyone curious.

After all, how were they to know that this was not thunder in the first place?

This was the sheer might and energy exuded by Demon Blade, who stood atop the Tower of the Sun.

If he could generate such power, calling him the Ultimate Great Grandmaster was no surprise at all.

Tenichi shook himself out of his stupor and hurriedly took some medicines he had kept on hand. His condition was now stable, and he was no longer bleeding.

He also realized that Demon Blade was about to unleash his attack.

Tenichi waited with anticipation and glee. Levi Garrison would definitely perish.

Mere moments later, scarlet lightning struck the Tower of the Sun.

It was a very vivid, eye-catching sight to behold.

The lightning was a bright red, almost like the color of blood.

Another crack of thunder soon followed.

The people of Edojo looked up to the sky, clearly intrigued by the queer yet threatening display.

Yet, no one had ever guessed that that was not lightning at all but a blade!

Fifty years later, Kawasaki Zando's yoto had made an appearance once again, at long last.

The blade had an ethereal quality that dazzled the onlookers. How was that blade able to create such strong tremors?

This display, alongside the ominous atmosphere, created a very shocking scene.

The moment Demon Blade unleashed his yoto, the dark sky lit up with an intensity that could rival daylight.

The crimson light had temporarily blinded Tenichi, and he intuitively averted his gaze.

Tenichi's mind was racing. *I'm among the first to truly witness the yoto in action. Levi will witness it too, of course, but he'll be dead meat soon.*

It's an honor!

Watanabe Tenichi smirked, gleefully imagining Levi's decapitation.

The moment Kawasaki Zando summoned his blade, he stepped towards Levi in a flash.

The yoto in his hand glowed scarlet as he slashed at Levi, only to find that he missed.

Hmm. The little runt has some speed in him after all.

Levi was by far the fastest opponent Kawasaki Zando had met.

His past opponents had been unworthy of his status as a Great Grand Master!

Out of nowhere, a spatter of blood whizzed past.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1259

el

A sharp, slicing sound was heard, followed by a loud crash.

A spatter of blood escaped the fray, and landed on Tenichi's face.

The warm blood immediately brought Tenichi to his senses again.

Hahaha...!

He laughed and gingerly touched the blood on his face.

Levi Garrison was dead, at long last!

He had seen it with his own eyes. There was no way Levi could've survived that blow.

The blood that he felt had to be from Levi's decapitated head.

True to its word, the yoto definitely lived up to its name. Any opponent in its path would meet their end.

Tenichi's joy, alas, was short-lived. A glance at the scene was enough to wipe the grin off his face.

Not only did Levi Garrison appear to be unharmed, but even his head remained intact.

Instead, Kawasaki Zando stood there with his blade broken in half. He looked utterly defeated, with blood trickling down the side of his mouth.

Where's the other half of the blade? A chill went down his spine. It wasn't long until he noticed a faint, scarlet glimmer in Kawasaki Zando's chest.

He was bleeding profusely from the stab wound.

Levi Garrison had not only lived to tell the tale of the yoto. He had managed to shatter it and stab Kawasaki with his own weapon.

Only Kawasaki Zando understood the depth of Levi's strength.

The power of Demon Blade was something inherited by the wielder deemed most worthy. Somehow, a power that had lasted thousands of years was defeated by just a punch?

This is incredible! He is so young but he possesses such strength!

There was no doubt that this was Erudia's one and only God of War.

Erudia must've been such a wondrous place, having produced someone like this.

Is it possible that he's from there?

Kawasaki Zando couldn't take it anymore as he thought of this.

He fell to the ground with a groan and lay there, motionless.

This Ultimate Great Grandmaster, who was nearly a century old, had failed in his mission to restore Raysonia's glory.

He could not even protect their military strategist!

Today, Raysonian Bushido was completely defeated.

Five years ago, Levi Garrison had humiliated them, only for them to suffer an even bigger humiliation five years later.

How could they regain their pride after this crushing defeat?

At around this time, North Sky Lord had just finished his battle with the Six Great Grandmaster and made his way up to the Tower's summit.

With a cursory glance, he said, "Well, you handled this a lot faster than I thought!"

The only man left standing was Watanabe Tenichi.

He looked dumbfoundedly at the pair, not knowing how to react.

Tenichi was not by any means stupid. He was a strategist whose resourcefulness was almost godlike.

Every single strategy had been planned; every possibility was calculated and taken into consideration.

The only factor he failed to take into consideration was Levi's strength.

Levi took a deep breath and said coldly, "Are you witnessing all this, comrades? Here is the mastermind. I will avenge you all!"

Deep down, Levi was relieved. He fulfilled the promise he made to his brothers-in-arms.

Every single person who had been involved in this mess had been dealt with.

"Wait!" Tenichi shouted hastily. "I admit defeat!"

"But before I die, there are some doubts I want to clear."

"Hm. Why not, I guess. What do you want to know?" asked Levi in a very cold tone.

Tenichi's questions were simple. He wanted to know how Levi survived the attack, how he recovered, and what became one of The Calamity.

True to his word, Levi answered all his questions.

After hearing all of the explanations, Watanabe Tenichi smiled contentedly.

"Don't forget, Levi Garrison. You may have given us a humiliating defeat today, but there will be a reckoning in the future!"

Levi smirked. "A reckoning from who, pray tell? You're out of Ultimate class warriors, to my knowledge.

"Raysonia's strength lies in our unyielding will!" roared Tenichi. "The spirit of Bushido will still live on! Mark my words, one day, there will be a samurai strong enough to challenge and defeat you!"

Levi snickered. "Until then, I'll wait. But before you die, I have a question of my own."

"How did the Blood King Palace manage to return? Were they not wiped out?" queried Levi.

Watanabe Tenichi gave Levi a smug smile. "Do you really want to know?"

"Yes. Tell me."

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1260

“You will never know the answer to that secret!”

Suddenly, Tenichi’s face contorted into a twisted smile as he plunged a tanto right into his abdomen. The pain made him gasp out loud, but he persisted.

He knelt on the ground and shouted, “Bushido will live on!”

The tanto was coated with poison, and it didn’t take long before Tenichi breathed his last.

The poison was fast-acting, and there would’ve been no chance at saving him.

Levi Garrison wanted to know how the Blood King Palace made its return, but the trail had gone cold.

It didn’t matter that much to him, however. He had avenged his brothers-in-arms, and that was the most important thing.

“You have been avenged! Now I’m going to bring you all home!” shouted Levi.

Levi had ordered his men to retrieve the bodies of all three hundred and fifty-seven victims, including that of Jonah Garrison.

Given that some of the bodies had been found in a sorry state, Levi decided to cremate everyone and have the ashes packed in burial urns.

He couldn’t bear to bury them in a foreign land. They had to be buried at home in Erudia.

These were warriors of Erudia, men born and raised there.

Levi was determined to have a tomb built for all of his fallen comrades.

Soon after, Levi and North Sky Lord left the Tower of the Sun, only to be met by the tears of a hundred thousand men.

Seeing the two leave intact was a cause of great sorrow to them. They realized that this meant the defeat of Demon Blade.

Raysonian Bushido had failed once again.

The defeat had dealt a devastating blow to their morale. There was no telling if they would recover from the humiliation, even after a century had passed.

This was a day the followers of Raysonian Bushido would never forget.

If this shame were not eradicated in the near future, they feared they would no longer have any dignity left.

Word of this battle had spread quite quickly.

The Master of the Calamity and North Sky Lord had single-handedly defeated the Raysonians in combat.

First came the defeat of both Yuta Yamamoto and Ichiro Mitsui, followed by one hundred thousand samurai who were sent to fight Levi and North Sky Lord.

Among the biggest casualties were the seven Great Grandmasters including Demon Blade, the Ultimate Great Grandmaster, in Bayview's tallest tower, including the death of Watanabe Tenichi, the military strategist.

The world exploded in a frenzy as soon as word got out.

There was no denying the strength of The Calamity.

Blood King Palace seemed to pale in comparison. They were barely on the same level!

Before this, Blood King Palace was considered a force too difficult to destroy, having earned notoriety as the most powerful group in The Dark World.

The Calamity's actions in taking the initiative were making waves.

Having won the so-called Battle of the Gods, The Calamity had earned a place in the hierarchy.

They were quickly ranked as the most dangerous force in the world, and their danger levels were off the charts.

However, it was not fair to compare both The Calamity and Blood King Palace in the same vein.

Blood King Palace was an organization that took pride in shady dealings, including assassination, sabotage, and threats to establish its dominance.

The Calamity, on the other hand, only wanted revenge for past grievances.

However, this act of avenging their fallen was seen as something even more terrifying and cruel in the eyes of the public. Somehow, this was worse than the past actions of Blood King Palace.

For now, the world was set abuzz discussing The Calamity, especially Erudia.

Levi's supporters had ideas of their own. "If only Levi Garrison were still alive!" lamented some. "Surely he's the only one who can defeat The Calamity!"

"Yes, and their actions are even more belligerent than Blood King Palace! What arrogance! If Levi Garrison were here, they wouldn't last a second!"

"Hell, if Levi Garrison were still alive, there will be no place for The Calamity!"

These remarks caught the ear of Winsor Campbell, who was furious.

He was the one who held the title God of War, but all they were concerned about was Levi Garrison.

Everyone hoped that Levi would still be alive and step in to eradicate The Calamity.

Winsor gritted his teeth and swore inwardly. *Why can't I do it? Am I less capable than Levi?*

He'd barely done anything, only to be defeated by Levi Garrison in name alone.

"I want to take action on The Calamity!" said Winsor.

"But the Dragonites won't let us—"

Zar's explanation was cut short by Winsor's glare.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1261

Talon and Bolgun hurriedly held Zar back and motioned for him to hold his tongue.

They could tell that Winsor Campbell was eager to prove himself. He was not willing to live in the shadow of his predecessor throughout his tenure.

Zar cleared his throat. "Well, making a move will not be impossible, but..." he trailed off and paused briefly.

"But what?" asked Winsor.

"God of War, you should present your challenge to The Calamity as a civilian. Don't drag any particular stance into this," suggested Zar with a hint of hesitation.

"Well, that might actually work. The most important thing is for me to defeat The Calamity and win everyone over!"

"To guarantee my victory, I'll go into seclusion for the time being."

Winsor was eager to practice the combat skills Sampson taught him.

If my training is successful, then I'd challenge The Calamity. My chances of succeeding would be higher as well.

Winsor Campbell may have been of noble stock, but he had yet to face a real opponent.

For that reason, he'd always erroneously assumed that there were no other experts in the world.

Such thoughts had made him complacent.

As such, Sampson's elusiveness was so great that news of his death never reached Winsor's ears. He had no way of finding out at all.

Back in North Hampton, Zoey and Emma Jones had just received word from Levi over the phone.

"Mom? Levi said he'd be back soon," said Zoey excitedly.

All this while, things had been normal.

Nobody had come for Forlevia's head either, but Zoey had to maintain the charade.

Everyone assumed that Levi was dead, so they had to play the part of the grieving family.

After all, there were still strangers who had come to ask about information regarding the circumstances of Levi's death. Hence, they had to play safe.

At the time, plenty of villains had shown up too.

Not too long ago, the Garrison clan in Oakland City was being taunted.

The Lopezes and the Black family, on the other hand, believed that Levi was clobbered to death by the Garrison clan.

Coupled with the fact that Dale Lehman had severed ties with Zoey, both the Lopezes and the Black family had been pushing for Zoey to find a backer.

It was in her best interests, or so they claimed, that she found a powerful new husband. That way, she would be able to secure her estate and wealth.

The Lopezes and Black family had not been completely wrong in their suggestion, though.

Since she'd also lost the support of the Lehman Group, many outsiders had been eyeing the Morris Group with great interest.

Zoey and the others were slowly being pushed to the brink of danger.

She would have difficulties holding on soon.

At this moment, Levi Garrison was making his way back to Erudia.

The entourage that followed him contained a total of three hundred and fifty-seven burial urns.

Among them were the remains of Hades, wrapped in a separate sheet. After all, he was from L nation, and they deserved closure as well.

Levi decided to first sort out the matter of his comrades in Erudia before bringing Hades' remains back to L nation for his interment.

Earlier on, Levi conducted a funeral in an unnamed town near Northgale and had the remains of all the victims cremated there.

All these innocent lives. What an sad sight!

"Comrades, our homeland lies ahead! Finally, I've brought you home!" shouted Levi, the moment he spotted the familiar sights of Erudia.

Had it not been for this bunch of rough man, he'd likely not be alive. They gave him a chance at rebirth.

Thankfully, he was strong enough to avenge his comrades. None of the culprits deserved to make it out alive.

As they approached Erudia's borders, Levi got out of the car.

Holding Jonah's urn in his hands, he proceeded towards Erudian soil on foot.

The rest of his team followed suit.

Levi was enacting the highest honors possible to bring home his fallen comrades.

In the split second that ensued, Levi had mixed feelings about his mission.

He was quite relieved that he could bring them home and inter them on their own soil.

He could not raise them to be martyrs or patriots, but he could build them a tomb or a monument at least.

His happiness was short-lived, however. West Sky Lord approached Levi with a grim expression on her face. "Master, I come bearing bad news."

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1262

|

"Speak."

West Sky Lord hesitated briefly before replying, "A ban has been issued. All cemeteries are now off-limits to 'the likes of Mr. Jonah Garrison and any other such figures.' Forget about building them a tomb. You can't even lay them to rest!"

After she said her piece, West Sky Lord felt a chill pierce through her spine.

She subconsciously took two steps back and waited for Levi to respond.

"In other words, they are only worthy of being buried in the wilderness?" asked Levi.

"Yes, apparently so. Rumors have been spread, claiming that Mr. Jonah Garrison and the three hundred or so men were traitors. Traitors cannot be interred in Erudia because they don't deserve that honor."

"They're also saying that their deaths were well-deserved," said West Sky Lord with a shiver. "Nobody should've protected the 'main culprit' to begin with."

The air around them was tense. Everyone could sense that Levi was seething.

They had to endure such tragic, miserable deaths. On top of that, they're not even allowed to be buried in their own homeland? They are not to be honored?

If he could not do that for his fallen comrades, how could he face their souls?

"I don't care who stands in my way! My comrades and brothers-in-arms, they need a home! I will build them a monument and conduct the funeral rites they rightfully deserve!"

Turning to face the rest of his team, Levi issued new commands in a low growl. "Our new destination – Northway City, Greenhills Cemetery. We are to ensure that all three hundred and fifty-six of my comrades are interred properly!"

The whole entourage pressed on to the largest city in the north, Northway.

Levi wanted to bury his comrades there.

North Sky Lord nudged West Sky Lord and asked, "Who imposed the ban?"

"The Garrison clan of Oakland city," whispered West Sky Lord.

She did not have the courage to reveal that information to Levi earlier.

North Sky Lord took a deep breath. He'd guessed as much. Only the most powerful family in Erudia had that kind of reach.

Truth be told, the Garrison clan is playing with fire. They're going to shoot themselves in the foot at this point.

As the people closest to Levi right now, they could feel the sorrow that Levi felt over Jonah's death. In fact, he blamed himself mainly.

Because he could not save Jonah from his demise, Levi felt that the only atonement he could offer was to build him a tomb.

God help anyone who stood in his way.

At last, they reached a small airport at the edge of Erudia. Levi and his team held the boxes that contained the urns and carefully moved them in on foot.

The next flight was bound for Northway City without many passengers on board.

Levi then decided to purchase all the empty seats available. It was the least he could do and the most respectful, in his opinion. He couldn't bear to check the urns in.

Of course, this was under the assumption that there were plenty of seats. Levi had no desire to cause any inconvenience to anyone else.

Besides, the boxes were all carefully wrapped, so nobody could tell what they contained.

Just then, a party of three women and two men walked up to the counter. The women looked beautiful, and the men were quite good-looking.

The girl who stood in front of the group was particularly stunning. She had a small and dainty face, no bigger than her palm. Her skin was alluring, reminiscent of uncut jade.

She wore a blouse and a pair of hot pants, which exposed her long and slender legs. Her creamy white skin looked very attractive.

The girl's face also looked quite young. Given her youthful demeanor, she was likely still a student.

At a glance, anyone could tell that she was the campus belle.

Sophie Lehman frowned slightly gave the boarding pass a disdainful look. "Why did you buy the tickets so late, Harris? Now we're got to fly in economy class!" She enunciated the words 'economy class' with a slight grimace.

The boy next to her replied, "Well, it is my fault. I'll see if I can get us upgraded."

The group of five had just returned from their summer vacation in the North.

Harris Lopez took his boarding pass and walked towards Levi, who was about to board first class. "Hey, you! Let's swap seats. I'll make up for the difference and give you another five thousand for your trouble."

Harris Lopez could be quite demanding when he needed to be.

Levi didn't bother looking up and gave Harris a firm 'no'.

"Ten thousand then!" said Harris angrily.

"No."

"What about fifty thousand?" asked Harris again, through gritted teeth.

"I said, no."

This was enough to make Sophie Lehman lose her temper as well. "Hey, what is the meaning of this? You're not even going to look at us when we talk to you? You're so f*cking rude!"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1263

The other classmates in the group sneered at Levi as well. "Exactly! Who do you think you are, pretending to be rich? This ticket costs only a thousand. Heck, even my meal is more expensive than your stupid ticket!"

"And look at the cheap sh*t you're wearing! Are those even designer labels? I'm guessing you don't have much money after all. Why did you buy a first class ticket if you have nothing to show for it?"

North Sky Lord decided to step in before it got worse. "Go away," he said coldly.

He could see that Levi was already very angry.

“Fine!”

Sophie Lehman left them in a huff.

“This is unacceptable! We’ve never flown economy class before!” exclaimed Sophie. Soon, she took note of all the empty seats in the first class cabin.

There were no passengers on board, but the seats were occupied with objects.

Harris Lopez got the attention of the flight attendant. Gesturing at the empty seats, she asked, “There’s nobody sitting there, right?”

“Yes, but—”

Before the flight attendant could explain, Harris kicked off the boxes that were tied to the seats.

“Alright, then just give us these seats! We’ll settle the differences after we land!”

Harris Lopez was the eldest son of Northway City’s most prominent family.

As such, he was always overbearing and inconsiderate when it came to handling certain situations.

Especially now, since he didn’t want to appear weak in front of Sophie Lehman.

They were about to take their seats when they noticed several pairs of eyes glaring at them.

They immediately felt a chill down their spines, but decided to continue on with the cold war.

Levi, North Sky Lord, and West Sky Lord looked at them with contempt.

“Put the items back on the seats, and I will look the other way,” said Levi coldly.

“Yes, these items belong to this gentleman here. He bought out the first class cabin.” The stewardess hastily jumped in to explain the situation.

“What? Did he buy these seats to deposit trash on them? Do you even know what’s inside these boxes?”

Harris Lopez gave the box another kick, this time hard enough to disturb the lids.

Suddenly, a deeply sinister chill seeped into the air.

Harris, Sophie and the other kids immediately froze. The chill was horrible, and there was something quite murderous about it. It was almost as if something in there wanted them dead.

North Sky Lord was reaching the limits of his patience.

In a violent lurch, North Sky Lord lifted Harris Lopez by the nape and slammed him into the ground.

Bang!

Harris was pinned to the ground, unable to move. The air he breathed was cold, and he inhaled with some difficulty. “What do you think you’re doing?”

Sophie yelled, “Get off him! Let him go!”

The flight attendants watched the incident unfold anxiously. “Yes, please, let him go!”

“Let him go!”

North Sky Lord immediately released Harris after he heard Levi’s command.

Levi was not going to let this slide, however. “Put the items back on their seats. Apologize, and we’ll call it a day.” As he said this, his eyes never left Harris’ gaze.

Sophie Lehman pointed at Levi and exclaimed, “What’s the hell is wrong with you? You’re the one who resorted to violence, and you want us to apologize? How is that logical?”

Sophie Lehman was the pride of the Lehman family, another influential group in Northway City. She did not come from common stock.

For this reason, she wasn’t afraid in the slightest when it came to confrontations like this.

“So what mistakes have I made? Tell me,” said Levi.

“You bought out the first class cabin, but you’re using it to stash crap on the seats. Seats are for people, not luggage!”

“Besides, why couldn’t you check those in? You’re making it tough people who need those seats!” yelled Sophie.

“Yes, those seats are meant for passengers, not luggage. Why won’t you let us sit there?”

Several others had decided to join in on the emotional blackmail.

Levi sneered and said, “Because I spent my money on these seats, not you. So I get to decide what I put on my seats. It’s none of your f*cking business!”

Sophie was rendered speechless by Levi’s tirade.

“What if I insist on sitting here?” asked Harris angrily.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1264

“Go on, have a try. I’ll break your legs if you do!” roared North Sky Lord.

Harris blabbered but did not dare say much. He was still terrified after his first encounter with North Sky Lord.

“Now go back to your own f*cking seats and behave yourselves. Considering you’re kids, I’m going to let this slide. Otherwise, I’ll really break your goddamn legs!” bellowed North Sky Lord.

Everyone was frightened into submission. One by one, they backed away slowly.

They may come from illustrious households, but with no bodyguards around, nobody dared behave too rashly.

However, before leaving the first class cabin, Harris took a few pictures of Levi.

“What do you think you’re doing?” asked North Sky Lord angrily. He was getting really tired of their nonsense.

“Well, weren’t you acting all high and mighty earlier? Why don’t you wait a while after we land? I’ll be waiting for you in Riverville!” threatened Harris.

Riverville was Harris’ turf, and he was definitely not going to let the issue slide. Not after how they embarrassed him in front of Sophie!

“So? What will it be? I f*cking dare you to lay a finger on me in Riverville!” sneered Harris again.

“As you wish.”

North Sky Lord was a little taken aback. He was not expecting Levi to agree to this.

This could only mean that Levi was extremely angry.

“Then you’re done for!” exclaimed Harris as he arrogantly walked towards the economy class cabin.

Before the plane took off, he quickly sent the photographs to the butler. A background check on these people was necessary.

Harris Lopez may be the scion of a powerful family, but he had a clear mind when it came to such things.

Before he picked a proper fight, he would always run a background check to prevent any trouble.

The butler soon replied.

'These individuals are just ordinary people with no prominent background or lineage.'

But that wasn't true at all.

Levi's identity was deliberately made obscure, along with the other members on his team.

Any searches conducted in the databases would've come up blank.

Harris looked at the response gleefully. "Ah, so they are a group of nobodies after all! You're all going to be f*cked when this plane lands."

"They need to be taught a lesson for being that unreasonable!" said Sophie with a huff.

She thought she had done nothing wrong and that the fault was all Levi's.

Sophie remained blissfully unaware of the fact that what she did was emotional blackmail.

Levi Garrison could do whatever the hell he wanted with the money he spent. Nobody could say anything.

"Indeed. I've already notified the family. My bodyguards are now waiting outside the airport. Those three had better be prepared!" replied Harris smugly.

Sophie looked at Harris approvingly, which also made him feel excited.

The flight to the city took approximately an hour and a half.

They landed safely in the Riverville airport.

Levi and his party got off the plane, boxes of urns in tow.

Immediately after they left the airport, they were stopped by Harris Lopez.

“Are you thinking of escaping? Don’t even think about it!” Harris had an ugly sneer on his face.

“Send them out!” commanded Harris.

A few dozen cars stopped at the sidewalk, and a few hundred brawny men rushed out of the car.

Soon, Levi and his team were surrounded.

The men were bodyguards employed by the Lopez family—capable individuals who knew how to engage in combat where necessary.

“Do you know who you’re messing with? I’m Harris Lopez, the eldest son of the Lopez family in Riverville! This is payback for what happened earlier!”

Now that Harris was safely back in his own domain, he could afford to be cockier.

He didn’t have to worry about the consequences, nor did he have to take anything else into consideration.

“Who dares provoke the young Mr. Lopez?” yelled all the bodyguards in unison. “Do you have a death wish?”

The frightened crowd scurried away frantically, not wishing to get involved in a mess like this.

Sophie had thought of something in the meantime. “Don’t be too heavy-handed.” she cautioned. “You might accidentally kill someone.”

Harris grinned and replied, “Don’t worry, I know my limits. I’m just going to break their limbs at most, just to teach them a lesson!”

“Kneel and beg! Maybe then, I’ll consider forgiving you just this once!”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1265

Harris looked at them with a smug on his face.

How dare they disrespect me?

They're asking for death!

Sophie shouted, "I'm quite merciful. Just apologize, and I'll let this matter go."

She felt conflicted.

I'm not wrong.

Levi is the one at fault!

And she couldn't help but brood over it.

Harris chimed in and jeered, "Right. Apologize, and I'll spare your lives."

"We did nothing wrong, so why should we?" Levi asked them in return.

What a joke!

They act all high and mighty because they have power?

If we're overseas, they could've been dead long ago.

But they're Erudians.

Hence, I will turn a blind eye to their rude remarks.

However, his question enraged Harris. "Are you refusing a toast only to drink a forfeit now?"

Following that, Sophie warned angrily. "I'll ask you guys for the last time. Apologize. Or else, don't blame me for not being merciful later."

From her perspective, she was giving them a chance.

If they apologized, all of this would end.

And nothing would happen.

Apologize, and they shall leave safely.

But if they don't appreciate my kindness, then there's nothing I can do.

I should just let Harris teach them a lesson.

Levi smirked. "Apologize? No way. You guys will be the ones to kneel and beg for your lives."

Hearing that, Harris was infuriated, and he yelled, "What? Us, kneeling? Dream on!"

Sophie and her classmates found it hard to believe.

They're the ones in danger now, not us.

So why should we apologize?

This infuriated Sophie completely, and flames of fury burned away the last piece of kindness she had left.

I'm not dealing with this anymore.

North Sky Lord scoffed, "You guys don't believe him?"

Harris growled, "How on earth will we believe him? You guys will be the ones to kneel for forgiveness!"

“So be it! Harris, do whatever you want. I won’t interfere.” Sophie stomped to one side, expecting to witness a fight that was about to unfold while staring at Levi angrily.

Some people are really uncultured. Maybe a few punches will teach them how to behave.

Sophie wanted to see Harris beat the crap out of Levi, while Harris’s expression became vicious. “Let’s take these idiots down. Just make sure they’re alive.”

Clang! Clang! Clang!

When hundreds of Harris’s men were preparing to attack, they could hear a loud sound.

Boom! Boom!

The ground trembled rhythmically as if an army was approaching.

The sudden movement of the land and the rhythmic loud noises petrified everyone.

Harris, Sophie, and the bodyguards of the Lopez family stopped whatever they were doing and turned around in unison to see what was coming from behind.

When they saw what was approaching, they were dumbstruck.

A huge crowd covered in black from head to toe stood behind them, filling up the open spaces.

Wearing half angel and half devil masks, they were armed with an ancient dagger as murderous intent emanated from their bodies.

They looked like they were beings from hell.

And most importantly, there were at least a thousand of them.

“Welcome to Riverville, Master.” The leader of the army shouted, followed up by the rest.

Their voices were so loud that it was earth-shattering, shocking everyone to their cores.

North Sky Lord, West Sky Lord, and others took out their masks and put them on.

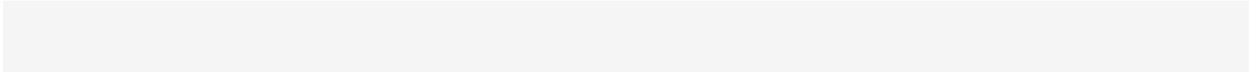
It was the same half angel and half devil mask.

Boom!

Everyone was on the verge of exploding from the overload of information.

The Calamity?

The organization that inflicted a crushing defeat to the Raysonian Bushido?



Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1266

Everyone knew that the half angel and half devil mask was a symbol of The Calamity.

So they are The Calamity.

And they are actually in Erudia!

How... Just how is this possible?

This is just our luck – we've managed to offend The Calamity!

"No mercy for those who offended our Master!" Thousands of Calamity's warriors shouted in unison.

Their shouts immediately set off a terrifying aura as a murderous intent enveloped the entire space.

Thump! Thump!

One after another, the bodyguards of the Lopez family collapsed to their knees, unable to hold their ground against the overbearing pressure.

The blood-thirsty, cut-throat aura shrouded their bodies, instilling fear in their hearts, making them pale as they sweated profusely.

In just a few minutes, they were kneeling in a pool of water, formed from their sweat.

Everyone was busy trembling while looking at the figures of The Calamity's warriors in fear.

This is terrifying!

Everyone from the Calamity actually came.

They were like the underworld beings, and their arrival meant catastrophe and demolition to everyone else.

Staring at everything uncovering in front of them, Sophie and Harris were dumbfounded.

T-T-This... is...

The Calamity?

They defeated the entire world and became a nightmare for every other organization and country.

W-We actually demanded for their Master's apology.

We're dead. We're f*cking dead meat.

Our families won't be able to save us... No. No one can save us.

They were breaking out in a cold sweat, as they knew they were indeed in huge trouble.

Right then, the North Sky Lord marched toward Harris. His menacing aura lingered around his body and made him look like a giant in Harris's eyes.

Thud!

With tears streaming down his cheeks

, Harris collapsed on his knees. "I'm sorry... I-I apologize! I was wrong!"

It scared Harris to tears.

He banged his head onto the ground, again and again, begging for forgiveness, until his forehead was bleeding.

The classmates of Sophie were scared out of their wits, and they fell to their knees in fright. "We were wrong! Please... spare our lives. Please spare us."

They, too, apologized.

Finally, Sophie crashed to the ground with a thud.

At that moment, she realized her mistakes.

The more danger one felt the clearer one's mind became.

And realization dawned on her.

I was wrong.

I committed emotional blackmail toward them.

She sobbed, "I'm sorry. Please spare us! We won't do it again."

The heirs of prominent families were nothing but trash in The Calamity's presence.

Meanwhile, Levi scanned the room with a stony expression.

They were nothing but insignificant insects, and Levi wasn't the least bit interested to make a move on them.

They should be grateful I don't harm Erudians.

After a moment of silence, Levi demanded, "Get out of the way!"

The warriors of the Calamity cleared a path in between the hundreds of Lopez family's bodyguards for Levi to walk on.

Then Levi left with his men.

But Sophie, Harris, and others were too afraid to stand up.

As long as the Calamity wished to, their families would cease to exist any time.

Very quickly, the Lopez family and the Lehman family rushed to the scene.

And they inflicted a harsh beating upon Harris and the others for offending The Calamity.

At the same time, news about The Calamity appearing in the Northway City of Erudia spread like wildfire.

Panic and fear consumed everyone in Erudia because they didn't know what The Calamity was after.

Even Winsor received the news.

The Calamity's here in Erudia? Good.

Just then, Levi led his men to the Greenhills Cemetery in the Northway City.

However, when they wanted to enter, one of the staff blocked them. "Sorry, the Greenhills Cemetery is not open to those traitors' ashes. They are a disgrace!"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1267

The staff of the Greenhills Cemetery spoke in a polite tone, but his words were brutally sharp as he directly labeled Jonah and his men as traitors.

This was all arranged by the Oakland City's Garrison clan.

They used their resources and spread the news of Jonah and his men being traitors.

With that, everyone labeled those three hundred men as traitors.

Not only that but their family members were dragged into this matter too, especially the Haven's Garrison family. All of them were in deep water, being punished by Tyrone.

Tyrone didn't care about kinships. He plunged the Haven's Garrison family into hell only because Jonah escorted Levi.

As for the rest, they were punished one by one by Tyrone.

Now that he heard Jonah and his men's ashes were to be kept in Erudia, he immediately used some underhanded methods.

"Who are you calling a traitor?" Lowering his voice, Levi stared at the staff with an icy gaze.

"Ask any other person in Erudia. Everyone knows they're traitors."

"They actually risked their lives to escort that traitor, the former God of War. And they died. Serves them right!"

"A bunch of traitors died, and they wished to be buried here, in Erudia's cemetery? Dream on! It's good enough to find some unmarked burial ground and sprinkle their ashes over there."

The staff burst into laughter as they chatted on, mocking the "traitors" of Erudia.

When they notice Levi and his men were still standing at the entrance, they growled, "Scram! No cemetery in Erudia will accept these traitors."

"But I'm going into the cemetery today, and I'll build their tombstones then organize a funeral for them." Coldness flashed across Levi's eyes as he glared at them.

This time, Levi was determined.

I'll no longer be hesitant.

And I'll do whatever it takes to honor their deaths, even if it means killing my path to achieving this.

"Well, well. Who's this? So cocky, eh?" Following up the voice, hundreds of people emerged from the room.

Every single person there was incredibly strong.

There were even some God class warriors among those men.

Their leader seemed to be a young man called Miguel Garrison.

He was the heir to the Garrison family from the North of Erudia.

The North Garrison family was merely obeying Tyrone's orders, so they came to stop Levi and his men.

Miguel then announced, "Bastards, let me tell you something. You guys are prohibited from entering any cemetery in Erudia."

He took a glance at the urn in Levi's arms and commanded, "Guys, take the traitors' urns and sprinkle their ashes into the sewers. How befitting for them to be with urine and excrement."

Right after that, Miguel's men were prepared to snatch the urns from Levi and his men.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

However, before they could do anything, they could hear the sound of a uniformed pace.

Boom!

Strong gusts of wind blew at them, hurling the leaves on the ground into the air as a deadly aura surrounded them.

In just a split second, a huge crowd appeared before them in black clothing, with half angel and half devil masks covering their faces. They were also holding ancient daggers in their hands.

The Calamity!

The fighters of the North Garrison family froze on the spot when they felt the weight of a mountain crashing on them.

Looking at thousands of men appearing before him, Miguel swallowed hard.

At that moment, his phone rang, and he received the call.

Before he could speak, a voice filled with worry could be heard on the phone. "Mick, The Calamity is in the Northway City of Erudia. Be careful and don't offend them. Even the Oakland City's Garrison clan couldn't withstand their strength, let alone us, the North Garrison family. They are easily recognizable. The members wear half angel and half devil masks..."

Plod!

Having heard that, Miguel dropped his phone.

"Mick... Mick? What's going on? Why aren't you saying anything?"

The person on the line proceeded to yell his name.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1268

The North Garrison family would never expect Miguel to meet The Calamity.

Miguel looked at the dark crowd in front of him and was dumbstruck.

Everyone knew The Calamity, and the fact that they were undefeatable became the talk of the town.

It soon became a hell-like existence to the people, instilling fear deep in their hearts.

Horror overwhelmed them once people heard their name.

Miguel was from an upper-class society, so he knew very well how terrifying The Calamity was.

And he had never felt so threatened before meeting The Calamity.

Clink! Clink! Clink!

Thousands of men of The Calamity unsheathed their ancient daggers, and the daggers were so sharp that they reflected the deaths of their enemies.

Soon after that, they chorused, "Kill! Kill! Kill!"

Everything about The Calamity sent fear to those looking at them, from their low war cry to their undefeatable suppressing aura and then their cold murderous intent.

Suddenly, some warm liquid trickled down Miguel's pants, making them wet. It was then followed by the pungent smell of piss.

He had pissed his pants out of fear!

But others weren't any better off either.

Even the God class warriors were shaking in an odd trembling rhythm.

Boom!

Suddenly, the North Sky Lord charged onto them like a beast on the loose.

"Argh..." Hundreds of powerful warriors were sent flying out one by one from the impact.

Even those powerful warriors of the North Garrison family couldn't withstand his single blow.

"Please don't kill me!" Miguel fell to his knees, witnessing the massacre in front of him.

Bam!

“Argh!” He let out a horrendous scream.

Bam!

“Argh!” Once again, he yelled out in agony.

North Sky Lord stepped on Miguel’s knees, and the latter’s bones were crushed as he sprawled on the ground, lifeless.

Bam!

Levi held the urn as he stepped over his body.

Bam!

And another followed.

Bam!

The sound of bones crushing ensued until all of Levi’s men walked to the other side.

By then, the gates of Greenhills Cemetery were wide open, simply letting Levi and his men enter.

No one dared to block their paths any longer.

Everyone was, in fact, kneeling and clearing out a path for Levi to enter.

After they entered Greenhills Cemetery, the tombstones arrived one by one quickly.

Levi carved the names of the three hundred and fifty-seven men on the tombstones, one by one, using his dagger.

I’ll remember each and every one of you.

After he finished, he held a grand funeral for his fallen comrades.

“Brothers, may you rest in peace.” Levi splashed a bowl of alcohol on the tombstones, paying his respect.

The men standing behind him did the same.

After resolving this matter, Levi decided that he wouldn't leave Erudia ever again.

“When I was in deep waters, many came and looked for trouble. But I'm a man who takes an eye for an eye. I'm back, Erudia!” He said as his eyes glinted with malice.

In the meantime, the citizens of Erudia were spreading the news about The Calamity arriving in Erudia.

The prominent families and influential forces were consumed by panic and fear. They were worried that The Calamity would come to look for them as they didn't know why The Calamity came to Erudia.

As for Tyrone, he was bewildered when he learned that the North Garrison family had allowed Jonah and his men's ashes to be buried in the Northway City.

Even if he asked for an answer, there was no reply.

Olivia's condition didn't seem to improve, as she was still mentally unstable and seemed to see ghosts all the time.

But the exorcists said Olivia wasn't possessed, so maybe she was traumatized.

On the other side, something bad happened to the Great Family of Frostford.

Someone from the Great Family of Frostford died in the commoner's society, and they were investigating this matter.

His thoughts were in a muddle, as he couldn't think of a clue to solve the series of problems in one go.

Not to mention, The Calamity is in Erudia, and we, the Garrison family, are currently the most powerful ancient family.

We are at risk here.

Tyrone couldn't sleep well with these worries and problems bugging him.

Although everyone feared The Calamity, there was one person who was extremely excited.

It was Winsor Campbell.

He was a genius in martial arts, as he used the shortest time to learn every battle technique from Sampson. Thus, he was full of confidence.

"Find out where The Calamity is. I want to challenge them." Winsor was so impatient to prove his worth.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1269

Later that day, The Calamity had received Winsor's challenge, and the battle would be held three days later.

However, Winsor pretended that he only had the intention to pick up some martial art skills during the challenge.

When West Sky Lord received the news, she immediately informed Levi. "Master, should we accept his challenge?"

"Of course. Why not? North, you'll be the one to fight him that day." Levi gladly accepted the challenge and took a glance at North Sky Lord.

"Yes, Master." Although North Sky Lord was confused, he still obeyed Levi's command.

The rest of the members were exchanging glances, one amongst another. *Master could prove his power by defeating Winsor personally.*

So why did Master request for North to fight Winsor?

The day of the battle finally arrived.

Although only Winsor alone was challenging The Calamity, it still caused an uproar within Erudia, and many went to see his fight.

Over thousands of people showed up in North Hampton to spectate the fight.

And the entire world's attention was on their battle.

After all, everyone was interested in witnessing the outcome of the epic fight between Winsor Campbell and The Calamity.

What if The Calamity won this fight?

After all, no one would be able to subdue them.

But if Winsor were to emerge victorious, everyone would know that was stronger than Levi.

Levi could defeat the whole Blood King Palace, but Winsor Campbell could take down The Calamity, which was even stronger than the Blood King Palace.

Everyone could tell the strong from the weak in a glance!

Hence, this was an important fight to Winsor, and he would have to win, no matter what.

Not only was it to prove himself, but it was also to uphold the honor of Erudia.

The citizens of Erudia, too, wished for Winsor's victory to show the world the greatness of Erudia.

However, the countries and forces overseas wished for The Calamity's victory because they liked to see Erudia's downfall.

The thought of Erudia suffering a crushing defeat made them excited because Erudia had been suppressing them for too long.

Hence, they wanted to take this opportunity to get back at them.

If Winsor lost, they would be able to create a huge ruckus out of it and rub salt to Erudia's injury.

Even so, Winsor didn't think of this when he challenged The Calamity using his own name. Nonetheless, he was still a citizen of Erudia, so he represented his country.

This battle was held in a combat club in North Hampton.

A few of The Calamity members were there.

All of them wore half angel and half devil masks.

Even Levi wore the mask because he couldn't show his face to the public.

Sitting beside Levi, North Sky Lord scoffed, "Master, this Winsor wishes to challenge The Calamity?"

What a joke!

Levi defeated his master and seniors who were stronger than him, and that included Demon Blade of the ultimate class.

To The Calamity, Winsor Campbell was nothing.

And because of that, North Sky Lord was reluctant to face an opponent this weak as he was nowhere near his level.

"Fight him once and for all. We should accept this challenge." Levi urged.

After that, he leaned in and whispered in the North Sky Lord's ears.

Hearing his words, the North Sky Lord was surprised, but he nodded and promised his Master.

After a while, Winsor Campbell arrived at the battle arena with Zar and two other disciples, but they only wore normal clothing.

On this day, everyone was dressed as commoners.

Meanwhile, thousands of citizens were there, spectating the fight and cheering for Winsor.

After all, everyone was worried The Calamity would go on a rampage in Erudia.

So if Winsor defeated The Calamity, everyone would be relieved because Winsor could defend Erudia from The Calamity's domination.

Receiving the cheers and encouragements from the people, Winsor couldn't help but feel excited.

I must not lose this fight!

Winsor then asked The Calamity, "Where's your Master?"

Levi announced, "Today, North Sky Lord will be your opponent."

Winsor replied, "Alright. I heard North Sky Lord is the strongest person in The Calamity. I shall be his opponent."

The epic fight between Winsor Campbell and North Sky Lord was going to break out anytime.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1270

There was a big fighting ring in the middle of the combat club, and both parties were ready in stance.

Boom!

The first to attack was Winsor Campbell.

He had superb control over his movements, and his fists were swift and strong.

That was also the case for North Sky Lord.

The impact from their clashes was shocking for everyone, and the crowd roared in excitement.

When their fists met, the impact was so enormous that the specially-prepared fighting ring blew apart.

At that moment, Winsor had made use of all of the battle techniques he learned previously.

However, after blocking and attacking for some time, his expression changed.

Just how strong is this guy?

He is on par with me.

But little did he know that North Sky Lord was giving him chances deliberately.

This made North Sky Lord feel frustrated because he couldn't give it his all while fighting against his opponent.

When they clashed, he knew Winsor Campbell wouldn't stand a chance against him, let alone fighting against Levi.

Why do I have to put up with him? I could've ended this match long ago.

But Master told me to hold back.

Before the fight, Levi instructed him to fight well, but he had to let Winsor win in the end.

And he asked me to do my best in acting... But why do we have to lose on purpose?

Maybe Master wants to protect Erudia's image.

Winsor wasn't an ordinary person without status and power, so everything he did would affect Erudia's reputation, especially if he lost this fight.

The countries overseas would start to act as soon as they witnessed Erudia's defeat.

It wasn't a matter of Winsor's safety; it was a matter of Erudia's future and reputation.

Winsor's loss would be a tremendous blow to Erudia.

The invincible status and reputation of Erudia, which were forged using the blood, sweat, and tears of countless people, would be tarnished if Winsor failed in this challenge.

Erudia would fall, and following that, no countries would respect the Erudians anymore.

The results would be so bad that it was unimaginable.

In short, Winsor was way too reckless in launching this challenge. He only had martial arts as his assets and didn't step back to look at the big picture. Alas, he had succumbed to his impatience and desire to prove himself.

However, Levi didn't want Erudia's downfall to be caused by some minor challenge such as this, so he made The Calamity lose the fight to protect the image and reputation of Erudia.

Even if it was all an act, Winsor must win!

Of course, The Calamity belonged to Erudia, so there was no need to care about their image that much.

The battle grew more intense as Winsor unleashed his skills, and his attacks got faster and faster.

North Sky Lord felt his stamina running out... And *Bam!* He was sent flying out of the ring.

After struggling with all his might, he sprawled on the ground, not moving a muscle.

This signaled the end of the battle with The Calamity

's defeat.

Levi smiled wryly, witnessing the outcome.

I really gave North a hard time asking him to act.

But color me impressed. There wasn't any flaw in his performance.

"Master, we won! We actually won!"

"Our Master is the strongest man in Erudia!"

"He is the only one who is qualified to be called the God of War."

Zar, Bolgun, and Talon ran onto the stage happily and cheered for their master.

This honor belongs to us!

Thud!

All three of them kneeled in front of Winsor and yelled in unison,

"Long live, the invincible Asura! Long live Erudia!"

At the same time, the spectators were on their feet while cheering on loudly.

Defeating The Calamity was such a glorious matter.

Other countries couldn't stand against The Calamity, but Winsor took the invincible North Sky Lord down, alone, announcing his dominance over The Calamity.

Winsor howled out, celebrating his victory. "Levi Garrison, you can't do anything to me! I'm stronger than you. To anyone who doesn't acknowledge me, come at me!"

The Protector Chapter 1271 to 1276

Everything was going according to Jeong-seok's plan.

He had wanted to force Zoey to talk to him personally from the very start.

Clearly, his plans had worked.

Tyrone was taken aback by Triple Group's efficiency once again. He had also imposed sanctions upon Morris Group before, but with much less satisfactory results.

The more cruel, the better.

Obviously, Triple Group is willing to be much crueler than the Garrison family had been.

This is what it meant to be truly ruthless!

Tyrone was full of respect toward their cruelty.

He realized how much he still had to learn.

The place of discussion would be held at Morris Group's council room.

Jeong-seok's entrance remained as flashy as ever.

Over twenty cars marked his arrival along with a private jet.

All of the bodyguards he brought with him were Ultimate and God class warriors.

There were more warriors next to Jeong-seok than there were on the average battlefield.

All that proved was how powerful the Lee family truly was.

They could accomplish things even the Eighteen-Nation Alliance couldn't.

The moment Jeong-seok and his party arrived, members of Morris Group were taken aback.

We're actually going against someone this intimidating?

Zoey and some others were already waiting for him in the large conference room.

Their demands were simple, which was to work and live peacefully.

They already had little to no expectations.

No matter what ridiculous conditions Triple Group forced on them, they could only accept it.

Once he stepped into the conference room, Jeong-seok took one look at Zoey and sighed.

"As expected, what a national beauty. Such a pity indeed!"

If she hadn't gotten married and didn't already have a kid, Jeong-seok would have had a go at her himself.

After the two of them sat down, Zoey didn't hesitate to ask, "Mr. Lee, we've never messed with Triple Group before, have we? So why are you doing this to us?"

Jeong-seok was toying with an intricate dagger as he replied, "Because of Levi Garrison."

"What?" Zoey said in surprise.

She hadn't expected Jeong-seok to come right out of the gate like that.

"That's right! Two years ago, Levi chased Triple Group out of Erudia. Now, we're back for revenge. Everything we've done so far was for revenge!" Jeong-seok announced.

Instantly, the atmosphere started to change.

Many Morris Group's council members who had risen to position a little later on started to glare at Zoey.

They all felt that the hundreds of thousands of workers in Morris Group had been dragged along for no good reason.

At the end of the day, it was all because of Zoey's personal business.

We're all about to die because of her!

Zoey could feel how the situation was starting to take a turn for the worse.

Jeong-seok chuckled coldly and said, "What, isn't Levi here? Is he just going to let me trample over his company and his people like this?"

His subordinate instantly replied, "Mr. Lee, Levi Garrison is already dead."

"Oh? Is that so? What brilliant news!" Jeong-seok laughed, elated by the news.

Zoey clenched her fists tightly and replied in a cold voice, "If my husband was here, none of you would have even dared to step into this building!"

Zoey's words struck the Triple Group members' nerves instantly.

They started chattering in anger.

"Bullsh*t! Even if he were here, he wouldn't have managed to stop us!"

"Who does he think he is? He can't even hold a candle to the Lee family of Keerea!"

Even Jeong-seok chuckled. "Ah, it's too bad that he's dead, then. I'd love for him to come here and beat me up if he could!"

"Just wait. It will happen one day!" Zoey nearly said too much in her fit of rage.

"I'm looking forward to it! If you can resurrect the dead, of course!"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1274

Jeong-seok's eyes gleamed with a bloodthirsty look.

His perfect, chiseled face had become twisted in hatred and anger.

There were two reasons why Triple Group had returned to Erudia. One was for profit and the other was to get revenge.

"Mr. Garrison, I'm sure you have no objection with that, right?" Jeong-seok turned to look at Tyrone.

"Of course not! Everyone knows that I've never accepted that bastard into my family, much less bother about him. I just haven't been able to do anything to his direct family members because of my reputation, but rest assured, I don't hate him any less than you all do. In fact, I hope you target his wife or daughter!" Tyrone chuckled loudly.

The Garrison family had sworn against showing any kindness toward Levi.

After all, he had nearly gotten rid of their entire bloodline.

He had greatly humiliated them.

More than anyone, he deserved to die.

"Good, that's all I needed to hear from you. I promise to make his wife and daughter wish they'd never been born," Jeong-seok said with a wicked smile.

"No! No... No-"

All of a sudden, Olivia barged in and started mumbling haphazardly.

Tyrone was taken aback.

The reason being Olivia had only ever repeated the words "ghost" over and over and never anything else. *What happened? Why is she suddenly saying "no?"*

"What the hell is this? Where did this psycho come from?" Jeong-seok asked, clearly irritated.

Tyrone didn't even have the chance to think about anything else before calling for people to take her away.

Unbeknownst to him, if he had given Olivia the chance to repeat herself a couple more times, Tyrone would have noticed that something was up.

Tyrone hastily explained her situation. Afterward, Jeong-seok continued going through his plan.

"I heard Levi's mother is dreadfully old, but I could always send her off to the slums in the West. The sickos there don't even leave animals untouched!" Jeong-seok started laughing maniacally.

Tyrone, however, was rather ruffled by that. After all, that was Emma Jones he was talking about.

Nonetheless, he quickly replaced his shock with icy cold indifference. *I have to be merciless if I want to succeed!*

"Okay, we'll do as you say!"

Jeong-seok continued to chuckle. "As for Zoey, she's an even better delicacy! If she didn't have a child, I'd have loved to have a taste of her. But, as the situation stands now, I know a seventy-year-old pervert in the West who just married his twenty-ninth wife. We can sell Zoey off to him! They'd be a perfect match."

"Good idea! There's nothing more satisfying than the idea of selling Levi's wife off to an old geezer on his deathbed," Tyrone bellowed in approval before asking, "What about his kid?"

Jeong-seok's grin became even wider. "That's even easier! Do you know how many pedophiles are out there nowadays? Besides, Levi's daughter is a definite beauty. Once she grows older, she'll be the talk of the town! A sweet little girl like her will probably have those old perverts panting and forking out money by the millions. In fact, I'll host an auction just to sell off Levi's daughter! Whoever bid the highest shall become the owner of Levi's daughter!"

Tyrone howled with laughter at the thought of perverted old men scrambling to own Levi's daughter.

"As for Iris, Abigail, Mia, and Tiffany... I'll make them into slaves! I'll make sure they get well and truly screwed over to the point they'll start to yearn for death."

"As expected of the Lee family's young master!" Tyrone couldn't help but praise.

The Daelee Group had almost exactly the same ideas he had.

Jeong-seok chuckled. "Levi, this is the consequence of you messing with the Triple Group. We have more ideas up our sleeves than you can even think of."

If Levi weren't injured or crippled, he would have been the one standing at the top.

Zoey had always been proud of Levi.

Sadly, Levi was now a crippled man. If he weren't, Winsor would have been no match for him.

She knew that he had been framed, but no one wanted to believe it.

Besides, they all thought he was dead, anyway.

All she could do was watch as Winsor gloated to everyone and anyone.

After Winsor defeated The Calamity, people started treating him like a God.

They saw him as a God who descended from the heavens, ready to save the people from earthly troubles.

They bowed to Winsor and never mentioned Levi again.

If they dared to bring Levi's name up, they would be labeled as blasphemous.

For his part, Levi still thought the same way. He was willing to withstand this humiliation for Erudia's sake.

As for Zoey, she had put all her attention into keeping Morris Group running smoothly even though the Lopez and Black families didn't give her any pressure.

She was mostly worried that people would start trying to get them in trouble.

She was more than aware of the fact that Levi's enemies would start coming for the company once the news of him getting injured got out.

The Triple Group, for example, had made a reappearance in Erudia.

Back then, it was Levi who had chased them out.

Now that Levi was gone, they grabbed the opportunity to make a comeback.

After all, it wasn't possible for them to let go of such a promising market like Erudia.

Apparently, the main perpetrator of Triple Group's reemergence in Erudia was Lee Jeong-seok of Daelee Group.

Daelee Group held an almost legendary presence in Keerea.

Most of the other young masters only held that title for the sake of it, but in Daelee Group, that title symbolized power.

Lee Jeong-seok was the representation of being rich and powerful.

In order to take over Erudia's market again, Triple Group had sent him to take the lead, which showed just how serious they were in taking this venture.

Triple Group managed to set down its roots through connections and their vast amount of funding.

There was even talk of them collaborating with the Garrison clan.

Iris and the other council members immediately called for a meeting. "Triple Group will most likely come for us next. We have to be prepared!"

Zoey was beginning to worry as well.

Even though Morris Group had control over a vast part of the South, they were still no match for Triple Group.

At the end of the day, Triple Group beat the Garrison clan in terms of both money and power.

No matter how much the Garrison clan worked to expand, they were still just a family business.

However, Triple Group was an internationally powerful company.

If it weren't for Levi, Triple Group would never have stepped down.

Now that Levi collapsed, they immediately leaped back out of the shadows, ready to take control once more.

After all, everyone knew how shameless Triple Group was.

This was basically how they do things normally.

"All we can do is stay prepared and be alert."

On the other side of town, Tyrone was greeting his guests with the utmost solemnity.

His guest arrived in a procession of Rolls-Royce's and their bodyguards were all Caucasian.

Every move he made was in an ostentatious manner, similar to how Damien presented himself when he was alive.

Still, the Garrison family knew that he was a much greater deal than Damien ever was.

His bodyguards consisted of quite a few Ultimate class warriors, after all.

In Bayview, only Lee Jeong-seok had the abilities and capabilities to have God class and Ultimate class warriors as part of his bodyguard lineup.

The Daelee Group was simply that rich.

Anything and anyone could be bought with enough money, and Ultimate class warriors were no exception.

The purpose Lee Jeong-seok was here that day was to talk about a collaboration with Tyrone and the rest of the Garrison family.

"Two years ago, Levi chased Triple Group out of Erudia and forbade us from ever stepping foot in it again. But now that he's gone, we've returned and we're back with a vengeance. None of Levi's family members will be safe."

"Alright, come on then! I'll beat you again so that you'll accept your defeat without complaints."

Winsor decided to defeat his opponent twice so that he would finally admit it.

"There's no need for that. We admit our defeat. We're simply not as good as you."

It wasn't until Levi spoke that North Sky Lord dropped the matter.

Winsor looked at him with a cold smile. "Good that you're aware. Next time you see me, remember to walk the other way. I never want to hear about The Calamity causing trouble in Erudia ever again!"

With that, Winsor finally left with thousands of people clamoring to follow him.

North Sky Lord was furious.

This was definitely one of the most humiliating things that had ever happened to him.

I could have won!

But I was forced to lose!

However, he held back for Erudia.

He didn't know much, but he was still part of Erudia, after all.

"Master, when can I beat that little punk into a pulp?" North Sky Lord asked.

"It will probably be a while, but don't you worry. It won't be too far off," Levi said in a cold voice.

He still had to keep playing this role for the time being.

It simply wasn't time to reveal everything just yet. As such, The Calamity could only work in the shadows.

That being said, North Sky Lord believed that things would go back to normal one day.

When that happened, he would beat Winsor Campbell to a pulp.

“Master, where are we going next?” Zar couldn’t help but ask.

“Since we’re already in North Hampton, let’s go take a look at Levi’s kid,” Winsor smirked sinisterly.

Zoey and the others had already heard about the news regarding Winsor.

The news of him beating The Calamity had spread across the world.

He was now regarded as the true king.

And no one would dare challenge Winsor now.

Zoey and Emma had just been talking about how Levi owned that title when suddenly, Winsor arrived at their doorstep.

“What are you doing here?” Zoey asked as she looked at him warily.

“I’m here to take a look at your child with Levi,” Winsor said with a smile.

“Why do you want to look at our kid for?” Zoey was getting nervous.

After all, Zar had personally chased Levi out of Erudia.

As such, her instincts were screaming that Winsor was not to be trusted.

“Don’t worry. I just want to take a quick peek. Besides, I have no reason to do anything to you all. After all, none of you are worth the hassle. Even if Levi were still alive, he wouldn’t be worth it either.”

Zar and the others chuckled. “Levi never had a chance against Master. Their capabilities are just too far apart.”

“Don’t you dare speak ill of Daddy!”

Forlevia ran over the moment she heard those words and glared at them as fiercely as her cute little face would allow.

She was holding onto a toy gun that she held pointed toward Winsor and the others.

Her little face was filled with stubbornness and her eyes shone with determination.

Winsor chuckled at the sight. “Would you look at that! I guess the apple doesn’t fall far from the tree! You definitely take after your father. Too bad, though, since you’re a girl. If you were a boy, Zoey could have sent you to learn martial arts so you could grow up and maybe have a chance at beating me!”

Winsor roared with laughter.

His shrill chuckle was beginning to grate on Zoey’s ears.

She picked Forlevia up and looked at Winsor coldly. “Don’t worry. She may be a girl, but who’s to say she won’t be able to rule over the battleground in the future? You’d better keep praying that you’re able to hold on to your position. Who knows? Perhaps my daughter might come and take it away from you someday.”

Winsor bellowed with laughter. “Okay, sure! I’ll be waiting! However, I hope you all know that everyone already obeys me. Levi is now a thing of the past. This is now my era! The era of Winsor Campbell!”

After that, Winsor left.

Zoey felt like exploding in anger.

Back then, Winsor had defeated Levi, but people ignored his accomplishments.

So he wished to fight against Levi once again, showing the world he could defeat Levi every time.

I'm stronger than Levi Garrison!

However, he got the opportunity to challenge The Calamity instead.

After all, people perceived The Calamity as invincible, and they were practically unstoppable.

If I can defeat them... This accomplishment holds incredible merit. I can prove that I'm stronger than Levi and be the God of War.

"Trolls, I dare you to insult me. As for those who looked down on me, take a good look. I defeated North Sky Lord of The Calamity. Does anyone still think that I'm weaker than Levi Garrison? Come out, now!" Winsor shouted at the rest of the world with no concerns.

He had been suppressing his emotions for too long, and he finally got the chance to vent his frustrations out loud for everyone to hear.

Witnessing the outcome of the battle, those who once looked down on Winsor and supported Levi fell silent as they regretted their actions.

From now on, no one dares to look down on me!

The accomplishment of taking down The Calamity holds incredible merits, and I am the one who earns this glory.

The power he showed convinced everyone, and they acknowledged him as the God of War.

"From now on, Winsor Campbell is the only God of War in my heart!"

With that, Winsor Campbell got the title "God of War" and made a status for himself in Erudia.

He defeated The Calamity, showing the world the greatness of Erudia while solidifying Erudia's position in the world.

The Calamity that was once invincible was defeated in Erudia.

This was the symbol of Erudia's strength.

And Levi's intention all along.

I don't care if I don't have the title of the God of War. I only wish for the prosperity of Erudia.

I'll eliminate any threat of Erudia until the day I die, so the Erudians will not be humiliated by other countries.

Even if it means shouldering all the pain and sufferings.

Looking at Winsor Campbell's arrogant behavior, North Sky Lord, East Sky Lord, and the rest of The Calamity clenched their fists, their fingernails digging into their palms.

Ugh!

This is absurd!

North Sky Lord could've crushed him.

Yet, only one could understand their frustration.

And that was Levi.

He, too, wanted to defeat Winsor for his self-satisfaction, but Erudia's reputation was at stake.

For Erudia, I'm willing to bear any humiliation.

Winsor Campbell won.

The forces overseas were dumbstruck, as they couldn't believe it.

According to their speculations, North Sky Lord was much stronger than Winsor Campbell. Hence, they felt that something was amiss that Winsor actually won.

It was way too unexpected.

They had many headlines on standby, waiting for North Sky Lord's victory so that they could spread the news and mock Erudia for its downfall.

But their plan short circuited.

Instead, Erudia had shown the world once again its greatness and indestructible power.

Once again, Erudia's enemies were infuriated because they couldn't do anything to Erudia.

That was exactly what Levi wanted to achieve.

Meanwhile, Winsor was giddy with delight.

Looking at the members of The Calamity with disdain, he snorted coldly, "A bunch of bumpkins!"

I can bring down each and every single one of them!

How spectacular would it be if they clash against Master or the Great Family of Frostford? They would definitely lose miserably.

"Hear my words, The Calamity. I allow you guys to move around in Erudia. But I can wipe you out in minutes, so don't try something out of line." Winsor warned.

North Sky Lord was enraged when he heard his words. "Does your strength measure up to your arrogance?"

Winsor turned to look at him and scoffed. "Hmph! What a sore loser! Do you have a problem with that? Fight me again, and we'll see who's the winner!"

"Bring it on!" North Sky Lord shouted, not giving in to his opponent.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1276

Everything was going according to Jeong-seok's plan.

He had wanted to force Zoey to talk to him personally from the very start.

Clearly, his plans had worked.

Tyrone was taken aback by Triple Group's efficiency once again. He had also imposed sanctions upon Morris Group before, but with much less satisfactory results.

The more cruel, the better.

Obviously, Triple Group is willing to be much crueler than the Garrison family had been.

This is what it meant to be truly ruthless!

Tyrone was full of respect toward their cruelty.

He realized how much he still had to learn.

The place of discussion would be held at Morris Group's council room.

Jeong-seok's entrance remained as flashy as ever.

Over twenty cars marked his arrival along with a private jet.

All of the bodyguards he brought with him were Ultimate and God class warriors.

There were more warriors next to Jeong-seok than there were on the average battlefield.

All that proved was how powerful the Lee family truly was.

They could accomplish things even the Eighteen-Nation Alliance couldn't.

The moment Jeong-seok and his party arrived, members of Morris Group were taken aback.

We're actually going against someone this intimidating?

Zoey and some others were already waiting for him in the large conference room.

Their demands were simple, which was to work and live peacefully.

They already had little to no expectations.

No matter what ridiculous conditions Triple Group forced on them, they could only accept it.

Once he stepped into the conference room, Jeong-seok took one look at Zoey and sighed.
"As expected, what a national beauty. Such a pity indeed!"

If she hadn't gotten married and didn't already have a kid, Jeong-seok would have had a go at her himself.

After the two of them sat down, Zoey didn't hesitate to ask, "Mr. Lee, we've never messed with Triple Group before, have we? So why are you doing this to us?"

Jeong-seok was toying with an intricate dagger as he replied, "Because of Levi Garrison."

"What?" Zoey said in surprise.

She hadn't expected Jeong-seok to come right out of the gate like that.

"That's right! Two years ago, Levi chased Triple Group out of Erudia. Now, we're back for revenge. Everything we've done so far was for revenge!" Jeong-seok announced.

Instantly, the atmosphere started to change.

Many Morris Group's council members who had risen to position a little later on started to glare at Zoey.

They all felt that the hundreds of thousands of workers in Morris Group had been dragged along for no good reason.

At the end of the day, it was all because of Zoey's personal business.

We're all about to die because of her!

Zoey could feel how the situation was starting to take a turn for the worse.

Jeong-seok chuckled coldly and said, "What, isn't Levi here? Is he just going to let me trample over his company and his people like this?"

His subordinate instantly replied, "Mr. Lee, Levi Garrison is already dead."

"Oh? Is that so? What brilliant news!" Jeong-seok laughed, elated by the news.

Zoey clenched her fists tightly and replied in a cold voice, "If my husband was here, none of you would have even dared to step into this building!"

Zoey's words struck the Triple Group members' nerves instantly.

They started chattering in anger.

"Bullsh*t! Even if he were here, he wouldn't have managed to stop us!"

"Who does he think he is? He can't even hold a candle to the Lee family of Keerea!"

Even Jeong-seok chuckled. "Ah, it's too bad that he's dead, then. I'd love for him to come here and beat me up if he could!"

"Just wait. It will happen one day!" Zoey nearly said too much in her fit of rage.

"I'm looking forward to it! If you can resurrect the dead, of course!"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1277

Jeong-seok was too cocky for his own good.

It was as if there was a giant bulls-eye on his face, just waiting for someone to shoot a bullet through it.

The Lee family is nothing but despicable!

Zoey and Iris could only stare in disgust.

Why didn't they come when Levi was still crowned as the God of War?

They were obviously scared!

They were only able to be this cocky because Levi's no longer here.

Jeong-seok continued chuckling. "Well, he hasn't shown up after all this while. I guess he must be fuming in hell, huh?"

The crowd burst into laughter.

"Since you're here, let's have a chat. What will it take for you to let Morris Group off?" Zoey asked directly.

The council members of Morris Group started to get nervous.

It was time to decide their fate.

Jeong-seok looked at Zoey. "It's simple, hand over your position as chairman."

That one sentence struck them like a bolt of lightning, leaving them speechless.

They hadn't expected for Jeong-seok to be this daring.

"So, you want Ms. Lopez to step down so you can gobble the company up? No way!" Iris said defiantly.

Jeong-seok shook his head. "No, you got me wrong. I don't care about Morris Group. I just want Zoey to step down. Whoever wants to be chairman next can take it."

The council members of the Morris Group sighed in relief upon hearing that.

Jeong-seok stared at Zoey with a chilly grin on his face. "Are you willing to sacrifice yourself for your staff?"

Some of the council members started to speak up, "Ms. Lopez, we don't like this outcome too, but you have to think about the greater good!"

"Don't worry, Ms. Lopez, we'll take good care of the company!"

They were basically trying to chase Zoey off as soon as possible so that they would be free of this mess.

Zoey glanced at the crowd and hesitated before saying, "Okay, I'll step down as long as you agree to stop attacking Morris Group."

"Of course! In fact, I'm willing to sign a contract so that you can freely expose me if I ever go against my word," Jeong-seok said with a chuckle.

What he said was the truth, he was not interested in Morris Group.

After all, he had already achieved his goal of obtaining Erudia's market.

Now, all that was left to do was to torture Zoey and the others.

"Alright, I'll sign it!"

Zoey signed the contract without any hesitation and stepped down from her position as chairman and everything else concerned with it.

She would no longer be associated with Morris Group from then on.

“You, you, and you!” Jeong-seok pointed at Iris, Elena, and some other council members.

He wanted to get rid of their positions as well.

He had to be merciless and ruthless so that he could cut off any likelihood of retaliation.

That was just how Triple Group operates.

“Are you happy now? We’ve done everything you asked us to!” Zoey asked.

Jeong-seok thought for a moment and piped up, “One more thing! Levi probably named this company “Morris Group” after his best friend, right? Well, I want to change the name!”

“No!” Zoey declined instantly.

Iris and the others shook their heads as well.

This wasn’t just Levi’s hard work, it was theirs, too.

They would never agree to change the name just like that.

Jeong-seok glared at them and said, “It’s not your place to say ‘no’. All of you no longer have anything to do with Morris Group! Also, all of you should leave since you don’t belong here anymore.”

With that, Zoey and the other few ex-council members were chased out.

They stared at the office building, their gaze full of despair.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1278

For the sake of the hundreds of thousands of employees working at Morris Group, Zoey knew she had to rest her case.

She could take on Triple Group.

She knew she still had it in her.

However, it would cost tens of thousands of people to lose their jobs. Some of them might lose their families as a result, while a few might even sacrifice their lives.

“What a bully. If only Levi was still alive!” Iris lamented.

Zoey shot her a look fraught with emotion.

Levi's still alive.

But just barely.

He'll be bedridden for the rest of his life.

If he finds out about this, he'll just fuss and worry.

He might even shed tears of frustration.

Angry that he'll only be able to watch, and powerless to help in any way.

That feeling of helplessness could very well send him over the edge!

I can't let him know.

What's the point if he finds out? More cooks will only spoil the broth.

Although Jeong-seok promised to let Morris Group off and to abstain from subsuming the company, he continuously forced Morris Group to conduct business in accordance with his own development plans.

He manipulated the company like another one of his toys.

Jeong-seok even sent out an announcement declaring that Morris Group was to be renamed Castle Group.

Zoey and the rest were outraged at the news.

We've been cheated!

How shameless can he get?

Despicable!

He promised to set Morris Group free. He even signed a letter of promise.

How could he do such a thing...

He basically stamped his mark of ownership by renaming the company.

What a vile person!

This is the true colors of Triple Group, after all!

Abiding by ethics is against their nature.

That very same day, Morris Group held a press conference to officially announce the name change. Lee Hong-yi was appointed as the chairman.

Lee Hong-yi was a Keerean who used to work as a technician for Morris Group.

Now, he had rocketed through the ranks to sit on the company's throne.

This could only be Jeong-seok's doing.

Instead of personally interfering with Morris Group, he installed a conduit.

Now, he had the chairman under his thumb.

The company was as good as his.

Despite her rage, there was nothing the likes of Zoey could do.

The only silver lining was that the company still existed and none of the employees had to lose their jobs.

However, this was only the beginning.

This was only the tip of the iceberg of Jeong-seok's scheme.

Abigail and Tiffany had been kidnapped under mysterious circumstances at Oakland City. The Meyers family was boiling with anger and incredulity, but all they could do was watch.

Not only that, Levi's classmate, Chloe, had also been snatched.

So was Mia from the South Hampton Jones family.

The Jones family did not even dare to look for her.

Apparently, they had been issued a warning.

When Abigail, Tiffany, and the rest awoke, they found themselves locked up in a makeshift cell.

In front of them stood a tall man with breathtaking features. His lip curled into a devilish smirk.

Jeong-seok was the one who had gathered them.

“After extensive investigation, I have concluded that, besides Zoey Lopez, you are the women closest to Levi Garrison.”

“If someone were to come after you, Levi is sure to come to your aid.” Jeong-seok laughed menacingly.

“What do you plan to do?” Tiffany sneered.

“From today onwards, you will become my slaves. As long as you bear the mark of the slave, none of you will be able to escape!”

Just as Iris was about to release her wrath, Jeong-seok continued, “Zoey and the rest will not be spared, either!”

“Emma Jones will be sold to the slums of a foreign country and she’ll be shared by a bunch of hooligans! As for Zoey Lopez, I’ll marry her off to some sleazy old man. Finally, Levi’s daughter will be auctioned off to some pervert!”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War

[The Protector] Chapter 1279

Jeong-seok had prepared a horrible outcome for every woman closely affiliated with Levi.

The thought of his plan playing out brought a smile to Jeong-seok's face.

"Despicable!"

"Where was this courage of yours when my brother-in-law was still around?" Abigail shrieked furiously.

"Exactly! You're nothing but a conniving rat! You'll never amount to anything!"

"No wonder Triple Group is such a scummy company! You're only capable of such deeds! How pathetic!" the women taunted, their voices banding together.

Little did they know that their attempt to aggravate Jeong-seok was futile.

In fact, it made Jeong-seok grin even wider.

"What's the point of you saying all these? Sure, I'm a conniving rat. So what? Too bad Levi's dead. I have his wife, daughter, and mother in my clutches. How is he going to retaliate?" Jeong-seok mocked.

"You..."

The women were stunned speechless.

What could they do in the face of such blatant brazenness?

“My brother-in-law might not be around, but karma will still get you!”

Abigail shot daggers at Jeong-seok.

“You’ll definitely encounter retribution one day!” the other women chimed in.

“Whatever. The lot of you are destined to be my slaves from now on. This way, you’ll have front-row seats to the so-called retribution that you speak of.” Jeong-seok retorted.

It was at this moment that one of his lackeys came running in. “Sir, the people from overseas have agreed. Emma Jones can be sold to the slums there at any time! They’ll be sure to torture her even without our instructions. Her remaining days will be a living hell!” the lackey sniggered.

“The head of Noir Group, Mr. Williams, will be arriving at North Hampton tonight! He is extremely anxious to marry Zoey Lopez!”

Jeong-seok let out a peal of delight. “That old pervert! How many young girls’ lives has he ruined over the years? The number must be in the thousands by now.”

“Exactly. How many wives has he had? I heard that several of them were tortured to death!”

Even Jeong-seok himself was utterly disgusted by the man.

“Alright, I shall prepare to receive him tonight!”

Jeong-seok locked up the women again and waited for nightfall to descend.

At night, Jeong-seok personally went to the airport to welcome Mr. Williams of Noir Group.

He held the same social standing as the Daelee Group did in Keera.

As such, he was not a man to be trifled with.

Soon, Jeong-seok saw a line of people from Noir Group at the airport.

Mr. Williams was helped out of the plane by a few of his men.

His features screamed lechery. He was almost bald and had a pair of squinty eyes which he used to scan his surroundings.

The sight of his mouthful of yellowed teeth would be enough to turn anyone's stomach.

He was definitely the most repulsive man Jeong-seok had ever seen.

However, his subordinates could only greet him with smiles plastered on their faces.

He was practically king, after all.

"Mr. Williams!" Jeong-seok greeted cheerily.

"Hello, Mr. Lee! I just want to say that not only do I want Levi Garrison's wife, but also his mother and daughter! Oh, and his sister as well! I want them all. We'll have so much fun together! State your price; I can't wait to have all of them!" Mr. Williams giggled. His excitement was obvious.

When he heard that Jeong-seok was planning to get rid of those women, he knew he had to make them his.

Jeong-seok was not surprised by Mr. Williams' request.

He's always been like this!

Always so greedy about such things!

"No problem! However, I plan to hold an auction for Levi's daughter. I've already sent word out so I'll have to go through with it," Jeong-seok replied.

"Sure. I'll make sure I'm the highest bidder!" Mr. Williams squealed in delight.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War

[The Protector] Chapter 1280

Jeong-seok chuckled. "What I want is simple. I want to own twenty-five percent of your petroleum production operations in the northwest of Senia."

Mr. Williams hesitated.

He did not expect Jeong-seok to have such a voracious appetite.

But this way I'll be able to snag not only the wife but also the daughter and mother of the God of War.

This is a once-in-a-lifetime opportunity!

"Fine, you got it!" Williams proclaimed.

Jeong-seok beamed.

Not only am I going to make Levi's life terrible, but I also managed to clinch part ownership of petroleum production operations!

That's killing two birds with one stone!

Both parties were in agreement.

Jeong-seok led Mr. Williams to the lodgings.

“Mr. Lee, do you think that tonight...”

Mr. Williams had come from a far-flung corner of the world and was ready to indulge in all of his hedonistic desires.

He did not want to wait a second longer.

Jeong-seok kept a smile hanging off his lips. “Please have patience, Mr. Williams. We can do whatever you want tomorrow when everyone will have arrived.”

Mr. Williams considered Jeong-seok’s words for a while before finally assenting to the latter’s suggestion.

We’re talking about the beloved women of the God of War!

The loved ones of that almighty man, with enough power to rival multiple countries, will be mine to do away with as I please.

This is amazing. I can’t wait!

Both men’s spirits were sky-high.

They had never been so elated in their lives.

Meanwhile, Zoey was still safe for the time being.

However, she could not seem to contact Iris or Abigail.

Emma dashed up to her in a panicked frenzy. “Zoey, something terrible happened! Mia has been kidnapped by Triple Group! They’re clearly issuing us a challenge. They even threatened to auction off Evie!”

“What?”

Zoey’s rage spiked through the roof.

They want to auction off my child?

How could she tolerate it?

If only Triple Group wasn't so powerful...

"Why don't we just pack up and leave? We can't stay here. We're no match for Triple Group; they're too strong!" Zoey suggested.

She had long been toying with the idea of going off the grid.

"We can't. When I came back, I realized that we're surrounded! There's no way we'll be able to leave!"

Emma's face fell.

Triple Group had closed them in completely. No one could escape.

"Triple Group never had any intention of letting us go!"

Zoey had no choice but to plead with Dale for help.

"I desperately want to save you and Evie, too. Unfortunately, I can't go against the Daelee

Group. Even Tyrone is at their beck and call! For the sake of the family, I have no other option but to sacrifice you!"

Dale hung up.

The Daelee Group was no different from Frostford to him and his family.

Zoey was spiraling in the pits of despair.

Who can we turn to now?

"Are we just going to sit here and wait for our deaths?"

Zoey and Emma were despondent.

This time, it was Forlevia who made a call. She dialed a number. "Call Daddy! Daddy will save us!"

Despite her young age, she often talked to Levi on the phone.

She immediately called her father.

Levi's voice was soon heard from the receiver, "Evie? Daddy's here!"

Forlevia burst into tears. "Daddy, come quickly! Someone is bullying us! Come and save us!"

"Hold on, Evie. I'll be there before you know it. Don't cry. Wait for me!"

The call from his daughter turned Levi's anxiety up to the maximum.

"Why are you calling your father, Evie?"

Zoey and Emma sighed.

There's no point in telling Levi about this.

He can't even move.

How will he save us?

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1281

Truth be told, Jeong-seok's every move was within Levi's calculations.

He was originally unable to do anything about the situation.

But now that he had control of The Calamity, he had countless skilled men at his disposal.

Saving Zoey and the rest would be as easy as taking candy from a baby.

Zoey and the rest might appear to be at the mercy of Triple Group, but The Calamity had been closely surveying the entire situation.

At the sign of any real danger, The Calamity's soldiers would move in.

Levi also stationed people to protect Abigail.

However, the news reached him too late, and by that time, Abigail and the rest had already been taken.

Despite this, there was always someone keeping an eye on the situation from the shadows. If Abigail or any of the other women were in actual trouble, experts from The Calamity would rush in.

Levi had everything under control.

This was something Triple Group could never have expected.

Initially, Levi had left the matter to his men in The Calamity.

That was why he was currently in L Nation, having just buried Hades in his hometown.

But after the call from Forlevia, he could not hold himself back any longer.

He decided to take matters into his own hands.

“We’re going back to Erudia now!” Levi barked, his expression tense.

Forlevia’s voice rang in his ears.

You’ve officially pissed me off, Triple Group!

I slew the military strategist of Raysonia without batting an eye!

Do you actually think you’re untouchable?

“Sir, Lee Jeong-seok had taken complete control of Morris Group! He’s even announced at a press conference that the company’s name will be changed to Castle Group!” West Sky Lord said softly.

“How dare they!” Levi roared.

Every move made by Jeong-seok aimed straight at one of Levi’s pressure points. He had successfully set off the volcano of Levi’s fury.

He’ll never expect that I’m still alive and kicking...

I’m back and stronger than ever!

I’ve never been more terrifyingly powerful in my life!

Soon, the sun disappeared below the horizon.

Zoey and Emma had been in a terror-stricken state the entire day.

Alas, they still came up empty.

There was no one they could turn to, no place they could escape to.

"Is this really how we're destined to meet our end?" Zoey huffed in indignance.

I know that marrying Levi would prevent me from living a normal life.

Bur I can't accept going down like this.

"Don't worry, Mom and Grandma, I'm sure Daddy will come save us!"

Forlevia's small fists were balled tightly, her expression one of earnest faith.

She was a naive child, after all.

It was natural for her to believe in every promise.

In fact, she believed every single promise that adults had made to her.

Since Levi had promised to come for her, she was certain that he would.

"Daddy is the God of War! He's even better than superheroes!" Forlevia exclaimed.

Zoey did not have the heart to disillusion her and chose to keep her peace.

Shortly after, some people from Triple Group took Zoey away.

At a hall in North Hampton.

A private auction was taking place.

It was a full house.

Some were serious auctioneers while others were only here to watch.

Jeong-seok was sitting in the front row. Mr. Williams, sitting next to him, could barely contain his excitement.

Mr. Williams had already laid out his plan to torture the women in his mind.

All he needed were the people themselves.

“My goal is simple. I want to let the whole world see what happens when you cross the Daelee Group! Even the God of War can’t stand in our way!”

Jeong-seok’s aim was not only to exact revenge but also to send out waves of intimidation.

He wanted to announce to the world that he held the authority to make the God of War’s family do his bidding. This way, no one would dare oppose him.

“Bring them up here!”

The three women were brought up to the stage.

At the sight of them, Mr. Williams’ eyes lit up.

“Levi Garrison’s wife and mother are already the property of Mr. Williams. Next up, we have his daughter!”

“The bidding will start at a hundred million!”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1282

"A hundred and fifty million!"

Bids started flying in from below the stage.

"Two hundred million!"

The audience eyed Forlevia with the gazes of starved beasts.

Not only did they share this kink, but the fact that the one being auctioned off was Levi's daughter made the auction all the more meaningful.

They were all screaming their bids at the top of their lungs.

"Three hundred million!"

"Five hundred million!"

"One billion!"

The wealthy elites outbid each other in a frenzy.

"Let me join in, too. One and a half billion!"

The latest bid came from Jaron, Jackson, and Lucas of the South Hampton Prince Gang

Their family used to be enslaved to Levi.

Jaron's hand was also disabled.

They would carry their resentment with them for the rest of their lives.

"Let's just go with two billion!"

No one would be able to fathom the true extent of Lucas' rage.

"I want a piece of this, too. Three billion! Levi Garrison's daughter is mine!"

That voice belonged to Kameda Ichiro.

He had been chased out of South Hampton by Levi. But he returned after getting wind of Levi's accident.

He even obtained the support of the royal families of South Hampton.

Jeong-seok was in seventh heaven at the sight of the enthusiastic responses.

They were all foreigners who had been chased out by Levi. Now that he was gone, they were coming back one by one.

All of them returned with the same desire to punish Levi's woman.

Jeong-seok could not have been more delighted.

The bidders were also enjoying themselves in the process.

Zoey looked around at the people before her. "B*stards! You're all b*stards!" she shrieked.

"Zoey, why don't you take a shot at guessing what the final price for your daughter will be?" Jeong-seok laughed maliciously.

"Go to hell!"

Zoey was angry enough to commit murder.

“Aren’t you being a bit rude, Zoey? I didn’t even sell your daughter off in a cage. How dare you curse at me?”

Jeong-seok had initially intended to auction off Forlevia in a cage.

“Five billion!”

Mr. Williams was beside himself with excitement and could not contain his emotions any longer. He raised the paddle high in the air.

“Look, Zoey. Did you ever think that your daughter would be able to fetch such a high price?”

Jeong-seok guffawed merrily.

Zoey and Emma were close to crying tears of rage.

“Six billion!”

The bidding war had not ended.

The people present truly hated Levi from the bottom of their hearts.

“Seven billion!”

“Ten billion!”

This latest bid came from Mr. Williams.

He peered around him. No one was shouting a higher bid.

“Ten billion going once!”

“Ten billion going twice!”

“Ten billion going three times!”

“Levi Garrison’s daughter, Forlevia Lopez, is sold to Mr. Williams!”

“Congratulations Mr. Williams, you now own Levi Garrison’s mother, wife, daughter, sister, and sister-in-law!”

“Congrats Mr. Williams, go ahead and enjoy yourself tonight!”

The crowd congratulated Mr. Williams.

Mr. Williams was flushed with joy. The thought of what would soon happen instantly stimulated his loins.

This is going to be a night I’ll never forget!

“Levi can only smile from hell. His entire family is now under Mr. Williams’ care! Don’t worry Levi, I’m sure he’ll be gentle with your women!” Jeong-seok let out a manic laugh.

Mr. Williams joined in and laughed diabolically.

The image of his mouth splitting his face apart was grotesque, to say the least.

“You’re all a bunch of beasts! How could you do this to a child? You’re all going to hell!”

Zoey hurled scathing words at the men.

But all she received in response were merciless taunts.

After all, everyone who had come to the auction to watch the plight of the women.

They could not be more overjoyed at seeing the state to which Levi’s family had been reduced.

“Don’t worry, Mom. Daddy will be here very soon!” Forlevia pointed at the front door.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1283

“Levi will come? Little girl, how naive can you get?”

“Your father is dead. How will he come?”

Jeong-seok ripped through Forlevia’s innocent hopes.

Everyone knows Levi’s dead.

But Forlevia obstinately fixed her eyes on Jeong-seok and glared at him. “Shut up! Daddy is still alive! I talked to him on the phone!”

“Just you wait! Daddy will be here before you know it! He’ll kick all your butts!” Forlevia exclaimed ferociously to the people watching.

No one took her seriously.

“Do you teach your child to lie, Zoey? Levi is obviously dead. What’s the point in claiming otherwise?”

Zoey was about to reply when Forlevia cut in, “You idiots! Daddy isn’t dead at all! He’s been tricking you on purpose!”

“What?”

Jeong-seok was stunned by her declaration. Something felt fishy to him.

Zoey glowered at the people around. “Stop talking, Evie. You might scare them! My husband is definitely still alive. He coming after all of you!”

The expressions of the crowd instantly shifted.

A few of them could feel cold sweat dripping down their backs.

If Levi is still alive, we'll be in trouble.

He's a danger to us all.

“She’s right. My son is still alive! I bet none of you expected this outcome. When he comes for each and every one of you, you can kiss your lives goodbye.” Emma hollered.

The color drained from the faces around the women as fear started to consume them.

What if it's true?

“Stop spouting crap, Zoey! Someone separate these two! I only want Forlevia here!” Jeong-seok bellowed, absolutely livid.

His lackeys quickly separated Zoey and Forlevia.

Zoey and Emma started to weep.

“Don’t worry! Daddy will come save me!”

Only Forlevia maintained her composure.

The mother and daughter were eventually forced apart.

Zoey and Emma were taken away to an unknown location, leaving Forlevia onstage.

Although the noise had subsided, many of the people present were breathing raggedly.

None of them wanted to believe that Levi still walked the earth.

The anxiousness had gotten to Jeong-seok as well. He wiped the beads of cold sweat from his forehead using his handkerchief.

“Childish nonsense! Why are all of you so scared?” Mr. Williams said scornfully.

Boom!

At this moment, a thunderous noise akin to an explosion sounded.

The entire hall shook, sending the people inside teetering off balance.

The crowd screamed as they whipped their heads around in fright.

Bang!

The front door burst open.

Boom!

The entire wall was demolished.

Someone wrecked the whole wall from the outside.

The people in the hall froze in shock.

Almost instantly after, a group of people clad in black garb stormed in.

They were dressed in black garments from head to toe and had their knives ready.

Masks obscured their identity.

The intruders were familiar yet alien to the crowd.

“The Calamity!”

“It’s The Calamity!”

Jeong-seok was the first to recognize them. He proceeded to shriek wildly.

Although Winsor had gained victory over The Calamity, the group’s presence still struck terror into the hearts of everyone.

The sight of them alone was enough to petrify a person.

The Daelee Group members scrambled to band together to protect Jeong-seok.

The skilled members of Noir Group also immediately went on high alert.

Everyone else in the hall were in a state of hysteria as they watched members of The Calamity draw near.

“It’s Daddy! Daddy’s here to save me! Yay!” Forlevia squealed in glee.

Whoosh!

Wham!

Whoosh!

Another batch of people from The Calamity made their appearance.

They had been waiting in ambush for the right opportunity to reveal themselves.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1284

Jeong-seok and the rest were stupefied.

The thought of being ambushed at the auction did not cross their mind.

The Calamity had been hiding about, yet we are completely oblivious!

Bam!

Wham!

Several skilled fighters showed up on the stage from nowhere and sent the men guarding Forlevia flying.

“Greetings, Missy.”

Following that, they shielded the little girl flawlessly, leaving not even an inch of opening.

Jeong-seok and the likes were aghast at the sight.

Beads of cold sweat formed on their foreheads.

Their knees started shaking feebly after turning their gazes to the front.

Flop!

The members of The Calamity appeared behind the toppled wall.

The Four Lords marched forward and lined at two sides, making a pathway.

A silhouette could be seen strolling toward the scene in the middle of the path.

“Daddy, Daddy...”

Forlevia cheered and jumped in excitement when she saw that figure.

“Huh?” Jeong-seok and the group were glued to the ground.

However, they could no longer calm their nerves after seeing Levi in the flesh.

It’s Levi Garrison! He’s still alive and kicking! How unbelievable! So those women weren’t lying after all! Children do say the darndest things! It’s no bluff. Damn it! Not only is her father alive, but he is here to rescue her as well!

A murderous glint flashed across Levi’s eyes.

With a gloomy expression on his face, he stomped toward the stage like a devil from hell.

Everyone was intimidated by his terrifying aura.

It sent chills down their spines. Their blood ran cold as he was slowly closing in.

The crowd moved aside to open up a clear path for him involuntarily.

They were all frozen in place.

Even the leaders of the conglomerates were rooted to the spot, including the likes of Keerea’s Daelee Group and Senia’s Noir Group.

No one dared to make a sound because the man in front of them was their nightmare.

A while later, Levi went up to the stage, carrying Forlevia in his arms.

The fearsome and murderous air around him vanished instantly. Instead, he was all smiles when he was in the presence of his daughter.

“Evie, Daddy is here. Don’t be afraid, okay?”

The girl grinned from ear to ear. “I’m not scared. I know Daddy will come to save me.”

“Levi, how are you still alive?” Jeong-seok gaped at him in disbelief.

It can’t be! Raysonia’s Tenichi confirmed his death repeatedly so he can’t be alive! Who would’ve thought that he is the master of The Calamity! No, wait a minute! This is a set-up! This is all their scheme! We’ve been tricked!

Levi cast him a glance. “Why do you think The Calamity was defeated in Erudia only?”

“What? The Calamity’s defeat at the hands of Winsor Campbell was done on purpose?”

The crowd was shocked by the sudden revelation.

In no time, all of them had a clear picture of the situation.

Levi faked his death to set us up!

The crowd was terrified by the thought.

Jeong-seok could feel his body tremble.

Damn it! My arrival in Erudia to deal with Zoey was leaked! I’m busted! So Levi knew everything all along. He’s only showing up now because I’ve nothing out of line previously!

The same epiphany hit the rest of the crowd after a while.

How terrifying! We’re in deep trouble now.

They shivered with fear after knowing that The Calamity threw the game deliberately during their battle with Winsor because of Levi.

The Calamity is still as powerful as before! There’s no way we can afford to cross them!

“I-it’s not like that. W-we...”

Jaron, Jackson, Lucas, and the rest felt their teeth chattering as they were overwhelmed by terror.

Who would've thought things would turn out this way? Why did we involve ourselves in this? Argh...

"Master, what should we do with these people?" North Sky Lord asked.

"Kill all the participants. Cripple all the spectators." Levi ordered.

"No! Levi, you can't touch me!"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1285

Jeong-seok shouted abruptly.

“It’s not just me you can’t lay a finger on, Mr. Williams, too. You can’t bear the consequences should anything befall us. I believe you know how powerful Daelee Group and Noir Group are.”

Williams nodded in agreement. “That’s right. Let’s have a seat and talk it over. We will fulfill your request to the best of our abilities, be it money or crude oil extraction rights. Let’s work something out, shall we?”

Jeong-seok added, “Yeah. Let’s make a friend of each other. I believe we can work out a deal. No hard feelings, okay?”

“No hard feelings? Are you telling me to forget the fact that you just put my daughter up for auction? Are you a f*cking idiot?” Levi bellowed.

The people present were stunned at his words.

It was their first time hearing Levi use a swear word.

Jeong-seok and Williams were stupefied.

“Finish them off!” Levi turned to leave while carrying his daughter in his arm.

“No! Levi, you can’t kill us! If you do, our families will definitely avenge us! Not even you will get away from this, Levi! They will hunt you down to the ends of the world!”

"Yeah! We have many ultimate class combatants with us! Do you think you can take us out as you like?"

Refusing to accept their fate, Jeong-seok and Williams put up a last-ditch struggle.

"Is that so? I wouldn't mind wiping Daelee Group and Noir Group off the face of the earth."

The two started shuddering with dread after hearing Levi's statement.

Levi invaded Raysonia to kill Demon Blade. He then decapitated Tenichi. This man has the capability to do what he says.

"Do it!" A murderous glint flashed across Levi's eyes.

"Kill them!"

The Calamity attacked upon Levi's order.

Whoosh!

Swish!

In a flash, Jaron, Lucas, Jackson, and Kameda kicked the bucket without a chance to react.

Is there anyone who can contend with The Calamity? Despite having several ultimate class and god class bodyguards on our side, North Sky Lord alone is enough to crush them all. The threatening presence of his subordinates standing behind him only added to the terrifying mood. Our men don't stand a chance against those people. Having ultimate class fighters isn't sufficient if they can't even defeat Winsor. It'd be a different story if our guards were all at Sampson's level.

Swoosh!

Whoosh!

The lives of the two foreigners ended in an instant.

The other morally corrupt tycoons did not escape from their fate to be decimated, either.

As for the spectators, they were crippled as per Levi's command.

The Calamity was never sloppy with their job. They completed their tasks within a brief moment.

After that, Levi's unquenchable fury finally subsided. If he were not holding Forlevia in his arms, he would have executed them personally.

*These b*stards! What a bunch of animals! How dare they harm women and children. Scoundrels! To think that they would put Evie up for auction and even tried to lay their dirty hands on Zoey! They are pushing their luck!*

"Daddy, are you feeling better now?" Forlevia whispered a question into his ear as she buried herself in his chest.

"Daddy has recovered. You don't have to worry."

At his words, the little girl cheered, "Yay! That's great! Oh! We should see Grandma and Mommy! They wouldn't let me call you because they thought you're not well! They didn't want to make you worry!"

Forlevia might be young, but she was precocious enough to understand her surroundings.

"Haha! Daddy is gonna be fine! I promise I will always protect you by your side! Don't you worry about a thing, little one!"

Right after Levi was about to head backstage, a few men made their sudden appearance.

It's them!

Levi was puzzled.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1286

The Dragonites! I haven't seen them for a while!

"Greetings, God of War!" the Dragonites shouted in unison.

Levi beamed at them. "I'm no longer the God of War."

"No. You are the only God of war. It's tacit," they responded with a smile.

Forlevia clapped her hands. "Yes! Daddy is the God of War!"

Levi patted her head with a smile on his face.

"Why are you here?" Levi queried without beating around the bush.

"We are here to relay an order," they replied with a stern expression.

"Alright. Talk."

"Sir, the message is simple. You may show yourself to the public, but no one should know that you've recovered. Therefore, you must be in a wheelchair from now on. Also, because of the unusual turns of events recently, some people are wondering if you're alive," he explained.

Levi nodded. "Mm-hmm, I thought so, too."

"The primary purpose is to smoke out the remaining evildoers. For that reason, we suggest that you use The Calamity to make a clean sweep once and for all. It was nearly impossible

for you to investigate and deal with the matter in secret before this. Sir, this chance is hard to come by," the Dragonites exhorted.

The relayed message was the wish of Erudia's government. Although the country had many powerful men to settle the issue, none was of Levi's caliber. Needless to say, it was definitely more reassuring to have him deal with the problem than any others. On top of that, he was not the God of War at the moment, so it would be the perfect timing.

Levi immediately understood Erudia's intention to use his current situation to get rid of the country's harmful parasites all at once.

The group that he had eradicated previously was only the tip of the iceberg.

There were more transgressors hidden in the dark.

For instance, the comeback of the Blood King Palace and the concealment of Tenichi's death.

These were all dormant threats that needed his immediate attention.

Naturally, there were still more matters to be concerned about.

So, Levi agreed to their terms without hesitation.

He would sacrifice anything for the sake of his country.

Besides, he could do that while staying with his family and protecting them.

In the open, he could crush his enemies and annihilate the entire army on his own.

In the dark, he could weed out the traitors of the country and bring death to these individuals.

These were the things he was capable of.

If it were something favorable to his country, he would agree to any request no matter how harsh it might be.

"Sir, someone will contact you in secret and provide you with the details for the next mission. This is a top-secret operation. You must maintain secrecy at all times." A Dragonite glanced at Forlevia.

"Alright. Got it," Levi replied.

"Sir, we will arrange for your official return to Erudia. Everyone will know that you are alive."

After the message was conveyed, the Dragonites left the scene at once.

Levi turned to smile at Forlevia. "Evie, can you promise Daddy to keep everything that happened tonight a secret? You can't let Grandma and Mommy know, either."

He could not violate the top-secret order given by Erudia. After all, he was a soldier and it was in his nature to obey commands.

"Okay, Daddy. I got it," Forlevia promised.

Then, he kissed his daughter goodbye and put her down.

"Don't worry, Evie. I'll see you tomorrow." Levi waved his hand.

Zoey and the others thought that they were goners. They certainly didn't expect anyone to come to their rescue.

However, they did not know what just happened.

Did Daelee Group let us go? It seems impossible. But someone definitely saved us.

Soon enough, Forlevia was sent back to where they were.

"Evie, can you tell Mommy what just happened?" Zoey asked hurriedly.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1287

"It's fine, Mommy. Nothing happened..." Forlevia stammered.

I've promised Daddy to keep it a secret.

But the adults could tell she was hiding something with just a glance.

"Evie, be honest. Tell me what happened," Zoey questioned expressionlessly.

"That's right. It's not good to lie," Emma reiterated.

"I—" Forlevia was in a dilemma. On one end, she wanted to be a good girl. On the other end, she wished to keep the promise with her father.

"Good evening, Ms. Jones, Ms. Lopez. We are the ones who handled the issue tonight."

A few people came over at that moment.

"Huh?"

Zoey and Emma were equally bewildered.

"Also, we've just found out that Mr. Garrison was framed. Thus, we hereby revoke the ban on his return to Erudia," that man continued.

At his words, Zoey had a rough idea of the speaker's identity.

"Thank you. May I know where my husband is currently?" Zoey questioned anxiously.

“He is not around at the moment. He’ll be back tomorrow. Also, good news for you. Mr. Garrison is getting better now. He doesn’t have to lie on the bed anymore; he can sit in a wheelchair already.”

“That’s great! As long as he is back!”

That person reminded, “It’s thanks to Mr. Quinton. It was he that helped Mr. Garrison recover.”

“Is there any hope for him to be fully recovered?” Zoey’s eyes flickered with expectations.

“There is still hope at the moment.”

At his statement, Zoey and Emma were elated.

Spreading the news that Levi could recover was part of the Dragonites’ plan.

What would his adversaries do if they heard that Levi could recover?

It would be unthinkable for them to leave him be.

Without a doubt, it would only be a matter of time before the real enemies revealed themselves.

After all, Levi himself had slaughtered the previous group of foes.

After knowing the poison didn’t kill him, the forces behind Blood King Palace would make their appearance by hook or by crook.

With that expectation, the news of Levi’s health improvement was announced to the public deliberately.

Meanwhile, he and the others would monitor the movements of their nemesis from the shadows.

“Master, does it upset you to act as a crippled man?” North Sky Lord asked.

It went without saying that it was unpleasant for him to pretend to be a disabled person.

But Levi shook his head. "No. I'm willing to do this for the country. This much is nothing."

"With you faking your death, many enemies were smoked out this time. Due to its effectiveness, the higher-ups have decided to let you continue your act as a crippled man," West Sky Lord said.

Levi nodded. "Indeed. We will have a new mission soon. You should ready yourselves at all times."

The next day, Levi sat in a wheelchair and was sent back to North Hampton.

His news spread like wildfire.

The part that shocked most people was his physical improvement after receiving treatment from the great doctor, Benny Quinton. He was thought to be permanently paralyzed before that, but now he could sit in a wheelchair. It was an astounding feat to the public.

Within a short period, the world was in an uproar.

It would be unimaginable if Levi were to recover to his peak.

The presence of Winsor, who "defeated" The Calamity, as well as Levi, who was at his peak, was too insurmountable a threat to everyone.

It was not a development that anyone wished to see.

In an instant, the hidden forces lurking across the world became restless, including the ones in Erudia.

Zoey and the rest were overjoyed with tears upon seeing Levi's arrival.

Seeing his family, his heart was overwhelmed with happiness.

"I may be using a wheelchair, but I'm still capable of protecting all of you."

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1288

It doesn't matter even if I'm wheelchair-bound. At least I can finally stay by their side as a living person.

That night, Zoey and Emma prepared a table full of sumptuous meals for him.

Levi kept Forlevia in his arm.

"Daddy, I didn't tell anyone the secret. But Mommy said that I'm not a good girl if I lie," the girl pouted. Her expression clearly showed she was frustrated.

Looking at his cute daughter, Levi answered, "Do you remember what we talk about last night?"

"Yes, I do," Forlevia nodded.

"We need to keep it a secret because what we are doing is a good thing. So, by not telling anyone, Evie is doing a good deed, too. In other words, you are still a good girl." A smile widened on Levi's lips.

Upon hearing that, the girl's mood finally became better and she grinned from ear to ear. "I got it."

The house was filled with warmth and happiness.

After dinner, Zoey said with a smile, "After so long, we can finally gather as a family. Our lives will go back to normal. That's great."

Nevertheless, it would be challenging for them to live normal lives, even when Levi was in his current state.

The news of Levi's return spread across the globe; it created a big hype.

Winsor was all smiles when he heard the news. "Haha! That is great! I heard that Levi is recovering now! I'll have a second match with him after he has completely recovered his strength!"

"Yes! After your second victory against Levi, everyone will have no choice but to submit to you! No one will ever raise a doubt again!" Bolgun chortled.

"That's true. Although I do not need to defeat Levi to prove myself anymore, it is my obsession to win against him one more time." Winsor was arrogant and determined.

His ego was inflated after his victory over the North Sky Lord. He had acted snobby toward everyone since then.

To him, Levi had turned from someone whom he used to be wary of to a mere loser.

"We can't let Levi recover at any cost! It will spell doom to us if he regains his strength!"

"Argh! I can't believe he survived! He must have a devil's luck!"

"He was the one who stood before our plan! We must eliminate him at once!"

"We must put an end to him before he recovers!"

Similar sentiments echoed across the world after knowing Levi was alive.

Among them, the individuals from Triple Group were the most furious.

At their luxurious manor in Keerea, the prominent members of the Lee family were furious after hearing the news of their heir's death.

"Find out who did this! I will avenge my son!"

"No matter who in Erudia did this, I will get even with him for what he did to my grandson!"

As one would expect, it was the same with Noir Group from Senia.

“Go and investigate! We will make him pay for what he did!”

“We will bring death to the culprit no matter the cost!”

The great family of Frostford had it worst after being told of the disappearances of Sampson and his four disciples.

“Inspect the matter thoroughly! Our reputation will be tarnished if word of our members having died out there gets leaked!” ordered the leader of the family.

Immediately, those people who had been living secluded lives sent a group of subordinates to their so-called “world out there”.

The last time it happened was around two hundred years ago.

They could no longer hold themselves back after two centuries of staying hidden.

The world was seemingly peaceful on the surface, yet there were numerous undercurrents.

It all happened because of Levi’s return.

His comeback blew up a storm in the whole world.

But this was the exact reaction he and the Dragonites wanted.

To lure all the real enemies out, Levi had to fulfill two conditions.

First, he had to wait for the mission to be given by the Dragonites.

Second, he had to wait for someone to look for him.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1289

The Garrison clan of Oakland City received firsthand intelligence of Levi's return.

"What? That b*stard can still recover?" Tyrone was visibly disturbed.

If he regains his strength, he'll definitely come looking for us. After all, we did many evil deeds, some of which are unpardonable.

"We have to get rid of him before his complete recovery!" A murderous glint flashed across Tyrone's eyes.

The entire Garrison family came to a complete agreement.

If he restores his health, our family will be wiped out!

"This b*stard is still a disabled man. If we want to kill him, we have to do it now!"

To preserve their honor, they did not make any move against him previously. But the situation had changed. If they didn't end him right away, it would cause them their demise.

The Garrisons were determined to take Levi out because he was nothing but a crippled man at the moment.

There won't be a better time than now!

"What? He? I—" Olivia's face was sullen upon hearing that. Her eyes were about to pop out from their sockets.

Even Tyrone drew a sharp breath when he saw her chilling expression.

She was muttering gibberish; no one could make out the words she was saying.

Her abnormal reaction raised Tyrone's suspicion.

Why is she getting all worked up every time she hears that b*stard's name?

"Oh dear. The doctor said that she still hasn't recovered from the pain of losing Damien."

"Yeah. That's why she couldn't stand hearing the word Levi. She will act up every time that b*stard's name is mentioned."

Indeed, the mention of Levi would cause her to lose her sanity.

Olivia actually had a sound mind.

But whenever she was triggered, she would lose her composure. Consequently, she would lose her ability to articulate words properly.

As a result, she would express herself in that strange manner.

However, the rest would pass it off as her inability to recover from the pain of losing her son.

"Sir, before I forget, something terrible has happened. Someone from the reclusive great family of Frostford met his end out in the world. And the incident happened to be here in Oakland City."

A man chimed in, "That man's identity was enough to scare the living daylight of everyone. He was Winsor's master!"

"Boohoo..."

Everyone was taken aback by Olivia's wailing, but they did not make it a big deal.

"Take her away!" Tyrone ordered after feeling annoyed at her behavior.

After her futile struggling, she was taken away in the end.

“Don’t worry, Olivia. I swear I’ll avenge our son. Levi will follow him soon,” Tyrone promised.

Despite struggling relentlessly, she could not break free from the restraint.

“If the rumor was true, we are in big trouble. That is the great family of Frostford we are talking about.” Tyrone took a deep breath.

“On top of that, Jerry was dead as well. It just doesn’t add up. I’m thinking that they might be related,” the other man commented.

“No kidding. Bizarre things are happening one after another. Who on earth killed the heir of Daelee Group and the head of Noir Group?”

Tyrone was perplexed. “We shall wait and see how things unfold. Let’s hope our family doesn’t get involved.”

On the other hand, Levi was with his family in North Hampton.

Right after Zoey reclaimed her company, she changed its name back to what it was.

Sylas was wheeling Levi around in the company building.

It was Levi’s first time there in two years.

The first difference he noticed was the scale of the company. It was now ten times bigger than before.

That fact alone was proof of Zoey’s competence.

Morris’s parents traveled all the way there just to see Levi because he was like a son to them.

It was quite peaceful that day. No one came over to look for trouble.

But Levi knew that it was the calm before the storm.

The following day, the person who showed up first was...

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1290

Zar was the first to make his appearance.

"What are you doing here?" Zoey became alert as she noticed that man.

"Don't fret. I'm here to help Mr. Garrison," Zar said with a smirk.

Levi noted, "Zoey, let me talk to him alone."

She pondered for a while and went away.

"Mr. Garrison, my intention is simple. I'm here to give you magical medicine to help you recover faster," Zar declared openly.

"Hmm?" Levi looked confused.

"It is a gift from my master. This is his special healing medicine, and I'm confident it'll improve your health greatly." After Zar spoke, he took out an exquisite box. In an instant, a pleasant herbal fragrance permeated the air.

Winsor hailed from the great family of Frostford.

Those people had all the ancient medical knowledge in their repertoire, some of which were thought to be lost in history.

Putting the secret to resurrection aside, their knowledge of healing a body was irrefutably out of this world. Modern medical science was nothing compared to them.

Their arsenal of magical medicines was hefty.

It was said that all their members were immune to every disease known to man.

All because of their stupendous collection of ancient medical knowledge. It was not something people from a modern society could wrap their minds around.

After all, they did not have the privilege to learn them.

Back when Winsor came to the outside world, he brought with him a vast amount of healing medicines in case of emergencies.

During his last battle with Levi, he was actually gravely injured but his recovery sped up exponentially after taking the magical medicine.

“Why is he doing this?” Levi questioned while holding the box in his hand.

“Master’s intention is straightforward. He wants you to get back to the pinnacle of your strength as soon as possible so that he can have a rematch with you. He wants to get rid of every doubt people have in him by defeating you one more time,” Zar clarified.

“Hurry and consume it. This way you’ll stand up from your wheelchair sooner and can have a rematch with my Master,” Zar urged.

Levi chuckled. “Alright. My rematch with him is inevitable. Tell him to be prepared. I don’t want to have an easy win.”

Upon hearing his statement, Zar almost lost his temper.

“Hey, you are still sitting in a wheelchair; you dare to utter such brazen words? My master just defeated The Calamity! He is the strongest warrior in the world, and you are nothing compared to him! The reason for the rematch is not for him to prove himself but to gratify his obsession!” Zar chided.

Levi merely smiled at his angry remark.

Putting his identity aside, Winsor really is a sheltered bumpkin.

“Alright. Go back and relay two words to him—tunnel vision.”

Levi saw Zar out with a grin as the latter stormed out furiously.

"Hmph! It seems like Levi is refusing to admit defeat! Nevermind. He will know how inconsequential he is once Master beats him again!"

Levi smirked as the man's silhouette gradually disappeared.

Mm. Winsor is on the crest of a wave now, isn't he? His reputation soared after his victory against The Calamity, and now all the foreigners are afraid of him. He is clearly engrossed in his glory and gradually losing his way. The man thinks he is undefeatable now!

Nevertheless, Levi could not care less about Winsor. If the latter's glory were favorable to Erudia, the former would just let it slide.

Staring at the magical medicine in his hand, an idea suddenly crossed his mind.

If all our soldiers carry this medicine with them, the number of casualties on the battlefield will be reduced significantly. After all, this medicine is potent and its effect is rapid. Modern pharmaceutical science can't hold a candle to it as the time and equipment needed to make something like this must be substantial. These medicines will boost our combat prowess remarkably.

After that, Levi began to devise a plan.

It's hard to popularize this kind of medicine, but half a loaf is better than none. So we'll make do with whatever we have. It's worth a try.

That was the difference between Levi and Winsor. The former's focus was always for the greater good, whereas the latter was absorbed in his personal interest only.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1291

Winsor was only suitable to be a mighty warrior.

But Levi was beyond that; he was more of a commander.

Following that, he took the magical medicine to East Sky Lord and asked the latter to analyze the ingredients inside, hoping that it could be mass-produced.

“Did he give you any trouble?” Zoey asked Levi right after she entered the room.

“No. Instead, he hopes that I recover sooner.” Levi laughed.

Then he added, “By the way, where are your parents?”

Normally, the Lopez and Black families will try their best to cause us trouble if they know that I’m back and disabled. This is abnormal. I haven’t seen a soul after so long. Something is not right.

“Logan got into an accident. They are occupied with the aftermath,” Zoey explained.

Logan joined a street racing with his friends a few days ago and was met with an accident.

It was said that his injury was fatal and some of his organs were failing.

The Black family was busy dealing with the repercussion as he was an essential member of the family.

Therefore, they had no time to pick on Levi yet.

“Oh, really? That’s good news,” Levi chuckled.

Zoey flashed a smile on her face without saying a word.

She had an extremely low opinion of her brother-in-law.

Well, I guess this works as well. This way no one will come and interrupt our lives.

Inside the Intensive Care Unit of the best hospital in South City, Meredith, Logan's grandfather, and his parents were waiting anxiously.

Logan was in critical condition. He had been staying in the Intensive Care Unit for two entire days.

It was a dangerous signal.

Hence, Jennie was sweating profusely with anxiety.

After all, they had drawn on huge funds to hire a group of specialists to treat Logan.

At that time, the specialists were just done with their discussions in the meeting room and came to the ICU.

"How's the situation, Dr. Chase?" Robert asked.

Chase shook his head. "It's not looking good. One of the patient's organs is severely injured. He needs a transplant."

"Get it done, then! What are you waiting for?" Jennie retorted.

"The thing is, our hospital is having an organ shortage; we need a kidney donor," Chase replied.

"Ask the other hospitals and see if there's any! We can afford the money!"

Meredith and the others became nervous.

The doctor denied, "This has nothing to do with money. We do not have a matching kidney currently and we are running out of time. Transporting an organ from other places takes time; it's definitely out of the question."

"Then what should we do?"

Everyone looked hesitant as they exchanged glances.

They were at their wits' end.

"The only way is to have a donor right now. If we harvest the organ on the spot, the success rate of the operation will be high," Dr. Chase declared as he stared at them.

"Mm..."

The doctor's statement put them in a difficult situation. Everyone was having a second thought.

Their initial determination was nowhere to be found.

All of us will donate our blood voluntarily. But who will donate a kidney? I'm afraid that even Logan's parents are unwilling to do so. If that's the case, it'd be impossible for us, the Blacks.

Everyone's gaze met with each other's but they did not utter a word.

Dr. Chase put on a helpless face. "Okay. Take your time to decide and see who will be the donor. But we don't have all the time in the world. You have only six hours to choose your candidate."

All of them were thrown into a frenzy right after the doctor left.

They were discussing where to find a kidney donor on such short notice.

Where do we find a donor within six hours? That's basically looking for a needle in a haystack. No one will donate it if they're not desperate for money. To have a higher success rate, we need to find a healthy kidney. It'd be best if that person is a young man with a muscular body.

Logan's parents queried, "Do you have any suitable candidates on your side?"

"No. We don't!" Meredith rejected immediately.

At that moment, Jennie shouted, "Wait. Aren't we forgetting someone—Levi Garrison?"

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1292

Everyone's eyes were gleaming upon Jennie's reminder. The silhouette of that man came into their minds.

That's right! How could we forget about him!

In fact, all of them knew about his arrival, but they couldn't be bothered by him previously.

Jennie remarked, "Levi may be alive, but he is disabled. He's wheelchair-bound. As a man who could not stand on his own, what's the difference if he has one fewer kidney?"

Meredith nodded. "That's right. The kidney is an important organ for normal people like us. But not for a crippled man like Levi. He has got no use for it."

"Yes. He's already physically challenged. An organ is not essential to him. Besides, we are asking for one kidney only, not both. It won't make much of a difference to him anyway." Robert tried his best to sound reasonable.

"I agree. Having one fewer kidney will decrease the quality of our lives. We'll become weaker and easily exhausted. But it won't affect a paralyzed man much."

"That's right. Levi is the best candidate. We shall let him donate his kidney to save Logan."

Everyone agreed that Levi should be the donor.

Upon hearing that, Logan's family members jumped for joy.

"Hooray! There's hope for Logan now!"

Jennie was overjoyed and gushed, "I'll head to North Hampton at once and bring Levi here! We'll start the operation immediately after that!"

"But did you ever wonder if he will agree to that?" Keane asked.

"His opinion? Does he have a say in this matter?" Meredith snorted.

"That's right. He has no right to decide for himself. Whatever we say goes. Does a disabled man like him have the authority to speak for himself? The biggest problem we have is Zoey. She will disagree if she comes to know about it," someone pointed out.

To them, Zoey was the person who should be kept in the dark. In contrast, Levi was nothing but a tool for them to use and dispose of as they like.

"Okay, it has been decided! We will keep Zoey out of this one. We will bring Levi here secretly and procure the kidney from him. By the time she catches wind of the news, it'd be too late," Jennie stated.

"Hmm, this is a good idea. Alright, some of you head to North Hampton and bring Levi here immediately," Meredith commanded.

Jennie, along with a few subordinates, sped off toward North Hampton.

Levi was alone when they arrived at his residential area.

He was confused by the sight of them.

What are they doing here?

“Take him away!”

At Jennie’s command, a few muscular men carried Levi’s wheelchair with him sitting in it and moved him into the vehicle.

The North Sky Lord and the rest who were hiding in the shadows were about to take those men out but refrained from doing so after they noticed Levi’s gesture stopping them.

However, they were tailing Jennie’s vehicle stealthily.

Levi did not resist but let them take him away; he wanted to see what were they playing at.

After Levi was in the vehicle, Jennie rushed back to the hospital, as they were racing against time.

Soon, they were back at the hospital.

Jennie had made prior arrangements with the hospital so that the specialists could begin the operation as soon as Levi arrived.

Hence, Dr. Chase and the other doctors were already waiting for Levi’s arrival.

“Dr. Chase, the donor is here! Please start the operation now!” Jennie pushed Levi toward the specialists.

Dr. Chase nodded. “Mm, you are quick!”

With that, he turned to Levi and asked, “Sir, are you here to donate your kidney to Mr. Logan Zachs voluntarily?”

“What? Donate a kidney?” Levi was flabbergasted. He stared at the doctor in disbelief.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1293

Dr. Chase was stunned for a moment. Then he turned to Jennie and the others and noticed their twisted facial expressions.

It was at that moment that he knew he had spilled the beans.

This person did not know a thing. It was an unnecessary question.

“He agrees! He has to! We are family! Otherwise, why would we donate a kidney?” Meredith remarked.

The others approved, “That’s right! He agrees!”

“Please begin the operation at once! You have our thanks!” Jennie urged, trying to prevent Levi from reacting.

“Who said that I agree? I don’t! I knew nothing about this! A kidney donation? To whom?” Levi bellowed.

The nurse who was pushing him into the operation theater came to a halt.

Dr. Chase furrowed his brows. *Argh! I screwed up!*

At that, everyone began discussing among themselves.

“It doesn’t matter if you know or not! Dr. Chase, get him into the operation theater!” Jennie and the Zachs family egged on the doctor.

The specialists shook their heads. “No, this won’t do. If the donor does not give consent, we can’t force him to do it. This must be a voluntary act. If he doesn’t fill up the organ donor card, we can’t proceed with the operation.”

“Levi, tell them you’re willing to donate. Quickly!” Jennie kicked the wheelchair.

“What’s the matter?” Levi shrugged his shoulders.

“Logan got into an accident and he needs a kidney transplant. We are giving you this golden opportunity.”

“That’s right. Isn’t it about time that you do something for the family? We are just asking for a kidney from you to save Logan.”

“If you’re willing to donate, you will forever be remembered.”

Meredith and the others persuaded.

They phrased their words as if donating a kidney was a noble deed.

“Oh, please! You and your reasoning. Why didn’t you donate one yourself?” Levi countered.

At his question, they snapped, “We’re talking about a kidney here! What do you think will happen if we donate it? It will affect our physical performance drastically!”

Levi nodded. “You are right. It affects the body significantly. So, why should I donate?”

Robert demanded, “You are nothing but a disabled man. You are confined to a wheelchair for life! What do you need kidneys for? You are no longer capable of working anyway! Furthermore, you still need Zoey to take care of you for the rest of your days! Besides, with your current body condition, what use do you have for a pair of kidneys? They are wasted on you! Shouldn’t you donate one to Logan instead? And if you don’t agree, don’t think about staying together with Zoey! Do you think a crippled man like you is worthy of her?”

He threatened Levi blatantly. It was an outright threat.

Meredith glared at him. “Levi, you have no right to speak in this family! Not before, when you were normal, and not now when you’re paralyzed. This is your only worth! Otherwise, you are not worthy of Zoey! I demand you to agree now or get out of here!”

Following that, Meredith instructed someone to get the organ donor card and forced Levi to ink his fingerprint on the signature box.

“Alright, doctors! Now that he has agreed, let’s begin the operation now!” Meredith handed over the organ donor card to a specialist.

The doctors exchanged glances while twitching their lips. They remained silent the entire time and pushed Levi into the operation theater.

Levi did not resist at all.

To the Blacks, Levi was just a convenient tool who was completely at their mercy.

“Oh, this trash still has his use. Once we’re old, we’ll replace our organs with his. After all, this is why he exists.”

Everyone laughed at the remark.

They even devised a plan to make full use of him in the future.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1294

“Okay. There’s nothing to worry about. I’ve checked with the doctors just now. He’s very healthy and his kidneys are in top condition. Lady Luck is on Logan’s side this time.”

After hearing the test result, everyone felt relieved and smiled.

If Levi’s kidney is healthy, Logan will recover earlier.

With that, Russell made a call to Zoey.

He could do nothing to stop the family, but he thought he could at least inform her.

Zoey was aghast after hearing the news.

They took Levi away without saying a word!

Immediately, she called Meredith’s cellphone but the latter did not pick up the call.

After a few attempts, Meredith answered.

“Grandma, what is the meaning of this? How could you force Levi to donate a kidney to Logan? Did you even get his permission?” Zoey roared furiously.

“We asked him. He agreed and inked his fingerprint on the organ donor card.”

Zoey trembled violently in anger. "How is that possible? Did you force him to do it? Why didn't you tell me about it?"

"I'm telling you now. What can you do? That's right, we forced him to donate a kidney to save Logan."

Meredith admitted the truth indifferently.

"You have so many people over there! Why didn't one of you donate instead?" Zoey burst into tears from rage.

"The answer is simple. All of us are healthy and complete, but he is a disabled man. What use does he have for those kidneys? Can he stand even with his organs intact? Can he make a living like everyone else?" A volley of questions came out of Meredith like a three-round burst from a service rifle.

Zoey yelled angrily, "But did you know that he is recovering? He will be fully recovered soon. You're doing him harm by procuring a kidney from him! Now he can never hope to stand up again, and you are the cause!"

Meredith snorted, "So what if he can stand? He still has to rely on you to survive, anyway. What's the difference if he stands or is wheelchair-bound? What's the difference if he has a pair of kidneys or just one?"

"Y-you are talking nonsense! Just you wait, I'm coming to South City now! No one can touch my husband!" Zoey shouted like a madwoman.

"Come on, we're waiting. The fastest you can make it here is one hour. By the way, Levi was pushed into the operation theater just a while ago. By the time you arrive, his kidney will be transplanted into Logan's body already," Meredith sneered.

"How heartless can you be? He is the father of Forlevia, for crying out loud!" Zoey shrieked.

"Hmph! This is all he is worth! What's so bad about helping Logan to recover? If the operation is successful, we will never try to separate you two anymore. Wouldn't it be nice?" Meredith chuckled.

Everyone at the scene looked indifferent.

After the call ended, Zoey could not focus on anything else but rushed to the hospital in South City at once.

Following that, Meredith glared at the crowd. "Who informed Zoey about this?"

At her question, Russell had no choice but to step forward.

Slap!

Meredith gave him a hard slap on his cheek.

“You are becoming increasingly disobedient nowadays! If you repeat such traitorous behavior one more time, I’ll banish you from our family!” Meredith hissed.

Russell stood at a corner and did not dare to make a sound.

“Grandma, is Zoey coming over?” Jennie asked.

“Yeah. She’s on her way here,” Meredith nodded.

“Well, too bad for her. By the time she arrives, Levi’s kidney will have been harvested already.”

Everyone burst into laughter.

Everything went by smoothly in the operation theater. It was the sign that things were proceeding

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1295

Within fifty minutes, Zoey had arrived at the hospital.

She was able to arrive so quickly because she had beat almost every single red light on the way to the hospital.

“You are too late. The surgery had gone on for an hour!” Jennie mocked as she smirked at her.

“All of you are so cruel! Why don’t you go and donate your organs then?” Zoey yelled at the crowd angrily.

“Levi Garrison is now disabled. His family should be the ones donating him something, right? Besides, only one of his kidneys is being removed. It’s not a big deal because he still has one kidney left!”

Everyone present ignored Zoey, who was so furious and was about to go ballistic.

Initially, Levi could have recovered.

However, if one of his kidneys were removed, the chances of his recovery would be drastically reduced.

“I’m not letting you do that! I’m going to stop them!” Zoey screamed.

With that, she ran towards the operating theatre.

However, she was blocked by everyone there.

As the surgery continued, Zoey could only wait in despair.

After a few hours, the emergency light of the operating theatre was turned off, meaning the surgery was a success.

Soon Logan was brought out and transferred to the Intensive Care Unit.

“How did it go, Doctor?”

Everyone immediately crowded around the doctor.

“It was a success!” Dr. Chase exclaimed with a bright smile.

“That’s amazing. Fantastic!”

Everyone cheered loudly and grinned at each other.

Not a single person was concerned about Levi.

Zoey immediately rushed into the operating theatre.

When she saw Levi sitting on the wheelchair, she relaxed and let out a breath of air.

She instantly hugged him and started wailing.

“Don’t cry. I’m fine; you have nothing to worry about,” he comforted her as he patted her head.

She really believed that he had donated one of his kidneys and kept crying nonstop.

In truth, no one dared to remove Levi's kidney.

To do so would be equivalent to courting death.

How was Logan's recovery possible?

There could only be one reason: Levi gave Logan the medicine that Winsor Campbell had passed to him.

It was an experiment to test the efficacy of the medicine and whether it was really a silver bullet.

The answer was clear.

It was a magical medicine!

Although Logan's kidneys were severely impaired, he managed to recover after taking the medicine.

He had such a miraculous recovery that a kidney transplant surgery was not necessary anymore.

Levi was astonished!

If this medicine were manufactured in large quantities, it would certainly save a lot of lives!

To think how helpful it will be for the warriors of Erudia!

The Four Great Families, eh?

It appears that I will come to look for you sooner or later!

"Are you really fine? Do you feel any pain or weakness?" Zoey asked as she observed every part of Levi's body.

Levi appeared to have donated one of his kidneys because the West Sky Lord had used makeup to give Levi a pale and sickly image to "match" Levi's wheelchair look.

Levi shook his head and replied, "I'm fine. Actually..."

At that moment, they could hear footsteps approaching. Meredith and a group of people entered the room.

Zoey thought that they were here to thank Levi.

Instead, Robert grinned and said, "I told you that donating one kidney is a small matter!"

"Exactly! He looks fine and he still has one kidney remaining!"

“You are right. He is already disabled, so it doesn’t matter whether he has one kidney. He can just freeload anyway!”

Everyone uttered snarkily.

They were all in agreement that Levi should donate his kidney.

Zoey was enraged. She bellowed, “My husband donated one of his kidneys. Instead of thanking him, all of you are trying to embarrass him! Do you even have a conscience?”

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1296

Everyone was under the impression that Levi had donated one kidney to Logan.

Even Zoey thought so.

“Levi is Logan’s savior. All of you should be begging on your knees for gratitude! I can’t believe that there are people like you!” Zoey berated them.

Zoey was utterly disappointed at that moment.

They had treated Levi like a tool in order to achieve their own selfish desires.

“Why do we need to thank him?”

“That’s what he should have done anyway! He should be thanking us instead because we accepted him even though he was disabled!”

“He only did what he should have done. He couldn’t possibly think he could be a freeloader here. Who does he think he is?”

...

As expected, the Black family all echoed the same sentiments.

They all believed that Levi was obligated to sacrifice himself for their family.

“He should be honored that he has the opportunity to save Logan! Others don’t even have the chance to do so,” stated Jennie.

“What did you just say?” Zoey asked.

She and Levi were stunned.

What did she mean by that?

How could this be Levi's honor?

As if saving Logan is a blessing bestowed upon Levi!

Isn't that just ridiculous?

However, this was the way the Lopez and Black families operated.

They had grown increasingly shameless day by day.

"That's beside the point. He is Evie's father. How could all of you bear to see him suffer?" Zoey questioned as she stared at Meredith and Robert, who had always treated Evie very well.

"How is this matter related to Evie? In any case, she is his offspring. Both Evie and this man are your burdens!" Meredith berated her.

Zoey was astonished.

Don't they treat Evie very well?

She instantly came to the realization that they had been putting up a show. They had only been nice to Evie because Dale treated Evie with love.

Now that Dale had broken off their relationship, they instantly stopped with the facade.

It's no wonder they are now ignoring Evie...

"How would Levi burden me? My career is dependent on his! He doesn't rely on me at all. In fact, his business is extremely successful!" Zoey rebutted.

"His business? The Morris Group doesn't belong to him anymore!"

"Exactly! It's yours!"

Everyone ignored Levi and argued fervently that he had nothing to do with the company.

"That's it! I'm sick of talking to all of you!" Zoey bellowed and glared at all of them.

With that, she pushed Levi in his wheelchair and left.

My heart is in pain!

In utter pain and disbelief!

The Lopez family and the Black family are all horrible people.

Every single one of them is self-absorbed.

They only care about their own interests and would use any manipulative methods to achieve them!

After they left, Jennie said, "Grandpa and Grandma, I feel that Zoey has lost herself! How can she cope with taking care of a young kid and a disabled husband? She is the boss of the Morris Group!"

"Exactly! She will soon find herself in ruins!" Logan's parents exclaimed.

"What should we do then?" enquired Meredith. She was also worried about the same matter.

Robert, who was deep in thought, nodded in agreement.

"I think it would be better to transfer the control of Morris Group to both of you! We can't destroy the company's reputation by leaving it with Zoey!" Jennie suggested.

"Exactly! It is tough for Zoey to control such a big organization, especially when she has so much on her plate."

"You are right. It would be better if the company is controlled by a family, rather than a single person."

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1297

Instantly, the Blacks started to hatch a plan to take over Zoey's company.

They didn't dare to do it before as Zoey was protected by Dale.

However, times have changed.

“Alright. Let’s think of a way to take over the Morris Group.”

“Zoey will put up a strong fight. We must think of a foolproof plan to ensure that she willingly gives up the company!”

Meredith and Robert exchanged glances.

They were getting old and their only wish left were to help the Black family become more powerful.

This was their sole motive and calling.

They were willing to give up everything for their family.

Hence, they resolved to take over the Morris Group.

“Grandpa and Grandma, what do you think of this plan? We could...”

Jennie brought the two to a corner and started whispering to them.

“Don’t you think that we are crossing the line here?” asked Robert.

Meredith instantly replied, “I don’t see any issue with that. Let’s do this then!”

“Yes, we should do whatever it takes to achieve our goal!” Jennie nodded and murmured in agreement.

“But I think we should discuss some more first!” Robert disagreed.

“No. This is final. We must execute it whilst Levi is ill! This is the best opportunity we will ever get.”

“Exactly! Levi used to be so brilliant but he is nothing now. If we don’t strike now, we won’t have any more chances left,” Jennie chimed in.

“This is the final plan!” Meredith sounded adamant.

“We should at least inform the Lopez family...” suggested Robert.

Meredith agreed. “You are right. We may face difficulties doing it alone. It’s better to team up with the Lopez family.”

Zoey would never have thought that this was only the beginning.

Stealing Levi's kidney was just a small matter.

When they returned to North Hampton, Zoey found some caretakers to look after Levi. After all, he just had a kidney removed.

At that moment, the Garrison family were already on their way to North Hampton.

In fact, Tyrone Garrison had come personally.

He wanted to ensure that Levi was killed.

"What? Levi had one kidney removed?" Tyrone asked. He instantly laughed when he heard the news.

"He really is a piece of trash! I can't wait to visit him," Tyrone stated as he let out a cold laugh.

Soon, the Garrison Clan from Oakland City reached North Hampton.

They instantly rushed to Levi's house.

At that moment, Zoey was occupied with something else and Emma Jones had gone grocery shopping.

Only Levi and the children were left in the manor as Levi had asked the caretakers to leave.

Suddenly, Tyrone and his gang of people broke into Levi's manor and appeared in front of him.

"Levi Garrison! The day has finally come!" mocked Tyrone as he smiled at him coldly.

Levi sighed, "Why is it you again? You guys are so annoying. Get lost! You're not the one I'm waiting for anyway!"

In fact, Levi was waiting for the enemies who were hiding in the dark, not a nobody like Tyrone.

"Huh?" Tyrone asked in shock.

Why is Levi saying this?

More importantly, Levi looks calm and collected. This is nothing like how an injured person would behave.

How come he can give out such a strong vibe?

"You guys are also responsible for hurting my wife and mother, aren't you? I didn't look for you but you guys decided to come and visit me instead?" Levi let out a low growl.

"I can't believe you thought of taking revenge upon us! Look at you now; you are a cripple. You don't scare us!" yelled Tyrone.

“Is that all you have?” hollered Levi.

Suddenly, a loud explosion was heard and multiple figures appeared in the manor...

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1298

They were decked in black armor and wearing masks with both an angel and a devil.

They embody righteousness and wickedness.

Indeed, they were the protectors of Erudia and were walking national weapons.

They were also wicked in that they had killed millions of people.

“Ha!”

“Ha!”

“Ha!”

...

Their ancient daggers glittered and looked absolutely deadly.

Whoever the dagger touched would immediately die.

Tyrone and his gang were surrounded with such weapons pointed at them!

“What?” exclaimed Levi in astonishment as he looked at the familiar figures in front of him.

“Is this... Is this The Calamity?” Tyrone asked as his mouth widened in shock.

Although the Calamity had been oppressed by Winsor Campbell, the Garrison family was still no match for the group.

All the Garrisons were trembling in fear.

“Indeed! We are The Calamity!” Levi roared loudly.

An even more shocking scene then appeared.

Levi carried Evie and stood up from the wheelchair.

Tyrone and his gang gaped at Levi.

“What...What is going on?” Tyrone asked in disbelief.

Isn't Levi a cripple?

How could he stand up on his own?

And even walk around like a normal person?

And what is The Calamity doing here?

Endless questions were running through Tyrone's head.

Levi isn't injured at all!

He must be the master of The Calamity!

Furthermore, Olivia has been acting weirdly...

He suddenly thought of Olivia's past actions as well as the disappearances of Sampson and Jerry.

All of those must be related to Levi!

What the f*ck?

I can't believe it!

This is terrifying!

This...

Tyrone immediately broke out in cold sweat as those thoughts ran through his mind.

“Did you really think that I will spare the Garrison clan?” Levi asked Tyrone icily.

All the Garrisons shook in terror.

Tyrone started to tremble and stared at Levi. "That means you've been fine all along! You were just pretending to be injured to fool all of us!" Tyrone yelled.

"You are indeed smart. Too bad you figured it out so late," boomed Levi.

Levi would no longer put up with the Garrisons' threats and the hurt they had caused his family.

I can't and won't forgive them!

They have put my family through too much!

It is time for me to retaliate!

"Do you really think I wouldn't kill you?" Levi asked as his eyes blazed with murderous intent.

"Kill!"

"Kill!"

"Kill!"

Members of The Calamity echoed as they pumped their fists in the air.

Thud.

Thud.

Everyone in the Garrison family immediately got on their knees in fear.

Tyrone, also terrified, did the same thing.

He had only realized at this moment how scary Levi was.

Even Winsor Campbell was lied to!

He must be acting this way because there is a mission he has to complete.

He seems to be waiting for someone?

No wonder he warned me that I was not the person he was waiting for.

I'm so stupid to have sent myself into this trap.

"Do you admit to everything you have done?" Levi questioned Tyrone.

"Yes!" Tyrone immediately replied.

"Do you admit your mistake?" Levi continued asking.

“Yes!” Tyrone answered.

“You are here to kill me, aren’t you?” asked Levi.

“I...” stuttered Tyrone, who turned speechless.

That was indeed his goal!

I should have thought of it earlier...

The strange things that Olivia has been doing...

The uncanny happenings in Oakland City and the death of Jeong-seok all point to Levi.

However, like everyone, he was fooled into thinking that Levi was now a cripple and was incapable of doing anything.

“My daughter is here and I don’t want to kill in front of her, so I have thought of another punishment for you.” Levi said coldly.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1299

“What is it?” Tyrone asked with a hunch that Levi was up to no good.

“From now on, the Garrison family belongs to me! Everyone must obey me!” boomed Levi.

“What?” Tyrone expressed his astonishment as his face turned white.

Doesn't that mean all of us are Levi's slaves?

To give up my entire family is far worse than killing me!

“As for you, that is simple. There is a small town in Northgale that is so secluded that it does not even exist on the map. I will imprison you there for the rest of your life so you'll never see the outside world again!” commanded Levi.

Boom!

Tyrone felt like he was about to explode.

He would go crazy to be locked up in a place akin to a prison cell!

I am the master of the top ancient family, with wealth rivaling a nation's and power beyond most people's comprehension.

To be imprisoned in a secluded town in the desert would be unbearable for him.

Absolutely unbearable, given the fact that Tyrone was extremely ambitious.

“No! No! Please don't do this to me! I will do anything you ask if you don't imprison me there!” Tyrone begged like a mad man.

“Levi, I am your birth father! You cannot treat me like this!” Tyrone continued pleading.

Levi smirked and replied, "Did you ever think of that every time you tried to kill me? Did you see yourself as my father when my pregnant mother kneeled in front of the Garrison family for three days and three nights, or when you imprisoned my mother?"

...

The string of questions rendered Tyrone speechless.

"Bring him away now!" Levi commanded.

With that, the North Sky Lord whisked Tyrone away.

Tyrone would live the rest of his life in that small town in Northgale.

Subjecting him to banishment was more cruel than killing him!

Although Levi desired to murder him as Tyrone had committed numerous atrocities, he couldn't do so. After all, Tyrone was his birth father.

Levi couldn't bear to kill both of his parents but he had to punish Tyrone for what he did.

This was the perfect way to force Tyrone to repent for his sins!

All the punishments that Tyrone had inflicted upon his mother were now coming back to bite him in the rear end.

This was karma; no one could fight it.

With that, The Calamity had the loyalty of the Garrisons, the Garcias, among other prominent families.

In a blink of an eye, all these wealthy families were under the control of Levi.

Levi was now the wealthiest and richest man!

All the ancient families in Erudia practically belonged to him, and so were the assets of these families!

Levi then commanded his people to take care of his smaller problems, such as the families in South Hampton.

He then ordered the rest to support Osborn, the Three Musketeers, the Garrison clan in Haven, and so on.

Since all these people had made sacrifices for him and for Erudia, he would not let their descendants suffer.

With all this done, Levi awaited his mission as well his enemies' appearance.

It would soon happen.

They should be here anytime now.

At this moment, the Black and the Lopez families were discussing how to secretly take over the Morris Group.

After Meredith told Harry of Jennie's plans, the old man clapped his hands in delight.

"That is great! We will proceed with your request. I have already made the necessary arrangements!" Harry said.

"The only thing we have to do is wait for Zoey to make the first move!" Meredith commented gleefully.

Robert lamented, "I hope Zoey doesn't blame us. We just want to strengthen our empire! We are doing this for our descendants."

Robert still didn't agree with their cruel methods but he numbed himself with the belief that this would elevate the status of his family.

Jennie, on the other hand, revealed a sly grin.

Levi Garrison: The Return of the God of War [The Protector] Chapter 1300

They had had their eyes on Zoey for a very long period of time.

With the opportunity in their hands, they wouldn't let it slip away easily.

On that day, the Lopez and Black families called a meeting in order to force Zoey and Evie to turn up.

Although Levi had placed many bodyguards to protect Zoey, he didn't think much of it when the Lopez and Black families organized the meeting.

Zoey and Evie arrived at the Lopez family home.

Suddenly, a bunch of people surrounded them.

Every single one of them looked fierce and intimidating as if Zoey was under trial.

Zoey instantly felt that something was wrong.

Soon, Harry and Meredith arrived with a few others.

Amongst them was Logan's Grandpa and parents.

Then came the actual purpose of this gathering...

"We must thank Zoey for this meeting! If not for her, our three families rarely get the chance to meet up so cordially!" Meredith commented with a smile on her face.

However, she immediately switched the topic and said, "Since we are all one big family, we must unite. We have agreed that the Lopez family, the Zachs family, and the Black family will develop our resources and connections together. Also, we seniors of our respective families will be in charge of this collaboration."

“Yes! We support your plan!” echoed the younger generations of the three families.

“This will make the three families stronger! This is also the wish of the senior generation!”

“I hope that in the future when anyone mentions the South of Erudia, they will think of us!”

“What do you think, Zoey?” they asked.

Instantly, everyone’s gaze fell on her.

The purpose of the whole meeting was thus revealed.

Zoey nodded and said, “That’s great! I support it as well!”

“You can’t just verbalize your support; you must take action to show it! For our families to develop, I’m willing to sacrifice control over all my assets and connections!” Jennie commented.

“Yes, I’m also willing to contribute my share!” Henry stated.

“Me, too!” Fabian uttered.

...

Bailey and the rest also expressed their support.

Only Zoey had yet to follow suit.

She finally understood that this was their scheme all along.

It wasn’t about the union of the three families; it was about taking over her control of the Morris Group!

They had indeed thought of great excuses to conceal their plot.

Everyone was so supportive of it.

They are shameless to the core.

The only person who was dismayed was Robert, who felt that they were too harsh on Zoey.

“Zoey, what do you think?” asked Meredith.

Everyone instantly turned to look at Zoey.

“I agree with your plan! I’ll use my own resources to support the union of the three families!” Zoey replied.

Instantly, Robert boomed, “That’s great! We shall use the assets under your name then!”

“What’s so good about that?” commented Harry and Meredith.

“What do you mean by only using assets under Zoey’s name? All of us are contributing our businesses; it would be unfair to give special treatment to Zoey!” they argued.

“If Zoey wants to show her support, she must give up everything! That is what everyone else is doing!” rebutted Meredith.

“Exactly! We can’t change the rules just for her, unless she doesn’t see herself as a part of our family!” the others discussed.

Zoey surveyed the room and let out a smile.

“If you want to take control over the Morris Group, just tell me directly. Why are you going in circles?” she asked.

“Exactly, that’s what we want! The Morris Group is under your name and you should relinquish control to help the union of the three families!” the rest echoed.

“What if I don’t want to do that?” Zoey questioned.

Zoey knew clearly what they were trying to accomplish.